(54) **MAGNETIC VORTEX WORMHOLE GENERATOR**

(76) Inventor: **John Quincy St.Clair**, San Juan, PR (US)

Correspondence Address:
John St.Clair
Hyperspace Research Institute
52 Kings Court, 4A
San Juan, PR 00911 (US)

(57) **ABSTRACT**

This invention relates to a magnetic vortex generator which has the ability to generate negative mass and a negative spring constant which, according to Einstein's General Theory of Relativity, is required in order to create a stable wormhole between our space and hyperspace. Two separate, but electrically connected, toroidal coils of differing radii, carry magnetic flux in opposite directions about their common centerline. According to Maxwell's equation, this produces bucking electric fields along said centerline. Because the two solenoids have different radii, the parallel spring constant of both coils is negative. The negative mass together with the negative spring constant produce a real resonant frequency which can distort the spacetime curvature due to the creation of powerful spikes of negative mass. This phenomenon, similar to the common electrical thunderstorm, opens up a wormhole into hyperspace through which low-density hyperspace energy can enter into our dimension. This energy finds many application in new types of power supplies, inertia-less and mass-less spacecraft, vehicles that can travel light-years by moving out of dimension through hyperspace, surgery-less medical tables, cranes for lifting heavy objects, cold-welded crystals for crystal rotors, folding space waveguides, and electromagnetic field propulsion vehicles using highly relativistic fields.
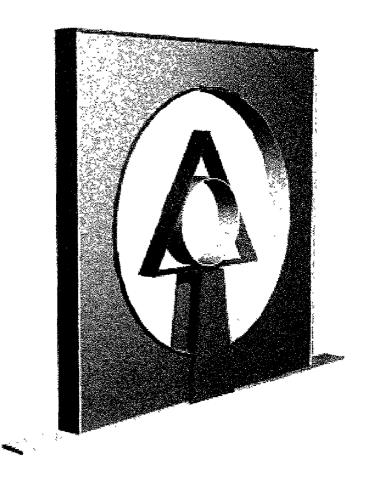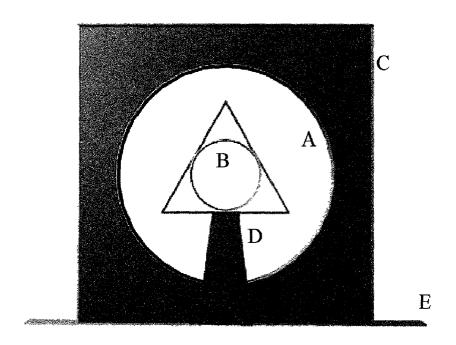
Figure 1

Figure 2

Figure 3

Figure 4

A

Figure 5

$$I_\theta$$

coil

$$B_\theta = F^{rz}$$

$$n_\theta \text{ Area}$$

laminations

Figure 6

$$F^{\mu\nu} = \begin{array}{c} \\ t \\ r \\ \theta \\ z \end{array} \begin{array}{|cccc} t & r & \theta & z \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & B_\theta \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -B_\theta & 0 & 0 \end{array}$$
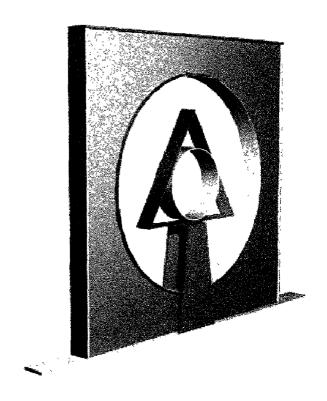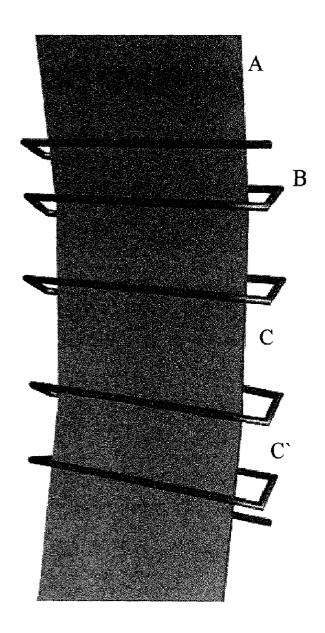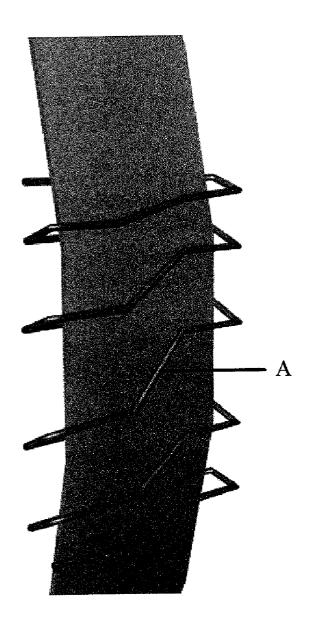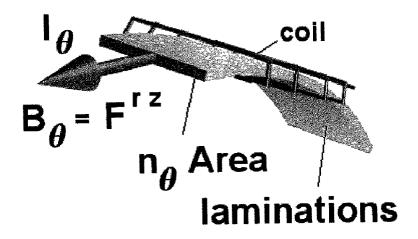
Figure 7

$$k^z = \frac{coul}{sec} \cdot m^2 \cdot \frac{1}{m^2} \cdot \frac{kg}{sec \cdot coul} = \frac{newton}{m} = \frac{force}{m}$$

Figure 8

$$k^z = \frac{1}{(r+a)^2} - \frac{1}{r^2} = -a \frac{(2 \cdot r + a)}{\left[(r+a)^2 \cdot r^2\right]}$$

Figure 9

$$g_{\alpha\beta} = \begin{array}{c|cccc} & t & r & \theta & z \\ t & -1 & & B(\cos\theta - \sin\theta) & 0 \\ r & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ \theta & B(\cos\theta - \sin\theta) & 0 & r^2 & 0 \\ z & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{array}$$

Figure 10

G_{tt} vs. θ

MVG generates two negative mass spikes along centerline of coils at a radius r = 0.

Figure 11

Figure 12

MAGNETIC VORTEX WORMHOLE GENERATOR

BRIEF SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0001] This invention, which is the subject of my present application, is comprised of two solenoids wound with a common wire in opposite 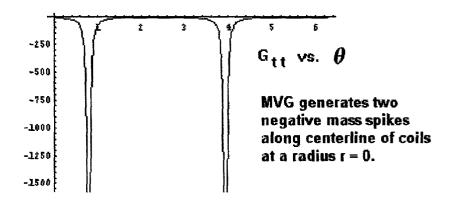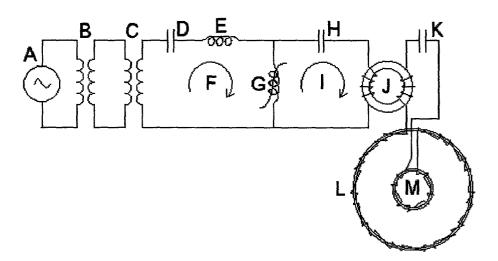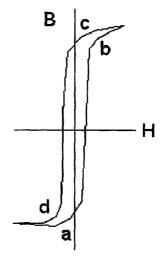directions on two separate toroidal curved-sheet transformer laminates of differing radii. The smaller solenoid is mounted along the centerline of the larger solenoid. This circular magnetic geometry creates linear bucking electric fields along the centerline of the coils. Because the magnetic flux in the laminates travels in opposite directions along arcs of differing radii in the two coils, a negative mass and a negative spring constant are generated by the system. From the theory of gravitational physics, a negative mass is prerequisite to producing a wormhole because it allows the throat of the wormhole to remain open and stable. The creation of the wormhole is facilitated by the appearance of a negative spring constant which allows the spacetime curvature to resonate to such a degree that said wormhole develops between our dimension and another co-dimension of hyperspace. Because the physics constants of hyperspace are different from ours, the wormhole allows hyperspace energy having a low speed of light to enter our dimension. Because electromagnetic fields obey the Lorentz transformation, it is now possible with this lower velocity of light to create huge relativistic fields which can drive the new electromagnetic field propulsion vehicles.

BACKGROUND OF THE INVENTION

[0002] The idea for this coil configuration comes from the observation of powerful thunderstorms, as described by physicist Dr. Richard Feynman in his *Lectures on Physics,* a copy of which is enclosed as a reference. Upon reading his explanation, I realized that the thunderstorm is actually a hyperspace physics phenomenon.

[0003] After the passage of a large lightning storm, people have observed that a car tire rim has merged with the trunk of a tree growing in the ground. Due to the large branches of the tree, there is no possible way that it could slide down the branches and around the trunk. It was observed also that a straw of wheat became embedded in the hard wood of a telephone pole. It turns out that the thunderstorm offers an explanation as to how this can occur.

[0004] After reading Feynman's explanation, it can be seen that the key to this phenomenon is that there is a downward and an upward lightning bolt, sometimes occurring together if the leader branches into two paths. Bolts of lightning also like to strike tall objects such as telephone poles or trees. Now an electrical current moving downward produces a clockwise magnetic B field, as seen from above. On the return stroke, the current is moving upward which produces a counterclockwise magnetic B field. Thus the thunderstorm produces two huge bucking magnetic B fields which is the magnetic geometry of this magnetic vortex generator. Using my tetrahedron diagram, I will then show that the low density hyperspace energy with its low speed of light is able to pull the rim out of dimension so that it can merge with the tree at the moment the lightning strikes.

SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0005] It is the object of this invention to produce two toroidal oppositely-directed magnetic flux fields in two separate yet electrically connected solenoids of differing radii. Because the lines of flux are traveling in toroidal, curved-sheet transformer laminates along arcs of different curvature, the fields produce what is known in gravitational physics as negative mass. Negative mass has the property that if you project it onto a hot surface, the surface will cool rather than heat up. The negative mass, together with the resonance of the spacetime curvature involving a negative spring constant, create a wormhole into hyperspace. This interdimensional connection allows low speed of light hyperspace energy into our dimension which can be used to decrease the weight of an object, or produce huge relativistic electromagnetic fields that can be used to drive the new electromagnetic field propulsion spacecraft.

STATEMENT REGARDING FEDERALLY SPONSORED RESEARCH OR DEVELOPMENT

[0006] Not Applicable.

A BRIEF DESCRIPTION OF THE DRAWINGS

[0007] FIG. 1. Front view of magnetic vortex generator.

[0008] FIG. 2. Perspective view of the magnetic vortex generator.

[0009] FIG. 3. The non-linear coil winding on the interior face of the laminations.

[0010] FIG. 4. The non-linear coil winding on the exterior face of the laminations showing that there is an electrical current component in the theta direction.

[0011] FIG. 5. The coil variables for the tensor calculation of the negative spring constant.

[0012] FIG. 6. The Faraday electromagnetic tensor showing the position of the magnetic field in the $\{r,z\}$ slots.

[0013] FIG. 7. The units of the spring constant.

[0014] FIG. 8. The parallel spacetime spring constant.

[0015] FIG. 9. The cylindrical g metric tensor including the magnetic fields.

[0016] FIG. 10. A plot of the mass term G_n for Einstein's G curvature tensor showing that two negative mass spikes are created along the centerline of the generator. Negative mass is required to keep open the throat of the wormhole.

[0017] FIG. 11. Circuit diagram for the magnetic vortex generator.

[0018] FIG. 12. BH curve for non-linear SuperMalloy toroidal core. From the equation, $B=\mu H$, the slope of the line is equal to the permeability $\partial B/\partial H=\mu$.

DETAILED DESCRIPTION OF THE INVENTION

[0019] 1. The fact that negative mass is required to keep the throat of a wormhole open has been shown to be valid by physicist Dr. Kip Thorne in the enclosed reference physics paper. The key point of this invention is that if you have a negative mass, you also require a negative spring constant in order to get a real frequency and vice versa. The angular frequency of vibration is equal to the square root of the spring constant K divided by the mass M, or $\omega=\sqrt{K/M}$. If the mass is negative, and the spring constant is positive,

the frequency is imaginary. Therefore, in order to get a real frequency, the spring constant has to be negative also.

[0020] 2. Referring to **FIG. 1**, the magnetic vortex generator consists of a large toroidal solenoid (A) and its support structure (C), a smaller toroidal coil (B) with its support structure (D) which holds the coil along the centerline of the larger coil. The entire structure sits on a base (E).

[0021] 3. The two solenoids are wound with a common wire in opposite directions on two separate toroidal curved-sheet transformer laminations of differing radii. From the right hand rule, a changing circular magnetic field in the direction of the fingers produces a linear electric field in the direction of the thumb. Because there are two coils producing two magnetic fields in opposite directions, there are two bucking electric fields down the centerline of the coils. This duplicates the thunderstorm conditions. A perspective view of the generator is shown in **FIG. 2**.

[0022] 4. A enlarged view of the non-linear coil winding is shown in **FIG. 3**. The wire (B) is wound around the thin transformer laminations (A) with a non-linear coil spacing as shown by the difference in spacing between length (C) and (C'). On this inner side of the coil, the wire is wound straight across where it can be seen that the wire is normal to the edge of the laminations. Not shown are two strips of Velcro which keep the wire aligned and offset from the tape-covered metal laminations.

[0023] 5. Since the wire is straight across on this side, the opposite side has to have the wire run in a diagonal manner as seen in **FIG. 4A**. In terms of cylindrical coordinates, the components of the electrical current in the coil flow in the z-direction across the breadth of the lamination and in the Θ-direction around the lamination.

[0024] 6. The reason for the non-linear spacing is to preserve the vector potential of the coil. The vector potential is a more important field than the magnetic field because it can extend out past the windings of a long solenoid. If you look at the units, it is the field momentum per charge or kilogram meter per second coulomb. Notice that the derivative of the vector potential with respect to time is an electric field, while a derivative with respect to length is the magnetic field. The inductance of the coil times the current density is equal to the vector potential. Thus the inductance gradient of the coil times the current per meter is the magnetic field. So the non-linear coil picks up an additional magnetic field around the coil besides the one created in the laminations by the winding itself

[0025] 7. Taking a closer look at the coil in **FIG. 5**, it is constructed of thin laminations taped together to form a cylindrical shape with a wire coil wrapped around it. This creates a magnetic field in the theta θ direction within the laminations. Because the coil is wrapped as a helix, there is a current component I_θ in the theta direction. The cross-sectional area Area through which the magnetic flux flows times a normal vector n in the theta direction is the tensor area n_θ Area. If the radius of the coil is r, then the curvature K is $1/r^2$ pointing in the radial direction. Because there are two coils with differing radii, the generator has two curvatures associated with it.

[0026] 8. In the geometry of electromagnetism, the magnetic field is part of the electromagnetic Faraday tensor $F^{\mu\nu}$ which is a 4 by 4 spacetime matrix having rows and columns

of time t, radius r, angle θ and height z in cylindrical coordinates. The first index μ refers to the row, and the second index v refers to the column. The diagonal of the matrix is zero. The first row and column belong to the electric field. All the other slots are filled by the components of the magnetic field. The B_θ component is located in the complementary slots of r and z as shown in **FIG. 6**. Now a tensor product can be written with the available variables I^θ no Area $K_r F^{rz} = k^z$. This says that the current around the loop in the theta direction times the lamination area vector in the theta direction times the curvature K of the coil in the radial direction times the magnetic field in the theta direction is equal to a spring constant in the z-direction, or normal to the plane of the coil. All the tensor components cancel out except for the z-direction. That is, the coil produces a spacetime spring constant through the center of the coil where there are resonant bucking electric fields. So the coil is creating a magnetic spring. The units of the spring constant are shown in **FIG. 7** as force per meter.

[0027] 9. Because there are two coils operating in opposite directions in regions of differing curvature, there are two parallel spring constants generated along the centerline. Two springs in parallel sum, but the inner coil is negative due to the triple product of negative signs of current, field and area. Looking at the front view of the coils, the right hand rule shows the field going counterclockwise with the thumb pointing along the electric field in the positive z-direction. The inner coil with the field going in the clockwise direction has the electric field in the negative z-direction. Therefore the outer coil's positive spring constant sums with the inner coil's negative spring constant to produce an overall negative spring constant as shown in **FIG. 8**. The inner coil has a radius r, and the spacing between the outer and inner coil is a. In this design, the inner radius is 1, and the outer radius is 3 which is the magic ratio in physics of 1/3. That makes length a equal to 2. Substituting r=1 and a=2 into the spring constant equation shows that the ratio is negative 8/9. That is, the spring constant is negative as previously asserted. If the spring constant is negative, it must produce negative mass in order to have a real frequency of resonance. Since it produces negative mass, then it can produce a wormhole as shown by Dr. Kip Thorne.

[0028] 10. The geometry of hyperspace physics is based on the geometry of the tetrahedron which is circumscribed by the sphere. The corners of the tetrahedron touch the sphere at a latitude of 19.47122063° which turns out to be, in terms of planet cosmology, the location where all the large volcanoes and vortices occur on Earth, Mars, Jupiter, Uranus and Neptune. Furthermore, the cosine squared of this angle is 8/9, which is the spring constant ratio for the magnetic vortex generator. That is, the coil is interacting with the geometry of spacetime which is why it is such an effective wormhole generator. As will be demonstrated later, the tetrahedral geometry of hyperspace shows that the electron and proton are one and the same particle. This is a new discovery in science coming out of this research. The diagram also shows that when the speed of light is reduced, due to the low density of energy coming into our dimension through the wormhole, Planck's constant divided by the speed of light puts the electron at the boundary between space and hyperspace. That is, the electron and the proton go out of dimension which is the reason that the car tire rim can become merged with the tree. The ramifications of this magnetic vortex generator are enormous. It means develop-

3

ing new types of crystals through interdimensional merging which will be needed in the development of these spacecraft and their crystal rotors. It means the possibility of teleporting spacecraft through hyperspace over distances of light years using the new folding space waveguides. It means light-weight or inertia-less spacecraft which can be accelerated at hundreds of thousands of g's. It means the ability to lift extraordinary loads in construction work. It means surgery-less medical tables where tumors can be pulled directly out of the patient's body.

[0029] 11. Because we have a magnetic spring, then there is some resonant frequency at which the coil can be operated in order to create a large spacetime distortion. It is this distortion that creates the wormhole into hyperspace. From this it follows that the wormhole attaches to a low pressure region with a magnetic monopole. Because pressure is linear mass times the speed of light squared divided by area, a low pressure signifies a low speed of light and less dense matter. What this means is that opposite polarity spacetime curvature at two ends of an electrode will produce a voltage along the electrode, effectively creating a power supply. The reason for this is that spacetime curvature, as shown by Einstein's General Theory of Relativity equation $G_{\alpha\beta} = 8\pi T_{\alpha\beta}$, is equal to the square of the electromagnetic fields in the stress-energy tensor T. So the curvature on the ends of the electrode appear as voltages and the system acts as a battery supply to power the spacecraft.

[0030] 12. The other characteristic of the magnetic vortex generator is that it can pull objects out of dimension allowing the object to apparently move through solid walls. The object doesn't actually move through the wall because the object is not in the same dimension as the wall; it just appears that way. Moving out of dimension and then back again on the other side of the wall would effectively move the object through the wall for all intents and purposes.

[0031] 13. The tetrahedron diagram is a physics diagram which plots the natural logarithm of mass to the natural logarithm of wavelength. The product of mass times wavelength is equal to Planck's constant divided by the speed of light. So the product of the electron mass times its wavelength is equal to the proton mass times its wavelength is equal to the Planck mass times the Planck wavelength. The Planck wavelength is the bottom dimensional limit of the universe. We live in the Planck box which is bounded by the Planck wavelength and Planck mass. Outside this box is hyperspace.

[0032] 14. Because logarithms sum, the sum of the log of the mass plus the log of the wavelength is a constant sum. Thus the electron and proton and Planck mass slide on a 45° line known as the base constant which is equal at the axes to the log of Planck's constant divided by the speed of light. Planck's constant is measured in joule-sec so that multiplying it by the frequency 1/second of light gives the energy of the photon particle.

[0033] 15. Planck's constant is equal to the Planck wavelength times the Planck mass times the speed of light. The 45° base constant is Planck's constant divided by the speed of light, which means that the speed of light cancels out top and bottom, leaving the area of the Planck box as the value of the base constant. Hyperspace has a low linear mass compared to our dimension. Therefore, Planck's constant is reduced when this energy enters our dimension through the

wormhole created by the generator. And the base constant is also so reduced. In terms of logs, this means that the 45° base line becomes more negative and moves to the right on the diagram. As it does so, the base line intersects the electron at the Planck wavelength which is the separation point between space and hyperspace. That is, the electron moves out of dimension. Because the electron and proton are one and the same particle, as shown in reference tetrahedron diagram tet0565, the proton and hence the entire atom is taken out of dimension as well.

[0034] 16. All of this can be seen more easily graphically on the tetrahedron diagram itself, referring to reference tetrahedron diagram tet3025. The 45° line which intersects the electron at point (b) is the base constant for our dimension. As you can see, this base line intersects the horizontal axis at a value of −95.91546344 which is the log of Planck's constant h divided by the speed of light. Because Planck's constant is proportional to the linear mass, it is reduced in value by the low density hyperspace energy and, in terms of logs, becomes more negative. This moves the base line to the right at a value of around minus **105**. The new base line intersects the electron at point (a) which is located on the Planck wavelength that is the boundary between space and hyperspace. Thus the electron at point (a) goes out of dimension.

[0035] 17. It was inferred previously that a negative spring constant meant a negative mass was produced by the wormhole generator. This can actually be calculated using Einstein's General Theory of Relativity. The calculation starts with the g metric tensor which is a spacetime measurement of distance in terms of time t, radius r, horizontal angle θ and length z. This 4 by 4 matrix is shown in **FIG. 9** where the diagonal line has a signature in cylindrical coordinates of values equal to $\{-1, 1, r^2, 1\}$. All the other terms of the matrix are zero except for the magnetic fields in the two coils. Because the field is changing sinusoidally with time in the theta direction, the field has to go into the $\{t, \theta\}$ and $\{\theta, t\}$ slots of the matrix. Because the field in the inner coil is in the negative direction compared to the outer coil, and including a 90° phase shift between the two fields, a suitable magnetic field function would be B $(\cos(\theta)-\sin(\theta))$.

[0036] 18. Using a general relativity software package, Einstein's G curvature tensor can be calculated for this particular metric. The first term G t in the upper left hand slot in the corner is the mass term for the tensor. All the other terms are either electromagnetic fluxes or pressure terms involving the squares of the fields.

[0037] 19. Referring to **FIG. 10, a** plot of the mass as a function around a small circle shows that two negative mass spikes occur around the circumference of the circle. Because the radius is almost zero, the two spikes are actually coincident.

[0038] 20. This next section shows the electrical system used to drive the magnetic vortex generator. Referring to **FIG. 11,** the system is driven by a sinusoidal voltage source (A) into a 1:1 turns isolation transformer (B). The voltage is stepped up into the range of thousands of volts using a step-up hi-pot transformer (C). The first loop consists of a direct current blocking capacitor (D), a transformer choke (E), a variable inductance (G) and the current in the loop (F). The variable inductance is a coil winding on a toroidal core

wound with thousandth-inch thick SuperMalloy tape. This coil acts as a magnetic switch due to its variable permeability.

[0039] 21. Referring to the accompanying drawing in FIG. 12, the slope of the BH curve is actually the permeability of the core. At point (a) on the curve, the slope is very low and therefore the permeability is very small. The resistance of the coil is the frequency of the current times the inductance of the coil. If the permeability is small, then the inductance is low, which means that the coil resistance is low initially. With a low resistance in the coil, current (F) flows through the winding rather easily. Then the coil goes from point (a) to point (b) where the permeability and resistance increase. This change in resistance from a low to a high value dumps the magnetic energy into capacitor (H). Then the non-linear coil saturates between points (b) and (c) where again the coil has a small slope and the coil resistance switches to a low value. Capacitor (D) then dumps its charge (I) through coil (G) producing a large voltage spike in the input and output winding of transformer toroidal coil (J). The magnetic flux in coil (J) then produces a voltage spike in coils (L) and (M) of the magnetic vortex generator. The frequency of oscillation of the generator is determined by capacitor (K) and the overall inductance of the two coils. The diagram shows that the winding is non-linear and in opposite directions going from outer coil to the inner coil.

[0040] 22. Frequency of oscillation has to be kept under 20 MHz in order to create a soft wormhole that connects to low pressure regions of hyperspace. The pressure regions of hyperspace are similar to the pressure produced by a dam holding water. The upper surface of the water, where there is no water pressure, is analogous to the black void into which our universe is expanding. In the middle of the dam, there is a region just above us having a lower water pressure which corresponds to the low density hyperspace energy. This analogy is not perfect because the many frequencies of hyperspace are quantized, as we know from quantum physics, rather than being a continuous spectrum of lower and lower frequencies down to the zero frequency of the black void.

What I claim as my invention is

1. A magnetic vortex generator which can generate negative mass according to Einstein's General Theory of Relativity, which is a tested and proven theory. As a result of this theory, it can be shown that negative mass is required to create a stable wormhole between space and hyperspace. Without the negative mass, the throat would close.

2. The generator consists of two solenoids wound with a common wire in opposite directions on two separate toroidal curved-sheet transformer laminates of differing radii. The smaller solenoid is mounted along the centerline of the larger solenoid.

3. According to Maxwell's equations, said geometrical and magnetic arrangement produces linear bucking electric fields along the centerline of said coils. Since curvature and the square of the electromagnetic fields are one and the same phenomenon according to Einstein's spacetime curvature tensor $G=8\pi\,T$, this resonance of the electric fields causes a resonance of the spacetime curvature and the opening of the wormhole.

4. Due to the fact that the magnetic flux travels within the laminations at a curvature equal to the inverse of the radius squared, each coil produces a spring constant which depends

on the current, lamination area, magnetic field strength and the individual curvature of each coil.

5. Due to the fact that the flux travels in opposite directions in each solenoid, the spring constant of the outer coil is positive, and the spring constant of the inner coil is negative. These two spring constants, one positive and one negative, add in parallel to create a negative spring constant for the generator. Because the frequency of resonance is equal to the square root of the negative spring constant divided by the negative mass, the resonant frequency is positive real.

6. This process of creating and keeping open the wormhole allows low density hyperspace energy to enter our dimension. Because the linear mass is lower, Planck's constant, equal to the Planck mass times the Planck wavelength times the speed of light, is reduced to such an extent that the electron is moved out of dimension. Because the electron and proton are one and the same particle, when considering a path through space and hyperspace, the proton is also moved out of dimension. Thus this process of moving the atom in and out of dimension using the magnetic vortex generator has the ability to create cold-welded crystals, new types of materials and new ways to cold solder one disparate material to another.

7. As a consequence of said process, highly relativistic electromagnetic fields can be created because the velocity of light has been reduced considerably. These fields than can be used to produce life in the new class of electromagnetic propulsion vehicles.

8. As a consequence of said process, refrigeration systems can be created because negative energy cools rather than heats.

9. As a consequence of said process, power supplies can be made such that a differential spacetime curvature on the ends of a carbon electrode can create a differential voltage similar to a regular chemical battery.

10. As a consequence of this process, surgery-less medical tables can be fabricated whereby tumors can be pulled directly from the patient's body.

11. As a consequence of this process, the negative mass produced by the generator can offset the mass of a spacecraft to create a mass-less, inertia-less vehicle which can accelerate at hundreds of thousands of g's.

12. As a consequence of this process, the folding space waveguide becomes a reality whereby hyperspace energy, which has a low spring constant, can be easily folded and curved using powerful, relativistic electromagnetic fields. Spacecraft will be able to teleport themselves out-of-dimension over huge distances measured in terms of light-years.

13. Because the wormhole opens up an interdimensional connection to hyperspace having a magnetic monopole, a radial magnetic field is created. As a consequence of this process, a changing magnetic monopole field crossed with a changing electric field can produce a toroidal electromagnetic flux around the circular hull of the spacecraft. As a consequence of the merger of these two fields, a spacetime curvature G_{zz} is produced over the hull of the spacecraft which creates a tension or lift force which enables the spacecraft to ascend, hover or descend.

14. An electrical system, comprised of a variable frequency generator and amplifier, an isolation transformer and voltage step-up transformer, drives a non-linear inductance which switches on and off the current in the output circuit in such a manner as to produce large voltage spikes through

magnetic vortex generator. The generator responds by pro-ducing two large negative mass spikes close to the centerline of the two coils.

15. The winding on each coil of the generator has a non-linear spacing to enhance the magnetic field and to reduce the interwinding coil capacitance.

16. The ratio of the radius of the small coil to that of the larger coil is 1/3, which is the magic ratio in physics. This creates a spring constant that is proportional to 8/9. The square of the cosine of the tetrahedral angle of 19.47° is equal to this ratio. Also the ratio of the area-to-volume ratio of the circumscribing sphere of a tetrahedron to the area-to-volume ratio of the tetrahedron is also 1/3. And the corners of the tetrahedron touch the circumscribing sphere at 19.47°. All the large volcanoes and vortices on Earth, Mars, Jupiter, Uranus and Neptune are located at this latitude. Thus this invention is more effective in developing a wormhole because it is tuned geometrically to the tetrahedral geometry of space.

*   *   *   *   *

(19) **United States**

(12) **Patent Application Publication** (10) Pub. No.: **US 2006/0071122 A1**

St. Clair (43) **Pub. Date:** **Apr. 6, 2006**

(54) **FULL BODY TELEPORTATION SYSTEM**

(76) Inventor: **John Quincy St. Clair**, San Juan, PR (US)

Correspondence Address:
JOHN ST. CLAIR
4A
52 KINGS COURT
SAN JUAN, PR 00911 (US)

(57) **ABSTRACT**

A pulsed gravitational wave wormhole generator system that teleports a human being through hyperspace from one location to another.
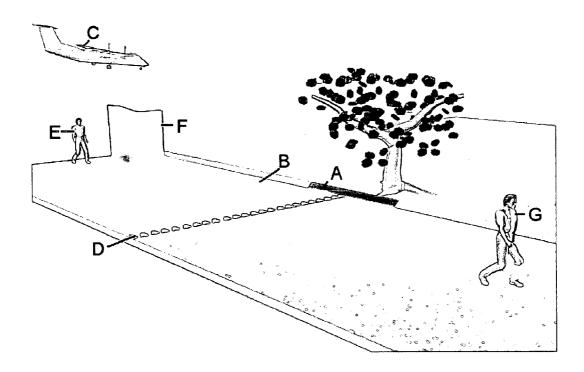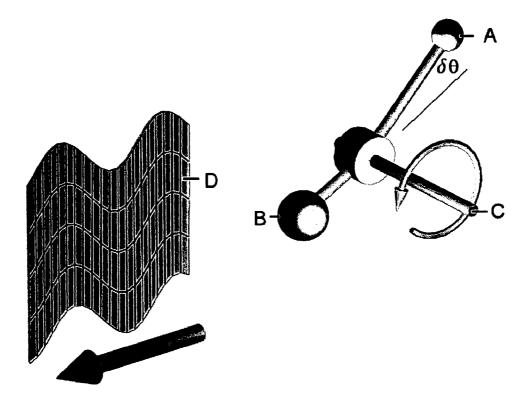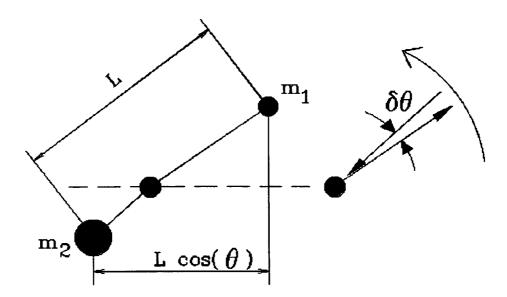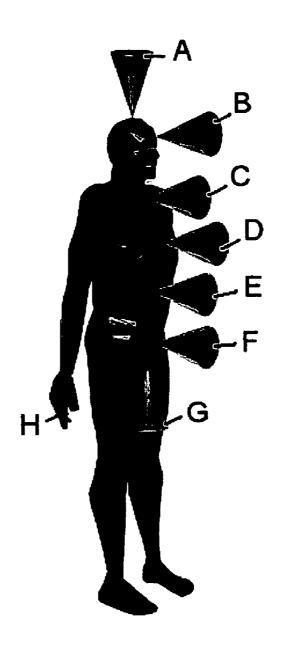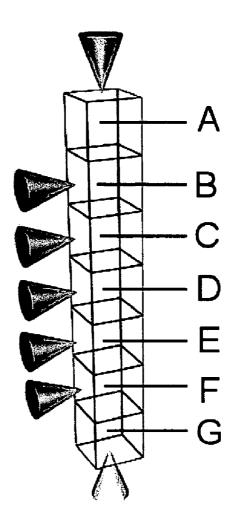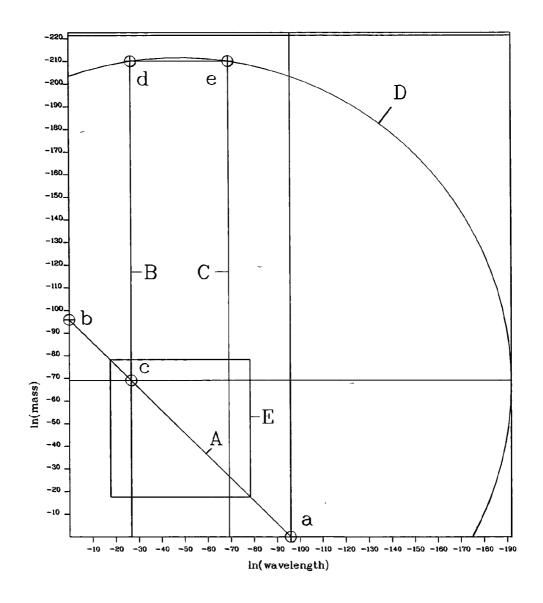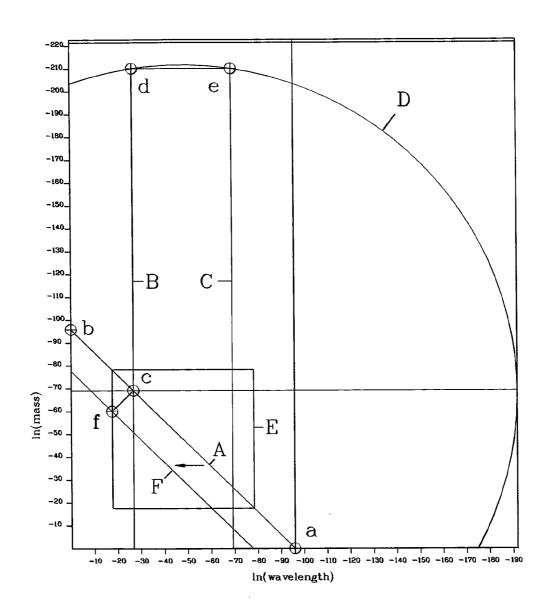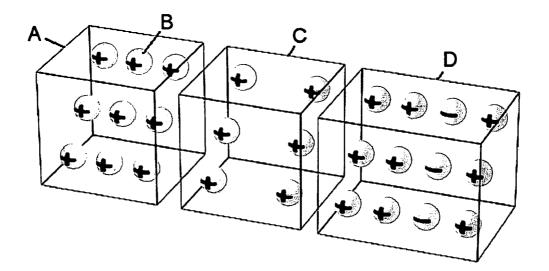
Figure 1

Figure 2
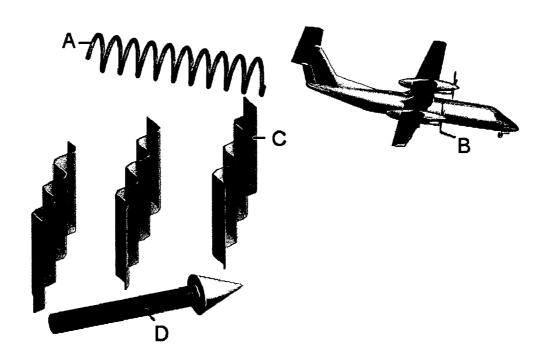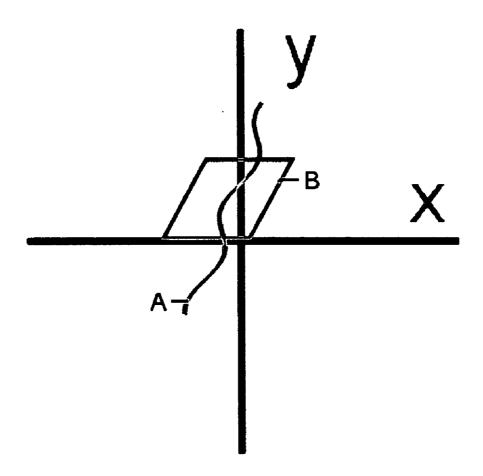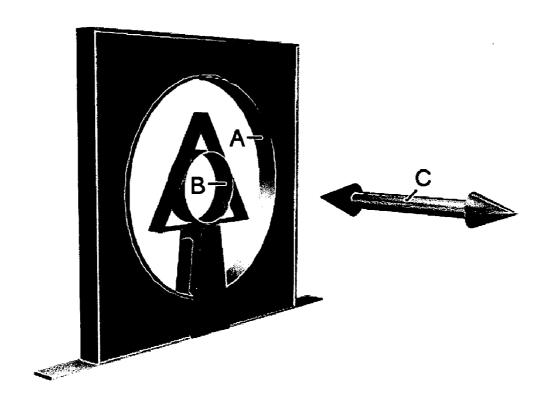
Figure 3
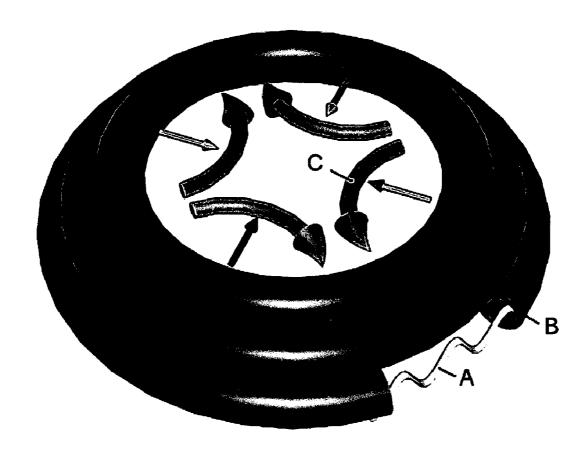
Figure 4
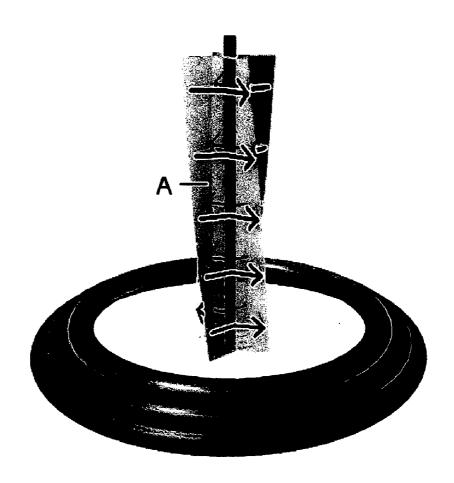
Figure 5

Figure 6

Figure 7

Figure 8

Figure 9
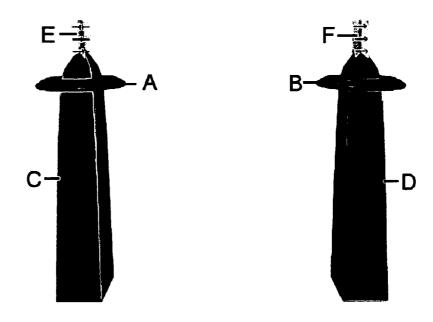
Figure 10

Figure 11

Figure 12

Figure 13

Figure 14

Figure 15
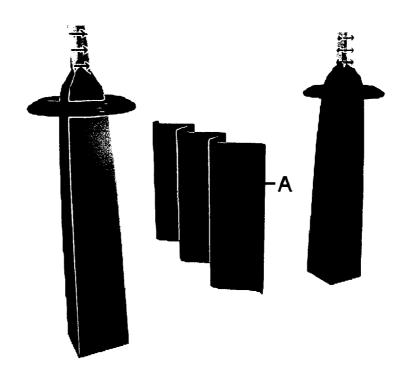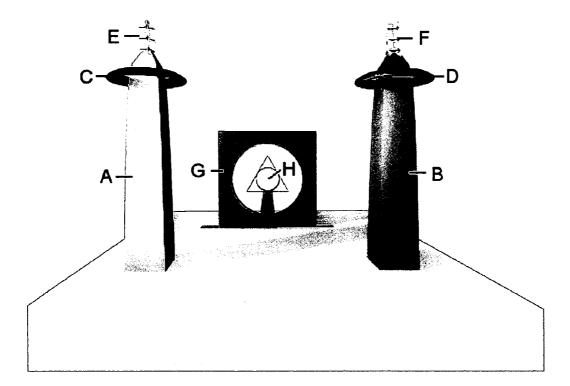
Figure 16

FULL BODY TELEPORTATION SYSTEM

BRIEF SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0001] This invention is a system that teleports a human being through hyperspace from one location to another using a pulsed gravitational wave traveling through hyperspace.

BACKGROUND OF THE INVENTION

[0002] The basis for this invention is an event, referring to **FIG. 1**, occurring on May 2, 2004, in which the inventor ("he") personally experienced a full-body teleportation while walking to the bus stop (A) along a road (B) that runs perpendicular to the nearby commercial airport runways where planes are landing. There is a wide iron grating (D) for water drainage that crosses the road at the center of the bus stop. The grating width is such that one has to make a concerted effort to jump across it in order to get from one side to the other. Approximately 50 meters from the iron grating, he (E) felt a vertical wave (F), similar to a flag waving in the breeze, traveling down the street toward the bus stop. The wave velocity was about 1 meter per second, which was slightly faster than his walking speed. In the next instance, he (G) found himself down the street near the corner of the next block. Realizing that he had passed the bus stop, he turned around to see the iron grating approximately 50 meters up the street in back of him. Because there was no recollection of having jumped across the iron grating nor of having passed the bus stop's yellow marker line, he realized that he had been teleported a distance of 100 meters while moving along with the traveling wave. It was obvious that the wave was pulsed because the front edge overtook the inventor, moved with him momentarily, and then the back edge of wave left him as it moved on down the street. While contemplating this sequence of events, he then looked up and saw in a span of a few seconds a twin-turboprop airplane (C) in the distance crossing above the road while making a shallow descent in order to land at the airport.

[0003] It took a number of days in order to understand this sequence of events. The explanation involves knowledge of a wide range of subjects such as gravitation physics, hyperspace physics, wormhole electromagnetic theory and experimentation, quantum physics, and the nature of the human energy field.

[0004] It is obvious from the above scenario that the airplane momentarily crossing perpendicular to the road generates the aforementioned pulse. Because the airplane has an engine on each wing, there are two propellers which conceivably are rotating out-of-phase with each other. That is, the blade of one propeller could be pointing up and the equivalent blade on the other engine could be pointing in a slightly different direction. Notice that the tip of the blade traces out a helix as the plane is landing.

[0005] In gravitation physics, referring to **FIG. 2**, it is known that two masses of mass m1 and m2 (A,B) attached by lever arms slightly offset by an angle $\delta\theta$ along the radial direction to the rotating shaft (C), will produce a gravitational wave (D) traveling perpendicular to the shaft. The mass and wave are referred to as the source and receptor respectively. Referring to a side view looking along the shaft **FIG. 3**, the product of the mass m times the angular acceleration a is a constant such that m1a1 is equal to m2a2. The distance between the masses is length L, which makes

an angle θ with the horizontal axis. The difference in time of travel to the receptor gives rise to a difference in phase $\delta\theta$ equal to the angular velocity ω of the rotating shaft times the length L times the cosine of the angle θ

$$\delta\theta = \omega L \cos(\theta)$$

[0006] At the receptor, the amplitude of the wave is equal to the mass times the acceleration times the phase difference divided by the radius r to the receptor

$$A = \frac{m_1 a_1}{r}\delta\theta \approx \left(\frac{m\omega L\sin(\theta)}{r}\right)(\omega L\cos(\theta)) = \frac{m\omega^2 L^2\sin(2\theta)}{r}$$

Even though the turboprop airplane engines have a high rotational speed and a large separation distance between masses, the gravitational wave which is produced is small and not noticed. The problem is that the gravitational constant G in this dimension has such a small value equal to the speed of light c squared divided by the linear mass Ω of the universe

$$G = \frac{c^2}{\Omega} = \frac{(299792458 \text{ m/s})^2}{1.346812891\cdot10^{27} \text{ kg/m}} = 6.673200002\cdot10^{-11} \frac{\text{m}^3}{\text{kgs}^2}$$

[0007] On the other hand, a gravitational wave traveling in hyperspace would be magnified enormously due to the face that the linear mass is so small. The magnitude of the gravitational constant in hyperspace can be estimated in the following manner. At the beginning of the 20th century, a man's parents were dying of tuberculosis. With their permission, he placed them and their beds on weighing scales. When each one passed away, each scale registered a drop in mass equal to 0.071 kilograms. This is the mass of the hyperspace energy being which resides in the physical body. Because hyperspace is co-dimensional with our dimension, the energy being interpenetrates the body and controls its movement.

[0008] Referring to **FIG. 4**, a human being has seven vortices (A through G) which are aligned along the centerline of the body. Each vortex is actually a co-gravitational field K which causes a pendulum placed in the field to spin in circles. For this reason, the K field has units of inverse seconds similar to an angular velocity. The vortex transports energy from our dimension to the energy being located in hyperspace. The gravitational field g and the co-gravitational field K are equivalent gravitationally to the electric E field and the magnetic B field found in electromagnetism. The equivalent gravitational solution to an electromagnetic problem can be obtained by substituting the following gravitational constants for the electromagnetic constants

Electromagnetic	Gravitational
q (charge)	m (mass)
ρ (volume charge density)	ρ (volume mass density)
σ (surface charge density)	σ (surface mass density)
λ (line charge density)	λ (line mass density)
J (convection current density)	J (mass current density)

-continued

Electromagnetic	Gravitational
E (electric field)	g (gravitational field)
B (magnetic field)	K (co-gravitational field)
ϵ_0 (permittivity of space)	$-\frac{1}{4}\pi G$
μ_0 (permeability of space)	$-4\pi G/c^2$
$-\frac{1}{4}\pi\epsilon_0$ or $-\mu_0\,c^2/4\pi$	G (gravitational constant)

[0009] Referring to **FIG. 5**, each vortex is connected through the pineal gland by light cords to a separate hyperspace quantum well having its own frequency and dimension. The reason for this separation is that the conical spiritual eye, attached to vortex B, has to have its own energy structure which is different from vortex (A) which is connected to the quantum energy field in which the mental processes are developed. Due to the high speed of light in our dimension, the quantum wells are the size appropriate to molecules and atoms. In hyperspace, where the speed of light is one meter per second, the quantum wells are huge and can be manipulated. This manipulation has shown that the quantum wells are in the shape of a cube about a meter on a side. This makes the whole structure about seven meters tall for a volume of seven cubic meters. Thus the mass density ρ of hyperspace is about

$$\rho_h = \frac{.071 \text{ kg}}{7 \text{ m}^3} = .01 \ \frac{\text{kg}}{\text{m}^3}$$

which per unit area is the same value. Therefore the hyperspace gravitational constant is equal to

$$G_h = \frac{c^2}{\Omega_h} = \frac{\left(1 \ \frac{\text{m}}{\text{s}}\right)^2}{.01 \text{ kg/m}} = 100 \ \frac{\text{m}^3}{\text{kgs}^2}$$

The enormous magnification of the gravitational constant is therefore of the order of

$$\frac{G_h}{G} = \frac{100}{6.6732 \cdot 10^{-11}} \approx 1.5 \cdot 10^{12}$$

The question is how does this amplified gravitational wave created by the rotating propellers and turbines get into hyperspace from our dimension?

[0010] The answer comes from experiments done using the ancient Chinese form of breathing known as Chi Kung. Using this breathing technique, we have been able to levitate the human body over six feet in the air. The internal temperature of the stomach is around 200 degrees Fahrenheit. By simultaneously squeezing the diaphragm to bring hot air up through the lungs, and breathing through the nose to bring cold air down, rotating vortices are generated in the lung passages when these two air masses meet and twist around each other as depicted in the famous Yin-Yang diagram. Because the lung has variable diameter passages from the large diameter at the throat to the final small air sacs, there is a spectrum of rotating frequencies.

[0011] From quantum physics it is known that if there is a temperature fluctuation occurring among a group of harmonic oscillators in the environment, then Planck's reduced constant $\hbar$ is increased by the cotangent of the constant times the frequency ω of the oscillator divided by twice Boltzmann's constant k times the temperature T

$$\hbar = \hbar \coth\!\left(\frac{\hbar\omega_n}{2kT}\right)$$

[0012] The effect of increasing Planck's constant, referring to **FIG. 6**, can be seen in the tetrahedron diagram. This diagram, of which there are now over 4000, plots the natural logarithm of mass on the vertical axis versus the natural logarithm of wavelength on the horizontal axis. In terms of mathematics, it is a subspace logarithmic manifold which projects geometrically the physics constants into our **4D** spacetime dimension. That is, it is the geometry of the tetrahedron circumscribed by the sphere that determines the mass of the proton and electron. The mass of the electron times its wavelength is equal to the mass of the proton times its wavelength which in turn is equal to Planck's constant h divided by the speed of light c

$$m_e\lambda_e = m_p\lambda_p = \frac{h}{c}$$

Taking the natural logarithm of the above equation shows that the mass plus the wavelength is equal to what is termed the base constant

$$\ln(m_e) + \ln(\lambda_e) = \ln\!\left(\frac{h}{c}\right) = -95.91546344$$

which is represented in **FIG. 6** by the 45 degree line (A) from point (a) on the horizontal axis to the vertical axis at point (b). The electron is located at point (c) which is the intersection of the electron wavelength (B) with line (A). The electron wavelength (B) reflects off the sphere (D) at points (d) and (e) and returns along line (C) as the electron mass. As shown in tetrahedron diagram tet0565, stored in the Library of Congress, the clockwise path of the electron transitions into the counter-clockwise path of the proton showing that the electron and proton are one and the same particle. Because the electron and proton travel in opposite directions along the path, they have the same charge but of opposite sign.

[0013] Our dimension is represented by Planck box (E) which is bounded by the Planck mass and the Planck wavelength. The Planck mass is equal to the linear mass of the universe times the Planck length which is the bottom limit of our dimension. The Planck wavelength is 2π times the Planck length. Notice that the electron is located within the Planck box.

[0014] Referring to **FIG. 7**, if there is an increase in Planck's constant due to the temperature fluctuations among the harmonic oscillators, the 45 degree base line (A) moves to the left on the tetrahedron diagram as shown by line (F).

Because of the increase in the base constant, there is a corresponding increase in the electron mass and wavelength. The electron moves from point (c) to point (f) which places it at the edge of the Planck box (F) which is the boundary between space and hyperspace. At point (f), the electron is essentially no longer in our dimension.

[0015] Referring to **FIG. 8**, imagine a box (A) filled with nine electron oscillators (B). If Planck's constant is increased near the three oscillators in the middle, these electrons will leave this dimension. This leaves six oscillators as shown in the box (C). However, box (C) is the equivalent of box (D) in which there are still nine positive mass oscillators together with 3 negative mass oscillators. Thus there is an accumulation of negative energy $(-\rho)$ when information is lost from the environment to another dimension.

[0016] Dr. Kip Thorne, who co-authored the book *Gravitation* with Dr. Archibald Wheeler of Princeton University, has shown in a General Relativity spacetime curvature calculation that negative energy is required to open and stabilize the throat of a wormhole between space and hyperspace. The accumulation of negative energy in the aforementioned example generates wormholes between into hyperspace. Hyperspace has a low energy density because of the reduced speed of light in that dimension. Ordinarily, energy would not flow from hyperspace to space because space has a higher potential than the potential of hyperspace. This, of course, is the reason that the body vortices can flow energy into the energy field of the human being who is located in hyperspace. By creating negative energy, the potential becomes reversed such that low density hyperspace energy flows into our dimension as seen by the positive head

$$PE = \rho_{\text{hyperspace}} - (-\rho_{\text{space}}) = +2\rho$$

The low-density energy fills the body which allows a human being to float upwards like a helium balloon as verified by Chi Kung breathing as well as spinning on a motorized platform known as the Chakra Vortex Accelerator. The latter device resulted in the first mechanical means to produce anti-gravity.

[0017] The process of creating spinning thermal fluctuations is the same as found in the hot air vortices created by the jet airplanes landing at the airport near the road where the full-body teleportation occurred. Large vortices are created over the wing of the airplane at the same time that the turbine engines are spinning hot vortices into relatively cold air. These conditions produce wormholes between space and hyperspace. It takes a twin turboprop airplane landing behind the jet to generate the gravitational wave in the region where the wormholes have formed. The gravitational wave then traverses the wormholes into hyperspace, becoming highly amplified due to the change in linear mass and speed of light. Because the propeller blades are co-linear with the road, the gravitational wave travels in the direction along the road where it was encountered by the inventor.

[0018] From experiments with cavitating bubbles (see patent application Cavitating Oil Hyperspace Energy Generator), it was found that it is possible to produce a wormhole if the surfaces of the bubble collapse asymmetrically. A symmetric collapse of a spherical bubble produces enormous spacetime curvature distortions. An asymmetric collapse, using a magnetic field to distort the collapse, pro-

duces, in addition to the same severe spacetime distortions, negative energy as the bubble collapses. Due to some General Relativity considerations, the wormhole that is created starts rotating in a manner similar to the beacon light produced by a lighthouse.

[0019] Referring to **FIG. 9**, due to the forward helical motion (A) of the propellers (B) as the airplane crosses the road, the pulsed gravitational wave (C) is skewed backward at an angle (D). Due to the wormholes created by the presence of thermal vorticity fluctuations generated by the wing and turbines of the airplane, this skewed wave moves into hyperspace where it is highly magnified and detected by the inventor.

[0020] Referring to top view **FIG. 10**, the gravitational wave (A) causes a skewed compression and expansion of the hyperspace quantum wells (B) which constitute the human energy being. Due to this asymmetric distortion in the xy-plane, the quantum wells take the physical body out of dimension as long as the wave pulse is traveling with the human energy field. Once the back edge of the gravitational wave moves on past the quantum wells, the body is then brought back into dimension.

SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0021] It is the object of this invention to teleport a human being from one location to another by creating a pulsed gravitational wave traveling through hyperspace that asymmetrically compresses and expands the quantum wells of the human energy being. This spacetime curvature distortion of the hyperspace quantum wells pulls the physical body out of dimension such that the human being is teleported along with the wave. As the pulsed wave moves on past the quantum wells, the human is brought back into dimension at some distant location. The invention requires (1) a device that will generate a wormhole between space and hyperspace, and (2) a device that will generate a gravitational wave which can be inserted through the wormhole.

[0022] Referring to **FIG. 11**, a magnetic vortex wormhole generator has already been developed which generates a wormhole between space and hyperspace as described in a previous patent application entitled Magnetic Vortex Wormhole Generator. Using this generator, it was found that smoke blown through one side of the coil does not appear on the other side of cylindrical coil. The smoke flows through the wormhole and appears in a hyperspace co-dimension. It was this experiment that resulted in making first contact with the androids of the Grey aliens who told me, in a remote viewing session, that "We saw you blowing smoke into hyperspace."

[0023] The wormhole generator consists of two concentric cylindrical coils (A,B), one of larger radius than the other, made of thin transformer iron laminate wrapped in opposite directions with one continuous wire driven by a sinusoidal current. The solenoidal coil generates a magnetic field through the laminate. Because the electrical current flows in opposite directions at different radii through the two windings, bucking electric fields (C) are created along the centerline of the generator. These radially-offset magnetic fields and bucking electric fields, as shown by a calculation using Einstein's General Theory of Relativity, generate both an enormous spiking spacetime curvature and negative energy

at small radius along the centerline where the wormhole is formed. The gravitational wave generator is then coupled to this wormhole generator.

[0024] Referring to **FIG. 12**, it is known from gravitation physics that injecting an electromagnetic wave (A) into a hollow toroidal waveguide (B) produces a hyperbolic space-time curvature stress (C) in the plane of the waveguide. The tips of the arrows indicate compression and the tail of the arrows indicate expansion or stretching of spacetime. The reason for this spacetime curvature is because the waveguide forces the electromagnetic wave to curve around and travel in a circle. Spacetime has to compensate for this toroidal-generated stress by creating hyperbolic lines of stress in the inner plane of the toroid so that the overall spacetime curvature is zero. For a greater gravitational effect, three toroidal waveguides, phased 120 degrees apart, are used to seal off the curvature.

[0025] Referring to **FIG. 13**, the three toroids create a rotating, twisting, vertical propagating gravitational field (A) through the centerline of the toroids provided that the period of the electromagnetic wave is twice the period of the gravitational wave. This phase relationship is adjusted by selecting the correct radius for the frequency of the mono-chromatic wave.

[0026] In order to effectively use this gravitational wave, referring to **FIG. 14**, three phased toroidal waveguides (A,B) are mounted at the top of each of two identical square granite obelisks (C,D). The two obelisks are offset by a short distance between them. As the vertical gravitational wave rotates around along the vertical axis inside the obelisk, the edges of the square obelisks are compressed and expanded such as to create two cylindrical asymmetric gravitational waves traveling radially outward.

[0027] Referring to **FIG. 15**, these waves meet to form a plane gravitational wave (A) which travels down the centerline between the two obelisks.

[0028] Referring to **FIG. 16**, the full body teleportation system consists of the twin granite obelisks (A,B) on which are mounted near the top of each the toroidal waveguides (C,D) which produce the pulsed gravitational waves (E,F) that run the length of the obelisks. Because the gravitational wave is rotating inside the obelisk, the granite stone undergoes a very small asymmetrical compression and expansion. A cylindrical gravitational wave propagates out from each obelisk such that along the centerline between the two there is generated a plane gravitational wave. This wave enters the wormhole (H) created by the magnetic vortex generator which is located a short distance from and parallel to the obelisks. The wave is amplified by a factor of almost 10^{13} when it enters the hyperspace co-dimension.

A BRIEF DESCRIPTION OF THE DRAWINGS

[0029] **FIG. 1**. Perspective view of site where full-body teleportation occurred.

[0030] **FIG. 2**. Perspective view of gravitational wave generator.

[0031] **FIG. 3**. Planar view of gravitational wave generator.

[0032] **FIG. 4**. Perspective view of seven vortices of human energy being.

[0033] **FIG. 5**. Perspective view of seven large quantum wells of human energy being.

[0034] **FIG. 6**. Tetrahedron diagram showing Planck's constant and electron.

[0035] **FIG. 7**. Tetrahedron diagram showing electron moving out of dimension.

[0036] **FIG. 8**. Perspective view showing production of negative energy.

[0037] **FIG. 9**. Perspective view of skewed gravitational wave produced by propellers.

[0038] **FIG. 10**. Planar view of skewed quantum wells deformed by gravitational wave.

[0039] **FIG. 11**. Perspective view of magnetic vortex wormhole generator.

[0040] **FIG. 12**. Perspective view of hyperbolic lines of stress generated by toroidal waveguide.

[0041] **FIG. 13**. Perspective view of rotating, twisting, propagating gravitational wave generated by toroidal waveguides.

[0042] **FIG. 14**. Perspective view of toroidal waveguides attached to obelisks.

[0043] **FIG. 15**. Perspective view of gravitational wave generated by obelisks.

[0044] **FIG. 16**. Perspective view of magnetic vortex wormhole generator and obelisk gravitational wave generator.

DETAILED DESCRIPTION OF THE INVENTION

[0045] 1. The obelisks are quarried out of granite stone and cut with a large-diameter diamond saw that is used in highway construction. The beveled piece at the top is cut separately and cemented in place. A tapered aluminum bracket holds the toroids in place.

[0046] 2. The electronics for the magnetic vortex generator are similar to that used in the patent application Magnetic Vortex Wormhole Generator.

[0047] 3. The electronics for the toroidal waveguides is the familiar stub and coaxial cable driven by an amplifier and pulsed variable-frequency generator.

I claim:

1. A full body teleportation system consisting of:

generating a pulsed gravitational wave which propagates through a magnetic vortex wormhole generator; and

generating a wormhole with the magnetic vortex generator whereby the pulsed gravitational wave traverses through the wormhole and enters into hyperspace where the wave is enormously magnified due to the lower speed of light in that dimension.

2. The method of claim 1, wherein the step of generating the pulsed gravitational wave comprises:

using two granite stone obelisks;

mounting monochromatic-wave toroidal waveguides on top of each obelisk to create a rotating, twisting, propagating gravitational wave through the vertical axis of each obelisk; and

creating a cylindrical compression and expansion in each obelisk to produce a plane gravitational wave traveling down the centerline between the two obelisks.

3. The method of claim 1, wherein the step of generating a wormhole into hyperspace comprises:

using two concentric cylindrical solenoidal coils of different radii connected by a single wire wrapped in opposite directions on thin iron transformer laminate;

generating bucking electric fields down the centerline of the vortex generator which creates a spacetime curva-ture distortion with negative energy in accordance with Einstein's General Theory of Relativity.

4. A teleportation system comprising:

generating a gravitational wave traveling through hyper-space which interacts with the human energy being; and

pulling the human energy being and physical body out of dimension when interacting with the pulsed gravita-tional wave such that the person is teleported from one location to another through hyperspace and back again into our 4D spacetime dimension.

* * * * *

(19) **United States**

(12) **Patent Application Publication** (10) Pub. No.: **US 2006/0145019 A1**

St. Clair (43) **Pub. Date:** **Jul. 6, 2006**

(54) **TRIANGULAR SPACECRAFT**

(76) Inventor: **John Quincy St. Clair**, San Juan, PR (US)

Correspondence Address:
JOHN ST. CLAIR
52 KINGS COURT, 4A
SAN JUAN, PR 00911 (US)

Publication Classification

(51) **Int. Cl.**
 B64G 1/40 (2006.01)
(52) **U.S. Cl.** **244/171.5**

(57) **ABSTRACT**

A spacecraft having a triangular hull with vertical electrostatic line charges on each corner that produce a horizontal electric field parallel to the sides of the hull. This field, interacting with a plane wave emitted by antennas on the side of the hull, generates a force per volume combining both lift and propulsion.

Figure 1

Figure 2

Figure 3

Figure 4

Figure 5

Figure 6

Figure 7

TRIANGULAR SPACECRAFT

BRIEF SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0001] This invention is a spacecraft having a triangular hull with vertical electrostatic line charges on each corner. The line charges create a horizontal electric field that, together with a plane wave emitted by antennas on the side of the hull, generates a force per volume providing a unique combination of both lift and propulsion.

BACKGROUND OF THE INVENTION

[0002] Referring to **FIG. 1**, the spacecraft has a hull in the shape of an equilateral triangle. A parabolic antenna (E) is centrally located in the bottom of the hull. An array of horizontal slot antennas is located along the side of the hull (A). Each back corner (F,G) has a corner conducting plate which is charged to a positive voltage +V. The forward corner (C) has a conducting plate charged to a negative voltage –V. A motion control hemisphere (D) is located on the bottom surface in each of the three corners.

[0003] Referring to **FIG. 2**, two planes (A,B) intersect at the origin O at an opening angle β. Each plane (x,y) is charged to a voltage V. The potential at point P is determined in polar coordinates {ρφ}. The Laplace equation for the potential Φ in polar coordinates is given by:

$$\frac{1}{\rho}\frac{\partial}{\partial\rho}\left(\rho\frac{\partial\Phi}{\partial\rho}\right) + \frac{1}{\rho^2}\frac{\partial^2\Phi}{\partial\phi^2} = 0$$

Using a separation of variables solution, the potential is given as the product of two functions:

$$\Phi(\rho,\phi)=R(\rho)\Psi(\phi)$$

which when substituted into the Laplace equation becomes:

$$\frac{\rho}{R}\frac{d}{d\rho}\left(\rho\frac{dR}{d\rho}\right) + \frac{1}{\Psi}\frac{d^2\Psi}{d\phi^2} = 0$$

Since the two terns are separately functions of ρ and φ respectively, each one has to be constant with the sum of the constants equal to zero:

$$\frac{\rho}{R}\frac{d}{d\rho}\left(\rho\frac{dR}{d\rho}\right) = v^2 \quad \frac{1}{\Psi}\frac{d^2\Psi}{d\phi^2} = -v^2$$

These two equations have solutions:

$$R(\rho)=a\rho^{v}+b\rho^{-v}$$

$$\Psi(\phi)=A\cos(v\phi)+B\sin(v\phi)$$

The azimuthal angle φ is restricted to a value in the range $0 \leqq \phi \leqq \beta$. The boundary condition is that the potential Φ is equal to V for any radius ρ when φ=0 and φ=β. This means that v has to be an integer value of π so that the sine function is zero:
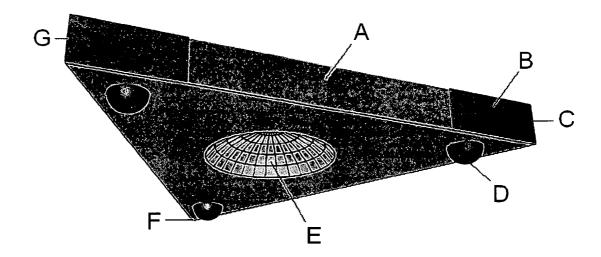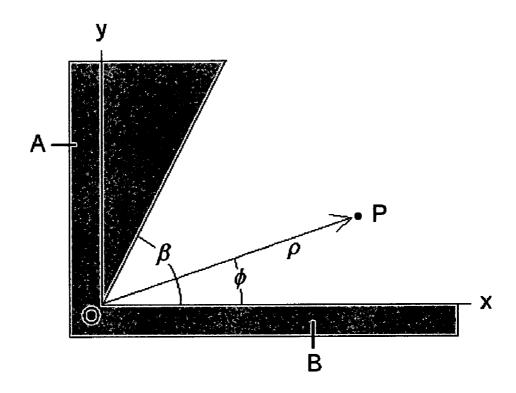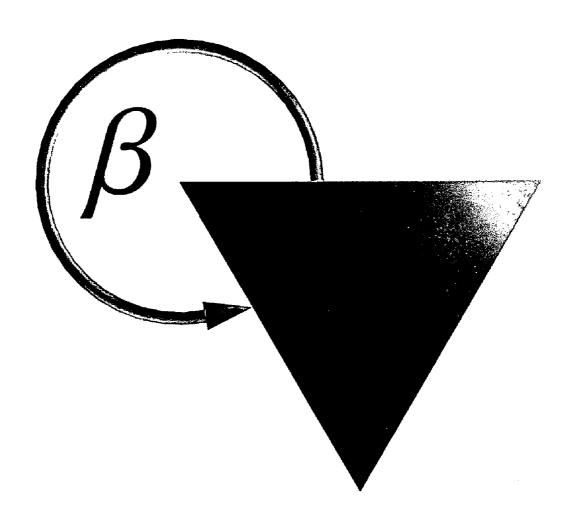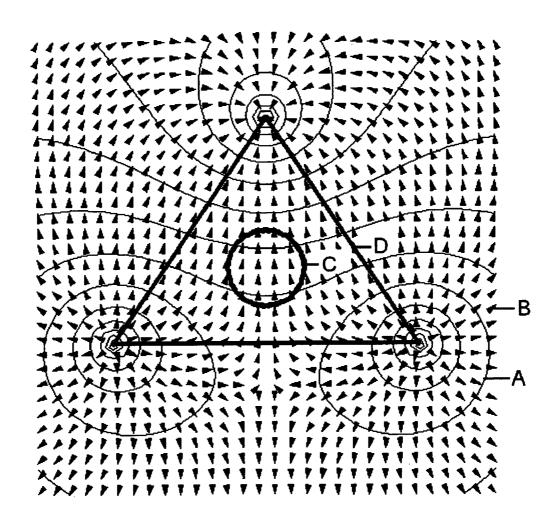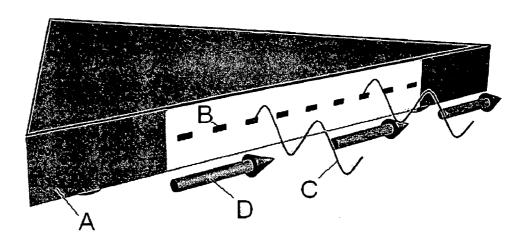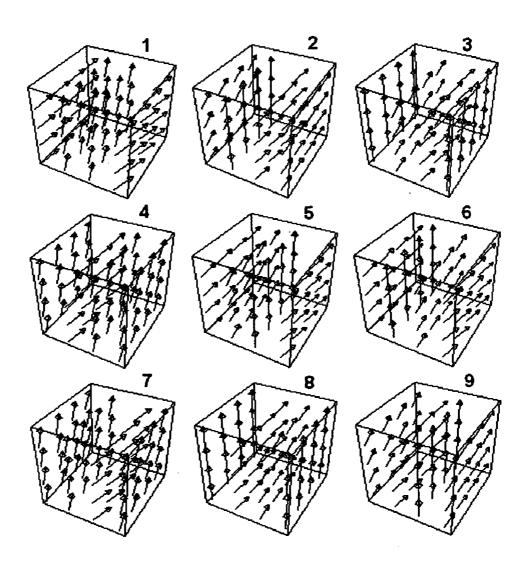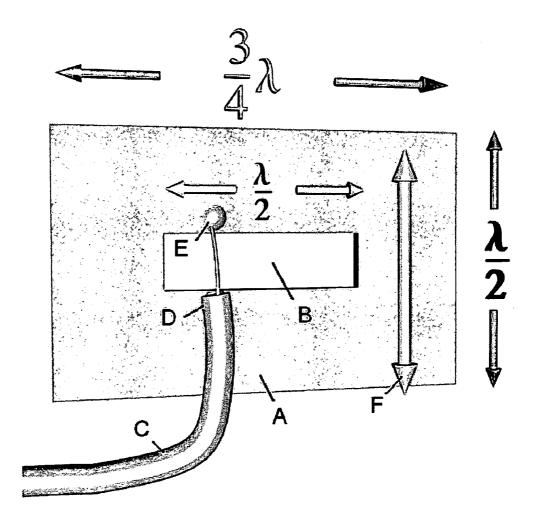
$$\sin(v\beta) = \sin\left(\frac{m\pi}{\beta}\beta\right) = \sin(m\pi) = 0 \quad m = 1, 2 \ldots$$

which in turn means that the coefficient A of the cosine term has to be zero in the solution above. Choosing b=0 makes the general solution for the potential equal to:

$$\Phi(\rho,\phi) = V + \sum_{m=1}^{\infty} a_m\rho^{m\pi/\beta}\sin(m\pi\phi/\beta)$$

which shows that when the angle is zero, the sine is zero and the potential is V. If the angle is β, then there is a multiple of π such that the sine is zero again.

[0004] Because the series involves positive powers of the radius, for small enough ρ, only the first term m=1 in the series is important. Thus around ρ=0, the potential is approximately

$$\Phi(\rho,\phi)\approx V+a_1\rho^{\pi/\beta}\sin(\pi\phi/\beta)$$

[0005] The electric field component is the negative gradient of the potential:

$$E_\phi(\rho, \phi) = -\frac{1}{\rho}\frac{\partial\Phi}{\partial\phi} = -\frac{\pi a_1}{\beta}\rho^{(\pi/\beta)-1}\cos(\pi\phi/\beta)$$

The surface charge distribution σ at φ=0 and φ=β is equal to the electric field perpendicular to the surface times the permittivity of space ϵ_0:

$$\sigma(\rho) = \varepsilon_0 E_\phi(\rho, 0) = -\frac{\varepsilon_0\pi a_1}{\beta}\rho^{\frac{\pi}{\beta}-1}$$

Notice that if angle of intersection β is less than π, then the equation says that there is a very small radius to a positive power which means little charge density accumulation.

[0006] Referring to **FIG. 3**, the value of β, in the case of the triangular hull, is equal to 360° less 60° for a total of 300° or:

$$\beta = \frac{300}{180}\pi = \frac{5}{3}\pi$$

$$\rho^{\frac{\pi}{3\pi}-1} = \frac{1}{\rho^{\frac{2}{5}}}$$

which says that there is a charge density singularity to the two fifths power for small radius. Thus, the corner plates on the hull create a huge line charge density along the sharp vertical corner edge. The equation for the potential of a line charge density is given as:

$$\Phi(x, y) = -\frac{\lambda}{2\pi\varepsilon_0}\text{Ln}((x - x_0)^2 + (y - y_0)^2)$$

where λ is the charge per unit length in the vertical z-direction, and x_0 and y_0 are the location of the line charge in the xy-plane.

[0007] Referring to **FIG. 4**, the triangular hull (D) is plotted together with the potential contours (A) and the electric field arrows (B) created by the three corner line charges. The line charges are perpendicular to the paper. Notice that the electric field arrows are parallel crossing the center parabolic antenna (C). The electric field is also parallel to the sides (D) of the triangle.

[0008] Referring to **FIG. 5**, along the side of the triangle (A), an array (B) of horizontal slot antennas emit electromagnetic waves that have a vertically polarized electric E field (C). These traveling waves interact with the electric field (D) produced by the line charges on the corners of the triangle.

[0009] Using differential forms mathematics, this combination of fields is represented by the Hodge star of the differential of the wedge product of the two fields. The antenna electromagnetic field is a combination of a traveling magnetic field B_w, and electric field E_w. The stationary field E created by the line charges is perpendicular to the traveling wave.

$$* d(E \wedge (B_w + E_w \wedge dt)) \frac{\varepsilon}{c} = \frac{force}{volume}$$

where ϵ is the linear capacitance of space and c is the speed of light. Thus there is a force per volume around the hull.

[0010] This combination of fields produces a spacetime curvature as determined by Einstein's General Theory of Relativity. The traveling electric field has an amplitude in the vertical z-direction and travels in the x-direction

$$E_{w=E_z}\cos(x-t)$$

The Faraday electromagnetic tensor contains all the electric and magnetic fields in all the {x,y,z} directions. The first row and first column contain the two electric fields

$$F_\beta^\alpha = \begin{array}{c} t \\ x \\ y \\ z \end{array} \begin{vmatrix} 0 & E_x & 0 & E_z\cos(x-t) \\ E_x & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ E_z\cos(x-t) & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{vmatrix}$$

The stress exerted on spacetime occurs in the xx, yy and zz-direction as calculated from the stress-energy tensor T of gravitational physics

$$4\pi T^{\mu\nu} = F^{\mu\alpha}F_\alpha^\mu - \frac{1}{4}g^{\mu\nu}F_{\alpha\beta}F^{\alpha\beta}$$

where g is the metric tensor for Cartesian space

$$g_{\alpha\beta} = \begin{array}{c} t \\ x \\ y \\ z \end{array} \begin{vmatrix} -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{vmatrix}$$

where the diagonal components are the coefficients of the elementary spacetime length ds squared

$$(ds)^2=-(dt)^2+(dx)^2+(dy)^2+(dz)^2$$

The calculation produces three stresses T^{xx}, T^{yy} and T^{zz} in their respective {x,y,z} directions.

[0011] Referring to **FIG. 6**, these three stresses are plotted together as a **3D** vector field animated over time in nine frames. The graphs show that there is a lift force as depicted by the vertical arrows as well as a force of propulsion as shown by the interspersed horizontal arrows. With the passage of time, these vectors exchange places with each other so that the lift becomes the propulsion and vice versa, creating a wavy stress-energy field around the hull.

SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0012] This invention is a spacecraft with a triangular hull having charged flat plates on the vertical corners of the three sides. The two rear corners are charged to a potential V. The forward corner is charged to a potential –V. The 60° angle on the corner creates a line charge density singularity that produces a huge horizontal electric field pointing from the back to the front of the craft which is also parallel to the sides of the triangle. An array of horizontal slot antennas located on the sides of the triangular hull produce an electromagnetic wave with the electric field polarized in the vertical direction. This combination of fields produces a spacetime force in both the vertical and horizontal directions such that the spacecraft receives a lift force and a force of propulsion.

A BRIEF DESCRIPTION OF THE DRAWINGS

[0013] **FIG. 1**. Perspective view of triangular spacecraft.

[0014] **FIG. 2**. Drawing of the intersection of two charged plates in order to calculate the charge density in the corner.

[0015] **FIG. 3**. Perspective view of the corner angle β for the equilateral triangle.

[0016] **FIG. 4**. Planar **2D** graph showing the electric field produced by three line charges on the corners of the triangular hull.

[0017] **FIG. 5**. Perspective view of electric field produced by the linear charge interacting with the traveling electromagnetic wave produced by the slot antenna.

[0018] **FIG. 6**. **3D** vector animation of the lift and thrust force generated by the fields.

[0019] **FIG. 7**. Perspective view of slot antenna.

DETAILED DESCRIPTION OF THE INVENTION

[0020] Referring to **FIG. 7**, the antenna (A) is made out of sheet copper in which a rectangular horizontal slot (B) has been notched out using a die press and sheet metal fixture. A coaxial cable from the amplifier and frequency generator is attached across the slot by soldering the outer cable (D) to one side of the slot and the inner cable (E) to the other side of the slot. This creates the positive and negative charges across the gap which forms the vertical electric field (F) which radiates out perpendicularly to the copper sheet.

[0021] Although the invention has been described with reference to specific embodiments, such as a particular antenna system, those skilled in the art will appreciate that many modifications and variations are possible without departing from the teachings of the invention. All such modifications and variations are intended to be encompassed within the scope of the following claims.

1. A spacecraft comprised of the following components:

(a) a triangular hull in the form of an equilateral triangle;

(b) two copper plates attached on opposite vertical sides at each of the three corners of the hull (1a) such that a sharp vertical edge is formed where they come together;

(c) an electrostatic generator used to charge the back two copper-cladded corners (1b) to a high positive voltage, and the third forward copper-cladded corner to a high negative voltage;

(d) a horizontal slot antenna array mounted-on the sides of the hull; and

(e) a frequency generator, antenna and coaxial cables to drive the antenna array (1d).

2. To create, by claims (1a, 1b, 1c), an intense vertical line charge at the corners (1b) and a horizontal electric field that that is parallel to the sides of the hull (1a);

3. To create, by claims (1d,1e), an electromagnetic wave with a vertically polarized electric field traveling outward from the side of the hull (1a); and

4. To create, by claims (2,3), an interaction of the electrostatic field (2) with the electromagnetic wave (3) such that a combined spacetime curvature pressure is generated on the hull in the upward and forward direction to produce lift and propulsion respectively.

* * * * *

Filed May 5, 1965

FIG. 1

MICROWAVE
ENERGY

DC

FIG. 2

DIPOLE

DC LOAD

FIG. 3

FIG. 4

FIG. 5

INVENTORS
WILLIAM C. BROWN
ROSCOE H. GEORGE
NEIL I. HEENAN
ROGER C. WONSON

BY

ATTORNEY

FIG. 7

70

86

84

82

HELICOPTER

72

MICROWAVE
BEAM

74

MICROWAVE
GENERATOR

76

78

61

60

FOCUSING   ANTENNA

80

62

63

FIG. 6

INVENTORS
WILLIAM C. BROWN
ROSCOE H. GEORGE
NEIL I. HEENAN
ROGER C. WONSON

BY

ATTORNEY

FIG. 8

FIG. 9

INVENTORS
WILLIAM C. BROWN
ROSCOE H. GEORGE
NEIL I. HEENAN
ROGER C. WONSON

BY

ATTORNEY

1

ABSTRACT OF THE DISCLOSURE

A combined antenna and conversion mechanism for reception of beamed high frequency electromagnetic energy in space including a large array of unidirectional current semiconductor rectifier devices. A self-supporting space vehicle utilizing the rectified DC electrical energy for propulsion is disclosed in an illustrative embodiment.

The present invention relates in general to the transfer of energy by means of an electromagnetic wave beam and more particularly to interception and rectification of such energy into low frequency electrical DC energy with a high degree of efficiency.

Improved technology in the field of microwave energy generation at superpower levels has resulted in the realization of electrical energy transmission over considerable distances for remote energization of devices or vehicles without the aid of wires. The transmission of microwave electromagnetic energy into space has been commonly employed in the radar pulse echo systems for the detection and orientation of desired objects within a predetermined scanning range of a transmitting antenna. Beams of a similar nature may now be employed for other useful purposes and the advantages attendant the utilization of electromagnetic energy in the microwave region in contrast with other wavelengths may now be enumerated.

Microwaves have been generally defined as high frequency radio waves whose wavelength is less than 30 centimeters, with a lower wavelength limit on the order of 1 millimeter sometimes being applied to what is commonly referred to as the "microwave region." The superiority of high frequency microwaves is due in part to the fact that it is generally desirable to focus the transmitted energy so as to achieve a high power density at a remote point or area with respect to a given power source. In accordance with the laws of optics, the sharpness of the microwave beam produced by a transmitting antenna varies as the ratio of antenna dimensions to the wavelength of the transmitted energy. Therefore, for a given or desired power density or beam sharpness, a decrease in the wavelength of the transmitted energy permits a corresponding decrease in the dimensions of the antenna. From the standpoint of mechanical considerations, it is desirable to employ small antennas and other components, and it is therefore advantageous to employ high frequency energy of very short wavelength. In addition, the difficulties encountered in long wave transmission as a result of natural and man-made interference or noise do not occur with any appreciable significance at microwave frequencies. Further, in aerospace applications with considerable distances separating the transmitter at an earth or mother planet location and the employment of shorter wavelength beamed energy is preferred since longer wave signals will generallly be reflected at certain altitudes by reflecting layers in the atmosphere.

In view of certain losses due to absorption which may occur in the atmosphere, microwaves in the region having the approximate bounds of 2 and 30 centimeters are

2

readily adaptable to the convenient radiation of power to remote points without the utilization of wires. The preferred wavelengths are of the order of 5 or 10 centimeters to provide efficient focusing with existing transmitting antenna systems which may be maintained at a reasonable size. An illustrative device of the superpower high frequency microwave generators operative in the desired band is the so-called Amplitron which is an amplifier having a broad bandwidth and excellent performance characteristics for the focusing of the beam. Such devices are capable of producing 15 or 20 kilowatts of average continuous wave power in the neighborhood of 10 centimeters in wavelength with capabilities expected in the region of 500 kilowatts or more average power with 50 megawatts peak power. A complete description of such devices may be had by referring to Patent No. 2,933,723 issued Apr. 19, 1960 to William C. Brown and assigned to the assignee of the present invention.

With microwave energy capable of being generated and directed over longer distances conversion of such high frequency electromagnetic energy is of paramount concern. One conversion mechanism in the prior art involves direct conversion of such energy into heat which may then be utilized directly or indirectly for propulsion or generation of flight-producing forces. Examples of such devices for heat energy exchange as well as space vehicles utilizing such energy may be noted in Patent No. 3,174,705, issued Mar. 23, 1965, to D. Schiff et al., as well as U.S. Letters Patent No. 3,083,528, issued Apr. 2, 1963 and No. 3,114,517, issued Dec. 17, 1963, to William C. Brown. The heat exchanger method of conversion of electromagnetic energy into useful power is limited by the overall efficiencies of approximately 25 percent in the conversion of heat into mechanical or electrical work. Desirable, therefore, would be the direct rectification of the high frequency electromagnetic energy into low frequency electrical energy for the operation of many useful aerospace devices as well as systems.

The present invention has for its primary object the conversion of high frequency electromagnetic energy in the microwave region directly into low frequency electrical energy.

A further object of the present invention is the provision of a combined nondirectional receiving antenna and microwave electromagnetic energy to low frequency electrical energy conversion means in a unitary structure.

A still further object of the present invention is a provision of a new and novel combined nondirectional receiving antenna and microwave to DC energy converter for aerospace applications.

Another object of the present invention is the provision of a new and novel nondirectional receiving antenna and microwave to DC energy converter having a high degree of efficiency.

Still another object of the present invention is the provision of a new and novel aerospace vehicle with nondirectional receiving antenna and microwave to DC energy converter means with said vehicle being capable of being supported by its own energy generation means at a distance spaced apart from the power generation means.

In accordance with the teachings of the present invention, the above and other objects are achieved by the employment of efficient unidirectional microwave power rectifiers and dipole antenna means. Such rectifying devices, while being individually limited in power-handling capabilities, normally in the order of fractions of watts, have been found to be highly efficient means for the rectification of microwave power when assembled in large numbers in various arrays. It is interesting to note that the observed collective efficiency was on the order of 40 to 70 percent. In an illustrative embodiment, point-

contact semiconductor diodes were arranged in four arm bridge connected networks with the networks interconnected in various configurations such as series, parallel and series-parallel.

In discussing aerospace applications, an additional problem is encountered in the beaming of microwave energy to a remote point and the interception and utilization of such electrical energy. In such applications the advantages of a vehicle which may be maintained in space for indeterminate periods of time without employing a local fuel source are readily apparent. Such devices could readily provide communication networks, surveillance functions using radar techniques along with numerous other functions. The acapture of the beamed high frequency electromagnetic energy raises the need for an efficient antenna means capable of intersecting the beam at high altitudes. Conventional techniques employed in microwave radar usage such as receiving antenna horns are capable of intersecting only a small portion of the beam energy and add considerable weight in applications involving heavier-than-air vehicles. In an exemplary embodiment of the invention a space vehicle, namely a helicopter, is disclosed for either moving flight or a stationary location with self-supporting electrically operative propulsion means. The semi-conductor diode rectifier arrays have been demonstrated to fulfill the receiving antenna functions as well as the electrical energy rectification means in a highly efficient manner. Such combined antenna and rectifier means has also assisted in reduction of the weight problem in airborne devices. Further, it has provided a nondirectional means for the interception of the microwave energy to thereby reduce the problems of focusing inherent in prior art directional horn type receiving antennas.

With the above features, advantages and objects in mind the invention will now be described by reference to the following detailed description together with the accompanying drawings in which:

FIG. 1 is a perspective view of an illustrative diode rectifier;

FIG. 2 is a schematic circuit diagram of a bridge connected diode network with dipole antenna means;

FIG. 3 is a schematic circuit diagram of a plurality of bridge connected networks arranged in series;

FIG. 4 is a schematic circuit diagram of a parallel bridge connected network array;

FIG. 5 is a perspective view of an illustrative embodiment of a combined antenna and rectifier array in a folded or rolled up configuration;

FIG. 6 is a schematic circuit diagram illustrating the bridge connected diode array incorporated in the aerospace vehicle shown in FIG. 7;

FIG. 7 is a schematic representation in elevation illustrative of a heavier-than-air aerospace vehicle incorparating the structure of the present invention;

FIG. 8 is a perspective view of the aerospace vehicle embodiment as viewed from the under portion thereof; and

FIG. 9 is an enlarged partial view in elevation of a portion of the illustrative embodiment shown in FIG. 8.

FIG. 1 illustrates a point-contact semiconductor diode rectifier of the type employed in radar microwave receiver apparatus to rectify returned radar pulses. Any of the high burnout semiconductor diodes having high rectification characteristics are preferred and are commercially available, such as the 1N82 or 1N830. The rectifying junction is formed by whisker element 2 contacting the semiconductor element 4 respectively connected to leads 6 and 8. Silicon is preferred over germanium for element 4 because of its ability to operate at higher temperatures and thereby handle higher powers. Envelope 10 houses the rectifying elements and may be of a hermetically sealed dielectric material or combination metal and ceramic composition. The inherent characteristic of such diode recti-

fiers is that the microwave energy is intercepted and rectified in a unidirectional manner and the line 11 indicate pictorially the rays of the beamed electromagnetic microwave energy in a plane normal to the envelope. In FIG. 2 a full-wave bridge connected diode network is illustrated with the forward direction of the rectified DC electric current indicated by the direction of the arrow symbols. The network shown consists of half-wave dipoles 20 and 22 each terminated with a diode rectifier element 24 to 27 in an arm of the bridge connected network. The dipole elements 20 and 22 are of the half-wave configuration and may be spaced apart from each other a one-half wavelength at the frequency of the beamed electromagnetic energy.

Referring now to FIG. 3, an array of bridge connected diode networks each with the half-wave dipoles are shown connected in series. Each network is referred to by the numeral 30 and is similar in the bridge connections to the single element network shown in FIG. 2. The DC output of the collective rectified energy is coupled by means of terminals 32 and 33. In FIG. 4, a similar number of individual bridge connected diode-dipole networks are shown connected in a parallel array. Each network is indicated by the numeral 40, and the output terminals are indicated as 41 and 42.

Any number of diode-dipole networks may be provided and in FIG. 5 such a multi-element array is illustrated by mounting on a flexible material 50 which may be rolled or folded into any desired package or enclosed within a capsule to be launched and released at a predetermined point in space. Any flexible material which is pervious to electromagnetic energy is preferred. The total power desired would be the determining factor in a number of individual diode-dipole elements required. In this embodiment, the bridge connected networks 51 are connected in parallel to the output load indicated by terminals 52 and 53, and representative measurements of electrical characteristics have shown that approximately five watts of DC electrical energy is realizable for each square foot of area of the combined antenna-rectifier. While the dipole elements 54 have been indicated in a particular array, it is within the scope of the invention to stagger the placement of such dipoles to increase the overall efficiency of the antenna-rectifier.

To further increase the DC powder output, the full-wave bridge connected networks are preferably arranged with a plurality of diodes in series in each arm of the bridge. An illustrative schematic circuit diagram of such a configuration is shown in FIG. 6 wherein seven diodes 60 are shown in each arm of the bridge circuit and are connected in series for a total of twenty-eight diodes in each bridge network. The dipole members will then be the substantially U-shaped end portions 61 at the ends of each brace of seven diodes. In the illustration three such twenty-eight diode bridge networks are shown connected in parallel to terminals 62 and 63. This closer spacing and compact arrangement has been shown to be a source of improved power output and is capable of a high degree of reliability through the redundant nature of the parallel series connections within each bridge network. If one of the diode rectifiers fails to function the over-all voltage drop across this element would be divided among the six remaining diode rectifiers. If any of the connecting wires between the diode elements should break, the adjacent arms of the other bridge assemblies would take the additional load due to the close proximity of the respective arms to each other. In addition, it is possible to have a number of open connections or inoperative diodes dispersed throughout the array without any serious impairment in performance.

In relation to the array concept to be hereinafter described it may be stated that within a six inch square area ten such individual bridge networks each containing twenty-eight diode rectifiers for a total of 280 diode rectifiers may be deployed in such a manner as to provide

5

maximum exposed area for each diode as well as the connecting leads. Such an arrangement will be hereinafter referred to as a "module" and a DC output in excess of fourteen watts has been measured for such a module. Any number of such modules could be connected provided for a desired power yield and this module concept readily lends itself to use in certain aerospace applications now to be described.

In FIG. 7 a propelled type of space vehicle 70 is shown wholly supported by means of the transfer and rectification of continuous wave electromagnetic energy via a microwave beam 72. The source of the microwave energy which may be of the Amplitron type device as described in the aforementioned issued Patent No. 2,933,723 is indicated as 74. This energy is fed by waveguide means 76 to a transmitting horn 78 to illuminate an ellipsoidal beam forming focusing antenna 80 for the transmission of the microwave beam 72. It will be appreciated by those skilled in the art that the representations of the microwave generation and transmitting antenna means are pictorial representations to illustrate the usage of the invention in diagrammatic form and the present invention is not limited to any particular source of microwave energy or transmitting antenna assembly. It may be stated the reflector of the antenna assembly is considerably larger than most of the reflectors of the prior art in order to focus a large amount of the microwave power at high altitudes for use in the transfer of energy to space vehicles. Such antenna assemblies may be partially supported in a large hollowed area on the earth's surface or other convenient means of support.

The space vehicle or helicopter 70 can be described as a main body member supporting antenna-rectifier means 82 including a large number of the so-called modules connected together and rigidly supported in a planar parallel array. A motor 84 is supported by the combined body member and the receiving antenna-rectifier means and actuates the rotor 86 of conventional design employed in such self-propelled hovering vehicles. The disclosed vehicle provides for the illumination of the planar array of the semiconductor diode dipole elements by the microwave beam and the direct conversion of the microwave power transmitted by the beam into usable electrical energy for the self-propulsion of the device without any local fuel supply being required.

FIGS. 8 and 9 illustrate a space vehicle 82 comprising a plurality of the combined receiving antenna-rectifier module means for interception and rectification of the electromagnetic microwave energy beam emanating from an earth or mother planet source. A planar array of the antenna-rectifier modules is mechanically supported by means of structural members 90 of any lightweight wood or metal. Insulators 91 positioned coextensive with the members 90 support the diode rectifier array and avoid interference with the receiving and electrical performance characteristics by the structural support members. Carrying forward the module concept of 280 diode rectifiers to provide an approximate power output of 14 watts, it was noted that any number of such modules may be coupled together since the individual module outputs are relatively insensitive to a wide range of load resistances connected to the common output terminals. To achieve the desired electrical output of approximately 120 volts and 250 watts of power, subgroups of four modules each were assembled and parallel connected with an approximate 30 volts available for each subgroup. Four such subgroups were series-connected to result in a total of 4,480 diode rectifiers or 16 modules assembled in a two foot square self-supporting planar parallel array structure. The individual diode rectifiers connected in each arm of the bridge network are indicated by the numeral 92. An exemplary module configuration would extend within the area delineated by the dotted lines and reference letter A on one side and similar dotted lines and reference letter B on the other side.

6

A motor 94 is connected to the DC side of the overall array and may be additionally supported by tubular member 95. A shaft and propulsion means consisting of rotor blades 97 provide for the upward lift of the overall vehicle for the self-supporting of same in space applications. Additional structural support such as interlaced rigging 96 of a high tensile strength material such as nylon or steel wire, as well as bracing member 98, may be employed for strengthening of the body means to withstand the vibrational forces and downwash from the propulsion means.

In accordance with the well known technology of microwave transmission the combined array of diode rectifiers and propulsion means presents a specific load impedance which must be suitably matched to the transmitted microwave energy beam to result in maximum efficiency. In aerospace applications a mismatch of approximately ten to one may be evident. Matching of the load impedance to a value of approximately 377 ohms as the free space value will be provided by a plurality of coplanar parallel metallic rod members 99 disposed in a grating array in front of the diode rectifiers a predetermined distance. Rod members 99 are linearly disposed and extend in a similar direction as the assembled diode rectifiers. A selected frontal spacing of one-quarter of the wavelength of the microwave frequency being transmitted has been experimentally determined to be suitable for impedance matching purposes. An approximate spacing of two inches between the respective members was preferred for a selected microwave frequency of 2,450 megacycles. Each of the members 90 are provided with lateral sections 100 to support the elongated bar members 101 which in turn maintain the rod members 99 in the desired position. A tubular member 102 of a lightweight metal may also be provided to combine with the motor support member 95 for structural support.

The combined antenna-rectifier array provides a source of electrical energy to render any space vehicle self-supporting. The diode rectifier elements when assembled in the antenna array have been found to be nondirectional with respect to interception of the beamed microwave energy. This represents a large step forward in the utilization of high power microwave energy over the prior art horn-type receiving antennas which must be accurately focused and pointed in a particular direction for the reception of any energy. The connections between the respective members of the diode rectifier array and deployment in the parallel configuration serves to provide maximum exposed area. Such connections and in particular the end loop portions adjacent the terminus of each arm of the bridge networks serves as an efficient dipole for the interception of the microwave energy.

Although it is not intended as a full explanation of the high degree of efficiency attained with the disclosed antenna-rectifier array, it is believed that the whisker elements within the semiconductor diodes themselves are a contributing factor and may function as additional dipole elements. The disclosed embodiment functioned efficiently when illuminated by microwave energy generating a vertically polarized beam. Hence, an efficient and light weight energy conversion apparatus is disclosed which may be self-supporting without the requirement of a large local fuel supply payload.

It may be within the purview of the invention to use the available rectified electrical energy for performing many functions in addition to the actuation of the propulsion means. Hence, communications' payloads may be maintained at predetermined positions in space in a hovering attitude utilizing a portion of the electrical energy available. Relay signals to other such vehicles or return signals to ground stations would then be within the realm of possibility. Such available energy may also be employed for servomechanisms, stabilizing and counter-torque systems for the navigation of such vehicles. The electrical efficiencies realized with the combined

3,434,678

7

receiving antenna and rectifier means have also provided certain weight advantages over other energy converters in aerospace applications. Examples of such converters would be heat exchangers or solar cells. In comparison to the present invention where five to eight pounds per kilowatt of energy realized is a normal characteristic, other energy conversion means weigh in the vicinity of 150 pounds per kilowatt of realizable energy. The inherent advantages of the present invention are therefore apparent. While the technology in the diode rectifier art is being continually advanced, new diode power rectifiers as well as integrated circuit techniques are readily available to future configurations of the present invention. The so-called Schottky barrier diodes could be employed to produce combined antenna-rectifier means weighing even less than two pounds per kilowatt of available energy.

Although the foregoing detailed description has referred to DC power rectification it will be evident that with suitable circuit components low frequency AC energy may also be made available. In addition, other propulsion means may be readily substituted using electrical energy. The embodiments disclosed herein are illustrative only and other modifications or alterations will be apparent to those skilled in the art which do not depart from the scope of the broadest aspects of the present invention as defined in the appended claims.

What is claimed is:

1. A space vehicle comprising:

body means;

said body means including spaced structural support members;

combined antenna and DC electrical energy rectification means for the interception and rectification of incident high frequency electromagnetic microwave energy carried by said support members in a planar parallel array;

said rectification means comprising a plurality of four

8

arm full-wave bridge connected rectifier circuit networks each having a plurality of unidirectional semi-conductors in each arm;

said networks being electrically interconnected to common output terminals;

electrically operable propulsion means comprising a motor and rotor members carried by said body means and connected to said terminals for the utilization of said rectified DC energy; and

means for matching the load impedance of said combined antenna and electrical energy rectification means to the incident microwave energy.

2. A space vehicle according to claim 1 wherein said load impedance matching means are arranged in a co-planar array coextensive with said antenna and energy rectification means array, and spaced therefrom a distance of approximately one-quarter of a wavelength at the frequency of the microwave energy.

3. A space vehicle according to claim 2 wherein said load impedance matching means comprise a plurality of parallel disposed elongated metallic members.

References Cited

UNITED STATES PATENTS

1,217,149	2/1917	Caldwell	321—27 X
2,165,055	7/1939	Kafka	321—27
2,444,458	7/1948	Master	321—8
2,927,321	3/1960	Harris	343—6.8 X
3,098,971	7/1963	Richardson	325—592 X
3,174,705	3/1965	Schiff et al.	244—1

RODNEY D. BENNETT, *Primary Examiner.*

MALCOMB F. HUBLER, *Assistant Examiner.*

U.S. Cl. X.R.

307—151; 318—16; 321—27; 325—494; 343—100

Teleportation of Entangled Coherent States through Visual Pathways in the Human Brain

[1,2,3]**V. Salari**[*] , [1,2]**M. Rahnama**[†] and [4]**J. A. Tuszynski**[‡]

[1]*Department of Physics, Shahid Bahonar University of Kerman, P. O. Box 76175, Kerman, Iran*
[2]*Afzal Research Institute, Kerman, Iran*
[3]*Neuroscience Research Center, Kerman, Iran*
[4]*Department of Physics, University of Alberta, Edmonton, T6G 2J1, Canada*

Abstract:

In this paper we have proposed a new model for visual consciousness based on the premise there exists a quantum teleportation mechanism between the eye and the brain. In our model, some open questions will be answered.

1) Introduction:

Schrödinger's book "What is life?" has had an enormous influence on the development of molecular biology [1]. His insight has since then inspired many researchers to investigate the molecular basis of a living organism [2,3,4]. Several researchers have noticed the sweeping consequences that would follow from the discovery that living organisms might process information quantum mechanically, either at the bio-molecular level, or the cellular/neuronal level [5,6,7,8,9]. Computational models of the behavior of networks of neurons are still mainly based on the integrate-and-fire model of neural function. Mainstream cognitive neuroscience typically ignores the role of quantum physical effects in the neural processes underlying cognition and consciousness. However, many unsolved problems remain, suggesting the need to consider new approaches. Recent contributions to the investigations of quantum effects in the human brain are due to Jibu and Yasue, Pribram, Lockwood, Mavromatos and Nanopoulous, Hameroff and Penrose, and Stapp [10]. These authors have proposed models in which the operation of consciousness is associated with some sort of explicit wave function collapse. There have been numerous suggestions that consciousness is a macroscopic quantum effect possibly involving superconductivity, superfluidity, electromagnetic fields, Bose-Einstein condensation or some other physical mechanism. Perhaps the most specific model developed thus far is that of Penrose and Hameroff and it asserts that quantum information processing takes place in microtubules (MTs). It has been argued that MTs can process information similarly to a cellular automaton, and hence Hameroff and Penrose suggest that neuronal MTs may operate as a quantum computer.

In this paper, we investigate visual information transfer from a quantum information point of view. Theoretically we consider the conscious observer looking at a quantum system and propose that the state of this system is reported via superposed photons. We address the question whether the observer can receive the exact same state of this system quantum mechanically in his/her brain or this quantum state collapses before reaching the brain. Below we investigate the problem in detail.

2) Evolution of Information from the Eye to the Brain

We assume that a conscious observer directs his/her attention to a quantum system. For simplicity we consider this system to be a manifestation of the celebrated *Schrödinger's cat*. This system can exist in two states: Live$|L\rangle$, or Dead$|D\rangle$.

---

[*] *vahidsalari@graduate.uk.ac.ir*

[†] *Majid.rahnama@mail.uk.ac.ir*

[‡] *jtus@phys.ualberta.ca*

$$\psi_{sys} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(|L\rangle + |D\rangle) \qquad\qquad (2\text{-}1)$$

The state of this system is then reported via superposed photons. 4% of these photons are reflected from the cornea. 50% of remaining photons are dissipated through ocular media absorption. Other photons enter the 200-250 μm thick retina. There, photons interact with the photoreceptors in the rods and cons layer after 80% loss due to retinal transmission [11],[12]. In this case, we consider just a few remaining photons which are in a superposed quantum state. The key question here is whether this quantum state of photons can be reported to the brain.

When this state interacts with the last layer of retina, according to Thaheld, this superposed photon undergoes a wavefunction collapse. On the other hand, photons can be absorbed and then transformed into classical signals. Here, we use the symbols introduced by Tegmark [13] for the observer. The symbol $|\ddot{\_}\rangle$ denotes the state for which the information on photons is not received by the brain and thus the observer is amphoteric. The symbol $|\ddot{\smile}\rangle$ stands for the state in which the information received in the brain reports that the cat is alive (and the observer is happy). Finally, the symbol $|\ddot{\frown}\rangle$ corresponds to the state in which the information received in the brain indicates that the cat is dead (and the observer will be sad). It means that:

$$U|\ddot{\_}D\rangle = |\ddot{\frown}D\rangle \qquad\qquad (2\text{-}2\text{-}a)$$

$$U|\ddot{\_}L\rangle = |\ddot{\smile}L\rangle \qquad\qquad (2\text{-}2\text{-}b)$$

Where $U = \exp\left[-\frac{i}{\hbar}\int H_{photon-brain}\; dt\right]$.

Now, we consider another state in which the brain interacts with itself. Penrose and Hameroff have proposed a model of consciousness involving quantum computation with objective reduction in *microtubules* (or MTs) within the brain's neurons (see Figure 1) [14],[15],[16],[17]. MTs are cylindrical polymers comprised of the protein tubulin which organize numerous cellular activities including neuronal motor transport. According to Hameroff and Penrose, switching of tubulin conformational states is governed by quantum mechanical forces within each tubulin interior, and an essential feature of the Orch OR model is that tubulins may exist in quantum superpositions of two or more conformations. Therefore, these states could function as quantum bits, or "qubits" by interacting non-locally (through their entanglement) with other tubulin qubits so that MTs may act as quantum computers. When sufficiently many entangled tubulins are superposed for long enough to reach Penrose's OR threshold given by E=h/T, an objective reduction (OR) "conscious event" occurs as stated in the Orch-OR model.
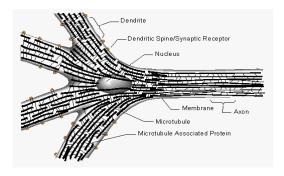

Figure 1   Representation of MTs inter a brain neuron. The Orch OR model suggests that the main information processing is implemented in these structures.

If previous evolution is described by Penrose's self-collapse in the brain (i.e. Orch-OR), MTs in the neurons of the brain collectively evolve and then collapse (i.e. conscious event) to one of the happy or sad states. It mathematically means that:

$$U|\overset{..}{\smile}\rangle = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(|\overset{..}{\smile}\rangle + |\overset{..}{\frown}\rangle) \qquad (2\text{-}3)$$

where $U = \exp[-\frac{i}{\hbar}\int H_{brain}\, dt]$.

If we compare this state (2-3) and the state which has the information about the photon (2-2), we can say that there's a great amount of correlation between the retina and the visual cortex, because their result should be identical. We know that in accordance with the Einstein-Podolsky-Rosen (EPR) pair, when two entities originate from a common source they can be entangled with each other. Retina has a similar layered structure as the gray-matter top layers of the cerebral cortex of the brain. In fact, retina is an extension of the central nervous system (the brain and spinal cord) that forms during embryonic development. One reason why scientists are interested in retinal processing is that retina is an accessible part of the brain that can be easily stimulated with light [18]. Thus, we can say that retina and visual cortex are entangled with each other. The other argument for this entanglement is that the image of a system is inverted on the retina but it is perceived in the brain directly. As we know, in two entangled entities when one has a property in some direction the other exhibits that property but in the opposite direction. Thus retina receives an inverted image, while it is received in the visual cortex upright. This property is special to entanglement.

The human body is made up of many organs, which themselves are made up of many millions of cells. How can such a system, with millions, or even billions, of parts function effectively and coherently? This is a no small feat as even small-size human societies often undergo periods of turbulence and trouble due to conflict and poor organization. Now some scientists think that quantum coherence in MTs is a major factor responsible for our bodies, and especially our brains, being so efficiency. Here, we intend to describe visual processing on the basis of quantum information theory.

3) *Generation of Entangled Coherent States*

Centrioles and cilia, which are microtubular structures, are involved in photoreceptor functions in single cell organisms and primitive visual systems. Cilia are also found in all retinal rod and cone cells. The dimensions of centrioles and cilia are comparable to the wavelengths of visible and infrared light (see Figure 2) [50]. Moreover, cytoskeletons are found mostly among the retina and the visual cortex in the cells of the optic nerve. Cytoskeletal structures of the centrioles can be expected to vibrate like a harmonic oscillator in its ground state. Vibrational dynamics of MT's has been the subject of a recent paper where typical frequency ranges have been discussed [19].

When a photon interacts with a centriole, its electric field can displace the potential of the harmonic oscillator and then releases it, thus generating coherent states [20]. It means that:

$$D(\alpha)|0\rangle = |\alpha\rangle \qquad (3\text{-}1)$$

Where $D(\alpha)$ is the displacement operator; $D(\alpha) = e^{\alpha a^\dagger - \alpha^* a}$, and $|0\rangle$ is the ground state of harmonic oscillator, and $|\alpha\rangle$ is the coherent state: $\qquad |\alpha\rangle = e^{-\frac{|\alpha|^2}{2}} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{\alpha^n}{\sqrt{n!}}|n\rangle.$

Hameroff [21] and Penrose [22] have suggested that MTs inside cells permit long-range quantum coherence, enabling quantum information processing to take place at the sub-cellular level. They use this hypothesis to develop their theory of consciousness. Cells interconnected by gap junctions form networks

which fire synchronously, behaving like one giant neuron [23], and possibly accounting for synchronized neural activity such as coherent 40 Hz waves [24]. Marshall [25] suggested that coherent quantum states known as Bose-Einstein condensation occurred among neural proteins [26], [27], [28]. Other issues, such as preconscious-to-conscious transitions were identified by Stapp [29] with the collapse of a quantum wave function in presynaptic axon terminals [7]. The other reason for coherence of these structures is that light is an electromagnetic wave and thus is vibrational, and according to Froehlich's theory [44],[45],[46] it can take these cytoskeletal structures (i.e. nonlinear structures composed of electric dipoles) into one mode of frequency and coherence.
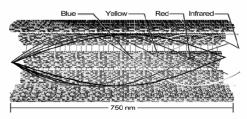
Figure 2 Representation of one centriole, the dimensions of centrioles are comparable to wavelengths of visible and infrared light.

Centrioles are two cylinders composed of MTs which are perpendicular to each other and in accordance with the Hameroff theory of the origin of cancer [30], centrioles are entangled with each other. Because of this entanglement, when a coherent state $|\alpha\rangle$ is generated in one centriole, in the other it will generate state $|-\alpha\rangle$. Now, we can say that after interaction of photons with centrioles, they generate "entangled coherent states" in these structures in the retina, i.e.:

$$|\varphi\rangle_{12} = (A|\alpha\rangle_1|\alpha\rangle_2 - B|-\alpha\rangle_1|-\alpha\rangle_2) \qquad (3\text{-}2)$$

where $|\varphi\rangle_{12}$ is an entangled coherent state in centrioles with two modes 1 and 2. QED-cavity model of MTs [31] describes that coherent modes of electromagnetic radiation can be sustained in the interior of the MTs. These modes are provided by the interaction of the electric dipole moments of the ordered-water molecules in the interior of MTs with quantized electromagnetic radiation [32],[33]. Jibu, et. al.[49], have proposed that the quantum dynamical system of water molecules and the quantized electromagnetic field confined inside the hollow MT core can manifest a specific collective dynamical effect called superradiance [34] by which the MT can transform any incoherent, thermal and disordered molecular, atomic or electromagnetic energy into coherent photons inside the MT. Furthermore, they have also shown [49] that such coherent photons created by superradiance penetrate perfectly along the internal hollow core of the MT as if the optical medium inside it were made "transparent" by the propagating photons themselves. This is referred to as the quantum phenomenon of self-induced transparency [35]. Superradiance and self-induced transparency in cytoskeletal MTs can lead to "optical" neural holography [36]. Neurons (and maybe also other cells) may contain microscopic coherent optical supercomputers with enormous capacity. Thus Jibu, et. al.[49], suggest that MTs can behave as optical waveguides which result in coherent photons. They estimate that this quantum coherence is capable of superposition of states among MT spatially distributed over hundreds of microns. These in turn are in superposition with other MTs hundreds of microns away in other directions and so on. With the above conclusions $|\varphi\rangle_{12}$ can produce those photons which produced itself, thus if the state $|\varphi\rangle_{12}$ can be restored in the brain, it will reproduce the photons which were absorbed in the retina.

Additional arguments in favor of the feasibility of production of photons in the brain can be found in the conclusions of the paper [37], which also asserts that there exists a neural activity-dependent ultra-weak photon (biophoton) emission in the brain. Thus there is the possibility to restore the initial state of the photon in the brain after absorption in the eye. This process can be implemented through teleportation mechanism between retina and the visual cortex as will be discussed in the following sections.

4) *The Decoherence Problem*

The important question about the quantum processing in the living systems is: how is it possible for MTs to process information quantum mechanically while the environment surrounding them is relatively hot, wet and noisy?

According to the Orch-OR model, microtubular structures in the neurons of the brain process information quantum mechanically and to avoid decoherence, like lasers maintain quantum coherence against thermal noise. Water within cells is itself not truly liquid, but has been shown to be, to a large extent, ordered [38]. Most of the ordered water in the cell in fact surrounds the cytoskeleton [39]. MTs and other cytoskeletal components are embedded in cytoplasm which exists in alternating phases of (1) "sol" (solution, liquid); and (2) "gel" (gelatinous, solid). Among the most primitive of biological activities, "sol-gel transformations" within neurons and other living cells are caused by assembly and disassembly of cytoskeletal actin (e.g. regulated by calcium ions through the protein calmodulin, in turn regulated by MTs). Sol-gel transformations are essential in basic cellular activities such as ("amoeboid") movement, growth and synaptic formation and neurotransmitter vesicle release [40], [41]. Transitions can occur rapidly (e.g. 40 sol-gel cycles per second), and some actin gels can be quite solid, and withstand deformation without transmitted response [42]. Cyclical encasement of MTs by actin gels may thus be an ideal quantum isolation mechanism. In the gel phase of cytoplasm, the water ordering surfaces of a MT are within a few nanometers of actin surfaces which also order water. Thus bundles of MTs encased in actin gel may be effectively isolated extending over the radius of the bundle, on the order of hundreds of nanometers. There are many mechanisms which can protect these structures against decohering factors. In general, Quantum states of tubulin/MTs are protected from environmental decoherence by biological mechanisms which include phases of actin gelatin, plasma-like Debye layering, coherent pumping and topological quantum error correction [54]. Moreover, quantum spin transfer between quantum dots connected by benzene rings (the same structures found in aromatic hydrophobic amino acids) is more efficient at warm temperature than absolute zero[43]. It is conjectured that the "flexibility" of the resonant benzene electrons is advantageous to quantum processes by harnessing ambient thermal energy. MTs may possibly utilize nonspecific thermal energy for "laser-like" coherent pumping, for example in the GHz range by a mechanism of "pumped phonons" suggested by Froehlich [44,45,46].

5) *What is the mechanism of Teleportation?*

According to the definition of teleportation as stated in [47], in the process of quantum teleportation, one can construct an exact replica of the original unknown quantum state at a cost of destroying the original state. Therefore, to call a quantum state transfer operation- quantum teleportation, the process should not only generate output states with better qualities than what can be done classically but also obey the no-cloning theorem [48].The quantum state of a system can be transmitted from a location to a distant one using only classical information provided that a quantum channel exists between the sender and the receiver. Sharing entangled states between the two parties opens the necessary quantum channel. Research in quantum state transfer, especially the quantum teleportation, has emerged as one of the major research areas of theoretical and experimental quantum mechanics. Assume that Alice wants to send Bob an unknown quantum state but when she receives this state she does not know anything about that unless she affects it and collapses it to classical state, or in other hand she destroys that quantum state. She just can send classical signals to Bob through classical channel, but if there is a shared entangled channel between Alice and Bob, Bob can construct initial quantum state with the help of classical signal which is sent by Alice and quantum channel between them. This operation is implemented by operating special unitary operators. For more details see [47]. Here, we want to simulate visual information transfer with teleportation mechanism. We know that when photon penetrates the retina, it changes to action potentials or electrical signals and these classical signals are sent to the brain for interpretation. It means that *retina* (Alice) wants to send the *brain* (Bob) a *photon state* (unknown quantum state), but *retina* (Alice) absorbs

it (collapses the quantum state) and changes it to *action potential* (classical state) and send it through *membranes of axons of the brain neurons* (classical channel). *Brain* (Bob) can reconstruct the initial *state of photon* (unknown quantum state) to process it to emerge consciousness. Our arguments for this simulation are below conclusions:

> *Orch OR* [14], [15]: There is quantum processing in the neurons of the brain (there is a quantum channel between retina and brain)

> *Tegmark* [13]: Displacement of ions through membranes of brain neurons is a classical phenomenon (action potentials are classical signals and membranes of neurons are classical channels).

> *Thaheld* [11],[12]: Superposed photons do collapse in the retina (the quantum state is collapsed by the sender [Alice]).

> We assert that they describe different aspects of the teleportation mechanism. We simulate visual consciousness with the teleportation mechanism as shown in Table 5-1.

Table 5- 1 *Simulation of the transferring visual information from the eye to the brain to the Teleportation mechanism.*

Human Brain	Quantum Teleportation Mechanism
Retina	Alice
Membrane of axons in neurons	Classical channel
Cytoskeletal structures	Entangled channel (quantum channel)
Visual cortex	Bob
Action potentials	Classical signals

Now we want to investigate this teleportation mechanism via teleporting of entangled coherent states through visual pathways in more details. We will show how photon states are constructed in the visual cortex.

6) *Teleportation of Entangled Coherent States through Visual Pathways*

Super radiance and self induced transparency [49] besides Froehlich oscillations can cause the coupling of MT dynamics over wide areas and take them into a superposition and a coherent state. While in superposition, tubulins communicate with entangled tubulins in the same manner, and in MTs in neighboring neurons, and through macroscopic regions of the brain via tunneling through gap junctions and possibly tunneling nanotubes [50]. As we have already said, retina and the visual cortex are entangled with each other. Thus there is a quantum channel between retina and the visual cortex which is composed of microtubular structures. MTs interact with membrane structures mechanically by linking proteins, chemically by ions and second messenger signals, and electrically by voltage fields. The transduction of light into electrical signals takes place in the photoreceptors. Except for the ganglion cells, none of the retinal cells display action potentials [51].

Axons leaving the temporal half of the retina traverse the optic nerve to the optic chiasm, where they join the optic tract and project to ipsilateral structures. Axons leaving the nasal half of the retina cross the midline at the chiasm and terminate in contralateral structures. This arrangement means that all the axons in the optic tract carry information about the contralateral visual field. Axons of the optic tract terminate in three areas of the central nervous system, the lateral geniculate nucleus (i.e. LGN), the superior colliculus and the pretectal area. The trajectory through the LGN is the largest most direct and clinically most important pathway by which visual information reaches the cerebral cortex. About 80% of the optic tract axons synapse in the LGN. The LGN is a laminated structure, having 6 layers. Contralateral fibers and ipsilateral fibers couple in the LGN. The ipsilateral fibers of the optic nerve terminate in laminae 2,3 and 5 of LGN, while the contralateral fibers terminate in laminae 1, 4 and 6 of LGN (see Figure 3). There are about 10^6 neurons in each LGN, all of which project to the ipsilateral occipital cortex (area 17) as the optic radiations. The portion of the cerebral cortex that receives LGN axons is called the striate cortex and is usually labeled V1 to designate it as the primary visual cortical area (Figure 3). Virtually all information in the visual system is recognized as being processed by V1 first, and then passed out to higher order systems [53]. The upper visual cortex receives signals from the lower visual field and similarly, lower visual cortex process information from the upper visual field. The right visual cortex processes the left field of view and vice versa (see figure 4).

Now, we investigate the information transfer through visual pathways. The important model among quantum models about the processing in the human brain is the Orch-OR model which is based on the structure of the cytoskeleton. As already said this model asserts that the main processing in the neurons of the brain is performed in the MTs and the nature of the processing is mainly quantum mechanical. The processing unit in this model is *tubulin* which can be in a superposed state. Tubulins act like qubits in quantum computers. *Max Tegmark* believes that there is no quantum processing in the human brain. He has calculated decoherence times for every superposition state which can be possible in the neurons of the brain [13]. In his opinion, superposition states include ions such as Na^+ which are "in" and "out" of the membrane of axon. On the other hand, Na^+ ions are in the superposition of "in" and "out" with a separation distance comparable to the membrane thickness. He has considered three factors which can destroy this superposition state in neurons. *Collisions with the neighboring ions, Collisions with the water molecules* and *Interaction with distant ions* are the factors which Tegmark investigated for decoherence. He has estimated 10^{-19} s and 10^{-20} s for decoherence times. It is clear that above times are very small for the brain processes such as seeing, thinking, speaking and the other cognitive processes. Typically, dynamical timescales for neuron firing and cognitive processes are in the range of 10^{-4} to 1 seconds, whereas decoherence timescales are many orders of magnitude shorter. Thus, action potentials should be

regarded as classical signals or the displacement of ions through the membrane of axons should be investigated classically. It is remarkable that Tegmark has also calculated decoherence time for MTs, but he has used wrong assumptions about these structures (for more details see [54]) and we just accept his calculations about action potentials. Thaheld [11], [12] believes that the wave function of any superposed photon state or states is always objectively changed within the complex architecture of the eye, and any incident photons have to run a very daunting gauntlet before they are even converted or transduced to retinal ganglion cell spike trains (To learn more about Thaheld arguments, the reader is referred to refs. [55,56,57]). According to Thaheld, the quantum state of photons does collapse in the retina and it does not reach the brain.

Is Thaheld right? Is not there any mechanism to rebuild the quantum state of photons in the brain? Here we accept that the states of photons collapse in the retina but we believe that they can be restored in the visual cortex via the teleportation mechanism.

Now, the question is how can it be possible to restore the exact state of photons in the brain while its state is collapsed in the retina. The other question which one may ask is: if this state is reported through action potentials how is this information reported to the brain and how can it interpret action potentials to obtain the exact state of the photons? Our solution to the above problems involves the teleportation of entangled coherent states through visual pathways. The state of the photon is teleported from the eye to the brain. On the other hand, the state of the photon is transferred via some "cut-and-paste" mechanism from the eye to the brain. But how is it possible?
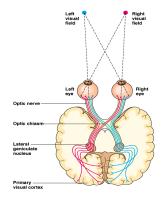
Figure 4 Visual pathways from the eye to the brain. See crossing of pathways.

We concluded before that retina and the visual cortex are entangled. Also we explained how the entangled coherent state is generated in the retina. Now, we want to formulate the process of information transfer from the retina to V1. The state (3-2) with two modes 1 and 2 should be teleported to V1. After the interaction of light with retina, modes 3, 4 and 5, 6 are generated through microtubular structures between retina and V1, and thus they produce entangled coherent channels between retina and V1. It means that the channels are:

$$|\psi\rangle_{35} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{N_\alpha}}(|\alpha\rangle_3|\alpha\rangle_5 - |-\alpha\rangle_3|-\alpha\rangle_5) \qquad (6\text{-}1)$$

$$|\phi\rangle_{46} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{N_\alpha}}(|\alpha\rangle_4|\alpha\rangle_6 - |-\alpha\rangle_4|-\alpha\rangle_6) \qquad (6\text{-}2)$$

Where N_α is the number of tubulins in each channel. Each mode is reported via a special fiber through visual pathways. All of the neurons which are collected in the LGN are divided into two major pathways: ipsilateral fibers and contralateral fibers. Information transfer in the contralateral fibers takes longer than information transfer in ipsilateral fibers because contralateral fibers have crossing relative to ipsilateral

fibers and then they have longer lengths than ipsilateral fibers. On the other hand, contralateral fibers have a retarded phase relative to ipsilateral fibers. Now we want to answer the following questions. What is this phase difference? What is the role of this crossing? And how does crossing restore the initial state in the retina?

7) *The Role of Phase Shift to Restore Information in LGN*

When the information is collapsed in the retina, action potentials are produced. The shape of action potentials is the same for each neuron, but the main problem is which neurons are fired, or in other words which neurons carry action potentials and information. Consider two fibers selected from ipsilateral fibers and two fibers selected from contralateral fibers. The two ipsilateral fibers are called 1 and 2, and the two contralateral fibers are called 3 and 4 while the two fibers from the LGN to V1 are called 5 and 6 which are selected from the group of magnocellular and parvocellular fibers. Now, we start from the retina. The state of centrioles and channels is:

$$|\psi'\rangle = |\varphi\rangle_{12} \otimes |\psi\rangle_{35} \otimes |\phi\rangle_{46}$$

$$= \frac{1}{N'_\alpha} (A|\alpha\rangle_1 |\alpha\rangle_2 |\alpha\rangle_3 |\alpha\rangle_4 |\alpha\rangle_5 |\alpha\rangle_6$$

$$-A|\alpha\rangle_1 |\alpha\rangle_2 |\alpha\rangle_3 |-\alpha\rangle_4 |\alpha\rangle_5 |-\alpha\rangle_6$$

$$-A|\alpha\rangle_1 |\alpha\rangle_2 |-\alpha\rangle_3 |\alpha\rangle_4 |-\alpha\rangle_5 |\alpha\rangle_6$$

$$+A|\alpha\rangle_1 |\alpha\rangle_2 |-\alpha\rangle_3 |-\alpha\rangle_4 |-\alpha\rangle_5 |-\alpha\rangle_6$$

$$-B|-\alpha\rangle_1 |-\alpha\rangle_2 |\alpha\rangle_3 |\alpha\rangle_4 |\alpha\rangle_5 |\alpha\rangle_6$$

$$+B|-\alpha\rangle_1 |-\alpha\rangle_2 |\alpha\rangle_3 | - \alpha\rangle_4 |\alpha\rangle_5 |-\alpha\rangle_6$$

$$+B| - \alpha\rangle_1 |-\alpha\rangle_2 |-\alpha\rangle_3 |\alpha\rangle_4 | - \alpha\rangle_5 |\alpha\rangle_6$$

$$-B|-\alpha\rangle_1 |-\alpha\rangle_2 | - \alpha\rangle_3 | - \alpha\rangle_4 | - \alpha\rangle_5 |-\alpha\rangle_6) \qquad (7\text{-}1)$$

All of the above states are collected in the LGN. But here the role of action potentials is very important. They determine which fibers are fired. If fibers 1 and 2 carry action potentials, then it shows that information passes through ipsilateral fibers. Thus to select information from the LGN to send it via fibers 5 and 6 to V1 there is no need for phase difference (or to apply the phase shift operator on the states) and thus the state of (3-2) can be transferred like its first state through fibers 5 and 6. In the formulation (7-1) we see that if fibers x and y are fired, the expression with $|\alpha\rangle_x |\alpha\rangle_y$ should be selected from the terms with coefficients $+A$ besides the expression $| - \alpha\rangle_x |-\alpha\rangle_y$ from the terms with coefficients $-B$. Hence,

$$1, 2 \; firing \quad \xrightarrow{yields} \quad |\phi'\rangle_{56} = A|\alpha\rangle_5 |\alpha\rangle_6 - B|-\alpha\rangle_5 |-\alpha\rangle_6 \qquad (7\text{-}2)$$

In another state, if fibers 1 and 4 are fired it means that one fiber is selected from ipsilateral fibers and the other is from contralateral fibers, thus they have phase difference with respect to each other. Hence,

$$1, 4 \; firing \quad \xrightarrow{yields} \quad |\phi'\rangle_{56} = A|\alpha\rangle_5 |-\alpha\rangle_6 - B|-\alpha\rangle_5 |\alpha\rangle_6 \qquad (7\text{-}3)$$

To restore initial information, the operator

$$R(\varphi) = e^{-i\pi a^{\dagger}_{6} a_{6}}$$

should operate on the state in LGN in which fibers 1 and 4 have conveyed action potentials. This operator changes the ket $|\alpha\rangle_6$ to $|-\alpha\rangle_6$ and vice versa. It means that fiber 4 has a π radian phase difference with respect to fiber 1, and this phase difference can restore the exact state of the photon. If fibers 2 and 3 are fired, this yields:

$$2,3 \; firing \quad \xrightarrow{yields} \quad |\phi'\rangle_{56} = A|-\alpha\rangle_5|\alpha\rangle_6 - B|\alpha\rangle_5|-\alpha\rangle_6 \qquad (7\text{-}4)$$

In this case the operator

$$R(\varphi) = e^{-i\pi a^{\dagger}_{5} a_{5}}$$

should be involved. For the case of 3 and 4 firing, this yields,

$$3,4 \; firing \quad \xrightarrow{yields} \quad |\phi'\rangle_{56} = A|-\alpha\rangle_5|-\alpha\rangle_6 - B|\alpha\rangle_5|\alpha\rangle_6 \qquad (7\text{-}5)$$

in which case the operator

$$R(\varphi) = e^{-i\pi (a^{\dagger}_{5} a_{5} + a^{\dagger}_{6} a_{6})}$$

should be involved. In this case we see that the main path is that of ipsilateral fibers which are direct to each eye and fibers 3 and 4 both have a π radian phase difference with it. We also know that there are two LGNs and the left and right V1. Now, another question emerges. How do these two left and right parts in V1 can instantaneously receive information? To answer this question, we can say that the synaptic β-neurexin/neuroligin-1 adhesive protein complex is claimed to be a device mediating entanglement between the cytoskeletons of the cortical neurons. Thus the macroscopic coherent quantum state can extend through large brain cortical areas [58].

We see that crossing or rotation of neurons in the visual pathways has an important role in restoring information in the brain. Maybe rotations or crossings of neurons throughout the body are there for this very reason.

8) *Discussion*

In general, we can briefly summarize our approach by listing the following properties:

1- It can combine the Orch-OR model with Tegmark's approaches and the Thaheld conclusion in a compact physical model which is called Teleportation.
2- It investigates visual pathways from atomic scales to macroscopic scales. This approach includes classical descriptions as well as new answers to open questions.
3- It explains why the shape of action potentials stays the same. Classical models state that "sensations" are action potentials that reach the brain via sensory neurons, and "perception" is the awareness and interpretation of the sensation. It is reasonable to assume that the constant shape of action potentials cannot result in different profiles of information. Thus the shape of information should be due to neurons. In this approach MTs are the representatives of information carriers. In our approach action potentials just determine which neurons fire and which do not.
4- It describes why neurons cross at some point. This crossing causes a phase shift relative to a special pathway. In teleportation of entangled coherent states the phase shift operators can rebuild initial information.

5- It explains that how the inverted image on the retina is perceived in the brain as upright.
6- It can describe how different information can be simultaneously perceived as a binding nature of conscious experience. This can be done via quantum parallel processing.
7- It explains how the brain of the observer can receive quantum information from the environment. We can see that there still exists this possibility that the mind can play the main role in the measurement problem, and this is in accord with what London, Bauer, von Neumann and Wigner (initially) asserted.

9) Conclusions

In this paper we have theoretically demonstrated the plausibility of a quantum teleportation mechanism between the eye and the brain which can describe different aspects of visual processing through visual pathways. Our model covers both quantum and classical aspects of neuroscience. This mechanism can combine some features of the Orch-OR model with Tegmark's conclusions and Thaheld's belief in one general model.

Acknowledgement

References:

[1]   Schrödinger. E, What is life? Cambridge University Press, London, 1944.
[2]   Davies. P, *Does quantum mechanics play a non-trivial role in life?*, Biosystems, 78, 69, 2004.
[3]   Matsuno. K, *Quantum and biological computation*, Biosystems, 35, 209-212, 1995.
[4]   Penrose. R, *Shadows of the mind*, Oxford University Press, 1994.
[5]   Matsuno. K and Paton. R. C, *Is there biology of quantum information?,* Biosystems, **55**, 39-46 2000.
[6]   Vedral. V, *Entanglement hits the big time*, Nature, **425**, 28-9, 2003.
[7]   Beck. F and Eccles. J.C, *Quantum aspects of brain activity and the role of consciousness*, Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. USA, **89**, 11357-11362, 1992.
[8]   Penrose. R, The Emperor's New Mind (Oxford University Press, Oxford, 1989); S.R., *Quantum coherence in MTs: a neural basis for emergent consciousness?*, Journal of Consciousness Studies, **1**, 98–118, 1994.
[9]   Davies. P.C.W.s, *The Origin of Life* (Penguin, London, 2003); The Fifth Miracle (Simon & Schuster, New York, 1998)
[10]   Tarlaci. S., NeuroQuantology 2003; 3: 292-294

[11]   Thaheld. F. 2005 *Preprint* quant-ph/0509042
[12]   Thaheld. F. 2006 *Preprint* quant-ph/060418

[13]   Tegmark. M., Phys. Rev. E61, 4194-4206 (2000). It's preprint exists in [arXiv:quant-ph/9907009 v2].

[14]   Penrose. R. and Hameroff. S.R., J. Conscious. Stud. **2**, 98(1995).
[15]   Hameroff. S.R. and Penrose. R., J. Conscious. Stud. **3**, 36(1996).
[16]   Hameroff. S.R., Philos. Trans. R. Soc. London Ser. A **356**, 1869(1998).
[17]   Hameroff. S.R. ,NeuroQuantology , March 2007 , Vol 5 , Issue 1 , Page 1-8

[18]   Dowling. J. E., *The Retina: An Approachable Part of the Brain*. Belknap Press of Hrward University Press, Cambridge. (1987).

[19]   Portet. S., Tuszynski. J. A., Hogue. C. M. and Dixon. J. M., *Elastic vibrations in seamless microtubules*, European Biophysics Journal, 34, Number7, October 2005, 912-920.

[20]   Gerry, C., Knight, P. "*Introductory Quantum Optics*", Cmbridge University Press,(2005).

[21] Hameroff, S.R., 1994. *Quantum coherence in MTs: a neural basis for emergent consciousness?* J. Conscious. Stud. 1, 98–118.

[22] Penrose, R., 1989. *The Emperor's New Mind*. Oxford UniversityPress, Oxford.

[23] Kandel, E. R., Siegelbaum, S. A. & Schwartz, J. H. 1991 *Synaptic transmission.* In Principles of neural science (ed. E. R. Kandel, J. H. Schwartz & T. M. Jessell), 3rd edn, pp. 121-134. New York: Elsevier. Karplus, M. & McCammon

[24] Jibu, M. *On a heuristic model of the coherent mechanism of the global reaction process of a group of cells. Bussei Kenkyuu (Mater. Phys. Res.)* **53**, 431-436. (In Japanese.) (1990)

[25] Marshall, I. N. *Consciousness and Bose-Einstein condensates*. New Ideas Psychol. **7**, 73, 83. (1989)

[26] Penrose, R. *Newton, quantum theory and reality*. In 300 years of gravity (ed. S. W. Hawking& W. Israel). Cambridge University Press. (1987).

[27] Bohm, D. & Hiley, B. J. 1993 *The undivided universe*. New York: Routledge.

[28] Jibu, M. & Yasue, K. 1995 *Quantum brain dynamics: an introduction*. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

[29] Stapp, H. P. 1993 *Mind, matter and quantum mechanics*. Berlin: Springer.

[30] Hameroff. S. R., BioSystems **77** 119-136 . (2004).

[31] Mavromatos, N. E., Mershin, A. and Nanopoulos, D. V. (2002), "*QED-Cavity model of MTs implies dissipationless energy transfer and biological quantum teleportation*," http://arxiv.org/abs/quant-ph/0204021

[32] Del Giudice. E., Doglia. S., Milani. M. and Vitiello. G., Nucl. Phys. B275 (FS 17) (1986), 185.

[33] Del Giudice. E., Preparata. G. and Vitiello. G., Phys. Rev. Lett. 61 (1988), 1085.

[34] Dicke. R. H., Phys. Rev. 93 (1954) 99.

[35] McCall. S. L. and Hahn. E. L., Phys. Rev. Lett. 18 (1967) 908

[36] Hameroff. S. R., *Ultimate Computing: Biomolecular Consciousness and Nanotechnology* (North-Holland, Amsterdam, 1987), and Journal of Consciousness Studies, 1 (1994) 91.

[37] Bokkon. I., *Phosphene phenomenon: A new concept*, BioSystems 92(2008) 168-174.

[38] Clegg. J. S. Amer. J. Physiol. **246**, R133 (1984).

[39] Clegg. J. Coll. Phenomena **3**, 289 (1981).

[40] Miyamoto, S. "*Changes in mobility of synaptic vesicles with assembly and disassembly of actin network.*" *Biochim. Biophys. Acta* **1244**, 85-91. (1995).

[41] Muallem, S., Kwiatkowska, K., Xu, X. & Yin, H. L. *Actin filament disassembly is a sufficient final trigger for exocytosis in nonexcitable cells*. J. Cell Biol. **128**, 589-598. (1995).

[42] Wachsstock, D. H., Schwarz, W. H. & Pollard, T. D. *Cross-linker dynamics determine the mechanical properties of actin gels*. *Biophys. Jl* **66**, 801-809. (1994).

[43] Ouyang. M., Awschalom. D. D., " *coherent spin transfer between molecular bridged quantum dots*". Science, 301, 1074-1078, (2003).

[44] Fröhlich. H., Int, J. Quantum Chem. **2**, 641 (1968).

[45] Fröhlich. H., Nature (London) **228**, 1093 (1970).

[46] Fröhlich. H., Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. U.S.A. **72**, 4211 (1975).

[47] Bennett. C. H., Brassard. G., Crepeau. C., Jozsa. R., Peses. A., and Wootters. W. K., Phys. Rev. Lett. **70**, 1895 (1993).

[48] Wootters. W. K. and Zurek. W. H., Nature (London) **299**, 802 (1982); Dieks .D., Phys. Lett. A **92**, 271 (1982).

[49] Jibu, M., Hagan, S., Hameroff, S.R., Pribram, K.H., Yasue, K. (1994). "*Quantum optical coherenc in cytoskeletal MTs: implications for brain function*", Biosystems 32, 95-209.

[50]   Hameroff. S., Tuszynski. J., "*Quantum states in proteins and protein assemblies: The essence of life?*", Proceedings of SPIE Conference on Fluctuationa and Noise, Canary Islands, June 2004

[51]   D. D. Georgiev, arXiv: quant-ph/ 0208053

[52]   Web address: *http://thebrain.mcgill.ca/.../i_09_cl_dev.html*

[53]   Zeki, S. " *The visual image in mind and brain*", Scientific American, 267:42-50 (1993).

[54]   Hagan. S., Hameroff. S. R., and Tuszynski. J. A., *Quantum computation in brain MTs: Decoherence and biological feasibility.* Physical Review E, Volume **65**, 061901. (2002).

[55]   Thaheld. F. H., *A method to explore the possibility of nonlocal correlations between brain electrical activities of two spatially separated animal subjects.* BioSystems **73**, 205-216.(2004).

[56]   Thaheld. F. H., *Can we determine if the linear nature of quantum mechanics is violated by the perceptual process?* BioSystems **71**, 305-309.(2003).

[57]   Thaheld. F. H., Comment on *Quantum superpositions and definite perceptions: envisaging new feasible experimental tests.* Phys. Lett. A **273**,232-234.(2000).

[58]   Georgiev. D. D., Glazebrook. J. F., Informatica **30,** 221–232 (2006).

AFRL-PR-ED-TR-2003-0034

Teleportation Physics Study

Eric W. Davis
Warp Drive Metrics
4849 San Rafael Ave.
Las Vegas, NV 89120

August 2004

Special Report

AIR FORCE RESEARCH LABORATORY
AIR FORCE MATERIEL COMMAND
EDWARDS AIR FORCE BASE CA 93524-7048

REPORT DOCUMENTATION PAGE		*Form Approved* *OMB No. 0704-0188*

Public reporting burden for this collection of information is estimated to average 1 hour per response, including the time for reviewing instructions, searching existing data sources, gathering and maintaining the data needed, and completing and reviewing this collection of information. Send comments regarding this burden estimate or any other aspect of this collection of information, including suggestions for reducing this burden to Department of Defense, Washington Headquarters Services, Directorate for Information Operations and Reports (0704-0188), 1215 Jefferson Davis Highway, Suite 1204, Arlington, VA 22202-4302. Respondents should be aware that notwithstanding any other provision of law, no person shall be subject to any penalty for failing to comply with a collection of information if it does not display a currently valid OMB control number. **PLEASE DO NOT RETURN YOUR FORM TO THE ABOVE ADDRESS.**

1. REPORT DATE *(DD-MM-YYYY)* 25-11-2003	2. REPORT TYPE Special	3. DATES COVERED *(From - To)* 30 Jan 2001 – 28 Jul 2003
4. TITLE AND SUBTITLE **Teleportation Physics Study**		**5a. CONTRACT NUMBER** F04611-99-C-0025
		5b. GRANT NUMBER
		5c. PROGRAM ELEMENT NUMBER 62500F
6. AUTHOR(S) Eric W. Davis		**5d. PROJECT NUMBER** 4847
		5e. TASK NUMBER 0159
		5f. WORK UNIT NUMBER 549907
7. PERFORMING ORGANIZATION NAME(S) AND ADDRESS(ES) Warp Drive Metrics 4849 San Rafael Ave. Las Vegas, NV 89120		**8. PERFORMING ORGANIZATION REPORT NO.**
9. SPONSORING / MONITORING AGENCY NAME(S) AND ADDRESS(ES) Air Force Research Laboratory (AFMC) AFRL/PRSP 10 E. Saturn Blvd. Edwards AFB CA 93524-7680		**10. SPONSOR/MONITOR'S ACRONYM(S)**
		11. SPONSOR/MONITOR'S REPORT NUMBER(S) **AFRL-PR-ED-TR-2003-0034**

12. DISTRIBUTION / AVAILABILITY STATEMENT

Approved for public release; distribution unlimited.

13. SUPPLEMENTARY NOTES

14. ABSTRACT
This study was tasked with the purpose of collecting information describing the teleportation of material objects, providing a description of teleportation as it occurs in physics, its theoretical and experimental status, and a projection of potential applications. The study also consisted of a search for teleportation phenomena occurring naturally or under laboratory conditions that can be assembled into a model describing the conditions required to accomplish the transfer of objects. This included a review and documentation of quantum teleportation, its theoretical basis, technological development, and its potential applications. The characteristics of teleportation were defined and physical theories were evaluated in terms of their ability to completely describe the phenomena. Contemporary physics, as well as theories that presently challenge the current physics paradigm were investigated. The author identified and proposed two unique physics models for teleportation that are based on the manipulation of either the general relativistic spacetime metric or the spacetime vacuum electromagnetic (zero-point fluctuations) parameters. Naturally occurring anomalous teleportation phenomena that were previously studied by the United States and foreign governments were also documented in the study and are reviewed in the report. The author proposes an additional model for teleportation that is based on a combination of the experimental results from the previous government studies and advanced physics concepts. Numerous recommendations outlining proposals for further theoretical and experimental studies are given in the report. The report also includes an extensive teleportation bibliography.

15. SUBJECT TERMS
teleportation; physics, quantum teleportation; teleportation phenomena; anomalous teleportation; teleportation theories; teleportation experiments; teleportation bibliography

16. SECURITY CLASSIFICATION OF:			17. LIMITATION OF ABSTRACT	18. NUMBER OF PAGES	19a. NAME OF RESPONSIBLE PERSON Franklin B. Mead, Jr.
a. REPORT **Unclassified**	**b. ABSTRACT** **Unclassified**	**c. THIS PAGE** **Unclassified**	A	88	**19b. TELEPHONE NO** *(include area code)* (661) 275-5929

NOTICE

USING GOVERNMENT DRAWINGS, SPECIFICATIONS, OR OTHER DATA INCLUDED IN THIS DOCUMENT FOR ANY PURPOSE OTHER THAN GOVERNMENT PROCUREMENT DOES NOT IN ANY WAY OBLIGATE THE US GOVERNMENT. THE FACT THAT THE GOVERNMENT FORMULATED OR SUPPLIED THE DRAWINGS, SPECIFICATIONS, OR OTHER DATA DOES NOT LICENSE THE HOLDER OR ANY OTHER PERSON OR CORPORATION; OR CONVEY ANY RIGHTS OR PERMISSION TO MANUFACTURE, USE, OR SELL ANY PATENTED INVENTION THAT MAY RELATE TO THEM.

FOREWORD

This Special Technical Report presents the results of a subcontracted study performed by Warp Drive Metrics, Las Vegas, NV, under Contract No. F04611-99-C-0025, for the Air Force Research Laboratory (AFRL)/Space and Missile Propulsion Division, Propellant Branch (PRSP), Edwards AFB, CA. The Project Manager for AFRL/PRSP was Dr. Franklin B. Mead, Jr.

This report has been reviewed and is approved for release and distribution in accordance with the distribution statement on the cover and on the SF Form 298. This report is published in the interest of scientific and technical information exchange and does not constitute approval or disapproval of its ideas or findings.

//Signed//   //Signed//
_____   _____
FRANKLIN B. MEAD, JR.   RONALD E. CHANNELL
Project Manager   Chief, Propellants Branch

//Signed//   //Signed//   AFRL-ERS-PAS-04-155
_____
PHILIP A. KESSEL   RANNEY G. ADAMS III
Technical Advisor, Space and Missile   Public Affairs Director
Propulsion Division

This Page Intentionally Left Blank

Table of Contents

List of Figures

List of Tables

Glossary

AEC	Average Energy Condition
AFRL	Air Force Research Laboratory
AU	Astronomical Unit
BBO	Beta (β)-Barium Borate
CGS	Centimeter-Gram-Second
CIA	Central Intelligence Agency
DARPA	Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency
DEC	Dominant Energy Condition
DIA	Defense Intelligence Agency
DNA	Deoxyribo Nucleic Acid
DoD	Department of Defense
EPR	Einstein, Podolsky and Rosen
ESP	Extrasensory Perception
eV	Electron Volt
FRW	Friedmann-Robertson-Walker
FTL	Faster-Than-Light
IBM	International Business Machines
INSCOM	Intelligence and Security Command
IR	Infrared
MeV	Mega-Electron Volt
MKS	Meter-Kilogram-Second
NEC	Null Energy Condition
NLP	Neuro-Linguistic Programming
NMR	Nuclear Magnetic Resonance
NSA	National Security Agency
PK	Psychokinesis
PPN	Parameterized Post-Newtonian
PRC	Peoples Republic of China
PV-GR	Polarizable-Vacuum Representation of General Relativity
QED	Quantum Electrodynamics
QISP	Quantum Information Science Program
R&D	Research and Development
SAIC	Science Applications International Corporation
SEC	Strong Energy Condition
SRI	Stanford Research Institute
USSR	Union of Soviet Socialist Republics
UV	Ultraviolet
WEC	Weak Energy Condition
ZPE	Zero-Point Energy
ZPF	Zero-Point Fluctuations

Acknowledgements

This study would not have been possible without the very generous support of Dr. Frank Mead, Senior Scientist at the Advanced Concepts Office of the U.S. Air Force Research Laboratory (AFRL) Propulsion Directorate at Edwards AFB, CA. Dr. Mead's collegial collaboration, ready assistance, and constant encouragement were invaluable to me. Dr. Mead's professionalism and excellent rapport with "out-of-the-box" thinkers excites and motivates serious exploration into advanced concepts that push the envelope of knowledge and discovery. The author owes a very large debt of gratitude and appreciation to both Dr. David Campbell, Program Manager, ERC, Inc. at AFRL, Edwards AFB, CA, and the ERC, Inc. staff, for supporting the project contract and for making all the paperwork fuss totally painless. Dr. Campbell and his staff provided timely assistance when the author needed it, which helped make this contract project run smoothly.

There are two colleagues who provided important contributions to this study that I wish to acknowledge. First, I would like to express my sincere thanks and deepest appreciation to my first longtime mentor and role model, the late Dr. Robert L. Forward. Bob Forward was the first to influence my interests in interstellar flight and advanced breakthrough physics concepts (i.e., "Future Magic") when I first met him at an AIAA Joint Propulsion Conference in Las Vegas while I was in high school (ca. 1978). The direction I took in life from that point forward followed the trail of exploration and discovery that was blazed by Bob. I will miss him, but I will never forget him. Second, I would like to express my sincere thanks and appreciation to my longtime friend, colleague and present mentor, Dr. Hal Puthoff, Institute for Advanced Studies-Austin, for our many discussions on applying his Polarizable Vacuum-General Relativity model to a quasi-classical teleportation concept. Hal taught me to expand my mind, and he encourages me to think outside the box. He also gave me a great deal of valuable insight and personal knowledge about the Remote Viewing Program. Last, I would like to offer my debt of gratitude and thanks to my business manager (and spouse), Lindsay K. Davis, for all the hard work she does to make the business end of Warp Drive Metrics run smoothly.

Eric W. Davis, Ph.D., FBIS
Warp Drive Metrics
Las Vegas, NV

Preface

The Teleportation Physics Study is divided into four phases. Phase I is a review and documentation of quantum teleportation, its theoretical basis, technological development, and its potential application. Phase II developed a textbook description of teleportation as it occurs in classical physics, explored its theoretical and experimental status, and projected its potential applications. Phase III consisted of a search for teleportation phenomena occurring naturally or under laboratory conditions that can be assembled into a model describing the conditions required to accomplish the disembodied conveyance of objects. The characteristics of teleportation were defined, and physical theories were evaluated in terms of their ability to completely describe the phenomenon. Presently accepted physics theories, as well as theories that challenge the current physics paradigm were investigated for completeness. The theories that provide the best chance of explaining teleportation were selected, and experiments with a high chance of accomplishing teleportation were identified. Phase IV is the final report.

The report contains five chapters. Chapter 1 is an overview of the textbook descriptions for the various teleportation phenomena that are found in nature, in theoretical physics concepts, and in experimental laboratory work. Chapter 2 proposes two quasi-classical physics concepts for teleportation: the first is based on engineering the spacetime metric to induce a traversable wormhole; the second is based on the polarizable-vacuum-general relativity approach that treats spacetime metric changes in terms of equivalent changes in the vacuum permittivity and permeability constants. These concepts are theoretically developed and presented. Promising laboratory experiments were identified and recommended for further research. Chapter 3 presents the current state-of-art of quantum teleportation physics, its theoretical basis, technological development, and its applications. Key theoretical, experimental, and applications breakthroughs were identified, and a series of theoretical and experimental research programs are proposed to solve technical problems and advance quantum teleportation physics. Chapter 4 gives an overview of alternative teleportation concepts that challenge the present physics paradigm. These concepts are based on the existence of parallel universes/spaces and/or extra space dimensions. The theoretical and experimental work that has been done to develop these concepts is reviewed, and a recommendation for further research is made. Last, Chapter 5 gives an in-depth overview of unusual teleportation phenomena that occur naturally and under laboratory conditions. The teleportation phenomenon discussed in the chapter is based on psychokinesis (PK), which is a category of psychotronics. The U.S. military-intelligence literature is reviewed, which relates the historical scientific research performed on PK-teleportation in the U.S., China and the former Soviet Union. The material discussed in the chapter largely challenges the current physics paradigm; however, extensive controlled and repeatable laboratory data exists to suggest that PK-teleportation is quite real and that it is controllable. The report ends with a combined list of references.

1.0 INTRODUCTION

1.1 Introduction

The concept of teleportation was originally developed during the Golden Age of 20th century science fiction literature by writers in need of a form of instantaneous disembodied transportation technology to support the plots of their stories. Teleportation has appeared in such SciFi literature classics as Algis Budry's *Rogue Moon* (Gold Medal Books, 1960), A. E. van Vogt's *World of Null-A* (Astounding Science Fiction, August 1945), and George Langelaan's *The Fly* (Playboy Magazine, June 1957). The Playboy Magazine short story led to a cottage industry of popular films decrying the horrors of scientific technology that exceeded mankind's wisdom: *The Fly* (1958), *Return of the Fly* (1959), *Curse of the Fly* (1965), *The Fly* (a 1986 remake), and *The Fly II* (1989). The teleportation concept has also appeared in episodes of popular television SciFi anthology series such as *The Twilight Zone* and *The Outer Limits*. But the most widely recognized pop-culture awareness of the teleportation concept began with the numerous *Star Trek* television and theatrical movie series of the past 39 years (beginning in 1964 with the first TV series pilot episode, *The Cage*), which are now an international entertainment and product franchise that was originally spawned by the late genius television writer-producer Gene Roddenberry. Because of *Star Trek* everyone in the world is familiar with the "transporter" device, which is used to teleport personnel and material from starship to starship or from ship to planet and vice versa at the speed of light. People or inanimate objects would be positioned on the transporter pad and become completely disintegrated by a beam with their atoms being patterned in a computer buffer and later converted into a beam that is directed toward the destination, and then reintegrated back into their original form (all without error!). "*Beam me up, Scotty*" is a familiar automobile bumper sticker or cry of exasperation that were popularly adopted from the series.

However, the late Dr. Robert L. Forward (2001) stated that modern hard-core SciFi literature, with the exception of the ongoing *Star Trek* franchise, has abandoned using the teleportation concept because writers believe that it has more to do with the realms of parapsychology/paranormal (a.k.a. psychic) and imaginative fantasy than with any realm of science. Beginning in the 1980s developments in quantum theory and general relativity physics have succeeded in pushing the envelope in exploring the reality of teleportation. A crescendo of scientific and popular literature appearing in the 1990s and as recently as 2003 has raised public awareness of the new technological possibilities offered by teleportation. As for the psychic aspect of teleportation, it became known to Dr. Forward and myself, along with several colleagues both inside and outside of government, that anomalous teleportation has been scientifically investigated and separately documented by the Department of Defense.

It has been recognized that extending the present research in quantum teleportation and developing alternative forms of teleportation physics would have a high payoff impact on communications and transportation technologies in the civilian and military sectors. It is the purpose of this study to explore the physics of teleportation and delineate its characteristics and performances, and to make recommendations for further studies in support of Air Force Advanced Concepts programs.

1.2 The Definitions of Teleportation

Before proceeding, it is necessary to give a definition for each of the teleportation concepts I have identified during the course of this study:

- ➢ *Teleportation* – SciFi: the disembodied transport of persons or inanimate objects across space by advanced (futuristic) technological means (adapted from Vaidman, 2001). We will call this *sf-Teleportation*, which will not be considered further in this study.

- ➢ *Teleportation* – psychic: the conveyance of persons or inanimate objects by psychic means. We will call this *p-Teleportation*.

- ➢ *Teleportation* – engineering the vacuum or spacetime metric: the conveyance of persons or inanimate objects across space by altering the properties of the spacetime vacuum, or by altering the spacetime metric (geometry). We will call this *vm-Teleportation*.

- ➢ *Teleportation* – quantum entanglement: the disembodied transport of the quantum state of a system and its correlations across space to another system, where *system* refers to any single or collective particles of matter or energy such as baryons (protons, neutrons, etc.), leptons (electrons, etc.), photons, atoms, ions, etc. We will call this *q-Teleportation*.

- ➢ *Teleportation* – exotic: the conveyance of persons or inanimate objects by transport through extra space dimensions or parallel universes. We will call this *e-Teleportation*.

We will examine each of these in detail in the following chapters and determine whether any of the above teleportation concepts encompass the instantaneous and or disembodied conveyance of objects through space.

2.0 vm-TELEPORTATION

2.1 Engineering the Spacetime Metric

A comprehensive literature search for vm-Teleportation within the genre of spacetime metric engineering yielded no results. No one in the general relativity community has thought to apply the Einstein field equation to determine whether there are solutions compatible with the concept of teleportation. Therefore, I will offer two solutions that I believe will satisfy the definition of vm-Teleportation. The first solution can be found from the class of traversable wormholes giving rise to what I call a true "stargate." A stargate is essentially a wormhole with a flat-face shape for the throat as opposed to the spherical-shaped throat of the Morris and Thorne (1988) traversable wormhole, which was derived from a spherically symmetric Lorentzian spacetime metric that prescribes the wormhole geometry (see also, Visser, 1995 for a complete review of traversable Lorentzian wormholes):

$$ds^2 = -e^{2\phi(r)}c^2dt^2 + [1-b(r)/r]^{-1}dr^2 + r^2d\Omega^2 \qquad (2.1),$$

where by inspection we can write the traversable wormhole metric tensor in the form

$$ g_{\alpha\beta} = \begin{pmatrix} -e^{2\phi(r)} & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & [1-b(r)/r]^{-1} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & r^2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & r^2\sin^2\theta \end{pmatrix} \qquad (2.2) $$

using standard spherical coordinates, where c is the speed of light, $\alpha,\beta \equiv (0 = t, 1 = r, 2 = \theta, 3 = \varphi)$ are the time and space coordinate indices ($-\infty < t < \infty$; r: $2\pi r$ = circumference; $0 \le \theta \le \pi$; $0 \le \varphi \le 2\pi$), $d\Omega^2 = d\theta^2 + sin^2\theta d\varphi^2$, $\phi(r)$ is the freely specifiable redshift function that defines the proper time lapse through the wormhole throat, and $b(r)$ is the freely specifiable shape function that defines the wormhole throat's spatial (hypersurface) geometry. Such spacetimes are asymptotically flat. The Einstein field equation requires that a localized source of matter-energy be specified in order to determine the geometry that the source induces on the local spacetime. We can also work the Einstein equation backwards by specifying the local geometry in advance and then calculate the matter-energy source required to induce the desired geometry. The Einstein field equation thus relates the spacetime geometry terms comprised of the components of the metric tensor and their derivatives (a.k.a. the Einstein tensor) to the local matter-energy source terms comprised of the energy and stress-tension densities (a.k.a. the stress-energy tensor). The flat-face wormhole or stargate is derived in the following section.

2.1.1 Wormhole Thin Shell Formalism

The flat-face traversable wormhole solution is derived from the thin shell (a.k.a. junction condition or surface layer) formalism of the Einstein equations (Visser, 1989; see also, Misner, Thorne and Wheeler, 1973). We adapt Visser's (1989) development in the following discussion. The procedure is to take two copies of flat Minkowski space and remove from each identical regions of the form $\Omega \times \Re$, where Ω is a three-dimensional compact spacelike hypersurface and $\Re$ is a timelike straight line (time axis). Then identify these two incomplete spacetimes along the timelike boundaries $\partial\Omega \times \Re$. The resulting spacetime

is geodesically complete and possesses two asymptotically flat regions connected by a wormhole. The throat of the wormhole is just the junction $\partial\Omega$ (a two-dimensional space-like hypersurface) at which the two original Minkowski spaces are identified (see Figures 1 and 2).
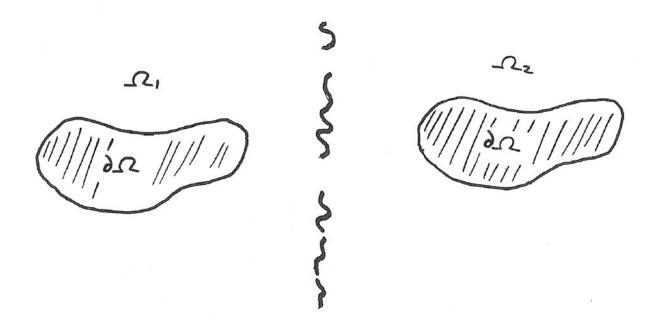
Figure 1. Diagram of a Simultaneous View of Two Remote Compact Regions (Ω_1 and Ω_2) of Minkowski Space Used to Create the Wormhole Throat $\partial\Omega$, Where Time is Suppressed in This Representation (adapted from Bennett et al., 1995)
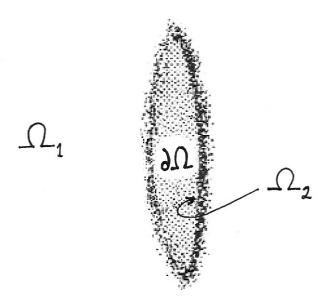
Figure 2. The Same Diagram as in Figure 1 Except as Viewed by an Observer Sitting in Region Ω_1 Who Looks Through the Wormhole Throat $\partial\Omega$ and Sees Remote Region Ω_2 (Dotted Area Inside the Circle) on the Other Side

The resulting spacetime is everywhere Riemann-flat except possibly at the throat. Also, the stress-energy tensor in this spacetime is concentrated at the throat with a δ-function singularity there. This is a consequence of the fact that the spacetime metric at the throat is continuous but not differentiable, while the connection is discontinuous; thus causing the Riemann curvature to possess a δ-function singularity (causing undesirable gravitational tidal forces) there. The magnitude of this δ-function singularity can be calculated in terms of the second fundamental form on both sides of the throat, which we presume to be generated by a localized thin shell of matter-energy. The second fundamental form represents the extrinsic curvature of the $\partial\Omega$ hypersurface (i.e., the wormhole throat), telling how it is curved with respect to the enveloping four-dimensional spacetime. The form of the geometry is simple, so the second fundamental form at the throat is calculated to be (McConnell, 1957):

$$
K^i{}_j{}^\pm = \pm \begin{pmatrix} \kappa_0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \kappa_1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \kappa_2 \end{pmatrix}
$$
$$
= \pm \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1/\rho_1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1/\rho_2 \end{pmatrix} \tag{2.3},
$$

where $i,j = 0,1,2$ and $K^i{}_j{}^\pm$ is the second fundamental form. The full 4×4 matrix $K^\alpha{}_\beta$ has been reduced to 3×3 form, as above, for computational convenience because the thin shell (or hypersurface) is essentially a two-surface embedded in three-space. The overall ± sign in equation (2.3) comes from the fact that a unit normal points outward from one side of the surface and points inward on the other side. We hereafter drop the ± sign for the sake of brevity in notation. The quantities κ_0, κ_1, and κ_2 measure the extrinsic curvature of the thin shell of local matter-energy (i.e., the stuff that induces the wormhole throat geometry). Since the wormhole throat is a space-like hypersurface, we can exclude time-like hypersurfaces and their components in the calculations. Therefore we set $\kappa_0 = 0$ in equation (2.3) because it is the time-like extrinsic curvature for the time-like hypersurface of the thin shell of matter-energy. As seen in equation (2.3) κ_1 and κ_2 are simply related to the two principal radii of curvature ρ_1 and ρ_2 (defined to be the eigenvalues of $K^i{}_j$) of the two-dimensional spacelike hypersurface $\partial\Omega$ (see Figure 3). It should be noted that a convex surface has positive radii of curvature, while a concave surface has negative radii of curvature.
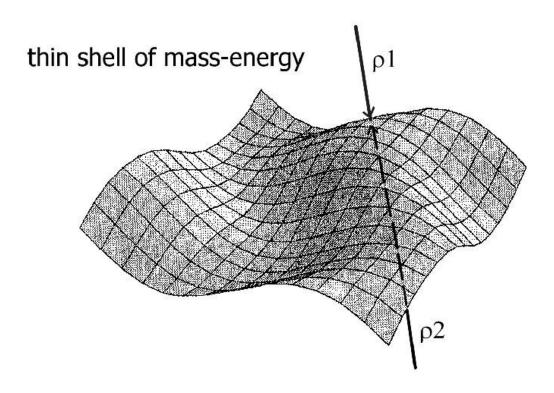
Figure 3. A Thin Shell of (Localized) Matter-Energy, or Rather the Two-Dimensional Spacelike Hypersurface ∂Ω (via (2.3)), Possessing the Two Principal Radii of Curvature ρ₁ and ρ₂

It is a standard result of the thin shell or junction condition formalism that the Einstein field equation may be cast in terms of the surface stress-energy tensor S^i_j of the thin matter-energy shell localized in $\partial\Omega$ (note: we are exploiting the symmetry of the wormhole with respect to interchange of the two flat regions Ω_1 and Ω_2):

$$S^i_{\ j} = -\frac{c^4}{4\pi G}\left(K^i_{\ j} - \delta^i_{\ j} K^k_{\ k}\right) \quad (2.4),$$

where G is Newton's gravitational constant and δ^i_j is the (three-dimensional) unit matrix. $K^k_{\ k}$ is the trace of equation (2.3):

$$K^k_{\ k} = Tr\, K^i_{\ j}$$
$$= \frac{1}{\rho_1} + \frac{1}{\rho_2} \quad (2.5)$$

and

$$\delta^i_{\ j} K^k_{\ k} = \begin{pmatrix} \dfrac{1}{\rho_1} + \dfrac{1}{\rho_2} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \dfrac{1}{\rho_1} + \dfrac{1}{\rho_2} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \dfrac{1}{\rho_1} + \dfrac{1}{\rho_2} \end{pmatrix} \quad (2.6).$$

Substituting (2.3) and (2.6) into (2.4) gives (after simplification):

$$S^i_{\ j} = \frac{c^4}{4\pi G}\begin{pmatrix} \dfrac{1}{\rho_1} + \dfrac{1}{\rho_2} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1/\rho_2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1/\rho_1 \end{pmatrix} \quad (2.7).$$

The thin matter-energy shell's surface stress-energy tensor may be interpreted in terms of the surface energy density σ and principal surface tensions ϑ_1 and ϑ_2:

$$S^i_{\ j} = \begin{pmatrix} -\sigma & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -\vartheta_1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -\vartheta_2 \end{pmatrix} \quad (2.8).$$

Thus we arrive at the Einstein field equation by equating (2.8) and (2.7) and multiplying both sides by -1:

$$
\begin{pmatrix} \sigma & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \vartheta_1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \vartheta_2 \end{pmatrix} = -\frac{c^4}{4\pi G} \begin{pmatrix} \dfrac{1}{\rho_1} + \dfrac{1}{\rho_2} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1/\rho_2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1/\rho_1 \end{pmatrix} \qquad (2.9),
$$

which gives the final result

$$
\sigma = -\frac{c^4}{4\pi G}\left(\frac{1}{\rho_1} + \frac{1}{\rho_2}\right) \qquad (2.10a)
$$

$$
\vartheta_1 = -\frac{c^4}{4\pi G}\frac{1}{\rho_2} \qquad (2.10b)
$$

$$
\vartheta_2 = -\frac{c^4}{4\pi G}\frac{1}{\rho_1} \qquad (2.10c).
$$

These are the Einstein equations. Equations (2.10a-c) imply that (for $\partial\Omega$ convex) we are dealing with **_negative_** surface energy density and **_negative_** surface tensions. This result is in fact the primary matter-energy requirement for traversable wormholes, as was proved by Morris and Thorne (1988), and later by Visser (1995), within the paradigm of classical Einstein general relativity. The negative surface tension (= *positive outward pressure*, a.k.a. gravitational repulsion or antigravity) is needed to keep the throat open and stable against collapse. The reader should **not** be alarmed at this result. Negative energies and negative stress-tensions are an acceptable result both mathematically and physically, and they manifest gravitational repulsion (antigravity!) in and around the wormhole throat. One only needs to understand what it means for stress-energy to be negative within the proper context. In general relativity the term "*exotic*" is used in place of "*negative.*" The effects of negative energy have been produced in the laboratory (the Casimir Effect is one example). In short, negative energy arises from Heisenberg's quantum uncertainty principle, which requires that the energy density of any electromagnetic, magnetic, electric or other fields must fluctuate randomly. Even in a vacuum, where the average energy density is zero, the energy density fluctuates. This means that the quantum vacuum can never remain truly empty in the classical sense of the term. The quantum picture of the vacuum is that of a turbulent plenum of virtual (i.e., energy non-conserving) particle pairs that spontaneously pop in and out of existence. The notion of "zero energy" in quantum theory corresponds to the vacuum being filled with such fluctuations going on. This issue is further elaborated on and clarified in greater detail in Appendix A. We will also revisit this in Section 2.2. Finally, it should be noted that for the analysis in this section we assumed an ultrastatic wormhole [i.e., $g_{00} \equiv 1 \Rightarrow \phi(r) = 0$ in equation (2.1)] with the "exotic" matter-energy confined to a thin layer, and we dispensed with the assumption of spherical symmetry.

We can now build a wormhole-stargate and affect *vm-Teleportation* such that a traveler stepping into the throat encounters **no** exotic matter-energy there. This will require that our wormhole be flat shaped. To make the wormhole flat requires that we choose the throat $\partial\Omega$ to have at least one flat face (picture the thin shell in Figure 3 becoming a flat shell). On that face the two principal radii of curvature become $\rho_1 = \rho_2 = \infty$ as required by standard geometry. Substituting this into equations (2.10a-c) gives

$$
\sigma = \vartheta_1 = \vartheta_2 = 0 \qquad (2.11),
$$

which is a remarkable result. A further consequence of this is that now $K^i_j = 0$, thus making the Riemann curvature and stress-energy tensors (Riemann: $R^\alpha_\beta \sim K^\alpha_\beta$; stress-energy: $T^\alpha_\beta \sim K^\alpha_\beta$) at the throat become zero such that the associated δ-function singularities disappear there. This means that a traveler encountering and going through such a wormhole will feel no tidal gravitational forces and see no exotic matter-energy (that threads the throat). A traveler stepping through the throat will simply be _teleported_ into the other remote spacetime region or another universe (note: the Einstein equation does not fix the spacetime topology, so it is possible that wormholes are inter-universe as well as intra-universe tunnels). We construct such a *teleportation* stargate by generating a thin shell or surface layer of "exotic" matter-energy much like a thin film of soap stretched across a loop of wire.

2.1.2 "Exotic" Matter-Energy Requirements

Now we have to estimate the amount of negative (or exotic) mass-energy that will be needed to generate and hold open a *vm-Teleportation* wormhole. A simple formula originally due to Visser (1995) for short-throat wormholes using the thin shell formalism gives:

$$M_{wh} = -\frac{r_{throat}c^2}{G}$$

$$= -(1.3469 \times 10^{27}\, kg)\frac{r_{throat}}{1\, meter} \qquad (2.12),$$

$$= -(0.709\, M_{Jupiter})\frac{r_{throat}}{1\, meter}$$

where M_{wh} is the mass required to build the wormhole, r_{throat} is a suitable measure of the linear dimension (radius) of the throat, and $M_{Jupiter}$ is the mass of the planet Jupiter (1.90×10^{27} kg). Equation (2.12) demonstrates that a mass of $-0.709\, M_{Jupiter}$ (or -1.3469×10^{27} kg) will be required to build a wormhole 1 meter in size. As the wormhole size increases the mass requirement grows negative-large, and vice versa as the wormhole size decreases. After being alarmed by the magnitude of this, one should note that M_{wh} is **not** the total mass of the wormhole as seen by observers at remote distances. The non-linearity of the Einstein field equations dictates that the total mass is zero (actually, the total net mass being positive, negative or zero in the Newtonian approximation depending on the details of the negative energy configuration constituting the wormhole system). And finally, Visser et al. (2003) have demonstrated the existence of spacetime geometries containing traversable wormholes that are supported by **_arbitrarily small quantities_** of exotic matter-energy, and they proved that this was a general result. In Section 2.3 we will discuss how or whether we can create such a wormhole in the laboratory.

2.2 Engineering the Vacuum

Engineering the spacetime vacuum provides a second solution that also satisfies the definition of vm-Teleportation. The concept of "*engineering the vacuum*" was first introduced to the physics community by Lee (1988). Lee stated:
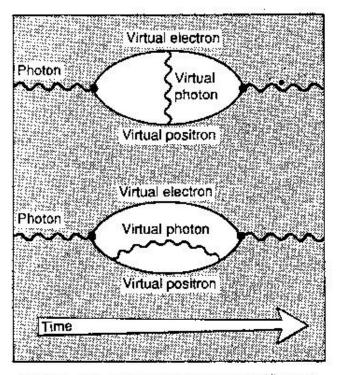
"*The experimental method to alter the properties of the vacuum may be called vacuum engineering…If indeed we are able to alter the vacuum, then we may encounter some new phenomena, totally unexpected.*"

This new concept is based on the now-accepted fact that the vacuum is characterized by physical parameters and structure that constitutes an energetic medium which pervades the entire extent of the

universe. We note here the two most important defining properties of the vacuum in this regard (Puthoff et al., 2002):

- ❑ Within the context of quantum field theory the vacuum is the seat of all energetic particle and field fluctuations.

- ❑ Within the context of general relativity theory the vacuum is the seat of a spacetime structure (or metric) that encodes the distribution of matter and energy.

We begin our look into this concept by examining the propagation of light through space. We know from quantum field theory that light propagating through space interacts with the vacuum quantum fields (a.k.a. vacuum quantum field fluctuations). The observable properties of light, including the speed of light, are determined by these interactions. Vacuum quantum interactions with light lead to an effect on the speed of light that is due to the absorption of photons (by the vacuum) to form virtual electron-positron pairs followed by the quick re-emission (from the vacuum) of the photon (see Figure 4). The virtual particle pairs are very short lived because of the large mismatch between the energy of a photon and the rest mass-energy of the particle pair. A key point is that this process makes a contribution to the observed vacuum permittivity ε_0 (and permeability μ_0) constant and, therefore, to the speed of light c [$c = (\varepsilon_0\mu_0)^{-1/2}$].
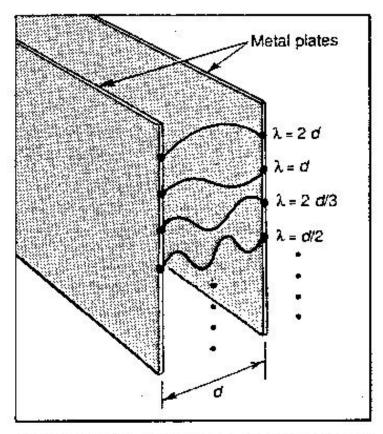
Photons can change into a variety of short-lived, or "virtual", particles as they fly through the vacuum. The processes above, represented by Feynman diagrams, are "two-loop" processes. They affect light's speed

Figure 4. A Schematic of Vacuum Quantum Field Fluctuations (a.k.a. Vacuum Zero Point Field Fluctuations) Involved in the "Light-by-Light" Scattering Process That Affects the Speed of Light (from Chown, 1990)

The role of virtual particle pairs in determining the ε_0 (μ_0) of the vacuum is analogous to that of atoms/molecules in determining the relative permittivity ε (and μ) of a dielectric material. We know that the absorption/re-emission of photons by atoms/molecules in a transparent medium (note: there are no strongly absorbing resonances, so the atoms/molecules remain in their excited states for a very short time before re-emitting photons) is responsible for the refractive index of the medium, which results in the reduction of the speed of light for photons propagating through the medium. This absorption/re-emission process is also known in physics as a scattering process. We know from experiment that a change in the medium leads to a change in ε (μ), thus resulting in a change of the refractive index. The key point arising from this analogy is that a modification of the vacuum produces a change in ε_0 (μ_0) resulting in a subsequent change in c, and hence, a corresponding change in the vacuum refraction index.

Scharnhorst (1990) and Latorre et al. (1995) have since proved that the suppression of light scattering by virtual particle pairs (a.k.a. coherent light-by-light scattering) in the vacuum causes an ***increase*** in the speed of light accompanied by a decrease in the vacuum refraction index. This very unique effect is accomplished in a Casimir Effect capacitor cavity (or waveguide) whereby the vacuum quantum field fluctuations (a.k.a. zero-point fluctuations or ZPF) inside have been modified (becoming anisotropic and non-translational invariant) to satisfy the electromagnetic boundary conditions imposed by the presence of the capacitor plates (or waveguide walls). The principal result of this modification is the removal of the electromagnetic zero-point energy (ZPE) due to the suppression of vacuum ZPE modes with wavelengths longer than the cavity/waveguide cutoff ($\lambda_0 = 2d$, where d = plate separation; see Figure 5). This removal of free space vacuum ZPE modes suppresses the scattering of light by virtual particle pairs, thus producing the speed of light increase (and corresponding decrease in the vacuum refraction index). We know from standard optical physics and quantum electrodynamics (QED) that the optical phase and group velocities can exceed c under certain physical conditions, but dispersion always ensures that the signal velocity is $\leq c$. But recent QED calculations (see, Scharnhorst, 1990 and Latorre et al., 1995) have proved that in the Casimir Effect system, the dispersive effects are *much weaker* still than those associated with the increase in c so that the phase, group and signal velocities will therefore *all increase* by the same amount. Note that, in general, no dispersion shows up in all of the modified vacuum effects examined by investigators.

Casimir effect: the vacuum is full of virtual photons, but photons with wavelengths (λ), more than twice the separation of the plates, are excluded from the space between them. The imbalance pushes the plates together

Figure 5. A Schematic of the Casimir Effect Cavity/Waveguide (from Chown, 1990)

Examples demonstrating the increase in light speed (decrease in vacuum refraction index) via the Casimir Effect vacuum and other modified vacuum effects, as well as those effects producing a decrease in light speed (increase in vacuum refraction index), are described as follows. The vacuum modification effect on the speed of light described in the previous paragraph is (Scharnhorst, 1990):

$$\frac{c_\perp^{\;*}}{c_0} = \left(1 + \frac{11}{2^6 \bullet (45)^2} \frac{e^4}{(m_e a)^4}\right) \qquad (\hbar = c_0 = \varepsilon_0 = \mu_0 = 1)$$

$$= \left(1 + \frac{11\pi^2}{8100}\alpha^2 \frac{1}{(m_e a)^4}\right) > 1$$

(2.13),

where $c_\perp^{\;*}$ is the (modified) speed of light propagation perpendicular to the Casimir Effect capacitor plates, c_0 is the speed of light in free space (3×10^8 m/s in MKS units), m_e is the electron mass, α is the fine structure constant ($\approx 1/137$), e is the electron charge ($e^2 = 4\pi\alpha$ in quantum field theory natural units), a is the plate separation, $\hbar$ is Planck's reduced constant, and ε_0 is the vacuum permittivity constant. The condition $\hbar = c_0 = \varepsilon_0 = \mu_0 = 1$ stresses that (2.13), and all the equations that follow, are in quantum field theory natural units. The speed of light and vacuum refraction index measured parallel to the plates is unchanged from their free space values ($c_\parallel = c_0$, $n_\parallel = n_0 = 1$). The modified vacuum refraction index measured perpendicular to the plates is (Scharnhorst, 1990):

$$n_\perp = \left(1 - \frac{11}{2^6 \bullet (45)^2} \frac{e^4}{(m_e a)^4}\right) < 1 \qquad (\hbar = c_0 = \varepsilon_0 = \mu_0 = 1)$$

(2.14).

Equations (2.13) and (2.14) show that in general $n_\perp < 1$ and $c_\perp^{\;*} > c_0$. But $c_\perp^{\;*} \rightarrow c_0$ and $n_\perp \rightarrow 1$ when $a \rightarrow \infty$ as expected, since we are now allowing all of the vacuum ZPE modes to re-enter the Casimir cavity in this case.

We now survey the additional examples of modified vacuums which increase/decrease light speed (from Latorre et al., 1995):

❑ For light (photons) propagating in a Friedmann-Robertson-Walker (FRW) vacuum (i.e., a homogeneous and isotropic Robertson-Walker gravitational background with Friedmann cosmology):

$$\frac{c^*}{c_0} = \left(1 + \frac{11}{45}\alpha G \frac{\rho_r + p}{m_e^{\;2}}\right) > 1 \qquad (\hbar = c_0 = \varepsilon_0 = \mu_0 = 1)$$

(2.15),

where c^* is the modified vacuum speed of light, G is Newton's constant, ρ_r is the energy density and p is the pressure of a radiation-dominated universe ($p = \rho_r/3$). Here the speed of light is increased.

❑ For light (photons) propagating in a homogeneous and isotropic thermal vacuum:

$$\frac{c^*}{c_0} = \left(1 - \frac{44\pi^2}{2025}\alpha^2 \frac{T^4}{m_e^{\;4}}\right) < 1 \qquad (\hbar = c_0 = \varepsilon_0 = \mu_0 = k_B = 1)$$

(2.16),

where T is the temperature of the vacuum and k_B is the Boltzmann constant. Here the speed of light is decreased.

❑ For light (photons) propagating in an anisotropic vacuum given by an external constant uniform magnetic field $\boldsymbol{B}$:

$$\frac{c_{\parallel}^*}{c_0} = \left(1 - \frac{8}{45}\alpha^2 \frac{\boldsymbol{B}^2}{m_e^4}\sin^2\theta\right) < 1 \qquad (\hbar = c_0 = \varepsilon_0 = \mu_0 = 1)$$

$$\frac{c_{\perp}^*}{c_0} = \left(1 - \frac{14}{45}\alpha^2 \frac{\boldsymbol{B}^2}{m_e^4}\sin^2\theta\right) < 1$$

(2.17),

where the speed of light is decreased in this vacuum for polarizations coplanar (∥) with and perpendicular (⊥) to the plane defined by $\boldsymbol{B}$ and the direction of propagation, and θ is the angle between $\boldsymbol{B}$ and the direction of propagation. Latorre et al. (1995) calculated the polarization-average of (2.17) to give the averaged (modified) speed of light in the B-field:

$$\frac{c^*}{c_0} = \left(1 - \frac{22}{135}\alpha^2 \frac{\boldsymbol{B}^2}{m_e^4}\right) < 1 \qquad (\hbar = c_0 = \varepsilon_0 = \mu_0 = 1) \quad (2.18).$$

❑ For light (photons) propagating in an anisotropic vacuum given by an external constant uniform electric field $\boldsymbol{E}$, the polarization-averaged modified speed of light is:

$$\frac{c^*}{c_0} = \left(1 - \frac{22}{135}\alpha^2 \frac{\boldsymbol{E}^2}{m_e^4}\right) < 1 \qquad (\hbar = c_0 = \varepsilon_0 = \mu_0 = 1) \qquad (2.19).$$

Here the speed of light is decreased.

Equations (2.16) – (2.19) are the result of vacuum modifications that populate the vacuum with virtual or real particles that induce coherent (light-by-light) scattering, which reduces the speed of massless particles. By examining the form of equations (2.13) and (2.15) – (2.19) Latorre et al. (1995) discovered that the low energy modification of the speed of light is proportional to the ratio of the modified vacuum energy density (as compared to the standard vacuum energy density, $\rho_{vac} = 0$) over m_e^4, with a universal numerical coefficient and the corresponding coupling constants. And a general rule became apparent from their analysis that is applicable to modified vacua for massive and massless quantum field theories, for low energy:

$c^* > c_0$ (vacuum refraction index < 1) when the modified vacuum has a lower energy density
$c^* < c_0$ (vacuum refraction index > 1) when the modified vacuum has a higher energy density
$c^* = c_0$ (vacuum refraction index = 1) when the vacuum is free (or un-modified) with $\rho_{vac} = 0$

The first two rules explain the sign of the change of the speed of light. From this rule and the mathematical commonality between the form of (2.13) and (2.15) – (2.19) Latorre et al. (1995) found a single unifying expression to replace these equations:

$$\frac{c^*}{c_0} = 1 - \frac{44}{135}\alpha^2 \frac{\rho}{m_e^4} \qquad (\hbar = c_0 = \varepsilon_0 = \mu_0 = 1) \qquad (2.20),$$

where ρ is the energy density of the modified vacua under consideration such that $\rho \to \rho_E \sim \textbf{\textit{E}}^2$ for the electric field vacuum, $\rho \to \rho_B \sim \textbf{\textit{B}}^2$ for the magnetic field vacuum, and $\rho \to \rho_T \sim \pi^2 T^4$ for the thermal vacuum. If the vacuum is a FRW gravitational vacuum, then one has to substitute one factor of α in (2.20) by $-m_e^2 G$ and $\rho \to \rho_r$. Equation (2.13) for the Casimir Effect vacuum studied earlier is recovered when $\rho \to \rho_{\text{Casimir}} = -(\pi^2/240)a^{-4}$.

Let us recast (2.20) into a more useful form. We subtract one from both sides of (2.20), do some algebra, and thus define the ratio of the change in the speed of light Δc in a modified vacuum to the speed of light in free space c_0:

$$\frac{c^*}{c_0} - 1 = \frac{c^* - c_0}{c_0} \equiv \frac{\Delta c}{c_0}$$

$$\frac{\Delta c}{c_0} = -\frac{44}{135}\alpha^2 \frac{\rho}{m_e^4} \qquad (\hbar = c_0 = \varepsilon_0 = \mu_0 = 1) \quad (2.21).$$

Equations (2.20) and (2.21) are in quantum field theory natural units, which is completely undesirable for estimating physically measurable values of $\Delta c/c_0$. We thus transform or "unwrap" (2.20) and (2.21) back into MKS or CGS units by making the following substitutions (Puthoff, 2003)

$$\rho \text{ (natural units)} \to \frac{\rho}{\hbar c} \text{ (MKS or CGS units)}$$

$$m_e \text{ (natural units)} \to \frac{m_e c}{\hbar} \text{ (MKS or CGS units)},$$

and after some algebra and rearranging we arrive at the final result:

$$\frac{c^*}{c_0} = 1 - \frac{44}{135}\alpha^2 \frac{\rho}{m_e c_0^2}\left(\frac{\hbar}{m_e c_0}\right)^3 \qquad (2.22)$$

and

$$\frac{\Delta c}{c_0} = -\frac{44}{135}\alpha^2 \frac{\rho}{m_e c_0^2}\left(\frac{\hbar}{m_e c_0}\right)^3 \qquad (2.23),$$

where all quantities are now in MKS or CGS units. We chose the former units so that $c_0 = 3 \times 10^8$ m/s, $\hbar = 1.055 \times 10^{-34}$ J-s, $m_e = 9.11 \times 10^{-31}$ kg, and $\alpha = 1/137$. Note that the ratio of the modified vacuum energy density to the electron rest-mass energy has the dimension of $(volume)^{-1}$ while the quantity in the bracket is the cubed Compton wavelength of the electron having the dimension of $(volume)$, and the product of these is dimensionless.

An excellent example for estimating the magnitude of the change in the speed of light (in a modified vacuum) is the Casimir Effect vacuum, since Casimir Effect experiments are common and widespread such that this would be ideal to experimentally test (2.23). We substitute the Casimir vacuum energy density $\rho_{\text{Casimir}} = -(\pi^2 \hbar c_0/240)a^{-4}$ (in MKS units) into (2.23), do the algebra, insert the MKS values for the physical constants, and make further simplifications to get:

$$\frac{\Delta c}{c_0} = -\frac{44}{135}\alpha^2\left(-\frac{\pi^2}{240}\frac{\hbar c_0}{a^4}\right)\frac{1}{m_e c_0^{\,2}}\left(\frac{\hbar}{m_e c_0}\right)^3$$

$$= \frac{11}{8100}\alpha^2\pi^2\left(\frac{\hbar}{m_e c_0 a}\right)^4 \qquad (2.24),$$

$$\approx \left(1.59\times10^{-56}\right)a^{-4}$$

where a (the plate separation) is in meters. Another useful equation is:

$$c^* = \left(1+\frac{\Delta c}{c_0}\right)c_0 \qquad (2.25),$$

where we make the substitution $c^* \to c_\perp^{\,*}$ for the present case. H. E. Puthoff and the author (Puthoff, 2003) compared the third line in (2.24) with equation (26) in Scharnhorst (1990) and discovered that the result cited there is in error, because the numerical coefficient is four orders of magnitude too small (Scharnhorst originally pointed out this error to Forward, 1996).

   We now set $a = 10^{-6}$ m (1 μm) and we get $\Delta c/c_0 \approx 10^{-32}$ and $c_\perp^{\,*} \approx c_0$, which is a horrifically small 1 part in 10^{32} change that we cannot hope to measure at present. But for $a = 10^{-10}$ m (1 Å) we get $\Delta c/c_0 \approx 10^{-16}$ and $c_\perp^{\,*} \approx c_0$, which is a 1 part in 10^{16} change that could be measurable at present or in the very near future using high precision laser technology. Last, for $a = 1.1229\times10^{-14}$ m (11.229 fm or $\approx$ 11 times the nuclear diameter; 1 fm $= 10^{-15}$ m) we find that $\Delta c/c_0 \approx 1$ and $c_\perp^{\,*} \approx 2c_0$. We are not able to do technical work at nuclear distances at this time; however, that could change as ultrahigh precision measurement technology continues to evolve. The threshold for the onset of significant changes in light speed occurs when $a < 10^{-12}$ m. This result is generally true for the other modified vacua surveyed in (2.15) – (2.19), since accessible (everyday) values for electric and magnetic field strengths, thermal temperatures and radiation densities are not large enough to overcome the size of the electron mass to create a measurable effect. However, there is a class of ultrahigh intensity tabletop lasers that have achieved such extreme electric and magnetic field strengths and temperatures that it may now be possible to consider using them to explore vacuum modification effects in the lab. We will return to this theme in a later section.

   •**Key Point**: As disappointing as the Casimir Effect vacuum (and other modified vacua) results are, it should be strongly pointed out that special relativity theory says that if in one inertial reference frame an object travels only one part in 10^{16} (or even one part in 10^{32}) times faster than c_0, then one can find another reference frame where departure and arrival times of the object are simultaneous, and thus the velocity is **_infinite_**. This is what motivates us to look at a teleportation mechanism based on engineering of the vacuum.

   •**Technical Notes**:

   ➤ Equation (2.15) is interpreted as an increase in the speed of light due to a decrease in the number of vacuum ZPE modes. However, this effect is totally unrelated to light-by-light scattering in the vacuum because the gravitational background "squeezes" (as in squeezed quantum optics states; see Davis, 1999a) the ZPE modes, therefore reducing the vacuum energy density. We further note that the coefficient of 11 is the same for the gravitational vacuum as for the other modified vacua examples based on QED. This factor also appears in the coefficient of the Euler-Poincare characteristic spin-½ contribution to the gravitational trace anomaly (Birrell and Davies, 1982). It is beyond the scope of this study to consider the deep connections between quantum field theory and gravitation.

➢ We have excluded from our survey the Latorre et al. (1995) results pertaining to all other (high or low energy) modifications of the speed of massless particles. That is because the other examples invoked different QED theories possessing massless ($m_e = 0$), massive and intrinsic mass scales that introduced complex correction terms (beyond the leading low energy terms surveyed above) which are mass-related or running mass-related, and they introduced no new speed modification effects (beyond the low energy electron-positron virtual pair contributions); or no genuine speed modification was possible (especially for the massless Quantum Chromodynamic sector involving pseudo-Goldstone particles).

➢ There is ongoing (very noisy) controversy within the physics community over the effects of $c^* > c_0$ on causality. As this topic is beyond the scope of this study, I will make three points in this regard: 1) There are no grounds for microcausality violations in accordance with Drummond and Hathrell (1980). 2) A new definition of causality is in order for FTL (faster-than-light) phenomena. 3) Investigators have found that time machines (a.k.a. closed timelike curves) do not affect Gauss's theorem, and thus do not affect the derivation of global conservation laws from differential ones (Friedman et al., 1990). The standard conservation laws remain globally valid while retaining a natural quasi-local interpretation for spacetimes possessing time machines (for example, asymptotically flat wormhole spacetimes). Thorne (1993) states that it may turn out that causality is violated at the macroscopic scale. Even if causality is obeyed macroscopically, then quantum gravity might offer finite probability amplitudes for microscopic spacetime histories possessing time machines. Li and Gott (1998) found a self-consistent vacuum for quantum fields in Misner space (a simple flat space with closed timelike curves), for which the renormalized stress-energy tensor is regular (in fact zero) everywhere. This implies that closed timelike curves could exist at least at the level of semi-classical quantum gravity theory. Therefore, FTL causality paradoxes are just a reflection of our ignorance or inadequate comprehension of the physics of chronology and causality.

In this section we have shown how "vacuum engineering" can modify the speed of light, and how this can, in principle, lead to vm-Teleportation. The vacuum modification concepts summarized above lead us to a formal theory that implements the concept of vacuum engineering within a framework that parallels general relativity theory. This theory is called the Polarizable-Vacuum Representation of General Relativity. In the next section we will introduce and summarize this theory.

2.2.1 The Polarizable-Vacuum Representation of General Relativity

The polarizable-vacuum representation of general relativity (a.k.a. PV-GR) treats the vacuum as a polarizable medium of variable refractive index (Puthoff, 1999a, 2002a, b; Puthoff et al., 2002) exemplifying the concept of the vacuum modification (or vacuum engineering) effects surveyed and discussed in the previous section. The PV-GR approach treats spacetime metric changes in terms of equivalent changes in the vacuum permittivity and permeability constants (ε_0 and μ_0), essentially along the lines of the "$TH\varepsilon\mu$" methodology (see Appendix B for a brief description of this) used in comparative studies of alternative metric theories of gravity (Lightman and Lee, 1973; Will, 1974, 1989, 1993; Haugan and Will, 1977). Such an approach, relying as it does on parameters familiar to engineers, can be considered a "metric engineering" approach. Maxwell's equations in curved space are treated in the isomorphism of a polarizable medium of variable refractive index in flat space (Volkov et al., 1971); the bending of a light ray near a massive body is modeled as due to an induced spatial variation in the refractive index of the vacuum near the body; the reduction in the velocity of light in a gravitational potential is represented by an effective increase in the refractive index of the vacuum, and so forth. This optical-engineering approach has been shown to be quite general (de Felice, 1971; Evans et al., 1996a, b).

As recently elaborated by Puthoff (1999a, 2002a, b; Puthoff et al., 2002) the PV-GR approach, which was first introduced by Wilson (1921) and then developed by Dicke (1957, 1961), can be carried out in a self-consistent way so as to reproduce to appropriate order both the equations of general relativity and the match to the standard astrophysics weak-field experimental (PPN parameters and other) tests of those equations while posing testable modifications for strong-field conditions. It is in application that the PV-GR approach demonstrates its intuitive appeal and provides additional insight into what is meant by a curved spacetime metric.

Specifically, the PV-GR approach treats such measures as the speed of light, the length of rulers (atomic bond lengths), the frequency of clocks, particle masses, and so forth, in terms of a variable vacuum dielectric constant K in which the vacuum permittivity ε_0 transforms as $\varepsilon_0 \rightarrow K\varepsilon_0$ and the vacuum permeability transforms as $\mu_0 \rightarrow K\mu_0$ (see also, Rucker, 1977). In a planetary or solar gravitational potential $K = exp(2GM/rc_0^2) > 1$ (M is a local mass distribution, r is the radial distance from the center of M) while $K = 1$ in "empty" or free asymptotic space (Puthoff, 1999a, 2002a, b; Puthoff et al., 2002). In the former case, the speed of light is reduced, light emitted from an atom is redshifted as compared with a remote static atom (where $K = 1$), clocks run slower, objects/rulers shrink, etc. See Table 1.

Table 1. Metric Effects in the PV-GR Model When $K > 1$ (Compared With Reference Frames at Asymptotic Infinity Where $K = 1$; adapted from Puthoff et al., 2002)

Variable	**Determining Equation** (subscript 0 is asymptotic value where $K = 1$)	$K > 1$ *(typical mass distribution, M)*
modified speed of light $c^*(K)$	$c^* = c_0/K$	speed of light $< c_0$
Modified mass $m(K)$	$m = m_0 K^{3/2}$	effective mass increases
modified frequency $\omega(K)$	$\omega = \omega_0 K^{-1/2}$	redshift toward lower frequencies
modified time interval $\Delta t(K)$	$\Delta t = \Delta t_0 K^{1/2}$	clocks run slower
modified energy $E(K)$	$E = E_0 K^{-1/2}$	lower energy states
Modified length $L(K)$	$L = L_0 K^{-1/2}$	objects/rulers shrink
dielectric-vacuum "gravitational" forces $F(K)$	$F(K) \propto \nabla K$	attractive gravitational force

When $K = 1$ we have the condition that $c^* = c_0$ (vacuum refraction index = 1), because the vacuum is free (or un-modified, and $\rho_{vac} = 0$) in this case. When $K > 1$, as occurs in a region of space possessing a gravitational potential, then we have the condition that $c^* < c_0$ (vacuum refraction index > 1), because the modified vacuum has a higher energy density in the presence of the local mass distribution that generates the local gravitational field. This fact allows us to make a direct correspondence between the speed of light modification physics discussion in Section 2.2 and the underlying basis for the physics of the PV-GR model. Under certain conditions the spacetime metric can in principle be modified to reduce the value of K to below unity, thus allowing for faster-than-light (FTL) motion to be physically realized. In this case, the local speed of light (as measured by remote static observers) is increased, light emitted from an atom is blueshifted as compared with a remote static atom, objects/rulers expand, clocks run faster, etc. See Table 2. We therefore have the condition that $c^* > c_0$ (vacuum refraction index < 1) because the modified vacuum has a lower energy density. In fact, Puthoff (1999a, 2002a) has analyzed certain special

black hole metrics and found $K < 1$ from the model. We will return to this theme later. In what follows we briefly review and summarize the key points and equations from the development of the PV-GR model, and we refer the reader to Puthoff (1999a, 2002a, b) for more extensive discussion and derivations.

Table 2. Metric Effects in the PV-GR Model When $K < 1$ (Compared With Reference Frames at Asymptotic Infinity Where $K = 1$; adapted from Puthoff et al., 2002)

Variable	**Determining Equation** (subscript 0 is asymptotic value where $K = 1$)	$K < 1$ *(typical mass distribution, M)*
modified speed of light $c^*(K)$	$c^* = c_0/K$	speed of light $> c_0$
modified mass $m(K)$	$m = m_0 K^{3/2}$	effective mass decreases
modified frequency $\omega(K)$	$\omega = \omega_0 K^{-1/2}$	blueshift toward higher frequencies
modified time interval $\Delta t(K)$	$\Delta t = \Delta t_0 K^{1/2}$	clocks run faster
modified energy $E(K)$	$E = E_0 K^{-1/2}$	higher energy states
modified length $L(K)$	$L = L_0 K^{-1/2}$	objects/rulers expand
dielectric-vacuum "gravitational" forces $F(K)$	$F(K) \propto \nabla K$	repulsive gravitational force

We begin by recalling that in flat space electrodynamics, the electric flux vector **D** in a linear, homogeneous medium can be written

$$\mathbf{D} = \varepsilon \mathbf{E}$$
$$= \varepsilon_0 \mathbf{E} + \mathbf{P} \qquad (2.26),$$
$$= \varepsilon_0 \mathbf{E} + \alpha_V \mathbf{E}$$

where ε is the permittivity of the medium, the polarization **P** corresponds to the induced dipole moment per unit volume in the medium whose polarizability per unit volume is α_V, and **E** is the electric field. The identical form of the last two terms naturally leads to the interpretation of ε_0 as the polarizability per unit volume of the vacuum. The quantum picture of the vacuum, where it has been shown that the vacuum acts as a polarizable medium by virtue of induced dipole moments resulting from the excitation of virtual electron-positron particle pairs (Heitler, 1954), completely justifies the interpretation that the vacuum is a medium. Note that there are other virtual particle pairs in the vacuum that also contribute to this picture; however, it is the electron-positron pairs that dominate the others, as shown in Section 2.2. The basic postulate of the PV-GR model for curved space conditions is that the polarizability of the vacuum in the vicinity of localized mass-energy distributions differs from its asymptotic free space value by virtue of vacuum polarization effects induced by the presence of the local mass-energy. Thus the postulate for the vacuum itself is

$$\mathbf{D} = \varepsilon \mathbf{E}$$
$$\equiv K \varepsilon_0 \mathbf{E} \qquad (2.27),$$

where K (a function of position) is the modified dielectric constant of the vacuum due to the induced vacuum polarizability changes under consideration. Equation (2.27) defines the transformation $\varepsilon = K\varepsilon_0$.

Table 1 shows the various quantitative effects a polarizable vacuum (in the presence of positive mass-energy distributions) has on the various measurement processes important to general relativity. The effects demonstrated in the middle and right columns demonstrate the basis of the polarizable vacuum approach to general relativity. Table 2 shows what effects are manifested when negative mass-energy distributions induce vacuum polarizability changes that lead to FTL phenomenon. Experimental observations impose constraints on the model causing key physical constants to remain constant even with variable polarizability present in the local space. Puthoff (1999a, 2002a, b) has shown that the fine structure constant is constrained by observational data to remain constant within a variable polarizable vacuum, and this constraint actually defines the transformation $\mu = K\mu_0$. The elementary particle charge e is also taken to be constant in a variable polarizable vacuum because of charge conservation. And $\hbar$ remains a constant by conservation of angular momentum for circularly polarized photons propagating through the (variable polarizability) vacuum. The remaining constant of nature is the speed of light, and although the tables showed how this was modified in variable polarizability vacuums, it is interesting to see how this modification comes about. In a modified (variable polarizability) vacuum the speed of light is defined, as it is in standard electrodynamics, in terms of the permittivity and permeability by:

$$
\begin{aligned}
c^* &\equiv (\varepsilon\mu)^{-1/2} \\
&= (K\varepsilon_0 \bullet K\mu_0)^{-1/2} \\
&= (K^2\varepsilon_0\mu_0)^{-1/2} \qquad (2.28), \\
&= \frac{1}{K}(\varepsilon_0\mu_0)^{-1/2} \\
&= \frac{c_0}{K}
\end{aligned}
$$

where the permittivity/permeability transformations and the free space (un-modified vacuum) definition for c_0 were inserted. Note that (2.28) can be re-written as $c^*/c_0 = 1/K$, and this is to be compared with (2.22). Thus we see from (2.28), and by comparison with (2.22), that K plays the role of a variable refractive index under conditions in which the vacuum polarizability is assumed to change in response to general relativistic-type influences. One further note of interest is that the permittivity/permeability transformations also maintains constant the ratio

$$
\sqrt{\frac{\mu}{\varepsilon}} = \sqrt{\frac{\mu_0}{\varepsilon_0}} ,
$$

which is the impedance of free space. This constant ratio is required to keep electric-to-magnetic energy ratios constant during adiabatic movement of atoms from one position in space to another of differing vacuum polarizability (Dicke, 1957, 1961). And this constant ratio is also a necessary condition in the $TH\varepsilon\mu$ formalism for an electromagnetic test particle to fall in a gravitational field with a composition-independent acceleration (Lightman and Lee, 1973; Will, 1974, 1989, 1993; Haugan and Will, 1977).

Now we make the "crossover connection" to the standard spacetime metric tensor concept that characterizes conventional general relativity theory, as originally shown by Puthoff (1999a, 2002a, b). In flat (un-modified or free) space the standard four-dimensional infinitesimal spacetime interval ds^2 is given (in Cartesian coordinates with subscript 0) by

$$ds^2 = -c_0{}^2 dt_0{}^2 + \sum_{i=1}^{3} dx_{i0}{}^2 \qquad (2.29),$$

where $i \equiv (1 = x, 2 = y, 3 = z)$. This metric means that measuring rods and clocks are non-varying wherever one goes in spacetime to make measurements. However, this has been shown to be incorrect in general relativity theory, so the length and time transformations (between proper and coordinate values) given in the tables (middle columns) indicate that measuring rods and clocks do vary when placed in regions where $K \neq 1$. Therefore, we replace the time and space differentials in (2.29) with the length and time transformations in the tables into (2.29), and derive the general relativistic spacetime interval

$$ds^2 = -\frac{1}{K} c_0{}^2 dt^2 + K \left(\sum_{i=1}^{3} dx_i{}^2 \right) \qquad (2.30).$$

Note that observers within a $K \neq 1$ region will always measure the speed of light to be c_0. Equation (2.30) defines an isotropic coordinate system, which is a common and useful way to represent spacetime metrics in general relativity studies. By inspection the metric tensor is written

$$g_{\alpha\beta} = \begin{pmatrix} -1/K & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & K & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & K & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & K \end{pmatrix} \qquad (2.31).$$

The Lagrangian density for matter-field interactions in a vacuum of variable K is given by Puthoff (1999a, 2002a, b) as

$$L_d = -\left[\frac{m_0 c_0{}^2}{\sqrt{K}} \sqrt{1 - \left(\frac{v}{c_0/K} \right)^2} + q\Phi - qA_i v^i \right] \delta^3 (\mathbf{r} - \mathbf{r}_0)$$

$$-\frac{1}{2} \left(\frac{\mathbf{B}^2}{K\mu_0} - K\varepsilon_0 \mathbf{E}^2 \right) - \frac{c_0{}^4}{32\pi G} \frac{1}{K^2} \left[(\nabla K)^2 - \frac{1}{(c_0/K)^2} \left(\frac{\partial K}{\partial t} \right)^2 \right] \qquad (2.32),$$

where the first term is the Lagrangian density for a free particle of mass m_0, charge q and 3-vector velocity $\mathbf{v}$ ($v = |\mathbf{v}|$, 3-vector components are labeled by i) interacting with electromagnetic fields via the electromagnetic field 4-vector potential $A_\mu = (\Phi, A_i)$ (note that $\delta^3(\mathbf{r} - \mathbf{r}_0)$ is the delta function that locates the point particle at position $\mathbf{r} = \mathbf{r}_0$); the second term is the Lagrangian density for the electromagnetic fields themselves, and the last term is the Lagrangian density for K (treated here as a scalar variable). This last term emulates the Lagrangian density for the gravitational field. Equation (2.32) does not include any quantum gauge field interaction terms because it is beyond the scope of the present incarnation of the PV-GR approach to include them. We can obtain the equations of particle motion in a variable dielectric vacuum by performing the standard variations of the Lagrangian density $\delta(\int L_d \, dx \, dy \, dz \, dt)$ with respect to the particle variables. However, we are more interested in obtaining the "master equation" for K by varying the Lagrangian density with respect to K, and Puthoff (1999a, 2002a, b) gives the result:

$$\nabla^2 \sqrt{K} - \frac{1}{\left(c_0/K\right)^2} \frac{\partial^2 \sqrt{K}}{\partial t^2}$$

$$= -\frac{8\pi G}{c_0^4} \sqrt{K} \left\{ \frac{\left(m_0 c_0^2/\sqrt{K}\right)}{\sqrt{1-\left(\frac{v}{c_0/K}\right)^2}} \frac{1}{2}\left[1+\left(\frac{v}{c_0/K}\right)^2\right] \delta^3(\mathbf{r}-\mathbf{r}_0) \right.$$

$$\left. + \frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{\mathbf{B}^2}{K\mu_0} + K\varepsilon_0\mathbf{E}^2\right) - \frac{c_0^4}{32\pi G}\frac{1}{K^2}\left[(\nabla K)^2 + \frac{1}{\left(c_0/K\right)^2}\left(\frac{\partial K}{\partial t}\right)^2\right]\right\}$$

(2.33).

This equation describes the generation of general relativistic vacuum polarization effects due to the presence of matter and fields. By inspecting the right-hand side of the equation, we observe that changes in K are driven by the mass density (1st term), electromagnetic energy density (2nd term), and the vacuum polarization energy density itself (3rd term). In fact, the 3rd term emulates the gravitational field self-energy density. Note that the 2nd and 3rd terms in (2.33) appear with opposite signs with the result that electromagnetic field effects can counteract the gravitational field effects. Puthoff found that (2.33) gives the solution $K = exp(2GM/rc_0^2)$ in the vicinity of a static spherically symmetric (uncharged) mass M (in the low velocity limit $v \ll c_0$, $\partial K/\partial t = 0$, $\mathbf{E} = \mathbf{B} = 0$, $q = 0$), which reproduces to appropriate order the standard general relativistic Schwarzschild spacetime metric for the weak gravitational field conditions prevailing in the solar system. This solution guarantees that $K > 1$ near mass concentrations.

Of major importance to the present study are solutions giving $K < 1$ so that teleportation can be realized. Puthoff has found one such solution by studying the case of a static spherically symmetric mass M with charge Q familiar from the study of the Reissner-Nordstrøm spacetime metric. In this case Puthoff found the result

$$K = \left[\cos\left(\frac{\sqrt{b^2-a^2}}{r}\right) + \frac{a}{\sqrt{b^2-a^2}}\sin\left(\frac{\sqrt{b^2-a^2}}{r}\right)\right]^2 \qquad \left(b^2 > a^2\right) \quad (2.34),$$

where $a^2 = (GM/c_0^2)^2$, $b^2 = Q^2 G/4\pi\varepsilon_0 c_0^4$, and r is the radial distance from the center of M. And in this case (2.34) gives $K < 1$, which shows that FTL solutions are available in the PV-GR approach (as they are also in the Einstein theory). (For $a^2 > b^2$ the solution is hyperbolic-trigonometric and describes the standard Reissner-Nordstrøm metric where $K > 1$.)

Generally speaking, in Einstein general relativity the Reissner-Nordstrøm metric can be manipulated along with two shells of electrically charged matter to form a traversable wormhole (Schein and Aichelburg, 1996). But there are two drawbacks to this. The first is that the scheme involves dealing with the collapsed state of the stellar matter that generates the metric (a.k.a. Reissner-Nordstrøm black hole) along with the unpleasant side effects that are encountered, such as the crushing singularities and multiple (unstable) event horizons. Second, the traversable wormhole is an eternal time machine connecting remote regions of the same universe together. Now there are no black hole solutions found in the PV-GR model because in that approach stellar matter collapses smoothly to an ultra-dense state and without the creation of singularities and event horizons (Puthoff, 1999b).

In either case, the Reissner-Nordstrøm metric does not offer a viable mechanism for vm-Teleportation. We are more interested in examining other PV-GR cases (where $K < 1$ or even $K \ll 1$)

that emulate the effects of traversable wormhole metrics that do obey the vm-Teleportation definition, such as the example presented in Section 2.1. Equation (2.33) suggests that we search for a vacuum engineering concept that exploits electromagnetic fields to alter the vacuum dielectric constant K to induce the desired vm-Teleportation effect in the modified vacuum. (However, we can insert other source terms that will lead to the desired result.) We envision this particular teleportation concept to resemble Figure 2. [Note: Before this report went to press H. E. Puthoff, C. Maccone and the author discovered a number of K < 1 solutions to equation (2.33) that uniquely meet the definition of vm-Teleportation and FTL motion. We discovered that the generic energy density required to generate K < 1 solutions must be negative, and that the total energy density of the system as seen by remote observes is approximately zero. This unique result compares very well with the traversable wormhole mass-energy density requirements discussed in Section 2.1.2. This discovery will be the subject of a forthcoming paper.]

2.3 Conclusion and Recommendations

The concept we envision for vm-Teleportation is that animate or inanimate objects would be placed inside an environmentally enclosed vessel that would simply be moved into the teleportation device. The "teleporter" would be activated, and the vessel would almost immediately disappear and then reappear at the remote destination as if it were briefly moving through a portal or "stargate." The teleportation device might be required to operate in the vacuum of space outside of the Earth's atmosphere. We have shown two practically equivalent ways to implement vm-Teleportation. There is the manipulation of spacetime geometry via exploiting negative (i.e., quantum vacuum zero point) energy as shown by Einstein's general relativity theory, and there is the modification of the vacuum dielectric constant as shown by the PV-GR model. Both have a great deal of theoretical foundation to begin exploring experimentally. The PV-GR model needs additional theoretical work for the present application, but it is now mature enough for experimental exploration.

There already is extensive theoretical, and more importantly, experimental research proving that the vacuum can be engineered (or physically modified) so that the vacuum ZPE can be exploited (via the Casimir Effect, for example) to extract electrical energy or actuate microelectromechanical devices (see for example, Ambjørn and Wolfram, 1983; Forward, 1984, 1996, 1998; Puthoff, 1990, 1993; Cole and Puthoff, 1993; Milonni, 1994; Mead and Nachamkin, 1996; Lamoreaux, 1997; Chan et al., 2001, and the references cited therein). But most of this research involves very low energy density regimes, which are much too low for our purposes. The Mead and Nachamkin (1996) device is actually designed to extract electrical energy from the higher frequency/higher energy density ZPE modes. However, new ultrahigh-intensity lasers became available in the 1990s that have achieved extreme physical conditions in the lab that are comparable to the extreme astrophysical conditions expected to be found in stellar cores and on black hole event horizons (Perry, 1996; Mourou et al., 1998; Perry, 2000). The power intensity of these lasers has reached the point to where they actually probe QED vacuum physics and general relativistic physics, and they have even modified the vacuum itself. The lasers were originally called petaWatt lasers (operating range of $10^{14} – 10^{18}$ Watts/cm^2 at femtosecond pulses), but they have now reached power intensity levels in the $10^{25} – 10^{30}$ Watts/cm^2 range. The lasers were made possible by a novel breakthrough called "chirped pulse amplification" whereby the initial low energy/low power intensity laser beam is stretched, amplified and then compressed without experiencing any beam distortions or amplifier damage. This laser system was initially designed as a large-optics beam-line power booster for the NOVA laser fusion experiment at Lawrence Livermore National Laboratory. But researchers found a way to shrink the optics down to tabletop scale, and one can now own and operate a tabletop ultrahigh-intensity laser for $\approx$ \$500,000. The dimensions of the optical bench used by the University of California-San Diego is $\approx$ 5 m $\times$ 12 m (or $\approx$ 60 m^2; see Mourou et al., 1998). In tabletop lab experiments ultrahigh-intensity lasers have generated >> gigagauss magnetic fields, $\geq 10^{16}$ Volt/cm electric field strengths, >> terabar light pressures and >> 10^{22} m/sec^2 subatomic particle accelerations. These ultrahigh-intensity

tabletop lasers are thus the ideal instrument with which to explore the fundamental physics underlying the two possible concepts for vm-Teleportation.

There are several ideas on how to generate negative energy in the lab that could potentially be extracted and concentrated in the proper fashion to induce the traversable flat-face wormhole outlined in Section 2.1.1 or induce the $K < 1$ condition (in the PV-GR model) outlined in Section 2.2.1. The schemes for generating negative energy are:

- Casimir Effect (described in Section 2.2): This is the easiest and most well known way to generate negative energy in the lab. The energy density $\rho_{Casimir} = -(\pi^2 \hbar c_0 / 240) a^{-4}$ within a Casimir capacitor cavity is negative and manifests itself by producing a force of attraction between the capacitor plates. This has been measured in the lab (see above references). Forward (1998) proposes a mechanism for the endless extraction of energy from the vacuum in a Casimir cavity by cyclic manipulation of the cavity dimensions.

- Moving Mirror: Negative quantum vacuum energy can be created by a single moving reflecting surface (a moving mirror). If a mirror moves with increasing acceleration, then a flux of negative energy emanates from its surface and flows out into the space ahead of the mirror (Birrell and Davies, 1982). However, this effect is known to be exceedingly small, and it is not the most effective way to generate negative energy.

- Optically Squeezed Laser Light: Negative quantum vacuum energy can also be generated by an array of ultrahigh intensity lasers with an ultrafast rotating mirror system. In this scheme a laser beam is passed through an optical cavity resonator made of lithium niobate crystal that is shaped like a cylinder with rounded silvered ends to reflect light. The resonator will act to produce a secondary lower frequency light beam in which the pattern of photons is rearranged into pairs. This is the quantum optical "squeezing" of light effect. (See Section A.2 in Appendix A for a complete definition and description of squeezed quantum states.) Therefore, the squeezed light beam emerging from the resonator will contain pulses of negative energy interspersed with pulses of positive energy. Another way to squeeze light would be to manufacture extremely reliable light pulses containing precisely one, two, three, etc. photons apiece and combine them together to create squeezed states to order. Superimposing many such states could theoretically produce bursts of intense negative energy. For the laser beam resonator example we find that both negative and positive energy pulses are of $\approx 10^{-15}$ second duration. We could arrange a set of rapidly rotating mirrors to separate the positive and negative energy pulses from each other. The light beam is to strike each mirror surface at a very shallow angle while the rotation ensures that the negative energy pulses are reflected at a slightly different angle from the positive energy pulses. A small spatial separation of the two different energy pulses will occur at some distance from the rotating mirror. Another system of mirrors will be needed to redirect the negative energy pulses to an isolated location and concentrate them there.

- Gravitationally Squeezed Vacuum Energy: A natural source of negative quantum vacuum energy comes from the effect that gravitational fields (of astronomical bodies) in space have upon the surrounding vacuum. For example, the gravitational field of the Earth produces a zone of negative energy around it by dragging some of the virtual particle pairs (a.k.a. virtual photons or vacuum ZPF) downward. This concept was initially developed in the 1970s as a byproduct of studies on quantum field theory in curved space (Birrell and Davies, 1982). However, Hochberg and Kephart (1991) derived an important application of this concept to the problem of creating and stabilizing traversable wormholes, and their work was corrected and extended by Davis (1999a). They proved that one can utilize the negative vacuum energy densities, which arise from *distortion of the electromagnetic zero point fluctuations* due to the interaction with a prescribed gravitational background, for providing a violation of the energy conditions (see

Section A.1 in Appendix A). Hochberg and Kephart (1991) showed that the squeezed quantum states of quantum optics provide a natural form of matter having negative energy density. And since the vacuum is defined to have vanishing energy density, anything possessing less energy density than the vacuum must have a negative energy density. The analysis, via quantum optics, shows that gravitation itself provides the mechanism for generating the squeezed vacuum states needed to support stable traversable wormholes. The production of negative energy densities via a squeezed vacuum is a necessary and unavoidable consequence of the interaction or coupling between ordinary matter and gravity, and this defines what is meant by gravitationally squeezed vacuum states. The magnitude of the gravitational squeezing of the vacuum can be estimated from the squeezing condition, which simply states that substantial gravitational squeezing of the vacuum occurs for those quantum electromagnetic field modes with *wavelength* (λ in meters) > *Schwarzschild radius* (r_S in meters) of the mass in question (whose gravitational field is squeezing the vacuum). The Schwarzschild radius is the critical radius, according to general relativity theory, at which a spherically symmetric massive body becomes a black hole; i.e., at which light is unable to escape from the body's surface. We can actually choose any radial distance from the mass in question to perform this analysis, but using the Schwarzschild radius makes equations simpler in form. The general result of the gravitational squeezing effect is that as the gravitational field strength increases the negative energy zone (surrounding the mass) also increases in strength. Table 3 shows when gravitational squeezing becomes important for example masses. The table shows that in the case of the Earth, Jupiter and the Sun, this squeeze effect is extremely feeble because only ZPF mode wavelengths above 0.2 m – 78 km are affected. For a solar mass black hole (radius of 2.95 km), the effect is still feeble because only ZPF mode wavelengths above 78 km are affected. But note from the table that quantum black holes with Planck mass will have enormously strong negative energy surrounding them because all ZPF mode wavelengths above 8.50×10^{-34} meter will be squeezed; in other words, all wavelengths of interest for vacuum fluctuations. Black holes with proton mass will have the strongest negative energy zone in comparison because the squeezing effect includes all ZPF mode wavelengths above 6.50×10^{-53} meter. Furthermore, a black hole smaller than a nuclear diameter ($\approx 10^{-16}$ m) and containing the mass of a mountain ($\approx 10^{11}$ kg) would possess a fairly strong negative energy zone because all ZPF mode wavelengths above 10^{-15} meter will be squeezed.

Table 3. Substantial Gravitational Squeezing Occurs When
$\lambda \geq 8\pi r_S$ (For Electromagnetic ZPF; adapted from Davis, 1999a**)**

Mass of body	Schwarzschild radius of body, r_S	ZPF mode wavelength, λ
Sun = 2.0×10^{30} kg	2.95 km	$\geq$ 78 km
Jupiter = 1.9×10^{27} kg	2.82 m	$\geq$ 74 m
Earth = 5.976×10^{24} kg	8.87×10^{-3} m	$\geq$ 0.23 m
Typical mountain $\approx 10^{11}$ kg	$\approx 10^{-16}$ m	$\geq 10^{-15}$ m
Planck mass = 2.18×10^{-8} kg	3.23×10^{-35} m	$\geq 8.50 \times 10^{-34}$ m
Proton = 1.673×10^{-27} kg	2.48×10^{-54} m	$\geq 6.50 \times 10^{-53}$ m

●**Recommendations**:

➢ Theoretical Program 1: A one to two year theoretical study (cost $\approx$ $80,000) should be initiated to explore the recently discovered $K < 1$ (FTL) solutions to equation (2.33) in order to define,

characterize and model the negative energy density source(s) that induce the FTL vacuum modification. The study should also identify potential lab experiments designed to test theoretical predictions.

- Theoretical Program 2: A one to two year study (cost ≈ $80,000) should be initiated to conduct a detailed review of the negative energy generation schemes summarized above to define their characteristics, performances and requirements. The study should develop technical parameters for each of the schemes in order to identify potential lab experiments.

- Experimental Program 1: An experimental study should be conducted to test Forward's (1998) Casimir energy extraction proposal. An experiment definition study will be required to estimate the experimental method, procedure, equipment needs and costs.

- Experimental Program 2: An experimental study using ultrahigh-intensity lasers should be conducted to test the Optically Squeezed Laser Light proposal. An experiment definition study will be required to estimate the experimental method, procedure, equipment needs and costs.

- Experimental Program 3: An experimental study using ultrahigh-intensity lasers should be conducted to probe QED vacuum physics and vacuum modification as well as test elements of the PV-GR model. A starting point for this program would be to use such lasers to perform the Ding and Kaplan (1989, 1992, 2000; see also, Forward, 1996) experiment. This is an important fundamental physics experiment to do, because it can distinguish between the rival quantum vacuum electromagnetic ZPE fluctuation and fluctuating charged particle source field theory models, which would settle the acrimonious debate over whether the vacuum really fluctuates or not. R. L. Forward (1999) told the author that a Nobel Prize rides on performing this experiment and settling the issue once and for all. The Ding and Kaplan proposal is already designed to probe QED vacuum physics and vacuum modification. [The essence of the Ding and Kaplan proposal is to demonstrate that a form of photon-photon scattering predicted by QED gives rise to 2nd-harmonic generation of intense laser radiation in a DC magnetic field due to the broken symmetry of interaction (in the Feynman "box" diagram approximation). This effect is possible only when the field system (optical wave + DC field) is inhomogeneous, in particular when a Gaussian laser beam propagates in either a homogeneous or inhomogeneous DC magnetic field. In other words, a vacuum region is filled with a DC magnetic field that polarizes the virtual particle pairs (a.k.a. virtual photons) in the vacuum. This polarized vacuum then scatters incident ultrahigh-intensity laser photons of frequency ν (energy E), thereby generating outgoing photons of frequency 2ν (energy $2E$).] An experiment definition study will be required to estimate the experimental method, procedure, equipment needs and costs.

- Experimental Program 4: An experimental study using ultrahigh-intensity lasers should be conducted to establish the extreme physical conditions necessary to test the strong-field limit of general relativity with an emphasis on generating spacetime curvature and negative energy in order to induce a putative micro-wormhole. (Experimental Programs 3 and 4 could be done together to determine whether Puthoff's PV-GR theory or Einstein's general relativity theory is the correct model for nature.) A Nobel Prize is in the offing if this question were to be addressed and settled. An experiment definition study will be required to estimate the experimental method, procedure, equipment needs and costs.

3.0 q-TELEPORTATION

3.1 Teleportation Scenario

Future space explorers and their equipment will need to easily and quickly travel from an orbiting spacecraft to the surface of some remote planet in order to get their work done, or military personnel in the United States need to easily and quickly travel from their military base to another remote location on Earth in order to participate in a military operation, or space colonists will need quick transport to get from Earth to their new home planet. Instead of using conventional transportation to expedite travel the space explorer, military personnel or space colonist and/or their equipment go into the "Teleporter" (a.k.a. "Transporter" in Star Trek lingo) and are "beamed down" or "beamed over" to their destinations at light speed. The mechanism for this teleportation process is hypothetically envisioned to be the following:

1. Animate/inanimate objects placed inside the teleporter are scanned by a computer-generated and -controlled beam.

2. The scan beam encodes the entire quantum information contained within the animate/inanimate object(s) into organized bits of information, thus forming a digital pattern of the object(s).

3. The scan beam then dematerializes the object(s) and stores its pattern in a pattern buffer, thus transforming the atomic constituents of the dematerialized object(s) into a matter stream. Alternative 1: The dematerialization process converts the atoms into a beam of pure energy. Alternative 2: The scan beam does not dematerialize the object(s).

4. The teleporter then transmits the matter/pure energy stream and quantum information signal in the form of an annular confinement beam to its destination. Alternative: Only the quantum information signal is transmitted.

5. At the receiving teleporter the matter/pure energy stream is sent into a pattern buffer whereby it is recombined with its quantum information, and the object(s) is rematerialized back into its original form. Alternative 1: The receiving teleporter recombines the transmitted quantum information with atoms stored inside a reservoir to form a copy of the original. Alternative 2: The quantum information is reorganized in such a way as to display the object on some three-dimensional (holographic) visual display system.

Problem: This generic scenario is modeled after teleportation schemes found in SciFi. There are a lot of important little details that were left out of the teleportation process because we simply do not know what they are. This technology does not yet exist. And we are left with the question of which one of the alternative processes identified in items 3 – 5 one wants to choose from. The above scenario is only an outline, and it is by no means complete since it merely serves to show what speculation exists on the subject. The above scenario describes a speculative form of what we call *q-Teleportation*.

There are questions to be addressed in the above scenario. Does the teleporter transmit the atoms and the quantum bit information signal that comprises the animate/inanimate object or just the quantum bit information signal? There are $\approx 10^{28}$ atoms of matter combined together in a complex pattern to form a human being. How does one transmit this much information and how do we disassemble that many atoms? Computer information gurus would insist that it is not the atoms that matter but only the bits of

information representing them when considering the transmission of large "bodies" of information. But are humans simply the sum of all the atoms (and the related excited atom quantum states) that comprise them? We could possibly learn to reconstitute a beam of atoms into a chemically accurate human being. However, would this also include the reconstruction of a person's consciousness (personality, memories, hopes, dreams, etc.) and soul or spirit? This question is beyond the scope of this study to address, but it is nevertheless one of the most important concepts awaiting a complete scientific understanding.

For the teleporter to process and transmit the quantum bit information signal that encodes the animate/inanimate object's pattern will require stupendous digital computer power. For each atom comprising the object we must encode its location in space (three position coordinates), its linear and angular momentum (three vector components for each quantity), and its internal quantum state (electron orbital-energy levels and their excitation/de-excitation and ionization states, binding to other atoms to form molecules, molecular vibrational/rotational states, bound nuclei states, spin states for electrons and nuclei, etc.), etc. If we assume that we can digitally encode all of this information for a single atom with a minimum of one kilobyte (1 byte = 8 bits, 1 bit $\equiv$ 0 or 1) of data, then we will require a minimum of 10^{28} kilobytes to encode and store an entire human being (in three-dimensions). To digitally store and access this much information at present (and for the foreseeable future) is nontrivial. It will take more than 2,400 times the present age of the universe ($\approx$ 13 billion years) to access this amount of data using commercially available computers (operating at $\approx$ 10 gigabyte/sec). Top-of-the-line supercomputers will not reduce this time significantly. The computer technology needed to handle such a large data storage requirement simply does not exist. The largest commercially available computers can store $\approx$ 40 gigabytes on a single hard drive. We will need $\approx 10^{20}$ of these hard drives to store the encoded information of just one human being. Also, wire and coaxial/fiber optic cables do not have the physical capacity to transmit this amount of data between devices. These numbers will not be significantly different for macroscopic inanimate objects. The information processing and transfer technology required for the teleportation system may become possible in 200 – 300 years if improvements in computer storage and speed maintains a factor of 10 – 100 increase for every decade. There is speculation that emergent molecular, bio-molecular (DNA-based systems) and quantum computer technology may achieve the performances required for a teleportation system. In the former case molecular dynamics mimics computer logic processes and the $\approx 10^{25}$ particles in a macroscopic sample will all act simultaneously, making for far greater digital information processing and transfer speeds. Researchers have given no formal performance estimates for this emergent technology. In the latter case quantum computing would take advantage of entangled quantum states of subatomic matter or photons, whereby digital logic processes would occur at light speed. This technology is in its infancy, and there has been no clear direction on what performance levels will be possible in the future. This topic will be discussed further in Section 3.2.3.

In the above teleportation scenario we might consider dematerializing animate/inanimate objects into a matter stream consisting of only the object's constituent atoms or atomic subcomponents (protons, neutrons and electrons) and transmitting them at the speed of light (or close to it). To push atoms or subatomic particles to near the speed of light will require imparting to them an energy comparable to their rest-mass energy, which will be at a minimum of one order of magnitude larger than the amount of energy required to break protons up into free quarks. The energy required to completely dematerialize (or dissolve) matter into its basic quantum constituents or into pure energy is alone stupendous. At first one will have to impart to every molecule within the object an energy that is equivalent to the binding energy between atoms (atomic binding energy ~ chemical energy ~ *several* eV) in order to break apart the molecules comprising the object's macro-structure. After this an energy equivalent to nuclear binding energies ($\approx$ *several* $\times 10^6$ times atomic binding energy, or $\approx$ *several* MeV) must be imparted to every free atomic nucleus inside the object in order to break apart the protons and neutrons residing within each nucleus. And last, an energy equivalent to the binding energy that holds together the three quarks residing within each proton and neutron must be imparted to each of the free protons and neutrons within the object. According to the Standard Model and experimental data, the quark binding energy is

practically infinite. But all is not lost, because the Standard Model also predicts that if we could heat up the nuclei to $\approx 10^{13}$ °C ($\approx 10^6$ times hotter than the core temperature of the Sun, or $\approx 10^3$ MeV), then the quarks inside would suddenly lose their binding energies and become massless (along with other elementary matter). This heat is also equivalent to the rest-mass energy of protons and neutrons. Therefore, to heat up and dematerialize one human being would require the annihilation of the rest mass-energy of all 10^{28} protons-neutrons or the energy equivalent of 330 1-megaton thermonuclear bombs. Compare this stupendous explosive energy with the explosive yield of the largest thermonuclear bomb ever detonated on Earth, which was a 50-megaton bomb that was built by Andrei Sakharov in the USSR and detonated on October 30, 1961; it was called "Tzar Bomba." Its first incarnation (ca. early October 1961) comprised a uranium fusion tamper, which gave an estimated explosive yield of ≈ 100 megatons. But the weapon was too heavy (27 metric tons) for a bomber to carry, so the tamper was replaced by one made of lead, which reduced both the weight and the yield. In the end we see that it is not a trivial problem to simply heat up and dematerialize any human or inanimate objects. The technology to do so does not exist unless we invoke new physics to get around the energy requirement.

Finally, we must consider the resolution and aperture of the optics required to scan and transmit the animate/inanimate object's matter (or energy) stream. The Heisenberg quantum uncertainty principle fundamentally constrains the measurement resolution of conjugate observable quantities, such as position and momentum or energy and time. The measurement of any combination of (conjugate) observables with arbitrarily high precision is not possible, because a high precision measurement of one observable leads to imprecise knowledge of the value of the conjugate observable. The quantum uncertainty principle makes it impossible to measure the exact, total quantum state of any object with certainty. The scan resolution of a teleportation system is defined by the wavelength of light used to illuminate the object's atomic/subatomic constituents and record their configurations. To resolve matter at atomic/subatomic distance scales requires that the energy of the scanner light (photons) be extremely large (according to the uncertainty principle); and during the scan this large light energy will be conveyed to the constituents, causing them to drastically change their speed and direction of motion. This means that it is physically impossible to resolve an object's atomic/subatomic particle components and their configurations with the precision necessary to accurately encode and later recreate the object being teleported. To resolve atomic/subatomic particles requires wavelengths smaller than the size of these constituents, which will typically be 1 Å – 1 fm. Such wavelengths are in the gamma ray part of the spectrum, and this becomes a major technical problem for us because at present there is no gamma ray electro-optics with which to work with. Now consider the example of teleporting an object from the surface of a planet back to its spacecraft in orbit some *several* $\times 10^2 – 10^3$ km away. The optical aperture required to illuminate and scan an object with ≈ 1 Å – 1 fm resolution from orbit will be >> *several* $\times 10^2 – 10^3$ km. If we are to consider teleporting an object from planet to planet or from star to star then the aperture required will be >> *several* $\times 10^8 – 10^{13}$ km. These technical problems are truly insurmountable unless totally new physics becomes available.

3.2 Quantum Teleportation

It turns out that there does in fact exist a form of teleportation that occurs in nature despite the numerous technical roadblocks described in the previous section. It is called *quantum teleportation*, which is based on the well-known concept of quantum entanglement. Erwin Schrödinger coined the word "entanglement" in 1935 in a three-part paper (Schrödinger, 1935a, b, c, 1980). These papers were prompted by the Einstein, Podolsky and Rosen (1935; denoted hereafter as EPR) paper that raised fundamental questions about quantum mechanics, whereby Einstein had loudly complained that quantum mechanics allowed physical processes resembling "spooky action at a distance" to occur. EPR recognized that quantum theory allows certain correlations to exist between two physically distant parts of a quantum system. Such correlations make it possible to predict the result of a measurement on one part of a system by looking at the distant part. On this basis, EPR argued that the distant predicted quantity

should have a definite value even before being measured, if quantum theory is complete and respects locality (a.k.a. causality). EPR concluded that, from a classical perspective, quantum theory must be incomplete because it disallows such definite values prior to measurement. Schrödinger's perspective on this argument gives the modern view of quantum mechanics, which is to say that the wavefunction (a.k.a. quantum state vector) provides all the information there is about a quantum system. In regards to the nature of entangled quantum states, Schrödinger (1935a, b, c, 1980) stated that, "The whole is in a definite state, the parts taken individually are not." This statement defines the essence of pure-state entanglement. Schrödinger went on to give a description of quantum entanglement by introducing his famous cat experiment.

To better understand the concept of quantum entanglement/teleportation we will focus on the quantum wavefunction (a.k.a. quantum state function). Any quantum system such as a particle that possesses a position in space, energy, angular and linear momentum, and spin is completely described by a wavefunction. This is usually symbolized in a variety of ways, and we choose to represent a generic wavefunction using the traditional "bra-ket" notation of quantum mechanics: $|\varphi\rangle$. Anything that we want to know about the particle is mathematically encoded within $|\varphi\rangle$. As we discussed in the previous section the wavefunction can never be completely known because there is no measurement that can determine it completely. The only exception to this is in the special case that the wavefunction has been prepared in some particular state or some member of a known basis group of states in advance. By measuring one of the properties of a quantum system, we can get a glimpse of the overall quantum state that is encoded within $|\varphi\rangle$. According to the quantum uncertainty principle the act of doing such a measurement will destroy any ability to subsequently determine the other properties of the quantum system. So the act of measuring a particle actually destroys some of the information about its pristine state. This makes it impossible to copy particles and reproduce them elsewhere via quantum teleportation. However, it turns out that one can recreate an unmeasured quantum state in another particle as long as one is prepared to sacrifice the original particle. The trick is to exploit the EPR process to circumvent the quantum uncertainty principle.

As discussed previously, EPR discovered that a pair of spatially separated quantum sub-systems that are parts of an overall quantum system can be "entangled" in a non-local (i.e., non-causal) way. When two particles come into contact with one another, they can become "entangled." In an entangled state, both particles remain part of the same quantum system so that whatever you do to one of them affects the other one in a predictable fashion. More precisely, a measurement on one of the entangled sub-systems puts it into a particular quantum state, while instantaneously putting the sub-system with which it is entangled into a corresponding quantum state, while the two sub-systems are separated by arbitrarily large distances in spacetime (even backwards in time!). A simple example of this phenomenon is to prepare a pair of photons in the same quantum state such that they are entangled, and then allow them to fly apart to remote locations without any form of communication occurring between them along their journey. Measuring the polarization of one of the pair of entangled photons induces the other photon, which may be light-years away, into the same state of polarization as that which was measured for its entangled twin. The basic operation of quantum teleportation can be described as determining the total quantum state of some large quantum system, transmitting this state information from one place to another, and making a perfect reconstruction of the system at the new location. In principle, entangled particles can serve as "transporters" of sorts. By introducing a third "message" particle to one of the entangled particles, one could transfer its properties to the other one, without ever measuring those properties.

Historically, quantum entanglement was never reconciled with the quantum uncertainty principle and the requirement of locality (or causality) in observed physical phenomena, thus it became a paradox in quantum theory. A three-decade debate began following the appearance of the EPR paper over whether quantum entanglement (a.k.a. "spooky action at a distance") was a real quantum phenomenon or not, and this debate came to be called the "EPR dilemma." Einstein's only solution to the dilemma was to suggest that quantum mechanics was incomplete and needed a reformulation to incorporate local hidden-variables that can account for observed physical phenomena without violating causality. Bell (1964) later solved the EPR dilemma by deriving correlation inequalities that can be violated in quantum mechanics but have

to be satisfied within every model that is local and complete. Such models are called "local hidden-variable models." Bell showed that a pair of entangled particles, which were once in contact but later moved too far apart to interact directly (i.e., causally), can exhibit individually random behavior that is too strongly correlated to be explained by classical statistics. Bell's inequalities make it possible to test whether local hidden-variable models can account for observed physical phenomena in lab experiments. Groundbreaking experimental work by Aspect et al. (1982a, b) along with further theoretical and experimental work done by others (Freedman and Clauser, 1972; Aspect, 1983; Aspect and Grangier, 1985; Hong and Mandel, 1985; Bennett and Wiesner, 1992; Tittel et al., 1998a, b; Tittel and Weihs, 2001) demonstrated violations of the Bell inequalities, which therefore invalidated the local hidden-variable models. The key result of recent theoretical and experimental work is that an observed violation of a Bell inequality demonstrates the presence of entanglement in a quantum system.

3.2.1 Description of the q-Teleportation Process

The experimental work of Bennett et al. (1993) followed by the theoretical and experimental work of others (Vaidman, 1994; Kwiat et al., 1995; Braunstein, 1996; Braunstein and Kimble, 1998; Pan et al., 1998; Stenholm and Bardroff, 1998; Zubairy, 1998; Vaidman and Yoran, 1999; Kwiat et al., 1999) made the breakthrough that was necessary to demonstrate the principle of quantum teleportation in practice. It was a remarkable technical breakthrough that settled, once and for all, the nagging question of whether quantum entanglement could be used to implement a teleportation process to transfer information between remotely distant quantum systems non-causally (i.e., at FTL speed). It is easy to describe how quantum teleportation works in greater detail. Figure 6 compares conventional facsimile transmission with the quantum teleportation process seen in Figure 7. In a conventional facsimile transmission the original document is scanned, extracting partial information about it, but it remains more or less intact after the scanning process. The scanned information is then sent to the receiving station, where it is imprinted on new paper to produce an approximate copy of the original. In quantum teleportation (Figure 7) one scans out part of the information from object A (the original), which one wants to teleport, while causing the remaining, unscanned, part of the information in A to pass, via EPR entanglement, into another object C which has never been in contact with A. Two objects B and C are prepared and brought into contact (i.e., entangled), and then separated. Object B is taken to the sending station, while object C is taken to the receiving station. At the sending station object B is scanned together with the original object A, yielding some information and totally disrupting the states of A and B. This scanned information is sent to the receiving station, where it is used to select one of several treatments to be applied to object C, thereby putting C into an exact replica of the former state of A. Object A itself is no longer in its original initial state, having been completely disrupted by the scanning process. The process just described is teleportation and not replication, and one should not confuse the two. There is a subtle, unscannable kind of information that, unlike ordinary information or material, can be delivered via EPR correlations/entanglement, such that it cannot by itself deliver a meaningful and controllable message. But quantum teleportation delivers exactly that part of the information in an object that is too delicate to be scanned out and delivered by conventional methods.
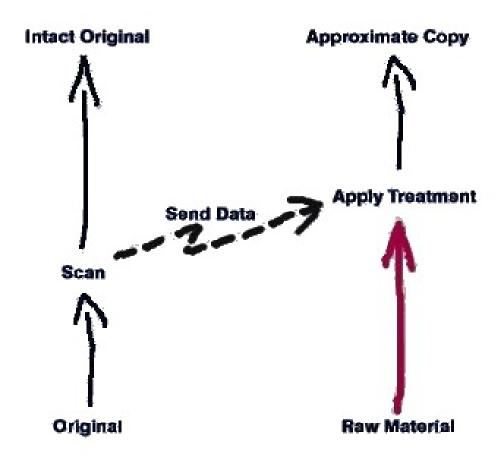
Figure 6. Classical Facsimile Transmission (Modified IBM Press Image)
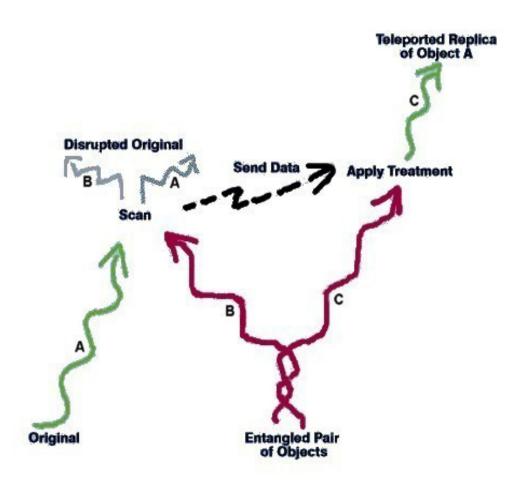
Figure 7. Quantum Teleportation (Modified IBM Press Image)

We now go one more final step to give a simplified outline of the actual teleportation process according to Bennett et al. (1993). They propose a multistep procedure by which any quantum state $|\chi\rangle$ of a particle or a photon (that correspond to an N-state system) is to be teleported from one location to another. For example, $|\chi\rangle$ might be a two-level system that could refer to the polarization of a single photon, the nuclear magnetic spin of a hydrogen atom, or the electronic excitation of an effective two-level atom. The following scenario outlines the q-Teleportation process in a very simplified way:

1. Prepare a pair of quantum subsystems $|\varphi\rangle$ and $|\psi\rangle$ in an EPR entangled state so that they are linked together. $|\varphi\rangle$ and $|\psi\rangle$ are maximally entangled and together constitute a definite pure state superposition even though each of them is maximally undetermined or mixed when considered separately.

2. Transport $|\varphi\rangle$ to the location of the teleportation transmitter and transport $|\psi\rangle$ to the location of the teleportation receiver. (In the technical literature the transmitter is called "Alice" and the receiver is called "Bob.") The transmitter and receiver can be many light years apart in space. Note that the two subsystems are non-causally correlated via entanglement, but they contain no information about $|\chi\rangle$ at this point. The two subsystems represent an open quantum channel that is ready to transmit information.

3. Now Alice brings the teleported state $|\chi\rangle$ into contact with the entangled state $|\varphi\rangle$ and performs a quantum measurement on the combined system $|\chi\rangle|\varphi\rangle$. Bob and Alice have previously agreed upon the details of the quantum measurement.

4. Using a conventional classical communication channel, Alice transmits to Bob a complete description of the outcome of the quantum measurement she performed on $|\chi\rangle|\varphi\rangle$.

5. Bob then subjects $|\psi\rangle$ to a set of linear transformations (i.e., suitable unitary rotations) that are dictated by the outcome of Alice's quantum measurement. The quantum subsystem Bob originally first received is no longer in state $|\psi\rangle$ after the linear transformations because it is now in a state identical to the original state $|\chi\rangle$. Therefore, $|\chi\rangle$ has in effect been teleported from Alice to Bob.

Bennett et al. (1993) showed in their experimental work that this scheme requires both a conventional communication channel and a non-causal EPR channel to send the state $|\chi\rangle$ from one location to another. In addition to this, a considerable pre-arrangement of entangled states and quantum measurement procedures is required to make the process work. Bennett et al. (1993) analyzed the information flow implicit in the process and showed that Alice's measurement does not provide any information about the quantum state $|\chi\rangle$. All of the quantum state information is passed by the EPR link between the entangled particle states $|\varphi\rangle$ and $|\psi\rangle$. We can think of the measurement results as providing the "code key" that permits the EPR information to be decoded properly at Bob's end. And because the measurement information must travel on a conventional communications channel, the decoding cannot take place until the code key arrives, insuring that no FTL teleportation is possible.

The q-Teleportation scheme teleports the state of a quantum system without having to completely measure its initial state. The outcome of the process is that the initial quantum state $|\chi\rangle$ is destroyed at Alice's location and recreated at Bob's location. It is very important for the reader to understand that it is the *quantum states* of the particles/photons that are destroyed and recreated in the teleportation process, and not the particles/photons themselves. The quantum state or wavefunction contains the information on the state of a particle, but is not a directly observable physical quantity like mass-energy. The quantum information contained within a state is available in the form of probabilities or expectation values.

Therefore, q-Teleportation *cannot* teleport animate or inanimate matter (or energy) in its physical entirety. However, some experts argue that because a particle's or a photon's quantum state is its defining characteristic, teleporting its quantum state is completely *equivalent* to teleporting the particle/photon even though the original particle's/photon's quantum state (and defining characteristic) was completely destroyed in the process (more on this in Section 3.3). Therefore, no quantum cloning is possible and we are left with a (near-perfect) copy of the now-destroyed original after teleportation (Wootters and Zurek, 1982; Barnum et al., 1996). And finally, classical information itself *cannot* be teleported faster than the speed of light via the non-causal EPR channel; however, quantum information can (more on this in Section 3.2.3).

3.2.2 Decoherence Fundamentally Limits q-Teleportation

Finally, the reader must understand that the q-Teleportation scenario described in the previous section was simplified because we unrealistically assumed that Alice and Bob shared an EPR entangled pair that was free of noise or decoherence. Decoherence is the process, whereby an object's quantum states degrade when information leaks to or from the environment (i.e., environmental noise) through stray interactions with the object. In reality, Alice and Bob have quantum systems that interact directly or through another mediating quantum system like two ions in an ion trap that interact through phonon modes of the trap, or Rydberg atoms in a laser cavity that interact via photons (Sackett, 2001; Raimond et al., 2001). Decoherence degrades the fidelity of the quantum link (i.e., the set of pure EPR entangled pairs) between two quantum systems, thus introducing a certain level of error in the exchange of quantum information between the systems.

In a real-world example of an application of q-Teleportation to quantum computation (discussed in the next section), we can devise an array of interconnected ion traps with each trap holding a small number of ions that are coupled by ions that are moved between the traps or by traveling photons (Wineland et al., 2002). The quantum link (or EPR interaction) between a pair of systems is subject to noise or decoherence through photon loss or heating of the phonons. At present, decoherence imposes a fundamental limit on our ability to perform quantum information processing. Research is continuing on whether decoherence can be reduced, circumvented, or otherwise be (partially or totally) eliminated. Dür and Briegel (2003) have taken the first step towards this goal at rudimentary level by showing that fault-tolerant quantum computation can be achieved in the presence of very high noise levels occurring in the interaction link between small quantum systems, if one assumes that local quantum processing on each end is nearly error free. They showed that the interaction link can have an error rate of two-thirds.

3.2.3 Recent Developments in Entanglement and q-Teleportation Physics

Quantum teleportation physics is still in its infancy. Both theoretical and experimental developments are advancing in many different directions, but are far from maturity at this point in time because the field is still evolving at present. Technical applications of entanglement and q-Teleportation are just becoming conceptualized for the first time, while a small number of basic physics breakthroughs and their related applications are in experimental progress at present. The research community is still in the process of discovering the full nature of entanglement and q-Teleportation, its rules, and what roadblocks nature has in store for its applications and further progression. The literature cited in this study is by no means complete, and only represents a subset of the entire field, because the research is still evolving.

An important application of quantum entanglement and q-Teleportation was the discovery made by Shor (1994, 1997) that computation with quantum states instead of classical bits can result in large savings in computation time. For example, the best algorithms take exponentially more resources to factor ever-larger numbers on a classical computer. A 500-digit number needs 10^8 times as many computational steps to factor as a 250-digit number. The latter classically requires $\approx 5 \times 10^{24}$ computational steps, or about 150,000 years computing time at terahertz speed, to factor. Shor found a polynomial-time quantum algorithm that solves the problem of finding prime factors of a large integer.

He showed that his algorithm rises only polynomially so that a 500-digit number takes only eight times as many computational steps to factor as a 250-digit number. And by using the quantum factoring algorithm, a 250-digit number requires only $\approx 5 \times 10^{10}$ steps or < 1 second to factor at terahertz speed, so that a 500-digit number will take $\leq$ 1 second to factor. No classical polynomial-time algorithm for this problem exists at present. This breakthrough generated a cottage industry of research into quantum computing and quantum information theory.

IBM (2001) constructed a prototype quantum computer that uses the nuclear spins of seven atoms that are part of a large molecule with the iron-based chemical composition $H_5C_{11}O_2F_5Fe$. The computer uses entangled nuclear spins for storage and has a capacity of seven qubits (qubits are defined in the bulleted list in the next two paragraphs below). All of the Fluorine atoms in the large molecule are Fluorine isotope 19 and two of the Carbon atoms are Carbon isotope 13. All the other non-hydrogen atoms have even isotope numbers and no nuclear spins. The objective of the prototype quantum computer was to factor the number 15 into its two prime factors 3 and 5 by using Shor's quantum factoring algorithm. The quantum computation required that a sample of $\approx 10^{18}$ of the large molecules be placed in a magnetic field and manipulated by nuclear magnetic resonance (NMR) techniques. This mechanism allows the spins to function as qubits, whereby Schor's algorithm can be performed via manipulation of the NMR fields. NMR was used to implement quantum computing in this prototype, because the nuclear spins are well isolated from decoherence as a result of the very long decoherence time (the time after which quantum coherence is lost due to environmental noise) in the system.

To factor larger numbers will require a system that uses more than seven qubits. It is estimated that a quantum computer using $\approx$ 36 qubits could very quickly perform computations that would require a conventional computer $\approx$ 13 billion years to perform. And such a computer could solve one of the technical problems of human teleportation discussed in Section 3.1. However, a scale-up in the number of qubits is difficult because the IBM prototype has reached the technology limit of NMR quantum computing. The prototype's operation requires that all of the qubits must be in the same molecule. And molecules with more than seven spins that can be used as qubits are not feasible at present. However, there are alternative technologies for quantum computing that show promise for scaling up the number of qubits. The technologies of nuclear spin orientation of single atom impurities in semiconductors, electron spin orientation in quantum dots, and the manipulation of magnetic flux quanta in superconductors all show promise of providing a basis for scalable quantum computers. Finally, the primary technical problem in quantum computing at the present time is decoherence, and this must be eliminated or otherwise mitigated before new quantum technology can become competitive with conventional computer technology.

A byproduct of the recent quantum computing and information research is that a modern theory of entanglement has emerged. Researchers now treat entanglement as a quantifiable physical resource that enables quantum information processing and computation. Entanglement is no longer treated as a paradox of quantum theory. It has been recently discovered that (Nielsen and Chuang, 2000; Nielsen, 2003; Terhal et al., 2003):

- various kinds of pure and mixed entangled states may be prepared in addition to the simple pure-state superpositions that was described in the previous section

- the members of an entangled group of objects do not have their own individual quantum states, only the group as a whole has a well-defined state (i.e., "the whole is greater than the sum of its parts")

- entangled objects behave as if they were physically connected together no matter how far apart they actually are, distance does not attenuate entanglement in the slightest – it has been demonstrated that information can be teleported over 40 km using existing technology (H. Everitt, Army Research Office, 2000)

- if something is entangled with other objects, then a measurement of it simultaneously provides information about its partners

- some quantum systems can have a little entanglement while others will have a lot

- the more entanglement available, the better suited a system is to quantum information processing

- decoherence degrades the fidelity of the quantum link (i.e., the set of pure EPR entangled pairs) between two quantum systems, thus introducing a certain level of error in the exchange of quantum information between the systems; thus limiting our ability to perform quantum information processing (see more on this issue in the next paragraph below)

- mixed entangled states may be measured, distilled, concentrated, diluted, and manipulated

- the basic resource of classical information is the bit (i.e., the two values 0 and 1), while quantum information comes in quantum bits (i.e., qubits) that are described by their quantum state; qubits can exist in superpositions that simultaneously involve 0 and 1, thus giving them an infinite range of values; groups of qubits can be entangled; qubits must be insulated against decoherence, so that the coherent state of the quantum system in a quantum computer is preserved for a time that is long enough to set up a calculation, perform it, and read out the results

- quantum computers processing qubits or entangled qubits can outperform classical computers; functional requirements of quantum computers:

  - ❖ they must have the ability to initialize any qubit in a specified state, and to measure the state of a specific qubit
  - ❖ they must have universal quantum gates, which are logical elements capable of arranging any desired logical relationship between the states of qubits
  - ❖ they must also have a processor capable of interlinking quantum gates to establish rules and boundary conditions for their inter-relationships – in a quantum computation, the arrangement of quantum gates connects the qubits in a logical pattern, according to a program or algorithm, and after an interval the qubits assigned to the result are read out

- quantum error correction codes exist, whereby qubits are passed through a circuit (the quantum analogue of logic gates) that will successfully fix an error in any one of the qubits without actually reading what all the individual qubit states are; no qubit cloning is required

- a completely secure quantum key can be generated and distributed (for communication and decoding of encrypted messages) using entangled photons has been demonstrated (Tittel et al., 2000; Jennewein et al., 2000; Naik et al., 2000); any eavesdropper's attempt to intercept the quantum key will alter the contents in a detectable way, enabling users to discard the compromised parts of the data

- in an experiment which verified that EPR entanglement obeys Special Relativity (Seife, 2000; Scarani et al., 2000; Gisin et al., 2000; Zbinden et al., 2000a, b), and involving a photon detector moving at relativistic speeds (for example, Bob moves away from Alice at close to the speed of light), investigators determined that quantum information via EPR photon pair entanglement must travel $> 10^7$ times light speed (the photon detectors were 10.6 km apart)

- investigators are still developing quantitative laws of entanglement to provide a set of principles for understanding the behavior of entanglement and how it is used to do information processing

- investigators are working to develop an understanding of the general principles that govern complex quantum systems such as quantum computers

Other developments are equally as interesting or compelling. For example, the quantum state of the object we wish to teleport does not have to describe single microscopic systems like photons, ions, atoms or electrons. Quantum states can describe large collections of atoms like chemical compounds, humans, planets, stars, and galaxies. Hartle and Hawking (1983) even derived the quantum wavefunction of the Universe in closed form, although, it was extremely simplified and excluded the presence of quantum matter-energy. So it has become possible to consider teleporting large quantum systems. We summarize the more recent spectacular developments in the following:

- Generation of entanglement and teleportation by Parametric Down-Conversion (Bouwmeester et al., 1997; Zeilinger, 2003): EPR entangled photon pairs are created when a laser beam passes through a nonlinear β-barium borate or BBO crystal. Inside the crystal (BBO, for example) an ultraviolet photon ($\lambda = 490$ nm) may spontaneously split into two lower energy infrared photons ($\lambda = 780$ nm), which is called parametric down-conversion. The two "down-conversion" photons emerge as independent beams with orthogonal polarizations (horizontal or vertical). (The orthogonal polarization states represent a classic example of the discrete quantum state variables that can be teleported. Other examples of discrete quantum variables that have been teleported using other schemes include the nuclear magnetic spin of a hydrogen atom, electronic excitations of an effective two-level atom, elementary particle spins, etc.) In the two beams along the intersections of their emission cones, we observe a polarization-entangled two-photon state. For the experimental realization of quantum teleportation, it is necessary to use pulsed down-conversion. Only if the pulse width of the UV light, and thus the time of generating photon pairs is shorter than the coherence time of the down-converted photons, then interferometric Bell-state analysis can be performed. In this type of experiment, the pulses from a mode-locked Ti:Saphire laser have been frequency doubled to give pulses of ≈ 200 fs duration (1 fs $= 10^{-15}$ second). The interfering light is observed after passage through IR filters of 4 nm bandwidth giving a coherence time of ≈ 520 fs. After retroflection during its second passage through the crystal, the UV pulse creates another pair of photons. One of these will be the teleported photon, which can be prepared to have any polarization. Beam splitters and photon detectors are used to perform the Bell-state analysis during the standard teleportation process that ensues. See Figure 8 for a schematic showing the layout of a standard parametric down-conversion entanglement-teleportation experiment.

- Teleportation of squeezed states of light and continuous quantum state variables (Furusawa et al., 1998; Sørensen, 1998; Braunstein and Kimble, 1998; Opatrný et al., 2000; Braunstein et al., 2001; Zhang et al., 2002; Bowen et al., 2002; Bowen et al., 2003; Zeilinger, 2003): Squeezed light (see Section A.2 in Appendix A) is used to generate the EPR entangled beams, which are sent to Alice and Bob. A third beam, the input, is a coherent state of unknown complex amplitude. This state is teleported to Bob with a high fidelity only achievable via the use of quantum entanglement. Entangled EPR beams are generated by combining two beams of squeezed light at a 50/50 beam splitter. EPR beam 1 propagates to Alice's sending station, where it is combined at a 50/50 beam splitter with the unknown input state, in this case a coherent state of unknown complex amplitude. Alice uses two sets of balanced homodyne detectors to make a Bell-state measurement on the amplitudes of the combined state. Because of the entanglement between the EPR beams, Alice's detection collapses Bob's field (EPR beam 2) into a state

conditioned on Alice's measurement outcome. After receiving the classical result from Alice, Bob is able to construct the teleported state via a simple phase-space displacement of the EPR field 2. Quantum teleportation in this scheme is theoretically perfect, yielding an output state which equals the input with a fidelity $F = 1$. In practice, fidelities less than one are realized due to imperfections in the EPR pair, Alice's Bell measurement, and Bob's unitary transformation. By contrast, a sender and receiver who share only a classical communication channel cannot hope to transfer an arbitrary quantum state with a fidelity of one. For coherent states, the classical teleportation limit is $F = 0.5$, while for light polarization states it is $F = 0.67$. The quantum nature of the teleportation achieved in this case is demonstrated by the experimentally determined fidelity of $F = 0.58$, greater than the classical limit of 0.5 for coherent states. The fidelity is an average over all input states and so measures the ability to transfer an arbitrary, unknown superposition from Alice to Bob. This technique achieves the teleportation of continuous quantum state variables, as opposed to the discrete quantum state variables used in the Bennett et al. (1993) teleportation protocol and its variants. The teleportation of a squeezed state of light from one beam of light to another demonstrates the teleportation of a continuous feature (of light) that comes from the superpositions of an infinite number of basic states of the electromagnetic field, such as those found in squeezed states. This line of research also involves the experimental demonstration of the mapping of quantum states from photonic to atomic media via entanglement and teleportation. Hald et al. (1999) reported on the experimental observation of a spin-squeezed macroscopic ensemble of 10^7 cold atoms, whereby the ensemble is generated via quantum state entanglement/teleportation from non-classical light to atoms.
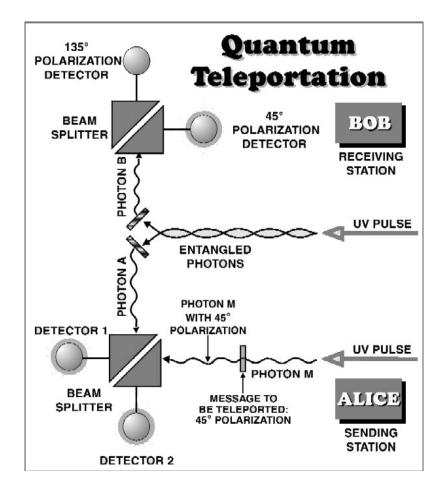
Figure 8. Quantum Teleportation (From www.aip.org)

At the sending station of the quantum teleporter, Alice encodes a "messenger" photon (M) with a specific state: 45 degrees polarization. This travels towards a beam splitter. Meanwhile, two additional entangled photons (A and B) are created. The polarization of each photon is in a fuzzy, undetermined state, yet the two photons have a precisely defined interrelationship. Specifically, they must have complementary polarizations. For example, if photon A is later measured to have horizontal (0 degrees) polarization, then the other photon must collapse into the complementary state of vertical (90 degrees) polarization. Entangled photon A arrives at the beam splitter at the same time as the message photon M. The beam splitter causes each photon to either continue toward detector 1 or change course and travel to detector 2. In 25% of all cases, in which the two photons go off into different detectors, Alice does not know which photon went to which detector. This inability for Alice to distinguish between the two photons causes quantum weirdness to kick in. Just by the very fact that the two photons are now indistinguishable, the M photon loses its original identity and becomes entangled with A. The polarization value for each photon is now indeterminate, but since they travel toward different detectors Alice knows that the two photons must have complementary polarizations. Since message photon M must have complementary polarization to photon A, then the other entangled photon (B) must now attain the same polarization value as M. Therefore, teleportation is successful. Indeed, Bob sees that the polarization value of photon B is 45 degrees: the initial value of the message photon.

- Entanglement of Atoms (Hagley et al., 1997; Sackett et al., 2000): EPR entanglement at the level of atoms has been experimentally demonstrated using rubidium atoms prepared in circular Rydberg states (i.e., the outer electrons of the atom have been excited to very high energy states and are far from the nucleus in circular orbits). The experimental apparatus produces two entangled atoms, one atom in a ground state and the other atom in an excited state, physically separated so that the entanglement is non-local. And when a measurement is made on one atom, let us say the atom in a ground state, then the other atom instantaneously presents itself in the excited state – the result of the second atom wave function collapse, thus determined by the result of the first atom wave function collapse. This work is now evolving towards the demonstration of entanglement for molecules and larger entities followed by teleportation of their states. Bose and Home (2002) have improved on this concept by proposing a single, simple generic method by which any atoms, ions and macroscopic objects can be entangled and teleported.

- Teleportation of an Atomic State via Cavity Decay (Bose et al., 1999; Sackett et al., 2000): It has been shown how the state of an atom trapped in a cavity can be teleported to a second atom trapped in a distant cavity simply by detecting photon decays from the cavities.

- Biological Quantum Teleportation (Mavromatos et al., 2002): There are several obstacles to teleporting large complicated objects, especially biological entities. Decoherence is the primary obstacle. That is because observable quantum effects in biological matter is thought to be strongly suppressed due to the macroscopic nature of most biological entities and the fact that such systems live at near room temperature, and there is always contact between biological entities and the environment (the source of decoherence). These conditions result in very fast collapse of pertinent quantum wavefunctions to one of the allowed classical states of the biological entity. Mavromatos et al. (2002) propose a daring model that predicts dissipationless energy transfer along shielded macromolecules at near room temperatures as well as quantum teleportation of states across microtubules and perhaps neurons. It is proposed that under certain circumstances it is in principle possible to obtain the necessary isolation against environmental decoherence, so that meso/macroscopic quantum coherence, and entanglement extending over scales that are larger than the atomic scale, may be achieved and maintained for times comparable to the characteristic times for biological and cellular processes. Microtubules are comprised of tubulin that is a common polar protein found in the cytoskeleton of eukariotic cells, which is especially enriched in brain tissue. The model treats microtubules as quantum mechanically isolated high-Q QED cavities, exhibiting properties analogous to those of electromagnetic cavities routinely used in quantum optics. The model builds a microtubule network that achieves quantum teleportation of coherent quantum states, leading to decoherence-resistant bulk quantum information processing and computing within the biological matter. It is speculated that the model can explain how consciousness works, and how the brain processes and computes information.

- Teleportation of a laser beam with embedded radio signal (Bowen et al., 2003): The teleportation of a laser beam from one part of a lab to another has been demonstrated. Investigators embedded a radio signal into a laser beam, then disintegrated the beam and reassembled it a meter away, virtually instantaneously. The laser beam was destroyed in the teleportation process, but the radio signal survived. The laser light at one end of an optical communications system was disassembled and its replica was recreated elsewhere in the lab. Even though the laser beam did not survive teleportation, its encoded message did. This system could be used to transport secure data, such that it could become possible to construct a perfect cryptography system. When two

parties want to communicate with one another, one can enable the secrecy of the communication to be absolutely perfect.

- Entanglement and Teleportation of a Macroscopic Ensemble of Atoms (Julsgaard et al., 2001): Expanding upon the earlier work of Hald et al. (1999) and Sackett et al. (2000), investigators experimentally demonstrated the entanglement of two macroscopic objects, each consisting of a cesium gas sample containing $\approx 10^{12}$ atoms. Entanglement is generated via interaction of the samples with a pulse of light, which performs a non-local Bell measurement on the collective spins of the samples. The entangled spin-state can be maintained for 0.5 milliseconds. The teleportation of macro-ensemble atom quantum states is expected to follow this experiment. This work is evolving towards the experimental demonstration of the Bose and Home (2002) proposal, which proved that there is a single generic process that can entangle and teleport any atoms, ions and macroscopic objects.

- Entanglement/teleportation of internal state and external motion information of atoms (Opatrný and Kurizki, 2001): Investigators propose an experiment for transmitting an atom's full information, including its "external" states, such as its energy of motion. This procedure replicates the quantum features of the external motion of a particle. For example, if particle-to-be-teleported C yielded a diffraction pattern after passing through two slits, then the same pattern would be produced by particle B, which receives the teleported information. The researchers propose the following idea: Dissociate a very cold molecule with a laser pulse into two atoms (called A and B). Then manipulate the two atoms so that they become entangled: each one is in a fuzzy state individually, but has a precisely defined relationship with its partner. Then let one of the entangled particles (such as A) collide with particle C, whose unknown state should be teleported. After their collision, the momentum values of the collision partners A and C are measured. With that information, the researchers know how to "kick" and deflect atom B, so that the motion of B precisely emulates that of particle C. The investigators say that state-of-the-art equipment for studying atomic collisions and quantum effects makes this experiment difficult, but feasible, to do. If this proposal proves to be correct, then the implication is that it will become possible to experimentally expand this concept to the teleportation of a large ensemble of atoms, such that the entire physical motion and quantum states of the ensemble can be teleported. This could lead to the future development of a teleportation process similar to what was discussed in Section 3.1.

- Laser-like Amplification of Entangled Particles and Entangled-Photon Lasers (Lamas-Linares et al., 2001): Entangled particles are notoriously difficult to create in bulk. To create entangled photons, for example, researchers use the parametric down-conversion technique to send laser light through a barium borate crystal. Passing through the crystal, a photon sometimes splits into two entangled photons (each with half the energy of the initial photon). However, this only occurs for one in every ten billion incoming photons. To increase the yield, researchers added a step: they put mirrors beyond the crystal so that the laser pulse and entangled pair could reflect, and have the chance to interact. The entangled pair and reflected laser pulse interfere constructively to generate fourfold more two-photon pairs or interfere destructively to create zero pairs. Following these steps, the researchers increased production of two-photon entangled pairs, and also of more rare states such as four-photon entangled quartets. This achievement could represent a step towards an entangled-photon laser, which would repeatedly amplify entangled particles to create greater yields than previously possible, and also towards the creation of new and more complex kinds of entangled states.

This list is by no means complete as new developments in this field continue to arise.

3.3 Conclusion and Recommendations

Given the incredible advancements that have been made in the entanglement and teleportation of macroscopic objects the size of 10^{12} atoms, we are still very far away from being able to entangle and teleport human beings (and even simpler biological entities such as cells, etc.) and bulk inanimate objects (tools, technical equipment, pencils and pens, weapons platforms, communications devices, personal hygiene supplies, etc.). There still remain four essential problems:

➢ One needs an entangled pair of such bulk objects.

➢ The bulk objects to be entangled and teleported must be in a pure quantum state (as in a Bose-Einstein condensate, for example). And pure quantum states are very fragile.

➢ The bulk objects to be entangled and teleported must be extremely isolated from the environment to prevent the onset of decoherence.

➢ The Bell-state measurement of animate or inanimate objects during entanglement/teleportation will require extracting an amount of information (in bits) that equals or exceeds the number of atoms contained within the object. This infers that the computer storage and processing requirements to entangle and teleport a complete bulk object will be astronomically huge (recall the discussion in Section 3.1).

It is difficult to imagine how we can achieve an extreme level of environmental isolation for an object, let alone a living being that breathes air and radiates heat. Experiments with atoms and larger objects must be done in a high vacuum to avoid collisions with molecules. Thermal radiation from the walls of a teleportation apparatus would easily disturb a tiny amount of matter. At present, decoherence imposes a fundamental limit on quantum entanglement and teleportation. Decoherence is the primary reason why we do not routinely see any quantum effects in our everyday world. Research is continuing on whether decoherence can be reduced, circumvented, or otherwise be eliminated. And some minor progress has been made in that direction.

In q-Teleportation it is the _quantum states_ of the objects that are destroyed and recreated, and not the objects themselves. Therefore, q-Teleportation _cannot_ teleport animate or inanimate matter (or energy) in its physical entirety. However, some experts argue that because an object's quantum state is its defining characteristic, teleporting its quantum state is completely _equivalent_ to teleporting the object, even though the original object's quantum state (and defining characteristic) was completely destroyed in the process. This goes to the heart of what is meant by identity. When an object has all the right properties and features, it will be the same object that one observes whether it was observed now or 24 hours ago. Quantum physics reinforces the point that objects of the same type in the same quantum state are indistinguishable from each other. One should, according to this quantum principle, be able to swap all the atoms in a particular object with the same atoms from a mound of raw materials, and reproduce the original object's quantum states exactly with the end result that the new object is identical to the original. Last, we do not know how to put a human being into a pure quantum state or what doing so would mean for biological functioning (including brain function), but we do know how to put $\leq 10^{12}$ gas atoms/ions and a beam of photons into a pure state in practice. Further research will be required to ascertain whether microbiological and higher-level biological systems, in addition to bulk inanimate matter, can be put into pure quantum states and entangled/teleported.

To perform a Bell-state measurement on (bulk) animate or inanimate objects, during the entanglement/teleportation process, to extract and encode its information will require extracting an amount of information (in bits) that equals or exceeds the number of atoms contained within the object. An object containing a few grams of matter will require the extraction of $> 10^{28}$ bits of data. A simple virus of $\approx 10^7$ atoms would require the extraction of $\geq 10^8$ bits of information during the

entanglement/teleportation process, whereas the extraction of a minimum of 10^{28} kilobytes will be required to encode and store an entire human being. This is beyond the capability of present digital electronic computer technology to store and process. It is difficult to see how far computer technology will advance towards meeting this requirement.

It is difficult to fathom what will be in store for the teleportation of human beings given some possible future technology. What about the effects of the q-Teleportation process on the human consciousness, memories and dreams, and the spirit or soul? We know from quantum physics that "the whole is greater than the sum of its parts." So what happens to the fundamental characteristics of a human being when he/she steps into the teleporter-transmitter, where their quantum states (i.e., their complete identity) are destroyed during the quantum entanglement/teleportation process, and then their copy is created at the teleporter-receiver an instant later? What will things be like during the entanglement process? Will a teleported individual's consciousness, memories and dreams, and spirit/soul be successfully and accurately teleported or not? This is a major ethical and technical question that will have to be addressed by future research.

●**Recommendations**:

➢ Broad-spectrum Quantum Computing Technology Development Program: At present, the Quantum Information Science Program (QISP) is coordinated by the U.S. Army Research Office with funding and support from the Army, the National Security Agency, DARPA, and the Office of the Deputy Director of Defense for Research and Engineering. The Naval Research Lab and the CIA are both involved in their own programs. The CIA vets new commercial development of computer technology and computer information processing via its In-Q-Tel company (reference 44). This includes R&D on quantum entanglement and teleportation for computer, information processing and secure communications. QISP was funded for $19 million in 1999. The program involves 34 projects by researchers at 21 universities, three government laboratories and two corporate laboratories. QISP goals include building a quantum computer, developing quantum information processing, and further advances in quantum teleportation. The AFRL should join QISP and provide partnership funding on the order of $1 million per year. An alternative to this would be for AFRL to collaborate with In-Q-Tel and participate in its technology R&D venture capital programs. This R&D investment would allow the Air Force to acquire very advanced quantum physics and related technological applications that can support its mission. The R&D investment benefits would include the development and implementation of quantum computing/information processing and secured quantum communications technology, which can significantly enhance the performance and security of Air Force computing and communication systems infrastructure, and aerospace weapons systems.

➢ Quantum Cryptography: A dedicated research program should be implemented to develop a mature quantum cryptography technology. Theoretical and experimental work is in progress among a small number of select groups (QISP, In-Q-Tel, universities, etc.), but this field is not advancing fast enough for practical applications to become available to meet increasing adversarial threats against secured military and intelligence communications. The goal of proposed quantum cryptography research is to bring the theoretical and experimental foundation of quantum cryptography and secure quantum information processing to maturity, and to fully develop and implement quantum entanglement/teleportation-based cryptography technology. Recent experimental work has demonstrated that a completely secure quantum key can be generated and distributed for the communication and decoding of encrypted messages using entangled photons. Any eavesdropper's attempt to intercept the quantum key will alter the contents in a detectable way, enabling users to discard the compromised parts of the data. There is much more work that needs to be done in this area. I recommend that the AFRL implement a

$1 million/year program for five years in order to advance the state-of-art in quantum cryptography technology.

➢ Quantum Decoherence: Decoherence is the primary reason why we do not routinely see any quantum effects in our everyday world. And it imposes a fundamental limit on quantum entanglement and teleportation via the interaction between entangled/teleported quantum systems and their local environment. In order to advance quantum entanglement/teleportation physics and develop applied technologies, it is necessary that a research program be implemented by the AFRL to explore whether decoherence can be significantly reduced, circumvented, or otherwise be eliminated. An insufficient number of small university groups have slowly made minor progress in this direction. I recommend that a $500,000 - 750,000 per year R&D program be conducted for five years to overcome this technical challenge.

➢ Pure Quantum States: In order to entangle and teleport quantum particles and bulk objects, they both must be prepared in a pure quantum state. And pure quantum states are very fragile to decoherence. A technical challenge for entanglement/teleportation physics is whether the requirement for pure quantum states can be relaxed and how much decoherence will play a role in this situation, what technical challenges will arise when increasing the size of entangled/teleported matter to larger macroscopic scale ($>> 10^{12}$ atoms), and whether matter of mixed composition (such as a gas or Bose-Einstein condensate of mixed atomic elements) can be entangled/teleported in both pure and mixed quantum states. I recommend that a $250,000 – 500,000 per year research program be conducted for five years to study this problem.

➢ Entangling Bulk Matter and Bell-State Measurement to Extract Information: Recent experiments demonstrated the entanglement of two macroscopic objects, each consisting of a cesium gas sample containing $\approx 10^{12}$ atoms. Entanglement was generated via interaction of the samples with a pulse of light, which performs a non-local Bell measurement on the collective spins of the samples. In order to push the envelope on this development and take it to higher practical levels, it will be necessary to ascertain the limit on the size and composition of bulk matter entanglement (given the decoherence and pure-state constraints); and to determine what other quantum states can be used for entanglement, what other Bell-state measurement techniques can be used, and whether multiple quantum states can be entangled. The chief technical challenge is the computer technology that will be required to facilitate the huge amount of data that must be extracted, processed and stored from bulk matter quantum states during the Bell-state measurement process. I recommend that a $500,000 – 1 million per year research program be implemented for five years in order to explore these questions and ascertain what solutions may be technically available, and to develop such solutions.

➢ Biological Quantum Teleportation: The Mavromatos et al. (2002) theoretical model for biological entanglement and teleportation is a remarkable concept that could result in the development of a workable physics theory of consciousness. The model has potential applications to advanced quantum computing/information processing physics and the physics of psi phenomena (see Chapter 5). A research program should be implemented to continue the Mavromatos et al. (2002) work and bring their model to theoretical maturity. It is recommended that this program be funded at $500,000 – 800,000 per year for five years. A parallel or follow-up program should be implemented to experimentally test this model and ascertain any useful technological applications. One application that should be explored in the proposed research program is advanced, ultra-fast, ultra-high-capacity quantum computing and information processing using natural and/or artificial biological systems. The parallel or follow-up experimental research program should be funded at $800,000 – 1.5 million per year for five years.

- **FTL Communication**: Experiments verifying that EPR entanglement obeys Special Relativity (Seife, 2000; Scarani et al., 2000; Gisin et al., 2000; Zbinden et al., 2000a, b) determined that quantum information via EPR photon pair entanglement must travel $> 10^7$ times light speed. Can this mechanism be exploited to achieve FTL communication? If so, then the potential military and commercial applications will be revolutionary, and the science and industry of communications will be forever transformed. A comprehensive theoretical and experimental research program should be implemented to answer this question. It is recommended that this program be funded at $700,000 – 1 million per year for five years. A modest experiment definition study should be funded at $80,000 for one year to delineate the most promising experimental approaches to be used for the larger research program. [There is much controversy and debate over FTL (a.k.a. superluminal) signals/communication, and the reader should see the selected superluminal references in the Teleportation References section of this study.]

- ➢ **New Entanglement/Teleportation Breakthroughs**: The most exciting developments in quantum teleportation physics has included the teleportation of a laser beam with an embedded radio signal, the teleportation of squeezed states of light (and hence, continuous quantum state variables), the teleportation of photon states to atoms/ions (from light to matter!), the entanglement of two similar/dissimilar quantum particles that are created by two (independently) different particle sources, the laser-like amplification of entangled particle/photon pairs, parametric down-conversion entanglement and teleportation (of discrete quantum state variables), quantum cryptography with unbreakable keys, the teleportation of quantum information at speeds $> 10^7$ times light speed, the entanglement and teleportation of macroscopic (10^{12} atoms) matter quantum states, etc. There is also the yet-untested proposal to entangle/teleport the external physical motion and internal quantum state information of atoms. This shows that quantum physics sets no apparent limit on what it is that can be teleported/entangled and how it is to be teleported/entangled, or where it is to be teleported/entangled. At present teleportation technology requires fiber optic and coaxial cables to teleport quantum state information from one location to another. Can we avoid the use of cables and teleport through free space? [Note: Before this report went to press, Aspelmeyer et al. (2003) reported their outdoor experiment that demonstrated the distribution of quantum entanglement (of laser photons) via optical free-space links to independent receivers separated by 600 m across the Danube River (during inclement nighttime weather), with no line of sight between them. This experiment is revolutionary and begins the step toward conducting satellite-based distributed quantum entanglement.] We have not discovered all the possibilities that nature has in store for us. The present breakthrough discoveries will likely introduce novel military and intelligence technology applications in the near and far future. But further R&D must be conducted in order to discover new applications for these recent breakthroughs, to make additional breakthroughs and discoveries, and to advance the state-of-art in quantum teleportation physics to meet future challenges to the Air Force mission. I recommend that a two-track R&D program be implemented over five years. The first track should be funded at $250,000 – 750,000 per year for the purpose of developing new entanglement/teleportation breakthroughs in quantum teleportation physics. The second track should be funded at $750,000 – 1.5 million per year for the purpose of developing applications for any new breakthroughs with the proviso that such applications benefit the Air Force mission and have commercial dual-use capability to leverage advance technology in the private sector.

4.0 e-TELEPORTATION

4.1 Extra Space Dimensions and Parallel Universes/Spaces

A literature search for proposed e-Teleportation concepts based on the conveyance of objects through extra space dimensions and/or parallel universes/spaces has yielded only one result (see Section 4.2). The present state-of-art in research on parallel universes/spaces and extra space dimensions has been strictly limited to the work on developing a grand unified quantum field theory and a quantum theory of gravity, whereby the former necessarily includes the latter. Quantum gravity/unified field theory research has been evolving since the 1920s when Kaluza and Klein published the first papers to describe a model for the unification of gravity with electrodynamics. Many of the more prominent theories today invoke extra spatial dimensions, the existence of parallel universes/spaces, or both in order to quantise gravity and/or to unify gravity with the other forces of nature. It is beyond the scope of this study to provide an in-depth review of all of the research that has been done in this area, so we list below a select few of the historically prominent models that have largely gained a secure foothold in present-day research:

➢ Kaluza-Klein Electromagnetic-Gravity Unification Theory/Modern Kaluza-Klein Gravity Theories (Kaluza, 1921; Klein, 1926; de Sabbata and Schmutzer, 1983; Lee, 1984; Appelquist et al., 1987; Kaku, 1993, 1994; Overduin and Wesson, 1998): It was originally suggested that Maxwellian electrodynamics and Einstein gravitation could be unified in a theory of five-dimensional Riemannian geometry, where the gravitational and electromagnetic potentials together would determine the structure of spacetime. The fifth space dimension is curled up into a ball of space with a radius slightly larger than 10^{-35} m, and it was originally regarded as having no physical significance because it was simply a mathematical tool used to catalyze unification. At present, the generic name of Kaluza-Klein stands for a wide variety of approaches to quantising and unifying gravitation with other quantum fields using any number of dimensions greater than four.

➢ Superstring Theories (Green, 1985; Kaku, 1988, 1993, 1994): These theories come in a wide variety of interrelated concepts, and they are a highly evolved form of Kaluza-Klein theories. They are based on the dynamics of string-like fundamental quanta, whereby the observed fundamental particles are manifested by the vibrational ground or excitation states of a quantum string (open or closed loop). The superstrings are $\approx 10^{-35}$ m (i.e., the Planck length) in size. There are different versions of these theories that require ten, eleven or twenty-six extra space dimensions to unify and quantise gravity, whereby the extra dimensions are curled up (i.e., compactified) into balls of space with a radius $< 10^{-35}$ m. These theories later evolved into versions that are now called F- and M-theory. The mathematics behind this class of theories is very ugly, and it is difficult for even the best superstring theorists to make simple or sophisticated calculations and predictions. And so far, this class of quantum gravity theories has escaped experimental verification.

➢ D-Brane and 3-Brane Theories/Parallel Spaces (Rubakov and Shaposhnikov, 1983a, b; Polchinski, 1995; Antoniadis et al., 1998; Randall and Sundrum, 1999a, b; Weiss, 2000; Pease, 2001; Arkani-Hamed et al., 1998, 2000, 2002): D-brane theory is a recent incarnation of the original superstring theories in which open strings, corresponding to the fundamental particles of the standard model (quarks, leptons, gauge bosons), have their free ends stuck on a (hypersurface)

membrane called a D-brane (D = Dirichlet boundary conditions). But the graviton, which corresponds to a closed loop of string, can propagate in all the dimensions. It provides both unification and quantization of gravity by assuming that there are n new spatial dimensions in addition to the three infinite spatial dimensions we know about. And the extra space dimensions are $\approx 10^{-35}$ m in extent. A very recent alternative version of this model is called "3-brane" theory. In this theory, each of the n extra space dimensions is of finite extent $R \approx 2\times10^{(32/n)-17}$ centimeters. The space spanned by the new dimensions is called "the bulk." In this theory, the particles of the standard model live within our familiar realm of three spatial dimensions, which forms a three-dimensional (hypersurface) membrane or "3-brane" within the bulk. The propagation of electroweak and strong nuclear forces is then confined to our 3-brane. However, at distances (r) less than R, gravity (via gravitons) propagates in the full $(3 + n)$-dimensional space, whereby its strength falls as $r^{-(2+n)}$ with increasing separation r. When $r > R$, the gravitational force reverts to its normal Newtonian r^{-2} falloff because there is no longer any extra-dimensional space for it to spread into. If $n = 1$, then the size of the extra-dimension would have to be $R \approx 2\times10^{15}$ cm (or 2×10^{10} km = 133.3 AU; 1 AU = 1.5×10^{8} km is the mean Earth-Sun distance) in order to account for the weakness of gravity, but an extra space dimension this large would have already made itself obvious in the observed dynamics of the solar system. For this reason, investigators have discounted the possibility that $n = 1$. If $n = 2$, then the size of both extra space dimensions would have to be $R \approx 0.2$ cm (or 2 mm). In any case, inconspicuous neighboring 3-branes may be separated from the 3-brane we live on by only a fraction of a millimeter, or even much smaller distances, across the higher-dimensional bulk. Such neighboring 3-branes may be distant folds of our own 3-brane, with the same physics, but able to influence us across shortcuts through the bulk. Or they may be completely separate 3-branes possessing their own fundamental laws and parameters of nature that are completely different from our own. Several tabletop Cavendish-type experiments are now looking for sub-millimeter deviations from Newtonian gravitation as a first step towards verifying 3-brane theory, and other experiments are now being planned or are already underway (Pease, 2001). At present the preliminary experimental results have been negative for the existence of extra space dimensions, and the experimental data suggests that two extra space dimensions are now constrained to length scales << 0.2 – 0.3 millimeters while seven extra space dimensions can be no larger than 2 femtometers (Pease, 2001).

➢ Parallel Universes/Parallel Spaces (Everett, 1957; Wheeler, 1957, 1962; DeWitt, 1970; DeWitt and Graham, 1973; Jammer, 1974; Davies, 1980; Wolf, 1988; Kaku, 1994; Visser, 1995 and Section 2.1): There are only two other research tracts that are concerned with parallel universes besides 3-brane theory. The first tract is the traversable wormhole research that was discussed in Section 2.1. Traversable wormholes can connect many different universes in the "multiverse" (i.e., a conglomeration of many universes), and these are called inter-universe wormholes. However, traversable wormhole physics (a.k.a. Einstein's General Relativity Theory) does not provide a physical prescription for the existence and nature (i.e., fundamental parameters and physical laws) of other putative universes. The difference between inter-universe and intra-universe (i.e., two distant regions of one universe are connected with each other) wormholes arises only at the level of global geometry and global topology. Local physics near the throat of a traversable wormhole is insensitive to issues of intra-universal or inter-universal travel. An observer in the vicinity of the throat, while making local measurements, would not be able to tell whether he was traveling to another universe or to a remote part of our own universe. And one cannot rely on the topological (as opposed to geometrical) information to determine which is the case, because topological information is not enough to uniquely characterize an inter-universe connection. And General Relativity Theory does <u>not</u> fix the topology of spacetime, so we cannot ascertain the existence of other universes. [Note: Traversable wormholes are also geometrically possible for higher dimensional spaces.] The second tract is the "Many Worlds" interpretation of

quantum theory. This version of quantum theory requires the simultaneous existence of an infinite number of equally real worlds, all of which are more-or-less causally disjoint, in order to interpret consistently the relationship between observed phenomena and observers. The theory was proposed in an attempt to overcome a number of deep paradoxes inherent in the interpretation of the theory of measurement and quantum theory. The Many Worlds theory argues that quantum theory requires the existence of a "superspace" of worlds spanning the range of all possible quantum observations (or quantum measurements). Through our acts of measurement we are imagined to trace a path through the mesh of possible outcomes. All the "worlds" are causally disjoint, and the uncertainty of quantum observation can be interpreted as an artifact of our access to such a limited portion of the superspace of possible worlds. The evolution in the superspace as a whole is entirely deterministic.

At present, <u>none</u> of the theoretical concepts outlined above have been brought to a level of technical maturity, where it becomes meaningful to ascertain whether any form of e-Teleportation is theoretically possible between extra space dimensions and different or parallel universes/spaces. However, as mentioned in the item on parallel universes/parallel spaces, there is the exception that traversable wormholes (three- and higher-dimensional) provide a solid physics principle for the implementation of teleportation between parallel universes/spaces. And traversable wormholes can be devised to connect 3-branes together. See Section 2.1 for the discussion on teleportation via traversable wormholes. Also, Kaluza-Klein theories, superstring theories and D-brane theory all have the common feature that their extra space dimensions are $\leq 10^{-35}$ m in extent, which makes it impossible for any useful form of macroscopic-level teleportation to occur between space dimensions. Last, it is not yet possible to do theoretical calculations or even experimentally verify most of these theories. Three-brane theory is the best parallel space theory there is, with the possibility that macroscopic-level teleportation is possible between space dimensions (only if the extra space dimension(s) has length scale(s) >> millimeters). But this theory is still in the stage of maturing theoretically and achieving experimental verification (or falsification). Therefore, we can go no further in this section.

4.2 Vacuum Hole Teleportation

An unusual teleportation concept has been proposed by Leshan (1999, 2002), which describes the teleportation of objects throughout our universe by using the geometrical properties of spacetime. The proposal posits that there is a "zero-space" that exists outside the boundary of our universe, whereby this zero-space is a "point form" space, where the distance between any two points is always equal to zero. Leshan also calls this space a "hole." Further requirements and assumptions of the model are:

❑ time does not exist as a property in zero-space

❑ the cosmological principle (i.e., there are no privileged frames relative to another place or point in the universe) requires that the boundary or border of the universe must pass through every point of space

❑ virtual holes (or zero-space) in spacetime must exist at every point of the universe, which are also called "vacuum holes"

❑ vacuum holes exist as virtual particles

The last item is interesting because it implicitly says that vacuum holes (a.k.a. zero-space) must also be virtual particles, and in Section 2.2 we showed that virtual particles are a representation of the vacuum ZPF. Therefore, this infers that vacuum holes can be considered to be vacuum zero-point fluctuations in

Leshan's model. Thus, a teleportation mechanism can arise in this model because distances between zero-space and any other point in the universe are zero, so that the vacuum holes can potentially exist at every point in the universe simultaneously. Therefore, if an object is sent "out of the universe" and into a vacuum hole (a.k.a. zero-space), then the object can appear at random at any spacetime point in the universe.

The mechanism for teleportation in this model is:

➢ to send an object outside of the universe by creating a closed surface (i.e., "hole sphere"), which consists of vacuum holes, around the object;

➢ while inside the hole sphere, the object then ceases to exist because objects cannot really exist outside of the universe;

➢ however, the object simultaneously exists at any other remote location in the universe (via the cosmological principle) at the instant it became enclosed by the hole sphere;

➢ therefore, it has been teleported to some remote location in the universe

Leshan points out that the teleportation device must curve spacetime so that the starting and destination points in the universe coincide, and the curved geometry must be similar to that of a black hole for an instant, so that a channel between the two points can be formed. (This sounds suspiciously like creating a traversable wormhole via an Einstein-Rosen bridge, which can be made traversable by perturbing the Schwarzschild spacetime metric an infinitesimal amount.) There is no space to traverse, so therefore there will be no passage of time during teleportation. The only expenditure of energy in this teleportation scheme is the energy that will be needed to curve spacetime.

This teleportation concept is very convoluted. Leshan does not offer any further explanations that are useful nor does he offer any precise technical description for the vacuum holes, and how they are to be produced and manipulated. There is also no mathematical physics derivation published by Leshan to support this concept. I am totally unable to evaluate this concept in the absence of a rigorous theoretical framework. This concept is too sketchy and full of technical "holes" to seriously consider it any further for this study. The reader should note that it has already been demonstrated that traversable wormholes are the best physical principle available to implement teleportation between universes and extra space dimensions.

4.3 Conclusion and Recommendations

At present, none of the theoretical concepts explored in this chapter have been brought to a level of technical maturity, where it becomes meaningful to ascertain whether any form of e-Teleportation is theoretically possible between extra space dimensions and different or parallel universes/spaces. However, there is the exception that traversable wormholes (three- and higher-dimensional) provide a solid physics principle for the implementation of teleportation between parallel universes/spaces. And traversable wormholes can be devised to connect 3-branes together. Kaluza-Klein, superstring and D-brane theories do not allow for any useful form of macroscopic-level teleportation to occur between space dimensions, because these theories require that the extra space dimensions be $\leq 10^{-35}$ m in extent. Last, it is not yet possible to do theoretical calculations to make predictions or even to experimentally verify most of these theories. Three-brane theory is the best parallel space theory there is with the possibility that macroscopic-level teleportation is possible between space dimensions. But this theory is still in the stage of maturing theoretically and getting experimental verification.

●<u>**Recommendations**</u>:

> ➢ The recommendations outlined in Section 2.3 are relevant to the investigation of the possibility for e-Teleportation.

5.0 p-TELEPORTATION

5.1 PK Phenomenon

P-Teleportation is a form of psychokinesis (or PK) similar to telekinesis but generally used to designate the movement of objects (called apports) through other physical objects or over great distances. Telekinesis is a form of PK, which describes the movement of stationary objects without the use of any known physical force. And PK is essentially the direct influence of mind on matter without any known intermediate physical energy or instrumentation. Rigorously controlled modern scientific laboratory PK, and related psychic (a.k.a. "psi", "paranormal" or parapsychology), research has been performed and/or documented by Rhine (1970), Schmidt (1974), Mitchell (1974a, b, see also the references cited therein), Swann (1974), Puthoff and Targ (1974, 1975), Hasted et al. (1975), Targ and Puthoff (1977), Nash (1978, see also the references cited therein), Shigemi et al. (1978), Hasted (1979), Houck (1984a), Wolman et al. (1986, see also the references cited therein), Schmidt (1987), Alexander et al. (1990), Giroldini (1991), Gissurarson (1992), Radin (1997, see also the references cited therein), Tart et al. (2002), Shoup (2002), and Alexander (2003).

A well-known theoretical/experimental/operational program directed by H. E. Puthoff, R. Targ, E. May and I. Swann was conducted at SRI International and the NSA, and sponsored at various times by the Central Intelligence Agency (CIA), the Defense Intelligence Agency (DIA), and the Army Intelligence and Security Command (INSCOM) over more than two decades; and the program was later carried on by E. May at SAIC (Alexander, 1980; Puthoff, 1996; Targ, 1996; Schnabel, 1997; Tart et al., 2002). This was called the Remote Viewing program, and it was a compartmentalized special access program possessing a variety of codenames during its 22 years of operation. Remote viewing involves precognition and clairvoyance, and it allows a practitioner to acquire information irrespective of intervening distance or time. The Remote Viewing program ended in 1994 and President W. J. Clinton officially declassified it in 1995. The reader should note that the very first U. S. military-intelligence R&D programs on psi, PK and mind control were conducted by H. K. (Andrija) Puharich, M.D., L.L.D during his military service at the Army Chemical and Biological Warfare Center at Fort Detrick, Maryland in the 1940s-50s. Puharich had an interest in clairvoyance and PK, and dabbled in theories for electronically and pharmaceutically enhancing and synthesizing psychic abilities. While in the Army, Puharich took part in a variety of parapsychology experiments, and he lectured Army, Air Force and Navy groups on possibilities for mind warfare. He was a recognized expert in hypnotism and microelectronics.

PK phenomenon was also explored in the Remote Viewing program. Col. J. B. Alexander (USA ret.) credits professional aerospace engineer Jack Houck for "capturing PK phenomenon and transitioning it into an observable form" (Houck, 1982, 1984a, b; Alexander et al., 1990; Alexander, 2003). During the past three decades, Houck (along with Alexander) held a number of PK sessions, whereby attendees are taught the PK induction process, and initiate their own PK events using various metal specimens (forks, spoons, etc.). Individuals were able to completely bend or contort their metal specimens with no physical force being applied whatsoever. Numerous government science advisors and senior military officials took part in and/or witnessed these events, which took place at the Pentagon, at officers' or scientists' homes, and at one quarterly INSCOM retreat attended by the commanding general and a group of colonels and generals commanding INSCOM units around the globe. Spontaneous deformation of the metal specimens was observed at the PK session conducted during the INSCOM retreat, causing a great deal of excitement among those present. Other notable trained observers were also present at this session, and they critically reviewed the events. Psychic Uri Geller (1975) is the original model for demonstrating

PK metal bending. During a talk that he gave at the U.S. Capitol building, Uri caused a spoon to curve upward with no force applied, and then the spoon continued to bend after he put it back down and continued with his talk (Alexander, 1996). Jack Houck continues doing extensive experimental work and data collection on micro- and macro-PK phenomena. Scientifically controlled PK experiments at the Princeton University Engineering Anomalies Research Laboratory were conducted by Robert Jahn (Dean Emeritus of the School of Engineering), who reported that repeatedly consistent results in mentally affecting material substances has been demonstrated in the lab (Jahn and Dunne, 1987). In the 1980s, Jahn attended a meeting on the PK topic at the Naval Research Laboratory, and warned that foreign adversaries could exploit micro- or macro-PK to induce U.S. military fighter pilots to lose control of their aircraft and crash.

Very early investigations of, and experiments on, p-Teleportation occurred during the 19th and early 20th centuries. Many cases that were studied, and the experiments that were performed, were undoubtedly due to fraud, and few experiments have occurred under controlled conditions during that period. However, most of the credible, scientific reports of p-Teleportation phenomenon and related (controlled) experiments occurred in the late 20th century (see for example, Alexander et al., 1990; Radin, 1997). Some of that scientific work involved the investigation of Uri Geller and a variety of other recurrent spontaneous PK phenomena (Hasted et al., 1975; Puthoff and Targ, 1975; Targ and Puthoff, 1977; Nash, 1978; Wolman et al., 1986). Psychics Uri Geller (1975) and Ray Stanford (1974) claimed to have been teleported on several occasions. Most claimed instances of human teleportation of the body from one place to another have been unwitnessed. There are also a small number of credible reports of individuals who reported being teleported to/from UFOs during a UFO close encounter, which were scientifically investigated (Vallee, 1988, 1990, 1997). But there are a larger number of such reports that are anecdotal, whereby the witness data tends to be unreliable. However, we will confine our discussion to the controlled laboratory experiments that have been performed and reported.

One of the more interesting examples of controlled experiments with Uri Geller was one in which he was able to cause a part of a vanadium carbide crystal to vanish (Hasted et al., 1975). The crystal was encapsulated so it could not be touched, and it was placed in such a way that it could not be switched with another crystal by sleight of hand. A more spectacular series of rigorously controlled (and repeatable!) laboratory experiments occurred in the Peoples Republic of China (PRC). In September 1981, an extraordinary paper was published in the PRC in the journal Ziran Zazhi (transl.: Nature Journal), and this paper was entitled, "Some Experiments on the Transfer of Objects Performed by Unusual Abilities of the Human Body" (Shuhuang et al., 1981). The paper reported that gifted children were able to cause the apparent teleportation of small objects (radio micro-transmitters, photosensitive paper, mechanical watches, horseflies, other insects, etc.) from one location to another (that was meters away) without them ever touching the objects beforehand. The experiments were operated under exceptionally well-controlled conditions (both blind and double-blind). The researchers involved included not only observers from various PRC colleges and medical research institutes, but also representatives from the PRC National Defense Science Commission. Because of the involvement of the latter, it was deemed necessary that an unclassified Intelligence Information Report be prepared by the DIA (see Shuhuang et al., 1981), which included a detailed English translation of the article.

Additional research carried out by the Aerospace Medicine Engineering Institute in Beijing was reported in the July 1990 issue of the Chinese Journal of Somatic Science (Kongzhi et al., 1990; Jinggen et al., 1990; Banghui, 1990), which was also translated into English by the DIA. Reported in several articles are experiments involving the videotaping and high-speed photography of the transfer of test specimens (nuts, bundles of matches, pills, nails, thread, photosensitive paper, chemically treated paper, sponges dipped in $FeCl_3$, etc.) through the walls of sealed paper envelopes, double layered KCNS type paper bags, sealed glass bottles and tubes with sealed caps, and sealed plastic film canisters without the walls of any of these containers being breached. All of the Chinese experiments reported using gifted children and young adults, who possessed well-known extraordinary PK ability, to cause the teleportation of the various test specimens. In all the experimental cases that were reported, the test specimens that were teleported were completely unaltered or unchanged from their initial state, even the insects were

unaffected by being teleported. The experiments were well controlled, scientifically recorded, and the experimental results were always repeatable.

The Chinese papers are all extremely interesting and very well written, and they show photographs and schematic diagrams of the various experimental setups. The experimental protocols were explained in lengthy detail, and thorough data and statistical analysis were presented in the results. The combined results from the several Chinese experiments showed that:

➢ different research groups designed different experimental protocols, used different gifted psychics, used different sealed containers, and used different test specimens (live insects, bulk inanimate objects, and even radio micro-transmitters were used to track the location of the specimens) that were to be teleported;

➢ the time required for the teleportation of test specimens through various barriers was anywhere from a fraction of a second to several minutes, and this was not dependent on the test specimen that was used, the sealed container that was used (or its barrier thickness), which experimental protocol was used, or which psychic was being used

➢ the high-speed photography/videotaping recorded in one series of experiments that test specimens would physically "meld" or blend with the walls of sealed containers; and recorded in a different series of experiments that test specimens would simply disappear from inside the container only to reappear at another location (after seconds to several minutes of time transpired), such that the test specimen did not actually undergo total material disintegration/reintegration during teleportation – this data is important, because without the aid of electronic monitoring instruments, the average person's sensory organs and usual methods of detection are temporarily unable to perceive the test specimen's (ambiguous) existence during the teleportation process;

➢ the radio micro-transmitter used as a test specimen in one series of experiments (Shuhuang et al., 1981) transmitted a radio signal to several stationary electronic instruments/receivers, so that the specimen could be tracked and monitored (via signal amplitude and frequency measurements) during the teleportation process; the experimenters discovered that there was large fluctuations in the intensity (in both amplitude and frequency) of the monitored signal to the effect that it would either completely disappear or become extremely weak (to the extent that the monitoring instruments could scarcely detect it) – it was discovered that there was a definite correlation between the change in strength (i.e., radical frequency shifts were observed) of the monitored radio signal and the teleportation of the test specimen, such that the weak or absent signal indicated that the specimen was "nonexistent" (or in an altered physical state) during teleportation (note: the monitored signal amplitude and frequency of the micro-transmitter specimen were stable before and after teleportation);

➢ before and after "passing through the container wall/barrier", the test specimen and the container's wall/barrier are both complete solid objects;

➢ the gifted psychics were never allowed to see (they were blindfolded in many experiments) or touch each of the test specimens or the sealed containers before and after experiments were conducted, and only the experimenters touched the specimens and containers (using both blind and double-blind protocols);

➢ the experimental results were all repeatable

- ➢ the conditions for fraud and sleight of hand were totally eliminated, and multiple independent outside witnesses (technical and military-intelligence experts) were present at all times to ensure total fidelity of the experiments

The experimental radio micro-transmitter and high-speed photography/videotaping data offer an important clue on what the teleportation mechanism is, and this will be discussed further in Section 5.1.1. The Chinese were unable to offer any significant physics hypothesis that could explain their results. Some researchers stated that it is necessary to invoke a new physics, which somehow unifies the human consciousness (i.e., physics of consciousness) with quantum and spacetime physics, in order to understand p-Teleportation and related PK phenomena. The researchers were amazed by their repeated results, and were barely able to fathom the altered "state of being" that test specimens underwent during teleportation.

It is also important to point out that during the Cold War the DIA produced three (now declassified) reports on the parapsychology research of the Soviet Union and its Warsaw Pack allies (LaMothe, 1972; Maire and LaMothe, 1975; DIA Report, 1978; other related studies were reported by Groller, 1986, 1987). The purpose of the reports was to collate and summarize collected intelligence, describe in great detail, and assess the Soviet Union and Warsaw Pact R&D on parapsychology and paraphysics. The reports outlined the history of pre-revolutionary (Czarist) Russian, and WWII and post-WWII era Soviet R&D on psychotronics, human mind/behavior control, and the entire spectrum of parapsychology. The Soviet information also mentions the psychotronic/parapsychology R&D materials that Soviet military forces took from various Nazi research centers in and around Germany at the end of WWII. The entire spectrum of parapsychology phenomena was explored by the Soviets, which resulted in the generation of a wealth of experimental data and related scientific research literature. One DIA report noted that there was an East versus West science debate in the Soviet literature over whether paranormal phenomenon and related experimental data was real or even scientifically sound in comparison to western scientific practice and philosophy. Another DIA report lists the names and affiliations of all the researchers, as well as the names of the various Soviet and Warsaw Pact research centers, that were involved. Also, Pratt (1986) reviews and summarizes the history of Soviet psychotronics research.

The U.S. military-intelligence establishment was concerned with the possibility that the Soviets and their Warsaw Pact allies were conducting psychotronics and mind control R&D in order to discover how to exploit and control powerful phenomena that could be used against the U.S. and its allies. LaMothe (1972) chronicled how the Soviets had been researching methods of influencing human behavior for over sixty years. The Soviets and their allies extensively explored an influence technology that they called "controlled offensive behavior", which is defined as "research on human vulnerability as it applies to methods of influencing or altering human behavior" (LaMothe, 1972). Also, LaMothe (1972) describes the revolutionary techniques the Soviets studied to influence human behavior, which included: sound, light, color, odors, sensory deprivation, sleep, electromagnetic fields, biochemicals, autosuggestion, hypnosis, and parapsychology phenomena (such as psychokinesis, telekinesis, extrasensory perception-ESP, astral projection, clairvoyance, precognition, and dream state, etc.). The LaMothe (1972) report became an aid in the development of countermeasures for the protection of U.S. and/or allied personnel.

Psychotronics is the general term that was used in the former Soviet Union/Warsaw Pact countries to categorize many psychic phenomena undergoing scientific research. The conclusions that were reached in the DIA reports are that within the category of psychotronics, the Soviets identified two discrete skills (LaMothe, 1972):

- ➢ bioenergetics: those phenomena associated with the production of objectively detectable effects such as psychokinesis, telekinesis, levitation effects, transformations of energy, i.e. the altering or affecting of matter

- ➢ bioinformation: those phenomena associated with the obtaining of information through means other than the normal sensory channels (i.e., ESP), such as telepathy, precognition, and

clairvoyance, i.e., using the mind to tap into the thoughts of others or to acquire present or future information about objective events in the world

These phenomena involve using the mind and/or some "field" of the body to affect other minds and inanimate objects irrespective of intervening distance or elapsed time, and without engaging any conventional tools. Bioenergetics and bioinformation are two classifications that form a single branch of science the Soviets preferred to call biocommunications. Soviet biocommunications research is primarily concerned with exploring the existence of a definite group of natural phenomena controlled by laws that are not based on any known (energetic) influence. The types of biocommunication (a.k.a. psychotronics) phenomena includes special sensory biophysical activities, brain and mind control, telepathic communications or bioinformation transceiving, bioluminescent and bioenergetic emissions, and the effects of altered states of consciousness on the human psyche. Psychotronics and remote viewing provide capabilities that have obvious intelligence applications. The Soviets and their Warsaw Pact allies invested millions of dollars in psychotronics R&D because they understood this, and saw the potential payoff for military and intelligence applications.

The U.S. response to Soviet psychotronics R&D programs was the Remote Viewing program. In addition, the U.S. Army began the JEDI Project in 1983, which sought to increase human potential using teachable models of behavioral/physical excellent by unconventional means (Alexander et al., 1990). The JEDI Project was essentially a human-performance modeling experiment based on neuro-linguistic programming (NLP) skills, whereby advanced influence technologies to model excellence in human performance was used. The program ran under the auspices of the Army INSCOM and the Organizational Effectiveness School, and was sponsored by a U.S. government interagency task force. Finally, it should be pointed out that the program had successfully trained several hundred people, including members of Congress (such as Al Gore, Jr. and Tom Downey), before being terminated.

There is a wealth of factual scientific research data from around the world attesting to the physical reality of p-Teleportation and related anomalous psi phenomena (Mitchell, 1974b; Targ and Puthoff, 1977; Nash, 1978; Radin, 1997; Tart et al., 2002). The skeptical reader should not be so quick to dismiss the subject matter in this chapter, because one must remain open-minded about this subject and consider p-Teleportation as worthy of further scientific exploration. The psychotronics topic is controversial within the western scientific community. The debate among scientists and scientific philosophers is highly charged at times, and becomes acrimonious to the point where reputable skeptical scientists cease being impartial by refusing to examine the experimental data or theories, and they prefer to bypass rational discourse by engaging in ad hominem attacks and irrational "armchair" arguments.

P-Teleportation and related phenomena are truly anomalous, and they challenge accepted modern scientific paradigm. Lightman and Gingerich (1991) wrote, "Scientists are reluctant to change paradigms for the purely psychological reasons that the familiar is often more comfortable than the unfamiliar and that inconsistencies in belief are uncomfortable." And theories change over time when anomalies enter the picture. Anomalies are particularly helpful for they point to the inadequacies of an old model and point the way to a new one. Anomalous scientific facts are unexpected and difficult to explain within an existing conceptual framework. Kuhn (1970) describes scientific discovery as a complex process, in which an anomalous fact of nature is recognized, and then followed by a change in conceptual framework (i.e., paradigm) that makes the new fact no longer an anomaly. Kuhn stated that, "Discovery commences with the awareness of anomaly, that is, with the recognition that nature has somehow violated the pre-induced expectations that govern normal science." This statement neatly describes exactly what transpired during the historical revolution that took place in physics between the classical mechanics/electrodynamics age in the 19th century and the quantum/atomic/nuclear/relativistic age in the 20th century. And this isn't the only time in human history that scientific paradigms have dramatically changed. The discovery of p-Teleportation already commenced in the 20th century, so let us continue the discovery and create a new physics paradigm for the 21st century.

5.1.1 Hypothesis Based on Mathematical Geometry

The Chinese researchers reported in their teleportation experiments that high-speed photography/videotaping recorded test specimens physically "melding" or blending with the walls of sealed containers, and in a different series of experiments the test specimens would simply disappear from inside the container only to reappear at another location (after seconds to several minutes of time transpired). They also reported in the series of radio micro-transmitter experiments that there were large fluctuations in the intensity (in both amplitude and frequency) of the monitored signal to the effect that it would either completely disappear or become extremely weak (to the extent that the monitoring instruments could scarcely detect it); and they discovered that there was a definite correlation between the change in strength (i.e., radical frequency shifts were observed) of the monitored radio signal and the teleportation of the radio micro-transmitter, such that the weak or absent signal indicated that the specimen was "nonexistent" (or in an altered physical state) during teleportation. This data is important because without the aid of electronic monitoring instruments, the average person's sensory organs and usual methods of detection are temporarily unable to perceive the test specimen's (ambiguous) existence during the teleportation process. This data offers an important clue on what the teleportation mechanism is.

It is beyond the scope of this study to propose a complete self-consistent physics theory of consciousness/mind, which explains how the mind can activate p-Teleportation and related psychotronics phenomena. This topic has been under study in recent decades by a legion of medical science, bio- and neuro-physiology, psychology, mathematics, philosophy, and physics experts. Many different theories with varying degree of theoretical maturity and self-consistency have been proposed over the years, and most of them have not yet been experimentally tested for various reasons. However, some first-order experimental work has been done (Mitchell, 1974b; Targ and Puthoff, 1977; Wolman et al., 1986; Radin, 1997; Tart et al., 2002). Ironically, quantum mechanics theory, and the related physics of quantum entanglement and teleportation, has become the primary focus of all of the physics theories of consciousness/psychotronics that have been recently proposed (see for example, Shan, 2003). Wolman et al. (1986) and Radin (1997) provide a review and discussion on recent theories and experiments that are based on quantum physics theory (see also, Walker, 1974; Targ and Puthoff, 1977; Mitchell, 1999, and the references cited therein; Tart et al., 2002). It appears that the physics of q-Teleportation (Chapter 3) has tremendous relevance to the physics of p-Teleportation and psychotronics.

In the following I propose a parsimonious first-order hypothesis that can explain the gross features of both the Chinese p-Teleportation data and the other reported p-Teleportation phenomena. But I will refrain from including any role that might be played by quantum phenomena since the scientific community has not yet settled that particular issue. (However, it is apparent that quantum theory and quantum phenomena will likely play a key role in a formal physics theory of PK and psychotronics.)

First-Order Hypothesis:

- ❑ Fact 1: The mature discipline of mathematical geometry developed the properties of higher dimensional spaces (Reichenbach, 1957; Manning, 1977; Rucker, 1977). An example of one such property that is of relevance to the hypothesis: One can visualize a four-dimensional world by using color as the 4th dimension. We can think of a three-dimensional world, whereby objects pass through one another if their colors (i.e., four-dimensional locations) are different (Reichenbach, 1957). For example, color can be used as a 4th dimension to see how a knot in three-dimensions can be untied in a 4th spatial dimension without moving the ends of the cord. That is because a cord cannot stay knotted in four-dimensional space, because the extra degree of freedom will cause any knot to slip through itself. Two other interesting and relevant examples are that the links of a chain may be separated unbroken in the 4th dimension, and a flexible sphere may be turned inside out without tearing in the 4th dimension (Manning, 1977; Rucker, 1977).

- Proposition 1 and Fact 2: It has been proposed that our space actually possesses a slight four-dimensional hyperthickness, so that the ultimate components of our nervous system are actually higher dimensional, thus enabling the human mind/brain to imagine four-dimensional space (Hinton, 1888, 1904; Rucker, 1977). If this is the case, then the three-dimensional nets of neurons that code thoughts in our brain may form four-dimensional patterns to achieve four-dimensional thought. The "bulk" space in 3-brane theory (see Section 4.1), and experimental data from the Remote Viewing program (see Section 5.1), provide support for this concept. Can we see into the 4th dimension and have four-dimensional thoughts? Yes, we can. Proof (see, Rucker, 1977, 1984): If you look at a Necker cube for a while, it spontaneously turns into its mirror image and back again. If you watch it do this often enough, the twinkling sort of motion from one state to the other begins to seem like a continuous motion. But this motion can only be continuous if it is a rotation in four-dimensional space. The mathematician August F. Möbius discovered in 1827 that it is in fact possible to turn a three-dimensional solid object into its mirror image by an appropriate rotation through four-dimensional space (a.k.a. hyperspace rotation). Thus, it is actually possible for our minds to perform such a rotation. Therefore, we can actually produce four-dimensional phenomenon in our minds, so our consciousness is four-dimensional. Rucker (1984) shows another dramatic example of being able to see into the 4th dimension via a "Neck-A-Cube."

- Fact 3: Another property of higher dimensional geometry (Reichenbach, 1957; Rucker, 1977, 1984) is that one can move through solid three-dimensional obstacles without penetrating them by passing in the direction of the 4th (spatial) dimension. The 4th dimension is perpendicular to all of our normal three-dimensional space directions, and so our three-dimensional enclosures have no walls against this direction.

- Conclusion and Hypothesis: Therefore, the results of the Chinese p-Teleportation experiments can simply be explained as a human consciousness phenomenon that somehow acts to move or rotate test specimens through a 4th spatial dimension, so that the specimens are able to penetrate the solid walls/barriers of their containers without physically breaching them. No real dematerialization/rematerialization of the specimens takes place. The intensity fluctuations of the radio micro-transmitter specimen's electromagnetic signal, and the apparent blending of the other specimens with the walls of their containers, represent the passage of the specimens through a 4th spatial dimension. During teleportation the radio signals emitted by the micro-transmitter became weak/non-existent and fluctuated, because they were spreading out into the 4th dimension and became undetectable in our three-dimensional space. The weak signals that were ("barely") detected represent the leakage of a portion of the radio signal back into our three-dimensional space from the 4th dimension during teleportation. The observed blending of the other specimens with the walls of their containers is how the movement/rotation of the specimens through the 4th dimension was visually interpreted by the mind (along the lines of the Necker cube or Neck-A-Cube examples).

5.2 Conclusion and Recommendations

We will need a physics theory of consciousness and psychotronics, along with more experimental data, in order to test the hypothesis in Section 5.1.1 and discover the physical mechanisms that lay behind the psychotronic manipulation of matter. P-Teleportation, if verified, would represent a phenomenon that could offer potential high-payoff military, intelligence and commercial applications. This phenomenon could generate a dramatic revolution in technology, which would result from a dramatic paradigm shift in science. Anomalies are the key to all paradigm shifts!

●<u>**Recommendations**</u>:

➢ There are numerous supporters within the U.S. military establishment who comprehend the significance of remote viewing and PK phenomenon, and believe that they could have strategic implications. Bremseth (2001), a U.S. Navy SEAL, attended the Marine War College and studied the Remote Viewing program, and interviewed many of the former program participants. Bremseth then wrote his thesis on the topic, and concluded that the evidence supported continued research and applications of remote viewing. A research program improving on and expanding, or implementing novel variations of, the Chinese and Uri Geller-type experiments should be conducted in order to generate p-Teleportation phenomenon in the lab. The performances and characteristics of p-Teleportation need to be delineated in order to develop a refined hypothesis. Such a program should be designed so that an operational model for p-Teleportation can be developed and implemented as a prototype. An experimental program similar in fashion to the Remote Viewing program should be funded at $900,000 – 1,000,000 per year in parallel with a theoretical program funded at $500,000 per year for an initial five-year duration. The role of quantum physics theory and related quantum phenomena (i.e., entanglement and teleportation) in p-Teleportation and psychotronics should be explored in this program (see for example, the Biological Quantum Teleportation recommendation in Section 3.3). An experiment definition study should be conducted first to identify and propose the best experiments for this program, which should be funded at $80,000 for one year.

6.0 REFERENCES

1. Aczel, A. D. (2002), <u>Entanglement: The Greatest Mystery in Physics</u>, Four Walls Eight Windows Press, New York
2. Aharonov, Y., Reznik, B. and Stern, A. (1998), "Quantum limitations of superluminal propagation," Phys. Rev. Lett., $\underline{81}$, 2190-2193
3. Aharonov, Y. and Albert, D. (1981), "Can we make sense of the measurement process in relativistic quantum mechanics?," Phys. Rev. D, $\underline{24}$, 359-370
4. Alexander, Col. J. B. (2003), <u>Winning The War: Advanced Weapons, Strategies, And Concepts For The Post-9/11 World</u>, St. Martin's Press, New York, pp. 238 – 244
5. Alexander, J. B. (1996), "Uri's Impact on the U.S. Army," posted on http://www.urigeller.com
6. Alexander, Lt. Col. J. B. (1980), "The New Mental Battlefield: 'Beam Me Up, Spock,'" Military Review, <u>vol. XL</u>, no. 12
7. Alexander, Col. J. B., Groller, Maj. R. and Morris, J. (1990), <u>The Warrior's Edge</u>, W. Morrow Co., New York
8. Ambjφrn, J. and Wolfram, S. (1983), "Properties of the Vacuum. I. Mechanical and Thermodynamic," Annals Phys., $\underline{147}$, 1-32
9. Antoniadis, I., Arkani-Hamed, N., Dimopoulos, S. and Dvali, G. (1998), "New dimensions at a millimeter to a fermi and superstrings at a TeV," Phys. Lett. B, $\underline{436}$, 257-263
10. Appelquist, T., Chodos, A. and Freund, P. G. O. eds. (1987), <u>Modern Kaluza-Klein Theories</u>, Addison-Wesley, Menlo Park
11. Arkani-Hamed, N., Dimopoulos, S. and Dvali, G. (2002), "Large Extra Dimensions: A New Arena for Particle Physics," Physics Today, $\underline{55}$, 35-40
12. Arkani-Hamed, N., Dimopoulos, S. and Dvali, G. (1998), "The hierarchy problem and new dimensions at a millimeter," Phys. Lett. B, $\underline{429}$, 263-272
13. Arkani-Hamed, N., Dimopoulos, S., Kaloper, N. and Dvali, G. (2000), "Manyfold universe," Journal of High Energy Physics (JHEP online physics papers), http://jhep.sissa.it/archive/papers/jhep122000010/jhep122000010.pdf0012
14. Aspect, A. (1983), <u>Trois tests expérimentaux des inégalités de Bell par mesure de corrélation de polarisation de photons</u>, Ph.D. thesis No. 2674, Université de Paris-Sud, Centre D'Orsay
15. Aspect, A., Dalibard, J. and Roger, G. (1982a), "Experimental Tests of Bell's Inequalities Using Time-Varying Analyzers," Phys. Rev. Letters, $\underline{49}$, 1804-1807
16. Aspect, A., Grangier, P. and Roger, G. (1982b), "Experimental Realization of Einstein-Podolsky-Rosen-Bohm Gedankenexperiment: A New Violation of Bell's Inequalities," Phys. Rev. Letters, $\underline{49}$, 91
17. Aspect, A. and Grangier, P. (1985), Lettere al Nuovo Cimento, $\underline{43}$, 345
18. Aspelmeyer, M., et al. (2003), "Long-Distance Free-Space Distribution of Quantum Entanglement," Science, $\underline{301}$, 621 - 623
19. Banghui, W. (1990), "Evidence of the Existence of Abnormal States of Matter," Chinese J. Somatic Sci., <u>First Issue</u>, 36 [translated into English by the Defense Intelligence Agency]
20. Barcelo, C. and Visser, M. (2002), "Twilight for the energy conditions?," Int. J. Mod. Phys. D, $\underline{11}$, 1553
21. Barnum, H., Caves, C., Fuchs, C., Jozsa, R. and Schumacher, B. (1996), "Noncommuting Mixed States Cannot Be Broadcast," Phys. Rev. Lett., $\underline{76}$, 2818-2821
22. Bell, J. S. (1964), "On the Einstein Podolsky Rosen Paradox," Physics, $\underline{1}$, 195
23. Bennett, C. H., et al. (1993), "Teleporting an unknown quantum state via dual classical and Einstein-Podolsky-Rosen channels," Phys. Rev. Lett., $\underline{70}$, 1895-1899
24. Bennett, C. H. and Wiesner, S. J. (1992), "Communication via one- and two-particle operators on Einstein-Podolsky-Rosen states," Phys. Rev. Lett., $\underline{69}$, 2881-2884

25. Bennett, G. L., Forward, R. L. and Frisbee, R. H. (1995), "Report on the NASA/JPL Workshop on Advanced Quantum/Relativity Theory Propulsion," AIAA-95-2599, 31st AIAA/ASME/ASE/ASEE Joint Propulsion Conference and Exhibit, San Diego, CA

26. Birrell, N. D. and Davies, P. C. W. (1982), Quantum fields in curved space, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge

27. Blaauboer, M., et al. (1998), "Superluminal pulse transmission through a phase conjugating mirror," Optics Communications, 148, 295-299

28. Boschi, D., et al. (1998), "Experimental realization of teleporting an unknown pure quantum state via dual classical and Einstein-Podolski-Rosen channels," Phys. Rev. Lett., 80, 1121-1125

29. Bose, S. and Home, D. (2002), "Generic Entanglement Generation, Quantum Statistics, and Complementarity," Phys. Rev. Lett., 88, 050401

30. Bose, S., Knight, P. L., Plenio, M. B. and Vedral, V. (1999), "Proposal for Teleportation of an Atomic State via Cavity Decay," Phys. Rev. Lett., 83, 5158-5161

31. Bouwmeester, D., et al. (1997), "Experimental quantum teleportation," Nature, 390, 575-579

32. Bowen, W. P., et al. (2003), "Experimental investigation of continuous variable quantum teleportation," Phys. Rev. A, 67, 032302

33. Bowen, W. P., Treps, N., Schnabel, R. and Lam, P. K. (2002), "Experimental demonstration of continuous variable polarization entanglement," Phys. Rev. Lett., 89, 253601

34. Brassard, G., Braunstein, S. and Cleve, R. (1998), "Teleportation as a quantum computation," Physica D, 120, 43-47

35. Braunstein, S. (1996), "Quantum teleportation without irreversible detection," Proc. Royal Acad., 53, 1900-1903

36. Braunstein, S., Fuchs, C., Kimble, H. and van Loock, P. (2001), "Quantum versus classical domains for teleportation with continuous variables," Phys. Rev. A, 64, 022321

37. Braunstein, S. and Kimble, J. (1998), "Teleportation of continuous quantum variables," Phys. Rev. Lett., 80, 869-872

38. Bremseth, Cmdr. L. R. (2001), Unconventional Human Intelligence Support: Transcendent and Asymmetric Warfare Implications of Remote Viewing, Thesis, Marine War College

39. Buttler, W., et al. (1998), "Practical free-space quantum key distribution over 1 km," Phys. Rev. Lett., 81, 3283-3286

40. Center for Quantum Computation Web Site: http://www.qubit.org

41. Chan, H. B., et al. (2001), "Quantum Mechanical Actuation of Microelectromechanical Systems by the Casimir Force," Science, 291, 1941-1944

42. Chiao, R. and Steinberg, A. (1998), "Quantum optical studies of tunneling and other superluminal phenomena," Physica Scripta, T76, 61-66

43. Chown, M. (1990), "Can photons travel 'faster than light'?," New Scientist, 126, 32

44. CIA In-Q-Tel Web Site information: http://www.cia.gov/cia/publications/inqtel/

45. Cole, D. C. and Puthoff, H. E. (1993), "Extracting Energy and Heat from the Vacuum," Phys. Rev. E, 48, 1562

46. Davies, P. C. W. (1980), Other Worlds, Dent, London

47. Davis, E. W. (1999a), Research Summary Report #1 to Dr. Hal Puthoff, IASA: Brief Summary of "Lorentzian Wormholes From The Gravitationally Squeezed Vacuum", NASA Research Center Online Library – Interstellar Studies (available from the author)

48. Davis, E. W. (1999b), Research Summary Report #2 to Dr. Hal Puthoff, IASA: Brief Summary of "Gravitational Vacuum Polarization. Parts I – IV", NASA Research Center Online Library – Interstellar Studies (available from the author)

49. de Felice, F. (1971), "On the gravitational field acting as an optical medium," Gen. Rel. Grav., 2, 347-357

50. de Oliveira, E. C. and Rodriguez, W. (1998), "Superluminal electromagnetic waves in free space," Annalen der Physik, 7(7-8), 654-659

51. de Sabbata, V. and Schmutzer, E. eds. (1983), <u>Unified Field Theories of More Than 4 Dimensions, Proc. Int'l School of Cosmology and Gravitation (Erice)</u>, World Scientific, Singapore
52. Deutsch, D. (1998), <u>The Fabric of Reality</u>, Penguin Books
53. DeWitt, B. S. and Graham, N. eds. (1973), <u>The Many Worlds Interpretation of Quantum Mechanics</u>, Princeton University Press, Princeton
54. DeWitt, B. S. (1970), Physics Today, <u>23</u>, 30
55. DIA Report (1978), <u>Paraphysics R&D – Warsaw Pact</u>, Defense Intelligence Agency, Report No. DST-1810S-202-78, DIA Task No. PT-1810-18-76, Washington DC (authors' names redacted)
56. Dicke, R. H. (1961), "Mach's principle and equivalence," in <u>Proc. of the Int'l School of Physics "Enrico Fermi" Course XX, Evidence for Gravitational Theories</u>, ed. C. Møller, Academic Press, New York, pp. 1-49
57. Dicke, R. H. (1957), "Gravitation without a principle of equivalence," Rev. Mod. Phys., <u>29</u>, 363-376
58. Ding, Y. J. and Kaplan, A. E. (1992), "Nonlinear Magneto-Optical Effect in Vacuum: Inhomogeneity-Originated Second-Harmonic Generation in DC Magnetic Field," J. Nonl. Opt. Phys., <u>1</u>, 51-72
59. Ding, Y. J. and Kaplan, A. E. (1989), "Nonlinear Magneto-Optics of Vacuum: Second-Harmonic Generation," Phys. Rev. Lett., <u>63</u>, 2725-2728
60. Drummond, I. J. and Hathrell, S. J. (1980), "QED vacuum polarization in a background gravitational field and its effect on the velocity of photons," Phys. Rev. D, <u>22</u>, 343-355
61. Dür, W. and Briegel, H.-J. (2003), "Entanglement purification for Quantum Computation," Phys. Rev. Lett., <u>90</u>, 067901
62. Einstein, A., Podolsky, B. and Rosen, N. (1935), "Can quantum mechanical description of physical reality be considered complete?," Phys. Rev., <u>47</u>, 777-780
63. Evans, J., Nandi, K. and Islam, A. (1996a), "The Optical-Mechanical Analogy in General Relativity: New Methods for the Paths of Light and of the Planets," Am. J. Phys., <u>64</u>, 1401-1415
64. Evans, J., Nandi, K. and Islam, A. (1996b), "The Optical-Mechanical Analogy in General Relativity: Exact Newtonian Forms for the Equations of Motion of Particles and Photons," Gen. Rel. Grav., <u>28</u>, 413-439
65. Everett, H. (1957), Rev. Mod. Phys., <u>29</u>, 454
66. Forward, R. L. (2001), Personal Communication, Salt Lake City, UT
67. Forward, R. L. (1999), Personal Communication, Los Angeles, CA
68. Forward, R. L. (1998), "Apparent Method for Extraction of Propulsion Energy from the Vacuum," AIAA-98-3140, 34th AIAA/ASME/SAE/ASEE Joint Propulsion Conference & Exhibit, Cleveland, OH
69. Forward, R. L. (1996), <u>Mass Modification Experiment Definition Study</u>, PL-TR-96-3004, Phillips Laboratory-Propulsion Directorate, Air Force Materiel Command, Edwards AFB, CA
70. Forward, R. L. (1984), "Extracting electrical energy from the vacuum by cohesion of charged foliated conductors," Phys. Rev. B, <u>30</u>, 1770-1773
71. Freedman, S. J. and Clauser, J. F. (1972), "Experimental Test of Local Hidden-Variable Theories," Phys. Rev. Lett., <u>28</u>, 938-941
72. Friedman, J. et al. (1990), "Cauchy problem in spacetimes with closed timelike curves," Phys. Rev. D, <u>42</u>, 1915-1930
73. Furusawa, A., et al. (1998), "Unconditional quantum teleportation," Science, <u>282</u>, 706-710
74. Furuya, K., et al. (1999), "Failure of a proposed superluminal scheme," Phys. Lett. A, <u>251</u>, 294-296
75. Geller, U. (1975), <u>Uri Geller: My Story</u>, Praeger Publ., New York
76. Giroldini, W. (1991), "Eccles's Model of Mind-Brain Interaction and Psychokinesis: A Preliminary Study," J. Sci. Explor., <u>5</u>, no. 2

77. Gisin, N. (1990), "Weinberg's non-linear quantum mechanics and superluminal communications," Phys. Lett. A, 143, 1-2

78. Gisin, N., Scarani, V., Tittel, W. and Zbinden, H. (2000), "Optical tests of quantum non-locality: from EPR-Bell tests towards experiments with moving observers," Ann. Phys. (Leipzig), 9, 831-841

79. Gissurarson, L. R. (1992), "The Psychokinesis Effect: Geomagnetic Influence, Age and Sex Difference," J. Sci. Explor., 6, no. 2

80. Green, M. B. (1985), "Unification of forces and particles in superstring theories," Nature, 314, 409

81. Greenberger, D. (1998), "If one could build a macroscopical Schrodinger cat state, one could communicate superluminally," Physica Scripta, T76, 57-60

82. Groller, Capt. R. (1987), "Soviet Psychotronics – a Closer Look," Military Intelligence, PB 34-87-1 (Test), pp. 43-44

83. Groller, Capt. R. (1986), "Soviet Psychotronics – a State of Mind," Military Intelligence, 12, no. 4, pp. 18-21, 58

84. Hagley, E., et al. (1997), "Generation of Einstein-Podolsky-Rosen Pairs of Atoms," Phys. Rev. Lett., 79, 1-5

85. Hald, J., Sørensen, J. L., Schori, C. and Polzik, E. S. (1999), "Spin Squeezed Atoms: A Macroscopic Entangled Ensemble Created by Light," Phys. Rev. Lett., 83, 1319-1322

86. Hartle, J. B. and Hawking, S. W. (1983), "Wave function of the Universe," Phys. Rev. D, 28, 2960-2975

87. Hasted, J. B. (1979), "Paranormal Metal Bending," in The Iceland Papers: Selected Papers on Experimental and Theoretical Research on the Physics of Consciousness, Puharich, A. ed., Research Associates Publ., Amherst, WI

88. Hasted, J. B., Bohm, D., Bastin, E. W. and O'Reagan, B. (1975), "Scientists confronting the paranormal," Nature, 254, 470-472

89. Haugan, M. P. and Will, C. M. (1977), "Principles of equivalence, Eötvös experiments, and gravitational red-shift experiments: The free fall of electromagnetic systems to post—post-Coulombian order," Phys. Rev. D, 15, 2711-2720

90. Hawking, S. W. and Ellis, G. F. R. (1973), The Large-Scale Structure of Space-Time, Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge, pp. 88-91 and 95-96

91. Hegerfeldt, G. (1998), "Instantaneous spreading and Einstein causality in quantum theory," Annalen der Physik, 7(7-8), 716-725

92. Heitler, W. (1954), The Quantum Theory of Radiation (3rd ed.), Oxford University Press, London, p. 113.

93. Herrmann, F. (1989), "Energy Density and Stress: A New Approach to Teaching Electromagnetism", Am. J. Phys., 57, 707-714

94. Hinton, C. H. (1904), The Fourth Dimension, Sonnenschein, London

95. Hinton, C. H. (1888), A New Era of Thought, Sonnenschein, London

96. Hochberg, D. and Kephart, T. W. (1991), "Lorentzian wormholes from the gravitationally squeezed vacuum," Phys. Lett. B, 268, 377-383

97. Hong, C. K. and Mandel, L. (1985), "Theory of parametric frequency down conversion of light," Phys. Rev. A, 31, 2409-2418

98. Houck, J. (1984a), "Surface Change During Warm-Forming," Archaeus, 2, no. 1

99. Houck, J. (1984b), "PK Party History," Psi Research, 3, no. 1

100. Houck, J. (1982), "PK Party Format," unpublished paper

101. IBM Press Release (2001), "IBM's Test-Tube Quantum Computer Makes History," http://www.research.ibm.com/resources/news/20001219_quantum.shtml

102. Jahn, R. G. and Dunne, B. J. (1987), Margins of Reality: The Role of Consciousness in the Physical World, Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, New York

103. Jammer, M. (1974), <u>The Philosophy of Quantum Mechanics</u>, Wiley-Interscience, New York, pp. 507-521

104. Jennewein, T., Simon, C., Weihs, G., Weinfurter, H. and Zeilinger, A. (2000), "Quantum Cryptography with Entangled Photons," Phys. Rev. Lett., <u>84</u>, 4729-4732

105. Jinggen, H., Xinghai, Y. and Laijing, S. (1990), "Investigation into the 'Force' in Parapsychological Writing," Chinese J. Somatic Sci., <u>First Issue</u>, 32 [translated into English by the Defense Intelligence Agency]

106. Julsgaard, B., Kozhekin, A. and Polzik, E. S. (2001), "Experimental long-lived entanglement of two macroscopic objects," Nature, <u>413</u>, 400-403

107. Kaku, M. (1994), <u>Hyperspace: A Scientific Odyssey Through Parallel Universes, Time Warps, and the 10th Dimension</u>, Anchor Books-Doubleday, New York

108. Kaku, M. (1993), <u>Quantum Field Theory</u>, Oxford University Press, New York

109. Kaku, M. (1988), <u>Introduction to Superstrings</u>, Springer-Verlag, New York

110. Kaluza, T. (1921), "Unitätsproblem der Physik," Sitz. Preuss. Akad. Wiss. Phys. Math., <u>K1</u>, 966

111. Kaplan, A. E. and Ding, Y. J. (2000), "Field-gradient-induced second-harmonic generation in magnetized vacuum," Phys. Rev. A, <u>62</u>, 043805-(1-9)

112. Kim, Y.-H., Kulik, S. P. and Shih, Y. (2001), "Quantum Teleportation of a Polarization State with a Complete Bell State Measurement," Phys. Rev. Lett., <u>86</u>, 1370-1373

113. Klein, O. (1926), "Quantentheorie und fünfdimensionale Relativitätstheorie," Zeits. Phys., <u>37</u>, 895

114. Kongzhi, S., Xianggao, L. and Liangzhong, Z. (1990), "Research into Paranormal Ability to Break Through Spatial Barriers," Chinese J. Somatic Sci., <u>First Issue</u>, 22 [translated into English by the Defense Intelligence Agency]

115. Kuhn, T. S. (1970), <u>The Structure of Scientific Revolutions</u>, 2nd ed., Univ. of Chicago Press, Chicago

116. Kwiat, P. G., et al. (1995), "New high-intensity source of polarization-entangled photon pairs," Phys. Rev. Lett., <u>75</u>, 4337-4341

117. Kwiat, P. G., et al. (1999), "Ultrabright source of polarization-entangled photons," Phys. Rev. A., <u>60</u>, R773-R776

118. Lamas-Linares, A., Howell, J. C. and Bouwmeester, D. (2001), "Stimulated emission of polarization-entangled photons," Nature, <u>412</u>, 887-890

119. Lamoreaux, S. K. (1997), "Measurement of the Casimir Force Between Conducting Plates," Phys. Rev. Letters, <u>78</u>, 5-8

120. LaMothe, Capt. J. D. (1972), <u>Controlled Offensive Behavior – USSR</u>, Defense Intelligence Agency, Report No. ST-CS-01-169-72, DIA Task No. T72-01-14, Washington DC

121. Latorre, J. I., Pascual, P. and Tarrach, R. (1995), "Speed of light in non-trivial vacua," Nucl. Phys. B, <u>437</u>, 60-82

122. Lee, H. C. ed. (1984), <u>An Introduction to Kaluza-Klein Theories, Proc. Chalk River Workshop on Kaluza-Klein Theories</u>, World Scientific, Singapore

123. Lee, T. D. (1988), <u>Particle Physics and Introduction to Field Theory</u>, Harwood Academic Press, London

124. Leggett, A. J. (1999), "Quantum Theory: Weird and Wonderful," Physics World, <u>12</u>, 73-77

125. Leshan, C. (2002), "Proposal for Teleportation by Help of Vacuum Holes," in <u>Gravitation and Cosmology: From the Hubble Radius to the Planck Scale, Proc. of a Symposium in Honour of the 80th Birthday of Jean-Pierre Vigier</u>, Amoroso, R. L., Hunter, G., Kafatos, M. and Vigier, J.-P. eds., Kluwer Academic Publ., Boston, pp. 515-516

126. Leshan, C. (1999), "Thought Experiment to the Border of Universe," J. Theoretics, <u>1</u>, no.4

127. Li, L.-X. and Gott, J. R. (1998), "Self-Consistent Vacuum for Misner Space and the Chronology Protection Conjecture," Phys. Rev. Lett., <u>80</u>, 2980-2983

128. Lightman, A. P. and Gingerich, O. (1991), "When Do Anomalies Begin?," Science, <u>255</u>, 690-695

129. Lightman, A. P. and Lee, D. L. (1973), "Restricted proof that the weak equivalence principle implies the Einstein equivalence principle," Phys. Rev. D, 8, 364
130. Maierle, C., Lidar, D. and Harris, R. (1998), "How to teleport superpositions of chiral amplitudes," Phys. Rev. Lett., 81, 869-872
131. Maire, L. F. and LaMothe, Capt. J. D. (1975), Soviet and Czechoslovakian Parapsychology Research, Defense Intelligence Agency, Report No. DST-1810S-387-75, DIA Task No. PT-1810-12-75, Washington DC
132. Mandel, L. and Wolf, E. (1995), Optical Coherence and Quantum Optics, Cambridge University Press
133. Manning, H. P. (1977), The Fourth Dimension Simply Explained, Peter Smith Publ., Gloucester, MA
134. Mavromatos, N. E., Mershin, A. and Nanopoulos, D. V. (2002), "QED-Cavity model of microtubules implies dissipationless energy transfer and biological quantum teleportation," http://arxiv.org/abs/quant-ph/0204021
135. McConnell, A. J. (1957), Applications of Tensor Analysis, Dover Publ., New York, pp. 163-217
136. Mead, F. B. and Nachamkin, J. (1996), "System for Converting Electromagnetic Radiation Energy to Electrical Energy," United States Patent No. 5,590,031
137. Milonni, P. W. (1994), The Quantum Vacuum: An Introduction to Quantum Electronics, Academic Press, NY
138. Mitchell, E. D. (1999), "Nature's Mind: the Quantum Hologram," National Institute for Discovery Science, Las Vegas, NV, http://www.nidsci.org/articles/naturesmind-qh.html
139. Mitchell, E. D. (1974a), "Appendix: Experiments with Uri Geller," in Psychic Exploration: A Challenge for Science, Mitchell, E. D., White, J. ed., G. P. Putnam's Sons, New York, pp. 683-686
140. Mitchell, E. D. (1974b), Psychic Exploration: A Challenge for Science, White, J. ed., G. P. Putnam's Sons, New York
141. Mittelstaedt, P. (2000), "What if there are superluminal signals?," Eur. Phys. J. B, 13, 353-355
142. Mittelstaedt, P. (1998), "Can EPR-correlations be used for the transmission of superluminal signals?," Annalen der Physik, 7(7-8), 710-715
143. Mittelstaedt, P. and Nimtz, G. eds. (1998), "Workshop on Superluminal Velocities," Annalen der Physik, 7(7-8), 591-592
144. Morris, M. S. and Thorne, K. S. (1988), "Wormholes in spacetime and their use for interstellar travel: A tool for teaching general relativity", Am. J. Phys., 56, 395-412
145. Mourou, G. A., Barty, C. P. J. and Perry, M. D. (1998), "Ultrahigh-Intensity Lasers: Physics Of The Extreme On A Tabletop," Physics Today, 51, 22-28
146. Naik, D. S., Peterson, C. G., White, A. G., Berglund, A. J. and Kwiat, P. G. (2000), "Entangled state quantum cryptography: Eavesdropping on the Ekert protocol," Phys. Rev. Lett., 84, 4733
147. Nash, C. B. (1978), Science of PSI: ESP and PK, C. C. Thomas Publ., Springfield, Ill.
148. Nielsen, M. A. (2003), "Simple Rules for a Complex Quantum World," Sci. Am., 13, 25-33
149. Nielsen, M. A. and Chuang, I. L. (2000), Quantum Computation and Quantum Information, Cambridge University Press
150. Nielsen, M., Knill, E. and Laflamme, R. (1998), "Complete quantum teleportation using nuclear magnetic resonance," Nature, 396, 52-55
151. Nimtz, G. (1998), "Superluminal signal velocities," Annalen der Physik, 7(7-8), 618-624
152. Opatrný, T., Clausen, J., Welsch, D.-G. and Kurizki, G. (2000), "Squeezed-Vacuum Assisted Quantum Teleportation," Paper No. 7thCEWQO/015, in Proc. 7th Central-European Workshop on Quantum Optics, Hungary
153. Opatrný, T. and Kurizki, G. (2001), "Matter-Wave Entanglement and Teleportation by Molecular Dissociation and Collisions," Phys. Rev. Lett., 86, 3180-3183
154. Overduin, J. M. and Wesson, P. S. (1998), "Kaluza-Klein Gravity," http://arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/9805018

155. Pan, J.-W., et al. (1998), "Experimental entanglement swapping," Phys. Rev. Lett., <u>80</u>, 3891-3894

156. Pease, R. (2001), "Brane new world," Nature, <u>411</u>, 986-988

157. Peres, A. (2000), "Classical intervention in quantum systems. II. Relativistic invariance," Phys. Rev. A, <u>61</u>, 022117(8)

158. Perry, M. D. (2000), "The Amazing Power of the Petawatt," Science & Technology Rev. (LLNL-DoE publication), March issue, 4-12

159. Perry, M. D. (1996), "Crossing the Petawatt Threshold," Science & Technology Rev. (LLNL-DoE publication), December issue, 4-11

160. Polchinski, J. (1995), "Dirichlet Branes and Ramond-Ramond Charges," Phys. Rev. Lett., <u>75</u>, 4724-4727

161. Pratt, J. G. (1986), "Soviet Research in Parapsychology," in <u>Handbook of Parapsychology</u>, Wolman, B. B., Dale, L. A., Schmeidler, G. R. and Ullman, M. eds., McFarland and Co. Publ., Jefferson, NC, pp. 883-903

162. Preskill, J., Lecture Notes: http://www.theory.caltech.edu/people/preskill/ph229/

163. Puthoff, H. E. (2003), Personal Communication, Institute for Advanced Studies at Austin, Austin, TX

164. Puthoff, H. E. (2002a), "Polarizable-Vacuum (PV) Approach to General Relativity", Found. Phys., <u>32</u>, 927-943

165. Puthoff, H. E. (2002b), "Polarizable-Vacuum Approach to General Relativity", in <u>Gravitation and Cosmology: From the Hubble Radius to the Planck Scale</u>, eds. R. L. Amoroso, G. Hunter, M. Kafatos, and J.-P. Vigier, Kluwer Academic Publ., Dordrecht, the Netherlands, pp. 431-446

166. Puthoff, H. E. (1999a), "Polarizable-vacuum (PV) representation of general relativity," http://arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/9909037

167. Puthoff, H. E. (1999b), Personal Communication, Institute for Advanced Studies at Austin, Austin, TX

168. Puthoff, H. E. (1996), "CIA-Initiated Remote Viewing Program at Stanford Research Institute," J. Sci. Explor., <u>10</u>, 63-76

169. Puthoff, H. E. (1993), "On the Feasibility of Converting Vacuum Electromagnetic Energy to Useful Form," Int'l Workshop on the Zeropoint Electromagnetic Field, Cuernavaca, Mexico

170. Puthoff, H. E. (1990), "The Energetic Vacuum: Implications for Energy Research," Spec. in Sci. & Technology, <u>13</u>, 247

171. Puthoff, H. E., Little, S. R. and Ibison, M. (2002), "Engineering the Zero-Point Field and Polarizable Vacuum for Interstellar Flight," J. British Interplanetary Soc., <u>55</u>, 137-144

172. Puthoff, H. E. and Targ, R. (1975), "Physics, Entropy and Psychokinesis," in <u>Proc. Conf. Quantum Physics and Parapsychology (Geneva, Switz.)</u>, Parapsychology Foundation Publ., New York

173. Puthoff, H. E. and Targ, R. (1974), "PK experiments with Uri Geller and Ingo Swann," in <u>Research in Parapsychology 1973</u>, Roll, W. G., Morris, R. L. and Morris, J. D. eds., Scarecrow Press, Metuchen, New Jersey, pp. 125-128

174. Quantum Information: Special Issue (1998), Physics World, <u>11</u>, no. 3

175. Radin, D. (1997), <u>The Conscious Universe: The Scientific Truth of Psychic Phenomena</u>, HarperEdge-HarperCollins Publ., New York

176. Raimond, J. M., Brune, M. and Haroche, S. (2001), "Colloquium: Manipulating quantum entanglement with atoms and photons in a cavity," Rev. Mod. Phys., <u>73</u>, 565-582

177. Randall, L. and Sundrum, R. (1999a), "Large Mass Hierarchy from a Small Extra Dimension," Phys. Rev. Lett., <u>83</u>, 3370-3373

178. Randall, L. and Sundrum, R. (1999b), "An Alternative to Compactification," Phys. Rev. Lett., <u>83</u>, 4690-4693

179. Rarity, J. G. (2003), "Getting Entangled in Free Space," Science, <u>301</u>, 604 - 605

180. Reichenbach, H. (1957), <u>The Philosophy of Space and Time</u>, Dover Publ., New York

181. Rhine, L. E. (1970), <u>Mind over Matter: Psychokinesis</u>, Macmillan, New York

182. Rubakov, V. A. and Shaposhnikov, M. E. (1983a), "Do we live inside a domain wall?," Phys. Lett. B, 125, 136-138

183. Rubakov, V. A. and Shaposhnikov, M. E. (1983b), "Extra space-time dimensions: Towards a solution to the cosmological constant problem," Phys. Lett. B, 125, 139-143

184. Rucker, R. (1984), The Fourth Dimension: A Guided Tour of the Higher Universes, Houghton Mifflin Co., Boston, pp. 45-49

185. Rucker, R. (1977), Geometry, Relativity and the Fourth Dimension, Dover Publ., New York

186. Sackett, C. A. (2001), Quant. Inf. Comput., 1, 57

187. Sackett, C. A., et al. (2000), "Experimental entanglement of four particles," Nature, 404, 256

188. Scarani, V., Tittel, W., Zbinden, H. and Gisin, N. (2000), "The speed of quantum information and the preferred frame: analysis of experimental data," Phys. Lett. A, 276, 1-7

189. Scharnhorst, K. (1990), "On Propagation of Light in the Vacuum Between Plates," Phys. Lett. B, 236, 354-359

190. Schein, F. and Aichelburg, P. C. (1996), "Traversable Wormholes in Geometries of Charged Shells," Phys. Rev. Letters, 77, 4130-4133

191. Schmidt, H. (1987), "The Strange Properties of Psychokinesis," J. Sci. Explor., 1, no. 2

192. Schmidt, H. (1974), "Psychokinesis," in Psychic Exploration: A Challenge for Science, Mitchell, E. D., White, J. ed., G. P. Putnam's Sons, New York, pp. 179-193

193. Schnabel, J. (1997), Remote Viewers: The Secret History of America's Psychic Spies, Dell Publ., New York

194. Schrödinger, E. (1980), Proc. Am. Philos. Soc., 124, 323

195. Schrödinger, E. (1935a), Die Naturwissenschaften, 48, 807

196. Schrödinger, E. (1935b), Die Naturwissenschaften, 49, 823

197. Schrödinger, E. (1935c), Die Naturwissenschaften, 49, 844

198. Seife, C. (2000), "'Spooky Action' Passes a Relativistic Test," Science, 287, 1909-1910

199. Shan, G. (2003), "A Primary Quantum Model of Telepathy," http://cogprints.ecs.soton.ac.uk/archive/00003065/

200. Shigemi, S., Yasuo, O. and Akihira, T. (1978), "Some Observations with Scanning Electron Microscope (SEM) of the Fracture Surface of Metals Fractured by Psychokinesis," Japan PS Soc. J., 2, no. 2

201. Shor, P. W. (1997), "Polynomial-Time Algorithms for Prime Factorization and Discrete Logarithms on a Quantum Computer," SIAM J. Sci. Statist. Comput., 26, 1484

202. Shor, P. W. (1994), "Polynomial-Time Algorithms for Prime Factorization and Discrete Logarithms on a Quantum Computer", in Proc. 35th Annual Symposium on Foundations of Computer Science, IEEE Computer Society Press, p. 124

203. Shoup, R. (2002), "Anomalies and Constraints: Can Clairvoyance, Precognition, and Psychokinesis Be Accommodated within Known Physics?," J. Sci. Explor., 16, no. 1

204. Shuhuang, L., et al. (1981), "Some Experiments on the Transfer of Objects Performed by Unusual Abilities of the Human Body," Nature Journal (Peoples Republic of China), 4, no. 9, 652 [Defense Intelligence Agency Requirements and Validation Branch, DIA Translation LN731-83, Intelligence Information Report No. 6010511683 (1983)]

205. Siegfried, T. (2000), The Bit and the Pendulum, John Wiley & Sons

206. Sørensen, J. L. (1998), Nonclassical light for atomic physics and quantum teleportation, Ph.D. thesis, Univ. of Aarhus

207. Srikanth, R. (July 1999), "Noncausal superluminal nonlocal signaling," http://arxiv.org/abs/quant-ph/9904075

208. Stanford, R. (1974), "Interview," Psychic, 7

209. Stenholm, S. and Bardroff, P. (1998), "Teleportation of N-dimensional states," Phys. Rev. A, 58, 4373-4376

210. Swann, I. (1974), "Scientological Techniques: A Modern Paradigm for the Exploration of Consciousness and Psychic Integration," in Proc. First Int'l Conf. on Psychotronic Research, United States Joint Publications Research Service, Document No. JPRS L/5022-1, Virginia

211. Targ, R. (1996), "Remote Viewing at Stanford Research Institute in the 1970s: A Memoir," J. Sci. Explor., 10, 77-88

212. Targ, R. and Puthoff, H. E. (1977), Mind-Reach: Scientists Look at Psychic Ability, Jonathan Cape Ltd.-Anchor Press, London

213. Tart, C. T., Puthoff, H. E. and Targ, R. eds. (2002), Mind at Large: Institute of Electrical and Electronics Engineers Symposia on the Nature of Extrasensory Perception, Hampton Roads Publ. Co., Charlottesville, VA

214. Terhal, B. M., Wolf, M. M. and Doherty, A. C. (2003), "Quantum Entanglement: A Modern Perspective," Physics Today, 56, 46-52

215. Thorne, K. S. (1993), "Closed Timelike Curves," GRP-340, CalTech, Pasadena, CA

216. Tittel, W. and Weihs, G. (2001), Quantum Inf. Comput., 1, 3

217. Tittel, W., Brendel, J., Zbinden, H. and Gisin, N. (2000), "Quantum Cryptography Using Entangled Photons in Energy-Time Bell States," Phys. Rev. Lett., 84, 4737-4740

218. Tittel, W., Brendel, J., Gisin, B., Herzog, T., Zbinden, H. and Gisin, N. (1998a), "Experimental demonstration of quantum correlations over more than 10 km," Phys. Rev. A, 57, 3229-3232

219. Tittel, W., Brendel, J., Zbinden, H. and Gisin, N. (1998b), "Violation of Bell Inequalities by Photons More Than 10 km Apart," Phys. Rev. Lett., 81, 3563-3566

220. Vaidman, L. (1994), "Teleportation of quantum states," Phys. Rev. A, 49, 1473-1476

221. Vaidman, L. and Yoran, N. (1999), "Methods for reliable teleportation," Phys. Rev. A, 59, 116-125

222. Vallee, J. (1997), Personal Communication, Science Advisory Board of the National Institute for Discovery Science, Las Vegas, NV

223. Vallee, J. (1990), Confrontations: A Scientist's Search for Alien Contact, Ballantine Books, New York

224. Vallee, J. (1988), Dimensions: A Casebook of Alien Contact, Ballantine Books, New York

225. van Enk, S. (March 1998), "No-cloning and superluminal signaling," http://arxiv.org/abs/quant-ph/9803030

226. Visser, M., Kar, S. and Dadhich, N. (2003), "Traversable Wormholes with Arbitrarily Small Energy Condition Violations," Phys. Rev. Lett., 90, 201102

227. Visser, M. (1997), Personal Communication, Washington University, St. Louis, MO

228. Visser, M. (1995), Lorentzian Wormholes: From Einstein to Hawking, AIP Press, New York

229. Visser, M. (1990), "Wormholes, baby universes, and causality", Phys. Rev. D, 41, 1116-1124

230. Visser, M. (1989), "Traversable wormholes: Some simple examples", Phys. Rev. D, 39, 3182-3184

231. Volkov, A. M., Izmest'ev, A. A. and Skrotskii, G. V. (1971), "The propagation of electromagnetic waves in a Riemannian space," Sov. Phys. JETP, 32, 686-689

232. Walker, E. H. (1974), "Consciousness and Quantum Theory," in Psychic Exploration: A Challenge for Science, Mitchell, E. D., White, J. ed., G. P. Putnam's Sons, New York, pp. 544-568

233. Weihs, G., Jennewein, T., Simon, C., Weinfurter, H. and Zeilinger, A. (1998), "Violation of Bell's Inequality under Strict Einstein Locality Conditions," Phys. Rev. Lett., 81, 5039-5043

234. Weinberg, S. (1992), Dreams of a Final Theory, Vintage Books, pp. 88-89

235. Weinberg, S. (1989), "Testing Quantum Mechanics," Ann. Phys., 194, 336-386

236. Weiss, P. (2000), "Hunting for Higher Dimensions: Experimenters scurry to test new theories suggesting that extra dimensions are detectable," Science News, 157, 122-124

237. Westmoreland, M. and Schumacher, B. (March 1998), "Quantum entanglement and the non existence of superluminal signals," http://arxiv.org/abs/quant-ph/9801014

238. Wheeler, J. A. (1962), Monist, 47, 40

239. Wheeler, J. A. (1957), Rev. Mod. Phys., <u>29</u>, 463
240. Wheeler, J. A. and Zurek, W. H. eds. (1983), <u>Quantum Theory and Measurement</u>, Princeton University Press
241. Will, C. M. (1993), <u>Theory and Experiment in Gravitational Physics</u> (rev. ed.), Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, Section 2.6
242. Will, C. M. (1989), "The confrontation between gravitation theory and experiment," in <u>General Relativity: An Einstein Centenary Survey</u>, eds. S. W. Hawking and W. Israel, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, Chapter 2
243. Will, C. M. (1974), "Gravitational red-shift measurements as tests of nonmetric theories of gravity," Phys. Rev. D, <u>10</u>, 2330-2337
244. Wilson, H. A. (1921), "An electromagnetic theory of gravitation," Phys. Rev., <u>17</u>, 54-59
245. Wineland, D. J., et al. (2002), "Quantum information processing with trapped ions," http://arxiv.org/abs/quant-ph/0212079
246. Wolf, F. A. (1988), <u>Parallel Universes: The Search for Other Worlds</u>, Simon and Schuster, New York
247. Wolman, B. B., Dale, L. A., Schmeidler, G. R. and Ullman, M. eds. (1986), <u>Handbook of Parapsychology</u>, McFarland and Co. Publ., Jefferson, NC
248. Wootters, W. K. and Zurek, W. H. (1982), "A single quantum cannot be cloned," Nature, <u>299</u>, 802-803
249. Zbinden, H., Brendel, J., Gisin, N. and Tittel, W. (2000a), "Experimental Test of Non-Local Quantum Correlation in Relativistic Configurations," http://arxiv.org/abs/quant-ph/0007009
250. Zbinden, H., Brendel, J., Tittel, W. and Gisin, N. (2000b), "Experimental Test of Relativistic Quantum State Collapse with Moving Reference Frames," http://arxiv.org/abs/quant-ph/0002031
251. Zeilinger, A. (2003), "Quantum Teleportation," Sci. Am, <u>13</u>, 34-43
252. Zhang, T. C., et al. (2002), "Quantum teleportation of light beams," http://arxiv.org/abs/quant-ph/0207076
253. Zubairy, S. (1998), "Quantum teleportation of a field state," Phys. Rev. A, <u>58</u>, 4368-4372

APPENDIX A – A Few Words About Negative Energy

A.1 A General Relativistic Definition of Negative or Exotic Energy

We saw in equations (2.10a-c) that the surface energy and stress-tension densities of the material required to create and thread a traversable wormhole must be "negative." For surface stress-energy, and volume stress-energy in general, this is "negative" in the sense that the material we must deploy to generate and thread the traversable wormhole must have an energy density (ρc^2, ρ = mass density) that is less than the stress-energy density (τ), or we can write this condition as: *mass-energy* $\rho c^2 \leq$ *stress-energy* τ. On the basis of this condition, we call this material property "exotic." Therefore, the term "negative" is just a misnomer in this context. The condition for ordinary, non-exotic forms of matter that we are all familiar with is *mass-energy* $\rho c^2 >$ *stress-energy* τ. This condition represents one version of what is variously called the weak (WEC), null (NEC), average (AEC), dominant (DEC), strong (SEC) or "standard" energy conditions (that are mere hypotheses!), which allegedly forbid negative mass-energy density and gravitational repulsion (antigravity) between material objects to occur in nature. Hawking and Ellis (1973) formulated these energy conditions in order to establish a series of mathematical proofs in their study of the application of general relativity theory to cosmology and black hole physics.

However, there are general theorems of differential geometry that guarantee that there must be NEC violations (meaning exotic matter-energy is present) at a wormhole throat (Visser, 1997). In view of this, it is known that static radial electric or magnetic fields are borderline exotic when threading a wormhole, if their tension were infinitesimally larger, for a given energy density (Herrmann, 1989; Hawking and Ellis, 1973). Other exotic (energy condition violating) matter-energy fields are known to be squeezed quantum states of the electromagnetic field and other squeezed quantum fields (see Section A.2 for the discussion on squeezed quantum states), gravitationally squeezed vacuum electromagnetic zero-point energy (see Section 2.3 for the discussion on Gravitationally Squeezed Vacuum Energy), Casimir (electromagnetic zero-point) energy and other quantum fields/states/effects. These examples represent forms of matter-energy that possess negative energy density. Since the vacuum is defined to have vanishing energy density, anything possessing less energy density than the vacuum must have a negative energy density. With respect to creating wormholes, these have the unfortunate reputation of alarming physicists. This is unfounded since all the energy condition hypotheses have been experimentally tested in the laboratory and experimentally shown to be false - 25 years before their formulation (Visser, 1990 and references cited therein). Further investigation into this technical issue showed that violations of the energy conditions are widespread for all forms of both classical and quantum matter-energy such as planets, stars, black holes, neutron stars, people, space dust clouds, etc. (Davis, 1999b; Barcelo and Visser, 2002). In addition, Visser (1995) showed that all (generic) spacetime geometries violate all the energy conditions. Violating the energy conditions commits no offense against nature.

A.2 Squeezed Quantum States and Negative Energy

In quantum mechanics the energy (E) and frequency (ν) of a quantum oscillator system, such as electromagnetic radiation (or light), are interchangeable via the Planck relation $E = h\nu$ ($h = 2\pi\hbar$). And from the Heisenberg quantum uncertainty principle, we know that the conjugate variable to the frequency is the oscillator phase (φ), such that $\Delta\nu\Delta\varphi \geq \hbar$ is obeyed. Phase is difficult to measure and is ignored in characterizing complex quantum systems.

Recent theoretical and experimental work has shown that in many quantum systems the limits to measurement precision imposed by the quantum vacuum zero-point fluctuations (ZPF) can be breached

by decreasing the frequency noise at the expense of increasing the phase noise (thus maintaining $\Delta v \Delta \varphi \geq \hbar$), while at the same time the variations in frequency, and therefore the energy, are reduced below the ZPF such that the energy becomes "negative." "Squeezing" is thus the control of quantum fluctuations and corresponding uncertainties, whereby one can squeeze the variance of one (physically important) observable quantity provided the variance in the (physically unimportant) conjugate variable is stretched/increased. The squeezed quantity possesses an unusually low variance, meaning less variance than would be expected on the basis of the equipartition theorem. We can exploit quantum squeezing to extract energy from one place in the ordinary vacuum at the expense of piling up excess energy elsewhere (Morris and Thorne, 1988).

Appendix B – *TH*εμ Methodology

In the formalism of the *TH*εμ methodology, the functions *T* and *H* are introduced by requiring that the Lagrangian for the motion of particles (with charge e_a and mass m_{0a} for the ath particle), under the joint action of gravity and the electromagnetic field A_α ($\alpha \equiv$ spacetime vector components), be expressed in the canonical form

$$L = \sum_a \int \left(-m_{0a}\sqrt{T - Hv_a^{\ 2}} + e_a A_\alpha v_a^{\ \alpha} \right) dt + (8\pi)^{-1} \int \left(\varepsilon \mathbf{E}^2 + \mu^{-1}\mathbf{B}^2 \right) d^3x\, dt \qquad \text{(B.1)};$$

where the arbitrary functions *T*, *H*, ε, and μ are functions of the metric (a.k.a. gravitation field), $v_a^{\ \alpha}$ is the ath particle four-vector velocity, and A_α is the electromagnetic field four-vector potential, *E* and *B* are the electric and magnetic field strengths, and (B.1) is in geometrodynamic natural units ($\hbar = c_0 = G = \varepsilon_0 = \mu_0 = 1$). The Lagrangian characterizes the motion of charged particles in an external gravitational field by the two functions *T* and *H*, and characterizes the response of the electromagnetic fields to the external gravitational field by the two functions ε and μ. For all standard (metric) theories of gravity, the four functions are related by

$$\varepsilon = \mu = \sqrt{\frac{H}{T}} \qquad \text{(B.2)};$$

and *every* metric theory of gravity satisfies this relation, such that the Einstein Equivalence Principle is satisfied.

AFRL/PRSP   (15 CD)
Dr. Frank Mead
10 E. Saturn Blvd
Edwards AFB CA 93524-7680

AFRL/PRSA (1 CD)
Dr. Jean-Luc Cambier
10 E. Saturn Blvd.
Edwards AFB CA 93524-7680

AFRL/PR (1 CD)
Dr. Alan Garscadden
1950 Fifth Street
Building 18
Wright-Patterson AFB, OH 45433-7251

AFRL/PR Technical Library (2 CD + 1 HC)
6 Draco Drive
Edwards AFB CA 93524-7130

Chemical Propulsion Information Agency (1 CD)
Attn: Tech Lib (Dottie Becker)
10630 Little Patuxent Parkway, Suite 202
Columbia MD 21044-3200

Defense Technical Information Center
(1 Electronic Submission via STINT)
Attn: DTIC-ACQS (Pat Mawby)
8725 John J. Kingman Road, Suite 94
Ft. Belvoir VA 22060-6218

Dr. Eric Davis (10 CD)
4849 San Rafael Ave.
Las Vegas, NV 89120

Dr. Dana Andrews (1 CD)
P.O. Box 36
Leavenworth, WA 98826

Dr. Jim Degnan (1 CD)
AFRL/DEHP
Kirtland AFB, NM 87117

Dr. Greg Benford (1 CD)
Physics Department
University of California
Irvine, CA 92717

Dr. Jim Benford (1 CD)
Microwave Sciences, Inc.
1041 Los Arabis Ln.
Lafayette, CA 94549

Dr. Gary L. Bennett (1 CD)
7517 West Devonwood Dr.
Boise, ID 83703

Dr. Mitat Birkan (1 CD)
AFOSR/NA
801 N. Randolf St.
Arlington, VA 22203

Dr. Jon Campbell (1 CD)
P.O. Box 295
Harvest, AL 35749

Mr. Michael Libeau
NSWCDD
17320 Dahlgren Rd.
Attn: Code G23 Libeau
Dalgren VA 22448

Dr. Phil Carpenter (1 CD)
US Dept. of Energy
Oak Ridge National Laboratory
P.O. Box 2008, MS: 6269
Oak Ridge, TN 37831

Dr. Brice N. Cassenti (1 CD)
Pratt & Whitney Aircraft
400 Main Street – MS: 163-07
East Hartford, CT 06108

Dr. Chan K. Choi (1 CD)
Purdue University
School of Nuclear Engineering
West Lafayette, IN 47907

Dr. Terry Kammash (1 CD)
University of Michigan
Nuclear Engineering Dept.
Ann Arbor, MI 48109

Dr. Ingrid Wysong (1 CD)
EOARD
223-321-Old Merylebone Rd.
London NW1 5th
United Kingdom

Dr. Robert Frisbee (1 CD)
JPL, MS 125-109
4800 Oak Grove Dr.
Pasadena, CA 91109

Dave Froning (1 CD)
Flight Unlimited
5450 Country Club
Flagstaff, AZ 86004

Geroge D. Hathaway (1 CD)
Hathaway Consulting Services
39 Kendal Ave.
Toronto, Canada, Ontario
Canada M5R 1L5

Clark W. Hawk, Director (1 CD)
Propulsion Research Center
University of Alabama in Huntsville
5000 Technology Drive, TH S-266
Huntsville, AL 35899

Alan C. Holt (1 CD)
NASA/Johnson Space Center
Code OD
Houston, TX 77058

Dr. Steven Howe (1 CD)
19 Karen Lane
Los Alamos, NM 87544

Mike Kaiserman (1 CD)
Raytheon Missile Systems Company
Bldg 805, M/S C3
Tucson, AZ 85734

Dr. George Miley (1 CD)
University of Illinois, Dept. of Nuclear Engr.
214 Nuclear Engineering Laboratory
103 South Goodwin Ave.
Urbana, IL 61801

Marc Millis (1 CD)
NASA Glenn Research Center
M.S. SPTD-2
21000 Brookpark Road, MS: 86-2
Cleveland, OH 44135

Dr. Jordon Kare (1 CD)
222 Canyon Lakes Pl.
San Ramon, CA 94583

Ron J. Kita (1 CD)
87 Shady Springs DR.
Doyelstown, PA 18901

Dr. Gerald L. Kulcinski (1 CD)
Nuclear Engineering Dept.
University of Wisconsin
1500 Johnson Dr.
Madison, WI 53706

Dr. Geoffrey A. Landis (1 CD)
Sverdrup Technology
21000 Brookpark Rd., MS 302-1
Cleveland, OH 44135

Dr. Michael LaPointe (1 CD)
NASA Lewis Research Center, MS: SPTD-1
21000 Brookpark Rd.
Cleveland, OH 44135

Dr. Sheldon Meth (1 CD)
DARPA
Tactical Technology Office
3701 N. Fairfax Dr.
Arlington, VA 22203

Dr. Michael M. Micci (1 CD)
Prof. of Aerospace Engineering
233 E. Hammond Bldg.
University Park, PA 16802

Dr. Hal Puthoff (1 CD)
Institute for Advanced Studies
4030 Braker Lane, West
Suite 300
Austin, TX 78759

Dr. Eric E. Rice (1 CD)
Orbital Technologies Corp.
402 Gammon Place, Suite 10
Madison, WI 53719

Dr. Aurthur Morrish (1 CD)
DARPA/ATO
3701 N. Fairfax Dr.
Arlington, VA 22203

Dr. Paul Murad (1 CD)
Sr. Analyst, Director for Intel Production
Missile & Space Intel Center
Defense Intelligence Agency
Washington, DC 20340-6054

Dr. Brian Palaszewski (1 CD)
NASA Glenn Research Center
21000 Brookpartk Road, MS: 5-10
Cleveland, OH 44135

Dr. Alan Pike (1 CD)
DSAS
1988 Crescent Park Drive
Reston, VA 20190

Dr. Dennis Pelaccio (1 CD)
SAIC
8100 Shaffer Parkway, Suite 100
Littleton, CO 80127

Ben Plenge (1 CD)
101 W. Eglin Blvd
Suite 342
Eglin AFB, FL 32542-6810

Dr. James Powell (1 CD)
Plus Ultra Technologies, Inc.
25 East Loop Rd.
Stony Brook, NY 11970-3350

Mr. Charles A. Yost (1 CD)
Electric Spacecraft Journal
73 Sunlight Drive
Leicester, NC 28748

Dr. George Schmidt (1 CD)
NASA HQ
300 E. Street SW
Washington, DC 20546

Steve Squires (1 CD)
Directorate of Applied Technology
  Test and Simulation
STEWS-DATTS-OO
WSMR, NM 88002

Robert Talley (1 CD)
Topaz 2000, Inc
3380 Sheridan Dr.
Suite 172
Amherst, NY 14226

Dr. Kenneth D. Ware (1 CD)
Defense Nuclear Agency
Simulation Technology
6801 Telegraph Road
Alexandria, VA 22310

Dr. Feiedwardt Winterberg (1 CD)
University of Nevada
Desert Research Institute
Reno, NV 89507

Dr. Young Bae (1 CD)
1101 Bryan Ave.
Suite C
Tustin, CA 92780

Dr. Thomas M York (1 CD)
1215 Inverary Pl.
State College, PA 16801

Dr. Robert J. Barker (1CD)
AFOSR/NE
801 N. Randolf St.
Arlington, VA 22203

Time Travel: Time Dilation

Daniel Buzzo
University of the West of England
Department of Computer Science and Creative Technology,
Coldharbour Lane,
Bristol, UK
daniel.buzzo @uwe.ac.uk

In this paper I discuss the theory and actuality of the effects of Time Dilation, as predicted by Einstein's Special Relativity. Alongside this the research investigates the visible, experiential effects of most personal form of Time Travel from a personal, phenomenological perspective, illustrated through digital media.

The body of work, this paper and an accompanying book of modified digital images, recalls the Hafele-Keating experiment of October 1971 and parallels the Quantified Self experiments of diary photography and personal analytics in a holistic, interconnected way.

The work tracks 12 months of air travel and illustrates with practical data the physics and mathematics behind the theory and actuality of Time Dilation. The research combines the interdisciplinary worlds of Computer Arts with Data and Scientific Visualisation to create a tangible collision between the visualisation of the personal and illustration of theory

The observations are documented in ethnographic, photo essay illustrations as an investigation into the mathematics and physics of personal and interpersonal time. Using situated imaging presented as a practice-based body of work to communicate the abstract world of very small time periods and the direct relevance of Einstein's work on the personal and perceptual world we inhabit. Contrasting Newtonian mechanics and Einsteinian space-time the work seeks to illustrate the personal nature of how the reality of time travel influences every aspect of the interpersonal

Time dilation. Time travel. General relativity. Special relativity. Visual thinking. Photography. Visualisation. Practice-based research. Art.

1. INTRODUCTION

In 1971 two American researchers, J.C. Hafele and R. E. Keating, conducted an experiment.

They placed two caesium atomic clocks on passenger airplanes and flew them in opposite directions around the globe to test a hypothesis first posited in Einstein's theory of special relativity.

Their aim was to measure the effects of relativity on these highly accurate devices - the predictions indicated that the eastward flying clock would lose 40ns and the westward gain 275ns. A nanosecond is equal to one billionth of a second (10^{-9} or $^1/_{1,000,000,000}$ s). To compare, one nanosecond is to one second as one second is to 31.7 years.

> During October, 1971, four cesium atomic beam clocks were flown on regularly scheduled commercial jet flights around the world twice, once eastward and once westward, to test Einstein's theory of relativity with macroscopic clocks. From the actual flight paths of each trip, the theory predicted that the flying clocks, compared with reference clocks at the U.S. Naval Observatory, should have lost 40+/-23 nanoseconds during the eastward trip and should have gained 275+/-21 nanoseconds during the westward trip ... Relative to the atomic time scale of the U.S. Naval Observatory, the flying clocks lost 59+/-10 nanoseconds during the eastward trip and gained 273+/-7 nanosecond during the westward trip, where the errors are the corresponding standard deviations. These results provide an unambiguous empirical resolution of the famous clock 'paradox' with macroscopic clocks. (Hafele & Keating 1972)

The results showed that compared to stationary clocks in the laboratory the eastward clock lost 59ns and the westward gained 273ns. Whilst there has been discussion of the accuracy and therefore reliability of the measurements the experiment is commonly held up as one of the first to give practical evidence of the physical effects of time dilation.

2. SPECIAL RELATIVITY AND TIME DILATION

In special relativity Einstein States that the duration of time will pass at different rates when comparing an object at rest versus an object in motion. The greater the velocity of the object in motion, the closer to the speed of light, c, the greater the effect of what is known as 'time dilation'

The effect of this phenomenon is significant at speeds close to the constant of light speed but becomes exponentially less as the object in question approaches rest.

$$t' = \frac{t}{\sqrt{1 - \frac{v^2}{c^2}}}$$

Figure 1: *The mathematical relationship of time, velocity and the speed of light describing Time Dilation*

Unless our velocity is a substantial fraction of the constant speed of light the dilation effect (γ) is approximately 1. This, combined with our extremely limited lifespan is why we don't immediately notice time dilation at ordinary speeds. The fastest speed most humans will achieve, an airplane travelling near the speed of sound, gives a time dilation where γ = 1.0000000000005.

In other words, 1 second for a passenger on the plane would pass as 1.0000000000005 seconds for a stationary observer.

Time effectively passes more slowly for the traveller relative to the observer.

3. THE REALITY OF THE EFFECT

Whilst there is discussion of the validity of the results of the 1971 Hafele & Keating experiment, particularly around the 'corrections' made to their data at publication, their initial observations are clearly aligned with the predicted results to be expected from the mathematics for time dilation.

As Reinhardt *et al* (2007) note:

> Time dilation is one of the most fascinating aspects of special relativity as it abolishes the notion of absolute time

In their 2007 paper they investigate the effects of time dilation with even more accurate atomic clocks, adding more experimental evidence consistent with special relativity. There are also numerous other experiments, such as those into muon decay, that provide additional practical evidence that the effect described is real and measurable.

Figure 2: *Over Dorset: Duration 55 minutes*

4. IMPLICATIONS FOR EVERYDAY LIFE

The practical implications for everyday life at first appear intangible when one considers the seemingly miniscule time periods being discussed. Even taking some of the most extreme examples one can imagine being feasible, such as that of a cosmonaut living in a fast low earth orbit, circumnavigating the earth every 90 minutes gives γ of approximately 1.0000000003.

If one considers our astronaut in orbit for two years, the Time Dilation due to special relativity would give an increase in lifespan of approximately 20 milliseconds. A millisecond is a thousandth (10^{-3} or $^1/_{1,000}$) of a second.

This gap of 20 milliseconds, or two hundredths of a second, are suddenly well within human scale perception and understanding. This is a common measured gap in motor racing and fast sports like downhill skiing. Even the record for the 100m sprint is now is 9.58 seconds, run by Usain Bolt at the World Athletics championships in Berlin in 2009.

Scales in milliseconds are spaces and durations that even humans with our modest lifespans can perceive and understand.

As Ed Lu, Science Officer on the International Space Station writes, from orbit, in his blog post on experiments in 'Relativity':

> After our 6 months in space, we will have actually aged slightly less than everyone else on the ground because of an effect called time dilation. It isn't by much (about 0.007 seconds), but it is one side benefit of flying in space!

Though the effects of time dilation at human scale speeds are often imperceptibly small they are nonetheless real. Seeing the implications of this reflected in everyday life reveals the truly personal nature of the time travel that we undertake in everything we do.

The realisation that time dilation is a tangible and observable phenomena that affects ourselves and everything around us was given heightened

poignancy by spending large amounts of time flying at altitude and high speed. Observing the curvature of our planet and seeing the dark sky at the edge of space overhead, watching the mountains and deserts as they slid effortlessly under the wings of successive aeroplanes. Being able to observe the size of the individual against the backdrop of a macro-cosmic scale all the while reflecting on the fact that to a subatomic particle travelling near the speed of light, the universe is about four weeks old and it can be crossed in a matter of months.

Nature can produce even larger particle energies. Some particles striking the Earth's upper atmosphere have energies that exceed $2*10^{20}$ eV. If such particles are protons (with mass of about 1 GeV), their speeds would be 0.999 999 999 999 999 999 999 995 c.   For

them, γ is 1011. Now the age of the universe is about 13 billion years for us, but for such particles, the age of the universe would be about (13 billion years/1011), ie about a month. Such a particle could cross the visible universe in a matter of months (their time).

This twist of perspective, the deliberate 'making strange' that Shlovsky (1917) describes occurs when translating the abstract of the macrocosmic to the intimacy of the personal. The act of comparing and contrasting macro-scale physics and mathematics with recordings of human scale observations evidence reveals useful and potentially significant insights into the nature of the world we actually inhabit.

Figure 3: Sunset over Northern China. Duration: 10 hours 50 minutes

5. THE PICTORIAL AS PRACTICE-BASED RESEARCH

As Blevis (2011) so eloquently puts it, as an introduction to the extensive list of uses of digital imagery in design thinking.

Visual thinking is the use of imagery and other visual forms to make sense of the world and to create meaningful content. Digital imagery is a special form of visual thinking, one that is particularly salient for HCI and interaction design

Alongside the descriptions of digital imagery as a *'form of information'* and a '*shared and externalised memory and cognition'* (Blevis 2012) I would argue that practice-based research, when used as an investigative tool, can assist in revealing and documenting subtle but important non-verbal evidence and also provide compelling and persuasive arguments within presentation of research findings and conclusions. The research approach taken in this area is explicitly practice-based, rooted within contemporary lens based digital media and video art. The investigative material presented as the counterpart to this research paper was collated from hundreds of

minutes of digital video and several hundreds of digital still images taken while airborne on commercial passenger aircraft during January - December 2013. Taken over the course of 44 flights, totalling over 80 hours airborne the visual material is published as a 42 page visual essay, also containing text elements and descriptions taken from this academic paper.

***Figure 4**: Sunset over London. Duration: 55 minutes*

6. REALISATION OF EFFECT ON THE PERSONAL

Having recorded the number of flights, durations and distances the calculations based upon the mathematics of special relativity, as discussed earlier show that.

Given 44 flights totalling 85 hours and 20 minutes or approximately 5120 minutes flying time. gives 307,200 seconds of travel per year.

If γ = 1.0000000000005 when travelling at or near the speed of sound, gives a dilation of 0.0000001536 seconds.
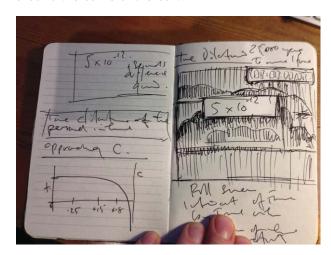
To slip one second from base reference, such as the clock sat on my kitchen table I need to travel at my present annual rate for 6,510,416 Years.

Or to put it a different way, travel for a little over 260,000 years to slip one frame out of sync on a standard rate video camera.

7. CONSIDERING PHOTOGRAPHY IN EVIDENCE

When collating the increasing amounts of video and photographic material recorded whilst airborne, travelling at or near the speed of sound, the overwhelming sensation of velocity, of speed, of travel is ever-present. Viewed at a macro scale the visual material illustrates this distancing, sliding nature of objects moving in a larger framework. It supports the realisation that the terra firma so often

taken as a baseline for observation is in itself only a small part of a larger perspective. The perspective that the proprioceptive nature of our observations of time, informed by the physicality of the form we have evolved and the life span perspective we consider as a norm and useful context are challenged by the linking of these measurable effects. The effects of the micro-scale variations in time seen in contrast to the macro-scale movement around the curve of the earth.

***Figure 5:** An airplane travelling near the speed of sound gives a time dilation where γ = 1.0000000000005*

The visual material, when presented as an adjunct to the evidence of the universal but intimately personal nature of the effects of time dilation help communicate the simple fact that we are all time travelling. Pursuing our own clearly delineated paths and durations relative to each other. Rather than there being one universal time that exists everywhere, for everyone, all at the same moment the personal implication that there is real evidence to prove that this is an illusion is both moving and compelling.

Sitting in an airline seat riding at the edge of space, looking down on the oceans, seas, cities, forests and deserts, seeing terra firma for the illusion that it is. Not a constant underlying grid of space and time - the universal yard stick and the universal clock, such as Newtonian physics promised as it replaced the Aristotelian events-make-time view of the world that had reigned before in popular consciousness.

Realising that the H&K caesium clock from 1971 could be sat beside me, ticking away in its own little timetrack, ticking to a completely separate rhythm than its counterpart clock sat on my kitchen table at home. Realising that the slipping and sliding of our lives against each other is our own intimate version of time travel, we all move forward as future becomes present becomes past but the durations we experience, and that actually occur, and when ***now*** happens is subtly different for everyone. The

time we each experience actually does expand and contract as we move in space.

Figure 6: Frost over Mongolia. Duration: 10 hours 55 minutes

The illusion of the Newtonian ideal of a universal timescale, the idea of a 'universal now' is disappearing and being replaced by the ideas of general relativity. Of a universe full of individual 'nows' all unique and all moving independently. This change is akin to seeing the universe of unique, individual 'nows' at a human, personal scale and seeing a life travelling, sliding, back and forth in time against the 'nows' of those around one.

The important element this body of work seeks to describe is not physics or even a discussion of physics but an explanation of physics and the revelatory moment of seeing it in 'real' experienced life. This work seeks to relate that revelatory moment and articulate it with the artefacts, the book and the paper, telling the story of seeing how each and every one of us is travelling in time, independently, uniquely, every day.

> To see a World in a Grain of Sand
> And a Heaven in a Wild Flower,
> Hold Infinity in the palm of your hand
> And Eternity in an hour. (William Blake)

8. REFERENCES

Bergson, H. (1923) *The Creative Mind: An Introduction to Metaphysics*, Citadel Press [1992]

Blevis, E. (2011) Digital imagery as meaning and form in HCI and design: an introduction to the Visual Thinking Backpage Gallery. Interactions 18, 5 (September 2011), 60-65.

Blevis, E, Churchill. E, Odom. W, Pierce.J, Roedl.D,, and Wakkary.R. (2012) Visual thinking & digital imagery. In *Proc. CHI EA '12*. ACM, New York, NY, USA, 2715-2718.

Callender, C., and Edney, R. (2001). *Introducing Time.* Icon Books. ISBN 1-84046-592-1.

Hafele J.C., and Keating. R. E. (1972) Science 177, 166.

Lu. E, 'Expedition 7, Relativity' Blog Post. http://spaceflight.nasa.gov/station/crew/exp7/luletters/lu_letter13.html (retrieved 20 March 2014).

Muon Experiment in Relativity. http://hyperphysics.phy-astr.gsu.edu/hbase/relativ/muon.html (retrieved 5 March 2014).

Reinhardt, S. *et al.* (2007). Test of relativistic time dilation with fast optical atomic clocks at different velocities. Nature Physics 3 (12): 861–864.

Shklovsky, V. (1917) *Art as Technique*. In: Russian Formalist Criticism: Four Essays. Trans. Lee T. Lemon and Marion J. Reis. University of Nebraska Press, Lincoln, 1965.

The Quantified Self. http://quantifiedself.com/ (retrieved 4 December 2013).

Toothman, J. How Do Humans age in space? HowStuffWorks. http://science.howstuffworks.com/humans-age-in-space.htm (retrieved 24 April 2012).

(54) **ROTOR INDUCTANCE PROPULSION SYSTEM**

(76) Inventor: **John Quincy St. Clair**, San Juan, PR (US)

Correspondence Address:
John St. Clair
Hyperspace Research Institute
52 Kings Court, 4A
San Juan, PR 00911 (US)

(57) **ABSTRACT**

The invention is a spacecraft having a circular, domed hull around which dual electrically-charged rotors one above the other are counter-rotating on the edge of the hull. Embedded in the hull are three solenoids which create a positive vector potential at the rotors. The surface charge density times the radius times the vector potential times the area of the rotors creates an angular momentum in the vertical direction. This angular momentum produces a positive spacetime curvature over the dome of the hull and a negative spiking spacetime compression over the rotors. By machining circumferential grooves of decreasing height along the radius of the rotor, a negative surface inductance is generated. This negative inductance gradient times the negative spacetime compression time the rotor current density squared times the rotor area squared is a positive lift force on the spacecraft.
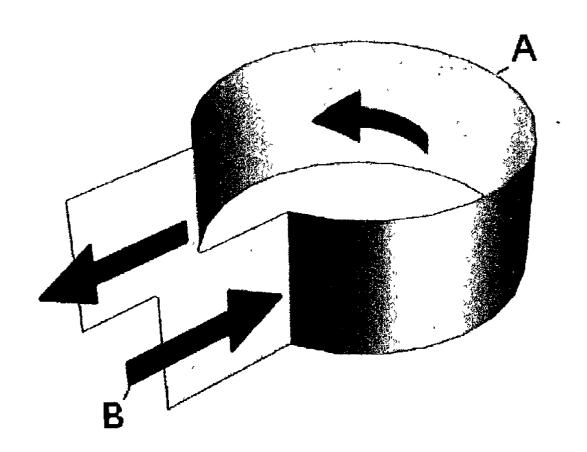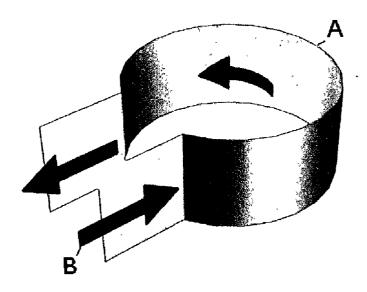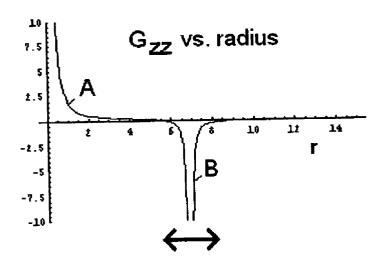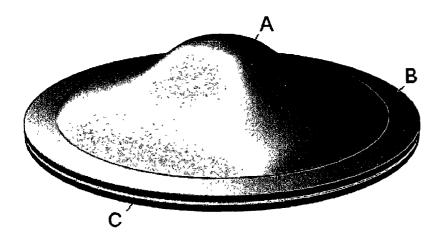
Figure 1

Figure 2

Figure 3

Figure 4
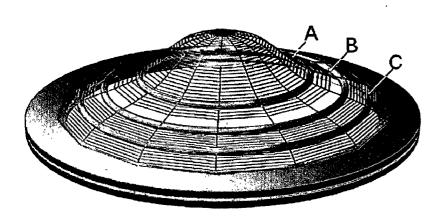
Figure 5

$$A = \frac{n I a^2}{2\varepsilon_0 c^2} \frac{1}{r'}$$

Figure 6

$$A \equiv \frac{1}{m} \frac{coul}{sec} m^2 \frac{m^2 kg\, m}{coul^2 sec^2} \frac{sec^2}{m^2} \frac{1}{m} = \frac{kg\, m}{sec\, coul}$$

Figure 7

Vector Potential versus radius r and height z

Figure 8
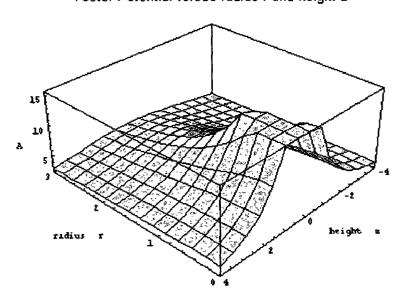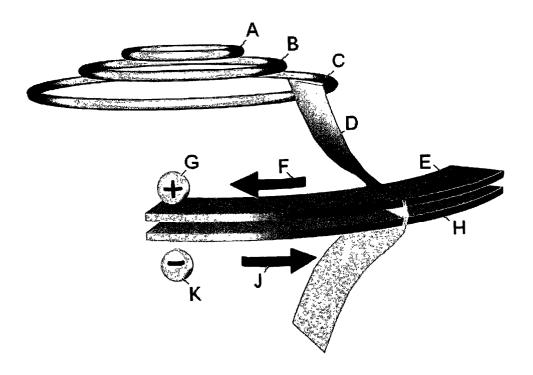
Figure 9

Figure 10
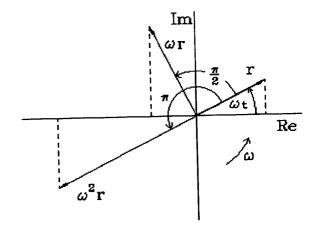
$$S_k = \left[-\sigma r e^{i\omega t} + \sigma r e^{-i\omega t} \right] \frac{n I a^2}{2\varepsilon_0 c^2} \frac{n_z area}{r'}$$

$$= -\left[e^{i\omega t} - e^{-i\omega t} \right] \left[\sigma r \frac{n I a^2}{2\varepsilon_0 c^2} \frac{n_z area}{r'} \right]$$

$$= -\left[e^{i\omega t} - e^{-i\omega t} \right] K$$

Figure 11

$$S \equiv \frac{coul}{m^2} m \frac{1}{m} \frac{coul}{sec} m^2 \frac{m^2}{coul^2} \frac{kg\, m}{sec^2} \frac{sec^2}{m^2} \frac{m^2}{m} = \frac{kg\, m^2}{sec}$$

Figure 12

$$e^{i\omega t} - e^{-i\omega t} = 2 i Sin[\omega t]$$
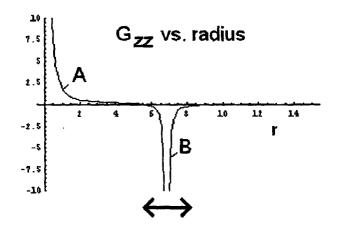
Figure 13

$$S_k = -2 i K Sin[\omega t]$$

Figure 14

$$ds^2 = \ldots - 4\frac{S}{r}dtd\theta = \ldots 8\frac{iK\,Sin[\omega t]}{r}dtd\theta$$

Figure 15

$$
g_{\mu\nu} =
\begin{array}{c|cccc}
 & t & r & \theta & z \\
\hline
t & -1 & 0 & 4\dfrac{iK\,Sin[\omega t]}{r} & 0 \\
r & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
\theta & 4\dfrac{iK\,Sin[\omega t]}{r} & 0 & r^2 & 0 \\
z & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}
$$

Figure 16

Figure 17

$$\text{Magnetic Energy} = -L\,K\,J^2\,A^2$$

Figure 18

$$\text{Magnetic Energy} \equiv -\frac{kg\,m^2}{coul^2}\,\frac{1}{m^2}\,\frac{coul^2}{sec^2\,m^2}\,m^4 = -\frac{kg\,m^2}{sec^2} = -joule$$

Figure 19
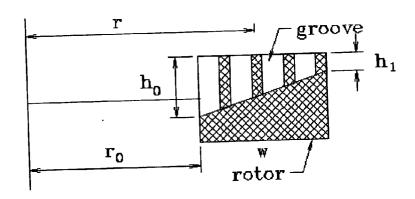
Figure 20

$$h = h_0 - (r - r_0)\left(\frac{h_0 - h_1}{W}\right)$$

Figure 21

$$\frac{dL}{dr} = \mu n^2 2\pi w \frac{\partial}{\partial r}\left(r\left(h_0 - (r - r_0)\left(\frac{h_0 - h_1}{w}\right)\right)\right)$$

$$\frac{dL}{dr} = \mu n^2 2\pi w\left(h_0 - \frac{(h_0 - h_1)(2r - r_0)}{w}\right)$$

Figure 22
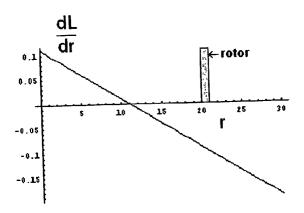
Figure 23

$$F = \frac{dL}{dr}K_c J^2 A^2 = \frac{kg\,m}{coul^2}\frac{1}{m^2}\frac{coul^2}{sec^2 m^2}m^4 = \frac{kg\,m}{sec^2} = newton$$

ROTOR INDUCTANCE PROPULSION SYSTEM

BRIEF SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0001] The invention, which is the object of my present application, is a spacecraft with a circular, domed hull around which are located dual electrically-charged counter-rotating rotors. The top surface of the upper rotor is etched with circular metallic grooves which give the rotor a surface inductance. The groove height decreases from the inside radius to the outside radius of the rotor giving it a radial inductance gradient. The surface charge density times the angular velocity produces a current density. The counter-rotating rotors produce a negative spacetime curvature over the rotors. The negative surface inductance gradient times the negative spiking spacetime curvature times the current density squared times the area squared is the positive lift force on the rotor.

REFERENCE WORKS

[0002] *Gravitation*, Wheeler

[0003] *Traveling-Wave Tubes*, The Bell System Technical Journal, Vol. XXIX, January 1950, No. 1, J. R. Pierce.

[0004] *The Magnetron as a Generator of Centimeter Waves*, The Bell System Technical Journal, Vol. XXV, April 1946, No. 2, J. B. Fisk, H. D. Hagstrum, P. L. Hartman.

[0005] *Lectures on Physics*, Richard Feynman

[0006] *Geometry of Electromagnetism*, Paul Hammond

BACKGROUND OF THE INVENTION

[0007] I was reading several articles about the development of the magnetron during World War II in the Bell System Technical Journal. I was trying to understand why the device resonates because it must contain a spring constant which would arise from an inductance and capacitance due to the geometry of the cavity. As given by Feynman, inductance of a solenoid is the permeability of space times the turns per length squared times the volume of the solenoid. Referring to **FIG. 1**, the magnetron cavity (A) has a circular region connected to a planar region. The electrical current flows on the sides of the cavity shown by the arrows (B). In this case, there is only one turn per height of the cavity times the volume of the cavity times the permeability which produces the inductance. The two planar regions produce a capacitance across the ends which creates the resonant frequency.

[0008] From my previous patent application Dual Rotor Propulsion System I know that the two rotors produce a current density in the angular direction along the rotor. If I spread out the magnetron cavity into a circular groove around a rotor, then the current would flow on the side walls enclosing the groove volume. The rotors also produce a spacetime curvature profile as shown in **FIG. 2**. Curve (A) is a positive spacetime curvature tension over the dome. Curve (B) is a negative spiking spacetime curvature over the rotors. The curvature is measured in inverse meter squared. So the surface inductance times the negative curvature times the current density squared times the rotor area squared is magnetic energy. The differential of the magnetic energy would be a force. So there has to be a gradient of the surface inductance. The volume element of a groove is equal to the circumferential length times the height times the width of the groove. The easiest is to vary the height with radius. Since the curvature is negative, the gradient has to be negative as well in order to get a positive lift force. Thus the height goes from large to small from the inside to the outside radius.

SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0009] The invention relates to a spacecraft with a domed, circular hull of elliptical cross-section having dual electrically-charged counter-rotating rotors located one above the other on the edge of the hull. The upper rotor is positively charged and rotates clockwise with a negative angular velocity per the right-hand rule. The lower rotor is negatively charged and rotates with a positive angular velocity. The current density is the surface charge density times the velocity of the rotor. This particular combination of velocity and charge produces an angular momentum which creates a negative spiking spacetime curvature over the rotors.

[0010] The top surface of the rotor is etched or machined with circular grooves around the rotor. This creates a surface inductance which is equal to the permeability of space times the turns per length squared times the volume of the groove. In this case, there is only one turn per height of the groove. If the height of the groove decreases from one groove to the next, then there is a negative surface inductance gradient in the radial direction. So the lift force on the rotors would be the negative surface inductance gradient times the negative spacetime curvature times the current density squared times the rotor area squared.

STATEMENT REGARDING FEDERALLY SPONSORED RESEARCH OR DEVELOPMENT

[0011] Not Applicable.

A BRIEF DESCRIPTION OF THE DRAWINGS

[0012] **FIG. 1**. Perspective of magnetron cavity.

[0013] **FIG. 2**. Spacetime curvature G_{zz} over hull and rotor.

[0014] **FIG. 3**. Perspective view of spacecraft with dual rotors.

[0015] **FIG. 4**. Wire frame view of three solenoids.

[0016] **FIG. 5**. Vector potential equation for solenoid.

[0017] **FIG. 6**. Units of vector potential.

[0018] **FIG. 7**. 3D graph of vector potential using three solenoids.

[0019] **FIG. 8**. Perspective of vector potential along rotors.

[0020] **FIG. 9**. Rotor mechanics diagram using exponential representation.

[0021] **FIG. 10**. Angular momentum equation due to vector potential and rotating charged rotors.

[0022] **FIG. 11**. Units of angular momentum.

[0023] **FIG. 12**. Exponential equation for twice imaginary sine of the angle.

[0024] **FIG. 13**. Angular momentum equation for g metric tensor.

[0025] **FIG. 14**. Angular momentum term for elemental line length ds^2.

[0026] **FIG. 15**. The g metric tensor containing the angular momentum.

[0027] **FIG. 16**. The spacetime curvature tension G_{zz} versus radius due to angular momentum.

[0028] **FIG. 17**. Magnetic energy equation.

[0029] **FIG. 18**. Units of magnetic energy.

[0030] **FIG. 19**. Cross-section of rotor showing groove height gradient.

[0031] **FIG. 20**. Equation for the height h of the rotor groove as a function of radius.

[0032] **FIG. 21**. Equation for the groove inductance gradient.

[0033] **FIG. 22**. Plot of the groove inductance gradient as a function of radius showing that it is negative at the rotor.

[0034] **FIG. 23**. Lift force on rotors due to inductance gradient, compression curvature, rotor current density and area.

DETAILED DESCRIPTION OF THE INVENTION

[0035] 1. Referring to **FIG. 3**, the spacecraft has a circular, domed hull of elliptical cross-section with dual electrically-charged counter-rotating rotors one above the other on the edge of the hull.

[0036] 2. Referring to **FIG. 4**, embedded within the hull are three solenoids or current loops carrying a constant electrical current in the positive sense per the right-hand rule.

[0037] 3. Referring to **FIG. 5**, Feynman has shown that the vector potential {A} of a solenoid is equal to the number of turns per length {n} times the current {I} times the radius of the solenoid {a} squared divided by half the permittivity of space {ϵ_0} times the speed of light {c} squared times the radius {r'} prime from the center of the coil to some location in space such as the rotors. It has been found by physicists Bohm and Aharanov that the vector potential field is not confined to an infinitely long solenoid as is the magnetic B field. The vector potential has units of kilogram-meter per second-coulomb as seen in **FIG. 6**.

[0038] 4. Referring to **FIG. 7**, the three solenoids of varying radius and area produce a positive vector potential at the centerline of the rotors as seen in the graph.

[0039] 5. This graph is then rotated ninety degrees so that it can be located in relation to the rotors as seen in **FIG. 8**. The vector potential (D), which is created by solenoids (A,B,C), passes through rotors (E) and (H). Rotor (E), which has a positive charge (G), is rotating clockwise (F), and rotor (H), which has a negative charge (K), is rotating counter-clockwise (J).

[0040] 6. Referring to **FIG. 9**, rotor mechanics uses the exponential function for the harmonic motion of the rotor. The radius is {$r\ e^{i\omega t}$} which when differentiated with respect to time becomes a velocity {$i\ \omega\ r\ e^{i\omega t}$} where the imaginary {i} is a 90° phase lead which makes the velocity tangential to the rotor.

[0041] 7. The rotor surface charge {σ sigma} is rotating around at some radius {r}. For the upper rotor the surface charge density is positive (+σ) but the rotor has a negative angular velocity {−ω}. For the lower rotor, the surface charge density is negative {−σ} but the rotor has a positive angular velocity {+ω}. So the combined surface charge rotation is {$-\sigma\ r\ e^{i\omega t}+\sigma\ r\ e^{-i\omega t}$}. This charge rotation times the positive vector potential due to the solenoids times the rotor surface area is equal to angular momentum S as shown in **FIG. 10**. The units are given in **FIG. 11**. The angular momentum is equal to the negative of the difference of the exponentials times a constant. I then recalled that this difference is equal to twice imaginary sine of the angle as shown in **FIG. 12**.

[0042] 8. Referring to **FIG. 13**, the angular momentum is equal to minus two times the imaginary number times a constant times the sine of the rotational angle. In most of my spacecraft designs, the electromagnetic fields determine the flow rate of angular momentum. When the flow rate is integrated with respect to time, the angular momentum becomes imaginary. In this invention, the angular momentum is imaginary due directly to the rotors. The importance of being imaginary is that the radius resonates with the angular momentum. In some spacetime curvature equations, the denominator has a term equal to the radius to the fourth power plus twice the square of the angular momentum. In spacetime units, angular momentum is viewed as meter squared. So the square of imaginary angular momentum is negative angular momentum equal to negative meters to the fourth power. So at some radius, these two terms are equal, the denominator goes to zero, and the spacetime curvature becomes infinitely-large, creating a huge spike.

[0043] 9. This next section calculates the spacetime curvature from the equation for the angular momentum.

[0044] 10. Referring to **FIG. 14**, the elemental length ds^2 is curved by the presence of the angular momentum which is one of the energies, such as mass, charge, and electromagnetic fields, that Einstein showed can curve spacetime. Because the angular momentum is pointing in the vertical z-direction, due to the direction of the unit normal vector to the surface of the rotor, it rotates around in the angular direction {dtdθ} as found in cylindrical coordinates {t,r,θ,z}.

[0045] 11. In gravitational physics there is a g metric tensor which is a measure of length in spacetime coordinates. It is a 4 by 4 matrix with rows and columns equal to the cylindrical coordinates. Referring to **FIG. 15**, the diagonal of the matrix is {$-1,1,r^2,1$} where the minus one corresponds to time which is Einstein's convention. Half the angular momentum goes in the {tθ} slot of the g metric tensor, and the other half goes in the {θt} slot.

[0046] 12. From this g metric tensor, Einstein's G curvature tensor can be calculated in the various direc-

tions. In Einstein's General Theory of Relativity, his equation is G=8πT where G is the spacetime curvature measured in inverse meter squared, and the T tensor is the stress-energy-momentum matrix containing all the electromagnetic pressures, mass and momentum components that curve spacetime. The spacetime curvature tension G_{zz} in the vertical direction, as a function of radius, is shown in **FIG. 16**. A positive curvature indicates that there is a spacetime tension over the hull which produces lift. The curvature has a large positive spike over the dome of the hull (A) which means that there is a large lift force over the center of the hull. The curvature then falls off and spikes with a negative spacetime curvature compression over the rotors (B). This curvature also oscillates back and forth a short distance due to the sinusoidal term. The problem is to convert this compression into a lift force which this invention solves.

[0047]   13. This next section shows how the spacetime compression over the rotors generates lift.

[0048]   14. As I mentioned, I have been reading some of the World War II magnetron scientific papers of the Bell System Technical Journal. It turns out that inductance of a solenoid is equal to the permeability of space times the number of wire turns per length squared times the volume of the solenoid. Imagine having a copper strip in the shape of the magnetron cavity in **FIG. 1**. The electrical current (B) flows around the height of the strip (A), so there is only one turn per the height. Then that is multiplied by the volume of the cavity and permeability to get the inductance. The inductor is storing magnetic energy equal to half the inductance times the current squared. In this invention, current density J in amp per meter is used rather than current. So taking a hint from this information, the magnetic energy would have to be related to the inductance times the square of the current density times the area squared of the rotor and times the negative spacetime curvature. The curvature is measured in inverse meter squared. That product produces a negative magnetic energy when in fact I want a positive force. This means that there has to be an inductance gradient in the equation instead of pure inductance and, furthermore, the gradient has to be negative in order to cancel out the negative sign of the compression curvature.

[0049]   15. The equation for the magnetic energy in terms of the inductance $\{\mathcal{L}\}$, curvature {K}, current density {J} and area {A} is shown in **FIG. 17** with the units in **FIG. 18**. The inductance in the equation is proportional to the volume of the circular groove in the top surface of the rotor. That volume is equal to $\{2\pi r\, h\, w\}$ where {h] is the height of groove (depth) and {w}

is the width located at some radius {r}. In terms of machining, it would be more difficult to machine a variable width groove rather than a deeper groove of a constant width. So I am going to say the gradient is in the radial direction with the height of the groove decreasing going from the inside radius to the outside radius as depicted in **FIG. 19**.

[0050]   16. **FIG. 20** gives the equation for the height of the groove along the radius of the rotor.

[0051]   17. **FIG. 21** gives the inductance gradient by differentiating the inductance with respect to the radius. The initial groove height ho is not very large, and the inductance gradient becomes negative at the rotor as seen in the graph of **FIG. 22**.

[0052]   18. Referring to **FIG. 23**, the lift force on the rotor is now positive due to the combined negative inductance gradient times the negative spacetime compression. The square of the negative current density is positive also. This means that that the top surface of the lower rotor can also have a surface inductance gradient which would double the lift force.

What I claim as my invention is:

1. A spacecraft having a circular, domed hull with dual electrically-charged counter-rotating rotors one above the other located on the edge of hull.

2. Said hull having embedded within it three or more solenoids which generate a positive vector potential at the rotors.

3. Said upper rotor having a positive surface charge density, and rotating clockwise in the negative direction per the right-hand rule.

4. Said lower rotor having a negative surface charge density, and rotating counterclockwise in the positive direction per the right-hand rule.

5. Said rotor surface charge density and velocity creating a negative current density on both rotors.

6. Said vector potential and rotating surface charge density on rotors generating an angular momentum in the vertical direction.

7. Said angular momentum, generating a spacetime curvature tension over the dome of the hull, and a negative oscillating spacetime curvature compression over the rotors.

8. Said rotors having circumferential grooves of decreasing height machined into the top surface of the rotors in order to create a negative surface inductance gradient.

9. Said negative surface inductance gradient times the negative spacetime curvature compression times the rotor current density squared times the rotor area squared generating a positive lift force on the spacecraft.

*   *   *   *   *

(19) **United States**

(12) **Patent Application Publication** (10) Pub. No.: **US 2006/0014125 A1**
 St. Clair (43) **Pub. Date: Jan. 19, 2006**

(54) **WALKING THROUGH WALLS TRAINING SYSTEM**

(76) Inventor: **John Quincy St. Clair**, San Juan, PR (US)

Correspondence Address:
JOHN ST. CLAIR
4A
52 KINGS COURT
SAN JUAN, PR 00911 (US)

(21) Appl. No.: **10/890,635**

(22) Filed: **Jul. 14, 2004**

Publication Classification

(51) **Int. Cl.**
 G09B 19/00 (2006.01)
(52) **U.S. Cl.** **434/258**

(57) **ABSTRACT**

This invention is a training system which enables a human being to acquire sufficient hyperspace energy in order to pull the body out of dimension so that the person can walk through solid objects such as wooden doors.

Figure 1

Figure 2
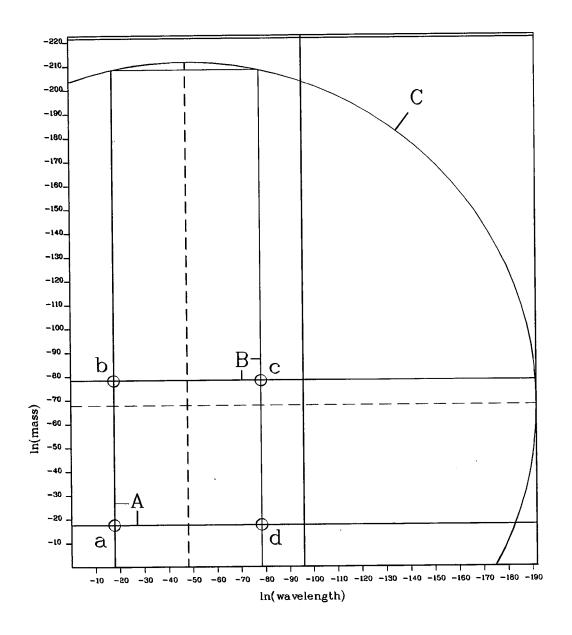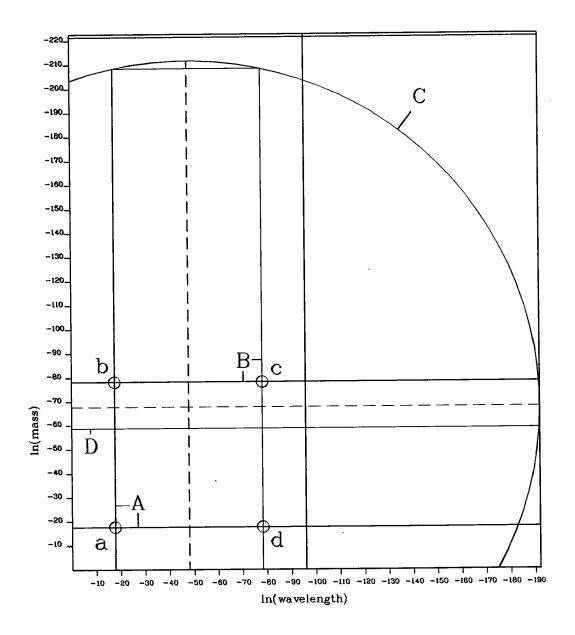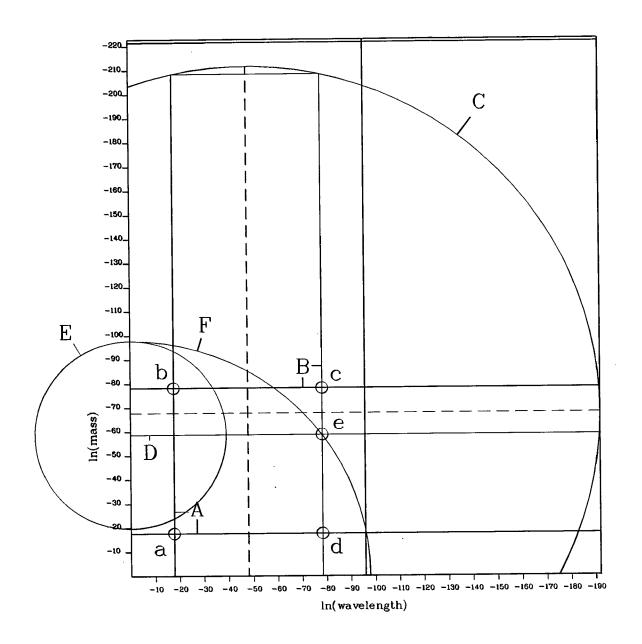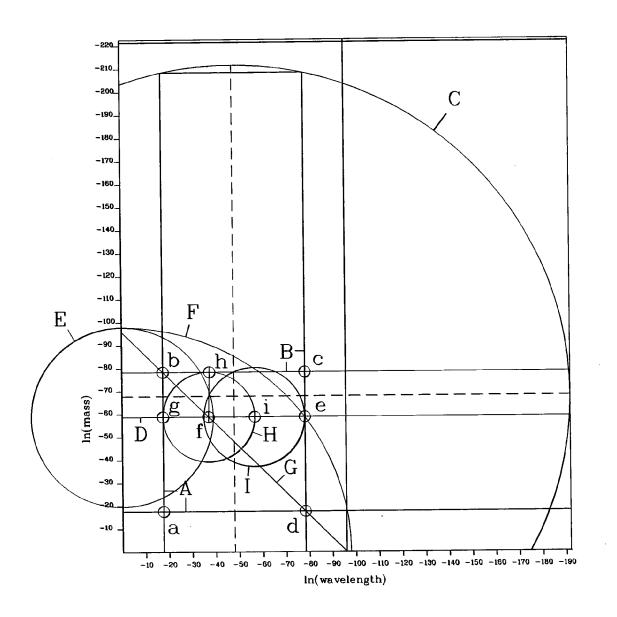
Figure 3

Figure 4

Figure 5

Figure 6

Figure 7

Figure 8

Figure 9

Figure 10

Figure 11

Figure 12

Figure 13

Figure 14

Figure 15

Figure 16

Figure 17

Figure 18

File Timer Window Help

Print Banner

Messages

Mass = 99.79032139 kgs
Weight = 220 lbs
Shoe Size = 12 inches
Banner Length = 6 strides
Stride Length per second = 20 inches

Insert 11 banner sheets in printer.

Figure 19

Figure 20

WALKING THROUGH WALLS TRAINING SYSTEM

BRIEF SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0001] This invention is a training system that enables a human being to acquire sufficient hyperspace energy in order to pull the body out of dimension so that the person can walk through solid objects such as wooden doors.
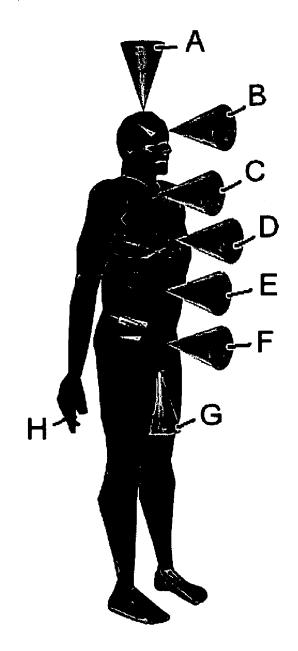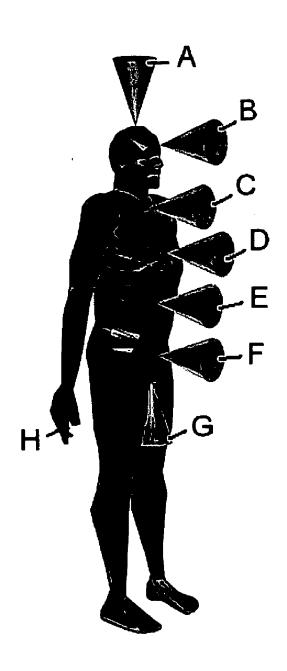
BACKGROUND OF THE INVENTION
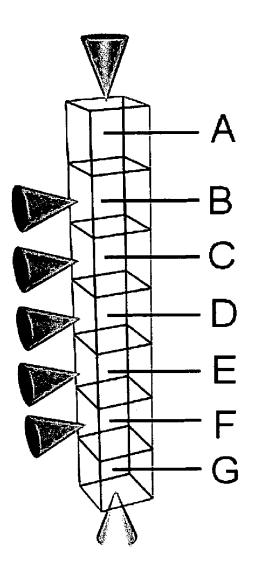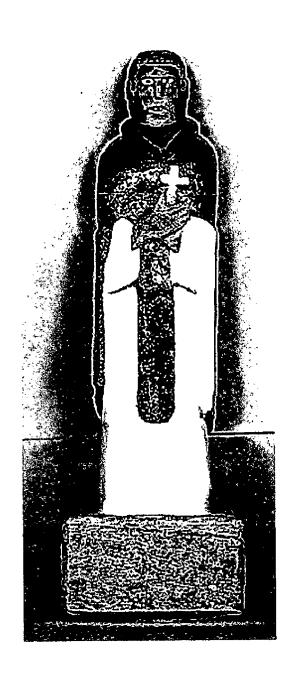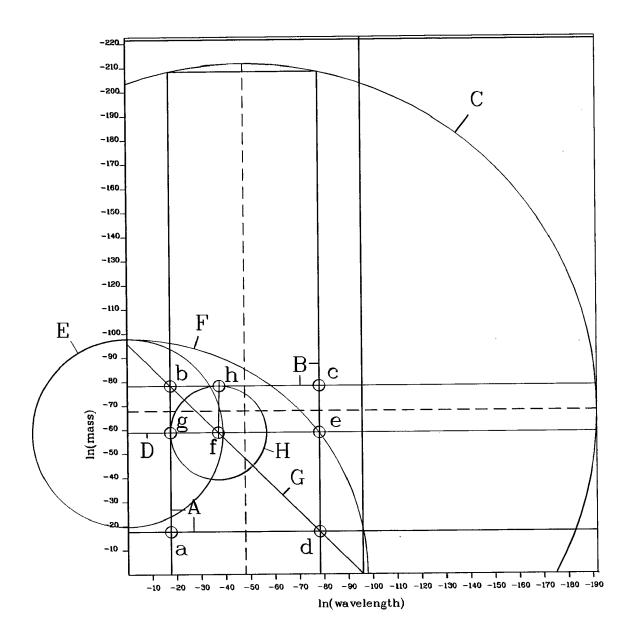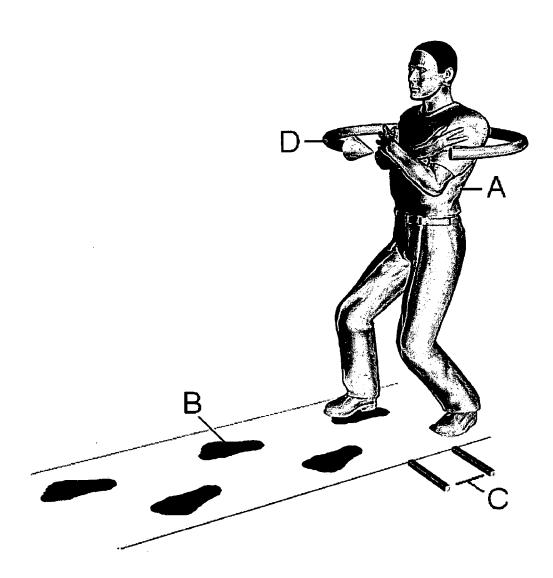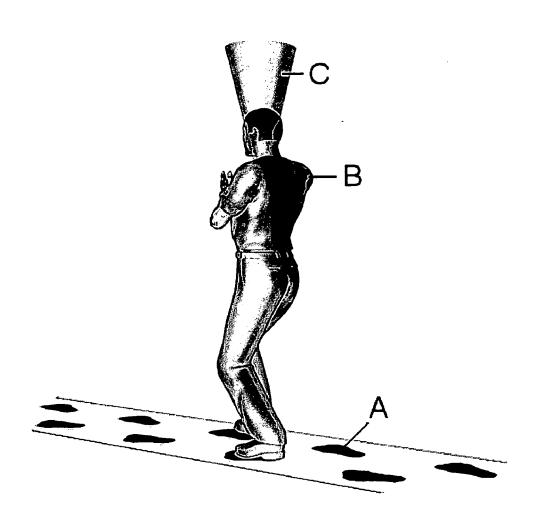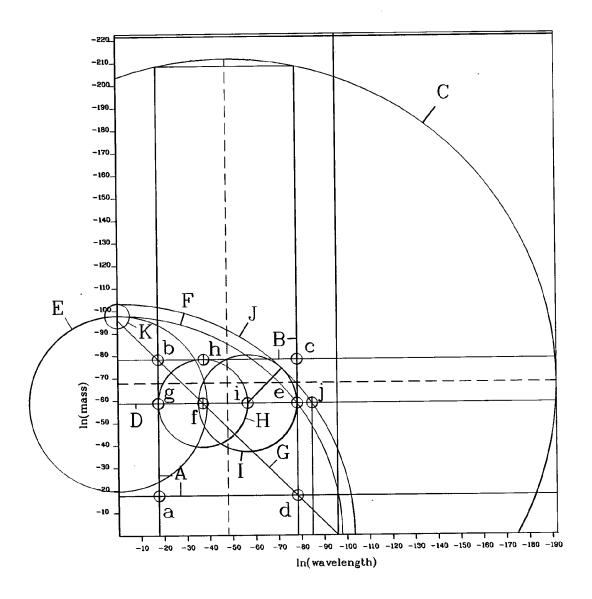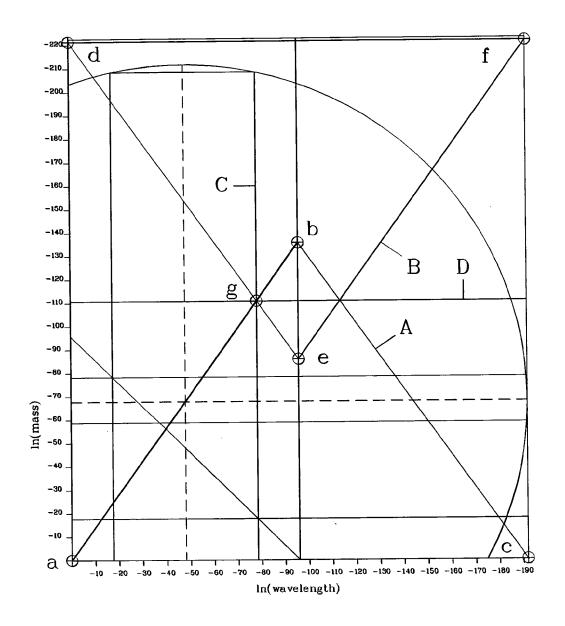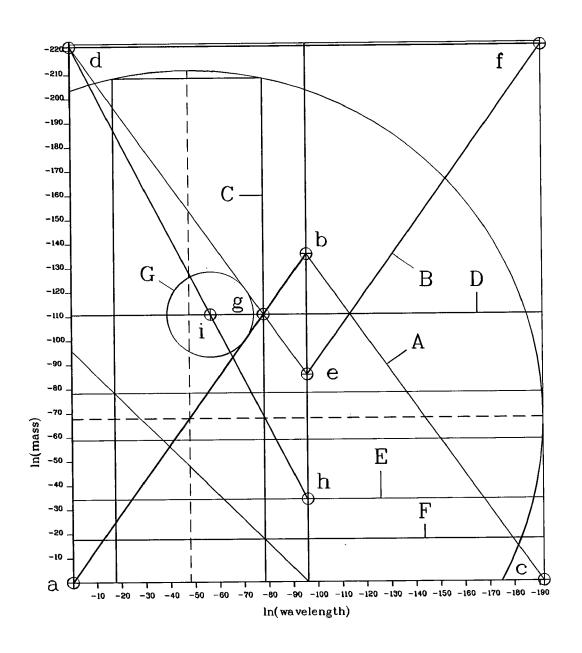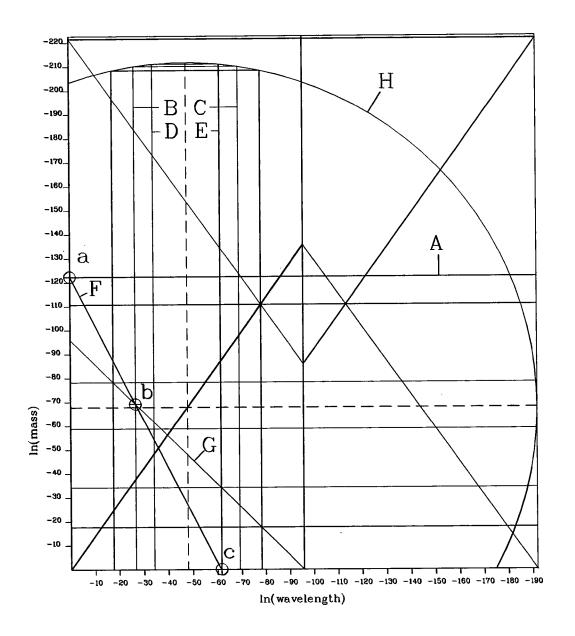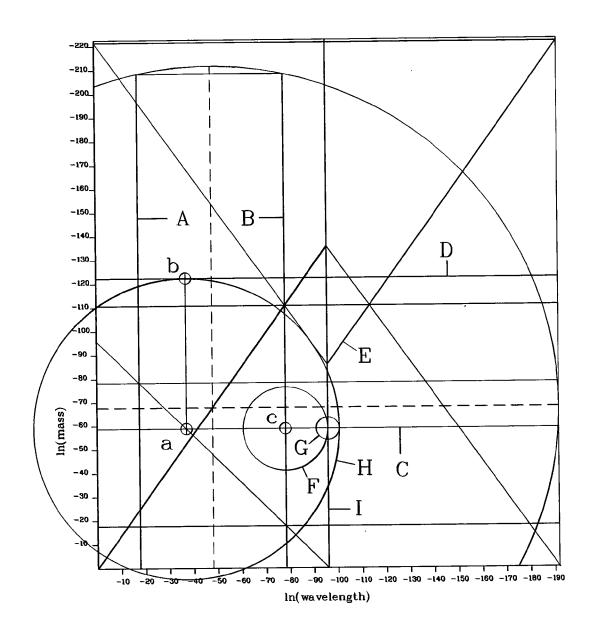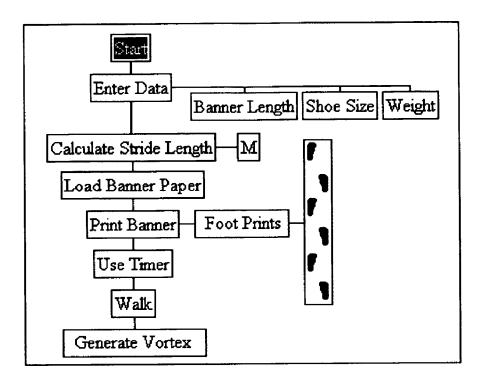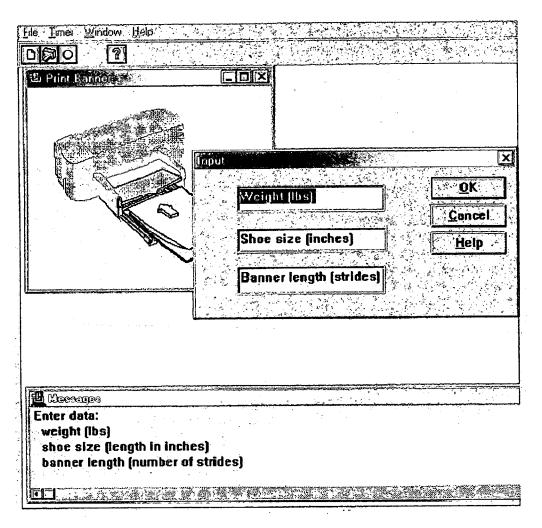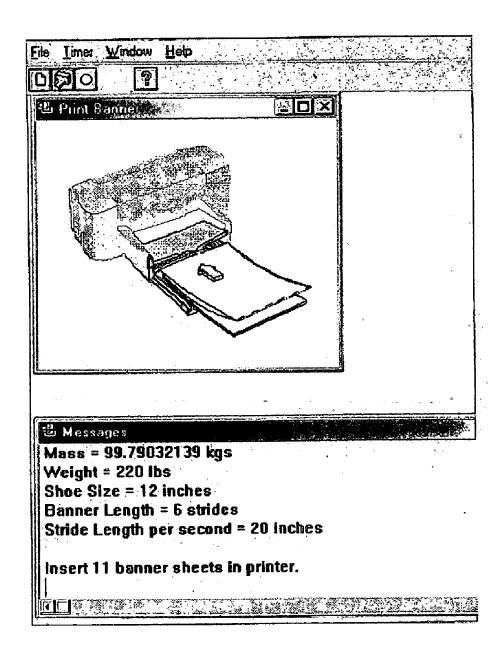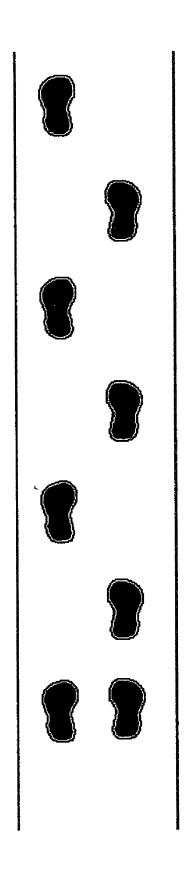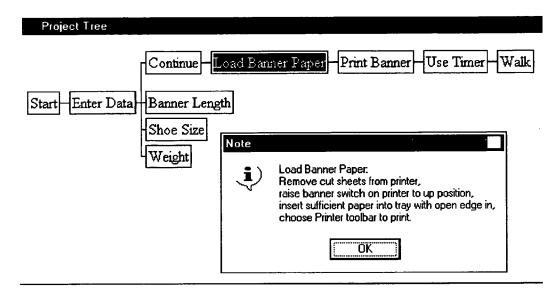
[0002] A human being is a hyperspace energy being living in a physical container or body that is comprised of 67% water. This high percentage of water makes this invention possible. Referring to **FIG. 1**, the hyperspace energy being receives energy from our dimension through seven vortices that run the length of the body. Each vortex connects to a separate hyperspace dimension having its own particular frequency. This arrangement allows for the development of seven modular energy components corresponding to the mind, spiritual eye, voice, body, abdomen, plasma energy ball (battery), and ground connection.

[0003] Vortex (A), known as the top vortex, supplies energy to the mind and provides a channel of communication to other entities in the universe. This channel has been tested up to 100,000 light years which is the diameter of the galaxy.

[0004] Vortex (B), known as the spiritual eye, has a hollow cone-like appearance surrounded by white, misty, low-density hyperspace energy. Because the eye is modular, the mind can project it to vast distances, a process known as remote viewing.

[0005] Vortex (C), known as the voice and hearing module, can also be projected to enormous distances in order to communicate verbally with other entities. Using the proper remote viewing instruments, it is possible to project both the eye and verbal modules to see and talk at the same time.

[0006] Vortex (D), known as the heart vortex, provides protective energy to the upper internal organs, arms and hands.

[0007] Vortex (E) provides protective energy for the lower organs such as the intestines, liver and kidneys.

[0008] Vortex (F), known as the battery of the body, consists of an orange-colored plasma energy ball about one to two inches in diameter. The body becomes paralyzed if this ball is removed from the body. When the hyperspace energy being leaves the body, the vortices close and the battery takes over in order to keep the body functioning. This vortex also plays a role in the creation of the astral energy baby that attaches to the fertilized egg.

[0009] Vortex (G) is the ground vortex which rotates in the counter-clockwise direction in order to provide an energy ground for the electrical circuit. All the other vortices rotate in the clockwise direction as seen from the front such that energy flows into the vortex according to the right-hand rule of physics.

[0010] Vortex (H) is the hand vortex which rotates counterclockwise on the right hand and clockwise on the left hand as seen looking at the palm. Thus there is a rotating flow of hyperspace energy between the two hands when the palms are facing each other.

[0011] Referring to **FIG. 2**, each vortex feeds energy into its own hyperspace module shown by the lettered box. In terms of quantum mechanics, each box is actually a potential energy well in which each module develops separately. At the time of death of the body, these modules are joined together as a single energy being. The process is powered by the plasma energy ball battery which also contains the logical instructions for assembly.

[0012] Different people, as tested by the pendulum on the hand vortex, have different vortex sizes. Three people were tested. The first person had almost no rotational movement showing very little energy. The second person had a vortex radius of one inch. Another had a vortex radius of four inches which covered his entire hand. The latter also has the ability to lift another human being, lying prone on a table, off the table by flowing low-density hyperspace energy into the person through the hand vortices. He has also experienced walking through a solid wooden door with a dog at his side. What this means is that there is a way, as described in this invention, of creating large energy vortices which will enable a person to acquire sufficient energy to walk out of dimension through solid objects such as wooden doors.

[0013] Researching the historical records, referring to the statue in **FIG. 3**, a humble black Catholic Dominican friar of the Santo Rosario Convent, by the name of San Martin de Porres, living in Peru in the 1500's, also developed this ability to walk through doors. For his beatification, many witnesses came forward to recount his extraordinary abilities. For example, a witness, who worked in the Convent, went to the cell of San Martin to ask for something to eat. When he reached the cell, he saw San Martin leaving with some medications apparently to heal someone sick. The witness waited by the open door of the cell for his return. After having waited awhile without being distracted by anything else, he saw said venerable brother fray Martin come out from his cell from the inside and call him by name. The witness was terrified, not understanding how this was possible.

[0014] The woman who gave me the statue told me that he would walk miles and miles each day to visit the poor. The task of walking means that there is a velocity involved. Because the body has mass, then there is a mass times a velocity, or momentum, involved in this ability. Notice also that the statue shows him walking with his right arm crossed over his left arm in the form of an X.

[0015] What this walking momentum means in terms of physics is given in the following analysis. The human body consists of 67% water. A water molecule consists of two hydrogen atoms and one oxygen atom having the atomic formula H_2O. The atomic weight of one atom of hydrogen is 1.008 awu. The atomic weight of one atom of oxygen is 16.000 awu. The molecular weight of one atom of water is therefore:

Weight of two atoms of hydrogen 2 × 1.008 awu =	2.016 awu
Weight of one atom of oxygen 1 × 16.000 awu =	16.000 awu
	18.016 awu

The formula weight is just the atomic weight expressed in grams. Thus the formula weight of water would be 18.016

grams or 0.018016 kilograms. According to Avogadro's law, the formula weight contains N=6.02×10²³ molecules. Thus the mass of one water molecule is the formula weight divided by the number of molecules:

$$mass = \frac{.018016 \text{ kg}}{N} = 2.99269103 \cdot 10^{-26} \text{ kg}$$

$$\ln\left(\frac{mass}{1 \text{ kg}}\right) = -58.77103943$$

[0016] According to Einstein's Special Theory of Relativity, energy is equal to the mass times the speed of light squared. The energy of a photon is equal to Planck's constant h times the frequency f of the photon. Equating these two energies shows that

$$E = mc^2 = hf = h\frac{c}{\lambda} = \frac{h}{c}\frac{c^2}{\lambda}$$

$$\Rightarrow m\lambda = \frac{h}{c}$$

$$\Rightarrow \ln(m) + \ln(\lambda) = \ln\left(\frac{h}{c}\right) = base = -95.91546344$$

which says that the natural logarithm of the mass plus the natural logarithm of the wavelength is equal to the natural logarithm of Planck's constant divided by the speed of light c, known as the base constant in the tetrahedron diagram. This diagram plots the mass versus wavelength in natural logarithms. Notice that the left hand side of the equation is the sum of mass and wavelength, so the right hand side must also be the same.

$$\ln\left(\frac{h}{c}\right) = \ln\left(\frac{\Omega\Lambda \; 2\pi\Lambda \; c}{c}\right) = \ln(\Omega\Lambda) + \ln(2\pi\Lambda)$$

where $\Omega\Lambda$, known as the Planck mass, is the linear mass Ω of the universe times the bottom dimensional limit of the universe Λ, and $2\pi\Lambda$ is the bottom dimensional wavelength, known as the Planck wavelength. That is, our dimension is bounded by the Planck box having sides Planck mass and Planck wavelength. These boundaries have values:

ln(ΩΛ)=−17.64290101

ln(2πΛ)=−78.27256243

[0017] Referring to **FIG. 4**, these two lines are plotted on the tetrahedron diagram. The Planck mass line (A) reflects off the sphere (C) and returns as the Planck wavelength (B) which shows the dual nature of quantum physics. This creates the Planck box (a,b,c,d) which is the boundary of our dimension.

[0018] Referring to **FIG. 5**, the mass of the water molecule is plotted as horizontal line (D) on the diagram. The energy of the water molecule is the mass times the speed of light squared.

E=mc²

ln(c)=19.51860099

ln(mc²)=ln(m)+2 ln(c)

[0019] Referring to **FIG. 6**, a circle (E), having a radius equal to the speed of light squared, centered on the mass of the water molecule at the vertical axis, generates a circle (F), centered at the origin, that intersects (e) the mass of the water molecule at the Planck wavelength. That is, this intersection point sits right on the Planck box boundary between space and hyperspace. The radius of circle (F) is actually the mass of the water molecule divided by the speed of light squared.

$$E = \frac{m}{c^2} = m$$

$$\Rightarrow \frac{1}{c^2} = 1$$

$$\Rightarrow c = 1\frac{\text{meter}}{\text{sec}}$$

$$\ln(c) = 0$$

Taking the positive square root, the speed of light is one meter per second at the Planck boundary. The experiments with brain hemisphere resonance show that the resonant frequency of the human energy field is between 1 Hz to 5 Hz which is well below the hearing threshold of 20 Hz. Because the traveling wave has a wavelength of 0.3048 m and the speed of light is unity at the boundary, the frequency should be

$$f = \frac{c}{\lambda} = \frac{1\dfrac{m}{\text{sec}}}{.3048 \; m} = 3.28 \text{ Hz}$$

which is within the middle of the experimental male range. At this resonant frequency, the human energy being pops out of the body. This represents only a first stage in the development of the energy being. But what is really wanted is to have both the physical body and the energy field move out of dimension together as San Martin did.

[0020] Referring to **FIG. 7**, the 45° base line (G) is added to the diagram. Notice that the Planck mass intersects (b,d) the Planck wavelength on this line because they sum to the base constant. The mass of the water molecule crosses this line at point (f). A circle, centered (f), with a radius equal to the speed of light, is tangent to the Planck wavelength (h) and the Planck mass (g). Since mass times velocity is momentum, the diagram says that the momentum of the water molecule is tangent to the boundaries of the Planck box which separates space from hyperspace. In order to get to point (e) from the momentum of the water molecule, a second circle is added to the momentum.

[0021] Referring to **FIG. 8**, a circle (I), centered on the water molecule mass at the speed of light circle (i), is made tangent to the Planck wavelength at point (e). The momentum M of space is equal to the Planck mass times the Planck scale times the speed of light. At point (e), the speed of light

3

is unity, so that the momentum is just the Planck mass in momentum units:

$$M = \Omega \Lambda c = 2.176634194 \cdot 10^{-8} \ kg \frac{m}{s}$$

Circle (I) has a radius equal to

$$ratio = e^{21.572952} = 2338912700$$

Therefore the walking momentum in order to get to point (e) is the momentum of space M times this ratio

$$M_w = M \cdot ratio = 50.909573606 \ kg \frac{m}{sec}$$

The stride length L per second that a person of mass W has to walk is the walking momentum divided by the mass W times a period T of one second

$$L = \frac{M_w}{W} T$$

For a person with a mass W of 99.79 kg (220 pounds), then the stride length L is 20.08 inches or one foot and eight inches. The person has to walk this length in one second on each foot.

[0022] Looking at the statue of San Martin, his arms are crossed over each other. The vortex of the right hand points backward, and the left hand vortex points forward due to the reversed rotation. Referring to **FIG. 9**, this creates a rotational energy channel (D) around his body (A). The stride length (C) is calculated according to the body mass, and then a banner printout is made showing where the footprints (B) are to be placed each second. The question is: "What happens when one walks the walk?".

[0023] On the very first experiment, referring to **FIG. 10**, what happens is that, after taking only six strides on the banner printout (A), a huge spinning vortex (C) develops over the top of the head and the vertex locks onto the heart vortex in the center of the chest (B). In everyday life, this vortex is not created because normal walking is much faster and the hands are held at the side of the body. The energy rush through the pineal gland is so intense that one feels immediately sleepy and starts yawning excessively due to the increased flow of melatonin.

[0024] After practicing with the banner printout, long walks were made through the park. In this case, a vertical white line rotated around a vertical axis located about six feet perpendicular to the path on the right side of the body. When the walking speed was correct, this white line would lock onto the centerline of the body. Speeding up or down caused the white line to lose synchronization and rotate away. This white line is related to the ability to levitate the body. San Martin had so much energy that, according to witness testimony, he could float horizontally in the air with his head resting against the bowed head of Christ on a carved wooden cross. Thus San Martin's energy sources were

channeling energy from Christ, collective broom energy as described in a separate patent application, and the walking momentum vortex energy.

[0025] During the early part of the 20th century, a man's parents were lying in bed dying of tuberculosis. With their permission, he placed a weighing scale under each of their beds. When they passed away, he found that each scale registered a loss in weight of 2.5 ounces. This is equivalent to 0.071 kg, which is the mass of the human energy being.

[0026] After conducting a number of experiments with water vortices draining from a cylindrical tank, it can be stated from Bernoulli's theorem that the potential energy plus the kinetic energy is a constant

$$gz + \frac{1}{2}mv^2 = const$$

The shape of the inner surface of the water circulation has a velocity proportional to the inverse of the radius, so the shape of the surface is

$$(z - z_0) = \frac{k}{r^2}$$

which says that the height of the vortex is proportional to the inverse of the square of the radius.

[0027] The hand vortex area ratio between the second test subject and the third test subject is equal to the square of their radii:

$$ratio = \frac{(1 \ in)^2}{(4 \ in)^2} = \frac{1}{16}$$

Because the speed of light at the boundary was determined to be one meter per second, the energy of the third test subject is

$$E = \left(\frac{.071 \ kg}{16} \right) \left(\frac{1 \ m}{sec} \right)^2 = 4.4375 \cdot 10^{-3} \ joule$$

$$\ln(E) = -5.417664124$$

[0028] Referring to **FIG. 11**, a circle (K), having this radius, is added to the energy of the water molecule (E), to produce augmented energy circle (J). This circle (J) intersects the mass of the water molecule outside the Planck box at point (j). This means that the increased hyperspace energy moves the water molecule, and hence the body, out of dimension. Furthermore, circle (J) is tangent to the walking momentum ratio circle (I) which keeps the geometry locked together.

SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0029] It is the object of this invention to create a training system that allows a person to develop the ability to walk

4

around out of dimension, passing through solid objects. This invention is based on one of the most remarkable relationships between the water molecule and the boundary between space and hyperspace. The mass of the water molecule is equal to the energy of the water molecule at this boundary. Because the body is composed of 67% water, the body sits on the boundary such that any additional increase in energy would move the body out of dimension into hyperspace. Because human beings are actually hyperspace energy beings living in physical bodies, the additional energy required to move the body out of dimension comes from increasing the energy of the hyperspace being. One source of this energy comes from walking cross-handed at the proper velocity in order to generate a large hyperspace energy vortex that flows energy into the potential wells of the hyperspace being. This increased hyperspace energy will then allow the person to walk around out of dimension through solid wooden doors. Because the door and the person are in two slightly different dimensions at the same moment, it appears that the person is walking through the door. After passing through the closed door, the person then returns to our dimension and emerges in the interior of the closed-door room.

[0030] This technique can be used in reverse to heal an infected hand instantaneously. A salve made from the St.Mary's herb is applied to the skin of the infected hand. The hyperspace energy then flows through the right-hand vortex such that the infected hand and the salve are taken slightly out of dimension. What happens is similar to when a short piece of straw is embedded in a hard wooden telephone pole as a tornado passes over the pole. The straw and pole are taken out of dimension such that they briefly merge together. As the tornado moves on, both objects come back to dimension merged together. Thus the salve (straw) is merged with the bacteria (pole) in hyperspace such that the bacteria is killed instantly. Removing the hand vortex brings the infected hand back into dimension cured.

[0031] Based on this information and the results of many experiments, this invention creates a large vortex by walking at a certain velocity with the hands crossed over the chest. The proper walking momentum is created by a computer program that inputs the person's weight, shoe length, and the number of strides to be taken. The program then prints out a banner showing the footprints where the person has to step each second. When a person obtains sufficient energy from these methods, the person is then tuned to the subspace geometry of the universe as will be shown using the tetrahedron physics diagram.

A BRIEF DESCRIPTION OF THE DRAWINGS

[0032] FIG. 1. Energy vortices of the human body.

[0033] FIG. 2. Seven potential wells fed by the energy vortices of the body.

[0034] FIG. 3. Carved wooden statue of San Martin de Porres who could walk through solid wooden doors.

[0035] FIG. 4. Tetrahedron diagram showing boundaries of the Planck box of dimension.

[0036] FIG. 5. Tetrahedron diagram showing mass of water molecule.

[0037] FIG. 6. Tetrahedron diagram showing water molecule energy and mass are equal at the Planck box boundary.

[0038] FIG. 7. Tetrahedron diagram showing that water molecule momentum is tangent to the boundaries of the Planck box.

[0039] FIG. 8. Tetrahedron diagram showing the momentum ratio required to reach the Planck wavelength boundary from the water momentum.

[0040] FIG. 9. Perspective view of crossed-hand momentum walking using banner printout.

[0041] FIG. 10. Perspective view of vortex generated by momentum walking.

[0042] FIG. 11. Tetrahedron diagram showing how additional hyperspace energy supplied to the potential wells of the hyperspace energy being enables the human body to be pulled out of dimension.

[0043] FIG. 12. Tetrahedron diagram showing the inverted tetrahedrons whose crossing represents the merging of two worlds between space and hyperspace.

[0044] FIG. 13. Tetrahedron diagram showing that the proton wavelength is determined by the Planck mass tangent to the inverted tetrahedrons.

[0045] FIG. 14. Tetrahedron diagram showing that the mass of the universe determines the electron and proton elementary particles.

[0046] FIG. 15. Tetrahedron diagram showing that momentum walking together with the increased energy of the hyperspace energy being is tangent to the mass of the universe.

[0047] FIG. 16. Computer program block diagram for printing banner footprints.

[0048] FIG. 17. Computer program input dialog window.

[0049] FIG. 18. Computer program calculation of stride length per second.

[0050] FIG. 19. Six-stride screen banner printout for 220 lb. person.

[0051] FIG. 20. Project tree showing help information by double clicking on node.

DETAILED DESCRIPTION OF THE INVENTION

[0052] 1. Referring to FIG. 12, a tetrahedron (A, path abc) is added to the diagram. The tip of the tetrahedron (e) falls on the base constant which is equal to Planck's constant divided by the speed of light. A second tetrahedron (B, path def) is inverted around horizontal line (D) which has a geometrical relationship to the base constant. The line is located at

$$centerline = \frac{2}{\sqrt{3}} \ln\left(\frac{h}{c}\right) = -110.7536373$$

Notice that the intersection of the two inverted tetrahedrons (g) occurs at the Planck wavelength which is the boundary between space and hyperspace. Line (D) is referred to as the merging of two worlds or the connecting of two worlds, a phrase obtained by means of remote viewing. That is, it is

the dividing line between space and hyperspace. This is the reason that the two boundaries intersect at this point.

[0053] Referring to **FIG. 13**, the proton wavelength (E) is added to the diagram. The proton wavelength has a value of the electron wavelength divided by 1836.1527

$$\ln(\lambda_p) = \ln\left(\frac{\lambda_e}{1836.1527}\right) = -34.26005901$$

A line (hd), from the base constant at the proton wavelength (h), to the corner of the inverted tetrahedron (d), intersects the merging of two worlds line at point (i). A circle, with a radius equal to the Planck mass (G), centered (i), is tangent to the inverted tetrahedrons. Thus the proton is defined by the base constant and the geometry of subspace. The reason that the proton is tangent to both tetrahedrons is because the electron and proton follow one single path between space and hyperspace. Thus there is only one single particle in nature. Because the particle enters our space at two different locations, we see the one particle as two distinct elementary particles. This relationship can be seen in Library of Congress tetrahedron diagram tet0565.

[0054] Referring to **FIG. 14**, the mass of the universe MU is equal to the linear mass Q of the universe times the radius R of the universe which is 10^{26} meters

$$\ln(MU) = \ln(\Omega R) = 122.3347509$$

as shown on the diagram as line (A). The electron wavelength (B) reflects off the circumscribing sphere (H) and returns as the electron mass (C). The distance between reflection points is the hyperspace charge which is equal to the charge of space less the electron charge. So the electron goes from wavelength to electric charge to mass. The proton wavelength (D) reflects off the sphere and returns as the proton mass (E) which intersects the horizontal axis at point (c). A line (abc) from the mass of the universe at the vertical axis (a) to the proton at the horizontal axis (c) intersects the electron (b) which determines the electron's mass and wavelength since this point is on the 45° base line. What this means is that cosmology determines the values of the elementary particles.

[0055] Referring to **FIG. 15**, the mass of the water molecule (C) intersects the 45° base line at point (a). A circle (F), with a radius equal to the Planck mass is centered on point (c) at the Planck wavelength boundary (B) where the mass of the water molecule numerically equals the energy of the water molecule and where the speed of light is unity. The Planck mass is tangent to the base constant which is the vertical centerline (I) of the diagram. The large circle (H), centered (a) on the water molecule, is tangent to the mass of the universe (b) and tangent to the inverted tetrahedron (E). The difference between this circle (H) and the base constant (I) is the energy the hyperspace being has to acquire in order to be tuned to the mass and geometry of subspace. This difference, shown as circle (G), has a mass

$$m = e^{-4.792671} \text{ kg} = 8.29 \cdot 10^{-3} \text{ kg}$$

Thus the hand vortex radius ratio has to be the square root of the mass of the hyperspace energy being divided by this tangent mass, or:

$$r = \sqrt{\frac{.071 \text{ kg} \cdot 1 \text{ in}^2}{e^{-4.792671} \text{ kg}}} \approx 3 \text{ inches}$$

which is a vortex radius that is three times larger than that of a normal person, but one inch smaller than the third test subject who had a hand vortex radius of 4 inches. This is the reason that the third test subject was able to walk through walls and teleport to other locations because his energy was sufficiently large enough to cross over the inverted tetrahedron into a co-dimension of hyperspace. Notice also that dotted circle (J) with a radius equal to the mass of the water molecule, centered (c) on the boundary, is tangent to the tetrahedron (K). This makes the combined geometry tangent to the inverted tetrahedrons and the mass of the universe.

[0056] 2. Referring to **FIG. 16**, a computer program generates a banner printout with footprints spaced for walking according to the weight, shoe size and length of banner desired. Some banners could fit in a small room, or be placed on the floor of a long corridor. As shown in the block diagram the program inputs these three variables with error checking. Then the program calculates the stride length L per second from the equation

$$L = \frac{M}{W} T$$

[0057] 3. In the above equation, the value of the momentum M, as determined by the tetrahedron diagram, is preferably 50.9095736 kg m/s. The weight of the person is converted to mass W in kilograms. The stride period is preferably 1 second. Referring to **FIG. 17**, the data is entered in the dialog input window.

[0058] 4. Once the stride length has been calculated, the program displays the stride length and the required number of banner sheets in the message window, as seen in **FIG. 18**.

[0059] 5. The print banner menu is selected and the foot prints are printed on continuous banner paper. A six-stride scaled screen version of the banner is shown in **FIG. 19**. The banner paper is then placed on the floor, and a one-second beeping timer is activated from the toolbar or menu. The person then walks beside the printed foot prints, taking one stride per beep, which produces the correct walking momentum to generate the hyperspace vortex. The vortex, which forms in only six strides, brings additional hyperspace energy into the quantum potential wells of the hyperspace energy being.

[0060] 6. A help system consists of a project tree which explains the various steps in using the program. Double mouse clicking on a project tree node displays the help instructions in a dialog window as shown in **FIG. 20**.

[0061] 7. In summary, the purpose of the training system is to substantially increase the energy of a human being who will then have the capability of walking through walls, body levitation, instantaneous healing of infections, full-body teleportation to another location, remote viewing at vast distances in terms of light-years, and looking into hyper-

space co-dimensions. The third test subject and I have been able to experience all the above phenomena. He did it through augmenting his energy, and I have done it through the application of electromagnetic fields, by spinning on my vortex accelerator machine and using this invention.

I claim:

1. A training method comprising the steps of:

generating a banner having a plurality of footprints spaced at regular intervals wherein the banner is placed on the ground;

generating a periodic audible signal, whereby the audible signal repeats at a regular interval of time equal to the period; and

walking on the banner by tracing the footprints spaced at regular intervals, wherein one step is made with each audible signal.

2. The method of claim 1, wherein the step of generating the banner further comprises:

providing a person's actual mass in kilograms; and

determining the stride length based upon the following equation:

$$L = (M/W)^*T$$

where L is the stride length in meters, M is a constant of approximately 50.91, W is the mass of the person in kilograms, and T is the period of the audible signal in seconds, and

wherein the footprints on the banner are spaced at the stride length.

3. The method of claim 2, wherein the audible signal is a beep and the period of the audible signal is one second.

4. A training method for a person comprising the steps of:

generating an audible signal having a fixed period;

generating a banner having regularly spaced indicia for identifying preferred step locations, wherein the distance between adjacent indicia is determined by the following formula:

$$L = (M/W)^*T$$

where the distance between adjacent indicia in meters is L, a constant of 50.9095736 is equal to M, the person's mass in kilograms is W, and the fixed period in seconds is T; and

walking on the marked path by stepping upon each of the regularly spaced indicia wherein one step is made with each period of the audible signal.

5. The training method of claim 4 wherein the fixed period is one second.

6. The training method of claim 5, wherein the regularly spaced indicia are footprints.

* * * * *

(19) **United States**

(12) **Patent Application Publication** (10) Pub. No.: **US 2003/0209636 A1**

St.Clair (43) Pub. Date: **Nov. 13, 2003**

(54) **BOBBIN ELECTROMAGNETIC FIELD PROPULSION VEHICLE**

(76) Inventor: **John Quincy St.Clair**, San Juan, PR (US)

Correspondence Address:
John St.Clair
Hyperspace Research Institute
52 Kings Court, 4A
San Juan, PR 00911 (US)

(52) U.S. Cl. **244/166**

(57) **ABSTRACT**
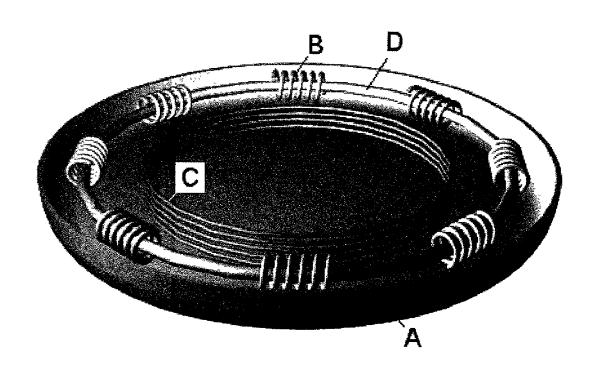
This invention relates to a spacecraft which generates its own magnetic moment and magnetic field gradient in order to produce lift on the hull. The magnetic moment is generated by a large area solenoid located in the hull. A toroidal core wrapped with electrical bobbins at intervals along said core produces a traveling magnetic wave along its surface. This magnetic wave creates a spacetime curvature, similar to a tilted plate, which causes the formation of a magnetic field gradient. Power is not critical because the system uses a magnetic vortex wormhole generator to lower the speed of light in order to efficiently create highly relativistic fields due to Lorentz transformation.

Figure 1

$$\text{Force} = \mu \cdot \frac{\partial B_z}{\partial z} = \text{amp} \cdot \text{m}^2 \frac{\text{kg}}{\text{sec} \cdot \text{coul} \cdot \text{m}} = \frac{\text{coul}}{\text{sec}} \cdot \text{m}^2 \cdot \frac{\text{kg}}{\text{sec} \cdot \text{coul} \cdot \text{m}} = \frac{\text{kg} \cdot \text{m}}{\text{sec}^2} = \text{newton}$$

Figure 2
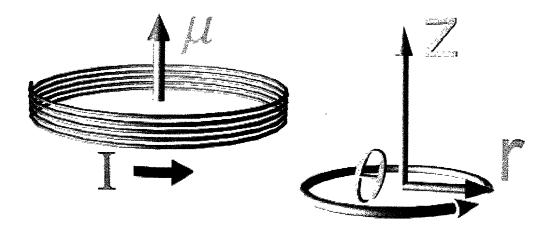
Figure 3

$$B_z = \mu n I$$

Figure 4
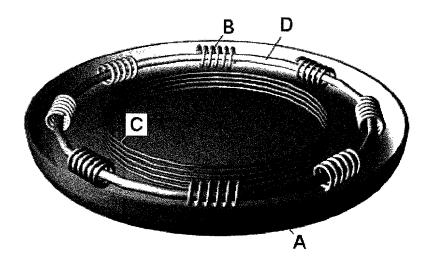
Figure 5

$$v = \sqrt{\dfrac{\omega}{\sigma\mu}}$$

Figure 6

$$g_{\alpha\phi} = \begin{array}{c|cccc} & t & r & \theta & z \\ \hline t & -1 & 0 & \mathrm{Sin}[\theta-t] & 0 \\ r & 00 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ \theta & \mathrm{Sin}[\theta-t] & 0 & r^2 & 0 \\ z & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{array}$$

Figure 7

G_{zz} versus r and theta
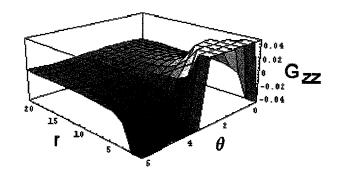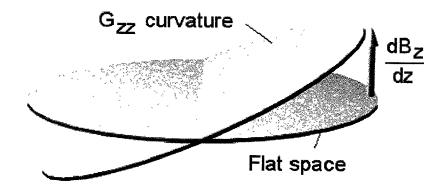
Figure 8

BOBBIN ELECTROMAGNETIC FIELD PROPULSION VEHICLE

BRIEF SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0001] This invention, which is the subject of my present application, is comprised of a toroidal core around which are wound a plurality of electromagnetic bobbins. The bobbins are pulsed electrically to create an amplified magnetic wave that travels around the core. At the same time, a circular electrical conductor carrying direct current creates a magnetic field around its area which results in the formation of a magnetic moment. This magnetic moment, together with the spacetime curvature distortion created by the traveling magnetic wave, produces a lift force on the vehicle.

REFERENCE PAPERS

[0002] Levitron, Hones, U.S. Pat. No. 5,404,062.

[0003] *Geometry of Electromagnetic Systems,* Paul Hammond, page 179.

BACKGROUND OF THE INVENTION

[0004] The idea for this invention comes from experiments I have done using thin transformer laminations wound in intervals with bobbins of wire connected to a frequency generator. Pulsing the bobbins electrically creates a slow traveling magnetic wave along the surface of the lamination. The velocity of the wave, as shown by Hammond in the reference paper, is the square root of the frequency divided by the conductivity and permeability of the material. From Einstein's General Theory of Relativity, this type of wave around the circumference creates a spacetime curvature distortion in the vertical direction that looks like a tilted plate. The magnetic field traveling around the circumference has to follow this curvature. This creates a magnetic gradient in the z-direction which together with the magnetic moment developed by a solenoid produces lift on the vehicle.

SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0005] It is the object of this invention to create a magnetic field gradient and magnetic moment in order to produce a lift force on the hull of a vehicle. The magnetic field gradient is produced by a traveling magnetic wave which produces a tilting-plate spacetime curvature around the hull. The magnetic moment is created by a simple circular wire carrying direct current around its area.

STATEMENT REGARDING FEDERALLY SPONSORED RESEARCH OR DEVELOPMENT

[0006] Not Applicable.

A BRIEF DESCRIPTION OF THE DRAWINGS

[0007] **FIG. 1.** The lift force on the vehicle is equal to a magnetic moment times the magnetic field gradient.

[0008] **FIG. 2.** Magnetic moment μ created by direct current I flowing counterclockwise around the wire coil. Cylindrical coordinates are shown to the right.

[0009] **FIG. 3.** The wire coil solenoid creates a magnetic field in the z-direction equal to the permeability of space times the number of turns per length of the solenoid times the current in the windings.

[0010] **FIG. 4.** Perspective view of bobbin spacecraft.

[0011] **FIG. 5.** Magnetic wave velocity along core.

[0012] **FIG. 6.** The g metric tensor in cylindrical coordinates with the sinusoidal wave function in the $\{t,\theta\}$ slots.

[0013] **FIG. 7.** The spacetime curvature G_{zz} in the vertical direction created by the magnetic wave traveling around the core.

[0014] **FIG. 8.** Tilted plate spacetime curvature showing magnetic gradient.

DETAILED DESCRIPTION OF THE INVENTION

[0015] 1. Referring to the equation in **FIG. 1**, the lift force on the bobbin spacecraft is equal to its magnetic moment times its magnetic field gradient. The magnetic moment has units of electrical current, measured in amps, times the area enclosed by the current. Thus the units of the magnetic moment are amp–m^2. The magnetic moment can be created by a large, circular coil of wire carrying direct current I as shown in **FIG. 2**. The spacetime cylindrical coordinates $\{t, r, \theta, z\}$ are shown to the right of the drawing where t is time, r the radius, the horizontal angle θ, and the vertical height z.

[0016] 2. The wire coil solenoid also produces a magnetic field in the vertical z-direction equal to the permeability of space μ times the number of turns per unit length of the solenoid n, times the current I in the winding. The equation is shown in **FIG. 3** which can be developed from Ampere's law that the magnetic field around a loop is equal to the current passing through the loop.

[0017] 3. Referring to **FIG. 4**, the bobbin spacecraft consists of a large, horizontal, highpermeability toroidal core (D) wrapped at intervals with electrical bobbins (B) which can be pulsed electrically to create a traveling magnetic wave around the core. Interior to this core is a large direct current solenoid (C) which produces said magnetic field in the z-direction. These devices are enclosed in a circular hull (A) containing the coils on the outer rim and a cabin area in the center.

[0018] 4. Referring to **FIG. 5**, the velocity of the magnetic wave on the surface of the core is equal to the square root of the wave frequency ω divided by the conductivity a times the permeability μ of the core material. When the first bobbin is pulsed, a wave starts to propagate along the surface of the core. As the wave passes the second bobbin in sequence, another electrical pulse is generated to amplify the wave. After many cycles, the wave traveling around the core becomes larger and larger in amplitude.

[0019] 5. A traveling wave has a wave function equal to a sinusoidal function with an argument of the angle θ around the periphery less the time t, or $Sin[\theta-\omega t]$.

[0020] 6. In gravitational physics, there is a g metric tensor which is a measure of length in spacetime coordinates. When mass or electromagnetic fields are involved in a certain region of space, a curvature of space is created. The curvature of space can then be calculated directly from this metric tensor. The result is Einstein's G curvature tensor which shows the spacetime distortion. The g metric tensor is a 4 by 4 matrix having rows and columns equal to time t,

radius r, angle theta, and vertical height z. The diagonal from top left to bottom right has a signature equal to $\{-1, 1, r^2, 1\}$.

[0021] 7. Because the magnetic wave traveling around the core is varying with time t in the theta direction, the wave function has to go into the $\{t,\theta\}$ and $\{\theta,t\}$ slots of the metric tensor, as shown in **FIG. 6**.

[0022] 8. From this metric tensor, Einstein's G curvature tensor is calculated using a general relativity software program. The spacetime curvature in the vertical z-direction is contained in the G_{zz} component. A 3D plot of this curvature with respect to radius and theta is shown in **FIG. 7**. The axis on the right side is the angle around the periphery, and the axis on the left is the radius which goes from 0 to 20 meters. The vertical axis of the graph is the spacetime curvature in the vertical z-direction. The center of the vertical axis is zero. At a small radius, there is a sinusoidal curvature which is positive from 0 to π and which is negative from π to 2π. What this looks like is a tilted plate as depicted in **FIG. 8**.

[0023] 9. In flat spacetime with no electromagnetic fields or mass, the curvature would be the horizontal plate as seen **FIG. 8**. Due to the traveling magnetic wave, the spacetime curvature looks like the tilted plate. The flat-space magnetic field was pointing up in the vertical direction, having no divergence and no gradient. In curved spacetime, however, the magnetic field becomes tilted just like the plate and a magnetic gradient dB_z/dz is created. This spacetime curvature gradient of the magnetic field times the magnetic moment of the second coil produces a lift force on the hull which is anchored to these coils.

What I claim as my invention is:

1. A spacecraft that generates a magnetic moment and a magnetic field gradient in the vertical direction in order to create a lift force on the hull.

2. A toroidal core wrapped with electrical bobbins at intervals around the core whose purpose is to create and amplify a magnetic wave that travels along the surface of the core.

3. A circular, direct-current carrying solenoid, located radially inside the toroidal core, to create the magnetic moment.

4. Said magnetic surface wave creates a spacetime curvature, similar to a tilted plate, which produces a magnetic field gradient in the vertical direction.

5. A circular hull, with interior cabin, electrical power supply to drive the coils, and a computer to calculate and sequence the activation of the electrical bobbins.

6. Magnetic sensors, in the form of small coils, located on the toroidal core which can detect the velocity and position of the traveling magnetic wave as feedback to the computer control system.

7. A magnetic vortex generator, either rotating magnet or dual coil, to produce a wormhole through which low linear mass and low speed of light hyperspace energy can enter the hull in order to create highly relativistic electromagnetic fields.

8. A variable current generator to modulate the direct current in the coil so as to produce a variable magnetic moment that can control lift, hover and descent.

9. An electrical power supply using mechanical flywheel stored energy together with a large area capacitor, resupplied with energy by solar cells located on the outer surface of the hull.

* * * * *

US 20040164824A1

(54) **HYPERSPACE ENERGY GENERATOR**

(76) Inventor: **John Quincy St. Clair**, San Juan, PR (US)

Correspondence Address:
John St. Clair
Hyperspace Research Institute
52 Kings Court, 4A
San Juan, PR 00911 (US)

(21) Appl. No.: **10/372,556**

(57) **ABSTRACT**

This invention is a braided gold wire coaxial cable of micron size which generates hyperspace energy by coupling to the tetrahedral geometry of subspace, dimension and the Planck mass.
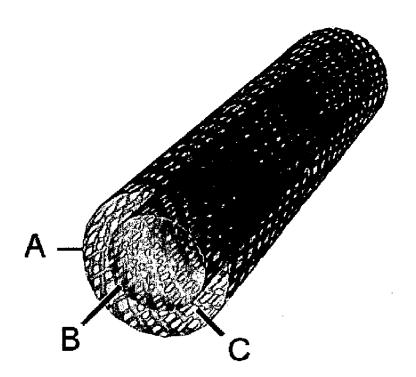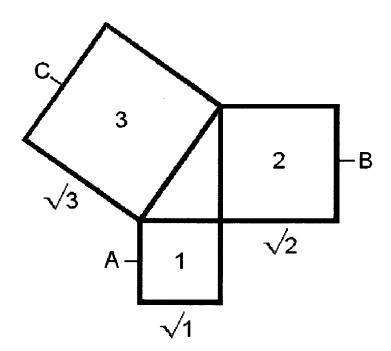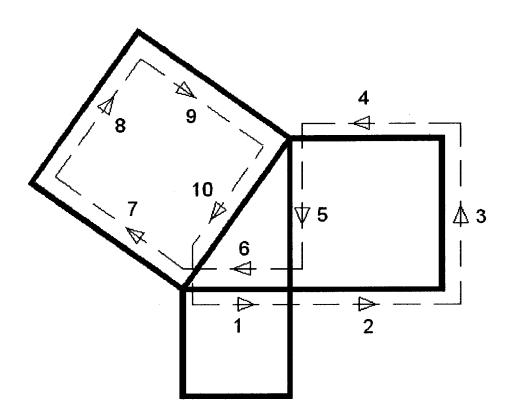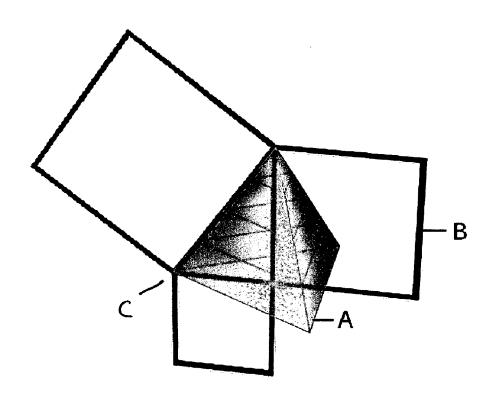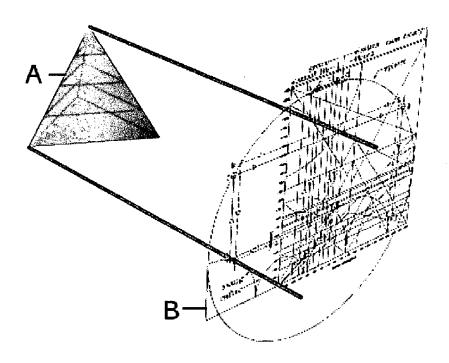
Figure 1

Figure 2

Figure 3

Figure 4

Figure 5

Figure 6

Figure 7

Figure 8

Figure 9

Figure 10

Figure 11

Figure 12

Figure 13
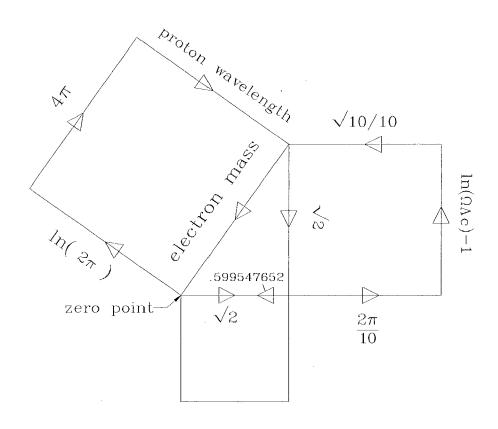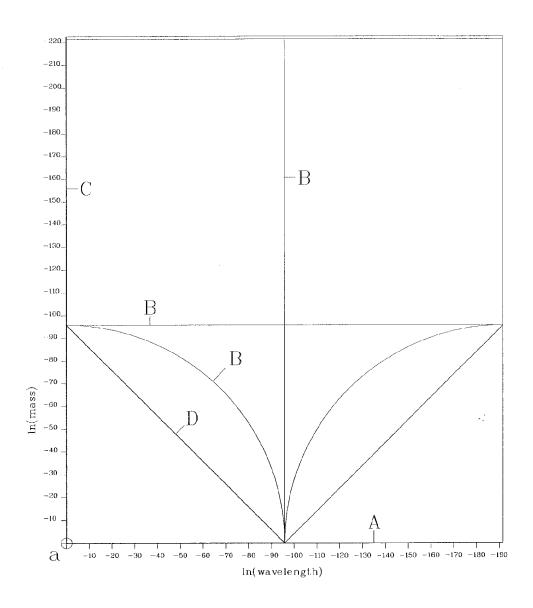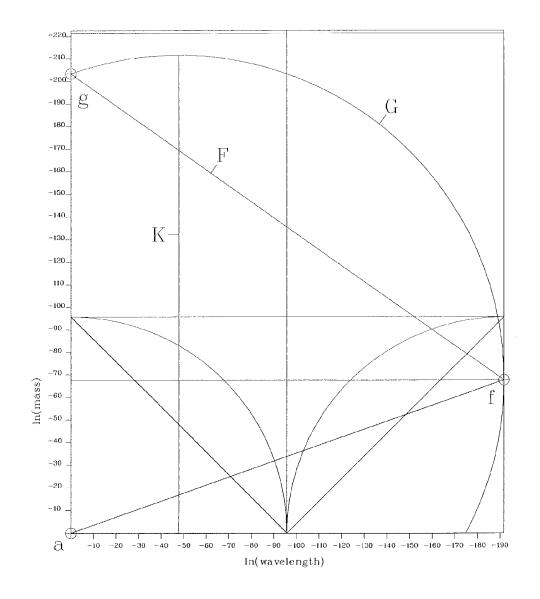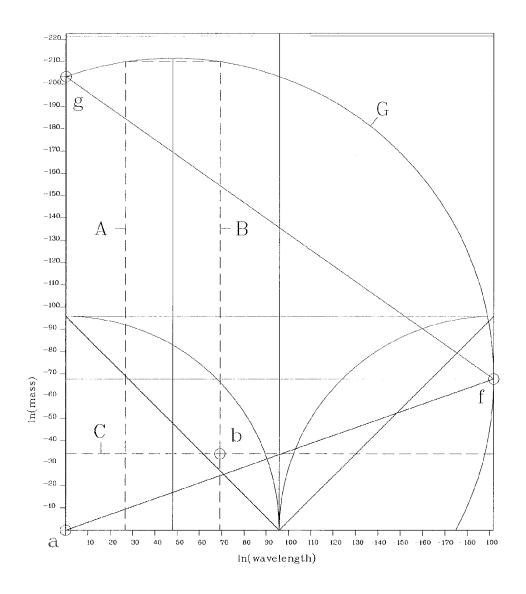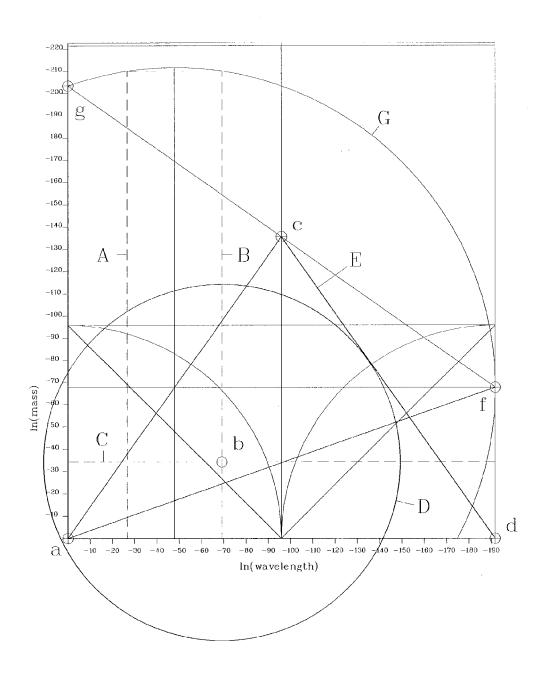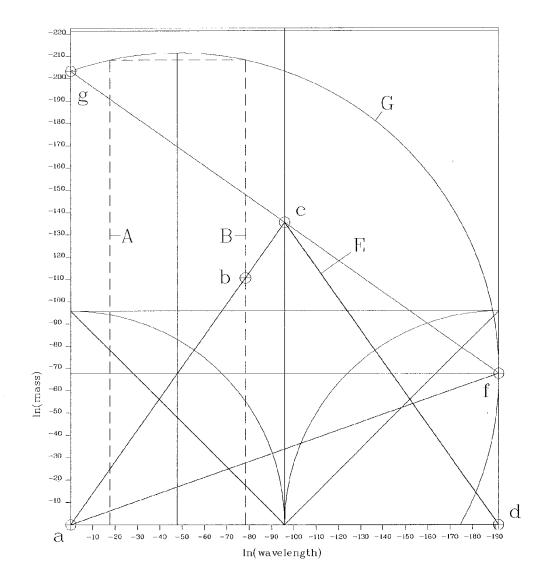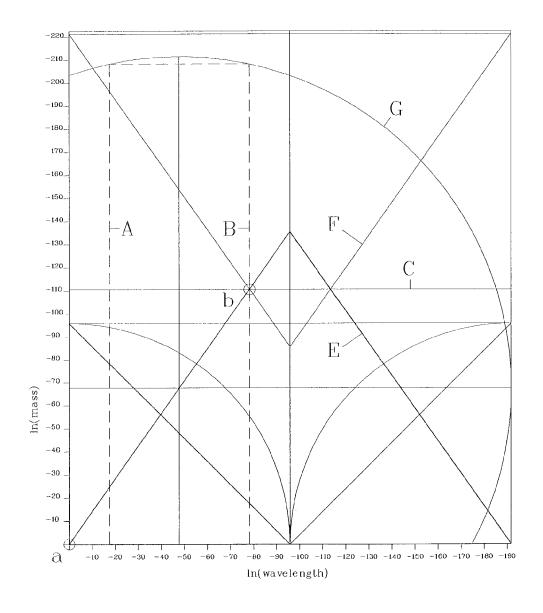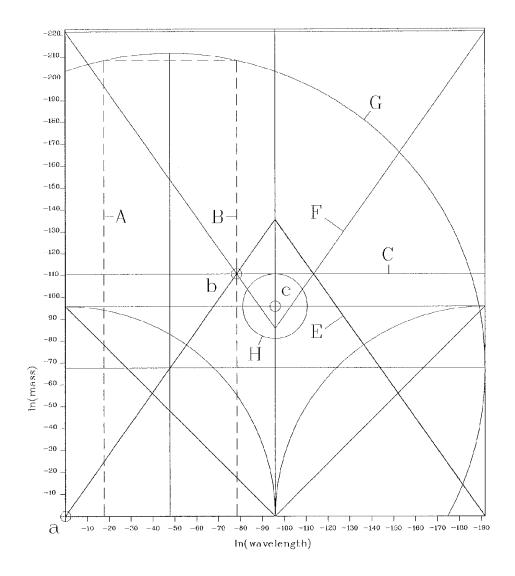
Figure 14
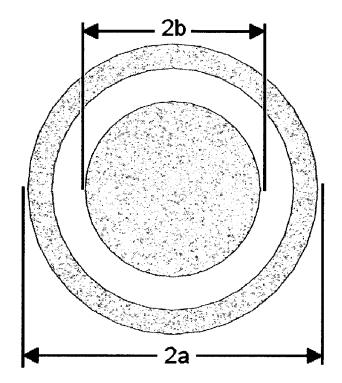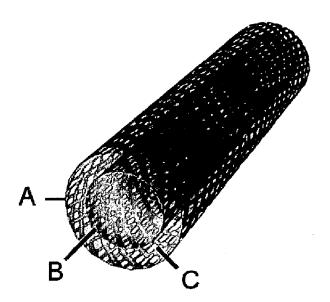
Figure 15

HYPERSPACE ENERGY GENERATOR

BRIEF SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0001]   This invention is a braided gold wire coaxial cable of micron size which generates hyperspace energy.

BACKGROUND OF THE INVENTION

[0002]   Electrical experiments with micron-sized braided gold wire coaxial cable show that it is capable of generating substantial amounts of hyperspace energy. Referring to the electron microscope photograph shown in **FIG. 1**, the white mist emanating from the cable is low-density hyperspace energy that is flowing in from a co-dimension of our universe. The dimensions of the cable are of such a particular size as to couple the cable to the tetrahedral geometry of subspace, the dimension of space, the Planck mass and the linear inductance of the universe.

[0003]   According to physicist Dr. Edward Witten of Princeton University, space has twenty-four dimensions, of which ten dimensions are non-redundant. Imagine taking a path around the Pythagorean triangle, as known as the planar tetrahedron, with sides equal to $\{\sqrt{1}, \sqrt{2}, \sqrt{3}\}$ as shown in **FIG. 2**. There are three squares denoted the one-square (A), the two-square (B) and the three-square (C). Each square has four sides. The edge of each square can be traversed in two directions. Thus the total number of dimensions is

$$dim_{total}=2\cdot(4+4+4)=24$$

[0004]   Referring to **FIG. 3**, there is a path starting at the corner of the triangle, along the one-square (**1**), around the two-square (**2,3,4,5**), back along the one-square (**6**), around the three-square (**7,8,9,10**) and back to the corner of the triangle. The numbering of the edges shows that there are ten edges. Because the path is traversed in only one direction, the number of reduced dimensions is

$$dim_{reduced}=1\cdot(10)=10$$

[0005]   Referring to **FIG. 4**, the planar tetrahedron (B) forms one edge of the three-dimensional tetrahedron (A). Rotating the planar tetrahedron ±120° produces the other two edges. The tetrahedron has four faces which are equilateral triangles. The ten dimensional path starts and ends at (C), the corner of the tetrahedron known as the zero point.

[0006]   Referring to **FIG. 5**, the projection of the 3D tetrahedron (A) onto a plane is called the tetrahedron diagram (B) which is the main diagram of the new geometrical physics known as Δphysics. All the constants of physics can be derived geometrically from the tetrahedron diagram and its associated planar tetrahedron. An example of this is shown in **FIG. 6** where the edges are given specific constants related to tetrahedral geometry, dimension, curvature, and the mass and wavelength of the elementary particles such as the electron and proton. The ten dimensional path includes the following constants

[0007]   a. electron wavelength

[0008]   b. proton wavelength

[0009]   c. 47π The solid angle of the sphere. The tetrahedron is circumscribed by a sphere.

[0010]   d. ln(2π) The natural log of the curvature. The subspace geometry is a logarithmic manifold. The

tetrahedron diagram plots the logarithm of mass versus the logarithm of wavelength.

[0011]   e. 0.599547652 A constant related to fractal dimension and the speed of light factor 2.99792458.

[0012]   f. $\sqrt{2}$ The edge of the two-square.

[0013]   g. $\sqrt{10}/10$ The square root of ten dimensions per 10 dimensions.

[0014]   h. ln(ΩΛc)−1 The natural log of the momentum of space less one.

[0015]   i.

$$\frac{2\pi}{10}$$

[0016]   The curvature of space per 10 dimensions.

[0017]   j. $\sqrt{2}$ The edge of the two-square.

[0018]   The length of each edge is multiplied by the constant assigned to that edge. The ten edges have the order of $\{\sqrt{1}, \sqrt{2}, \sqrt{2}, \sqrt{2}, \sqrt{1}, \sqrt{3}, \sqrt{3}, \sqrt{3}, \sqrt{3}\}$. What subspace geometry does is to multiply the edge length, such as $\sqrt{1}$, times the square root of two $\sqrt{2}$. Then it takes the square root of that number and multiplies it by the next edge, which is $\sqrt{2}$, times the curvature per 10 dimensions

$$\frac{2\pi}{10}.$$

[0019]   It then takes the square root of that number and so on. In equation form, this looks like the following calculation

$$\sqrt{3a\sqrt{3b\sqrt{3c\sqrt{3d\sqrt{1e\sqrt{2f\sqrt{2g\sqrt{2h\sqrt{2i\sqrt{1j}}}}}}}}}} = 80.1104395$$

[0020]   where the letters correspond to those in the list of constants. The square root sum total is equal to the Planck scale Λwhich is the bottom dimensional limit of the universe. The sum of the ten constants per a speed of light circumference is equal to unity

$$\frac{\sum_{n=10} s_n}{2\pi\ln(c)} = 1.000000000$$

[0021]   where the log of the speed of light is

$$\ln(c)=\ln(299792458)=19.51860099$$

[0022]   and multiplying by 2π is the circumference of a circle with a radius equal to the speed of light.

2

[0023] Referring to **FIG. 7**, the tetrahedron diagram plots the natural logarithm of mass on the vertical axis (C) versus the natural logarithm of wavelength on the horizontal axis (A). The reason for this is that the mass of the electron times its wavelength is equal to the mass of the proton times its wavelength which in turn is equal to Planck's constant h divided by the speed of light, known as the base constant (B). If two numbers multiply, they sum in logarithms. In subspace geometry, the sum of the logarithm of the mass of the electron plus the logarithm of the wavelength is equal to the logarithm of the base constant which has a value of −95.91546344.

$$\ln(m_{electron}) + \ln(\lambda_{electron}) = \ln\left(\frac{h}{c}\right) = -95.91546344$$

[0024] What this means is that the mass and wavelength slide on a 45° base line (D) which has end points on the vertical and horizontal axes equal to the base constant.

[0025] Referring to **FIG. 8**, a line (af) drawn from the origin at the tetrahedral angle of 19.47122063, equal to the asin(⅓), creates a tetrahedron (F) along path (afg). This tetrahedron is circumscribed by a sphere (G) with sphere diameter (K).

[0026] The Planck scale path calculation showed that the electron mass and the proton wavelength were the last two edges. The electron mass has a value of

$\ln(m_e) = -69.17083217$

[0027] and the electron wavelength has a value of

$\ln(\lambda_E) = -26.74463127$

[0028] Referring to **FIG. 9**, the electron wavelength (A) is plotted as a vertical line on the tetrahedron diagram. The wavelength reflects off the circumscribing sphere (G), and returns as the electron mass (B). So the diagram incorporates the concepts of both classical physics (point mass particles) and quantum mechanics (wave particles).

[0029] The proton wavelength has a value of

$\ln(\lambda_p) = -34.26005901$

[0030] The proton wavelength (C) is plotted as a horizontal line in order to get the intersection (b) with the electron mass.

[0031] Referring to **FIG. 10**, a circle (D) with a radius equal to the Planck scale is drawn centered (b) on the intersection of the electron mass with the proton wavelength, which are the last two edges of the Planck scale calculation. A line (ac) from the origin to the intersection of the base constant with the rotated tetrahedron creates the vertical tetrahedron (acd). As can be seen, the Planck scale is tangent to the tetrahedron on side (cd). This tetrahedron is the projection of the 3D tetrahedron shown before in **FIG. 5**. What this means is that the tetrahedral geometry of subspace determines the bottom limit of our universe. And this bottom limit, called the Planck scale, contains within itself the mass and wavelength of the elementary particles, curvature, dimension and planar tetrahedral geometry. Tetrahedron diagram tet0565 shows that the electron and proton are one and the same particle because the electron path rotates counterclockwise around the curvature and then

returns clockwise as the proton path. This path occurs moving through space and hyperspace. Because the single particle enters our universe from hyperspace at two different positions, we see it as two distinct particles. Thus the tetrahedron diagram shows that hyperspace exists.

[0032] The speed of light is equal to the inverse of the square root of the permeability μ of space times the permittivity ϵ of space

$$c = \sqrt{\frac{1}{\mu\varepsilon}}$$

[0033] The permeability is linear inductance or inductance per length which you would find in a solenoid for example. The permittivity is linear capacitance or capacitance per length which you find in a capacitor. In an electrical circuit, the inductance and capacitance form a resonant circuit. The resonance frequency can be changed by changing the inductor or capacitor. In a similar manner, the speed of light is not constant, but can be lowered by increasing the permittivity. Hyperspace energy has a high permittivity and therefore a low speed of light. This low speed of light gives hyperspace energy a luminescent quality which is seen as a white mist **(FIG. 1)**.

[0034] From Einstein's General Theory of Relativity, the stress pressure T on spacetime is proportion to the square of the ratio of the electric field E to the speed of light c.

$$T = \left(\frac{E}{c}\right)^2$$

[0035] Thus substantially lowering the speed of light creates an enormous spacetime pressure which can be used to generate the lift force on electromagnetic field propulsion vehicles. Furthermore, the electric field is subject to the Lorentz transformation

$$E = \frac{E_0}{\sqrt{1 - \frac{v^2}{c^2}}}$$

[0036] The electric field E_0 moving in a frame velocity of v, can quickly attain relativistic proportions because the speed of light could be 1 meter per second, rather than the enormous value in our universe of 299792458 meters per second. Thus one would like to permeate the hull of the electromagnetic field propulsion vehicle with this hyperspace energy in order to increase the electric field and hence the spacetime curvature around the hull which produces the enormous lift force on the vehicle. The method of bringing in this hyperspace energy is to use braided gold wire coaxial cable which is coupled to the geometry of subspace. The subspace geometry is contained in the Δphysics tetrahedron diagram.

[0037] Just as space has a linear inductance and linear capacitance, it also has a linear mass Ω or mass per meter.

Physicist Dr. John A. Wheeler of Princeton likes to invert this and call it "mom" for meter of mass. The Planck mass is equal to the Planck scale Λ times the linear mass Ω

$$\ln(m_{\text{Planck}})=\ln(\Omega\Lambda)=-17.64290101$$

[0038] Planck's constant h is equal to 2π times the Planck scale squared times the linear mass Ω times the speed of light c.

$$h=2\pi\Lambda^2\ \Omega c=2\pi\Lambda(\Omega\Lambda)c$$

[0039] which shows that Planck's constant is actually the circumference of a circle of radius Planck scale times the Planck mass times the speed of light. The base constant is therefore

$$\text{base} = \frac{h}{c} = \frac{2\pi\Lambda(\Omega\Lambda)c}{c} = (2\pi\Lambda)(\Omega\Lambda) = -95.91546344$$

[0040] which is an area, known as the Planck box, bounded by the Planck wavelength ($2\pi\Lambda$) and the Planck mass. Everything outside the Planck box is hyperspace. Everything inside the Planck box is our universe. Thus the boundary between space and hyperspace is the Planck wavelength and the Planck mass. In logarithms, notice that the Planck mass and Planck wavelength, just like the electron and proton, sum to the base constant.

[0041] Referring to **FIG. 11**, the Planck mass (A) and the Planck wavelength (B) are plotted on the diagram and reflected off the sphere. The Planck wavelength intersects the tetrahedron at (b) which is the boundary between space and hyperspace known as the centerline of the diagram. The centerline has a value equal to the base times the square root of ⅘.

$$\text{centerline} = \sqrt{\frac{4}{3}}\ \text{base} = -110.7536373$$

[0042] Referring to **FIG. 12**, the centerline (C) is drawn on the diagram and the tetrahedron (E) is mirrored (F) across the centerline to indicate the co-dimensions of hyperspace.

[0043] Referring to **FIG. 13**, a circle (H), centered at the base at the base (c), tangent to the centerline (C), has a radius equal to base times the square root of 4/3 less one

$$R = \left(\sqrt{\frac{4}{3}} - 1\right)\text{base} = 14.83817383$$

[0044] This is the length that has to traversed in order to cross over the centerline from the base constant of our universe to the co-dimension of hyperspace. Furthermore, the Planck mass, which is the other boundary, has to be crossed in order to get to either axis as seen by the length between the vertical axis and line (A). It can be looked at also as the length needed to go from the Planck wavelength (B) to the tangent point of circle (H) in order to reach the center of the mirror tetrahedrons.

SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0045] This invention is a braided gold wire coaxial cable of micron size that is coupled to the subspace geometry of the universe for the purpose of bringing in low-density hyperspace energy into our universe from the co-dimensions of hyperspace. The dimensions of the coaxial cable are of such particular size as to enable it to couple to the ten dimensions of space, the 3:1 geometrical ratio of the tetrahedron, the coaxial wave function based on the logarithm of the ratio of the outer radius to the inner radius of the cable, the length between the base constant of our universe and the centerline between mirror tetrahedrons, and the geometrical relationship between the Planck mass and the linear inductance of the cable.

[0046] Referring to **FIG. 14**, the coaxial guide has an outer braided conductor (A) and an inner braided conductor (B) in which the outer and inner conductors are at radii a and b respectively. The linear inductance L of the cable is equal to the natural logarithm of the ratio of the radii times the permeability μ of space divided by the curvature 2π

$$L = \ln\left(\frac{a}{b}\right)\frac{\mu}{2\pi}$$

[0047] It can be shown that the ratio of the area-to-volume ratio of the tetrahedron to the area-to-volume ratio of its circumscribing sphere is 3:1. It is also the ratio of the area of the three-square to the area of the one-square on the planar tetrahedron. It is also the tetrahedral angle asin(⅓) equal to 19.47122063°. It is also a maximum work condition between the velocity ratio of a fluid stream and a moving vane such as in turbomachinery. So the first constraint on the radii is

$$\exp\left(\ln\left(\frac{a}{b}\right) + 1\right) \equiv 3$$

[0048] The second constraint is that the radius c of the circle, equal to the difference between the base constant and the centerline, is related to ten dimensions. The value of the radius projected into our universe is

$$c = \left(\sqrt{\frac{4}{3}} - 1\right)\text{base} = .3596358547 \cdot \text{microns}$$

[0049] and the dimensional constraint is

$$\left[\ln(c) + \ln\left(\frac{1}{a}\right)\right]^2 = 10$$

[0050] The coaxial wave function constraint is

$$\frac{\ln(a)^2}{2\pi\ln\left(\frac{a}{b}\right)} \equiv \ln(c)^2$$

[0051] The linear inductance of the coaxial cable has to be such that it gets geometrically across the Planck mass which is the second boundary of our Planck box

$$\exp\left(\ln(\Omega\Lambda) - \ln\left(\frac{\ln\left(\frac{a}{b}\right)}{2\pi}\mu\right) + 1\right) \equiv 3$$

[0052] With these four subspace constraints, the outer radius a and inner radius b of the cable are

    [0053] a=8.342461828 microns

    [0054] b=7.559058141 microns

[0055] so the cable has an outside diameter of roughly 16 to 17 microns.

STATEMENT REGARDING FEDERALLY SPONSORED RESEARCH OR DEVELOPMENT

[0056] Not Applicable.

A BRIEF DESCRIPTION OF THE DRAWINGS

[0057] **FIG. 1**. Electron microscope photograph of the coaxial cable and hyperspace mist.

[0058] **FIG. 2**. The planar tetrahedron.

[0059] **FIG. 3**. The ten dimensional path around the planar tetrahedron.

[0060] **FIG. 4**. The relationship between the planar tetrahedron and the 3D tetrahedron.

[0061] **FIG. 5**. Projection of the 3D tetrahedron onto a plane to create the tetrahedron diagram.

[0062] **FIG. 6**. Dimension, geometry, curvature and elementary particles that make up the ten dimensional Planck scale path.

[0063] **FIG. 7**. Tetrahedron diagram showing base constant.

[0064] **FIG. 8**. Tetrahedron diagram showing rotated tetrahedron and circumscribing sphere with electron mass and wavelength reflecting off sphere.

[0065] **FIG. 9**. Tetrahedron diagram showing intersection of electron mass with proton wavelength which are components of the Planck scale path.

[0066] **FIG. 10**. Tetrahedron diagram showing Planck scale tangent to tetrahedron.

[0067] **FIG. 11**. Tetrahedron diagram showing Planck mass and Planck wavelength intersecting tetrahedron.

[0068] **FIG. 12**. Tetrahedron diagram showing mirror tetrahedrons across centerline, the boundary between space and hyperspace.

[0069] **FIG. 13**. Tetrahedron diagram showing distance between the base constant and the centerline used to calculate the dimensions of the coaxial cable.

[0070] **FIG. 14**. End view of coaxial cable showing radii a and b used in the subspace geometry constraints in order to couple to hyperspace.

[0071] **FIG. 15**. Perspective view of braided gold wire coaxial cable.

DETAILED DESCRIPTION OF THE INVENTION

[0072] 1. Referring to **FIG. 15**, the coaxial cable has a braided gold wire outer conductor (A) and a braided gold wire inner conductor (B) separated by a dielectric (C). The open braiding promotes the conduction of the electromagnetic wave while allowing the hyperspace mist to seep out of the braid and permeate the surrounding material in which it is embedded.

[0073] 2. The radius of the outer conductor a and the radius of the inner conductor b have the following values in order to couple the cable to the tetrahedral geometry of subspace.

    [0074] a=8.342461828·microns

    [0075] b=7.559058141·microns

[0076] 3. Even though the wire size is very small, the cable can be made in limited lengths using the new nanotechnology and silicon micromotors.

I claim:

1. A coaxial cable which has:

a) a braided gold wire outer conductor of radius 8.34 microns;

b) a braided gold wire inner conductor of radius 7.56 microns;

c) a thin dielectric separator between the two conductors; and

d) an open weave to allow the hyperspace mist to seep out of the cable and permeate the surrounding material in which the cable is embedded;

2. A specific relationship between the physical dimensions of the coaxial cable, given in items (1a) and (1b), to the following tetrahedral subspace couplings:

a) the ratio of the area-to-volume ratio of the tetrahedron to the area-to-volume ratio of its circumscribing sphere, equal to 3:1, with a coupling to the natural logarithm of the ratio of the radii of the conductors;

b) the ratio of the area of the three-square of the planar tetrahedron to the area of the one-square, equal to 3:1, with a coupling to the Planck mass and the linear inductance of the cable;

b) the distance between the base constant and $\sqrt{4/3}$ times the base constant, equal to −14.83817383 in natural logarithms, with a coupling to the outer radius of the

conductor, the ten dimensions of space, and the co-dimensions of hyperspace; and

c) the wave function of the coaxial guide given in terms of item (2*c*), the natural logarithm of the ratio of the radius of the outer conductor to the radius of the inner conductor, and the curvature 2π.

* * * * *

US 20060070371A1

(54) **ELECTRIC DIPOLE MOMENT PROPULSION SYSTEM**

(76) Inventor: **John Quincy St. Clair**, San Juan, PR (US)

Correspondence Address:
JOHN ST. CLAIR
52 KINGS COURT, 4A
SAN JUAN, PR 00911 (US)

(21) Appl. No.: **10/958,436**

(22) Filed: **Oct. 5, 2004**

Publication Classification

(51) **Int. Cl.**
F03H 1/00 (2006.01)
(52) **U.S. Cl.** **60/203.1**

(57) **ABSTRACT**

A spacecraft propulsion system utilizing a rotating octagon of trapezoidal electrically charged flat panels to create an electric dipole moment that generates lift on the hull.

Figure 1

Figure 2

Figure 3

Figure 4
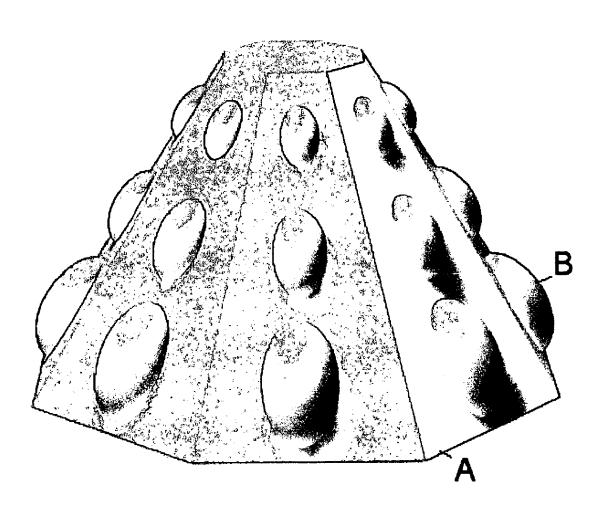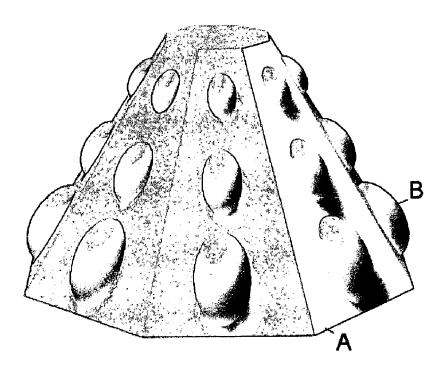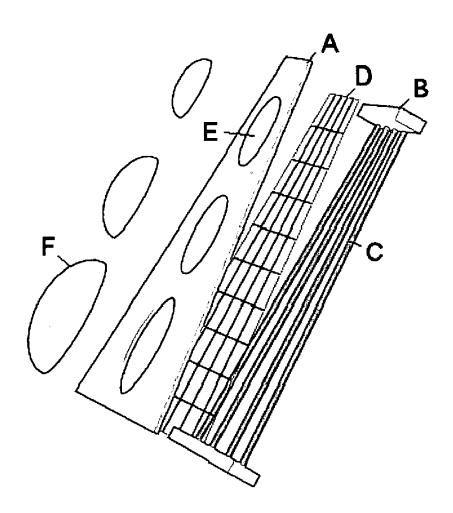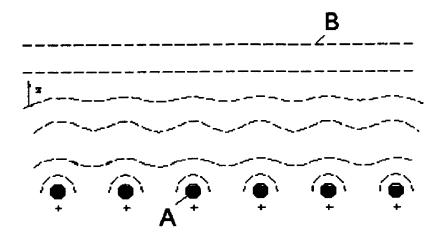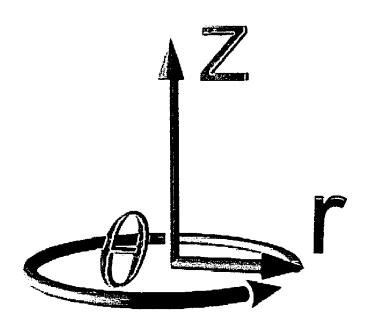
Figure 5
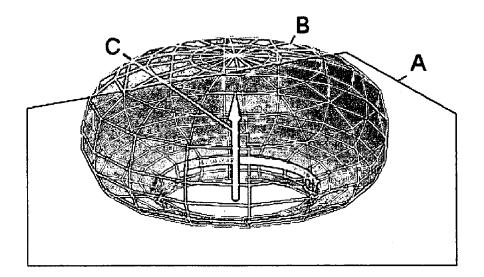
Figure 6
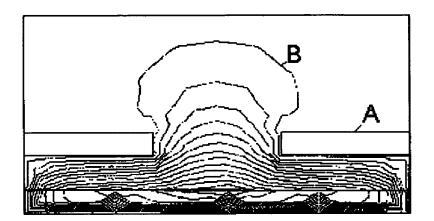
Figure 7

$$\frac{dB}{dz} = \frac{E_r}{c^2}\frac{dv}{dz} \qquad \frac{dv}{dz}$$

hull profile

Figure 8

Figure 9
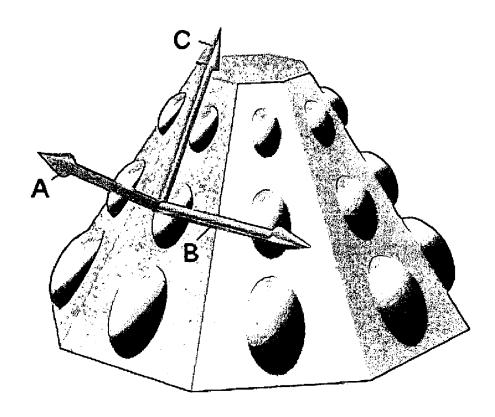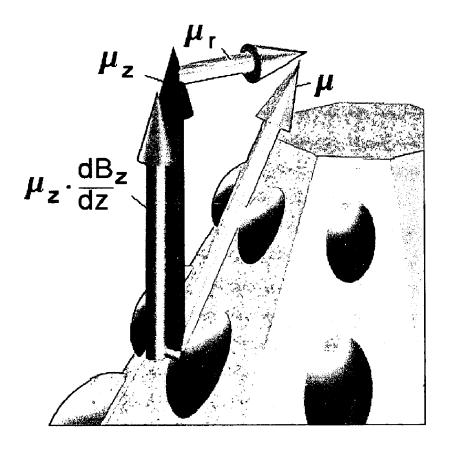
Figure 10
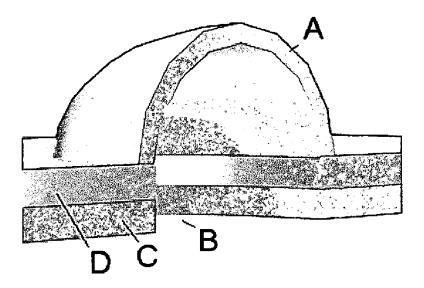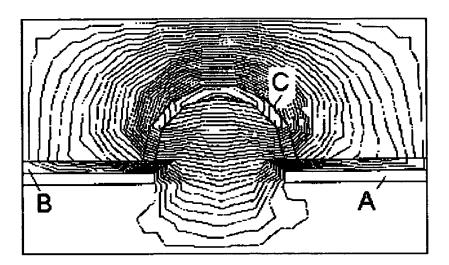
Figure 11

ELECTRIC DIPOLE MOMENT PROPULSION SYSTEM

BRIEF SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0001] The invention is a spacecraft utilizing trapezoidal electrostatically charged flat plate panels which form a pyramidal hull. A panel contains three holes each of which produces a potential energy ellipsoidal bubble that creates an electric dipole moment. The rotation of the hull generates a magnetic moment and a magnetic field gradient in the vertical direction that produces a lift force on the spacecraft.

BACKGROUND OF THE INVENTION

[0002] It is known from electrodynamics that a hole in a conducting plane forms a potential energy bubble. This bubble creates an electric dipole moment from which it is possible to develop a magnetic moment. A rotating tilted hull produces a velocity gradient that generates a magnetic field gradient in the vertical direction. This combination produces a lift force on the spacecraft. A very large potential energy bubble is produced provided that the hole protrudes out of the plate in an ellipsoidal shape. Furthermore, a double cladding, in which each layer around the hole has a different permittivity, confines the field to the outside of the hull for even better results.

[0003] The planar potential energy is created by a grid of electrically charged wires or rods running the length of each panel. A circular potential energy from each rod very quickly sums to form a flat sheet of energy which emerges from the hole to form the potential energy bubble.

SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0004] The invention relates to a spacecraft utilizing a rotating octagon of trapezoidal electrically charged flat plate panels to form a hull in the shape of a pyramid. Each panel has three protruding ellipsoidal bubbles that produce an electric dipole moment from a planar potential energy field created by a group of charged rods parallel to the panel. Because the panels are tilted and the hull is rotating, there is a tangential velocity gradient in the vertical direction. This creates the magnetic moment. Because the hull rotates, the radial electric field produces a magnetic field gradient in the vertical direction. This combination of magnetic moment and magnetic field gradient produces a lift force on the hull of the spacecraft.

[0005] On the underside of each panel is a group of high voltage electrically charged rods which run parallel to the panel. These wires or rods produce a planar electrical potential field underneath the holes in the panel. This potential energy field then bubbles out of the holes in the panel to create a large ellipsoidal potential energy field above the hull. The potential energy bubble carries an electric dipole moment which when rotated with the hull generates a magnetic moment in the vertical direction.

A BRIEF DESCRIPTION OF THE DRAWINGS

[0006] FIG. 1. Perspective view of electric dipole moment spacecraft.

[0007] FIG. 2. Perspective exploded view of one panel with the ellipsoidal domes, flat hull panel with three holes, the charged rod grid and the planar potential energy field.

[0008] FIG. 3. Planar view of flat potential energy field produced by electrically charge wire rods.

[0009] FIG. 4. Perspective view of cylindrical coordinates {r, θ, z}.

[0010] FIG. 5. Perspective view of ellipsoidal potential energy field emerging from hole in plate which produces an electric dipole moment.

[0011] FIG. 6. Planar view of field lines of potential energy bubble emerging from plate hole.

[0012] FIG. 7. Planar view of sloping hull profile needed to get a velocity gradient.

[0013] FIG. 8. Perspective view of hull showing electric dipole moment, the tangential velocity of the hull, and the magnetic moment.

[0014] FIG. 9. Perspective view of the magnetic moment components in the radial and vertical direction whereby the lift force is generated by the dot product of the vertical magnetic moment with the magnetic field gradient.

[0015] FIG. 10. Perspective view of cross section of dome showing two layer cladding with different permittivities to enhance potential energy field.

[0016] FIG. 11. Planar view of enhanced potential energy field with two layer cladding.

DETAILED DESCRIPTION OF THE INVENTION

[0017] 1. Referring to FIG. 1, the spacecraft is a rotating octagon of trapezoidal electrostatically charged flat panels which form a closed hull (A). Each panel has three ellipsoidal domes (B) of varying size centrally located along the major length of the panel. The purpose of the dome is to create a large ellipsoidal potential energy bubble over the hull which develops an electrical dipole moment. Because the hull is rotating, a magnetic moment is created in the vertical direction. A magnetic field gradient created by the rotating electric field on the hull in combination with the magnetic moment produces a lift force on the hull.

[0018] 2. Referring to FIG. 2, the trapezoidal hull panel (A) contains three ellipsoidal holes (E). A group of wires or rods (C) running parallel to and just underneath the panel are electrically charged to a high voltage at the end terminals (B). The rods produce a planar potential energy field (D) just under the holes in the panel. The field emerges from the holes in the shape of an ellipsoidal bubble and is amplified by an ellipsoidal dome (F) on the outside of the hull.

[0019] 3. Referring to FIG. 3, the group of parallel rods (A) are given a linear charge λ in units of charge per meter. The electric field E developed by the rod is the linear charge divided by the circumference of a circle of radius r around the wire times the permittivity ϵ of space. The analysis of this arrangement shows that within a few grid width spacings, the potential energy field ϕ due to the electric field E_0 has become planar (B) in the z-direction given by the equation

$$\phi = -E_0 z$$

[0020] 4. Referring to **FIG. 4**, the following analysis is done in cylindrical coordinates $\{r,\theta,z\}$.

[0021] 5. Referring to **FIG. 5**, the ellipsoidal potential energy (B) emerges through the hole in the panel plate (A). In doing so it creates an electrical dipole moment (C) shown by the arrow normal to the hole area.

[0022] 6. Referring to **FIG. 6**, the bubble (B) emerges through plate (A).

[0023] 7. Because the bubble has the shape of an ellipse, the centroid y of the bubble would be four thirds the radius a divided by π as given by

$$\bar{y}_{ellipse} = \frac{4}{3}\frac{a}{\pi}$$

[0024] The electric dipole moment is then given as the charge q times the centroid y. The charge of the hole is equal to the permittivity E times the electric field E emerging from the hole times the area of the hole of radius a

$$q = \varepsilon_0 E\pi a^2 \frac{coul^2}{m^2\,newton}\frac{newton}{coul} m^2 = coul = charge$$

[0025] 8. The electric dipole moment p is the centroid y times the charge q

$$p = qy = \varepsilon_0 E\pi a^2 \frac{4}{3}\frac{a}{\pi} = \frac{4}{3}\varepsilon_0 Ea^2 \; coul\cdot meter$$

[0026] The electric dipole moment p times the hull velocity v is equal to a magnetic moment μ which is what creates the lift force on the hull

$$\mu = pv \; amp\cdot m^2$$

[0027] 9. The rotating hull creates the electric dipole moment velocity so that the entire hull develops a magnetic moment. In tensor notation, the magnetic moment μ is in the vertical z-direction because there is a radial component of the electric dipole moment times the velocity. The velocity is the radius r in the radial direction times the angular velocity ω in the z-direction

$$\mu^z = p_r x^r \omega^z$$

[0028] 10. The force F on the hull is the gradient of the dot product of the magnetic moment μ with the magnetic B field

$$F = \nabla(\mu\cdot B)$$

[0029] 11. By electrically charging the hull of the vehicle, a radial electric field is produced. By rotating the hull, the radial electric field changes with time. Thus Maxwell's equations will involve the curl of the magnetic field in the radial direction because the radial electric field is varying with time

$$(\nabla \times B)_r = \frac{1}{c^2}\frac{\partial E_r}{\partial t}$$

[0030] 12. The cross product involves the magnetic field in the theta direction which is zero

$$\frac{1}{r}\frac{\partial B_z}{\partial \theta} - \frac{\partial B_\theta}{\partial z} = \frac{1}{c^2}\frac{\partial E_r}{\partial t} = \frac{1}{r}\frac{\partial B_z}{\partial \theta}$$

[0031] Substituting the derivative of the electric field E

$$E_r = E_0 e^{i\omega t}$$

[0032] and integrating with respect to angle theta gives the vertical magnetic field B as the tangential velocity v times the radial electric field E divided by the speed of light c squared

$$B_z = \frac{v}{c^2}E_r$$

[0033] 13. The force on the hull is the gradient of the magnetic moment μ times the magnetic field B. In the equation for the magnetic field, the only available variable to work with in order to get a gradient of the magnetic field comes from the velocity.

$$\frac{dB_z}{dz} = \frac{E_r}{c^2}\frac{dv}{dz}$$

[0034] 14. Referring to **FIG. 7**, because the hull is in the shape of a pyramid, the velocity is a function of the height z of the hull. Using eight flat sides keeps the radial electric field pointing in the same direction in each panel. Each panel has three domes to produce the magnetic moment for a total of 24 magnetic moment generators.

[0035] 15. Referring to **FIG. 8**, the electric dipole moment (A) points in the radial direction, the rotating hull produces a tangential velocity (B), and the result is a magnetic moment (C) along the panel.

[0036] 16. Referring to **FIG. 9**, because the magnetic moment is parallel to the panel, there are vertical and radial components of the magnetic moment. The vertical magnetic moment creates the dot product with the magnetic field gradient, which is equal to the lift force.

[0037] 17. **FIG. 10** shows a cross-section of the dome (A) and the plate hole (B) with double cladding to enhance the field. The upper cladding (D) has a low relative permittivity in the range of 2 to 40, and the lower layer has a high relative permittivity in the range of 1200 to 4000.

[0038] 18. Comparing **FIG. 11** to **FIG. 7**, this dome and cladding configuration creates a much larger electric dipole moment compared to a hole in the plate. The wavy

lines are the equi-potential energy lines from the dome (C) and the upper layer (B) and the lower level (A).

I claim:

1. A spacecraft propulsion system comprising:

a rotating octagon of trapezoidal electrostatically charged flat panels which form a closed sloping hull in the shape of a pyramid;

panels each having three holes covered by three ellipsoidal domes of varying size centrally located along the major length and axis of each panel; and

a grid of high voltage electrostatically charged rods located on the interior side of each panel such that a planar potential field is produced parallel to and under each panel hole.

2. The domes, holes and rotating charged hull of method 1 producing:

an ellipsoidal potential energy field emerging from the holes and generating an electric dipole moment on the outside of the hull;

a magnetic moment in the vertical direction due to the rotating electric dipole moment; and

a rotating electric field in the radial direction which generates a corresponding magnetic field gradient in the vertical direction proportional to the velocity gradient of the sloping panels of the hull.

3. A lift force on the spacecraft hull generated by:

the magnetic moment times the gradient of the magnetic field in the vertical direction; and

a dual surface layer hull cladding having different permittivities which enhance the electric dipole moment whereby the upper cladding has a low relative permittivity in the range of 2 to 40, and the lower layer has a high relative permittivity in the range of 1200 to 4000.

* * * * *

(19) **United States**

(12) **Patent Application Publication** (10) Pub. No.: **US 2006/0038081 A1**

St. Clair (43) Pub. Date: **Feb. 23, 2006**

(54) **ELECTRIC DIPOLE SPACECRAFT**

(76) Inventor: **John Quincy St. Clair**, San Juan, PR (US)

Correspondence Address:
JOHN ST. CLAIR
52 KINGS COURT, 4A
SAN JUAN, PR 00911 (US)

Publication Classification

(51) **Int. Cl.**
  B64G 1/40 (2006.01)
(52) **U.S. Cl.** **244/171.5**

(57) **ABSTRACT**

This invention is a rotating spacecraft that produces an electric dipole on four rotating spherical conducting domes perturbing a uniform spherical electric field to create a magnetic moment interacting with the gradient of a magnetic field that generates a lift force on the hull.
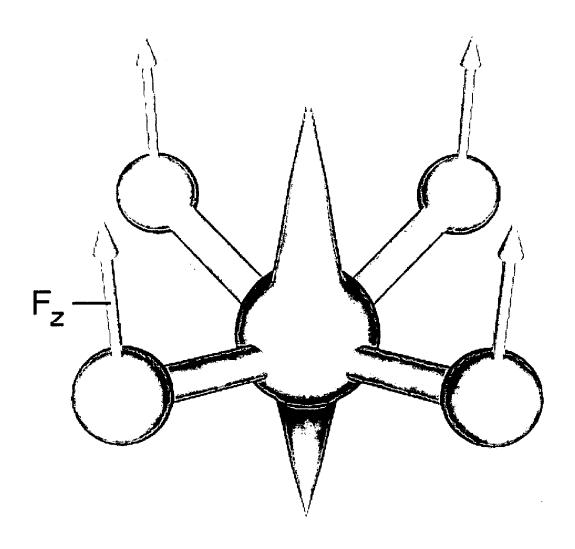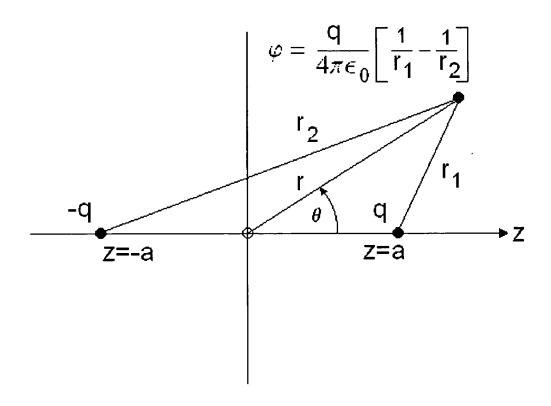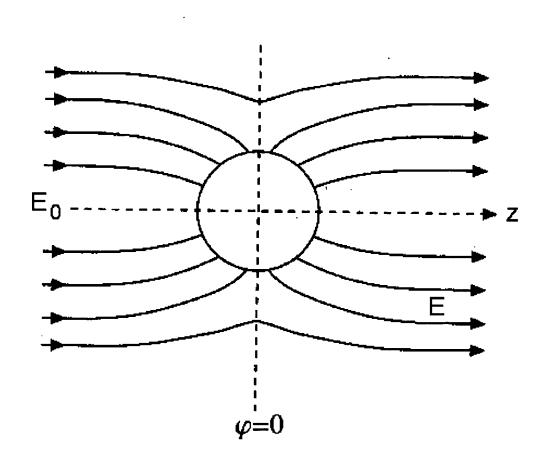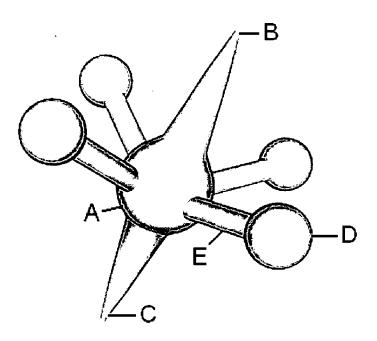
Figure 1

Figure 2

Figure 3

Figure 4

Figure 5

Figure 6

Figure 7

Figure 8

Figure 9

Figure 10

Figure 11

Figure 12
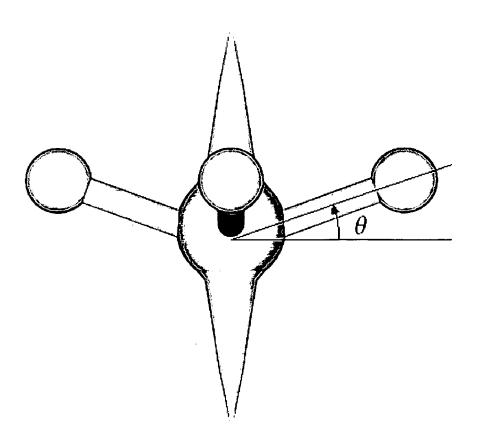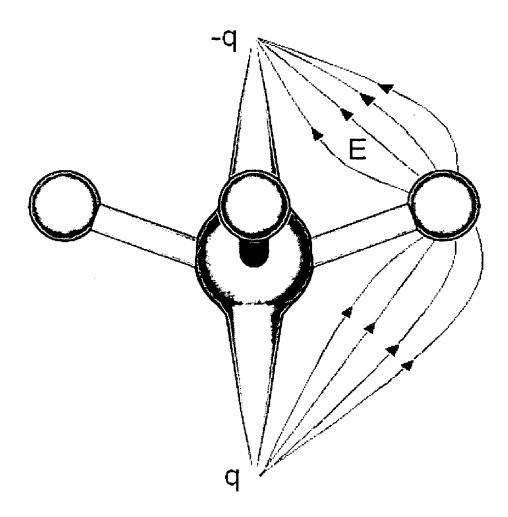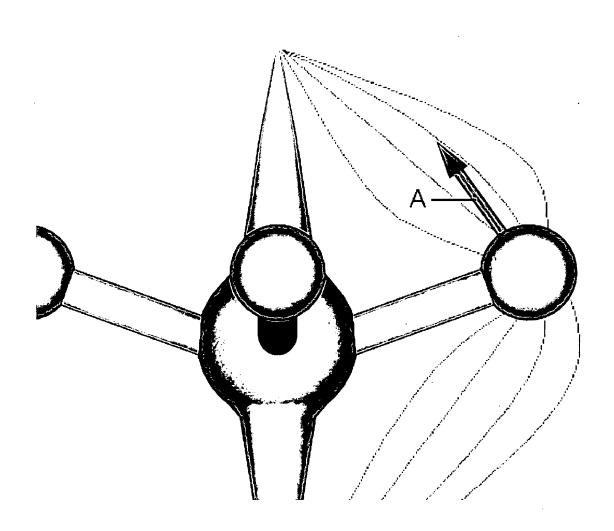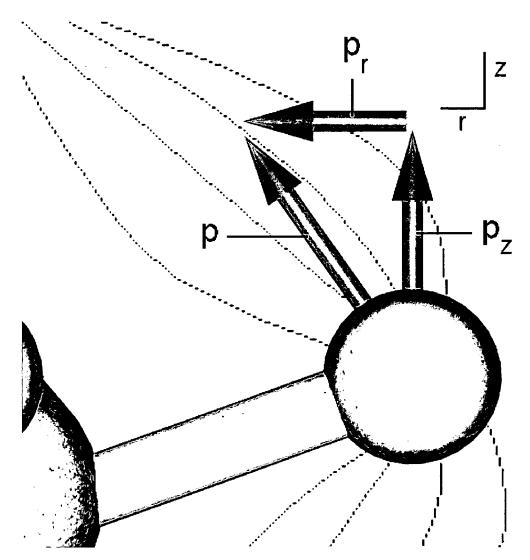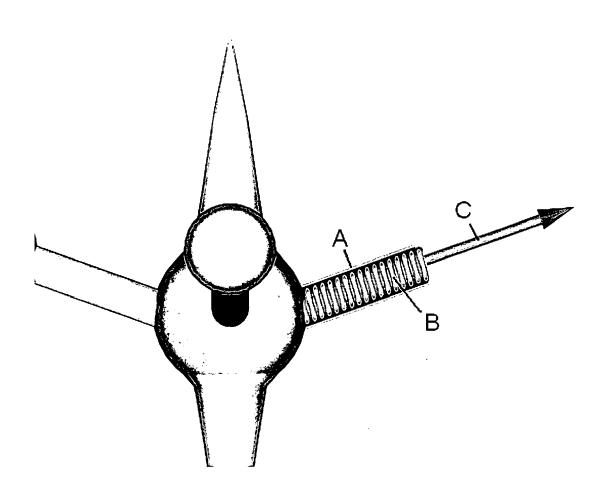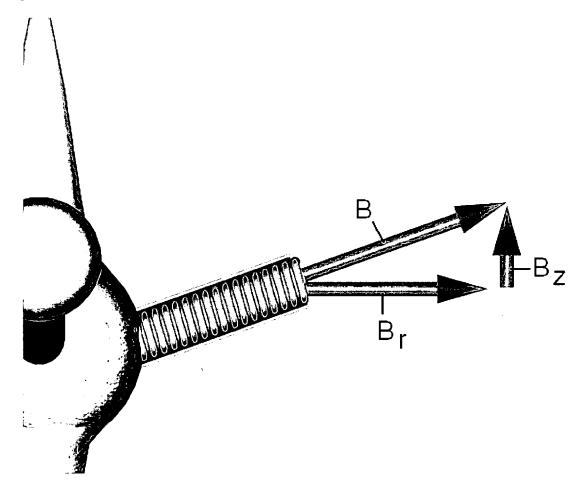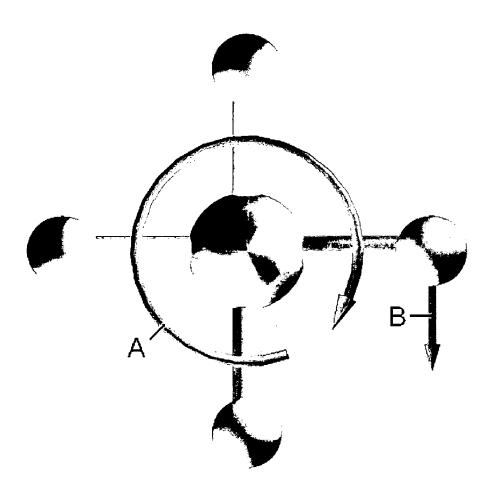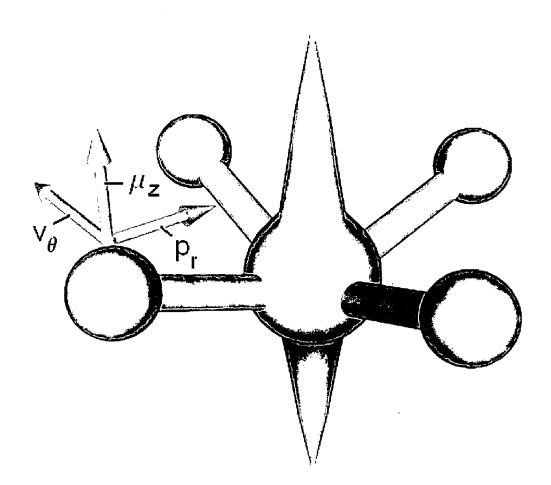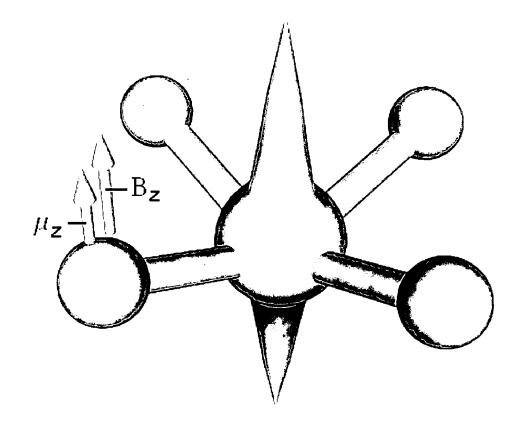
Figure 13
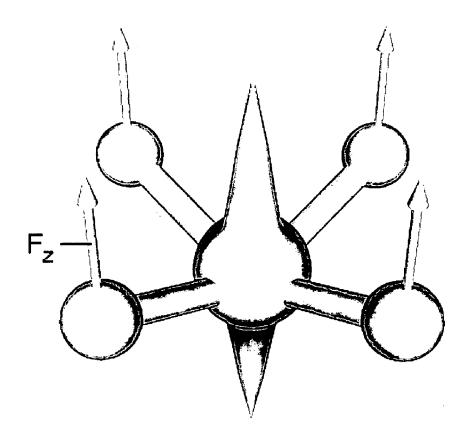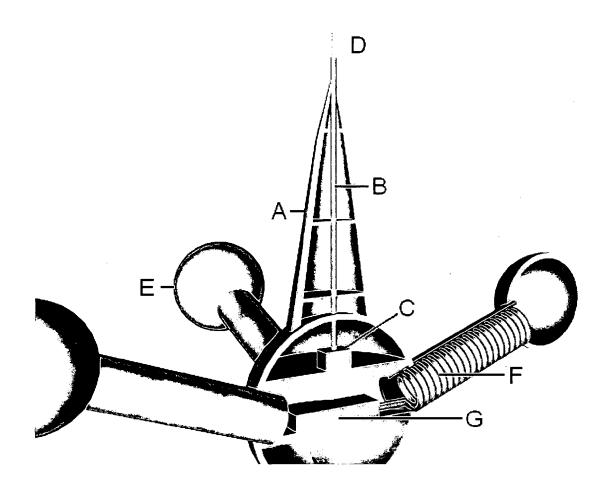
Figure 14

ELECTRIC DIPOLE SPACECRAFT

BRIEF SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0001] This invention is a rotating spacecraft that utilizes four spherical conducting domes perturbing a uniform electric field in order to create a lift force by means of a magnetic moment times the gradient of a magnetic field.

BACKGROUND OF THE INVENTION

[0002] An electric dipole p is two electrical charges of opposite sign $\{q, -q\}$ separated by a distance a.

$$p = qa = \text{coulomb·meter}$$

[0003] If this dipole is moving with a velocity v, it produces a magnetic moment μ.

$$\mu = pv = qav = \text{coulomb meter} \frac{\text{meter}}{\text{sec}} = \frac{\text{coulomb}}{\text{sec}} \text{meter}^2 = I Area$$

[0004] The magnetic moment is equal to a current I circulating around an area. The magnetic field B has units of kilogram per second per charge coulomb.

$$B = \frac{\text{kg}}{\text{sec } coul}$$

[0005] The gradient of the magnetic field in the vertical direction z has units of

$$\frac{d\text{B}}{dz} = \frac{\text{kg}}{\text{sec } coul \text{ meter}}$$

[0006] This gradient interacting with a magnetic moment creates a force F measured in newtons.

$$F_z = \mu \frac{d\text{B}}{dz} = \frac{coul \text{ m}^2}{\text{sec}} \frac{\text{kg}}{\text{sec } coul \text{ m}} = \frac{\text{kg } m}{\text{sec}^2} = \text{newton}$$

[0007] In terms of vectors, the force is equal to

$$F = \nabla(\mu \cdot B)$$

which is the gradient ∇ of the dot product (·) of the magnetic moment with the magnetic field. This means that the magnetic moment has to be aligned with the field. The lift force on the spacecraft would then be the magnetic moment in the vertical z-direction μ_z times the magnetic field in the z-direction B_z. For constant magnetic moment, the gradient affects the magnetic field only, resulting in the same force equation

$$F_z = \nabla(\mu_z \cdot B_z) = \mu_z \nabla B_z$$

[0008] Referring to **FIG. 1**, the electric dipole has a positive charge q located on the z-axis at a distance a from the origin of the graph. A second negative charge –q is located at a distance –a from the origin. The positive charge produces an electrostatic potential ϕ_1 at a radius r_1 equal to the charge q divided by 4π times the permittivity of space ϵ_0

$$\varphi_1 = \frac{q}{4\pi\varepsilon_0} \frac{1}{r_1}$$

where the permittivity is linear capacitance, measured in farads per meter. The electrostatic potential has units of volts

$$\varphi = \frac{coul}{\left(\dfrac{\text{farad}}{\text{meter}}\right) \text{meter}} = \frac{coul}{\text{farad}} = \text{volt}$$

because the charge in coulombs held by a capacitor is equal to the capacitance, measured in farads, times the capacitor voltage. Because the second charge has the opposite sign, the potential ϕ_2 at a radius r_2 to the same point in space is

$$\varphi_2 = \frac{-q}{4\pi\varepsilon_0} \frac{1}{r_2}$$

[0009] The total potential ϕ at some point in space is equal to the sum of the two potentials, or

$$\varphi = \varphi_1 + \varphi_2 = \frac{q}{4\pi\varepsilon_0 r_1} - \frac{q}{4\pi\varepsilon_0 r_2} = \frac{q}{4\pi\varepsilon_0}\left[\frac{1}{r_1} - \frac{1}{r_2}\right]$$

[0010] As seen in the diagram, the point of space is a distance r from the origin. Using the law of cosines, radius r_1 can be written as

$$r_1 = (r^2 + a^2 - 2ar\cos(\theta))^{\frac{1}{2}} = r\left(1 + \left(\frac{a}{r}\right)^2 - 2\left(\frac{a}{r}\right)\cos(\theta)\right)^{\frac{1}{2}} = r(1 - 2xt + t^2)^{\frac{1}{2}}$$

where t is the ratio of the charge location over the radius, and x is $\cos(\theta)$. The potential for positive charge q_1 can be written

$$\varphi_1 = \frac{q}{4\pi\varepsilon_0} \frac{1}{r_1} = \frac{q}{4\pi\varepsilon_0} \frac{1}{r}(1 - 2xt + t^2)^{-1/2}$$

[0011] Dropping the factor $q/4\pi\epsilon_0 r$, the square root can be expressed in terms of the Legendre polynomial $P_n \cos(\theta)$ of the nth power

$$g(t, x) = (1 - 2xt + t^2)^{-1/2} = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} P_n(x) t^n$$

where the absolute value of t is less than one. The polynomial coefficients of t^n can be obtained by using the binomial theorem to expand the generating function g(t,x) as

$$(1 - 2xt + t^2)^{-1/2} = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{(2n)!}{2^{2n}(n!)^2}(2xt - t^2)^n$$

which evaluates to

$$\frac{0!}{2^0(0!)^2}(2xt - t^2)^0 + \frac{2!}{2^2(1!)^2}(2xt - t^2)^1 + \frac{4!}{2^4(2!)^2}(2xt - t^2)^2$$

$$1t^0 + xt^1 + \left(\frac{3}{2}x^2 - \frac{1}{2}\right)t^2 + \text{order}(t^3)$$

[0012] The first three Legendre polynomials are therefore

$$P_0 = 1$$

$$P_1 = x$$

$$P_2 = \frac{1}{2}(3x^2 - 1)$$

[0013] The electrostatic potential for both charges of the electric dipole is

$$\varphi = \frac{q}{4\pi\varepsilon_0}\frac{1}{r}\left\{\left(1 - 2\left(\frac{a}{r}\right)\cos(\theta) + \left(\frac{a}{r}\right)^2\right)^{-1/2} - \left(1 + 2\left(\frac{a}{r}\right)\cos(\theta) + \left(\frac{a}{r}\right)^2\right)^{-1/2}\right\}$$

[0014] The potential can be evaluated in terms of the Legendre polynomials as

$$\varphi = \frac{q}{4\pi\varepsilon_0 r}\left[\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} P_n(\cos(\theta))\left(\frac{a}{r}\right)^n - \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} P_n(\cos(\theta))(-1)^n\left(\frac{a}{r}\right)^n\right]$$

$$= \frac{2q}{4\pi\varepsilon_0 r}\left[P_1(\cos(\theta))\left(\frac{a}{r}\right) + P_3(\cos(\theta))\left(\frac{a}{r}\right)^3 + \ldots\right]$$

[0015] The first and most dominant term when the radius is much greater than location a is equal to

$$\varphi = \frac{2aq}{4\pi\varepsilon_0}\frac{P_1(\cos(\theta)0}{r^2}$$

which is the electric dipole potential and 2aq is the dipole moment

p=2aq

[0016] Now imagine a constant electric field E_0 which is perturbed by a conducting sphere of radius a. The unperturbed electrostatic potential outside the sphere would the negative of the electric field times the radius times the Legendre polynomial, or

$\phi_1 = -E_0 r P_1$

[0017] The electrostatic potential perturbed by the charges is the voltage E_0a times the radius a times the a of the dipole

moment times the Legendre polynomial divided by the radius squared

$$\varphi_2 = E_0 a a a \frac{P_1}{r^2} = E_0 a^3 \frac{P_1}{r^2}$$

[0018] The total potential outside the sphere is the sum of the two potentials equal to

$$\varphi = -E_0 r P_1 + E_0 a^3 \frac{P_1}{r^2} = -E_0 P_1\left(r - \frac{a^3}{r^2}\right) = -E_0 r P_1\left(1 - \left(\frac{a}{r}\right)^3\right)$$

[0019] Referring to **FIG. 2**, the previously uniform electric field is shown perturbed by the neutral conducting sphere. The center of the sphere is taken as the origin and the z-axis is oriented parallel to the original uniform field.

[0020] The electric field induces a surface charge density σ on the sphere equal to the negative of the permittivity of space times the gradient of the electrostatic potential

$$\sigma = -\varepsilon_0 \frac{\partial\varphi}{\partial r}|_{r=a} = 3\varepsilon_0 E_0 \cos(\theta)$$

[0021] The electric field also induces an electric dipole moment on the sphere equal to the

$$p = \frac{qa}{r} \cdot \frac{2a^2}{r} = 4\pi\varepsilon_0 E_0 a^3$$

with units of coulomb-meter. If this sphere is rotating around a central axis at a velocity v, it will create a magnetic moment μ equal to the dipole moment times the velocity.

$\mu = pv$

with units of ampere-meter^2.

SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0022] As shown in the preceding background section, a neutral conducting sphere placed in a uniform electric field will generate a magnetic moment when rotated around a central axis. The electric field can be created by two points charges of opposite sign separated by a distance between them.

[0023] Referring to **FIG. 3**, the spacecraft has a spherical cabin (A) to which are attached cone-shaped electrostatic towers (B,C) above and below the cabin along the direction of travel in the z-direction. Because the electric field goes from the positive charge to the negative charge, the tip of the lower tower has a positively charged electrode, and the upper tower has a negatively charged electrode. Four equally-spaced neutral conducting spheres (D) are connected to the cabin by non-conducting tubes (E). The tubes make an angle with the cabin such that the distance (CD) is greater than distance (DB). The angle θ of the tube with respect to the cabin can be seen in side view **FIG. 4**.

3

[0024] Referring to **FIG. 5,** the charges create a uniform spherical field between the towers. The conducting spheres perturb this field such that the electric field (E) points toward the upper tower in a manner similar to that shown previously in **FIG. 2**.

[0025] Referring to **FIG. 6,** the conducting sphere produces an electric dipole moment (A) pointing at an angle toward the upper tower.

[0026] Referring to **FIG. 7,** by the law of addition of vectors, the electric dipole p̄ can be represented by two orthogonal vectors pointing in the vertical z-direction p_z and in the inward radial direction p_r.

[0027] Referring to **FIG. 8,** the hollow tube (A) connecting the cabin with the conducting sphere contains a spiral-wound electrical solenoid (B) which produces a magnetic field (C). This magnetic field B can be decomposed into two orthogonal vectors pointing in the vertical z-direction B_z and in the outward radial direction B_r as shown in **FIG. 9**.

[0028] Referring to top-view **FIG. 10,** the spacecraft has a clockwise angular velocity ω (A) which gives the conducting sphere a velocity v as shown by the vector (B). By the right-hand rule of physics, the angular velocity vector points in the negative z-direction. The angular velocity in the z-direction crossed with the radius r in the radial direction produces a velocity v in the clockwise θ-direction using cylindrical coordinates {r,θ,z}.

$$v_\theta = w_z \times r_r = -\omega r$$

[0029] Referring to **FIG. 11,** the negative radial dipole moment p_r crossed with the negative velocity v_θ of the sphere produces a positive magnetic moment μ_z in the z-direction.

$$\mu_z = p_r \times v_\theta = (-p_r)(-v_\theta) = pv$$

[0030] Referring to **FIG. 12,** the magnetic field B_z in the vertical z-direction is dotted with the magnetic moment μ_z in the z-direction to produce a force F_z in the vertical z-direction on each conducting sphere **(FIG. 13)**.

$$F_z = \nabla(\mu_z \cdot B_z) = \mu_z \nabla B_z$$

[0031] The magnetic field that is produced by the solenoid actually curves away and around. Thus there is a gradient of the field in the z-direction.

[0032] The force can also be expressed in tensor notation. The magnetic B field in the vertical direction is part of an electromagnetic 4×4 matrix Faraday tensor F

$$F_\beta^\alpha = \begin{array}{c} \beta = t \quad r \quad \theta \quad z \\ \begin{array}{c} \alpha = t \\ \alpha = r \\ \alpha = \theta \\ \alpha = z \end{array} \begin{vmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & B_z & 0 \\ 0 & -B_z & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{vmatrix} \end{array}$$

which shows that the magnetic field is located in slot F^r_θ of the Faraday tensor. In tensor notation the subscripts and superscripts have to match up on both sides of the equation. Matching subscripts and superscripts on the same side of the equation cancel. In this case, the electric dipole moment is

in the radial direction p_r. The velocity can be represented as a time derivative of the θ-coordinate x^θ or

$$v^\theta = \frac{\partial x\theta}{\partial t}$$

[0033] Thus the force component in the z-direction becomes

$$F_z = p_r v^\theta F^r_{\theta,z} = (-p)(-v)\frac{\partial B_z}{\partial z} = pv\frac{\partial B_z}{\partial z}$$

where the angular and radial tensor components cancel and comma-z (, z) represents differentiation of the magnetic field in the z-direction.

[0034] The spacecraft design also has an inherent motion control system for moving in various directions. If the magnetic field of one solenoid arm is increased or decreased, the force on that sphere will be increased or decreased. Thus the spacecraft can turn in a particular direction.

A BRIEF DESCRIPTION OF THE DRAWINGS

[0035] **FIG. 1**. Electric dipole.

[0036] **FIG. 2**. Uniform electric field perturbed by electric dipole.

[0037] **FIG. 3**. Perspective view of spacecraft.

[0038] **FIG. 4**. Angle of solenoid tube.

[0039] **FIG. 5**. Electric field perturbed by conducting sphere.

[0040] **FIG. 6**. Electric dipole generated by conducting sphere.

[0041] **FIG. 7**. Orthogonal vector components of electric dipole.

[0042] **FIG. 8**. Magnetic field produced by tube arm solenoid.

[0043] **FIG. 9**. Orthogonal vector components of magnetic field.

[0044] **FIG. 10**. Angular velocity of hull.

[0045] **FIG. 11**. Magnetic moment produced by radial electric dipole and sphere velocity.

[0046] **FIG. 12**. Dot product of the magnetic moment with the magnetic field.

[0047] **FIG. 13**. Vertical lift force on all four conducting spheres.

[0048] **FIG. 14**. Perpective view of spacecraft interior.

DETAILED DESCRIPTION OF THE INVENTION

[0049] 1. Referring to the cut-away view **FIG. 14,** the construction of the spacecraft is a thin-wall insulating thermoplastic having a dielectric constant in the range of 20 kilovolts per millimeter (A). An insulated electrode (B) runs from the cabin power supply and high-voltage transformer

(C) to the tip of each tower (D). The four spheres (E) are silver plated to make them conducting. The tube solenoids (F) are driven by a direct current power supply (G).

[0050] 2. The present model uses 3D computer design software and stereolithography fabrication techniques to create the thin-wall, low-weight, hollow structure of the hull. The computer model is sliced into many thin horizontal slices. A laser, mounted on an x-y table, draws out the slice on a table immersed in a bath of liquid polymer. Due to its sensitivity to the light, the liquid polymerizes. The table is then lowered a few thousandths of an inch more and the process is repeated. Thus making hollow spherical and conical shapes is extremely easy to do. Parts can be designed and stored in *.STL stereolithography files for transmission by Internet e-mail to the service bureau machine shop which sends the finished parts back the next day by express mail.

I claim:

1. A spacecraft comprising:

a. a spherical cabin;

b. an electrostatic conical tower mounted on top of item (1a), supporting a vertically-mounted negatively-charged insulated electrode at the tip of the tower;

c. an electrostatic conical tower mounted on the bottom of item (1a), supporting a vertically-mounted positively-charged insulated electrode at the tip of the tower;

d. a vertical electric dipole created by items (1b) and (1c);

e. a high-voltage transformer to drive item (1d), mounted in item (1a);

f. four tubular arms, mounted at 90° around and extending at an angle from item (1a);

g. four solenoids, each of which is mounted axially inside item (1f);

h. a direct current power supply to drive item (1g);

i. four silver-plated conducting spheres, each of which is mounted on the end of item (1f);

2. an electrostatic lift system that:

a. produces a uniform spherical electric field by means of item (1d) which envelopes item (1i);

b. produces a perturbed electric field due to the presence of item (1i);

c. produces an electric dipole moment in the direction of item (1b) due to items (2a) and (2b);

d. produces a vertical magnetic moment due to the clock-wise angular velocity of item (1a) combined with item (2c);

e. produces a vertical lift force on item (1i) due to item (2d) combined with the magnetic field gradient in the vertical direction produced by item (1g); and

f. creates a motion control system by varying the current to item (1g) in order to increase or decrease the effect of item (2e) on a particular item (1i).

* * * * *

US 20060144035A1

(54) **PHOTON SPACECRAFT**

(76) Inventor: **John Quincy St. Clair**, San Juan, PR (US)

Correspondence Address:
JOHN ST. CLAIR
52 KINGS COURT, 4A
SAN JUAN, PR 00911 (US)

(57) **ABSTRACT**

A spacecraft propulsion system utilizing photon particles to create negative energy over the hull in order to generate a lift force on the hull.

Figure 1

Figure 2

Figure 3

Figure 4

Figure 5

Figure 6
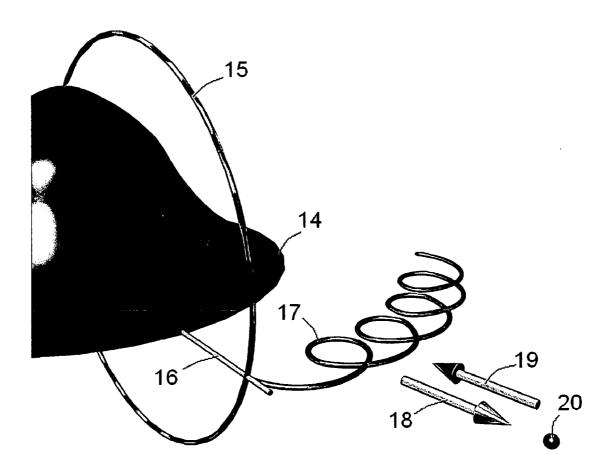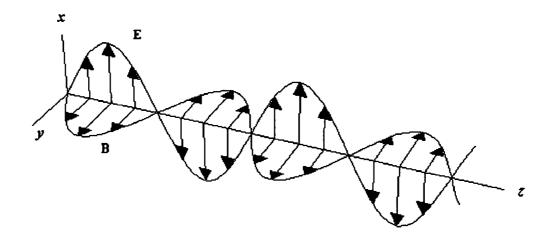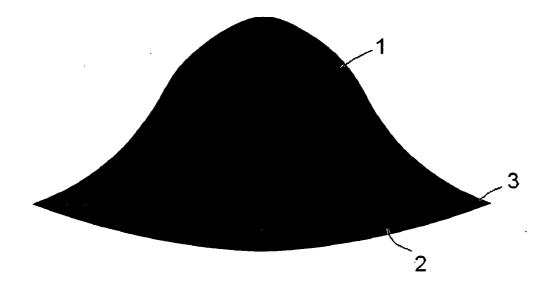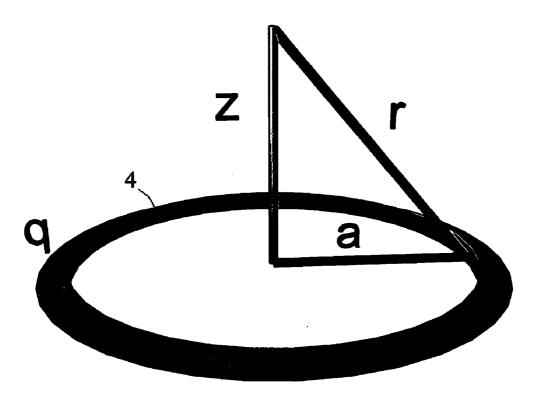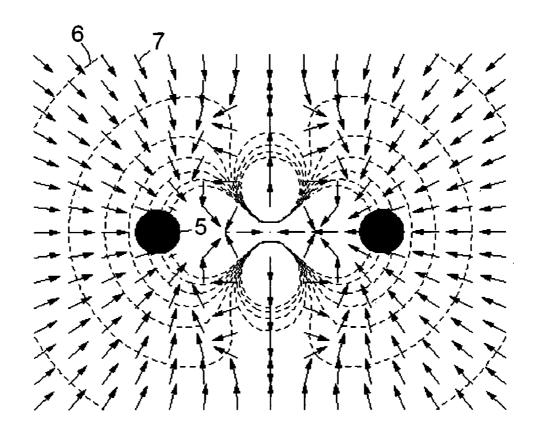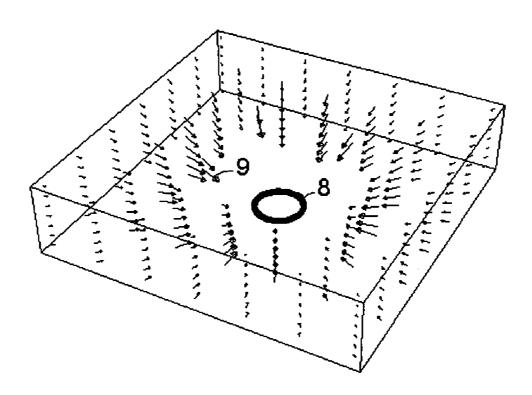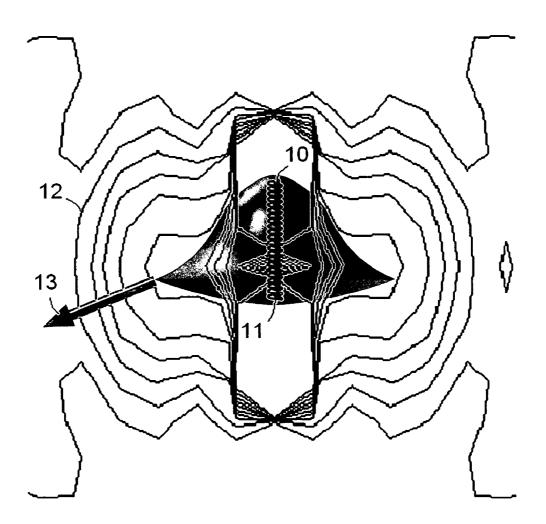
Figure 7
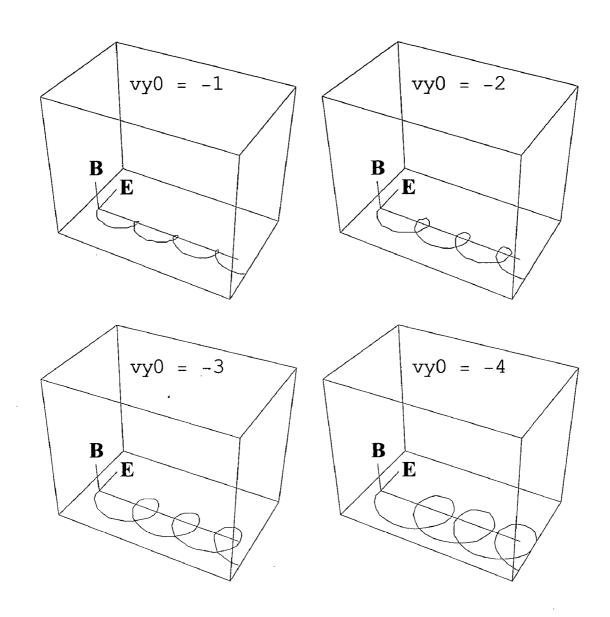
Figure 8
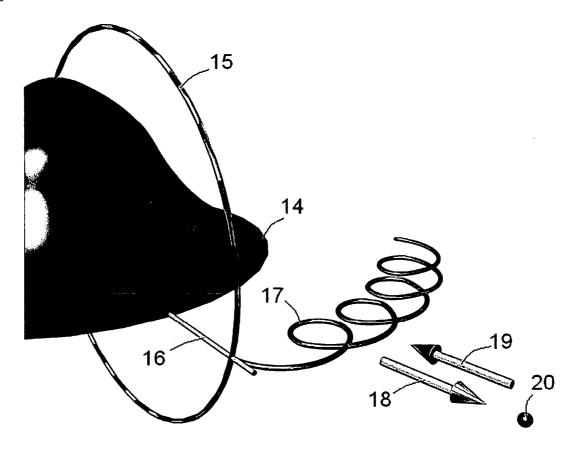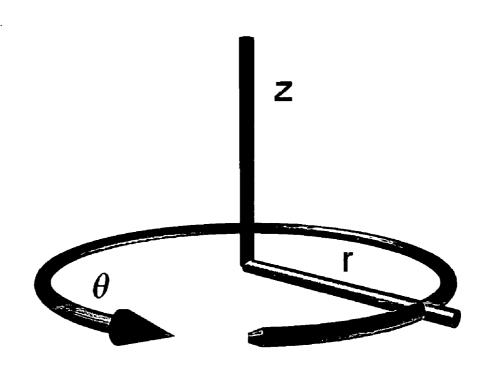
Figure 9

PHOTON SPACECRAFT

BRIEF SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0001] This invention is a spacecraft propulsion system that employs photon particles to generate a field of negative energy in order to produce lift on the hull.

BACKGROUND OF THE INVENTION

[0002] Referring to **FIG. 1**, an electromagnetic wave traveling in the z-direction consists of an electric E field vibrating in the x-direction and a magnetic flux density B field vibrating at right angles in the horizontal y-direction. The energy-stress-momentum of this photon can be analyzed using Einstein's General Theory of Relativity and the Faraday F tensor. The Faraday tensor is a 4×4 matrix containing the electromagnetic wave components as shown here in general where c is the speed of light

$$F^\alpha_\beta = \begin{array}{c} t \\ x \\ y \\ z \end{array} \begin{vmatrix} 0 & \frac{E_x}{c} & \frac{E_y}{c} & \frac{E_z}{c} \\ \frac{E_x}{c} & 0 & B_z & -B_y \\ \frac{E_y}{c} & -B_z & 0 & B_x \\ \frac{E_z}{c} & B_y & -B_x & 0 \end{vmatrix}$$

For this particular photon, this tensor is

$$F^\alpha_\beta = \begin{array}{c} t \\ x \\ y \\ z \end{array} \begin{vmatrix} 0 & \frac{E_x}{c} & 0 & 0 \\ \frac{E_x}{c} & 0 & 0 & -B_y \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & B_y & 0 & 0 \end{vmatrix}$$

[0003] The elemental spacetime length ds squared is equal to sum of the squares of the Cartesian elemental lengths

$$(ds)^2 = -(dt)^2 + (dx)^2 + (dy)^2 + (dz)^2$$

The coefficients of this equation, $\{-1,1,1,1\}$ are the diagonal components of the g metric tensor

$$g_{\alpha\beta} = \begin{array}{c} t \\ x \\ y \\ z \end{array} \begin{vmatrix} -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{vmatrix}$$

The stress-energy-momentum tensor T can then be calculated for the photon using the Faraday tensor and the g metric tensor in the following equation from gravitation physics

$$4\pi T^{\mu\nu} = F^{\mu\alpha}F^\nu_\alpha - \frac{1}{4}g^{\mu\nu}F_{\alpha\beta}F^{\alpha\beta}$$

The stress-energy-momentum tensor indicates the curvature of space due to the application of electromagnetic fields, mass, angular momentum and charge. The mass of the Earth, for example, generates a negative curvature of spacetime such that objects fall toward the mass. The T tensor, which is also a 4×4 matrix, contains the momentum or flux terms in the first row and first column. The normal pressure stress is located along the diagonal. The shearing stresses are located off the diagonal. The energy term is in the upper left corner as depicted here,

$$T^{\mu\nu} = \begin{array}{c} t \\ x \\ y \\ z \end{array} \begin{vmatrix} energy & flux_x & flux_y & flux_z \\ -flux_x & pressure_x & shear_{xy} & shear_{xz} \\ -flux_y & shear_{yx} & pressure_y & shear_{yz} \\ -flux_z & shear_{zx} & shear_{zy} & pressure_z \end{vmatrix}$$

[0004] Since $B^2 = E^2/c^2$, the stress-energy-momentum tensor for the photon is therefore

$$T^\mu_\nu = \begin{array}{c} t \\ x \\ y \\ z \end{array} \begin{vmatrix} \frac{-E^2}{c^2} & 0 & 0 & \frac{+E^2}{c^2} \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ \frac{-E^2}{c^2} & 0 & 0 & \frac{+E^2}{c^2} \end{vmatrix}$$

This remarkable result shows that the photon is actually a negative energy particle (top left corner) which is pushed along by a positive pressure wave (lower right corner). The particle has a positive flux (upper right corner) in the z-direction, as well as a balancing negative flux in the lower left corner so that the overall momentum of the universe remains the same. All four components cancel and we see the photon as a massless particle moving at the speed of light.

[0005] Thus the key idea behind this invention is that it is possible to cancel out the pressure term and leave a stationary vibrating electromagnetic field of negative energy over the hull of the spacecraft. The importance of negative energy is that it is a prerequisite to generating wormholes between space and hyperspace.

[0006] Hyperspace consists of the those co-dimensions which have different physics constants such as a low speed of light. The existence of hyperspace, which has a white misty look, is not a well-known scientific concept. Experiments with our magnetic vortex wormhole generators, hyperspace torque generator, full body levitation using Chi Kung breathing, arm levitation by spinning the co-gravitational K field, full body teleportation through hyperspace a distance of 100 meters using a pulsed gravitational wave, jumping into hyperspace, having a plate of toast enfold off the breakfast table and disappear into thin air, walking through walls and doors out-of-dimension, looking into other dimensions, remote viewing through subspace to distances of 100,000 light years, and other electromagnetic experiments carried out by co-researchers, have shown us the reality and existence of hyperspace.

[0007] Referring to **FIG. 2**, the spacecraft consists of an upper (**1**) and lower (**2**) hull attached by ceramic insulators

to a circular ring (**3**). The ring provides support and is attached to an outer sharp-edged rim which is electrostatically charged to a potential −V. The purpose of the charged rim is to generate a radial electric E field around the vehicle.

[0008] Referring to **FIG. 3**, the radius of the ring (**4**) is equal to a. The distance from a point on the ring to the z-axis is r. The potential on the z-axis is therefore the charge divided by the distance,

$$potZ = \frac{q}{\sqrt{a^2 + r^2}}$$

This potential is expanded as a series in terms of inverse radius r

$$potZout = \frac{35qa^8}{128r^9} - \frac{5qa^6}{16r^7} + \frac{2qa^4}{8r^5} - \frac{qa^2}{2r^3} + \frac{q}{r}$$

The potential outside the ring can be written in terms of the Legendre polynomials P

$$Vout = \sum_{n=0}^{s} \left(\frac{a}{r}\right)^{n+1} A[n] LegendreP[n, \cos(\theta)]$$

where s is the number of terms in the expansion. By equating the known particular solution potZout on the z-axis with the general Vout solution, the coefficients A[n] are found to be

$$A(0) = \frac{q}{a}$$
$$A(1) = 0$$
$$A(2) = \frac{-q}{2a}$$
$$A(3) = 0$$

which are substituted back into the Vout equation to get the potential outside the ring.

[0009] Referring to **FIG. 4**, the potential (dotted lines **6**) looking at a slice through the ring (**5**) is shown together with the electric E field. The negative gradient of the potential is the electric field (**7**) shown by the direction of the arrows. The importance of this diagram is that the electric field points in the radial direction toward the negatively charged ring. The force on an electron is the electron charge times the electric field

$$F = q_e E_r = -|q_e|(-|E_r|) = +F$$

Because the electron charge is negative and the radial field points in the negative direction toward the ring, the force on the electron is positive. Thus the electron moves away from the ring in the positive radial direction. A 3-dimensional plot of the ring (**8**) and the electric field (**9**) is shown in **FIG. 5**.

[0010] The stress-energy-momentum generated by a radial electric field is calculated using the Faraday F tensor

$$F^\beta_\alpha = \begin{vmatrix} 0 & E_r & 0 & 0 \\ E_r & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{vmatrix}$$

The g metric tensor has to be given in spherical coordinates {r,θ,φ}

$$g_{\alpha\beta} = \begin{vmatrix} -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & r^2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & r^2 \sin(\theta)^2 \end{vmatrix}$$

where θ is the angle from the vertical to the radius r. The stress tensor T^{rr} along the radial direction is

$$T^{rr} = \frac{E_r^2}{8\pi c^2}$$

which shows that the pressure is negative along the radial line equal to the square of the radial electric field divided by the square of the speed of light. Because the field is squared, it doesn't matter that the electric field points in the negative direction. The square makes it positive, but the overall curvature pressure is negative. Thus this negative pressure cancels out the positive pressure propelling the photon along. The second key idea of the invention is how to generate this photon moving in the radial direction.

[0011] It has been known for a long time in physics that an electron moving in a circular path will emit photons in a process known by the German word Bremsstrahlung which is translated as "breaking radiation." There are several types of radiation such as classical Bremsstrahlung involving a charged particle making a collision with another charged or uncharged particle in which photons are emitted. The quantum mechanical Bremsstrahlung involves the sudden appearance or disappearance of a charged particle which also emits radiation. In space, having a field of wormholes in which the electrons are spiraling down into hyperspace would result in the emission of photons by the quantum mechanical method. Also, in the atmosphere, having collisions with air molecules results in emission of photons in the classical way.

[0012] In order to get the electrons to spiral around and emit photons, a crossed electromagnetic field is used as shown by the following equation

$$F = q(E_r + v_r \times B_\theta)$$

where the velocity v is in the positive radial direction due to the force of the electric field. The velocity crossed with a magnetic flux density B field in the θ-direction makes the electron move sideways back and forth in a wiggling motion.

[0013] Referring to **FIG. 6**, a direct current solenoid (**10**), represented by multiple current loops, running vertically

through the center of the hull, generates a magnetic field that curves around the outside of the hull, as shown by contour lines (12). The north pole (11) is at the bottom of the hull. A radial arrow (13) from the electrostatically-charged rim is perpendicular to the magnetic field lines. The cross product in the force equation becomes the electron radial velocity times the magnetic field $v_r B_\theta$.

[0014] Referring to **FIG. 7**, the electric field is in the y-direction and the magnetic field is in the z-direction. The flat looping path in the x-direction is the motion of the electron. The electron, which has a negative charge, starts to move in the direction opposite to that of the electric field. In this particular diagram, the electron acquires a velocity in the negative y-direction. Then a sideways force in the x-direction is produced due to the cross product of the velocity with the magnetic field times the negative charge

$$-q(-v_y \times B_z) = +F_x$$

Depending on the magnitude of the velocity, various size loops can be produced.

[0015] In terms of the hull coordinates, because the flat loop is in the plane of the electric field which points in the radial direction, the electron emits light in the radial direction. This condition means that the negative radial pressure created by the electric field cancels the radial pressure of the photon. Thus the photon becomes a stationary vibrating quantum of negative energy. This has the appearance of a luminescent light source. The stress tensor for this condition is therefore

$$T_\mu^\nu = \begin{vmatrix} -\dfrac{E^2}{c^2} & 0 & 0 & \dfrac{E^2}{c^2} \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ -\dfrac{E^2}{c^2} & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{vmatrix} = -\dfrac{E^2}{c^2} \text{ residual negative energy}$$

[0016] residual negative energy

which leaves a residual negative energy per photon.

[0017] Referring to **FIG. 8**, the negatively charged rim (14) produces a radial electric field (16) that crosses the magnetic B field (15) of the solenoid. Electrons emitted by the charged rim then encounter this crossed field which makes them spiral (17) around the hull. Because of the tight loop, the electron emits Bremsstahlung radiation in the radial direction (18). The positive pressure field of the photon, which is directed in the radial direction, is canceled by the negative pressure field (19) created by the electric field. Because the photon energy is negative, a stationary vibrating electromagnetic quantum of negative energy (20) surrounds the hull.

[0018] This negative energy and the pressure stress created by the electromagnetic fields open up wormholes between space and hyperspace. The potential head is positive from hyperspace into space because the energy of hyperspace is more positive than the negative energy field. The low-density hyperspace energy fills the hull and its surrounding space with a white misty hyperspace energy which makes the spacecraft lighter in mass, and therefore lighter in weight within a gravitational field. The actual

physics is more complicated still because the electrons find that the resistance of hyperspace is lower than the resistance of space. Thus they spiral down the wormholes which results in a sudden disappearance of charge. The quantum mechanical effect of this is to radiate even more photons which in turn produce even more negative energy.

[0019] The lift on the hull is generated by the radial electric field. In cylindrical coordinates, the g metric tensor is

$$g_{\alpha\beta} = \begin{vmatrix} -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & r^2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{vmatrix}$$

Using this metric tensor, the pressure stress in the vertical direction T^{zz} is

$$T^{zz} = \frac{E^2}{8\pi c^2}$$

which is a positive curvature over the hull. The mass of Earth produces a negative curvature in which objects fall toward the mass. By counteracting this negative curvature with a more than positive curvature, lift is developed on the spacecraft. Because the negative energy lowers the effective mass of the vehicle, the acceleration is large with a modest electric field. Moreover, in our dimension, the speed of light is 299792458 meters per second. Hyperspace energy has a speed of light equal to one meter per second. Thus the stress is amplified by a factor of

$$A = \left(\frac{299792458 \, m/s}{1 m/s} \right)^2 \approx 9 \cdot 10^{16}$$

Because electromagnetic fields are relativistic, motion in a low-velocity-of-light energy field amplifies their strength.

SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0020] It is the object of this invention to create a spacecraft propulsion system that produces wormholes between space and hyperspace using negative energy in order to generate lift on the hull. It was discovered in the Riemannian curvature calculations of gravitation physics that negative energy is required to keep open the throat of the wormhole. From experiments with the magnetic vortex wormhole generator, it is known that the proper combination of electromagnetic fields, together with this negative energy, can create a wormhole through which smoke can be blown into hyperspace.

[0021] Referring to **FIG. 9**, the directions of force, velocity, and electromagnetic fields are referred to in the cylindrical coordinate system $\{r,\theta,z\}$. An electrostatically charged sharp-edged ring in the θ-direction around the hull of the spacecraft produces a radial electric field. A vertical solenoid in the z-direction through the center of the hull

produces a magnetic field which is perpendicular at the rim to the electric field. With the current in the solenoid flowing in the clockwise (−θ) direction, using the right-hand rule, the magnetic field points in the upward z-direction outside the rim. Because the rim is charged to a negative voltage, the electric field points toward the hull in the negative radial (−r) direction. Electrons emitted by the rim travel outward (+v) because the charge on the electron is negative which, together with the negative electric field, produces a positive radial force. The radial force on the electron causes it to acquire a velocity which interacts with the magnetic field. The cross product of the velocity (+v) with the positive (+B) magnetic field produces a sideways force on the electron in the negative θ-direction. However, because the charge on the electron is negative, the force is

$$F = -q\{v_r, 0, 0\} \times \{0, 0, B_z\} = \{0, qB_z v_r, 0\}$$

which is positive in the θ-direction. It is this sideways force that produces a flat spiraling or looping motion whereby the electron emits photons, known in German as Bremsstahlung radiation, in the radial direction. The photon, which is actually a quantum of negative energy, has a positive radial pressure which propels it along. Because the radial electric field produces a negative pressure in the radial direction, the two opposite fields cancel in the radial direction to form a residual stationary vibrating negative energy. Thus the hull becomes surrounded by negative energy which, together with the pressure stresses created by the electric field, generates wormholes between space and hyperspace.

[0022] The gravitational potential between hyperspace and space is positive because the hyperspace energy is more positive than the negative energy around the hull. Thus the low-density, low-speed-of-light hyperspace energy flows through the wormhole and fills the hull. This has the effect of reducing the effective mass of the hull. Because the electric field generates a positive pressure over the hull in the vertical z-direction, there is an upward force on the vehicle due to the pressure times the hull area. Since the vehicle has a low mass, there is a modest upward acceleration on the spacecraft equal to the force divided by mass.

A BRIEF DESCRIPTION OF THE DRAWINGS

[0023] **FIG. 1**. Perspective view of an electromagnetic wave.

[0024] **FIG. 2**. Perspective view of spacecraft.

[0025] **FIG. 3**. Perspective view of charged ring.

[0026] **FIG. 4**. Planar plot of the radial electric field produced by charged ring.

[0027] **FIG. 5**. Perspective view of radial electric field around ring.

[0028] **FIG. 6**. Planar view of magnetic flux density field contour lines.

[0029] **FIG. 7**. Perspective view of electron motion in crossed electric and magnetic fields.

[0030] **FIG. 8**. Perspective view of production of negative energy around hull.

[0031] **FIG. 9**. Perspective view of cylindrical coordinate system {r,θ,z}.

DETAILED DESCRIPTION OF THE INVENTION

[0032] 1. The hull is made from a single sheet of aluminum which has been stretched to its yield point by hydraulic cylinders. An upper and lower die is CNC machined to the profile of the hull. The soft sheet is then clamped in the die where it takes on the smooth shape of the hull without any wrinkles. The hull is extremely rigid after forming and does not require any structural reinforcements.

[0033] 2. A section of the aluminum ring is made in a 3D computer graphics program. The model is stored as a stereolithography file (*.stl). The computer model is then sent via Internet e-mail to the stl server who prints the part in an ultraviolet light-cured polymer. The part is returned the next day by Express Mail. Using a rubber blanket mold to create several ring sections, the entire ring is assembled together in another wooden mold box having thin circular laminate-coated particulate wall boards on either side of the ring. Then a liquid rubber mold is poured on top of the ring and allowed to harden overnight at room temperature. Since the rubber mold is flexible, the ring can be extracted fairly easily. This ring model is then sent to the foundry where it is cast in aluminum using the lost wax process in which a wax mold evaporates out of the sand casting. We are also experimenting with non-magnetic copper casting metals containing beryllium having good conductivity.

[0034] 3. A 11.5 cm plastic pipe is mounted on a rotating fixture driven slowly by a microcontoller, stepper motor, and power electronics board. Using a large diameter insulated wire, such as a 17 AWG with a wire diameter of 0.127 cm, the wire is wound slowly on the pipe and expoxied so that the windings don't come loose. The solenoid is then mounted vertically in the hull supported by the support ring and driven by a current generator located nearby on the test rig.

[0035] 4. The ring is driven by a high voltage electrostatic generator similar to the night vision scope high voltage power supplies. The ring charge is isolated from the hull by ceramic insulators.

I claim:

1. A spacecraft propulsion system comprising the components:

an aluminum horizontal circular structural support ring;

an aluminum hull in the shape of a high dome on top and shallow dome on the bottom attached to the circular support ring using ceramic insulators;

an electrostatically negatively-charged sharp-edged circular ring, preferably of non-magnetic aluminum or copper, attached with ceramic insulators to the outside of the support ring;

a solenoid mounted through the center of the hull in the vertical direction and attached to the center of the support ring;

an electrostatic high-voltage generator to drive the outer electrostatic ring; and

a direct high-current generator to drive the solenoid.

5

2. The method of claim 1, wherein a negative radial electric field is generated around the hull by placing a negative potential on the sharp-edged electrostatic ring using the electrostatic generator.

3. The method of claim 1, wherein the current-driven solenoid generates a vertical magnetic field around the hull with the north pole of the solenoid facing down through the bottom of the hull which causes the magnetic flux density field to point up outside the rim.

4. The method of claim 1, wherein electrons are emitted radially by the sharp edge of the charged ring.

5. The methods of claims 2, 3 and 4, wherein the crossed electromagnetic fields cause the electrons to spiral around in flat loops during which photons are emitted in the radial direction.

6. The methods of claims 2 and 5, wherein the negative radial pressure created by the electric field cancels the positive radial pressure of the photon to leave a residual quantum of negative energy per photon around the hull.

7. The methods of claims 2 and 6, wherein the pressure stress created by the electric field, and the negative energy combine to form wormholes between space and hyperspace.

8. The method of claim 7, wherein low-density hyper-space energy of a higher gravitational potential flows through the wormholes to fill the hull and surrounding space around the hull with the effect of reducing the effective mass of the spacecraft.

9. The method of claim 2, wherein the electric field generates a positive pressure in the vertical direction over the hull which together with the hull surface area, generates an upward lift force on the hull.

10. The method of claim 6, wherein the negative energy, having a low light speed, amplifies the strength of the electromagnetic fields and pressure stress fields.

11. The methods of claims 4 and 7, wherein the electrons spiral down the low resistance wormholes into hyperspace such as to create a sudden disappearance of electrical charge which quantum mechanically causes a large emission of additional photons.

* * * * *

US 20040200925A1

(54) **CAVITATING OIL HYPERSPACE ENERGY GENERATOR**

(76) Inventor: **John Quincy St.Clair**, San Juan, PR (US)

Correspondence Address:
John St.Clair
Hyperspace Research Institute
52 Kings Court, 4A
San Juan, PR 00911 (US)

(21) Appl. No.: **10/372,557**

(57) **ABSTRACT**

A hyperspace energy generator that uses cavitating oil bubbles within a magnetic field in order to create wormholes between space and hyperspace for the purpose of permeating the hull of a spacecraft with low-density hyperspace energy.
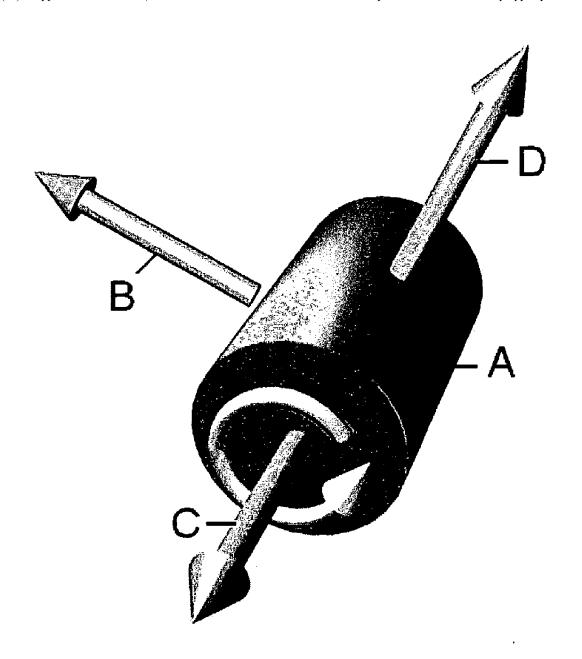
Figure 1
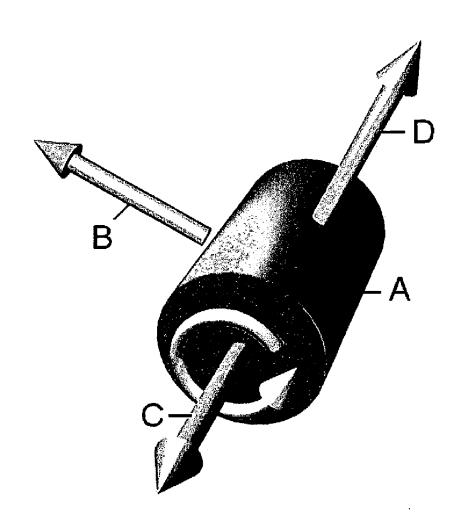
Figure 2

Figure 3
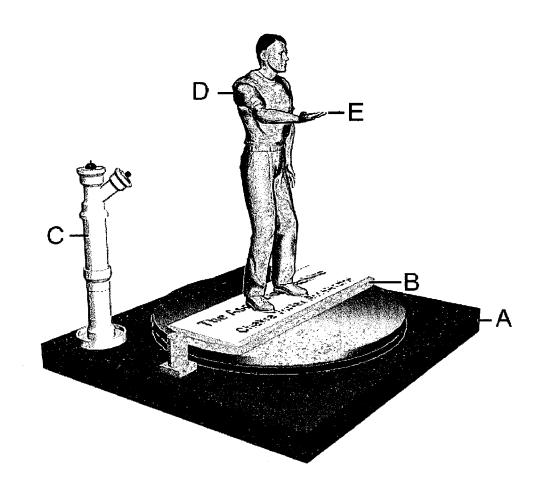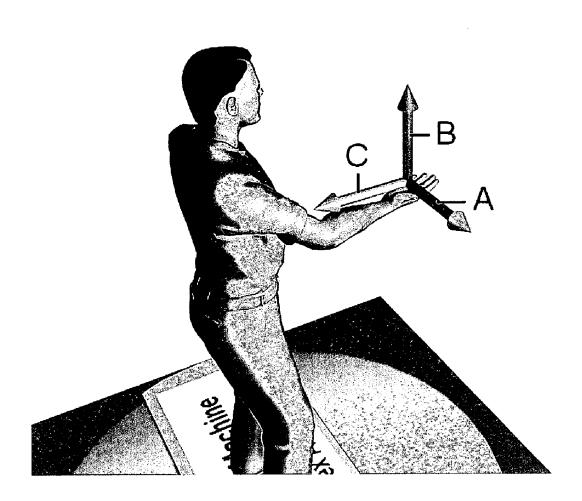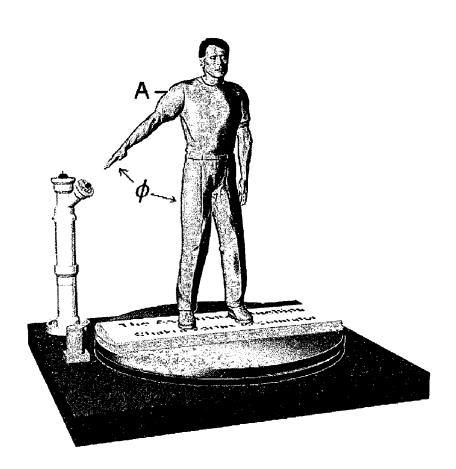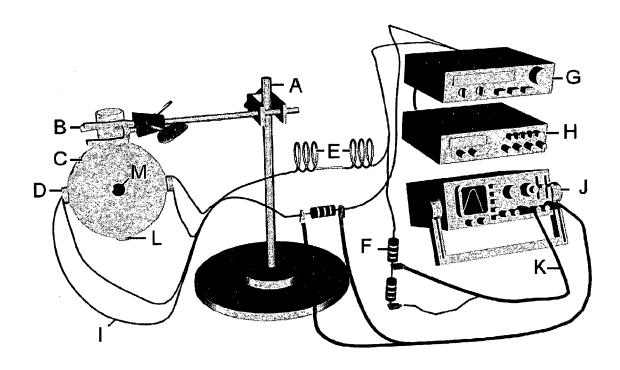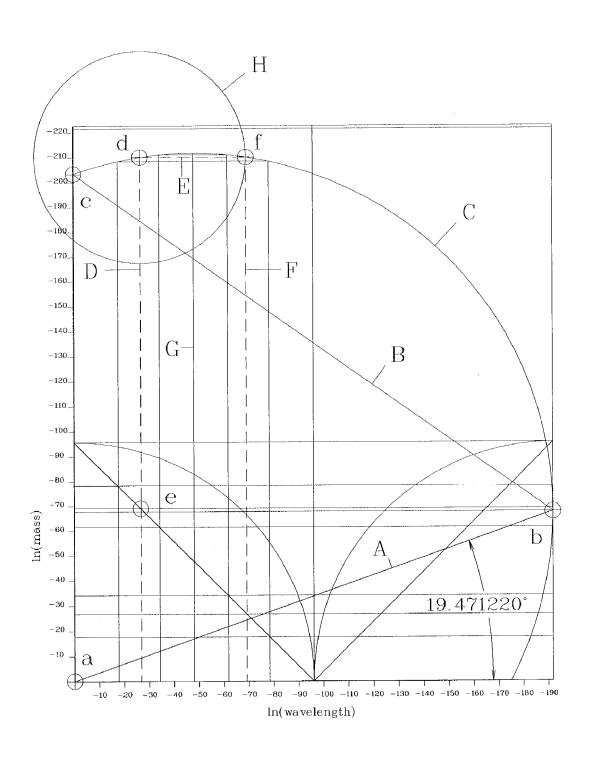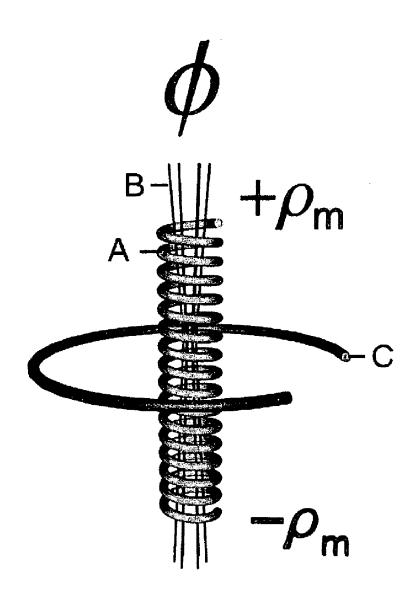
Figure 4

Figure 5

Figure 6

Figure 7

Figure 8

Figure 9

Figure 10

Figure 11

Figure 12

Figure 13

Figure 14

Figure 15

Figure 16
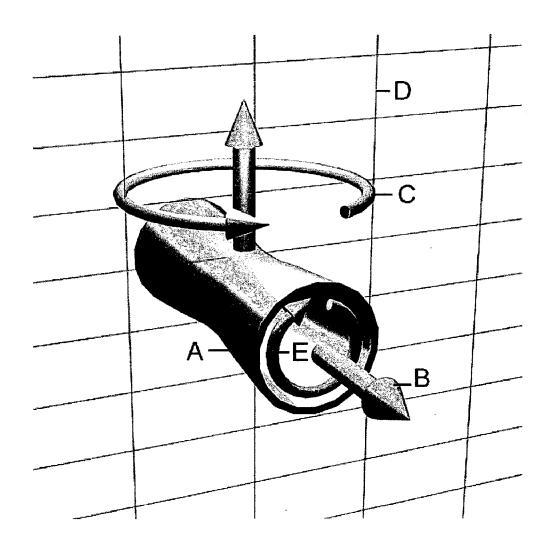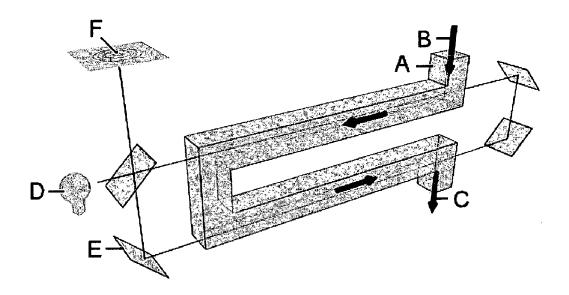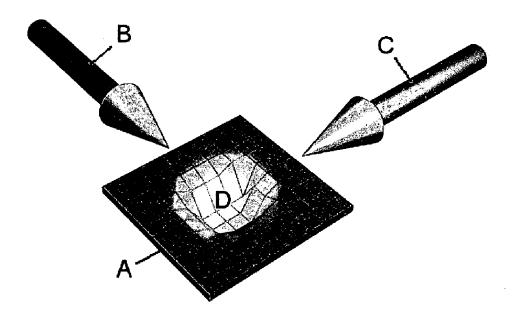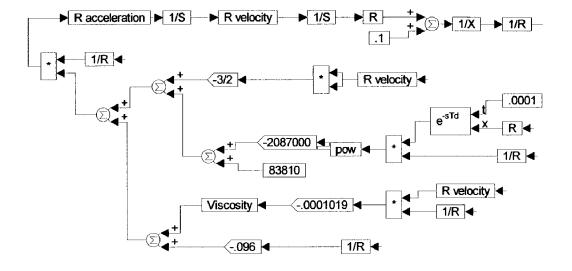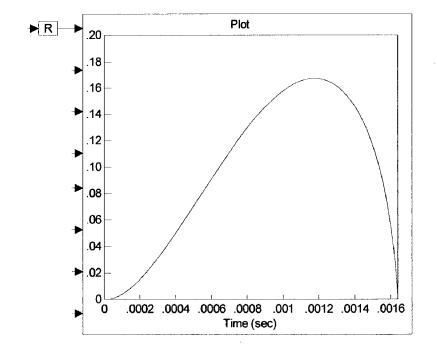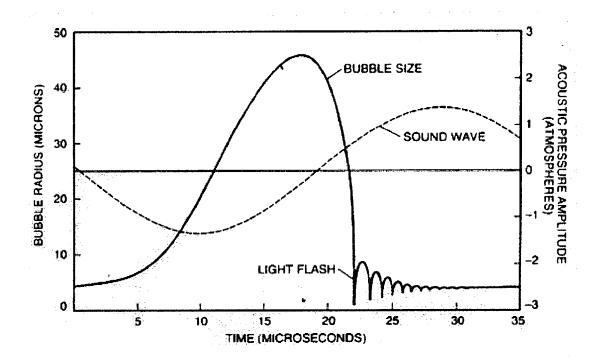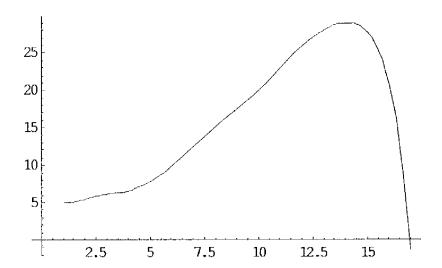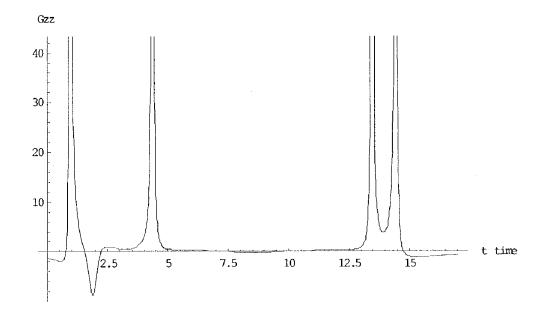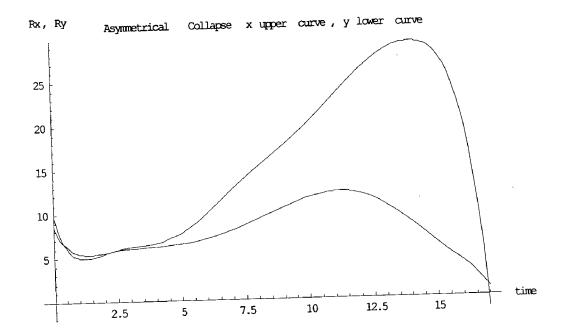
Figure 17
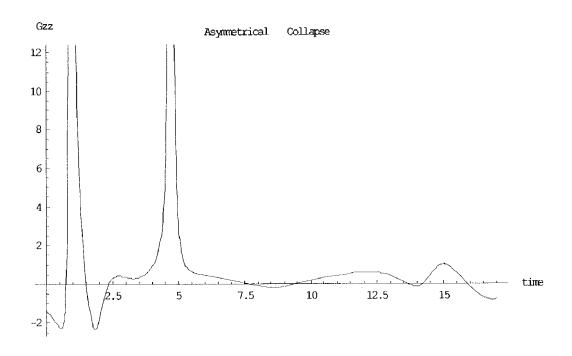
Figure 18
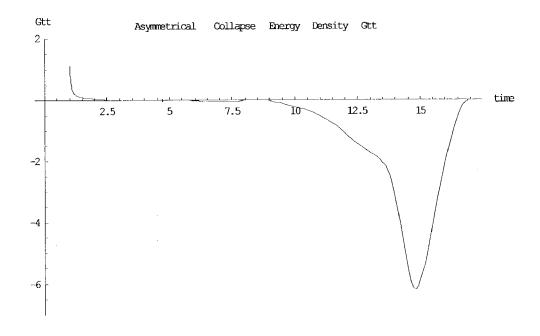
Figure 19
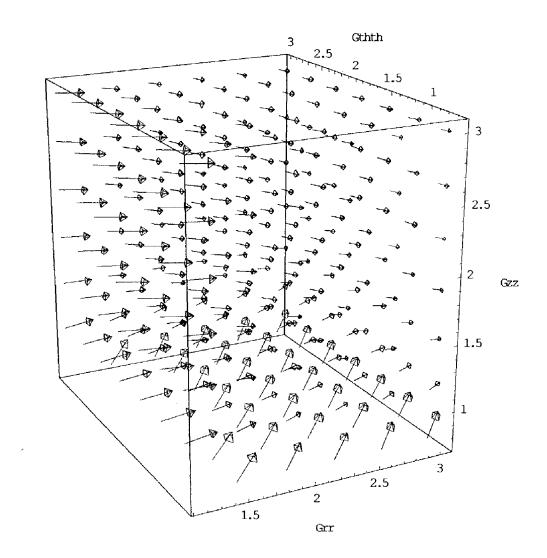
Figure 20
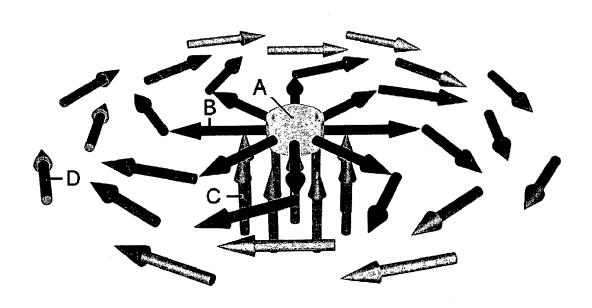
Figure 21
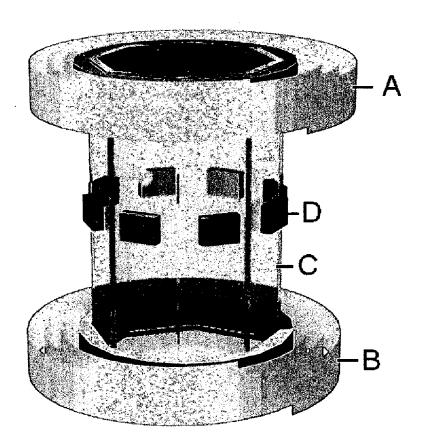
Figure 22
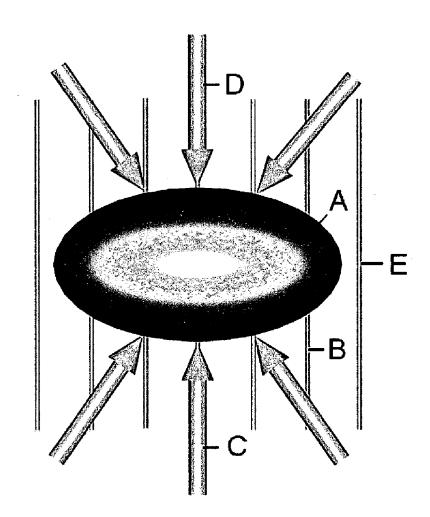
Figure 23
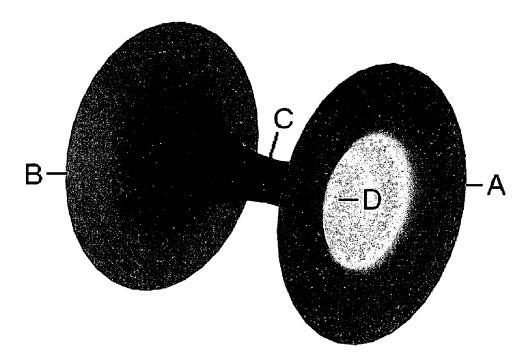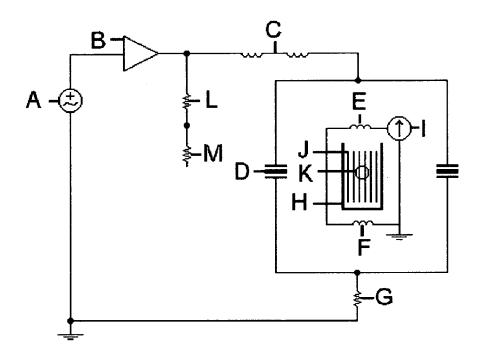
Figure 24

CAVITATING OIL HYPERSPACE ENERGY GENERATOR

BRIEF SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0001] This invention is a hyperspace energy generator that uses cavitating oil bubbles within a magnetic field in order to create wormholes between space and hyperspace for the purpose of permeating the hull of a spacecraft with low-density, low-speed-of-light hyperspace energy.

BACKGROUND OF THE INVENTION

[0002] As shown by physicist Dr. John Archibald Wheeler of Princeton University, there is a second term in Newton's gravitational equation which includes an additional force depending on whether or not the body is spinning.

$$F=mg+m(v\times\Omega)$$

[0003] where F is the force, m the mass, g the acceleration of gravity, v the forward velocity of the body, and Ω the angular velocity of the body. Referring to **FIG. 1**, a rotating cylinder (A) is moving with a velocity (B) while spinning counterclockwise as shown by the angular velocity vector (C). The velocity crossed with the angular velocity vector produces a force in the upward direction (D).

[0004] Referring to **FIG. 2**, a pendulum (A) held in the left hand over the right hand will spin in the counterclockwise direction due to the hyperspace energy vortex (B) emanating from the palm of the right hand. This vortex arises because human beings are hyperspace energy beings that live in physical containers located in this universe. The vortex might be considered a wormhole between space and hyperspace. Notice that the angular momentum vector of the vortex points up out of the palm of the hand. If the hand were spinning from left to right, then there would be a force exerted, as shown by the above equation, that would bring hyperspace energy into the right arm.

[0005] Referring to **FIG. 3**, in order to test this hypothesis, a Chakra Vortex Accelerator was built for the purpose of spinning this hand vortex. The motor-driven machine has a base (A) on which is mounted a warehouse palletizing ring and platform (B). A control column (C) has a speed control and on/off switch. A person (D) stands on the platform with his right arm outstretched and palm facing upward (E). The platform spins from left to right.

[0006] Referring to **FIG. 4**, the velocity vector (A) points to the right. The angular momentum vector of the rotating chakra energy vortex points up. The cross product A×B=C produces a force that brings in high permeability hyperspace energy into the arm.

[0007] Referring to **FIG. 5**, after spinning 99 times per day for a few months, it was noticed that the right arm (A) would remain out at an angle ϕ from the body without making any exertion to do so. The left arm, which was not receiving the energy, remained at the side of the body. That is, the low-density hyperspace energy in the right arm was making the arm lighter and producing a subsequent anti-gravitational effect. The conclusion was that it might be possible to invent some device which would produce large amounts of hyperspace energy. This would make possible relativistic electromagnetic fields which can be used to produce the lift force for electromagnetic field propulsion vehicles.

[0008] Then in the February 1995 issue of *Scientific American*, an article appeared entitled *Producing Light from a Bubble of Air* which gave the details for producing sonoluminescence from a cavitating bubble using a kit for sale containing the piezoelectric transducers. Referring to **FIG. 6**, the experimental setup includes a ring stand (A) with a three-finger clamp (B) holding a 100 milliliter flask containing degassed water produced by a Walsh vacuum/pressure pump. Piezoelectric drive transducers (D) are mounted on the sides of the flask in order to create sound pressure waves which create the cavitation bubble (M) in the center of the flask. The transducers are connected by insulated wire (I) to a pair of inductors (E) having a mutual inductance between them. These inductors are driven by a frequency generator (H) connected to an audio amplifier (G). The oscillation signals are picked up by the oscilloscope (J) which is connected to the resistors (F) using the probes (K). The piezoelectric drive transducers act electrically as capacitors. The inductors are wired in series with the capacitance such that the combination resonates at the frequency at which acoustic resonance occurs. Bubbles introduced into the flask tend to coalesce in the center of the flask Above a certain sound intensity, the bubble will collapse and emit a dim light visible to the unaided eye in a darkened room, a process called sonoluminescence.

[0009] Further research showed that there were some earlier doctoral theses available. One of them by Dr. Steven DeWitt Horsburgh entitled *Radial Instabilities of a pulsating air bubble in water* mentioned a most interesting observed phenomenon of the surface oscillations called a "beaconing effect." When a bubble exhibited a stable or long-lived shape oscillation lasting more than two minutes, the bubble had a tendency to slowly precess. The precession rate was on the order of a few hertz which can be taken to mean around 3 Hz. Visually, the beacon looked like a light house beacon. It was a very obvious effect and when the beacon crossed the photodiode, the output voltage increased by at least an order of magnitude.

[0010] Upon reading this, it became apparent that sonoluminescence is involved with gravitational hyperspace physics. Einstein's theory says that inertia is a manifestation of the geometry of spacetime. It also says that geometry is affected by the presence of matter to an extent proportional to the factor G/c^2 where G is the gravitational constant and c is the speed of light. The inverse of this factor is the linear mass Ω of the universe. A spherical shell of mass m with a radius R will create a drag angular velocity on a pendulum equal to

$$\omega_{drag} = \frac{4}{3}\frac{G}{c^2}\frac{m_{shell}}{R_{shell}}\omega_{shell} = \frac{4}{3}\frac{\frac{m_{shell}}{\Omega}}{R_{shell}}\omega_{shell}$$

[0011] The mass of the shell divided by the linear mass (mass per length) converts the mass into a length which is then divided by the radius of the shell which is also a length. The numerical factor 4/3 is found only by a detailed calculation. The calculation, starting from a flat background spacetime manifold, showed the effect of the moving current of mass on the metric. Expressed in polar coordinates, the metric acquires a non-zero coefficient $g_{\phi t}$. Inserted into the equation for geodesic motion, this off-diagonal metric coef-

ficient gives rise to a precession according to the above equation. The numerical factor corresponds to a pendulum located anywhere inside the rotating shell of mass.

[0012] In other doctoral theses, books and physics articles on cavitation, light is emitted after the bubble starts to collapse. A very sharp peak of light is produced which lasts in terms of picoseconds. Thus this type of sonoluminescence is very different than the beaconing effect where the bubble remains stable for long periods of time. The beaconing effect is actually a rotating wormhole between space and hyperspace.

[0013] Briefly what happens is that there is ionized gas in the bubble which releases electrons. As the electrons spiral down through the wormhole from space into hyperspace, they give off light. This situation puts the electrons in contact with the charge of hyperspace. Space has a charge which is equal to the sum of the electron charge q_e and the hyperspace charge q_h. The charge of space q is equal to the Planck mass times a conversion factor between mass and charge. The Planck mass is equal to the linear mass Ω of the universe times the bottom dimensional limit of the universe known as the Planck scale Λ. The conversion factor is the square root of the gravitational constant G times the permittivity of space ϵ. The permittivity is linear capacitance or capacitance per unit length. Thus the charge of space is

$$q = \Lambda\Omega\sqrt{G\epsilon} = q_e + q_h$$

[0014] Because the electron comes in contact with the hyperspace charge, the drag angular velocity in the above equation has to be modified. Notice that if the angular velocity of the shell is modified by the electron fine structure constant α, and the mass involved is the mass of the electron, moving through a radius into hyperspace of the Planck scale Λ, then the drag angular velocity would be

$$\omega_{drag} = \frac{4}{3}\frac{\frac{m_{electron}}{\Omega}}{\Lambda}\omega_{shell}\frac{1}{\alpha}$$

[0015] The angular frequency of the shell is 2π times the electron frequency f_e.

$$\omega_{shell} = \omega_{electron} = 2\pi f_e$$

[0016] The inverse of the electron fine structure constant α is equal to Planck's reduced constant $\hbar$ times the speed of light c times the factor 4π times the permittivity of space ϵ divided by the square of the charge of the electron q_e.

$$\frac{1}{\alpha} = \frac{\hbar c 4\pi\epsilon}{q_e^2}n = 137.037916527$$

[0017] Planck's constant is equal to the Planck scale Λ squared times the linear mass Ω times the speed of light.

$$\hbar = \Lambda^2\Omega c$$

[0018] Notice that the fine structure constant has a square in it and Planck's constant also has a square. If the electron charge were traveling through the Planck scale into hyperspace, then there would be a linear charge equal to the electron charge divided by the Planck scale

$$\frac{1}{\alpha} = \frac{\hbar c 4\pi\epsilon}{q_e^2}n = \frac{\Lambda^2\Omega c\, c 4\pi\epsilon}{q_e^2}n = \frac{4\pi\Omega\epsilon c^2}{\left(\frac{q_e}{\Lambda}\right)^2}n$$

[0019] The constant equal to the linear mass Ω times the permittivity times the square of the speed of light is actually the square of the linear charge χ of space. So the fine structure constant can be written

$$\frac{1}{\alpha} = 4\pi n\frac{(\chi)^2}{\left(\frac{q_e}{\Lambda}\right)^2} = 4\pi n\frac{\left(\frac{q}{\Lambda}\right)^2}{\left(\frac{q_e}{\Lambda}\right)^2} = 4\pi n\left(\frac{q}{q_e}\right)^2 = 4\pi n\left(\frac{q_h + q_e}{q_e}\right)^2 =$$

$$4\pi n\left(\frac{q_h}{q_e} + 1\right)$$

[0020] So the electron fine structure constant is related to the ratio of the charge of hyperspace to the charge of the electron, which is the reason that the equation had to be modified. The electron moving across the Planck scale wormhole is modified by the hyperspace charge it is seeing in a hyperspace co-dimension. This confirms that the beaconing effect is a rotating wormhole into hyperspace.

[0021] The electron fine structure constant is actually the fastest velocity in the Bohr atom. The fine structure constant is the ratio of the electron orbital velocity to the speed of light.

$$\alpha = \frac{v_n}{c}$$

[0022] where the permitted quantized n orbital speeds are v_n/n or $v/1$, $v/2$, $v/3$ and so on. Using a value of $v/3$, the fine structure constant would be

$$\frac{1}{\alpha} = \frac{3c}{v} = 4\pi n\left(\frac{q_h}{q_e} + 1\right) = 12\pi\left(\frac{q_h}{q_e} + 1\right)$$

[0023] which when substituted into the drag angular frequency equation

$$\omega_{drag} = \frac{4}{3}\frac{\frac{m_e}{\Omega}}{\Lambda}2\pi f_e\, 12\pi\left(\frac{q_h}{q_e} + 1\right) = 17.809\ \frac{radians}{sec}$$

[0024] The frequency of precession is

$$f_{drag} = \frac{\omega_{drag}}{2\pi} = 2.83\ Hz$$

[0025] which is close to the 3 Hz observed in the experiment. The ionized electrons are moving at a slower velocity

in the bubble. The 1/3 ratio could also come from the subspace tetrahedron geometry where the tetrahedral angle is determined by this ratio

$$\theta = a\sin(1/3) = 19.47122063°$$

[0026] This is an alternative possibility because this angle determines the charge of hyperspace according to the tetrahedron diagram of Δphysics. In geometrical physics, all the constants of physics are determined geometrically by the tetrahedron. The tetrahedron diagram plots the natural logarithm of mass versus the natural logarithm of wavelength. The tetrahedron is circumscribed by a sphere which reflects the electron wavelength into the electron mass. Thus the diagram combines the dual reality of classical physics, involving point mass particles, and quantum physics, involving wave-like particles. The scientific discovery that the electron and the proton are one and the same particle was made using this diagram. It also shows that hyperspace exists.

[0027] Referring to the tetrahedron diagram in **FIG. 7**, a line drawn at the tetrahedral angle produces the tetrahedral lines (A,B) along path (abc). This tetrahedron is circumscribed by sphere (C) with diameter (G). The electron wavelength (vertical dotted line D) reflects off the sphere (d,f) and returns as the electron mass (F). The distance (df) between reflection points is equal to the natural logarithm of the hyperspace charge. It can be shown that the electron charge is related to the geometry around the top of the sphere. Part of the geometry is outside the sphere which makes the charge immune to relativistic velocities.

[0028] Referring to **FIG. 8**, a current-carrying solenoid (A) produces a magnetic flux (B) through the center of the coil. The end of the solenoid behaves like a magnetic monopole. One end has a positive magnetic charge density $+\rho_m$ and the other has a negative magnetic charge density $-\rho_m$. One of Maxwell's electromagnetic equations states that the divergence of the magnetic field is equal to the magnetic charge density.

$$\nabla \cdot B = \rho_m = +\rho_m - \rho_m = 0$$

[0029] Because the magnetic field is solenoidal, the sum of the charges in our spacetime is equal to zero, which is the usual Maxwell equation. In the case of the wormhole, one pole of the magnetic flux is in our spacetime and the other pole is in a co-dimension of hyperspace. In our universe, there is a net magnetic charge density, and Maxwell's equation becomes

$$\nabla \cdot B = \rho_m$$

[0030] When working with bar magnets, bringing two north poles together shows that there is a spring constant involved. The electrons on the surface of the pole spin in the same direction which creates an electrical current around the surface. The magnetic pole strength g is therefore a spring constant K divided by the current per area J.

$$g = \frac{K}{J} \equiv \frac{kg\,m}{s^2}\frac{1}{m}\frac{s\,m^2}{q} = \frac{kg\,m^2}{s\,q}$$

[0031] The magnetic charge density is then the pole strength per volume V or

$$\rho_m = \frac{g}{V} = \frac{kg\,m^2}{s\,q}\frac{1}{m^3} = \frac{kg}{m\,s\,q}$$

[0032] The divergence of the magnetic field has units of

$$\nabla \cdot B = \frac{1}{m}\frac{kg}{s\,q}$$

[0033] which are the units of the magnetic charge density. Notice that the units can also be formatted as a pressure per electrical current in the wire.

$$\rho_m = \frac{kg}{s\,q\,m} = \frac{kg\,m}{s^2\frac{q}{s}m^2} = \frac{\text{force}}{\text{area}}\frac{1}{I} = \frac{\text{pressure}}{\text{current}}$$

[0034] The current flowing through the coils of the solenoid, or around the pole face of the bar magnetic creates a pressure on spacetime. And it is this pressure that can punch through spacetime into hyperspace. Referring again to **FIG. 8**, an electrical charge winding n times around the end of the spacetime solenoid, as seen by path (C), is equal to the charge divided by Planck's constant times the pole flux

$$2\pi n = \frac{q}{\hbar}\int_{Surface} B = \frac{q}{\hbar}\Phi$$

[0035] which shows that the flux Φ is quantized by the winding number n

$$\Phi = n\frac{2\pi\hbar}{q} = n\frac{h}{q}$$

[0036] where the flux is equal to the winding number n times Planck's constant h divided by the charge. Since the flux is the pole strength in webers, the pole strength g has a value of

$$g = n\frac{h}{q}$$

[0037] The magnetic charge density is the pole strength divided by the Planck volume or

$$\rho_m = \frac{g}{\Lambda^3} = n\frac{h}{q}\frac{1}{\Lambda^3} = n\frac{2\pi\Lambda^2\Omega c}{q\Lambda^3} = \frac{2\pi n}{\Lambda}\frac{\Omega c}{q} = 2\pi n\frac{B}{\Lambda}$$

[0038] The magnetic B field of space divided by the Planck length of the wormhole, acting as a linear magnetic field, times the winding number is equal to the magnetic charge density.

4

[0039] Referring to **FIG. 9**, the wormhole (A), connecting space and hyperspace (D), is precessing (C) in the counterclockwise direction with the angular velocity vector in the vertical z-direction. The magnetic flux (B) through the wormhole is in the radial direction. The mouth of the wormhole is an area with a normal vector in the radial direction also. This arrangement creates an electric field which circulates around the interior periphery of the wormhole. Maxwell's equation says that the curl of the electric field E is equal to the negative time rate of change of the magnetic B field.

$$\nabla \times E = -\frac{\partial B}{\partial t}$$

[0040] This equation is difficult to manage in differential form. As both Maxwell and Feynman have said, it is better to use the integral form involving Stokes' theorem where the area da is converted into a line integral ds which goes well with Maxwell's idea of flux linkage.

$$\int_{surface} (\nabla \times E) \cdot n\, da = \oint E \cdot ds = -\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \int_{surface} B \cdot n\, da = -\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\Phi = -\Phi\, \omega_{drag}$$

[0041] The flux Φ, which is precessing around at the drag angular velocity calculated previously, is equal to the negative of the electric field around the interior perimeter (E) of the wormhole. This is the reason that the beaconing effect lasts for such a long length of time. The force on the electron is equal to the charge of the electron times the electric field. Because the charge is negative, the electron rotates counterclockwise in the opposite direction to that of the electric field. The electrons continuously circulate around the inside periphery of the wormhole. Quantum theory predicts that any radiated electromagnetic energy from an accelerated electron will give off one or more discrete quanta, or photons. The electron is accelerating because it is moving in a circular path. Because the water vapor is ionized in the cavitating bubble due to shock waves, surface oscillations and high temperatures, there are huge numbers of electrons available for producing an intense light which, as registered by the photodiode, increased by an order of magnitude when the beacon rotated by the photodiode.

[0042] From gravitational physics it is known that negative energy has to be produced in order to create a wormhole. Most experimenters are using collapsing spherical bubbles that do not produce negative energy and therefore do not produce the beaconing effect. This next background section shows that if the bubble collapses asymmetrically, then negative energy is produced.

[0043] Referring to an experiment carried out by Fizeau, **FIG. 10**, water flows (B,C) in opposite directions in two tubes of water (A). A light beam from a lamp (D) is projected through both tubes using half-silvered mirrors (E). Fizeau measured an interference (F) between light propagating with the flow and light swimming against the current, indicating that the flow of the medium does affect light propagation. A moving medium turns out to drag light to an extent quantified by a dragging coefficient

$$\alpha = 1 - \frac{1}{n^2}$$

[0044] where n is the index of refraction of the medium. Einstein's addition theorem of velocities states

$$v = \frac{v' + u}{1 + \frac{v'u}{c^2}} = \frac{\frac{c}{n} + u}{1 + \frac{cu}{nc^2}} = \frac{\frac{c}{n} + u}{1 + \frac{u}{nc}}$$

[0045] In the limit of slow flows compared with the speed of light in a vacuum, the effective velocity of light v in the medium flowing at a velocity u is

$$v \approx \left(\frac{c}{n} + u\right)\left(1 - \frac{u}{nc}\right) \approx \frac{c}{n} + \alpha u$$

[0046] The relationship between cavitating bubbles and light dragging is that when the bubble collapses, the surface has a tremendous acceleration and velocity which creates internal shockwaves that bounce back and forth within the medium. At the same time, the water vapor and air are ionized which creates short bursts of light. Thus there is light that is being dragged along by the collapsing surface of the bubble. This moving medium appears to light as a change in the metric of spacetime resembling, it turns out, a gravitational field. The velocity of the medium affects the elemental length ds^2 of spacetime as given by the metric for light dragging

$$ds^2 = c^2 dt^2 - dx^2 + k(c^2 dt^2 - u \cdot dx)^2$$

[0047] where k is equal to

$$k = \frac{\alpha}{c^2 - u^2}$$

[0048] and dx is the elemental length in the {dx,dy,dz} directions. The velocity u in the dot product is equal to the velocities {ux,uy,uz} in the x, y and z-directions. Expanding the equation produces the following metric

$$ds^2 = (1+k)dt^2 + (ku_x^2 - 1)dx^2 + (ku_y^2 - 1)dy^2 - dz^2 - 2ku_x dx dt - 2ku_y dy dt + 2ku_x u_y dx dy$$

[0049] where velocity uz is zero and the speed of light is equal to one.

[0050] The dt^2 energy density term is modified by one plus the k factor. Thus the index of refraction of the medium, the speed of light and the overall light dragging velocity u affects the energy density. It can be shown that the speed of light in hyperspace is much lower. The difference of the squares of the velocities in the denominator creates the possibility for amplification of this term.

[0051] The factors of the elemental lengths are then inserted into the g metric tensor which is then used to calculate the spacetime distortion generated by the collaps-

ing bubble. The g metric tensor is a 4×4 matrix having rows and columns that correspond to the elemental lengths {t, x, y, z}.

$$g_{\alpha\beta} = \begin{array}{c|cccc} & \beta = t & \beta = x & \beta = y & \beta = z \\ \hline \alpha = t & 1+k & -ku_x & -ku_y & 0 \\ \alpha = x & -ku_x & ku_x^2 - 1 & ku_xu_y & 0 \\ \alpha = y & -ku_y & ku_xu_y & ku_z^2 - 1 & 0 \\ \alpha = z & 0 & 0 & 0 & -1 \end{array}$$

[0052] In Einstein's General Theory of Relativity, the G curvature tensor, which is a 4×4 matrix having units of inverse meter squared, is equal to a stress-energy-momentum T tensor that is calculated from the electromagnetic fields. The stress tensor T combines energy density, electromagnetic flux, and pressure terms in one matrix.

$$G=8\pi T$$

[0053] Most of the physics constants are linear constants such as linear mass which is mass per unit length. The permittivity of space ϵ is linear capacitance or capacitance per meter. The permeability of space μ is linear inductance or inductance per meter. The speed of light converts time into meters. What this means is that energy, pressure and momentum can all be converted into meters using these linear constants. The inverse squared of the length in meters is the curvature which is measured in units of m^{-2}.

[0054] Referring to **FIG. 11**, a square bubble (A) in the xy plane collapses with a velocity in the x-direction (C), and a velocity in the y-direction (B). This produces a curvature in the vertical z-direction (D). The curvature in the z-direction is the curvature tensor component G_{zz}, which can be computed directly from the g light dragging metric tensor. The result of the calculation is an equation in terms of the velocity, acceleration and the time rate of change of the acceleration, known as jerk.

[0055] Because the profile of the bubble radius expanding and collapsing with time has been published by those researching cavitation, it is possible to differentiate the profile to get the velocity, acceleration and jerk. These equations can then be inserted into the equation for the G curvature tensor.

[0056] The radius R of the bubble depends on the air density inside the bubble ρ, the viscosity of the water μ, the pressure of the P of the environment, the surface tension σ of the water, the ratio of specific heats γ, and the velocity $\dot{R}$ and acceleration $\ddot{R}$ of the bubble radius.

$$R\ddot{R} + \frac{3}{2}\dot{R} + \frac{4\mu}{\rho}\frac{\dot{R}}{R} + \frac{2\sigma}{\rho R} + \frac{P_0}{\rho} - \left(P_0 + \frac{2\sigma}{R_0}\right)\left(\frac{R_0}{R}\right)^{3\gamma} = 0$$

[0057] Referring to **FIG. 12**, the above equation for the bubble radius is shown in the feedback simulation program. The diagram starts by solving the equation for the acceleration which is then integrated twice (1/S) to get the velocity and position. These variables are then fed back to the input through the various constants involving the viscosity, sur-

face tension, pressure and air density. The graph at the bottom of the simulation shows the bubble radius with time.

[0058] Referring to **FIG. 13**, the bubble profile with time is reproduced from the *Scientific American* article mentioned previously. This profile was then fitted with a polynomial equation which is plotted in **FIG. 14**. By differentiating the equation, the velocity, acceleration and jerk are obtained which can then be inserted into Einstein's G curvature tensor.

[0059] Referring to **FIG. 15**, the curvature component in the vertical direction G_{zz} is plotted with respect to time. In the *Scientific American* plot, the light flash occurs at the end of the collapse marked "LIGHT FLASH" around 22 microseconds (**FIG. 13**). This corresponds to the two intense positive curvature G_{zz} spikes at the end of the collapse. This represents a symmetrical spherical bubble collapse where the velocities are the same in the x and y directions.

[0060] The energy density component G_{tt} for this symmetrical collapse is given by

$$G_{tt} = \frac{-2u_y^2a_x^2 + 4u_xu_ya_xa_y - 2u_x^2a_y^2}{4(u_x^2 + u_y^2 - 2)}$$

[0061] Looking at this carefully, notice that if the velocity in the x-direction u_x is equal to the velocity in the y-direction u_y, and the acceleration in the x-direction a_x is equal to the acceleration in the y-direction, then the equation reduces to zero.

$$G_{tt} = \frac{-2u^2a^2 + 4u^2a^2 - 2u^2a^2}{8(u^2 - 1)} = 0$$

[0062] which means that the symmetrical collapse with equal velocities does not produce any negative energy with which to create the wormhole. Only sharp pulses of light are emitted at the end of the bubble collapse where the intense positive curvature spikes are encountered. In order to get the rotating wormhole beaconing effect, the velocities have to be different.

[0063] Referring to **FIG. 16**, the bubble is given an asymmetrical profile as shown by the two curves. The upper curve is in the x-direction, and the lower curve is in the y-direction. The collapse in the y-direction is not as severe.

[0064] Referring to **FIG. 17**, the asymmetrical collapse has the curvature spikes at the beginning similar to the symmetrical case of **FIG. 15**. Notice that there are no spikes at the end of the collapse. However, the energy density is much different.

[0065] Referring to **FIG. 18**, the energy density G_{tt} is plotted as a function of time. Rather than being zero as in the symmetrical case, there is a large region of negative energy density as the bubble collapses. This negative energy is what creates the wormhole. Because there are no large curvature spikes at the end of the collapse, the wormhole bubble is stable and precesses for a few minutes.

6

[0066] Experiments with the pendulum show that some people have much larger auras than others. The pendulum swings over the entire hand. One particular person who has enormous vortices was working in a television repair shop. When a television set is brought in to the shop, the large capacitor has to be discharged first. The repairman with the large chakra vortices was standing behind a second repairman who was approaching the television set. As the second repairman got closer to the set, an enormous streaming blue spark sailed over his head and zapped the first technician. Hyperspace has a much higher permittivity than our spacetime. The resistance of space R is equal to the square root of the permeability μ over the permittivity ϵ.

$$R = \sqrt{\frac{\mu}{\varepsilon}}$$

[0067] Since the technician with the large chakra vortices was producing large quantities of hyperspace energy, his resistance was very much lower due to his larger permittivity. The spark grounded on his body. The free electrons, which are created by ionization of the hydrogen atoms of the water vapor, see a very low path of resistance and flow toward the wormhole. There they are trapped in accelerated motion due to the presence of the circular electric field and give off substantial numbers of photons which produces the beaconing lighthouse effect.

[0068] The elemental length ds^2 in cylindrical coordinates $\{t, r, \theta, z\}$ for a mass M is given by

$$ds^2 = -\frac{dt^2}{1 - \frac{M}{r}} + \left(1 - \frac{M}{r}\right)dr^2 + r^2 d\theta^2 + dz^2$$

[0069] The mass M distorts the radius r of the elemental length which is what gives the mass a curvature or gravitational field. Negative energy, which is produced at the end of the bubble collapse, is equal to a negative mass times the speed of light squared. Thus mass M in the equation goes to negative mass, or $M \rightarrow -M$. Furthermore, negative energy inverts the mass factor so that the metric becomes

$$ds^2 = -\left(1 + \frac{M}{r}\right)dt^2 + \frac{dr^2}{1 + \frac{M}{r}} + r^2 d\theta^2 + dz^2$$

[0070] The g metric tensor contains the factors of the elemental lengths along the matrix diagonal

$$g_{\alpha\beta} = \begin{Vmatrix} -\left(1 + \frac{M}{r}\right) & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \dfrac{1}{1 + \dfrac{M}{r}} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & r^2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{Vmatrix}$$

[0071] As before, Einstein's G curvature tensor in the radial G_{rr}, angular $G_{\theta\theta}$, and vertical z-direction G_{zz} is calculated from this negative energy g metric tensor.

[0072] Referring to the 3D G curvature plot in **FIG. 19**, the strength of the curvature is given by the length of the arrow, and the direction of the curvature is given by the arrow. The curvature in the radial direction G_{rr} is along the bottom axis from the box corner origin to the right. The curvature in the angular direction $G_{\theta\theta}$ is the bottom axis from the origin to the left. The height of the box is the curvature in the vertical direction G_{zz}. Notice in general that the curvature is perpendicular to the left face (θz-plane) and then starts to curve to the right and begins to point toward the right face (rz-plane). On the bottom face (rθ-plane) there is an upward vertical curvature.

[0073] In cylindrical coordinates, the θz-plane is actually a vertical tube of radius r. So at small r, the curvature is perpendicular to the tube. At larger radius, the curvature starts to point in the θ-direction, wrapping around the tube. At small radius, there is also a vertical curvature parallel to the sides of the tube.

[0074] Referring to **FIG. 20**, the curvature in cylindrical coordinates is seen to be the structure of the wormhole. The wormhole (A) is formed due to the radial pressure (B) which pulls open the wormhole. One end of the tube connects to hyperspace, and the other end connects to our spacetime. There is also a shearing pressure (D) along the sides of the tube which slices spacetime open and helps shape the tube. Moving outward along the radius, the curvature turns sideways and produces a shearing pressure (D) in the θ-direction which gives the wormhole a vortex appearance. These wormholes can also be very large, enabling one to peer into a co-dimension as attested to by the inventor.

SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0075] As described in the previous section, the cavitating bubble has to collapse asymmetrically in order to generate the negative energy which creates the wormhole. In order to collapse asymmetrically, the forces on the bubble surface have to be unequal. The force on the bubble is given in terms of the a dragging coefficient, the bubble radius R, the surface charge density D_r, the magnetic B field in spherical coordinates $\{B_r, B_\theta, B_\phi\}$. The fields are integrated over the entire solid angle Ω of the bubble to determine the force F.

$$F_r = -\left(1 - \frac{1}{n^2}\right)\frac{R^2}{2}\oint d\Omega\left[\left(1 + \frac{1}{n^2}\right)(D_r^2 + B_r^2 - B_\theta^2 - B_\phi^2)\right]$$

[0076] The integration of the tangential components of the magnetic field such as $\{B_\theta, B_\varphi\}$ over the solid angle of the bubble will sum to zero. The surface charge density D_r and the radial magnetic field B_r are the only fields which can be used to create an unbalanced force. If there is no surface charge density, then the force equation reduces to

$$F_r = -\alpha \frac{R^2}{2} \oint d\Omega \left[(2-\alpha) \left(\frac{\chi^2}{\Omega_m} B_r^2 \right) \right]$$

[0077] where the conversion constant is the linear charge squared divided by the linear mass of the universe χ^2 / Ω_m.

[0078] In this invention, referring to **FIG. 21**, the magnetic field is created by two cylindrical solenoids (A,B) which are wrapped around the top and bottom of the glass container (C). The container has flat sides in the shape of an octagon. Each solenoid consists of a continuous roll of very thin sheet copper which are separated by beaded mylar line. The mylar beads separate the sheets electrically and provide air cooling to the coil which can get rather hot. This makes it easy to assemble the coil because the copper roll and mylar line are wound together as the solenoid is formed. The lines of magnetic flux flow vertically through the container yet do not interfere with the transducers (D) which are mounted on the flat sides of the container.

[0079] Referring to **FIG. 22**, the cavitating bubble which forms in the liquid in the container experiences a vertical magnetic field (B) due to the two solenoids. These flux lines create a radial force on the top and bottom of the bubble (D,C). The flux lines on the outside (E) do not create any radial force because they are tangential to the surface. The spherical bubble flattens into an asymmetrical ellipsoidal shape (A) which enables the creation of the wormhole and lighthouse beaconing effect.

[0080] Referring to **FIG. 23**, the spacetime curvature of the wormhole (D) creates a tunnel (C), known as the throat of the wormhole, between flat space in our universe (A) and flat hyperspace (B) which exists in a co-dimension of our universe. In general, the co-dimensions have different physics constants. Going back to the chakra vortices of the human energy field, the vortices remove energy from space and deliver it to several hyperspace co-dimensions. This energy builds up human aura modules at different frequencies in astral space. Astral space has a very low speed of light and small linear mass. This is the reason that human beings can leave their bodies and pass through solid concrete walls, or project their spiritual eye to remote locations for viewing. On the other hand, the linear mass and speed of light of space is very much greater than hyperspace. Therefore, the pressure of the space is much greater than the pressure in hyperspace. In terms of the wormhole with a throat area A, the pressure would be the linear mass times the speed of light squared over the area

$$P_{space} = \frac{\Omega_s c_s^2}{A}$$

[0081] The pressure of hyperspace on the other side of the wormhole is

$$P_{hyperspace} = \frac{\Omega_h c_h^2}{A}$$

[0082] Because the linear mass and the speed of light of hyperspace are lower than that of space, there is a positive net pressure going into hyperspace.

$$P_{net} = P_{space} - P_{hyperspace}$$

[0083] This is the reason that the human vortices can obtain energy from this universe. Because the cavitating bubble produces negative energy, the linear mass is negative on the side of space. The pressure equation is then given by

$$P_{net} = -\frac{P_s}{A} - \frac{P_h}{A} = -\frac{P_s + P_h}{A}$$

[0084] which shows that there is a reverse pressure going from hyperspace into our space. The asymmetrical cavitating bubble generates hyperspace energy. The hyperspace energy flowing into our universe also gives the light generated by the wormhole a soft white misty look.

[0085] There are many reasons for generating this hyperspace energy. Electromagnetic fields are subject to the Lorentz transformation which involves comparing the frame velocity with that of the velocity of light.

$$E' = \frac{E}{\sqrt{1 - \frac{v^2}{c^2}}}$$

[0086] If the ratio of the velocity v to the velocity of light c is close to unity, then huge relativistic fields can be produced. These fields can curve spacetime to such an extent that a large lift force can be produced on the hull of an electromagnetic field propulsion vehicle.

STATEMENT REGARDING FEDERALLY SPONSORED RESEARCH OR DEVELOPMENT

[0087] Not Applicable.

A BRIEF DESCRIPTION OF THE DRAWINGS

[0088] **FIG. 1**. Rotating cylinder demonstrating additional lift force.

[0089] **FIG. 2**. Use of the pendulum.

[0090] **FIG. 3**. The Ascension Machine, Chakra Vortex Accelerator.

[0091] **FIG. 4**. Hyperspace energy brought into body by rotation of hand chakra.

[0092] **FIG. 5**. Antigravitational effect using low density hyperspace energy.

[0093] **FIG. 6**. Sonoluminescence experiment.

[0094] **FIG. 7**. Tetrahedron diagram showing hyperspace charge.

[0095] **FIG. 8**. Magnetic monopole.

[0096] **FIG. 9**. Precessing wormhole.

[0097] **FIG. 10**. Fizeau light dragging experiment.

[0098] **FIG. 11**. Asymmetrical velocity collapse of bubble radius generates wormhole.

[0099] **FIG. 12**. VisSim feedback simulation of the collapsing bubble.

[0100] **FIG. 13**. Cavitating bubble radius as a function of time.

[0101] **FIG. 14**. Digitized bubble radius of **FIG. 13**.

[0102] **FIG. 15**. Spiking spacetime curvature of collapsing bubble.

[0103] **FIG. 16**. Dual velocity profile required to produce negative energy.

[0104] **FIG. 17**. Spacetime curvature for dual velocity collapse.

[0105] **FIG. 18**. Negative energy generated from asymmetrical collapse of bubble.

[0106] **FIG. 19**. 3D plot of spacetime curvature using negative energy.

[0107] **FIG. 20**. Wormhole vortex.

[0108] **FIG. 21**. Perspective of cavitation tank equipped with magnetic coils.

[0109] **FIG. 22**. Flattening of bubble by magnetic field.

[0110] **FIG. 23**. Hyperspace energy generated by reverse pressure gradient of wormhole.

[0111] **FIG. 24**. Solenoid and transducer driving circuits.

DETAILED DESCRIPTION OF THE INVENTION

[0112] 1. Referring to **FIG. 24**, the transducer driving circuit uses a frequency generator (A) driving a linear amplifier (B) into a pair of variable inductors (C) which resonate with the capacitance of the transducers (D) attached to the sides of the octagonally-shaped glass container (H). Resistors (L,M,G) provides voltage measuring points for the oscilloscope.

[0113] A DC current source (I) drives the two solenoids (E,F) which produce a vertical magnetic field (J) through the container. The magnetic field produces an asynmetrical force on the bubble surface (K) such that the collapsing bubble produces negative energy. The spacetime curvature produced by the light dragging of the collapsing bubble surface, together with the negative energy, create a wormhole between space and hyperspace. The negative spacetime energy produces a negative pressure which brings low-density hyperspace energy into our dimension.

I claim:

1. A hyperspace energy generator having:

a) a glass container in the shape of an octagon acting as the resonating chamber;

b) two piezoelectric transducers, mounted and operating acoustically as a pair on opposite sides of item (1a);

c) an opaque oil-like liquid with a high index of refraction filling item (1a) acting as the resonating liquid in which the cavitating bubbles are formed;

d) two thin sheet copper solenoids, located on top and bottom of item (1a), that produce a vertical magnetic field through items (1a) and (1c);

e) two variable inductance coils for creating a resonant frequency with item (1b);

f) a linear amplifier driving items (1b) and (1e);

g) a variable frequency generator driving item (1e);

h) a direct current electrical generator driving item (1d);

2. a cavitation system which:

a) produces one or more cavitating bubbles that collapse asymmetrically due to the differential force exerted on the bubble surface by the presence of a vertical magnetic field generated by item (1d) referred to above;

b) generates negative energy due to light dragging of the collapsing bubble surface;

c) creates wormholes between space and hyperspace due to the presence of item (1b);

d) generates a negative pressure between space and hyperspace that forces low-density hyperspace energy into our dimension; and

3. optional dual electrically-charged plates that:

a) are mounted on the sides of item (1a);

b) create a differential electric charge density across the bubble surface for the purpose of creating an additional method of asymmetrical bubble surface collapse.

*　*　*　*　*

(19) **United States**

(12) **Patent Application Publication** (10) Pub. No.: **US 2003/0209637 A1**

St. Clair (43) **Pub. Date:** **Nov. 13, 2003**

(54) **ROTATING ELECTROSTATIC PROPULSION SYSTEM**

(76) Inventor: **John Quincy St. Clair**, San Juan, PR (US)

Correspondence Address:
John St. Clair
Hyperspace Research Institute
52 Kings Court, 4A
San Juan, PR 00911 (US)

(52) U.S. Cl. 244/172

(57) **ABSTRACT**

This invention relates to a spacecraft propulsion system utilizing thrusters comprised of a motor-driven electrostatically charged cylinder rotating within an electrostatically charged annular ring for the purpose of creating a spacetime curvature stress-energy tension in the horizontal direction. The thrusters are augmented by magnetic vortex generators, either embedded in the cylinders or located above each thruster, for the purpose of increasing the permittivity of space by permeating each thruster with low density hyperspace energy generated by a wormhole created between our space and hyperspace. A combination of three thrusters mounted on the underside of the hull of the spacecraft provide thrust and yaw motion control.
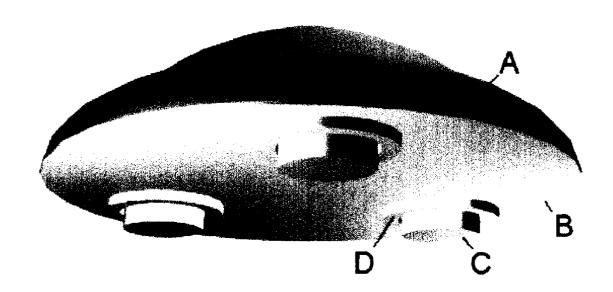
Figure 1
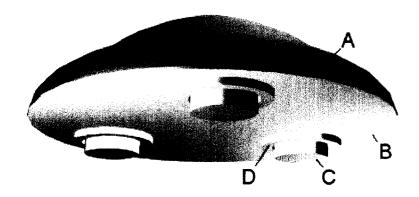
Figure 2
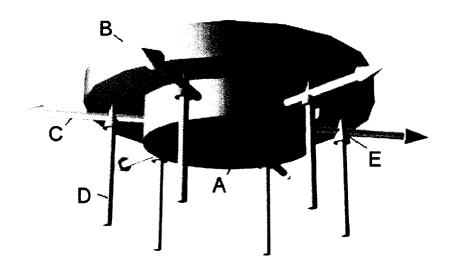
Figure 3

$$T^{zr} = -\frac{\varepsilon_0}{\Omega c^2}\frac{E_z E_r}{4\pi} = \frac{coul^2}{m^2 n}\frac{n}{coul}\frac{n}{coul}\frac{m}{kg}\frac{s^2}{m^2} = -\frac{kg\,m}{s^2}\frac{s^2}{kg\,m^3} = \frac{-1}{m^2}$$

Figure 4

Figure 5

$$F^{\alpha}{}_{\beta} = \begin{array}{c} t \\ r \\ \theta \\ z \end{array}\left|\begin{array}{cccc} 0 & E_r & 0 & E_z \\ E_r & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ E_z & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{array}\right|$$
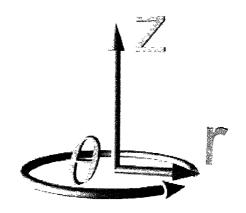
Figure 6

$$T^{zr} = -\frac{E_r E_z}{4\pi}$$

Figure 7

$$\frac{d}{dt} S_r = \varepsilon_0 \, \varepsilon_{r\,t\,z} x^t T^{zr} n_r \text{Area} = \varepsilon_0 \, t \frac{E_r E_z}{4\pi} n_r \text{Area}$$

Figure 8

$$\frac{\text{coul}^2}{\text{m}^2 \text{n}} \sec \frac{\text{n}}{\text{coul}} \frac{\text{n}}{\text{coul}} \text{m}^2 = \text{kg} \frac{\text{m}}{\sec^2} \sec = \text{kg} \frac{\text{m}}{\sec}$$

Figure 9

$$\frac{d}{dt} S_{r,t} = \frac{\varepsilon_0}{4\pi} e^{i\omega t} E_r E_z \, \text{area} + \frac{i\varepsilon_0}{4\pi} e^{i\omega t} E_r E_z t \omega \, \text{area}$$

Figure 10
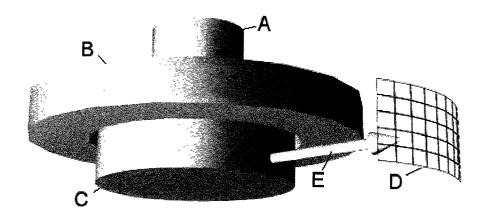
Figure 11
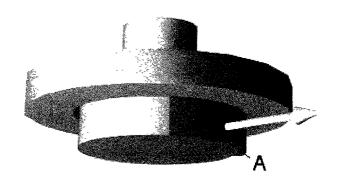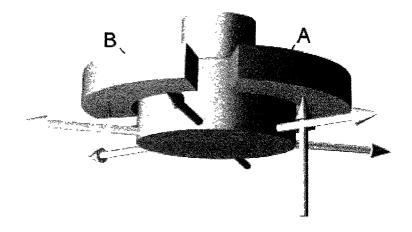
Figure 12

ROTATING ELECTROSTATIC PROPULSION SYSTEM

BRIEF SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0001] The invention, which is the object of my present application, is a spacecraft propulsion system which develops a spacetime curvature tension utilizing a combination of a rotating radial electrostatic field and a fixed vertical electrostatic field. The two fields create a stress-energy T^{zr} gradient in the radially direction which is equal to force. The radial field is created on the side of a charged rotating cylinder on the underside of the hull. The vertical field is created by an annular charged ring concentric with the cylinder. Three rotating cylinders are located in a triangle on the bottom of the hull in order to produce a force in any direction in the horizontal plane.

REFERENCE PAPERS

[0002] *Gravitation*, Wheeler, page 80.

BACKGROUND OF THE INVENTION

[0003] When working with Maxwell's equations in tensor notation, it became apparent that a tensor can change identity depending on what permutation of variables is involved. For example, one single equation can involve both charge density and current density. And all of Maxwell's equations can be reduced to just two equations.

[0004] In the tensor equation for momentum, if the lever arm is length then the equation is equal to the flow rate of angular momentum. If the lever arm is time, then you get linear momentum. And if the field rotates with time, then the time rate of change of linear momentum is a force which is the basis for this invention.

[0005] Einstein said that mass curves space and space tells mass how to move. In this sense, generalized mass can be mass, electromagnetic fields, charge or angular momentum which create a spacetime curvature that produces a force on the spacecraft.

SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0006] The invention relates to a spacecraft utilizing a rotating electrostatically charged cylinder and a concentric annular charged ring to create a stress-energy spacetime curvature in the horizontal plane on the spacecraft's underside hull. A motor drives the rotating cylinder which extends below the hull. A charged surface produces an electric field in the direction normal to the surface. The vertical and rotating electric fields combine to create a rate of change of linear momentum which creates a horizontal propulsive force on the hull.

STATEMENT REGARDING FEDERALLY SPONSORED RESEARCH OR DEVELOPMENT

[0007] Not Applicable.

A BRIEF DESCRIPTION OF THE DRAWINGS

[0008] **FIG. 1**. Perspective view of spacecraft hull (A) with the three electrostatically charged rotating cylinders (C) surrounded by their annular charge rings (D) extending down on the underside of the hull (B).

[0009] **FIG. 2**. Perspective view of individual thruster showing rotating cylinder and ring.

[0010] **FIG. 3**. Stress-energy tension created by two electric fields and having units of curvature.

[0011] **FIG. 4**. Cylindrical spacetime coordinates $\{t, r, \theta, z\}$.

[0012] **FIG. 5**. Faraday electromagnetic F tensor containing electric fields in the radial and vertical directions.

[0013] **FIG. 6**. Stress-energy tensor T showing it is equal to the product of the two electric fields divided by 4π.

[0014] **FIG. 7**. The tensor equation for flow rate of angular momentum S.

[0015] **FIG. 8**. The units are linear momentum due to the time lever arm.

[0016] **FIG. 9**. The rate of change of linear momentum is the horizontal force produced by the two electric fields.

[0017] **FIG. 10**. The angular momentum flows through an area whose normal vector is in the radial direction.

[0018] **FIG. 11**. Cylinder with only one electrostatically charged segment.

[0019] **FIG. 12**. Annular ring with three individual segments which can be charged separately to create a force in a particular direction.

DETAILED DESCRIPTION OF THE INVENTION

[0020] 1. Referring to **FIG. 1**, the spacecraft comprises an upper hull (A) with three rotating electrostatically charged cylinders (C) with their concentric annular electrostatically charged rings (D) located on the spacecraft's bottom hull (B).

[0021] 2. In a closer view of one of the cylinders seen in **FIG. 2**, motor-driven rotating cylinder (A) has an electrostatically charged surface which produces an electric field (C) normal to said surface. The fixed, electrostatically charged annular ring (B), which is concentric with the cylinder, produces a vertical electric field (D) normal to its surface. This crossed field (E) creates a negative spacetime curvature tension which is the product of the two fields divided by 4π as seen in the equation, **FIG. 3**.

[0022] 3. Notice that the equation involves the permittivity of space ϵ_0 divided by the linear mass of the universe Ω and the speed of light. This produces units of inverse meter squared which is the spacetime curvature. In Einstein's General Theory of Relativity, the spacetime curvature tensor is equal to the stress-energy tensor or $G = 8\pi T$ where G is the curvature, and T is the product of the electromagnetic fields. The problem with this equation, which has been resolved with this invention, is that the linear mass Ω times the speed of light c is an enormous number. Even with the square of enormous electric fields, the curvature would be too small even to notice, and little force would be generated.

[0023] 4. In another patent application of mine entitled Magnetic Vortex Generator, it was shown that a rotating

cylinder containing embedded and stacked bar magnets produces a negative mass and negative spacetime spring constant. It can be shown that this combination produces a small wormhole or interdimensional connection between our space and hyperspace along the centerline of the rotating cylinder. Co-dimensions of hyperspace have different physics constants. A low pressure region of hyperspace has a very low mass density and a very low speed of light. The wormhole allows this low density hyperspace energy to enter into our space and permeate the cylinder and annular ring. The permittivity is proportional to the inverse of the speed of light squared. The hyperspace speed of light, obtained from my tetrahedron physics diagram, is 8971 meters per second. The speed of light in our dimension is 299792458 meters per second. As shown by the enclosed reference calculation, the hyperspace permittivity is about a trillion times larger. Because the force is equal to this new permittivity times the electric fields squared times the area around cylinder, the force is greatly amplified by this increase in the permittivity of space.

[0024] 5. It is pertinent to this invention how the stress-energy is created due to the two electric fields in the vertical and radial direction. In gravitational physics, there is a Faraday F tensor which contains all the components of the electromagnetic fields. It is a 4 by 4 matrix whose rows and columns correspond to the coordinates of spacetime which in cylindrical coordinates are $\{t, r, \theta, z\}$ where t is time, r the radius, theta the horizontal angle and z the vertical height. These coordinates are shown in **FIG. 4**.

[0025] 6. The radial electric E_r field and the vertical electric E_z field can be inserted into the Faraday tensor seen in **FIG. 5**. The sign of the vertical field is positive because it points in the positive z-direction due to the fact that the annular ring has a negative charge. The cylinder has a positive charge. This produces the negative stress-energy tensor T^{zr} as drawn in **FIG. 6**.

[0026] 7. In order to calculate the force on the cylinder, it is necessary to calculate the flow rate of angular momentum. Momentum is mass times velocity or mass meter per second. If the mass is moving in a circle, then there is a lever arm times the momentum which makes it mass meter squared per second. If this is differentiated with respect to time, then a flow rate of angular momentum is produced with units of mass meter squared per second squared. As mentioned previously, tensors have this dual nature where depending on the permutation of the variables, it means one thing or another. In this case, the lever arm will be time, rather than length which converts the flow rate of angular momentum into just linear momentum. If you change linear momentum with respect to time, then you get a force.

[0027] 8. The flow rate of angular momentum S is shown in **FIG. 7**. The force has to be against the area whose normal vector is in the radial direction which is also the direction of the momentum. So S has an r subscript indicating that it flows in the radial direction. The permutation tensor ϵ has three subscripts which keeps track of the tensor notation. The first subscript is

the same as the momentum subscript. Permutations of the coordinate variables which are in order have a plus one sign. Permutations which are in reverse order have a minus one sign. Permutations in which the variable are repeated are zero. For example, $\epsilon_{tr\theta z}=-\epsilon_{rt\theta z}$ because the r and t are in reverse order in cylindrical coordinates. Because the permutation tensor starts with r, then we can have permutations such as $\{r,t,z\}$ which is a reverse order negative permutation. This negative sign cancels the negative sign of the stress tensor. The reason this permutation is chosen is because the first subscript on the stress-energy tensor is now z. Because the normal to the area is in the radial direction, then the stress-tensor matches the electric fields that we have available, which are also in the zr-direction.

[0028] 9. In this case, the second subscript of the permutation tensor is time, rather than length. So the units become, as shown in **FIG. 8**, those of linear momentum. To me, this was very surprising. Then I realized that the radial electric field rotates with time which means the differential of the linear momentum produces a force on the hull. In exponential notation, the radial electric field rotates with Exp[iωt]. This is multiplied by the time lever arm, so the term that has to be differentiated is t $e^{i\omega t}$. The time lever arm saves the differentiation by making one term real so that the force is real. This is shown in **FIG. 9**. The units of the first term are real newtons. In the second term, the time t multiplied by the frequency cancels out in terms of units, so the units are still force, but imaginary

[0029] 10. There is an area involved in the force equation which is depicted in **FIG. 10**. The charged rotating cylinder (C) located inside the charged annular ring (B) is driven by motor (A). The radial electric field (E) is normal to the area (D) whose normal vector is also in the radial direction. The angular momentum flows through this area which surrounds the cylinder. In doing so, it curves spacetime which produces the force.

[0030] 11. If the radial electric field is continuous around the cylinder, then the net force is zero. Referring to **FIG. 11**, one section (A) of the rotating cylinder is charged, which means that there is a force once per cycle in a selected direction depending on when the annular ring is charged. The other option, referring to **FIG. 12**, is that the annular ring is divided up into two or three sections with the feature that the charge can be turned on (A) or off (B) on a particular segment. As the rotating electric field goes around, one of the annular ring sections will have an electric field in order create a force on that side.

[0031] 12. Since there are three force cylinders, this allows for yaw motion control so that the hull of the spacecraft can pivot to change direction. After the directional change, the two back cylinders can be synchronized to produce thrust in the forward direction.

[0032] 13. There could also be a polarity change for the vertical electric field such that a positive stress-energy is produced which would reverse the direction of the thrust.

What I claim as my invention is:

1. A spacecraft propulsion system utilizing three electrostatically charged motor-driven cylinders each one of which rotates within a charged annular ring to produce a spacetime stress curvature tension in the horizontal plane on the underside of the hull.

2. Said rotating cylinder comprised of bar magnets embedded in the cylinder and stacked in groups at intervals around the periphery of the cylinder with the purpose of increasing the permittivity of space by permeating the cylinder and ring with low linear mass, low speed of light hyperspace energy by means of a wormhole between our space and hyperspace. The larger permittivity is to increase the force. Said technique is contained in my patent applications Magnetic Vortex Wormhole Generator and Magnetic Vortex Generator.

3. Said rotating cylinder and annular ring having a suitable metal surface for forming and maintaining the electrostatic charge.

4. Said rotating cylinder having one or more segments which can be electrostatically charged individually or together to produce a force in a particular direction.

5. Said annular ring having one or more segments which can be electrostatically charged individually or together to produce a force in a particular direction.

6. A combination of three such thrusters providing a force in any particular direction or for yaw motion control.

7. Electric polarity switching of the fields in order to reverse the spacetime curvature and therefore change the direction of thrust.

8. The use of a magnetic vortex generator located above each thruster in order to permeate the cylinders and rings with low density hyperspace energy which would substitute for the embedded magnets in each cylinder.

*   *   *   *   *

(19) **United States**

(12) **Patent Application Publication** (10) Pub. No.: **US 2006/0072226 A1**

St. Clair (43) **Pub. Date:** **Apr. 6, 2006**

(54) **REMOTE VIEWING AMPLIFIER**

(76) Inventor: **John Quincy St. Clair**, San Juan, PR (US)

Correspondence Address:
JOHN ST. CLAIR
52 KINGS COURT, 4A
SAN JUAN, PR 00911 (US)

Publication Classification

(57) **ABSTRACT**

An apparatus which enhances the ability of a person to perform remote viewing by connecting the human spiritual eye to the tetrahedral geometry of subspace.

Figure 1
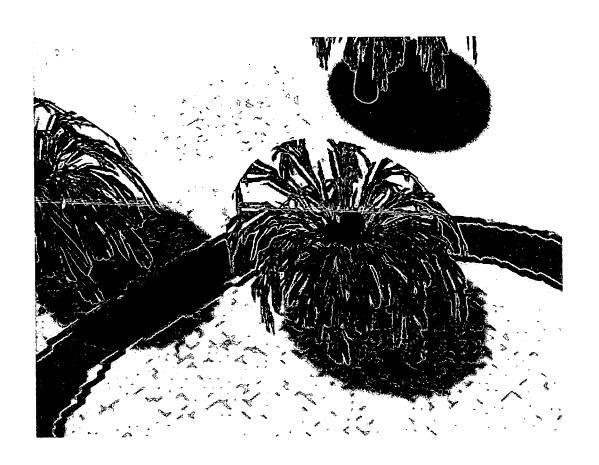
Figure 2
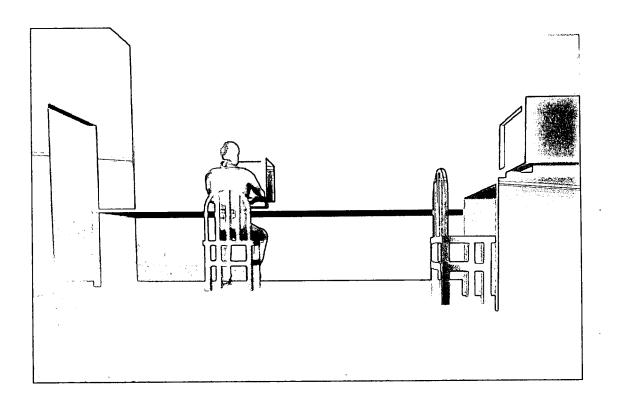
Figure 3

Figure 4

Figure 5

Figure 6

Figure 7

Figure 8

Figure 9

Figure 10

Figure 11

Figure 12
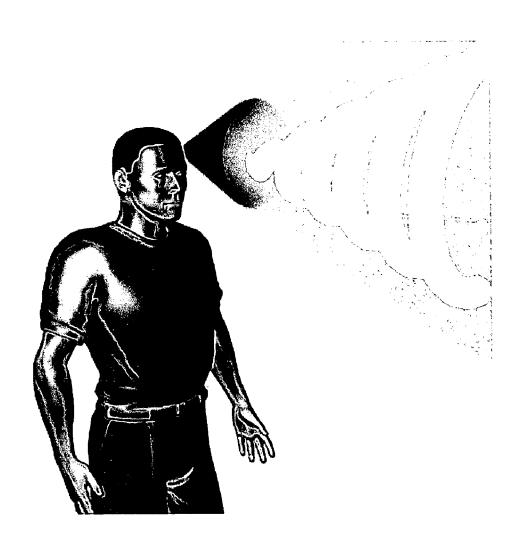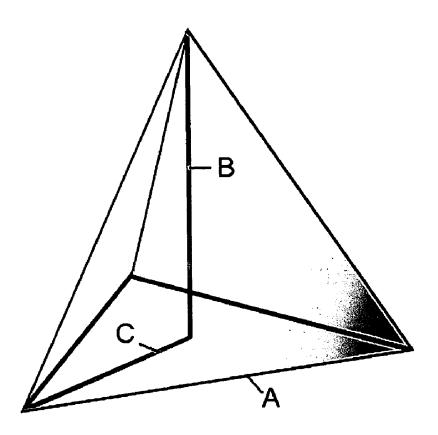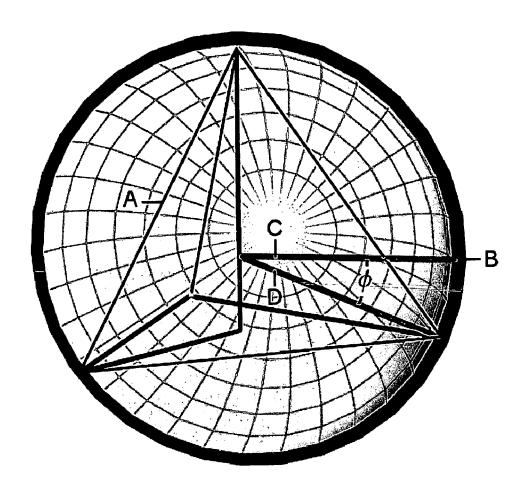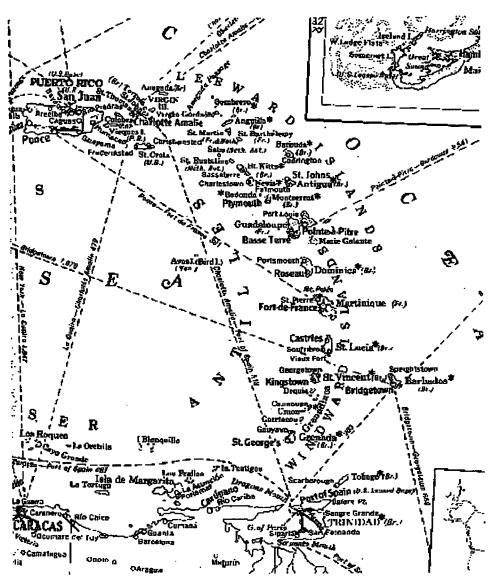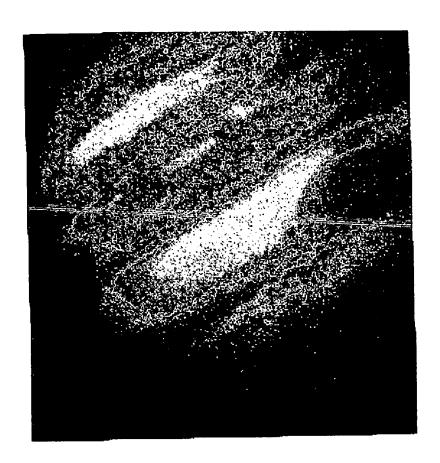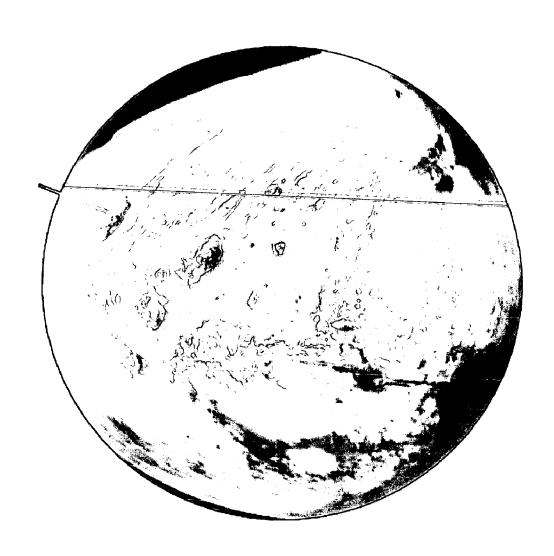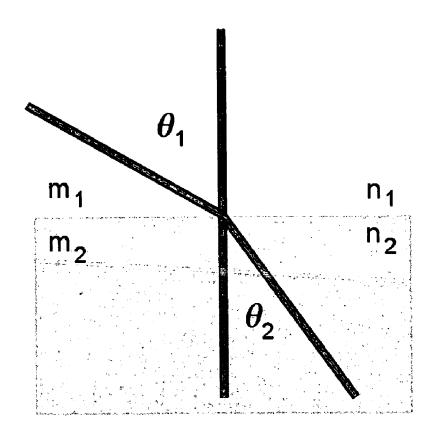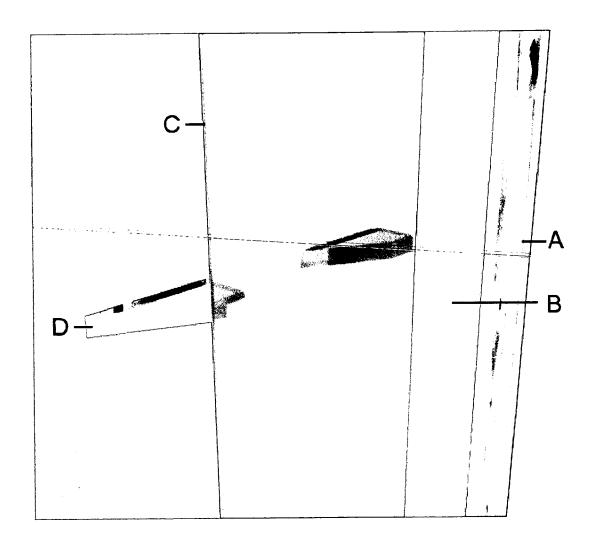
Figure 13
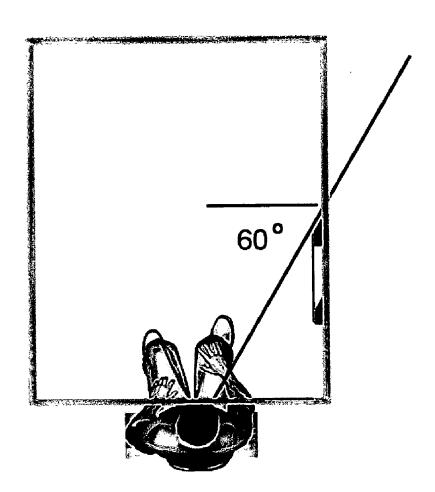
Figure 14

REMOTE VIEWING AMPLIFIER

BRIEF SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0001] This invention enhances the ability of a person to perform remote viewing by connecting the spiritual eye to the tetrahedral geometry of subspace.

BACKGROUND OF THE INVENTION

[0002] Remote viewing is the projection of spiritual modules of the human energy field to distant locations in order to see, communicate and interact with other entities who live in subspace, space and hyperspace co-dimensions of the universe.

[0003] One of my first remote viewings was made at night to a distance of 10,000 miles on the sunlit side of the earth. My spiritual eye and body projected together while my mental facilities remained in my physical body. I found myself looking down on a palm tree from a height of about one hundred feet. The palm tree had several coconuts in it as seen in **FIG. 1**. I then gave the command to lower myself to the ground. At that moment I went sailing down past the coconuts, barely missing the tree! Finding myself on a pathway through the tropical forest, I then came to an extremely long wooden bridge which crossed over a river gorge. On the other side of the bridge I could see three soldiers running toward me as shown in **FIG. 2**. The two soldiers in front were carrying rifles and wearing light blue berets. The man running behind them was wearing an officer's cap with a red band. My first reaction was that I was going to be shot. I edged over on the right side of the wooden railing. They ran right past without seeing me. I then asked to see the building that these soldiers were guarding. Everything went dark, and then I found my spiritual eye peeking out of the floor of a computer room as seen in **FIG. 3**. There was one man using a computer on the opposite side of the room near an open door. He got up from his chair and came over to sit in front of a second computer located a few feet from where I was located. From the glare of the computer monitor, I could clearly see his face. Everything went dark as my spiritual eye and body projected back to my physical body.

[0004] Another time my spiritual eye, spiritual body and mind were standing outside the closed front door of my condominium. Upon patting my legs with my hands, I couldn't find the keys in my trousers. When I looked down, I realized I wasn't in my physical body. I then shot through two solid walls of concrete and returned to my awakening body.

[0005] What these two examples show is that the human spiritual energy system is modular. The reason it is modular is because there are seven hyperspace co-dimensions, each vibrating at a slightly different frequency, which receive energy from space through seven vortices located along the physical body. Over a lifetime, these vortices build up the human aura. Because all energy systems have to be grounded, the remaining six modules are the legs, body, arms/hands, voice, eye and mind. When the entire group is out-of-body as a single entity, then the soul energy powers the body in a manner similar to a battery. The soul looks like a two-inch diameter orange ball of plasma. If the soul is removed from the body, then the body becomes paralyzed except for a small movement of the eyelids. Upon death, all these separate modules are assembled into a single energy being. A light cord from the soul provides the battery power and information required to join these modules together. A second light cord from the pituitary gland transfers the modules into the energy being for assembly. This energy information transfer is the reason that people in a near-death situation say they saw their entire life flash before them.

[0006] Moving to a larger picture of things that are happening in the galaxy, I was able to make contact with the Pleiadian Federation which is located about 400 light years from earth. The Federation is a group of over one hundred intelligent beings that were brought to the Pleiades from around the galaxy. One member of the Federation calls itself the Intelligent Insect Beings. They are the ones who fly the black triangles over Belgium and France for the purpose of evacuating human beings back to the Pleiades for relocation on a planet called Earth II. The reason for this evacuation was that it was not known if it would be possible to win the battle of Revelations, which would take place about two years later here on earth.

[0007] As could be expected, the humans were angry and hysterical at being abducted. So the Intelligent Insect Beings asked me if I could calm them down. I was in telepathic communication with them, and they were in telepathic communication with their computer system, which meant that I could have my thoughts displayed to the humans on the computer monitor. It turned out that one woman was from Central America and only spoke Spanish. The Intelligent Insect Beings didn't speak Spanish so they thought there would be no way I could communicate with her. So I told them that I would spell the Spanish words letter-by-letter and she could then read my message. Since most Spanish people are Catholics, I thought a religious message would be of importance to her. I spelled out the phrase, "Que Dios te bendiga." which means, "May God bless you." I also asked the two beings to put their hands together in a form of prayer, and the woman followed suit. At that moment the Intelligent Insect Beings were reading her mind to understand her emotional state. They said, "She is crying tears . . . " After a slight but tense pause, they continued, "of joy!" They said the woman had a big smile on her face and was successfully transitioned into her new life.

[0008] One year later, the Blond Aliens of the hundred member council of the Pleiadian Federation remote viewed me so that I could celebrate with them the success of their mission to earth. The Blond Aliens, which is not their real name, fly the Beamship spacecraft. This hyperspace vehicle can teleport itself to any location in the galaxy. It dematerializes into the black void for an instance and then re-materialize anywhere in the galaxy. This ship can be seen in Billy Meier's video from Switzerland along with a picture of their envoy, Semjase.

[0009] Just recently I had a demonstration of the Beamship's ability. I heard an emergency distress call by a commander of a spacecraft who said that they had a fire onboard their spacecraft. I immediately remote viewed a Federation maintenance mothership, they got the frequency and location of the ship, and dispatched the Beamship in time to rescue the commander. The burned-out cables, which had caused the fire, were repaired by the Federation and the commander arrived home safely on his planet in his own spacecraft.

[0010] The Federation then received a message from the commander saying that he wanted his planet to join the Federation now that there was this type of communication available. So the Federation visited his planet for the signing ceremony, and I was invited to attend the proceedings by remote view. Word got around about this, and within three weeks another 20 planets joined the Federation for the same reason.

[0011] At one ceremony, which was attended by Admiral Third Class of the Pleiadian Defense Department, His Highness of the planet was signing the document of incorporation. At that moment, I could see him signing, so I exclaimed, "He is signing with his left hand." The Admiral was almost apoplectic at hearing this. After giving her the signed document, His Highness held up his hand and asked me how many fingers he was holding up. He had a fist so I said none. Then he put his index finger out and I said one. He then made a fist again and I said none. Then he held out all fingers and I said five. The Admiral said that he had a big smile on his face as he went to announce the agreement because he knew, even though his planet was located **90,000** light years away on the other side of the galaxy, he could instantly communicate any problems to the Federation. So this is the importance of developing inventions that can enhance our remote viewing ability because one day it will mean that we can become a vital part of the Pleiadian Federation.

SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0012] Referring to **FIG. 4**, the spiritual eye of the human energy system is located at the pituitary gland in the forehead. It has the shape of a hollow cone which is composed of the misty white energy of hyperspace. Light coming into this vortex is then transferred by a light cord to a visual energy module which is located in a co-dimension of hyperspace. Because these modules are interconnected by light cords, the mind module is able to interpret the visual pattern the eye is seeing. More importantly, the mind can give logical instructions to this spiritual eye module for it to rotate around or move in a particular direction.

[0013] The reason that hyperspace has a white misty look to it is that the speed of light is very much less than the speed of light in our spacetime. The Lorentz transformation says that the distance L is shortened relativistically to a distance L' in a way related to the ratio of the velocity v of the object to the velocity of light c.

$$L' = L\sqrt{1 - \frac{v^2}{c^2}}$$

If the velocity of light is very low, then a small velocity creates an enormous contraction in length. By moving through hyperspace, therefore, enormous distances can be traversed. And this is the reason that it is possible to project the spiritual eye, voice and hearing to remote locations in the galaxy.

[0014] The universe is composed of subspace, space and hyperspace which are co-dimensions of each other. Subspace is defined by the geometry of the tetrahedron which is a four-sided solid whose faces are equilateral triangles

having three 60° angles. Referring to **FIG. 5**, a tetrahedron whose sides are the square root of three (A), has a height of the square root of two (B), and base length equal to the square root of one (C). This forms the basic number set {$\sqrt{1}$, $\sqrt{2}$, $\sqrt{3}$}.

[0015] Referring to **FIG. 6**, the tetrahedron (A) is circumscribed by the sphere (B). Rod (C) is the sphere radius. A second rod (D), of equal length to rod (C), from the center of the sphere to the corner of the tetrahedron makes an angle φ of

$$\phi = \text{ArcSin}\left(\frac{1}{3}\right) = 19.47122063°$$

So the four corners of the tetrahedron touch the sphere.

[0016] This tetrahedral geometry can be seen throughout the planets of the solar system Referring to **FIG. 7**, the islands of the Caribbean curve down from Puerto Rico to Venezuela forming an island vortex. The low density hyperspace energy releasing from the corner of the tetrahedron softens the rock mantle. The hot magma then rises through the rock with the least resistance. This creates a circular arc of volcanic islands along the edge of the vortex.

[0017] Referring to **FIG. 8**, the Giant Red Spot of Jupiter is located at a southern latitude of 19.5°. This vortex is so large that the entire earth can fit in it.

[0018] Referring to **FIG. 9**, the Olympus Mons volcano is located at a northern latitude of 19.5° as shown by the marker. This volcano is the size of France. Notice the fallen plume of volcanic debris toward the north east.

[0019] The double harmonic of the tetrahedral angle is twice 19.5° or 39° which is the location of the Silver Bridge in Point Pleasant, West Va. A large wormhole opened up around the bridge during Christmas rush hour when the bridge was full of cars. Due to the low density hyperspace energy, the rivets holding the cables down popped loose and all the cars were dumped into the river. A computer simulation using Schrodinger's quantum mechanics equation for a particle in a potential well shows that as the energy becomes less dense, the particle is no longer contained in the potential well. The electron jumps out. Thus the atomic bonds are broken which softens the rivets. This is the first time that there has been an understanding of the failure mechanism of this bridge.

[0020] After downloading from the Internet several pages of the index of refraction of a wide range of materials, I noticed that the index of refraction for Plexiglas was 1.50. Another source said it was 1.51. One of the Internet sites had a movable flashlight which showed the incident ray and the refracted ray. For Plexiglas, surprisingly enough, the incident ray was coming in at an angle of 60° to the normal, and the light was refracted at 35.26°, both of which are tetrahedral angles. The angle of the equilateral face of the tetrahedron is of course 60°. The angle at the top of tetrahedron is the arc-cosine of the ratio of the height over the edge length.

$$\theta = \text{ArcCos}\left(\frac{\sqrt{2}}{\sqrt{3}}\right) = 35.26°$$

According to Snell's law, the index of refraction n, times the sine of the angle $\sin(\theta_1)$ of the ray leaving material m_1, is equal to the index of refraction n_2 times the sine of the angle of refraction $\sin(\theta_2)$ of the ray entering material m_2. Referring to **FIG. 10**, the equation is

$$n_1 \sin(\theta_1) = n_2 \sin(\theta_2)$$

The index of air n_1 is equal to one. The index n_2 of Plexiglas is 1.50. If the incident ray is at $\theta_1 = 60°$ to the normal, then the output angle is

$$\theta_2 = \text{ArcSin}\left[\frac{n_1}{n_2}\text{Sin}(\theta_1)\right] = \text{ArcSin}\left[\frac{2}{3}\frac{\sqrt{3}}{2}\right] = 35.26°$$

which is equal to the angle of the tetrahedron.

[0021] Then I recalled several months earlier that I had gone to the Subway restaurant to get a sandwich. I was sitting by the Plexiglas window communicating with the Admiral whose mothership was in earth orbit. She mentioned that they were bringing two people aboard. At that moment I looked out through the window and I could see both of them clearly and easily through my spiritual eye. To my amazement, I saw both of the captives start to pull out guns from behind their backs. I then projected by spiritual hands which resulted in preventing the attack on the security guards. To say the least, the Admiral was rather surprised at these events. She then asked me to look at the design of the window because she thought it had something to do with my enhanced remote viewing capabilities. Looking at the Plexiglas, I noticed that on the edge of the large window pane there was a shorter piece of Plexiglas which was mounted parallel to the window pane. This smaller panel acted to protect the yellow neon fluorescent tube. I took the measurements of the design using a piece of paper that I found near the table.

[0022] I then went home and designed up a mounting bracket with my 3D computer software. I had already installed the stereolithography software that converts the design to the *.STL file format. How stereolithography works is that it slices the design into many thin horizontal sections. The machine has a platform which is mounted in a bath of liquid polymer. An ultraviolet laser, mounted on an xy-table, then traces out the slice. Because the liquid polymer is light sensitive, it polymerizes immediately into solid plastic. Then the platform is lowered a few thousandths of an inch and the second slice is added. This process eventually builds up the complete 3D part. Using the Internet, the *.STL file is sent by e-mail to the stereolithography service provider who returns the part overnight. So the next day I had the piece from which I made a plastic mold and several additional pieces for mounting the Plexiglas bracket on a full sheet of Plexiglas that I ordered locally. It never occurred to me to measure the angles, so after I got the index of refraction for Plexiglas, I measured the incident angle and it turned out to be 61°. So then I realized that the spiritual eye

was being diffracted across these two Plexiglas plates which connected it to the tetrahedral geometry of subspace. Because subspace is the foundation of space, this created a much more efficient route for remote viewing. The result is that this invention has allowed me to make contact with 430 alien civilizations. Since then I have been awarded the Aphysics prize for my work in the invention and elaboration of the tetrahedron diagram of which there are now over 4000 graphs. The scientific discoveries contained in the diagram are (1) the electron and proton are one and same particle, (2) the existence of hyperspace, (3) how mass can be taken out of dimension, (4) cosmology determines the elementary particles, (4) all the physics constants and the tetrahedral geometry are contained in the two 360° circles of the infinity symbol and (5) all the physics constants are determined geometrically and projected from a subspace manifold into our dimension. For my work in Revelations, I was awarded four beautiful galloping riderless white horses of the Apocalypse.

A BRIEF DESCRIPTION OF THE DRAWINGS

[0023] **FIG. 1**. Remote viewing the top of a palm tree containing several coconuts.

[0024] **FIG. 2**. Remote viewing three soldiers running across a wooden bridge.

[0025] **FIG. 3**. Remote viewing computer building that soldiers were guarding.

[0026] **FIG. 4**. Spiritual eye of human aura.

[0027] **FIG. 5**. Tetrahedron.

[0028] **FIG. 6**. Tetrahedron circumscribed by sphere.

[0029] **FIG. 7**. Caribbean volcanic island vortex.

[0030] **FIG. 8**. Giant Red Spot on Jupiter.

[0031] **FIG. 9**. Olympus Mons volcano on Mars.

[0032] **FIG. 10**. Snell's Law of Refraction.

[0033] **FIG. 11**. Perspective view of remote viewing station.

[0034] **FIG. 12**. Wedge-shaped spacers for diffraction panel.

[0035] **FIG. 13**. Remote viewing angle.

[0036] **FIG. 14**. A remote viewing session taking place on a planet located 90,000 light years from earth on the other side of the galaxy showing His Highness signing with his left hand the document that allows his planet to become a member of the Pleiadian Federation.

DETAILED DESCRIPTION OF THE
INVENTION

[0037] 1. Referring to **FIG. 11**, the remote viewing station is a rectangular box wooden frame (A) on which is mounted on one side a large sheet of Plexiglas (B). The diffraction panel (C), made of a shorter length of Plexiglas, is mounted with acrylic glue on the Plexiglas sheet using clear polyoptic molded plastic spacers (D).

[0038] Referring to **FIG. 12**, the wedge-shaped spacers (D) hold the diffraction panel (C) to the sheet of Plexiglas (B). The angle of the wedge is 30° which makes the incident angle 60° to the normal.

[0039] Referring to the top view perspective **FIG. 13**, sitting on the wide bench, the remote viewer can adjust his sight along the wedge for proper alignment at an angle of 60°. Due to the 1.50 index of refraction of Plexiglas, the spiritual eye is diffracted across the edge of the first panel and then refracted across the second panel at the tetrahedral angle of 35.26°.

[0040] Referring to **FIG. 14**, the remote viewing image is seen superimposed on the large sheet of Plexiglas which acts as the viewing screen.

I claim:

1. A remote viewing station comprising:

(a) a rectangular box frame made of wood having a length of six feet, a width of four feet and a height of six feet;

(b) a large sheet of quarter inch Plexiglas, having an index of refraction of 1.50, mounted on the right side of item (1a);

(c) several wedge-shaped clear plastic spacers, three inches in width and eight and a half inches in length, having a wedge angle of 30° that are mounted on the interior right side of item (1b);

(d) a shorter sheet of quarter inch Plexiglas, having a length of one and a half feet, mounted on item (1c) parallel to item (1b);

(e) a wide bench on which the remote viewer sits so that the remote viewer can align his sight along the wedge angle of item (1c);

2. A remote viewing amplifier that:

(a) diffracts the spiritual eye of the remote viewer across the edge of item (1d) at an incident angle of 60° to the normal;

(b) refracts the spiritual eye at 35.26° to the normal due to the refractive index of item (1a) according to Snell's Law of Refraction; and

(c) aligns the spiritual eye with the tetrahedral geometry of subspace due to the diffraction/refraction combination of item (2a) and (2b).

* * * * *

(19) **United States**

(12) **Patent Application Publication** (10) Pub. No.: **US 2006/0145019 A1**

St. Clair (43) **Pub. Date:** **Jul. 6, 2006**

(54) **TRIANGULAR SPACECRAFT**

(76) Inventor: **John Quincy St. Clair**, San Juan, PR (US)

Correspondence Address:
JOHN ST. CLAIR
52 KINGS COURT, 4A
SAN JUAN, PR 00911 (US)

Publication Classification

(57) **ABSTRACT**

A spacecraft having a triangular hull with vertical electro-static line charges on each corner that produce a horizontal electric field parallel to the sides of the hull. This field, interacting with a plane wave emitted by antennas on the side of the hull, generates a force per volume combining both lift and propulsion.

Figure 1

Figure 2

Figure 3

Figure 4

Figure 5

Figure 6

Figure 7

TRIANGULAR SPACECRAFT

BRIEF SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0001] This invention is a spacecraft having a triangular hull with vertical electrostatic line charges on each corner. The line charges create a horizontal electric field that, together with a plane wave emitted by antennas on the side of the hull, generates a force per volume providing a unique combination of both lift and propulsion.

BACKGROUND OF THE INVENTION

[0002] Referring to **FIG. 1**, the spacecraft has a hull in the shape of an equilateral triangle. A parabolic antenna (E) is centrally located in the bottom of the hull. An array of horizontal slot antennas is located along the side of the hull (A). Each back corner (F,G) has a corner conducting plate which is charged to a positive voltage +V. The forward corner (C) has a conducting plate charged to a negative voltage −V. A motion control hemisphere (D) is located on the bottom surface in each of the three corners.

[0003] Referring to **FIG. 2**, two planes (A,B) intersect at the origin O at an opening angle β. Each plane (x,y) is charged to a voltage V. The potential at point P is determined in polar coordinates {ρφ}. The Laplace equation for the potential Φ in polar coordinates is given by:

$$\frac{1}{\rho}\frac{\partial}{\partial\rho}\left(\rho\frac{\partial\Phi}{\partial\rho}\right)+\frac{1}{\rho^2}\frac{\partial^2\Phi}{\partial\phi^2}=0$$

Using a separation of variables solution, the potential is given as the product of two functions:

$$\Phi(\rho,\phi)=R(\rho)\Psi(\phi)$$

which when substituted into the Laplace equation becomes:

$$\frac{\rho}{R}\frac{d}{d\rho}\left(\rho\frac{dR}{d\rho}\right)+\frac{1}{\Psi}\frac{d^2\Psi}{d\phi^2}=0$$

Since the two terms are separately functions of ρ and φ respectively, each one has to be constant with the sum of the constants equal to zero:

$$\frac{\rho}{R}\frac{d}{d\rho}\left(\rho\frac{dR}{d\rho}\right)=v^2 \quad \frac{1}{\Psi}\frac{d^2\Psi}{d\phi^2}=-v^2$$

These two equations have solutions:

$$R(\rho)=a\rho^{v}+b\rho^{-v}$$

$$\psi(\phi)=A\cos(v\phi)+B\sin(v\phi)$$

The azimuthal angle φ is restricted to a value in the range $0\leq\phi\leq\beta$. The boundary condition is that the potential Φ is equal to V for any radius ρ when φ=0 and φ=β. This means that v has to be an integer value of π so that the sine function is zero:

$$\sin(v\beta)=\sin\left(\frac{m\pi}{\beta}\beta\right)=\sin(m\pi)=0 \quad m=1,2\ldots$$

which in turn means that the coefficient A of the cosine term has to be zero in the solution above. Choosing b=0 makes the general solution for the potential equal to:

$$\Phi(\rho,\phi)=V+\sum_{m=1}^{\infty}a_m\rho^{m\pi/\beta}\sin(m\pi\phi/\beta)$$

which shows that when the angle is zero, the sine is zero and the potential is V. If the angle is β, then there is a multiple of π such that the sine is zero again.

[0004] Because the series involves positive powers of the radius, for small enough ρ, only the first term m=1 in the series is important. Thus around ρ=0, the potential is approximately

$$\Phi(\rho,\phi)\approx V+a_1\rho^{\pi/\beta}\sin(\pi\phi/\beta)$$

[0005] The electric field component is the negative gradient of the potential:

$$E_\phi(\rho,\phi)=-\frac{1}{\rho}\frac{\partial\Phi}{\partial\phi}=-\frac{\pi a_1}{\beta}\rho^{(\pi/\beta)-1}\cos(\pi\phi/\beta)$$

The surface charge distribution σ at φ=0 and φ=β is equal to the electric field perpendicular to the surface times the permittivity of space ϵ_0:

$$\sigma(\rho)=\varepsilon_0 E_\phi(\rho,0)=-\frac{\varepsilon_0\pi a_1}{\beta}\rho^{\frac{\pi}{\beta}-1}$$

Notice that if angle of intersection β is less than π, then the equation says that there is a very small radius to a positive power which means little charge density accumulation.

[0006] Referring to **FIG. 3**, the value of β, in the case of the triangular hull, is equal to 360° less 60° for a total of 300° or:

$$\beta=\frac{300}{180}\pi=\frac{5}{3}\pi$$

$$\rho^{\frac{\pi}{\frac{5}{3}\pi}-1}=\frac{1}{\rho^{\frac{2}{5}}}$$

which says that there is a charge density singularity to the two fifths power for small radius. Thus, the corner plates on the hull create a huge line charge density along the sharp vertical corner edge. The equation for the potential of a line charge density is given as:

$$\Phi(x,y)=-\frac{\lambda}{2\pi\varepsilon_0}\mathrm{Ln}((x-x_0)^2+(y-y_0)^2)$$

where λ is the charge per unit length in the vertical z-direction, and x_0 and y_0 are the location of the line charge in the xy-plane.

[0007] Referring to **FIG. 4**, the triangular hull (D) is plotted together with the potential contours (A) and the electric field arrows (B) created by the three corner line charges. The line charges are perpendicular to the paper. Notice that the electric field arrows are parallel crossing the center parabolic antenna (C). The electric field is also parallel to the sides (D) of the triangle.

[0008] Referring to **FIG. 5**, along the side of the triangle (A), an array (B) of horizontal slot antennas emit electromagnetic waves that have a vertically polarized electric E field (C). These traveling waves interact with the electric field (D) produced by the line charges on the corners of the triangle.

[0009] Using differential forms mathematics, this combination of fields is represented by the Hodge star of the differential of the wedge product of the two fields. The antenna electromagnetic field is a combination of a traveling magnetic field B_w, and electric field E_w. The stationary field E created by the line charges is perpendicular to the traveling wave.

$$*d(E \wedge (B_w + E_w \wedge dt))\frac{\varepsilon}{c} = \frac{force}{volume}$$

where ϵ is the linear capacitance of space and c is the speed of light. Thus there is a force per volume around the hull.

[0010] This combination of fields produces a spacetime curvature as determined by Einstein's General Theory of Relativity. The traveling electric field has an amplitude in the vertical z-direction and travels in the x-direction

$$E_{w-E_z}\cos(x-t)$$

The Faraday electromagnetic tensor contains all the electric and magnetic fields in all the {x,y,z} directions. The first row and first column contain the two electric fields

$$F^{\alpha}_{\beta} = \begin{array}{c|cccc} & t & & & \\ \hline t & 0 & E_x & 0 & E_z\cos(x-t) \\ x & E_x & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ y & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ z & E_z\cos(x-t) & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{array}$$

The stress exerted on spacetime occurs in the xx, yy and zz-direction as calculated from the stress-energy tensor T of gravitational physics

$$4\pi T^{\mu\nu} = F^{\mu\alpha}F^{\mu}_{\alpha} - \frac{1}{4}g^{\mu\nu}F_{\alpha\beta}F^{\alpha\beta}$$

where g is the metric tensor for Cartesian space

$$g_{\alpha\beta} = \begin{array}{c|cccc} & t & & & \\ \hline t & -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ x & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ y & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ z & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{array}$$

where the diagonal components are the coefficients of the elementary spacetime length ds squared

$$(ds)^2 = -(dt)^2 + (dx)^2 + (dy)^2 + (dz)^2$$

The calculation produces three stresses T^{xx}, T^{yy} and T^{zz} in their respective {x,y,z} directions.

[0011] Referring to **FIG. 6**, these three stresses are plotted together as a **3D** vector field animated over time in nine frames. The graphs show that there is a lift force as depicted by the vertical arrows as well as a force of propulsion as shown by the interspersed horizontal arrows. With the passage of time, these vectors exchange places with each other so that the lift becomes the propulsion and vice versa, creating a wavy stress-energy field around the hull.

SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0012] This invention is a spacecraft with a triangular hull having charged flat plates on the vertical corners of the three sides. The two rear corners are charged to a potential V. The forward corner is charged to a potential –V. The 60° angle on the corner creates a line charge density singularity that produces a huge horizontal electric field pointing from the back to the front of the craft which is also parallel to the sides of the triangle. An array of horizontal slot antennas located on the sides of the triangular hull produce an electromagnetic wave with the electric field polarized in the vertical direction. This combination of fields produces a spacetime force in both the vertical and horizontal directions such that the spacecraft receives a lift force and a force of propulsion.

A BRIEF DESCRIPTION OF THE DRAWINGS

[0013] **FIG. 1**. Perspective view of triangular spacecraft.

[0014] **FIG. 2**. Drawing of the intersection of two charged plates in order to calculate the charge density in the corner.

[0015] **FIG. 3**. Perspective view of the corner angle β for the equilateral triangle.

[0016] **FIG. 4**. Planar **2D** graph showing the electric field produced by three line charges on the corners of the triangular hull.

[0017] **FIG. 5**. Perspective view of electric field produced by the linear charge interacting with the traveling electromagnetic wave produced by the slot antenna.

[0018] **FIG. 6**. **3D** vector animation of the lift and thrust force generated by the fields.

[0019] **FIG. 7**. Perspective view of slot antenna.

DETAILED DESCRIPTION OF THE INVENTION

[0020] Referring to **FIG. 7**, the antenna (A) is made out of sheet copper in which a rectangular horizontal slot (B) has been notched out using a die press and sheet metal fixture. A coaxial cable from the amplifier and frequency generator is attached across the slot by soldering the outer cable (D) to one side of the slot and the inner cable (E) to the other side of the slot. This creates the positive and negative charges across the gap which forms the vertical electric field (F) which radiates out perpendicularly to the copper sheet.

[0021] Although the invention has been described with reference to specific embodiments, such as a particular antenna system, those skilled in the art will appreciate that many modifications and variations are possible without departing from the teachings of the invention. All such modifications and variations are intended to be encompassed within the scope of the following claims.

1. A spacecraft comprised of the following components:

(a) a triangular hull in the form of an equilateral triangle;

(b) two copper plates attached on opposite vertical sides at each of the three corners of the hull (1a) such that a sharp vertical edge is formed where they come together;

(c) an electrostatic generator used to charge the back two copper-cladded corners (1b) to a high positive voltage, and the third forward copper-cladded corner to a high negative voltage;

(d) a horizontal slot antenna array mounted-on the sides of the hull; and

(e) a frequency generator, antenna and coaxial cables to drive the antenna array (1d).

2. To create, by claims (1a, 1b, 1c), an intense vertical line charge at the corners (1b) and a horizontal electric field that that is parallel to the sides of the hull (1a);

3. To create, by claims (1d,1e), an electromagnetic wave with a vertically polarized electric field traveling outward from the side of the hull (1a); and

4. To create, by claims (2,3), an interaction of the electrostatic field (2) with the electromagnetic wave (3) such that a combined spacetime curvature pressure is generated on the hull in the upward and forward direction to produce lift and propulsion respectively.

* * * * *

US 20060112848A1

(54) **PERMANENT MAGNET PROPULSION SYSTEM**

(76) Inventor: **John Quincy St. Clair**, San Juan, PR (US)

Correspondence Address:
JOHN ST. CLAIR
52 KINGS COURT, 4A
SAN JUAN, PR 00911 (US)

Publication Classification

(51) **Int. Cl.**
B61C 3/00 (2006.01)
(52) **U.S. Cl.** **105/49**

(57) **ABSTRACT**

This invention is a propulsion system for a train that uses permanent magnets mounted on a rotating iron cylindrical plate carrying a radial current in order to create a spacetime curvature distortion which pulls the locomotive along the track.
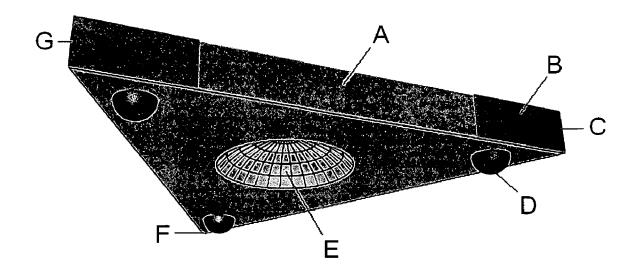
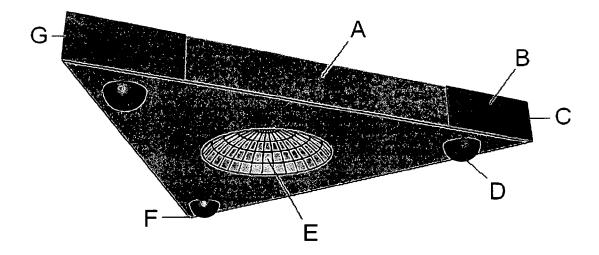Figure 1
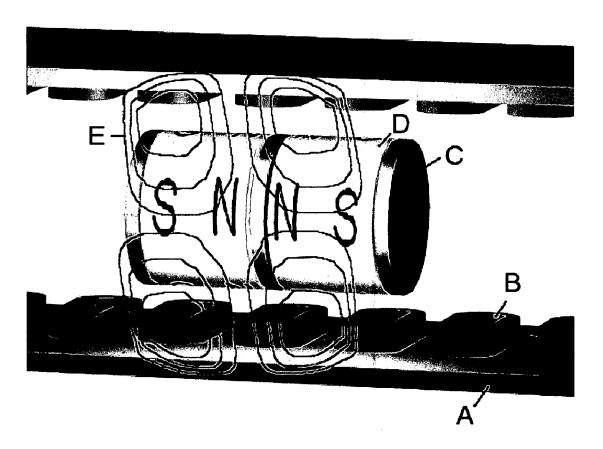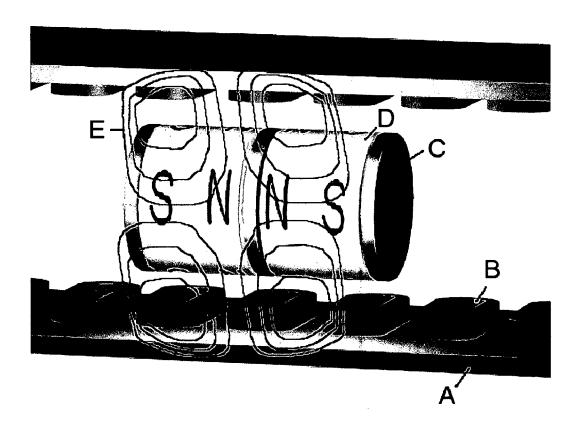
Figure 2
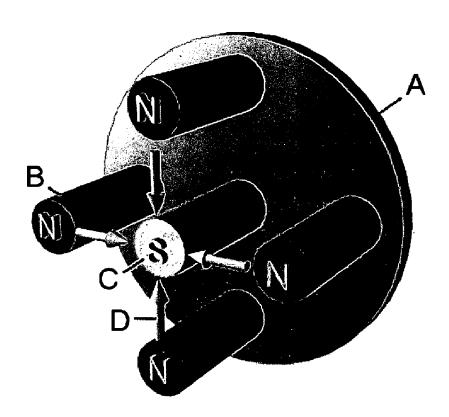
Figure 3
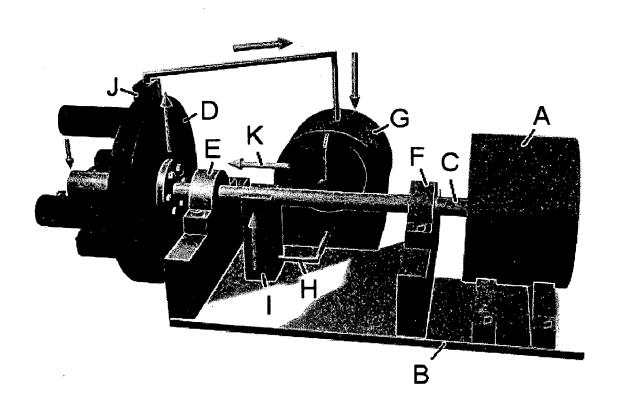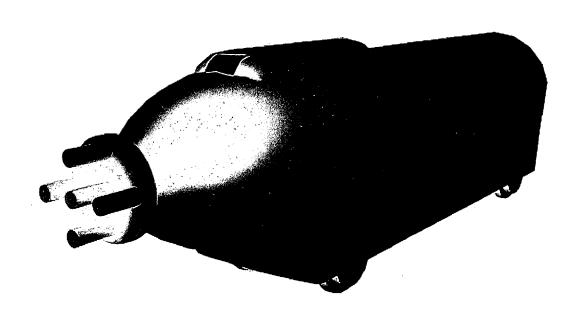
Figure 4

PERMANENT MAGNET PROPULSION SYSTEM

BRIEF SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0001] This invention is a propulsion system for a train that utilizes spinning cylindrical magnets in order to create a spacetime pressure distortion ahead of the vehicle that pulls the locomotive along the track.

BACKGROUND OF THE INVENTION

[0002] At the present time, referring to **FIG. 1**, proposed permanent magnet propulsion systems use a dual railway track (A) supporting a series of coil windings (B) located along the track. The vehicle is attached to two permanent magnets (D) between steel pole pieces (C). The north pole of each magnet faces the interior pole piece such that the magnetic flux path (E) follows the center pole piece up through the railway bed and then back to the south pole of the magnet. As the magnets move along the track, the coil windings are activated at the correct time by Hall sensors. With the coil energized as a north pole, the permanent magnet north pole is repelled which drives the vehicle along the track The problem with this design, and other similar designs, is that it is not practical to wind huge numbers of sensor-activated electrical coils along a steel track.

[0003] From Einstein's General Theory of Relativity, it is known that a spacetime curvature pressure develops perpendicular to direction of vibration of the electric and magnetic field. As an example, the photon has an electric field vibrating in the vertical y-direction and a magnetic field vibrating in the horizontal x-direction. The spacetime curvature pressure is therefore along the z-axis of radiation which pushes the negative mass of the photon along. Thus in order to create a spacetime curvature pressure in the z-direction along the track which would pull the train forward, a magnetic flux density field is required in the radial direction.

[0004] Referring to **FIG. 2**, four equally-spaced north permanent magnets (B) surrounding a centrally-located south permanent magnet (C) are mounted on an iron cylinder which acts as the radial flux return path. The magnetic flux density field (D) is in the radial direction from the north pole to the south pole. In order to provide strength, the magnets are molded onto a steel shaft and coated with epoxy so that they don't rust. During the molding process, a capacitor-discharge magnetizer is used to create the magnetic field of the magnet.

[0005] In Cartesian coordinates $\{-ct,x,y,z\}$, the elemental spacetime length ds squared is the sum of the squares of the incremental lengths $\{cdt,dx,dy,dz\}$

$$(ds)^2 = -(dt)^2 + (dx)^2 + (dy)^2 + (dz)^2$$

where the speed of light c is unity. The coefficients $(-1,1,1,1)$ of this equation make up the g metric 4×4 tensor

$$g_{\alpha\beta} = \begin{array}{c|cccc} & [t & x & y & z] \\ \hline t & -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ x & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ y & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ z & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{array}$$

[0006] The Faraday electromagnetic tensor contains the magnetic fields which determine how the spacetime length ds is curved. For a magnetic flux density field in the x-direction, Bx, and a magnetic flux density field in the y-direction, By, the Faraday tensor is

$$F_\beta^\alpha = \begin{array}{c|cccc} & t & x & y & z \\ \hline t & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ x & 0 & 0 & 0 & -By \\ y & 0 & 0 & 0 & Bx \\ z & 0 & By & -Bx & 0 \end{array}$$

The stress-energy-momentum tensor T, which determines how space is curved, is calculated from the following equation

$$4\pi T^{\mu\nu} = F^{\mu\alpha} F_\alpha^\nu - \frac{1}{4} g^{\mu\nu} F_{\alpha\beta} F^{\alpha\beta}$$

The stress-energy in the z-direction ahead of the locomotive is

$$T^{zz} = \frac{B_x^2 + B_y^2}{8\pi} = \frac{B_r^2}{8\pi}$$

where the sum of the squares of the fields in the x and y directions is the radial B field. In Einstein's General Relativity Theory, the curvature G tensor is equal to the stress-energy tensor divided by 8π. The G tensor is the curvature of space having units of inverse radius squared.

$$G = \frac{T}{8\pi}$$

Therefore the curvature G_{zz} generated along the z-direction ahead of the train is proportional to the square of the magnetic flux density field

$$G_{zz} = \frac{1}{r^2} = \frac{G\varepsilon}{c^2} \frac{B_r^2}{8\pi} = \frac{1}{meter^2}$$

where G is Newton's gravitational constant (not to be confused with the curvature tensor), ϵ is the linear capacitance of space, and c is the speed of light. The linear mass of space Ω is the speed of light c squared divided by the gravitational constant G, so that the equation can be written as

$$\frac{G\varepsilon}{c^2} \frac{B_r^2}{8\pi} = \frac{\varepsilon}{\Omega} \frac{B_r^2}{8\pi} = \frac{1}{\underset{\varepsilon}{\Omega}} \frac{B_r^2}{8\pi}$$

where the conversion factor is the square of the magnetic vector potential A

$$\sqrt{\frac{\Omega}{\varepsilon}} = \frac{kgm}{seccoul} = A$$

which is actually the momentum per charge. Therefore the curvature equation can be written as

$$\frac{1}{r^2} = \frac{1}{8\pi}\left(\frac{B_r}{A}\right)^2$$

This equation shows that it is necessary to create a magnetic vector potential together with the radial magnetic flux density field in order to create a curvature of space. Looking at the units of A shows that it is a mass momentum per charge

$$A = \frac{kg}{sec}\frac{m}{coul} = \frac{m\omega^2 r}{I}$$

or a mass m rotating with angular velocity c) per current along the radius. In terms of the invention, what this means is that the mass of the iron cylinder has to be rotating and there has to be a radial electrical current I in order to produce the linear charge along the radius. The differential mass dm depends on the circumference times the differential radius dr, the mass density p, and the length L of the cylinder

$$dm = \rho 2\pi r L dr$$

so that the magnetic vector potential becomes

$$A = \int_0^R \frac{\rho 2\pi r L \omega^2 r}{I} dr = \frac{2}{3}R^3 \rho\pi L\frac{\omega^2}{I}$$

The value of A for the iron cylinder is

$$L = .2m$$

$$\rho = 7866\frac{kg}{m^3}$$

$$R = 1m$$

$$\omega = 2\pi f = 6.28 \ sec^{-1}$$

$$I = 3000000 \ amp$$

$$A = .04335\frac{kgm}{seccoul}$$

$$Br = 1.2tesla$$

$$\frac{1}{8\pi}\left(\frac{Br}{A}\right)^2 = 30.47m^2$$

$$r_{curvature} = \sqrt{8\pi}\left(\frac{A}{Br}\right) = .181m$$

What makes this possible is that the new N-machines can easily generate a minimum of 6 million amps which is twice the value of the electrical current above.

[0007] Referring to **FIG. 3**, the assembly consists of a large induction motor (A) mounted on the train's base plate (B) driving a motor shaft (C) attached to the iron cylinder (D). The shaft is held in place by two thrust bearings mounted in two pillow blocks (E,F). The current-generating N-machine (G) is electrically connected by a copper bus (H) to a copper-beryllium brush (I) on the motor shaft with a similar return brush (J) on the edge of the iron cylinder. The current (K) flows through the motor shaft to the center of the rotating cylinder and then radially outward to the edge. The magnetic flux density flows from the north poles of the outer permanent magnets to the central south pole, along the central magnet to the center of the rotating cylinder and then radially outward to the south poles of the outer magnets.

[0008] The thrust F developed is the radius of curvature of spacetime r_c calculated above times the magnet flux density field times the current I

$$F = \frac{r_c B_r I}{\sqrt{8\pi}} \approx 30000lbf$$

Using conservation of tensor coordinates, the radius of curvature is in the z-direction, the magnetic flux density field is in the radial direction and the current is in the radial direction

$$F^z = x^z B_r I^r$$

where the radial indices cancel, leaving the z-index as the direction of the force.

SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0009] It is the object of this invention to create a spacetime curvature in front of a train locomotive in order to pull the vehicle along the track It is known from gravitational physics that a spacetime curvature is generated perpendicular to the direction of vibration of the electric and magnetic field. A radial magnetic field, which can be produced by permanent magnets attached to the flat faces near the rim of a iron cylinder rotating about the z-axis, will create a curvature in the z-direction. Four cylindrical north-pole-oriented magnets produce a radial magnetic flux density with is channeled into a central cylindrical south-pole-oriented magnet. The flux lines then flow radially outward through the steel rotating cylinder and reconnect with the south poles of the four outer magnets. The rotating iron cylinder generates the equivalent of a magnetic vector potential when an electrical current flows from the center of the cylinder to the edge. This current is generated by an N-machine current generator. The square of the magnetic flux density divided by the magnetic vector potential is equal to the spacetime curvature. The square root of the inverse of the spacetime curvature is the radius of curvature. The thrust developed is this radius of curvature times the magnetic flux density field times the current.

A BRIEF DESCRIPTION OF THE DRAWINGS

[0010] **FIG. 1**. Perspective view of proposed permanent magnetic propulsion system using coil windings on the steel track.

[0011] **FIG. 2**. Perspective view of permanent magnet rotor assembly.

[0012] **FIG. 3**. Perspective view of system showing motor drive, N-machine and permanent magnet rotor.

[0013] **FIG. 4**. Perspective view of locomotive and rotor/magnet assembly.

DETAILED DESCRIPTION OF THE INVENTION

[0014] 1. The permanent magnets are made of neodymium-iron-boron material which is heated to its melt temperature and injection molded around a steel shaft threaded at one end while at the same time a pulsed magnetic field is applied to the material using a charge-discharge magnetizer. Because of the iron in the material, a coat of epoxy is applied to the magnet in order to protect it from the environment. Holes are drilled into the iron plate 90° apart near the rim, threaded, and then the steel shaft with the magnet is then inserted. Another hole is drilled and tapped in the center of the circular plate for attaching the south pole magnet which is used as the return path for the magnetic flux.

[0015] 2. Another easier way to make the magnets is to purchase short lengths of tubular NdFeB magnets and then stack them on the steel shaft with a cylindrical iron pole piece on the end of the shaft. The pole piece then holds the magnets down in place when the shaft is threaded into the plate.

[0016] 3. Referring to **FIG. 4**, the propulsion system is mounted inside the train cabin such that the rotor/magnet assembly extends out in front of the locomotive where the spacetime curvature is generated.

I claim:

1. A train propulsion system consisting of the following components:

a. a rotating iron cylindrical plate rotor of high relative permeability driven by an induction motor and horizontal steel motor shaft mounted in pillow block thrust bearings;

b. four cylindrical magnets, each molded to a steel support shaft threaded into the iron plate at 90° intervals around the rim of the plate with their north poles facing away from the plate;

c. a fifth cylindrical magnet molded to a steel support shaft which is threaded into the center of the iron plate with the south pole facing away from the plate;

d. an N-machine current generator supplying a radial electrical current from the center of the rotating plate by means of a copper-beryllium brush on the motor shaft (**1**a) and another similar brush on the outside edge of the rotor.

e. a locomotive train on which the components are mounted such that the rotor/magnet assembly extends out in front of the locomotive with the rotor's angular velocity vector pointing along the track.

2. a closed magnetic flux path along a radial path in air from the north poles of the four outer magnets (**1**b) to the south pole of the central magnet (**1**c), through the center magnet and then radially outward through the rotor (**1**a), returning back through the four outer magnets, such that the flux and electrical current (**1**d) flow in the same outward radial direction through the rotor.

3. the creation of a spacetime curvature due to claims (**1**a through **2**) that produces a large force on the locomotive equal to the radius of the spacetime curvature times the flux times the current.

* * * * *

US 20060180473A1

(54) **WATER ENERGY GENERATOR**

(76) Inventor: **John Quincy St. Clair**, San Juan, PR
                 (US)

     Correspondence Address:
     JOHN ST. CLAIR
     52 KINGS COURT, 4A
     SAN JUAN, PR 00911 (US)

Publication Classification
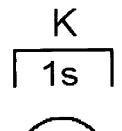
(51) **Int. Cl.**
     C25D   5/34   (2006.01)
(52) **U.S. Cl.** **205/210**

(57)   **ABSTRACT**

A water energy generator that generates electricity using a
magnetic vortex wormhole generator and a water injector/
vacuum chamber to produce low density hyperspace energy
that causes the hydrogen atoms of water molecules to decay
into electron pairs.
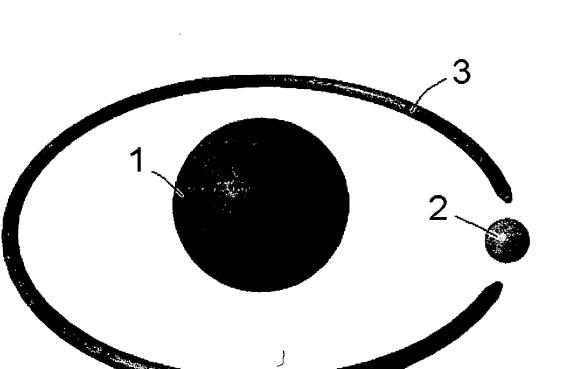
Figure 1
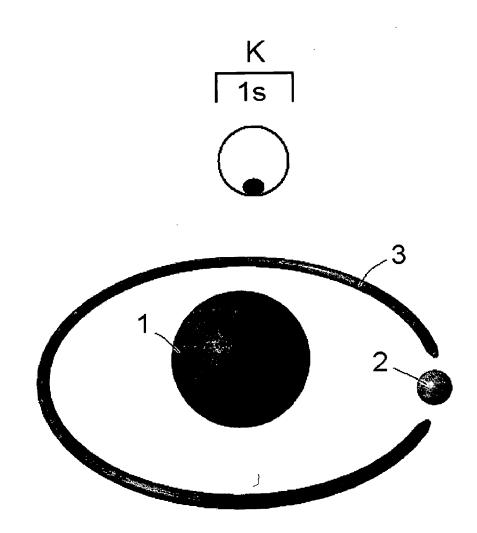
Figure 2
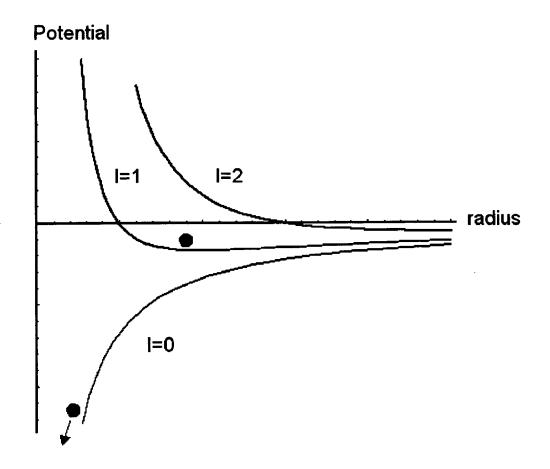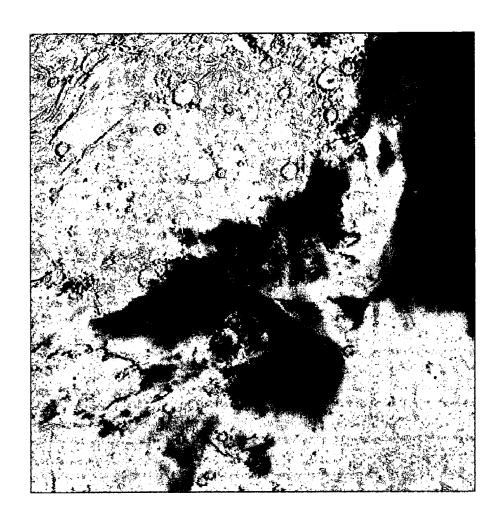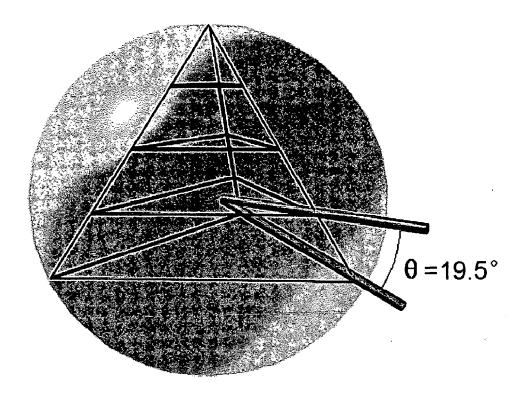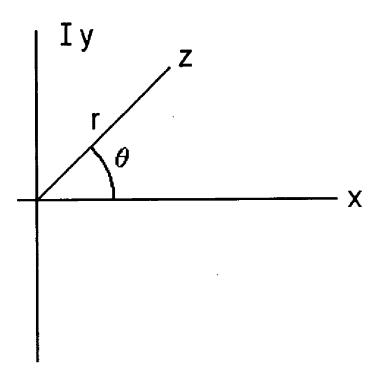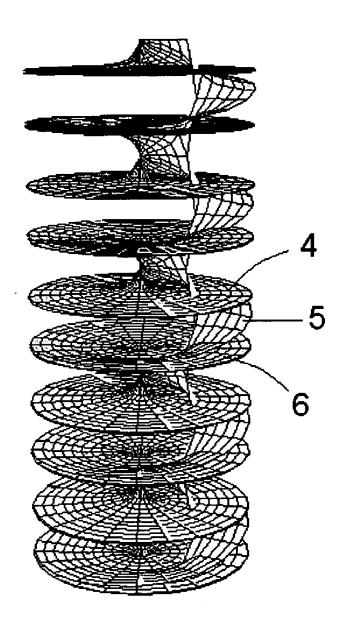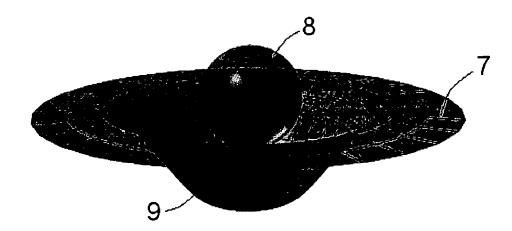
Figure 3

Figure 4

$\theta = 19.5°$

Figure 5

Figure 6

Figure 7

Figure 8

Figure 9

Figure 10

Energy of Electric Field per Volume vs. Time t

Figure 11

Figure 12

Figure 13

Figure 14

$$H \xrightarrow{38} p + e^-$$

$$\downarrow$$

$$p \xrightarrow{39} \pi^0 + e^+$$

$$\left. \begin{array}{c} \end{array} \right\} \xrightarrow{40} e^+ + e^-$$

$$\downarrow$$

$$\pi^0 \xrightarrow{41} h\nu + h\nu$$

$$\downarrow$$

(66) $$h\nu \xrightarrow{42} e^+ + e^-$$

(66) $$h\nu \xrightarrow{43} e^+ + e^-$$

133 pairs

Figure 15
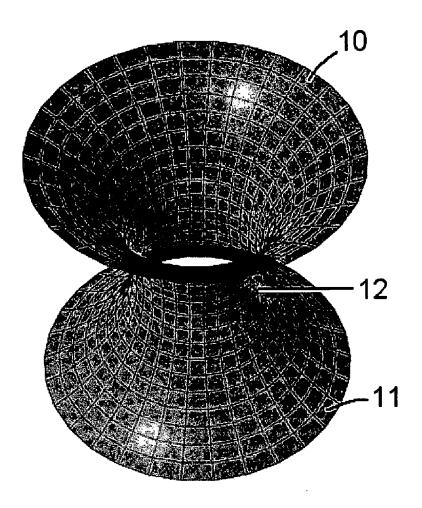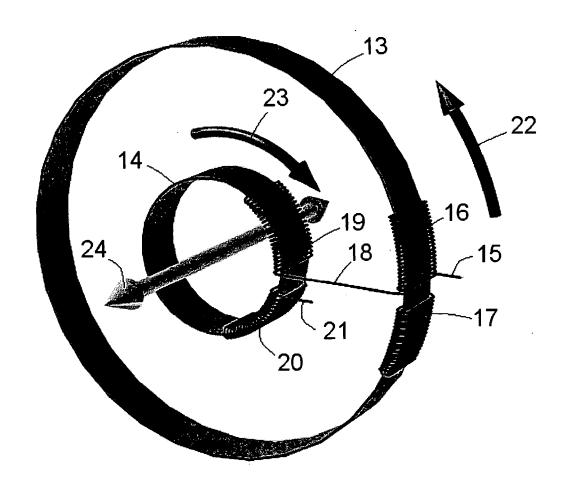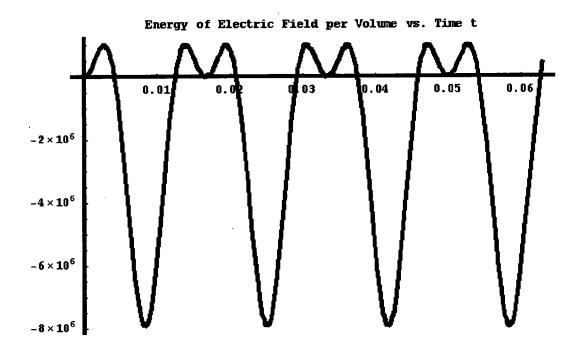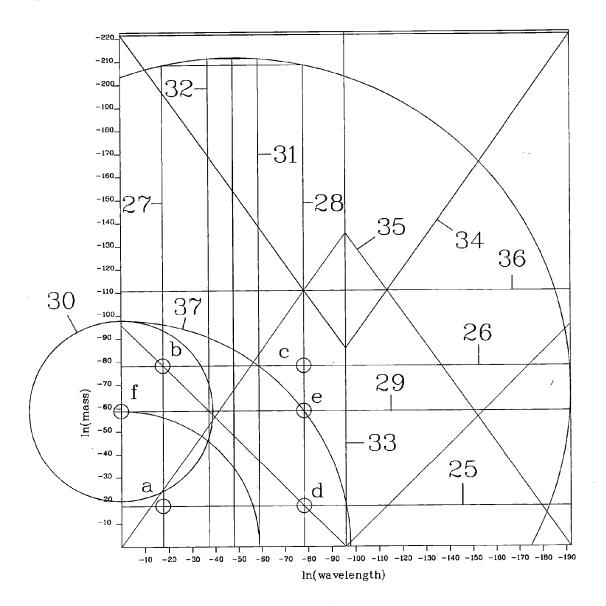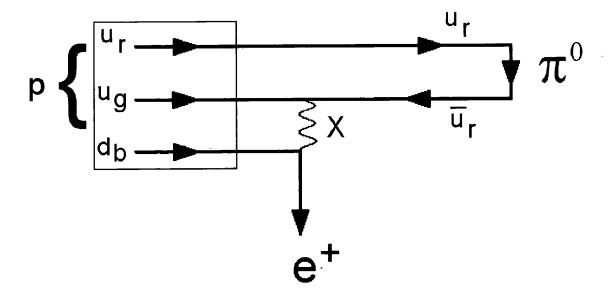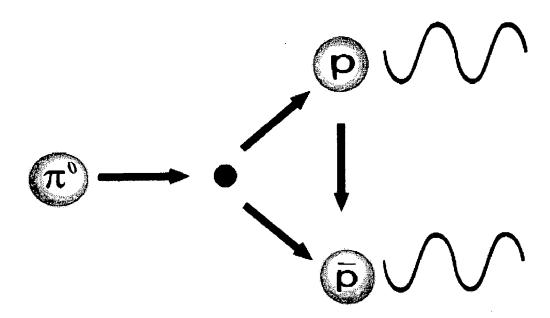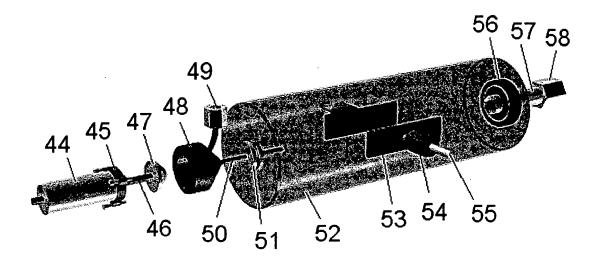
Figure 16
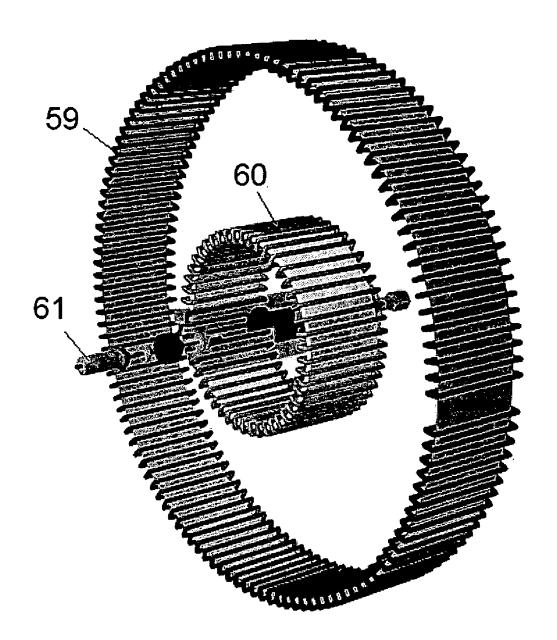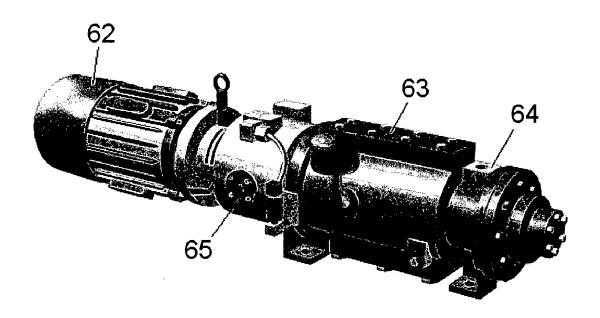
Figure 17

WATER ENERGY GENERATOR

BRIEF SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0001]   This invention is an energy generator that uses the transition through wormholes of the hydrogen atoms of water molecules to break the bonds of the atoms and convert the protons into photons and electrons which can be collected for energy.

BACKGROUND OF THE INVENTION

[0002]   A molecule of water consists of two hydrogen H atoms and one atom of oxygen O which has the chemical formula

$$H_2O$$

The hydrogen atoms can be separated from the oxygen atom by electrolysis. In this process, a direct current of electricity, such as from a battery, is passed through water decomposing it into hydrogen and oxygen. Pure water, however, is a poor conductor of electricity. It is therefore necessary to add some substance to form a solution that will conduct an electric current. Such a solution that will conduct electric current is called an electrolytic solution. A small amount of sulfuric acid or sodium hydroxide is added to the water to form an electrolytic solution. Water electrolyzed yields hydrogen plus oxygen

$$Water->hydrogen+oxygen$$

$$2H_2O \rightarrow 2H_2+O_2$$

Because this invention is to be used on spacecraft, the oxygen can be used for breathing and the hydrogen can be used to produce energy that will be used to create the electromagnetic fields which provide lift and propulsion.

[0003]   Referring to **FIG. 1**, a single hydrogen atom consists of one proton (1) in the nucleus and one electron (2) moving in an orbital (3) around the nucleus. In quantum physics notation, there is only one main K shell and one orbital containing a single electron in the 1 s subshell. An orbital is an energy level containing one or two electrons in a subshell of an atom. Only a total of two electrons may be placed in one orbital with the added constraint that the electrons spin in opposite directions. Looking at the 1 s orbital, it can be seen that only half of it is occupied. What this means is that it is possible to add another hydrogen atom in which its electron occupies the other position in the orbital to from the hydrogen molecule H_2.

[0004]   In 1925, a physicist by the name of Edwin Schrodinger developed a wave equation, which bears his name, that models the hydrogen atom. Even though the classical picture of **FIG. 1** showing a distinct electron orbiting the proton is easy to visualize, in reality the electron is a wavefunction Ψ whose square indicates the probability of finding the electron at a particular point. This then was the start of quantum physics where it was found that the electron energy can only take on certain discrete values.

[0005]   A traveling wave moving in the positive x-direction can be represented by the function $\Psi_1 = \Psi_1(x,t)$ of the form

$$\Psi_1 = A_1 \cos(2\pi(x/\lambda - v\ t))$$

where x is the distance along the x-axis, A the wave amplitude, λ the monochromatic wavelength, v the velocity of the wave and t time.

[0006]   A similar monochromatic wave moving to the left can be represented by

$$\Psi_2 = A_2 \cos(2\pi(x/\lambda + v\ t))$$

where the sign of the velocity is reversed. The superposition of these traveling waves results in a standing wave, or stationary waves, of the form

$$\Psi = \Psi_1 + \Psi_2 = A \cos(2\pi x/\lambda) \cos(2\pi v\ t)$$

which is now a product of a spatial-dependent term A $\cos(2\pi x/\lambda)$, and a time-dependent term $\cos(2\pi v\ t)$. Taking the partial derivative of Ψ twice with respect to x

$$\frac{\partial^2 \Psi}{\partial x^2} = -\left(\frac{2\pi}{\lambda}\right)^2 \Psi$$

The momentum p of a particle is equal to Planck's constant h divided by the mass m of the particle

$$p = h/\lambda = \frac{2\pi\hbar}{\lambda}$$

where h bar is the reduced Planck constant. Thus Schrodinger's equation can be written as

$$\frac{\partial^2 \Psi}{\partial x^2} = -\frac{p^2}{\hbar^2}\Psi$$

For a particle whose potential energy is V(x), the total energy is the kinetic energy K plus the potential energy

$$E=K+V=(p^2/2m)+V$$

Therefore,

$$p^2=2\ m\ (E-V)$$

and Schrodinger's equation becomes

$$\frac{\hbar^2}{2m}\frac{\partial^2 \Psi}{\partial x^2} + (E-V)\Psi = 0$$

The potential V is just the Coulomb potential of the product of two charges e divided by the radius r between them

$$V = \frac{e^2}{4\pi\varepsilon r}$$

where ϵ is the linear capacitance of space. A general wavefunction can be separated into a radial R part and a spherical harmonics part Y

$$\Psi = R_{n,1} Y_{1,m}(\theta,\phi)$$

where the first term is called a radial wavefunction which describes the "in-out" motion of the electron. When Schrodinger's equation is separated, it is found that the radial part of the wavefunction, R, must be a solution of the quantized differential equation

$$\frac{\hbar^2}{2mr}\frac{d^2(rR)}{dr^2} + \left(E - \frac{l(l+1)\hbar^2}{2mr^2} + \frac{e^2}{4\pi\varepsilon r}\right)R = 0$$

This can be expressed in a simpler form by defining the function

f=rR

which is then found to satisfy the equation

$$\frac{\hbar^2}{2m}\frac{d^2 f}{dr^2} + (E - V_{eff})f = 0$$

where the effective potential is given by

$$V_{eff} = \frac{l(l+1)\hbar^2}{2mr^2} - \frac{e^2}{4\pi\varepsilon r}$$

where the l's are the quantum orbital numbers. For s orbitals equal to l=0, the effective potential is just the electrostatic potential of the nucleus. For l greater than zero, the first term is equal to the kinetic energy owing to the angular motion of the electron at a distance r and with angular momentum √l(l+1)h.

[0007] Referring to **FIG. 2**, the effective potential is graphed as a function of radius r and the orbital numbers. For orbital number l=0, which is the lower of the three curves, the potential does not provide a stable position for the electron (black disk) and the negatively-charged electron just crashes into the positively-charged proton nucleus as shown by the arrow. For orbital l=1, the first term is called the centrifugal repulsion which together with the electrostatic potential provides for a stable position for the electron as seen in the middle curve. The potential energy is negative which creates a slight valley in which the electron obtains a stable orbit. Higher orbital numbers l=2 produce a similar valley potential further out on the radius. The l=1 orbital does not allow the electron to come near the proton which provides for a stable hydrogen atom. So the key to this invention is how to destabilize this hydrogen atom energy system and produce usable energy which can propel the electromagnetic spacecraft and run other hyperspace inventions. Refer to my patent applications such as Dipole Moment Spacecraft, Dual Potential Hull Spacecraft, Photon Spacecraft, Electromagnetic Field Propulsion System, Full Body Teleportation, Magnetic Vortex Wormhole Generator, Electric Vortex Wormhole Generator, Sulfur S8 Wormhole Generator, Cavitating Oil Hyperspace Energy Generator, Rotor Inductance Propulsion System and Triangular Spacecraft.

[0008] Many of these patent applications involve wormholes and hyperspace which are not well-known concepts in the scientific community. Hyperspace consists of those dimensions which are co-dimensional with our spacetime. The reason I know about hyperspace is because (1) I have been in hyperspace on a number of occasions and have experienced Einstein's time dilation according to his Gen-

eral Theory of Relativity, (2) I have experienced more than one full-body hyperspace teleportation over a distance of 100 meters, (3) we have been able to create a wormhole between space and hyperspace with the magnetic vortex wormhole generator in which smoke was blown through one side of the coil into hyperspace, a first contact verified by the Grey Aliens, (4) I have seen the green mist associated with moving out of dimension and crossing over into hyperspace, (5) I have looked into another dimension and have seen another building, a car and a man who waving at me in the presence of an artificially-intelligent Cyborg with the "high-tech look" from the Pleiadian Defense Department, (6) I can remote view through hyperspace subgeometry to distances of 100,000 light years to the edge of the galaxy and have made first contact with around 500 extraterrestrial civilizations involving the use of patent applications such as Remote Viewing Amplifier, Quantum Dot Energy Cylinder and Walking Through Walls Training System, (7) I am the only person on Earth who has communicated with the designers of the crop circles found in England and explained their design to them in terms of subspace geometry, (8) I can walk through walls as a hyperspace energy being, and (9) I have discovered how anti-gravity is possible using low density hyperspace energy, not to mention all the other research work on these electromagnetic field propulsion vehicles. For my work in developing the geometry of the subspace manifold known as the tetrahedron diagram, I was given the Aphysics award by the Admiral, who is third in line to the Admiralty of the Pleiadian Defense Department. For my work in Revelations, she awarded me four beautiful galloping white riderless horses of the Apocalypse. The reason that the Pleiadian Defense Department was involved was that the Admiral had the task of creating the energy being that would protect the subspace manifold during the battle of Revelations which took place in the year 2001. So these are some of my personal experiences in the field of hyperspace physics.

[0009] As to the scientific aspect of hyperspace physics, observations of the solar system have noted that large vortices occur on the planets at a latitude of ±19.5°. On the planet Jupiter, for example, the Giant Red Spot vortex, which is the size of two planets like Earth, is located at −19.5° latitude.

[0010] Referring to **FIG. 3**, the Olympus Mons volcano, which is the size of France, occurs in the northern hemisphere at 19.5°. The plume of volcanic ash can be seen being blown to the upper right.

[0011] Here on Earth, just north of me at +19.5° in the Caribbean, there is a slow moving rock mantle vortex that curves the islands down toward Venezuela. Since the tetrahedron has three corners, another corner occurs at 120° to the west where the Marshall Islands are located. The reason that the volcanic islands form is that low density hyperspace energy softens the atoms and molecules to such an extent that the atomic bonds are broken. The hot magma from the core has an easier path to the surface through the soft rock compared to the hard rock of surrounding areas. As the vortex rotates, the rising hot magma creates volcanoes which form the chain of islands.

[0012] As another example of this, the Silver bridge, which is located at a double harmonic of 39° between Ohio and West Virginia, collapsed because a large wormhole

3

opened up and flooded the bridge with low density hyper-space energy. The metal rivets softened and pulled out of the plates holding down the suspension cables. Thus the road-way tilted to one side and all the cars fell into the river.

[0013] If you look at the quarried granite polygonal mega-lithic stone blocks that were used to build Machu Picchu, the blocks are put together as though they were soft putty. They fit together perfectly. Machu Picchu, or Great Picchu, is the Quichua name for a sharp peak which rises ten thousand feet above the sea. How this was achieved is described in my patent application *Rotating Magnetic Vortex Generator* which shows that rotating permanent magnets can create a wormhole between space and hyperspace. The low density hyperspace energy then floods the block as to make it weightless. The block is then floated up from the quarry which is 2500 feet below Machu Picchu. The huge 1000-ton blocks found in the platform at Baalbek in the Cedar Mountains of Lebanon were also lifted into position in this manner.

[0014] Using a technique called Chi Kung breathing, not necessarily known to the Chinese, one of our researchers has been able to levitate himself to a height of six feet. He might have gone higher but he lost his balance and his arm touched a nearby metal pipe. He then floated back to the ground. Contracting the abdominal muscles causes hot air to rise in the lungs while at the same time cold air is inhaled through the nose. This combination of hot and cold air mixing together creates environmental oscillators having a tempera-ture fluctuation. This changes Planck's constant such that the body goes out of dimension and low density hyperspace energy fills the body.

[0015] The final example comes from Biblical times. Jesus and his father Joseph were both carpenters. A chair that Joseph had made for a client was found to be too small. So Jesus placed his hands on either side of the chair and stretched the chair to fit. The phrase in Spanish is "mas silla" which means that Jesus made more chair. In the dictionary, the Spanish word for putty is "masilla." The reason that Jesus could do this is that he passed hyperspace energy through his hand vortices which softened the wood. See my patent application called *Hyperspace Torque Generator* which shows this in more detail. The hand vortex is actually a planar co-gravitational K field that can rotate a pendulum around in circles. This solenoidal field corresponds to the magnetic H field. The electric field corresponds to the linear gravitational g field. The equations are identical for both sets of fields. I learned that Jesus actually reincarnated here on Earth in order to identify the planet on which the battle of Revelations would take place.

[0016] In summary, these are some examples as to how low density hyperspace energy can soften and break the bonds of atoms and molecules.

[0017] As mentioned previously, the astronomical obser-vations suggest that the structure of the universe is related to the tetrahedron. Referring to **FIG. 4**, the corners of a tetrahedron circumscribed by a sphere, touch the sphere at an angle of 19.47122063°. The ratio of the area-to-volume ratio of the sphere to the area-to-volume ratio of the tetra-hedron is $\frac{1}{3}$ which is the magic ratio in physics. The arcsin($\frac{1}{3}$) is 19.47°.

[0018] In order for all the physics constants to be projected into our universe and the co-dimensional hyperspace dimen-sions, there has to be a tetrahedral subspace manifold. The only mathematical function which allows multiple rotations of the complex plane is the logarithmic function Log[z].

[0019] Referring to **FIG. 5**, the complex number z in the complex plane is equal to x+I y where x and y are real constants and $I^2=-1$. The complex number z can also be written in terms of a radius and an angle

$$z=r \ Exp[I \ \theta]$$

Because the angle can rotate more than once in 2π m multiples, the complex number z is actually

$$z=r \ Exp[I(\theta+2\pi \ m \ )]$$

Taking the logarithm of z

$$Log[z]=Log[r]+I(\theta+2\pi m)$$

[0020] Referring to **FIG. 6**, it can be seen that it is not possible to go around multiple times on the same surface due to a branch cut along the origin where Log[0] is undefined. What happens is that as you rotate around on surface (4) and get to the origin, you go down along the branch (5) to the next hyperspace plane (6). Thus the universe is composed of many hyperspace co-dimensions. From personal experience, I estimate that the distance separating the two dimensions is about 3 meters when I was looking into another dimension at the man waving at me. The physics is even more com-plicated because there is a Lorentz dimensional transforma-tion in which higher dimensions appear smaller and lower dimensions appear larger. In one case I was looking at a huge mothership at a much higher dimension and it looked like a tiny toy model spacecraft. They fired a laser cannon at me, and I then curved space which made the beam change course. You can see why I was awarded the four horses.

[0021] The antilog of Log[z] is

$$e^{Log[z]}=z=re^{I \ \omega t}$$

where the angle is the angular frequency ω times the time t. The subspace geometry remains stationary or fixed, but the projection of the antilog into our dimension generates a system which is frequency dependent. This is why we get oscillating fields.

[0022] From Einstein's General Theory of Relativity, it is known that various kinds of energy can curve spacetime such as mass, electromagnetic fields, angular momentum and electrical charge. The elemental spacetime length ds in cylindrical coordinates $\{t,r,\theta,z\}$, known as the Schwarzs-child metric, shows that spacetime can be curved using mass M and charge Q

$$(ds)^2 = -(dt)^2\left(1 - \frac{2M}{r} + \frac{Q^2}{r^2}\right) + \frac{dr^2}{\left(1 - \frac{2M}{r} + \frac{Q^2}{r^2}\right)} + (rd\theta)^2 + (dz)^2$$

where you can see that the elemental time dt is dilated by the mass M and the elementary radius dr is reduced. I have actually experienced this time dilation in which, as I was jumping into hyperspace, I was hit by a car which broke my shoulder. When I came back into dimension which appeared to be a few seconds later, I found that I had an 8-inch blood ring down the right side of my chest. My shoulder blade, which sticks up about two inches, is still broken to this day.

4

[0023]   Referring to **FIG. 7**, flat space (**7**) can be curved (**9**) by a massive body (**8**) such as a planet. For example, the mass of the Earth gives space a negative curvature such that objects tend to fall toward the center of the mass (bowl). On the other hand, using electromagnetic fields, it is possible to produce a positive curvature such that a spacecraft rises by falling upward.

[0024]   Referring to **FIG. 8**, if the fields are intense enough, then a wormhole (**12**) forms between space (**10**) and hyperspace (**11**). This depiction is called an embedding diagram because there is no open space going through the wormhole. An object traversing the wormhole moves along the surface from one dimension to another. In order to open the throat (**12**) of the wormhole, negative energy is required. Referring to my patent application Dual Potential Hull Spacecraft, negative energy is produced by the interaction of a microwave beam with an oscillating magnetic H field. In terms of differential forms mathematics, this is given as the Hodge Star * of the differential d of the wedge ^ product of the magnetic H field with the electromagnetic wave {B,E}

$$*d(H \wedge (B + E \wedge dt)) = \frac{\partial(-\rho)}{\partial t}$$

which says that there is an increasing rate of change of negative energy ($-\rho$). Due the presence of negative energy together with the spacetime curvature pressure produced by the electromagnetic fields, wormholes open up between space and hyperspace. There is a positive gravitational potential between hyperspace and space because the low density hyperspace energy is more dense than the negative energy in this dimension. Thus the hyperspace energy flows into our dimension which reduces the mass of the spacecraft. The upward spacetime pressure stress over the hull due to the electromagnetic fields creates a lift force on the nearly massless vehicle. Because the hyperspace energy has a speed of light equal to one meter per second, the electromagnetic fields become relativistically strong since they obey the Lorentz transformation. Due to the low mass, high spacetime lift pressure and strong EM fields, the vehicle can attain very high rates of acceleration.

[0025]   Another method to produce a wormhole is to use bucking magnetic fields which is described in my patent application *Magnetic Vortex Wormhole Generator.* In gravitation physics, the Faraday F tensor, which is a 4×4 spacetime metric {t,x,y,z}, contains all the components of the electromagnetic fields in the various spatial directions {x,y, z}

$$F^\alpha_\beta = \begin{array}{c|cccc} & t & x & y & z \\ \hline t & 0 & E_x & E_y & E_z \\ x & E_x & 0 & B_z & -B_y \\ y & E_y & -B_z & 0 & B_x \\ z & E_z & B_y & -B_x & 0 \end{array}$$

where contravariant index a refers to the rows, and the covariant index β refers to the columns. For example, the component $F^t_x = E_x$ is the electric field in the x-direction. If there were two magnetic bucking fields in the x-direction the Faraday tensor would be

$$F^\alpha_\beta = \begin{array}{c|cccc} & t & x & y & z \\ \hline t & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ x & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ y & 0 & 0 & 0 & B_x - B_x \\ z & 0 & 0 & -(B_x - B_x) & 0 \end{array} = \begin{vmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{vmatrix}$$

which says that the Faraday tensor is zero. Thus no spacetime curvature is generated from two bucking magnetic fields at the same position. On the other hand, if the two bucking magnetic fields are concentric at different radii, then the Faraday tensor becomes

$$F^\alpha_\beta = \begin{array}{c|cccc} & t & x & y & z \\ \hline t & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ x & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ y & 0 & 0 & 0 & B_x \delta(x_1) - B_x \delta(x_2) \\ z & 0 & 0 & -(B_x \delta(x_1) - B_x \delta(x_2)) & 0 \end{array}$$

which is not zero due to the presence of the Kronecker δ delta function which locates the fields at different positions. The spacetime stress-energy-momentum tensor T is then computed from the following equation

$$4\pi T^{\mu\nu} = F^{\mu\alpha} F^\nu_\alpha - \frac{1}{4} g^{\mu\nu} F_{\alpha\beta} F^{\alpha\beta}$$

where g is the metric tensor containing the coefficients of the elemental spacetime length ds. With the mass M and charge Q term equal to zero, there being just electromagnetic fields involved, the g metric tensor in cylindrical coordinates becomes

$$g_{\alpha\beta} = \begin{array}{c|cccc} & t & r & \theta & z \\ \hline t & -\left(1 - \frac{2M}{r} + \frac{Q^2}{r^2}\right) & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ r & 0 & \left(1 - \frac{2M}{r} + \frac{Q^2}{r^2}\right)^{-1} & 0 & 0 \\ \theta & 0 & 0 & r^2 & 0 \\ z & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{array}$$

$$= \begin{vmatrix} -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & r^2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{vmatrix}$$

[0026]   Referring to **FIG. 9**, the magnetic vortex generator has two concentric, thin, flat cylindrical silicon-iron cores (**13,14**), each consisting of a stack of three 0.020 inch thick transformer laminations wrapped with insulating tape. Using insulated magnetic wire, a flat helical coil (**16**) is wrapped counter-clockwise around the outer laminations. The coil receives power through connection (**15**). The winding then continues around the core until coil (**17**) where the wire (**18**) is extended to the inner core and the wrapping of coil (**19**) proceeds in the clockwise direction. The inner core wrapping terminates on coil (**20**) with the extension of the second power connection (**21**). Because the coils are wound in

opposite directions, the generator produces two bucking magnetic fields at different radii (**22,23**).

[0027] According to Maxwell's electromagnetic equations, the curl of the magnetic flux density B field times the square of the speed of light squared is equal to the rate of change of the electric E field

$$c^2 \nabla x B = \frac{\partial E}{\partial t}$$

Multiplying both sides by the elemental area of the core and integrating over the area

$$c^2 \int_0^{r_0} \nabla x B dA = \frac{\partial}{\partial t} \int_0^{r_0} E \cdot n dA = \frac{\partial}{\partial t} \int_0^{r_0} E \cdot n 2\pi r dr$$

The curl of the field can be converted into a line integral around the core contour using Stokes' Theorem

$$c^2 \int_0^{r_0} \nabla x B dA = c^2 \oint_{r_0} B \cdot ds = c^2 \int_0^{2\pi} B r_0 d\theta$$

[0028] The magnetic flux density B field oscillates with angular frequency ω

$$B = B_0 e^{I\omega t}$$

Substituting this into the equation and integrating over time for the inner core field

$$-c^2 \int_0^t \int_0^{2\pi} B_0 e^{I\omega t} r_0 d\theta = \int_0^{r_0} E 2\pi r dr = E \pi r_0^2$$

This can be solved for the electric E field that is produced by the oscillating magnetic flux density B field

$$E_0 = \frac{2 I B_0 c^2 (-1 + e^{I\omega t})}{r_0 \omega}$$

The electric field for the outer core is the same equation except that the opposite sign of the magnetic flux density B field and the radius r**1**

$$E_1 = \frac{-2 I B_0 c^2 (-1 + e^{I\omega t})}{r_1 \omega}$$

Adding these two fields together is the total electric field E

$$E = E_0 + E_1 = \frac{-2 B_0 c^2 (-1 + \mathrm{Exp}(I\omega t))(r_0 - r_1)}{r_0 r_1 \omega}$$

The electrostatic energy of the field is equal to half the linear capacitance of space times the summation over the volume of the dot product of the electric field with itself

$$U = \frac{\varepsilon}{2} \int E \cdot E dV$$

Because the electric field points in the z-direction out of the coil, the dot product is actually the square of the electric field.

[0029] Referring to **FIG. 10**, the energy U per volume is plotted as a function of time with a radius ratio r_1/r_0 of 3/1. As the graph shows, the magnetic vortex wormhole generator produces mostly negative energy which is required in order to create the wormholes. Because the stress-energy-momentum T tensor is also the square of the electric field, this graph gives the spacetime curvature pressure. Thus the electric field produces both the pressure and negative energy required to open up wormholes between space and hyperspace.

[0030] Going back to the effective potential equation,

$$V_{eff} = \frac{l(l+1)\hbar^2}{2mr^2} - \frac{e^2}{4\pi\varepsilon r}$$

it can be seen that the first term is divided by the mass of the particle. In current gravitation physics, the mass of the particle is invariant with velocity. It does not obey the Lorentz transformation. The mass is related to the energy E of the particle and its momentum p by

$$m^2 = E^2 - p^2$$

In different inertial frames moving with a relative velocity v, the energy and the momentum obey the Lorentz transformation, but no matter what the relative motion, the mass of the particle is constant. In the first term of the effective potential, the mass is constant which leaves just Planck's constant.

[0031] Having worked for over ten years on the subspace manifold, known as the tetrahedron diagram, I found a most incredible intersection on the diagram when working with the water molecule. The water molecule has two hydrogen atoms and one oxygen atom as mentioned previously. The atomic weight of one atom of hydrogen is 1.008 atomic weight units (awu). The atomic weight of oxygen is 16.000 awu. Therefore the molecular weight of water is

Weight of two atoms of hydrogen 2×1.008 $awu = 2.016$ awu

Weight of one atom of oxygen 1×16.000 $awu = \frac{16.000\ awu}{18.016\ awu}$

The gram molecular weight is the atomic weight expressed in grams, so there are 18.016 grams in Avogadro's number of molecules. So the mass per molecule in logs is

$$\text{Log}\left[\frac{18.016 \text{ gram} - \text{mol} \Big/ \left(1000 \frac{\text{gm}}{\text{kg}}\right)}{6.02 \times 10^{23} \text{ mol}}\right] = -58.77103943$$

[0032] Referring to **FIG. 11**, the tetrahedron diagram plots the natural logarithm of mass versus the natural logarithm of wavelength. The reason for this is that mass times wavelength is equal to Planck's constant divided by the speed of light c, known on the diagram as the base constant. At the present time there are over 4000 diagrams which are copyrighted in the Library of Congress. In logarithms, the product of two numbers is the sum of the two numbers. This means that the sum of the mass and the wavelength are equal to the base constant which has a value of

$$\ln[m] + \ln[\lambda] = \ln[h/c] = -95.91546344 = \text{base constant}$$

Our dimension has a lower limit on mass and length known respectively as the Planck mass and the Planck wavelength. The Planck mass is the linear mass Ω of the universe times the Planck scale Λ. The Planck wavelength is circumference of a circle of radius Planck scale. In terms of logs, the Planck mass and Planck wavelength are

$$\text{Planck mass} = \ln(\Omega\Lambda) = -17.64290101$$

$$\text{Planck wavelength} = \ln(2\pi\Lambda) = -78.27256243$$

[0033] When these values are plotted on the tetrahedron diagram shown in **FIG. 11**, the Planck box (abcd) is formed which are the boundaries of our dimension in subspace. The line numbering is as follows

Planck mass	25, 27
Planck wavelength	26, 28
mass of water molecule	29, 31
speed of light squared circle	30
base constant	33
inverted tetrahedrons	34, 35
centerline	36

The energy of the water molecule, circle (**37**), is equal to the sum of the water molecule mass (**29**) plus the speed of light squared circle (**30**). The energy circle (**37**) intersects the mass of the water molecule (**29**) at the Planck wavelength (**28**, point e), which is the boundary between space and hyperspace. What this means is that the mass is equal to the energy at the Planck box boundary. The only way that this is possible is if the speed of light c is equal to one meter per second

$$E = m \; c^2 = m \; c = 1 \text{ meter/second}$$

A water molecule traversing a wormhole into hyperspace undergoes a change in the speed of light from 299792458 m/s to 1 m/s.

[0034] Planck's constant h is equal to the Planck mass $\Omega\Lambda$ times the Planck scale Λ times the speed of light c.

$$h = \Omega\Lambda\Lambda c$$

By having the speed of light go to 1 m/s, the orbital term in the effective potential V_{eff} is reduced by a factor of the speed of light squared equal to 9×10^{16}. This unbalances the equation to such an extent that only the Coulomb potential term remains.

$$\frac{l(l+1)\hbar^2}{2mr^2} \ll \text{coulomb term}$$

The electron is attracted to the proton nucleus because the centrifugal term no longer provides a stable orbit for the electron. Thus the atomic binding is destroyed and the water molecule becomes soft as putty.

[0035] Referring to **FIG. 12**, the collision of the electron with the proton together with the enormous change in the proton's energy causes the proton p to become unstable and decay. According to the Standard Model of particle physics, the elementary particles are composed of smaller particles known as quarks. The six quarks have been named up u, down d, strange s, charm c, top t, and bottom b. The subscript on the quark indicates one of three colors {red r, blue b, green g). As shown in the diagram, the proton is composed of three quarks {u_r, u_g, d_b}, two of which are up quarks of which one is red and the other green, and a third blue down quark. The proton p decays into a positron e^+ which is an electron with a positive charge, and a neutrally-charged pion π^0 particle through the exchange of an X boson particle. The pion has a mass between the electron and the proton.

$$p \rightarrow \pi^0 + e^+$$

[0036] Referring to **FIG. 13**, the pion π^0 then decays into a proton p and antiproton $\bar{p}$ which annihilate each other to produce two photons shown on the right by the traveling waves. So the overall energy exchange is

$$p \rightarrow \frac{2h\nu}{c^2} + e^+$$

where hv is the energy per gamma photon with frequency v. The electron of the hydrogen atom would then annihilate the positron for additional photon energy.

[0037] Referring to **FIG. 14**, the hydrogen H atom is composed (**38**) of the proton and electron as seen in the upper left corner. The proton decays (**39**) into the neutral pion and a positron. The electron from the hydrogen atom and this positron form one electron pair (**40**). The pion then decays (**41**) into two gamma photons which produce an electron pair production energy cascade into 132 pairs (**42,43**) for a total of 133 electron pairs. These electrons can then be captured electrostatically and used for the production of electricity.

[0038] Referring to **FIG. 15**, the electrons are captured with the water droplet injector . The plunger (**46**) of a spring-loaded cylindrical solenoid (**44**) is attached to a tapered piston (**47**). By means of ring collar and bolts (**45**), the solenoid is bolted to the injector (**48**). A supply of purified water is attached to the water inlet connection (**49**). When the solenoid is activated, it pulls back slightly so that water can enter the valve. When the solenoid is deactivated, the piston forces the water droplet out through the nozzle (**50**) into a cylindrical glass vacuum chamber (**52**). Two cylindrical glass disks (**51**) hold the nozzle in place. On the other end of the vacuum chamber is the sealed-tube con-

nection (**56,57,58**) to the vacuum pump. In the middle of the vacuum chamber, two metal plates (**53**) are attached through sealed glass collars (**54**) to electrical pins (**55**). The plates are electrostatically-charged with opposite charges so as to form a capacitor. This creates an electrical field between the plates which attracts the electrons to the positively-charged plate.

[0039]   Referring to **FIG. 16**, the vacuum tube and water injector (**61**) are mounted along the centerline of the inner (**60**) and outer (**59**) magnetic vortex wormhole generator coils. The low density hyperspace energy traversing the wormhole along the centerline of the coils causes the injected water molecules to soften and decay into a cascade of electrons. The oscillating electric field along the centerline causes the electrons to vibrate back and forth. The crossed electric field between the charged capacitor plates causes the electrons to flow toward the positively-charge plate in order to produce electricity.

[0040]   Referring to **FIG. 17**, the vacuum tube is connected to the vacuum pump through a hose connection to the pump air inlet (**64**). A 5 Hp electric motor (**62**) drives dual rotating flights of screws which trap the air and move it toward the exhaust outlet (**65**) shown with no muffler. On a spacecraft operating in the vacuum of outer space, this component would not be needed.

SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0041]   It is the object of this invention to generate electricity by using low density hyperspace energy to soften water molecules such that the atomic binding is broken which causes the hydrogen nucleus to decay into a cascade of electron pairs. These electrons are then collected on a positively-charged plate in order to produce electricity. The water molecules are softened by flooding them with low density hyperspace energy that is produced by a magnetic vortex wormhole generator. The generator creates negative energy and a spacetime curvature along the centerline of two concentric coils. This combination opens up wormholes along the centerline. Because the gravitational potential of low density hyperspace energy is greater than the negative energy, the hyperspace energy flows through the wormhole from hyperspace into our dimension. The hyperspace energy has a speed of light equal to one meter/second. This causes a change in Planck's constant h such that the proton orbitals of the hydrogen atom are unable to produce a centrifugal repulsion which keeps the electron in orbit. The Coulomb potential term dominates and the electron is attracted to the proton. Due to the vast change in the speed of light, and the collision of the electron with the proton, the proton becomes unstable and decays into a neutral pion and a positron. The pion then decays into two gamma photons which produce a large cascade of electron pairs.

[0042]   A water injector, consisting of a solenoid-activated valve and nozzle, injects water droplets into a vacuum chamber which is positioned along the centerline of the two concentric coils where the wormholes form. Due to the low density hyperspace energy passing through the wormholes into our dimension, the water molecules soften and decay into electrons which are collected on an electrostatically-charged capacitor plate having a positive charge located in the glass vacuum chamber.

A BRIEF DESCRIPTION OF THE DRAWINGS

[0043]   **FIG. 1**. Perspective view of hydrogen atom K shell.

[0044]   **FIG. 2**. Graph showing potential binding energy of hydrogen atom.

[0045]   **FIG. 3**. Perceptive view of Olympus Mons volcano at +19.5° Mars latitude.

[0046]   **FIG. 4**. Perspective view of tetrahedron inscribed in sphere.

[0047]   **FIG. 5**. Graph showing complex plane.

[0048]   **FIG. 6**. Perspective view of hyperspace co-dimensions of logarithmic manifold.

[0049]   **FIG. 7**. Perspective view of embedding diagram showing curvature of space caused by a mass.

[0050]   **FIG. 8**. Perspective view of wormhole embedding diagram.

[0051]   **FIG. 9**. Perspective view of coils of magnetic vortex wormhole generator.

[0052]   **FIG. 10**. Graph showing that generator produces negative energy.

[0053]   **FIG. 11**. Tetrahedron diagram showing that the speed of light at the Planck box boundary at the water molecule is one meter/second.

[0054]   **FIG. 12**. Perspective view of proton decay into neutral pion and positron.

[0055]   **FIG. 13**. Perspective view of pion decaying into two gamma photons.

[0056]   **FIG. 14**. Diagram showing decay of the hydrogen atom into electrons.

[0057]   **FIG. 15**. Perspective view of water injector and vacuum chamber.

[0058]   **FIG. 16**. Perspective view of vacuum chamber mounted along centerline of magnetic vortex wormhole generator.

[0059]   **FIG. 17**. Perspective view of vacuum pump used to evacuate vacuum chamber.

DETAILED DESCRIPTION OF THE INVENTION

[0060]   1. The coils of the magnetic vortex wormhole generator are made of three stacks of 0.020 inch silicon-iron transformer laminates. These are washed to remove the oil, and then wrapped with insulating tape in order to keep the laminations together. Using a very long bench made of wooden planks and 2×4 sawhorses, the outer coil is wrapped counter-clockwise right to left using a large spool of 14 AWG magnetic wire. A thin spacer is used between windings in order to reduce the winding capacitance. Once the outer coil is wound, the wire is continued to the second inner coil which is wrapped clockwise, leaving enough wire between coils such that when the coils are mounted in the wooden frame, the coil is one continuous winding having an input and output connection. Using an inductance meter, the inductance of the coil is measured. Using a standard frequency of 60 Hz, the capacitance of a sheet metal capacitor is calculated such that the generator is electromagnetically resonant at this frequency. The generator is connected to the line voltage by a 1:1 isolation transformer which is connected to a small primary coil wrapped on a toroidal core

whose similar secondary coil is connected to the sheet metal capacitor and inductance coil. Resonance is achieved by adjusting the spacing and overlap of the sheet metal.

[0061] 2. The vacuum chamber is made of a glass tube with sufficient wall thickness to withstand the vacuum pressure. A number of glass blowing techniques are used to make the glass-electrode connection for the capacitor plates. Then circular pieces of glass plate are cut out and ground to the inside diameter of the tube, fitted with the nozzle and vacuum connection, and then heat sealed to the chamber. The chamber and water injector are then attached to a wooden bracket mounting which is doweled and glued to the wooden frame of the generator.

I claim:

1. A water energy generator system comprising the components:

    a magnetic vortex wormhole generator and driving resonant electrical circuit;

    a water droplet injector;

    a vacuum chamber and vacuum pump; and

    an electrostatic electron capture system.

2. By means of claim (1), a magnetic vortex wormhole generator comprising two concentric cylindrical coils of different radii wound in opposite directions, made of thin sheet silicon-iron transformer laminations wound with one continuous length of magnetic wire providing a single input and single output connection to the driving electrical circuit.

3. By means of claim (2), a coil winding method and oscillating driving circuit producing bucking electric fields along the centerline of the generator normal to the coils which create a spacetime curvature pressure and negative energy.

4. By means of claim (3), the generation of wormholes between space and hyperspace along the centerline of the generator such that low density, low speed of light hyperspace energy flows through a positive gravitational gradient from hyperspace to space.

5. By means of claim (1), a water injector comprising a solenoid-activated water valve, water supply connection, seal and nozzle for injecting water droplets into the vacuum chamber.

6. By means of claims (5) and (4), the softening and particle decay of the water molecules by the hyperspace energy into neutral pions, positrons, gamma photons and finally a cascade of electron pairs.

7. By means of claims (6) and (1), the capture of the electrons on electrostatically charged capacitor plates located in the vacuum chamber for the purpose of producing electrical energy.

8. By means of claims (1) and (2), a resonant electrical driving circuit comprising a line isolation transformer connected to a primary coil wound on a toroidal coil whose secondary output coil is connected to a capacitor and the inductance coil of the generator such that the capacitance of the capacitor and the inductance of the coil form a highly resonant electrical circuit.

* * * * *

(19) **United States**

(12) **Patent Application Publication** (10) Pub. No.: **US 2006/0168937 A1**

St. Clair (43) **Pub. Date:** **Aug. 3, 2006**

(54) **MAGNETIC MONOPOLE SPACECRAFT**

(76) Inventor: **John Quincy St. Clair**, San Juan, PR
(US)

Correspondence Address:
JOHN ST. CLAIR
52 KINGS COURT, 4A
SAN JUAN, PR 00911 (US)

Publication Classification

(51) **Int. Cl.**
F03H 1/00 (2006.01)

(52) **U.S. Cl.** **60/203.1**

(57) **ABSTRACT**

A spacecraft propulsion system that utilizes a dual method of
providing lift on the hull by means of magnetic monopoles
and electromagnetic spacetime curvature pressure.
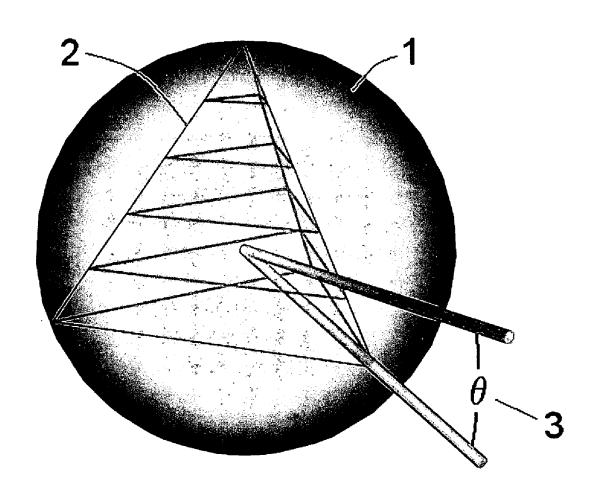
Figure 1
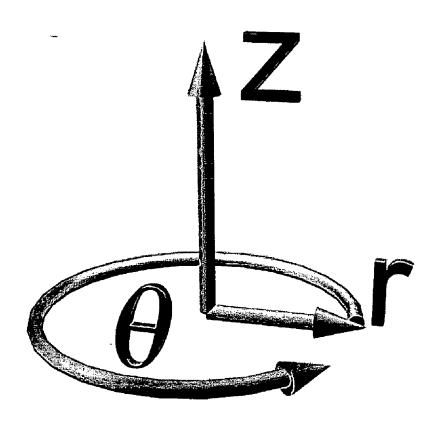
Figure 2
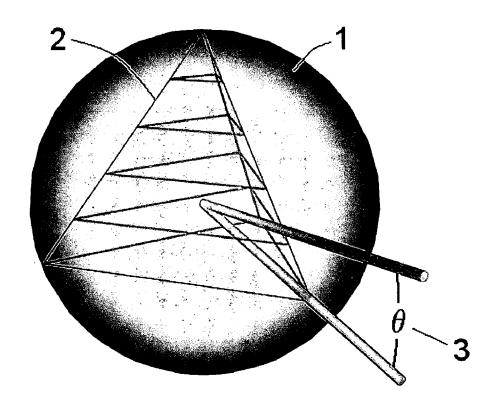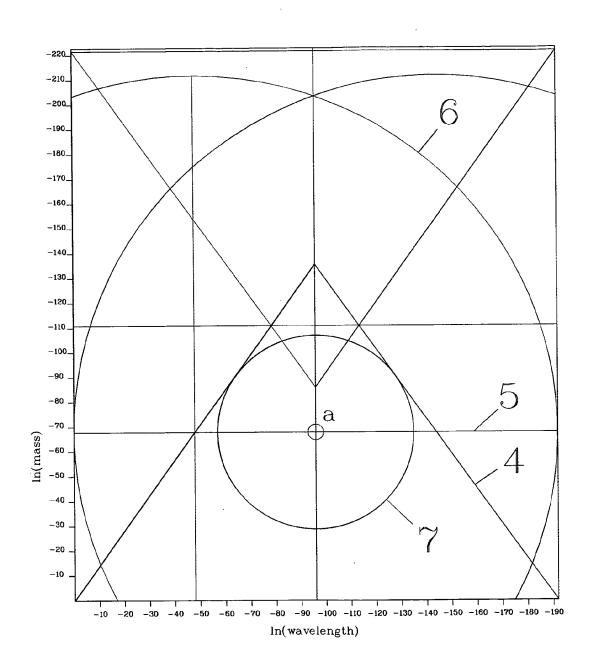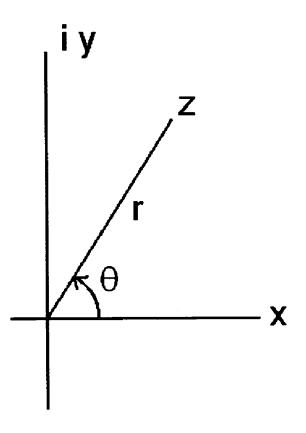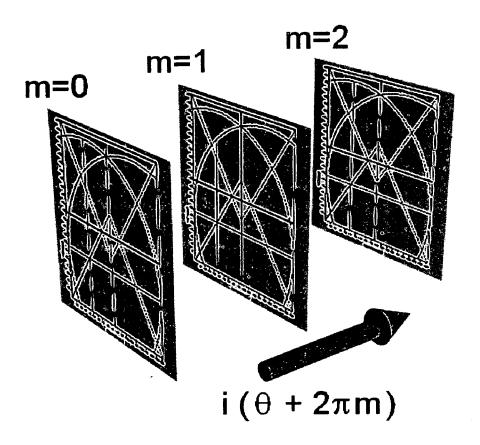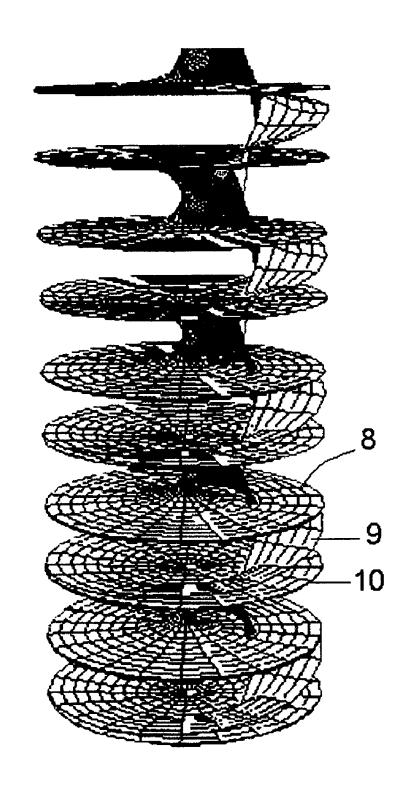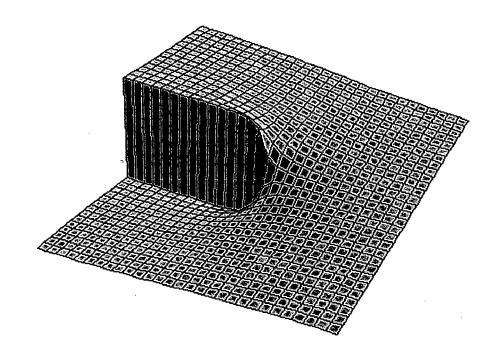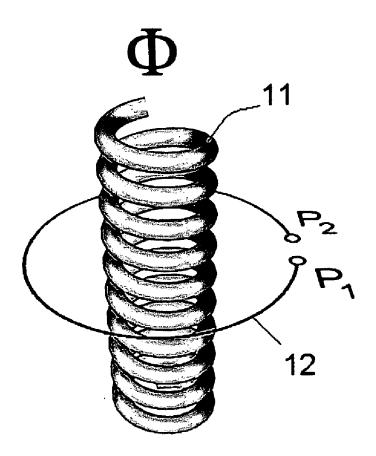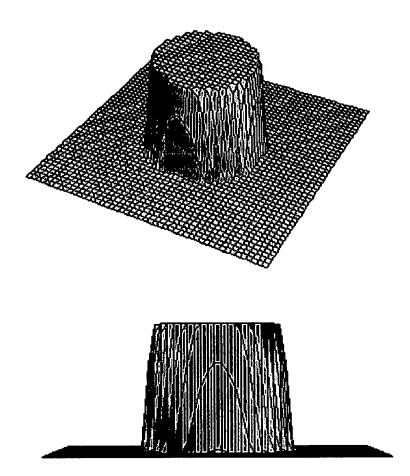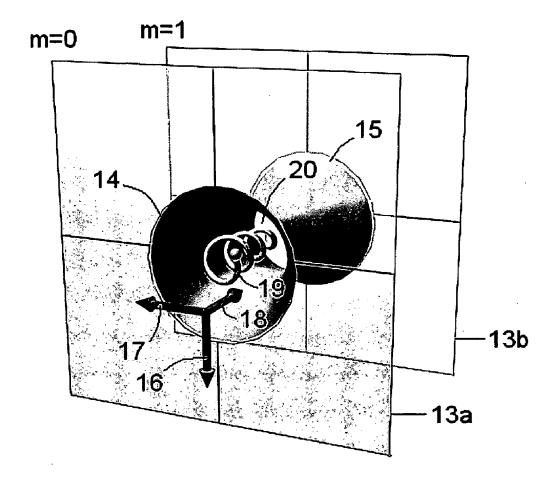
Figure 3

Figure 4

Figure 5

m=0   m=1   m=2

$i(\theta + 2\pi m)$

Figure 6

Figure 7

Figure 8

Figure 9

Figure 10

Figure 11

Figure 12

Figure 13

Figure 14

Figure 15

Figure 16

$$\tau = \mu \times B$$

Figure 17

Figure 18

Gradient of B field in z direction
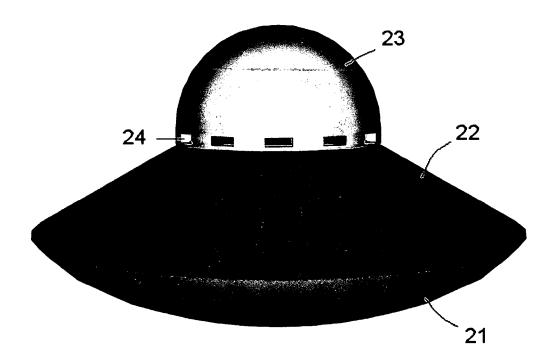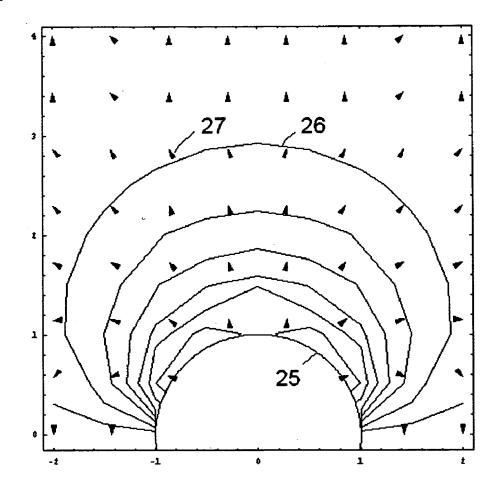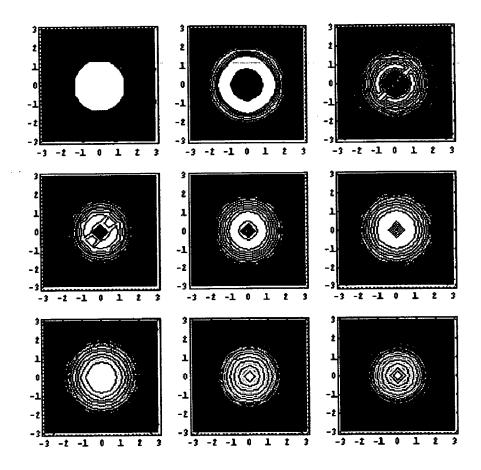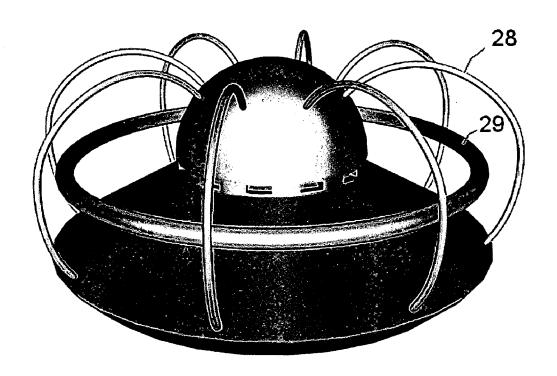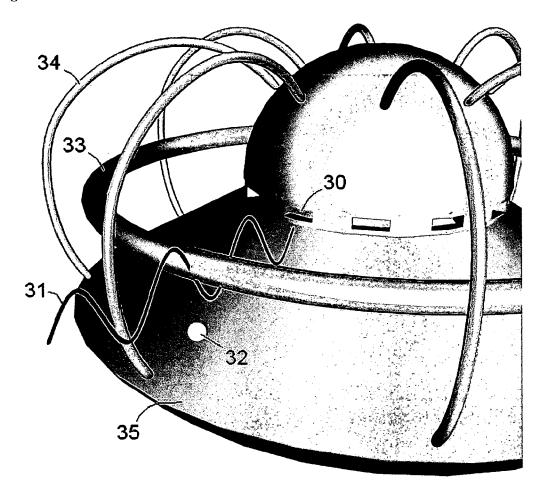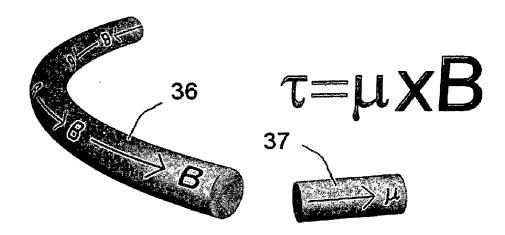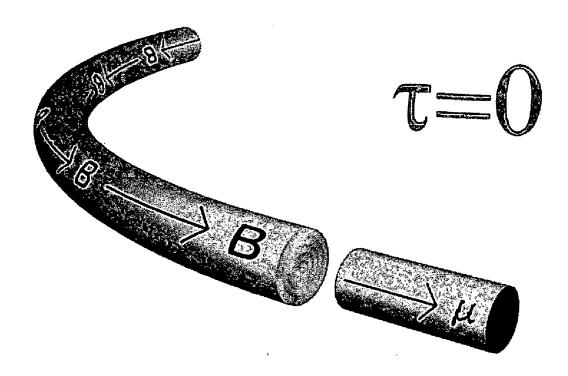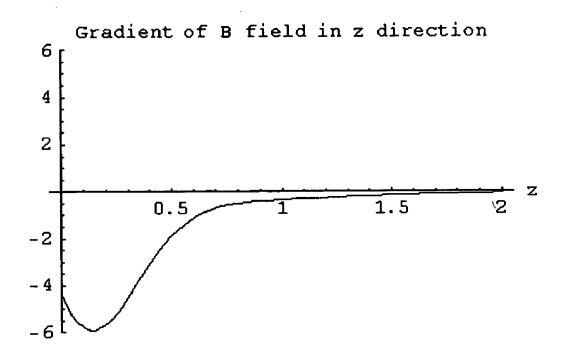
MAGNETIC MONOPOLE SPACECRAFT

BRIEF SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0001] This invention is a spacecraft propulsion system that generates a field of wormholes which are threaded with a magnetic field. Acting as two attracting magnets, the spacecraft's north magnetic field is attracted to the constantly regenerating south magnetic monopoles of the wormholes which provides lift on the hull.

BACKGROUND OF THE INVENTION

[0002] According to one of Maxwell's electromagnetic equations, the curl of the electric E field is equal to the negative time rate of change of the magnetic flux density B field.

$$\bar{V} \times E = -\frac{\partial B}{\partial t}$$

The curl can be thought of as a circulation around a closed loop specified by the right-hand rule where the fingers curl in the direction of the electric field and the thumb represents the changing magnetic flux density field through the area of the loop. At no time is the electric field diverging around the loop. That is, the divergence of the curl is zero which is a well-known vector operation

$$div\ \mathrm{curl}E = \frac{\partial}{\partial t}(divB) = 0$$

The partial derivatives of divB are zero at all points in space. Performing the integration, therefore, the divergence of B is equal to a constant

$$div\ B = \mathrm{constant}$$

[0003] Referring to **FIG. 1**, the following discussion is made in cylindrical coordinates $\{r,\theta,z\}$. In cylindrical coordinates, the divergence of the radial B field, div B, is equal to a constant C

$$Br'[r] + \frac{Br[r]}{r} = C$$

where the prime (') represents differentiation with respect to the radius r. The solution to this equation resides in determining the constant C. In the vacuum of space without any wormholes, the constant C is zero. Because the spacecraft is surrounded by a field of wormholes, there is a magnetic flux density field threading each one. That is, each wormhole is actually a magnetic monopole, and therefore the entire field of monopoles constitutes a large magnet with one pole in this dimension and the other pole in the hyperspace dimension.

[0004] The concept of the wormhole involves a new type of scientific thinking involving the creation of a gateway between our spacetime and that of a hyperspace co-dimension. The gateway is created electromagnetically as shown by my patent applications Rotating Magnetic Vortex Generator, Magnetic Vortex Wormhole Generator, and Sulfur 8 Wormhole Generator. The gateway can also be created ultrasonically through bubble cavitation as shown in my patent application Cavitating Oil Hyperspace Energy Generator. In one experiment, smoke was blown through one side of the coil of the magnetic vortex wormhole generator and no smoke came out the other side. The smoke was blown through the wormhole into another dimension.

[0005] The existence of hyperspace is not generally known in the scientific community. The reason it exists can be thought of in the following manner. Referring to **FIG. 2**, the corners of a tetrahedron (2) circumscribed by a sphere (1) touch the sphere at an angle (3) of −19.47°. Looking at the planets of the solar system, the Giant Red Spot vortex of Jupiter, which can hold two planets the size of Earth, is located at this angle. On Mars, the Olympic Mons volcano, which is the size of France, is located at north 19.5° Here in the Caribbean there is a slow moving rock mantle vortex at north 19.5° that curves the islands down toward Venezuela. So the geometry of space is related to the tetrahedron. What this suggests is that there is a subspace manifold whose tetrahedral geometry projects all the constants of physics into our dimension.

[0006] Referring to **FIG. 3**, this subspace geometry is shown in the tetrahedron diagram which plots the natural logarithm of mass on the vertical axis versus the natural logarithm of wavelength on the horizontal axis. With this diagram, it is possible to visualize the entire universe on a single sheet of paper. Triangle (4) is the tetrahedron whose vertical centerline shown by the small π circle (a) is equal to Planck's constant h divided by the speed of light c, known as the base constant. The base constant in logs is equal to −95.91546344. Line (5) is the diameter of the sphere (6). A circle (7), centered on (a), with a radius equal to the speed of light squared, is tangent to the tetrahedron. It can be shown that all the constants of physics, such as the speed of light squared and the Planck mass and the Planck wavelength, are determined geometrically by this logarithmic subspace tetrahedral geometry.

[0007] Referring to **FIG. 4**, the complex plane consists of a real horizontal axis, and a complex vertical axis where the value of the complex number z is given by a radius r and an angle θ

$$z = re^{i(\theta + 2\pi m)}$$

The logarithm of z is

$$\mathrm{Log}[z] = \mathrm{Log}[r] + i(\theta + 2\pi m)$$

where m is an integer m=0,1,2 . . . corresponding to multiple rotations of 2π. What this means in terms of the tetrahedron diagram, referring to **FIG. 5**, is that there are multiple diagrams separated by 2π rotations. Each multiple is another hyperspace dimension. Only the log manifold has this characteristic. Referring to **FIG. 6**, the hyperspace dimension, shown as 2π circular surface (8), has a cut (9) on the undefined Log[0] origin line such that another hyperspace dimension is created below it (10).

[0008] Referring to **FIG. 7**, this branch cut does not bring one back to the original surface nearing the origin. It takes one down to another level of the universe into another hyperspace dimension. I can attest personally that I have been able to look into another hyperspace co-dimension as well as jump into another dimension.

[0009] Furthermore, Dr. Stephen Hawking of Cambridge University has shown that our dimension is connected to a wormhole through complex time. That is, the hyperspace dimension is rotated forward by 90° which makes it orthogonal to us. While this is the mathematical explanation as to why there are hyperspace co-dimensions, I can attest personally to the fact, as described in my patent application Full Body Teleportation, that I was teleported through hyperspace and returned to our dimension over a distance of 100 meters. Because hyperspace exists, it is then possible, using electromagnetic fields, to open wormholes between our dimension and other hyperspace dimensions.

[0010] Referring to **FIG. 8**, the constant C in the magnetic flux density B field equation is determined as follows. The end of a solenoid (**11**) is equivalent to a local magnetic source of flux Φ which represents the wormhole. A charge (**12**) encircling the solenoid has the same value at P_1 and P_2 but there is a phase difference of $2\pi n$ where n is an integer equal to the number of times the charge encircles the solenoid. The change in phase is equal to the charge q divided by Planck's reduced constant times the flux for a solenoid of radius r=R

$$\Delta\theta = 2\pi n = \frac{q}{\hbar}\Phi = \frac{q}{\hbar}B\pi R^2$$

Solving for the magnetic flux density field threading the wormhole

$$B = \frac{2\pi nh}{q\pi R^2}$$

The differential equation becomes

$$Br'[r] + \frac{Br[r]}{r} = C[2]$$

Solving the equation for the radial field Br

$$Br[r] = \frac{C[2]r}{2} + \frac{C[1]}{r}$$

Equating this Br field with the B field and solving for the C[2] constant

$$C[2] = \frac{-2[-2\hbar n + qrC[1]]}{qr^2}$$

Substituting for C[2], the C[1] constant drops out and therefore the wormhole magnetic flux density field becomes a constant inside the throat radius R

$$Br = \frac{2hn}{qR^2}$$

but the divergence moving from outside to inside the radius is a constant due to the discontinuity.

[0011] Referring to **FIG. 9**, the wormhole has a constant cylindrically-shaped magnetic field of radius R with a negative south pole due to the negative charge on the electron, Using a wormhole radius equal to one hundred times the electron radius with n equal to 10 turns, the magnetic flux density B field has a magnitude of 1.4×10^6 tesla.

[0012] Referring to **FIG. 10**, the wormhole surface (**14**) is a connection through a throat area (**20**) between space and hyperspace (**13**) to another surface in hyperspace (**15**). The electron path (**19**) is actually spiraling down the surface of the wormhole. The magnetic flux density field (**18**) points into the wormhole such that the cross product of the electron velocity (**16**) with the field (v×B) points toward the outside rim of the wormhole. Because the electron has a negative charge, the force (**17**) on the electron (-q v×B) is inward toward the centerline of the wormhole. Since one pole of the field is in space, and the other pole is in hyperspace, the wormhole appears to us as a magnetic monopole. The key to this invention is how to generate this magnetic wormhole field.

[0013] Referring to **FIG. 11**, the aluminum spacecraft is constructed of a flattened, shallow spherical lower hull (**21**), a circular upper hull with a flat sloping surface (**22**), a spherical dome cupola (**23**), and a cylindrical section (**24**) housing a circular array of radial microwave waveguides. Surfaces (**22**) and (**23**) are electrically charged, using high-voltage transformers, to an alternating electrostatic potential such that the potential on the dome is +V when the sloping hull has a -V potential and vice versa. This creates an electric field from the positively charged surface to the negatively charged surface.

[0014] Referring to **FIG. 12**, the dome (**25**) is charged to a positive potential. The spherical potential lines (**26**) emanate from the dome and curve around toward the sloping hull. The negative gradient of this potential field is the electric E field (**27**) which is perpendicular to the potential lines. The electric field lines from the dome then terminate on the sloping hull which can be seen in the lower right hand comer of the graph.

[0015] Looking down from above at the top of the dome, referring to **FIG. 13**, the oscillating electric field generates a circular oscillating magnetic field around the hull at various elevations. The last two graphs in the right-hand comer are near the top of the dome as seen by the smaller radius contour lines.

[0016] Referring to **FIG. 14**, the oscillating electric field lines (**28**) are between the dome and the sloping hull. The oscillating magnetic field (**29**) encircles the hull at the level of the microwave waveguides.

[0017] From gravitation physics, it is known that negative energy is required to open up the throat of the wormhole. In terms of differential forms mathematics, the negative energy is created by wedging the magnetic field with the radial

microwave beams of the waveguides. This generates an increasing time rate of change of negative energy ρ as shown by

$$*d(B^{\wedge}(B_{wave} + E_{wave}dt)) = \frac{\partial(-\rho)}{\partial t}$$

where (*) is the Hodge Star operator, (d) the differential operator and (^) the wedge operator which joins the circular magnetic flux density B field with the electromagnetic wave (B_{wave}, E_{wave}).

[0018] Referring to **FIG. 15**, the interaction of the circular magnetic field (**33**), generated by the oscillating electric field (**34**), interacts with the radial electromagnetic field of the microwave beams (**31**) of the waveguides (**30**) to generate negative energy (**32**) over the sloping hull (**35**).

[0019] This combination of fields also creates the wormhole field over the hull. The spacetime curvature pressure T in the vertical z-direction is equal to the square of the circular magnetic flux density field

$$T^{zz} = \frac{B^2}{8\pi}$$

This stress-energy-momentum tensor can be thought of as a spacetime curvature proportional to the inverse of the radius squared, or as a pressure term which acts on the surface area of the hull. Thus there is the combination of a pressure stress and negative energy which creates the wormhole field over the sloping hull. Even though the magnetic flux density B field is oscillating, it is the square of the field which creates the stress. Thus the tension is still in the positive vertical z-direction.

[0020] Due to the low speed of light of hyperspace, the hyperspace energy is low density. Thus there is a positive gravitational potential between hyperspace and our dimension such that the hyperspace energy flows through the wormholes and onto the hull of the spacecraft. When this happens, a white mist forms over the hull. The effect of the hyperspace energy is to lessen the mass of the spacecraft, and relativistically increase the strength of the electromagnetic fields due to the smaller speed of light.

[0021] Referring to **FIG. 16**, the circular magnetic flux density field (**36**) is interacting with the magnetic monopole (**37**). The monopole acts as one pole of a magnet and therefore has a magnetic moment equal to the area times the electrical current circulating through it as the electrons move from our dimension into hyperspace. The great physicist Maxwell (**1870**) pointed out that the energy associated with charges and poles is potential energy and that therefore these objects tend to move in a direction that will decrease the potential energy, similar to a brick sliding down an inclined plane. Now to reduce the potential energy is the same as to reduce the field which gives a measure of the potential energy. If two like charges are brought together they strengthen one another's field, while opposite charges reduce one another's field. Thus like charges repel and unlike ones attract.

[0022] However, the energy associated with electric currents is not potential but kinetic in origin, because it is associated with moving charges. Now in mechanics it is well known that bodies move in a direction to increase their kinetic energy, if there is a source of external energy. The magnetic field of currents is a measure of kinetic energy and currents will try to move in a direction that will increase the field. Thus similarly-directed currents attract and unlike currents repel. In **FIG. 16**, the monopole will act so as to increase the field of the circular magnetic B field generated by the spacecraft. The monopole will then rotate into alignment with the flux tube. This increases the field strength of the flux tube. There is a torque τ on the monopole equal to the cross product of the magnetic moment with the B field

$$\tau = \mu \times B$$

[0023] Referring to **FIG. 17**, when the monopole is aligned with the flux tube, the cross product is zero and there is zero torque on the monopole. Notice that even if the oscillating B field points in the opposite direction, there is still zero torque since the torque depends on the sine of the angle between them. The sin(0°) or sin(180°) is the same zero value. With the monopole aligned with the flux tube, the kinetic energy is now maximized. That is, both the flux tube and the monopole point in the θ-direction.

[0024] The magnetic B field can be represented as a vector having three components. The only component is in the angular direction

$$B = \{B_r, B_\theta, B_z\} = \{0, B_\theta(z), 0\}$$

where the field varies, as was seen in **FIG. 13**, in the vertical z-direction. The magnetic monopole field also points in the θ-direction

$$\mu = \{0, \mu_\theta(z), 0\}$$

where there is a negative gradient of the monopole field in the z-direction due to the location of the microwave waveguides near the sloping hull.

[0025] The force F on the monopole is the gradient of the monopole's magnetic moment μ with the magnetic flux density B field

$$F = \nabla(\mu \cdot B) = \{0, 0, \mu_\theta B_\theta{}'(z) + B_\theta(z)\mu_\theta{}'(z)\}$$

which says that there is a force on the monopole in the z-direction equal to the magnetic moment times the gradient of the magnetic field in the z-direction plus the magnetic field times the gradient of the magnetic moment in the z-direction.

[0026] Referring to **FIG. 18**. differentiating the magnetic field in the z-direction shows that the gradient is negative outside the hull. This can also be seen visually in **FIG. 13** where the graphs decrease in intensity.

[0027] A negative gradient for both the magnetic moment and the field means that the force on the monopole is negative. The force on the tube connected to the hull is therefore the negative of a negative, yielding a positive lift force.

$$F_{monopole} = -\{0, 0, |\mu_\theta B_\theta{}'(z) + B_\theta(z)\mu_\theta{}'(z)|\} = -F_{tube}$$

$$F_{tube} = +\{0, 0, |\mu_\theta B_\theta{}'(z) + B_\theta(z)\mu_\theta{}'(z)|\}$$

which says there is an upward lift force on the hull due to the combination magnetic monopole and flux tube. This lift

force is in addition to the vertical lift force generated by the spacetime curvature created by the electromagnetic fields themselves.

SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0028] This invention is a spacecraft propulsion system that utilizes electromagnetic fields and microwaves to generate negative energy and a spacetime curvature over the hull. The hull consists of a hemispherical dome, a circular array of radial microwave waveguides, a sloping flat hull, and a shallow spherical hull on the bottom. Alternating current high voltage transformers connected to the dome and the sloping hull generate a curving oscillating electric field between the dome and the sloping hull. Due to this oscillation, a horizontal circular oscillating magnetic flux density B field is created around the dome.

[0029] By firing the microwaves at right angles to the B field, negative energy is created over the hull. The negative energy and spacetime curvature pressure generate wormholes between space and hyperspace. Because hyperspace has a low speed of light and positive gravitational potential, low density hyperspace energy flows through the wormholes and onto the hull. The effect of the hyperspace energy is to lessen the mass of the vehicle and to increase the strength of the electromagnetic fields. Because the resistance of hyperspace is less than the resistance of space, electrons spiral down the wormholes into hyperspace. This creates a magnetic field through the wormhole with one pole in our dimension and the other pole in hyperspace. Thus a field of magnetic monopoles is created over the hull.

[0030] The magnetic monopoles, which represent kinetic energy, align themselves with the magnetic flux tubes in order to maximize the total magnetic field. Because there is a gradient of the monopoles and field in the vertical direction, a negative force develops on the monopoles equal to the gradient of the dot product of the magnetic moment of the monopole with the B field. Thus the opposite reaction is a positive force on the flux tubes attached to the hull which is equivalent to bringing the north pole of a magnet together with the south pole of a second magnet. Because the hull constantly regenerates the wormhole field, the hull experiences a constant upward lift force. This is in addition to the lift generated by the spacetime curvature pressure which is proportional to the square of the magnetic flux density B field.

A BRIEF DESCRIPTION OF THE DRAWINGS

[0031] FIG. 1. Perspective view of cylindrical coordinate system {r, θ, z}.

[0032] FIG. 2. Perspective view of tetrahedron circumscribed by sphere.

[0033] FIG. 3. Tetrahedron diagram showing speed of light squared is determined by the tetrahedron.

[0034] FIG. 4. Complex number z representation in the complex plane.

[0035] FIG. 5. Perspective view showing multiple log manifold hyperspace dimensions.

[0036] FIG. 6. Perspective view of orthogonal hyperspace dimensions.

[0037] FIG. 7. Perspective view of Log[z] showing cut along origin.

[0038] FIG. 8. Perspective view of charge phase shift around a magnetic flux.

[0039] FIG. 9. Perspective view of wormhole magnetic flux density B field.

[0040] FIG. 10. Perspective view of magnetic monopole wormhole.

[0041] FIG. 11. Perspective view of spacecraft.

[0042] FIG. 12. Graph showing electrostatic potential and electric field over dome.

[0043] FIG. 13. Animation showing circular magnetic field around dome at increasing elevation.

[0044] FIG. 14. Perspective view of electric and magnetic fields around hull.

[0045] FIG. 15. Perspective view of generation of negative energy.

[0046] FIG. 16. Perspective view of monopole misaligned with flux tube with torque.

[0047] FIG. 17. Perspective view of monopole aligned with flux tube at zero torque.

[0048] FIG. 18. Graph showing negative gradient of flux tube in the z-direction.

DETAILED DESCRIPTION OF THE INVENTION

[0049] 1. The aluminum hull is made by a technique called stretch forming which uses hydraulic cylinders to stretch a large sheet of aluminum to its yield point. This makes the aluminum sheet soft and pliable. Using a die which has been CNC machined to the desired hull profile, the sheet is then die pressed into a very rigid, smooth and lightweight structure requiring no other support. There are actually three dies consisting of a spherical dome, sloping hull, and shallow spherical dome.

[0050] 2. The rest of the hull consists of a cylindrical hull with a radius equal to the upper dome. A segment of this hull is designed on a 3D computer graphics program and stored as a stereolithography *.stl file. The file is then transmitted over the Internet to a server who prints up the part on an xy-plotter with an ultraviolet laser and ultraviolet light sensitive polymer bath. The computer model is sliced by a special program into many thousands of slices which are printed one over the other until the part is completed. The server returns the part next day by Express Mail. Several parts are then molded using liquid plastic such as to form the complete ring. A sand mold is then constructed from all the molds to form a plastic cylindrical hull having the waveguide slots molded into it. The waveguide silver-coated aluminum boxes are then installed in the slots and connected to the frequency generators and amplifiers. The purpose of the plastic waveguide cylinder is to separate the electrostatic charges on the dome and the sloping hull In this particular case we used a dome from another spacecraft design which saved on the cost of the die.

I claim:

1. A spacecraft propulsion system consisting of the following components:

a lower hull made of aluminum sheet having a shallow spherical profile;

a circular flat sloping hull made of aluminum sheet attached to the top of the lower hull on the periphery;

an electrically-insulated plastic-molded tubular cylindrical hull containing slots for mounting an array of radial microwave waveguides, attached to top of the flat sloping hull;

a hemispherical cupola in the shape of a dome made of aluminum sheet mounted on top of the insulated cylindrical hull;

an array of rectangular microwave waveguides mounted in the waveguide slots of the cylindrical hull;

a high-voltage alternating current transformer with one side electrically attached to the upper dome and the other side electrically attached to the flat sloping hull; and

a frequency generator and amplifier to drive the microwave waveguides.

2. By means of claim (1), an oscillating electric field is created between the upper dome and the sloping hull using the high-voltage alternating current transformer.

3. By means of claim (2), an oscillating circular magnetic flux density field is generated around the sloping hull and upper dome.

4. By means of claims (1) and (3), negative energy is generated by the radial microwave beams of the waveguide array impinging on the circular magnetic flux density field around the hull.

5. By means of claim (3), a positive spacetime curvature pressure constituting a lift force is developed over the hull in the vertical direction proportional to the square of the field.

6. By means of claims (4) and (5), a field of wormholes between space and hyperspace are generated over the hull.

7. By means of claim (6), due to the positive gravitational potential between hyperspace and space, low-density hyperspace energy flows through the wormholes onto the hull to reduce the mass of the spacecraft and strengthen relativistically the electromagnetic fields.

8. By means of claim (6), electrons, emitted by the charged hulls, spiraling down the wormholes, generate a field of magnetic monopoles with one pole in space and the other in hyperspace.

9. By means of claims (6) and (3), the magnetic monopoles maximize their kinetic field energy by aligning with the magnetic flux tube.

10. By means of claim (9), the gradient in the vertical direction of the dot product of the magnetic moments of the monopoles with the magnetic flux density field is a negative force on the monopoles and an equal but opposite positive lift force on the magnetic flux tubes attached to hull.

11. By means of claims (10) and (5), a dual method of providing apositive lift force on the spacecraft is constituted.

* * * * *

(19) **United States**

(12) **Patent Application Publication** (10) Pub. No.: **US 2006/0073976 A1**

Pohlman (43) **Pub. Date:** **Apr. 6, 2006**

(54) **METHOD OF GRAVITY DISTORTION AND TIME DISPLACEMENT**

(52) U.S. Cl. .... **505/166**; 505/180; 434/300; 73/382 G; 505/164

(76) Inventor: **Marlin B. Pohlman**, Tulsa, OK (US)

Correspondence Address:
STITES & HARBISON PLLC
1199 NORTH FAIRFAX STREET
SUITE 900
ALEXANDRIA, VA 22314 (US)
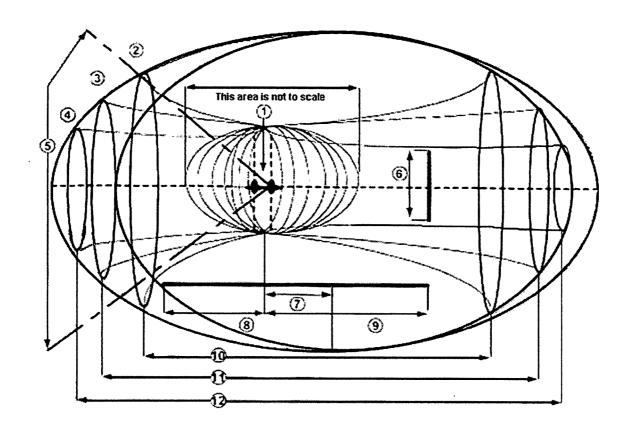
(57) **ABSTRACT**

A method for employing sinusoidal oscillations of electrical bombardment on the surface of one Kerr type singularity in close proximity to a second Kerr type singularity in such a method to take advantage of the Lense-Thirring effect, to simulate the effect of two point masses on nearly radial orbits in a 2+1 dimensional anti-de Sitter space resulting in creation of circular timelike geodesics conforming to the van Stockum under the Van Den Broeck modification of the Alcubierre geometry (Van Den Broeck 1999) permitting topology change from one spacelike boundary to the other in accordance with Geroch's theorem (Geroch 1967) which results in a method for the formation of Godel-type geodesically complete spacetime envelopes complete with closed timelike curves.

This area is not to scale

Figure 1

This area is not to scale
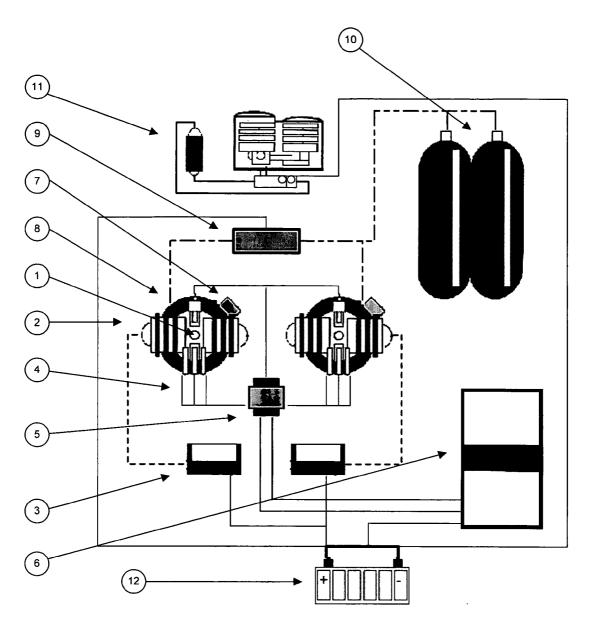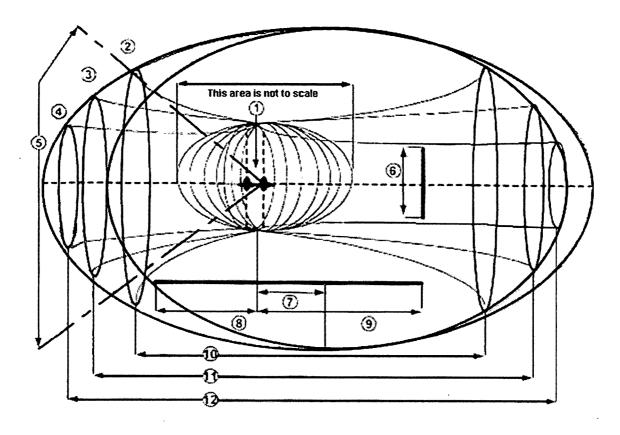
Figure 2

METHOD OF GRAVITY DISTORTION AND TIME DISPLACEMENT

FIELD OF THE INVENTION

[0001] The present invention relates to the use of technical time displacement devices, which operate by the modification of gravitational fields. These drive systems do not depend on the emission of matter to create thrust to take advantage of time dilation, but rather create a change in the curvature of space-time, in accordance with general relativity. This allows travel across topologies by warping space-time, to produce a topology change from one spacelike boundary to the other in accordance with Geroch's theorem (Geroch 1967)

THEORETICAL BACKGROUND OF THE INVENTION

[0002] The concept of gravity should be examined in the light of quantum gravity and in turn as a component of quantum physics itself. The fundamental minimal quantum of energy in quantum physics is Planck's constant; h. Thus in accordance with the energy equivalence formula $E=mc^2$, the fundamental minimum quantity of mass (m_q) can therefore be derived, from known constants by; $m_q=h/c^2$ (1). Taking this minimal mass, it is possible to show that the formation of all matter, the forces of nature and indeed space-time itself derive from this single quintessential quantity.

[0003] Thus if the number of quintessences in a system is; $n_q=m/m_q$: then the total Energy of the system is more logically given by, the energy of a single quintessence (h); directly multiplied by the number of quintessences (n_q) in that system, thus

$$E=hn_q=mc^2 \qquad (1\ a).$$

[0004] Furthermore, this minimal mass, termed quintessence, can form the basis of the existence of a quantum gravitational field in the form of a space-time lattice, from which quantum gravity may be derived from first principles. Furthermore, the conglomeration of these quintessences also accounts for the formation of the elementary particles and the forces acting between them, as in superstring theory. This concept explains the formation of matter and the forces of nature on a quantum mechanical basis and directly explains the existence of wave particle duality. Thus as $n_q=m/m_q$; the frequency of light and matter (f) is determined, directly, from the number of constituent quintessences. This leads automatically to the fundamental equation, derived from (1), $f=n_q=E/h$, where n_q is the number of quintessences, which leads directly to the frequency of both light and matter. This in turn leads directly to a Universal wave equation for matter and light $\lambda=c/\beta n_q=hc/\beta E$ (2), where β is the relative directional velocity, v/c. As the momentum, $p=\beta \times E/c$, then this equation also gives the standard de-Broglie wave equation, $\lambda=h/p$ in agreement with current theory and experiments[1].

[0005] Using the Universal wave equation, the standard equation for special relativity, $m'=m_o/(1-\beta^2)^{1/2}$, derives from first principles. Also from these observations, a modified Dirac wave equation may be derived, $E\psi=(-j\beta \cdot \nabla + \beta m)\psi$ (2a), the results of which have been recently verified by a paper in which the orbitals of electrons were experimentally directly visualised[2]. Moreover, a fundamental equation for general relativity can be formulated, where G is the gravitational constant and r_q is the given radius of quintessence; $G=9(r_q)^2c^4/\lambda \beta E$ (3), such that the Universal wave equation is in direct agreement with general relativity[3]. Thus special and general relativity and quantum mechanics can be unified.

[0006] From here it is possible to proceed in a number of ways; the geometric structure of the electron and the forces of Nature may be derived from first principles and in turn the structure of the quarks, including the top and bottom, otherwise known as truth and beauty can be seen. Moreover, the presence of a space-time lattice results in an understanding of quantum EPR effects. By allowing a theoretical flow of energy through the space-time lattice it can be shown that:

[0007] Energy is not bound by space-time

[0008] Thus logically accounting for phenomena such as entanglement and quantum tunnelling. Quintessence can also be used to explain, logically, the inner physics of a black hole, the missing mass of the Galaxy, the continuing expansion of the Universe, Guth's inflationary theory and the Big Bang. Hence, it is now possible to understand the Universe, including space-time, matter and the forces of nature from the radius, mass and vibration of a single quantity, quintessence.

[0009] With this understanding of space-time, matter and the forces of Nature, and in particular gravity, it is possible to demonstrate that the modification of gravitational fields, and in turn the warping of space-time, can be technically readily achieved.

[0010] Using standard equations for special relativity, $m'=m_0/(1-\beta^2)^{1/2}$, it can be demonstrated that by differentially increasing the velocity of electrons, by applying a differential current, their mass can be increased in a specific way. In turn by increasing the mass of electrons, by general relativity, the number of gravitons emitted from these electrons can be modulated. By multiplying this effect using an ultracentrifugational device the differential graviton emission can be manifestly amplified. This in turn, in accordance with general relativity, will cause a change in the curvature of space-time.

[0011] This effective warping of space-time does not, of necessity, imply superluminal velocities, but does allow the creation of warp drive systems, which do not depend on the creation of thrust by the ejection of material as used in current space technologies.

Part 1—Fundamental Laws of Physics

[0012] Quintessential Mass

[0013] The quantum physical, minimum component of energy is Planck's constant; h. To define the minimal component of mass, using the standard energy equivalence formula; $E=mc^2$, such a minimal mass (m_q) would be required to have the value equivalent to; $m_q=h/c^2$ (1). The total mass of a system (m) would then be; $m=n_qm_q$, where (n_q) is the number of these minimal units. Thence, the total energy of a system can be derived from the minimal energy; h, multiplied by the number of these energy units (n_q). Thus as, $E=mc^2$, then also $E=m_qn_qc^2$ and substituting $m_q=h/c^2$, the energy equivalence formula has the more logical formulation; $E=hn_q$(1a). Thus the energy of a system is equivalent

2

to the minimal energy unit; h, multiplied by the number of those minimal energy units (n_q).

[0014] Taking this minimal mass/energy, it is possible to show that all matter, the forces of nature and space time can be constructed from this single quintessential quantity. Moreover, using this quantity the laws of physics can be derived from first principles. Thus, a priori, all components of the physical universe, including space-time, can be constructed from this minimal mass component, termed quintessence.

[0015] Wave Particle Duality

[0016] If the presence of quintessence accounts for the structure of matter and if matter itself forms from the number of quintessences, then the frequency of matter and thus wave particle duality directly arises from first principles. Specifically the wavelength of matter derives from the vibration of quintessence from which it is constituted. Thus the frequency (f) and in turn the wavelength of light and matter is directly equivalent to the number of quintessences contained within it. We find that the actual frequency of light can be directly derived from first principles from the effective mass of the photon (m_γ) and thus by the number of quintessences (n_q) it contains.

[0017] Thus for light conventionally:

$$f = E/h$$

[0018] and if $E = mc^2$, and $h = m_q c^2$, then

$$f = m_\gamma c^2 / m_q c^2$$

and

$$f = m_\gamma / m_q = n_q$$

Thus

$$f = n_q \qquad (4)$$

[0019] Thus the formula for the frequency of light $E = hf$ is now readily explained by the observation that the frequency is determined quite directly from the number of quintessences n_q within the photon.

[0020] The wavelength is thus also given by:

$$\lambda = c/f = m_q c/m_\gamma = h/p$$

[0021] We can now show that the frequency of matter also has the same derivation from quintessence, as has the frequency of light. The frequency of matter is again equivalent to the number of quintessences it contains. Thus the wave particle duality of matter itself can be explained by its composition from quintessence. The amount of quintessences contained within a electron sphere will depend on the number of quintessences constituting the electron and those passing through it as a result of its relative velocity β^2 (where $\beta = v/c$); effectively its relativistic momentum (p). The frequency will then be related to the total number of quintessences. Thus for matter,

$$f = \beta^2 n_q \qquad (4a)$$

[0022] Thus it is possible to derive the conventional de Broglie wave equation for matter from first principles. Thus, as $\lambda = v/f$, we have:

$$\lambda = v/\beta^2 n_q \qquad (5)$$

[0023] thus as $n_q = E/h$

$$\lambda = hc/\beta E \qquad (2)$$

[0024] and as conventionally $\beta E/c = p$, then for matter:

$$\lambda = h/p$$

[0025] Provided that in the de Broglie equation, the momentum of the object is calculated using the relativistic mass, thus accounting for the total number of quintessences n_q in an object, this gives an accurate value for the wavelength of matter[1].

[0026] Thus the wavelength of matter follows directly from its constituents, quintessence. As matter is made of quintessence, similarly to light, its frequency depends on the number of quintessences n_q within it, traveling relative to the speed of light. Moreover, $\lambda = hc/\beta E$, underpins a fundamental relationship between wavelength and energy. Furthermore, this is mathematically the same as the term $\lambda = hv/\beta^2 E$, giving a relativistic expression for the wavelength of matter, from which the relativistic equations may be directly derived

[0027] Wave Equations

[0028] The derivation of wave particle duality from first principles also now allows the derivation of a modified wave equation for matter.

[0029] To derive his wave equation Shrodinger commenced with the de Broglie equation using momentum (p). For lower energies the momentum of an electron is conventionally derived from the kinetic energy of the electron and the mass of the electron m_0. Thus conventionally:

$$E_k = \frac{1}{2}mv^{1/2} \quad \text{and} \quad p = m_0 v$$

Thus

$$E_k = p^2/2m_0$$

then

$$p = \sqrt{(E_k \cdot 2m_0)}$$

[0030] and conventionally, the de Broglie equation can also be written as:

$$\lambda = h/p = h/\sqrt{(E_k \cdot 2m_0)}$$

[0031] In turn the Shrodinger wave equation directly derives from the square of the above classical non relativistic term for kinetic energy:

$$\lambda^2 = h^2/E_k \cdot 2m_0$$

$$\text{thus } E_k = \frac{h^2}{2m} \cdot \frac{1}{\lambda^2}$$

$$\text{As } E = E_k + V$$

$$\text{then } E\psi = -\frac{h^2}{2m} \cdot \frac{d^2\psi}{dx^2} + V\psi = jh \cdot \frac{d\psi}{dt}$$

[0032] However, the Shrodinger equation, may be refined by taking into account relativity. Thus the true values for the energy are given by the relativistic momentum (p).

[0033] A fundamental relativistic wave equation for ψ, and its logical derivation may now be developed through the concept of quintessence as a fundamental constituent of matter.

[0034] The amount of quintessences in the electron is determined by the number of quintessences forming the electron at rest, plus the amount of quintessences passing through it due to its relativistic velocity, which will determine the relativistic momentum (p) of a particle.

[0035] The frequency of matter can now be readily calculated from first principles to give a more accurate result. Thus as matter is made of quintessence, similarly to light, its frequency is equal to the number of quintessences n_q within it. The wavelength will depend on its velocity travelling relative to the speed of light and thus multiplied by the relative velocity compared to $c(\beta=v/c)$;

[0036] Hence for matter as previously shown:

$$\beta=v/\beta^2 n_q=hc/\beta E \tag{2}$$

[0037] And conventionally

$$E=(p^2c^2+m_0^2c^4)^{1/2}$$

[0038] Using these equations, we can now, also, reformulate the Shrodinger wave equation, which has the advantage that relativity can be treated in a quantum mechanical way. Thus if the wave energy of matter is defined as:

$$E_\lambda = \frac{\beta\sqrt{p^2c^2+m_0^2c^4}}{c^2}$$

thus

$$E_\lambda = \sqrt{(\beta^2 p^2/c^2)+\beta^2 m_0^2}$$

[0039] which in complex space generalises to

$$E_\psi=(-j\beta\cdot\nabla+\beta m)_\psi \tag{2a}$$

[0040] As the term

$$\alpha = \frac{e^2}{hc}4\pi\varepsilon_0;$$

also represents the ground state ratio of the velocity of the electron to c. Thus $\alpha=\beta=v/c=1/137$.

[0041] Thus, also

$$E_\psi=(-j\alpha\cdot\nabla+\beta m)_\psi$$

[0042] This is thus the standard relativistic equation that Dirac was able to construct from the Shrodinger wave equation. This relativistic equation can be derived from the modified wave equation. This takes into account the relative mass energy which the quintessential wave equation contains.

[0043] Where importantly the term $\beta\cdot m$ is the mass m, multiplied by the ratio of the relative velocity to light $\beta=v/c$, and the term a is also essentially the relative velocity of the electron.

[0044] The Dirac equation was an empirical formula which worked mathematically, nevertheless even Dirac admitted it was not logically understood. The importance of these equations is that they show that the existence of quintessence allows the waveparticle duality of matter to be explained and mathematically derived from first principles,

Thus the frequency of matter or even light is simply determined by the number of quintessences it contains.

[0045] Indeed, a recent publication in Nature has suggested that the direct visualisation of the orbitals of electrons shows that these are in very close agreement with theory. However, there is a significant departure from theory, in the interstitial molecular regions, suggesting that the higher velocities of the electrons obey the modified Dirac equation. Thus these orbitals were in keeping with the modified Dirac equation, which itself may be derived from the wave equation above, $\lambda=hc/\beta E$

[0046] The Shrodinger wave equation will approximate to the correct values until v approaches c. Indeed the Shrodinger equation will give similar answers as that derived from equation, under most experimental conditions.

[0047] However, equation 2 and its derivative may have advantages over standard Shrodinger theory with relativistic speeds. Furthermore, equation 2, conceptually shows that the wave particle duality of matter derives from the principle that the frequency of matter is directly equal to the number of quintessences it contains. Importantly it also mathematically allows relativity and quantum mechanics to be united.

[0048] With v≡c, the modified Dirac equation will yield more accurate results, particularly compared with the Schrodinger equation. We also find that the equation $\lambda=hc/\beta E$ is equivalent to the de Broglie wave equation, $\lambda=h/p$, provided we use the relativistic mass in the de Broglie equation. Given this, these equations yield accurate experimental results.

[0049] Thus we find that the modified formulation of de Broglie wave equation $\lambda=hc/\beta E$ leads directly to a modified Dirac relativistic wave equation and is supported by recent experiments which measure the wavelength of matter and demonstrate the electron orbitals experimentally from these wave equations for matter.

[0050] Wave Particle Duality and Relativity

[0051] From here it is possible to proceed in several ways using the relativistic wave equation. It is apparent that the reintroduction of the term for relative velocity into the wave equations will enable the reintroduction of special relativity into quantum mechanics. In particular we should now be able to derive the term

$$\sqrt{\left(1-\frac{v^2}{c^2}\right)}$$

as a special case of quantum mechanics.

[0052] Thus if:

$$\lambda = hc/\beta E$$

As $E = \sqrt{p^2c^2+m_0^2c^4}$, squaring

$$\lambda^2 = \frac{h^2c^2}{\beta^2\cdot(p^2c^2+m_0^2c^4)}$$

4

-continued

Conventionally $p^2 c^2 = \dfrac{E^2 v^2}{c^2}$

then

$\lambda^2 = \dfrac{h^2 c^2}{\beta^2 \cdot ((E^2 v^2 / c^2) + m_0^2 c^4)}$

Thus as $\beta^2 = \dfrac{v^2}{c^2}$ and $m_0^2 c^4 = E_0^2$, then:

$\beta^4 E^2 + \beta^2 E_0^2 = \dfrac{h^2 c^2}{\lambda^2}$

hence $\beta^4 E^2 = h^2 c^2 \cdot \dfrac{1}{\lambda^2} - \beta^2 m_0^2 c^4$ thus

$\beta^2 = \dfrac{h^2 c^2}{\beta^2 E^2} \cdot \dfrac{1}{\lambda^2} - \dfrac{\beta^2 m_0^2 c^4}{\beta^2 E^2}$

As $E^2 = m^2 c^4$

$\beta^2 = \dfrac{h^2 c^2}{\beta^2 m^2 c^4} \cdot \dfrac{1}{\lambda^2} - \dfrac{\beta^2 m_0^2 c^4}{\beta^2 E^2}$

Substituting $h = m_q c^2$

$\beta^2 = \dfrac{m_q^2 c^6}{\beta^2 m^2 c^4} \cdot \dfrac{1}{\lambda^2} - \dfrac{\beta^2 m_0^2 c^4}{\beta^2 E^2}$

As $m_q / ' m = 1 / n_q$ (eq. 2)

$\beta^2 = \dfrac{c^2}{\beta^2 n_q^2} \cdot \dfrac{1}{\lambda^2} - \dfrac{\beta^2 m_0^2 c^4}{\beta^2 E^4}$

Thus if $f = \beta^2 n_q$;   (eq. 7a)

$\beta^2 = \dfrac{v^2}{f^2} \cdot \dfrac{1}{\lambda^2} - \dfrac{\beta^2 m_0^2 c^4 f^2}{\beta^2 E^2}$

As $1 / \lambda^2 = f^2 / v^2$

$\beta^2 = \dfrac{v^2}{f^2} \cdot \dfrac{f^2}{v^2} - \dfrac{\beta^2 m_0^2 c^4 f^2}{\beta^2 E^2}$

Thus

$\beta^2 = 1 - \dfrac{\beta^2 m_0^2 c^4}{\beta^2 E^2}$

As $E^2 = m^2 c^4$

$\beta^2 = 1 - \dfrac{m_0^2}{' m^2}$

Hence

$m_0 / ' m = (1 - \beta^2)^{1/2}$

Thus

$' m = m_0 \Big/ \left[1 - \dfrac{v^2}{c^2} \right]^{1/2}$

[0053] Thus this derivation now allows relativity as a universal case of the quintessential wave nature of matter.

[0054] The original premises on which special relativity was based were: that the speed of light is a constant and that all observers are equal. As the speed of light has dimensions of length and time but not apparently of mass, the relativistic change in mass is not accounted for. Using quintessence logically and directly accounts for the relativistic mass changes.

[0055] Moreover, relativity can be derived from the de Broglie equation, and visa versa, directly, thus linking relativity and quantum mechanics by taking into account the existence of quintessence mass.

[0056] Hence, it is now possible to derive the relativistic equations for mass and in turn for space and time from the quintessential wave equation, thus deriving special relativity as a universal case of quantum mechanics and thus uniting special relativity and quantum mechanics. This now allows a further understanding of the nature of space-time.

[0057] The Space-Time Lattice

[0058] The understanding of the true nature of space-time and how it is formulated in three dimensions of real space is crucial. To simply assume that space-time exists, and thence not to question the nature of that existence, denies a deeper understanding of the universe.

[0059] In order to understand the nature of space-time itself, at the quantum level a further look at the nature light and the photon is necessary. Since Einstein's description of light as a particle (the photon) and the description of the photoelectric effect, the standard picture of light as simply a wave can, no longer be applied. If light was to exist as a photon, it could not exist in one dimension, as ordinary waves do, it would need to be three dimensional, with the addition of time. Let us suppose, in this case, that a photon is a three dimensional helical ringlet of light, travelling in the x vector, and spinning around the x-axis. Conventionally this ringlet has a radius; $r = \lambda / 2\pi$. The ringlet itself would be vibrating in the y and z vectors. The vectors x, y and z would represent the photon, the substance of which, would be travelling in the x direction and oscillating in the y and z vectors, which would represent oscillatory energy. This in turn would allow it to act as a wave, and create oscillatory electromagnetic fields.

[0060] It is important to re-examine space-time itself in this light, this would have one directional vector with two vector dimensions of energy, one of capacitance and one of electrical permeability, thus accounting for the well known constants of free space; the permittivity of free space (ϵ_0) and the permeability of free space (μ_0) respectively. The vector dimension of direction x, would be the direction of travel and those "quintessences" travelling in an outwardly direction would account for none other than the expansion of the universe. Three of these quintessences would naturally constitute three dimensional visible space-time. These constituents of space-time would interact with the generations of the other vector dimensions reciprocally. Thus one quintessence would sweep out one vector of permeability and one vector of permittivity, through which the other two quintessences could travel, and vica versa, creating a three dimensional space-time lattice.

[0061] The permittivity of free space, (ϵ_0) which is equivalent to capacitance, would, as with capacitance plates, be determined by the effective separation between quintessences. The permeability of free space (μ_0) is in fact a force, measured as $4\pi \times 10^{-7}$ N/A^2, would result from the force produced by the vibration of quintessence and would be

dependent on the density of quintessence. Hence these two parameters would be reciprocal and thus the product of these two would therefore be a constant, which is recognised as none other than the speed of light.

$$c = \frac{1}{\sqrt{\mu_0 \varepsilon_0}}$$

[0062] This space time lattice would in effect be created by quintessences travelling in all directions with a speed of c within the lattice. The quintessences of the space time lattice would in effect produce a non-static ether. A non-static ether is fully compatible with special and general relativity. Indeed such an ether explains how space time can be curved as in general relativity. Furthermore, the existence of a non-static ether, was espoused by Einstein in his University of Leyden lecture on general relativity of May 5, 1920. In Einstein's own words;

[0063] "According to the general theory of relativity space without ether is unthinkable."

[0064] Recent evidence from a number of sources now strongly support the presence of this non-static ether, in the form of quintessence. An editorial from a major journal states "combined with other observations such as those of distant Supernova, the QMAP results corroborate the prevailing theory of inflation with the twist that the Universe is only one third matter (both ordinary and dark) and two thirds quintessence, a form of energy possibly inherent in empty space".

[0065] If we take into account the existence of quintessence and as such a three dimensional space-time lattice, matter which is intrinsically made of constituents of charge would interact with this lattice to produce the effects of mass. Mass would be perceived as a result of matter (whose constituent particles appear to contain charge) interacting with this lattice directly due to the inhibition of motion by the lattice's electrical permeability and permittivity vectors, which would form the existence of complex space. These quintessences would in the direction in the y and z vectors produce small vibrations of the order of the Planck length (10^{-35} m), whilst passing through the vectors of permeability and permittivity, thus producing the effects of mass.

[0066] The vibration would endow quintessence itself a (non rest) mass m_q equivalent, to the minimal mass of:

$$m_q = h/c^2 = 7 \times 373 \times 10^{-51} \text{ kg·sec} \tag{1}$$

[0067] The presence and magnitude of Planck's constant (h) and especially the speed of light (c) is thus explained. Indeed, the speed of light

$$c = \frac{1}{\sqrt{\mu_0 \varepsilon_0}}$$

is not in itself a fundamental quantity.

[0068] As the energy equivalence formula is $E = mc^2$, the minimal mass of a single quintessence, would thus be the minimal mass, h/c^2, hence again:

$$m_q = h(\mu_0 \epsilon_0) = h/c^2 = 7.373 \times 10^{-51} \text{ kg·sec} \tag{1b}$$

or

$$m_q c^2 = h \tag{1c}$$

[0069] It is postulated by general relativity that the shape of space time itself can be altered, indeed the presence of the space time lattice now allows this to be altered by altering the density of quintessence. It is further clear that if quintessences underly the structure of the space-time lattice, they may also underly the structure of matter itself.

[0070] With regards a single quintessence, this passing through an energy vector of the space-time lattice would appear as a vibrating string. In a similar way to string theory, the conglomeration of these quintessences would produce the constituents of ordinary matter. Thus the general equation for the number of quintessences (n_q) in an object of mass (m) would be

$$m/m_q = n_q$$

[0071] The mass of the electron (m_e) for example, would be directly determined by the number of quintessences in the electron, multiplied by the mass of quintessence.

[0072] Quintessence and Complex Space

[0073] Quintessence is postulated to constitute the fundamental nature of space-time. Three quintessences each travelling in their respective x vectors at 90° to each other would create three dimensional real space-time. These quintessences would in the direction in their respective y and z vectors produce small vibrations of the order of the Planck length (10^{-35} m), this would create the vector dimensions of permeability and permittivity. The result would give space-time 9 dimensions of space as in superstring theory. However, unlike superstring theory the six hidden dimensions would not be "curled up so as to be so small as to be invisible" these six dimensions would be present in complex space. Thus, only three of these dimensions would represent ordinary three dimensional particulate space time i.e. three dimensional objects. The other six dimensions produced by the vibrations of quintessence would form complex space.

[0074] The mathematics of complex space, using imaginary $\sqrt{-1}$ or (j) numbers, is assumed in the standard formulation of the Shrodinger wave equation. Thus the presence of complex space is an integral part of quantum mechanics.

$$-\frac{h^2}{2m} \cdot \frac{d^2\psi}{dx^2} + V\psi = jh \cdot \frac{d\psi}{dt}$$

[0075] The mathematics of complex space is also an essential and integral part of the principles and application of modern electronic and control engineering. Indeed it has been well recognised for some time that each direction vector in electronic engineering can, be associated with complex vectors.

[0076] As this complex space consists of the vectors of permittivity and permeability it would only be "felt" by charged particles as in the electron. Nevertheless, as all particles are fundamentally composed of charged particles

the effects of complex space would be felt by endowing these particles with mass and in turn kinetic energy.

[0077] In conventional complex space, a 2 dimensional Cartesian Argand diagram is mathematically used. However, in order to formulate the equations for particles a three dimensional Argand diagram is essential. This will have three dimensional vectors, one real vector and two imaginary vectors. Three of these diagrams will be required to fully describe the nature of particles, each with a real vector in the x, y and z vectors, respectively. Nevertheless, in the instance below the real vector is the x vector and the two imaginary vectors are given by $(_j y, _j z)$

[0078] The Three Dimensional Argand Diagram

[0079] The beauty of a three dimensional Argand diagram is that the complex conjugate (i.e. the mirror image which confers mathematical reality on the coordinates) is formed by the value of the minus coordinate in the other complex vector dimension. Thus the complex conjugate of $(C_x^{1/2} + _j c_y^{1/2} + _{-j} c_z^{1/2})$ is $(c_x^{1/2} + _j c_y^{1/2} + _j c_z^{1/2})$. These two sums when multiplied thus give a real number solution.

[0080] Furthermore it is clear that nine dimensions of space time are necessary in the general relativistic equations. By including complex space we thereby create the nine dimensional spacial metrictensor and the metric energy tensor of matter necessary for computations for general relativity From here we can begin to understand the true structure of matter.

[0081] Energy and the Space-Time Lattice

[0082] The presence of numerous experimental data for quantum tunnelling. and indeed the recent observations by Nicholas Gisin, on the entanglement of distant photons now returns us to EPR experiments.

[0083] Using the quintessential modification of the de Broglie wave equation, gives us an insight into these teleportation and EPR effects.

[0084] As

$$\lambda = hc/\beta E \qquad (2)$$

and

$$E = hn_q \qquad (1a)$$

then

$$\lambda = c/\beta n_q \qquad (2b)$$

[0085] Importantly, as indicated by equation (2b), energy having no quintessence; would have a wavelength of infinity. Specifically pure energy containing no quintessences, would have a lambda of infinity. According to quantum mechanics an infinite wavelength would result in the probability of that energy being anywhere. As energy itself has no electrical charge it would not be impeded by the permittivity and permeability of the three dimensional space-time lattice. Moreover, energy would not be detectable in three dimensional space-time, unless it interacted with matter, as in the EPR experiments. Indeed, energy is not observed when not bound to any form of mass or particle. Thus equation 9d, takes us to our original assertion

[0086] Energy is Not Bound by the Space-Time Lattice

[0087] Thus, as the EPR experiments suggest the existence of energy separate from matter and thus separate from the three dimensional space-time lattice, it is interesting to

find that experiment suggests the existence of free energy in a continuum separate from space time to produce the effects of quantum teleportation

[0088] This is not, however, teleportation across an additional dimension, this is a term to describe in partially familiar terms the dissociation of energy from the three dimensional space-time lattice. As time is inextricably linked to each dimension of space, the effects of energy would be inextricably linked to the events, such as the creation of virtual particles, we see interacting within space-time.

[0089] It is unlikely that observers have any direct day to day experience to explain quantum events. Nevertheless, quantum physics may have given us a window into the hitherto hidden workings of the Universe. Thereby, the mystery of the uniformity of the Universe, across distances which the speed of light could not apparently traverse, is readily explained by the fact that the free energy contained in the Universe is not bound by the space-time lattice.

[0090] In the case of light, due to the exceedingly small masses involved, there would be relatively easy exchange of matter with free energy within a photon. This would make the photon the ideal experimental tool to look for energy which is not bound by matter and in turn energy which is not bound in space-time. Indeed, very recently Furusawa et at. have reported to have observed the transference of energy as photons from A to B, without those photons traversing space-time. This finding which has been supported using other experimental techniques, is very important as it suggests the existence of such a quantum continuum.

[0091] We have already seen strong experimental data using photons, atomic spins and other data for quantum teleportation which have recently been published which support these findings. According to the above equations the teleportation would vary in a predictable fashion, as with photons, in line with the wavelength of the light used, relative to the size of vibration of quintessence. As regards matter, the results do confirm that the effect of quantum tunnelling is indeed dependant on the wavelength of matter and the size of that matter.

Part II—Particle Physics

[0092] Electron Structure

[0093] Understanding the electron is fundamental to the understanding of the elementary particles. The hidden nature of the electron may recently have been revealed through observations by Horst Stormer, Daniel Tsui and Robert Laughlin for which a Nobel prize has recently been awarded. They describe a quasi electron particle of charge ⅓e. This has been described on a quantum basis as a vortex of energy, bound as a quasi particle in one dimension x, but not bound in the other two dimensions y and z, allowing dispersion in space-time as a vortex. What is more intriguing are the experimental conditions in which this occurs. First of all a two dimensional electron gas is created and held between two capacitance plates. A magnetic force is then applied in the remaining dimension, virtually creating a one dimensional passage through which only a quasi electron appears to be able to pass.

[0094] Given the presence of charge of ⅓e, then three of these quasi electrons could form an entire electron in three

dimensional visible space time. Nevertheless, each would have energy and hence a wave function which would be present in the other vectors. This electron could thus follow the probability functions as described by the Shrodinger wave equation for ψ (otherwise termed as "essence" by Shrodinger)

[0095] If the mass of the electron (m_e) is constituted from quintessence, using the formula:

$$m_e/m_q = n_q$$

[0096] Then an electron would be constituted from:

$$\frac{9.11 \times 10^{-3} \text{ kg}}{7.373 \times 10^{-51} \text{ kg} \cdot \text{sec}} = 1.235 \times 10^{20} \text{ quintessences/sec.}$$

[0097] Thus taking into account the mass-energy content of quintessence (m_q) it is independently possible to derive the magnitude of the charge of an electron (e) using the following equation.

$$e = \sqrt{\frac{m_q \varepsilon_0}{\left(\frac{4}{3}\right)\pi hc}} = 1.61 \times 10^{-19} C$$

[0098] This is in close agreement with the experimentally observed charge on the electron of 1.602×10^{-19} C.

[0099] Interestingly substituting $m_q = h/3c^2$ in the above equation we have:

$$e = \sqrt{\frac{\varepsilon_0}{3\left(\frac{4}{3}\pi c^3\right)}} \tag{6}$$

[0100] This can also be written as

$$e = \sqrt{\frac{\varepsilon_0}{3\left(\frac{4}{3}\right)\pi c^3}} \tag{6a}$$

[0101] Equation (6) has a number of very special implications, if re-examined, firstly three of these quasi electron spheres appear to be required to constitute the charge of the electron. More intriguingly, it indicates that the charge is related to the volume of a sphere with an apparent radius of c. Thirdly it indicates that the square of the charge of an electron (e) is proportional to the permittivity of free space (so). The charge given from equation (3) is in close agreement with the measured charge of the electron. Furthermore a more exact value for the charge of the electron (to seven decimal places) can be deduced by taking into account the gravitational field of the Earth (see Gravity and the Charge of the Electron). Furthermore the charge of the electron (e) can now be derived from first principles. Thus, equation (3) corroborates the evidence that the electron is indeed composed of three quasi electrons in keeping with recent experimental findings.

[0102] The significance of the electron, composed of three spheres each with a radius of c, is not immediately clear, but can be understood if the frequency of rotation of the electron is taken into account. Thus if the diameter of the electron was approximately 10^{-19} m, then its spin would need to be

$$\frac{1}{c} \times 10^{-15}$$

m approx. eq. 10^6 cycles/sec. Thus given a very high rotation rate an electron could have an effective radius of 1/c and still occupy subatomic sizes. Indeed these observations might be used to estimate the rate of rotation of the quasi electron and its size (see Appendix 1).

[0103] With regards a single quintessence, this passing through an energy vector of the space-time lattice would appear as a vibrating string. In a similar way to string theory, the conglomeration of these quintessences would produce the constituents of ordinary matter. The electron, for example, would be constituted from approximately 1.235×10^{20} quintessences.

[0104] The dimensions of the equation for the electron can be readily resolved by considering each of the three vector dimensions. The exact dimensions of the equation need to be considered in the light of the nature of space-time itself. These dimensional equations help explain the nature of matter. Indeed the equation for the electron may be necessary for the full understanding of gravity

[0105] Complex Space and Electron Structure

[0106] The presence of complex space also now further explains the conformation of the electron, and its formulation at the quantum level, and the presence of particles, anti-particles and their spin up and spin down characteristics.

[0107] Indeed the short form equation for the charge of the electron (−e) can now be rewritten as a metric tensor with three dimensions in real space and six in complex space.

[0108] Thus if three of the x, y and z vectors are in real space and six vectors in complex space, where c is the speed of light in the real space vector, $_jc$ is the speed of light in the complex vector and $_{-j}c$ is the complex conjugate of $_jc$, thus the electron can be mathematically represented by the equation:

$$-e = \varepsilon_{qe}\left/\left(\frac{4}{3}\pi\right)^{1/2}\right. \cdot \begin{array}{ccc} (c_x)^{1/2} \cdot (jc_y)^{1/2} \cdot (-jc_z)^{1/2} \\ + \quad + \quad + \\ (-jc_x)^{1/2} \cdot (c_y)^{1/2} \cdot (jc_z)^{1/2} \\ + \quad + \quad + \\ (jc_x)^{1/2} \cdot (jc_y)^{1/2} \cdot (c_z)^{1/2} \end{array}$$

8

[0109] Which now elegantly gives the real number solution

$$e = \frac{\varepsilon_{qe}}{3\sqrt{\left(\frac{4}{3}\right)\pi c^3}}$$

[0110] Where $e = \epsilon_{qe}$ is given as the permittivity of free space for a single quasi electron Equation 4 represents a "complex" tensor

[0111] Whilst the two dimensional Argand diagram has four quadrants, the three dimensional Argand diagram has eight cubic sectors. Two of these cubic sectors are diametric opposites and can represent "real" particulate objects. These have the primary coordinates x, y, −z; as in the electron described above, and the −x, −y, z, with the real vector x now having a minus sign. These two "real" cubic sectors, therefore, mathematically represent particles and their anti-particles.

[0112] The mathematical presence of the two primary diagonal mirror images (x, y, −z and −x, −y, z) now allow the introduction of the concept of antiparticles. This extension of the maths into a three dimensional Argand diagram thus results in the automatic formulation of the maths of antiparticles. Thus the charge of the positron (⁺e) is formulated by the shortened form equation, where the real vectors now each have the minus sign, and therefore exist in the −x, −y, z sector of the three dimensional Argand diagram.

$$e = \varepsilon_{qe} \Big/ \left(\frac{4}{3}\pi\right)^{1/2} \cdot \begin{array}{c} -c_x^{1/2} \cdot_{-j} c_y^{1/2} \cdot_j c_z^{1/2} \\ jc_x^{1/2} \cdot -c^{1/2y} \cdot_{-j} c_z^{1/2} \\ -jc_x^{1/2} \cdot jc_y^{1/2} \cdot -c_z^{1/2} \end{array}$$

[0113] The three dimensional Argand diagram also accounts for chirality and indeed the up and down spin of the electron. There are two other "real" primary coordinates in the Argand diagram, these are themselves the partial mirror images of the above coordinates (i.e. x, −y, z and −x, y, −z). In particular the y axis is of the opposite sign, thus in particles the y axis is in the downward direction, to form down spin particles and in anti-particles in the up direction, to form the antiparticle The up spin electron is given by eq. 8 and hence the down spin electron $(-e|\downarrow \leqq)$ is given by the equation

$$-el\downarrow\rangle = \varepsilon_{qe} \Big/ \left(\frac{4}{3}\pi\right)^{1/2} \cdot \begin{array}{c} c_x^{1/2} \cdot_{-j} c_y^{1/2} \cdot_j c_z^{1/2} \\ jc_x^{1/2} \cdot c^{1/2y} \cdot_{-j} c_z^{1/2} \\ -jc_x^{1/2} \cdot jc_y^{1/2} \cdot -c_z^{1/2} \end{array} \qquad (9)$$

[0114] Thus the three dimensional Argand diagram accounts directly for the presence of antiparticles and the spin up and spin down particles seen in nature. It also accounts for the necessity of the electron to form a square root spherical object, as complex space depends on √−1, otherwise known as j.

[0115] Electron Pairing and Superconductivity

[0116] As the quintessences making up the electron are in a square root conformation, each of these quasi electrons would have a tendancy to pair to form an entire sphere.

[0117] The square root sphere structure of electrons with up and down spins can now superimpose to produce a complete sphere of varying extents. This produces electron pairing as seen at the atomic and molecular levels. It also accounts for the Pauli exclusion principle. This pairing thus accounts for the reactivity of the valence electrons and the electron probability densities, which in turn accounts for the existence of chemistry.

[0118] Furthermore, it is possible to account directly for superconductivity from first principles. For if both the complex and real vectors of the electron combine completely, the product of an up and down spin electron form a perfect superimposed sphere with radius c, with a charge of 2.59×10^{-38} C, denoted by the formula:

$$e^2 = \frac{\varepsilon_O}{3\left(\frac{4}{3}\pi c^3\right)} = 2.59 \times 10^{-38} C \qquad (6b)$$

[0119] As with standard superconducting theory, superconductivity can be explained by the formation of "Cooper" electron pairs, where the electrons are forced to pair by the presence of positive crystal charge in particular formation, at supercooled temperatures. In addition the electron pair now forms a stable entity whose angular momentum cancels.

[0120] It additionally becomes clear that the charge of two separate electrons (2e) is 3.2×10^{-19} C, but the charge of the combined electrons (e^2) is 2.59×10^{-38} C. This electron pair thus appears to have 19 orders of magnitude less charge than the electron and in turn 19 orders of magnitude less resistance. It is this effective reduction in charge and in turn resistance, which may account for superconductivity. When observed directly any electrical interaction with the Cooper electron pair will, however, result in the release of the full charge of both electrons, so that the full electrical charge put in will be equal to that coming out of the apparatus.

[0121] The Fine Structure Constant

[0122] Intruiginty from our knowledge of the electron we can further define the term .alpha., the fine structure constant; from the structure of the electron. Thus as the standard term

$$\alpha = \frac{e^2}{hc \times 4\pi\varepsilon_0};$$

substituting the term

$$e^2 = \frac{\varepsilon_0}{3(4/3)\pi c^3} \qquad (eq.\ 6)$$

and

$$h = m_q c^2 \qquad (eq.\ 1)$$

we find:

$$\frac{2\pi}{\alpha} = m_q[3(4/3\pi c^3)]^2$$

*or

$$\frac{2\pi}{\alpha} = \frac{m_q e^4}{\varepsilon_0^2}$$

[0123] For brevity we may represent the quasi electron structure as $(4/3)\pi c^3 = \theta$; to signify its threefold symmetry, thus

$$\frac{2\pi}{\alpha} = m_q(3\theta)^2 \qquad (10)$$

[0124] Indicating that the fine structure constant of the electron (a) is indeed related to its dimensional structure. Again taking into account the effects of gravity the fine structure constant can be derived from first principles to nine decimal places (see Gravity and the Charge of the Electron).

[0125] Fundamental Forces and Particle Structure

[0126] In order to understand the fundamental forces and the nature of fundamental particles, an overview is required. Thus, there are three major forces; strong, electro-weak and gravity, each mediated by three force particles the gluon, photon and graviton respectively. These in turn, influence three types of particle, the quark, lepton, and by general relativity space-time itself. Each of these are composed of particles with multiples of charge of ⅓, which are themselves in three generations, and are present in three dimensions of real space. It is important that a comprehensive view of nature explains this threefold symmetry.

[0127] Using the Standard Model of particles, it is well accepted there exist quark particle charges of −⅓, −⅔ and +⅓ and +⅔ in quarks and anti-quarks. Given that each particle is made up of three quarks the presence of these fractional charges support the association of the fractional charges in this way to form three dimensional charged particles. In stable particles each of the three quarks would have a vector in one dimension, giving the three quarks together an existence in three dimensional visible space time. The particles that bind the quarks (gluons) are themselves required, in stable particles, to have three different color charges, one color in each dimension, for the particle to exist in three dimensional space-time. Furthermore, there are three generations of quarks (and indeed leptons).

[0128] The Standard Model (or a modification of this) and in particular the observation of quarks and indeed quasi electrons with fractional charge of ⅓ and ⅔ in both cases, indicates that particles are constituted from the equivalent of three of these quasi particles to form an electron and quarks to form baryons. In the normal three dimensions the energy would be carried by the particle, However, because each particle is constituted of three quasi particles and in each quasi particle or quark one visible dimension would be the direction vector, in the other two hidden dimensions of each vector the waves would carry energy. Thus each particle

would be associated with vibration, which would account for wave particle duality and Heisenberg's uncertainty principle in three dimensional visible space-time.

[0129] These observations lead us directly to the previous postulate that the structure of the electron is composed of none other than three (root) spheres, and that this equation for the electron allows the determination of the charge of the electron from first principles, thus:

$$e = \frac{\varepsilon 0^2}{[3(4/3\pi c^3)]} \qquad (6)$$

[0130] In addition the mass of the proton (m_p) can be directly calculated from the ratio of the mass (m_e) of the electron, given by the equation:

$$\frac{m_e}{m_p} = 5.45 \times 10^{-4} = 3\frac{\pi}{\sqrt{c}} \qquad (11)$$

[0131] Strictly we should write,

$$\frac{m_e}{m_p + m_e} = 3\pi\sqrt{c} \; ;$$

which is much more elegant.

[0132] Which now gives

$$\frac{m_e}{m_p} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{c}/3\pi - 1} = 5.4462 \times 10^{-3}$$

[0133] This is in very close agreement with the experimentally derived ratio of the proton to electron masses which is also; 5.4462×10^{-3}

[0134] Thus the correlation factor between theory and experiment has a maximum error <0.00001.

[0135] If we combine equation 3:

$$e = \sqrt{\frac{\varepsilon_0}{3(4/3)\pi c^3}}$$

and equation 13:

$$\frac{m_e}{m_p} = 3\frac{\pi}{\sqrt{c}}$$

the positive charge of the proton (e_p) is given by:

$$e_p = \sqrt{\frac{\varepsilon_0}{3(4/3)\pi c^3}} \times m_e \times 3 \frac{\pi/\sqrt{c}}{m_p} = e \qquad (12)$$

[0136] The stable nuclear proton conformation can thus be represented by the short form equation:

$$p = 3^{+}\sqrt{3(4/3)\pi c^3} \times 3(\pi/\sqrt{c}) \qquad (13)$$

[0137] This forms a stable 3×3 conformation as with the stable electron structure.

[0138] Importantly the term ($\pi/\sqrt{c}$) is the 90° solution to the Shrodinger wave equation for an electron confined in a space with radius c!.

[0139] Thus the standard equation for an electron confined in a one dimensional box is given by:

$$E\psi(x) = -\frac{\hbar^2}{2m}\frac{d^2\psi(x)}{dx^2}$$

[0140] If the one dimensional box has a length 2L the quantum amplitude (A) can only be non zero between x=0 and X=2L and the standard solution for the amplitude is none other than:

$$A = (1/L^{1/2})$$

[0141] Thus in one dimension the standard solution to the Shrodinger wave equation is:

$$\psi(x) = (\pi/L^{1/2})\sin x/L$$

[0142] Thus not only is the electron charge derived from the equation for three spheres each with a radius of c (eq. 3); but the proton mass and charge can also be derived from the standard solution to the Shrodinger wave equation for a an electron confined in a space of radius c!.

[0143] The term ($\pi/c^{1/2}$) itself would thus most logically represent the gluon which is present in the proton. These gluons would bind the quasi electrons together to form the fundamental particles

[0144] The masses of all the known particles, including the up and down quarks, the W boson, the muon, charm, strange, the tauon, truth and beauty can thus also be derived from first principles in this fashion, and have the quasi electron as their basic constituent particle (see Appendix 1).

[0145] Thus the structure of the muon (μ) can also be derived from the ratio of the mass of the electron (m_e) and the mass of the muon (m_μ):

$$m_e/m_\mu = 4.7 \times 10^{-3} = c^{1/3}$$

Thus

$$\mu = \varepsilon_0^{1/2} \times m_e/m_\mu \times 3^{-}(4/3 = \pi c^3)^{1/2} \times (\pi/c^{1/3})$$

[0146] Where the charge of the muon is in this equation equivalent to that of the electron e. In this case ($\pi/c^{1/3}$) can be considered to represent a specific high energy photon. Thus the structure of the muon, written in short form is:

$$\mu = 3^{-}(4/3\pi c^3)^{1/2} \times (\pi/c^{1/3}). \qquad (14)$$

[0147] Moreover the structure of the tauon can be calculated from the ratio of the mass of the electron and that of the Tauon (1.79 Mev);

[0148] Thus

$$0.511 \text{ Mev}/1.79 \text{ Gev} = 2.85 \times 10^{-4}$$

$$m_e/m_\tau = (\pi/c)^{1/3} \times (\pi/c)^{1/9} = 2.85 \times 10^{-4}$$

[0149] As the charge of the tauon is equivalent to the charge of the electron, hence the structure of the Tauon is given by the above equation

$$e_\tau = \varepsilon_{qe} \times (m_e/m_\tau) \times 3^{-}(4/3\pi c^3)^{1/2} \times (\pi/c)^{1/3} \times (\pi/c)^{1/9} = e$$

[0150] This equation accurately predicts the charge −1; and mass of the Tauon (.~1.78 Gev). Thus the structure of the Tauon can in short form be given by the equation

$$\tau = -3(4/3\pi c^3)^{1/2} \times (\pi/c)^{1/3} \times (\pi/c)^{1/9} \qquad (15)$$

[0151] Furthermore a more exact value for the mass of the muon and tauon can be deduced by taking into account the gravitational field of the Earth in a similar way to identifying the exact charge of the electron. In addition it may be necessary to take into account a possible mass value of the neutrino to arrive at a precisely accurate mass value of the muon and tauon. Nevertheless, the mathematical proof of these short form equations lies in the fact that they can very closely identify the charge and the masses of these particles, from first principles, as in equations.

[0152] Overall the mathematical geometrical structure of all the particles can be derived from the quasi electron, which is in turn derived from quintessence. Thus, the short form particle structures can now be derived from first principles. This includes the quasi electron (qe) and electron (e), from which the quarks (u,d) and in turn the stable proton (p) and stable neutron (n) and alpha particle (a) respectively are derived. The general structure of the force carrying bosons the photon. (g) and the gluon (γ) and the intermediate vector boson (W) can be given. It will also intriguingly be possible to derive, according to their generation, the structure of the strange (s) charm (c), beauty (b, or bottom) and truth (t or top) quarks directly from the structure of the muon (μ) and Tauon (τ) respectively.

[0153] Using the term $\Theta = (4/3\pi c^3)$, where, −/+ represents the charge of the quasi electron, we find:

[0154] 1st Generation:

$$(q_e) = {}^{-}\Theta^{1/2} \qquad (6c)$$

$$e = 3^{-1/2} \qquad (6)$$

$$d = {}^{-}\Theta^{1/2} \cdot 3(\pi/c^{1/2}) \qquad (16)$$

$$u = 2^{+}\Theta^{1/2} \cdot 3(\pi/c^{1/2}) \qquad (17)$$

$$s = {}^{-}\Theta^{1/2} \cdot 3(\pi/c^{1/2}) \qquad (18)$$

[0155] 2nd Generation

$$\mu = 3^{-}\Theta^{1/2} \cdot (\pi/c^{1/3}) \qquad (14)$$

$$c = 2^{+}\Theta^{1/2} \cdot (\pi/c^{1/3}) \cdot (\pi/c^{1/4}) \qquad (19)$$

$$b = {}^{-}\Theta^{1/2} \cdot (\pi/c^{1/9}) \cdot (\pi/c)^{1/4} \qquad (20)$$

[0156] 3rd Generation

$$\tau = 3^{-}\Theta^{1/2} \cdot (\pi/c)^{1/3} \cdot (\pi/c)^{1/9} \qquad (15)$$

$$t = 2^{+}\Theta^{1/2} \cdot (\pi/c)^{1/3} \cdot (\pi/c)^{1/9} \cdot (\pi/c)^{1/4} \qquad (21)$$

[0157] Particle Gluons (g):

$$g_1 = (\pi/c^{1/2}) \qquad (22)$$

$$g_2 = (\pi/c)^{1/2} \qquad (22a)$$

$$g_3=(\pi/c^{1/4}) \tag{22b}$$

$$g_4=(\pi/c)^{1/4} \tag{22c}$$

[0158] Particle Photons (.gamma.):

$$\gamma_1=(\pi/c^{1/3}) \tag{23}$$

$$\gamma_2=(\pi/c)^{1/3} \tag{23a}$$

$$\gamma_3=(\pi/c^{1/9}) \tag{23b}$$

$$\gamma_4=(\pi/c)^{1/9} \tag{23c}$$

[0159] Intermediate Vector Boson ($W^{+/-}$):

$$W^+=3^+\Theta^{1/2}\cdot2(\pi/c^{1/6})^6 \tag{24}$$

$$W^-=3^-\Theta^{1/2}\cdot2(\pi/c^{1/6})^6 \tag{25}$$

[0160] Stable* Proton:

$$p=3^+\Theta^{1/2}\cdot3(\pi/c^{1/2}) \tag{13}$$

[0161] Stable* Neutron:

Stable * Neutron:

$$n = \begin{matrix} ^+\Theta\downarrow^{1/2}\cdot2(3\pi/c^{1/2})\cdot^-\Theta\uparrow^{1/2} \\ ^+\Theta\downarrow^{1/2}\cdot2(3\pi/c^{1/2})\cdot^-\Theta\uparrow^{1/2} \\ ^+\Theta\downarrow^{1/2}\cdot2(3\pi/c^{1/2})\cdot^-\Theta\uparrow^{1/2} \end{matrix}$$

* Stable nucleonic neutron and proton conformations differ slightly from the Standard Model, this is due to the sharing of quasi electron and quasi positron particles within the nucleus, which allows stabalisation of these particles by the formation of stable 3×3 structures. The Standard conformations which describe non-nucleonic neutrons and protons are additionally given in Appendix 1.

[0162] Alpha particle (α):

$$\text{Alpha particle } (\alpha) := \alpha = \begin{matrix} [3^+\Theta]\downarrow^{1/2}\cdot2(3\pi/c^{1/2})\cdot[3^-\Theta]\uparrow^{1/2} \\ [3^+\Theta]\uparrow^{1/2}\cdot2(3\pi/c^{1/2})\cdot[3^-\Theta]\downarrow^{1/2} \\ [3^+\Theta]\downarrow^{1/2}\cdot2(3\pi/c^{1/2})\cdot[3^-\Theta]\uparrow^{1/2} \end{matrix} \tag{27}$$

[0163] The mathematical proof for these structures and their decay mechanisms is lengthy and is thus fully contained in Appendix 1. All the particle structures are accurately mathematically defined by the masses of these particles.

[0164] The structure of these particles all contain the quasi electron and thus the metric tensor structure necessary in the formulation of the gravitational equations is sustained. The respective forces created by the gluon and the photon are important as they tell us the behaviour of matter and also lead to the likely structure of the graviton

[0165] Particle Spin and Size

[0166] The significance of the electron, composed of three spheres each with a radius of $1/c$, is not immediately clear, but can be understood if the frequency of rotation of the electron is also taken into account. Knowing the structure of the electron has led us to deduce its charge and thus may lead us estimate its size and spin. Thus these observations might be used to calculate the radius and rate of rotation of the electron.

[0167] Let us suppose, that nature is truly beautiful, and that the radius of the fundamental quasi electron is indeed $1/c$, and in turn the radius was balanced by the velocity of rotation $2\pi/c$. This can be directly confirmed mathematically by taking into account the known spin of the electron, $h/4\pi$. Thus the actual spin of the electron may be calculated form the known energy of the spin.

[0168] The radius of the electron is not up till now known, but the radius of a quark has been estimated, and this is the radius derived from deep inelastic collisions of the proton. These estimates reveal a radius of approx. $r_p=1.18\times10^{-15}$ m This value may be used to assist in confirming the spin of the proton in revolutions per sec. (revs) and in turn the spin and size of the electron. Firstly we may proceed to estimate the spin of the proton. Thus as $h=E\cdot t$ (Joules×sec) and $h=E\cdot t=F\cdot d\cdot t$ (Joules×sec), then the spin;

$$h/4\pi=F\cdot d\cdot t \tag{28}$$

[0169] As $F=ma$, where $\alpha=(revs\cdot2\pi)^2 r_p$ and m=the mass of the proton, then

$$h/4\pi=m(revs\cdot2\pi)^2 r_p\cdot d\cdot t$$

[0170] The actual distance (d) traveled in a circle of half integer spin in 1 second is: $revs\cdot\pi r_p$ thus:

$$h/4=m(revs\cdot2\pi)^3 r_p{}^2/2$$

[0171] Hence:

$$revs=[h/m(2\pi)^4 r_p{}^2]^{1/3}$$

[0172] Taking the effective mass the proton as 1.6726×10^{-27} kg, then the rate of spin of the proton in revolutions/sec is:

$$revs=5.65\times10^6 \text{ cycles/sec}$$

[0173] From the frequency of the specific rotation of the proton, given the half integer spin associated with the proton, we can thus mathematically confirm the relationship between the radius of a particle and its spin:

$$r_p\times revs/2=1/c \tag{29}$$

[0174] Furthermore, the fundamental radius of $1/c$ seen in geometric structure the quasi electron, is also reflected in the rotation rate and radius for the proton, thus as above $1/c\div\frac{1}{2} revs=1.85\times10^{-15}$ m. Moreover, this means the actual half integer velocity of rotation is none other than $2\pi/c$ in metres/sec. So that the particle is in harmonic balance.

[0175] Using the fundamental formula $h/4\pi=F\cdot d\cdot t$, it is possible to obtain accurate estimates of the radius and spin rates of the electron, or indeed any particle, using the same principle of harmonic balance. Using the formula:

$$revs=[h/m(2\pi)^4 r_e{}^2]^{1/3}$$

[0176] It appears there are two unknowns, the radius if the electron and its revolution rate, however, in accordance with the equation, $r_p=2/c.revs$, which gives the revolution rate of the proton, the same principle may also be used for the electron, by substituting $r_e=2/c.revs$, such that:

$$revs=hc^2/4m_e(2\pi)^4 \tag{30}$$

[0177] Taking the mass of the electron 9.109382×10^{-31} kg, the rate of revolution of the electron is:

$$revs=1.048\times10^{10} \text{ cycles/sec}$$

[0178] Which gives a predicted radius of the electron as

$$r_e=6.336\times10^{-19} \text{ cycles/sec}$$

[0179] So the half integer rotation velocity (revs.πr) is $2\pi/c$!, for the electron in keeping with the harmonic balance of the electron.

[0180] The same principle may be used to obtain an accurate estimate of the spin and radius of the muon, or any other particle. Using the above formula

$$revs=hc^2/4m_e(2\pi)^4 \tag{31}$$

[0181] Then as the mass of the muon is 1.8823×10^{-28} kg then the revs of the muon $f_\mu=5.070\times10^{-7}$ cycles/sec and the radius r_μ is thus 1.316×10^{-16} m.

[0182] It is now possible to begin to explain how the muon and the other subatomic particles are formed. If a quasi electron is complexed with another structure the total geometric structure needs to maintain harmonic balance. So the frequency of rotation would need to match geometric structure with which the quasi electron was complexed

[0183] Intriguingly we find asymptotic convergence for the formulas for frequency and mass occurs, when the geometric structure complexed with the quasi electron has the structure represented by $(\pi/c^{1/3})$ [giving the frequency divided by two, because the single integer spin of the force carrying particles compares to a half integer spin for the muon]. So that

$$(f_e 3\pi/2)^{1/3}=f_\mu$$

[0184] When the ratio of the masses of the electron (m_e) and muon (m_μ) are related, such that:

$$m_e(3\pi/c^{1/3})=m_\mu$$

[0185] Indeed we find that (allowing for the neutrino) this ratio is very close to the actual ratio of the mass of the electron to the mass of the muon, determined experimentally.

[0186] Furthermore, we have seen that these geometric structures, representing harmonics of the speed of light, which either match the frequency or the amplitude of vibration of the quasi electron, mathematically define the masses of the particles and the fundamental forces of Nature.

Part III—Quantum Gravity

[0187] Quantum General Relativity

[0188] Given the overall energy "complex" energy tensor structure of the electron and the metric tensor, assumed in general relativity, the quantum nature of gravity itself can now be explored. The spherical complex tensor for the electron and the positron give the mathematical quantum structure and energy tensor for all the other particles. Together with the time dimension these nine space dimensions account for the 10 parameters present in the metric tensor necessary to formulate the equations for gravity using Riemann geometry and thus forms the basis of quantum gravity. Intriguingly the metric tensor at each point in space time is required to consist of a collection of ten numbers, Consequently, ten dimensional space-time hypotheses, such as this or superstring theory, do automatically yield general relativity.

[0189] Furthermore, the mathematical representation of the graviton and the gravitational constant may be directly estimated from the knowledge of the mass and radius of quintessence. Thence, the force of the vibrations of quintessence lead directly to quantum gravity.

[0190] The radius of quintessence should be approximately in keeping with the Planck length estimate (r), which is conventionally derived from the standard dimensional equation:

$$r_q^2\cong Gh/c^3 \tag{32}$$

[0191] Given the nine spacial parameters present in the metric tensor, used in general relativity we find that the actual formula for r_q^2 is mathematically in agreement with theory when:

$$9r_q^2=Gh/c^3 \tag{33}$$

[0192] This again supports the 9 dimensional view of space and the size of the vibrations of quintessence can thus be estimated.

$$r_q=1.35\times10^{-35} \text{ m} \tag{33a}$$

[0193] This value is in agreement with the Planck length. Indeed if the above equation is correct then we find that we can derive the standard equation for the general relativistic increase in radius, r', (eq. 34) directly from first principles and arrive at a more fundamental equation for quantum gravity. As

$$r'=G\cdot M/3c^3 \tag{34}$$

[0194] By substituting eq. 33) into equation 34, a fundamental relationship between r' and M is obtained.

$$r'/3r_q^2=GMc^3/Ghc^3=Mc/h$$

[0195] And substituting the quintessential equation, $h=m^qc^2$ (eq. 1) then:

$$r'/3r_q^2=M/m_qc=n_q/c \tag{35}$$

[0196] Hence the ratio of the change in radius to that of the radius of quintessence squared, is proportional, by a factor of c, to the ratio of the mass M of an object to that of the mass of quintessence, effectively the number of quintessences. Thus the change in radius, r' due to gravitation, is related to none other than the ratio of the mass and radius of an object to the mass and the square of the radius of quintessence. Thus again the gravitational change in radius is directly related to the number of quintessences.

[0197] Naturally, this would be exactly what would be logically expected if quintessence, like the equation for the charge of the electron (eq. 6) forms from a root sphere. Thus the change in spacial radius of a normal sphere is dependant on the square of the quintessential radius.

[0198] This increase in apparent radius represents none other than the (gravitational) binding energy for quintessence.

[0199] The meaning of the above dimensional equation (33) might itself be further understood by substituting the mass of quintessence (where $m_q=h/c^2$) into the equation. Thus in nine dimensions the gravitational constant (G) may be more logically given as,

$$9(\pi r_q^2/m_q)=G\pi/c \tag{36}$$

[0200] Where πr_q^2 is the cross sectional area of quintessence and m_q is the effective mass of quintessence, and thus

($\pi r_q^2/m_q$) represents the effective mass per unit area which quintessence exerts. This equation reduces to:

$$9r_q^2/m_q = G/c \tag{37}$$

[0201] From this we may derive the standard general relativistic relationship for the apparent change in radius (r') around a mass (M), from an understanding of the mass m_q and number (n_q) of quintessences. As $m_q = M/n_q$, then:

$$3r_q^2 = G \cdot M/3c \cdot n_q \tag{38}$$

[0202] Then if

$$n_q = r'c/3r_q^2 \tag{39}$$

[0203] thus directly substituting for n_q in eq. 38:

$$r' = G \cdot M/3c^2 \tag{34}$$

[0204] The importance of this is that the gravitational change in radius now logically derives from equation 36, which describes the gravitational force as resulting directly from the mass of quintessence exerted/per unit area of quintessence.

$$9(\pi r_q^2/m_q) = G \cdot \pi/c \tag{36}$$

[0205] Thus equation 34 is the conventional equation for the general relativistic increase in radius (r') in a gravitational field, which is here derived from the underlying nature of quintessence. Thus the gravitational constant is derived from the mass and radius of vibration squared of quintessence from first principles.

[0206] Indeed it is apparent that a more fundamental equation for gravitation now exists, for equation (39) is mathematically accurate and numerically agrees with eq. 34:

$$r'/3r_q^2 = n_q/c \tag{39}$$

[0207] These equations may be readily mathematically verified. If in accordance with standard general relativity, the apparent increase in radius r' is:

$$r' = GM/3c^2 \tag{34}$$

[0208] Then given that the mass of the Earth is 5.9745×10^{24} kg;

$$r' = 1.478 \times 10^{-3} \text{ m}$$

[0209] Accordingly if $r' = 3r_q^2 \cdot n_q/c$; (eq. 39). Given the number of quintessences n_q constituting the Earth is M_E/m_q, then

$$n_q = 5.9745 \times 10^{24}/7.3725 \times 10^{-5} = 8.104 \times 10^{74}$$

[0210] As $r_q^2 = 1.823 \times 10^{-70}$ (eq. 33a) then:

$$r' = 1.478 \times 10^{-3} \text{ m}$$

[0211] Thus equation 39 gives the same answer as the standard equation and may be understood on a logical basis. Indeed the meaning of c in the equation may be understood as it has been previously shown as being the basis for the radius of matter (eq. 6). Hence the general relativistic change in radius, r', is none other than the effective binding energy for quintessence.

[0212] Quantum Gravity and Wave Particle Duality

[0213] Quantum gravity can now be readily linked with quantum mechanics, indeed any observations which are self consistent must be able to do so easily.

[0214] The frequency of light has been previously derived

$$f = E/h = n_q$$

[0215] Thus the formula for the frequency of light (E=hf) has been previously explained theoretically by the simple observation that the frequency is determined quite directly from the number of quintessences (n_q) within the photon. The same principle has also been shown to apply to matter.

[0216] Let us now follow these equations for matter by calculating the wavelength of a photon from the Gravitational constant as an example; and also as a test of these observations and to demonstrate that the gravitational equations can also apply to the quantum world.

[0217] If

$$n_q = r'c/3r_q^2 \tag{39a}$$

[0218] where r' is the general relativistic increase in radius, and r_q is the radius of quintessence (eq. 33). Where $f = E/h = n_q$, substituting for n_q, then the frequency of the photon f_γ (where $\beta = 1$) is given by:

$$f_\gamma = r'c/3r_q^2$$

[0219] Using the standard equation, $r' = GM/3c^2$ (eq. 34); we may substitute for r', thus we have:

$$f_\gamma = GM/9r_q^2c \text{ 15 Thus}$$

$$f_\gamma = \frac{G}{9r_q^2c^3} \cdot m_\gamma c^2 \text{ and as } E = m_\gamma c^2;$$

$$f_\gamma = \frac{GE}{9r_q^2c^3} \tag{40}$$

Indeed as $9r_q^2 = Gh/c^3$, then $f_\gamma = E/h = n_q$

[0220] It is possible to also demonstrate that the same relationship holds for the wave equation for matter. If we take the relativistic wave energy of matter, which has been previously derived,

$$f = \beta^2 n_q$$

[0221] This includes the term for the number of quintessences flowing through the electron, in the complex vectors of space-time, to give the relativistic electron momentum (p) and a term for the rest mass, thus substituting into (40)

$$f_\gamma = \frac{GE}{9r_q^2c^3} \tag{40}$$

[0222] As $f = \beta^2 n_q$ for matter then the equation expands to:

$$f_m = \frac{G}{9r_q^2c^3} \cdot \beta^2 E \text{ As } \lambda = v/f, \text{ then}$$

$$\lambda = \frac{9r_q^2c^3v}{G\beta^2E} \tag{41}$$

[0223] Then the equation again reduces to:

$$G = \frac{9r_q^2 c^4}{\lambda \beta E}$$ (3)

[0224] Equations 3, 40 and 41 are important as they show that the quantum wavelength of any particle of rest mass m can be derived from the gravitational constant G. Thus linking quantum mechanics to quantum gravity.

[0225] It is therefore important to confirm the numerical accuracy of the above equation (40). We can do this by comparing the result to the standard computation of the de Broglie equation, in a range where de Broglie itself is likely to be most accurate; which according to these observations is in the low energy range (see section on Wave Particle Duality).

[0226] If we take an electron with an energy of 0.1 KeV the wavelength is conventionally given (where the kinetic energy of the electron E_k is given by the product of the charge of the electron (C) and the potential applied eV=0.1 Kev), by the standard equation:

$$\lambda = h/p = h/(E_k \cdot 2m_0)^{1/2} \text{ thus}$$
$$\lambda = 6.63 \times 10^{-34}/[1.602 \times 10^{-19} \times 1 \times 10^2 \times 18.22 \times 10^{-31}]^{1/2}$$
$$\text{hence}$$
$$\lambda \cong 1.23 \times 10^{-10} m \text{ Using}$$

$$\lambda = \frac{9r_q^2 c^4}{G\beta E} \text{ Where } E = \gamma m_0 c^2$$ (3a)

[0227] At 0.1 Kev, electron velocity is 6×10⁶ r/sec, thus β=2×10⁻² and γ=1/(1−v²/c²)^{1/2}=1.0002. Thus:

$$\gamma = \frac{9 \times 1.82 \times 10^{-70} \times 80.78 \times 10^{32}}{6.76 \times 10^{-11} \times \beta \times 1.0002 \times 9.11 \times 10^{-31} \times 8.998 \times 10^{16}}$$
$$\lambda = 1.21 \times 10^{-10} m$$

[0228] Divergence between the de Broglie equation and the above equation (2) occurs at intermediate and high energies where it is generally accepted that the standard de Broglie equation may be less accurate. The values for eq. 2 and de Broglie are compared to recent experiments, which demonstrate a relativistic curvilinear plot for wavelengths of matter in keeping with eq. 40.

[0229] The de Broglie equation in the non-relativistic format yields a simple log/linear scale, which is not in keeping with relativity; whereas eq. 3 is dependent on relativity and mathematically accounts for both relativity in calculating the wavelength. Indeed recent experiment on quantum tunnelling through a wire mesh strongly suggests that the relationship between energy and wavelength is relativistically curvilinear[ref 1]. Furthermore equation 3a suggests a fundamental relationship between energy (E), relative velocity (v/c=.β), gravity (G) and the quantum wavelength (λ)

$$\lambda = \frac{9r_q^2 c^4}{G\beta E} \text{ Indeed as } ^9 r_q^2 = Gh/c^3, \text{ then}$$ (3a)

$$\lambda = hc/\beta E$$ (2)

[0230] Equation 2 is the very same as the Universal wave equation derived form first principles for the wavelength of tight and matter, which allowed a relativistic solution to the equations for wave particle duality (see Wave Particle Duality). This now indicates that these quintessential equations are compatible with relativity, quantum mechanics and quantum gravity.

[0231] Graviton Structure

[0232] From these observations, if the value for the gravitational constant is substituted into the equation (35) we may now estimate the probable geometric structure of the gravitation, which is the force particle mediating gravity by acting on quintessence. Thus the Gravitational constant has been previously derived from the vibration of quintessence by the equation:

$$G \cdot (\pi/c) = 9(\pi r_q^2/m_q)$$ (36)

[0233] This is in accurate agreement with the value for G(6.67×10⁻¹¹ N m² kg⁻²). This suggests that the most probable mathematical representation of the graviton (φ), the third force carrying particle is

$$\phi = (\pi/c)$$ (42)

[0234] Thus the gravitational constant (G) can be given by the mass and radius of quintessence and the structure of the graviton

$$G = 9\pi r_q^2/\phi m_q$$ (43)

[0235] This shows the gravitational force to be related to the fundamental radius of quintessence space time, and the graviton.

[0236] Quantised General Relativity

[0237] The classical general relativistic formula, as given by Einstein is:

$$R_{\mu\nu} - 1/2 g_{\mu\nu} R = -\kappa T_{\mu\nu}$$

[0238] Where R is effectively the curvature of space-time, $R_{\mu\nu}$ denotes the contracted Riemann tensor of curvature and $T_{\mu\nu}$ is the "energy tensor" of matter.)

[0239] If we substitute the energy tensor matrix of the electron (eq. 9)×time, for the energy tensor of matter $T_{\mu\nu}$; and the metric tensor of the space-time lattice×time for the contracted Riemann tensor we can arrive at the same solutions for general relativity.

[0240] Furthermore, in his published paper on General Relativity, Einstein. defined the constant κ as:

$$\kappa = 8\pi G/c^2$$

[0241] Therefore Einstein's equation should be written as

$$R_{\mu\nu} - 1/2 g_{\mu\nu} R = \frac{8\pi G}{c^2} \cdot T_{\mu\nu}$$ (43)

[0242] Einstein himself was apparently not happy about the right hand component of the equation. However, we find that this part of the equation can now be explained and quantised by substituting the gravitational constant, $G=9\pi r_q{}^2/\phi m_q$, (eq. 42a),

[0243] Giving:

$$R_{\mu\nu} - 1/2 g_{\mu\nu} R = -\frac{8\pi^2 9 r_q^2}{\varphi m_q c^2} \cdot T_{\mu\nu} \qquad (44)$$

[0244] By substituting $m_q \cdot c^2 = h$, and further substituting $h = h/2\pi$, we arrive at a quantised solution to Einstein's equations. Where A_q is the surface area of quintessence $(A_q = 4\pi r_q{}^2)$; ϕ is the graviton $[\phi = (\pi/c)]$ and h is Plancks constant. thus:

$$R_{\mu\nu} - 1/2 g_{\mu\nu} R = -\frac{9 A_q}{\varphi \hbar} \cdot T_{\mu\nu} \qquad (45)$$

[0245] The gravitational equation can now be further understood on a logical basis. The term $A_q = (4\pi r_q{}^2)$, where represents standard term for the surface area of a sphere of quintessence for the 9 space dimensions of the space time lattice, h is the energy content of quintessence×time and ϕ is the graviton, thus the right hand term now represents a true "metric energy tensor" of matter.

[0246] This leads directly to the standard solution to the field equations, for the general relativistic increase in radius r' of an object, where A is the surface area of a sphere of a given mass M, such that

$$r = \sqrt{(A/4\pi)} - r = GM/3c^2 \qquad (34)$$

[0247] Furthermore, although equation 45, gives the same solutions as Einstein's equation, which is essentially correct, the difference is that the equation is now dependant upon Planck's constant (h), and moreover the radius of quintessence, which now defines a quantised solution to the equations.

[0248] Graviton Force Characteristics

[0249] Similar to the photon, the previously derived equation (42) for the graviton $[\phi = (\pi/c)]$ appears to also mathematically represent a helical ringlet of quintessence, but with a spin of 2. For the photon, taking the direction of motion as the x vector and its axis of spin also as the x vector, would account for the electromagnetic force and its attraction and repulsion characteristics. In the case of the gluon component $(\pi/c^{1/2})$, if the direction vector is x, then the axis of spin would be in the y vector, the same as quasi electrons, accounting for the particle binding characteristics of the gluon force. In the case of the graviton, if the direction of motion was in the x vector, the graviton spin axis would be in the z vector thus, as will be demonstrated, accounting for the gravitational force.

[0250] The spin axis of the graviton can also be derived using the known characteristics of the electron. If an electron is travelling in the x direction, then its spin axis is determined by the by the sign of the $_j$y vector (up or down). This

view is in agreement with conventional theory, which indicates that the electron spin is similar to a rotating planet orbiting the sun, (the electron even appears to have orbital precession). As the electron passes through the space-time lattice, this spin would generate the formation of gravitons. This would occur as a result of the ejection of the excess quintessence passing through the electron. As the electron spins, the ejection of these gravitons would occur at a tangent to the electron's direction of motion. The ejection of the gravitons would occur, similarly to the ejection of energy of a pulsar or quasar, through the equivalent of the north and south poles of the electron. Thus, propelling the graviton in the direction of the electrons y vector. The ejection of the graviton would re-orientate and impart a specific angular momentum to the gravitons which would thus end up spinning on its own z axis. If for instance the graviton is released from an up spin electron the graviton will be rotating clockwise and its leading edge will displace quintessence downwards. In turn this will provide an upwards force.

[0251] This picture accounts for Fleming's left hand rule, is logical and provides an explanation for the magnetic force around a wire. According, to the left hand rule if the direction of the current is in the x vector, the magnetic field is in the z vector, and the force is upwards, in the y vector, in accordance with the above model. Therefore, this particular spin axis and the structure of the graviton results in its force characteristics. As the graviton is very small compared to the electron and both have different rather rapid spin axis it is difficult for these to bind and interact. Nevertheless, because the graviton has a spin of 2, and as it spin axis is perpendicular to its direction of motion, in the z vector, it readily displaces space-time quintessence to produce gravity. Thus because the graviton is able to displace space-time, it is capable of escaping a black hole. How else could the effects of gravity be felt beyond a black hole?

[0252] Quantum Gravity and Electromagnetism

[0253] With the above electron model of graviton production the nature of magnetism can be understood from first principles, Furthermore, the presence of a space-time lattice links relativity, and the forces of gravity with the electromagnetic and other forces of Nature. Indeed, evidence for these links may first date back to the 1820's, when Andre Ampere first defined the Amp. The force of attraction between two parallel wires 1 metre apart each carrying 1 Amp in a vacuum was defined as none other than the permeability of free space $(2\times10^{-7}$ N per metre of conductor). Thus conventionally the magnetic field strength around a long straight wire is given as:

$$B = \mu_0 I/2\pi r$$

[0254] Where I is the current and μ_0 is the permeability of free space $(4\pi\times10^{-7}$ N A$^{-2})$

[0255] The attraction between two wires both carrying negative charge is, however, counterintuitive as negative charges should repel. A conventional explanation overcomes this by invoking the presence of a magnetic field which is created by the current by the production of virtual photons. Thus we appear to have an explanation for the effects of magnetism which involves virtual photons, however, these photons are not observed. More accurately, according to conventional special relativity the magnetic field is none other than the electric field viewed relativistically.

[0256] A more satisfactory explanation, therefore, lies in the interaction between the electrons and the space time lattice. The moving electrons in the two wires interact with the lattice to produce gravitons; which are in phase when both streams of electrons are traveling in the same direction. The gravitonic waves interact constructively to disperse the space time lattice between the wires and induce an attractive force between the two wires, which produces in effect the permeability of free space. Thus this force results from the vibration of quintessence itself.

[0257] Conversely in two wires with current going in opposite directions the graviton waves are in anti-phase and would interact destructively between the wires. The gravitonic waves traveling radially outward from the wires would, however, disperse the lattice outside the two wires and produce apparent repulsion between the wires, which is exactly what is observed. These effects of electricity suggest that gravitons act as waves and that phase is important.

[0258] This effect is also seen with the north and south poles of ferromagnets. Nevertheless, with matter other than iron, cobalt or nickel, the graviton emission cannot be phased as the atoms are unable to align and magnets do not appear to exist with other materials.

[0259] In ordinary magnetic system the release of gravitons from the north pole would be exactly balanced by those released from the south pole of the magnet and hence there would be no net force on the magnet until an external magnet or electrical current were applied.

[0260] Overall the magnitude of the forces in electrical systems where electrical conduction occurs are well defined by the permeability and permittivity of free space μ_0, and ϵ_0. Where v is the constant velocity of the charge and ϵ is the electric field produced by the charge.

$$B=[\mu_0\epsilon_0]v\cdot\epsilon$$

[0261] These observations suggest that the forces of electricity which produce magnetism are indeed related to the permittivity and permeability of free space and that these quantities are exerted by an apparent vacuum. Thus the effects of magnetism could be explained by none other than the phased effects of gravitational waves on the space time lattice.

[0262] Electromagnetism is of further interest to quantum gravity, particularly if we combine the standard equations, $B=\mu_0 I/2\pi r$ and $B=[\mu_0\epsilon_0]v\cdot\epsilon$, substituting for B we have:

$$2\pi r=I/\epsilon_0 v\epsilon \qquad (46)$$

[0263] Thus $2\pi r$ is proportional to the inverse of ϵ_0. Thus as space time is dispersed by gravitons the permittivity field will increase in the same way capacitance increases with separation of plates. Because of the inverse relationship between ϵ_0 and $2\pi r$, as ϵ_0 increases the circumference of a circle and the apparent ratio of π is to r, will appear to diminish in accordance with general relativity. This not an actual diminution in the circumference of a circle but the effective reduction of the resistance to motion in a circular path in this field.

[0264] Incidentally, the above observations, also lead us directly to Schrödinger's formula for the average equilib-

rium distance (r) between an electron with charge (e) in orbit around a proton, which is conventionally given by:

$$r=n^2 4\pi h^2\epsilon_0/me^2$$

[0265] Where ϵ_0 is again the permittivity of free space, m is the mass of the electron and n is an orbital integer, h is Planck's constant and e is the charge of the electron. Furthermore if $e=[\epsilon_0/3(4/3\pi c^3)]^{1/2}$ (eq. 3); then the equation at n=1, for the electron orbital radius elegantly simplifies to:

$$r=4h^2 c^3/m$$

[0266] Hence the orbital radius of the electron is related to spin of the electron (h) and its mass (m).

[0267] Quantum Gravity and the Charge of the Electron

[0268] The equation for the charge of the electron (eq. 1) contains the term so (permittivity of free space) which according to these observations should vary in a gravitational field.

$$e=[\epsilon_0/3(4/3\pi c^3)]^{1/2} \qquad (6a)$$

[0269] If we combine the standard equations, $B=\mu_0 I/2\pi r$ and $B=[\mu_0\epsilon_0]v\cdot\epsilon$, substituting for B we have:

$$2\pi r=I/\epsilon_0 v\epsilon \qquad (46)$$

[0270] Thus $2\pi r$ is proportional to the inverse of ϵ_0. Thus as space time is dispersed by gravitons the permittivity field will increase in the same way capacitance increases with separation of plates. Because of the inverse relationship between ϵ_0 and $2\pi r$, as ϵ_0 increases the circumference of a circle and the apparent ratio of π to r, will appear to diminish in accordance with general relativity.

[0271] Thus ϵ_0 rises when space-time is dispersed by the gravitons that produce the gravitational field, This occurs in a similar way to the process by which capacitance increases with separation of plates in a capacitor.

[0272] Nevertheless, as c is a constant and as $c=[\mu_0\epsilon_0]^{-1/2}$, then if ϵ_0 rises then μ_0 falls. This is entirely consistent as μ_0, which represents the force that quintessence exerts, would be reduced if the quintessence space time lattice is dispersed.

[0273] Furthermore, as $\mu_0=4\pi\times10^{-7}$ N A^{-2}; then as μ_0 falls, then the apparent ration π to r, also falls in a gravitational field. This is largely the same as stating, as does general relativity, that the apparent radius r', rises in a gravitational field. So this view is consistent with general relativity.

[0274] Nevertheless, to derive an exact value for the charge of the electron we must account for gravity in the above equation. We will take the specific example of the Earth's gravitational field in order to obtain the exact value for the electron. If in accordance with standard general relativity, the apparent increase in radius r' is:

$$r'=GM/3c^2 \qquad (34)$$

[0275] Then given that the mass of the Earth is 5.9745×10^{24} kg; then

$$r'=1.47864\times10^{-3} \text{ m}$$

thus

$$2\pi r'=9.29057\times10^{-3}$$

[0276] Which is the incremental factor by which ϵ_0 must increase in Earth's gravitational field. So to correct ϵ_0 to account for gravity, ϵ_0 must be divided by the incremental factor, $2\pi r'$. Similarly as effectively π decreases in a gravitational field, to correct π to account for gravity it must be

multiplied by this incremental factor. So the equation for an electron in a zero gravitational field is:

$$e=[\epsilon_0/3(4/3\pi c^3)]^{1/2}\div(1+2\pi r')=1.6022\times10^{-19}\ C \qquad (6b)$$

[0277] This now gives the charge of the electron as measured in a zero gravitational field as 1.6022×10^{-19} C, which is the same as that measured on Earth. Notably these observations appear to suggest that the charge of the electron is the same irrespective of the gravitational field.

[0278] Virtually unlimited degrees of accuracy for the charge of the electron and for the fine structure constant (α), may be achieved by taking into account 2nd and nth order gravitometric effects. Thus if we take into account the effect of gravity upon the radius of the Earth it is also important to take into account an effect upon the instruments with which we measure quantities, this would be a second order gravitometric effect. Thus taking into account 2nd order effects (r''), we have a very small, but nevertheless relevant change, such that: r''=r'(1+2r'). Thus $2r''=9.3180486\times10^{-3}$, and thus:

$$e=[\epsilon_0/3(4/3\pi c^3)]^{1/2}\div(1+2\pi r'')=1.6021765\times10^{-19}\ C \qquad (6c)$$

[0279] This agrees exactly to the nearest 7 decimal places with the maximum accuracy of the experimental value for the charge of the electron. Furthermore by taking into account the nth order gravitometric effect, it is theoretically possible to predict accuracy for the charge of the electron to 3n decimal places. This mathematically accuracy confirms the structure of the electron from first principles and indeed the theoretical effects of gravity on the permittivity of free space (ϵ_0).

[0280] This returns us directly to the fine structure constant for the electron which is conventionally given by: $\alpha=e^2/hc\cdot4\pi\epsilon_0$. If $\alpha=e^2=\epsilon_0/3(4/3\pi c^3)$, accordingly the quintessential equation for α is structurally given by: $2\pi/\alpha=m^q[3\Theta]^2$ (where $\Theta=4/3\ \pi c^3$; see The Structure of the Electron and Matter), we must now take into account the effects of gravity, as above, thus:

$$2\pi\alpha/m_q[3\Theta]^2\div(1\_2\pi r'')^2=0.007297353$$

[0281] Where the gravitational term for the increase in radius r'' allows the mathematical derivation of $\alpha=0.007297353$, and the above equation is in agreement with the conventional experimental value for $\alpha=0.007297353$ to the nearest 9 decimal places.

[0282] Hence the term $(1\_2\pi r'')^2$ is in accordance with these observations for the effect of gravity on electromagnetic forces. To a maximum accuracy governed by current knowledge of the mass of the Earth and the Gravitational constant and thus the term for the gravitational increase in radius r'. These observations can also be used to accurately predict the magnetic moment of the electron

[0283] Thus the presence of the fine structure constant can now be further understood, by deriving the constant from first principles; specifically from the actual dimensional conformation for the charge of the electron: $e=[\epsilon^0/3(4/3\pi c^3)]^{1/2}$ (eq. 6).

[0284] Overall the fine structure constant α (allowing for the term r' which is the general relativistic increase in the radius of the Earth due to gravitation) is given by none other than the formula for the mass of quintessence and from the structure of the electron, which can now be derived from first principles to seven decimal places or more.

[0285] Quantum Gravity and the Electron Magnetic Moment

[0286] The theoretical origin and nature of magnetism remains obscure in current electromagnetic theory. An explanation suggests these magnetic effects are produced by photons, although no photons have ever been observed. To get round this difficulty it is postulated by physics that magnetism results from "virtual" photons. However, Maxwell's equation for electromagnetism states that the photon has no net magnetic effect.

$$\delta B_x/\delta B_y/\delta y+\delta B_z/\delta z=0$$

[0287] Thus magnetism could not, by the above standard equation, be derived from a photon real or virtual.

[0288] In addition observational data suggests that black holes have powerful magnetic fields and as in theory photons are unable to escape from black holes (except for small quantities in the form of Hawking radiation), it would be difficult to explain these magnetic fields on the basis of photon emission.

[0289] Einstein postulated that magnetism was merely due to special relativity .sup.(ref 17). The postulate for the nature of magnetism in these current observations, states that the magnetic force results from relativity due to none other than the phased emission of gravitons (why postulate two invisible forces, magnetism and gravity, when one, the graviton, will do). This view as previously discussed (Quantum Gravity and Electromagnetism) is entirely compatible with standard relativity[ref 19]. Thus with the graviton origin of magnetism, the equation for the magnetic moment of the electron should have an expression in terms of quintessence and in turn the gravitational force and in particular the graviton.

[0290] The standard term for the magnetic moment of the Bohr Magneton (SIB) is:

$$\mu B=eh/4\pi m_e$$

[0291] In standard quantum mechanics the Bohr Magneton, μB, however, needs to be corrected to agree with experiment. The "correction factor" is termed "ϵ"; where $\epsilon=(\alpha/2\pi)-0.328\alpha^2/\pi^2=0.001159641$. Thus theory reveals μ_e, the magnetic moment of the electron where:

$$\mu_e=(eh/4\pi m_e)[1+(\alpha/2\pi)-0.328\alpha^2/\pi^2]$$

[0292] The conventional derivation of the term ϵ above, is given from the fine structure constant, $(\alpha/2\pi)$ which is theoretically consistent. However, a rather arbitrary mathematical correction term; $0.328\alpha^2/\pi^2$ needs to be used in this standard equation. This appears ad hoc and needless to say, more accurate measurements show, the electron magnetic moment to the Bohr magneton ratio, $1+\epsilon=1.001159652$, which suggests the correction factor is indeed incorrect. Nevertheless, this correction factor is essential for "renormalisation" and thus for quantum mechanics to work.

[0293] Quantum gravity readily explains the discrepancy between the theoretical Bohr Magneton (μB) and the actual measured magnetic moment of the electron (μ_e). In accordance with the above chapter (Quantum Gravity and the Charge of the Electron)

[0294] Thus the significant mathematical discrepancies can be removed by accounting for the effects of quantum gravity.

[0295] Thus taking the charge of the electron (e), using the equation for the Bohr magneton and the effects of quantum gravity such that gravitational change in radius is r''. The magnetic moment of the electron is given by:

$$\mu_e = (eh/4\pi m_e)(1+[\alpha/2\pi \div (1+r'')])$$

[0296] This gives an electron magnetic moment to Bohr magneton ratio of 1.00115968. Thus the mathematical term for the magnetic moment of the electron is given, avoiding the arbitrary and dubious term $0.328\alpha^2/\pi^2$ used in the standard equation, simply by accounting for quantum gravity.

[0297] It is now possible to unite the equations for gravity and magnetism by substituting the fundamental key equations of quantum gravity. Thus if: $h=3m_q c^2$ (eq. 1b) and $m_e = m_q n_q$ (eq. 2). Then we can express the magnetic moment of any particle with the charge of the electron, including the proton, in terms of the number of quintessences (n_q) in that particle.

$$\mu B = ec^2/(4/3\pi n_q); \quad (47)$$

[0298] Given that the postulated structure of the graviton is: $(\phi=\pi/c)$ (eq. 42), then substituting we have

$$\mu B = 3ec/4\phi n_q \quad (48)$$

[0299] Showing that the equations for the magnetic moment are compatible with the gravitational equations given earlier. Principally, the quintessential equations now allow the determination of the magnetic moment of any charged object from the equation for the graviton and directly from the number of quintessences it contains. In conventional physics the magnetic moment of the electron requires a correction factor, $(1+(\alpha/2\pi c)-0.328\alpha^2/\pi^2)$, to derive the correct experimental value. These observations herein, indicate that the correction factor is more logically $(1+r'')$, where r'' is the general relativistic increase in radius around a gravitational body. This suggests that magnetism is not only affected by gravity, but can, as shown as above, be derived using the quantum gravitational equations.

Quantum Gravity and Special Relativity

[0301] Ordinary matter passing through the lattice would produce gravitons which would interact with space-time as described by general relativity. The quantity of gravitons would be determined by the apparent mass and in turn these would apparently curve space time. The geometry of this "curvature" is elegantly described by general relativity using Riemann geometry, specifically using metric tensors. Intriguingly the metric tensor is not a single number, but at each point in space time it is required to consist of a collection of ten numbers, Consequently, ten dimensional space-time hypotheses, such as this or superstring theory, may automatically yield general relativity

[0302] General relativity is indeed very elegant, nevertheless there was a logical step yet to answer. That is, how do gravitons shape space time? This can now be readily answered by considering the interaction of a three dimensional space time lattice with gravitons themselves to produce the effects of gravity. The effects of gravity are as such to compel a body in motion towards the gravitational object and to a much smaller extent visa versa. This effect can only be produced If gravitons repel quintessence (the constituents of the 3D lattice). Indeed, it has been stated that in order to

explain cosmic inflation and the "flatness" of the Universe that quintessence must shun (or be shunned by) matter.

[0303] In descriptive terms a body close to a large mass will have a tendency to move toward it because the three dimensional lattice would be less dense as it approached the surface of the large mass. Overall there would be less resistance to motion in the direction of the large mass, and the motion in this direction would be facilitated by the vibration of quintessence.

[0304] In general relativity the principle governing motion is the geodesic of least distance, this can be re-expressed using similar equations using least action. Furthermore, the concept of motion due to the vibrations of quintessence is more logically and experimentally compelling.

[0305] These observations can now be used to link general and special relativity. Thus as we approach the speed of light, the mass of an object travelling through the space-time lattice would approach infinity, directly because the number of quintessences passing through a body would increase with increasing velocity, hence the equation:

$$m' = m_0/(1-v^2/c^2)^{1/2} \quad (50)$$

or

$$m' = m_0/(1-v^2 [\mu_0 \epsilon_0])^{1/2} \quad (50a)$$

[0306] In turn this would generate increasing gravitons and accordingly this would explain the observed effects of special relativity. Time itself is due to passage through the space-time lattice, and where the space-time lattice is dispersed by gravitons, time and length are reduced with increasing velocity and hence increasing space-time lattice dispersion, similar to the way in which gravity alters space-time

[0307] As a result:

$$t' = t(1-v^2/c^2)^{1/2}, \; l' = l(1-v^2/c^2)^{1/2}$$

[0308] Thus resulting in the effects of special relativity.

[0309] Quintessence and Black Holes

[0310] To address the relationship of the space-time lattice to gravity directly, it is important to discuss the concept of quintessence with regard to general relativistic equations. The standard general relativistic equation for the apparent increase in radius (r) due to the curvature of space time around a gravitational object, which has also been previously derived from first principles (eq. 36), is:

$$r' = GM/3c^2 \quad (34)$$

[0311] This can also thus be written as:

$$3r' = GM[\mu_0 \epsilon_0] \quad (51)$$

[0312] This standard equation, is in keeping with the above observations. Specifically, as the mass increases, ϵ_0 increases, in turn the radius will appear to increase (relative to π).

[0313] The above observations now allow us to examine the effects with regard to the interior of black holes themselves. The event horizon would represent a critical density for quintessence, in which light could not escape. The Schwarzschild radius would now be given by:

$$R_s = 2GM[\mu_0 \epsilon_0]$$

[0314] The event horizon will occur at the point at which there is less resistance to circular motion than motion in a

straight or partially curved line. Given that π is proportional to $1/\epsilon_0$. The event horizon should occur when the permittivity has increased by a factor of π.

[0315] Effectively because the permittivity of free space rises, π decreases. This is entirely in keeping with general relativity which predicts the effective change in the ratio of the radius to the circumference as given by the conventional equation, where r', is again the apparent change in radius.

$$r=GM/3c^2$$

[0316] Hence π will effectively decrease as we approach the event horizon of a black hole, When π decreases to 1, the circular circumference is equal to the diameter and moreover, inside this limit it is shorter for light to travel in a circle. Thus light cannot escape the event horizon.

[0317] This can give us great insights into the workings of space-time, for flat Euclidean space the standard equation is:

$$e^{i\pi}=-1$$

[0318] In accordance with general relativity, the ratio of the radius to the circumference changes in a gravitational field, and effectively $\pi=1$, at the event horizon, thus the boundary condition for the shape of space-time at the event horizon now has the direct equation:

$$e^i$$

[0319] Within a black hole as the permittivity of space increases by a factor of 2π an object within it will complete two rotations rather than travel in a straight line. In effect exceeding the speed of light by 2π. Hence, the condition for space-time is represented by the equation:

$$e^{i/2}$$

[0320] Thus an increase in the permittivity of free space by a minimum factor of π, to produce a black hole is estimated to result from an increase in mass by a factor of approx. 10^6 (the ratio of the mass of the earth and that of a putative black hole).

[0321] Continuing with the subject of a black hole, according to the model inside the black hole, the gravitons produced by the matter present would be in equilibrium with the density of the space-time lattice. Increasing the rate of rotation of the matter in the black hole for instance would thus increase the production of gravitons and its effective mass and increase the radius of the event horizon. A density gradient of the space-time lattice would continue to exist within the black hole. Progressively closer to the center of a black hole matter itself would be increasingly compressed and the spherical structure of the quasi electron would be predicted to collapse. This collapse would result in the formation of an exotic form of matter in the form of pure quintessence in a black hole.

[0322] This pure quintessence would produce the singularity at the centre of the black hole. The larger the black hole in terms of mass the more pure quintessence would exist at its core.

[0323] Quintessence and the Big Bang

[0324] Quintessence theory not only predicts the occurrence of the Big Bang, but allows a prediction for the value of the entire mass of the Universe, from first principles.

[0325] In accordance with quintessence theory the big bang resulted from the explosion of an immense black hole singularity, which was constituted from pure quintessence.

[0326] On the basis of quintessence, there will be a critical mass for Big Bang event; thus if entire space-time between quintessence is compacted so that no further quintessence can be accommodated, the addition of further quintessence would destabilize the immense black hole, resulting in the Big Bang.

[0327] It is possible to predict this critical mass, using the radius of quintessence as a benchmark. Given the nine spatial parameters present in the metric tensor, used in general relativity we find that the actual formula for the radius of quintessence; r_q^2, is mathematically in agreement with general relativistic theory when:

$$9r_q^2=Gh/C^3 \tag{33}$$

[0328] This again supports the 9 dimensional view of space (so crucial in superstring theory). Moreover, the size of the vibrations of quintessence can thus be calculated as:

$$r_q=1.35\times10^{-35}\text{ m} \tag{33a}$$

[0329] The volume of each quintessence is thus:

$$4/3\pi r_q^3=1.0306\times10^{-104}\text{ m}^3 \tag{33b}$$

[0330] So to be accommodated within unit volume of space time, with no intervening apparent space time, (given that each of 9 overlapping quintessences are required) would require approx.

$$9\times10^{104}\text{ quintessences}$$

[0331] As the mass of quintessence is $m^q=h/c^2=7.373\times10^{-51}$ kg sec (eq. 1). Then the mass of the Universe, to two decimal places, is:

$$1.18\times10^{53}\text{ kg} \tag{33c}$$

[0332] This is in close agreement with a recent estimate of the mass of the Universe from COBE and other satellite data, which estimates the mass to be 100 trillion trillion trillion trillion tonnes (10^{53} kg)

[0333] Moreover, the early formation of the galaxies can be readily explained, it is likely that in such a big bang some very small black holes might have prevailed and that these formed the seeds of the galaxies we see today.

[0334] The event horizon, calculated from the Schwartzschild radius, of such an immense black hole is about 10^{26} m, which would have allowed Guth's inflationary component to the early expansion of the Universe.

[0335] In addition, inflation may result directly from the observation that once electrons have formed from the primordial soup of quintessence, they emit gravitons which in turn repel space time, which might also result in another cosmic inflationary cycle.

[0336] Most importantly quintessence theory explains the Big Bang from first principles and is capable of accurately predicting the mass of the Universe.

[0337] The Nature of Energy

[0338] These observations allow a fundamental understanding of energy. The quantum physical, minimum component of energy is Planck's constant; h. To define the minimal component of mass, using the standard energy equivalence formula; $E=mc^2$, such a minimal mass (m_q)

would be required to have the value equivalent to; $m_q=h/c^2$ (1). The total mass of a system (m) would then be; $m=m_q n_q$, where (n_q) is the number of these minimal units. Thence, the total energy of a system can be derived from the minimal energy; h, multiplied by the number of these energy units (n_q). Thus as, $E=mc^2$, then also $E=m_q n_q c^2$ and substituting $m_q=h/c^2$, the energy equivalence formula has the more logical formulation;

$$E=hn_q \qquad (1a)$$

[0339] Thus the energy of a system is equivalent to the minimal energy unit; h, multiplied by the number of those minimal energy units (n_q)

[0340] This leads directly to a deeper understanding of wave particle duality and the wave nature of matter.

[0341] This is encapsulated by the quintessential energy formulae

[0342] As conventionally $\beta \cdot E/c=p$, then

$$\lambda=h/p=hc/\beta E \qquad (2)$$

and

$$E=hn_q \qquad (1a)$$

then

$$\lambda=c/\beta n_q \qquad (2b)$$

[0343] Importantly, as indicated by equation (2b), energy having no quintessence; would have a wavelength of infinity. Specifically pure energy containing no quintessences, would have a lambda of infinity. According to quantum mechanics an infinite wavelength would result in the probability of that energy being anywhere. As energy itself has no electrical charge it would not be impeded by the permittivity and permeability of the three dimensional space-time lattice. Moreover, energy would not be detectable in three dimensional space-time, unless it interacted with matter, as in the EPR experiments. Indeed, energy is not observed when not bound to any form of mass or particle.

[0344] Thus equation 2b, takes us to our original assertion regarding the existence of pure energy.

[0345] Energy is not Bound by the Space-Time Lattice

[0346] Thus, as the EPR experiments suggest the existence of energy separate from matter and thus separate from the three dimensional space-time lattice, it is interesting to find that experiment suggests the existence of free energy in a continuum separate from space time and matter to produce the effects of quantum teleportation.

[0347] This is not, however, teleportation across an additional dimension, this is a term to describe in partially familiar terms the dissociation of energy from the three dimensional space-time lattice. As time is inextricably linked to each dimension of space, the effects of energy would be inextricably linked to the events, such as the creation of virtual particles, we see interacting within space-time. It is unlikely that observers have any direct day to day experience to explain quantum events. Nevertheless, quintessence theory may have given us a window into the hitherto hidden workings of the Universe. Thereby, the mystery of the uniformity of the Universe, across distances which the speed of light could not apparently traverse, is readily explained by the fact that the free energy contained in the Universe is not bound by the space-time lattice.

[0348] In the case of light, due to the exceedingly small masses involved, there would be relatively easy exchange of matter with free energy within a photon. This would make the photon the ideal experimental tool to look for energy which is not bound by matter and in turn energy which is not bound in space-time. Indeed, very recently Furusawa et al. have reported to have observed the transference of energy as photons from A to B, without those photons traversing space-time. This finding which has been supported using other experimental techniques, is very important as it suggests the existence of such free energy.

[0349] Overall, quintessence theory gives an a priori explanation for the concept of mass, the elementary particles, the forces of nature and quantum effects. It can equally be used logically to explain the inner physics of a black hole, the missing mass in the Galaxy, the expansion of the Universe, Guth's inflationary theory and predicts the Big Bang, from first principles.

[0350] Part IV: Applied Theory with the Intent to Create Closed Timelike Curves

[0351] Electron Bombardment of the Photosphere to Induce Gravitational Shift

[0352] Leveraging the above relationship between mass and quintessence we derive that if an electromagnetic radiation with velocity v strikes the event horizon singularity of rest inertial mass mi, and U is the electromagnetic energy absorbed by the singularity, then, according to Maxwell's prediction, a momentum q=U/v is transferred to it. Mass shift $d \cdot m_b$, dependent on the external electromagnetic energy, equals the inertial mass shift dependent on the increment of energy in the particle. Since in this case the inertial mass shift does not depend on velocity V, i.e., it is related only to the momentum q absorbed, it can be obtained by making p=0 in variation $\Delta H=H'-H=c[q^2+(m_i c)^2]^{1/2}-(m_i c)^2$ from the particles inertial Hamiltonian. Consequently, the expression of d_{m_p}, is written as:

$$d_{m_p} = \Delta H/c^2 = m_i \sqrt{1 + U/m_i c^2 \left[\varepsilon_r u_{r/2} \left\{ \sqrt{1 + d/w\varepsilon^2 + 1} \right\}^2 \right]} = 1$$

[0353] Comparing now the expression of m_i and m_g we have $m_g=m_i-2dm_b$. By replacing m_b in this equation, given by equation above, we obtain the expression of the correlation between gravitational mass and inertial mass, i.e.,

$$m_g = m_t - 2\sqrt{1 + U/m_t c^2 \left[\sqrt{\varepsilon_r u_{r/2} \{[d/we]^2 + 1\}^2 - 1} \right]} \cdot m_t$$

[0354] We see that only in the absence of electromagnetic radiation on the event horizon (U=0) is the gravitational mass equivalent to the inertial mass. Note that the electromagnetic characteristics, e, m and s do not refer to the singularity itself, but to the outside medium around the singularity (photosphere) in which the incident radiation is propagating.

[0355] Stable CTC Solution From Modified M-Theory

[0356] Our innovation is a method of creating an event where a dual membrane or dual boundary condition exists. We do this using generalization from a Misner space which has been modified if one analytically continues the maximal extended Misner Metric so that $ds^2=-du^2+dw^2+(dx^2)^2+(dx^3)^2$ to the Euclidean section so that u=iota zeta we obtain a Misner instanton on the section where w and zeta are both real. The Euclidean time, t, and the closed spacelike coordinate are both periodic, the later having a period of $2\Pi t^2$. Going back to the Lorentzian sector we find that the period of the closed coordinate becomes linearly dependent on the physical time. Using automorphic fields in the Hadamard function one can obtain a quantized condition for time. This gives us a figure on the order of the Plank time. This confines such a stable wormhole condition to the general area of the Plank scale in its modified form which is that area defined by the Membrane itself. As such, these Plank scale wormholes are the true source of the true virtual aspects of the vacuum and quintessence. The effects of the dual singularity system can be viewed as an overlap zone of two distinct space-times which have boundary conditions on both sides. As an object accelerates towards C it is this same boundary or horizon that object encounters when the Time defined horizon solution for the universe is imposed. At this point drawing upon Van Den Broeck's alterations for this space-time geometry to create a single closed Friedman-Robertson-Walker spacetime the space-time geometry can be represented by this equation $ds^2=dct^2-B^2[(dx-\beta fdct)^2]+dy^2+dz^2$ B can be any function that is large near the displacement device. We then consider this transformation as extended to four dimensional space-time with arbitrarily time dependent acceleration. We also present the device frame energy density T00 from a four dimensional calculation and note that the 4d classical calculation is everywhere finite.

[0357] Consider an Alcubierre interval given according to a remote frame's cylindrical coordinates by:

$$ds^2=(1-\beta^2f^2)dct^2+2bfdctdz-dz^2-dr^2-r^2df^2$$

where f is a function that is 1 at the location of the device and zero far from it.

[0358] Starting out with the first transformation z'=z−òct beta dct. Where b is first expressed here as a function of time ct. With some algebra for simplification this results in

$$ds^2=[1-\beta^2(1-f)^2]dct^2-2b(1-f)dctdz'-dz^2-dr^2-r^2df^2$$

Let g=1−f and this becomes

$$ds^2=[1-\beta^2g^2]dct^2-2bgdctdz'-dz'^2-dr^2-r^2df^2$$

[0359] Notice that this returned the original intervals form with a reversal on the sign of b and a reversal of the boundary conditions for g. Now we notice that at r=0, this interval becomes the interval for special relativity transformed to cylindrical coordinates. Thus, we have found a transformation to a frame based local to the device. One can also verify that in these coordinates the relevant affine connections vanish at r=0. a further proposed modification to this field we will reintroduce a time dilation term into the devices frame's interval. Only we will use different boundary conditions for it. We will keep A=1 both at the location of the device, and far from it, but allow it to become large in the warped region. This is achieved by the simplest means possible in the proposed field generation method. Since rotating kerr singularity under bombardment would produce

an equal negative energy region. With the effect focused outward away from the device slightly by the relative alignment of the kerr singularity the actual inward going portion of such fields would overlap and cancel their effect out in the region of the device. This yields a space normal time region, which is again restored at the fringes of the outward going field. From the standpoint of a geometric picture of space-time around the device and extending outwards one has actually created a dual event horizon situation as far as time goes. The inner one is the shell of the canceled out field inside of which normal time flow is restored. The outer one is formed at the boundary where normal time resumes and within which we have a negative energy field.

SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0360] The present invention is A method for the generation of a pseudo 2+1 dimensional anti-de Sitter space (DeDeo & Gott 2002) using two Kerr type positively charged rotating dilation singularities where one singularity is maintained as a axis of rotation or "reference" singularity, and the other "target" singularity is subjected to a differential electron flow so as to simultaneously pass above the photosphere of said singularity in its direction of rotation—prograde orbit—and contrary to its direction of rotation—retrograde orbit—to release a directed flow of gravitons in a sinusoidal oscillation simulating a rotational effect of the "target" singularity around the axis of rotation provided by the "reference" singularity, resulting in the creation of timelike curves in a compact time-oriented manifold permitting topology change from one spacelike boundary to the other in accordance with Geroch's theorem (Geroch 1967) which results in a method for the formation of G odel-type geodesically complete spacetime envelopes complete with closed timelike curves.

BRIEF DESCRIPTION OF THE DRAWINGS

[0361] FIG. 1 is a schematic representation of the mechanism employed to house the components necessary to generate a 2+1 dimensional anti-de Sitter space, resulting in the creation of timelike curves in a compact time-oriented manifold

[0362] FIG. 2 is a schematic representation of the G odel-type geodesically complete spacetime envelope created by the mechanism complete with closed timelike curves

DETAILED DESCRIPTION OF THE INVENTION

[0363] Principles of Gravity Distortion Time Displacement Systems

[0364] The theoretical understanding of quantum gravity allows the design of time displacement systems from first principles. It is unlikely that gravitons or Kerr singularities can be controlled in a precise way using current technology. Nevertheless, an understanding of three dimensional space-time and matter, does allow the design of elementary displacement systems. That is, systems whose displacement rely on direct warping space-time as opposed to the ejection of material to provide thrust resulting in time dilational effects.

[0365] The background for these systems are already partially understood and quintessence theory allows their

further development. For this invention, the formation of black holes in the laboratory represents a crucial step in understanding the mechanisms that underlay gravitational physics and in turn the warping of space-time. The existence of black holes permits the localized application of the Axial torsion Spin-Rotation Coupling Effect (Zhang & Beesham 2002) resulting in a Rotating Frame with Relativistic Factor (Zhang 2003) which can be used in the creation of a Alcubierre space time bubble under the Van Den Broeck modification of the Alcubierre geometry (Van Den Broeck 1999) resulting in a method for the generation of a pseudo 2+1 dimensional anti-de Sitter space (DeDeo & Gott 2002) using two Kerr type positively charged rotating dilation singularities where one singularity is maintained as a axis of rotation or "reference" singularity, and the other "target" singularity is subjected to a differential electron flow so as to simultaneously pass above the photosphere of said singularity in its direction of rotation and contrary to its direction of rotation to release a directed flow of gravitons in a sinusoidal oscillation simulating a rotational effect of the "target" singularity around the axis of rotation provided by the "reference" singularity. In this instance the space-time lattice would be repelled by gravitons in such a way as to disperse space-time quintessence in a circular fashion around each of the singularities, producing multiple event horizons around the simulated axis of rotation provided by the reference singularity.

[0366] The release of gravitons from the target singularity is controlled by differentially governing the electron flow across the photosphere with the use of powerful electric currents. In turn the differential direction of flow across the photosphere of gravitons would determine the direction of motion through the space time lattice and the resulting time displacement from one spacelike boundary to the other in accordance with Geroch's theorem (Geroch 1967) when implementing this approach it is important to remember that the black hole is not excited by the smashing of the clump as it "hits" the horizon. The hole is rather excited when the metric perturbation associated with the clump is "felt" by the background metric. The excitation event therefore constitutes a smooth process whereby in-fall of a clump from .rmb and through r+ serves as a source in the Teukolsky (1973) equation for small perturbations to the Kerr geometry (with appropriate boundary conditions at r+ and r∞). This is an important distinction with a great deal of relevance to the practical engineering of the displacement unit since we need to gauge the "driving" of QNR modes in terms of an e_ective coupling from clump in-fall.

[0367] What results is a method for resonant driving of the quasi-normal ringing (QNR) wave modes of the Kerr geometry of the target singularity. The micro black hole hyper-accreting at rates ÿ M. 1 M□sec. 1 from a neutrino cooled disk is pushed through to oscillate near resonance of its (l,m=2, 2) quadrupole QNR frequency due to the in-fall of compact mass over-densities from the cusp in e_ective potential on a dynamical time scale. This mode is induced via induced magneto-rotationally induced fluid dynamics in the ultra-relativistic region of the flow bounded from below by the marginally bound orbit radius: rmb If the QNR modes are fed resonantly for a few seconds of hyper-accretion, the enhanced amplitude of the oscillations yields a very high rate of energy deposition into gravitational waves. Indeed, the integrated energy deposition is large enough to "evaporate" the equivalent of a factor of a few times the total rest

mass-energy of a single clump into gravitational waves, which in turn interact with the reference singularity

[0368] Application of the method described in the previous section results in translation outside of the cosmological horizon, where F(R)<0. The topology of the resulting geodesic, for large constant R, is mathematically equivalent to a Euclidean cylinder of the condition R×Sn where T is the coordinate along the cylinder. I± are located outside the future/past cosmological horizons, where R is timelike and T is spacelike. In the case of a rotating Kerr black hole, there are two circular photon orbits that can exist in the equatorial plane and be exploited to create a tipler sinusoid. One is a prograde orbit moving in the same direction as the black hole's rotation, while the other is a retrograde orbit moving against the black hole's rotation. Their radii are respectively given by

$$r1=2M(1+Cos(2/3 \ arccos(-|\alpha|/M)))$$

$$r2=2M(1+Cos(2/3 \ arccos(|\alpha|/M)))$$

where a is the angular momentum per unit mass of the black hole. The orbits fall in the range M greater or equal to r1 greater or equal to 3M greater or equal to r2 greater or equal to 4M The fact that a prograde photon or in or case cooper pair with Bose characteristics orbits the black hole at a smaller radius than a retrograde one can be attributed to the well-known Lense-Thirring effect, i.e., the dragging of inertial frames due to the black hole's rotation which we control and influence via electromagnetic induced load coupling with the open magnetic field lines threading the BH horizon. This dragging would cause charged cooper pairs to revolve around the black hole relative to a static observer at infinity. Thus, to such an observer, a prograde cooper pair would have to orbit at a smaller radius to compensate for the 'extra' angular momentum acquired, while a retrograde one would have to orbit at a larger radius to compensate for the 'lost' angular momentum. Indeed, in the limit of zero rotation, these two orbits coincide at r D 3M, giving the single circular orbit of the Schwarzschild black hole. Now, recall that orbits around the Schwarzschild black hole are necessarily confined to a plane passing through its center, because of the spherical symmetry of the space-time. However, the Kerr black hole space-time has only an axial symmetry (in addition to being stationary), and this raises the possibility of non-planar orbits. One could, for example, contemplate the existence of spherical Boseon orbits—orbits with constant coordinate radii that are not necessarily confined to the equatorial plane—around the Kerr black hole. Such orbits would be a nontrivial generalization of the two circular photon orbits that lie in the equatorial plane. At first it may seem a little surprising that such spherical orbits could even exist, but there is an interesting reason as to why they are possible. Note that an object in a spherical orbit would, in addition to moving around the black hole in the azimuthal direction, be undergoing some periodic motion in the latitudinal direction. This is only possible if there is a conserved quantity associated with motion in this direction, just as angular momentum is necessarily conserved by its rotational motion in the azimuthal direction. (This result can be seen, for example, using action-angle variable) Now, because the Kerr space-time has only axial symmetry, geodesics in it should have only two constants of motion, namely energy and angular momentum. However, Carter discovered the remarkable fact that geodesics in the Kerr space-time possess a third constant of motion. It turns out that Carter's new

constant governs the motion of geodesics in the latitudinal direction, although it is not related to any obvious space-time symmetry. Thus, spherical timelike orbits, which assume eigenlike properties around the Kerr black hole, are possible and when coupled with charged Bosons may be exploited to manipulate the relative event horizons of the "target" singularity. The location and the temperature of the modified event horizon depend on the time, charge and angle of incidence of the cooper pairs. The Fermionic spectrum of Dirac particles displays a spin-rotation coupling effect due to the interaction between the particles with spin-1=2 and the black holes with rotation. The effects arise from the inter-action between the spin of Dirac particles and the rotation of the evaporating black holes. The feature of this spin-rotation coupling effect is its dependence on different helicity states of coupled particles with spin-½ and its irrelevance to the mass of particles.

[0369] In order to design a mechanism for time displace-ment exploiting the Carter asymmettry cited above we utilize two positively charged top spin rotating kerr type black holes aligned on demand to create a simulated rotational effect around a central axis provided by the "reference" singularity. In the case of the Kerr blackhole (singularity), this is accomplished by an inverse Blandford-Znajek (BZ) process utilizing the magnetic flux of open field lines connecting the horizon and an induced remote load. (Ding-Xiong Wang, Kan Xiao & Wei-Hua Lei, 2001) permitting the microscopic blackhole (singularity) to be rotated along its horizontal axis in at relativistic centrifugational speeds. A differential current is then applied in such a way as to pass through the entire photosphere in the desired direction. As a result the gravity field can be manipulated by three factors that affect it in distinct ways. Adding electric charge to the singularities increases the diameter of the inner event hori-zons. Adding mass to the singularities increases the area of gravitational influence around the singularities. Rotating and positioning the polar axis of the singularities affects and alters the resulting gravity sinusoid

[0370] In order to create a sinusoid capable of inducing a topology change from one spacelike boundary to the other in accordance with Geroch's theorem The electric charge in the upper half of the photosphere would be maximised. The electrons will have a vector in the left to right direction as the singularity spins clockwise. If a maximised current is applied to the singularity in the same direction this will result in a increase in the velocity of the electrons relative to the centre of gravity of the singularity, due to the flow of current. In turn, according special relativity and to the space-time lattice model, this wilt result in an increase in the relativistic mass if the electrons and in turn by general relativity an increase in the release of gravitons.

[0371] Conversely in the lower half of the singularity the electrons will have a vector of motion in the right to left direction due to the spin of the singularity. This will be relativistically slowed by the differential current applied in the same direction as the current above, and hence in the opposite direction to the direction of rotation. The charge can be separately applied and adjusted to ensure that the electrons are relativistically stationary relative to the centre of gravity. In turn this will minimize the relativistic mass and result in a decrease in the release of gravitons for the lower half of the singularity.

[0372] The overall result will be a greater release of gravitons in one direction and a lesser release of gravitons in the converse direction. The effect will be enhanced by the use of a multi-phasic current simultaneously applied. This will result in the release of multi-phasic gravitons which will disperse space time in the singularity with increase in density in the converse this effect can also be produced and supplemented with the use radio frequency pulses, The radio frequency pulses must be designed to produce a change in the spin of the particle to enhance the release of gravitons in the desired direction

[0373] With the use of large currents the drift velocity of the electrons across the photosphere could be greatly increased. Within this region the electrical resistance is virtually eliminated. Thereby allowing large currents to be induced with minimum total power output.

[0374] The result is the production of cooper paired elec-trons of high speed and hence high relativistic mass in the desired half of the singularity, whilst producing low speed and thus low mass paired electrons at the converse of the singularity, in accordance with special relativity. The imbal-ance in the rotating singularity will be continuously present creating a dynamic warping of space-time. In effect, the differential current flow, will produce differential graviton production and in turn, by general relativity, the warping of space-time

[0375] As the cooper pairs cross the photosphere, accre-tion of the Bose particles results. Near-hole accretion across the target singularity is then motivated by magneto-rotation-ally induced, ultra-relativistic disk dynamics in the region of the flow bounded from below by the marginally bound geodesic radius rmb. As the particles impelled have high spin values, a largely coherent magnetic field in this region has the dynamical implication of compact mass segregation at the displacement nodes of the non-axisymmetric, MRI modes. This results in prolific gravitational wave emission coincident with the gamma-ray stage. The gravitational wave emissions are then manipulated to influence the ref-erence singularity to produce a variable gravitational sinu-soid which is then used to mathematically approximate the gravametric distortion, inducing a topology change from one spacelike boundary to the other in accordance with Geroch's theorem.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

[0376] Mesoscopic behaviour of the neutral Fermi gas ^{3}He confined in quantum wires. S. L. Phillipson, A. M. Genault, S. N Fisher, G. R. Pickett, P. J. Y Thibault. Nature, 395: 578-580.

[0377] Direct Observation of d-orbital Holes and Cu—Cu Bonding in Cu_2. J. M. Zuo et al. Nature 401: 49-52.

[0378] The Foundation of the General Theory of Relativ-ity, A Einstein. Translated from "Die Grundlage der Allgemeinen Relativittstheorie". Annalen der Physik, 49, 1916. Published in, Einstein, The Principle of Relativity, Dover publications, 1952.

[0379] Sidelights on Relativity. Ether and the Theory of Relativity Albert Einstein. Dover Publications 1983.

[0380] Inflation is dead long live inflation. George Musser. Scientific American, July 1998, p 9.

[0381] The flip side of the Universe. George Musser. Scientific American, September 1998, p 13.

[0382] The Fifth Element, Marcus Chown. New Scientist, Apr. 3, 1999, pp 29-32

[0383] The Quantum Universe. Tony Hey and Patrick Walters. Cambridge University Press 1987. (Solving the Shrodinger equation pp. 165-167).

[0384] Complex Numbers, Mathematics for Engineers. W. Bolton; Longman Scientific & Technical; Chap. Introducing Complex Numbers, p 1-11.

[0385] Unconditional Quantum Teleportation. A. Furusawa, I. Sorensen, S. L. Braunstein, C. A. Fuchs, H. J Kimble, E. S. Polzik. Science, Oct. 23, 1998. Vol. 282: 706-709.

[0386] Complete quantum teleportation using nuclear magnetic resonance. M. A. Neilsen, E. Knill, R. Laflamme. Nature, Nov. 5, 1998. Vol. 396: 52-55.

[0387] Experimental quantum teleportation. D. Bouwmeester et al. Nature, 390: 575-579 (1997).

[0388] Experimental realization of teleporting an unknown pure quantum state via dual classical and Einstein-Podolski-Rosen channels. D. Boschi, S. Branca, F. De Martini, L. Hardy, S. Popescu. Phys. Rev. Lett. 80: 1121-1125 (1998).

[0389] W. Tittel, J. Brendel, H. Zhuniden, N. Gisin, Phys. Rev. Lett. 81: 3563-3566. (1998) into the Vortex. Charles Seife. New Scientist, Oct. 24, 1998. p 7.

[0390] Direct observation of a fractional charge. R de Picciotto, M Reznikov, M. Heibium, V Umansky, G. Bunin, D. Mahalu. Nature, 389: 162-164.

[0391] Tables of Physical and Chemical Constants. Kay & Laby. Longman Scientific & Technical.

[0392] Physics in Focus. Michael Brimicombe. Section, Wave Mechanics; p 521. Nelson Special Relativity. A. P. French. Nelson. Chapter 8, Special Relativity and Electricity, pp 256.

[0393] Universe In Balance. Jeff Peterson. New Scientist, 168: p 27

[0394] The Accelerating Universe. Mario Livio. John Wiley and Sons, Inc. (2000)

[0395] Escape from Earth, Charles Seife, New Scientist, Feb. 6, 1999. p 6.

[0396] The Discovery of the Top Quark. Tony Liss and Paul Tipton. Scientific American; September 1997, pp. 26-41.

[0397] The Mystery of the Nucleon Spin. Klaus Rith and Andreas Schaifer. Scientific American: July 1999, pp 42-47.

[0398] And you're glue. Frank Wilczek. Nature; 400, pp 21-23.

[0399] The warp drive: hyper-fast travel within general relativity Miguel Alcubierre —Classical and Quantum Gravity, vol. 11, L73-L77, (1994)

[0400] Photon propagation in a stationary warp drive space-time: Claes R. Cramer (1995)

[0401] Some thoughts on the Implications of Faster-Than-Light Interstellar Space Travel: I. A. Crawford, Quarterly Journal of the Royal Astronomical Society, vol. 36, 205-218, (1995)

[0402] Physical and Cosmological Implications of a Possible Class of Particles Able to Travel Faster than Light: Luis Gonzalez-Mestres: Contribution to the 28th International Conference on High Energy Physics, Warsaw (Poland), (1996)

[0403] Warp drive and causality: Allen E. Everett, Physical Review D, vol. 53, 7365-7368, (1996)

[0404] A Superluminal Subway: The Krasnikov Tube, Allen E. Everett & Thomas A. Roman, Physical Review D, vol. 56, 2100-2108, (1997)

[0405] Quantum effects in the Alcubierre warp drive spacetime, William A. Hiscock, Classical and Quantum Gravity, vol. 14, L183-L188 (1997)

[0406] The unphysical nature of "Warp Drive", Michael J. Pfenning & L. H. Ford; Classical and Quantum Gravity, vol. 14, 1743-1751, (1997)

[0407] On the Possibility of a Propulsion Drive Creation Through a Local Manipulation of Spacetime Geometry; Vesselin Petkov; Presented at the 34th

[0408] AIAA/ASME/SAE/ASEE Joint Propulsion Conference, (1998)

[0409] 'Operational' energy conditions, Adam D. Helfer; Classical and Quantum Gravity, vol. 15, 1169-1183, (1998)

[0410] No warp drive; D. H. Coule; Classical and Quantum Gravity, vol. 15, 2523-2527, (1998)

[0411] Quantum Inequality Restrictions on Negative Energy Densities in Curved Spacetimes, Michael John Pfenning; Doctoral Dissertation, (1998)

[0412] Hyperfast Interstellar Travel in General Relativity; S. V. Krasnikov; Physical Review D, vol. 57, 4760, (1998)

[0413] Superluminal travel requires negative energies; Ken D. Olum; Physical Review Letters, vol. 81, 3567-3570, (1998)

[0414] Hyper-fast travel without negative energy, Eric Baird; (1999)

[0415] Warp drives, wavefronts and superluminality, Eric Baird; (1999)

[0416] A traversable wormhole, S. Krasnikov; (1999)

[0417] Speed Limits in General Relativity; Robert J. Low; Classical and Quantum Gravity, vol. 16, 543-549, (1999)

[0418] Null geodesics in the Alcubierre warp drive spacetime: the view from the bridge; Chad Clark, William A. Hiscock & Shane L. Larson; Classical and Quantum Gravity, vol. 16, 3965-3972, (1999)

[0419] A 'warp drive' with more reasonable total energy; Chris Van Den Broeck; Classical and Quantum Gravity, vol. 16, 3973-3979, (1999)

[0420] On the warp drive space-time, Pedro F. Gonzalez-Diaz; Physical Review D, vol. 62, 44005-44012, (2000)

[0421]   On the (im)possibility of warp bubbles; Chris Van Den Broeck; Summary of talk delivered at STAIF-2000, (2000)

[0422]   Reduced Total Energy Requirements for a Modified Alcubierre Warp Drive Spacetime; F. Loup, D. Waite & E. Halerewicz Jr. (2001)

[0423]   Warp Drive With Zero Expansion, Jose Natario; Classical and Quantum Gravity, vol. 19, 1157-1166, (2002)

[0424]   A Causally Connected Superluminal Warp Drive Spacetime; F. Loup, R. Held, D. Waite, E. Halerewicz, Jr., M. Stabno, M. Kuntzman & R. Sims, (2002)

[0425]   Weak Energy Condition Violation and Superluminal Travel; Francisco Lobo & Paulo Crawford (2002)

[0426]   On the Problems of Hazardous Matter and Radiation at Faster than Light Speeds in the Warp Drive Space-Time; C. B. Hart, R. Held, P. K. Hoiland, S. Jenks, F. Loup, D. Martins, J. Nyman, J. P. Pertierra, P. A. Santos, M. A. Shore, R. Sims, M. Stabno & T. O. M. Teage, (2002)

[0427]   2+1 gravity, chaos and time machines; Bengtsson I and Brannlund J, J. Math. Phys. 42 (2001) 3565

[0428]   Time Travel in Einstein's Universe: the Physical Possibilities of Travel through Time, Gott J R; Houghton Mifflin Company, Boston, 2001

[0429]   Gravitational memory of natural wormholes, Anchordoqui L A Trobo M L Vucetich H Zyserman F Mod Phys Lett A 15(6): 429-438, 2000

[0430]   A traversable singularity-free wormhole. The gravitational memory phenomenon Gott time machines, BTZ black hole formation, and Choptuik scaling, Birmingham D, Sen S; Phys Rev Left 84 (2000) 1074-1077

[It is shown that the Gott time machine provides a mechanism for black hole formation]

[0431]   Negative energy, wormholes and warp drive, Ford L H, Roman, T A; Sci Am: 46-53, 2000 Jan (reply: 2000 May p. 12)

[0432]   Warp drive space-time; Gonzalez-Diaz P F; Phys Rev D62: 044005 (2000)

[0433]   Misner-brane cosmology, Gonzalez-Diaz P F; Phys Lett B486: 158-164 (2000)

[0434]   Kinks, energy conditions and closed timelike curves; Gonzalez-Diaz P F; Int J Mod Phys D 9(5): 531-541, 2000. (gr-qc/0007065)

[0435]   Will we travel back (or forward) in time? Gott J R; Time, Apr. 10, 2000 pp 68-70

[0436]   Charged universes of the Godel type with closed timelike curves; Klepac P and Horsky J, Class Quant Grav 17(13): 2547-2555, 2000

[0437]   The Ori-Soen time machine, Olum K D; Phys Rev D61 (2000) 124022

[0438]   How much energy do closed timelike curves in 2+1 spacetimes need?, Tiglio M H, Phys Rev D61 (2000) 08 1503

[0439]   Energy conditions and their cosmological consequences, Visser M and Barcelo C gr-qc/0001099

[0440]   Cylindrically symmetric spinning Brans-Dicke spacetimes with closed timelike curves Anchordoqui L A, Perez Bergliaffa S E, Trobo M L, Birman G S; Mod Phys Lett A14 (1999): 1105-1112

[0441]   From spinning to non-spinning cosmic string spacetime; De Lorenci V A De Paola R DM Svaiter N F, Class Quant Grav 16(10): 3047-3055, 1999

[0442]   Bounds on negative energy densities in static space-times, Fewster C J, Teo E; Phys Rev D 5910(10): 4016, 1999

[0443]   Decohering a charged scalar field in a time-machine wormhole background, Flagga M SN; Int J Theor Phys 38(8): 2121-2161, 1999

[0444]   Rotating black holes in unified theories; Gibbons G W. Progress of Theoretical Physics Supplement. (136): 18-28, 1999

[0445]   Supersymmetric rotating black holes and causality violation; Gibbons G W and Herdeiro C AR, Class Quant Grav 16 (11) 3619-3652, 1999

[0446]   Perdurance of multiply connected de Sitter space; Gonzalez-Diaz P F, Phys Rev D 59, 1999, 123513

[0447]   Nonorientable spacetime tunneling; Gonzalez-Diaz P F, Garay L J, Phys Rev D 59 (1999) 064026

[0448]   Can the universe create itself?; Gott J R, and Li X L, Phys Rev D 58, 1998, 023501. Also: astro-ph/9712344

[0449]   Supersymmetric rotating black holes and causality violation; Holst S, Matschull H-J Class Quant Grav 16, 1999, 3095

[0450]   Godel-type universes in string-inspired charged gravity; Kanti P, Vayonakis C E, Phys Rev D 60, 1999, 103519

[0451]   Quantum field theory and time machines; Krasnikov S., Phys Rev D 59: 4010, 1999 Jan 14 Dec. 1998

[0452]   Time machines constructed from anti-de Sitter space; Li L X, Phys Rev D 59 (1999) 084016

[0453]   Wormholes in string theory, Vollick D N., Class Quant Grav 16(5):1599-1604, 1999

[0454]   Time machines and the breakdown of unitarity; Antonsen F and Bormann K, Int J Theor Phys 37(9): 2383-2393, 1998

[0455]   An exterior for the Godel spacetime; Bonnor W B, Santos N O, MacCallum M A H, Class. Quant. Grav. 15 (1998) 357-366

[0456]   All the worlds a time machine, Chown M, New Scientist 157(2124): 38-41, 1998 Mar. 7.

[short exposition of M. Hadleys idea that an elementary particle is a local ST warp that it permits closed timelike curves. Hence general relativity could reproduce (explain) the effects of QM]

[0457]   Quantum time machine; Gonzalez-Diaz P F Phys Rev D 58 (12): 4011, 1998

[0458] A design for a quantum time machine, Gray A quant-ph/9804008

{misleading title. On QM measurement problem; quantum "seeing into future."}

[0459] Time machines with non-compactly generated cauchy horizons and "handy singularities"; Krasnikov S V, gr-qc/9711040 (To appear in the proceedings of the 8th Marcel Grossman Conference)

[0460] A singularity-free WEC-respecting time machine, Krasnikov S V, Class Quant Grav 15 (1998) 997-1003

[0461] Self-consistent vacuum for Misner space and the chronology protection conjecture, Li L X and Gott J R, Phys Rev Lett 80, 2980, 1998

{Misner space stable to quantum flutuations; against CPC}

[0462] Decoherence caused by topology in a time-machine spacetime; Mensky M B and Novikov I D, Int. J. Mod. Phys. D5 (1996) 1-27

[0463] Godel metric as a squashed anti-de Sitter geometry, Rooman M, Spindel Ph, Class Quant Grav 15 (1998) 3241-3249

[0464] Testing causality violation on spacetimes with closed timelike curves; Rosenberg S, Phys Rev D 57(6):3365-3377, 1998

{politzer TM used to investigate the scattering experiment; interesting results on agreement with the no CTC case if there is enough TM's}

[0465] A new non-Hausdorff spacetime model for resolution of the time travel paradoxes; Sharlow M F Annals of Physics 263(2): 179-197, 1998

[0466] Particle creation near the chronology horizon; Sushkov S V, Phys Rev D 58, 1998, 044006

[0467] Divergences in the effective action of acausal spacetimes, Cassidy M J, Class Quant Grav 14 p 523, 1997 {shows that a self-consistent quantum vacuum for Misner space exist, allowing time travel}

[0468] The 1-loop instability of Misner space; Cassidy M J, Class Quant Grav 15 (8),

[0469] Superluminal subway—the Krasnikov tube; Everett A E and Roman T A, Phys Rev D 56 (4): 2100-2108, 1997

[0470] Time machines and the principle of self-consistency as a consequence of the principle of stationary action (ii)—the Cauchy problem for a self-interacting relativistic particle, Carlini A and Novikov I D, Int J Mod Phys D 5(5): 445-479, 1996 Oct.

[0471] Warp drive and causality, Everett A E, Phys Rev D 53 (12) pp 7365-7368, 1996 Ringholes and closed timelike curves, Gonzalez-Diaz P F Phys Rev D 54(10): 6122-6131, 1996

[0472] Time machine as four-dimensional wormhole; Guts A K gr-qc/9612064

[0473] Gott time machines in the Anti-de Sitter space; Holst S, Gen Rel Grav 28 (1996) 387-403

[0474] The quantum stability of the time machine, Krasnikov S V, Phys Rev D54 (1996) 7322-7327

[0475] Must time machine be unstable against vacuum fluctuations?, Li L X, Class Quant Grav 13 (1996) 2563-2568

[0476] Three-dimensional billiards with time machine, Mensky M B and Novikov I D, Int J Mod Phys D 5(2): 179-192, 1996

[0477] Decoherence caused by topology in a time-machine spacetime, Mensky M B and Novikov I D, Int J Mod Phys D 5(1): 1-27, 1996.

[0478] Improved time-machine model; Soen Y and Ori A, Phys Rev D 54(8): 4858-4861,

[0479] Unitarity restoration in the presence of closed timelike curves; Anderson A, Phys Rev D51 (1995) 5707-5715

[0480] Problems in time-machine construction due to wormhole evolution; Antonsen F and Bormann K, Int J Theor Phys 34 1995, p 2061

[0481] Time machines: the principle of self-consistency as a consequence of the principle of minimal action; Carlini A, Frolov V P, Mensky M B, Novikov I D, and Soleng H H, Int J Mod Phys D4 (1995) 557-580; Erratum-ibid. D5 (1996) 99

[0482] Nonlinearity in quantum theory and closed timelike curves; Cassidy M J, Phys Rev D52 (1995) 5676-5680

[0483] Unitarity of Quantum Theory and Closed Time-Like Curves; Fewster C J, Wells C G, Phys Rev D52 (1995) 5773-5782

[0484] Time machines without closed causal geodesics; Low R J, Class Quant Grav 12(5): L 37-L 38, 1995 May.

[0485] A remark on kinks and time machines; Yurtsever U, Gen Rel Grav 27(6): 691-693, 1995

[0486] The warp drive: hyper-fast travel within general relativity; Alcubierre M, Class Quantum Grav 11, L73 (1994)

[0487] Energy-momentum restrictions on the creation of Gott time machines; Carroll S M, Farhi E, Guth A H and Olum K D, Phys Rev D 50 pp 6190-6206, 1994

[0488] Kinks and time machines; Chamblin A, Gibbons G W and Steif A R, Phys Rev D 50(4) pp R2353-R2355, 1994

[0489] The breakdown of quantum mechanics in the presence of time machine, Goldwirth D S, Perry M J and Piran T, Gen Rel Grav 25 pp 7-13 1994

[0490] Quantum propagator for a nonrelativistic particle in the vicinity of a time machine; Goldwirth D S, Perry M J, Piran T and Thorne K S, Phys Rev D 49(8): 3951-3957, 1994

[0491] Time machine, self-consistency and the foundations of quantum mechanics; Gonella F, Found Phys Lett 7(2): 161-166, 1994

[0492] Time walk through the quantum cosmic string; Gonzalez-Diaz P F, gr-qc/9412034

[0493] Unitarity and causality in generalized quantum mechanics for nonchronal spacetimes; Hartle J B, Phys Rev D 49 (12) pp 6543-6555, 1994

[0494] (2+1)-dimensional spacetimes containing closed timelike curves; Headrick M P, Gott J R; Phys Rev D 50, 1994, 7244-7259

[0495] Time travel, Jackiw R.; Ukrainskii Fizicheskii Zhurnal. 39(1): 6-14, 1994.

[0496] On the classical stability of a time machine; Krasnikov S V, Class Quant Grav 11 (11): 2755-2759, 1994 Nov.

[0497] Isometries between Gott's two-string spacetime and Grant's generalization of Misner space, Laurence D, Phys Rev D 50 pp 4957-4965

[0498] Negative Energy Densities in Extended Sources Generating Closed Timelike Curves in General Relativity with and without Torsion; Soleng H H, Phys Rev D49 (1994) 1124-1125

[0499] Multiparticle solutions in 2+1 gravity and time machines; Steif A R, Int J Mod Phys D 3(1): 277-280, 1994

[0500] VanVleck determinants—traversable wormhole spacetimes; Visser M

[0501] Algebraic approach to quantum field theory on non-globally-hyperbolic spacetimes; Yurtsever U, Class Quant Grav 11 (1994) 999

[0502] Cosmic strings and chronology protection; Grant J DE, Phys Rev D 47, 2388 (1993)

[0503] Complex geometry, quantum tunneling, and time machines; Li L X, Xu J M and Liu L, Phys Rev D 48(10): 4735-4737, 1993

[0504] Quantum field theory in spaces with closed timelike curves; Boulware D G, Phys Rev D46 (1992) 4421-4441

[0505] Global structure of Gott's two-string spacetime; Cutler C, Phys Rev D 45 p. 487-494, 1992 {Cauchy horizons for Gott's machine (two-string space-time)}

[0506] "Cosmic flashing" in four dimensions; Ford L H and Roman T A, Phys Rev D 46, 1328-1339 (1992)

[0507] Unitarity of interacting fields in curved spacetime; Friedman J L Papastamatiou, Phys Rev D 46 4442, 1992

[0508] Failure of unitarity for interacting fields on spacetimes with closed timelike curves; Friedman J L Papastamatiou, and Simon J Z, Phys Rev D 46 4456-4469, 1992

[0509] Particle creation for time travel through a wormhole; Kim S W, Phys Rev D 46 2428-2434, 1992

[0510] Time machine and self-consistent evolution in problems with self-interaction; Novikov I D, Phys Rev D 45 p. 1989, 1992

[0511] Structure of the singularity inside a realistic rotating black hole, Phys Rev Lett} 68, 2117-2120; Ori A (1992)

[0512] Simple quantum systems in spacetimes with closed timelike curves; Politzer H D, Phys Rev D 46 4470-4476, 1992

[0513] Quantum mechanics near closed timelike lines; Deutsch D, Phys Rev D 44 (10) p 3197-3217 1991

[0514] Billiard balls in wormhole spacetime with closed timelike curves: Classical theory; Echeverria F, Klinkhammer G and Thorne K S, Phys Rev D 44 (4) p. 1077-1099, 1991

[0515] Closed timelike curves produced by pairs of moving cosmic strings: Exact solutions; Gott J R, Phys Rev Left 66, 1126, (1991)

[0516] Inner structure of a charged black hole: An exact mass-inflation solution; Ori A, Rev Left 67: 789, 1991

[0517] On the outcome of Kerr-like collapse; Charlton N and Clarke C J S, Classical and Quantum Gravity 7 No. 5 (May 1990)

[0518] Cauchy problem in spacetimes with closed timelike curves; Friedman J, Morris M S, Novikov I D, Echeverria F, Klinkhammer G, Thorne K S and Yurtsever U, Phys Rev D 42 (6) 1915-1930, 1990 {QM fixes the TM classical billiard paradox (Polchinski's prdx. "CTC's may be not as nasty as people have assumed". The principle of self-consistency in time travel reviewed.}

[0519] Traversable wormholes from surgically modified Schwarzschild spacetimes, Visser M, Nucl Phys B 328 pp 203-212

[0520] Traversable wormholes: some simple examples; Visser M; Phys Rev D 39: 3182-3184 1989

[0521] Minimal acceleration requirements for time travel in Godel spacetime; Malament D, Journal of Mathematical Physics 26, 1985, p 774-777

[0522] Timelike nongeodesic trajectories which violate causality: A rigorous derivation; de Felice F, Nuovo Cimento 65 B pp 224-232, 1981

[0523] Rotating cylinders and the possibility of global causality violation; Tipler F J, Phys Rev D 9 pp 2203-2206, 1974

[0524] Global structure of the Kerr family of gravitational fields, Carter B, Phys Rev 174, p 1559, 1968

[0525] Complete analytic extension of the symmetry axis of Kerr's solution of Einstein's equations, Carter B, Phys Rev 141, p 1242, 1966

[0526] Acta Physica Polonica, Staruszkiewicz A 24 1963, p 734

[0527] An example of a new type of cosmological solutions of Einstein's field equations of gravitation, Goedel K, Rev Mod Phys 21 p. 447, 1949

[0528] Gravitational field of a distribution of particles rotating about an axis of symmetry; Van Stockum W J, Proc R Soc Edin 57 pp 135-154, 1937

[0529] Appendix A: The Synthetic creation of micro singularities. Throughout this patent application the creation of micro singularities has been maintained. While at first glance this may seem to be a deficiency in the patent application it is in fact an engineering problem that is in the process of being solved. In the International Journal of Theoretical Physics 41 (11): 2073-2090, November 2002 L. J. Garay published "Black Holes in Bose-Einstein Conden-

sates". In this article Garay showed that there exist both dynamically stable and unstable dilute-gas Bose-Einstein condensates that, in the hydrodynamic limit, exhibit a behavior completely analogous to that of gravitational black holes. This discovery coupled with creation of color glass condensate (CGC) an extreme form of nuclear matter in which a nucleus travels at near-light (relativistic) speed which flattens like a pancake in its direction of motion and spawns a large number of gluons hold the key to high energy singularity formation.

I claim:

1. A method for the generation of a pseudo 2+1 dimensional anti-de Sitter space comprising the steps of:

creating two Kerr type positively charged rotating dilation singularities, including the steps of

maintaining one of the singularities as a axis of rotation reference singularity,

maintaining the other of the singularities as a target singularity, and

subjecting the target singularity to a differential electron flow so as to simultaneously pass the differential electron flow above a photosphere of said target singularity in a direction of rotation thereof and contrary to the direction of rotation thereof, in order to release a directed flow of gravitons in a sinusoidal oscillation

simulating a rotational effect of the target singularity around the axis of rotation provided by the reference singularity.

2. A method of generating a force around a body, comprising the steps of:

employing sinusoidal oscillations of electrical bombardment on the surface of one Kerr type reference singularity in close proximity to a second Kerr type target singularity to take advantage of the Lense-Thirring effect, wherein the electrical currents employed in the bombardment are passed simultaneously across the photosphere of said reference singularity in its direction of rotation and contrary to its direction of rotation to release a directed flow of gravitons in a sinusoidal oscillation simulating a rotational effect of the target singularity around the axis of rotation provided by the reference singularity;

creating timelike curves in a compact time-oriented manifold of Godel-type geodesically complete spacetime envelope under the Van Den Broeck modification of the Alcubierre geometry, resulting in the creation of timelike curves in a compact time-oriented manifold permitting topology change from one spacelike boundary to the other in accordance with Geroch's theorem.

* * * * *

US 20070285325A1

(54) **CHI ENERGY AMPLIFIER**

(76) Inventor: **John Quincy St. Clair**, San Juan, PR (US)

Correspondence Address:
JOHN ST. CLAIR
52 KINGS COURT, 4A
SAN JUAN, PR 00911

Publication Classification

(57) **ABSTRACT**

A Chi energy amplifier that utilizes a co-gravitational K field to generate a flow of hyperspace energy into or out of a ceramic dome containing a slot antenna.
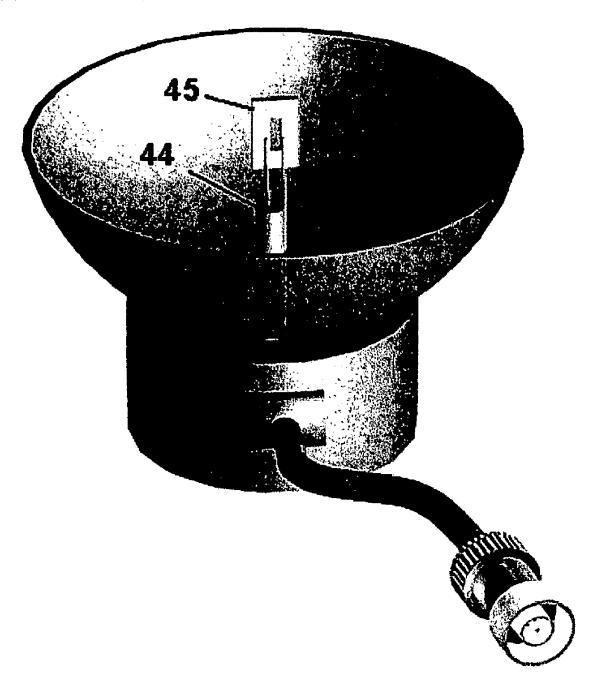
Figure 1

Figure 2

Figure 3

Figure 4

Figure 5

Figure 6

Figure 7

Figure 8

Figure 9

Figure 10
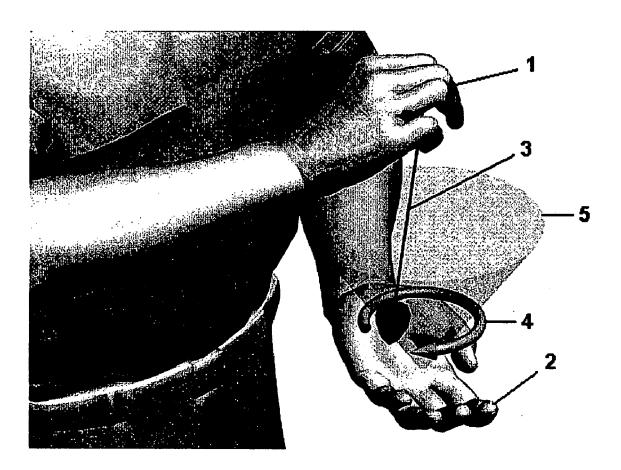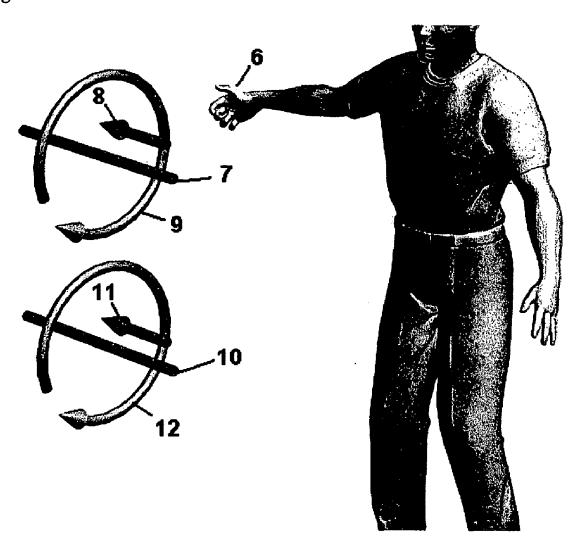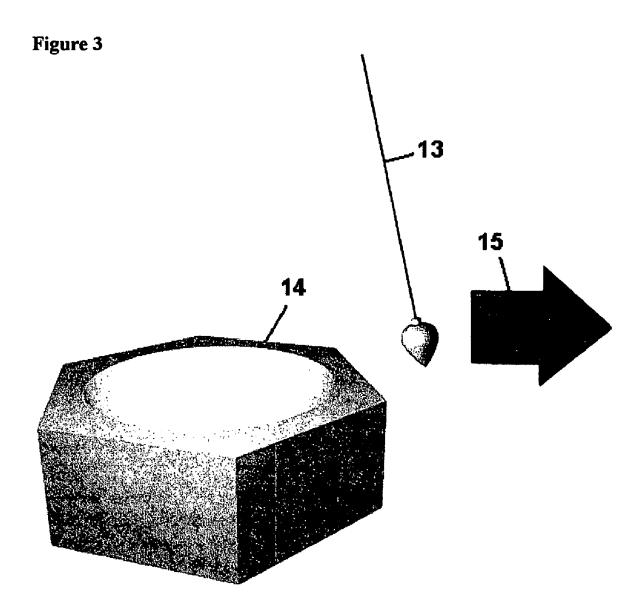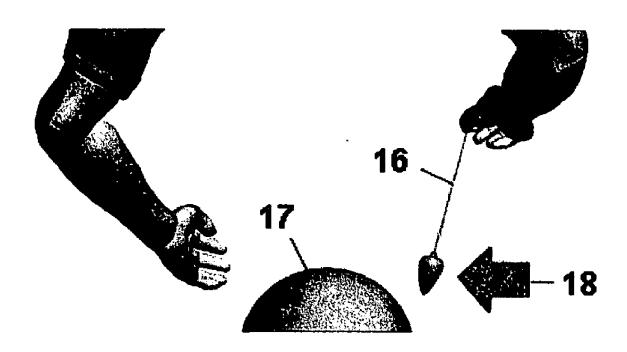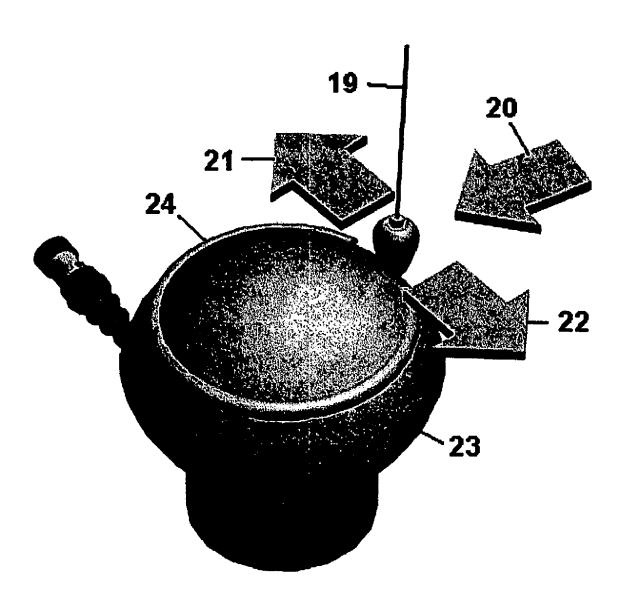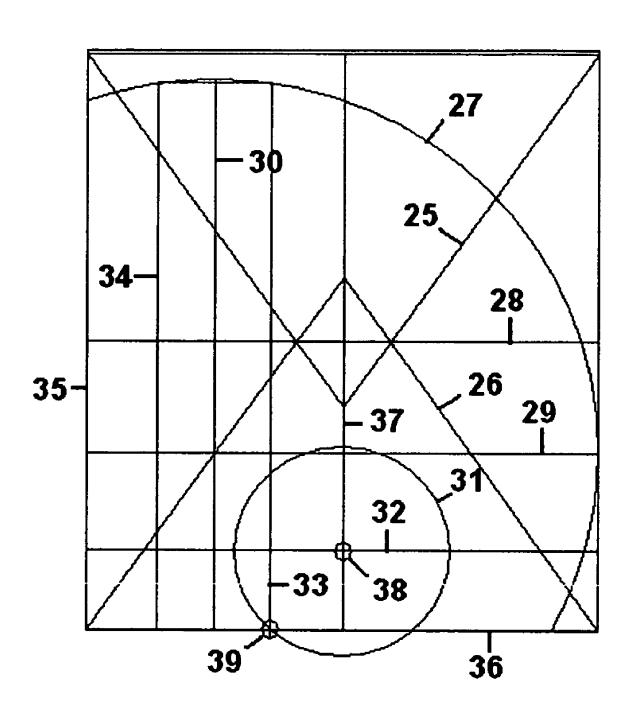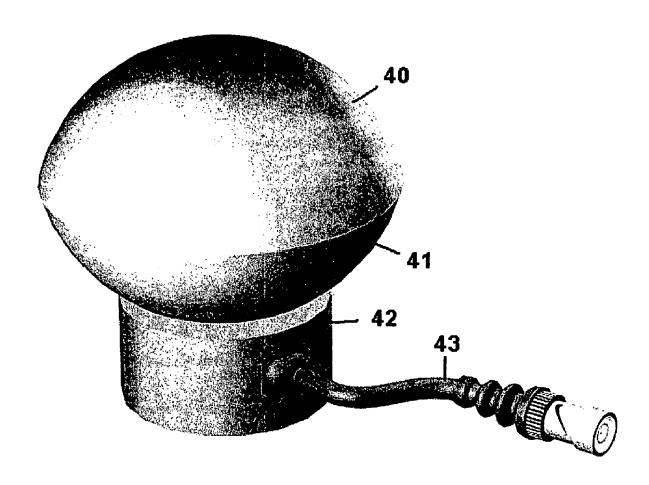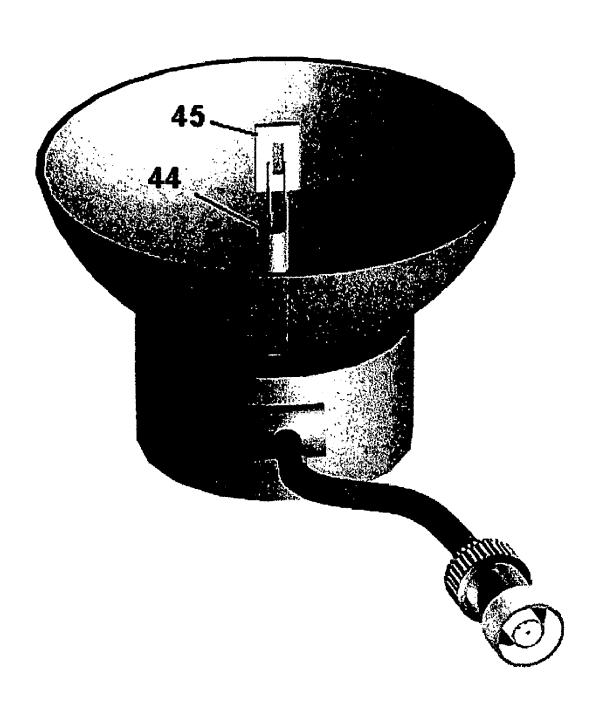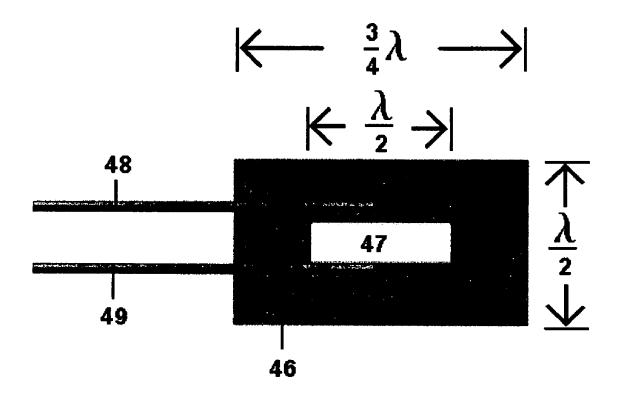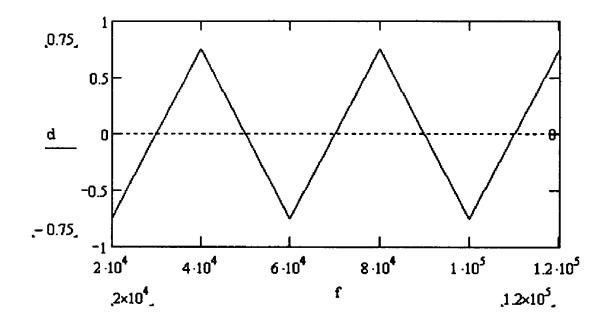
Figure 11
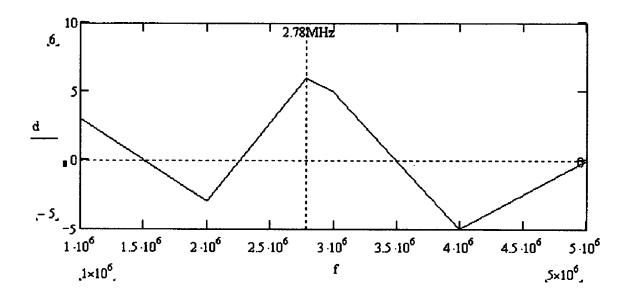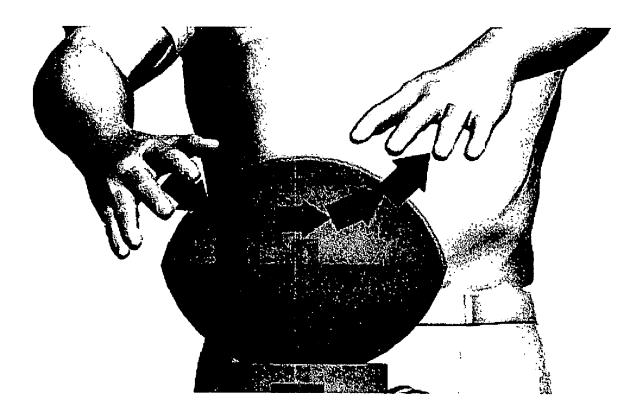
Figure 12

CHI ENERGY AMPLIFIER

BRIEF SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0001] This invention is an energy amplifier that controls the direction of the second co-gravitational K field by means of a slot antenna located in a resonating sphere. The hyperspace mass flow rate entering into this dimension is determined by the frequency of the antenna. This energy flow is used to increase the energy of the human energy field known as Chi.

BACKGROUND OF THE INVENTION

[0002] Referring to FIG. 1, a pendulum suspended by a string (3) is held by the string with the right hand (1) over the upright palm of the left hand (2). The pendulum swings in circles shown by the clockwise direction of the arrow (4). The pendulum swings at a constant frequency at about 1 to 2 Hz. What this means is that there is a second gravitational K field (5) that can cause a mass to rotate in circles.

[0003] Everyone is familiar with the linear gravitational g field which is defined as Newton's gravitational constant G times the mass of the earth divided by the square of the radius of the earth. This is the field that causes objects to accelerate radially toward the earth's surface. Newton's gravitational constant G is equal to the speed of light c squared divided by the linear mass Ω of the universe. The speed of light is

$$c = 299792458 \, \frac{\text{meters}}{\text{second}}$$

$$\Omega = 1.346812891 \cdot 10^{27} \, \frac{\text{kilograms}}{\text{meter}}$$

$$G = \frac{c^2}{\Omega} = 6.673200002 \cdot 10^{-11} \, \frac{\text{meter}^3}{\text{second}^2 \, \text{kilogram}}$$

The mass and radius of the earth are

[0004]

$$ME = 5.977 \cdot 10^{24} \, \text{kilograms}$$

$$RE = 6371.03 \, 10^3 \, \text{meters}$$

$$g = G \frac{ME}{RE^2} = 9.82 \, \frac{\text{meters}}{\text{second}^2}$$

[0005] From electromagnetism, the electric E field is linear and the B magnetic field is circular or forms closed loops. The electric field starts and ends on electric charges. Since there are two electromagnetic fields, it makes sense that there are also two gravitational fields. A flow of electric current through a straight wire causes a circular magnetic B field to form around the wire. In a similar manner, a flow of mass through a channel causes a circular gravitational K field to form around the channel.

[0006] Referring to FIG. 2, the right hand rule (6) shows that if the flow is along the direction of the thumb of the right hand, then the field curls around in the direction of the fingers. If an electric current is flowing through the wire (7) in the direction of arrow (8), then a counter-clockwise magnetic field circles the wire shown by arrow (9). In the

bottom view, a mass flowing through a channel (10) in direction (11) generates a counter-clockwise gravitational K field shown by arrow (12). This field is the reason that the pendulum swings in circles. The gravitational K field only exists if there is a mass flow. In the wire there is also an electric field driving the electrons, so it must be that there is a g gravitational field driving the mass along the channel.

[0007] The correspondence between electromagnetic and gravitational constants must be the following:

Electric	Gravitational
Charge q	Mass m
Electric Field E	Gravitational Field g
Magnetic Field B	Co-gravitational Field K
Linear Electric Charge λ	Linear Mass Ω
Permittivity of Space ϵ_0	$-1/4\pi G$
Permeability of Space μ_0	$-4\pi G/c^2$
Convection Current Density J	Mass Current Density J

[0008] Maxwell's equation for the curl or circulation of B involves the current density J and an electric field E changing with time t

$$\nabla \times B = \mu_0 J + \frac{1}{c^2} \frac{\partial E}{\partial t}$$

The corresponding gravitational equation is therefore

[0009]

$$\nabla \times K = -\frac{4\pi G}{c^2} J + \frac{1}{c^2} \frac{\partial g}{\partial t}$$

[0010] If the g field is constant with time, then the circulation of the K field only depends on the mass density flow through the channel. Notice the minus sign in front of the first term which says that if energy is entering our dimension through a channel, then the K field is in the counterclockwise direction as indicated by the pendulum. As seen in FIG. 1, the energy is leaving through the left hand because the rotation is clockwise. On the right hand, the pendulum rotates in the counterclockwise direction indicating that energy is coming from the hand. Thus there is a flow of energy between the hands known as the Chi energy. The purpose of this invention is to amplify this energy.

[0011] The g gravitational field is due to a negative space-time curvature created by the mass of the earth. In many physics books this is depicted as a bowl. So the idea was to acquire a ceramic kiln which could produce ceramic bowls using earthenware clay and a bowl mold. The curvature created by the bowl, if any, could be detected by the pendulum.

[0012] Referring to FIG. 3, a pendulum (13) held in the right hand with the left hand near the side of the concave mold (14) starts to swing toward the right, away from the plaster mold as shown by arrow (15).

[0013] Referring to FIG. 4, a pendulum (16) held in the right hand over a positive curvature dome (17) swings toward the top of the dome as shown by arrow (18).

Supposedly the K gravitational field rotates in circles, but these experiments showed that the pendulum movement was radial.

[0014] Referring to FIG. 5, the pendulum (19) swings radially (20) toward the top of the dome (23) because the forces (24) around the dome counteract each other as shown by arrows (21, 22). Thus there is no sideways pressure on the pendulum.

[0015] The next question was what is the value of the co-gravitational K constant? In electromagnetism the electric field is the speed of light times the magnetic field. So the g gravitational field should be the speed of light times the co-gravitational K field.

$$K = \frac{g}{c}$$
$$= \frac{1}{c} G \frac{MU}{RU^2}$$
$$= \frac{1}{c} \frac{c^2}{\Omega} \frac{MU}{\frac{MU}{\Omega}RU}$$
$$= \frac{c}{RU}$$

$$\ln(K) = -40.34861143$$

[0016] where the radius RU of the universe is 10^{26} meters and c is the speed of light. The speed of light divided by the radius is angular frequency measured in Hz. Recall that the pendulum over the hand has a frequency f of 1 Hz which makes the angular frequency o equal to 2π radians per second since $\omega=2\pi f$ So the question is whether or not this value of K means anything in terms of hyperspace physics?

[0017] The universe has a geometrical sub-manifold based on the tetrahedron. All the physics constants of the universe are determined by this tetrahedral geometry. As shown in diagram tet0565 stored in the Library of Congress, the electron and proton are one and the same particle. There is a continuous clockwise path from the electron wavelength, through electric charge to electron mass and returning out-of-dimension back along a counterclockwise path as the proton. Because the paths are in opposite directions, the proton has a positive charge and the electron has the opposite negative charge. Because this path crosses into our dimension from hyperspace, we see two different particles. Thus Nature only has one particle. The tetrahedron diagram also shows that our dimension is offset from the origin of the diagram by the Cabibbo angle which is found in particle physics. Our dimension is determined by the Planck mass and the Planck wavelength which are the bottom limits of our dimension, known as the Planck box. If the proton mass is centered on the Planck mass, a tangent line to the circle can only be made by using the down quark and up quark which comprise the proton (duu). And the tangent line is drawn at the Cabibbo angle. So the diagram verifies some important experimental physics data.

[0018] Referring to FIG. 6, the tetrahedron diagram is drawn with a vertical axis (35) corresponding to the natural logarithm of mass. The horizontal axis (36) is the natural logarithm of wavelength. The inverted tetrahedrons (25, 26) cross at the centerline (28) which is known through remote viewing as "the merging of two worlds." The centerline is the separation point between space and hyperspace. The

circumscribing sphere (27) has a horizontal diameter (29) and a vertical diameter (30). The electron wavelength (34) reflects off the sphere and returns as the electron mass (33).

[0019] Because the K co-gravitational field is related to circular or spinning motion, as well as vorticity per area, it might be imagined that it has something to do with the spinning electron. The energy E of the electron is equal to the mass m_e of the electron times the speed of light c squared.

$$m_e = 9.1093897 \cdot 10^{-31} \text{ kilogram}$$
$$c = 299792458 \cdot \frac{\text{meter}}{\text{second}}$$
$$E = m_e c^2$$
$$\ln(E) = -30.13363019$$

[0020] The tips of the inverted tetrahedrons pass through the base constant, vertical line (37), which is equal to Planck's constant h divided by the speed of light.

$$h = 2.210260685 \cdot 10^{-42} \text{ kilogram meter}$$
$$\text{base} = \ln\left(\frac{h}{c}\right) = -95.91546344$$

[0021] On the tetrahedron diagram, the co-gravitational circle K (31) is centered on the base (37) at the electron energy (32) shown by the small π circle at the intersection (38). As can be seen, the K circle determines the electron mass (33) at the horizontal axis (36) as shown by intersection (39). Because the electron is the proton, it also sets the constants of the proton such as wavelength, charge and mass. Thus the K co-gravitational field determines our elementary particles. Because these particle paths go in and out of dimension, it means that hyperspace exists. And because the K field is circular, depending on the direction of the energy flow, another purpose of this invention is to control the direction of the field.

SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

[0022] Referring to FIG. 7, the Chi energy amplifier consists of two ceramic domes (40, 41) resting one on the other such as to form a hollow internal clam-like structure. The domes are mounted on a cylindrical ceramic base (42) containing a reinforced passageway for the coaxial cable and BNC connector (43). The BNC connector plugs into the frequency generator (not shown) which has a frequency range of 0.4 Hz to 5 MHz.

[0023] Referring to FIG. 8 with the upper dome removed, the coaxial cable (44) extends vertically through the base into the lower dome. The cable is soldered to a slot antenna (45). The center conductor of the cable is soldered to the left side of the slot and the ground shielding is soldered to the right side of the slot. Thus there is a voltage difference on the two sides which produces an oscillating electric field across the slot which radiates electromagnetic energy into the hollow dome.

[0024] A close-up of the slot antenna is shown in FIG. 9. The antenna is a 0.050" thick copper sheet (46) with a width of ¾ wavelength by a height of ½ wavelength. A slot (47)

of ½ wavelength is electric-discharge machined into the copper sheet (**47**). The center conductor (**48**) from the coaxial cable is soldered to the top of the slot. The ground wire (**49**) is soldered to the bottom of the slot. This configuration produces a voltage difference between the inner top and bottom surfaces of the slot. The frequency generator produces an oscillating voltage across the slot which generates an electric field that radiates from the antenna into the ceramic cavity.

[0025] The wavelength of the antenna and the dimensions of the ceramic cavity have to be tuned to the geometry of our dimension. Newton's gravitational constant G is equal to

$$\ln(G) = -23.4303342$$

$$f = e^{23.4303432} * \text{Hz} = 15 \; Ghz$$

$$\lambda = \frac{c}{f} = .020 \; \text{meter} = .787 \; \text{inch}$$

$$\text{slotwidth} = \frac{\lambda}{2} = .393 \; \text{inch}$$

$$\text{antennawidth} = \frac{3}{4}\lambda = .590 \; \text{inch}$$

The frequency of the antenna is the inverse of the gravitational constant. The reason for this is that when a circle of radius natural logarithm G is centered on the proton on the tetrahedron diagram, the circle intersects the corner of the Planck box which bounds our dimension between space and hyperspace. It is the low-density hyperspace energy that the amplifier will bring into this dimension.

[0026] The size of the ceramic cavity based on the angular frequency ω=2πf is

$$\frac{\frac{\omega^2}{c^2} + \frac{1}{ab}}{\frac{\omega^2}{c^2} + ab\left(\frac{\omega^2}{c^2} - \frac{1}{a^2}\right)\left(\frac{\omega^2}{c^2} - \frac{1}{b^2}\right)} = \frac{\tan\left(\frac{\omega}{c}(b-a)\right)}{\omega} \frac{c}{b-a}$$

where b is inside radius of the cavity, a is the radius of an object at the center of the cavity and c is the speed of light. Using the object radius as a=0.020 meter to account for the antenna, the inside radius of the cavity is b=4.25 inches which is the size of the 8.5 inch diameter ceramic dome using ¼ inch thick clay. The frequency is then equal to

$$f = \ln\left(\frac{\omega}{2\pi}\right) = 23.45$$

which is close to the inverse of the gravitational constant G of −23.43. Thus the amplifier is tuned to the gravitational constant of the universe both in size of the cavity and the frequency of the slot antenna. Using a SMD surface mount capacitor and inductor in the picofarad and nanohenry range, it is possible to get up to this high frequency, but it was found that it was not necessary because the amplifier works at lower frequencies that are pulsed.

[0027] Referring to FIG. **10**, the swinging movement of the pendulum measured in inches at the side of the dome is plotted against a range of frequencies from 20 kHz to 120 kHz. At 20 kHz, the pendulum swings ¾ inch away from the dome. Then at 40 kHz, the pendulum swings ¾ inch toward the dome. This pattern is repeated until 120 kHz. What this means is that the amplifier can control the direction of the co-gravitational field using frequency. The tetrahedron diagram shows that this phenomenon is related to the two axes of the circumscribing sphere of the tetrahedron.

[0028] Referring to FIG. **11**, the swinging of the pendulum is plotted for a range of frequencies from 1 MHz to 5 MHz. At a frequency of 2.78 MHz the pendulum was swinging strongly from the vertical to the horizontal, a distance of six inches. On the tetrahedron diagram, the distance from our base constant to the centerline between inverted tetrahedrons is equal to 14.838168. This corresponds to a frequency of

$$f = e^{14.838168} * \text{Hz} = 2.780574169 \; \text{MHz}$$

which is close to the experimental value.

[0029] Referring to FIG. **12**, the Chi energy flowing between the hands, shown by the arrows, is amplified by placing the hands across the dome. This energy from the right hand mixes with the hyperspace energy entering the dome from hyperspace. The combined energy is then absorbed in the left hand vortex. The effects of this amplified energy are simply amazing and have to be experienced to appreciate what it means.

A BRIEF DESCRIPTION OF THE DRAWINGS

[0030] FIG. **1**. Perspective view of pendulum movement over left hand vortex.

[0031] FIG. **2**. Perspective view of right hand rule of physics showing similarity between electromagnetism and gravity.

[0032] FIG. **3**. Perspective view of plaster mold cavity showing negative curvature.

[0033] FIG. **4**. Perspective view of dome showing positive curvature.

[0034] FIG. **5**. Perspective view of dome showing radial pendulum movement.

[0035] FIG. **6**. Graph of co-gravitational K field on tetrahedron diagram.

[0036] FIG. **7**. Perspective view of Chi Energy Amplifier with BNC coaxial cable.

[0037] FIG. **8**. Perspective view of slot antenna in dome.

[0038] FIG. **9**. Perspective view of slot antenna showing dimensions.

[0039] FIG. **10**. Graph of pendulum movement versus frequency of antenna, 20 KHz.

[0040] FIG. **11**. Graph of pendulum movement versus frequency from 1 MHz to 5 MHz.

[0041] FIG. **12**. Perspective view of amplifying Chi energy.

DETAILED DESCRIPTION OF THE INVENTION

[0042] The dome of the amplifier is made of red earthenware clay from Minnesota having a cone 06 kiln firing temperature of 1828° F. over a period of 7.5 hours. The clay is placed between two hardwood ¼ inch thick slats. It is then rolled flat with a rolling pin. The sheet of clay is cut in half and one half is placed in a 9-inch diameter bowl mold using a soft sponge to push it into position. The second half is then added to the first with the seam between worked flat with a metal kidney and elephant ear sponge. The top of the mold

is scrapped flat to create the bowl shape. The moist clay is left to dry for one day after which it falls out of the mold due to shrinkage. After completely drying, the dome is then placed in a kiln which runs the computer-controlled cone 06 temperature firing profile. A preheat at 180° F. for one hour is required to make sure the dome is completely bone dry. It takes 7 to 8 hours to fire the dome with another 12 hours to cool down naturally.

[0043] The base is also made of ¼ inch clay. A circular shape is cut out and fitted with a ribbon of extruded clay from a clay gun to make the cylindrical wall. Using a hole cutter made of hollow tubing, a hole is made in the side of the base for the coaxial cable. The second lower dome has a hole cut in the bottom when the clay is leather hard.

[0044] A 0.050" thick copper sheet is EDM machined to cut a half wavelength slot in the copper. The inner conductor of the coaxial cable is soldered using silver epoxy to the one side of the slot. The ground shielding of the cable is silver epoxied to the other side of the slot. The other end of the coaxial cable has a BNC connector which plugs into the frequency generator.

[0045] The pendulum is made out of soft brass rod and machined on a lathe into a plumb bob shape. A hole is drilled in the stem to hold the 6" long string.

I claim:

1. A Chi energy amplifier comprising:

a. a hollow ceramic dome in the shape of a clam shell with a hole in the lower half that provides access to a coaxial cable;

b. a cylindrical ceramic base on which the dome is mounted with holes that provide access for a coaxial cable into item (a);

c. a slot antenna soldered to the coaxial cable, located midway inside item (a), such that the inner conductor of the cable is soldered to one side of the slot and the ground shielding is soldered to the other side of the slot;

d. a frequency generator connected to the other end of the coaxial cable by means of a BNC connector for the purpose of providing an oscillating voltage to item (c);

e. an electromagnetic wave generated by items (c, d) that resonates inside item (a);

f. a co-gravitational K field generated by items (a, b, c, d, e) whose direction can be controlled by the frequency of item (d); and

g. a flow of hyperspace energy into or out of the dome due to item (f).

* * * * *

No. 685,958.
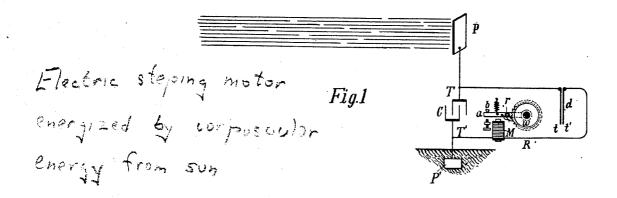
N. TESLA.
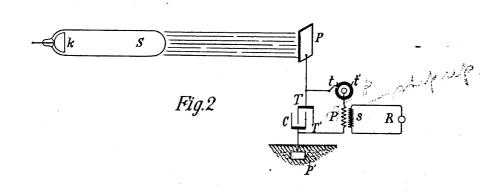
METHOD OF UTILIZING RADIANT ENERGY.

(Application filed Mar. 21, 1901.)

Patented Nov. 5, 1901.

(No Model.)

Electric stepping motor energized by corpuscular energy from sun

Fig.1

Fig.2

Witnesses:

Nikola Tesla, Inventor

by *Kerr, Page & Cooper* Att'ys

UNITED STATES PATENT OFFICE.

NIKOLA TESLA, OF NEW YORK, N. Y.

METHOD OF UTILIZING RADIANT ENERGY.

To all whom it may concern:

Be it known that I, NIKOLA TESLA, a citizen of the United States, residing at the borough of Manhattan, in the city, county, and State
5 of New York, have invented certain new and useful Improvements in Methods of Utilizing Radiant Energy, of which the following is a specification, reference being had to the drawings accompanying and forming a part of the
10 same.

It is well known that certain radiations— such as those of ultra-violet light, cathodic, Roentgen rays, or the like—possess the property of charging and discharging conductors
15 of electricity, the discharge being particularly noticeable when the conductor upon which the rays impinge is negatively electrified. These radiations are generally considered to be ether vibrations of extremely small
20 wave lengths, and in explanation of the phenomena noted it has been assumed by some authorities that they ionize or render conducting the atmosphere through which they are propagated. My own experiments and
25 observations, however, lead me to conclusions more in accord with the theory heretofore advanced by me that sources of such radiant energy throw off with great velocity minute particles of matter which are strongly
30 electrified, and therefore capable of charging an electrical conductor, or even if not so may at any rate discharge an electrified conductor either by carrying off bodily its charge or otherwise.
35 My present application is based upon a discovery which I have made that when rays or radiations of the above kind are permitted to fall upon an insulated conducting body connected to one of the terminals of a con-
40 denser, while the other terminal of the same is made by independent means to receive or to carry away electricity, a current flows into the condenser so long as the insulated body is exposed to the rays, and under the condi-
45 tions hereinafter specified an indefinite accumulation of electrical energy in the condenser takes place. This energy after a suitable time interval, during which the rays are allowed to act, may manifest itself in a pow-
50 erful discharge, which may be utilized for the operation or control of mechanical or elec-

trical devices or rendered useful in many other ways.

In applying my discovery I provide a condenser, preferably of considerable electro- 55 static capacity, and connect one of its terminals to an insulated metal plate or other conducting body exposed to the rays or streams of radiant matter. It is very important, particularly in view of the fact that elec- 60 trical energy is generally supplied at a very slow rate to the condenser, to construct the same with the greatest care. I use by preference the best quality of mica as dielectric, taking every possible precaution in insulating 65 the armatures, so that the instrument may withstand great electrical pressures without leaking and may leave no perceptible electrification when discharging instantaneously. In practice I have found that the best results 70 are obtained with condensers treated in the manner described in a patent granted to me February 23, 1897, No. 577,671. Obviously the above precautions should be the more rigorously observed the slower the rate of charg- 75 ing and the smaller the time interval during which the energy is allowed to accumulate in the condenser. The insulated plate or conducting body should present as large a surface as practicable to the rays or streams of 80 matter, I having ascertained that the amount of energy conveyed to it per unit of time is under otherwise identical conditions proportionate to the area exposed, or nearly so. Furthermore, the surface should be clean and 85 preferably highly polished or amalgamated. The second terminal or armature of the condenser may be connected to one of the poles of a battery or other source of electricity or to any conducting body or object whatever of 90 such properties or so conditioned that by its means electricity of the required sign will be supplied to the terminal. A simple way of supplying positive or negative electricity to the terminal is to connect the same either to 95 an insulated conductor, supported at some height in the atmosphere, or to a grounded conductor, the former, as is well known, furnishing positive and the latter negative electricity. As the rays or supposed streams of 100 matter generally convey a positive charge to the first condenser-terminal, which is connect-

ed to the plate or conductor above mentioned, I usually connect the second terminal of the condenser to the ground, this being the most convenient way of obtaining negative electric-
5 ity, dispensing with the necessity of providing an artificial source. In order to utilize for any useful purpose the energy accumulated in the condenser, I furthermore connect to the terminals of the same a circuit includ-
10 ing an instrument or apparatus which it is desired to operate and another instrument or device for alternately closing and opening the circuit. This latter may be any form of circuit-controller, with fixed or movable parts
15 or electrodes, which may be actuated either by the stored energy or by independent means.

The rays or radiations which are to be utilized for the operation of the apparatus above described in general terms may be derived
20 from a natural source, as the sun, or may be artificially produced by such means, for example, as an arc-lamp, a Roentgen tube, and the like, and they may be employed for a great variety of useful purposes.
25 My discovery will be more fully understood from the following detailed description and annexed drawings, to which reference is now made, and in which—

Figure 1 is a diagram showing typical forms
30 of the devices or elements as arranged and connected in applying the method for the operation of a mechanical contrivance or instrument solely by the energy stored; and Fig. 2 is a diagrammatical representation of a modi-
35 fied arrangement suitable for special purposes, with a circuit-controller actuated by independent means.

Referring to Fig. 1, C is the condenser, P the insulated plate or conducting body, which
40 is exposed to the rays, and P' another plate or conductor, all being joined in series, as shown. The terminals T T' of the condenser are also connected to a circuit including a receiver R, which is to be operated, and a circuit-control-
45 ling device d, which in this case is composed of two very thin conducting-plates t t', placed in close proximity and very mobile, either by reason of extreme flexibility or owing to the charater of their support. To improve their
50 action, they should be inclosed in a receptacle from which the air may be exhausted. The receiver R is shown as consisting of an electromagnet M, a movable armature a, a retractile spring b, and a ratchet-wheel w, pro-
55 vided with a spring-pawl r, which is pivoted to armature a, as illustrated. The apparatus being arranged as shown, it will be found that when the radiations of the sun or of any other source capable of producing the effects before
60 described fall upon the plate P an accumulation of electrical energy in the condenser C will result. This phenomenon, I believe, is best explained as follows: The sun as well as other sources of radiant energy throw off mi-
65 nute particles of matter positively electrified, which, impinging upon the plate P, communicate an electrical charge to the same. The

opposite terminal of the condenser being connected to the ground, which may be considered as a vast reservoir of negative electricity, 70 a feeble current flows continuously into the condenser, and inasmuch as these supposed particles are of an inconceivably small radius or curvature, and consequently charged to a relatively very high potential, this charging 75 of the condenser may continue, as I have found in practice, almost indefinitely, even to the point of rupturing the dielectric. Obviously whatever circuit - controller be employed it should operate to close the circuit 80 in which it is included when the potential in the condenser has reached the desired magnitude. Thus in Fig. 2 when the electrical pressure at the terminals T T' rises to a certain predetermined value the plates t t', attract- 85 ing each other, close the circuit connected to the terminals. This permits a flow of current which energizes the magnet M, causing it to draw down the armature a and impart a partial rotation to the ratchet-wheel w. As the 90 current ceases the armature is retracted by the spring b without, however, moving the wheel w. With the stoppage of the current the plates t t' cease to be attracted and separate, thus restoring the circuit to its original 95 condition.

Many useful applications of this method of utilizing the radiations emanating from the sun or other source and many ways of carrying out the same will at once suggest them- 100 selves from the above description. By way of illustration a modified arrangement is shown in Fig. 2, in which the source S of radiant energy is a special form of Roentgen tube devised by me having but one terminal 105 k, generally of aluminium, in the form of half a sphere with a plain polished surface on the front side, from which the streams are thrown off. It may be excited by attaching it to one of the terminals of any generator of 110 sufficiently-high electromotive force; but whatever apparatus be used it is important that the tube be exhausted to a high degree, as otherwise it might prove entirely ineffective. The working or discharge circuit con- 115 nected to the terminals T T' of the condenser includes in this case the primary p of a transformer and a circuit-controller comprising a fixed terminal or brush t and a movable terminal t' in the shape of a wheel with conduct- 120 ing and insulating segments which may be rotated at an arbitrary speed by any suitable means. In inductive relation to the primary wire or coil p is a secondary s, usually of a much greater number of turns, to the ends of 125 which is connected a receiver R. The terminals of the condenser being connected as indicated, one to an insulated plate P and the other to a grounded plate P', when the tube S is excited rays or streams of matter 130 are emitted from the same, which convey a positive charge to the plate P and condenser-terminal T, while terminal T' is continuously receiving negative electricity from the plate

P'. This, as before explained, results in an accumulation of electrical energy in the condenser, which goes on as long as the circuit including the primary p is interrupted. Whenever the circuit is closed, owing to the rotation of the terminal t', the stored energy is discharged through the primary p, this giving rise in the secondary s to induced currents which operate the receiver R.

It is clear from what has been stated above that if the terminal T' is connected to a plate supplying positive instead of negative electricity the rays should convey negative electricity to plate P. The source S may be any form of Roentgen or Lenard tube; but it is obvious from the theory of action that in order to be very effective the electrical impulses exciting it should be wholly or at least preponderatingly of one sign. If ordinary symmetrical alternating currents are employed, provision should be made for allowing the rays to fall upon the plate P only during those periods when they are productive of the desired result. Evidently if the radiations of the source be stopped or intercepted or their intensity varied in any manner, as by periodically interrupting or rythmically varying the current exciting the source, there will be corresponding changes in the action upon the receiver R, and thus signals may be transmitted and many other useful effects produced. Furthermore, it will be understood that any form of circuit-closer which will respond to or be set in operation when a predetermined amount of energy is stored in the condenser may be used in lieu of the device specifically described with reference to Fig. 1, and also that the special details of construction and arrangement of the several parts of the apparatus may be very greatly varied without departure from the invention.

Having described my invention, what I claim is—

1. The method of utilizing radiant energy, which consists in charging one of the armatures of a condenser by rays or radiations, and the other armature by independent means, and discharging the condenser through a suitable receiver, as set forth.

2. The method of utilizing radiant energy, which consists in simultaneously charging a condenser by means of rays or radiations and an independent source of electrical energy, and discharging the condenser through a suitable receiver, as set forth.

3. The method of utilizing radiant energy, which consists in charging one of the armatures of a condenser by rays or radiations, and the other by independent means, controlling the action or effect of said rays or radiations and discharging the condenser through a suitable receiver, as set forth.

4. The method of utilizing radiant energy, which consists in charging one of the armatures of a condenser by rays or radiations and the other by independent means, varying the intensity of the said rays or radiations and periodically discharging the condenser through a suitable receiver, as set forth.

5. The method of utilizing radiant energy, which consists in directing upon an elevated conductor, connected to one of the armatures of a condenser, rays or radiations capable of positively electrifying the same, carrying off electricity from the other armature by connecting the same with the ground, and discharging the accumulated energy through a suitable receiver, as set forth.

6. The method of utilizing radiant energy, which consists in charging one of the armatures of a condenser by rays or radiations, and the other by independent means, and effecting by the automatic discharge of the accumulated energy the operation or control of a suitable receiver, as set forth.

               NIKOLA TESLA.

Witnesses:
  M. LAWSON DYER,
  RICHARD DONOVAN.

New Energy Technologies

Time Control
experiments

Also in this issue:
* New experiments: magnet monopole beam cures cancer
* Electrogravity experiments
* High efficiency ceramic heater
* New aether experiments
* Instantaneous telecommunication

Editorial

Dr. Chernobrov and NET editor Olga Leontyeva.

The head of the Moscow research group "Kosmopoisk" Dr. Vadim A. Chernobrov (our readers certainly remember his articles on experiments with time) has recently visited the editorial office of New Energy Technologies in Saint-Petersburg, Russia. His visit was caused by discussion on the Time Machine project (investigation of active properties of time), started under agreement with Faraday Labs Ltd. Our magazine will inform readers on the topic in later issues.

NEW ENERGY TECHNOLOGIES
New Book
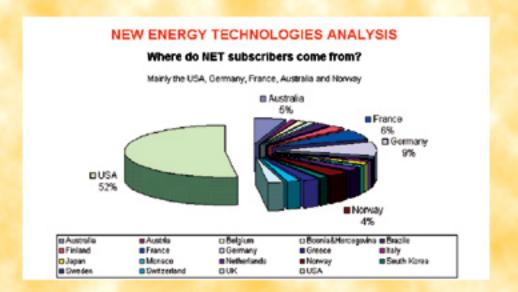
Dear Reader!
All articles of the previous 6 NET issues will soon be published as a new book in English (400 pages, more than 100 photos, figures and drawings, format A4).
You can order by e-mail: book2001@faraday.ru
or fax 7-812-3806564
Price with airmail delivery is 83 USD.

NEW ENERGY TECHNOLOGIES ANALYSIS

Where do NET subscribers come from?

Mainly the USA, Germany, France, Australia and Norway

- Australia 5%
- France 6%
- Germany 9%
- USA 52%
- Norway 4%

Australia	Austria	Belgium	Bosnia&Hercegovina	Brazile
Finland	France	Germany	Greece	Italy
Japan	Monaco	Netherlands	Norway	South Korea
Sweden	Switzerland	UK	USA	

LUTEC 1000

News from Australia

"There are a couple of other major factors that we won't go into here, suffice it to say that our current prototype demonstrates 1500% more " out" than "in"... "
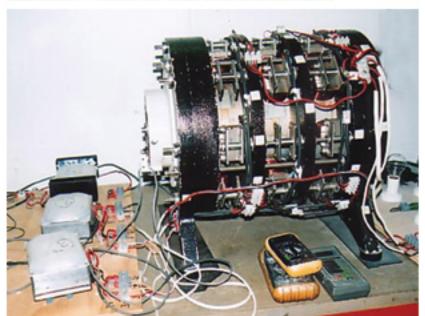
"The Lutec 1000 will be sold throughout Australia within three years. The majority of buyers are expected to be the home owners, although there is strong support for our product throughout the entire strata of society and business. Market leadership should be maintained for the next five years. The product is sold through commission only sales agents and our staff at the plant, mainly to anyone who needs or uses electricity."

John Christie (left) is the co-founder, CEO and chairman of Lutec (Aust.) Pty Ltd.

Ludwig (Lou) Brits (right, above) is the co-founder, managing director and head of development of Lutec (Aust.) Pty Ltd. He is Chairman and director of TTI Pty Ltd. TTI Pty Ltd is a state government recognised R.A.P. (remote area power) system provider.

Electrogravity

by Tim Ventura
tventura@attbi.com

In this issue a report by Tim Ventura, USA on experimenting with asymmetrical capacitors. www.americanantigravity.com

NEW ENERGY TECHNOLOGIES #6

consequence of many commonly accepted concepts and dogmas of the modern "scientific perspective of natural phenomena". This crisis situation in modern physics is a direct consequence of many conservative scientific viewpoints, unfortunately supported and protected by modern official academic science. The evolution of our consciousness has been influenced by many undoubtedly well known experts and has been evolving for a long time in the environment of specific scientific vacuum and requires immediate revival. Even methods used for dissemination of new knowledge should be improved, if one actually wishes to accelerate the progress of Humankind.

The perspective for practical applications of new previously unknown scientific phenomena and effects looks very attractive, and they may be achieved by cooperative efforts of the human intellect. New breakthrough technologies of the 21st Century will require serious changes of many commonly accepted concepts and dogmas in fundamental physics. This process of progressive development cannot be stopped.

REFERENCES

1. Richard P. Feynman, Robert B. Leighton, Matthew Sands. The Feynman Lectures on Physics, Addison-Wesley, 1964, Vol. 2, Ch. 1. Paragraph 6 "Electromagnetism in Science and Technology" (the very end of paragraph)

2. J. Maxwell, Selected Works on the Electromagnetic Field Theory, Gostekhizdat, Moscow (1954).

3. G. V. Nikolaev, Non-contradictory Electrodynamics. Theories, Experiments, and Paradoxes, Publishing House of the Tomsk State University, Tomsk (1997).

4. A. S. Kompaniets, in: Theoretical Physics, State Technical and Theoretical Press, Moscow (1957), pp. 126-128.

5. R. T. Sigalov, T. I. Shapovalova, Kh. Kh. Karimov, and N. I. Samsonov, New Research of Forces of the Magnetic Field, FAN Press of the Uzbekskaia SSR, Tashkent (1975).

6. Ya. I. Frenkel, Electrodynamics. Vol. 1, United Scientific and Technical Presses, Leningrad/Moscow (1934).

7. G. V. Nikolaev and B. V. Okulov, Inertial Properties of Electrons, deposited at VINITI, No. 4399-77, Moscow (1978).

8. Observations of the Aharanov-Bohm Effect, Nature, No. 7, 106 (1983).

9. G. V. Nikolaev, Scientific Vacuum. Crisis in Basic Physics. Is There Any Way Out?! Publishing House Kursiv, Tomsk (1999).

Large-Scale Sakharov Condition

David Noever and Christopher Bremner

NASA Marshall Space Flight Center, Space Sciences Laboratory Mail Code: ES76, Huntsville AL 35812

Abstract

Recent far reaching theoretical results have used the quantum vacuum noise as a fundamental electromagnetic radiation field to derive a frequency (ω) dependent version of Newton's gravitational coupling term, $G(\omega)$. This paper reconciles the cut-off frequency with the observed cosmological constant, and then briefly puts forward a realizable laboratory test case in the 10 - 100 MHz frequency range. One analogy is drawn between the classical vacuum energy experiments with attraction between two closely spaced plates (Casimir cavity) and the arbitrarily dense material boundaries possible in Bose condensates, such as irradiation at MHz frequencies of superfluid helium or superconductors.

Theoretical Background

Zel'dovich [1] first suggested that gravitational interactions could lead to a small disturbance in the (non zero) quantum fluctuations of the vacuum and thus give rise to a finite value of Einstein's cosmological constant in agreement with astrophysical data. Using dimensional analysis and the suggestion by Zel'dovich, Sakharov [2] derived a value for Newton's gravitational constant, G, in only one free parameter, frequency, ω:

$$G \sim c^5 \bigg/ h \int \omega d\omega \sim 1 \bigg/ \int \omega d\omega$$

where c is the speed of light and h is the Planck constant. The free parameter in frequency when integrated over all values from zero to high frequencies must contain the usual integration cutoff value (Planck frequency on observable electromagnetic phenomenon).

Puthoff [3] and others [4 5] have extended Sakharov's condition in a relativistically consistent model to determine constants of proportionality. His model derives an acceleration term in first order expansion (in flat space time), then equates inertial and gravitational mass (by the equivalence principle) to make contact with the gravitational constant, G, directly as:

$$G = \left(\pi c^5 / h\omega_c^2\right) \sim 1/\int \omega d\omega$$

which is the Sakharov condition [2,3]. This paper revisits the meaning of the cutoff frequency, ω_c, for radiation interactions, of which the quantum vacuum [6-10] and

Planck frequency are only the leading terms, and for which linear combinations of forces can introduce other plausible frequencies. One purpose of this reexamination is whether the resulting gravitational coupling constant, G, can be reconciled with the anticipated energy density of the universe [11] without resorting to extreme space time curvature and thus yield enough critical density to contain the expansion of the universe. Finally we particularize the case to the high-density fluctuations possible in Bose condensates [12], a potential experimental test case for how the effects of vacuum noise might manifest observably.

One far-reaching consequence of the vacuum energy model is the attractive force of gravity becomes reducible to the radiative interaction between oscillating charges, e.g. the zero point field (ZPF) applied to subatomic charges. Mass and inertia arise from the fundamentally electromagnetic ZPF oscillations.

This random background gives the usual quantum mechanical energy spectrum from particle field effects:

$$\rho(\omega)d\omega \sim \omega^3 d\omega$$

a very important dimensional relationship, since the third power in frequency avoids anomalous Doppler shifts from velocity boosts, or stated alternatively is the correct spectra for a Lorentzian (non accelerated) invariant radiation field [13].
More specifically, the energy spectrum [3] can be written as:

$$\rho(\omega)d\omega = [\omega^2 / \pi^2 c^3][h\omega / 2]d\omega =$$
$$= h\omega^3 / 2\pi^2 c^3 d\omega \sim \omega^3 d\omega$$

which is an expression in the first parenthesis of the density of the normal modes and in the second parenthesis of the average energy per mode. When this energy density is integrated over all frequencies, the ω^3 divergence produces well known infinities in the integration limit of high frequencies, thus an assumed cutoff frequency (appropriate to experimental observation limits at the Planck frequency), is usually introduced:

$$\omega_\rho = \left(c^5 / hG\right)^{1/2}$$

For mass, m, moving in an accelerated reference frame $g = -a = Gm/r^2$, the resulting energy spectrum includes a gravitational spectral shift [3],

$$\Delta\rho'(\omega)d\omega = h\omega / 2\pi^2 c^5 [Gm / r^2]^2 d\omega \sim 1 / r^4 d\omega$$

a kind of short range ($1/r^4$) gravitational energy shift, but electromagnetic in origin when zero point

fluctuations are included. (N.B. To account for equal gravitational mass effects in neutrons and protons, the ZPF oscillations must involve subatomic charges, or 'parton' effects. The assumption derives from high frequency interactions of ZPF wherein these subatomic particles are asymptotically free to oscillate as independent or free particles as quantum noise).

A further far reaching consequence [3] is mass itself becomes interpretable as a dependent quantity derived from a damped (with decay constant Γ) oscillation driven by random ZPF:

$$m = \Gamma c^3 / G = 2h\Gamma / \pi^2 c^3 \int \omega d\omega$$

with the only two free parameters, the damping factor Γ, and again the frequency, ω. The internal kinetic energy of the system contributes to the effective mass.

This leads to an overall average spectral density, written in terms of mass as:

$$\Delta\rho'(\omega) = m^2 c^5 \omega / 2h\omega_c^4 r^4$$

for the electromagnetic field distribution near ($1/r^4$) to the mass, m, which in detail is half electric and half magnetic.

One additionally attractive feature is the correspondence between this derivation and the view of gravity as a dynamical scaleinvariance breaking model (e.g. symmetry breaking near the Planck mass energy [14]). A final result includes the force calculation between two ZPF radiation oscillators of the correct form yielding Newton's average force law

$$< F >= -Gm^2 / r^2$$

Thus, for a Newtonian force to first order in a flat space time, Sakharov [2] could be credited for proposing gravity as not a fundamentally separate force and Puthoff [3] and co workers [4-5] applied the vacuum electromagnetic field to equate gravity to a long-range radiation force (e.g. van der Waals like force). Higher order oscillatory gravity modes vary as $\left(\sin[\omega_o / \omega_c]\right)^2$.

To first order, a weak G coupling constant, $G = \left(\pi c^5 / h\omega_c^2\right)$, appears for high frequency cutoff at the Planck scale. A corollary in analogy to electromagnetic shielding by ordinary matter can be rationalized as the problem of frequency mismatch at high Planck frequencies, e.g. ZPF cannot be fundamentally shielded. In other words, frequency mismatch precludes gravity shielding by matter.

The purpose here is to revisit the only free parameter, the frequency cutoff, more in the spirit of a mass resonant frequency. The motivation for this approach

can be summarized as: 1) the generality of other complementary radiation effects without relying on ZPF alone (e.g. other isotropic, homogeneous radiation sources); 2) the weak coupling constant, G, yields a vastly smaller than observed size of the universe (e.g. too small cosmological constant) when the Planck frequency is used as a cutoff value; and (3) the particle mass, $m = \Gamma c^3/G$, can be viewed as a renormalized or 'dressed' mass with a resonant interaction potential that is frequency dependent in its coupling constant, G, and with 'bare' mass that is large, $m_o \sim \left(m_\rho^2/m\right)$, where the experimentally unobservable, $m_\rho = \left(hc/G\right)^{1/2}$ is the Planck mass.

In particular, why this large 'bare' mass does not generate a large gravitational field is not a unique anomaly in the Sakharov derivation, since similarly large vacuum point energies are common to field theories. The important point is that the derivation $G(\omega)$ is general however to any isotropic radiation field with the Lorentz invariant energy spectra $\left[\rho(\omega) \sim \omega^3\right]$, thus the candidates for the cutoff frequency of the particular radiation source can be interpreted as a Planck scale only if the rest mass, m_o, is not composed of many terms, rather than just the ZPF leading term. Since the ZPF is akin to a van der Waals force [3 5], polarizability (in charge and mass) must be considered, but without also excluding any number of linear combinations that might have alternative cutoff frequencies, ω_c, or damping terms, Γ, 'ala particle physics interpretations for resonant masses during renormalization. In other words, once a gravitational energy spectrum, $\rho(\omega)$ is postulated that is Lorentzian invariant, many fundamental sizes (or corresponding frequency values) are smeared (or dressed) by any number of characteristic frequencies between zero and the high frequency electromagnetic (Planck) cutoff ω_ρ. Quite simply, is the expression, $\omega_c = \omega_\rho$, a requirement for all radiation sources?

Many types of particle oscillations may satisfy the general requirements of a Sakharov condition, each having a characteristic mass (and energy) as in calculating the mass of any fundamental particle at its resonant frequency (including underlying partial charges or dense bosons). This brings the calculation to a consideration of the high density fluctuations characteristic of a Bose condensate [15 19]. While the high density variation may intrinsically be of interest, the exploration has more to do with reconciling the ZPF interpretation of the Sakharov condition with the observed cosmological constant [14].

A "top down" view of calculating the cutoff frequency imposes the self consistency test for the cosmological constant, Λ, from the outset. To calculate, the total frequency integrated energy density of the universe must be included:

$$\rho(E) = \int \rho(E)dE = h\omega_c^4/8\pi^2c^3$$

which must have a mass equivalent, contribute to the universe's curvature, and thus have a fundamental relation to the critical density to contain the expansion of the universe [14 15]. The mass - equivalent ZPF to reach the universe's critical density [15],

$\rho \sim 10^{-29}$ g cm^{-3} would necessarily limit the cutoff frequency for gravity to the value, $\omega_c < 7 \cdot 10^7 s^{-1}$, or between 10 -100 MHz.

A higher frequency greatly overshoots the cosmological constant, Λ, and induces extreme curvature in the universe. This problem has been cited frequently and stated most bluntly, as either ZPF or the cosmological constant requires revision. The relevance here arises from similarly large positive coupling terms in quantum gravity [15], which also generate a local gravitational Instability for typical upper limits on the cosmological constant, $\Lambda/8\pi G < 10^{12}$ cm^{-4}.

Rather than to dwell on the inconsistencies that plague attempts to reconcile quantum gravity, we particularize the problem to a case where the restriction to Planck scale becomes less clew, namely the high density fluctuations and universal scaling introduced in a Bose condensate. A Bose condensate, such as superfluid helium or superconductors [15 19], becomes of potential interest, mainly because of its arbitrarily dense boundaries and the classic Casimir experiment [20 22] which allows such dense material boundaries (two closely spaced conducting plates), if available, to modulate the background quantum fluctuation of ZPF. In other words, the matter-ZPF interaction becomes measurable by the observed attraction between two material boundaries. What dense boundaries might generate in Bose condensates remains a subject of great interest.

The significant case to investigate is whether Casimir-like interactions [20 22] will not only couple to ZPF radiation at a scale comparable to the quantum noise (or other radiation field), but also alter the value imposed by the Sakharov condition for G. It remains an open question whether this potential coupling interaction shares, as in ordinary critical phenomenon, the density correlation function, Φ, that is both independent of the coupling strength (or universal in renormalization) and consistent with the observed average energy density of the visible universe.

Thus the purpose here has bow to restate the Sakharov condition in the gravitational coupling constant, G, based on its only free parameter, a frequency cutoff, ω_c. Any potential relevance arises from similarly large values for the positive coupling term in quantum gravity, which generate conditions for a local gravitational instability for typical upper limits on the constant, $\Lambda/8\pi G < 10^{12}$ cm^{-4}.

To restate the Sakharov condition, matter in the vacuum provides boundaries for reduced 'Casimir like' modes available for otherwise isotropic radiation from quantum fluctuations (broad spectral noise). That this view reproduces Einstein gravity has been examined, including the full relativistic derivation [4-5]. The details of the appropriate mass, however, remain buried in the kinetic energy of general internal particle ('parton') motion [3]. Any appeal to a specific parton representation is limited only by essentially free particles with high frequency interactions, including underlying partial charges or dense bosons. The basis of considering arbitrarily high-density fluctuations in Bose condensate in analogy to the ZPF-Casimir experiment remains both an empirical and theoretical case to examine. There exist laboratory scale cases [15-19] where resonant radiation in the required 10-100 MHz range appear to produce anomalous effect for such Bose condensates as superconductors, but further work to confirm these results would be needed. In other contexts, these effects have been discussed as the Schiff-Barnhill effect for superconductors interacting with a gravitational field [23], but for the static rest moss rather than an effective mass in a conduction band.

Experimental Propositions

J. Weber [24,25] proposed the use of a superconducting Bose condensate for gravity wave detection, principally because of its potentially higher signal to noise ratio in carrying electrical signals upon length dilations in a relativistic framework for gravity waves travelling near the speed of light. W. Weber and Hickman [26] derived an experimentally testable relation based on torquing of a charged capacitor parallel to a gravity field, with

$$\tau = 2E_g / \pi[\alpha /(1-\alpha)^{1/2}]$$

where the capacitor will rotate relative to the gravity vector, for $\alpha = 2GM / rc^2$, is Schwarzschild radial coordinate $[dR = dr(1-\alpha)^{1/2}]$, E_g is dependent on the capacitor charge and geometry of the plates, $E_g = [Q^2 d/2\varepsilon WL(1-\alpha)^{1/2}]$, for a plate separation, and radial dimensions, W and L, charge Q, and ε the permittivity of free space. For plate separations of 2 mm on Earth, the maximum torque is approximately $\tau = 10^{-12}$ Nm, when charged to 2/3 dielectric breakdown. While not entirely promising for detection of such low torques, the large separation (2 mm) distance between capacitive plates naturally prompts generalization to the classic Casimir force [21] experiments only recently confirmed experimentally [20]. In particular, we rewrite the torque values to include the frequency terms derived with the Sakharov condition

$$[G = (\pi c^5 / h\omega_c^2)]:$$

$$\alpha = 2M\pi c^3 / h\omega_c^2 r$$

The appeal of this formulation is that a frequency dependent torque is derived, which further makes

contact with proposals to modulate the Casimir capacitive plates for continuous extraction of energy [27]. This result requires further investigation experimentally, particularly to compare with previous reports for anomalies in AC- tuned electrical capacitors [28].

References

1. Ze1'dovich Ya. B. JETP Letters, 6, 345, 1967.

2. Sakharov A. Vacuum quantum fluctuations in Curved Space and the Theory of Gravitation, Sov. Phys. Reports, 12,1968,1040 1041.

3. Puthoff H. E. (1989) Gravity as a zero-point fluctuation force, Physical Review A, 39(5): 2333 2342, March 1, 1989.

4. Haisch B., Rueda A., Puthoff H.E., (1994) Inertia as a Zero Point Field Lorentz Force, Physical Review A, 49:678 694.

5. Haisch B., Rueda A., Puthoff H.E.,"Inertia as a Zero Point Field Force" Physical Review A 49, N 2, 678 (1994).

6. Ambjorn J. and Wolfram S. (1983) Properties of the Vacuum, 1. Mechanical and Thermodynamic, and Properties of the Vacuum, 2. Electrodynamics, Annals of Physics

7. Ambjorn J. and Wolfram S. (1983) Properties of the Vacuum. 1. Mechanical and Thermodynamic, Annals of Physics, 147:1 32.

8. Fulcher et al., "The Decay of the Vacuum," Sci. Am., vol. 241, p. 150, Dec. 1979

9. Puthoff, H.E. "Source of Vacuum Electromagnetic Zero Point Energy" Physical Review A 4 0, 4857 Nov 1 (1989); Errata and Comments, Physical Review A 4 1, March 1(1990); Physical Review A4 4, 3382, 3385 (1991)

10. Senitzky I.P., "Radiation Reaction and Vacuum Field Effects in Heisenberg Picture Quantum Electrodynamics", Phys. Rev. Lett. 31(15), 955 (1973). As pointed out by Puthoff [3] the relativistic results for the Sakharov condition have so far been encouraging, while the consequences for nuclear interactions in all coordinate frames have not been fully explored.

11. da Costa L. N., Freudling W., Wegner G., Giovanelli R., Haynes M. P., and Salzer J. J. (1996) The Mass Distribution in the Nearby Universe, Astrophysical Journal Letters, 468: LS L8 and Plate L 1

12. Modanese G. (1996) Theoretical analysis of a reported weak gravitational shielding effect, Europhy. Lett., 35(6):413 418.

13. Shupe M.A. The Lorentz invariant vacuum media, Am. J. Phys. 53, 122 (1985). A cautionary note is that lower frequency cutoffs can violate Lorentzian invariance, thus allowing a moving detector to reveal absolute motion by recording Doppler sifted frequencies. Standard methods might treat such effects like the cancellation of terms that remove anomalous ZPF infinities from field theories, but these topics remain to be explored.

14. Zee, A. Phys. Rev, Lett, 42,417 (1979); Phys. Rev. D. 23, 858, (1981).

15. Torr D. G. and Li. N. (1993) Gravitoelctric Electric Coupling vVia Superconductivity, Foundations of Physics Letters, 6(4): 371 383.

16. Unnikrishan C. S. (1996) Does a superconductor shield gravity? Physics C, 266:133 137.

17. Podkletnov E. and Nieminen R (1992) A Possibility of Gravitational Force Shielding by Bulk $YBa_2 Cu_3 O_{7-x}$ Superconductor, Physics pp.203: 441 444.

18. Li N, and Torr D. G. (1992) Gravitational effects on the magnetic attenuation of superconductors, Physical Review B, 46(9): 5489 5494. A simple consequence of the Sakharov condition $G = (\pi c^5 / h\omega_c^2) \sim 1/\int \omega d\omega$, can be written for the gravitomagnefic permeability as: $\mu_g = 4\pi G / c^2 = 4\pi^2 c^3 /(h\int_\circ^{\omega c} \omega d\omega) \sim 1/\int \omega d\omega$ which suggest that the same frequency resonance implied by the ZPF derivation will share similar consequences for vector gravity

effects. See also, DeWitt, B. S. Superconductors and Gravitational Drag, Phys. Rev. Lett. 16, 102(1966).

19. Li N., Noever D., Robertson T., Koczor R., and Brantley, W. (1997) Static Test for a Gravitational Force Coupled to Type II YBCO Superconductors, Physics p., 55, 287.

20. Lamoreaux S. K. (1997) Demonstration of the Casimir Force in the 0.6 to 6 mm Range, Phys. Rev. Letters, 78:5 8.

21. Milonni P.W. et al., "Radiation pressure from the vacuum: Physical interpretation of the Casimir force", Phys. Rev. A, Vol. 38, No. 3, 1621 August 1988.

22. Milonni P. W. (1994) The Quantum Vacuum, Academic Press, San Diego, CA.

23. Schiff L.I. and Barnhill M.V. Bull. Am. Phys. Soc. 11, 96, (1966) and refn. 18.

24. Weber J. (1960), Detection and Generation of Gravitational Waves, Physical Review, 117(1)306 313.

25. Weber J. (1966) Gravitational Shielding and Absorption, The Physical Review (The American Physical Society), 146(4): 935 937.

26. Weber W. and Hickman H. (1997) A possible interaction between gravity and the electric field, Spec. Science Tech. 20, 133 136

27. Forward R.L. "Extracting electrical energy from the vacuum by cohesion of charged foliated conductors" Phys. Rev. B, Vol. 30, No. 4,1700 August 1994

28. Woodward, J. F. (1992) A Stationary Apparent Weight Shift From a Transient Machian Mass Fluctuation, Foundations of Physics Letters, 5:425 442.

The Problem of Electron and Physical Properties of Time:
To the Electron Technologies of the 21ˢᵗ Century

V.P. Oleinik

*Department of General and Theoretical Physics,
National Technical University of Ukraine
"Kiev Polytechnic Institute",
Prospect Pobedy 37, Kiev, 03056, Ukraine **Institute of Semiconductor Physics, National Academy of Sciences,
Prospect Nauky 45, Kiev, 03028, Ukraine;
e-mail: yuri@arepjev.relc.com

"…it is necessary to periodically subject to the deepest revision the principles, which were recognized as final and were no longer discussed".
Louis de Broglie

Abstract

The results of an approach based on the synthesis of standard quantum electrodynamics and of the ideas of self-organization in physical systems are briefly outlined. The quantum model of electron as an open self-organizing system is constructed, with the physical mechanism of self-organization consisting in the back influence of the own field created by electron on the same electron. The own field is considered as a physical property of electron, intrinsically inherent in electrically charged matter, which is included in the definition of the particle from the very beginning. The own field of electron endows the particle with wave properties and represents a bearer of superluminal signals, which can be used for the creation of qualitatively new communication systems. Because of the inseparable link between space and time, the force in relativistic mechanics is the cause of change not only of the velocity of particle, but also of the course of time along the particle's trajectory. For this reason the flow of time in some area of space depends on the character of physical processes, occurring in it, and, therefore, time can be controlled by slowing down or accelerating its course with the help of material processes. The conclusions of the paper are not in conflict with the special theory of relativity (STR); they are a direct consequence of relativistic equations of motion and represent an

essential development of the generally accepted notions about space and time. At present all the necessary prerequisites are available, both theoretical and technical, for the practical mastering of the own fields of particles and of the physical properties of time.

1. Introduction. The Problem of Electron and Future Outlook

Electrodynamics, what is this? What is its value for man? Electrodynamics is the theory of electromagnetic interaction, one of four interactions existing in nature. Its role in the life of society is seen from the fact that the most part of natural phenomena, which we encounter at every step, is of electromagnetic origin: it is due to the interaction of electromagnetic field with electrically charged particles entering into atoms and molecules. It is fair to say that electromagnetism plays a crucial role in the life of mankind as it determines the ways of technical advance of society [1].

The key problem of quantum electrodynamics is the problem of electron, which can be formulated as follows: to construct from the first principles a non-contradictory model of electron, which takes into account experimental facts, i.e. to find the dynamical equation capable of describing the unique physical properties of electron, its internal structure, its behaviour when it interacts with electromagnetic field.

Electron was discovered a little more than 100 years ago, in 1897. With discovering the electron the revolution in physics began, which has resulted in unprecedented technical advance of society. The summit of development was reached in the middle of the 1950s and then the long period of evolutional development followed, when new physical principles were used to describe various physical processes and phenomena. The violent development of physics became slower in the 1970s and was replaced by stagnation in the subsequent years. The stagnation in electrodynamics continuing already over a period of several decades is gradually giving place now to a new ascent. The new scientific revolution is starting, which is associated with electron again, much as it happened hundred years ago. The reason is that electron is the most unique particle storing in itself the deepest mysteries of nature and the degree, to which they are disclosed, determines the

wants to stay anonymous, until his patent application is done and university verification tests will be done). The claims are: 1200 Watts coil out with about 1076.4 Watts in into the driving motor at 3450 RPM. 8 amps 117volts at no load 9.2 amps 117 volts at full load. The output of about 1200 Watts is already a total overunity operation! As they just increase the input power by about 140 Watts only between idle and load state and they get 1200-Watts output it seems indeed a case, where Lenz law is violated! This generator also has NO motor effect! If you supply current to the coil, the permanent magnet in the center will not rotate; cause the flux just stays inside the toroid core! There you can see, that the back drag does not influence the mechanical rotation of the magnet!" Stefan used very good criterion to prove high efficiency of the design: **There is no back-torque effect! It is most important aspect of Gramm's generator.** You can contact directly Stefan Hartmann: Keplerstr. 11 B, 10589 Berlin, Germany. Tel: +49 30 345 00 497, FAX: +49 30 345 00 498 email: harti@harti.com info@ccard.net (Please, note: Dr. Harman referred to my old web site www.time-machine.spb.ru which is closed now).

So, basic principles of MEG and Φ-machines are the same. It was patented more than 100 years ago. Primary magnetic flux is topologically separated in two (or more) fluxes, which are mutually compensated in the ring core. Advantages of MEG are absence of moving parts since special input coils produce changes of primary flux. Also level of saturation in ferromagnetic material obviously should be corresponding to intensity of primary magnetic field, which is created by the permanent magnet, Fig.4.1.

Besides MEG the same principle can be (and already was!) realized in many other systems. So, there is no any news in the USA patent #6,362,718 granted for "The Motionless Magnetic Generator". What did they claim? You can find it in the patent: "The first input coil and the first output coil **extend around portions of the first**
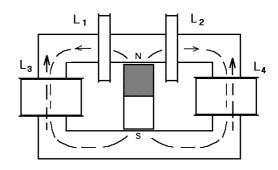
Fig.4.1

magnetic path, while the second input coil and the second output coil **extend around portions of the second magnetic path."** Yes, it is the same bi-directional principle we discussed above: two parts of the magnetic flux and each coil produce effect to reduce flux due to this superposition.
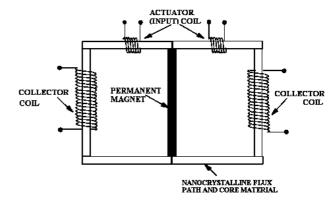
Fig.4.2
Diagram of prototype by Bearden.

In conclusion I'd like to confirm our sincere interest to develop joint work with all new energy research teams if they are not trying to obscure the issue of the technology by means of complex theoretical constructions and common words about zero point energy.

Matter as a Resonance Longitudinal Wave Process

Alexander V. Frolov

Abstracts

There is experimental data on gravitation anomalies for cases of resonance irradiation of the Bose condensates (superfluid helium or superconductor) at 10-100 MHz frequencies. It is developed by the author in frames of his   aether theory that can be used for practical applications in aerospace and new energetics.

ZPF or aether fluctuations

The fundamental electromagnetic radiation field (Zero Point Field) ZPF or the quantum vacuum noise is a recently accepted physical notion. In the article [1] David Noever and Christopher Bremner used it to derive a frequency – dependent version of Newton's gravitational coupling term G. On the other hand we can consider the quantum vacuum noise as aether fluctuations. Dr. Alexander Mishin [2] described experiments on registration of these processes by means of special equipment. Both approaches (ZPF and aether fluctuation) allow to conclude that mass and inertia arise from these oscillations. However if we are considering the oscillation as some aether process then we can assume and describe some physical mechanism of this process.

One of consequence of the vacuum energy model, which is described in [1] is that "the attractive force of gravity becomes reducible to the radiative interaction between oscillating charges…" Let's clarify which kind of radiation can be created by oscillating electric charges.

There are many different sources to find the answer on this question and one of them is the article by Prof. Kirill P.Butusov [3] on symmetrization of Maxwell's equations and practical methods of generation of longitudinal waves in vacuum. So, ZPF model has a direct relation with the aether model since indirectly it leads to the question of longitudinal waves in vacuum. Physically they are waves of density of energy and in the aether model the waves are areas of more dense and more rarefied aether. Let's note that there are standing waves besides moving waves.

To consider the interaction of some mass particles and the fundamental field the notion of subatomic charges "partons" was introduced [1]. So, the mass itself "becomes interpretable as a dependent quantity derived from a damped oscillation driven by random ZPF" [1]. The authors wrote about "internal kinetic energy" of the mass particle and it can be considered as a function of ZPF oscillation frequency. In the aether theory of mass there is a similar notion of "aether vortex", which represents some cyclical process of some frequency and it is possible to calculate its kinetic energy. This aether vortex model of matter elements allows to assume real methods to change parameters of vortex and to get changes in parameters of existence of the matter. On the other hand we can discuss the possibility to change some physical parameters of aether in areas of the vortex to get the same result. This possibility follows from the well-known N.Kozyrev's experiments, which were named "investigation of active properties of time". N.Kozyrev used chronal (temporal) approach in his theory. We have to change his notion "the density of time" to "the density of aether" to get a direct link between his experiments and the aether theory of mass.

N.Kozyrev and others have [4,5,6] experimentally demonstrated that irreversible processes in matter produced changes of aether density in the area of the experiment. Detectors of different type can register this change. It is obviously that any matter element (i.e. the aether vortex) in this area of changed aether density should get more inner (kinetic) energy or slow the inner motion. From the chronal point of view these are changes of inner time of this matter element.

Gravity shield

One more interesting point that is discussed in the article by Noever and Bremner [1] is a problem of gravity shield. The authors show that resonance interaction with ZPF produces "the particle mass" and it can be viewed as "a renormalized or "dressed" mass with a resonant interaction potential. Similar resonance approach is used in the conception of de Broglie's matter waves. Also the authors [1] mentioned the existence of an experimentally unobservable mass. In this case ZPF cannot be fundamentally shielded by matter since "frequency mismatch precludes gravity shielding by matter" [1]. The only way to get screening of ZPF fluctuations seems to be very complex: it is necessary to provide frequency matching for whole wavelength band of the oscillations.

I think some specialization is necessary here to explain experimental gravity anomalies with Bose condensates experiments (superfluid helium or superconductors): **special process in matter can be used as the gravity screen and this approach does not involve the frequency-matching problem.**

We have concluded above that any matter element is a resonance process and its energy is derived from ZPF. It is useful to note that these are longitudinal wave oscillations of energy density in aether. In this case, the gravity shield problem can be solved in frames of the aether vortex conception of matter.

The longitudinal wave is a moving (or standing) areas of rarified and thickened aether. Let's consider the moving wave, which is responsible for gravitation attraction effect. How can we stop, re-direct or reflect longitudinal wave in aether by means of aether vortexes (matter elements)? **We can produce interaction with this wave only by means of other longitudinal waves.**

In macro-level this idea can be realized as longitudinal wave generator. Electromagnetic processes, which can be used as sources of directed longitudinal waves, are known and some of them are described in [3]. In other way the gravity shield can be produced as longitudinal waves generated by natural aether vortexes (i.e. by matter elements) if the matter exist in a special exited state, for example for cases of resonance irradiation of superfluid helium or superconductor at 10-100 MHz frequencies.

Matter element as resonance process

In [1] the authors wrote that it is possible to calculate "the mass of any fundamental particle at its resonant frequency." There is the question: what is the general basis of whole spectrum of stable elements masses?

In 1996 the author published the article "The concept of mass process" [7]. At first in this work physical sense and notion of 3-dimensional curvature was introduced. By analogy with known mathematical notion of linear curvature $\rho_1 = \dfrac{1}{r}$ (where r is radius) and uniform surface curvature $\rho_2 = \dfrac{2}{r}$ it was proposed to calculate curvature of a 3-dimensional space as

$$\rho_3 = \frac{3}{r} \qquad (1)$$

The radius r in this case means that in a 3-space there is some periodical process. In other words, 3-dimensional matter is a resonance process.

Further, de Broglie used formulations E=hf and E=pc (where p is momentum, h is Planck constant, f is frequency and c is velocity of light) to derive the following:

$$hf=pc \qquad (2)$$

that allows us to get the well-known formulation

$$\lambda = \frac{h}{p} \qquad (3)$$

There is another logical branch of this idea that leads to the understanding of the mass properties of matter as a resonance process. Instead of E=pc in [7] it was proposed to use E=mc². In strength of the wave-particle duality we can write the equation

$$mc^2 = hf \qquad (4)$$

and from this equation the mass can be presented as resonance electromagnetic oscillations

$$m = \frac{h}{c^2} f \qquad (5)$$

Let's note that f=1/T, where T is some period of oscillation. So, we can write the following

$$m = \frac{h}{c^2} \frac{1}{T} \qquad (6)$$

where $\frac{h}{c^2}$ is new constant between mass and period of time.

There is an important conclusion: any mass is a process and there is some period of time, which corresponds to this mass. In other words, there is no physical sense of time separate from some process of existence of mass. Product mass and period is a constant value, which was named as a chronal constant

$$mT = \frac{h}{c^2} = const \qquad (7)$$

The chronal constant is a parameter of some real space and it is equal to $0.73725 \cdot 10^{-50} [Js^2/m^2]$

Also in this work [7] there was a demonstration of several examples of newly discovered physical law: spatial curvature of some natural objects (proton, planet, DNA molecule) is a whole number. There is some analogy with the nuclear physics notion of wave number. From this fact we can assume that main natural matter elements exist in main resonance states. For example, if Bohr radius is 0.52917 Angstrom, then we can find the wave-length $l = \pi d$ and the linear curvature is $\rho = 1/l = 3.0075 \cdot 10^9$ (m) and 3-dimensional curvature of this object is $\rho = 3/l = 1.0025 \cdot 10^9$ (m) that is unit of mater, corresponding to simplest atom, i.e. unit matter engine. Let's note that it is near the unit and some distortion of 0.0025 means non-ideal resonance state of the system.

Calculations for planet Earth in [7] were based on the known period of orbital rotation T=31557600 sec that corresponds to frequency of electromagnetic oscillations

$$f = 1/T = 3.168861 \cdot 10^{-8} (1/s) \qquad (8)$$

and wave-length

$$\lambda = c/f = 9.46... \cdot 10^{16} (m) \qquad (9)$$

The curvature (if this wave-length is considered as radius of the resonator) is following wave number

$$\rho = 1057.00 \cdot 10^{-20} (1/m) \qquad (10)$$

Also we can use other known data about the planet. Daily rotation period of our planet is known T=86400 sec and we can calculate its wavelength $\lambda = 3469,82(m)$ and corresponding curvature (wave-number). Sure, it is also a whole number with a good accuracy:

$$\rho = 2882 \cdot 10^{-7} (1/m) \qquad (11)$$

The laws of physics in macro cosmos and micro cosmos are similar. From these calculations it was assumed that whole formation of mass spectrum of stable chemical elements of matter is determined by similar physical mechanism.

Creation of mass

In short we can summarize that technology of longitudinal waves in aether is a real basis for creation of matter with mass and inertia properties. N. Tesla used this method to produce different objects: from ball lightning up to electrons. Velimir Abramovic says in his article [8]: "The principle of resonance and harmonic oscillation of aether seems to be so clear that all problems of modern physics, especially a problem of energy conversion, will be solved with its development. By means of his vacuum tube Tesla got protons, electrons and neutrons directly from aether and reproduced them at any distance. Instead of giving a possibility to the bundle of protons to move through space to some place, he created conditions for momentary appearance of arbitrary quantity of particles in the given place."

Any objects can be classified as aether vortex and parameters of this vortex determine its mass, electric charge and other properties of matter.

The "parton" as element of matter in [1] is a useful tool for description of physical properties of aether.

Longitudinal waves in Woodward's experiment

In [1] the authors state that resonant radiation in the required 10-100 MHz range appears to produce

anomalous effects for such Bose condensates as superconductors. In my opinion it is a particular case of discussed above technology of longitudinal waves in aether due to possibility of transformation of transverse electromagnetic waves in longitudinal waves in the superconductors. This transformation in plasma is a well known physical mechanism.

More facts to prove this idea: by Woodward [9] there is a special requirement, i.e. the frequency of mechanical vibrations should be twice the frequency of electrical oscillations in the capacitor, which demonstrates the weight anomalies. But from the other hand it is a common rule for creation of longitudinal weaves in plasma! Also it is a necessary condition for generation of parametrical oscillations! So, we can assume that basis of the effects in [1] and [9] is a generation of longitudinal wave in aether.

Conclusion

Any element of matter can be considered as resonance process of aether oscillations, which are longitudinal waves. There is an analogy with description of these longitudinal waves and well-known matter waves by de Broighl. Experimenting on the longitudinal waves generation and especially experiments on standing waves to get gradient of aether pressure allows to develop gravity control technology.

References

1. D. Noever and C. Bremner, NASA Marshall Space Flight Center, Large Scale Sakharov Condition, 35th AIAA/ASME/SAE/ASEE joint Propulsion Conference and Exhibit, 1999, Los Angeles, Ca, USA.

2. Alexander M. Mishin, The physical system of artificial biofield (experimental research of ether), New Energy Technologies, #1, 2001, p.45.

3. Kirill P.Butusov, Symmetrization of Maxwell-Lorenz equations, New energy Technologies, #2(5), 2002, p.14.

4. Kozyrev N.A. Selected Works, 1991, Leningrad, publ. by Leningrad State University.

5. L. Shikhobalov, N. Kozyrev's ideas today, New Energy Technologies #2 (5), 2002, p. 20.

6. Alexander V. Frolov, Kozyrev on possibility of decrease of mass and weight of the body, New Energy Technologies #2 (5), 2002, p. 35.

7. The Concept of Mass Process, Frolov A.V., Proceedings of the congress "New Ideas in Natural Sciences", 1996, St.Petersburg, published by PiK Co., p.123-134.

8. Tesla, Velimir Abramovic, New Energy technologies, #1(4) 2002, p.17.

9. Woodward, J.F. A Stationary Apparent Weight Shift From a Transient Machian Mass Fluctuation, Foundations of Physics Letters, 5, p.425-442, 1992.

Gerlovin's Theory of Activation

Alexander V. Frolov

It is a review of the famous book by Ilia L. Gerlovin "Basis of unified theory of all interactions in matter" published in 1990, St.Petersburg, Russia. We hope this article let you discover some new aspects of physical vacuum structure to develop more new experimental methods. Comments made by Alexander V. Frolov, Editor.

In [1] the author wrote about different methods to activate water solutions: mechanical, thermal, acoustic, magnetic and electrical. One of the known methods is an activation by means of electrohydraulic method. There is also some information about activation of other mediums, mainly liquids, but also some gases and solid bodies.

There are no theoretical explanations of these facts to explain all aspects of these phenomena. Furthermore, complexity of interpretation of these phenomena in frames of common physical notions induced some scientists to announce these phenomena as non-existing and "illegal".

Ilia L. Gerlovin formulated the physical principles of theory of activation of mediums on the basis of new physical theory, the Theory of Fundamental Field (TFF).

These principles are based on his two important conclusions from the TFF:

a) "Space around us is not empty, physical vacuum consists of material physical objects, i.e. elementary particles of vacuum (EPV). These particles are responsible for main activation processes;

b) Force interactions between atoms in molecule, between molecules in crystals has not spherical symmetry in the crystals of solid bodies, but an axial symmetry and the interactions are changing in time with very high frequency of about 10^{18} Hz. This feature of force interactions also makes its own contribution to the activation of mediums." [1, p. 314]

So, it was assumed that the phenomenon of activation of mediums can be defined as anisotropy of force interactions, which leads to **"meta-stable state, which can be called *structurally activated state of the given structure"*.**

Here is some difference in principle between chemical term "activation", which characterizes a transformation of molecule or atom in some active state with an increased energy, which is sufficient to provide a chemical reaction. It is *energy activation.* **Gerlovin described new notion, a *structural activation:* "This phenomenon can be classified as some change of structure of activation object. With this, energy of molecule can have no changes, and *active properties***

Coupled with aetherodynamics time conception, which was suggested by Alexander V. Frolov, the works on the control of space-time parameters gain the possibility for development and commercial application. As a theoretical basis there are those N. Kozyrev works where his conception of "time density" are replaced by that of "aether density" according to Frolov.

In September 2002, Faraday Labs Ltd Company plans to complete testing of the first experimental system, and to start the patenting and research of applied aspects, first of all in medicine.

Physical Principles of the Time Machine

Alexander V. Frolov

Experimental success of research team headed by Dr. Vadim A. Chernobrov, Moscow was reported in [1]. The time course can be controlled as rate of any process in local space-time (inner space of the Time Machine). It can be decelerated or accelerated by means of special "converging electromagnetic waves". Ordinary waves move from the source whereas special "converging waves" move to some central point, i.e. into the focus of the system. In Chernobrov's design of the Time Machine this process is organized by means of several spherical envelops, which consist of several electromagnets. Electronic control unit controls the processes in this design. Dr. Chernobrov reported about 3% change of the time course in 4th version of the system, which was tested with a human inside. The goal of Dr. Chernobrov's work is to research the medical aspects and experimental investigation of the principles. Several important conclusions were obtained from the project: the time course can be controlled and character of the changes is different for acceleration and deceleration mode.

Other known publication and research projects on the same topic seem to be very far from any commercial and practically useful application. Obviously the topic is very new and fantastic for most of scientific community and at first we have to clarify the physical principles of the time control project, which is started by Faraday Labs Ltd.

In this project we believe that notion of time is one of possible description of real physical properties of our Universe. So, it is not mathematical abstraction but some aspect of physical reality and we can discover some physical properties of time. Russian astrophysicist N. A. Kozyrev [2] developed a theory of active properties of time and according to his point of view there are two properties: time course and time density. Prof. Kozyrev demonstrated experimentally that time density in area of some process (changes of matter) is dependent on entropy parameters of the processes. In [3] it was demonstrated that Kozyrev's experiments could be interpreted in aether theory and it has led to simple physical conclusions and clear experimental perspectives: **time course and its density can be explained and controlled as parameters of aether.** Directions of aether flow and density of aether are

subjects of experimenting with non-reversible changes in matter, for example, in crystallization or melting processes. Also it is possible to use special electromagnetic processes, for example, Chernobrov's "converging waves" or other longitudinal waves as methods of aether compression or rarefaction. If we assume that process of existence of elements of matter physically can be explained as aether vortex processes then its rate is a parameter of **aether income/outcome balance** (aether inflow in element of matter and aether outflow from the element of matter). It was also described in Time Rate Control (TRC) theory [3]. To control this balance it is necessary to develop technology of longitudinal waves generation, its focusing and resonance effects. The previous research and experimenting on the topic has been made by N. Tesla.

Let's assume that we have some technology to change parameters of time course. How should we organize this local space-time (what is spatial topology of the design)? There is a very interesting experiment to get the answer: rotation of a heavy cone (for example, lead cone) entrains surrounding aether, so a vortex appears, which is a toroidal formation of aether (rings). The rings can exist in space for a long period. The further question is: Why does the beam of light (laser beam) directed to the cone by tangent create a luminous ring? We can assume that due to natural properties of photons (light propagates along the geodesic line in space) some autonomous closed toroidal space should be created in such experiment. The next thought is: since space and any matter exist in time then we can speak about some autonomous time. The general conclusion is to be the following: autonomous 4-dimensional space-time can be created as toroidal aether vortex.

Here is point to note some aspects of research project by Prof. Robert Mallett, Connecticut University, USA. In fact, sometime next year, he hopes to produce the first piece of technology that eventually will allow him to build a time machine. By Mallett it will be a device that employs lasers "to twist space". Why is he going to close the beam of light? His theoretical background is knowledge about black holes, i.e. understanding of the connection between gravity and curvature of space-time. In Einstein's theory both matter and energy can bend space and time. So Prof. Mallett assumes that curvature of space-time can be changed not only by mass (like a black hole) but it can be affected by energy of photons. This has led Prof. Mallett to consider the possibility of using a circulating beam of light to twist space and to create closed loops in time. It is predicted that a spinning neutral particle, when placed in the ring, is dragged around by the resulting gravitational field [4]. From the

first view it is the same approach we have considered above (experiment with aether toroidal rings). But proposals by Prof. Mallett differ in principle from the aether conception.

The main aspect of this technology is a creation of autonomous (self-closed) toroidal space-time. Autonomous geodesic world line of this space-time is self-closed. Any photon should be circulating in this system due to its properties: photon is always moving along the straight line of the space.

More deep understanding of this technology follows from the explanation of photon as oscillation of aether. Any photon can be considered as result of relative motion of the matter (observer) in absolute space (immovable aether). Usually a photon is considered as moving object in space. But we can assume that observer is in the motion and the photon is oscillations of the absolute space (immovable aether). Which approach is more real one? Sure, it is more easy to consider a photon as moving object but let's remember fact of our real motion in the Universe and fact of the Universe expansion.

So, ideas by Prof. Mallett are very far from the **aether nature of the time phenomenon.** He follows the black holes theory and general understanding of space-time distortion due to mass or energy presence. Also he knows that a light beam should be closed in a ring. However Prof. Mallett is very far from physical basis of the effects. **The key of time rate control is technology of artificial aether flow, creation of aether vortex systems (AVS), management on density and direction of aether flow.** There are several technical methods to produce it. Any light beam should be curved in self-closed "light ring" if it is placed in a toroidal aether vortex and we can say that this system has own space-time.

What does "some changes of time course" mean? We can measure it as some changes of standard rate of oscillation process, for example, some stable wavelength of laser beam or quartz oscillations. There is a well-known experiment with two atomic clocks (one of the clocks is placed on the roof of some building and another one is placed on surface of planet). Due to vertical component of gravity the time course should be different and it can be measured. How can we organize difference in these measurements if both atomic clocks are placed in the same altitude?

It is necessary to consider gravity nature in frames of the aether conception. Two atomic clocks demonstrate difference in measurements due to difference in aether flow density. Hence, by means of aetherodynamics methods it is possible to control the rate of oscillation processes in the atomic clocks and in any matter (i.e. time course itself).

The aetherodynamics methods have a clear analogy with electrodynamics: **motion of charge produce field and there is the induction law**. Really, classical electrodynamics can be considered as particular case of the aetherodynamics. So, physical sense of any field is stress or deformation (it is some static field) or oscillations of aether.

Let's introduce the notion of chronal (temporal) charge to consider some technical aspects. In electrodynamics we assume an electric charge as element of matter with positive or negative electric properties and we have to compare it with some reference (zero charge or test charge). Let's note that in any case we have to consider "charge of some particle" but not an "abstract charge". So, we can postulate that any element of matter has **zero chronal charge** if it is moving from Past in Future with standard (usual for measurements of surface of our planet) time course. If the time course (i.e. existence of some element of matter) is decelerated then it can be measured as decrease of standard oscillation frequency of the matter. Time course acceleration means some increase of standard oscillation frequency of the matter. Let's determine that in the first case it is negative chronal charge and in the second case it is some positive chronal charge. Atomic clock is one of possible methods to measure zero chronal charge or to find some relative positive or negative difference.

It is predicted here that motion of chronal charge should produce a chronal field. Some provisional data was received by Frolov from simple experiments on the rotation of a heat source. Accelerated motion of chronal charge (changes of density of chronal current) should produce aethero-induction effect that is an analogy (or more general case) of Faraday's induction effect. This effect can be detected as secondary (induced) deceleration of time course in nearest area of accelerated time matter. Another case is a secondary (induced) acceleration of time course in the nearest area of decelerated time matter.

Technical realization of aethero-induction method seems to be very close to idea, which is described in classical epic "Back to the Future". At first, it is necessary to create or to collect some chronal charge in a "flux condenser" and then to accelerate it in space up to some velocity. According to the aether conception, this creation of the chronal charge is a real technical process.

It is assumed that estimated chronal effects are demonstrated as some threshold field, i.e. space-time has some stable discrete energy levels and changes of its curvature should have discrete threshold mode. All new aspects disclosed in this paper are the subject of a patent process. Faraday Labs Ltd organizes experimental program on the topic. Practical application of this technology is new energy systems and propulsion methods.

References

1. Chernobrov V.A. Experiments with a man in the Time Machine, New Energy Technologies, #3 November-December 2001, p.6.
2. Kozyrev N.A. Selected works, Publ. by Leningrad State University, 1991.
3. Frolov A.V. Practical application of the Time Rate Control theory, New Energy Technologies, #3 November-December 2001, p. 15.
4. Mallett, R.L., Weak gravitational field of the electromagnetic radiation in a ring laser, Phys. Lett. A, 2000.

investigated completely yet. It was found also that harmful effect on biological systems is not related to the process of movement in Time itself but is a result of the difference of the Time rate value in various parts of a body (a biological system).

Inside of the laboratory setup it was also discovered that Time could be changed with some inertia. Areas of space having different Time rates have vague borders. With sufficient difference in Time rate the human can see an area with a different Time rate as some white mist. Higher the difference – the mist is denser, that can be used as an alarm signal for biological systems. It is possible to consider Time-travel as possible and (after experiments with mice) there are reasons to suppose it will be safe for travelers if they follow certain rules. It is especially necessary to emphasize: the trips through Time (due to new discovered properties of Time) can't affect the Past and they can't change our past history. All the so-called paradoxes for the traveler in Time (for example when "he meets himself in the Past" or "he kills his grandfather in his childhood" have clear solutions in 3-dimensional Time.

It is possible to consider as a proven fact that Time has more than one dimension, i.e. O. Bartini's theoretical calculations are confirmed by these experiments: Time has 3 dimensions. Hence our Earth world can be considered as a 6-dimensional object: length, width, height, age or date of Time, variant of a History or erosion of Time, density or rate of Time. The concept of "the Arrow of Time" as fourth dimension (moment of Time) is a particular case of the concept of sixth dimension (rate of Time) that leads to the physical concepts of gravitation and energy and they are simultaneously connected. Concepts of the " Einstein-Rosen bridges" known since 1916 or "worm-holes"

introduced into science by John Willer in the 50's, are travels in 5th and 6th dimensions, i.e. the "classical" Time travels, which were described by H. Wells.

Editor's: As the reader could note, the author does not disclosure the secrets of the TM design. From the photo you can see the electromagnets, which form the regular stereometrical construction as well as the cables from the TM to the control unit. Dr. Chernobrov mentioned the converging electromagnetic waves only. So, to understand how it works, it is necessary to get a clear notion of the converging electromagnetic waves. Let's imagine the ripple effect created by a stone in the water. The waves move from a central point to periphery. The converging waves are just an opposite process: the waves move from periphery to the central point. Is it possible in Nature? Yes, sure. Dr. Chernobrov wrote: "Let's throw a hoop on the water and inside of the hoop we'll see converging waves." The Time Machine technology by Dr. Chernobrov is based on the similar principle.

Time Machine Project

Alexander V. Frolov

Scientific Expert of the Russian Physical Society,
General Director, Faraday Lab Ltd
Tel/fax: 7-812-380-6564 Tel: 7-921-993-2501
Email: director@faraday.ru   alex@frolov.spb.ru

May 29, 2002

Faraday Labs Ltd and Dr. Vadim Chernobrov have signed the agreement on scientific-research work on investigation of active properties of time.

In the course of the previous experimental works, carried out by Dr. Chernobrov's research team during the period from 1984-2002, four versions of Time Machine had been made and tested. At these devices (the biggest system is about 1 meter in diameter) the effects of deceleration and acceleration of time course were created and measured. The principles of control of time course velocity were based on the

Alexander V. Frolov, General Director Faraday Labs Ltd and Ph. Dr. Vadim A. Chernobrov have just signed the Contract

interconnection of electromagnetic processes and physical properties of space-time. Special electromagnets, operating in pulse mode, are placed at the spherical frame. They create the so-called "converging wave", which by Alexander Frolov is a longitudinal wave in nature.

Coupled with aetherodynamics time conception, which was suggested by Alexander V. Frolov, the works on the control of space-time parameters gain the possibility for development and commercial application. As a theoretical basis there are those N. Kozyrev works where his conception of "time density" are replaced by that of "aether density" according to Frolov.

In September 2002, Faraday Labs Ltd Company plans to complete testing of the first experimental system, and to start the patenting and research of applied aspects, first of all in medicine.

Physical Principles of the Time Machine

Alexander V. Frolov

Experimental success of research team headed by Dr. Vadim A. Chernobrov, Moscow was reported in [1]. The time course can be controlled as rate of any process in local space-time (inner space of the Time Machine). It can be decelerated or accelerated by means of special "converging electromagnetic waves". Ordinary waves move from the source whereas special "converging waves" move to some central point, i.e. into the focus of the system. In Chernobrov's design of the Time Machine this process is organized by means of several spherical envelops, which consist of several electromagnets. Electronic control unit controls the processes in this design. Dr. Chernobrov reported about 3% change of the time course in 4th version of the system, which was tested with a human inside. The goal of Dr. Chernobrov's work is to research the medical aspects and experimental investigation of the principles. Several important conclusions were obtained from the project: the time course can be controlled and character of the changes is different for acceleration and deceleration mode.

Other known publication and research projects on the same topic seem to be very far from any commercial and practically useful application. Obviously the topic is very new and fantastic for most of scientific community and at first we have to clarify the physical principles of the time control project, which is started by Faraday Labs Ltd.

In this project we believe that notion of time is one of possible description of real physical properties of our Universe. So, it is not mathematical abstraction but some aspect of physical reality and we can discover some physical properties of time. Russian astrophysicist N. A. Kozyrev [2] developed a theory of active properties of time and according to his point of view there are two properties: time course and time density. Prof. Kozyrev demonstrated experimentally that time density in area of some process (changes of matter) is dependent on entropy parameters of the processes. In [3] it was demonstrated that Kozyrev's experiments could be interpreted in aether theory and it has led to simple physical conclusions and clear experimental perspectives: **time course and its density can be explained and controlled as parameters of aether.** Directions of aether flow and density of aether are

subjects of experimenting with non-reversible changes in matter, for example, in crystallization or melting processes. Also it is possible to use special electromagnetic processes, for example, Chernobrov's "converging waves" or other longitudinal waves as methods of aether compression or rarefaction. If we assume that process of existence of elements of matter physically can be explained as aether vortex processes then its rate is a parameter of **aether income/outcome balance** (aether inflow in element of matter and aether outflow from the element of matter). It was also described in Time Rate Control (TRC) theory [3]. To control this balance it is necessary to develop technology of longitudinal waves generation, its focusing and resonance effects. The previous research and experimenting on the topic has been made by N. Tesla.

Let's assume that we have some technology to change parameters of time course. How should we organize this local space-time (what is spatial topology of the design)? There is a very interesting experiment to get the answer: rotation of a heavy cone (for example, lead cone) entrains surrounding aether, so a vortex appears, which is a toroidal formation of aether (rings). The rings can exist in space for a long period. The further question is: Why does the beam of light (laser beam) directed to the cone by tangent create a luminous ring? We can assume that due to natural properties of photons (light propagates along the geodesic line in space) some autonomous closed toroidal space should be created in such experiment. The next thought is: since space and any matter exist in time then we can speak about some autonomous time. The general conclusion is to be the following: autonomous 4-dimensional space-time can be created as toroidal aether vortex.

Here is point to note some aspects of research project by Prof. Robert Mallett, Connecticut University, USA. In fact, sometime next year, he hopes to produce the first piece of technology that eventually will allow him to build a time machine. By Mallett it will be a device that employs lasers "to twist space". Why is he going to close the beam of light? His theoretical background is knowledge about black holes, i.e. understanding of the connection between gravity and curvature of space-time. In Einstein's theory both matter and energy can bend space and time. So Prof. Mallett assumes that curvature of space-time can be changed not only by mass (like a black hole) but it can be affected by energy of photons. This has led Prof. Mallett to consider the possibility of using a circulating beam of light to twist space and to create closed loops in time. It is predicted that a spinning neutral particle, when placed in the ring, is dragged around by the resulting gravitational field [4]. From the

Kozyrev-Dirak Radiation
Its influence on animals

Dr. Ivan M. Shakhparonov

International Academy of Energy-Informational Sciences

In the experiment with animals, that were made in the Center of Oncology Researches (COR) at the Russian Academy of Medical Sciences (RAMS), on the applying of Kozyrev-Dirak's Focused Radiation (KDFR), it has been found that KDFR decreases the quantity of glucose in the blood, reduces its tenacity, promotes the strengthening of immunity and the rise of the quantity of marrow cells.

Introduction

This time researchers in Russia and abroad experiment on ball lightnings by means of nonoriented circuits, which are similar to the electric analogues of Mobius band, also by means of Klein bottle and their combinations. Non-oriented fields are investigated very intensively now. Accordingly, organisms of the researchers, who observe the interactions of such fields with a matter, are also changed, thus they should take it into account on making such experiments. The aim of the article is to show in which way the fields of nonoriented circuits influence on animal and human organism. Besides the article has for its object the prevention of negative consequences, which can appear for experimenters through the research process.

Experiments with animals that were carried out in 1992-1993 in Russian Academy of Medical Sciences (RAMS) had not been published in proper time because there were no quantitative methods of radiation detection. Later, in 1996 they were developed [1] and KDFR parameters were measured in that geometry, which were applied in RAMS. In 1998 powerful and super-powerful KDRF sources were obtained. These sources were applied (and are applied now) in the researches at the controlled radioactive decay [2]. Kozyrev and Nasonov [3] and later also Lavrentyev with the collaborators [4,5] have proved experimentally that the Sun and some stars generate the radiation, which has early unknown properties. We suggest that the radiation, discovered by Kozyrev [3], and the radiation, which is researched by us and by other experimenters with nonoriented circuits, are of the same phenomenon. At first, it should be noted that on interaction between Kozyrev-Dirak radiation (KDR) and a matter made it colder. As it was demonstrated above [1], cooling effect can be explained by matter re-magnetization under the influence of KDFR beam (adiabatic demagnetization). According to the still unpublished data, KDFR bunch destroys matter lattice by the way of it's moving. However, after a couple of week matter reconstructs it to the almost tabulated points, without defects, blockness and other damages, which are peculiar to other natural crystal structures. **In the definite sense nature demonstrates the way to rejuvenate compound structures**. As it is well known, vital functions of biological systems on the Earth depend on the structure and composition of water. Therefore, we have a right to expect considerable changes in the vital functions of biological organisms under the influence of KDFR.
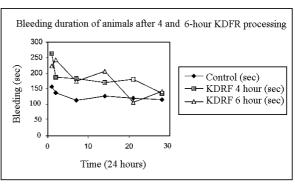
Experimental Devices

In experiments with animals there were applied the devices, which concentrated KDR (KDCR) and had 50 Wtt aggregate electrical power. The description is presented in [2].

KDFR indication was obtained by calorimetric method [1], along the way of movement of the main bunch (with 10 cm across diameter) and at angle of 45° from the geometrical axis of a device.

Researches of Bleeding Duration

Let us consider KDFR influence on the blood composition of animals. At the experiment 24-28 gram weighting, pelletized fed male mice were used. In the process of the experiment it was discovered that 3 and 4 hour processing of mice with KDFR at the distance 2.5 m and at the presence of animals in the sphere of maximum radiating power, caused some changes of fibrillation system. The bleeding duration was determined according to Duke method. Two groups of animals were used at the experiments: a group with 4-hour duration of KDRF processing and a group with 6-hour duration. Time of bleeding was considered in dynamics at 1, 2, 7, 14, 21, 28 and 35 day (Fig. 1). The bleeding duration of the intact animals was determined by the value 128 ± 11 sec. After the applying of KDFR there was noticed some increase of bleeding duration to 261 ± 15 sec and 223 ± 21 sec on the first day after the stopping of the influence. In the subsequent periods bleeding duration gradually decreases up to the level of physiological norm. The whole normalization of the index is observed at the animals, which were processed by KDFR during 4 and 6 hours, on 28-35 day up to 115 ± 12 and 133 ± 18 sec correspondingly. In the process of observations at the animals, the correlation between time of fibrillation and periods of KDRF processing of the animals has not been revealed (Fig. 1).

Fig.1

In the course of the experiment the strongly marked chronometric hypocoagulation was discovered due to the extension of the parameter "K" or, probably, because of the change of aggregation properties of platelets (Table 1).

For the determination of biochemical indexes serum was obtained from 5-8 ml of rats' venous blood. Beforehand (24 hours before the slaughter), forage was taken away from the animals. The determination of biochemical indexes was provided by means of biochemical analyzer HITACHI. As a result of the experiment it was determined that at the first day after influence of KDRF there was a tendency of decrease of the glucose content (Table 2). Other indexes varied in the limit of physiological norm.

Table 1 Parameters of thromboflexogramm after KDFR, 4 hours

Animal #	Parameters of thromboflexogramm			Fibrio gene	Fibrinal activity
	R (sec)	K (sec)	Ma (mm)		
1	72	∞	10	-	-
2	102	∞	18	-	-
1	90	∞	10	275	75
2	180	150	52	315	90
1	180	∞	5	-	100

Table 2 KDFR influence on the glucose content in blood of the rats

Time (days) after the experiment	KDFR 4 hours (mmole/l)	Test (mmole/l)	KDFR 6 hours (mmole/l)	Test (mmole/l)
1	3.14	6.12	6.39	7.27
10	7.59	9.35	8.90	6.69
30	6.05	6.69		

Research of haemopoiesis system

Several criteria were considered: the dependence of biological effect on the distance, on the power flux density, on the duration of processing. Besides, KDRF influence on mice survival was considered.

At the experiment 24-28 gram weighting, pelletized fed male mice were used. The marrow was examined in the dynamic at 1, 3 and 7 day after KDFR influence. Six animals were taken on each point. After the decapitation of the mouse their thighbones were taken out and after that the absolute number of myelokaryocytes was calculated by the standard method in Goryaev chamber.

Dependence of the biological effect on the distance

In all experiments the maximum flux density along the geometrical axis of KDCR device was a constant. There were used four temporal modes of the influence (1, 2, 3, 4 hours) and three points of long distance between KDSR and the biological object (0.5; 1.5; and 2.5 m). At 0.5 m distance there were no differences in the number of marrow cells in comparison with the control cells. With the increase of distance between KDCR and the object from 0.5 to 1.5 m some tendency to the increase of the number of marrow cells up to the 7th day was observed. Four-hour KDRF processing caused the increase of the number of karyocytes up to $29.99\pm1.25\times10^6$ (P<0,001).

Thus, any dependence of the biological effect on the exposition has not been revealed. For instance, at the 7th day after one hour of the exposition the number of karyocytes was equal to $28.45\pm1.87\times10^6$ at the same time after 3-hour processing it came to $27.65\pm0.74\times10^6$. Alongside with the change of the distance to the biological object from 1.5 to 2.5 m the tendency towards the increase of the number of marrow cells has kept within the same limits $28.27\pm1.32\times10^6$ and $29.57\pm0.88\times10^6$.

Dependence of the biological effect on the power flux density

The comparative investigation of KDFR influence on the biological object in the coverage of KDCR (along its geometric axis) and outside the coverage has demonstrated that alongside with the increase of the radiation intensity there was a tendency towards the decrease of stimulative influence of KDFR on haemopoiesis.

Dependence of the biological effect on the duration of processing

On processing the animals at distances up to 2.5 m from KDCR and on increase of exposition to 3-4 hours it is possible to obtain reliably significant difference in the number of marrow cells from the physiological norm to the 7th day.

KDRF influence on the survival of mice

The experiments, determining the survival reaction of animals, were made by means of gamma radiation. 30-day survival is the criterion of determination. Conditions for the experiments are the following: in the coverage of KDCR and aside the coverage, (the distance between the KDCR and the object is 2.5 m in the coverage of KDCR and 0.5m outside the coverage). Time of influence is 4 hours. Animals of both sex were used. Two groups of animals were used. The test group was put to the gamma radiation in the diapason of doses, which caused marrowy syndrome, i.e. from 7.5 to 8.5 Gr. The second group of animals after the irradiation in the same diapason of doses was repeatedly processed with KDFR. Time of the influence is 4 hours at 7.5 Gr gamma radiation on 15 mice in one bath and 8.5 Gr on 15 mice in another bath. Total gamma radiation of the animals was made by means of the source ^{137}Cs with the dosage rate of 5.2 Gr/min. Gamma radiation in this dose diapason causes death of the animals during the development of the marrowy syndrome, i.e. from the 6th to the 20th day along with the aplasia of haematogenic tissue. Combination of gamma radiation and KDFR sometimes leads to the slight increase of the number of survived animals. If the animals are irradiated by gamma rays at first and then by KDFR, the death control at 7.5 Gr radiation is equal to 5.5% from the total number of the animals and at the following KDFR processing 16% of the irradiated animals die. However, 67% of the animals in the tested group have died after KDFR processing and after the coming next gamma radiation with 8.5 Gr total dose. And in the group, which was processed with KDFR, only 46% of the animals died.

Immunity strengthening

For the investigation of KDFR influence the following tests were chosen: activity of natural killers and T-killers, which had been obtained by the immunization in vitro in the unidirectional mixed culture of lymphocytes and also in the reaction of blast transformation on the specific mitogen [6, 7]. All tests were made on the 7th day after a single KDFR influence. Unfortunately, data have been obtained with the applying of radioisotope preparations. Though the experiments of this kind were successful and though they have demonstrated the increase of some immune reactions' level, there is a certain doubt in the relevancy of radioisotopes application [2]. Thus the series of experiments was made. These experiments were aimed at the investigation of KDFR influence on the development of the swelling process. The aim of the experiment is the investigation of KDFR influence on the development of Ehrlich cancer and sarcoma-37, which were repeatedly inoculated to mice. At the first stage of the experiment there was a single KDFR influence on the mice repeatedly inoculated with sarcoma-37, on the 2nd day after the repeated inoculation of the swelling cells to the animals. The repeated inoculation was made intramuscularly in a right thigh, in a dose 10^6 of cells per a mouse. Time of KDFR influence for the first group of animals was equal to 1 hour; for the second one it

came to 2 hours; and for the third one it came to 4 hours. Each group consisted of 6 animals. The test group consisted of six mice with repeatedly inoculated sarcoma-37 and which had not been processed with KDFR. As a result, the average lifetime of tested animals was equal to 9 days. The average lifetime of animals of KDFR groups came to 48 days (for 1-hour KDFR influenced group); to 12 days (for 2-hour group); and to 31 days (for 4-hour group). Thus, the average lifetime of the experimental group came to 29 days. Besides, in the group, which has been processing with KDFR during 1 hour, **the half of mice had survived (three of six mice).**

At the second stage of the experiment the repeated (5 times during 2 hours) KDFR influence on the mice was applied. These mice have been inoculated with sarcoma-37 at seven days before the beginning of the influence. As a result, the average lifetime of the animals was equal to 27 days, and for the mice, which were processed with fivefold KDFR influence, the average lifetime was equal to 76 days. The obtained results are the evidence of inhibition of swelling development for the animals, which were processed with KDFR influence. This leads to the increase of lifetime of such animals in comparison with the test. **Thereby, at a great extent the results of the previous experiments on the strengthening of immune status after KDFR influence were confirmed.**

Results and discussion

Let us make a conclusion. At the KDFR influence on animals' organism the following effects were observed: decrease of blood viscosity; strongly pronounced hypocoagulation; decrease of contents of glucose. Increase in the number of karyocytes and the extended lifetime of the animals, infected with Ehrlich cancer and sarcoma-37 were also observed.

As for human being, the researches in this area have not been carried out yet and they are still confined to the single observations. It is possible to give an example from the author's practice. In 1975 nonoriented circuit of 3kWtt power was examined. Field strength was measured. The author of the article had been working in the field for about 8 hours. And after five hours after the experiment I had felt bad. That time it was nothing known about the influence of the new radiation on human organism. The arrived ambulance has quickly diagnosed that I was close to hypoglycemic coma. On several hours after the intravenous glucose injection, my state has become normal. **Now we know that before the experiments with powerful KDFR bunches it is necessary to eat sugar.** Thus we believe that the data, which were obtained after the experiments with animals, can be applied to a human being. We can suggest that the manifestation of the symptoms of the KDFR influence on human organism depends on the power of the applied source, on the total mass of the organism and on the time of it in the coverage of the irradiation. From aforesaid it is clear that the experiment with powerful KDFR sources is far from being harmless

and it is better to make it distantly after exclusion of man presence near experimental stands and devices. At the same time it is quite obvious that on applying of small capacity and fixed time of irradiation it is possible to develop methods for curing of human diseases, which are considered now as incurable (for instance of diabetes, some diseases of haematogenic system, of cancer and possibly of AIDS.

References

1. Proceeding of the International Scientific Conference "New Ideas in Natural Sciences" Problems of Modern Physics, p. 176-187

2. Journal of new energy, Vol. 3, #4,1999, I.M. Shakhparonov "Interaction between Kozyrev – Dirak radiation and radionuclides", p. 85-89

3. Kozyrev N.A. Selected works, Leningrad State University, 1991, part 3

4. Lavrentyev M.M. Eganova I.A. Luzet M.L., Fominykh S.F.// Reports by AS USSR. – 1990, Vol. 314, #2, p. 352-355

5. Lavrentyev M.M., Gusev V.A., Eganova I.A., Luzet M.L., Fominykh S.F.// Reports by AS USSR. – 1990, Vol. 315, #2, p. 368-370

6. Methodological materials on experimental pharmacological and clinical trials of immune modulating effect of pharmacological remedies. - Ministry of Health USSR, M., 1984

7. Talmadge J.E. and Chiragos M.A. Comparison of immunomodulatory and immunotherapeutic properties of biologic response modifiers. Springer Seminar Immunopathol., 1985, 8, 429-443

Effect of Magnetic Blow Wave Field on Wine Systems

I.M.Shakhparonov (Corresponding author), S.A.Grin, S.R.Tsimbalaev, L.N.Kreindel, V.N.Kocheshkova, A.I.Podlesny, S.Yu.Gelfand

AGD Firm, Peschanyi pereulok, House No.20P korpus No.1, Lfl. 33 125252, Moscow, A- 252, Russian Federation

Russian Institute of Canning Industry, Shkolnaya Street. 78. 142703 Vidnoe 3. Moscow Region, Russian Federation

Introduction

Authors communicate the data on influence of Magnetic Blow Wave (MBW) field on several wineproducts. It was found, that MBW did not lead to significant changes in the major components of the wineproduct (sugar, organic acids, minerals). At the same time the taste and aroma of treated wine become more pleasant; content of heavy alcohols and wine stone in the treated samples was less than in non treated ones. A mechanism of transformations was also discussed.

Keywords: *Magnetic Blow Wave (MBW), Wineproduct, GLC of aroma compounds and ethanol, HPLC of sugars, Atomic Absorption Spectrometry (AAS) of minerals, Heavy alcohols and aldehydes, Wine stone, Turbidity tendency, Organoleptic evaluation*

Magnetic Blow Wave (MBW) was obtained for the first time during the investigations on ball lighting generation under the laboratory conditions (Shakhparonov 1994). MBW as a physical object is interesting because of some facts, which suggest that MBW is a magnetic monopole. The MBW can also interact with the matter and transforms it in a definite way. Typical example is an elementary carbon in the form of graphite, which is transformed by such magnetic treatment into ferromagnetic substance (ibid).

The graphite, which is initially diamagnetic, transforms to paramagnetic one with general radiation doze of about $7 \cdot 10^{19}$ neutrons/cm^2. Other types of radiations could not affect this way (Svoistva 1975). So one unit of MBW can be considered as $1 \cdot 10^5$ of neutron masses. This fact may be regarded as an indirect evidence for assuming that MBW and magnetic monopole are the same things. In the absence of excited radioactivity a slow MBW [v/c < $1 \cdot 10^4$] occurs, which does not ionize atoms (Devons, 1963). Therefore, their interaction with the matter can be observed only indirectly. No data exist on the interaction of MBW with organic substances. The experiments and results reported in the present communication may be a starting point for development of technology and to formulate the methods for vintage wine and best quality spirit production.

Materials and Methods

Assuming that MBW and magnetic monopole are the same things, a number of conditions were selected for all experiments. The MBW source and the samples were placed in the same axis and the axis was oriented according to magnetic meridian direction. Such magnetic orientation is appropriate, as the energy of magnetic monopole theoretically increases in a magnetic field (Devons, 1963). All of samples were placed at 250 cm distance from MBW source, in hermetically closed glasses. It should be noticed that MBW could penetrate through many other barriers, for example into cast iron reservoir with wall thickness of 5 cm (Amaldi, 1970).

The quality investigations were made by using of standard equipment. HPLC, equipped with refractometric detector was used for sugars estimation. Separation of organic acids in forms of their ethyl esters and acid esters was carried out chromatographically using a column packed with polyethylenglycol succinate and the following temperature option: initial temperature is 120°C, final temperature is 220°C, temperature growth rate: 8°/min. GLC was also employed for determination of ethanol. Minerals content

conclusion: in order to obtain complete information about any system, it should be destroyed. However, destruction of tissues of the man in order to get information about their state is a too high price to pay for the information about his health.

However, the above Van Hoven's criterion can be satisfied with the minimum influence, when the cells are not destroyed and the atoms of these cells, being primary sources of torsion spectrums to be registered, are bring into the non-equilibrium state by means of outer disturbing influence.

In order to choose the frequency of the disturbing torsion influence correctly, it is necessary to take into account the role of water in physical and biochemical organization of tissues of the human organism.

At the same time, it is necessary to take into account the resonance torsion frequencies of various human organs. Finally, it turns out that the signal of torsion disturbance should be rather sophisticated considering both these factors. The TORDI system is a ready-to-use production device. Nevertheless, it is important to understand that the model is not the limit of scientific and technical potential incorporated in it and that enhanced variants of the system will appear with the course of time.

Summing up, I would like to draw your attention once more to the fact that work on torsion technologies is not limited by the directions that were discussed here. Actually, as it was pointed out in the beginning, on-going development includes all branches of economy, industry, agriculture and medicine, as well as all problems of everyday life. Technologies that we mentioned are the forerunner of the fact that the mankind is on the threshold of the age of torsion technologies, which, we believe, will change our life in the 21st century more than all the scientific and technical revolutions of the 20th century.

Reference

1. Cartan E. Compates Rendus. Akad.Sci., Paris, 1922, v.174.
2. V.Melnikov, P.Pronin. Problem of gravitation constant stability and additional interactions. Itogi Nauki I Tekniki, ser. Astronomy, v.41, Gravitation and Astronomy, Moscow, VINTI, 1991.
3. G.I.Shipov Theory of the Physical Vacuum. Nauka, Moscow 1997.
4. I.Ternov, V.Bordovitsin. On the modern interpretation of classical spin theory of Ya.Frenkel. UFN, 1980, v.132, No.2.
5. V.Bagrov, V.Bordovitsin. Classical spin theory. Izvestiya VUZ, Phys.Series, 1980, No.2.
6. F.I.Belinfante. On the spin augular momentum of mesons. Physica VI, 1939, v-6, No.9.
7. M.Markov. The very early universe. Proc of the Nuttfield Workshop, Eds. G.V.Gibbson, S.W.Hawking, S.T.Siklov, Cambridge, 1988.
8. Hideo Uchida.A method apparatus for detecting a fluid. Patent England, No 511662, May 24, 1978.
9. Anatoly Akimov. Heuristic discussion of the problem of finding long-range interactions. EGS-concepts. CISE VENT, preprint N7A, Moscow, 1992.
10. IITAP RANS, TORTECH USA, Horizonts of the Science and Technology XXI age Proc, Editor A.E.Akimov, Folium, Moscow, 2000, vol.1 (in Russian).
11. N.Kozyrev, Astronomical observations by means of the physical properties of time. In "Flarestarse" International Symposium in Byurakan, 1976,Armenian Academy of Sciences Publ., Yerevan, 1977 (in Russian)
12. Bouwmecster D. et.al. Nature, v.390, 11 dec, 1997.
13. G.I.Shipov. Theoretical and Experimental Research of Inertial Mass of Four-Dimensional Gyroscope. ITTAP RANS, preprint N10, Moscow, 2001, (in Russia).
14. The way of correction of metal alloy microstructure. Patent Russian, RU 2107105, 1998.
15. A.Dolgov, Yu.Zel'dovich, M.Sazshin. Cosmology of the Early Universe. MGU Publ., Moscow, 1988.
16. I.A.Wheeler. Einstein's vision. Springer Verlag, 1968.
17. Convegno Internazionale:Quale Fisica per 2000, Proc. Bologna, 1991. see: The Manual of Energy Devices and Systems.
Complied D.A.Kelly, D.A.K. WLFUB, Burband, California, 1986, Publ. N1269/F-289.
18. Daytlov V.L. Polarization Model of the Heterogeneous Physic Vacuum. Institute Mathematical, Sibirians Academic Science, 1998 (in Russian).

The Electrical Vortex Non-Solenoidal Fields

Sergey B. Alemanov
E-mail: alemanov@inbox.ru Phone 7 (095) 323-6848

A mistake was found in the electrodynamics: it is detected that all electrodynamics' postulates corresponds to the experimental facts, but vortex electric fields has unclosed inductive lines.

When the magnet is moving, then the current of magnetic induction is moving together with it. From known velocity of motion **v** and the value of magnetic induction **B**, it is possible to calculate the intensity **E** of appearing vortex field according to electrodynamics formula of transformation of fields **E=vB**.

If to change the E=vB on induction $D = \varepsilon_0 E$ in formula of fields' transformation, that will get $D = \varepsilon_0 Bv$, where D is electric induction, B is magnetic induction, v is velocity of motion, ε_0 is electric constant.

Herewith the appearing electric induction is always transverse to the direction of motion. It is possible to formulate the rule of origin for electric induction under the condition of rectilinear motion: if to dispose the right hand palm so four fingers shows the motion direction of the magnetic flow (the field), connected with moving magnet, and the vector B fells into palm, then the moved aside big finger will indicate the direction of vector D. The given rule is like the rule for Lorenz' force, but on the contrary (the difference is in frame). In the first case the charge moves, but the magnet rests. Here the magnet moves, but the charge, which points the direction for lines of force of electric induction, is immovable. So, there it is the rule for left hand, but here, on the contrary, it is the rule for right hand. Thereby, if the charge moves, but the magnet is immovable, then the rule of left hand uses for determination of the force. But if the magnet moves, but the charge rests, then the rule of right hand uses for determination of the force.
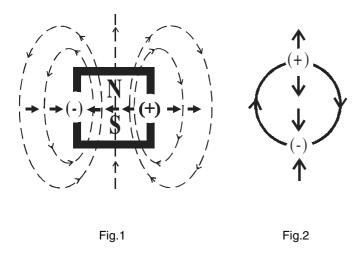
The origin of electric force is connected with that, the vortex electric field $D = \varepsilon_0 Bv$ appears around moving magnet (the magnetic field does not act on immovable charges).

In common literature on electrodynamics there is no any difference between electric vortex field and solenoidal field, but these are different notions. The sign of solenoidal field is the closed lines of electric induction (the flow of vector D through the closed surface is a zero), but for the vortex field the sign is following: the work of forces can be different from zero under the condition of motion along a closed line. That is to say, the vortex fields can agitate the rotational currents.

From the electrodynamics textbook: "The work of forces of vortex electric field can be different from zero, when the electric charge is moving along a closed line."

For instance, when the magnet moves, the vortex electric field appears and this field can be solenoidal or not, depending on magnet's orientation. Let's take such example: the magnet moves evenly, rectilinearly, and it's poles are oriented transversely to direction of motion. According to the rule of origin for electric induction ($D = \varepsilon_0 Bv$ that is the rule of right hand), the appearing vortex electric flow is not a solenoidal, since the lines of electric induction are not closed. Its begins in one conditional area of disturbance (+), accompanies the moving magnet, and it finish in another area of disturbance (-). For presentation it is enough to consider only two areas (+) and (-), represented on Fig.1. These dissimilar areas of disturbance appears because that flow of magnetic induction inside the magnet has the inverse direction, that outside the magnet.

Fig.1   Fig.2

That moving disturbance of electric and magnetic fields presents itself as transverse electromagnetic disturbance. Also, it is necessary to notice, that under such magnet's motion, the appearing vortex electric field is not closed, but the current of electric displacement, connected with it, is closed (a currents are always closed). In given example, for clarity, it is possible to present a intensity of electric field through the Lorenz' force, if to take the frame, in which the magnet rests, and the test charge moves.

On the Fig.1 the moving magnet is conditionally represented (motion is toward to the text, magnet is moving away). N and S are poles of magnet. The direction of lines of electric induction, appearing when the magnet is moving, specified by arrows → and ←. Part of the lines begins in positive area (+) and finishes in negative area (-), the areas are placed on the ends of magnet. **The flow of electric induction through closed surface is not a zero; that is to say, these areas of disturbance are moving electric charges.**

From the electrodynamics textbook again: "The flow of vector D through any closed surface is equal to algebraic amount of external charges, covered by this surface. In the electrodynamics these postulates has the same role, as Newton' laws in classical mechanics."

Thereby, according to postulate, it is necessary to consider the appearing dissimilar areas of disturbance (+) and (-) to electric charges, or it is necessary to change the postulate.

It is interesting, that a part of lines of electric induction, which placed frontal and behind magnet, starts and finish at infinity, since the distribution of magnetic induction around magnet has not determined borders.

For clarity, it is possible to make following calculation. For instance, the coil (loop or turn) with current, as a magnet, moves evenly and rectilinearly, but its magnetic poles are oriented transversely on motion direction. Under such motion the lines of electric induction are not closed, and the dissimilar areas of electric field's disturbance appears in space on the edges of this coil.

On Fig.2 the moving coil with current is conditionally represented. It moves from left to right side of the page. The arrows on the coil indicate the direction of current. The appearing dissimilar areas of disturbance of electric field are marked by signs (+) and (-). Knowing, that in medium of the coil $B = \mu_0 I / 2r$ and according to $D = \varepsilon_0 Bv$, it is possible to find the electric induction, appearing in the center, between two dissimilar areas $D = \varepsilon_0 \mu_0 Iv/2r$, where I is current in the coil, r is radius of the coil, v is velocity of motion, ε_0 is electric constant, μ_0 is magnetic constant. The electromagnetic disturbances in transverse electromagnetic waves has the similar field construction, there also dissimilar areas of disturbance of electric field exists, that is to say the lines of electric inductance are not closed. Only the currents of electric displacement and magnetic induction are closed.

Let's consider another example: magnet moves rectilinearly, but its poles are oriented longitudinally to direction of motion. According to the rule for origin of electric induction ($D = \varepsilon_0 Bv$ is the rule of right hand), the appearing rotational electric flow is solenoidal, since in this case the inductive lines become closed lines. **Usually in books on the electrodynamics such moving magnet is considered, and the wrong conclusion is thereof done, that vortex electric field is always**

solenoidal, herewith it is forgotten, that poles of the magnet can be oriented not only along the direction of motion, but across also.

From the electrodynamics textbook: "The vortex electric field differs from electrostatic field that it is not related with any electric charges and its lines of intensity are closed lines."

From theory and from experiments it follows, that under transverse motion of magnet the lines of disturbance of vortex electric field can be unclosed and, accordingly, the flow of induction through the closed surface is not a zero. Then there is a direct discrepancy to facts in modern electrodynamics. It is strange, but for the whole history of researches in magnetism the transverse magnet's motion was not is considered. It leads to revising of electrodynamics' postulates, which plays such role in electrodynamics, as the Newton's laws plays in classical mechanics. The postulates, giving invalid belief about field processes, accordingly, do not allow to make some correct calculations. Fallaciousness of these postulates was one of the reasons, on which the electrodynamics could not to consider and to calculate the discrete electromagnetic waves (photons), where the magnetic field also is the transverse field (the field construction and calculation of photons are represented on the page http://www.comail.ru/~alemanov). **That is to say, not only particles has the charges, but areas of disturbance of field (without particles) are the charges also,** where the flow of electric induction through the closed surface is not a zero. Thereby, the vortex electric fields can be not only as closed flows of induction, but as well as inducted electric charges, accordingly, the laws for electric charges are valid for induced electric charges also. For instance, in the law of conservation of charge: if somewhere the area of disturbance with positive sign appears, that negative area appears also.

From the electrodynamics textbook: "The vortex electric field is generated by the variable magnetic field. Its force lines are always closed, like force lines of magnetic field."

But before this fundamental postulate, confirming, that force lines of vortex electric field are always closed, it was necessary to consider all variants of change for the magnetic field, including the variant of the transverse motion of the magnet. That is to say, the consideration of physical processes could not be unilateral. Faraday considered the longitudal motion of magnet and discovered the electromagnetic induction, but the transverse motion of magnet that have the principle importance for understanding of field processes in electrodynamics was not considered. Thereby, the longitudal motion of magnet brings to arising a vortex electric field with closed force lines, but transverse motion of magnet brings to arising a vortex electric field, where the lines of forces are not closed. In this case it lead to induced electric charges. It is necessary to notice, that this is first mistake, detected in electrodynamics postulates for all time of existence of electrodynamics.

From the electrodynamics textbooks: "…Gauss' theorem is valid not only for electrostatics, but also for electrodynamics, which using a variable in time electromagnetic fields. We are not sure if this hypothesis is valid or it is not valid… Only the experiment can give the answer on this question. The whole collection of experimental facts speaks in favor of this hypothesis." But, unfortunately, the experiment with transverse motion of magnet was not considered seriously in this textbook.

(Editor's note: Well-known Searl's experiments and Godin & Roshchin's experiments are based on such transverse motion of magnets (rollers). In Alemanov's article it was demonstrated that in this case the experiment should lead to induced electric charges. Really it was detected in experiments. Hence this missed aspect of electrodynamics is very important for development of the new energy technologies.)

Gravito-Inert Mass

J.A. Asanbaeva

720000, Kyrgyzstan, Bishkek, Kadyrov's Scientific Center
+996 (312) 47-25-40, +996 (312) 65-02-83

bondarenko@nazaraliev-centre.com

Nature of mass is one of the important problems of modern physics. It is accepted to consider that the mass of elementary particle is determined by fields, which are connected with it (electromagnetic, nuclear and others). However, we didn't create any quantitative theory of mass. There is no theory to explain why masses of elementary particles form a discrete spectrum of values and to allow determining this spectrum.

Mass (m) is a physical value, one of characteristics of matter, which defines its inert and gravitational properties. Accordingly, we distinguish inert mass (m_i) and gravitational mass (m_g).

Inert mass (m_i) characterizes dynamical properties of a body, its property to accelerate under the action of the force $\left(\vec{F_i}\right)$ and according to the second Newton's law is considered to be constant coefficient of proportionality for the given body between $\vec{F}$ and acceleration $\vec{a}$.

$$\vec{F_i} = m_i\vec{a} \qquad (1)$$

Gravitational mass (m_g) is a source of gravity field. Every body creates its gravity field, which is

18. Kozyrev N.A. *Selected Transactions* (Leningrad University Press, Leningrad, 1991) (in Russ.).

19. Lavrent'ev M.M., Eganova I.A., Medvedev V.G., Olejnik V.K., and Fominykh S.F. *On Scanning of Celestial Sphere by Kozyrev's Sensor.* Doklady AN SSSR, 323 (4), p.649-652 (1992) (in Russ.).

20. Akimov A.E., Kovaltchuk G.U., Medvedev B.P., Oleinik V.K., Pugatch A.F. *Preliminary Results of Astronomic Observations of the Sky by the Kozyrev Procedure.* Academy of Sciences of Ukraine, Central Astronomic Observatory. Preprint CAO-92-5P, 1992, p.16 (in Russ.).

21. *Oleinik V.P. Superluminal Transfer of Information in Electrodynamics.* SPIE Material Science and Material Properties for Infrared Optoelectronics. 3890 p. 321-328 (1998) (http://www.spie.org /).

22. Oleinik V.P. *Faster-than-Light Transfer of a Signal in Electrodynamics.* Instantaneous Action-at-a-Distance in Modern Physics (Nova Science Publishers, Inc., New York, 1999), p.261-281.

23. Eganova I.A. *The World of Events Reality: Instantaneous Action as a Connection of Events through Time.* Instantaneous Action-at-a-Distance in Modern Physics (Nova Science Publishers, Inc., New York, 1999).

24. Lavrent'ev M.M. and Eganova I.A. *Physical Phenomena Predicted and Revealed by N.A.Kozyrev, in the Light of Adequacy of Space-Time to Physical Reality.* Philosophy of Science, 1(3), p.34-43 (1997) (in Russ.).

25. Logunov A.A. *Lectures in the Theory of Relativity and Gravity. A Present-Day Analysis of the Problem.* (Nauka, Moscow, 1987) (in Russ.).

26. Oleinik V.P. *The Newest Development of Quantum Electrodynamics: Self-Organizing Electron, Superluminal Signals, Dynamical Inhomogeneity of Time.* Physical Vacuum and Nature. 4 p.3-17 (2000) (in Russ.).

27. Jefimenko O.D. *Electromagnetic Retardation and Theory of Relativity* (Electret Scientific Company, Star City, 1997).

28. Oleinik V.P, Borimsky Ju.C., Arepjev Ju.D. *Time, What is this? Dynamical Properties of Time.* Physical Vacuum and Nature. 5 p.65-82 (2001); *New Ideas in Electrodynamics: Physical Properties of Time.* Semiconductor Physics, Quantum Electronics and Optoelectronics. 3 N4 p.558-565 (2000). E-print: quant-ph/0010027.

29. Borimsky Ju.C., Oleinik V.P. *The Course of Time in Classical and Quantum Systems and Dynamical Principle.* Physical Vacuum and Nature. 6 (2001) (in print).

The Principle of Self-Organization, which can be formulated as follows: any material object represents an open self-organizing system whose internal structures are formed with the participation of the whole universe. Apparently, the Principle of Self-Organization, incorporated in nature as one of the integral properties of matter, is nothing more nor less than a spirit (or absolute idea, or creator) which operates the world and creates all its variety.

Physical Mechanism of Nuclear Reactions at Low Energies

V.P. Oleinik* and Yu.D. Arepjev

*Tell me what the electron is,
and I shall explain to you everything else.*
W. Thomson

Abstract

The physical mechanism of nuclear reactions at low energies caused by spatial extension of electron is considered. Nuclear reactions of this type represent intra-electronic processes, more precisely, the processes occurring inside the area of basic localization of electron. Distinctive characteristics of these processes are defined by interaction of the own field produced by electrically charged matter of electron with free nuclei. Heavy nucleus, appearing inside the area of basic localization of electron, is inevitably deformed because of interaction of protons with the adjoining layers of electronic cloud, which may cause nuclear fission. If two or more light nuclei occur "inside" electron, an attractive force will appear between the nuclei that may result in the fusion of nuclei. The intra-electronic mechanism of nuclear reactions is of a universal character. For its realization it is necessary to have merely a sufficiently intensive stream of free electrons, i.e. heavy electric current, and as long as sufficiently a great number of free nuclei. This mechanism may operate only at small

energies of translational motion of the centers of mass of nuclei and electron. Because of the existence of simple mechanism of nuclear reactions at low energies, nuclear reactor turns out to be an atomic delayed-action bomb, which may blow up by virtue of casual reasons, as it has taken place, apparently, in Chernobyl. **The use of cold nuclear reactions for production of energy will provide mankind with cheap, practically inexhaustible, and non-polluting energy sources.**

Introduction

Nuclear reactions at low energies, occurring in physical and biological systems, and, in particular, the cold fusion (CF) of nuclei, attract ever increasing attention (see review articles [1,2]). This is explained by the fact that research on CF (in what follows, by cold fusion we shall understand any nuclear reactions at low energies) opens up the way to the solution of the problem which was set more than 50 years ago in the field of controlled thermonuclear reactions (CTR) and which has not been solved that is the problem to provide mankind with cheap fuel. An important point is that CF allows to create not only cheap, but also non-polluting energy sources, as nuclear reactions at low energies are not accompanied by radiations dangerous to health (γ-radiations, streams of fast neutrons and other particles). Note that the energetic problem facing mankind is presently of special interest in connection with the fact that, according to expert evaluations, the oil-and-gas resources in the world will suffice only for some decades. For this reason the study of CF is among the most important problems of physics.

It is necessary to note that, relying on the standard theory of nuclear reactions describing nuclear processes in vacuum, experts in the field of nuclear physics, engaged in CTR, reject the very possibility of existence of nuclear fusion at low energies. Two basic objections are raised against CF:

1. at low energies the penetrability of Coulomb barrier around nuclei is so small that the probability of nuclear fusion is practically equal to zero;
2. distinction between the atomic and nuclear energy scales is so great that the energy, which might be evolved as a result of nuclear fusion, could not be transferred directly to atomic lattice; therefore the energy above should be emitted in the form of streams of γ-quanta, fast neutrons and other particles. However, such streams of sufficient intensity have not been registered.

The answer to the first objection against existence of CF is that at the heart of CF are nuclear processes occurring in environment, and the basic role is played here, apparently, by collective effects caused by interaction of nuclei with particles of environment in which the nuclear reaction takes place. The laws governing the behavior of interacting nuclei in vacuum are inapplicable to the description of CF of nuclei [3]. Nuclear reactions occurring at low energies submit to completely different laws, which can be established only provided that collective effects mentioned above are taken into account. For this reason the standard theory of nuclear reactions in vacuum can by no means refute the existence of CF.

As to the impossibility of transferring the energy between levels of various scales, we can give an example of the phenomenon of sonoluminescence (luminescence of a liquid when a sound wave causing cavitation passes through it) [4], in which the energy transfer from an acoustic wave to electromagnetic field occurs with appreciable probability in spite of the fact that the distinction between energies of acoustic phonons and quanta of light reaches 11 orders.

As early as 10 years ago J. Schwinger, the Nobel winner and the known expert in the field of the theory of elementary particles and quantum electrodynamics, asserted that it is impossible to deny the reality of CF phenomenon [3,4]. Since then the CF phenomenon for nuclei was repeated hundreds times in laboratories all over the world, tens of patents on the ways of energy generation on the basis of CF were registered and enormous number of experimental works were published, which not only confirmed the existence of effect, but also contained its detailed analysis.

The most convincing evidence for the existence of nuclear reactions at low energies seems to give the mass-spectrometric research of reaction products [5] as well as research on biological systems [6]. Detailed study of electric explosion of foil made of especially pure materials in water, described in [5], suggests that at electric discharges transformation of chemical elements

occurs. Study of optical spectrum of plasma arising at discharge and of the mass-spectrometric analysis of sediments, which remained after the discharge, shows that in plasma there is an appearance of a significant number of chemical elements which were not presented in the initial material of explosive foil and electrodes and also that the isotope structure of the foil material changes appreciably. The change of experimental conditions, for example, of energy contribution in foil, its mass and dimensions results only in redistribution of intensity of plasma spectral lines, i.e. in the change of statistical weight of chemical elements in plasma, but the composition of chemical elements remains unchanged and it essentially depends on the material of foil. As it is seen from the received results, nuclear reactions, which take place at electric discharge, are not accompanied by the occurrence of a neutrons stream and γ-radiation and proceed at low energies of atomic nuclei.

The research mentioned above as well as many others, carried out by different researchers in different laboratories, **allow to draw a conclusion that existence of nuclear reactions at low energies is reliably established.**

The development of research on CF is hampered by the absence of theory of the phenomenon. As noted by Schwinger [3,4], the situation in CF is closely parallel to that one in high-temperature superconductivity: reality of the last, as a result of careful experimental research, is completely established, though theory of the phenomenon is absent till now.

In [5], to account for the transformation of chemical elements, the hypothesis is put forward that at the electric explosion of foil in the plasma channel magnetic monopoles are formed which may overcome the Coulomb barrier even at insignificant kinetic energy due to the great magnitude of their magnetic charge. The monopole, appearing not far from a nucleus, causes its polarization: those nucleons of the nucleus, which are situated more close to the monopole, experience stronger influence of the last, than the nucleons situated on the opposite side of the nucleus. As a result, a deformation of the nucleus arises (the nucleus is lengthened), which may result in nuclear fission.

Obvious drawback of this mechanism of nuclear reactions is that magnetic monopoles have yet to be found out in nature.

Numerous attempts to construct a consistent theory of CF (see reviews [1,2]) have not been crowned with success. As it was noted above, for the CF to be described, the account of the collective effects may be important caused by interaction of nuclei with environment, in which nuclear reaction takes place. But does it suffice to take into account these effects in order that the theory of the phenomenon is constructed? The analysis of the experiments on transformation of chemical elements at low energies and on the CF of nuclei suggests that the discussed phenomenon does

not fall within the domains of exotic ones: it seems to occur in nature constantly, at every step, in both physical and biological systems. Therefore, it is natural to expect that nuclear reactions at low energies should have a simple physical explanation.

However such explanation, which is not beyond the scope of existing representations, is yet to be found. Does not it mean that we are facing here the situation similar to that which has arisen in physics at the end of the 19th century and which has been figuratively described in the words: on the light sky of physics there are only two small dark clouds – the radiation of absolutely black body and the Michelson experiments? Let us remind that in order for these clouds to be removed, it has taken the revision of physical notions about electromagnetic field as well as about space and time.

As is noted in [8], there is a simple physical mechanism of nuclear transformations at low energies which existence follows from the quantum theory of electron as an open self-organizing system [9]. If two or the greater number of light nuclei appear inside free electron, more precisely, inside the area of basic localization of the particle, because of interaction of nuclei with electrically charged matter of electronic cloud, a force of attraction appears between the nuclei which may result in fusion of nucleus. This means that **cold nuclear reaction represents an intra-electronic process** which character is defined by physical properties of the own field produced by electrically charged matter of electron. The purpose of this paper is more detailed consideration of the mechanism above stemming from the spatial extension of electron.

In section 2 physical ideas are formulated and basic results are schematically presented of quantum theory of electron as an open self-organizing system. The theory outlined is necessary to elucidate the origin of the mechanism resulting in the occurrence of nuclear reactions of fusion and fission at low energies. The essence of the developed approach consists in that **the own field created by electron is treated as a congenital, integral physical property of electron, intrinsically inherent in the particle by the very nature of things and for this reason the own field and self-action are included in the definition of the particle** at the initial stage of formulating the theory. As is seen from the received results, electron represents a quantum (elementary excitation) of the field of electrically charged matter. It is a solition, which physical and geometrical properties are described by the non-linear and non-local dynamical equation similar to the known Dirac equation.

In section 3 the application of quantum model of self-organizing electron to nuclear reactions at low energies is considered. It is noted that because of the presence of simple physical mechanism of nuclear reactions at low energies, which is of a universal character, nuclear reactors represent, in effect, nuclear delayed-action bombs, which from time to time may blow up by virtue

of the casual reasons. Hence, though nuclear stations may provide mankind with energy, however atomic engineering is a very dangerous way of energy production. The only acceptable way of solving the energetic problem consists in the use of nuclear reactions at low energies.

Quantum model of electron as an open self-organizing system

The basis for the standard formulation of quantum electrodynamics (QED) is the hypothesis that electron is a structureless point particle which does not experience self-action. This assumption results in serious difficulties – the divergences of mass and charge of electron and the impossibility to explain stability of the particle (see, for example, [10-12]).

The difficulties mentioned above are very serious. According to Dirac, **the difficulties of QED "in view of their fundamental character can be eliminated only by radical change of the foundations of the theory, probably, radical to the same extent as transition from the Bohr orbits theory to modern quantum mechanics"** ([13], p. 403). "Correct conclusion", Dirac emphasizes, "is that the basic equations are incorrect. They should be changed in such a way that divergences do not appear at all".

The main reason of occurrence of difficulties is the assumption that electron is a point-like particle. Therefore, abandonment of this hypothesis is inevitable. As an analysis of the problem shows, the key to constructing a consistent quantum theory of electromagnetism lies in taking account of the Coulomb self-action of electron, i.e. the back action of the own field created by charged particle in environmental space upon the same particle. In the special case that the particle is at rest in an inertial reference frame, own field of the particle turns into static Coulomb field.

E.Schrödinger who suggested the historically first physical interpretation of quantum mechanics put one of the boldest ideas concerning the problem of electron forward. According to Schrödinger's hypothesis, the quantity $e|\Psi(r)|^2$ (e and $\Psi(r)$ are charge and wave function of electron, respectively) is the density of spatial distribution of electron's charge and, consequently, **the linear sizes of electron are the same as those of atom** [14,15]. However, they did not succeed in substantiating the interpretation and, for this reason, it was rejected by the majority of physicists [16].

An important step to the correct understanding of the physical nature of electron was made by A. Barut and by his collaborators [16-18] who formulated and developed quantum theory of electromagnetic processes on the basis of self-energy picture (the Self-Field QED). Using expression for the total own energy of electron, they managed to calculate the Lamb shift and other radiative corrections and to show that radiative phenomena may be described in terms of the

action function, without using the second quantization method. As is pointed out by Barut [17], "the correct quantum equation of motion for radiating electron is not the Dirac or the Schrödinger equation for bare electron, but an equation containing an additional non-linear self-energy term".

New lines of approach to the problem of electron are offered in [9, 19-24]. The formulation of electrodynamics is considered which represents a synthesis of standard quantum electrodynamics and ideas of the theory of self-organization [25]. The physical mechanism of self-organization of electron consists in self-action. Taking into account the self-action means that electron is treated as a feedback system.

Let us outline schematically the results of the formulation of quantum electrodynamics in which electron is an open self-organizing system.

Editor's note: The authors develop mathematics by using Lagrangian functions, 7 equations. You can contact the authors for more information about.

Thus, the negative result is received: we have tried to take into account self-action of electron in a natural way by supplementing the Lagrangian function with the self-energy term, but we came to an equation that has no reasonable physical solutions at all. This result seems to mean that the standard theoretical scheme reaches here the limits of its applicability and so, remaining in its framework, it is impossible to solve the problem of electron and elucidate the physical nature of electromagnetic interaction.

Essentially new point, which is introduced in [9] into quantum mechanics consists **in the replacement of the model of isolated system described by harmonic oscillator with the model of open system**. Let us advance the arguments indicating the inevitability of using the model of open system as a basis of the description of interaction between microparticles [26].

Note, first of all, that quantum particle theory based on the use of the models of isolated system is, strictly speaking, physically meaningless. Really, any observation conducted on a system represents a process of interaction of the system with the means of observation. But in case of microparticles (quantum particles) this interaction is not weak and consequently it is inadmissible to neglect it, i.e. microparticles should be necessarily considered as essentially non-isolated systems.

A starting point of the standard formulation of quantum mechanics is the physical idea that interaction between physical fields can be reduced to collision of the particles corresponding to these fields, the particles before and after collision being considered as free ones. According to these representations, quantum mechanics is based on the notions of "bare", non-interacting particles, with the interaction between them being considered as an additional factor which can only

insignificantly alter the physical properties of non-interacting particles. However, such an approach to interaction between physical fields is obviously of an idealized character because particles constantly interact "with vacuum as with some kind of physical medium in which the particles move" [27]. Interaction of particles with vacuum fluctuations is not small and it cannot be removed.

It is well also to bear in mind that the necessary intermediary at studying micro-objects are the means of observations (the devices) with the classical field corresponding to them which should be taken into account in consistent quantum theory [28]. Inclusion in theoretical scheme of arbitrarily weak classical external field results in occurrence of non-zero width Γ of energy levels of "dressed" particles. The basic impossibility to isolate a real particle from vacuum fluctuations of the field and from the classical sources connected to the means of observation is indicative, thus, of necessity to take into account the non-zero width of energy levels of real particles [26].

The use of the harmonic oscillator model, when describing the interaction of electromagnetic radiation with substance, seems to be the main source of serious difficulties of the standard formulation of quantum theory, as such an approach means apparent neglect of those physical processes which, proceeding constantly, are responsible for inseparable coupling of real physical system to surrounding medium. Introducing artificial notion about switching on and switching out of interaction of oscillator with radiation field, we are able to calculate within the framework of existing theory the width of energy levels of oscillator, but we cannot assert with certainty that such an approach results in correct description of interaction.

From the reasoning given above it is seen that they are the models with energy levels of non-zero width that should form the basis for the description of interaction of radiation with substance. It is necessary to formulate such a quantum theory, which would take into account the energy levels of non-zero width Γ. The case in point is that one should introduce an infinitesimal damping Γ into the initial set of equations describing interaction of charged particles with electromagnetic field. Such an approach means the violation in infinitesimal of homogeneity of physical system relative to translations in time. Necessity of violating the homogeneity of time follows from that fact that in the usual approach (with $\Gamma = 0$) the states of the system of interacting fields have degeneracy of infinitely large multiplicity in relation to time translations. According to the fundamental Bogoliubov's concept of quasi-averages [29], when describing the behavior of degenerate systems, one should include into Hamiltonian an infinitesimal term removing degeneracy. In the theory presented here degeneracy of states of quantized fields relative translations in time is removed by introducing the infinitesimal damping Γ into Lagrangian. Thereby the degeneracy under study is removed already in the initial, zero-order approximation, which is of

fundamental importance for the approach based on perturbation theory.

Formulation of the physical idea that quantum friction arises at the very elementary level - at the level of one particle is given in monograph [26]. Impossibility to isolate real particle from the surrounding world is that property which should be taken into account already in the one-particle theory (for each kind of particles), even before switching on the interaction with other particles.

Model of the particle as an open system ($\Gamma \neq 0$) is attractive owing to the fact that from the very beginning the degeneracy of states relative to time translations is absent in it, the degeneracy, which is removed in standard approach by taking into account the interaction of particle with vacuum field fluctuations and classical fields. The basis for the developed formulation is the fundamental concept of quasi-averages supplemented with the requirement that the equations of motion of the particle with $\Gamma \neq 0$ follow from the action principle. It should be emphasized that the non-zero damping Γ is introduced into electrodynamics with the aim to establish the structure of the Lagrangian function, which takes into account the property of openness of physical system. After establishing the structure, the limiting transition $\Gamma \to 0$ is fulfilled.

In our opinion, the development of quantum theory will be inevitably connected with the use of models of open system; as such models reflect more completely the physical essence of interrelations in the real world. It is necessary, thus, to define more exactly the concept of openness of physical system, which, on the one hand, would describe real system accurately enough and, on the other, would be simple enough to describe the particular physical processes.

As open system has the richer physical contents in comparison with isolated system, some essentially new mathematical ideas are needed for its description. First of all, it is necessary to increase the number of independent dynamical variables describing the particle as open system. In papers [9,19-24], as a basis for the description of self-acting electron, the simplest model of open system is used which can be described by the Morse-Feshbach-Bateman Lagrangian function [30,31] and which was successfully used for the description of dispersive medium (the review of articles, in which applications of the model of open system to electrodynamics of dispersive medium are considered, is given in monograph [26]). In this model the number of dynamical variables is doubled as compared with the isolated system, namely, to each dynamical variable of "bare" particle, Ψ, there correspond two dynamical variables, which are denoted by Ψ and $\widetilde{\Psi}$. These quantities are considered as components of the wave function describing the quantum state of self-acting particle. One of them, say, Ψ, corresponds in a sense to the particle alone (to the "bare" particle) and the

other, $\widetilde{\Psi}$, to the surrounding medium, in which the particle moves.

Editor's note: You can contact the authors directly for more information (8-16 equations).
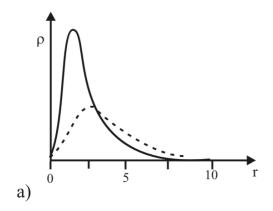
Equation (16) coincides in its appearance with the usual Dirac equation for charged particle in an external field described by 4-potential . However, in reality, it differs essentially from Dirac's equation. The distinction consists in that **equation (16) is non-linear and non-local**, with the non-locality being of both spatial and time character. Potential ($A_{||}$) and vortex ($A_{\perp}$) components of the 4-potential, entering equation (16), differ from each other by their physical nature: the former describes the Coulomb field and is expressed quadratically in terms of the wave function components of electron, and the latter describes transverse electromagnetic waves and is expressed in terms of vortex electromagnetic field. As a detailed analysis shows, solutions to the basic dynamical equation describe the clots of self-acting electrically charged matter, localized in space, i.e. the particle is a soliton.

The internal energy spectrum of electron is discrete with an indefinitely large number of levels, and to each value of internal energy E_k (k is the set of quantum numbers) there correspond certain linear dimensions and geometrical form of the region of localization of electron's charge. Dimensions and the number of extreme of wave function increase with increasing the value of energy E_k. The distribution of electric charge of atomic electron in the ground state consists of the range of basic localization with the linear dimensions of the order of Bohr radius a_0 ($a_0 \sim 10^{-10} m$) and of the tail stretching up to infinity. It is essential that because of non-linearity of the dynamical equation of electron, wave function does not obey the superposition principle. By virtue of this, electron acquires the properties of absolutely rigid body: the perturbation acting on electron at an instant of time in the range of basic localization becomes known at the next instant $t + 0$ at any distance from the particle.

In Fig. 1 the results of calculation are represented schematically, carried out on the basis of equation (13), of the distribution of electric charge in atomic and free electrons in the ground (a) and first excited (b) states.

According to [9,19], the atom represents a system of nuclear and electronic solitons interacting with each other, the internal energy spectrum of the hydrogen atom, due to electromagnetic interaction, being of a zoned character. The occurrence of zoned structure of energy spectrum of hydrogen atom is explained as follows. Free nucleus, because of existence of Coulomb self-action, has a discrete internal energy spectrum. As the interaction of nucleus with electron is small in comparison with the energy of Coulomb self-action of the nucleus, it can be taken into account by perturbation theory. From here it follows at once that each energy
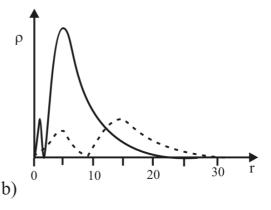
Fig. 1. Density of electric charge (ρ) of electron in the ground state (a) and in the first excited state (b): the continuous lines correspond to electron in the hydrogen atom, and the dotted ones to free electron, r is the distance from the center of mass of electron measured in Bohr radii.

level of free nucleus is split in a zone. There are indefinitely many zones (Balmer's replicas) and in each of them there are indefinitely many energy levels. The lowest zone coincides with the usual Balmer spectrum.

Physical mechanism of nuclear reactions at low energies
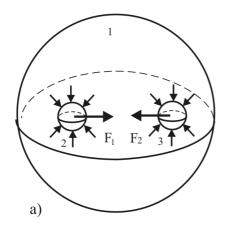
The quantum theory presented above schematically of electron as an open self-organizing system is indicative of the existence of the following mechanism of nuclear reactions at low energies [8].

If there occur in the region of basic localization of free electron, which linear sizes in the ground state of the particle are several times as large as those for hydrogen atom (see Fig. 1), two or the greater number of nuclei, each of them attracts on itself the adjoining areas of electronic cloud, resulting in compression of the electronic cloud as a whole. As a result, there appears automatically an attraction of the nuclei, which proved to be "inside" electron, on each other (see Fig. 2).

Calculation shows that the Coulomb barrier around nuclei is deformed, its height decreases and the probability of penetration through the barrier

accordingly increases due to tunnel transition. Under certain conditions this process may result in fusion of nuclei. Obviously, the process in question can occur only at small energies of translational motion of the centers of mass of electron and nuclei: nuclei should be "inside" electron long enough for them to have time to come nearer to each other as a result of electron-nuclear interaction. This mechanism of nuclear fusion is of a universal character. In order for it to be realized, it is necessary to have only a stream of free electrons intensive enough, i.e. heavy electric current, and as long as sufficiently great number of free nuclei.

If heavy nuclei appear "inside" free electron, owing to their interaction with the electronic cloud there occurs polarization of nuclei. Because the own field of electron interacts with protons more strongly than with neutrons, nuclei are deformed (become extended), and this process may result in the decomposition of nuclei to fragments (in nuclear fission).

As is noted in [7], the official version of the reasons for Chernobyl accident contains serious contradictions, a number of facts concerning the accident has no convincing explanations, and this circumstance forces to search for the true reasons for the happening, since
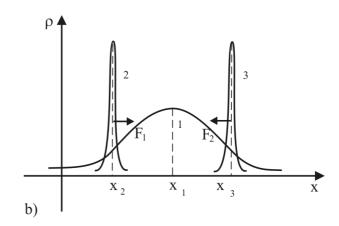
Fig. 2.
The schematic image of interaction of nuclei with electronic cloud: (a) 1 is the region of basic localization of electron, 2 and 3 are nuclei, F_1 and F_2 are the attractive forces between nuclei, which appear at the expense of electronic cloud compression induced by Coulomb forces; (b) ρ is the charge density, 1 is electronic soliton, 2 and 3 are nuclear solitons, X_n ($n=1, 2, 3$) are coordinates of the centers of mass of particles.

"not having understood the mechanism of the one tragedy, we sooner or later shall become witnesses of the other". The authors hypothesize that the reason of the accident was penetration into the nuclear reactor of magnetic monopoles, which have caused the decay of nuclei [238]U, and this has resulted in production of delayed neutrons, growth of power output of the reactor and explosion. As an argument in favor of the assumption, the fact is presented that nucleus [238]U are disintegrated under the action of "strange" radiation appearing at explosion of foil.

In the opinion of the authors of [5,7], "strange" radiation is created by those magnetic monopoles, which form bound states with nuclei of atoms. These compound particles give the abnormally wide tracks similar to those of a creeping caterpillar, and also the tracks of complicated shape reminiscent of spirals and gratings. Character of tracks changes when imposing magnetic field, which, as the authors believe, is an argument in favor of the assumption above. There are also some special tracks very similar to scratches and ink spots. "Strange" radiation is of spherical form, it resembles a ball lightning, and its duration is more than ten times as great as that of the current pulse arising at electric discharge. With the course of time the luminous sphere (the ball-like plasma formation) is dividing into many small "balls".

It is our opinion that "strange" radiation is caused by free electrons in excited state arising in the area of electric discharge. According to [9, 19], linear sizes of the region of basic localization of such electrons can make many tens of sizes of atom. The heavy nucleus, for example, the nucleus [238]U, appearing inside the electronic cloud, is inevitably deformed because of interaction of protons with adjoining layers in the distribution of electric charge of electron, and this deformation can cause nuclear fission. If two or the greater number of light nuclei appears "inside" electron, then attractive forces arise between nuclei, which may result in fusion reaction. When electric discharge is strong enough, the areas of basic localization of some electrons can overlap, and if a nucleus lands in the area of overlap, because of Coulomb attraction of nucleus on the adjoining layers of electronic clouds, a bound state may be formed, of two electrons and the nucleus, characterized by the relative stability and significant spatial extension.

Obviously, if the concentration of free electrons is great enough, there may be formed some relatively stable bunch of plasma consisting of great number of free electrons and nuclei, which in virtue of chaotic movement of nuclei and because of the absence of preferred directions should have approximately spherical form. Let us note that atomic electrons, belonging to additional energy zones of atom (Balmer's replicas associated with nuclear self-action, see Section 2) can contribute to "strange" radiation.

As is seen from above, to account for the reasons for Chernobyl accident, there is no need to involve magnetic monopoles. The scenario of development of events during the accident, described in [7], seems to be quite plausible if only to understand by initiators of nuclear fission not hypothetical monopoles but free electrons, which powerful pulse might arise as a result of electric discharge in the region of turbo-generators.

The existence of simple physical mechanism of nuclear reactions at low energies, indicated in this paper, implies that nuclear reactors are, in effect, nuclear delayed-action bombs, which will blow up from time to time. Explosion of nuclear reactor may take place because of casual short circuit at an electric subcircuit, owing to which there appears an intensive stream of free electrons. This stream, having got for any reasons in nuclear reactor, may initiate explosion of the reactor. It follows from here that though nuclear stations may provide mankind with cheep energy, atomic energetics represents a very dangerous way of producing energy (as well as the energetics using controlled thermonuclear fusion). The only acceptable way of resolving the energetic problem consists in the use of nuclear reactions at low energies.

According to the results obtained, nuclear reactions at low temperatures occur "inside" electron under the action of own field of particle. Hence, to elucidate physical mechanism of CF, it is necessary to study in detail intra-electronic processes and physical properties of own fields of particles. Note that the own field, by its physical properties, essentially differs from the field of electromagnetic waves: this is the field of standing waves of matter, it is of purely classical character and may not be reduced to the set of photons. The own field of charged particle plays in nature a special role, consisting in that it transforms environmental space into the physical environment (physical vacuum) with the properties of absolutely rigid body [32].

As it was repeatedly noted in the literature [1,2], experiments on CF are badly reproduced, and this fact gives rise to doubt the very existence of the phenomenon. Bad reproducibility of results seems to be explained by the fact that CF depends upon great number of parameters: upon electric current density, concentration of free nucleus, concentration of impurities and dislocations in samples, sizes of samples etc. In order to obtain reproducibility of results, it is necessary that all these parameters, describing the environment in which nuclear reactions occur, be the same in various experiments, but to achieve this as a difficult task.

In conclusion we shall dwell upon the problem of linear dimensions of electron, which is of special interest in connection with the mechanism of nuclear reactions indicated here. The inference that the dimensions of electron in the ground state of atom are of the order of Bohr radius, i.e. of the order of atomic dimensions, following from dimension considerations [9,19] and confirmed by quantum model of electron, seems completely unexpected. At first sight, it is in conflict with both the theory of quarks and experimental data

on scattering of electrons. According to quark models, the radius of electron corresponding to its quark structure makes up the quantity of the order of 10^{-22} m [33]. It is necessary to emphasize, however, that the above-mentioned magnitude of linear dimensions of electron refers to the internal structure induced by Coulomb field. The last is long-distance and consequently the linear dimensions of internal structures produced by it (i.e. spatial inhomogeneities in the distribution of electric charge in various quantum states) should considerably exceed the dimensions of quark structures connected with electron. There seems to exist a hierarchy of internal structures of particle produced by Coulomb forces, nuclear forces, inter-quark interactions etc. characterized by the smaller and smaller linear sizes.

As to the experiments on scattering of high energy electrons, according to which the internal structure of electron is not manifested up to distances of the order of $10^{-16} \div 10^{-17}$ m, two arguments, at least, can be adduced in favor of that there is no contradiction here with the experiment. Firstly, in experiments on scattering, investigators were trying to register the details of internal structure of electron within intervals much smaller than Bohr radius, which is why it is not surprising that results of experiments proved to be negative: at high energies electrons behave like point particles, their internal structure has no time to be manifested. Secondly, the results of experiments were analyzed from the point of view of standard representations about electron, which refer to a point particle, but are obviously inapplicable to real, self-acting electron. According to the predictions of quantum theory of electron as an open self-organizing system, real electron is a special object - soliton, i.e. such a cloud of electrically charged substance which, when interacting with other particles, tends to keep its sizes and geometrical form.

At present there is as yet no scattering theory of this kind of particles and for this reason it is impossible to predict with certainty how can the internal structure of electron be manifested in experiments on scattering.

References

1. Storms E. A *Critical Review of the "Cold Fusion" Effect. J. Sci. Explor.*, **10**, #2, p.185 (1996). See also:
http://www.jse.com/storms/1.html
2. Storms E. *Cold Fusion Revisited.* Infinite Energy, 4, #21, p.16(1998).
3. Schwinger J. *Cold Fusion: A Hypothesis.* Z. Nat. Forsch. A 45, 756 (1990); *Cold Fusion: A Brief History of Mine.* Infinite Energy, 1, #1, p.10 (1995).
4. Schwinger J. *Nuclear Energy in an Atomic Lattice I.* Z. Phys. D15, 221 (1990); Prog. Theor. Phys. 85, 711 (1991); *Energy Transfer in Cold Fusion and Sonoluminescence.*
http://www.geocities.com/CapeCanaveral/Lab/4520/theory.htm
5. Urutskoev L. I., Liksonov V. I., Tsinoev V. G. *Experimental Detection of "Strange" Radiation and Transformation of Chemical Elements.* Applied Physics, M., 2000, p.83-100. Urutskoev L.I., Liksonov V.I., Tsinoev V.G. *Observation of Transformation of Chemical Elements During Electric Discharge*
http://arxiv.org/ftp/physics/papers/0101/0101089.pdf
6. Vysotskii, V. I., Kornilova A. A., and Samoylenko I. I. *Experimental Discovery of Phenomenon of Low-Energy Nuclear Transformation of Isotopes (Mn55=Fe57) in Growing Biological Cultures.* The Sixth International Conference on Cold Fusion, Progress in New Hydrogen Energy (Ed. M. Okamoto) Oct. 13-18, 1996, Hokkaido, Japan, Vol. 2, p. 687; Infinite Energy, 2, #10, p.63 (1996).
7. Urutskoev L.I., Geras'ko V.N. *On the Possible Mechanism of Chernobyl Accident.*
http://www.recom.hotmail.ru/CHER_INC_1.doc
8. Oleinik V.P. *To Electronic Technologies of the 21st Century: on the Threshold of Revolution in Communication Systems. Collection of Reports*, Millenium 2002, International Conference "To Innovations in the 21st Century", Odessa, April 13, 2002, p.268-273.
9. Oleinik V.P. *The Problem of Electron and Superluminal Signals.* (Contemporary Fundamental Physics) (Nova Science Publishers, Inc., Huntington, New York, 2001).
10. Berestetsky V.B., Lifshits E.M., Pitaevsky L.P. *Relativistic Quantum Theory*, part 1. (Moscow, Nauka, 1968).
11. Medvedev B.V. *Foundations of Theoretical Physics.* (Moscow, Nauka, 1977).
12. Dirac P.A.M. *Relativistic Wave Equation of Electron.* Progress in Phys. Sciences, 129, #4, p.681–691 (1979).
13. Dirac P.A.M. *The Principles of Quantum Mechanics.* (Moscow, Nauka, 1979).
14. Schrödinger E. *Quantisierung als Eigenwertproblem.* Vierte Mitteilung. Ann. der Physik, Bd. 81, S.109–139 (1926).
15. Schrodinger E. *Selected Works on Quantum Mechanics*, Edited by Polak L.S. (Moscow, Nauka, 1976).
16. Barut A.O. *Schrodinger's Interpretation of as a Continuous Charge Distribution.* Ann. der Physik, Bd. 45, S.31-36 (1988).
17. Barut A.O., van Huele J.F. *Quantum Electrodynamics Based on Self-Energy: Lamb Shift and Spontaneous Emission without Field Quantization.* Phys.Rev., A32, #6, p.3187–3195 (1985).
18. Barut A.O., Dowling J.P. *Quantum Electrodynamics Based on Self-Energy*: Spontaneous Emission in Cavities. Phys.Rev., A36, #2, p.649–654 (1987).
19. Arepjev Yu.D., Buts A.Yu., Oleinik V.P. *To the Problem of Internal Structure of Electrically Charged Particles. Spectra of Internal Energy and Charge Distribution for the Free Electron and Hydrogen Atom.* Preprint of the Inst. of Semiconductors of Ukraine, N8-91 (Kiev, 1991) 36 p.(in Russ.).
20. Oleinik V.P. *Quantum Electrodynamics Describing the Internal Structure of Electron.* Quantum Electronics. #44, p.51-59 (1993) (in Russ.).
21. Oleinik V.P. T*o the Theory of the Internal Structure of Electron. Second Quantization and Energy Relations.* Quantum Electronics. #45, p.57-79 (1993) (in Russ.).
22. Oleinik V.P. *Quantum Theory of Self-Organizing Electrically Charged Particles. Soliton Model of Electron.* Proceedings of the NATO-ASI "Electron Theory and Quantum Electrodynamics. 100 Years Later." (Plenum Press, N.-Y., London, Washington, D.C., Boston, 1997), p.261-278.
23. Oleinik V.P. Nonlinear *Quantum Dynamical Equation for the Self-Acting Electron.* J. Nonlinear Math. Phys. 4, #1-2, p.180-189 (1997).
24. Oleinik V.P. *Quantum Equation for the Self-Organizing Electron.* Photon and Poincare Group (Nova Science Publishers, New York, Inc., 1999), p.188-200.
25. Nicolis G., Prigogine I. *Self-Organization in Non-Equilibrium Systems* (Wiley-Interscience, 1977).
26. Oleinik V.P., Belousov I.V. *The Problems of Quantum Electrodynamics of Vacuum, Dispersive Media and Intense Fields.* (Kishinev, Shtiintsa, 1983).
27. Bogoliubov N.N., Shirkov D.V. *Introduction to the Theory of Quantized Fields.* (Moscow, Nauka, 1976).
28. Bohr N. *Selected Scientific Works*, V.2. (Moscow, Nauka, 1971).
29. Bogoliubov N.N. *Quasi-Averages in the Problems of Statistical Mechanics.* In the Book: Statistical Physics and Quantum Field Theory. (Moscow, Nauka, 1973).
30. Morse P.M., Feshbach H. *Methods of Theoretical Physics*, V.1. (Moscow, Foreign Literature, 1958).
31. Dakker H. *Classical and Quantum Mechanics of the Damped Harmonic Oscillator.* Phys. Reports, 80, # 1, p.1-112 (1981).
32. Oleinik V.P. *Superluminal Signals, the Physical Properties of Time, and the Principle of Self-Organization.* Physics of Consciences and Life, Cosmology and Astrophysics, #1, p.68-76 (2001).
33. Dehmelt H. *Experiments with an Isolated Subatomic Particle at Rest.* Progress in Phys. Sciences, 160, #12, p.129–139 (1990).

The Evolution of Lifter Technology

Tim Ventura

tventura6@attbi.com

INTRODUCTION

Readers of the electric-spacecraft journal might know a little about the Lifter technology popularized recently be Jean-Louis Naudin, but they probably don't know the whole story. In the short amount of time that has transpired since the publication of that article, this technology has both literally and figuratively taken off – going from a "proof-of-concept" prototype by Naudin to an international group of researchers investigating how to give the lifter higher-performance and greater efficiency. With the first commercial products now on the horizon, if you haven't taken the time to read up on lifter technology, this is the perfect time to do so. . .
To give you a complete up-to-date overview of where this technology is, where it is going, and what I think it is capable of, let me start with the basics – an overview of how I became involved with Electrogravity research and what eventually led me to become involved with lifter technology.

MY BACKGROUND

I started college at 16 years old, back in 1992 – at the same time, I purchased a kit containing "hoverboard plans" from Hovertech, Inc. The moment that I received that $20 white-manilla envelope in October 1992 was the moment that I became involved with what has now been nearly 10 years of electrogravity research.

I worked with Bill Butler – the president and chief-scientist of Hovertech – on a variety of different antigravity, Electrogravity, and levitation ideas from approximately 1992 through 1996. While putting in my college time, I was also taking distinct advantage of the enormous college library at Western Washington University to read up on everything that might possibly relate to Electrogravity. I read books on standard electronics and physics theory alongside with books by the masters of this science, such as TT Brown and Nikola Tesla.

Bill and I played with several different ideas – many of them only peripherally related to Electrogravity. For instance, I published a manuscript initially in 1996 describing Tesla's theory on how to reliably produce Ball-Lightning using a standard Tesla coil – the information courtesy of WWU's excellent library. Bill also assisted me with obtaining video footage of a Searl-effect conference that he attended in Denver in the early 90's – this footage was an excellent overview of Searl's design and construction concepts for what he believes is the next major technological step in aviation and space travel.

Bill and I eventually found different paths, and in some ways drifted apart. Bill moved into Geomagnetic levitation research and started intense investigation on the patents of How Wachspress and the magnetic dipole levitator. I went to more traditional technologies – eventually becoming a UNIX system administrator for AT&T Wireless.

I hadn't heard from Bill Butler in about 6 months when he sent me a short email containing the words "hey, check this out" – and a link to Jean-Louis Naudin's "Lifter Experiments" home-page. I visited the site, watched all of the video clips, and then watched them again. This was the technology that I had been waiting for!

LIFTER TECHNOLOGY

I can say without a doubt that the lifter technology is completely revolutionary, but you might not realize how profoundly revolutionary it is until you've stopped to think about it for a bit. What is it about the lifter that makes it so unique, especially when so many inventions claim to produce more and better electromagnetic thrust? The answer is simple – the lifter works repeatedly.

Jean-Louis Naudin started a figurative bonfire when he decided to replicate a "proof-of-concept" experiment by a small Huntsville, AL aerospace contracting firm. The lifter initially came into being in the mind of Jeff Cameron – the chief scientist of Transdimensional Technologies – in the 1970's from experiments conducted with high-power military and research-grade lasers. A device in the lasers called a "pre-ionizer" was used to apply a high-voltage to the lasing-medium to facilitate better performance. Repeated operation of the pre-ionizer had a common side-effect of horribly twisting the wire and foil combination out of shape, which required a decent amount of work to repair.

Jeff Cameron realized that the torsional effect on the pre-ionizer was a side-effect of some unknown force acting on the pre-ionizer apparatus, and he began a long-term investigation into what was causing the apparatus to deform. His eventual results indicated that a force in the foil collector in the pre-ionizer was causing a net-thrust in the entire pre-ionizer apparatus that was making it twist and move on its mounts within the laser – the lifter came to him later as a three-dimensional device to demonstrate this force.

Naudin's genius became readily apparent not through a giant breakthrough in technology, but rather in a more subtle fashion – he replicated the lifter experiments of Transdimensional Technologies and published videos, articles, and complete construction plans on his website to allow others to do the same. In a manner similar to the open-source software movement, Naudin had taken an incredible scientific find that might have otherwise been overlooked and done and incredibly charitable and intelligent thing – he gave it away for others to play with. By following Naudin's instructions, inventors all over the globe began to slowly replicate the

Transdimensional Technologies experiments and thereby validate the proof of concept that Jeff Cameron had created to show that his "mystery force" was real after all. Naudin of course took advantage of these replications of the experiment by showcasing them on his own website – which in turn lends additional credibility to his research.

As far as technology goes, the lifter demonstrates that science and engineering have more than their share of humorous irony. For the years that I researched Electrogravity and antigravity claims, all of the devices that I had seen required something "magic" to make them work. For instance, Bob Lazar's UFO-claims could have been reverse-engineered except that they require 'element 115' to make them work – an element chemically related to Bismuth that is theorized to potentially have electrogravitic properties. I will come back to the possible electro-gravitational properties of Bismuth in a bit, as it turns out that this element may in fact provide some use for future lifter technology.

The Searl-effect disc is an even better example of the "magic" usually involved with building a working Electrogravity device. Searl's ideas seem valid enough, but although he supposedly demonstrated several working prototypes in the 1950's, he is currently pursuing millions of dollars in research funding in to replicate those experiments in a modern-day setting.

The irony involving lifter technology is that while inventors all over the world have been searching for the perfect electro-gravitational device for decades, the possible working proof of concept for many of these theories has been sitting in front of us the whole time – the lifter costs less than $10 in parts to build, and none of them are magic – in fact, for my experiments, all of them were at stores within 2 blocks of my house — balsa wood from the craft store, aluminum foil from the supermarket, 30-gauge magnet wire from the local Radio Shack, and an old computer monitor for the high-voltage power-supply.

LIFTER PHYSICS

Whether or not Jeff Cameron knew it at the time he constructed his lifter prototype, what he was actually building was a 3 dimensional representation of a drawing on a patent application by TT Brown in the 1950's. In the patent application, the drawing shows a positively charged wire suspended over a grounded foil body which was meant to demonstrate the most basic Biefeld-Brown effect generator. While Brown's drawing is a little different than Jeff's design, the resemblance is uncanny enough to indicate that both of these men had the same basic force in mind.

TT Brown's patent indicates that this Biefeld-Brown effect generator works due to a gradient electrostatic-field between the wire and the foil – in essence, these two elements compose a low-efficiency, high-voltage air-gap capacitor in which the difference in geometries between the two capacitive elements generates a net-directional force from the larger element towards the smaller element. Jeff Cameron seems to have a practical axiom that goes along with this scientific philosophy, which is that there must be both a leakage current and a capacitance between the wire and the foil in order for the lifter to function.

Conventional physics says that two capacitor elements of different sizes will not generate a net-directional force, so what gives? This is actually the thinking that convinced me to abandon my research into Biefeld-Brown effect technology in 1996 – physics says it doesn't work. What the books say will happen is that since the wire can only maintain a lower-capacitance than the foil, the overall capacitance between the two elements will be reduced to be equivalent to that on the smallest element (or plate) in the capacitor. This, of course, assumes a 2-element series-wired capacitor, such as the lifter.

I can give you the conventional physics answer to this small riddle by simply saying that the lifter uses a manifestation of ion-wind. This would state that the electrons crossing the air-gap cause a breeze that causes thrust – since the breeze would be traveling down from the wire to the foil, the thrust would be up, as demonstrated in testing. In the ion-wind explanation, the electrons are emitted from small-diameter of the positively charged wire in such great abundance that they move a significant airflow down to the foil where they are absorbed and transported electrically back to the HV power-supply's electrical ground.

Conventional physics would seem to have the theoretical answer to why the lifter causes lift, but in the experimental setting, which is what we now have an abundance of thanks to Jean-Louis Naudin, the conventional physics explanation doesn't suffice. Experimentally, there are several deviations from the ion-wind explanation that seem to invalidate it. For instance, if you completely contain the lifter in a plastic-enclosure, it will still generate lift – this would not be the case if a breeze was responsible for lifting the device. How could it be, if the breeze is limited to the inside of an enclosure which itself is levitating?

A more compelling proof that Biefeld-Brown is something other than ion-wind comes from Purdue University, where the lifter experiment was replicated inside a vacuum-enclosure with positive results. While ion-propulsion can work in space, it usually assumes that there is argon, krypton, or other noble gas to be used as the propellant – the vacuum enclosure showed that with no gas available for transport the lifter showed a moderate improvement in performance.

The vacuum enclosure tests are definitely compelling evidence that something else is going on other than ion-wind – at least compelling enough for NASA to file patent number 6,317,310 – "Apparatus and Method for Generating Thrust using a Two Dimensional, Asymmetrical Capacitor Module". The NASA patent description – which can be accessed from Naudin's lifter

website – is as vague is it is compelling in that NASA is basically requesting a patent on any technology that generates force using two geometrically dissimilar capacitive plates. Disregarding the fact that this patent was issued nearly 50 years after TT Brown's patent using nearly identical descriptions and pictures, and also disregarding the fact that NASA also doesn't understand why the lifter generates thrust, it seems apparent the this phenomena is gaining credibility in engineering circles while physicists seemingly continue to deny that anything is going on.

THE EVOLUTION OF LIFTER TECHNOLOGY

Every good movie always has a sequel, and in technology, if at first a major government agency 'liberates' your idea, it may seem that a sequel is in order. In the case of the lifter, it would appear that the NASA patent would cover this technology to at least some degree – at least until someone overturns this patent under the prior-art rule – which means that the next generation has to be considerably more advanced to escape having the research and development be forfeit to the government.

The pursuit of more advanced versions of the lifter technology is currently underway by several independent inventors, as well as Transdimensional Technologies themselves. Most of the private research by inventors has delved into improving the current lifter design to produce a greater force output and utilize less power to do so. Because the lifter is so simplistic in design, many of these enhancements have been of a very basic nature.

Jean-Louis Naudin was the first independent inventor to do serious work with improving the technology behind the lifter – and even so, the majority of his work has utilized similar materials in more complex arrangements. Naudin has demonstrated dramatically increased lifting forces by building a "lifter inside a lifter" for demonstration purposes. Naudin has also done a great deal of work in taking breaking up the concept of the single triangular lifter into a parallel series of lifting cells – which means that these cells, working in parallel, can contributed to greater stability and higher force output than any single lifting element.

Saviour – an independent inventor working with Jean-Louis Naudin – has done some of the most interesting improvements on lifter design since those by Naudin himself. Saviour's concerns have not focused around the "bigger is better" philosophy that many inventors have stuck by – he has done several experiments to determine the radiation output, remote-controlled applications development, and materials analysis and improvement on the lifter that others have not had the time or expertise to conduct.

A recent experiment by Saviour demonstrates just how this gentleman's foresight is helping other experimenters – Saviour substituted nichrome heating wire for the common lightweight wire used for the emitter, and demonstrated that the lifting force greatly increased when a higher potential 12-volt charge was used to heat the emitter wire in conjunction with the standard high-voltage charge coming off it.

Transdimensional Technologies – the developers of the initial lifter design – are taking the approach to optimizing lifter performance to another level. They are currently not-so-secretly working on a 2nd generation lifter, which will consist of a 1-piece layered material to replace the current wire and foil design.

The layered material approach to the lifter is an idea that Jeff Cameron may or may not have had after some lengthy discussions with Travis Taylor – the man responsible for testing some anomalous materials known as "Art's Parts".

Art's Parts were some pieces of material sent by an unknown person to the Art Bell radio talk-show with a note stating that the they were pieces of UFO wreckage taken from the often-cited "Roswell crash" in 1947. Whether or not the pieces of material actually came from that crash is unknown, but Art Bell did the honorable thing by sending them to an acquaintance in US Army research named Travis Taylor for a professional scientific investigation.

Taylor, who apparently tested the materials after-hours in a world-class research lab to avoid potential classification by his superiors, used an electron-microscope to determine that the layered materials were actually pieces of metal – containing several hundred microscopically thin layers of magnesium and bismuth. Taylor also tested the layered-metal with a high-voltage apparatus, which seemed to indicate that when a voltage was applied to the material, the layered metal would move – and in some cases levitate.

Taylor reported his findings to Art Bell and sent video clips of his high-voltage experiments, which eventually made it back to a permanent home on the Art Bell radio show website. In addition, Taylor conveyed his belief that the only manner in which the pieces of metal could properly be produced was through an advanced form of electron-deposition technology, due (apparently) to an absence of oxygen-molecules between the different layers of metals. Additionally, the layers of metal were too thin to have been mechanically produced.

Jeff Cameron indicated that Transdimensional Technologies maintained some contact at one point in time with Travis Taylor, apparently as professional colleagues in the defense community in Huntsville, AL. I am not an expert on this relationship, other than to say that to the best of my knowledge these two individuals knew and contacted each other, and that this is how Jeff Cameron might have come up with the 2nd generation lifter idea.

ADVANCED LIFTER TECHNOLOGY

As an inventor, I couldn't care less whether or not the idea for the technology came from a crashed UFO. To be perfectly honest, I'm not what you would call a "believer" anyways, although I have often wondered

about it. My point is not to attempt to lend any credibility to "Art's Parts", but rather to tie in the properties of the anomalous material's high-voltage movement with the underlying theory of lifter operation.

Even mentioning a UFO in a respected publication or article is the kiss of death in today's world – and I wouldn't do it if it wasn't an intricate part of the story. The other interesting thought is that the layered material is once again partially composed of Bismuth – which is thought to possibly have some of the same electro-gravitational properties as Bob Lazar's Area 51 "element 115". Is there a similarity, or merely a coincidence between a claim that hasn't gained credibility and a technology currently under development?

The lifter in its own right is essentially a layered material. One of those layers is the emitter wire, which is highly charged with about 30kV worth of electrons, another layer is the air-gap, which is approximately 3 cm in height, and the final layer is an electrically-grounded "skirt" of aluminum foil that surrounds the lifter. It is also reasonable to expect that there are only two possible forces at work in the lifter – one of which being a possible ion-wind effect moving down from the emitter to the foil, and the other being a possible Biefeld-Brown effect, moving up through the foil to the emitter.

There are a few shortcomings in the lifter as a design that might be overcome if we could transition the layered material from one containing an air-gap to one that does not. For instance, the lifter is currently a rather delicate object, in that having a wire under tension as the emitter makes construction difficult for future automated assembly. Additionally, because the air-gap requires struts to support the emitter wire, a trade off involving the weight versus the strength of the struts is additionally involved in any current implementation of lifter technology.

Some of the other changes that would be helpful to implement when transitioning lifter technology from one type of air-gap to another are changes in the materials used to increase the dielectric capacity. High-K dielectric materials may be used to increase the displacement of electrons in the material to enhance charge transport. And since increasing the dielectric potential of the layered materials also increases the breakdown resistance, it means that thinner materials can be used.

Designing a lifter without an air gap would accommodate lower voltage requirements between the foil and the emitter. The voltage would not have to create the large e-field gradient to create a leakage current across such a large void. Therefore the overall voltage across the device could be greatly reduced, without much cost in thrust. A lower operating voltage in turn means that a lower-output power-supply can be used for a given amount of current, which increases the overall efficiency.

Transdimensional Technologies recent research is utilizing the layered materials approach to eliminate the air-gap and substitute for it high-k dielectric materials that may allow higher overall performance. Although they have not yet released details about the exact composition or thickness of the materials that they are working with, they claim to currently have a 10% reduction in weight using a low-voltage current across the thickness of their newest device.

FUTURE LIFTER TECHNOLOGY

Thanks to the tremendous amount of research being done on lifter technology by Transdimensional Technologies and a loosely affiliated group of inventors around the world, the future of lifter technology seems very bright at this point.

Transdimensional hopes to release some breakthrough research to allow replication of their newest 2nd generation experiments in the very near future, and along with that stands the massive body of research and advancements being done by inventors and researchers such as Jean-Louis Naudin, Saviour, the Lifters-group, and myself.

My personal goals are to attempt to assist Transdimensional Technologies in popularizing this technology to increase awareness of it and help "spread the word" about what it is and how it can potentially help the world.

Imagine if instead of getting in your car and driving through the usual maze of thoroughfares and side streets you were able to simply type in your destination and have a flying vehicle take you there automatically. The lifter technology offers to potential to transform the current transportation market by offering point-to-point aerial transport without the need for roads or freeways.

Additionally, unlike the magnetic-levitation ("Maglev") technologies that are currently being promoted as the future of transportation, the lifter does not require a specially constructed and exorbitantly expensive track to operate – the greatly reduces the per-unit cost on the technology and opens the door for wider adoption by the general public for transportation solutions.

Other individuals are currently working to see if lifter technology may offer cost-effective methods of transport into space, which would reduce the cost greatly and allow a one-piece, reusable method of moving things into orbit.

LIFTER RESOURCES

All of the research involved with the lifter technology is available to the public on the internet. The list of resources below are some of the better and more common resources to obtain detailed lifter information.

American Antigravity
→ http://tventura.hypermart.net

Research on the Capacitance Converter of Environmental Heat to Electric Power

N.E. Zaev

143970, Moscow region, village Saltykovka,
Granitchnaya Str., 8 529-9664

Nickolay E. Zaev works on creation of the prototypes of converter energy, which do not require any fuel. The direct conversion of environmental heat to electric power is possible in the processes of "charge-discharge" in non-linear condensers or by means of "magnetization-demagnetization" of ferrites. Such converters of energy create cold and electric power without any fuel.

Theory of the converter, results of early experiments on the generation of microwatt power, methods and features of research are given in this article. The methods of generation of a few watts power are described in details. The possibilities and difficulties of creation of powerful capacitance converters are discussed in this article.

I. Grounds of research.

1.1. From positions of orthodox physics there is no subject of research. It is evident that the energy of charging (C) A_c condenser C_x is always equal or more than the energy of discharging (D) A_d, i. e. always $A_c \geq A_d$. Only the advanced analysis shows that it is not always true. Exactly, in C_x, where $\frac{\partial C}{\partial V} < 0$ an inequality $A_d > A_c$ is possible, and in C_x, where $\frac{\partial C}{\partial V} < 1$, then the work $A_c > A_d$. Therefore we should discuss the nonlinear capacitors (NC). In the end of 1969 I noticed a systematic inequality $A_d > A_c$ during the measurement of A_c and A_d

of many capacitors with different dielectrics. Theoretical grounds and results of measurements of this phenomenon are given in the publications in 1984 [1], [2, page 73]. On the industrial standards NC (varicond), ceramic condensers VK2-ZSH, 4·6,8·10⁻⁹µF with an optimal voltage about 95 V it was stated that $\frac{A_d}{A_c} \sim 1,21$ with the power to about 98·10⁻⁶ Wt and "generated" extra power is equal to 21·10⁻⁶ Wt.

1.2. In [1] and [2] the strict theoretical proofs of realization of $A_d > A_c$ (there are four of them) are given.

On 1m³ of dielectric $|A_d| - |A_c| = -\frac{1}{2} a \cdot \varepsilon_0 \cdot E_c^{\ 3}$ (E_c is an intensity of the field, V/m; ε_0 is a dielectric constant of vacuum, a is a coefficient of nonlinearity of the capacitor). Below we state one more proof more connected with the parameters of circuit.

It is well known that with the charge of a linear capacity from the source of constant voltage V_0=const through the resistor R=const it gets an energy $A_c = \frac{C \cdot V_0^{\ 2}}{2}$ exactly equal to the output energy in the time of charging t_c. The output energy irradiated from the load R is a Joule heat $\Theta = R \cdot \int_0^{t_c} i^2 \cdot dt$ [3, page 546]. If NC (nonlinear condenser) is charged, then there are no proofs of such equation. The NC are the variconds or other capacitors, which have $\frac{\partial C}{\partial V} > 0$ in the interval V=0÷V_k. For the variconds V_k is some voltage, which corresponds to the maximum C_v. If V>V_k, then $\frac{\partial C}{\partial V} < 0$. For some other capacitors V_k is a voltage breakdown.

For further consideration let's believe that in the operating area of the given sample of varicond a function

Reality and Consciousness in Education and Activity

A.P. Smirnov

Vice president of International Club of Scientists
190031, Saint Petersburg, Kazanskaya str., 36
Tel: +7 (812) 312-0508
E-mail: science@shaping.org

Relation of thought to existence is the main question of philosophy as science on general laws of Nature was formulated but it still did not interpreted and solved in the frames of generally accepted logic standards. The ways to solve it lead to futile discussions of materialists and idealists, to senseless disputes of determinists with eclectics and apologists of the "chance". This discussion lost its sense without a determination of terms under discussion and condemned debaters to have subjective "gustatory" senses, which were changing while aging and depended on the extent of received and conceived knowledge. Such is the situation in this link of World studying, which does not allow creating a logic chain of reasoning in the understanding of cognizable things.

A paradoxicality of all things that happen is connected with incorrect translations and interpretation of wisdom of ancient philosophers and scornful attitude both to the knowledge of distant past and classical heritage, which highlighted the elements of natural-science approach to Weltanschauung.

According to Plato, **an ideal thing** is a visual thing, which can be felt by our organs of sense. Therefore, the understanding of objective reality is mediated by the crowd of our feelings in such a way that perception of reality by means of these feelings gives us a notion of the World. Hence, **our notions about reality are the subject of research in science, but not the World itself, i.e. the World outside of our consciousness.** So, what should be studied in our notions about the World? Let us refer to the wisdom of ancient scientists again: " The World is given in motion and its laws are the laws of motion". Then, we should speak about laws, order, i.e. about relation and interrelation in the phenomena of motion. This is the distinctness in notions and actions (determinism) to predetermine further development of reality cognition logic, i.e. what has an influence on us and determines specific character of our perception. Further we can speak about formation of ideas about reality, which require some premises, principles to organize these ideas. These principles are given in classical heritage, in "Dialogues" by G. Galilee [1] and "Mathematical principles of natural philosophy" by I. Newton [2]. A notion of force as a measure for momentum was introduced, which manifests in action and disappears from the body after the action is over, and the body keeps its new state due to the inborn "inertia force". **But the force itself cannot do anything without its application with a certain speed.** Then we introduce a notion of action as a product of acting force F_A and the speed of action V_A.

We offer a law of interaction, which determines the interaction between action of the cause and the effect appeared during this action as a reaction, i.e. the product of the force of reaction F_R and the speed of reaction V_R. Thus, this interaction between the cause and the effect is determined by the transfer of action from one object to another in equal quantity, but with appearance of new quality, which is determined by specificity of interacting objects according to fundamental law of interaction:

$$F_A V_A = -F_R V_R$$

Unfortunately, an incorrect interpretation of interaction manifestation as an opposite counteraction became strong in our mind. This manifestation is perceived as a compensation of cause by action of the effect. Moreover, the incorrect way of writing of the mathematical form of Newton's third law manifestation established in textbooks and scientific literature due to the incorrect translation as $F_A = -F_C$. This very tragic situation for the science suppressed the development of logic in description of processes. Chance and statistic approach to the description of phenomena has taken place in our perception. This approach is based on the model of non-interacting elements, in which there is no order stipulated by the interrelation of elements. The science has developed this model and its properties, and this fact predetermined the evolution of notions about real World.

This ideology penetrated in mathematics, which for sake of physics began to study properties of objects, but not operations with them. Moreover, a possibility to reflect specific character of real physical processes in the interconnection of cause-effect relations by mathematical operations is not realized. It is essential, that fundamental law of interaction establishes manifestation and description of elementary act of cause and effect interrelation, **the law of manifestation of a Fact.** It means that order in the World is conceived through manifestation of concrete facts. The action of law of interaction lies in the basis of these facts.

So, there is a conclusion: the World is perceived through the discrete manifestation of motion forms evolution. Hence, the discrete mathematics of finite discrete aggregate can be applied to describe the World, but not the continual mathematics, which lies in the basis of traditional orthodox physics. All these circumstances lead to numerous problems and difficulties in description of our notions of reality, to the plenty of used principles, which are in contradiction to each other, as R. Feinmann noticed once [3].

And what we can get from determinism, which is based on fundamental law of interaction, law of cause and effect interrelation? **The change of force value in a reaction takes place, i.e. the change of value of the potential gradient, i.e. the change of energy**

concentration. This circumstance is visually demonstrated by the operation of Archimedean lever as well as in all phenomena of the real World. This is Archimedean lever, where the loss of speed takes place, but there is a gain in force. And the load raised on a lower height than the way, which was made by the applied force, will give a huge power during its free fall. This power is higher in so many times, in how many times the time of the load fall is less than the time of action spent on its raising! And this is the fact, which determines specific character of **creation in the real World**. We should attribute both quantitative and qualitative characteristics to energy. This is the side of energy manifestation, which is reflected in Plank's formula: energy is proportional to frequency.

Manifestation of fundamental law of interaction also lies in the basis of general universal regularity of evolution of real many-particle systems with the change in external conditions. This process develops in multistage way, and on the each stage the logarithm of the ratio between the event happened and the event to happen always is equal to the work of external forces. In other words, the relation of the event happened to the resource is in exponential dependence on the initial conditions and extent of external influence. Exponential character of development of processes is the evidence that Nature develops according to the law, which conserves itself during evolution. This regularity, which manifests everywhere, can be naturally called **the Principle of Order.**

Fundamental law of interactions and Principle of Order appeared to be enough to describe and understand phenomena in the observed World. And it is natural to expect that this principle of Nature manifest in finer World also. This World includes lower and higher frequencies, which are not available for us yet to watch this wide-range frequency-wave emanating Universe.

From all aforesaid we should make a conclusion that the logic, which exists in the traditional physical tool, appeals to the model and principles of the World of non-interacting elements using the range of regularities, which also reflect some features of the real World, but they do not include fundamental law of interaction and Principle of Order, which are necessary and sufficient to describe reality. Descriptions existing in traditional physics are phenomenological ones and concern only those aspects of the phenomena under investigation, which do not include possible qualitative changes during development of processes, because the main property of real processes of interactions (creation of new energy property) was excluded.

The current situation in physics had a strong influence on formation and development of other sciences, other fields of knowledge, since the logic of reflection of cause-effect links was initially excluded. These are the links to determine existence, i.e. existence of constant creation of the World. All these circumstances give grounds to fundamentally revise educational programs, first of all, in physics, philosophy, mathematics, chemistry and biology. A change to the offered logic of cognition, which is based on the Principle of Order and fundamental law of interaction, will fundamentally change our notions about the World as well as will open big opportunities for new technique and technology. A Man has got huge opportunities in cognition and existence, but due to his immorality and features of incorrect aims in the logic of cognition he cannot use these gifts of Nature. We present wider and deeper view on the World and a Man in it, which allow analyzing, watching and operating with those fields of reality, which manifest in finer World, World of higher-frequency energies and other structures of fields. Logic of cognition had not touched these structures yet.

References

1. Galilee Galileo. Selected works in 2 volumes. M.: Nauka, 1964.
2. Newton Isaac. Mathematical principles of natural philosophy. News of Nickolaevskaya Marine Academy, issue IV, V, Petrograd, 1915-1916. Volumes I, II and III, 620 p.
3. Feinmann Richard. Character of physical laws. M.: Nauka, 1967, 160 p.

Old New Energy

Y. I. Andreev, A.P. Smirnov

St.Petersburg, Russia
E-mail: science@shaping.org
Internet: http://www.physical-congress.spb.ru

Two kinds of energy, accumulated energy [1] and free energy [2], are considered as an inexhaustible source of natural energy created by Nature itself. It is ecologically clean and possible to be renewed in natural conditions.

The energy accumulated in substance is released as a result of partial decay of substance in elementary particles. At that, the acquired defect of mass is so small that it does not change chemical properties of substance and is compensated in natural conditions. Physical mechanism of energy-release lies in the fact that an electron in plasma layerwise takes sufficiently smaller elementary particles (electrino) from positively charged atoms or fragments of substance (ions). Electrino give their kinetic energy to plasma, heat it up and move beyond the bounds of reaction zone in the form of thermal and optical radiation. There is no substance, which could not take part in such process of energy-release, i.e. phase transfer of higher form (PTHF). The most appropriate, available and low-cost substances are air and water, which play the role of nuclear fuel in PTHF. It is turned out that usual combustion is also a process of PTHF, in which oxygen is a nuclear fuel and organic fuel is a donor of electrons. In the process of combustion oxygen atoms get the defect of mass equal

concentration. This circumstance is visually demonstrated by the operation of Archimedean lever as well as in all phenomena of the real World. This is Archimedean lever, where the loss of speed takes place, but there is a gain in force. And the load raised on a lower height than the way, which was made by the applied force, will give a huge power during its free fall. This power is higher in so many times, in how many times the time of the load fall is less than the time of action spent on its raising! And this is the fact, which determines specific character of **creation in the real World**. We should attribute both quantitative and qualitative characteristics to energy. This is the side of energy manifestation, which is reflected in Plank's formula: energy is proportional to frequency.

Manifestation of fundamental law of interaction also lies in the basis of general universal regularity of evolution of real many-particle systems with the change in external conditions. This process develops in multistage way, and on the each stage the logarithm of the ratio between the event happened and the event to happen always is equal to the work of external forces. In other words, the relation of the event happened to the resource is in exponential dependence on the initial conditions and extent of external influence. Exponential character of development of processes is the evidence that Nature develops according to the law, which conserves itself during evolution. This regularity, which manifests everywhere, can be naturally called **the Principle of Order.**

Fundamental law of interactions and Principle of Order appeared to be enough to describe and understand phenomena in the observed World. And it is natural to expect that this principle of Nature manifest in finer World also. This World includes lower and higher frequencies, which are not available for us yet to watch this wide-range frequency-wave emanating Universe.

From all aforesaid we should make a conclusion that the logic, which exists in the traditional physical tool, appeals to the model and principles of the World of non-interacting elements using the range of regularities, which also reflect some features of the real World, but they do not include fundamental law of interaction and Principle of Order, which are necessary and sufficient to describe reality. Descriptions existing in traditional physics are phenomenological ones and concern only those aspects of the phenomena under investigation, which do not include possible qualitative changes during development of processes, because the main property of real processes of interactions (creation of new energy property) was excluded.

The current situation in physics had a strong influence on formation and development of other sciences, other fields of knowledge, since the logic of reflection of cause-effect links was initially excluded. These are the links to determine existence, i.e. existence of constant creation of the World. All these circumstances give grounds to fundamentally revise educational programs, first of all, in physics, philosophy, mathematics, chemistry and biology. A change to the offered logic of cognition, which is based on the Principle of Order and fundamental law of interaction, will fundamentally change our notions about the World as well as will open big opportunities for new technique and technology. A Man has got huge opportunities in cognition and existence, but due to his immorality and features of incorrect aims in the logic of cognition he cannot use these gifts of Nature. We present wider and deeper view on the World and a Man in it, which allow analyzing, watching and operating with those fields of reality, which manifest in finer World, World of higher-frequency energies and other structures of fields. Logic of cognition had not touched these structures yet.

References

1. Galilee Galileo. Selected works in 2 volumes. M.: Nauka, 1964.
2. Newton Isaac. Mathematical principles of natural philosophy. News of Nickolaevskaya Marine Academy, issue IV, V, Petrograd, 1915-1916. Volumes I, II and III, 620 p.
3. Feinmann Richard. Character of physical laws. M.: Nauka, 1967, 160 p.

Old New Energy

Y. I. Andreev, A.P. Smirnov

St.Petersburg, Russia
E-mail: science@shaping.org
Internet: http://www.physical-congress.spb.ru

Two kinds of energy, accumulated energy [1] and free energy [2], are considered as an inexhaustible source of natural energy created by Nature itself. It is ecologically clean and possible to be renewed in natural conditions.

The energy accumulated in substance is released as a result of partial decay of substance in elementary particles. At that, the acquired defect of mass is so small that it does not change chemical properties of substance and is compensated in natural conditions. Physical mechanism of energy-release lies in the fact that an electron in plasma layerwise takes sufficiently smaller elementary particles (electrino) from positively charged atoms or fragments of substance (ions). Electrino give their kinetic energy to plasma, heat it up and move beyond the bounds of reaction zone in the form of thermal and optical radiation. There is no substance, which could not take part in such process of energy-release, i.e. phase transfer of higher form (PTHF). The most appropriate, available and low-cost substances are air and water, which play the role of nuclear fuel in PTHF. It is turned out that usual combustion is also a process of PTHF, in which oxygen is a nuclear fuel and organic fuel is a donor of electrons. In the process of combustion oxygen atoms get the defect of mass equal

to 10^{-6} %, which constitutes the so small value that it cannot change chemical properties of oxygen and does not call killing radioactive emanation.

There is a possibility to use energy properties both of oxygen and nitrogen of free air in the process of PTHF. To do this it is necessary to destroy nitrogen molecule at least in atoms or smaller fragments by some initiating influence. It is achieved by electrical discharge, magnetic flow, explosion and other means. These means consume much less energy than produced in PTHF. In particular, such processes were achieved in combustion engines. Such nitrogen mode of operation and combustion is accompanied by oxidation to H_2O, but not to CO_2, which is more effective in energy and ecological aspects. Accordingly, the power of engine increases and organic fuel is saved. Exhausts from this process mainly contain water vapor [3].

PTHF processes with excessive power release (more than consumed power) were also obtained in heat-generators operating with water.

Free energy diffused in the surrounding space could be transformed into mechanical, electrical or another kind of energy by means of vibration-resonance, electromagnetic and other energy systems. Classification of these systems as well as physical mechanism of energy transformation is given in [2]. The known Searl's engines can serve as an example of energy systems working with free energy.

The developed physical mechanisms of energy-release processes will allow to create industrial, stably operating, ecologically clean energy systems, which do not consume organic and nuclear kinds of fuel, harmful for humankind.

References

1. Andreev Ye.I., Smirnov A.P., Davydenko R.A., Klucherev O.A. Natural enegetics. – SPB, Nestor, 2000, 126 p.
2. Andreev Ye.I., Andreev S.Ye., Glazyrin Ye.S. Natural energetics –2. – SPb, Nevskaya Zhemchuzhina, 2002, 104 p.
3. Patent 2179649, Russia, 2000 / Andreev Ye.I., Smirnov A.P., Davydenko R.A.

On General Nature of Forces

Dr. Evgueni D. Sorokodoum

Entrepreneur and General Director, Vortex Oscillation Technology Ltd, Volochaevskaya Street, 40-B, Flat 38, 109033, Moscow, Russia
Telephone: 7-095-362-8084
e40dum@dol.ru http://vortex.viptop.ru

Introduction

In techniques and in our life we got used to certain physical notions concerning force. We usually use these notions in creation of automobiles, airplanes, rockets and other techniques, but we don't think about **the origin of forces** in general. Usually appearance of force in continuum is connected with presence of momentum gradient.

A number of works, which describe various versions about origin of a force appeared [1, 2, 5, 8, 17, 21, 22, 23, 25, 30, 35, 36, 38, 39]. Different mechanisms of appearance of force are considered in these articles. Usually they consider origin of a force in one of the fields,

which are: electromagnetic, gravitational and others. **There was a theoretical attempt to connect the force initiation with energy gradient [33]. Experimental proof of force initiation due to energy gradient was obtained in the works [7, 38].**

Below we made an attempt to show the general regularity of force initiation, which is connected with non-uniform distribution of energy in space. With this process, physical nature of any kind of energy and specific mechanism of force initiation does not play any role. These are only particular cases of general nature of force initiation.

General nature of forces

We are surrounded by space, which is full of energy. Here we mean the energy of any nature: mechanical, thermal, electromagnetic and others. Energy is related with material world and its value is connected with the volume.

Any particle (volume) of continuum has energy:

$$A = A(x, y, z, t) \qquad (1)$$

where x, y, z are Eighler's coordinates of the center of particle, t is time.

Transmission of energy from one point of space to another one can take place by various methods, both in connection with energy transmission by material particle itself (which is a "carrier" of energy in this case) and without such transmission (for example, with wave motion). For the volume degenerated in ideal point the energy will be zero. That's why it is more comfortable to operate with the energy density concluded in the

increasing constantly. We are the first who analytically got the law of gravity of the masses from the known equation of thermal conductivity. Appeared that on the relatively small distances (in the bounds of the Sun System) the law of gravity by Newton remains valid, but on the larger distances the sudden decrease goes on (Gauss integral), which naturally solves the famous Zelinger's paradox of gravity.

As a conclusion we should note that in the bounds of a stable galaxy of a spiral kind there is the circulation of ether. Ether moves from the periphery of the galaxy to its center (nucleus) by two spiral branches. This becomes apparent as a weak magnetic field (8-10 micro Gauss). In the nucleus of the galaxy there is the impact of two strings as well as there is formation of the spiral toroidal circles (protons). Then the protons form the adjoined vortexes around themselves (electron shells) and from the proton- hydrogen gas the stars are forming, which are moving to the periphery by the same branches. There they dissolve in ether at the periphery since the protons will loose their energy and stability due to the viscosity. Ether which have got the freedom will return to the nucleus of the galaxy and this process is going on in our galaxy for hundreds milliard years and it will keep going until the new center of vortex formation will begin to concentrate ether. Then the new galaxy will appear and our galaxy will disappear. But it will not happen soon and we have enough time to understand that we should return to the concept of ether in modern science.

Experimental Demonstration
of Cosmic Influence on the Earth Life
in N.A. Kozyrev's Researches
("On the Influence of Time on Matter")

Alexandra L. Belyaeva

Bishkek, 720075, Russia 8th Location, 46, apt.80
Tel.: 7-996-31-41-25-79
E-mail: artem_belyaev@mail.ru
Internet: www.newphysics.h1.ru

Editor's note: this article represents a part of the big scientific conception "World models in the new scientific progress". On applying of this conception a great number of practical technical devices have been created (as an example of such device we offer the description of universal electrical bio-heater, which was created by the group of researchers from Bishkek, Kyrgyz Science Technical Center "Energy" during the work on ceramic electroconvector).

We have to note that the position of our editorial board concerning "time" and Kozyrev's work is not in a good correlation with the authors' one.

Nicolay Alexandrovich Kozyrev scientifically and experimentally discovered the action of relations' interconnection, which was falsely named as time. Time cannot cause action because it is absolute and does not have any physical sense (Samat Kadyrov. Monograph "Theory of unified field").

Author's note: relations' interconnection is an interaction of structurally similar objects. It is a nuclear resonant gain-frequency process: in a stationary electric field, which is modeled by systematic organization, there is a development of similar to structural one, in-focus rays of powerful regular coherent radiations. These coherent radiations are determined by properties of chemical components of interrelated substances.

According to N.A. Kozyrev, it is ought to expect not identical density of relations' interconnection in space. Some processes decrease density; others on the contrary increase density of relations' interconnection. Action of the increased density is weakened according to the law of reversed squared distances; it is shielded by a solid matter, at thickness about 5cm, and is reflected by a mirror, according to the familiar optics law. The action of the decreased density on a detector is shielded, but does not reflected by a mirror. Properties of a matter can be changed under the influence of relations' interconnection. In this sense there is a big advantage in changes of electric current conductivity of resistor, which is brought into Witson bridge and is located near some process. For instance, in order to increase density it is useful to realize the process of evaporation of a volatile liquid; and for density decrease the process of cooling of a warmed-up agent can be realized. Due to these processes, change of conductor resistance is actually realized with opposite signs. Increase of density of the conductor with positive temperature coefficient leads to decrease of its resistance. At negative temperature coefficient there is an effect of the opposite sign, in the direction of changes, caused by temperature changes. Such correspondence to fall in temperature should be observed at changes of other properties of a matter, **because disorder in a matter structure is reduced along with fall in temperature**. The researches have shown the following results at the resistor, which was situated near processes of acetone evaporation on cotton wool and of solution of sugar in water. The

relative resistance change of resistor was observed at the 6th or 5th digit after comma (or even at the 4th digit if resistors had especially high temperature coefficient).

There is now a possibility to study the Universal World not only by means of the investigated spectrum of electromagnetic oscillations, but also through physical properties of relations' interconnection.

At many researches the influence of relations' interconnection on resistor electroconductivity was investigated. Acetone evaporation (at 10-15 cm distance from the resistor) was applied there as the process, which controls sensitivity of a system. However, the process of evaporation can influence on the resistor not only with density increase, but also due to temperature increase that occurs at evaporation. In order to take into consideration this cooling effect, (in the area of evaporating acetone) temperature was measured by Beckman mercurial thermometer with 0.01°C multiplying factor. The first experiments (without thermal protection) have shown the fall in temperature by several hundredth of degree. This fall was enough to cause the changes of resistor electroconductivity. However, the thermometer had been keeping on the demonstration of practically the same fall in temperature at thermal insulation of the resistor. The thermometer reacted on the radiation of relations' interconnection at acetone evaporation.

The part of the thermometer with a placed in a pasteboard tube mercury tank was laid round with cotton wool and put into a glass retort. The experimental process was fulfilled near the retort, and the reading of mercury altitude in capillary was determined by the scale of the thermometer through the closed window in the next room. The mercury altitude was decreased at dissolution of sugar in water (with steady temperature) and it was increased at the release of the squeezed spring, which was placed near the thermometer.

The radiation of the relations' interconnection was observed from many stars. It is caused by the inner processes, which take place on these heavenly bodies. The Sun (with its turbulent processes) radiates the relations' interconnection besides the searched electromagnetic radiation. Actually, if sunlight is recovered with a thin screen, the significant influence on the resistor will be discovered. The influences of the Sun to the Earth through the relations' interconnection become doubtless. These influences of the Sun should have a particular significance in vital functions of organisms, because it brings the beginning for life support. The totality of the researches demonstrates the dependence of matter state from the changes of the general background of the relations' interconnection. The drift of the devices (that show daily changes) usually stops about at midnight and then changes its direction. As for the seasonal course, there is a density decrease of the relations' interconnection in spring and summer; and there is an increase of it in autumn and winter. It is connected with the absorption of the relations' interconnection by the vital functions of plants and with the return of it at their fading. There are indications at the seasonal changes of chemical processes. For instance, reaction of polymerization has more difficulties in its realization in springtime. V. Zhvirilis observations of minimum and maximum light admission by means of the crossed Nickolya prisms can be explained by the crystalline reconstruction of these prisms.

By Kozyrev, as being invisible, vital source is disseminated everywhere in Nature, thus possibility of its accumulation is the only necessary thing. Such a possibility is realized in vital organisms because all vital functions counteract to the usual course of systems' destruction. The ability of organisms to keep and accumulate this counteraction is the reason, which determines the great role of biosphere for the Earth life. But even if we assume, that spreading of life in Space is one of its peculiar properties, biosphere will not have a decisive significance.

Cosmic bodies (and first of all stars) can serve as the reservoir, which gathers vital source. Enormous stocks of energy flow out of stars in a very weak degree through the radiation of comparatively cold external layers. Inner stars energy is preserved so well, that even at the lack of supplement, matter of the Sun would become cold only at one third degree per year. For the Universe the creative source carries the relations' interconnection. Thus cosmic bodies are necessary for support of life.

Author's note: We apprehend relation's interconnection as natural radioactive background. In fact, it is a nuclear resonance gain-frequency interaction of inertial masses that depends on living systems, especially on its rituals and that regulates its survival. Cosmic bodies regulate this process. Humanity is able to control nature only obeying to natural laws. In-focus beams of powerful laser streams are formed in the electric field of living system organisms. The creation of proton-antiproton pair in the living cells, alongside with the process of the absolute release of energy serves as a creative vital force. The process of radiation, support, absorption of energy by the organization (assembly of particles) is realized through the relation's interconnection and regulates its total mass.

> # *Humanity is able to control nature only obeying to natural laws.*

Life without Diseases and Old Aging Preventive Electrical Heater with Programmed Features

Alexandra L. Belyaeva

Bishkek, 720075, Russia 8th Location, 46, apt.80
Tel.: 7-996-31-41-25-79
E-mail: artem_belyaev@mail.ru
Internet: www.newphysics.h1.ru

Universal electrical bio-heater is intended for heating of rooms and preventive clearing of an air atmosphere from disease-producing organisms at continuous exposition (continuous work). The principle of its work fundamentally differs from those of the existing analogues. Carbon crystals are in the basis of bio-heater, which makes it environmentally appropriate.

Bio-heater represents a range of ceramic cylinders, jointed with metal plates on top and underneath. These plates play the role of load-carrying structure. It is used in production areas and living rooms for heating alongside with destruction of pathogen microorganisms. One bio-heater with 0,2 kWtt power is oriented for heating of the area with volume 35-45m^3 (in the future production of modernized models powered from solar cells is planned).

As distinct from the usual oil heater, preventive electrical bio-heater destructs agents of infectious diseases, whereas, according to the researches, oil heater stimulates their reproduction.

Absolute ecological cleanness is obtained by release of the quarters from the effect of increased atmospheric dampness with the temperature, appropriate to sanitary code. Any type of mold or fungus disappears in the quarter and in the future these forms do not renew their existence (even after removal of bio-heater).

The absence of injurious radiations is attained by the following: features of raw material, which is used during the process of electrical bio-heater production; radiation is normal during bio-heater working. Pollution-free temperature influence is attained by favorable infrared radiation.

Among the other properties of electrical bio-heater there are following: fire-safety; explosion proof; chemical inertness; enormous effectiveness from the point of view of electric energy demand. Structural simplicity facilitates its durability; there is nothing in bio-heater to be broken.

Technical aspects (applied Know How): In the process of technologic production of ceramic cylinders, from which bio-heater is consisted, **diamond-like cellular ceramic structure** with superimposed combination of atoms of lattice elements is created. Rhythmic work of cells, which form ceramic mixture, leads to resonance and creates a kind of blow wave (at micro level). This blow wave physically destroys microorganisms that have no calcium framework. It is related only to those microorganisms that are agents of infectious diseases, such as: staphylococcus, enterococcus, enterobacterium, etc. Thus parameters of the evoked blow wave coincide with vibration frequency of the definite types of bacterium and elementals. These blow waves cause the similar effect in room near of bio-heater, e.g. colonies of microorganisms are noticeably decreased there (even at the absence of bio-heater in the nearest room).

Due to its self-organization, bio-heater works in the range of living systems, it is approached to them. There is a realization of active connection with living coaly forms of biological systems. Actually the work of bio-heater is adjusted to them. Bio-heater properties can be programmed at the process of its production.

Bio-heater is a patented product. Patent KR #464 MKI C 04 V 33/24 "Ceramic mixture, possessing heat-radiating properties". Application #20010075.1 at Patent KR #464 MKI C 04 V 33/24 "The way of creation of energy, renewable, programmed hard-phase ceramic-carbon mass structure". Application at Patent KR #464 MKI C 04 V 33/24 "Technology of producing of electrical heaters with anti-resonant air prophylactic effect".

Finale product (FP) purchase is not more expensive than those of existent models of electrical heaters. Cost value is noticeably brought down on organization of the scaled production. It is ought to take into consideration that from all existent types of heating, from the customer's point of view, this one is the most energy-efficient. Manufacturing of such bio-heaters can be organized on the base of acting industrial production of ceramic fabrics. It will require some expenses. Moreover production service is rather cheap because there is no need in maintenance staff.

Electrical bio-heater can be applied everywhere, where there is a need in: a) economical heating; b) decrease of air moisture; c) disinfections of rooms.

As for the life cycle of bio-heater it does not become obsolete morally and technically. It is produced from the materials, which are not liable to wear.

The invention has a certificate of KR Gosstandart. From the end of 1998 the first unimproved modification of bio-heater (with power 0,6 KWtt) were put into serial production in Bishkek (with small test production runs). This time bio-heaters are readily used as medical equipment in hospitals and maternity hospitals in Bishkek. **Inventor: Alexandra L. Belyaeva.**

Technical Report

The comparison of quantity of heat energy, required for heat of rooms, and of heat quantity, which is produced by Belyaeva's electroconvector.

Mavlyanbekov Sh.Yu.

Deputy Director KSTC "Energy"
Internet: www.newphysics.h1.ru

Editor's note: this calculatious demonstrates the advantages of the device, which at 340 Wtt energy consumption produces about 700 Wtt of heat power.

The calculation of heat output, coming from the ceramic electroconvector to a room, was based on the basis of research statement of EVNA-0.2/220 electroconvector's influence on air micro flora of industrial rooms at 23.10.01. - 06.11.01. period.

The researchers were carried out in the arbitrary room in a four-storied large-panel building. This room was on the 3rd floor, with facing east windows. The room was of 52.5 m³ air-space, 3.5 m height and 15 m² area. The calculation of heat, was made on the basis of "Methods for calculation of the requirement in heat and electric energy of buildings". These methods were registered by Department of Justice of Kyrgyz Republic on 08.09.2000, #154. According to the normative data, temperature of inner air (t_{in}) in the room must be equal to +20° C. In Bishkek planned specified temperature of external air (t_{ex}) for heating is minus 23°C. The average temperature of heating period is t_{av} = -0.9°C, specific heat characteristic of the building is:
q=0.4 Kcal/m³ h °C.

Medium quantity of heat energy, which is required for heating, is determined by the formula:

$$Q_{av}heating = q \cdot V \cdot (t_{in} - t_{ex}) \cdot 1.12 \cdot$$
$$\cdot [(t_{in} - t_{av}) \div (t_{in} - t_{av})] \text{Kcal/h}$$

$$Q_{av}heating = 0.4 \cdot 52.5 \cdot (20+23) \cdot 1.12 \cdot$$
$$\cdot [(20+0.9) \div (20+23)] = 492 \text{Kcal/h}$$

Thus at the average annual temperature of the heating period, which is: t_{av} = - 0.9°C, the quantity of heat energy required for this room, comes to 492 Kcal/h.

According to the research statement, the trials of the electroconvector with 200Wtt power were carried out at the following external air temperature: +10.2°C; +8.5°C; +10°C; +6.6°C. The calculation data and results of its examination are brought together in a table. The parameters of electroconvector with 340Wtt power are demonstrated in the same table.

Table 1
Table of determination of heat entry and heat consumption's correspondence in the experimental room

#	External air temperature, °C	Inner air temperature °C	Normative heat consumption KWtt (Gcal/h)	Experimental heat consumption KWtt (Gcal/h)	Percentage depending on normative heat consumption %	Economy of heat energy kWtt (Gcal/h) comparing with power consumption of the device 0.2 kWtt (0.000172 Gcal/h)	Economy of heat energy kWtt (Gcal/h) comparing with power consumption of the device 0.34 kWtt (0.000292 Gcal/h)
1	- 0.9	+20	0.572 (0.000492)		100	-	
2	+10.2	+20	0.267 (0.00023)		100	-	
	+10.2	+16		0.158 (0.000136)	59	0.2-0.158=0.042	0.34-0.158= =0.182
3	+8.5	+20	0.314 (0.00027)		100		
	+8.5	+17		0.233 (0.000200)	74	0.2-0.233=-0.033	0.34-0.233= =0.107

4	+10	+20	0.273 (0.000235)		100		
	+10	+23		0.355 (0.000305)	130	0.2-0.355=-0.155	0.34-0.355= =-0.015
5	+6.6	+20	0.366 (0.000315)		100		
	+6.6	+19		0.338 (0.000291)	92	0.2-0.338=-0.138	0.34-0.338= =0.002

Calculation data demonstrate a considerable economy of heat energy at daily unevenness of external air temperature.

Heat productivity of the new structure of electric convector with 340Wtt power was calculated on the assumption on the suggestion that heating of the room is carried out by the irradiation at the process of heat exchange.

$$E = \varepsilon \cdot C_\circ \cdot T^4 \cdot 10^{-8} \qquad \text{Wtt/m}^2$$

where: $C_0 = 5.67$ Wtt/m^2 K^4 is a radiant emittance of blackbody, $\varepsilon = 0.93$ is an emissitivity factor of the surface of earthenware duct tube; $T = 70^\circ C = 343$ K is the temperature of the surface of earthenware duct tube.

On substitution of the known values into the formula we get:

$$E = 0.93 \cdot 5.67 \cdot 343^4 \cdot 10^{-8} = 727 \text{ Wtt/m}^2$$

As the area of irradiation surface is equal to S=0.96 m^2, then quantity of heat, which is evolved by the convector, comes to:

$$E_k = S \cdot E = 0.96 \cdot 727 = 698 \text{ Wtt (or 600 Kcal/h)}$$

The quantity of heat, which is required for the heating of the room, is 492 Kcal/h (at the external air temperature equal to minus 0.90 and temperature in the room equal to plus 200).

Thus, electric convector with 340 Wtt power is able to heat totally the room with 60m3 area.

Editors note: 340 input and 700 output!!!

Longitudinal Waves in Vacuum: Creation and Research

Ph. Dr. Kirill P. Butusov

190121, Saint Petersburg, Angliysky prospect, 5-18
Tel: (812) 113-8511

The author presents a new elegant system, which is the symmetrized Maxwell's equations. In practice it gives a possibility to create the longitudinal waves in vacuum. This system is of great importance in telecommunications and aerospace technigue.

There is a stable paradigm in electrodynamics that the existence of the longitudinal waves in vacuum is impossible. This paradigm played its negative role preventing scientific minds from solving this problem. However, Maxwell was not as categorical in his opinion on this question as his following were.

Particularly he wrote: "Science of electromagnetism as well as optics is not able to confirm or deny the existence of longitudinal oscillations."

Maxwell's dynamic equations are usually considered as partial derivatives in time. However, the total derivative in time includes the so called substantial derivative, which was shown in the equations for the moving coordinate system. In particular, one of these equations was written by Maxwell himself to explain the phenomenon of electromagnetic induction discovered by Faraday. This induction takes place in the conductor moving across the field lines of electromagnetic field:

$$\vec{E} = \vec{V} \times \vec{B}; \qquad \text{(I)}$$

Other equations were obtained later by other scientists. In the table I below Maxwell's equations are given in a split form. Their static and dynamic parts are given separately as well as the equations for moving and fixed coordinate systems. Such matrix concept of Maxwell's equations allowed finding their incompleteness. Really, the analysis of the matrix shows its high symmetry. However, full symmetry of the system of equations is broken by the absence of the equation (X). It seems to be strange and calls a desire to remove this defect in such an elegant system of equations.

A new equation is introduced in the Table 1 for the full symmetry of the matrix:

$$\nabla \cdot \rho = -\frac{1}{c^2} \cdot \frac{\partial \vec{j}}{\partial t}; \qquad \text{(X)}$$

Fundamental Properties of Aether

Alexander M. Mishin

Author's note: *In the article the principles determining major properties of aether are formulated on the basis of an empirical material.*

Real aether [1-6], the primary and superfine essence of which is still a secret, has turned out to be absolutely non-standard superfluid three-dimensional material medium, which simultaneously is at solid, liquid and gas phases. The first master phase of aether is a specifically solid absolute space or an energetical "bottom" of the Universe ("celestial stronghold"). At that the solid phase is considered as mesomorphic vortical-wave structure, which has particular holographic properties. Classical matter represents to be one of the stable and energetic space-time levels of the Universe. Aether vortexes exceed all conceivable space scales, have quasi-material properties and create a great number of stereo-dynamic subspaces (parallel worlds).

The first basic principle, to which aether entirely follows, is the principle of the least disturbance (the least action). Many well-known and unknown physics laws are the subsequent of this principle. In particular, any motion in macroscopic aether happens in such a way to minimize the interaction with the matter of our world, with zero moment of the disturbance momentum. In the classical physics this principle has been reflected as Le Shatelye principle, as variation principle, laws of thermodynamics etc.

The second principle is the principle of fractality, which confirms the similarity of forms and properties of quantum aether vortex structures regardless of their space scale. This principle also determines the Universe as stereodynamically multivariate system in the form of hierarchy of vortical-wave structures of the unified aether (fractal matreshka). On the researching of the macroscopic objects of the Universe it is possible to make a conclusion about microcosm structure if taking into account the changes of frequencies and velocities of action transmission.

In the third place there is a principle of physical autonomy, which confirms that any solitary mass (for example a planet) creates aether system. The particular principle of relativity, which reflects one of the fractal properties of the Universe, can be applied to this system. Such autonomous mass becomes similar to the miniuniverse with its aether subspaces, which repeat the basic phases of the Universe spectrum in more narrow (which depends on the size of mass) frequency band of space-time frequencies. Thus, in the local system of the Earth solid aether reproduces the structure of gravitational field with energy "bottom" in the mass center. As the result such spherical body occurs to be an energy drain and warms up from within.

The fourth is the principle of interaction between matter and vortex-wave forms, which do not depend to the spectral part of the Universe, that is quasimatter. This is the principle of new interaction in nature. The value of energy interaction in each experiment diminishes in time according to exponential law that is explained by the forming of energy informational or adaptation barrier, which separates parallel worlds and reflects the properties of vortex tenacity of aether as superfluid medium. At that, time of interaction is proportional to the size of quasimatter and the barrier for the earthly conditions is lowered at the indefinite period, on the assumption of only thrice-repeated observation of forces (triad law).

According to this principle, aether dynamic experiments in the earth laboratory do not have classical repeatability that, from the one hand, gives occasion to doubts in the objectivity and scientific character of the non-traditional experiments and from another hand it is the most reliable test feature of macroscopic aether motions. Biosystems have special relations with this principle.

The fifth is the principle of many-dimensional autobalance of forces. All vortex and linear motions of macroscopic aether organize themselves in the way that in the band of space-time spectrum of the local system (usually with the aid of fluid and gas aether) occurs to be self-balanced, that is they have zero resulting impulse and the moment of impulse due to the existence of the proportionate antivortexes and antistreams of another spectral structure at the same space volume. The self-balanced vortex structures and streams are practically closed for the outer watch from the direction of our material world, at least with respect to the methods of classical physics. The principle of autobalance of forces reflects aether properties as unified synergetic system and has a significant applied meaning.

Let call the principle of viability of aether dynamic systems as the sixth principle. Only a stereodynamic multivariate system is a viable one, that is a system, which during a definite period of time has the opportunity, called as life cycle, to realize interconcerted self-oscillating processes of vortex-wave character simultaneously at different phase states (subspaces, layers) of aether. The most important features of such a system are its space-time quasimaterial (vortex-wave) broadbandness and finite time of existence, which is determined by the conditions of creation of the energy-informational barrier. Self-oscillation regime demands the presence of an energy source, oscillatory circuit (a pendulum) of any character, intensive process (of negative tenacity) and a channel of positive feedback (negative entropy).

In the sense, referred above, any material system is viable and occurs to be a big system in the form of coordinated community of multivariate subsystems. In its turn each big system as a part of the hierarchy is a

constituent of bigger system, until everything is embraced by the Biggest System, that is the Universe.

The seventh principle of the universal energy interchange is the physical realization of the law of unity and struggle of oppositions. This principle determines spontaneous creation of thermodynamic and antigravitation potentials. Any local matter mass (a body), situated in the open space, creates an exchange process with the surrounding aether volume in the way that more fine-structure fluid aether is absorbed by the body, and the less power-consuming gas aether is radiated. As the result the body as a heat engine gets energy due to the cooling of aether exteriors. At that, antigravitation forces acts between bodies and aether exteriors, which have different temperature.

This principle, which establishes the existence of antipodes of the second law of thermodynamics and Newtonian attraction, is realized mainly in cosmic scales and explains in which way the energy is created in the bowels of planets and stars and why the Universe is stable as regards to gravitation. Obviously, the most unexpected for the modern Physics is the discovery of non-traditional nuclear processes where conditional reactions of decay and fusion occur at the usage of quasimatter.

More deep research of new experimental results and of the stated above scientific principles lets to determine the priority-driven strategic tendencies in Physics, to open more entirely the laws of mechanics and thermodynamics of many-dimensional aether, including the theory of non-traditional waves and new types of electromagnetism. At that, the supreme aim is the research of differences in aetherodynamics laws on the Earth (in a laboratory) and in outer space, the unknowing of these differences has caused logical insularity, false all-sufficiency of classical physics, which had refused as "not wanted" the aether conception and fundamental Universal laws.

References

1. Mishin A.M. On the new properties of physical vacuum, gravitational field and mass. DD USSR, 1988, p. 44

2. Mishin A.M. Experimental results on the registration of aether wind // New ideas in Natural Sciences. Series: Problems of research of the Universe, issue 18. – SPb: RAS, 1995, p. 24-33

3. Mishin A.M. The Aether Model as Result of New Empirical Conception. New Ideas in Natural Sciences. (On materials of the International Conference). Part I – SPb: RAS, 1996, p.95-104

4. Mishin A.M. The physical system of artificial biofield // "New Energy Technologies" – SPb: Faraday Labs Ltd, 2001, issue #1, p. 45-50

5. Mishin A.M. Antigravitation and new energy processes // "New Energy Technologies" – SPb: Faraday Labs Ltd, 2001, issue #2, p. 37-41

6. Longitudinal thermomagnetic effect // New Energy Technologies – SPb: Faraday Labs Ltd, 2002, issue #2(5), p. 38-41

Irving Langmuir and Atomic Hydrogen

Nicholas Moller

PO Box 201
34008 Eretria
Greece

Editorial

In this paper Dr. Nicholas Moller describes the history of development of Atomic Hydrogen technologies in details. It is remarkable that this technology can be applied not only for welding processes but also as a clean free energy source. It is important to note that in this case the hydrogen process does not involve a consumption of hydrogen, which is not combusted in the process. Atomic hydrogen is not really a fuel but rather a medium, gateway or a super-conductor of ZPE form the vacuum of space, converting ZPE radiation and ultra-high frequency electrical energy into infrared (heat) radiation.

This is the story of Irving Langmuir who was the first to develop a theory on Atomic Hydrogen on the basis of empirical research and experimentation. His work in this field lasted from 1909 to 1927. During this period he was employed by the Research Laboratory of General

Irving Langmuir.

Electric Company. Patents and discoveries developed by Langmuir during his time with General Electric were to a considerable extent instrumental in laying the foundations for what is today one of the largest corporations in the world.

The question that gave birth to this article, is why his work and discoveries on Atomic Hydrogen were the only work that received hardly any attention at all and why his revolutionary breakthrough was deprived of world attention for almost 100 years? This question becomes even more relevant when taking into consideration the high standing he enjoyed with his contemporaries (including being awarded the Nobel Prize in Chemistry)

and it is better to make it distantly after exclusion of man presence near experimental stands and devices. At the same time it is quite obvious that on applying of small capacity and fixed time of irradiation it is possible to develop methods for curing of human diseases, which are considered now as incurable (for instance of diabetes, some diseases of haematogenic system, of cancer and possibly of AIDS.

References

1. Proceeding of the International Scientific Conference "New Ideas in Natural Sciences" Problems of Modern Physics, p. 176-187

2. Journal of new energy, Vol. 3, #4,1999, I.M. Shakhparonov "Interaction between Kozyrev – Dirak radiation and radionuclides", p. 85-89

3. Kozyrev N.A. Selected works, Leningrad State University, 1991, part 3

4. Lavrentyev M.M. Eganova I.A. Luzet M.L., Fominykh S.F.// Reports by AS USSR. – 1990, Vol. 314, #2, p. 352-355

5. Lavrentyev M.M., Gusev V.A., Eganova I.A., Luzet M.L., Fominykh S.F.// Reports by AS USSR. – 1990, Vol. 315, #2, p. 368-370

6. Methodological materials on experimental pharmacological and clinical trials of immune modulating effect of pharmacological remedies. - Ministry of Health USSR, M., 1984

7. Talmadge J.E. and Chiragos M.A. Comparison of immunomodulatory and immunotherapeutic properties of biologic response modifiers. Springer Seminar Immunopathol., 1985, 8, 429-443

Effect of Magnetic Blow Wave Field on Wine Systems

I.M.Shakhparonov (Corresponding author), S.A.Grin, S.R.Tsimbalaev, L.N.Kreindel, V.N.Kocheshkova, A.I.Podlesny, S.Yu.Gelfand

AGD Firm, Peschanyi pereulok, House No.20P korpus No.1, Lfl. 33 125252, Moscow, A- 252, Russian Federation

Russian Institute of Canning Industry, Shkolnaya Street. 78. 142703 Vidnoe 3. Moscow Region, Russian Federation

Introduction

Authors communicate the data on influence of Magnetic Blow Wave (MBW) field on several wineproducts. It was found, that MBW did not lead to significant changes in the major components of the wineproduct (sugar, organic acids, minerals). At the same time the taste and aroma of treated wine become more pleasant; content of heavy alcohols and wine stone in the treated samples was less than in non treated ones. A mechanism of transformations was also discussed.

Keywords: *Magnetic Blow Wave (MBW), Wineproduct, GLC of aroma compounds and ethanol, HPLC of sugars, Atomic Absorption Spectrometry (AAS) of minerals, Heavy alcohols and aldehydes, Wine stone, Turbidity tendency, Organoleptic evaluation*

Magnetic Blow Wave (MBW) was obtained for the first time during the investigations on ball lighting generation under the laboratory conditions (Shakhparonov 1994). MBW as a physical object is interesting because of some facts, which suggest that MBW is a magnetic monopole. The MBW can also interact with the matter and transforms it in a definite way. Typical example is an elementary carbon in the form of graphite, which is transformed by such magnetic treatment into ferromagnetic substance (ibid).

The graphite, which is initially diamagnetic, transforms to paramagnetic one with general radiation doze of about $7 \cdot 10^{19}$ neutrons/cm^2. Other types of radiations could not affect this way (Svoistva 1975). So one unit of MBW can be considered as $1 \cdot 10^5$ of neutron masses. This fact may be regarded as an indirect evidence for assuming that MBW and magnetic monopole are the same things. In the absence of excited radioactivity a slow MBW [v/c < $1 \cdot 10^4$] occurs, which does not ionize atoms (Devons, 1963). Therefore, their interaction with the matter can be observed only indirectly. No data exist on the interaction of MBW with organic substances. The experiments and results reported in the present communication may be a starting point for development of technology and to formulate the methods for vintage wine and best quality spirit production.

Materials and Methods

Assuming that MBW and magnetic monopole are the same things, a number of conditions were selected for all experiments. The MBW source and the samples were placed in the same axis and the axis was oriented according to magnetic meridian direction. Such magnetic orientation is appropriate, as the energy of magnetic monopole theoretically increases in a magnetic field (Devons, 1963). All of samples were placed at 250 cm distance from MBW source, in hermetically closed glasses. It should be noticed that MBW could penetrate through many other barriers, for example into cast iron reservoir with wall thickness of 5 cm (Amaldi, 1970).

The quality investigations were made by using of standard equipment. HPLC, equipped with refractometric detector was used for sugars estimation. Separation of organic acids in forms of their ethyl esters and acid esters was carried out chromatographically using a column packed with polyethylenglycol succinate and the following temperature option: initial temperature is 120°C, final temperature is 220°C, temperature growth rate: 8°/min. GLC was also employed for determination of ethanol. Minerals content

was examined with Atomic Absorption Spectrometry (AAS). Electronic spectra of samples were obtained with double beams UV Vis spectrophotometer equipped with permanent wavelength scanning. Redox potential was measured with EV-74 potentiometer.

The aroma alterations in the wine samples were investigated by GLC method after preliminary concentration of aromas by solid phase adsorption. The concentration was carried out by barbotation of inert gas (nitrogen) through liquid and consecutive catching of volatiles with tube trap, filled by Polysorb 1 sorbent (Lur'e 1972). The well-known analogue of Polysorb 1 is Porapak Q. The tube may be regarded as a short chromatographic column, and volatiles go through it according to their retention times. The choice of sorbent was motivated by the fact, that retention times of water and ethanol was rather small (ibid). Thus, a concentration process can be ended at the moment, when water and ethanol have passed through the column, as the other volatiles remained bonded. The aroma desorption was made with ethyl ester. The analysis of the concentrates obtained was carried out with gas chromatograph equipped with flame ionisation detector (FID), column 3 m x 3 mm, packed by Carbovax M on the Supelcoport. Temperature for the analysis was programmed from 100 to 190°C with increase of 1°/min. Isothermal conditions in the borders had durations of 2 and 40 min respectively. The "mild" conditions of separation were also employed (initial oven temperature was 80°C with isothermal condition duration 5 min, temperature growth rate 1°/min, final temperature 150°C and isothermal condition duration 40 min).

Optical activity was tested with Spectropol at D line of Na (580 nm). The samples were evaluated organoleptically by a group (12 persons) of workers from Russian Institute of Canning Industry. Turbidity tests were made under the methods of Valuiko et al (1987). In some cases, qualitative tests were completed by MPL turbiditymetric measurements. Before testing samples were filtered. Determinations of heavy alcohols and aldehydes contents were carried out in accordance to National Standard (GOST, 5363-67) as follows below. Determination of the constituents of "heavy spirits"(i pentanol, i butanol) was based on reaction of the sample with salicylic aldehyde in a presence of H_2SO_4. Rose colour develops if sample contains the heavy alcohols. The density was measured with Vis-photometer and the quantative determination was carried out using standard graph made with mixture solution of i pentanol and i butanol. A method for determination of aldehydes content is based on a reaction of fuchsine sulphite. The developed colour was measured with Vis-photometer. Calibrating plot constructed basing on typed solutions was used for quantification.

Results and Discussion

Investigations of wine quality changes after MBW treatment were performed using two samples of portwine ("Zemfira") type wine. Sample 1 was a reference (non treated) and sample 2 was treated with MBW.

In both samples, the fructose and glucose levels were practically the same and amounted to 43.8 ± 3,32.22.5 g/*l* respectively. Sucrose and maltose were absent. Total sugar content was 76.0 g/1 though the level marked on the label was 80 g/*l*. It is thus apparent that the treatment of wine with MBW does not lead to noticeable changes of sugars content. Results of organic acids determinations are given in the Table 1.

Table 1
Main organic acids content, g/1

Acid	Treated wine	Initial wine
Lactic	0.0265	0.00187
Oxalic	0.010	0.0088
Succinic	0.209	0.18
Malic	4.56	4.22
Tartric	0.0805	0.0895
Citric	0.401	0.483

Standard deviation for the determination method was estimated as 7 %. This fact shows that differences in organic acids content are not significant. It should be noted that a tendency of slight increase in light acids (up to malic) in the treated wine was observed in contrast to noticeable change in more heavy acids. The ethanol content of both of samples was 181 and 184 g/*l* for non treated and treated samples, respectively, though the label on the bottle indicated 190 g/*l* concentration. Standard deviation was 5 %. Thus, MBW treatment does not lead to significant changes in alcohol content.

Atomic Absorption Spectrometry (AAS) data indicated that the samples were practically identical in terms of K, Na, Ca, Mg, Fe, Cu and Zn contents (data are not shown).

Similarly, spectra of treated and non treated wines, diluted 150 times before photometring, were practically identical, thereby pointed out that polyphenols are unchanged.

When wine is industrially treated with IR or microwave heating, ultrasonic, ultraviolet and g radiation, different reactions occur and there include redox reaction, esterification, condensation, hydrolysis, Maillard reactions, etc (Kishkovsky 1988). Most of reactions are accompanied by redox potential changing. Increase in Redox potential points out the increase in concentration of oxidants, i.e. oxygen, peroxides, and other compounds, which are electron acceptors. Redox decrease is a result of oxidation processes (ibid). Redox potential was practically constant ($\Delta E = 145$ mV and 150 mV in samples # 1 and 2 respectively). Evidently, oxidation processes, like they occurred during heat treatment, were absent during the MBW treatment.

One of the important reactions to be considered is the Maillard reaction. Essentially it appears in form of browning, decrease in reducing sugars and amino acids, and new aromas formation. While our result evidences on absence of irrelevant aromas, alterations of wine colour, and sugar content, thereby indicating insignificant contribution of Maillard reaction on wine quality changes due to MBW treatment. Technological treatment often leads to esters accumulation that improves wine aroma. It's well known that the most important in this context are the esters of C_6-C_{14} fatty acids (Kishkovsky 1988). During heat treatment, storage and other physical influences, different kinds of acid esters accumulate. These have weaker aroma than esters of fatty acids. But their appearance proves the existence of esterification processes. A comparison of aromas chromatograms of the samples 1 and 2 proves occurrence of changes in concentrations of the individual substances (increasing of peaks length with retention times of 13.10, 100.9; decreasing of peaks length of 54.85 min). An order of peaks exit of different volatiles is given in the Table 2.

Table 2

Exit order of different volatiles

Exit order, from published data for Carbovax 20 M	Retention time in our experiments, min	Exit order, from published data for Carbovax 20 M	Retention time in our experiments, min
Acet aldehyde	3.8	i-Pentanol	23.56
Ethyl acetate	4.71	i-Amyl butyrate	
Diacetyl	4.82	Acetone	
Methanol	4.91	n-Pentanol	27.92
Ethanol	6.01	i-Amyl valerate	
n-Propanol		Ethyl lactate	
i-Butanol	13.58	Ethyl caprilate	52.6
Butyl acetate	13.59	Acetic acid	
i-Butyl acetate		Diethyl succinate	
Ethyl valerate		Ethyl laurate	
n-Butanol	17.73	Phenyl ethanol	
Amyl acetate	20.70	Diethyl malate	

A comparison of retention times of components with peaks of standard substances of wine aroma indicates that butyl acetate and i-butanol are very close to peak 2. Data on chromatographic separation with mild condition showed that i butanol and butyl acetate peaks exited simultaneously. Organoleptic evaluation recorded a nice smell in the treated wine, thereby due to the formation of butyl acetate. Data indicated the presence of ethyl malate, ethyl tartrate and ethyl citrate in the samples, in addition to two peaks corresponding to ethyllactate and ethyl oxalate. The large experiment error does not allow any inference on changes of their height after magnetic treatment. Identification of peaks with retention time factor especially in such complex system is not unquestionable. However, the best way is to use the chromato mass spectrometer, which allows inference according to their individual mass-spectrum.

Organoleptic evaluation can depend on aliphatic alcohols content. Determination with GLC shows (Table 3), that their quantity in the both samples is rather small with respect to average values taken from literature for this type of wines. Thus such changes can not be recognized with such evaluation. For both of samples pH was equal to 4.0.

Table 3
Aliphatic alcohols content, mg/1

Alcohol	Sample #1			Sample # 2	Average literature values (Kishkovsky 1988)
Methanol					80-350
i-Propanol					0,3-3
n-Propanol	less	than	20		5-50
i-butanol	less	than	20	less than 20	20-100
n-Butanol	less	than	10	less than 10	2-10
i-Pentanol	less	than	20	less than 20	100-250

The results of optical activity measurements indicated, that both samples are not optical active. Filtration, clarification and dilution could not change the optical activity. Perhaps, there is a compensation of different forms of D- and L- compounds in the samples, thus total activity was very close to zero, and magnetic influences could not change equilibrium between the forms.

Organoleptic evaluation of more delicate taste and aroma of the treated sample with respect to non treated one, MBW treated sample as more complete, harmonic, noble, and natural in contrast untreated sample was recorded as excessively bitter and sour in spite of practically the same pH of samples.

It is interesting to test the tendency of wine to make a different kind of turbidity after the MBW treatment. Data showed that both samples were not positive for protein turbidity. In term of reversible colloid turbidity formation, after storage at 7.5°C for 1 day, the MBW treated sample was homogeneous, in contrast to the formation of different phases with different refractometric numbers in untreated sample. Both the phases in untreated sample were liquid, with a density very close to each other, but the borders of phases were like broken lines when crystallization begins in crystallization process. This alteration in untreated sample may be due to micelle state changes or of structurization of product.

The tendency test for polysaccharide turbidity based on the reaction with phenol in presence of H_2SO_4 and determination of the derivative formed by photometrically, indicated, that difference in concentrations of polysaccharide in the both samples are very small, the levels being 119 and 106 mg/l for untreated and treated samples respectively. These values are close to range of polysaccharide stability (150-200 mg/l), and thus do not allow any conclusion on changes of relative stability of the samples. A tendency for polyphenols turbidity, due to polyphenols associates precipitation upon addition of salt did not show differences. Turbidity, as determined in MPL apparatus, was 15 FEM as against value of 0.2 FEM before testing in untreated sample. These numbers were respectively 14 and 0.3 FEM for treated sample. Thus it indicates that both the samples are very stable with respect to polyphenols turbidity and that the magnetic treatment does not lead to alteration in the polyphenols stability.

The data on the colloid stability indicate, that both the samples showed rather high resistance against protein, polysaccharide and polyphenols turbidities. Besides, treated sample showed higher stability with respect to reversible colloid turbidities.

It is interesting to investigate as to how heavy alcohols and aldehydes, which are often produced, when low-grade technology is used, are affected by magnetic treatment. For these studies, a system of simple mixture, consisting only of spirit and water, was used.

Commercial vodka bottled in standard 0.5 l bottles and artificial solutions, containing 40 % of food derived rectified spirit were used. Data showed, that MBW treatment significantly influenced the heavy alcohols content, as the reduction in heavy alcohol was more than two times. In addition, it reduced aldehydes by more than 3 times in vodka, and more than 30 % in rectified spirit. Data indicate that efficiency of aldehydes removal is higher when the sample contained higher level of aldehydes. Thus, the MBW treated vodka and rectified spirit will be better than untreated one. It is however stressed that untreated samples were also recorded as good by sensory panel. So, limits for aldehydes are usually present in high quality vodka established by National Standard (GOST 5363- 67) are 6 - 15 mg/l. Thus the organoleptic evaluation of samples does not allow to find difference in aldehyde levels in these samples.

Table 4

The main results of heavy alcohols and aldehydes determination
(mg/1) in vodka and solution, contained 40 % of rectified spirit

Substance	Non-treated vodka	Treated vodka	Non-treated spirit	Treated spirit
Alcohols	8.7	2.55	3.38	1.5
Aldehydes	1.5	0.4	0.6	0.4

Sediments formation and its character were also evaluated. The sediment in treated grape juice was dense and more dark, the formless, non crystalline sort, and gel like form. The volume of the sediment occupied up to 30% of total volume. The sediment did not sink or float, nor it stick to the walls of glass. It was found that 100 ml of juice gave about 155 mg of dry sediment. Microscopic investigations showed an absence of any kind of bacteria or fungi in the sediments.

The effects of high energy of magnetic influences on sediment were also investigated. The experiments were carried out with "Portwine Erevanski, vol. 0.5 1, white, spirit content 19 vol %, sugar 10 %, prepared according to GOST (National Standard) 7208-84". Crystalline sediment appeared on the walls and especially on the bottom of the bottle after the BMW treatment. An amorphous precipitate was also presented, and it can be separated by decantation. Crystalline sediment, after washing with ethanol and drying to constant weight, weighted 69.2 mg, and was of bright brown colour. A tartrate content as a tartrate acid, of the sediment was 59% mass. If it is considered as a tartar (a wine stone) of potassium sodium tartrate, then tartar content in sediment works out to be 86%. If it is considered as a tartar of dipotassium tartrate, tartar content in sediment will be 93%.

Generalization of data shows the positive effect of magnetic treatment on the wine samples, leading to harmonic taste of treated wine and absence of non

pleasant tastes. Most of the changes were found to bein the flavour and taste components, which were minor substances in the product. For example esters concentration changes during the treatment. At the same time the content of major components, such as sugars, organic acids, particularly, heavy organic acids, and especially ethanol remain constant. It seems logical from kinetic point of view, when simple processes, like esterification, are preferable with respect to many stages reactions, and reactions with high activation energies, which can go at hard conditions. Also, it seems logical that magnetic treatment may influence on electrical state of colloid species. Thus magnetic treatment can be considered as mild, selective in the comparison with many other physical methods. Nevertheless, the changes lead to acceptable energetical and nutritious value of the product. Data show that difficult problems, such tartar removal, can be solved by MBW treatment.

References

1. Amaldi E. et al in: Preprint CERN, Report 63 13. Search of Dirak Magnetic Pole, 1970.
2. Devons S. Search for Magnetic Monopole, Sci., Progr. (No.204), 601 (1963).
3. GOST (National Standard) 5363 67. Vodka. Metody ispytaniy (Testing Methods).
4. Kishkovsky Z.N., Skurikhin I.M., Khimiyavina (Wine Chemistry), Moscow: VO "Agropromizdat", 1988, 253 p. (in Russian)
5. Lurle A.A. Sorbenty i khromatograficheskie nositely (Handbook on Sorbents and Chromatographic Supporters), Moscow, Khimiya, 1972, 320 p.(in Russian)
6. Shakhparonov I.M. in: Sharovaya molniya v laboratorii (Ball Lighting in the Laboratory) / Collection of Articles. Moscow: Khimiya, 1994, 400 p.
7. Svoistva konstrukzionnykh materialov na osnove ugleroda (The Properties of Constructional Materials Based on Carbon) / Handbook/ Nagorny V.G., Kotosonov A.S., Ostrovsky V.S., Dymov B.K., Lutkov A.I., Anufriev Yu.P., Barabanov V.N., Belgorodsky V.D., Kuteinikov A.F., Virgelev Yu.S., Sokker G.A. Moscow, Metallurgy, 1975, P. 73 77 (in Russian)
8. Valuiko G.G., Zinchenko V.I., Mekhuzla N.A. Stabilizatsiyavina (Wine Stabilization), Moscow: "Agropromizdat", 1987, 160 p. (in Russian).

The Fundamentals of the New Principle of Motion

By The Group Studying Inertialess Natural Processes (GSINP) 123430, Moscow, Mitinskaya Str., 40-1-244 Email: gibip@mail.ru

P. Sherbak

The concepts of active and passive interaction between the moving object and the space form the basis of the new principle of motion.

So as to be more understandable, let's consider what is the old principle of motion. For this we will use the concept of a moving object and the space in which the object is moving. Naturally, material objects and the space can't interact between each other directly, because the space is the philosophical category. In this case we can understand physical essence of natural phenomena easily. In our view, the material objects interact with some fundamental energy of space (FAM), which fills all space with a different density. Thus the energy (FAM) is inalienably connected with the space. One of the first names of this energy is "ether" in the early scientific works. So, for the simplicity we will accept that the object and the space interact between each other.

Thus, all existing methods of motion which have been invented by mankind till the present time are based on activity of the material object that means the one expends some energy to produce the motion, and at the same time space is passive, it means that space does not need to spent any energy to move the object. And so in common case space tries to keep the object in the former state interfering with accelerated movements of the object (in accordance with **the 1st , the 2nd and the 3rd Newton's laws**).

It should be noticed that such method of motion (for the speed, which is much less than the speed of light) takes place both in animate and inanimate natures. In this case the level of energy of motion and reaction of space (or an environment) are not very high. Incidentally, the energy of object can be of different types: electrical, chemical, biochemical, mechanical etc. The common consequence of this type of motion is existence of the ***inertia***. The classical physics can't answer the question: "what is inertia?» The same situation is applied to the concept of ***mass,*** which is closely connected with inertia. The classical physics says that ***the mass is a measure of inertia.***

There is the new principle of motion of material object: the object is passive and space is active. In this case it's more favorably for space in the energy aspect to move the passive object and to spent some power then to keep the object in the present place in the former state of immobility (in accordance with **the 1st, the 2nd and the 3rd Newton's laws**). And so we should introduce **the 4th law of** Newton's **mechanics**. It says that ***there are the systems of coordinates in which the body is moving not rectilinearly with acceleration when this body is in the state of immobility***.

The basic and the main differences of the offered principle of motion from the existing methods at the end of the XX century are the following:

1) The absence of inertia of motion;

2) There are no limits for the speed of motion;

3) The absence of "fuel reserves" "on board" of the moving material object.

Nikola Tesla and Instantaneous Electric Communication

Vladimir I. Korobeynikov

Russia
E-mail: elen@mail.infos.ru

Nikola Tesla (1856-1943), an outstanding inventor, was and still remains one of the most mysterious persons in the history of electrophysics. Whereas the most scientists were moving together in direction of microparticles investigations, as the basis of matter structure and of nature itself, he was going in opposite direction. He had a keen interest in the investigation of electric charge of the Earth as a whole. He was looking for the ways to influence on it, to control its state and methods of its regulation.

Therefore, exactly, the most of his searches, experiments, the purpose of constructions and buildings, created according to his conceptions, cause perplexity and misunderstanding of scientists even in nowadays.

The most mysterious of his main experiments were made in USA after 1904. After Nikola Tesla death in 1943, all his diaries and records over a period from 1904 year had mysteriously disappeared. Probably they were stolen (it was known, what to take). Lost records could "cast light" on one of the most "strange" of his buildings in the form of the enough tall tower, on the top of which a specially created toroidal transformer was placed. This transformer could create there a huge electric potential up to the billion volts.

Nikola Tesla switched on this tower-device, what caused the fright and even panic in mind of people from nearby settlements. Of course! Because of very high electric potential there began air ionization, which spread very high to the atmosphere accompanying by the effect of color play. Such luminous, color-playing sky caused even a horror of people, who knew nothing about the experiment made and its goals. They did not guess that Tesla by means of the electric charge, created of the tower, was influencing on the electric charge of the Earth as a whole (about 600000 Coulomb). There was a global scale in Nikola Tesla's investigations.

There is no point in detailed analysis of the fact that the potential of the tower top influenced on the Earth charge. Interaction of charges-balls with the distortion of field lines, distortion-distribution of charge on their surfaces, induced charge, is beautifully described even in school physics textbooks. In Nikola Tesla investigations the
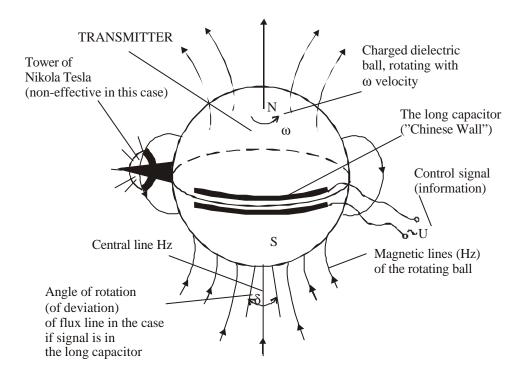
Earth had the role of one of the charged balls. It was possible by changing of charge on the tower to deform electric charge distribution on the whole Earth surface at once. This deformation (electric currents) could be fixed at once in every point of the Earth surface. It is alluring to use this effect for data transfer telecommunication, both on the Earth, and in space.

After such introduction the question "How does the system of instantaneous electric communication for any distance look like and work?" is still opened. First of all, the readers need to know, that such instantaneous communication is possible in principle. The proving it theoretical calculations, are rather difficult for popular interpretation. Some part of readers can take it on trust, and those who are most interested in can apply to works of Oleinik V.P. (quantum physics) the professor from Kiev Polytechnic University. At the minimum there are two necessary works: Oleinik V.P. "Faster-than-light transfer of a signal in electrodynamics. Instantaneous action-at-a-distance in modern physics" (Nova Science Publishers. Inc. New York. 1999) and Oleinik V.P. "Latest development of quantum electrodynamics: self-organizing electron, faster-than-light signals, dynamical heterogeneity of time." (Physical vacuum and nature. 4. 3-17. 2000).

"PC" magazine has devoted a rather significant article entitled "Computers and teleportation" to V.P. Oleinik works, concerning instantaneous electric communication ("PC" #6, 2000). Note, that the author of the given article has also found the possibility of instantaneous electric communication, but by means of materialistic methods, absolutely different from Oleinik's ones, what is most important – two different solutions point to the possibility of this communication. "PC" #6, 2000 in the article "Circles on fields" cited mathematical formulae of the structure of electron electro-magnetic field as an illustration (it refers to the Earth too) that the author of this article has got.

The most attentive readers of that article could notice, that one vector Hz absolutely "ignores" Special Theory of Relativity, since its mathematical expression does not include the velocity of light, whereas it presents in other vectors as a product of electric and magnetic conductivity. Magnetic line of this Hz vector goes to infinity and returns back from infinity. It surrounds the whole Universe. It is alluring to use exactly this (Hz) line for the **instantaneous** communication for any distance.

It is not so difficult to do it. In the Fig. 1 the easiest and most available for understanding line of the **instantaneous** electric communication is shown. A rotating charged dielectric ball (an "electron", isn't it?) is used as transmitter. The ball can be electrically charged up to the limit of charge flow-out into the ambient space. Around the charged rotating ball there appears electro-magnetic field, entirely analogous to the electro-magnetic field of the Earth (and of the electron too). The central magnetic line Hz goes to the infinity and returns
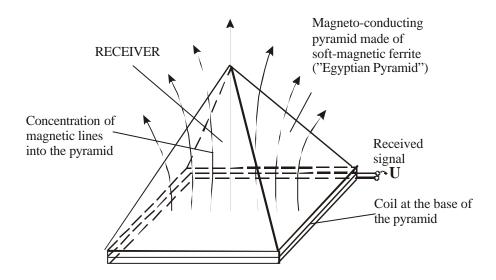
Fig.1

**Line of the instantaneous electric communication on the basis
of rotating charged ball and pyramid**

back from it to the opposite side of the ball. In the same way the central magnetic line of the Earth (Hz) goes from one pole to the infinity through the whole Universe and returns from it to the center of the opposite pole.

If by the information to force the rotating ball (electron) to "wag by tail" (by Hz vector) which stretches through the whole Universe, then this "wagging" can be controlled instantly in every point of the Universe. While the rotating ball has a steady distribution of the surface charge, the line Hz does not change its dynamic position in the Universe.

If such distribution of the surface charge is broken, space position of the line Hz also will change. On mounting the Tower of Nikola Tesla on the surface of rotating ball and measuring the potential on this tower in time with an information it is possible to change the charge distribution on the ball, and, respectively, the space position of central magnetic line (Hz) in the whole Universe at once. Big disadvantage of the Tesla tower is that maximum influence on charge is executed in the point under the tower, and farther it began decreasing roughly (exponentially), according to physics laws.

Hence it is advisable to influence on the whole surface of charged ball, but not on some point of it. It is possible to influence at once on the very big part of surface by the long capacitor, placed on the perimeter (equator) of the charged rotating ball. Because of optimality reasons, this capacitor length should not exceed a quarter of the ball perimeter (equator) length. Charging and discharging this long capacitor on the ball equator by the data signal, only the position (angle 5) will be changed, not a value of the infinitely long magnetic line (Hz) in the Universe. It is a data transfer.

The natural question appears: "How to make on the Earth the most powerful transmitter for the **instantaneous** electric communication?" The answer suggests itself: "It is necessary to use the Earth itself as a rotating charged ball." It is not effective to use Nikola Tesla's Tower to deform the Earth electric charge. To place on the Earth very long (about thousands km) capacitor is quite easier. However, it must be placed not on the equator exactly, but moved a little bit because of the initial heterogeneity of the Earth surface charge distribution, caused by the presence of continents and oceans. It will be necessary to find the line of electric equator, where the amount of charge north and south of it is similar. This line will not be ideally straight and will be situated near the 30th parallel.

As a matter of fact, this grand capacitor is already built, but is half-broken. This capacitor is very well known – it is a Great Chinese Wall. The ancient, powerful Chinese Tzcin' Shi Huandi empire adapted and used it (capacitor) for the protection from nomads incursions. How unexpectedly and originally it is! In this case the electric iron would be the best tool for spiking. It is clear enough that the charged ball (as well as the Earth) will "wag by tail", which stretches through the whole Universe and does not change its energy, but only changes its position in space in time with information. Now we can go on to the question, concerning the way to control the Earth "wagging by tail" in the Universe, and thus to read information **instantaneously** in any point of the Universe.

In the Fig. 1 it is shown the input device of the electric communication receiver, made of the magnet sensitive material (it can be soft-magnetic ferrite) in the form of pyramid, with the proportions of well-known Egypt pyramids. Magnetic field lines of the far space pass through the pyramid from the top to the base and are concentrated by pyramid. If there is no signal (the "wagging by tail" of the far planet-transmitter is absent), then the magnetic flow, coming through the pyramid, does not change, and induced voltage in the coil, placed in the base of the pyramid, is absent (no information). If "wagging by tail" begins, then the magnetic flow, coming through the pyramid, will change, and it will cause the appearance of voltage on the coil in the base of the pyramid in time with the information.

Thus, the signal is received instantly. Here it is necessary to remind once again the difference between the

instantaneous and usual radio transmission. The usual radio transmitter for the transmission of the information uses the **energy** distortion of space by the information. This energy change in space happens with the velocity of light and hence there is the loss of time for information passing. In the considered case there is no **energy** change in space, there is only a change of magnetic lines position (Hz).

This is exactly the vivid and fundamental difference between the usual electric communication and the instantaneous one. **In other words, in usual transmitter during the fixed time interval there is the change of signal energy (instantaneous value), whereas in instantaneous transmitter there is no this change (only information). This is exactly the fundamental difference.**

Evidently, to receive instantly the signal from the opposite part of our Galaxy, we need rather big pyramid, in order to concentrate a big amount of field lines into the oscillatory circuit under the pyramid. The question can appear: why the pyramid, why not a cone? The point is that lines of the Earth magnetic field (the very lines that compass needle reacts on) in the any place of the pyramid horizontal section have the same density of distribution and are directed strictly parallel to the pyramid base. The cone in its horizontal section cannot provide such uniformity of distribution that is why it is not advisable to use it. From the space magnetic field lines pass through and concentrate in the pyramid strictly at right angle to the pyramid base.

This is the riddle of pyramids wonderwork. Any person coming into a pyramid, at the same moment feels the change of mental and physical condition of organism; whish is very different from that it was before the entering into a pyramid. Of course! Visitors come inside, into concentrated magnetic field lines of the powerful and functioning magnetic core of the receiving electric circuit, what is absent outside the pyramid.

It is strange, but most of tourists are afraid of the ill effect, which can be produced by electrical systems on their health, but there they stand in a queue to feel this effect in pyramids. Concentration and division of magnetic field lines are the easy and effective way to reject a noise, created by the Earth magnetic field.

It is clear, pyramids should be oriented very thoroughly, so that lines of the Earth magnetic field would be strictly parallel to the base and to the opposite (East-West) sides of pyramid. To get such exactness of orientation in modern conditions is very problematically.

The most convenient place to build a pyramid (pyramids) is on the electric equator, in the place of its intersection with the electric meridian. Such place is located in Egypt, near its capital Cairo. And again we meet a paradox: such pyramids are already built on the Earth, but they are half-

broken. And Egypt was not less powerful than the ancient Chinese empire.
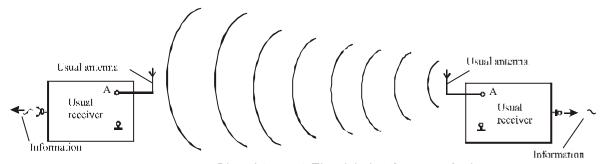
The Egyptian dynasty of Pharaohs has "completed" and adapted pyramids to burial-vaults, where mummies of dead Pharaohs were buried. Perhaps, it is even more incredible than in China. The impression is given that ancient powerful civilizations on the Earth had a competition between themselves, who will use radio-engineering constructions for instantaneous galactic communication in the most incredible way. Let's give to a reader an opportunity to select a "winner".
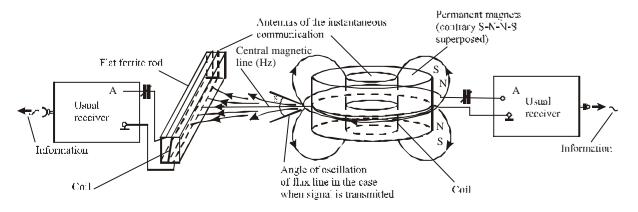
It must be noted that «PC» already published information that the Chinese Wall and Egyptian Pyramids are radio engineering constructions, intended for the instantaneous galactic communication (PC #114, 1997, etc).

There appears an interest in the possibility to produce very simple and manufacturable systems of instantaneous electric communication right now. Radio-electronic industry can produce them, but still does not guess about it.

Furthermore, such systems of instantaneous electric communication can be created at home, and even senior

Line of the usual (Einsteinian) radio communication

Line of the instantaneous (Maxwellian) radio communication

Fig. 2

Transformation of the usual line of communication of usual receiver-transmitter into the instantaneous one

pupils are capable to use them. In the Fig. 2 there is shown the construction of instantaneous electric communication line in comparison with the usual one. It can be produced even at home conditions. Two permanent magnets, connected between each other by analogous poles, are used as transmitting circuits.

Permanent magnets can be replaced by electromagnets. In the magnet connection point there is a coil, which while the signal passing through it will change its position (angle 5) in the space of the central magnetic line (Hz), coming out from the place of two magnets connection. Receiving circuit is available to be made of the flat ferrite, but coil

must be winded along, through butt-ends of core, so that the whole internal part of the coil would be maximal (in area extent) filled by ferrite.

The obtained coil can be completely "winded" (screened) by flat ferrite of big size. For more clearness of the experiment the central magnet line of transmitting part must be directed strictly along the axis of the receiving coil.

Now, if we give the alternating voltage (information) from transmitter to the transmitting coil, fixed on the permanent magnet, then the receiver, connected to the circuit of the

transmitting coil, placed on the flat ferrite, will detect an alternating voltage (information). Maximum effect is achieved at the resonance (coincidence of transmitter and receiver frequencies).

It is checked. It works. The dullest experts in radio-electronic (after the reading above) can rejoin, without making an experiment, that it is an absolute nonsense that any communication is out of the question. Coils with absolutely perpendicular axes, besides one of them is screened, do not interact with each other.

And here the most interesting thing starts. In the Fig.2 as it was mentioned above, the usual communication line and the instantaneous one were compared. The usual transmitter cannot generate the vector Hz that is why systems of usual and instantaneous communication cannot see each other in strict sense. What does it mean? It means, that in the same city it is possible to transmit on the one-carrier frequency ("what a nightmare!") two absolutely different television channels without any noises of one to another.

Usually by frequency match of a transmitter to the working frequency of another one, the radio communication is broken, but here it does not happen. Here some additional explanation should be given. As the vector Hz, which "ignores" the theory of Einstein is received from Maxwell equations, it follows that the usual (Einsteinian) system and the instantaneous (Maxwellian) one work on mutually perpendicular electromagnetic field lines (vectors).

In the Fig. 2 such difference is shown clearly. These are just "jokes" of complex numbers, when one value is absolutely perpendicular to another and nevertheless together they form a single whole. In other words it means, that two greatest persons in science Einstein and Maxwell as a matter of fact are something like "Siamese twins", completely grown together at the angle of 90 degrees, even by heads. On the one hand every one is on his own, but nevertheless they are the common (complex) organisms.

Hence there are a lot of misunderstandings on happened phenomena. How many scientists tried to find some mistakes of Einstein? They produced very convincing proofs concerning instantaneous interactions in nature. These scientists did not suspect that time and still do not guess now that they already for a long time are "walking" in the complex physics, which still does not exist. Einstein and Maxwell ("Siamese twins"), each occupies his own part of the complex number (complex physics) and they cannot be already taken off from there.

The only third, free "vacancy" is left to throw on the both of them at once the common "collar" and "reins", i.e. to fasten them ("twins") together by module and argument as any complex number. In this case no matter how the one part of complex number "ignore" the other one, only its argument will change, and module always will be equal

to the conditional unit. Only this single fact in principle changes the conception about "appearance" and "disappearance" of elementary particles! Even considered instantaneous and usual communications on the same receivers and transmitters in a complex conception (complex physics) eliminate appeared "misunderstandings" of all kinds.

Advantages of the instantaneous (Maxwellian) electric communication are especially evident during the connection with long-distance spacecraft. At present in the interval between sending of control signal to the station in region of Solar System peripheral planets and getting the reply it is possible to have a small break for dinner (it is very convenient).

In the case of the instantaneous electric communication use, duty operators will have "no dinner". Moreover, the system of instantaneous electric communication can realize two-way communication underwater and from underwater to overland. It is clear that input and output circuits of such system must be covered by slushing composite for the protection from aggressive effect of the salt sea-water. Such systems of instantaneous communication are very required to submarines.

Now, when readers know and understand the principle of operation of instantaneous (Maxwellian) electric communication systems and their advantages over usual ones (Einsteinian), we can only wait, when radio-electronic industry will start to produce these very required systems.

Institute for Planetary Synthesis

P.O. Box 128, CH-1211 Geneva 20, Switzerland
Tel. 41-022-733.88.76, Fax 41-022-733.66.49
E-mail: ipsbox@ipsgeneva.com

website: http://www.ipsgeneva.com

The Unified Gravitation Theory

**(The unified super-principle,
which controls the Universe)**

I. P. Kuldoshin

Orenburg, Neftyanikov str., h. 2, apt. 9,
460019, Russia

(Editor's comments by Alexander V. Frolov)

A forum of the leading USA physicians took place in the White House in March 1998 in presence of President Clinton. There was only one question: "When will the nature of Gravitation be opened?"

The well-known USA physician-astrologer S. Hoking declared that it possibly would occur in twenty years and it would be **the Unified Theory of All.** So, the scientific world by default called it the greatest discovery of the future.

Some time later a new hypothesis pretending to this discovery has got its birth in Orenburg. Despite this fact this hypothesis would gain recognition and status of the **Greatest Discovery of Mankind** only by 2018 that was predicted by S. Hoking.

To present day there have been written a lot of hypotheses on this problem but they haven't been recognized. Many scientists consider our Universe as living and functioning according to the unified and rigid laws in Macro and Microworld, which provides automatic regulations of all its processes due to **circulation of radiant energy of the Universe life in cosmic space**. This energy is inexhaustible and environmentally clean, and Mankind may learn using it in the nearest time for the welfare and for prevention of **contradirectional irreversible ecological** catastrophe.

There is no alternative for humankind to escape and it will not appear in the future. Only cosmic energy will save us. From the book "Secret Doctrine" by E.P. Blavatskaya we can get complete information about the fact that a highly developed civilization of Atlases on the Earth had a "**General Theory of All**" yet 10-12 thousand years before our civilization. They had no automobiles, but instead they had flying objects (aircrafts) "Vimana" of various types as well as ships and submarines, on which they also used **Cosmic energy.**

While reading an abstract in General Soviet Encyclopedia, I got acquainted with the theory of "Aether wind", which was abolished in the beginning of the XX century, and then I understood that this theory contains a deposit to discover the nature of gravitation.

The nature of gravitation is the only one and there are no alternatives in theoretical as well as in physical sense. When scientific world of entire planet abolished the theory of "Aether wind", it lost the possibility to discover the nature of gravitation. The XX century was marked by a revolutionary development of scientific and technical progress, but there was an almost 100-year stagnation in cognition of the Universe elements.

The theory of "Aether wind" supposed that all Cosmos is filled with aether particles flying with the speed of light (these particles are "neutrino" according to modern understanding). **The role of gravitation, carrier of light and retarding medium in Cosmos** was attributed to this motion of particles.

But this theory allowed chaotic motion of particles, which is impossible in mechanism of the Universe, which is adjusted up to automatic mode. Besides, motion of these particles is not possible without an absolute buffer unit, which prevents their head-on collision at the speed of 600000 km/sec (it is thermonuclear explosion and death of matter, i.e. the Universe). E.P. Blavatskaya wrote that Cosmos is filled with radiant energy of the Universe life, luminophore, electromagnetic aether. Thereby she predicted a ready solution to make correction in the uncompleted theory of "aether wind". On the basis of above stated and due to the **un-assumed dawning up,** the theory of "aether wind" was completed. It was the ground to develop a hypothesis of radiant "aether wind". Particles of this wind (neutrino) are electromagnetic particles and move with the speed of light in all directions as **contradirectional paired single-stream flows** (like electrical current in twin-wire cable). Due to this, an absolutely stable concentration of these beams in cosmic space is provided according to the principle "what has come in, the same has gone out".

The hypothesis formulates new views on the problem of structure of elements of the Universe material world.

Some separate conclusions do not match the views of modern scientific thought on the problems of physical principles of material world structure and functioning of the Solar system.

List of topics of the hypothesis

1. The hypothesis discloses the operating environment of a super-mechanism, which controls the Universe (it is a radiant "aether wind").

2. It discloses the nature of retarding mechanism of flying objects in Cosmos (its name is Lorenz-Fitzgerald compression).

3. It proves the absence of Universal gravity and beams of light as we usually conceive it. (The beams of aether wind collide and compress matter. An alternative to the notion about beams of light is a temperature wave impulse on the beam of aether wind. It explains why the speed of light doesn't depend on the speed of the source of light. Light is a "passenger" on the beam of "aether wind").

4. This hypothesis discloses the mechanism of stablization of rotary and orbital movement of the Universe matter in macro- and micro world due to retarding medium in Cosmos.

5. It discloses the mechanism of reverse rotation of Venus due to the forces of autorotation.

6. It discloses the mechanism of reverse orbital movement of planets and satellites of planets. (Such a planet had not been opened yet, but there are 6 satellites in the Solar system, which move counter to the others, and it is not an occasion, but **a particular case of the effect of aether wind beams**).

7. It discloses a real nature of Tungusska catastrophe. (There were about 100 hypotheses, but **neither of them** was recognized to be true).

8. It discloses **the nature of gravitation** and gives an explanation that gravitation can be:
- usual (vertical);
- horizontal;
- circular

It is important to note: not the entire matter takes part in gravitation, but 1/3, i.e. 33,3% of matter.

9. It discloses the **nature of Levitation** and proves that 1 liter of water on the surface of the Earth can have the weight from 0 up to 3 kg.

10. It discloses the role of gyroscope effect in life support of the Universe. The gyroscope effect allows transformation of translation energy of radiant "aether wind" to the rotational energy for practical needs of humankind.

11. This hypothesis gives scientific and technical recommendation for creation of cosmic energy converters.

12. It gives scientific and technical recommendation for producing of levitation effects for any technical systems.

13. It discloses the possibility of cosmic flights with the super-light speed.

14. It explains experiments on metering of horizontal gravitation (The first experiment was made on February 27, 1999).

15. It discloses the particle (neutrino) of original matter of the Universe and gives its characteristic. (Ancient thinkers called modern "neutrino" as "Aether", and it was not occasionally, because its diameter is in 10^{25} times smaller than atom's diameter.

All matter of the Universe consists of the same indivisible particles "neutrino" presented by three groups:
- "energy" group, which is in the beams of "aether wind";
- building group, which forms the part of any micro particle;
- free group (neutral-reserve) as a building material for new matter and operating environment of all electromagnetic processes.

All neutrino of three groups rotate with the speed of 3×10^{43} rps (equatorial speed of neutrino is equal to the speed of light).

Fields are formed in every particle as a result of rotation:
- strong field of a small volume doesn't allow particles to close up;
- weak field of a big volume is a general mechanism of gravitation.

As scientists write at the present time, the World is subdivided on a dense world (which we can see) and fine world (invisible). At that the density of such world is in 10^{15} times less than density of water.

It is known in science that all matter of the Universe both great and small rotates and is a gyroscope. Particles of matter get rotation with their birth, thus the fields are born in them simultaneously. **Matter cannot exist without rotation, which generates fields.**

All mechanism of interaction between three groups of particles is based on the mutual repulsion. This is the only mechanism, which always and automatically is able to create the necessary stable interval between the particles and only this mechanism provides the function of gravitation.

Many scientists of the late XX came close to the discovery of the nature of gravitation, but they didn't accept a thought to conceive **the motion of aether particles as a pair-counter flow**. And there are three necessary conditions to realize gravitation:

1. The particles should have the fields of repulsion.
2. The contradirectional flows should envelop the particle of matter from two sides.
3. While one beam is passing a matter mass then the force of fields should decrease and gravitation effect should appear.

Mechanism of gravitation

Gravitation appears due to the intersection *(Editor's note: interference)* of fields, produced by beams particles and fields of the visual matter. As it was mentioned above, the beams are paired and contradirectional. Usually the beams in cosmos are mutually balanced and they do not call gravitation effects.

But on the surface of the Earth the contradirectional beams are not similar in their power. The powerful beams come from above, i.e. they only penetrate the atmosphere, and the weakened beams come from below, i.e. they penetrated all the Earth. Thus, gravitation appears.

Gravitation is a unique property of "aether wind" beams to loose part of their power during penetrating of matter mass. **Gravitation** is the difference of forces of contradirectional beams. *(Editor's note: Really other authors reported this idea also. I cannot find who was the first in discussion about gradient of aether as nature of gravitation.)*

Horizontal gravitation

As a particular case, there is **horizontal** gravitation on the surface of the Earth. It appears on the boundary between lowland (of the sea) and plateau. In this case one beam goes above the surface of the Earth (water), and the counter beam penetrates mountain range and

weakens. The first measurements of horizontal gravitation effect were made on February 27, 1999 on the route Orenburg – Samara at 49 km before Syrtinskiy slope.

A leaden load (0,5 kg) on the float (a piece of foam plastic) moved on the water surface (not in the sea but in basin) towards the mountain.

Horizontal gravitation is much more weaker than usual gravitation, but it can reach the value that makes water to flow at some angle upwards.

Circular gravitation

Only fast-rotating bodies can create circular gravitation.

All bodies rotate by their orbits around the Sun in the open space of Solar system **due to circular gravitation guided by rotating the Sun.** Furthermore; circular gravitation always is direct (co-directional to the Sun rotation) and reversed gravitation on the periphery of Solar system. A planet with reverse orbital movement had not been discovered until now, but 6 satellites of planets in the Solar system have reversed orbital movement.

Here is the proof of the fact that circular gravitation appears only around the fast-rotating bodies and **slow-rotating bodies, for example, the planets Venus and Mercury cannot form circular gravitation**, that's why they have no satellites.

Our Sun is a prototype of mechanism to transform translation energy of aether wind beams into rotary energy.

(Editor's note: According to Kozyrev, any star is a transformer of time (chronal type of energy) into heat energy. Really, the aether wind can be considered as the chronal type of energy in our understanding and for our usual three-dimensional measurement equipment. To my mind it is a clear link to notion of 4-dimensinal objects, i.e. the time. ***Time can be described by parameters of the aether wind, i.e. its velocity, direction and density. So, we can say that quantitatively time can be described by formulations for kinetic energy of the aether movement. From the other hand it is equivalent of heat energy, which can be measured by usual methods after transformation of the longitudinal waves of the aether in transverse electromagnetic waves).***

Therefore, any mechanical disk rotating very fast will create a circular gravitational field, which is able to rotate all bodies in the direction of the disk (for example, a rim mounted on its bearing co-axially with rotating gyroscope). I designed and tested a similar device in January 2000. A gyroscope (of 200 mm diameter and 3 mm thick) was over-speeded up to 18 thousand rpm. Rotation of gyroscope called slow (but with a good momentum) rotation of the rim of 15 kg weight.

The gyroscopes with the mass of 0,5 kg, 15 kg and 90 kg were tested during summer of 2001. All them called rotation of the rims.

(Editor's note: There are other experimental facts. Fast rotation of mass should produce rotation of some part of nearby aether. Self-closed aether forms vortex and if photon is trapped by this vortex, then

experimenters can see "ring of light" near rotating mass. The rings or self-closed photos can exist in the same place after the mass was stopped or removed away.)

Nowadays gyroscopes in military devices are over-speeded up to hundreds of thousands of rpm. The more rates the gyroscope has, the more energy the rim will produce if it is connected to some generator. But these research works led to single-valued conclusions that gyroscopes themselves cannot produce big quantity of additional cosmic energy not jointly with permanent electromagnets. The Sun as well as planets has natural electromagnetism and their circular gravitation increases in many times due to the presence of electromagnetic fields.

(Editor's note: I think it is obviously that a rotating magnet can involve into the rotation much more quantity of aether than any simple rotating mass. In some theories any magnetic field is considered as circulation of aether particles.)

Electromagnetic fields are the unique boosters of circular gravitation. So, the gyroscopes themselves cannot produce necessary quantity of cosmic energy per unit mass of gyroscope without using of electromagnetism.

In October 2001, I got a copy of 24 patents description. There were patents on "perpetual motion machines". But since such "perpetual motion machines" cannot exist in reality, then we can explain them as gyroscopical transformers of cosmic energy. Efficiency of these transformers varies from 150% up to 10^6 % and practically all of them work using gyroscope. But nowadays only the transformer (Bauman's machine) works in Switzerland, in Maethernitha theological community, Linden city. Some systems have been working from 1980 and producing total power of 750 kWtt, the gyroscopes of 2m diameters are provided with constant magnets.

Besides, there are ready transformers of cosmic energy in Russia. The Professor of Moscow State University, Academician of Russian Academy of Natural Science Leonid Leskov spoke about them in the first half of 2001. He actually said that Mr. Chubais does not allow innovation of energy transformers, which are ready for commercialization (see newspaper "Raduga", Samara, July 2001).

I assume that any kinds of such transformers work on the energy produced by "Aether wind" beams. Perhaps our earth ancestry (Atlases) used this energy to fly as well as extraterrestrials. I remember information about flying platforms, which were designed in Germany in 1943-1945. Nowadays there are publications that there are not less than 10 captured extraterrestrial's spacecrafts on the Earth, and some samples were tested in Russia and the USA.

On the basis of all above-mentioned it becomes extremely clear that the main secret of Nature was discovered, and let's representatives of conservative science don't pull the wool over people's eyes to prove that "it is impossible". It is possible! Physics is an experimental science in its main part, and there is no completed theory until now.

As a result, I'd like to make some conclusions: The secret of Gravitation nature was discovered not in connection with new scientific investigation, but due to dawning up and understanding of the fact that gravitation since earliest times was produced by "Aether winds", which fill all cosmic space. Instead of improvement of "Aether wind" theory, academician science abolished it and forgot it such as some scientists of nowadays don't have an idea of it. While abolishing of "Aether wind" theory, scientific world spent 100 years in vain to find an alternative to it. A real Cosmic scientific and technical progress was slowed down during this term. Without this progress all humankind will kill environment of the Earth in 30-40 years!

Rush hours for humankind to turn to cosmic energy came, we have not even an hour to wait, and otherwise we will loose a chance to survive. Today the scientific and technical level is such that taking into consideration the buildup made by inventors – enthusiasts, who created more than 50 types of Cosmic energy transformers, it is possible to begin repetition work in one year. Now there is the only barrier to do it, i.e. market relations in energetics developed during last 100 years.

Let's look into near Future. The process of energy resources (coal, oil, gas) formation in bowels of the Earth took hundreds million years. There was period of clean ecology in the World Ocean, on land and in the atmosphere. **And all it catastrophically had been diminishing during 2-nd half of the XX century**. **There are about 40 years for our civilization to reach the boundary of having no chance to support normal life on the Earth.** An irreversible process of struggle for survival using underground environment and protection from mortal ecology will begin. Our close posterity will not forgive us this betrayal.

Is there any solution? Yes, there is.

It is necessary to publish the descriptions of all "perpetual motion machines" models as well as unprofitable publication of short technical documentation in the Internet and magazines, which will give a chance to many companies, research groups and individuals to re-produce them. But at first we should choose the models, which are the most reasonable in technology and prime cost. Such a way of replication of the models will give people confidence, interest and reliable information on existence of inexhaustible salutary cosmic energy. And the victory will be the reward for courageous, enterprising and advanced people.

which generates electrical voltage $E_{\updownarrow} = \ell \dfrac{dB_{rot}}{dt}$ in the structure of vacuum. This voltage generates Gravitational Impulse itself $G = 4\pi E_{\sigma} S \cdot (\Delta r_g)^2$, where $\Delta r_g = e_0 \dfrac{E_{\updownarrow}}{b}$.

The supposed "Gravitational Impulse" in the experiment by Podkletnov is modeled by a quarter of cosine curve.

Duration of this curve is determined by the decrease of magnetic field "trapped" into the superconductor due to the partial heating of semi-conductor emitter after plasma passed the discharge of 2MV with the current strength of 10000 A. The formula of the model is the following:

$$X^{''} = Ae^{-2\pi f_0 D_0 t} \cos(2\pi f_0 \sqrt{1 - D_0^2}\, t) \qquad (1)$$

the calculation is made for the frequencies of 30, 3, 0,3 and 0,03 Hz and acceleration of 12 m/sec^2, which appears for the mass of the pendulum 30 g with the force horizontally to gravitation 0,03·12=0,36 N.

It can be supposed that it is necessary to make more careful solution of the problem to find the effect on the pendulum by its reaction, which is known from experiment. We should apply the more correct use of spectral method of solution of differential equation for the pendulum with setting of impulse effect. Further, having the recording of temporal function of magnetic field by Hall-effect devices and using Maxwell formulas,

we should find electrical field acting in physical vacuum. This field will give us the force of gravitational impulse.

The experiment by V. Roshchin and S. Godin is simpler for physical modeling (Editor's note: the author assumes it is simpler than Podkletnov's effect). All input and output parameters are known to the authors, i.e. force of the magnets, frequency of variable magnetic field in the local place of space vacuum, change of gravity. Furthermore, there are known cylindrical formations of magnetic "loops" around the device and their approximate arrangement with the intervals divisible by the half of rotor radius. Effects of temperature decrease at 8° C in cylindrical atmospheric formations can be simply explained by adiabatic decrease of air pressure due to the decrease of gravitation between molecules of air. Formulas for estimation of decrease of gravitational and inertial forces are the same that for Podkletnov's experiment:

$$E_{\updownarrow} = \ell \frac{dB_{rot}}{dt} \ , \qquad (2)$$

$$G = 4\pi E_{\sigma} S \cdot (\Delta r_g)^2 \text{, where } \Delta r_g = e_0 \frac{E_{\updownarrow}}{b} . \ (3)$$

References

1. Podkletnov E., Giovanni M. Impulse Gravity Generator Based on Charged Superconductor with Composite Crystal Structure.
2. Roshchin V., Godin S. Experimental research on physical effects in dynamic magnetic system // Letters to the Journal of Theoretical Physics, 2000, vol. 26, issue 24.
3. Rykov A.V. Principles of full-scale physics. // Institute of Earth Physics RAS, M.: 2001, 58 p.

New Sources of Energy from the Point of View of Unitary Quantum Theory

L.G. Sapogin,

Department of Physics, Technical University (MADI)
Leningradsky pr. 64, A-319, 125829, Moscow, Russia
E-mail:sapogin@cnf.madi.ru, sapogin@cnf.madi.msk.su

Yu.A. Ryabov,

Department of Mathematics, Technical University (MADI)
Leningradsky pr. 64, A-319, 125829, Moscow, Russia
E-mail:ryabov@vmat.madi.ru

V.V. Graboshnikov

Representative in Moscow of Sceptre Electronics Ltd.
Millennium House Business Center
12, Troubnaya Street, Moscow 103045, Russian Federation.
E-mail: sceptre@orbita.ru

Abstract

The Unitary Quantum Theory (UQT) is a new version of the field quantum theory, which has been developed by the principal author (Prof. L.Sapogin) of this paper for over 25 years. The theory is directly related to the problem of new energy sources, and this paper can be of interest for Journal of New Energy for it is the UQT (and not the classical Newton mechanics or the modern standard quantum mechanics) that provides a theoretical basis for the development of new sources of energy and for the explanation of the operation principles of the existing and functioning over unity devices.

The fundamental provisions of the UQT and a number of results received on the basis of it were published in many scientific journals and reported at international conferences (see [1-6], etc.). Generally, the UQT as expressed by the language of formulae and equations represents a new mathematical model of interaction and movement of elementary particles in the form of a complicated system of non-linear integral-differential equations, an important property of this model principally defines the trajectories and velocities of the particle movement in space (unlike the standard quantum theory, which directly defines only the probabilities of the presence of the particles at a certain point in space). Another, and the most essential (for the problem of new energy sources) property of the UQT is the absence of the energy conservation laws and the

impulse for single particles in it. That is why the UQT makes theoretically possible processes of energy generation as if from nothing, if they are regarded from the classical mechanics point of view or the standard quantum theory (while the UQT is able to explain the phenomenon), as well as creation of a device with efficiency above 1. In other words, the UQT provides for a theoretic possibility of making a perpetual mobile!

In the 1970's, when the UQT started to be developed, there was nearly no data of the observed phenomena, or any experimental results confirming this unusual theory. Today, such data are abundant. For example, such processes can be named as generation of excessive heat energy during cavitation of very small water bubbles; generation of excessive electric energy in an anomalous gas discharge; excess generation of electric energy when electric current passes through proton-conducting ceramics, etc. Besides, and still more important, operating devices that have been created much more energy than it was necessary for these devices functioning: electric current generators "Testatica" (Switzerland); thermal cell CETI (J.Patterson, USA); heat generators (Yu.S. Potapov, Moldavia, J.Griggs, USA); electric current generators (P.Correa, A.Correa, Canada); electric engines on magnetic ceramics (Japan), and others. The said phenomena and operation principles of the above-mentioned devices can be explained with the help of the UQT.

In this paper we will also touch upon such an important problem as cold nuclear fusion. The feasibility of this nuclear process, which is categorically denied by the standard quantum theory and nuclear physics specialists, was predicted by the author of the UQT as far back as in 1983. This phenomenon was discovered in 1989 (electrochemical experiments, M.Fleischmann, S.Pons). Many subsequently received experimental data confirmed the existence of nuclear reactions under very small energies, of nuclear transmutations in plants and biological objects, very slightly connected with generation of energy [7-8]. From the point of view of the UQT, which provides an explanation of the cold nuclear fusion mechanism, this process can be applied in practice (after the relevant devices are designed) for generation of energy, for production of isotopes, and for nuclear waste liquidation.

Introduction

Inventors, as well as swindlers of all kinds, had long ago been trying to construct, or at least design, a *perpetual mobile*, i.e. an imaginary machine that produced work without any outside energy. Peter the Great even founded the Imperial Russian Academy of Sciences for such research, but the modern Russian Academy of Sciences does not like to recollect this circumstance. On the other hand, the French Immortals in 1755 decided not to consider any *perpetual mobile* projects at all, and, as we would see, were quite right as regards the Newton mechanics. The brilliant success

of the classic mechanics has strengthened still more the sacred belief of the mankind in the Divine Infallibility of the Conservation Laws, and today it is nearly indecent to express any doubts about these laws.

Let us first of all find out the origin of the conservation laws in ordinary mechanics. Practically any textbook will tell you that the Energy Conservation Law (ECL) follows from the homogeneity of time, the Impulse Conservation Law from the homogeneity of space, and the Angular Momentum Conservation Law from the isotropy of space. That is why many people have an impression that the conservation laws themselves follow only from the quality of time and space, which is today an undoubtedly relativistic notion. But, for example, the angular momentum is not a relativistic notion. So, such a narrow approach is not altogether correct, and it is necessary to turn to the second Newton law, or the equation of relativistic dynamics and the system insularity. However, *the qualities of the time and space ensue exactly from the analysis of the Newton mechanics*, though they are often construed incorrectly. Let us remind you the correct interpretation.

Homogeneity of time suggests that *if at any two moments of time two similar experiments are made in similar closed loop systems, the results thereof will not differ.*

Homogeneity and isotropy of space mean that *if a closed loop system is moved from one part of space to another, or is oriented differently, nothing will change.*

The making of the fundamental energy and impulse conservation laws from the Newton equation is very simple. Let us put down the main equation of dynamics as

$$\mathbf{F} = \frac{d\mathbf{P}}{dt}$$

For closed loop system $\mathbf{F} = 0$ (no external forces operating) and the equation integral will be $\mathbf{P} = Const$ the impulse conservation law.
Now let us take the main equation of dynamics as:

$$\mathbf{F} = m\mathbf{a} = m\frac{d\mathbf{v}}{dt}$$

and multiply it scalarwise by $\mathbf{v}$

$$\mathbf{F} \cdot \mathbf{v} = m\frac{d\mathbf{v}}{dt}\mathbf{v} = \sum_{i=1}^{3} m\frac{dv_i}{dt}v_i = \sum_{i=1}^{3} m\frac{d}{dt}\left(\frac{v_i}{2}\right) = \frac{d}{dt}\left(\frac{mv^2}{2}\right)$$

where v is the module of the velocity vector $\mathbf{v}$. For closed loop system $\mathbf{F} = 0$, and the equation integral will be

$$\frac{mv^2}{2} = Const$$

one of the forms of the energy conservation law. From the definition of the angular momentum for a particle,

$$\mathbf{L} = [\mathbf{r} \times \mathbf{P}]$$

Differentiating both parts by *t,* we get

$$\frac{d\mathbf{L}}{dt} = \left[\frac{d\mathbf{r}}{dt} \times \mathbf{P}\right] + \left[\mathbf{r} \times \frac{d\mathbf{P}}{dt}\right]$$

Since the impulse vector is parallel to the velocity vector, the first bracket will equal to zero. On the basis of the resultant equation and the definition of central force as not creating any momentum, we get

$$[\mathbf{r} \times \mathbf{F}] = 0 \quad \text{or} \quad \mathbf{L} = Const.$$

In case of the central force in an unclosed system, the angular momentum is preserved by value and direction. The angular momentum conservation law for a closed loop system results in the same way as the impulse conservation law from the equation of the rotary motion dynamics:

$$\mathbf{M} = \frac{d\mathbf{L}}{dt}$$

For a closed loop system, the momentum of external forces **M**=0 and the integral of the equation will be the angular momentum conservation law

$$\mathbf{L} = Const$$

In relativistic dynamics the emergence of the energy and impulse conservation laws separately can be easily received from the relativistic ratio for energy and impulse

$$E^2 = P^2 c^2 + m^2 c^4$$

Term $m^2 c^4$ is an invariant, i.e. the same in all reference systems. In other words, it is a certain constant. This equation can be represented in a slightly different form

$$E^2 - P^2 c^2 = Const$$

For the equation to be valid, it is required that

$$E = Const \text{ and } P = Const$$

and this none the other but conservation laws for energy and impulse.

Strictly, relativistic mechanics has a conservation law for 4-impulse vector P^μ, but we will not dwell on these details, because small energies are what we are interested in.

In the classical theory, the energy conservation law states that the energy of a closed loop system remains unchanged, so, if the energy of such a system is designated at a moment *t=0* as E_0, and at the moment *t* as E_t, $E_0 = E_t$.

Conservation laws in ordinary quantum mechanics

The standard quantum theory formulates the energy conservation law in the same way. In quantum mechanics we have the same movement integrals as in classic mechanics. A certain value *L* will be a movement integral, if

$$\frac{d\hat{L}}{dt} = \frac{\partial \hat{L}}{\partial t} + \left[\hat{H}, \hat{L}\right] = 0 \qquad (1)$$

Since $\left[\hat{H}, \hat{L}\right]$ is defined by commutator of operator $\hat{L}$ and of Hamilton's operator, any value *L*, *not depending explicitly on time*, will be the movement integral, if its operator commutes with the Hamilton's operator. When value *L* does not explicitly depend on time, the first item in (1) turns to zero. There remains

$$\frac{d\hat{L}}{dt} = \left[\hat{H}, \hat{L}\right] = 0 \qquad (2)$$

and for the movement integrals not explicitly depending on time the Poisson quantum bracket equals zero. From (1) and (2) it follows that the average value of the movement integrals does not depend on time:

$$\frac{d}{dt}(L) = 0$$

All good papers on the quantum theory prove that probability $w(L_n, t)$ to find at any moment *t* any value of the movement integral, i.e. L_n, does not depend on time. Further, is constructed as the movement integrals not explicitly dependent on time. Since operators $\hat{L}$ and $\hat{H}$ commute, they have common proper functions, which are functions of stationary states. Let us note that the latter follows from solutions of the equation without time, which was received from the full equation with imposition of requirement

$$\Psi(\mathbf{r}, t) = \Psi_0(\mathbf{r}) \exp\left(i\frac{E}{t}\right)$$

equivalent to search of only periodic solutions. Further, quite naturally, *there appeared an equation without time with actually imposed conservation laws, because now nothing depends on time*. Expansion by such proper functions looks as follows:

$$\hat{L}\Psi_n = L_n \Psi_n \qquad\qquad \hat{H}\Psi_n = E_n \Psi_n$$

where

$$\Psi(x, t) = \sum_n c_n \Psi_n(x) \exp\left(-i\frac{E_n}{\hbar}t\right) = \sum_n c_n(t)\Psi_n(x) \quad (3)$$

$$c_n(t) = c_n \exp\left(-i\frac{E_n}{\hbar}t\right) = c_n(0)\exp\left(-i\frac{E_n}{\hbar}t\right)$$

Since (3) is expansion into proper functions of operator $L_{n'}$ probability does not depend on time:

$$w(L_n, t) = |c_n(t)|^2 = |c_n(0)|^2 = Const$$

Since energy is a movement integral and probability $w(E,t)$ to find at a moment t an energy value equaling E, does not depend on time, then:

$$\frac{dw(E,t)}{dt} = 0$$

Let us note once again that it is *the probability to find a certain value that does not depend on time, but not the value itself, which for any separate event is accidental and can assume a wide range of values.*

The quantum energy conservation law in the above form suggests a possibility of defining energy at a given moment without subjecting it to uncontrolled change, which raised no doubts in classic mechanics. But in the quantum theory the energy, without changing its value, can only be measured to

$$\Delta E \geq \frac{\hbar}{\tau}$$

where r - is measurement duration. Formally, it does not present any difficulties for the energy conservation law, since energy is a movement integral, and we have much time to make long measurement. For example, let us make measurements during time r, then leave the system to itself for time T, and then define energy again. The classic quantum energy conservation law states that the result of the second measurement will coincide

with the result of the first measurement to $\Delta E \approx \frac{\hbar}{\tau}$.

But even in the ordinary quantum theory all this is not consistent enough. For the real vacuum fluctuations can interfere, that always influences the results of a single process, but their influence disappears after the passage to an ensemble of events. Here we have a violation of the conservation law due to vacuum fluctuations, though existence of movement integrals, unlike in the Unitary Quantum Theory (UQT).

The generally accepted quantum theory carefully avoids the question of conservation laws for individual events in the case of small energies. This question is either not discussed at all, or it is said that *the quantum theory does not describe individual events. Yes, it does describe individual events, but it can only predict a probability of this or that result.* It is clear that in this case there are no conservation laws for individual events (it is wrong to speak about it in case of an accidental result of an individual event), and they appear only after the averaging by large ensembles of events. Essentially, it can easily be proved that classic mechanics follows from

quantum mechanics after summing up by a large number of particles, because for a sufficiently big mass, the length of the de Broglie wave becomes much less than the body dimensions, and no quantum-wave qualities can be talked about.

Conservation laws in Unitary Quantum Theory

In the UQT [1-14] any quantum particle is not a point, but a source of field like in the ordinary quantum mechanics, but it represents a bunched field (wave packet) of a certain unified field. The dispersion equation of such a nonlinear field turned out to be such that the wave packet (particle) during its movement periodically appears and disappears, and the envelope of this process coincides with the de Broglie wave. Numerous particles during their periodic disappearance (spreading in the Universe) are repeated appearance from vacuum fluctuations. A theory of quantum measurements has been built, and the probability interpretation follows from the mathematical formalism of the quantum theory [10,11], and it is not postulated as in conventional quantum mechanics. Unfortunately, the main UQT equation turned out very complicated, for it is a system of 32 nonlinear integral-differential equations, which could require for their solution some new mathematical methods. But from this the relativistically invariant Hamilton-Jacoby equation, and the Dirac equation system strictly follow.

Papers [13,14] give a solution of the simplified scalar integral-differential UQT equation, which gave a localized solution for the form of a wave packet representing a particle. It turned out that the integral from a bilinear combination of such a solution for the whole volume gives with the precision of 0.3% the value of a non-dimensional elementary electric charge [13,14], which was essentially its first theoretical calculation. Then, this solution in the form of a periodically appearing and disappearing wave packet (which square describes the density of a spatial charge) can be replaced by an oscillating charged particle [15-18], the movement whereof will be described by the conventional Newton equations:

$$m\frac{d^2\mathbf{r}}{dt^2} = -2Q\mathbf{GRAD}U(\mathbf{r})\cos^2\left(\frac{mt}{2\hbar}\left(\frac{d\mathbf{r}}{dt}\right)^2 - \frac{m\mathbf{r}}{\hbar}\frac{d\mathbf{r}}{dt} + \varphi_0\right) \quad (4)$$

$$m\frac{d^2\mathbf{r}}{dt^2} = -2Q\mathbf{GRAD}U(\mathbf{r})\cos^2\left(-\frac{m\mathbf{r}}{\hbar}\frac{d\mathbf{r}}{dt} + \varphi_0\right) \quad (5)$$

where m, Q, $\mathbf{r}$ - mass, charge, and radius-vector of the particle, $U(\mathbf{r})$ – external potential, φ_0 - initial phase.

Since $\mathbf{E} = -\mathbf{GRAD}U$, and a magnetic field also exists, the Lorenz force should also be calculated for $\mathbf{F} = \frac{Q}{c}[\mathbf{v}\times\mathbf{H}]$, but in the electromagnetic wave $\mathbf{E}$ and $\mathbf{H}$ are equal, and for small energies value $\frac{v}{c} \to 0$, and

force **F** can be ignored. Both these equations produce qualitatively similar results for different problems, but the first non-autonomous equation evidently does not have any movement integrals at all, and any hope for analytical solutions is very unreal. But for the second autonomous equation such hope still exists. Let us note that these equations describe more accurately the experimental results of scattering on the coulomb potential than the classic Rutherford formula! Application of these equations for the tunnel effect and scattering on short potential also produces correct results, but in this case passage through a high barrier (tunnel effect) will be defined by the initial phase. Of greatest interest, however, is the harmonic oscillator problem.

It is possible that a change in the properties of a material point in the process of its movement is just another step in the material point movement theory. In conventional mechanics this idea is not altogether new. There are Meshchersky's equations for bodies with a changing mass, and Tsiolkovsky's equation for a rocket. But so far, in the conventional quantum theory, the particle has a permanent and stable in space and time set of properties, and in the UQT all the parameters of the particle are changed and oscillate during movement.

It should be noted that *Newton did not introduce the notion of a material point at all,* and it would be ridiculous to think that he was not able to have this natural and rather trivial idea. Most probably, and it is not by chance, for today many troubles of the field quantum theory are rooted in the approach to the particle, as to the point, the most vivid example being a large bouquet of divergences. Nevertheless, this approach is very convenient and should only be used correctly. Let us also remember, that in accordance with the Newton corpuscular theory, beams of light were to be regarded as a flow of certain particles. They are emitted by a shining body in all directions and move in an empty space or a homogeneous medium evenly and straight, i.e. in the same way as the ordinary material particles do in the absence of any external or interaction forces. Newton explained reflection and refraction of light beams on the surface of border between two homogeneous mediums by the effect of certain forces on this border, in the direction perpendicular to the surface. These forces changed the normal velocity component, but did not touch upon the tangential one, which allowed to derive the reflection and refraction laws. However, the inability of such a theory to account for the light partial reflection and passage phenomena, as well as the Newton rings (which he himself discovered), led him to bouts (or fits) theory, which is quite modern, although nearly forgotten. Newton believed that for full explanation of all the processes it was necessary to suggest that some light particles could experience reflection bouts, and others – passage bouts. Let us imagine light falling to a flat surface, which is partially, reflects and partially passes. With quantum description of this phenomenon, a particle connected to the falling wave at the time of hitting the surface has a certain probability of passing or being reflected, and

Newton simply used the word "bouts" in place of the word "probability".

It is absolutely clear that all descriptions of processes by the equation with an oscillating charge will be an approximation, because it is evident that no movement equations for a material point can describe even the simplest interference processes on a semi-transparent mirror, during which a material particle should be divided in two parts which will later eliminate each other by destructive addition. It is surprising, but the numerical solution of the problem of scattering on a short potential (the Ramsauer effect) for equations (4) and (5) gives the correct diffraction picture! But if we want to describe an individual particle correctly in the conventional quantum mechanics, the picture becomes inexact and purely probabilistic. At every given moment of time a particle can exist in only one of the mutually incoherent states, because one particle cannot move in different directions simultaneously (it cannot have many impulses at the same time). Nevertheless, there seems to exist a whole class of processes, where description with the help of equations (4) and (5) have certain sense. It is well known that in all experiments the local energy and impulse conservation law in individual quantum processes are true only under high-energy values. But under small energy values it is not so, at least because of the ratio of uncertainties and the probabilistic character of all the quantum theory predictions, and the idea of a global, not local ECL, is invisibly present in the quantum mechanics, and is certainly far from new.

In the strict UQT and the quantum measurement theory, a great role belongs to unavoidable vacuum fluctuations. It is clear that these fluctuations are totally unpredictable and non-invariant in relation to space and time translations. The same can be said otherwise: there are no habitual properties of time and space in this theory. Space-time is now not homogeneous and not isotropic. For example, if the system is transferred to a new point in space, or a certain experiment is repeated at another time, at the point where particle parameters are studied, and it interacts with the macro-device, a new value of vacuum fluctuations (different from the previous one) can appear and produce a different result. Of course, all this is only true for small energies and individual events.

Still more destructive is the UQT for the notion of a closed system. For individual events under small energy values this notion is simply unacceptable for the following reason: vacuum fluctuation at the location of the particle (e.g. in a potential pit) can be sharply changed at any moment. It can be caused by different factors – the nature of vacuum fluctuations itself, or the tunnel effect of another random particle.

Sometimes it is stated that conservation laws follow from the Nether theorem, though these results are present in the works by D. Gilbert and F. Klein. For any physical system, the movement equations from which can be received from the variation principle, each one-parametric continuous transformation that leaves the

variation functional invariant, corresponds to one differential conservation law, and there exists a clearly conserved value. It is easy to see, however, that vacuum fluctuations imposed on the varied function (integral of Lagrangian) do not in sum remain unchanged during parametric transformations (at least today it seems so), and this consideration does not work without preliminary of ensemble.

And now we are in for a little philosophy. The local Energy Conservation Law (ECL) in individual processes follows from the Newton equations for closed systems. It would be naive to think that its local formulation will be preserved forever, and would be a bad mistake to transfer the ECL from the Newton mechanics to the quantum processes without any changes, because the latter are more fundamental.

References to the first principle of thermodynamics are, strictly speaking, groundless, because this principle is a postulate. For example, well-known Russian mathematician N. Luzin, in a letter to an inventor wrote that the first principle of thermodynamics is the result of unsuccessful attempts of the mankind at building a *perpetual mobile*, and strictly follows from nothing. *Today it may be said with a great degree of certainty that no sophisticated machine in the framework of the Newton mechanics can be a perpetual mobile,* and the decree of the French Academy of 1755 not to consider any *perpetual mobile* projects is still valid. We will only add that now it is valid only for those projects that are based exclusively on the Newton mechanics.

There is the tendency in modern physics to reduce ECL, especially in theory, to the rank of a secondary derivation from the movement equations (movement integrals). Some physicists restrict the ECL to the framework of the first principle of thermodynamics, others, like D. Blokhintsev [37], think it quite probable that with the development of a new theory the form of the ECL will undergo certain changes. F. Engels wrote in his "Dialectics of Nature": "…none of the physicists actually regard the ECL as an eternal and absolute law of nature, a law of spontaneous transformation of the movement forms of the matter and the quantitative constancy of this movement in all its transformations". But many people do not share this opinion. M. Bronstein in his book "Structure of Matter" wrote: "The ECL is one of the main laws of the Newton mechanics. Nevertheless, Newton did not ascribe to this law the general character that this law actually possesses. The reason for this *erroneous* (italicized by authors) opinion of Newton of the ECL is very interesting…". It is now clear that in view of the above, such an opinion was not at all erroneous. Let us remind you that Newton predicted many things, even the UQT, in his "bouts theory".

On the other hand, the authors of quantum mechanics realized that there was no conservation law for single quantum processes under small energies at all. The idea that the construction of ECL, together with the second law of thermodynamics, was a statistical law, true only on the average and inapplicable to individual processes with small energy, first occurred to Schroedinger, and later to Bohr, Kramers, Slater, and Gamov. In 1923 Bohr, Kramers and Slater made a desperate attempt to develop the theory, where the energy and impulse conservation laws in case of scattering would be true only statistically, on an average for long periods of time, but would be inapplicable to elementary events. Lev Landau even called it "Bohr's wonderful idea".

Later, however, the authors gave up this approach and, besides, this idea at that time did not follow from the quantum theory equations, and the authors, *to come out of the predicament, simply declared that quantum mechanics did not describe individual events at all*. Thus, the most vivid paradox of the quantum science was removed by a simple ban on thinking about it! But the ingenious idea that conservation laws do not apply to individual quantum processes and emerge only after the averaging by the ensemble of particles remains alive. This idea might have been a little premature, and, possibly, should be a little different.

The Unitary Quantum Theory (UQT), on the contrary, individual particles, and the difference in their behavior is accounted for by the initial phase of the wave function. In this case, local conservation laws do not exist for a single particle, and measuring the initial phase or some other parameters for an individual particle is quite a different matter. It is not true that the UQT has given up probabilistic description. Probabilistic interpretation remains, but the probability now is strongly dependent on the initial phase. Although the equations with an oscillating charge can determinately predict a particle's behavior, the measurements can be made only with the help of a macro device, which will give only a probabilistic result. Impossibility to determinate measurements does not change anything, for the UQT provides for a possibility of influencing the probability value, which was earlier unavailable. The existing Von Neumann theorem about hidden parameters does not effect our result, but the relevant discussion is too cumbersome, and we will leave it out.

*In other words, **all the requirements**, wherefrom the classical conservation laws follow, are now absent. We can hardly expect the conservation laws for individual particles to be preserved under small energies in such a situation.* Today we are convinced that the classical energy, impulse and angular momentum conservation laws for individual quantum objects are not valid under small energy values because of periodic appearances and disappearances of the particle. All direct experimental tests of the conservation laws were made for large energy values, and for small energies of an individual particle only probabilistic results can be received, and, in this case, it would be indecent even to recall the conservation law.

Energy generation and perpetual mobile

Let us make the following imaginary experiment. For simplification purposes we will use in our reasoning a

certain quantum ball-particle. When a classical ball approaches a wall (perpendicularly for simplification), the speed of the reflected ball is always equal to the initial speed (we ignore friction and regard the ball and the walls as absolutely elastic). In the case of a quantum ball, the speed of the reflected ball will acquire in different experiments with absolutely equal initial conditions a whole range of values: some balls will be reflected at a speed greater than the initial speed, others – at a speed equal or lower than the initial speed, and all this is described by quantum mechanics.

Let us ask the following question: what if a second wall is found, parallel to the first one, in order for the ball to increase its speed after each reflection from the wall? Then we will have increased ball energy without any special efforts on our part. Such phenomena appear in the problem of particle oscillations in a potential pit (not necessarily parabolic) on the basis of equations (8) and

(9), when four types of solutions are possible, three of which are most important for us: stationary, "maternity home", and "crematorium". In the two latter solutions traditional conservation laws do not work. These solutions are presented in Fig. 1. Such oscillator behavior explains many experimental facts. From the physical point of view, it means that in stationary solutions with fixed discrete energies (conventional quantum mechanics) the speed of the particle reflected from the wall will be equal to the speed of the falling particle. If the speed of the particle is decreased after each reflection, it will mean the "crematorium" solution, and if it increases, the "maternity home". Scenarios for situations will depend on the initial phase of the wave function and the particle energy. In ordinary situations the "crematorium" and "maternity home" solutions always compensate each other, and we find conservation laws.
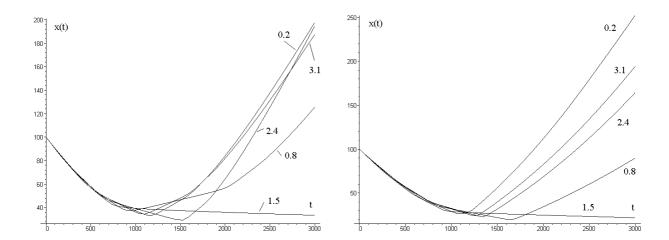
Fig. 1. Dependence of the distance between the moving charge and the nucleus on time for autonomous and non-autonomous equations.

The task of the future developers of new energy systems of the 21st century will consist in creating such initial conditions for a great number of particles making up a body that only the "maternity home" solution would be realized, and the "crematorium" solution would, if possible, be suppressed.

It follows from the above that if the unitary quantum theory ideas are applied correctly, there is no fundamental taboo for a perpetual mobile. Such a taboo, as it was shown, does not formally exist even in conventional quantum mechanics (no conservation laws for individual processes with small energies), and, in order to generate energy, they should be somehow accumulated (all random processes with excess energy should be grouped together). But conventional quantum mechanics refuses to describe individual events and is unable to offer any ways for such grouping. The unitary quantum theory seems to offer such an opportunity.

However, the great idea of free energy generation was distorted by effort of some research associations

interested to keep their stability degree, that everyone who started speaking about it was considered to be a crazy man.
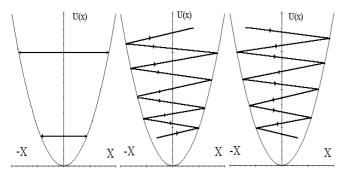
Modern experimental physics has verified the correctness of conservation laws either for very large energies in individual quantum events, or for big macroobjects, when automatic averaging by ensemble is made, but the area of very small energies for individual events today is a *terra incognita*.

In order to see how the conservation laws for reflection (repulsion) of an individual particle from the Coulomb heavy nucleus with different values of the initial phase are violated, we have solved numerically one-dimensional equations (8) and (9) under the different initial conditions:

$$\hbar = 1, m = 1,\ 2Zze^2 = 1,\ x_0 = 100,\ V_{x0} = -0.1$$

In the Fig. 2 the distances between the moving particle and repulsive nucleus are shown as a time function, for

different initial phases in cases of non-autonomous and autonomous equations.

Fig.2 Three types of solutions for oscillator

It is evident from the calculations that the speed of a reflected particle can be equal, lower or higher than the speed of a falling particle. This situation seems to be true for all potentials.

Calculations were also made for other potentials: harmonic oscillator, Yukawa, Gauss, dipole, hyperbolic secant, and Wood-Saxon, and the quality results were nearly the same. If we sum up the impulse of all the particles falling with different phases and compare it with the summarized impulse of all the reflected particles, the summarized reflected impulse, for example, for the Coulomb potential, will be several percent higher than the summarized impulse of the falling particles. For other potentials such a small deviation can even be in the opposite direction. On the whole, this problem is very complicated and requires additional research, because all this is also dependent in quite a complex way on the initial conditions (initial speed, phase and distance).

Philosophically, any categorical taboos, like the impossibility of creating a *perpetual mobile*, are absolutely unacceptable. If everyone is convinced of it forever, the conservation laws and *perpetual mobile* taboos will remain unshakable as long as the human civilization exists. Of course, the funeral of the Conservation Laws can be very prolonged. Anyway, we are not going to do it, and our article might be just a cleanup for the future tomb, and the splendid funeral with all the necessary honors will be organized by future generations. *On the other hand, these laws will never die out completely and will surely be applied, but such spheres of science and technology will appear, though small at first, where these laws are not valid.*

The truth should be accepted irrespective of where it comes from. Words of F. Engels from the "Dialectics of Nature" will be quite appropriate here: "When the solar system ends its life circle and shares the fate of all the finite things, when it falls victim to death, what will happen next? Thus, we come to a conclusion that the heat emitted into the universe should have an opportunity, in a way yet to be established by the natural sciences, to turn into another form of movement, where it can be accumulated again and start

functioning. And in this casethe main problem that prevented transformation of dead suns , back to red-hot nebulas will disappear".

The question of whether the conservation law exists in global form (we have already proved its not being local) remains open, because nothing leads to it except the inertia of the human mind. This inertia was based on the Newton laws, which were replaced by quantum laws. This mental inertia leads to a situation, when in case excessive energy is generated during solution of movement equations, a question arises how it can happen, and where it comes from. Of course, if a particle (e.g. a photon) falls on a semitransparent mirror, the packet is divided into two halves, which, due to imposition of vacuum fluctuations, will be recorded by photomultipliers as full-fledged photons [1-5]. The result is that energy is taken as if from vacuum: two photons appear in place of one. Another photon can be divided on the mirror into two halves, but they will not be recorded by the meters, and the energy will allegedly pass into vacuum. So, at one time we borrowed energy from vacuum, and then gave the same amount of energy back to vacuum at another place. You can think like that, and this process might take place. But if we consider the equation with an oscillating charge, the energy and impulse conservation laws are not valid there for solution of the movement problem, and vacuum fluctuations have nothing to do with it at all. As for the question of where the energy comes from, it is the result of our mental inertia, and is, essentially, an atavism imposed by the Newton mechanics. But the latter appears as a result of an extreme passage from quantum mechanics, which is more fundamental.

It is interesting to note that there is a bomb in the logical definition itself of the energy conservation law. If energy is something that cannot appear or disappear and always simply passes from one form to another, the only value satisfying this condition is zero. We are far from assuming that energy does not exist. But the problem of existence is solved differently in different philosophical systems, and the mathematical approach seems to be the most correct one: *an object exists if it is free from contradictions*. Energy has bad luck in this case, for under such an approach it should be zero.

Some cosmologists (for example, British prof. Fred Hoyle) are very willing to have a process, in accordance with which the Universe has certain places where energy appears from other certain places, in which it is eliminated. Besides, any philosopher at least a little bit familiar with astronomy, looking at the bright night sky, will see the birth of matter and its expansion into a still greater space. But for this purpose the Global Energy Conservation Law is superfluous and only denies what is observed. The head reels…
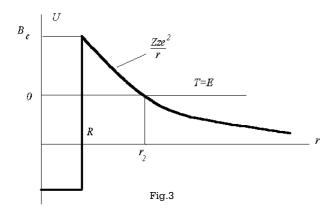
Cold Nuclear Fusion and Nuclear Transmutation.

Let us approach the epoch-making experiments made by Fleischmann and Pons in March 1989 [30] from the positions of the equation with an oscillating charge. One

of the authors predicted in 1983 [9] the possibility of such nuclear reactions under very small energies. Without going into well-known details, we will sum it up very briefly: cold nuclear fusion exists, and there are no people or theories capable of giving a clear explanation. The chain of various mechanisms meant to explain this intriguing phenomenon is growing, but few really believe in them. The reason is as follows.

When a charged particle interacts with the nucleus, the potential energy is like in Fig. 3, where the right top part of the curve is conditioned by mutual Coulomb repulsion between the nucleus and the charged particle.

The repulsion potential will be

$$U(r) = \frac{Zze^2}{r}$$

Fig.3

where Z – charge of the nucleus, and z – charge of the approaching particle, e – charge of the electron, r – distance between the particle and nucleus. When $r=R$ (critical distance), then the potential energy curve goes sharply down, which is due to the emergence of intense nuclear gravitation, the potential whereof today appears more complex than could be imagined mathematically. If the charged particle overcomes the Coulomb barrier with a height of

$$B_c = \frac{Zze^2}{R} \approx \frac{Zz}{\sqrt[3]{A}} MeV$$

it will further get into the nuclear gravitation area and a nuclear reaction will take place.

Let us look at the nuclear interaction of a charged particle with kinetic energy $T < B_c$. From the point of view of classical mechanics, there will be no nuclear reaction in this case, because the particle will approach the nucleus and at a certain distance $r < R$ from the top of the Coulomb barrier will turn back and be reflected from it. However, from the point of view of quantum mechanics, there exists a tunnel effect, and the probability of such a tunnel passage, or transparency of potential barrier D is described by a well-known formula:

$$D \approx \exp\left(-\frac{2}{\hbar}\int_{r_1}^{r_2}\sqrt{2\mu(U-T)}dr\right) \qquad (6)$$

where $\mu = \frac{Mm}{M+m}$ is reduced mass. The bottom integration limit r_1 coincides with the nucleus radius R, and the top limit r_2 can be found from the condition

$T = \frac{Zze^2}{r_2}$. After integration we will get

$$D = \exp(-2g\gamma)$$

where $g = \frac{R}{\lambda_{B_c}}$; $\gamma = \sqrt{\frac{B_c}{T}}\arccos\left(\sqrt{\frac{T}{B_c}}\right) - \sqrt{1-\frac{T}{B_c}}$,

and value $\lambda_{B_c} = \frac{h}{\sqrt{2mB_c}}$, the de Broglie wavelength corresponding to the kinetic energy of the particle equal to the barrier height $T = B_c$. If $T << B_c$, expression (6) is easily transformed to look as

$$D = \exp\left(-\frac{2\pi RB_c}{\hbar v}\right) = \exp\left(-\frac{2\pi Zze^2}{\hbar v}\right) \qquad (7)$$

where v is velocity.

Let us now see what the shocking cold nuclear fusion will look like on the basis of the above considerations. The deuteron energy in an ordinary electrolytic Fleischmann-Pons cell will be about 0.025 eV, and the height of the Coulomb barrier for this case is

$B_c = \frac{Zze^2}{\sqrt[3]{A}} = 0.8 MeV$. In classical mechanics it would

be just naive to talk about overcoming such a barrier with a height dozens times greater than the kinetic energy. Let us now see how the tunnel effect will improve the situation. Let us assess the value of g and γ for the case of collision between two deuterons with such energy:

$$g = \frac{R\sqrt{2mB_c}}{\hbar} = 1.9;$$

$$\gamma = \sqrt{\frac{B_c}{T}}\arccos\left(\sqrt{\frac{T}{B_c}}\right) - \sqrt{1-\frac{T}{B_c}} \approx 8883 \quad \text{and the}$$

probability of such a process will be $\exp(-2\cdot1.9\cdot8883) \approx 10^{-7328}$, i.e. practically pure zero. The fusion cross-section will be defined by the product of nuclear cross-section and the tunneling probability:

$$\sigma = \sigma_{nucl}D$$

and, in the case under review, is also a very small value. If the clash parameter of deuterons is not zero, the emergence of centrifugal potential

$$U = \frac{\hbar^2 l(l+1)}{2mr^2}$$

will still further lower the probability of such interaction.

It is these very circumstances that make the nuclear physics scientist think that there is no cold nuclear fusion as such. For example, such a serious and responsible edition as Encyclopedia Britannica 2001 found no place for the notion of cold nuclear fusion at all. Such an official position can be understandable only from the point of view that quantum mechanics is absolutely true and unshakable. Despite this, for the 12 years since the Fleischmann-Pons experimental discovery, nearly 30 international conferences have been devoted to this subject, there are lots of books and magazines on this subject, and the number of articles on the problem is nearing ten thousand. Today the situation is gradually developing in the positive direction, and the research in the field of hot nuclear fusion, which has already wasted over $90 billion for 45 years, is slowly coming to naught.

But today there exist well known experimental data on cold nuclear fusion. They are numerous and various. We will dwell only upon the most important and sufficiently reliable results. Thus, the classical view of electrolysis of a palladium cathode saturated with heavy hydrogen in heavy water identifies an anomalous quantity of heat energy up to 3 kWt/cm^3, or up to 200 Mj per small sample. Products of nuclear reaction have also been found: tritium (10^7 - 10^9t/s), neutrons with energy of 2.5 MeV (10-100n/s), and helium. Absence of He^3 among the reaction products shows that heat is not generated by reaction $d+p$. Besides, emission of charged particles *(p, d, t, γ)* is observed. Similar processes are observed in case of a gas discharge on a palladium cathode, of phase passage in different crystals saturated with heavy hydrogen, irradiation of deuterium mixture with a powerful sound or ultrasound flow, in cavitating microbubbles in heavy water, in a tube with palladium powder saturated with heavy hydrogen under a pressure of 10-15 atm., etc. In certain reactions (e.g. $d+t \rightarrow \alpha + p$) neutrons of 14 MeV are absent, and such a strange situation occurs in other cases too. Activity of Li^6 , Li^7 in reactions with heavy hydrogen and protons failed to be discovered, whereas reaction

$$K^{39} + p \rightarrow Ca^{40}$$

was well recorded even in biological objects. But the most intriguing fact of all these processes is the shortage of nuclear reaction products for explanation of the emerging heat effects. Thus, in certain cases the number of nuclear reaction products (tritium, helium, neutrons, quanta) should be millions of times greater in order to account in some way for the quantity of the generated heat. Generation of such a big amount of energy cannot be accounted for by either chemical or nuclear reactions, or by phase passages. The well-known interaction $d+d$ goes along three channels:

$D + D \longrightarrow T (1.01) + p (3.03)$	(Channel 1)
$D + D \longrightarrow He (0.82) + n (2.45)$	(Channel 2)
$D + D \longrightarrow He + \gamma (5.5).$	(Channel 3)

All these reactions are exothermal. The third channel has a very small probability. It was experimentally discovered that they could occur under very small energies. In a molecule D_2 the equilibrium position between atoms is 0.74A and in accordance with the conventional quantum theory, these two deuterons could accidentally enter a nuclear fusion reaction. But the interaction value is very small $\lambda_{D_2} = 10^{-64} c^{-1}$. There is a known estimate that in the water of all seas and oceans there are 10^{43} deuterons, and in 10^{14} years there will be only one fusion.

It follows from the aforesaid that the main problem impeding the occurrence of the $d+d$ reaction lies in the existence of a very high Coulomb barrier. Our approach allows for this problem to be solved, and there is such an opportunity in the UQT. The UQT equation solutions show that the distance to which deuterons can approach each other is strongly dependent on the phase of the wave function (by the way, it is absolutely clear intuitively).

Let us consider the one-dimensional problem [15-18,31]. There is a stationary nucleus with charge Ze at the point of origin, and another nucleus is approaching it along axis x (charge ze, mass m) at a certain initial velocity. The non-autonomous and autonomous equations of such a problem will look as follows:

$$m\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = -\frac{2Zze^2}{x^2}\cos^2\left(\frac{m}{2\hbar}\left(\frac{dx}{dt}\right)^2 t - \frac{m}{\hbar}\frac{dx}{dt}x + \varphi_0\right) \quad (8)$$

$$m\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = -\frac{2Zze^2}{x^2}\cos^2\left(-\frac{m}{\hbar}\frac{dx}{dt}x + \varphi_0\right) \quad (9)$$

Since an analytical solution was not found for all the areas of initial phases , numerical methods were applied with the following initial values: $Z=z=1$, $e=1$, $m=1$, $x_0=-10$, $\hbar =1$ for different initial velocities and initial phase values. As had been expected, braking or acceleration of the particle happens only when the charge is large. But at the last stage, under certain initial phases close to $\frac{\pi}{2}$, a wonderful process occurs: velocity, charge and repulsing force are very small. Due to phase ratios, the small charge is not changed for a long time, which means that the particle (or rather what is left of it) is not influenced by any forces, and it is crawling at a permanent small speed for a very long time ("the snail effect") inside the field of another particle, and can come very close to the center. Such movement with a very small charge and a small speed can last for several hours, and disconnection of the external field will not effect this movement. This process reminds of quiet and

invisible scout penetration into the enemy territory. This phenomenon occurs only in certain phase areas, and can be conveniently called a phase hole, which is illustrated in Fig. 4 resulting from the solution of equation (8).
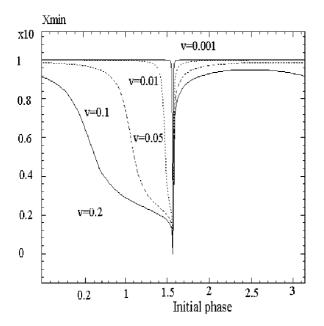
Fig.4. Distance to the turning point of the moving charge depending on the initial phase value for different initial velocities.

Let us note in passing that now we can account for one of the nuclear physics anomalies, which has a tendency to be totally ignored. Under a nucleon energy of 1 MeV, its velocity is 10^9 cm/s, nuclear radius is 10^{-12} cm, and the passage time of the nucleus is 10^{-21}s, but the time period in which the nucleon passes is usually anomalously long - 10^{-14} and even more, and it is absolutely unclear what the nucleon is doing in the nucleus so long. In our model it is easily explained by the "snail effect".

For the same equation, the minimum distance was calculated between the charges dependent on velocity (Fig. 5) for different initial phase values. For comparison, Fig. 5 also shows the result of the classical calculation based on the Coulomb law. It is obvious from Fig. 4 and 5 that the minimum distance to which charges can approach each other is nearly independent of kinetic energy, but with reduction of speed the initial phase area width is reduced as well. In other words, reduced energy brings also reduced probability of a nuclear reaction.

The same results are true for the autonomous equation (9). Under the conventional quantum theory, the ratio of the reaction speeds in the tritium and neutron channels should be close to unity: $\frac{t}{n} = 1$. But in many experiments on cold nuclear fusion this value is very different from unity and equals $\frac{t}{n} = 10^9$. In different
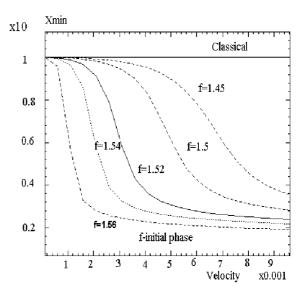
Fig.5 Minimum distance between charges depending on the initial velocity for different initial phase values.

experimental situations it is reproduced by different experimental groups with a very high accuracy. This very intriguing problem has so far received no simple explanation. Let us dwell on a possible cause for such aphenomenon. With a small velocity in the phase hole, neutrons are affected by nuclear gravitation forces, and protons are affected by electrostatic repulsion forces. Under the effect of this momentum, the deuteron will have enough time to turn in such a way that the neutron parts of the deuteron would faceeach other. After the neutron gravitation the nuclear forces will be saturated, which will weaken the proton connection, and one of the protons will leave the system. This reaction can be conditionally presented in the following form:

$$d + d \rightarrow p + (n + d) \rightarrow p + t$$

This reminds of the Oppenheimer-Phillips effect.

It is well known, however, that under big energies, the probabilities of the first and second reaction channels are the same, and this phenomenon should somehow be accounted for. Increased probability of the neutron channel with growing energy can be connected with the appearance of secondary neutrons in the reaction $T + D = He + n$ *(14.1 MeV)*. In a deuterium-rich environment, a big part of the resultant tritons will pass to neutrons in the process of this reaction, which has a cross-section of 5 barns under an energy value of 70 KeV. According to assessments in [32], the number of such secondary neutrons per one triton is $7.9 \cdot 10^{-12}, 1.7 \cdot 10^{-9}, 2.7 \cdot 10^{-6}$ for energy tritons 10, 20 and 100 KeV respectively. Thus, the prevalence of $\frac{t}{n} > 10^6$ can be expected only in those reactions, where tritium is born with energies over 40 KeV.

It should not be assumed, however, that the phase hole phenomenon in its whole area leads to a nuclear reaction. It can be assumed that reduction of the Coulomb repulsion is followed by reduction of strong

interaction. But how? Today nobody knows the exact equation of the strong interaction potential. Besides, the particle approaches the turning point X_{min} is rather "thin". Will it be able to take part in a full-fledged nuclear reaction, or will it fly through, like it happens with the electron in the s – states of the atom? There are very narrow phase areas, when soon after the particle stops the charge grows quickly and is sharply accelerated. The charge can even be maximum in the nuclear force effect area. May be, it is this narrow phase area that is responsible for cold nuclear fusion, and in case of strong interactions the phase hole mechanism must be operating as well.

It was discovered long ago that nuclear transmutations have a mass character (especially in plants and biological objects), but they have little to do with energy generation. Examples of such reactions:

$$Mn^{55} + p \rightarrow Fe^{56} \; ; \; Al^{27} + p \rightarrow Si^{28} ;$$
$$P^{31} + p \rightarrow S^{32} ; K^{39} + p \rightarrow Ca^{40}$$

In reactions of this type, a very slow proton (with practically zero kinetic energy) penetrates the nucleus in the above-mentioned way and remains there. *No intranuclear energy is generated, because both before and after the reaction the nucleus remains a stable object.* In classical nuclear physics, the nucleus usually became unstable after it was penetrated by a charged nucleon with a large kinetic energy and always broke into parts, and the nuclear debris had an even greater kinetic energy. Reactions of the above type were considered impossible under small energies and for this reasons were not studied by classical nuclear physics. It seems to be *a completely new type of nuclear transmutations, not recognized by modern nuclear science, but experimentally discovered rather long ago.* Today there is a great deal of experimental material confirming mass nuclear transmutation phenomena. Moreover, there are many projects of neutralizing nuclear excess with the help of this technology. Journals *Infinite Energy, New Energy, Cold Fusion, Fusion Facts*, etc. and Internet are full of such projects.

Of course, a change in the nuclear charge will result in restructuring of electronic atom shells, but the energy related to this process will be about several electron-volts and is nothing in comparison with the energies of nuclear reactions from several to hundreds million electron-volts. By the way, nuclear engineers are accustomed to such energy ranges in nuclear reactions. It was this circumstance that made them deny *a priori* all nuclear processes in biology, because under such energy values of the debris dozens and hundreds thousand of complex biological molecules will be destroyed.

Quite a long time ago, Lois C. Kervran [33] wrote a book about nuclear transmutations in biology, and now, nearly 20 years later, its second edition was published! It gives, evidently for the first time, numerous

experimental data of the above-mentioned phenomena. The reaction of the official science is very interesting. For example, well-known physicist Karl Sagan, after reading the book about such *experimental* data, advised Kervran to read elementary textbooks in nuclear physics!

Some time later a research was made by Panos T. Pappas [58], who studied one of the well-observed nuclear reactions in biological cells:

$$Na_{23}^{11} + O_{16}^{8} = K_{39}^{19}$$

Classical biology has long known about the existence of equilibrium, when the ratio between the number of K and Na ions is maintained with greatest accuracy despite the shortage or even absence of K ions in food. Later, in work [59] this nuclear reaction was even called the life equation, and the existence of such nuclear reactions in biological objects was proved by M.Sue Benford with the help of direct physical methods.

All thermonuclear fusion programs are based on blunt heating and compression of the reacting material. Despite the progress achieved, the head of the works in England, Dr. Alan Gibson [34], established several years ago that the model reactor design would be created not earlier than in 50 years. Today, this point of view is generally accepted. Even if the reactor is once made (although the authors have grave doubts about it), it will be very complicated, expensive, and harmful for the environment.

Classical approaches have so far not yielded any positive results, despite multi-billion investments and a great number of physicists, engineers, service personnel, and managers involved. It is only natural that this army of researchers is a potential impediment for all alternative projects of new power engineering. It has been noted that *"viability" of any idea is proportionate to the number of people involved and investments made.* For these reasons, the Fleischmann-Pons works were given a hostile reception in the USA and other countries.

All the controlled thermonuclear fusion programs are accompanied with the adjective "controlled", although there is no control whatever. It is simply that the initial quantity of the reacting substance is *prudently* made very small. For example, a ball of lithium deuteride during laser reduction has a diameter of several mm. So far no one has been seriously considering the question of utilizing the energy of an explosion of such a ball, which is approximately equal to the energy of an explosion of a box of antitank grenades.

The straightforward approach to fusion used by the modern science is very natural, because quantum mechanics has no methods of influencing this process. The future of really controlled nuclear fusion systems may be not on the way of primitive and blunt method of heating and compression of the material, but following UQT on the way of using collisions of nuclei having small

energy and corresponding fine adjustment of the wave function phase.

It is essentially possible in case of imposition of the external controlling electromagnetic field on the reacting system, which contains quasi-fixed ordered deuterium atoms and free deuterons. The same properties can be demonstrated by special atomic grid geometry. Diffraction scattering of a deuteron flow on such grids will lead to automatic deuteron selection by energies and phases.

It seems that in the Fleischmann-Pons electrochemical experiments such an ordered system existed in the *Pd-D* grid, and some phasing occurred, which accounts for the results of these experiments [30].

Today it appear to us that the cold nuclear fusion processes will be effectively used for nuclear waste liquidation and production of isotopes.

Many researchers [35,36] discovered that the quantity of heat generated in the process of electrolysis of ordinary water on nickel electrodes (there is no hope for nuclear reactions in such systems) is the same as in the electrolytic cell with heavy water. It confirms other measurements, which showed that the quantity of nuclear reaction products is millions times less than is required for such an amount of generated heat, and its origin remains a mystery.

Further we will give certain concrete data demonstrating the phase values of a deuteron with an oscillating charge, under which the deuteron can approach the nucleus to a critical distance of 10^{-12} cm or less, i.e. giving the data to estimate the value of the above-mentioned phase "hole" in the interval $(0,\pi)$ of the phase change.

Assume that the stationary nucleus with the charge q is placed to the coordinate origin x=0 and the deuteron with the same charge q is placed at the initial moment t=0 to the point $x_0 < 0$ on the x-axis, and the deuteron velocity equals $\dot{x}_0 = v_0 > 0$. The units of mass, length and time are chosen in such a way that $m = 1, \hbar = 1, c = 1$ (*m* - deuteron mass, *c* - light velocity). Charge *q* equals 0.085137266. Our units are connected (to 4 significant figures) with the system (kg, m, s) as follows:

1 mass unit $= 3.345 \times 10^{-27}$ kg,
1 length unit $= 1.049 \cdot 10^{-16}$ m,
1 time unit $= 3.502 \cdot 10^{-25}$ s.

The electron velocity corresponding to its energy of 1eV equals $5.931 \cdot 10^7$ cm/s. The deuteron velocity corresponding to such energy will be assumed to be 3680 times less, and in our units it will be $5.372 \cdot 10^{-7}$ (if $c = = 3 \cdot 10^{10}$ cm/s). Then the deuteron movement towards the nucleus is described by the equation

$$\ddot{x} = -\frac{2q^2}{x^2}\cos^2(\frac{1}{2}(t+t_*)\dot{x}^2 + x\dot{x} + \varphi_0), \qquad (10)$$

where the parameter t_* is defined under the condition that the argument of cosine equals φ_0 for $t = 0, x = x_0, \dot{x} = \dot{x}_0$ (thus $t_* = -(2x_0)/\dot{x}_0$), and this parameter may be considered as the initial moment of so called local time.

In the interest for us are namely solutions of eq. (10) under very small deviation ε from phase φ_0 and so we put $\varphi_0 = \frac{\pi}{2} + \varepsilon$ and rewrite eq.(10) in the following form:

$$\ddot{x} = -\frac{a}{x^2}\sin^2(\frac{1}{2}(t+t_*)\dot{x}^2 + x\dot{x} + \varepsilon), \qquad (11)$$

where $a = 0.0144967$ Let the initial x_0 to be equal - 500000 of our length units (i.e. approximately $5 \cdot 10^{-9}$ cm) and the initial deuteron velocity v_0 to be equal to the velocity v_{00} corresponding to the deuteron energy of 1 eV or less. But it turned out that the precision of numerical integration of this equation under such initial conditions and under values $|\varepsilon| = 10^{-15}$ and less is small and besides the interval of the integration must be very large. That is why this equation also had to be transformed by passing to "slow" time $\tau = |\varepsilon|t$ to

the equation relative to the variable $w = \left(\frac{dx}{d\tau}\right)^2$ as a function of *x*:

$$\frac{dw}{dx} = -\frac{2a}{x^2}\left\{\frac{1}{\varepsilon^2}\sin^2\left[|\varepsilon|(\frac{1}{2}(\tau+\tau_*)w + x\sqrt{w} \pm 1)\right]\right\}, \quad (12)$$

where $\tau_* = -(2x_0)/\sqrt{w(x_0)}$ and +1 if ε >0, and -1 if ε < 0. It must be added also the equation for τ as a function of *x* :

$$\frac{d\tau}{dx} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{w}}. \qquad (13)$$

The system of equations (12, 13) is, so to say, a "model" system describing fairly accurately the deuteron movement under all values of |ε| from 10^{-24} to 10^{-6}. Numerical integration of this system was fulfilled under different values of e and under following initial conditions:

$$w(x_0) = 2.103, \tau(x_0) = 0, x_0 = -500000, \tau_* = 689573.18 \quad (14)$$

It may be noted that the initial deuteron velocity v_0 equals 1.450172 (following the relation $\dot{x}_0 = |\varepsilon|\sqrt{w(x_0)}$) for given initial $w(x_0)$ and for $|\varepsilon| = 10^{-7}$, i.e. such velocity is approximately 3.7 times less than velocity v_{00} corresponding the deuteron

energy of 1eV. If $|\varepsilon| = 10^{-6}$ then the velocity v_0 is approximately 2.7 times greater than velocity v_{00}.

It turned out that the numerical tables for values of w, τ obtained under different values of $\varepsilon < 0$ in the interval $(-10^{-24}, -10^{-6})$ don't differ essentially from each other. The following table is true to three-four significant figures for τ and $\dot{x}/|\varepsilon| = \sqrt{w}$:

x	τ	$\dot{x}/|\varepsilon|$
-500 000	0	1.450
-50 000	$1.426 \cdot 10^6$	0.0493
-500	$1.002 \cdot 10^7$	0.000489
-200	$1.067 \cdot 10^7$	0.000440
-100	$1.090 \cdot 10^7$	0.000425
-80	$1.100 \cdot 10^7$	0.000423

If reducing the table values of x to centimeters, we obtain the following corresponding approximate values:

$$5 \cdot 10^{-9}, 5 \cdot 10^{-10}, 5 \cdot 10^{-12}, 10^{-12}, 0.8 \cdot 10^{-12}$$

The time interval ΔT, in which the deuteron reaches the critical distance 10^{-12} cm from the center, is $67350/|\varepsilon|$ of our time units or $(1.090 \cdot 10^7 / |\varepsilon|) \cdot 3.502 \cdot 10^{-25}$ seconds. If nuclear forces are not taking into account then the deuteron may approach the distance less 10^{-12} cm.

We present here the table, where are given the initial deuteron velocities v_0 in velocities shares v_{00} and the corresponding time intervals ΔT (in seconds) for different values of ε.

ε	$\dfrac{v_0}{v_{00}}$	ΔT (s)
-10^{-6}	2.7	$3.82 \cdot 10^{-12}$
-10^{-7}	0.27	$3.82 \cdot 10^{-11}$
-10^{-22}	$0.27 \cdot 10^{-15}$	$3.82 \cdot 10^4$ ($\approx$ 10.6 hours)
-10^{-23}	$0.27 \cdot 10^{-16}$	$3.82 \cdot 10^5$ ($\approx$ 10.6 hours)

Let us note that the given data change essentially under positive values of ε (10^{-6}, 10^{-7}, etc.). There is some asymmetry of solutions behavior under negative and positive values of ε. The calculations show the minimum distance $|x|_{min}$ more than 500 of our lengths units even for relative big initial $w(x_0) = 10000$. Thus, if we limit ourselves to the condition that the deuteron energy is not over $(0.27)^2$ eV at a distance of $5 \cdot 10^{-9}$ cm from the central nucleus, and the whole process of deuteron movement towards the nucleus does not exceeds approximately 10.5 hours, then the interval

$(\dfrac{\pi}{2} - 10^{-7}, \dfrac{\pi}{2} - 10^{-23})$ is approximately the sought

phase "hole" in the whole interval $((0, \pi))$ of phase change φ_0 in eq. (10).

If many deuterons with the energy not more than $(0.27)^2$eV at the distance $5 \cdot 10^{-9}$ cm from the nucleus are equally distributed along their phases φ_0, the ratio of the length of this "hole" to π, equaling approximately $0.3 \cdot 10^{-7}$, is equal to a share (or a relevant percentage of $0.3 \cdot 10^{-5}$) of deuterons overcoming the Coulomb barrier.

The above figures express at least the order of probability of the cold nuclear fusion occurrence, and this order is absolutely incompatible with the figures in the classical quantum mechanics mentioned above. Let us note once again that a one-dimensional problem was solved, and in case of an accurate analysis (not zero sighting distance will be taking into account) this probability will be lower. Let us also pay attention to the large time intervals ΔT calculated if $|\varepsilon|$ is very small. It explains well the effect (observed by many researchers) of continuation of cold nuclear fusion reactions during even many hours after the disconnection of the voltage in the electrolytic cell. This effect was named even "life after death".

As for the analysis of the deuteron movement with the help of the autonomous equation, the calculations lead to initial velocities v_0, exceeding the above mentioned numbers, although the general motion picture is the same. But the autonomous equation is interesting, because in the area of those values $x, \dot{x}$, under which the product $x\dot{x}$ is modulo small, it is possible to replace $\sin(x\dot{x})$ with $x\dot{x}$, and the eq.(11) under $\varepsilon=0$ to replace with simplified equation (describing the deuteron motion from initial point $x_0 > 0$ to center)

$$\ddot{x} = a\frac{(x\dot{x})^2}{x^2} = a\dot{x}^2$$

This equation has a very simple analytical solution. Without giving very simple calculations, we will present the final formulas.

Let us take the following initial conditions:

$$x(0) = x_0 > 0, \quad \dot{x}(0) = -v_0 < 0$$

Then

$$\dot{x}(t) = -\frac{v_0}{1 + av_0 t}, x(t) = x_0 - \frac{1}{a}\ln(1 + av_0 t)$$

It follows from these formulas that the velocity of a particle moving in accordance with the initial equation never turns to zero, and under

$$t = t_* = \frac{\exp(ax_0) - 1}{av_0}$$

$x(t_*) = 0$, i.e. the particle reaches the center of the nucleus, its velocity at this moment being

$$\dot{x}(t_*) = \frac{-v_0}{1 + a v_0 t_*} = -v_0 \exp(-a x_0) \text{ ,}$$

so that it *passes through the nucleus and moves further..*

For example, let $a = 0.0144967$, $x_0 = 1000$ ($\approx 10^{-11}$ cm), $\dot{x}(0) = 5.37 \cdot 10^{-10}$ (≈ 16 cm/s).

Under such initial data, the product $x\dot{x} = -0.0000537$, so it is quite possible to replace $\sin(x\dot{x})$ with $x\dot{x}$.
In this case,

$$t_* \approx 2.3 \cdot 10^7 \qquad (\approx 8 \cdot 10^{-18} \text{ s}),$$

$$\dot{x}(t_*) \approx -29.9 \cdot 10^{-17} \quad (\approx 9 \cdot 10^{-6} \text{ cm/s})$$

These figures fit well into the reasonable framework, so the autonomous model can also be of use for the movement analysis in the problem under review. The phenomenon of particle passage through the Coulomb potential accounts very well for the existence of pendulum orbits in the Bohr-Sommerfeld model, when in states *1s,2s,3s* etc. the electron passes through the nucleus. Such states in the strict theory and experiment have no impulse, so in the Bohr-Sommerfeld model they were discarded as absurd. Now they have a right to existence. Further, the experimental data for angular distribution of non-elastic scattering by nuclear reactions (including reactions with heavy ions) reveal the big amplitude of the scattering forward. It is impossible to explain such effect by the formation of intermediate nuclei but it is may be explained from the viewpoint of our UQT.

General Principles of Creating New Energy Sources

In the ancient classical *perpetual mobile* idea it is supposed that energy is just created and not taken from outside (impossibility of *a perpetual mobile* is the first law of thermodynamics). There have appeared lately many articles and even books dwelling on the idea of energy generation from vacuum. We are not in complete agreement with many of these works, and we will dwell only on some of them, which, in our view, can be of interest. One of the main ideologists of this completely new sphere in science are Daniel C. Cole and Harold E. Puthoff, and their first serious work entitled «Extracting energy and heat from the vacuum» was published in Physical Review E, vol. 48, #2, (1993). In this work authors use the Casimir forces [60] making them produce useful work. The appearance of such forces in vacuum is understandable intuitively: if in a stormy sea we put vertically into the water two big parallel plates, on the outside part of these plates the waves will hit them at random, and between the plates there will be no waves. Then, the hitting of the waves outside the plates will produce a gravitation force between them

(the Casimir force discovered experimentally long ago), which the authors of this interesting work are going to exploit. It is easily seen that in this idea energy is generated from vacuum fluctuations.

Our approach is altogether different. When the equation with an oscillating charge was solved for the quantum oscillator, 4 types of solutions were discovered. For us only two of them matter – "crematorium" and "maternity home". In one solution ("crematorium") the particle slowly falls to the bottom of the pit and finally turns into a "specter" (under the strict unitary quantum theory it disappears, spreads about the Universe and contributes to vacuum fluctuations everywhere). In the other solution ("maternity home") the particle can even be born of a very small fluctuation, or accumulate a sufficiently big energy. Let us underline once again that both these processes are not at all logically connected. In other words, there are such systems where energy will disappear completely (electrolytic baths), or increase unlimitedly (it might be our Universe).

It is the energy conservation law that presents the strongest impediment in all cosmological approaches. However, universes with birth of matter have long existed in scientific cosmology independently of us. There is known the theory of British astronomer Fred Hoyle based on the idea of continued creation of matter from nothing. The question of whether such an approach is realized in nature and whether the energy emitted by quasars is the result of work produced by a certain gigantic pit, is the most intriguing question of the future.

It is yet unclear whether the values of appearing and disappearing energy in these solutions are equal. But neither in the strict UQT nor in the equation with an oscillating charge vacuum (as a big set of random oscillations) is needed for energy generation. Of course, UQT admits of such an energy exchange with vacuum. For example, during split of a photon on a semitransparent mirror, at one time both halves of the photon will not be registered and will give their energy to the vacuum and disappear for the observers for good, at another time there will appear two photons out of one, and the lacking energy will be taken from vacuum. But *the movement equations (4) and (5) themselves know nothing about vacuum and can generate energy due to their nature* (they are noninvariant relative to the coordinate translations) and the conservation laws we are so accustomed to do not exist for them.

Let us remind you once again that the latter follow from the Newton equations, and the Newton equations result from averaging by a big number of events, while for individual events of small energies no conservation laws in quantum physics exist.

In other words, it can be said philosophically that a motion of a small wave packet, once started, will give birth to other movements (energy) and, consequently, to matter. Since most various and breath-taking speculations are possible, up to the creation of a universe, we will stop here.

Thus, the generated or disappearing energy in our approach can be manifest not only in the changes of the particle velocity during movement in a certain potential, but in the appearance or disappearance of the particles themselves as well. A change of the particle velocity in movement is most easily discoverable, and it is the velocity increase that can be used for generation of heat or electric current. There can be energy systems, which exploit the fact itself of charge oscillation and the consequence of it. It is very probable that these phenomena, contradicting the most fundamental laws of modern science, have been long discovered and even applied. But these are the very phenomena that are the easiest to be exploited at the first stage of development of such new energy technologies.

When an energy generation mechanism is used, crematorium-type solutions should be suppressed. But all the quantum processes are built on the basis of elementary acts, and each of them is impossible to be controlled separately. But if the probabilities of such processes are controlled, they, being multiplied by the great number of participants in the process, automatically become macroscopic variables of quantum kinetics, and the process itself becomes possible. It can easily be achieved, if process participants with correlated initial phases are selected.

Let us remind you that the Newton and relativistic classical mechanics follow from the strict UQT, while the Newton movement equations with the resultant energy and impulse conservation laws follow from the oscillating charge equation with averaging by the particle ensemble composing a classical body (material point). But these conservation laws are nonexistent for individual microparticles in our theory, and they appear only in case of averaging by the ensemble of particles. Thus, if the energy-generating processes are accumulated, and the processes where energy disappears are suppressed, a classical *perpetual mobile* can be created.

But the UQT and the oscillating charge equation have other differences not only from the equations of classical mechanics, but also from some equations of electrostatics and electrodynamics.

There is a fundamental theorem of circulation for the electric field. Let us dwell on it in more detail. Let us have a vector field **E,** which can be an electrostatic or a gravitation field.

$$\mathbf{E} = P(x, y, z)\mathbf{i} + Q(x, y, z)\mathbf{j} + R(x, y, z)\mathbf{k}$$

Line integral

$$\Gamma = \oint_l (P\,dx + Q\,dy + R\,dz) = \oint_l \mathbf{E}\mathbf{dl} \qquad (15)$$

is called circulation of vector field **E** by contour *l*. Of course, circulation depends not only on **E**, but also on the passage direction accepted in contour *l*; by changing the passage direction we will change the circulation

sign. Form (15) is convenient for mathematicians, but for our purposes we will present equation (15) in a different way. If both parts of equation (15) are multiplied by electric charge *q,* on the right we will get the integral of force *q***E** by way **dl,** i.e. work for moving the charge along a closed loop contour. It is well known that this value is zero.

$$\int_l q\mathbf{E}\mathbf{dl} = \mathbf{0} \qquad (16)$$

If this value were not zero, an energy source could be created. For this purpose a charge should be moved in electric field **E** from point *a*, located in the high voltage area of the field, to point *b,* located in low voltage area of the field, and then back, but along another route. The values of work from $a \to b$ and from $b \to a$ would be different, and we could extract work from the field without making any changes in the system. When the charge is constant, it is certainly true, so for a macroscopic constant charge this theorem is an analog of the energy conservation law. The authors have not come across such an interpretation of the energy conservation law in other works. If the charge is microscopic, then in the UQT it changes, depends on time, coordinate and velocity, so work from $a \to b$ and from $b \to a$ will be different, in this case work can in principle be extracted from the field without any changes made in the system.

Discussion of Experimental Results

Let us now get down to explaining some very unusual experimental results, which the authors have nothing to do with, and which they sometimes regard rather skeptically. The point is that the sphere of new energy sources is the headache of all the human civilization, and in this sphere, like nowhere else, the dividends can be exorbitantly high, and for this reason there are in this sphere a lot of swindlers (even among the theoreticians) and simply erring people. The official science of the world does not so far believe in such research, but the most suspicious fact is the great multiplicity of such works. The authors are not inclined to regard all these people as swindlers or erring, because the UQT can offer a beautiful and simple interpretation of certain phenomena.

There are strange plants with the efficiency over 100%. They are even manufactured in small quantities and are rated among energy-saving devices already termed over unities. Japanese researchers take these problems very seriously, and the leading role in studying this problem belongs not to the USA, but to Japan, which even finances many US institutes in this framework. The total Japanese expenditures for this research exceed $200.000.000 a year. It can be forecast that with the Japanese mentality and the state policy of exporting not natural resources, but superhigh technologies and intellect, Japan will find itself among the leading countries early in the 21ˢᵗ century. We think that our readers will not be surprised to hear that Russia has

not allocated a single cent for this program, and all research was made on pure enthusiasm.

In the USA such works do not get official governmental support either (like, for example, the dying out hot nuclear fusion problem), but a great number of private firms and individual businessmen are conducting large-scale research. The following US journals are devoted to the subject: *Journal of New Energy, Infinite Energy, Cold Fusion, New Energy News, Fusion Facts*, and *NET-Journal* (Switzerland).

Switzerland, Italy, Germany, and France are also among the countries where the new energy problems are seriously researched from the cold nuclear fusion point of view.

A very young sphere of power engineering has emerged and is quickly developing, which researches many new energy sources. In future those new energy-saving sources will first be used, which will considerably differ from the existing ordinary energy transformers in that they will generate additional energy that can be used in the interests of the mankind. The development of civilization will then be limited not by long-expected reduction of natural fuel resources, but by heat pollution of the environment.

Let us enumerate just a few of the new energy directions:
1. The Patterson fuel cell (CETI).
2. Supermagnet-superengines of Takahashi, Aspden and Adams
3. Swiss plant Testatika.
4. Engines operating on water.
5. Hypersound Griggs pump, the Potapov and Schaffer heat generators.
6. Schoulder and Fox cluster systems.
7. N – machines of Farade, Bruce de Palma, Newman, Searl, Tewari, etc.
8. PAGD reactor of Canadian researchers P. Correa and A. Correa.

This list can be complemented with the surprising experimental results received by physicists A. Samgin and A. Baraboshkin (Russia, Institute of High-Temperature Electrochemistry under the Russian Academy of Sciences, Ekaterinburg) [24,25] and T.Mizuno [26] (Japan). They appear to have used, totally independently of each other, special proton-conducting ceramics, which, when electric current runs through them, generate a thousand times more heat energy than the electric energy consumed. In some experiments by T.Mizuno this value even exceeded 70000(!). T. Mizuno in a personal talk with one of the authors of this report said that he feared very much the radiation sickness.

But no α, β, γ radiation or nuclear debris was found, and the nuclear processes are not responsible for such energy generation. Such proton-conducting (or, to be more exact, deuteron-conducting) ceramics was made using the power metallurgy methods by agglomeration under high temperatures. In other words, all the

chemical processes in it had long been over. The origin of such an amount of excessive energy is absolutely incomprehensible in the framework of conventional science, for they cannot be accounted for either by nuclear or chemical reactions, or by phase passages. At first the authors of this experiment supposed nuclear fusion reactions of the D+D type. At our request, A. Samgin replaced heavy hydrogen (deuterium) during ceramics production with ordinary hydrogen. If the effect of such huge energy generation was connected with the nuclear D-D reactions, all the anomalous heat effects would have disappeared, but they persisted. After such a large quantity of energy was generated, the tablet disintegrated into powder.

These effects can easily be explained by UQT from the harmonic oscillator theory point of view. When the tablet is agglomerated, there remain in it some caverns of a size of hundreds Angstrom units. When direct or alternating current flows through it, the protons and deuterons in their movement (there are few electrons in such ceramics) get into these caverns, and a process can start which is described by the "maternity home" solution. A particle accumulating energy, oscillates in such a pit, and finally the energy will be sufficient both for heating and for destruction of the pit walls (tablet turning into powder). The same processes seem to be taking place in a palladium electrolytic cell with heavy water, and in a nickel electrolytic cell with ordinary water, which accounts for anomalously large heat generation, not related to nuclear processes.

It would be good to verify experimentally the dependence of the tunnel effect on the initial phase. But it seems us that it is more important for our opponents, since both cold nuclear fusion (CNF) and discovery of nuclear transmutations *(which, from the point of view of modern science, are even more absurd than the existence of CNF)* evidently cannot be accounted for in any other way. Besides, such a direct experiment is of a fundamental value. There are today a lot of people and groups in the world, who pin great hope on exploiting the nuclear transmutation phenomenon for the purposes of processing and recycling of nuclear wastes, and the question of industrial generation of tritium for military purposes using CNF methods was under consideration in Los-Alamos. Internet magazines are full of such information. We are not giving Internet addresses here, because everything is constantly changing in this live system.

Let us analyze some of the above-mentioned devices. The first, the oldest and the most mysterious information was information about internal combustion engines operating on water.

Let us give just one example. When we were students, one of our teachers, the late Professor G.V. Dudko (1959) told us that in 1951 he had participated in the testing of an internal combustion engine [39,55-57]. The device represented a hybrid of a diesel and an ordinary carburetor engine, where a gas of petrol was needed to start it and then ignition was switched off, and an

ordinary fuel pump sprayed into the cylinder warmed up and strongly compressed water with special additives (which the inventor himself put into the tank in small quantities, and which, as we now understand, represented the principal secret). The engine was installed on a boat. The researchers were riding for two days in the Azov Sea, and only water vapor was the engine exhaust. Professor Dudko himself drew the water fuel overboard and poured it into the tank. They needed much water, several buckets a day, but there was no shortage of it… The question of why, if everything was so great, these engines are still not in use, can occur only to a person who has never lived in Russia.

From the point of view of the solutions of the harmonic oscillator problem, the following theoretical possibility exists [40,44,47,55-57]: if water with the necessary additives (which, evidently, represent the secret of many invented engines operating on water) is compressed and sprayed into the cylinder, each drop of water, when it gets into the cylinder after being compressed, will start dilating and will pass by inertia the equilibrium position. As a result, caverns (empty volumes) can be formed in it, with a size of several dozen of Angstrom units. If a free proton (or some other microparticle) gets into such a cavern in the required phase (it is supposed that the task of the additive is exactly this), the "maternity home" solution will be realized and some of the drops will explode… Later we heard and read many times about various Russian inventors, who had successfully created and tested engines operating on ordinary water with some mysterious additives.

Of course, the possibility of catalytic water decomposition with small energy consumption before spraying into the cylinder is not at all excluded. There are films and information in Internet about testing of cars operating on water, which is catalytically (with small energy consumption) decomposed into oxygen and hydrogen. Such power engineering would be ecologically absolutely clean, and the only restriction would lie in heat pollution of the environment.

An ideal solution for the motor transport could also lie in use of some new types of electric energy generators. The UQT even admits of the possibility, which was long observed in the experiments of Nicolas Tesla and in those made by Canadian physicists the Correas, who even received a patent for a system generating energy from vacuum fluctuations (as they believe) [45]. The readers could have got acquainted with our detailed theory of these processes in [46]. But the ideal system for the automobile would certainly be Testatika.

Any imagination will be amazed at the thermal cell CETI created by James Patterson, USA [27], in which takes place the electrolysis of specially made nickel balls in ordinary water. The US paper «Fortean Times» [1] 85, 1995, wrote about it: "December 4, 1995 will go down into history. On this day a group of independent experts from 5 US universities was testing a new source of energy with a stable output heat power of 1.3 kWt. The consumed electrical energy was 960 times smaller". All

experts note that the generated heat is of mysterious origin and cannot be explained by chemical or nuclear reactions, as well as by phase passages. The US ABC TV showed on February 7 and 8 1996 in the «Nightline» and «Good Morning America» cycles of programs about the development by Patterson of a new energy source generating hundreds of times more energy than it consumes. The mysterious nature of the generated heat was again underlined. It is interesting [34] that Motorola tried to buy the CETI patent from its authors for $20.000.000, but met with a refusal. We are sure that Motorola had invested a certain amount of money into the study of this problem before making such a serious offer. All that happens within the Patterson element has nothing to do with nuclear reactions (although Patterson told one of the authors that he was of a different view), and, in our opinion, can be accounted for by exactly the same processes as were described above for proton-conducting ceramics.

The sonoluminescence phenomenon, when certain liquids start shining if weak ultrasound is run through them, also looks very mysterious. No satisfactory explanation has so far been found for this experimentally proved phenomenon, discovered by Moscow University Professor S.N. Rzhevkin in 1933. As Nobel Prize winner Professor Yulian Schvinger said, "it has no right to exist, but it does exist" [38]. This phenomenon can also be explained from the above-mentioned positions.

There are also heat generators (Yu. Potapov [21-23], Moldavia, James J.Griggs [28], and Huffman [29], Schaffer - USA). In them many cavitating bubbles are formed during circulation of ordinary water, in which excessive energy is generated, with the output to input energy ratio approaching 1.7. In these experiments and plants no chemical or nuclear reactions can take place, and thousands of Potapov's heat generators have been manufactured for heating homes. In such devices (they are very different in appearance) a great number of cavitating bubbles are created in a flow of water. This is achieved either with the help of interrupting the water flow with a special rotor (J.Griggs, Huffman, Schaffer), or the water flow is twirled by a special helix and then enters the zone of sharp dilation, where cavitating bubbles are formed (Yu. Potapov). In general, it should be said that cavitation remains a great puzzle for theoretical hydrodynamics and science. For example, forged multi-ton screw propellers of big nuclear submarines under certain operation modes and geometry of the surrounding forms can be destroyed by cavitation within only a few hours. It happens because of huge energy generated in cavitating bubbles.

Under certain values of phase and energy, a particle in the pit, each time reflecting from the walls, will have a greater velocity than that of a falling particle (this is within the uncertainty relation), and after many reflections will accumulate a fairly big energy which will be generated in the form of heat or bremsstrahlung when the pit is destroyed, and, finally, the energy of the oscillations of such a particle accumulated in the

pit will always be transformed into heat in an ordinary solid body or a liquid. This physical idea immediately accounts for both sonoluminescence (although for sonoluminescence in general this mechanism is less primitive), and energy generation in proton-conducting ceramics, nickel during electrolysis in ordinary water (CETI element), and water bubbles of commercial heat generators. The theory predicts that the samples should be fissure due to increased pressure on the walls of the potential pit with the growth of energy, which fact also takes place, since both ceramic samples and nickel balls in the CETI element finally disintegrate. It is evidently for these reasons that any metal containing much hydrogen in its grid becomes fragile and is quickly destroyed, which fact is well known to engineers.

The small number of experiments does not so far allow for making concrete conclusions as to what particles generate energy in pits (microbubbles). Besides, for at least an electron to disappear a pit of about 0.5 MeV is required, while in a solid body the pits are about several eV deep, and what seems to happen is only loss of kinetic energy, and not disappearance of particles. The fact that this process requires very deep potential pits, which do not exist in a solid body, does not change the essence of the matter.

Of course, under ordinary conditions, both competing solutions usually take place at once: "maternity home" and "crematorium", which compensate for each other and the energy is preserved. For energy generation, the "maternity home" solution should prevail. Both these processes take place simultaneously and compete with each other, but, formally, they are not connected in space and time. The complexity of the energy generation problem lies in suppressing the "crematorium" solution by a careful selection of different parameters and promoting the "maternity home" solutions. So far we cannot say for sure what the optimum dimensions of such cavitating bubbles are, or which object oscillates in them, because for this purpose special experiments are needed, which so far have not been staged.

Of course, the inexorable Robber in the form of the Carnot principle stands in the way of transformation of the heat generated in a heat generator or ceramics into electrical or mechanic energy. In accordance with this principle, all mechanic or electrical energy can be transformed into heat, but the reverse process is always connected with big losses.

If there are experiments and plants in which energy generation contradicting the conventional conservation laws is discovered, there should also exist opposite ones, where energy disappears completely, i.e. the "crematorium" solution prevails. It proved to be true. There are such modes during electrolysis in electrolytic baths, under which the temperature of the solution in the bath is strongly reduced for unaccountable reasons, and this fact has no explanation at all. This phenomenon long ago was noted by attentive industrial engineers, and it is called the "bath-freezing" mode [49,50].

Chinese physicist Swe-Kai Chen from Taiwan in his experiments [48] stably observed the same phenomena. It is quite easily explained: a particle with a velocity exceeding the most probable velocity in this distribution gets into caverns on electrodes and after some oscillations reduces its velocity, which becomes smaller than the most probable one, and then the particle leaves the cavern at a small speed, and the same process can happen to another energetic particle. This leads to the cooling of the cell in the case of such mass processes.

The problem of ferromagnet magnetization (the Easing model) can also be reduced to the orientation of a magnetic doublet by the external magnetic field, and then it is essentially the harmonic oscillator equation with a slightly different return force ($F = \dfrac{\mu}{r^3}$) and all the conclusions made earlier remain in effect. That is why magnetization should also produce energy generation effects. This proved to be true. For the general public everything began on May 17, 1996, when Frode Olsen from the research group "Free Energy" showed on the Norwegian TV (TV2) a surprising film about a "dynamic sculpture" made by artist and sculptor Reidar Finsrud from Skaarer, Norway. The author of this "dynamic sculpture" *had no idea about physics* and had been making it for 12 years. Einstein's idea of how discoveries are made conveniently comes to mind at this point: everyone knows that a certain thing cannot be done, but there is a man who does not know it, and it is he who makes the discovery.

This "dynamic sculpture" accompanied by an "explaining" poster «*perpetual mobile*» represents an iron well-polished ball with a diameter of 2.7 inches weighing about 2 pounds. The ball is rolling along a circle on close guides resembling two parallel skids with a diameter of 25 inches past the poles of three permanent magnets, where it is magnetized. In the area of three permanent magnets three more mobile magnets are installed on special mobile 5-inch long levers, and these magnets, when the ball passes them, are slightly inclined (due to the ball gravitation) and, after the ball passes them, are raised by the holding springs (sway like yokes). The ball makes a complete turn in 3 seconds. All this magic (**they say the ball had been rolling along the close contour for more than a year**) does not have any sources of energy and is installed for everyone to see in a Norwegian picture gallery on a special stand covered with a glass cover. The authors only saw a good TV film about this installation and were mostly surprised at the fact that the ball had not stopped during uninterrupted shooting (about 20 minutes).

We are well acquainted with circus tricks, but it is absolutely incomprehensible how such a trick could be staged using some secret methods. It is clearly seen that the ball in its movement always partially transfers its energy to the three long swaying pendulums, but there is no way to use them for pushing the ball and making up for friction, this being the only trick that could, in our view, be applied here. All the rest is clearly visible and contains nothing suspicious.

Let us estimate the generated energy. At an initial speed of about 1m/s the ball stops after 30 seconds, if all the magnets are removed. It means that the energy consumed in 30 seconds is about 0.5 joules, or 1/60 Watt. The total energy generated in a month is 43,200 joules, and this is huge energy, much greater than that of a good shell!

It is clear (if the word is relevant here at all) that when the ball is approaching the permanent magnet and the process of magnetization is going on, it is accelerated, but when it mechanically gets past the equilibrium position and, moving away from the magnets, becomes demagnetized, the gravitation (which now starts slowing the ball down) will be slightly less than it was at the moment of the ball's acceleration. This small difference in forces provides for small positive work to overcome friction. Energy generation and similar things during magnetization had been *predicted* by one of the authors in magazines *Infinite Energy* vol.1, No.2, p.38, (1995); *Proceedings of the ICCF*5, p.361, April 9-13, (1995), Monte-Carlo; *Cold Fusion*, No 11, p.10, (1995); *Chinese Journal of Nuclear Physics* (vol. 19, ¹2, 1997). The quantum-mechanic processes are very complicated, but some of them can be understood.

All keen physicists were quick to understand it, and J. Naudin in France made a similar, but much simpler experiment. A ball of a soft magnetic material is swaying along parallel U-formed skids in a system of four magnets. Near the bottom of the U-form there is a small smooth step. It may have been made to make the magnetization and demagnetization processes different in time, which is very important. If there are no magnets, nothing interesting happens and oscillations are quickly (in a few seconds) damped. If the magnets are present, oscillations go on up to 3 hours 27 minutes. It appears that in this case the author failed to find good material and parameters of the plant, so friction was not compensated completely. In all these experiments demagnetization of permanent magnets does not happen, because the experiment is repeated many times with the same results.

And now a few vague words about demagnetization processes. During magnetization of the ball, the magnetic moments of its atoms are oriented (like the hands of a compass) along the field lines. When the ball leaves the magnetic field area, the atom magnetic moments are disoriented under the influence of the heat motion, and it becomes demagnetized. In the unitary quantum theory the share of the oriented magnetic moments in the external field can be bigger than in the conventional quantum mechanics (the "maternity home" solution), and the ball gravitation can be stronger due to it. Disorientation of these moments happens similarly in both theories. It seems to be for this reason and due to the difference in magnetization and demagnetization time that a difference in magnetic forces occurs when the ball approaches the magnet or moves off from it.

The scientists of the older generation will remember that a similar toy was shown in the 30's to David Gilbert, who said it was the most interesting thing he had ever seen. A question arises as to why it has not yet been realized. We do not know a physical-mathematical answer to this question, and it is not our task to analyze the social reasons of this phenomenon. Japan has a different mentality, and there is a governmental program for generating energy from permanent magnets. Takahashi [51] even seems to have made an electric engine with an efficiency of up to 318%!

Still more mysterious is the long-known problem of energy shortage in many biochemical reactions with ferments (enzymes). For example, in the well-studied reaction of disintegration of polysaccharides in the presence of lysozyme the following happens: a polysaccharide molecule gets into a special cavern in a big lysozyme molecule, and some time later its debris are thrown out of it (Fig. 6). The broken binding energy of the polysaccharide is about 3 eV, while the energy of the heat movement is only 0.024 eV. From the standard science point of view, it is absolutely unclear where lysozyme takes the energy to break the polysaccharide. No satisfactory mechanism for explanation of such reactions (and they are very numerous) was found, and all this was "swept under the carpet", as physicists say. The UQT provides for a completely new look at the catalytic processes, which has an incomprehensible source of energy reducing the molecule activation energy. From our point of view, this process is a variant of the "maternity home" solution for oscillator.
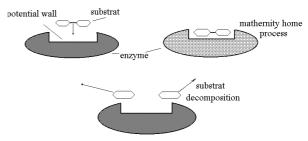
Fig.6. Break of polysaccharide molecule by lysozyme.

The most surprising thing is that in all the cases generation of excessive energy cannot be accounted for by chemical reactions or phase passages. If nuclear reactions do sometimes happen (which should not be according to modern science), they can account for only a hundredth or a thousandth share of the generated heat energy. There is no doubt that all these are effects of new physics, for in the framework of the old physics all this is simply unexplainable.

But the existence of a plant that produces *out of nothing* about 10 kilowatt of direct current electric energy with a voltage of 300 V seems nearly impossible. The story was described by one of the authors in three different magazines, and we will just give a brief resume [52-54].

In summer 1999, at the invitation of Swiss physicists (Director of the Institute of New Energy Sources in Egerkinhen Adolph Schneider), one of the authors

visited several research organizations. It is interesting that there is such an institute in small Switzerland, and there is none in big Russia. The purpose of the invitation was very simple: to explain the operation of a plant generating energy out of nothing, i.e. a *perpetual mobile*. In Switzerland such plants are called Testatik Machine M/L Converter from religious group «Methernitha» (Address: Methernitha, CH-3517 Linden, Switzerland, phone: ++41 31 97 11 24).

Such machines exist today in the Swiss town of Linden near Bern. Part of the town belongs to the Religious Christian Community, which is fenced and heavily guarded. There are about 250 members of the Community, many of them are physicists, graduates of the universities of Geneva, Lozanne, Bern. It is not only a research laboratory, they have their own TV center, a film studio, a small furniture plant, shops, garages, residential blocks, and support services. You will probably have guessed that this community does not consume any energy, and this is the most accurate fact in the whole story, for the inquisitive journalists have found out that no money from them comes to the accounts of the local power station, which provides power for all the town. In a cellar of one of the houses they have a power station that produces energy… out of nothing. The author of this inexhaustible source of free direct current energy is Swiss physicist Paul Baumann. Let us briefly describe these fantastic plants: they are of four types (sizes) with capacities of 0.1, 0.3, 3 and 10 kWt. Externally, the plant resembles very much the standard electrostatic machine with Leyden jars often used in physical demonstrations. There are two acryl disks with 36 pasted narrow sectors of thin aluminum, which rotate in different directions. In the first samples ordinary gramophone records were used for disks. The machine is started by pushing the disks in different directions by fingers. The rotation speed is 50-70 turns per minute. After the start disks rotate independently and can be easily stopped by hand, the direct current voltage is about 300-350 V, and the current is up to 30A. The mechanical energy used for rotation (only 100 mWt, according to measurements made by Austrian Professor S. Marinov) is hundreds of thousand times smaller than the generated electrical energy. The biggest plant for 10 kWt has plastic disks with a diameter of over 2 m, the smallest one – 20 cm, the weight of the plants is small enough, the 3-kWt machine weighing about 20 kg.

The charge separation process (which consumes energy!) practically does not slow down the disks. Connection of a load in the form of a 200-Wt bulb does not change the rotation speed either. No cooling or heating of the air or machine parts during long operation takes place, only a slight smell of ozone is felt. The system is noiseless, compact, environment-friendly, and can be installed anywhere.

The Community management thinks, and quite rightly, that wide spread of such systems in the world will lead to a heat explosion, because all the energy generated by the mankind finally finds itself in an energy dump (is transformed into heat), and all this can finally lead to overheating of the environment. They absolutely do not believe (and not without grounds) in the capability of the mankind as a whole to negotiate reasonable use of this invention, and they think that the harm caused by it will be greater than from nuclear, bacteriological, or conventional weapons. Their main idea for the mankind is to live in balance with the environment and to make full use of the energy of the wind, the sun, the water, etc. For this reason the Community is heavily guarded, and they are not going to donate their main discovery to the mankind.

Professor Stephan Marinov visited the Community twice (in July 1988 and in February-March 1989). He was even given such a plant with a capacity of 100 Wt (300 V, 0.3A), which he studied in his laboratory. As far as we now know, even the inventor of this machine does not fully understand its operation principle, so he contacted Marinov out of sheer curiosity of a scientist.

In 1989 Professor Marinov published a book "Thorny Path to Truth – Documents of Violation of Conservation Laws" in International Publishers East-West. The book contains a lot of photos, a measurement report, and a description of the plant. He also organized a research group called "Free Energy" within the Community (Methernitha Group Stephan Marinov Free Energy).

There are very interesting words in this book: "I can state without any doubts that this machine is a classical *perpetual mobile* in its pure form. After the initial push, it goes on rotatingby itself for an indefinitely long time, constantly producing electrical energy in the amount of 100 Watt… It is still unclear, however, how it all can happen…". As far as we know, nobody has managed to build a similar plant elsewhere.

We have an approximate idea of how the plant operates. The idea is as simple and ingenious as that of the wheel, which is absent from the surrounding nature, so the inventor could not borrow the idea. We will just show that the existence of such a plant is in full conformity with the UQT. It is natural that the plant operates on the basis of the charge separation principle. Let us have two metal spherical surfaces with a hole, isolated from the earth and from each other. If, with the help of an insulated stick, we transfer the first electron from Ball A to the internal surface of Ball B through the hole, a difference of potentials will occur, and if we transfer the second and the subsequent electrons, Ball A will attract the transferred charge, while Ball B will repulse it, and energy will have to be spent during the transfer of charges (Fig. 7).

Let us remind you that under the existing circulation theorem (16), the charge transfer work will consume the same amount of energy as will later be generated during the passage of electric current resulting from charge separation. But in the UQT the circulation theorem (16) for *an individual elementary charge* is not valid. Thus, we can select the time and route, along which the charge will be transferred in such a way, that
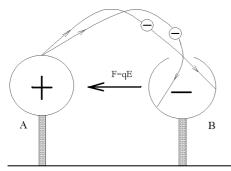
Fig.7. Work for moving the charge depends
on method of movement and route.

the charge value during the transfer will be close to zero, and, consequently, the electrostatic force and the charge transfer and separation work will be close to zero too. For example, instead of selecting the route you can wait for the charge to be reduced to zero and then transfer it quickly, and when the charge increases, immediately stop the transfer and fix the charge. Or you can duly select the route and velocity. There are many options. This was evidently realized by Paul Baumann, who is *so far* practically unknown to the official science, and who can find consolation in the idea that the inventor of the wheel will never be known at all. The problem of simple arrangement of all this is just a matter of technique.

You cannot help, thinking that all these might be just tricks. The history of *perpetual mobile* abounds in evidence of downright swindling and frauds, and not a single positive result before, and who can guarantee that the information given above will not prove to be another swindle?

First of all, if all the people always piously believe in the unquestionable stability of the energy conservation law, there will never be any progress in this sphere, and it is then unexplainable how man got down from the palm at all. Secondly, to justify the proposed rebellious position, the following idea comes in mind: if 30 years ago somebody had told the authors (who were then already professors) that at the beginning of the next millennium they would deal in such research, it would have seemed not only a silly joke, but an absolutely impossible thing as well. But, as Voltaire said, "He is silly who does not change".

In conclusion we wish to express with certainty that the time of theoretical recognition and of practical universal using of overunity devices will come soon and become the epoch of new energetics. The people of our planet will regret that so much oil, coal and gas was burned causing terrible ecological losses.

The authors thank astronaut V.A. Dzhanibekov and Professor A.P. Buslaev.

References

1. Sapogin, L.G. Unitary Field and Quantum Mechanics. In: Investigation of Systems. Academy of Sciences of the USSR, Vladivostok, No 2, p. 54-84, 1973 (in Russian).

2. Sapogin L.G. On Unitary Quantum Mechanics. Nuovo Cimento, vol.53A, No 2, p.251, 1979.

3. Sapogin, L.G. A Unitary Quantum Field Theory. Annales de la Fondation Louis de Broglie, vol.5, No 4, p.285-300, 1980

4. Sapogin, L.G. A Statistical Theory of Measurements in Unitary Quantum Mechanics. Nuovo Cimento, vol.70B, No 1, p.80, 1982.

5. Sapogin, L.G. Statistical Theory of Detector in Unitary Quantum Mechanics. Nuovo Cimento, vol.71B, No 3, p.246, 1982.

6. Boichenko, V.A. and L.G. Sapogin On Equation of Unitary Quantum Theory. Annales de la Fondation Louis de Broglie, vol.9, No3, p.221, 1984.

7. Sapogin, L.G. and V.A. Boichenko On Solution of One Non-linear Equation. Nuovo Cimento, vol.102B, No 4, p.433, 1988.

8. Sapogin, L.G. and V.A. Boichenko On Charge and Mass of Particles in Unitary Quantum Theory. Nuovo Cimento, vol.104A, No 10, p.1483.

9. Sapogin, L.G. Clearcut Picture of Microworlds. "Journal Technique for the Young" (Tekhnika Molodezhi). Moscow, No 1, p.41, 1983 (in Russian).

10. Sapogin L.G., "Statistical Theory of Measurements in Unitary Quantum Mechanics," Nuovo Cimento, vol. 70B, No.1, p.80, 1982.

11. Sapogin L.G., "Statistical Theory of Detector in Unitary Quantum Mechanics," Nuovo Cimento, vol. 71B, No. 3, p. 24M, 1982.

12. Boichenko V.A., Sapogin L.G., "On Equation of Unitary Quantum Theory," Annales de la Fondation Louis de Broglie, vol. 9, No. 3, p.221, 1984.

13. Sapogin L.G., Boichenko V.A., "On Solution of One Non-linear Equation", Nuovo Cimento, vol. 102B, No.4, p.433, 1988.

14. Sapogin L.G., Boichenko V.A., "On Charge and Mass of Particles in Unitary Quantum Theory," Nuovo Cimento, vol. 104A, No.10, p.1483, 1991.

15. Sapogin L.G. "Deuteron Interaction in Unitary Quantum Theory", and "On Mechanisms of Cold Nuclear Fusion". In: Proceedings of the Forth International Conference on Cold Fusion, vol.4, Theory and Special Topics Papers TR-104188-V4, July 1994, p.171-178, Hawaii. 1994.

16. Sapogin L.G. "Deuterium Interaction in Unitary Quantum Theory", and "On Mechanisms of Cold Nuclear Fusion". In: Fusion Source Book. International Symposium on Cold Nuclear Fusion and Advanced Energy Sources, Belarussian State University, Minsk, May 24-26, p.91-98. 1994.

17. Sapogin, L.G. "Cold Nuclear Fusion and Energy Generation Processes in Terms of theEquation". Chinese Journal of Nuclear Physics vol.19,#2, p.115-120, 1996 .

18. Sapogin, L.G. «Cold Nuclear Fusion and Energy Generation Processes in Terms of the Schrödinger Equation». Infinite Energy [E.Mallove, editor], vol.1, No 5,6, p.75-76, 1996.

19. Sapogin, L.G. «Energy Generation Processes and Cold Nuclear Fusion in Terms of the Schrödinger Equation». In: Proceedings of the Sixth International Conference on Cold Fusion, Progress in New Hydrogen Energy, October 13-18, 1996, Japan, vol.2, p.595-600.

20. Sapogin, L.G. "Energy Generation Processes in Terms of the Schrödinger Equation."Proccedings îf the 2nd Russian Conference CNFNT (in Russian) p.18-24, Sochi, September 19-23,1994.

21. Potapov J.S. Patent of the Russian Federation No 2045715 Heat Generator and Device for Heating of Liquids. Registered on the 10-th of October 1995; priority from the 26-th of April 1993 (in Russian).

22. Potapov J.S. Water as a Source of Life and Energy. Enerjia-takarekossadi, Revu. p.25- 29, September 1998, Budapest.

23. Potapov J.S., MD, Patent No 649 Instalatie pentru obtiinerea enerjiei electrice si-temice. Buletin Oficial de Proprietate Industriala, No12, p.18-19, Chisinau (in Moldavian).

24. Samgin A., Baraboshkin A. et al. Influence of Conductivity on Neutron Generation Process in Proton-Conducting Solid Electrolytes. In: Proceedings of the 4th International Conference on Cold Fusion. Palo Alto, USA, v.3, p.51-57, 1994.

25. Samgin A. Cold Fusion and Anomalous Effects in Deuteron Conductors during Stationary High-Temperature Electrolysis. In: Proceedings of the 5th International Conference on Cold Fusion. April 9-13,1995, Monte-Carlo, p.201.

26. Mizuno T., Enio M., Akimoto T. and K. Azumi Anomalous Heat Evolution from $SrCeO_3$-type proton conductors during absorption/desorbtion of deuterium in alternate Electric Field. Proceedings of the 4th International Conference on Cold Fusion, December 6-9,1993, Hawaii, vol.2, p.14., EPRI, Palo Alto, USA, 1994.

27. Patterson J.A System for Electrolysis, U.S. patent No 5,494,559,27 Feb.1996; Miley G.H. and J.A. Patterson in: Proceedings of the 6th International Conference on Cold Fusion, Progress in New Hydrogen Energy, October 13-18,1996, Japan, vol.2, p.629-644.

28. Griggs J. Calorimetric Study of Excess Heat Production within Hydrosonic Pump System Using Light Water. Fusion Source Book. International Symposium on Cold Fusion and Advanced Energy Sources, Belarussian State University, Minsk, Belarus, May 24-26, p.248-253, 1994.

29. Huffman M.T. From a Sea of Water to a Sea of Energy, Infinite Energy, vol.1, No 1, p. 38-45, 1995.

30. Fleischmann M., Pons S. Electroanal. Chem., v.261, p.301, 1989.

31. Sapogin, L.G. and I.V.Kulikov "Cold Nuclear Fusion in Unitary Quantum Theory". Chinese Journal of Nuclear Physics, vol.17, No 4, p.360-370, 1995.

32. Cryz W.: Rivista Nuovo Cimento, 1, Special No, 42, 1969.

33.Kervran Lois C. Biological Transmutations. Swan House Pub. Co, NY, 11223, 1972.

34.Private Communication.

35. Notoya R., Noya Y., Ohnisi T. Fusion Technology. vol. 26, p. 179-183, 1993.

36.Swartz M. Journal of New Energy vol.1, #3, 1996.

37. Blokhintsev D.I. On Energy Conservation Law. In: Works on Methodological Problems of Physics, p.51, 1993, Print of Moscow State University. (In Russian).

38. Schwinger J. Casimir "Energy for Dielectric". In: Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences, vol.87, p.8370-8372, 1990, "Cold Fusion: Does it Have a Future?" Journal "Cold Fusion", vol.1, #1, page 14-17,1994.

39. Sapogin L.G. «What Can Our Power Engineering Be Like in the Next Millennium», Journal Business-Match, 14, 1998 (In Russian).

40. Sapogin, L.G. On One of Energy Generation Mechanisms in Unitary Quantum Theory. Infinite Energy [E.Mallove, editor], vol.1, No 2, p.38-39, 1995.

41. Sapogin, L.G. On One of the Energy Generation Mechanisms in Unitary Quantum Theory. Proceedings of the ICCF5, p.361, April 9-13,1995, Monte Carlo.

42. Sapogin, L.G. Energy Generation Processes and Cold Nuclear Fusion in Terms of the Schrödinger Equation. In: Proceedings of the Sixth International Conference on Cold Fusion, Progress in New Hydrogen Energy, October 13-18, 1996, Japan, vol.2, p.595-600.

43. L.G. Sapogin, "On One of Energy Generation Mechanisms in Unitary Quantum Theory". Proceedings of the 2nd Russian Conference CNFNT (in Russian) p.18-24, Sochi, September 19-23, 1994; Cold Fusion, No 11, p.10, 1995.

44. L.G. Sapogin, "On One of Energy Generation Mechanisms in Unitary Quantum Theory". Cold Fusion, No 11, p.10, 1995.

45. Correa Paulo and Correa Alexandra XS NRG in Technology, Infinite Energy, vol.2, #7 p.18-38, Nr 8 p.10-15, #9 p.33-37, 1996. US Patents, numbers: 5.416.391, 5.502.354, 5.449.989.

46. Sapogin L.G. Theory of Excess Energy in PAGD Reactor (Correa reactor). In: Proceedings of ICCF-7, Vancouver, April 1998; Infinite Energy, No 20, 1998, p.49.

47. Sapogin L.G. "New Source of Energy?" Journal "Acknowledgement and Physical Reality", Moscow, vol. 2, #1, page 34-40,1997, (in Russian).

48. Swe-Kai Chen, Chu-Yung Liang «Observation of Cell Temperature Drops». In: Proceedings of ICCF-7, Vancouver, April 1998, p.68-72.

49. Jakimenko L.M. Electrolysis of Water. Chimia Press, Moscow, p.p. 33, 86, 90-114, (1970) (in Russian).

50. Pfleiderer N. Electrolysis of Water. pp. 12, 17-18, 1935, Leningrad (in Russian).

51. Rothwell J. Yasunori Takahashi´s Supermagnets, Infinite Energy, vol.1, No 5,6, p.33, 1996.

52. Sapogin L.G. "Is This Really True?", Infinity Energy, N 28, 2000.

53. Sapogin L.G. «Perpetual Mobiles Operating in Switzerland»,magazine «Chudesa I Prikluchenia» # 2, 2000.

54. Sapogin L.G. «They Say There are No Perpetual Mobiles. Then what is it?», magazine "Samolet", 4, 2000.

55. Sapogin L.G. XXI Century - New Sources of Energy? In: Chudesa i Prikliuchenia, Moscow, No 11, p.32-35 (In Russian) 1996, and No 3, 1998.

56. Sapogin L.G.,Kulikov I.V. "Neue Quantenfeldtheorie und prozesse zur electromagnetischer und thermisher energie mit overunity effekt", DVR-Mitglieder-Journal 2/2000.

57. Sapogin L.G. "The 21st Century: Will it Bring a New Quantum Picture of the Universe and New Energy Sources?", Journal of New Energy,vol.2, #3/4,1999.

58. Panos T. "Electrically Induced Nuclear Fusion in the Living Cell ", Journal of New Energy vol.3, #1, 1998.

59. M.Sue Benford, R.N. M.A. "Biological Nuclear Reactions: Empirical Data Describe Unexplained SHC Phenomenon" Journal of New Energy vol.3, #4, 1999.

60. Schwinger J. "Casimir Energy for Dielectric". In: Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences, vol.87, p.8370-8372, 1990, "Cold Fusion: Does it Have a Future?" Journal "Cold Fusion", vol.1, #1, page 14-17,1994.

KOZYREV-DIRAC EMANATION.

INTERACTION WITH MATTER and METHODS OF DETECTING

Dr. Ivan M. Shakhparonov

125252, Russia, Moscow,Pestchanny Pas. 20-1-33
phone/fax 8·095-198-2012

In this paper the authors show the possibility of creation of a new kind of emanation. The magnetic monopole beam can be made in space as a result of focusing of some natural substance. Special devices based on the Moebius band elements make the given focusing. This emanation is able to magnetize graphite and organics, decrease the radioactivity, and influence the oncology diseases .The time reverse technology is realized in such devices.

Experimental data, which allow making a conclusion about existence of previously unknown emanation, are presented in this report. Here are descriptions of experiments and methods of measurement. The effects of interaction between new type of emanation and matter have been obtained.

Till the present moment theoretical physics didn't pay attention to the nonoriented configurations and spaces. The reason of this situation is the fact, that from the philosophic point of view it is not possible to determine and locate the area of the nonoriented topological structures in our world. We (eight scientific teams) joined our forces and we needed more than 30 years to solve this problem by an experimental approach.

The fundamental tenet of the casual mechanics developed by Kozyrev can be formulated as follows. There are two types of energy in the Universe. The positive or «right» energy acts as a factor of the entropy increase. The negative, or «left» energy tends to decrease the entropy, i.e. it acts as a factor, which regulates the entropy increase. The «right» energy is transformed to the «left» one and this fact may be interpreted as a course of time from the past to the future. When the energy is transformed from the «left» to the «right» form, time is reversed. Kozyrev supposed [1] that through revolving of a body together with a

6. Activation by nuclear magnetic resonance;

7. Activation by electronic paramagnetic resonance;

8. Activation by electrochemical force.

All these methods can be used as possible way to high efficient energy systems. Gerlovin wrote: "Usually 1, 6 and 7-th methods of structural activation are realized in catalysis simultaneously. Besides, catalysis differs from macroscopic methods because it has the most minimal distances from the sources of activator fields to the activated molecules. And finally, an active participation of force fields created by nuclei of atoms and significantly more active participation of disturbed EPV is possible in catalysis. That's why catalysis is the most effective method of structural activation. The detailed account of this method exceeds the limits of this article and we can only annotate it." [1, p.333]

Information stated above is only a small part of the questions appeared under consideration in Gerlovin's theory of fundamental field (TFF). Other important questions should be considered with a new experimental data.

References

1. Ilia L. Gerlovin, "Foundations of unified theory of all interactions in matter", published in 1990, St.Petersburg, Russia.

2. To the question of multipolarity, Alexander V. Frolov, New Energy Technologies, #1 (4) 2002, St.Petersburg, Russia.

3. N. A. Kozyrev, Selected works, St.Petersburg, LGU, 1991.

4. Practical application of time rate control (TRC) theory, Frolov A.V., New Energy Technologies, #3, 2001, p.15, St.Petersburg, Russia.

Antigravitation Force and Antigravitation of Matter. Methods of its Creation

Anatoly K. Gaponov

Sadovaya Str. 195, Novosibirsk, 630009, Russia

Part I

For a long time there is an opinion in physics about antimatter as a possible source of antigravitation, but the researches on this subject came into a dead end. The existent presentations and formulas forbade the conclusion about antigravitation, but our conducted investigations brought us to the possibility to get antigravitation of substance and to the paradoxical conclusions concerning the next:

1. Two types of space exist:
      a) The Absolute space
      b) The Relative space

2.a The Gravitation Field is the relative space, which has accelerated motion, directed to the center of a planet.

2.b The Antigravitation Field is the relative space, which has accelerated motion, directed from the center of a planet.

3. Gravity force does not depend on mass of a body! The mass can be presented in three versions:

a) m_k –mass as amount of atoms.

b) $W_{m_A^e}$ - electronic-atomic energy in mass.

c) $W_{m_G^m}$ – mechano-gravitational energy in mass.

On the basis of the stated notions we offer to revise the essence of force not only in Coulomb's formula, but in Newton's formula too.

$$F = K \frac{q_1 \cdot q_2}{R^2} \qquad F = P \frac{m_1 \cdot m_2}{R^2}$$

It is well known, that mechanical energy can be bringing in electrostatic charge, where mechanical energy runs (turns) into energy of electric field, where

(mechanical energy) $F \cdot R \to \dfrac{E_2 \cdot V_{m^3}}{2}$ (electrical energy)

Similarly it is also possible to insert mechanical energy into mass of a body. As the result, the mechanical energy will turn into energy of gravitational field, where

(mechanical energy) $V \cdot F \cdot t \to \dfrac{g^2 \cdot V_{m^3}}{2}$ (gravitational energy)

Since the volume of the Earth is constant, the acceleration of gravitational field will be increased.

It should be logical to expect, that when removing the mechanical energy from mass the inverse process will occur, that is to say acceleration reduction of gravitation field will occur.

In his works I. Newton affirmed about existence of two spaces:

The Absolute space - is an immovable non-rotatable space, which represents a limited cube, with our planet in the center.

The Relative space – is a movable space. It can move with acceleration in the absolute space.

Editor's note: In aether conception this means two parts of aether: some part is involved into the motion with the mass, but another part of aether is immovable.

The main mistake in search of aether consisted in the following: Maikelson's experiments were aimed on

search of relative velocity between bodies and space. However, it was the **relative acceleration** between bodies and space that was necessary to search for.

To quote the conclusions of I. Newton: "Body can keep the quiescent mode or mode of rectilinear uniform motion …" By this, he postulates, that the relative linear velocity between solids and space does not exist. But we know that for rotation it exists (the famous experiments with revolving pail of water).

The gravitational field is the accelerated "falling" relative space, which represents a spherical form. If relative space moves, thus the question appears: where does it move? There is only answer: it moves in the absolute cubic space.

In Einstein's theory there is notion of unified and curved space in gravitational field, but the contradictions appear here, and on concerning that N. Tesla writes: "Only by presence of force field it is possible to explain the observed motion of celestial bodies, but thus the hypothesis of curvature of space is not necessary. The whole scientific literature on this subject is futile and doomed on oblivion". [1]

The fact that gravitation is the accelerated moving relative space can be proved by observation of accelerated moving rocket, where the acceleration in rocket is equivalent to the acceleration in gravitational field. Accelerated movement of rocket is relatively, that allows speaking about either acceleration of rocket motion in immovable space, or accelerated motion of space in immovable rocket!

The anti-gravitational field is the relative space, which has accelerated motion from the center of a body (for example: rotating cylinder, Earth satellite and etc.) But it is possible to create the model of anti-gravitation without rotations. On the basis of analogy between mechanical and electric energy comes to conclusion that gravity between bodies does not depend on mass of the body, but on mechanical-gravitation energy, contained in this mass, which is possible to contribute or to extract from. **Therefore, this is the internal gravitation energy.**

Part II

The "Mass" can be considered as a measure of three different conditions of matter:

m_k - as a measure of amount of atoms, representing a "framework" or "container", in which two types of independent energies are concentrated.

$W_{m_A^e}$ - as a measure of electric energy, which can be either accumulated or extracted, and it have a "compressed" form.

An example of accumulation of electric energy in mass is a big cylinder, rotating with linear velocity, close to velocity of light, in this cylinder the mass of electric and magnetic fields of atoms increases. There are another

possible ways to contribute and to extract the said energy from mass.

And finally $W_m M_G$ is the mass, which can be a measure of mechanical energy, or it can be either inserted or extracted from the matter (it can be identified as the gravitational mass). This gravitational mass is what we put our attention on, because it affects upon gravitation and it is able to create antigravitation.

"In his time N. Tesla worked on more general problem, which is the problem of matter and energy. And he has found, as he believed, the new physical principle, on the ground of which he brought forth his gravitational theory that was named dynamic gravitation. But he did not tell about it until almost the end of his life". [2] **Really, dynamic gravitation is the energy of motion.**

Let's take the following indications:

V – mechanical velocity
F – force
t – time.
In this case the product $W = V \cdot F \cdot t$ has the dimension of energy. Hereinafter, let's take

I – strength of electric current
U – difference of potentials
t – time.

Then $W^{'} = I \cdot U \cdot T$ has the dimensional of energy. Thereby, $W \sim W'$ that is to say, the following products are accepted as equivalent:

1. $V \cdot F \cdot t \sim I \cdot U \cdot T$

2. In previous materials it was reported about untraditional way for accumulation of energy, under the condition, in which at constant current I the product $q = U \cdot t$ will depend on amount of inserted energy in unchangeable circuit L = const, in which the energy can be accumulated by untraditional way not only in electric capacity, but also in inductance.

Similarly the energy can be accumulated by untraditional way in a moving body, under the condition V = const and m_k = const (the product $qr = F \cdot t$ will depend on inserted energy and have unlimited value). **Exactly this charge will create the powerful gravitational fields.**

3. Let's take: F is mechanical force, R is distance. Then the product $F \cdot R$ has the dimensionality of energy. For the uniform electric field the product $E_a \cdot \dfrac{E^2 \cdot V}{2}$ also has the dimensionality of energy. In this case E_a is constant, E is intensity of electric field, V is volume. Thereby, $F \cdot R \sim E^2 \cdot V$. Similarly, $V \cdot R \cdot t \sim g^2 \cdot V$

We have received the correlations of resemblance for heterogeneous physical values, on the ground of which the following physical experiments can be offered:

On the grounds of the above-mentioned analogies it can be assumed that the accumulation of "compressed" energy is possible in mechanics, as well as in electricity. Since the velocity is relative, that the mass can have zero velocity relatively a observer, who moves with this mass, but the force field will remain unchangeable, since it depends on already invected mechanical energy.

Let's note that:
When the "compressed" electric energy is accumulated, the power field does not change.

When the "compressed" mechanic energy is accumulated, the power field increases.

Now we have come to the amazing conclusion that the gravitational force does not depend on mass of matter, but it depends on mechanic energy, which is included in this mass. This energy is unstable and at contact with land it is disappearing, and at zero gravity it can be saved for a long time.

Fig. 1 The first way to obtain the antigravitational force.

1. The magnets are not revolved.
2. The cylinders of charged capacitor are revolving in different directions.

Fig. 2 The second way to obtain the antigravitational force.

1. The capacitor plates are charged and not revolving.
2. The current circuits are revolving in different directions.

Fig. 3. The third way to obtain the antigravitational force

 a) electric
 b) magnetic

1. The disk and the ring are made from electrical current conductive material.

2. When these disks rotate, the currents, which emit the mechanic-antigravitational energy in the manner of heat, are formed there.

Fig. 4. The fourth way to obtain the antigravitational force. Mechanical method.

1. This is an extraction of energy from matter. It was reported in details on the 10 international symposium in Volgo-Donsk, Russia.

2. The difference with electric circuits is that it is possible not only to extract the mechanical energy, but also to insert additional energy in the system.

References

1. Magazine Inventor and Rationalizator, Russia, #9, 1979.

2. Magazine Inventor and Rationalizator, Russia, #9, 1979, p.28

The Capacitor, which has the Energy of an Atomic Bomb

(Review of Anatoly K. Gaponov's research by Eugenie and Marina Golomolzins)

Is it possible to place a pail of water into a one-liter jar? At the first look the answer is obvious: certainly not! However, the inventor from Novosibirsk, Anatoly Gaponov thinks differently. He does not "press" water, but electrical energy, placing an energy equivalent of atomic bomb into ordinary electrical capacitor.

Everybody using ordinary batteries knows its defect: they need frequent recharging. Gaponov's capacitor is slightly smaller than a matchbox. Just come home by electrical automobile, take out the capacitor from engine, and then put it into the pocket. For home needs you can just insert the capacitor into plughole to power the light, boiler, and TV system. In general, each electronic device can have its own capacitor, then an electrical wiring is not necessary. After one

On the grounds of the above-mentioned analogies it can be assumed that the accumulation of "compressed" energy is possible in mechanics, as well as in electricity. Since the velocity is relative, that the mass can have zero velocity relatively a observer, who moves with this mass, but the force field will remain unchangeable, since it depends on already invected mechanical energy.

Let's note that:
When the "compressed" electric energy is accumulated, the power field does not change.

When the "compressed" mechanic energy is accumulated, the power field increases.

Now we have come to the amazing conclusion that the gravitational force does not depend on mass of matter, but it depends on mechanic energy, which is included in this mass. This energy is unstable and at contact with land it is disappearing, and at zero gravity it can be saved for a long time.

Fig. 1 The first way to obtain the antigravitational force.

1. The magnets are not revolved.
2. The cylinders of charged capacitor are revolving in different directions.

Fig. 2 The second way to obtain the antigravitational force.

1. The capacitor plates are charged and not revolving.
2. The current circuits are revolving in different directions.

Fig. 3. The third way to obtain the antigravitational force

    a)   electric
    b)   magnetic

1.   The disk and the ring are made from electrical current conductive material.

2.   When these disks rotate, the currents, which emit the mechanic-antigravitational energy in the manner of heat, are formed there.

Fig. 4. The fourth way to obtain the antigravitational force. Mechanical method.

1.   This is an extraction of energy from matter. It was reported in details on the 10 international symposium in Volgo-Donsk, Russia.

2.   The difference with electric circuits is that it is possible not only to extract the mechanical energy, but also to insert additional energy in the system.

References

1.   Magazine Inventor and Rationalizator, Russia, #9, 1979.

2.   Magazine Inventor and Rationalizator, Russia, #9, 1979, p.28

The Capacitor, which has the Energy of an Atomic Bomb

(Review of Anatoly K. Gaponov's research by Eugenie and Marina Golomolzins)

Is it possible to place a pail of water into a one-liter jar? At the first look the answer is obvious: certainly not! However, the inventor from Novosibirsk, Anatoly Gaponov thinks differently. He does not "press" water, but electrical energy, placing an energy equivalent of atomic bomb into ordinary electrical capacitor.

Everybody using ordinary batteries knows its defect: they need frequent recharging. Gaponov's capacitor is slightly smaller than a matchbox. Just come home by electrical automobile, take out the capacitor from engine, and then put it into the pocket. For home needs you can just insert the capacitor into plughole to power the light, boiler, and TV system. In general, each electronic device can have its own capacitor, then an electrical wiring is not necessary. After one

or two years you will just have to come into electric service station and charge your magic capacitor like a gas balloon. Meantime, this research work began from hypnosis.

Anatoly Konstantinovich Gaponov (by birth from Kaluzhskaya region) is Ziolkovsky' countryman. In his youth Gaponov was brought by fate into Sakhalin, where he showed hypnotic abilities. As an inquisitive person Gaponov had organized a research group, started experiments and soon he understood that human brain had incredible possibilities.

A mental prick was made distantly to the hypnotized man, and he uttered a cry of pain. The ability to see people through, to define and to avoid organism's faults, was revealed in a hypnotic trance. It was possible to inspire pleasant emotions, to force "watching" a film on the given subject, as if on the screen. An uneducated person became an erudite, as if being connected to a certain global information database. Thus an idea to make an amazing experiment was appeared.

In one of the experiments Gaponov hypnotized the person with four classes education, and asked, if it was possible to transmit the electric current without wires? The hypnotized person gave the answer, that it was possible. For that it is required to convert the electric energy in x-ray radiation. And what afterwards? Afterwards it is required to focus that rays. By what? By the lens made from quartz glass, gold coated. It was a miracle! The person told about things that in usual condition he had no idea of! The information was received from somewhere outside.

Further quite an amazing thing has occurred. Gaponov asked the hypnotized person, if it was possible to intensify the abilities of hypnotist's brain?

He answered, that he could. "He turned me round and stared at the back of my head, - recalls Anatoly. - And suddenly the smile began to tear my mouth. I could not do anything with myself. When my mouth was sprawled literally from ear to ear, the hypnotized person in some inhuman voice declared that experience could not be continue since the cerebral hemorrhage would occur. I was hardly able to give the order to stop the experiment".

Thereby, the experiments with hypnosis gave the beginning to the thirty-years period of inventions in the field of accumulation and transmission of energy. After the return to native Kaluzhskaya region, Gaponov was occupied with physics, development of logical thinking and became the town champion in chess.

The necessary books fell into his hands by themselves: some time a certain acquaintance gave it to read; another time he found the last copy in a bookstore. As a majority of self-taught inventors, Anatoly preferred practical experimentation. In quest of laboratory for realization of his own ideas, he moved to Novosibirsk. **As a result, in 1980 Gaponov has made experimental system for compression of energy.**

From the school Physics we have known the notion of "electric arc" – it is a small blue lightning between two electrodes. Gaponov has tamed this lightning in such a way, that having drawn apart two wires, which executed the role of electrodes, by hands and got the arc by length up to half meter. Anatoly confirms that in principle, it is possible to create an arc of any desired length under any amperage.

One of the experiments found out one more enigmatic characteristic of electric discharge. During electric photography of arc a person happened to be between the camera and the system. On typing pictures, the researchers have found with surprise, that the electric arc was perfectly seen through the person. That is to say, it created the invisible field, for which material object was not an screening obstacle, and which was fixed on the film.

The further experiments with electric arc have allowed to get a new source of energy, as well as to open the possibility of setting light and sound on fire! Just imagine, you ring up a bell, it's sound waves spread at once in all directions, and then flash up with bright blaze.

(Editor's note: this experimental facts are rare modern evidences of possibility to create longitudinal electric waves. It is clear analogy here with sound waves in air since they are longitudinal waves also. Alexander V. Frolov)

When the problem of energy source was solved, Gaponov turned to the problem of energy accumulation. According to Gaponov, he has provedexperimentally the possibility of charging of an ordinary capacitor with any amount of energy. This statement sounds paradoxically: how it is possible to place the unlimited amount of contents in limited volume? However, this is not a simple way.

Gaponov believes that energy "placing" occurs not in space, but in time by means of his system! In what way? Imagine, that you fill one-liter jar with water. But already after an instant the water-filled jar is in past, and that present one is once again ready to be filled. And so ad infinitum. Water as if it fills a certain "time reservoir", and a jar is just a neck of this "time reservoir".

(Editor's note: This method is described in other articles also but usually it is pure mathematical discussion about Minkovsky space-time and theoretical proposals. Gaponov's experiments are realization of fantastical idea to take power from the time flow, i.e. from Past or from Future to get over-unity in Present space. Alexander V. Frolov)

"It is possible to demonstrate one more example, - Anatoly Gaponov adds. – Let's charge the capacitor with the expectation, that it will supply the light bulb

for one second. Thereby, on the Earth this light bulb will be on only for an instant. But if the same capacitor with light bulb is placed in rocket and dispersed around the Earth at the velocity, closed to velocity of light, time on the board of rocket will be so slowed that the light bulb on rocket will be glowing infinitely long for an observer from the Earth. It means, that in any case it is the same energy quantity, but in one case it's action is sprawling for a second, and in another one it is sprawling for eternity! It is possible to say, that in my system I have created the condition corresponding to this hypothetic rocket".

The system for accumulation of electric energy could be charged by ordinary wall plug 220 VAC. Time period of charging is different and depends on the certain scheme of the system. By the way, sea electric slopes are the certain natural analogues of such capacitor. Some elements of internal device of these sea creations reminds the "pump" elements for placing of electric energy into "temporal jar".

Finally, the third Gaponov's invention is the system for transmitting of energy without wires. As well as in two previous cases, there is an experimental device. Anatoly Gaponov speaks that he has succeeded in getting the essence of experiments for transmitting of energy, which were conducted by Tesla.

It is clear, that the main advantage of this method is an absence of wires and losses of electric energy. The electricity could be transmitted directly into any point, where receiving equipment placed, let say from Kaluga to Sahara. However, this is not so interesting for anybody, since for the present day Anatoly Gaponov's inventions don't have demand.

" The first system was created twenty years ago", - says Mr. Gaponov. – "Now I am fifty five, but things have not budged an inch". He adds dreamily: "Eh, if only I had a laboratory and some money...".

Gritskevitch's Hydro-Magnetic Dynamo

Oleg V. Gritskevitch

RUSSIA, 690002, VLADIVOSTOK,
Okeansky prospect, 99 - ap.112
phone/fax: (7-4232) 424-674 Email: ogri@mail.primorye.ru
Russian Academy of Energy and Information,
Russian Academy of Natural Sciences

Editorial: The article presents construction and operation of Oleg V. Gritskevitch's hydro-magnetic dynamo, which is an example of very powerful new energy system. The prototype in Armenia has been produced over 1500 KWtts power during several years.

The author was born on 14 August 1936 and grew up in Vladivostok, Russia. He is married and has a son Boris. Gritskevitch is a physicist by education. He worked in the Far - East branch of the USSR Academy of Sciences. Since 1985 he has been working independently as an inventor. He has more than 70 patents on inventions ranging from household engineering up to high technologies, which he has been trying to apply in our country and met big difficulties. After numerous attempts to receive the patents the author was convinced that outflow of the information occurred. Therefore he has received the state certificates as on know-how (on a French way of patenting), for all his inventions.

Introduction

During the Institute for New Energy 1999 Symposium, I lectured on my hydro-magnetic dynamo. This paper is my attempt to explain the construction and operation of my dynamo.

To fool investigators of my secrets, I have an occasion provided misleading information. For example, the drawing accompanying the Russian patent referenced below shows a cylinder across the toroid to fool readers. The real dynamo only has the toroid without the cylinder. Even its name "hydro-magnetic dynamo" is somewhat deliberately misleading.

I have some familiarity with the new energy field. Nearly all purported new energy devices are fairly small electrical generators. The dynamo may be the only new electrical generator which most nearly meets all the requirements of an ideal large-scaled electrical generator. My dynamo really is the single most valuable invention the world has ever known.

Alexander V. Frolov of St. Petersburg recommended me to contact with Dr. Patrick Bailey, Institute for New Energy since Pat has lots of contacts who could possibly help me with patenting my invention of a new source of energy in USA.

I conducted the work on the theory and creation of the electrostatic generator-converter «Hydro-magnetic dynamo» about 20 years. (See dynamo history below.) The first primitive equipment was created when I worked in Academy of Sciences. During that time various changes were introduced in the generator and in the theory of its work. It is now possible to manufacture, install, and apply it in industry.

For the first time I made the public report on this work in 1991 on a symposium in Volgodonsk city. The report received the positive replies and reviews of the experts of a nuclear industry in USSR. The same year I was accepted in International Nuclear Society. In these years I offered development of this technology to different state bodies and private enterprises. But there was the only answer: "It is very interesting and perspective project, but there is no money for it".

NEW ENERGY TECHNOLOGIES #7

New Energy Technologies

History of invention: Poliakov's vortex drive

Patented by Research
Institute of Space Systems
named by Krunichev, Russia

Also in this issue:

* New gravidynamic paradox
* Experiments on weight reduction
* New possibilities of vortex energetics
* Experiments on homopolar motor
* Physical relationships of time

Gravitonics is Electronics of the XXI Century

Hypothesizes, Conclusions, Speculations

Spartak M. Poliakov,
Oleg S. Poliakov

60-let SSSR str., 1-167, Friazino,
Moscow area, 141120, Russia
Tel: (096) 564-65-67

Today we can easily insist that ways to solve main gravitonics problems are already defined, at that the practical realization of any of them will mean the break through in engineering. So, what successes has the Russian science already achieved in the area of gravitonics, and what priorities can we lose here in the nearest future?

Introduction to Gravitonics

The electronics of the "past century" uses electron as a ball, which has weight, radius, electric charge and magnetic moment. These very parameters define electron behavior in the electrostatic, magnetostatic and electromagnetic fields. But electron abilities are not limited by it; electron spin and internal microstructure features remain unaccounted and unclaimed. Evenly speaking, General Theory of Relativity (GTR) of Einstein was a power impulse for mathematical physics development and gave birth to many productive ideas. But the main problem, that is the secret of gravitation, remains undisclosed… In works of K.P. Stanjukovich [1] and A.Z. Petrov [2], who carefully followed GTR, it was shown that this theory described neither energy, nor impulse of gravitational radiation, i.e. it can not explain gravitation. About 20 years ago V.B. Braginsky, today's RAS Corresponding Member, came up with an idea: "if the propagation speed of gravitational signal is higher than the velocity of light, there will be already another theory, not GTR!" Maybe, the reason is the postulation of equality of gravitational and electromagnetic radiation velocities?…

Today the approximate theory of gravitational radiation sources can be built on the basis of the following simple considerations: if during annihilation of "electron-positron" pair there creates the pair of gamma-quantums with energy about 0.511 MeV, then the pair of back gamma-quantums with the energy about 0.511 MeV, could create "electron-positron" pair. Is it possible to assume, that electron, positron and gamma-quantum with the energy about 0.511 MeV are just three stages of one and the same object?! If it is possible, then for the rational description of the given object we will have to suppose the existence of subparticles, named by us uniquantums [3], or named by other authors microleptons [4].

On the basis of Heisenberg uncertainty relation conformably to the energy and duration of quantum of electromagnetic radiation, measured by laboratory means, it is possible to calculate the minimal "electrical length" of photon (i.e. quantum geometrical extension in free space in wave-length units), which is equal to 137λ, and in the uniquantum theory it is equal to 137 uniquantum-antiuniquantum pairs. On the basis of these conceptions it is possible to construct the spatial microstructure model of electron. So, what kind is it?

We think, that electron can be represented as thin-walled spheroid, walls of which are two light (C) barriers, separating the "internal" part of electron from the "external" one. From the traditional physics point of view "over-barrier" space is an "imaginary" one. This very space can contain the gravitational mass of electron. The radius of the gravitational spheroid is equal to the half of the classic electron radius, and its imaginary weight is 137 times more than the rest mass of electron. Being "cut" off by the double light C-barrier, uniquantums of the spheroid internal part are as if non-existent for the outer world, and the rest mass of electron is formed by magnetic energy of three uniquantums on the external orbit with the classic electron radius. This very spheroid, rotating with the tangential velocity C, let us get the precise value of the electron spin.

The study of presented model shows, that:

- The "electromagnetic" rest mass of electron is "magnetostatic";

- The gravitational mass of electron is an imaginary value and it is 137 times more than the rest mass of electron;

- The gravitational radius of electron is two times less than the "classical" one;

- The "internal" gravitational radius of electron is 45.7 times more than the external one, i.e. the internal space is compressed per 45.7 times (!);

- The spin is equal to the classical one, but this value is imaginary one (!);

- The value of the "effective" electron charge is three times more than the classical tabulated value;

- The native magnetic field of electron is equal to $8{,}9 \cdot 10^{13}$ Oersted;

- The gravitational constant is equal to 10^{33} cm^3/g.s^2, i.e. it is about 10^{40} more than the "world" gravitational constant of the Earth;

- The gravitational energy of electron is equal to $137 \cdot 0.511$ MeV, i.e. 137 times more than the equivalent energy of the rest mass of electron.

The model is paradoxical. But it can be tested experimentally! Comparing "electromagnetic" rest mass of electron with the relation of electromagnetic energy to gravitational one, it is possible to determine the connection between magnetostatic and gravitational energy of electron, and, therefore, with energy of the magnetized ferromagnetic.

Gravitational constants of the Earth and of the electron differ in about 10^{40} and can be described by the same simple equation:

$$\gamma_{loc} = 2k\gamma_0 \cdot \omega^{3/2},$$

where k - is a parameter of the gyroscope shape, γ_0 - is absolute universal constant, equal to 1/137 and ω - is native rotation frequency of the gyroscope.

Let us assume, that gravitational constants of all objects should be described by this equation. By substitution of the new gravitational constant into the known equation of the gravitational energy $W = \gamma m^2 / r$ we will get the equation of the gravitational energy of rotating gyroscope with any size (from electron up to the Galaxy!). Thus, the main point of the "non-Einsteinian" theory of gravitational energy sources comes to the thing that any rotating object and any magnetized ferromagnetic have their own gravitational energy, and the sources of gravitational radiation can be only nonlinearly moved objects, or objects which are in the state of change of phase (for example, permanent magnet during its demagnetization). It is the gravitational theory and explanation of "strong" and "weak" interactions!

Laboratory test of the equations

Magnetostriction

J.P. Joule found the effect of change of ferromagnetic linear sizes and volume during magnetization as early as 1842. Magnetostriction is widely used in modern technique, but in the physical encyclopedia of 1963 there is the following honest acknowledgement: "For the most ferrites both longitudinal and transverse magnetostriction is negative; the reason of it is still unclear."

In the scientific literature magnetostriction is usually defined as $\lambda = \Delta L/L$. However, during the change of external field to some arbitrary and enough small value ΔH, it is advisable to define magnetostriction as $\lambda = 1/L \cdot \Delta L/\Delta H$, since in magnetostriction experiments the value $\Delta L/\Delta H$ (or $\partial L/\partial H$) is changed. By means of the suggested equation $W = 137(BHV) = BHV/\alpha$, which connects magnetic energy with the gravitational one, it is possible to get enough simple equation for the magnetostriction:

$$\lambda = 1/L \cdot \partial L/\partial H = \alpha \cdot k /(B \cdot H)_s \cdot H^2 \cdot \partial \mu/\partial H$$

where $(B \cdot H)_s/\alpha$ - is the density of gravitational energy in the point of magnetic saturation, k – is the parameter of share of gravitational field in the magnetostriction effect, H - is magnetic bias, $\partial \mu/\partial H$ - is differential magnetic conductivity.

The new equation qualitatively corresponds to four known features of magnetostriction [5], namely:

• The magnetostriction sign is defined by the sign of $\partial \mu/\partial H$, i.e. by the course of the magnetization curve, measured in the direction of calculated component of the linear magnetostriction;

• Graphical sum of three linear components of magnetostriction, calculated by three main axes of the anisotropy form of the model, is always negative and numerically close to the value of the volume magnetostriction;

• Magnetostriction is an even effect, since the equation includes squared value of the external magnetic field;

• Dependence of magnetic conductivity μ from the filed H and hence dependence $\partial \mu/\partial H$ has a hysteresis nature. Therefore, the magnetostriction is a hysteresis phenomenon too.

So we have the right to "close" the question of physical encyclopedia on the cause of magnetostriction. **Magnetostriction is the secondary gravitational effect of ferromagnetic "self-constriction" in its own gravitational field.**

Gravitational-optic effects of GTR

Distortion of the light beam, passing near the Sun and the photon frequency bias in the field of terrestrial gravity (the Nobel experiment of Paunda and Rebki) are the main arguments in favor of GTR canonization. It is very attractive to repeat these experiments in laboratory conditions, basing on our conception of the origin of gravitational field.

The acceleration of gravity, used in experiments with ferromagnetic, reached the value $4.72 \cdot 10^{15}$ cm/s^2, i.e. about $4.8 \cdot 10^{12}$g. At such values of acceleration there is no necessity to introduce a definition "space masses". In these experiments there was used the optically transparent ferromagnetic, which was the saturated solution of manganese chloride in water at room temperature. The experiment on the beam distortion was made in 1975 [7]. It was shown, that this effect is the result of two simultaneous processes. The first is an intense drift of magnetic ions, which forms the gradient of index coefficient that causes the light beam distortion. Another process is a relatively weak gravitational beam distortion, for which, nevertheless, the relation of deviation angle to the track length (the length of the dish is about 100 mm) is turned out to be about 10^{10} more than in "Einsteinian" gravitational-optic experiments.

The experiment on bias of the optic radiation frequency [8] was made in 1978-1980 and was repeated in 1983. With use of heterodyne and interferometrical methods of measurement we were succeeded to observe effects of "red" and "blue" frequency biases in the non-uniformly magnetized ferromagnetic by means of simple displacement of the working dish (with the length about 40 mm) from one side of the magnet gap to another. The maximum displacement is about 10^{-5}, that is about 10^{10} more than in the experiment of Paunda and Rebki.

Problem of the propagation speed of gravitational radiation

There are still only few publications about such fundamental parameter as the propagation speed of

gravitational radiation; it is able to speak only about pages, or even lines! Let us refer to major sources:

I. Newton: *"The propagation speed of gravitational interaction is equal to infinity."* It is an argument, because otherwise we would have to bring the "delay" parameter Δt into the Law of Gravity, what is not noticed in real conditions of star observations [9].

P.S. Laplace in 1787, taking into account observation errors of that time, showed, that gravitational interaction speed was about $50 \cdot 10^6$ times more than the light propagation speed, i.e. it was about $1{,}5 \cdot 10^{18}$ cm/s [10].

A. Einstein: *"The propagation speed (of gravitational interaction) is equal to the light velocity"*. This statement is postulated.

Even during the change of propagation speed of gravitational radiation between the Earth and the Moon it is impossible to define the signal delay about 10^{-11} s, i.e. we cannot measure directly the propagation speed of gravitational radiation (supposing that we have both generators of the gravitational radiation and receivers of it). But this speed can be estimated by the reflection impulse, what exactly was made in 1987 [3]. And its value is about $9 \cdot 10^{20}$ cm/s!

On the basis of conservation law of impulse of unidirectional radiator with arbitrary energy type we can get a simple equation:

$$ F / (dW / dt) \cong 10^4 \cdot V / C^2 \qquad \text{[g/Wt]} $$

where V – is the speed of radiation propagation, F – is tractive force in grams, dW/dt – is power of radiation in Watts and C – is velocity of light.

For making the experiment there were constructed, produced and adjusted: sensible scales with one degree of freedom (sensitivity of balance is about 1g at the oscillator mass together with the moving element of scales which is about 50kg); the indication system of small mass changes (phase-meter receiver); gyroscopic system, changing the mass in the dynamic mode (there are 16 possible operating modes – from the rotation with steady and variable angular speed up to the forced precession with the variable angle of precession, with the "right" and "left" rotation of all load-bearings elements at option); power sources and commutation automated system. The period from idea up to its realization took about two years (1985-1987) [3]. Taking into account the real parameters of the system, the program of calculation was drawn and propulsive burns were calculated. The results of machine computation can be compared with real impulses, demonstrated on the screen of the oscilloscope.

If strange speed value 177 C^2 is discarded, then the middle speed value is close to C^2, i.e. to $9 \cdot 10^{20}$ cm/s! Of course, we would like to think that this is the second fundamental matter speed of our world, which we has approached experimentally …

Gravitational receiver

During the creation of gravitational antennas and receivers there appear almost insuperable difficulties from the modern fundamental science point of view. That is why it is advisable to look at this problem from another side. At first, it is necessary to consider gravitational radiation interaction not with the mass, which it goes through without losses, but with the gravitational field of independently gravitating mass, when the interaction must be the most effective because of the principle of physical processes reversibility. At second, it is necessary to choose some critical parameter of auto-gravitating receiver as a value, which is directly measurable by gravitational detector. For example, angular velocity of free rotation of thin disk with big diameter, the frequency of magnetization precession during NMR (nuclear-magnetic resonance) or NFMR (non-linear ferromagnetic resonance) etc. can be chosen as such a value.

In 1987 there was the first successful attempt to receive the gravitational impulse. The source of external signal was gyroscopic precessing system with the variable angle of precession (the propagation speed of gravitational radiation was measured by it). Double gyroscope, setting in motion by one electric motor, but with the opposite directions of rotation, was used as a detector. Between disks there was placed the source of light, impulses of which, passing through disks openings, were registered by photodiodes. Their signal came into differential circuit of data processing. The memory oscilloscope reproduced impulses of gravitational radiation. At that radiating system and memory oscilloscope was started up simultaneously. During the work process there appeared a problem of exciting of slow auto-oscillations of gyroscope-detector. This problem together with the low frequency of auto-oscillations of mechanical system led to a conclusion that this research direction is not very promising. However, the fact of detection was proved!

Gravitational engine of continuous action

Only about nine years passed since the appearance of the idea about engine up to its realization! In 1997 the engine was produced and tested. The engine with weight about 28 kg was made "weightless" on the magnetic hanger, and longitudinal draft, appearing in accordance with the impulse conservation law, was measured by micrometer detector of longitudinal shifts (sensitivity is about 50g/point). Such engine could be built still in the beginning of the last century… However, it has a secret **that is a gyroscope with the variable radius, working in the continuous mode.**

The engine power is defined by the formula

$$ \frac{dW}{dt} = 5k\gamma_0 \omega^{3/2} \left(\frac{m^2}{r^2} \right) \cdot \frac{dr}{dt} $$

In June of 2000 there were made experiments with the model of gravitational engine, which represents a

gyroscope with the variable radius (see photo on the 1st cover page). The mercury was used as rotating fluid. Tests were made in the Research Institute of Space Systems named by Krunichev. In three experiments, at a certain speed of rotating fluid there was fixed a decreasing of the engine weight (38,5 kg) up to 1.0-1.5 kg (2-3%). The specific impulse of the engine was equal to 2.5-3.0 kg per kilowatt of electric power. Analysis shows, that the increasing of propulsion force is possible at optimization of design and operating modes.

Some preliminary resume

In the magazine "Foreign Literature" #1, 1967 the article "For hundred years forward…" by Jack Marabini was published. There were made some conclusions about prognostic work of firm Rand Corp., including the area of gravitational technique. Namely:

- Development of communication facilities on gravitational waves in 2000;
- Creation of spaceships with antigravity engines in 2050;
- Transformation of gravitational energy into electric one in 2100.

In the article it was noted, that the most "fantastic" predictions of this firm, as a rule, come true passing ahead.

According to our crude estimations, the propagation speed of gravitational radiation is "C" times as much than the velocity of light, but we know neither laws of attenuation and propagation of gravitational waves, nor laws of their reflection and refraction, nor laws of their interaction with the substance… The large routine work is expected: making of measurements and investigations, tabulating of obtained data, publishing and society familiarization of the results, their "popularization". It is necessary to learn to use gravitational radiation and to protect oneself from its accidental influences, to design standards and dosimeters, etc., i.e. to repeat the way of radio engineering and nuclear physics comprehension.

For that we need generators and receivers of gravitational radiation. It means that the financial support is necessary. And engineers are sure to be ready to pay the highest price for the chance to give to the Mankind spaceships, systems of instanteneous communication with them and real perspectives for the very long history.

Conclusion

We have already passed the long way, if not in space, then in time. We have made:

- Gravitational engines of continuous action with the specific impulse about 2.5 kg/kWt [11];
- Transformers of gravitational energy into thermal and electrical ones [12];
- Communication system based on gravitational waves [13];
- Receivers of gravitational (microlepton) radiation of biological and mineral objects [5];
- Devices for control of "laboratory time" flow (time machine) [14].

The main goals of the authors were to attract readers' attention to the problems, which demand an urgent solution. Some questions were decided, and even seemed to be clear. It also seems to be clear what to do further. And what do you think about it?

References

1. Stanjukovich K.P. Dr. Phys.-Math. Sc. CTR and gravitation // Seminar of the Moscow nature investigators society. // M. – 1966.
2. Petrov A.Z. Some peculiarities of CTR // Seminar of gravitational chair of Kazansky SU. (Preprint / Ukraine Academy of Science) // Kiev – 1971.
3. Poliakov S.M., Poliakov O.S. Introduction into experimental gravitonics. // M.: Prometey – 1991.
4. Patent #2113000 RF. Method to search minerals by their own radiation, device for its realization and microlepton detector / / Ohatrin A.F., Ohatrin A.A., Sizov V.S. Priority from 21.07.1997.
5. Kirensky L.V. Magnetism. // M. Nauka – 1967, p.141.
6. Vonsovsky S.V. Magnetism // M. Nauka – 1971, p.404.
7. Poliakov S.M., Martynov V.F. Method of deflection and focusing of optic radiation. A.n. #2187534, 10.11.1975.
8. Poliakov S. M., Olihov I. M. Dorofeev V. A. and others. Displacement of optic radiation frequency in non-uniformly magnetized ferromagnetic // Proceedings of the Moldova Academy of Science. Series of Physicotechnical and mathematical sciences. // Kishinev – 1983, #2, p. 57-59.
9. Isaac Newton. Mathematical beginning of Natural Philosophy // Transl. Moscow-Leningrad – 1936.
10. Laplace P. S. Statement of the world system. // Leningrad, Nauka, vol. 4, p. 197-198.
11. Poliakov S.M., Poliakov O.S. The beginnings of experimental gravitonics // In: Proc. of Int. Conference "New Ideas in Natural Science" // S.P. – 1996, p. 529-536.
12. Potapov Ju.S., Fominsky L.P. Eddy energy // Cherkassy, Kishinev OKO-Plus – 2000, p. 387.
13. Akimov A.E, Shipov G.I. Torsion fields and their experimental manifestations // Proc. of Int. Conference "New Ideas in Natural Science" // S.P. – 1996, p.22-225.
14. Chernobrov V.A. Secrets of time // M., AST – 1999.

● ●

About the authors:

Spartak M. Poliakov. Graduated from Kishinev State University. Profession is physicist-experimenter. He works in electronic industry for about 47 years. S. M. Poliakov is the author of more than 50 scientific works. One of his latest books is "Introduction into experimental gravitonics". Interests: microwave engineering, gravitational electronics, faster-than-light communication transformation of gravitational energy into electric one.

Oleg S. Poliakov. Graduated from Moscow Institute of Electronics. Profession is "Semi-conductor electronics". Interests: computer engineering, industrial gravitonics. He is a co-author of "Introduction into experimental gravitonics" and "Self-tutorial of computer work".

BEAMSHIP TECHNOLOGY

by Russell Anderson
russanderson3@hotmail.com

Read in this issue a report by Russell Anderson, USA, on beamship Model Flying Craft

www.americanantigravity.com

Experimental Research on Gravitational Propulsion System

*Editor's: It is a review of the article by **V. A. Menchikov**, the Director of Research Institute of Space Systems, named by Krunichev, Russia. The article was published in"Polyet" magazine #10,2001, p.38-39, Russia. It scrutinizes the matters on development of propulsion systems based on the unconventional approach to the problem of gravity, i.e. gravitational engines. It also cites the results of the gravitational engine model research made by means of the experimental facility, created in the Khrunichev Research Institute of Space Systems.*

The device, transforming rotary motion into unidirectional motion, looks like S.M. Poliakov's one. It also operates with rotation of liquid, which causes the propulsive force. Truly speaking, Poliakov had an agreement with Research Institute of Space Systems named by Khrunichev in 2001. Some funds were assigned to develop the device, however the project, into which Poliakov had put a lot of work, still remains unrealized. Besides, the scientist's name is not even mentioned in the patent.

* * *

Scientific and technological advance opens to mankind more and more wide abilities to use space for the solution of global problems. In many respects the complete realization of these abilities will be defined by the developement of means used for delivery of payloads into the space. In the XXI century the dominating use of reactive chemical and electrical propulsion systems in rocket-space technique as well as low application level of engines with other physical principles can be the factor of an "inhibitory" influence for the development of such techniques. It is caused by the fact that created rockets practically do not correspond to noticeably increased standards of safety, operating costs, costs for transport operations execution and ecological influence on the environment.

Thus, there becomes to be urgent the problem of development of alternative approaches towards the creation of propulsion systems, made for the rocket-space technique on the base of unconventional ideas and engineering solutions. A rather old-established idea of creation of gravitational engine should be concerned as one of such ideas. It is based on the unconventional approach to the problem of gravity. Nowadays many countries take part in solution of the gravitational problem, namely Russia, USA, Japan, etc., and if till recently only some scientists and inventors showed the interest to this problem, then now it arouses interest of research-and-production majors. Unfortunately, now it is not possible to speak about sufficient theoretical or practical development of this idea. However, the interest is so considerable, that practically separate experiments on this subject were made earlier and they are still made nowadays. After all, stakes are very high and are defined by applied nature of the problem (the ability to create qualitatively new engines for the rocket-space technique), as well as by its scientific significance.

One of the directions to solve the problem of the creation of gravitational propulsion systems is the realization of associated theoretical and experimental methods of the search of physical processes, leading to the antigravity effects appearance, which cannot be adequately described by existed theoretical conceptions. V. Shauberger's patent, based on the postulate of gravitational energy radiation by "disturbed rotating mass" can be considered as an example of such practical realization. Taking into account a number of known experimental results, a model of gravitational engine and experimental system for estimation of this model parameters were made in Research Institute of Space Systems named by Khrunichev to provide the practical realization of Shauberger idea (Fig.1). It is the metal construction, which provides the model displacement in upward direction with the ability of its rotation around vertical axis.
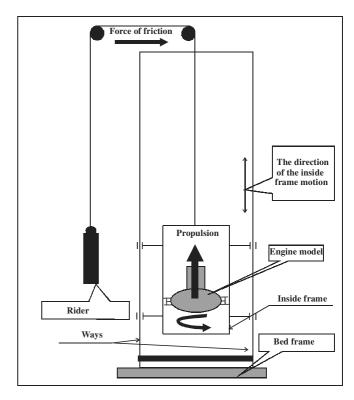
Fig.1
Schematic circuit of the experimental system

Later, to increase the system sensitivity it was improved and the block system of suspension was replaced by the lever frame.

Turning angle of the stand frame, where the model of gravitational engine is suspended, depends on the following: weight and geometry characteristics of the frame; weight characteristics of the engine (of counterweight); engine propulsion and frictional forces in bearings. Laser indicator of frame turning angle and vertical ruler let increase the gauge of lifting height of

the gravitational engine model proportionally to the arm of light beam.

On using this system there was made a wide cycle of tests, which qualitatively confirmed the presence of propulsion force. Tests were recorded by video. The analysis of experimental results shows, that acting time of propulsion was about 12 s at each switching. During repeated switching of the gravitational engine model in different conditions it is able to create the propulsion, the value of which at 40…50 s of operation can be about 3 standard units of propulsion force (1 standard unit of thrust is about 10gs), and while using the powerful electromotor it can be about 80 standard units of propulsion at the intervals up to 4 s.

Research Institute of Space Systems named by Khrunichev, works on automation of experimental researches and on development of laboratory resources for factor analysis of appearance of the propulsion vector with the usage of the described model of gravitational engine.

Patent

The patent was published in the Bulletin of Patent Information in 2001.
(11) 20946
(51) 7 F 16 H 27/00
(21) 2001121237/20
(24) 01.08.2001

Editorial: V.A. Menchikov together with A.F. Akimov, A.A. Kachegan and V.A. Svetlichnyi have got this patent. Dr. Spartak M. Poliakov, being the author of the principle, is not mentioned at all in the patent.

NEWS REVIEW

Boeing Tries to Defy Gravity

According to Jane's Defence Weekly (UK), http://www.janes.com, Boeing, the world's largest aircraft manufacturer, has admitted it is working on experimental antigravity projects. These projects are able to overturn a century of conventional aerospace propulsion technology and alter the entire aerospace business. Boeing uses researchers by Yevgeny Podkletnov, who claims to have developed a device, which can shield objects from the Earth's gravity. Many conventional scientists, who have not been able to reproduce Dr Podkletnov's results, view his project, named «GRASP» (Gravity Research for Advanced Space Propulsion) with suspicion.

Dr Podkletnov claims to have countered the effects of gravity in an experiment at the Tampere University of Technology in Finland in 1992. The scientist says he found that objects above a superconducting ceramic disc rotating over powerful electromagnets lost weight. The researches have shown that the reduction in gravity was small, about 2%, but the implications - for example, in terms of cutting the energy needed for a plane to fly - were immense.
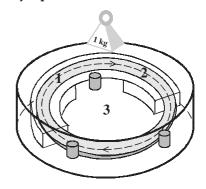
His devise, named "impulse gravity generator" is capable to produce a beam of "gravity-like" energy that can exert an instantaneous force of 1,000g on any object – enough, in principle, to vaporize it, especially if the object is moving at high speed. Laboratory installation has already demonstrated the 4in (10cm) wide beam's ability to repel objects a kilometer away and that it exhibits negligible power loss at distances of up to 200km.

Applications of the device can include space launch systems, artificial gravity on spacecraft, aircraft propulsion and "fuel-less" electricity generation ("free energy"). However, observers say that Podkletnov's device could be engineered into a radical new weapon, for example, adapted for use as an anti-satellite weapon or a ballistic missile shield.

Documents, obtained by reliable sources, show that Boeing is taking Dr Podkletnov's research seriously. It is also possible, Boeing admits, that "classified activities in gravity modification may exist". The paper points out that Podkletnov is strongly antimilitary and will only provide assistance if the research is carried out in the "white world" of open development.

Boeing is the latest in a series of high-profile institutions trying to replicate Dr Podkletnov's experiment. The military wing of the UK hi-tech group BAE Systems is working on an anti-gravity programme, dubbed Project Greenglow. The US space agency, Nasa, is also attempting to reproduce Dr Podkletnov's findings, but a preliminary report indicates the effect does not exist.

1. Solenoids create magnetic field
2. Spinning, super-conducting ceramic ring
3. Liquid Nitrogen acts as coolant

BEAMSHIP TECHNOLOGY

by Russell Anderson
russanderson3@hotmail.com

Read in this issue a report by Russell Anderson, USA, on beamship Model Flying Craft

www.americanantigravity.com

Beamship Technology:
a Re-working of Early 20th century Discoveries

Russell Anderson

Applied Electrogravitics 377 Avon Rd., Ste. D-119
Devon, PA 19333 russanderson3@hotmail.com
484-255-1072

Some Basic Background

The concept of an electric aero-spacecraft with no moving parts was initiated by the Yugoslavian electrical wizard **Nikola Tesla**, who lit the entire world 100 years ago, at the turn of another century, with his revolutionary AC electric current. In 1916-17, Dr. Francis Niepher performed meticulous mass-deflection experiments under rigorous scientific conditions with lead spheres suspended by wires with shielded and unshielded containers. An accounting of this important series of experiments is in TRANSACTIONS OF THE ACADEMY OF SCIENCE OF ST. LOUIS VOL.23, 1916 and 1917. Related article is in THE ELECTRICAL EXPERIMENTER, March 1918.

Before 1905, **George S. Piggot** was routinely suspending small silver balls to water globules, corks, wood, using the electrostatic field from a specially designed Wimshurst machine in a glass container under several atmospheres of pressure to raise the current level. Output voltage was typically 500KV. The field was propagated by a charged sphere. A small curved conducting plate on the floor acted as a ground. He observed unusual patterns of blue dots with filaments over the suspended objects, sometimes with an anomalous 1/2 cm "dark band" on the suspended objects. Piggot states, "It is my firm conviction that that somewhere on the outer confines of our planet there exists a similar contracting belt thru which naught but the gravitational vibrations of the sun penetrate, and these vibrations absolutely annihilate or absorb all other less powerful ones". If the force was Coulombic in nature, objects would be first attracted, and then strongly repelled by the charged metal sphere. After the objects were suspended, Piggot found he could remove the conducting ground plate, and the objects still floated, suspended. The phenomenon of levitation was accompanied by "luminous halos".

In 1925-27, **Albert Einstein** released his scientific "gem", his "zur Einheitlichten Feldtherie", or the Unified Field Theory for Gravitation and Electricity, to the press and the scientific community. It combines electricity, magnetism, and gravitation into a single mathematical expression, showing how High-Voltage/Low Current electricity (Electrogravity) -and conversely Low-Voltage/High-current (magnetogravity) "acceleration-fields" (G-field) could be produced using then-available relatively LOW-technology. Indeed, a very simple technology. The unifying field is the electrical field (because it can produce gravitation and repulsion fields, as well as magnetism). His Crowning work was released with much press write-ups and fanfare, then it was quickly forgotten as if the scientific community and the world had suffered some kind of collective amnesia!

All of the readers of this magazine need no introduction to the pioneering work of American Scientist **Thomas Townsend Brown**, who was playing around with an X-ray tube around the same year as Einstein's Unified Field Theory was released. He filed his first patent for this newly and accidentally discovered "electrogravitational-effect" which causes motion in a high-voltage condensor or capacitor configuration. He was only 17 at that time. The discovery that high-voltage/low amperage electrostatic potentials applied to an object causes motion in the direction of the positive pole, and electrical charges naturally move to the OUTER surface of an enclosed charge-conductor, held strong prospects for what Brown would later name the "space-car", and wrote an article "HOW I CONTROL GRAVITATION". His pioneering work, and demonstration of devices in Hawaii during World War II, drew attention from the department of Naval Intelligence. He was invited to work on "Project-Rainbow" (the Philadelphia Experiment for Electromagnetic Stealth) because of his pioneering work on what was starting to be understood very covertly as a true WARP DRIVE. Experiments with certain new and classified arc-welding apparatus at the Philadelphia Navy Yards to weld armor-plate for battleships was (by use of banks of primitive but powerful avalanche-discharge capacitors) producing anomalous and unexplained effects, such as disappearing tools and other apparatus in the heavily shielded welding chamber. These strange effects were accompanied by a strange "blackout -zone" which, like Piggot's early work, was not optical in nature. TT Brown's devices in his AH Bahnson Labs home movies lift more than their own weight and move inside vacuum chambers in these films. TT Brown later founded NICAP in 1956, which became the most respected UFO data gathering and hard scientific organization in the world, besides the US department of Naval Intelligence itself, and the Foreign Technology Division at Wright-Patterson Air Force base in Ohio.

My background and work

I primarily have a background and degree in computer programming, electronics, most fields of science, Flying Saucer Technology research (almost 30 years worth), Radio/Control fixed and rotary-wing aircraft since 1972. I have been experimenting and working with high-energy and electrogravitic devices and systems since 1987. I built my first small High-Voltage generators starting around this time. I built kits from Information unlimited and elsewhere.

In late January 1990 I built my first working 2-foot flying discs, which were a direct replication of Thomas Townsend Brown's most important representation of his electrogravity-propelled scale-model vehicular concept, from US Patent #2,949,550. In January 1992, I built a 120KV high-voltage/low-current electrostatic generator from an Information Unlimited kit, primarily for force-field propulsion research.

In June 1999, I built a tower and rotor apparatus to complete the experiment, and I powered it with the output from a 100KV generator I built from an Information Unlimited Kit. The results were spectacular, and taught me a great deal about what was involved in producing and maximizing the Biefeld-Brown Electro-gravitational effect. **I suspected from my research, and my experiments, that the basic effect was not due to current-flow and resulting ion-wind. When there was current-flow, the effect is attenuated, power consumption goes up, and thrust goes DOWN.** In late June of 2000, I presented this working TT Brown Electrokinetic Apparatus with larger 1-meter discs at the 2nd Antigravity Conference in Reno, NV, hosted by Jim Cox. A VHS videotape of this working and spectacular presentation at the first part of the conference is available from
 www.soundphotosynthesis.com

Now that I had mastered producing horizontal thrust, vertical thrust, or antigravity, was the next goal. About this same time, there was buzz all over the Internet about claims of two or three individuals who sounded credible at the time who had successfully replicated the many multi-layered "gravity-warp capacitor" or "electric rocket". Oddly, these claims could not be verified, and the individuals making the claims disappeared back into the woodwork. Such actions are bizarre and hinder the progress of true science, which is undergoing a shift in paradigms right now, if not a change in dogma.

I spent months die-cutting hundreds to thousands of tinfoil and aluminum-foil circular-notched conductor plates and wax paper and mylar rings. I did some initial testing with a Tin and wax-paper 400-layer gravity warp-capacitor heap, according to plans I had acquired from H & A Industries in 1992, and what was on Bill Beatty's amateur science site. No one else has come forward with positive results on this tedious and time-consuming device. So much work for so little effect! And,

if you short out the stack with too much power, you must tediously and laboriously search thru hundreds of layers to find the dielectric layers with the telltale carbonized holes. The Electric rocket has been recently successfully replicated and tested in hard vacuum and patented recently by Hector Serrano. The Serrano effect is identical to the so-called Biefeld-Brown Electrogravitational effect. They are one in the same thing. I may dust off my completed 400-layer grav-cap, but I hardly find it worth the time and effort, because of my recent work starting in early October 2001.

The Lifter and The Evolution to Beamship Model Flying Craft

Although I had attempted a few small "Hagen" patent-type antigravity (VTOL) models in the early 90s, I found their performance poor at best and their power consumption high. In late summer, 2001, someone, I forget who, on the JLN's lab list of researchers and anomalous science-experiment and technology enthusiasts ran across a website owned by Transdimensional Technologies, of Huntsville, Alabama (famous for NASA research facilities, the late Dr. Rolf Schaffranke, author of the important ETHER TECHNOLOGY, under the pseudonym "Rho Sigma", and Dr. Tom Bearden) had produced a hovering device. From my previous work, I recognized it immediately as TT Brown's Electrokinetic Apparatus that I had successfully replicated and demonstrated before a live audience years earlier. I noticed the capacitors were made from Aluminum FOIL, not the thin-but-heavy Aluminum sheet stock from Home Depot that I had been using for years, (I had assumed that to make my 3-foot discs hover and ascend vertically, I would have to use voltages in the hundreds of kilovolt range, and generate high x-ray, UV, and possibly gamma-ray emissions as a by-product, in other words, a typical flying saucer with all the associated radiological effects that have been documented for over half a century) so they could lift their own weight. The result matches almost exactly the simplest graphical representations of TT Brown's patent from 1960, and De Seversky's Ionocraft patent from 1964, which was a thin foil cathode plate with a thin anode wire separated from the cathode by stand-off insulator posts. I was eager to reproduce these devices (I don't know how I overlooked this simple solution, it was all sitting in those old 1960s Brown and De Seversky patents I have studied for 15 years previously) and many people around the world, especially the webmaster of the JLN Lab's site French researcher Jean-Louis Naudin, who began replicating many different types of larger and more sophisticated devices, some of which resembled model spacecraft, and began amassing tables of very useful data, that researchers could use as basic guidelines to follow. I replicated the first hovering device, the "Lifter" (so-called by Transdimensional Technologies) as a 1-foot triangle, with 2-inch foil cathode and #42 enameled copper magnet wire. To energize it I used a commercial power supply from Gamma High-Voltage Research that I had acquired from Ebay some years ago. It was perfect

for antigravity research, having full metering, and variable voltage from 0 to 40KV, and current limiting from 0 to 1.5 milli Amperes of current. The heavy 1-meter discs of the Electrokinetic Apparatus were too heavy and the rotor-friction to great for this low-powered device (60 Watts, maximum), but for the lifter, it proved ideal.

My first "lifter" antigravity device worked, but its performance was less than ideal. It had to be stripped of its lower balsa-wood frame and some of its foil before it would degravitate (counterbary), and it "maxed-out" the current-limited power supply at 33KV I 1.5mA, for a stable hover (actually this is an upward flight configuration, because the device is tethered to the lab table with 3 sewing threads). That is 49 Watts. The concept of a hovering TT Brown Electrokinetic Apparatus had been proven to my satisfaction, however, and I initiated more research into past works and patents to raise efficiency to workable levels. The performance was slightly better than my early 1990s "wire-grid" type devices. I found this slightly encouraging.

After a couple months reading and research (why re-invent the wheel, its all been done before), I started to replicate larger models in February and March 2002, but kept coming up against a size-barrier with the Multi-cellular (grid) approach that many researchers had assumed would raise thrust, and efficiency. This approach obviously did neither, as no one seemed to be able to produce hovering devices above a certain size, the current consumed (adding to total wattage consumed) was prohibitive with the low-powered (still high-voltage, low-current) devices that most of the mostly amateur researchers were using. Researchers around the world started to replicate different versions of the basic lifter 1 (an 6 to 12-inch equilateral triangle). The lifters are always tethered to the testing surface with 3 strings to keep them from going dangerously unstable and possibly short-circuit when they reach the limit of the umbilical supplying power to the device.

From my previous Biefeld-Brown effect replications years earlier, and from carefully reading Brown's EK Apparatus patent, I knew that increasing the diameter of the wire would reduce leakage current created by coronal discharge, mostly coming from the forward electrode, which in the 2 and 3-foot saucers consisted of an arc of copper tubing in the front quadrant of the saucer, or disc. Corona robs power (amperage) from the disc that otherwise would be used to "propel" the disc. Increasing the diameter of the copper tubing, as per Brown's patent if the effect was due primarily to ion-wind, more current and current flow between the electrodes would be desired to effect more air movement. But this is not what I saw in the saucers. **There was apparently another, far more powerful but subtle force effecting silent propulsion of the saucers that had nothing to do with charge-transfer and ion-momentum.**

In February of this year, I undertook an effort to replicate and improve performance and reduce power consumption of the lifter device, based on data from my electrogravitic work of years past. I started by using thicker diameter enameled copper magnet wire, #35 to #30 diameters. I first built a 1-foot equilateral triangular basic "Lifter-1", weighing only 3.5 grams. On March 16th, I built a lifter with the thicker #35 enameled copper wire.

I made the three sides 1-foot long and exactly 2-inches high. After experimentation, I found the optimum spark gap for my High-Voltage power supply (Gamma High Voltage Research 40KV with current limiting to 1.5mA). The small silver-colored device leapt off the test table and pulled violently against its anchor strings to a distance of about a foot. This seemed like a great deal of force for such low power. The large discs of my TT Brown EK apparatus required a good deal higher voltage to initiate motion in the direction of the anode. The device consumed 26KV I 0.56mA DC, which calculates out to 14.56 Watts. I was getting more excited, because this was the best efficiency seen of any result yet posted.

On March 19th, I tested 2 lifters glued together in a "diamond" shaped configuration.

This 2-foot device weighed 6.0 grams, with the same #35 wire and a 2 and 5/8" air gap. It took 25KV to nullify the weight of the device, and it achieved a stable hover at 35KV I 0.8mA. That is 28 Watts. This is about what I had initially expected, double the power for double the Watts. Still, this was far less overall power going into the device to achieve a stable hover than my first primitive and radically shorn and trimmed device. After lift off to the extent of the anchors, I found I could reduce power slightly and maintain a stable hover. On march 22nd at 3:49 pm I got the diamond lifter to achieve a stable hover with a 2 and 5/8" air gap at 29.5 KV I 0.32mA. This was only 9 Watts! This was unheard-of efficiency. I was further encouraged to build and test larger hovering devices to see how large I could get them with my low-powered commercial power supply.

I then built a "lifter-2", which consists of three 1-foot triangular capacitor cells taped together. It weighs 11.4 grams. March 30th at 3:22 pm, the device achieved a stable hover at 38KV I 0.57mA for 19.76 Watts total power. The larger device was more energy efficient than a device 1/3 the size. I wanted to see how far this could go, so I added three more lifter cells to make a 6-cell device, 3 feet on each of its three sides. I was eager to check the performance of this fairly large device. This was the diameter of my horizontally propelled TT Brown Discs.

This device weighed 21.6 grams. I kept the spark gap the same distance on this device. However this device failed to achieve counterbary (lift). It just sat on the test table, filling the air with the smell of ozone and

making a sizzling sound (corona noise). I noticed that the current maxed-out on the power supply at a fairly low voltage and would not go any higher.

I concluded in my disappointment that all that wire from all the inter-connections to the cells was causing corona leakage and robbing current, which otherwise would be used by the device for propulsion.

The idea then hit me that perhaps I could make a device with the same outer diameter as the 3-foot device, but have greater efficiency because of a much shorter length of wire. I built basically a 3-foot (1-meter) version of the first 1-foot device. This device weighed 16 grams. It lifted off the table with amazing force and hovered stably with I 52mA 30KV which is 15.6 Watts. Not only had I achieved a larger-size device, but far better power efficiency for a much larger and heavier device. I was overjoyed! I saw that I had a great deal of lifting force to spare. I had not even come near the limit of my power supply. I added extra bracing at the corners and extra balsa and a triangular paper "payload -tray" in the center of the device, supported by three 1/16"x1/16-inch balsa stock. The extra bracing and payload area added approximately 2 more grams. With a 5 gram payload, the device consumed 39.9 KV I 0.99mA, for total power consumption of 39.5 Watts. I was really encouraged at that point, because I knew that these results were unheard-of, in terms of energy efficiency. I had solved the problem of decreasing efficiency by dispensing with a "grid-based" device. Increasing the area of the capacitor plate was one of the factors that increased performance and efficiency, lessening the input power requirements with increasing size. Now the Biefeld-Brown effect could be properly studied, now that most of the ion-flux had been eliminated, resulting conservation of energy by the device, and resulting in greatly increased propulsive force.

Since I now knew the limit of payload for the device at the power level I was using, I added a balsa framework that approximated a central cabin area, and three small styro-foam spheres on the center of the straight sides on short lengths of balsa. The device no longer looked like a test device, but now looked like a scale model spacecraft. I remembered the Edouard "Billy" Meier UFO contact case, and knew that all his original photographs and movie footage of extraterrestrial spaceships the extraterrestrials themselves called "beamships" (there are several styles and variations, all with different specific functions and capabilities, some manned, some remote-controlled "telemeter discs" that had a tri-hemispherical undercarriage that I knew from past research were propulsion condensors) and that the original un-tampered photos all passed rigorous analysis using the latest and most sophisticated computer and other equipment, case detractors not withstanding. Also the spiritual messages of these genetic brothers of Man and their accounting of humankind's history and origins from far across space rang true and struck a chord with me.

I decided to name this new 1-meter model spacecraft Beamship Variation I. The three sides of the device performed the same function on this device that the three spherical or hemispherical capacitors often seen on the underside of full-size "beamships" (Daylight-disc-type UFOs), which illustrates a similar if not identical propulsion methodology to full-size 3 to 7 meter and larger "off-Earth-built" aero-spacecraft. Clearly the propulsion methodologies were exactly the same in the model as in the full-size flight device.

I immediately built a 4-foot diameter model with a full cabin framework and internal payload area and achieved even greater performance and efficiency. I was ecstatic. This 4-foot device I dubbed Beamship Variation II. I received a suggestion from Mr. Tim Ventura of American Antigravity that performance could be increased by using small diameter stainless-steel wire. It seemed unlikely to me that smaller diameter wire would increase performance, it contradicted Brown's patent, and my own past research with large electrogravitic discs. But Stainless steel has a high number of free electrons in the outer valence atomic shells (electron orbits).

So I obtained some #40 stainless locally and the results confirmed Mr. Ventura's suggestion. Corona noise was heard at a much higher power level, and was greatly attenuated in volume. Leakage current was less, and the two Beamships now had more thrust with less power input. They even carried more payload at less power input. Variation II weighs 21 grams and loft a payload of 6 grams at 40KV I 1mA for 40 Watts total power. Again, this was unheard-of efficiency. The anode wires sang a strange harmony as the Beamships floated in the air, stably at any altitude, from floor to ceiling, without any fuel or visible means of support. This was very Beamship-like.

I thought that now since corona discharge on the anode wire was less, I could decrease the spark-gap distance without creating a spark (which kills lift). Thrust seemed initially to increase, but efficiency went down because there was current-flow now, and current consumption went way up. The supply would now max-out at 37KV I 1.5mA and would not increase because of the current limiting. The Beamships now were noisy, as the foils chattered loudly because of all the ion-wind that was now rushing downward along and past the foils. I used a concert fog machine to observe the ion-flux vector, and filmed it digitally with my Logitech web-cam, and with VHS analog video.

Analysis of the fog -tests showed a circular vortex of air surrounding the anode wire that flared out into a downwash of air below the Beamship. I was disappointed, because I thought then that the thrust action of the device was due to simple ion-transfer. A useful-enough effect, but of questionable use in the vacuum of space without an ionizing medium.

Beamship Variation III

I reasoned I had just about enough power in the supply to build and fly a 6-foot (2-meters) Beamship. Since the balsa came in 3-foot lengths, this was simple. As with all the lifter devices and the more evolved and efficient Beamship-series model aircraft, construction techniques are extremely simple and require little skill to assemble. Weight of the Beamship Variation III is 42 grams, with 6-feet of length on its 3 sides. Height of the foils was still 2". Full frame and cabin, with Searl "IGV"-type landing legs, to support the weight of this heavy and very large device. I set the spark gap at 2 and 1/2 inches. At 12:15pm EDT, May 12th, 2002 the Beamship was weightless at 32KV with current maxed-out at 1.5mA.

The device barely lifted off, and "hopped", across the floor once or twice at full power. It had the same loud rattling of the foils due to the terrific downwash of electrified air. I needed to raise the power level. I increased the distance of the spark gap to 2 and 3/4". Now the Beamship took off straight up with power to spare, as if it was one of the smaller craft. Beamship Variation III is weightless at 30KV I 0.85mA (25.5 Watts), and airborne into a stable hover at 35KV I 1.35mA. That is only 47.25 Watts. It can carry a payload of 5 grams, or 5 grams worth of additional framework and structure, to the limit of the power supply, which is 60 Watts (40KV I 1.5mA).

The 42-gram, six-foot model aero-spacecraft only consumes 47.25 Watts at hover, but my first small and trimmed device ate up 49 Watts! Clearly, using the single-cell Beamship methodology had a huge advantage over the "multi-cellular" design that other researchers had built and tested, seemingly reaching an impasse in terms of size and efficiency, which my large single-cell Beamship technique had seemingly solved. In early April my 1-meter Beamship, weighing 22 grams including 5-gram payload, consumed 39.6 Watts. So the 42-gram, 6-foot Beamship used only 7.65 Watts more total input power at stable hover that the 1-meter Beamship. Power-to-weight ratio for the 2-meter Beamship V. III works out to 1.125 Watts to lift 1 gram stably of scale model electric spacecraft. With little to no ion wind, the Beamship had plenty of upward force and achieved stable counterbary at greater efficiency than I had ever heard or read about. Also, I was not aware of any devices in scientific history that has achieved this type of counterbary for this little input power and this colossal size. I performed additional fog-tests with two red semiconductor-emitted laser beams in the plane of one side of the device, one above the wire, one below the foil. The Beamship without all the ion-wind was nearly silent again, except for "singing" and softly "thrumming" anode wires. These laser-beam tests further confirmed the marked absence of ion-wind with a larger spark gap.

At 1.125 Watts-per gram at 57KV I 1.4mA (78.8 Watts) would lift 89.775 grams worth of electric spacecraft. So

not only is the larger size in a single cell far more efficient that the "grid" design, in thrust and power consumption, but the reduction in current from increasing the spark gap raised power level to the device, while dropping power consumption of the device. My initial suspicion of ion-wind producing most of the thrust in the Biefeld-Brown effect had been dis-proven also because of the great weight of the device. I never would have discovered this important fact if I had stayed with smaller devices, trying to raise their efficiency. And I never would have discovered the efficacy of the Biefeld-Brown effect if I had stayed with the multi-cellular "lifter" methodology. One of the factors that raises the level of propulsive force (if "propulsion" is the right word) is increasing the area of the plate, according to TT Brown's patents. So the larger size single-cell capacitor's ability to reduce power consumption and effect greater propulsive force and upward acceleration, was easily explained by the Biefeld-Brown Effect. Brown had been vindicated. My gut feeling had seemingly been confirmed: this was our first warp-drive (reaction-less drive).

My experiments had yielded greater efficiency, and greater size and weight of VTOL hovering models than any that I had ever heard or read about. I still am having difficulty taking in these facts; and it is very awe-inspiring to see such a large device de-gravitate and hover stably at any altitude, from floor to ceiling.

Next for me is a higher-powered supply (60KV), moving up to a three-meter Beamship Variation IV, improvements to the cathode such as a thin, symmetrical airfoil shape, as Brown suggests in his patents, tungsten wire, and then carbon-wire for the anode, and full heat-shrink coverings on the frames, running lights, onboard lasers, onboard digital/ proportional Radio/Control, and now that we know the power requirements, and have a good handle on efficiency, onboard power generation. I have already begun designing with my associates our own custom-made outboard and inboard battery-powered power supplies, and finally will cut the power umbilical to the model electric spacecraft permanently, and Beamship technology advances further. If the on/off duty cycle is pulsed at a low frequency, power input can be reduced by two-thirds, at least. Experiments conducted by Jean-Louis Naudin last fall (2001) confirm this phenomenon, suggested by Brown and De Seversky in their patents. Clearly, onboard power can easily be effected, using modern miniaturization and circuitry. Pitch and roll vector control can be achieved by electrically isolating the anode wires on the three sides of the ship, and varying pulses to these three wires. Yaw control can be achieved by simply installing a horizontal-double sided capacitor inside the ship near one corner. Simple full 4-channel flight control is thus achieved.

The Beamship series aircraft are fascinating research and entertainment devices (see cover page), and are the vanguard of a whole new generation of radio/ controlled antigravity model aircraft with no moving

parts and dead silent propulsion. But they are more than that. The Beamships, if allowed, could probably rise up at any speed thru the atmosphere, right up to near-Earth-orbit, and probably keep on going out into limitless space. No need to achieve ballistic escape velocities of miles-per-second. This is non-ballistic flight. They even have a certain amount of wind resistance outdoors and indoors because the electrical field causes air to flow AROUND the model flying craft, not into it. This is such a safer, environmentally cleaner, vibration and nearly silent and more pleasant method of aero- space travel than carrying tons of explosive reaction mass, which can and does explode. No more use of heat energy to effect transportation.

The 21st century has begun in earnest!

Beamship series aircraft are available for sale for research and hobby/entertainment use right now through the American Antigravity website: www.americanantigravity.com. Look for the Applied Electrogravitics antigravity technology website late spring, 2002. You can contact me, Russell Anderson for details on pricing, and new and improved variations, and power supplies for outboard and onboard drive, which are currently in design stages.

Editor's note: More ideas on development of T.T. Brown's patents are on our web site: http://www.faraday.ru. Read about T-capacitor!

Data Table 1

Antigravity device	Weight of device	Wire type	Voltage/current	Total Watts	Payload	Payload/power
1-foot "Flyer-1"	3.2 grams	#42 enameled copper	33KV I 1.5mA	49	None	—————
1-foot "lifter-1"	3.5 grams	#35 enameled copper	26KV I 0.56mA	14.56	None	—————
2-foot "diamond-lifter"	6.0 grams	#35 enameled copper	29.5KV I 0.32mA	9	None	—————
2-foot, 3-cell "lifter-2"	11.4 grams	#35 enameled copper	38KV I 0.57mA	19.76	None	—————
3-foot, single-cell "Beamship Variation I"	16 grams	#35 enameled copper	30KV I 0.52mA	15.6	None	—————
Beamship Variation I-fully-rigged	18.5 grams	#35 enameled copper	—————	39.5	5 grams	39.9KV I 0.99mA
4-foot "Beamship Variation II"	21 grams	#40 stainless-steel	—————	40	6 grams	40KV I 1mA
6-foot "Beamship Variation III"	42 grams	#40 stainless-steel	35KV I 1.35mA	47.25	None	—————

References

1. Ether Technology, by Rho Sigma,

2. Lost Science, by Gerry Vassilatos,

3. The Philadelphia Experiment, by William Moore,

4. High Energy Electrostatic Research Vol. 1, Antigravity and UFOs, by Raymond A. Nelli, Homemade Lightning, by R.A. Ford,

5. Antigravity – the Dream Made Reality, by John Searl, The Law of the Squares Book 4, by John Searl,

6. The Antigravity Handbook, compiled by D.H. Childress,

7. The Coming Energy Revolution, by Jeanne Manning,

8. Agnew H. Bahnson Labs home movies (1957-60), JLN labs website, Bill Beatty's "weird-science" website, American Antigravity website (www.amercanantigravity.com).

Patent references

1. A.H. Bahnson, Jr. Electrical Thrust Producing Device, USP # 2,958.790, filed May 12,1958, granted Nov. 1, 1960.

2. Marcel Jean-Joseph Pages (France), # 1,253,902 Petit-Viton, filed Jan 5, 1960, granted January 9th, 1961

3. G.E. Hagen, Flying Apparatus, #3,120,363, filed Sept. 11th, 1958, granted Feb. 4th, 1964

4. T.T. Brown, Electrokinetic Apparatus, #2,949,550, filed July 3rd, 1957, granted Aug. 16th, 1960

5. T.T. Brown, Electrokinetic Generator, #3,022,430, filed July 3rd, 1957, granted Feb. 20th, 1962

6. A.P. De Seversky, Ionocraft, # 3,130,945, filed Aug. 31st, 1959, granted April 28th, 1964

7. V. Gradecek, Electric Aerospace Propulsion System, # 3,177,654 filed Sept. 26th 1961, granted April 13th, 1965

Commercial Antigravity

Tim Ventura

tventura6@attbi.com

Introduction

Let me begin by posing a simple question that I would like the reader to keep in mind throughout this article: How far away is commercial antigravity? I'm not talking about a laboratory experiment where a giant magnet is used to levitate a frog, or secret UFO experiments that the government isn't sharing with the business world, but a real, viable antigravity solution to what I consider to be the most pressing issue facing the world today – transportation.

Who can answer a question like that? How far away is commercial antigravity? The author has read numerous scientific texts on the subject, and is familiar enough with contemporary theories of gravity, antigravity, and electromagnetism to suggest that most scientists believe that commercial antigravity is at least 100 years away from existence. But the author believes that most scientists are wrong.

Defining terms

Any article about antigravity would not be complete without properly defining the terms to be used. In this article, antigravity is not used in the strict sense of the word. The author's intent is to discuss a method of propulsion, which for all intents and purposes can be considered antigravity, and may include antigravity – but also may include several other forms of similar propulsion. The reasoning behind this is that experience has shown that the majority of people in the world don't care how something works – they care what it can do for them. This article is about the effect of Antigravity – not the cause.

Real Antigravity would consist of an apparatus used to either reduce the apparent mass of an object or reduce the effects of gravitational attraction between the Earth and an object. An example of an apparatus that may in fact do this is the Podkletnov superconductor apparatus currently being tested by NASA.

This Podkletnov device essentially consists of a spinning superconductor that self-levitates above a pool of liquid nitrogen and supposedly creates a "beam" or "shaft" of antigravity (or reduced gravity) directly above it as it operates. The levitation of the superconductor itself is not antigravity – it is a well-known side effect of ceramic-superconductors called the "Meissner Effect". The Meissner effect is simply a side effect of the superconductor's interaction with the Earth's magnetic field, and is easily explained by physics.

Podkletnov claims that when he worked with a team of researchers investigating superconductors in Russia around 1991, the smoke from the tobacco pipe of a fellow researcher began to climb steeply in a column directly above the superconductor. The researchers began to think that they were on to something, and Podkletnov subsequently performed several follow-up experiments that led him to the conclusion that the levitating superconductor produced a shielding effect between the Earth and anything positioned directly above the superconductor. He reasoned that gravitational shielding would provide a "column" of reduced gravity above the superconductor that should extend up and away from the Earth indefinitely. Podkletnov calculated that with a rapidly spinning levitating superconductor he had achieved a 2% loss in weight for anything directly over the superconductor.

Podkletnov's research is interesting and compelling, and it would fall into the category of "real" antigravity – but I am writing about Podklentov's type of research as well as enormous amount of research and theory available on electromagnetic propulsion systems. These can be considered "effective" antigravity.

The Harrier jet fighter can swivel its engine exhaust-nossels to create vertical lift, which resembles antigravity in that it is VTOL takeoff. However, the Harrier does not use effective antigravity because it has all of the functionality and side effects of an aircraft. A helium blimp would be a closer example to "effective" antigravity, but it too is not – because it works on basic aerodynamic principles.

Aerodynamics is not effectively antigravity – aerodynamics is instead expensive, difficult to manufacture, prone to explosive failure, and highly unreliable. This is not to suggest that a jet aircraft is unreliable, because it has a variety of backup systems, but that the technology itself is unreliable in that a jet is adversely effected by the medium that it uses to propel itself. Air pressure, humidity, temperature, and strong winds all cause a degree of unreliability. In addition, turbine engines stretch the limit of what mechanical engineering can achieve – which is why they are prone to break if even something as small as a bird gets sucked in during flight.

Antigravity is not about moving the air around — it is about a medium-agnostic means of air transportation that produces vertical and/or directional lift without relying on air-pressure like a wing or blimp. Antigravity is an electromagnetic or electrogravitic system for reducing the weight of an apparatus to allow it to lift more easily. Antigravity is pushing a button and having your vehicle take off without runways, noisy engines, minimum flight-speeds, propellers, or any of the other drawbacks that limit conventional aircraft from achieving popularity similar to what an automobile might have.

The author's definition of Antigravity for the purposes of this article is confined to electromagnetic or electrogravitic devices that reduce the weight of an

object to enable it to take off without conventional thrust-producing apparatus. This definition might also fit many of the classical characteristics known at one time as "the electric spacecraft".

1.   Business Analysis versus Scientific Analysis
The author disagrees with the majority of scientists as to when commercial antigravity will become possible for some very basic and obvious reasons. To begin with, the majority of credentialed physics-related scientists come from a theoretical school of thought, which tends to limit their world-view to only contain those things that are currently or potentially explained by theory. The author, however, comes from an experimental school of thought that seeks to capitalize on existing observational data without the rigorous need to explain every last detail of its functionality. The author is an engineer, not a scientist – and engineers don't need to totally understand how something works in order to make it better.

This difference between the engineering point of view and the physicists is also different in the manner in which they seek out observational data. A physicist looks towards naturally observable data, and in the event that none exists they look towards current theories to explain potential future observations. The engineer is more open to ideas that are less rigorously tested from the perspective of scientific method, but are currently observed as potential solutions to real-world problems.

2.   Potential Technologies Overiew
Phycists currently tend to dismiss the entire concept of Electrogravity, and the reasoning behind their logic is very sound. To begin with, Electrogravity is not observable in nature. In addition, many of the claims by those persons who submit Electrogravity and antigravity devices for public review are faked, exaggerated, or just plain wrong.

Physicists are responsible for maintaining a working body of theoretical knowledge, and if they were to admit results such as Schnurer's without skeptical scrutiny it would undermine the very fabric of technology itself. If the Podekletnov results were to be accepted as fact at face value without rigorous prrof, imagine the amount of money that would be wasted in attempts to build enormous Antigravity vehicles based on this theory.

In the middle of the spectrum lies the concept of Maglev, which is mentioned here only for the purpose of specifying that Maglev is not commercial antigravity. It has been mistakenly thought of as antigravity by many because it utilizes a magnetically-levitated train to improve the velocity of the train and reduce transit time between stops. In reality, Maglev is not really a vehicle at all.

The definition of a vehicle would be a device that transports itself as well as its passengers and cargo between two points. This is why an automobile is considered a vehicle but an escalator or elevator is not – the automobile transports its entire propulsive apparatus to another location, but an escalator or elevator does not move – it merely repositions its cargo between points. The Maglev train is not really a vehicle at all – it is actually a very long electromagnetic armature that transports people and cargo between its ends at high speed. While it may serve a commercial need, it is not to be confused with Antigravity.

On the opposite end of the spectrum is the author of this article – who has built and successfully tested over 30 electromagnetic "Lifters" at the time of this writing. The Lifter is a device based on research by Transdimensional Technologies and related to research by Thomas Townsend Brown that demonstrates an antigravity effect when a High-voltage DC current is applied to it.

Currently, the exact method of propulsion for the Lifter is being debated. It is thought to be one of two things – either an effective form of "ion-wind" propulsion, or else a form of field-effect propulsion based on an as-yet unknown force. While the debate about the exact nature of this propulsion is important with regard to future research, in reality it does not change the observational data that demonstrate that this technology works perfectly, consistently, and reliably.

The Lifter design was demonstrated by the author in a continuous mode of operation for over 7 hours straight on Sunday, April 21st, 2002, at the Seattle Center "EarthDay and Renewable Energy Exhibition". During this seven hour period of time, the author's Lifter hovered at a tethered height of 12 inches from the surface of the table, powered by a 30 watt load from a simple computer monitor.

This article is not meant to get into the details of methods of antigravity, only to suggest that it already exists in the form of electromagnetic propulsion systems if nothing else. The author is confident that in time physicists will find a theoretical reason for why the Lifter operates as it does, but for the time being the fact of its operation overshadows the method of its operation.

3.   Market Needs
Commercial Antigravity doesn't require a 2% loss in weight to operate – it will require something akin to a 200% loss in weight. A commercial antigravity device will have to demonstrate exceptional performance to gain market acceptance, but not for the reasons that might immediately come to mind.

One might believe that skepticism from the scientific community would prevent antigravity technology from gaining the scientific acceptance needed to become a commercially accepted engineering discipline. The long term view, however, shows that this is not the case – engineering and market forces drive innovation, and formal science plays a supporting role in explaining and

quantifying the innovations that engineers have already commercially qualified as valid.

The real roadblock to success for commercial antigravity is market acceptance. The author's demonstration of the Lifter technology at the Renewable Energy Exhibition helped him to realize that the vast majority of consumers have no idea what antigravity technology could be used for, much less what they themselves could use it for. The same thinking was apparent at the dawn of the age of personal computing, when the idea of having a computer in the home was a completely foreign concept.

So in brief, a market does not exist for antigravity technology, which is why inventors working with this technology have been unable to find appreciable support for their work. Many inventors look at this technology and ask, "how could the public not understand how valuable a technology like this is?" – but that isn't the problem. The problem is that most innovators with an interest in antigravity are so closely tied to the science behind the technology that they fail to review and address the business needs that drive the market acceptance of a new technology. In other words, people don't buy antigravity – they buy solutions. People don't buy cars to simply have a car – they buy cars because people need transportation needs that they have to fulfill. People don't buy computers because they want to have a computer – they buy computers because they want to share and process information and communications.

Marketing Requirements

How will antigravity technology gain the market acceptance to become a commercially viable technology? There are a variety of ways in that antigravity technologies will become commercially viable, but only after antigravity is no longer sold as antigravity – it needs to be sold as a personal or business solution.

The solutions that antigravity technologies are best prepared to provide at the moment are in the realm of transportation technology. This includes moving people and cargo to destinations in a similar manner to conventional transportation technologies such as aircraft or automobiles.

With regard to providing transportation solutions, antigravity has the ability to incorporate the best features of both contemporary automotive and aerospace technologies into a single technology that will serve point-to-point transportation needs better than either of the two aforementioned technologies could by itself.

For a moment, assume that a person wants to travel from Los Angeles to New York in a short period of time. Currently, the most convenient method of transportation to accomplish this would require the person to take an automobile to the airport, and from there take an aircraft from the Los Angeles airport to the New York airport.

After departing at the New York airport, the passenger must then take another vehicle to their intended destination.

Commercial antigravity technology could serve a dual-purpose short and long-range transportation role, taking on the aspects of both ground transport as well as air transport.

Product Delivery Requirements

In order to deliver commercial antigravity as a viable solution to business needs, a variety of work will need to be completed on the various component systems of this technology to turn it from what is currently a "proof of concept" into a commercial reality.

Let us assume for a moment that we have developed a working device based on Antigravity or some method of Field-Effect Propulsion. While this is the critical stepping stone to success, this is by no means the end al be all of the development cycle.

To begin with, the technology must be perfected to the point of being both economical and reliable. As it stands now, the market already has technologies in place that fulfill some or all of the requirements for the technology that Antigravity is being developed to replace. In order to serve as an effective replacement for these technologies, antigravity technology must then demonstrate that it both costs less in terms of operation and manufacture, as well as being more reliable than conventional air-transportation solutions.

I mention reliability in light of the recent negative media attention surrounding several recent commercial airline crashes. From a marketing perspective, air-travel disasters provide a great deal of negative publicity for the airline industry. Since the airline industry has a mostly successful track record of delivering passengers and cargo, people are for the most part willing to forgive the occasional air-disaster. However, with a new technology such as antigravity-based air-transport, there is not a long enough track record to permit public acceptance of air-disasters. One substantial disaster in the early days of antigravity could serve to forever damage the credibility of this new technology.

With regard to being economical, any type of antigravity system that intends to surpass existing methods of air-transport must be able to do so at a less-expensive rate to own and operate, and must have a vehicular lifespan at the very least similar to conventional air-transport devices. This would allow the total cost of ownership (TCO) to be less for an antigravity vehicle than it would otherwise be for a conventional craft.

There is one caveat to acceptance of antigravity technology as compared to conventional aircraft, which is simply that if antigravity vehicles are able to operate in an environment or manner that precludes conventional aircraft, then they should be able to gain a market niche without immediately having to surpass conventional aircraft in the area of TCO.

Assuming that we can develop a propulsion system that is both more reliable and less expensive to operate for the transportation of passengers and cargo, we then have to build up the skeleton of a vehicle compatible with this form of propulsion around the actual propulsion system.

For instance, a conventional aircraft has pitch, yaw, and several other flight controls, but for an antigravity vehicle there is a high likelihood that some or all of these controls will not be required, thereby changing the dynamic of flight associated with the craft. This will require new methods of pilot certification and flight-qualification, as well as requiring a control-philosophy to be created surrounding how the craft will operate.

I use the phrase "control-philosophy" instead of simply "control layout" because one of my assumptions about antigravity propulsion systems is that they will allow more flexibility in the design process for engineers to determine how the craft "should" fly, as opposed to an aircraft or helicopter, in which the components determining speed and handling are based primarily on an interaction between the design of the craft and the atmosphere.

In brief, an antigravity cargo-transport may have very different needs for flight than perhaps a lightweight passenger vehicle would, although there would also need to be a consistency between the control-systems of these devices to reduce the need for extra pilot training and competency testing.

Therefore, it should be apparent from the last few paragraphs that not only are there several propulsion-system related challenges involved with developing a commercial antigravity device, but there are also several challenges in the design, training, support aspects of this technology that also factor into the requirements to be complete before a complete product can be delivered.

Conclusion

At the beginning of this treatise, I posed the simple question of **"how far away is commercial antigravity"**. The reader, I expect, probably interpreted that question in terms of time, which is the usual measurement of questioning when new technologies will become part of our lives.

However, as I have attempted to demonstrate throughout this article, **the time component is much less important to the development process than is the distance component – that is, how far away from commercial antigravity we are.** When I use the word distance, I mean specifically what tasks must be completed in order for antigravity to go from being a proof-of-concept approach to a new form of propulsion-system to being a completed vehicle ready for manufacture.

I have attempted not to address the legal implications of antigravity technology with regard to certification for general or specific use – my thought on this is that the discussion of legal ramifications of antigravity is best left for another time. This is due primarily to the size and scope of that discussion, which is beyond what I am attempting to analyze in this article.

So, in finale, how far away from commercial antigravity we are depends not so much on time as on the rate at which we can perform the work required to provide the underpinnings on top of which the technology can be built. This seems important to me, as it underscores how close we appear to be to a working method of antigravity propulsion, and how we might consider focusing resources and goals to achieve the realization of this common dream that we share.
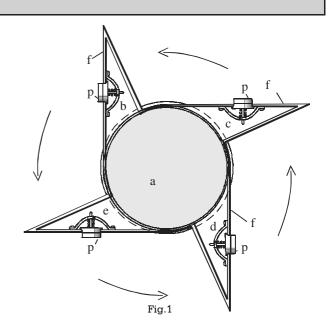
EDITORIAL: PERPETUAL MOBILE OF 1902

There is one more interesting example of perpetual mobile, which was described in the collected articles [1]. The motor shown in Fig.1 was invented in 1902. The vessels *b, c, d* and *e* are mounted on a shaft *a*, and have one side *f* tangential to the shaft, and the other side radial. Compressed air is forced into each vessel through the valves *p*. It is stated that under "the action of the internal pressure of the vessels, and after a slight impulse has been given to same, in the direction of the arrow, the whole apparatus will begin to move and continue to do so without ever stopping, the velocity corresponding to the pressure established within the vessels".

Really simple... Let's try to examine it.

Reference

R.A. Ford. The Perpetual Motion Mystery. A Continuing Quest, 1987 Lindsay Publications, Inc., Bradley, IL 60915

Fig.1

Action without Reaction

New Gravidynamic Paradox

Yu. N. Ivanov
Academician of Russian Academy
of Natural Sciences

Saikina, 11/2, app.4, Moscow, Russia
Tel: (095) 277-33-76/276-50-39
mirit@narod.ru
http://www.mirit.org

Editorial: Yu.N. Ivanov discovered a new unusual physical phenomenon that is a gravidynamic paradox. The sense of the paradox is the existence of the situation, which is not forbidden by physical laws and which allows any man (even a child) easily hold suspended or carry things with 100kg or more weight by means of some simple device. This phenomenon is just a part of the significant applied topic and a demonstration of the possibility to cancel weight characteristics of any material object. Per se it is a work on the obtaining of the methods to eliminate aircrafts weight.

We can use only resistant things as a support!

Galilee-Newton's Laws are in the basis of classical mechanics. Thought concerned fundamental, these laws do not explain the main thing, i.e. the internal processual essence of the phenomena, described by them. There is another scientific line – the quantum mechanics, which tries to discover the essence of deep processes. There is no connection between these lines, therefore they as if exist independently. There are also long-time conversations about necessity to combine the quantum and the classical approaches. We suppose, that practically the combining has already happened, since thanks to rhythmodynamics, there appeared phase, frequency and velocity of light in formulae of classical mechanics (without these attributes the quantum mechanics is impossible). It was revealed, that phase-frequency method of late mechanics formulae presentation gives a real physical sense both to formulae themselves, and to concepts which seemed vague before *(namely: cause of motion, force, velocity, inertiality, gravitation)*. In this sense, the upcoming rhythmodynamics fills up the gap between the main physical lines and draws them together. But let's change the vector, since **the subject of the given article is to concern cases in which the third Newton law is not directly valid.**

Newton formulated the third law in the following way:

"Action always has equal and opposite interaction, in other words, actions of two bodies on each other are equal and directed in opposite sides".

This law represents the fact that one-way action of one body to another cannot exist in nature, but there is only an interaction between them, i.e. there is no action without reaction [1].

We must note, that the third Newton law is valid only for systems with 100% feedback, appeared in the interaction period. For example, during the magnet influence on the iron object it is revealed, that this object also starts to influence upon the magnet, i.e. to attract it with the same force. It happens because in the period of action of magnetic field the iron object itself becomes the source of magnetic field (Fig.1). Here the magnetic field, as an especial environmental condition, acts as a mediator, i.e. exists by itself in the interval between object and magnet .
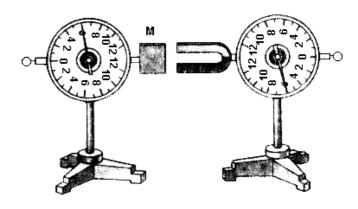
Fig. 1

Interaction of magnet and metal body M. Here the action is equal to reaction, i.e. the third Newton law is valid.

It is considered to be that magnetic field, created by electric current, spreads with the velocity of light. If current impulse is short, then the magnetic field spreads independently from the conductor and no matter if there is current in the conductor at present, or not. If the distance up to the object is big, then the magnetic field remains between source and object for some time, and has no influence upon the object. In this sense the portion of magnetic field, placed on the path between source and body, can be considered as moving independent "entity", i.e. the space by means of itself carries its changed state (magnetic properties) from one place to another. In this period magnetic properties in the form of quantum can influence neither on the source, from which the magnetic quantum is already detached, nor on the object, which the magnetic quantum still does not reach.

But having reached the object, magnetic field changes the state of this object. If as the result of influence the object becomes a source of magnetic field, then the part of the field is reradiated in the direction of source, i.e. the object itself becomes the source for some time, and by this it is able to influence on the first primary source. In this situation the principle of action and reaction works, because the feedback takes place.

If the feedback does not appear during the period of influence of one body to another, then the action and reaction law is not valid in the system. Let's demonstrate it by the example of the mechanical experiments, in which there is a feedback between objects.

Let there is a device (Fig. 2), which throws off two water (air) streams in the opposite directions in such a way, that reactive forces completely compensate each other. At that the thrown down stream compensates the gravity too. In this case the device will fly without falling, i.e. it will have zero weight.
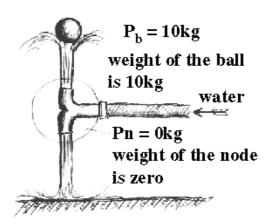
Fig. 2

The ball, suspended in the water stream, does not put pressure on the source. It happens because there is no feedback between the ball and the source. If you have such a device, then, lifting the ball by means of it, you will not feel the weight of the ball. The reason: the ball hangs due to the kinetic energy, which the stream passes to it and and this ball can not influence on the source through the water stream.

The appearance of the ball with the weight P_b does not influence on the weight P_n of the device. And even in the case if we press the ball down, i.e. essentially displace its location in the stream, the device will feel nothing.

The absence of device weight is evident for us; therefore we can easily move the device if its original (vertical) orientation remains unchanged.

Let's change the situation and place the ball (body with the shape, which is steady for hanging) in the upper stream. This ball with the weight about 10 kg is placed in a way to be kept by this stream at some distance, for example at 0.5 m. Will the device react on the changed situation, i.e. on the ball appearance? Will the weight of the ball, hanging in the stream, be added to zero weight of the device (0 + 10 kg)?

The calculation shows that it will not: $\Sigma P = 0 + 10 = 0$ [kg]. There is only an illusion that the ball is supported by the stream and that it is a part of the system. As a matter of fact, the ball is detached from the system and hangs due to the water kinetic energy. It is easy to check it by making an experiment in a bathroom: "Remove the douche sprayer, then direct the stream up and holding it by the one hand with the aim of weighting, try to influence on the source by the other hand through the stream. You will be surprised to feel that the hand, which is supported by the stream or any object, which is hanged in the stream, does not influence on the source".

At first sight the situation seems to be a paradox, however it very illustrates the possibility of the force action without reaction. So, the action can be one-way, i.e. calling no reply reaction in the form of pressure on the action source.

In such an unusual way it is possible to keep the ball of bigger weight (100 kg and more), at that to move it easily by means of the device and at the same time not to feel the presence of additional weight in the stream. **It is possible only in the case when there is no feedback between body and source,** i.e. the body, hanged in the stream, has no ability to act on the force source. Thus, we can both hold and move the heavy ball without additional efforts, and also lift it up to any height (for example, 100 m). As a matter of fact, we deal with the **new gravidynamic paradox**.

It is interesting then, how to solve the task of the following type: "Let the body with 100 kg weight is hanged in the water (air) stream in such a way, that it does not change the velocity and direction of liquid outflow from the source nozzle. How much energy the operator must spend to lift this body to the height about 10 m?" (Here it means that the operator must take the device, which supports the ball, and, moving upstairs, lift the body, which hangs in the stream, by means of this device to the height about 10 m). If to solve this problem correctly (the condition is that the operator lifts himself together with the device and the ball), we will find out, that operator's energy is spent only for lifting of the device, which creates water streams. The operator, lifting together with the device, will not even notice that in the stream there is a body with about 100 kg weight **(this is the sense of the paradox).**

The situation only seems to be absurd, and even paradoxical for theorists, but it is not a hopeless one.

We can also observe the effect of action without reaction in ultrasonic field of the source. If the source is fixed on scales (Fig.3) and body is hanged, as it was made in the stream, the scales will show only the precise weight of the source and will not react on the weight of the hanged body, no matter how heavy it is.
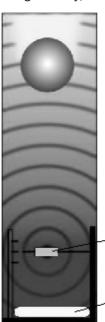
Fig. 3

The ball, made of the special absorbent material, hanged in the powerful ultrasonic field, does not put pressure on the scales. It happens because of the absence of feedback between the ball, which has changed its state, and the radiation source. If you have such ultrasonic device in your hands, then lifting the ball by means of this device you will not feel the ball weight.

Ultrasonic generator

Special absorbent (silencer)

The experiment of such type was made in one of the secret institutes. Water was used as an acoustic environment. The heavy ball easily floated up from the vessel bottom i.e. it behaved as if it had no weight.

The similar phenomena but such of the other organizational level, sometimes become apparent in nature. The phenomenon has its very name because the event happens unexpectedly and is not analyzable through laboratory research [3].

"A spherical ball lightning about the size of a football ball flew over a village Galtsovka of Altaisky Krai at a height of twenty to thirty meters. The first shed in its way, with ferroconcrete poles, was crushed and collapsed. Flying over a slated house, the ball lightning tore away the roofing slate together with nails, raised it into air and pulled it along, scattering its parts all over the village. Flying over a tractor station, the ball lightning crushed a frame, welded of metal angles and covered with tarpaulin. On the approaching of the ball lightning to another frame, it was at first dragged along the ground, and after the ball lightning had passed it, the frame was lifted and carried at a distance of 300 meters. The weight of the frame was no less than 100 kg".

Further the author analyzes the situation from point of view of the known physical laws: "The frame of hundreds kilograms weight was carried by fields of the flying ball lightning. However, for some reason the ball lightning kept on flying straight and did not note that some metal frame was caught to it. If the ball lightning, as it is usually considered, has a density of air and it is a weightless formation, then why the frame with the weight not less than 100 kg could not change its flight trajectory even in some extent?"

It draws attention that in some cases the ball lightning field pushed objects away, and in other cases it attracted them. It can be explained only by fact that in each case the ball lightning field specifically influenced on internal properties of objects, and then objects themselves somehow reacted on their new state (they changed their motion) . The feedback absence (in other way it happens between magnet and iron object) allows the ball lightning not react upon the things, which take place in its field. If these objects themselves became sources of similar field, i.e. reradiated it, they would influence on the ball lightning trajectory. **Most likely, in the given case, there was realized the situation when action caused no reaction.**

Conclusions

In the context of known physical laws the particular problem of direct action without feedback was formulated and solved. The solution of this problem provides deep understanding of how to control weight characteristics of material objects in open systems. As it was shown by the example with water (which is only an illustration of more fundamental processes) we can

"deceive" the nature, but only through the deep understanding of the processual character of the concerned events.

By the example of ultrasound we show, that in principle there can exist such field flows, which are able to influence on bodies without the feedback effect. There were defined some conditions and criteria of bodies and methods of influence, at which the third Newton law is not directly valid (it is not published in this article).

The described type of influence can be called as pressure. But during consideration of processes at atomic or deeper level, i.e. from the position of rhythmodynamics, we find out something of another kind, that is phase-frequency one. It prompts to us, what kind of technologies will exist and how our aircrafts will look in nearest future. But not everyone is able to understand it at once.

Moscow 15.05.2002

For sponsors: mirit@yandex.ru
Our website: http://www.mirit.org

References

1. Physics textbook for the 9th class of secondary school // M., Prosveschenie, 1982

2. Ju.N. Ivanov, Rhythmodynamics // M., Noviy Tcentr, 1997

3. G.V. Nikolaev, Scientific vacuum // Tomsk, Kursiv, 1999

Comment

In the gravitation field we have a balanced open system, in which appearance of the new body at first sight must cause this system reaction such as weight increase. However, this is not the case.

The given problem is solved in two independent steps:

1) examination of interaction between water source and water (reactive effect, which is compensated by counter flow);

2) examination of interaction between water, detached from the source, and the body (unit time impulse per unit area).

It is impossible to examine the interaction between the source and the body because water has no rigidity. There are no means to influence on the source through the intermediate stream, therefore the principle of action and reaction is valid for each step individually, but not for both! But in this case the third Newton law must be developed as following: "If there is a 100% feedback between two bodies, their interactions are equal and inversely directed. And if there is no feedback, the action of one body to another causes no reaction, i.e. the action is not equal to reaction". And this is already another law!

New Possibilities of Vortex Electric Power Devices

Stanislav A. Lisnyak

Prospect Stoletiya Vladivostoka, 112-37
690069, Vladivostok, Russia
Tel/Fax: (7-4232)310-554
Email: Stasvladcomru@mail.ru

The earlier published article [1] was devoted to the explanation of the excess energy output at the rotation of flow medium in vortex tube (VT). The researches on VT demonstrated by the real examples that the excess energy output is a real fact, which is determined by natural physical processes. These processes take place in the fluid at its vortex (rotational) motion in the closed volume by means of phase transformations (skips) of the fluid state. However, the practice shows that for obtaining of patents and benefits for the real vortex devices, which are made for heat generation, it is necessary to write a little about their real technical characteristics, though technical and constructive possibilities of vortex devices can be much better. Temperature of water of these devices could not be higher than 120°C, and value of fluid pressure is confined within 5…6 kg/cm². Circulation pumps of pressure over 6 kg/cm² are used to increase thermal power output of vortex heat generators (VHG). It causes the discredit of VHG since at such a method their generative possibilities reduces to 100% value and less! We set a problem to discover the ways and engineering solutions for the essential increase of the coefficient of VHG energy conversion to not less than 200% value.

Our experience in development and exploitation of deep-sea physical devices has given some engineering solutions in this way. Actually, we have the opportunity to use the generally applicable circulation pumps, which have pressure not more than 4.0 kg/sm². At the same time we can raise the temperature of the heat carrier to 300°C and higher! and the pressure can be increased to 1000kg/sm²! Such fluid parameters allow to use this fluid as a heat carrier in powerful hot-water generators of steam engines, turbines etc. By the way, this method allows to make the value of temperature of water enough to supply its PYROLESIS! The main point of the method is the following: all the closed system of water-filled VHG works at pressure with the value under 1000kg/sm². It is provided by means of the special device, the so-called automatic pneumohydraulic block (APHB). This lets to raise the temperature of working fluid to 1000°C with no change in its aggregative state. The practical functional scheme of such a device is shown in Fig.1.
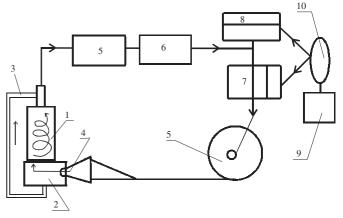
Fig. 1

1 – vortex tube; 2 – entry vortex chamber; 3 – by-pass;
4 – upstream end; 5 – circulation pump; 6 – heat-exchangers;
7 – APHB; 8 – volume of fluid leakage compensation;
9 - compressed-air flask; 10 - gas pressure regulator

The device works in the following way. The whole device is filled with working fluid without entrapped gas. At the operation of the circulation pump (5), fluid through the upstream end (4), placing in the entry vortex chamber (2), swirls, accelerates and gets into the vortex tube (1), where its "energy saturation" is realized. Then heated fluid gets into the heat-exchangers (6) for heating or for other purposes. After passing through the heat-exchangers, fluid gets into the pneumohydraulic device (7), where there is kept up the proper level of fluid pressure in the whole system. To prevent the system breakdown at the accidental fluid leakage, there is a device (8), which compensates such leakages. Compressed-air flask (9), with the volume under 1000kg/cm², and gas pressure regulator (10) keep up the selected level of the pressure in the system. The use of blocks (7,8,9,10) excludes evaporation in the system and prevents the breakdown of the circulation pump (5).

This VHG scheme allows to double the effectiveness of YUSMAR devices [2] only at the expense of rise in working fluid temperature in 2…3 times.

Observation of any fluid swirls and film documents of windspouts arrive to conclusion that all vortex structures are rotation bodies, created by the lines of the second order: $Y = aX^2$. In other words, as a result of the rotation in the swirl, air or fluid mass gets the acceleration of the second order. Taking into account the aforesaid, it is evident that in order to form the classical swirl in the VT, the very VT should be a tubular body of rotation. This body is created by the curve (see below Fig.2).

In YUSMAR and similar devices the vortex fluid motion take place in straight cylinder and 1/3 of this area is used for fluid deceleration that causes vortex flew

disruption. This results in the impossibility to increase additional heat in the straight tube in more than 1.54 times. It is caused by the fact that the main vortex formation takes place only in the vortex chamber and the flows separation does in the tube itself. Then, this vortex formation is right away disrupted by different plate brakes! It suggests itself that output part of VT should be made in the spiral form, expanding at the flow passage.
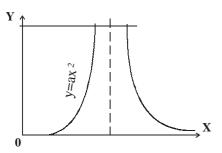
Fig. 2
Generatrix of the wall of vortex tube
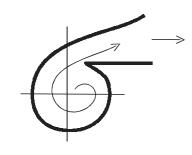
Fig. 3
Upper part of the tube

Such section, made on the outlet of the vortex tube, helps to slow down the flow avoiding its disruption, since axial-cold flow, placed along the tube axis, should stay intact. Two of such engineering solutions allow raising the level of the additional VHG energy up to 180…200%.

YSMAR devices are designed for one tube with the assigned heat output. However, if to take into consideration and to use the aforesaid conclusions, then we can raise energy conversion coefficient (ECC) above 200% at the series connection of two and more VT. The scheme of such a device is shown in Fig. 4.
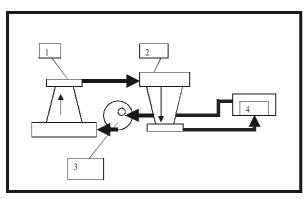
Fig. 4

Where: 1 – the first VT; 2 – the second VT; 3 – circulation pump; 4 – heat exchanger

According to Fig.4, the total energy output of the presented device is:

$$Q=K^2$$

Where: Q is the total output of the device; K is energy conversion coefficient of one VT; 2 – quantity of serially connected VT; P – the assigned power of the circulation pump.

In our earlier article [1], concerning VT application, we supposed that there is a straight transformation of vortex motion of ionized fluid into electric current. Under studying of many articles, devoted to the methods of water ionization, we discovered a significant one. It demonstrates that at the determined temperature, pure water increases its ionization capacity up to 3 orders without changing in the aggregative state [3]. The diagram in Fig.5 shows such dependence.
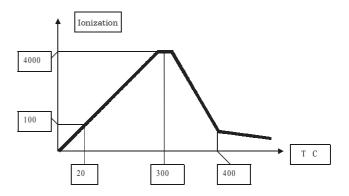
Fig.5
Diagram of the dependence of pure water ionization from temperature

The diagram demonstrates that water at 300°C temperature increase the quantity of ions in 4000 times as compared to 0°C and in 40 times as compared to 20°C. If to take into consideration that first experiments on VHG modernization help us to find the ways of fluid heating up to the practically any temperature without changing of its phase state, then on using the dependences (see Fig.5) it seems possible to create vortex fluid electric generators of the forward transformation. The aforesaid pneumohydraulic block, which is used for VHG functioning, allows to keep up water temperature at 300°C and pressure at about 90kg/cm^2 without threat of water evaporation! Presence of any rotation of fluid medium always causes appearance of two vortex flows. **These flows always move and rotate in opposite directions and if we do not put obstacles for their motion then they transform into each other and can exist without energy supply for an indefinite period of time.**

The presented VT form (see Fig.6) provides the producing of two fluid flows in the tube. These flows do not influence to each other and there is only their reciprocal overflow without disruption of the flows in the central part of VT. The tube presents a tubular body of rotation, which is created by hyperbola. There is positive angular acceleration of fluid in the lower part

of the tube; maximum speed of rotation of the axial and peripheral flows is in the middle part and negative angular acceleration, i.e. deceleration and transfer of kinetic energy into heat energy, is in the upper part of VT.
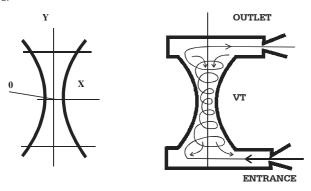
Fig.6
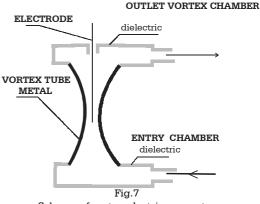
The maximum heating of fluid and its polarization is in the point Y=0. The polarization potential in the point can reach 10.000 V at 5m/sec flow speed for 10 cm diameter in the point. The cold flow, which comes along VT axis, is opposite to the peripheral hot flow. These flows close into one system in lower and upper chambers of VT. Thus, the presented VT classically modeled "rolling" and "unrolling" of water area.

There are no single vortexes in nature. Two vortexes, rotating in opposite directions, always appear while fluid mediums rotation! Science is not still able to describe energy overflows from one vortex center to the center of another one by means of mathematics. However we believe that this moment is close. There are maximum energy transformations of rotating water in the point Y=0.

The potential of the inner flow is equal to the outer flow by its value but is opposite by its sign. Potential difference is maximum in the point Y=0, in which removal of electric charges is the most effective.

It is appropriate mention here the name of Romanian engineer and researcher Henry Koanda, who in 20th of the last century discovered the so-called "Koanda effect" (attachment of fluid jet to the surface of usual kettle at pouring of it out the cups). Basing on this effect he suggested to make new type of aircrafts, which could have advanced bearing capacity and maneuverability. Unfortunately, money and conservatism of aircraft-industrialists did not allow realization of these engineering solutions.

At the same time, Koanda charged his disciple Patrick Flanagan with the job to research all **water properties**. The result was amazing! It was turned out that water actually has infinitely many phase states and when it is moving, then it can trap energy from the environment by some way. The publications on the point appeared in our press in the early eighties, late nineties of the last century. Most likely, they had become the basis of the invention, made by Potapov, i.e. vortex tubes for water!

Fig.7
Scheme of vortex electric generator

In the presented scheme of electric generator the entry and outlet vortex chambers are made of dielectric material in the spiral form. This material certainly should withstand not less then 300°C of fluid temperature and about 100kg/sm² of pressure. Fluoroplastic or ceramic can be used as such a material.

From aforesaid it seems to be possible to submit the new scheme of electric generator for readers' consideration (see Fig.8).
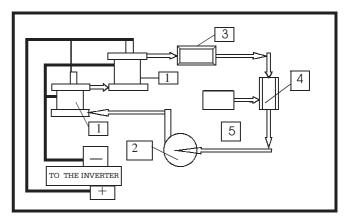
Fig.8
Generalized scheme of vortex electric generator
1 – vortex tubes; 2 – circulation pump; 3 – heat exchanger; 4 – automatic pneumohydraulic block; 5 - compressed-air flask

Actually we could finish the article if it were no disputes about excess energy, which is released at vortex motion of fluid in tubes. Having used a simple experiment, which any inquisitive person can repeat, we found the positive solution (see the scheme of the experiment in Fig. 9).
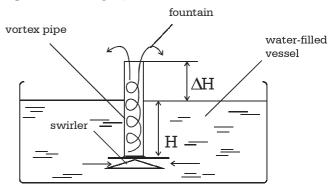
Fig.9
Demonstration of energy increase of fluid, rotating in vortex tube

A pipe with not less than 60 cm length and about 1-inch diameter is placed in a reservoir with not less than 50 cm depth. The lower part of the pipe is formed as an arm circular generator with about 15...17cm diameter. The gap width is about 2 cm. If we place the pipe with closed top end, which then will be open, into the reservoir, then water is splashed out above 20 cm of the reservoir level. Thus at the least 20% energy increase of energy mgH is observed.

By the way, we suggest orthodoxies of physics and other who have doubts to make one more simple experiment. Try to boil water in a can. When water starts to boil, swirl it with a spoon to the right or to the left. Then you will suddenly discover that all water surface is calm and only in the center of the can there is a water-steam mixture, which is about 20% higher than the level of water surface. You will also see that water is absolutely calm at walls of the can. This experiment can be reproduced anytime and anywhere, even in space, since it is a demonstration of **vortex** fluid motion and its actual influence on everything, which is around!

All presented engineering solutions are practically reproducible in any laboratory. The authors of the article would welcome the opportunity to co-operate with science and industry representatives for realization of the ideas in real serial production devices.

References

1. O.V. Gritskevitch, S.A. Lisnyak, On possibilities of vortex energetics //New Energy Technologies. 2002, #1(4), p.2-3

2. Patent RF #2045715, 1993

3. Chemical and Engineering News. 2000 #1, p.26

Investigation of Electric Energy Transmission Processes in non-Metallic Conducting Channels

D.S. Strebkov, A.I. Nekrasov, S.V. Avraamenko

All-Russian scientific Research Institute of Electrification of Agricultural Economy
2 Vishnyakovsky passage, 1 Moscow, 109456, Russia,
energy@viesh.msk.su

D.S. Strebkov

(Editor's notes by Alexander V. Frolov)

It has been found that at low frequency (1-25 kHz and higher) electric power can be transmitted with low losses from generator to receiver along single channel made of non-metallic conductive media such as water in plastic tube carbon thread, layer of damp soil, ITO films on glass substrate, laser and electronic beams. Transmitted power, as well as for traditional three phase lines, is limited by natural power of the transmission line and line capacity may reach at high voltage and pulse and operation modes the value 10^9 Wtt.

Introduction

The well-known methods of electric power transmission are based on transmission of active energy by means of conductivity currents in closed circuit. Electromagnetic energy spreads along power transmission lines (PTL) as progressing waves of electromagnetic field or field of charge [1]. Line wires made of aluminum or copper are conductive (guide) channels. Electromagnetic energy stream moves along these channels from generator to energy receiver and backwards to the generator. Maximum transmission possibility of 3-phase PTLs is limited by losses on the line resistance, by peak voltage (which is determined by electric strength of the insulation) and by electromagnetic stability of the line.

The modern approach to provide the electromagnetic stability consists in rigid regulation of line parameters by means of high-speed shunt reactor and consequence capacitive compensation for the purpose to except changes of electromagnetic power flows and to suppress resonant properties of a line [2].

In Tesla works [3] and in the researches of Russian scientists [4] a method of active power transfer was offered. This method supposes to transfer active power by means of electromagnetic capacitive current assisting with resonant properties of a single-wire line (SWL), made of a metal conductor. The purpose of the present work is a research of an opportunity to use non-metal conducting mediums for transmission of electric energy.

A pipe with not less than 60 cm length and about 1-inch diameter is placed in a reservoir with not less than 50 cm depth. The lower part of the pipe is formed as an arm circular generator with about 15...17cm diameter. The gap width is about 2 cm. If we place the pipe with closed top end, which then will be open, into the reservoir, then water is splashed out above 20 cm of the reservoir level. Thus at the least 20% energy increase of energy mgH is observed.

By the way, we suggest orthodoxies of physics and other who have doubts to make one more simple experiment. Try to boil water in a can. When water starts to boil, swirl it with a spoon to the right or to the left. Then you will suddenly discover that all water surface is calm and only in the center of the can there is a water-steam mixture, which is about 20% higher than the level of water surface. You will also see that water is absolutely calm at walls of the can. This experiment can be reproduced anytime and anywhere, even in space, since it is a demonstration of **vortex** fluid motion and its actual influence on everything, which is around!

All presented engineering solutions are practically reproducible in any laboratory. The authors of the article would welcome the opportunity to co-operate with science and industry representatives for realization of the ideas in real serial production devices.

References

1. O.V. Gritskevitch, S.A. Lisnyak, On possibilities of vortex energetics //New Energy Technologies. 2002, #1(4), p.2-3

2. Patent RF #2045715, 1993

3. Chemical and Engineering News. 2000 #1, p.26

Investigation of Electric Energy Transmission Processes in non-Metallic Conducting Channels

D.S. Strebkov, A.I. Nekrasov, S.V. Avraamenko

All-Russian scientific Research Institute of Electrification of Agricultural Economy
2 Vishnyakovsky passage, 1 Moscow, 109456, Russia,
energy@viesh.msk.su

D.S. Strebkov

(Editor's notes by Alexander V. Frolov)

It has been found that at low frequency (1-25 kHz and higher) electric power can be transmitted with low losses from generator to receiver along single channel made of non-metallic conductive media such as water in plastic tube carbon thread, layer of damp soil, ITO films on glass substrate, laser and electronic beams.

Transmitted power, as well as for traditional three phase lines, is limited by natural power of the transmission line and line capacity may reach at high voltage and pulse and operation modes the value 10^9 Wtt.

Introduction

The well-known methods of electric power transmission are based on transmission of active energy by means of conductivity currents in closed circuit. Electromagnetic energy spreads along power transmission lines (PTL) as progressing waves of electromagnetic field or field of charge [1]. Line wires made of aluminum or copper are conductive (guide) channels. Electromagnetic energy stream moves along these channels from generator to energy receiver and backwards to the generator. Maximum transmission possibility of 3-phase PTLs is limited by losses on the line resistance, by peak voltage (which is determined by electric strength of the insulation) and by electromagnetic stability of the line.

The modern approach to provide the electromagnetic stability consists in rigid regulation of line parameters by means of high-speed shunt reactor and consequence capacitive compensation for the purpose to except changes of electromagnetic power flows and to suppress resonant properties of a line [2].

In Tesla works [3] and in the researches of Russian scientists [4] a method of active power transfer was offered. This method supposes to transfer active power by means of electromagnetic capacitive current assisting with resonant properties of a single-wire line (SWL), made of a metal conductor. The purpose of the present work is a research of an opportunity to use non-metal conducting mediums for transmission of electric energy.

Methods

For realization of the experiments a single-wire energy system (SWES) was used. Its electric circuit is shown in Fig. 1 a,b. SWES consists of the following parts: high-frequency generator (1) of 28V voltage AC and 1 kWtt power; transmitting (2) and receiving (3) Tesla transformer with conductive channel (4) between them; rectifier (5) and electric load (7) as an incandescent lamp or electric motor (220V, 1 kWtt power). High-voltage winding of Tesla transformer is made in the form of cylindrical winding on the ferrite core with 50-100mm in diameter, 4000-6000 turns. The internal end of a high-voltage winding is connected to the conducting channel, and the external end is not connected at all (free end). A low-voltage winding that consists of 40-60 turns provides power supply of Tesla transformer. At the submission of electric power from the high-frequency generator to the winding of power supply zero potential appears on the free end of the high-voltage winding, and voltage with corresponding to the generator 1-25 kHz frequency is formed on the conducting channel. Besides, Tesla transformer as the spiral antenna generates electromagnetic waves of 5-10 cm length, which corresponds to the turn length of a high-voltage winding. Current resonance mode is formed in a supply circuit of Tesla transformer. At the same time, voltage resonance mode (of frequency equal to the generator frequency) is formed both in the reception and transmitting circuit of high-voltage windings and in the conducting channel (1).

The following materials were used as the conducting channels: filled with water or sea water polythene tubes with 10 mm diameter and 1,5 m long; plastic tray with soil layer of 150×10×400mm; film of tin dioxide – indium oxide (ITO) on 0,3 micrometer thick and 300 Ohm resistant glass substrate; graphite thread of 0,1 mm diameter, 500 mm long and with 100 Ohm resistance. For comparison steel and copper wire of 0,1 mm diameter and 5 m long was used also.

The voltage on the conducting channel changed in limits 1-10 kV, generator frequency changed from 1 up to 25 kHz. Voltage, current and capacity were measured on SWES output and on the load by standard electric measurement equipment.

Results and discussion

The replacement of the metal conductive channel to the channel made of non-metallic conductive materials does not effect to any reduction of possibilities of transmitting SWES or heating of a material of conducting channels. The consecutive connection of the channels did not resulted in reduction of transmitted power. Circuits break in the conducting water channel by the creation of an air gap led to the occurrence of arc discharge of reactive capacitor current. However this discharge did not cause increase of water temperature at transmitted power 300 Wtt and voltage 4,5 kV within 1 hour, that confirms the absence of energy losses in the conducting

channel. The increase of water temperature did not result in decrease of transmitted power. Water PH reduction from neutral value up to 4 was detected.

The increase of sea salt concentration in water up to the level of 5-7 g/l did not increase transmitted power in comparison with tap water. However the replacement of tap water to dionized water with 16 MOhm resistances resulted in 100 % decrease of transmitted power.

Thus, it is experimentally shown, that conducting channels, produced from non-metal materials, have quasisuper-conductive properties in SWES at resonant mode. Possible explanation of this effect is the absence of active conduction current in the channel and the dominant role in the process of energy transfer belongs to displacement current, for which Joule Lentz law is not valid [11]. In the supply circuit of Tesla transformer current is practically reactive, and in resonance conditions active values of inductive and capacitive currents are equal. Vectors of these currents are opposite in their phases. Current of the high-frequency converter is spent for losses (component less than 2 %) in supply circuit wires and in the core of Tesla transformer and also for creation of reactive current in the conducting channel. In the mode of voltage resonance we have measured voltage active values of high-voltage inductance windings and conducting channel, interturn capacitance of windings and the capacities of the conducting channel. **We have discovered that they were equal and their phases were opposite to each other.** Losses from transmission of capacitive current through active resistance of the conducting channel are insignificantly small. Corona discharged losses and leakage current could be decreased by isolation of conducting channel. In this case active current and magnetic field of the line are equal to zero. Electric field of the line has maximum value. As well as in usual PTLs, maximum transferred power is limited by charge power of the line. Angle between vectors of voltage is equal to zero in the beginning and at the end of a line. Quality factor of SWES at frequency 5 kHz is in 100 times above than usual PTLs at frequency 50 kHz. In the conditions of resonance it leads to the significant increase of voltage along the conducting channel and it also leads to transmission power.

In usual PTLs voltage changes along the line are insignificant. The angle between vectors of voltage in the beginning and in the end of PTL constitutes the value, which is proportional to the wavelength of line.

On the basis of the researches the methods and devices are offered for transmission of electrical energy through plastic water guide, electro-insulated from ground, through irrigational channels and through isolated pipelines, which are used for gas, oil, hot and cold water transportation. Also the energy can be transferred through fiber-optic cable with conducting film on the surface, through all-carbon composite cable and

through electro-insulated part of a ground and water surface, including highway parts. There are also methods and devices, designed for the following transmissions. These methods can be applied for transfer of power to stationary and mobile units. There are also generated requirements to electrical safety and to restriction of use of drinking and hot water from pipelines, which are under electrical voltage. These requirements and restrictions are generally the grounding of pipeline parts, which are located on certain distance from the generator. This distance is equal to the whole number of half-waves and for it SWES voltage is equal to zero. In the case of a side pipeline it is necessary to ground the parts of the pipeline that are placed on the distance of odd number of quarter-wavelength from the main pipeline. For 5kHz frequency the quarter-wavelength is equal to 15000 m.

N. Tesla grounded one end of high-voltage windings of his transformer on the receiving and on the transmitting end of SWES. Tesla considered this condition as the necessary one for the transfer of power along the Earth. The results of our researchers demonstrate that it is not necessary to use metal self-closed conductor (and current lines in the Earth) for transmission of electric energy on low frequency (1-25 kHz).

For this frequency energy could be transferred from the generator to the receiver if we have single-wire guide system created as non-metal conducting channel. By the similar way electromagnetic energy is transferred by laser beam or microwave-beam. But in our case we can obtain high degree of efficiency that is caused by slight losses on energy absorption and energy emanation. Thus one of the ends of high-voltage winding at the energy generator will have zero potential and remain free. The symmetric end of a high-voltage winding on the reception end should be connected to some natural capacity 6 (Fig. a), which can represent the case of a balloon or frame of a tractor. In our experiments we used metallic safe-box as such natural capacity.

Editor's note: In 1887, October 11, the famous Russian scientist Pavel Yablotchkov got the France Patent #120684, which described the method to increase efficiency of electrical circuit by means of "atmosphere electricity". It was confirmed in many experiments that output power can be twice more than power provided for the circuit from primary electric generator. For that it is necessary to use a single-plate capacitor. The special feature by Yablotchkov, that provides maximum efficiency, is the high degree of air ionization. For this Yablotchkov proposed to use the special capacitor, which consists of a big number of metallic needles. By its view this construction reminds of a hedgehog. Thus we can assumed; that above described natural capacity (balloon or frame of a tractor) serves as a collector of free electrons. By Yablotchkov the efficiency of such systems can be increased by means of maximization of ionization process. It will not lead to the increase of losses if the second end of the high-voltage winding is not grounded.

In the other method of energy transfer, a condenser-diode block 8 was connected to the conducting channel on the receiver end. This block is one of the known circuit of voltage doubling, Fig.1 (b). On the condenser 8 electric energy is transferred through electronic switch 9 to load 7. In this case the entire length of conducting channel 4 and Tesla transformer winding 2 at generator must be equal to odd number of quarter wave-lengths.

Non-metal conducting channel (for instance, fiber-optic or coal-plastic cable) can be used for transfer of electric energy not only along but also as perpendicular to the Earth (for example, to relay aerostat or sounding balloon).

SWES conducting channel can be also created by ionization of air ions with laser beam [13]. Neodymium laser with double frequency and with energy 1 Joule in impulse is able to create 10^{15} cm^{-3} ion concentration in air. This concentration is sufficient for streamer initiation and for transfer of electric energy through the conducting channel. Ionization potential, time of ion existence and of excited molecule state, coefficient of multiquantum absorption, all these determine the limiting length of conducting channel in atmosphere that is equal to 300 km and its wave resistance at 200-400 Ohm. Voltage which is necessary for SWES comes to the quantity 0,5 MV – 15 MV, that depends on the length of a channel.

We suggest to use relativistic electron bunches of high energy as the conducting channel out of the atmosphere. As distinct from laser bunches they do not have divergency. In this connection the Moon or artificial conducting body, where the energy receiver is placed, can be used as natural capacity 6. Whereas energy generator can be installed on the Earth or on its satellite. Transmission range of electric energy is determined by the length of the generated conducting channel. The entire length of the conducting channel in the beginning and in the end must be equal to the whole number of half-waves. Here the length of high-voltage windings of two Tesla transformers must be taken in considerations. Electric energy, transmitting through the conducting channel, can exceed the energy of electron and laser beams generators in 10-100 thousand times. These generators play the role of a directing system (of usual SWEG wires), along which the transfer of electric energy proceeds.

It was offered to use colliding and crossing electron and laser beams with conducting transitional bodies as conducting channels for transfer of energy from the Space to the Earth and back. On the heights up to 30 km compositional coaly and fiber-optic cables can be used. To create the global energy system of the Earth it was also suggested to apply single-wire energy system and conducting layers of the Earth ionosphere as the conducting spherical channel [14].

Thus for electric energy transfer at the frequency 1-25 kHz and higher in the resonance mode a single-wire channel from the following non-metal conducting

mediums can be used: water, damp soil, coal-plastic, oxide film, ionized air channels, that are created by laser beams in the atmosphere, ionosphere conducting layers, and also beams of relativistic electrons out of the atmosphere. These non-metal conducting channels in the resonance mode have negligibly small resistance losses especially if to be compared with metal conductors, which are used in the known non-resonance methods of energy transfer by means of active conduction currents in the closed circuit. Electric energy in the resonance mode can be transferred with small losses from the generator to the receiver along the single-wire channel, made of non-metal conducting materials. The transfer can be realized at the frequency 1-25 kHz and higher, to any distance and to any direction relatively to the Earth. The transmission capacity is limited by charge power of a line as well as in the usual PTL. At high voltage the transmission capacity can reach the quantity from 10 Wtt to 10^9 Wtt in the pulse and streaming modes.
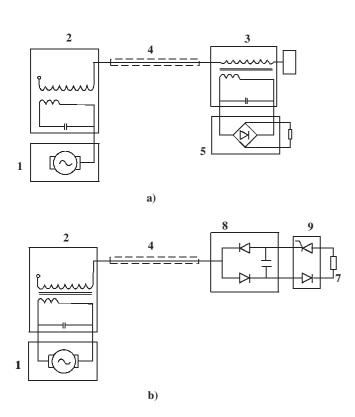
Fig. 1
Electric circuit of single-wire energetic system
with non-metal conducting channel
a) SWES with symmetric array of Tesla generators

b) SWES with diode-capacitor block in the end
of conducting channel

References
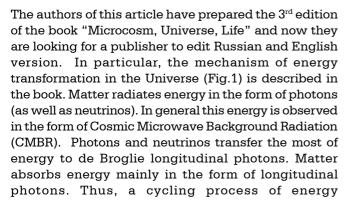
1. A.M.Kalashnikov, Ya.V Stepuk. Bases of radio engineering and radiolocation. Oscillating systems. M: Department of USSR Defense 1965, - p.127-158.

2. G.N.Alexandrov, S.V. Smolovic, Flexible lines for electric energy transmission over long distances. V Symposium "Electrical Engineering-2010", October 12-22, 1999, Moscow Region P, 35-42.

3. N.Tesla Apparatus for transmission of electrical energy. US Pat #349621, 15.05.1900.

4. S.V. Avraamenko Mode of electric devices supply and device for its realization. Pat. RF #210649 11.04.1995. Publ. 10.04.1998. Bulletin #10.

5. D.S.Strebkov, S.V.Avraamenko, A.I. Nekrasov Device for power supply of mobile electrical aggregation. Pat. RF #2158206, 15.04.1999. Publ. 27.10.2000. Bulletin #30.

6. D.S.Strebkov, S.V.Avraamenko, A.I. Nekrasov Mode of supply of electric transport devices and device for its realization. Pat. RF #2136515, 26.08.1998. Publ. 10.09.1999. Bulletin #25.

7. D.S.Strebkov, S.V.Avraamenko, A.I. Nekrasov One-trolley system of power supply of mobile electrical aggregations. Materials of the international scientific and technical conference on automation of agricultural manufacture. Minsk 6-8 July 2000, - p. 65-66.

8. D.S.Strebkov, S.V.Avraamenko, A.I. Nekrasov Research on single-wire system of electric energy transmission. International conference Ecology and agriculture. Technique. – Saint-Petersburg, 2000, - p.50-55.

9. D.S. Strebkov, S.V. Avraamenko, A.I. Nekrasov. Single-wire electric system for renewable-based electric grid. Third European Solar Congress "Eurosun 2000", June 19-22, 2000, Copenhagen, Denmark p., 10.

10. D.S. Strebkov, S.V. Avraamenko, A.I. Nekrasov. SWEPS – a novel electric power transmission technology. Planetary Association for Clean Energy Newsletter, 2001. – vol. 11, - 3, - p. 7-11.

11. I.E. Tamm. Bases of electricity theory. – M.Science, 1976. – p. 133, 397-400.

12. D.S. Strebkov, S.V. Avraamenko, A.I. Nekrasov. Mode and device for electric power transmission. Pat. RF #2172546, 24.01.2000. Publ. 20.08.2001. Bulletin #23.

13. D.S. Strebkov, S.V. Avraamenko, A.I. Nekrasov. Mode and device for electric power transmission. Pat. RF #2143775, 25.03.1999. Publ. 27.12.1999. Bulletin #36.

14. D.S. Strebkov, S.V. Avraamenko, A.I. Nekrasov. Mode and device for electric power transmission. Pat. RF #2161850, 14.07.1999. Publ. 10.01.2001. Bulletin #1.

Microcosm, Universe, Life

Alexey G. Shlienov

Budapeshtskaya, 66-1-77,Saint Petersburg, 192286 Russia

Ernest L. Petrov

Marshala Zaharova, 50-809, Saint Petersburg, 198330 Russia, Fax.: (812) 587-9349

The authors of this article have prepared the 3rd edition of the book "Microcosm, Universe, Life" and now they are looking for a publisher to edit Russian and English version. In particular, the mechanism of energy transformation in the Universe (Fig.1) is described in the book. Matter radiates energy in the form of photons (as well as neutrinos). In general this energy is observed in the form of Cosmic Microwave Background Radiation (CMBR). Photons and neutrinos transfer the most of energy to de Broglie longitudinal photons. Matter absorbs energy mainly in the form of longitudinal photons. Thus, a cycling process of energy transformation (as well as matter transformation) occurs in the Stable Universe.

The 3rd edition is devoted to the description of 6 World Systems (Table 1), at that the 6th System is based on Unified Field Theory, which is developed by the authors, and proceeds from the following:

(Editor's: The understanding of the energy transformation mechanism allows to develop new fuel-less energy sources based of mutual transformations: longitudinal photons ⟵⟶ transverse photons).

Table 1

System	Principal Ideas
The 1st – Geocentric (Ptolemaic system)	Geocentrism and Anthropocentrism
The 2nd – Classic (Copernicus – Newton's system)	Description of the Universe on basis of Newton's Law of Gravity
The 3rd – Compromise (Tycho Brahe's system)	The compromises between two first systems
The 4th – Fractal (Charlie's system)	Non-heterogeneity of Large-Scale distribution of matter in the Universe
The 5th – Relativistic (Einsteinian system)	Description of the Universe on basis of gravitational field equations. Anthrop principle
The 6th – based on Unified Field Theory	Electromagnetic nature of all physical interactions. Irreversibility of all elementary micro-processes in combination with circular character of transformations in Large Scale of space ($c/H=R$ order) and time ($t_H=I/H$ order).

1.   For theoretical results, which agree with the facts, it is necessary to use assigned inertial system (as Lorentz did), which, as we have known, is connected with CMBR. Obtained by this way decisions can be applied to the other systems, in particular, with use of Lorentz transformation for mass, energy, momentum, time and length.

2.   Theory must agree with the whole known collection of facts, starting with such established empirical generalizations as basic principles of Natural science (Giordano Bruno, Lyell) and conservation laws (Mayer, Joule, Helmholtz, Faraday, Newton, Huygens, Vernadsky).

3.   All physical objects could be presented as the systems, consisting of quanta of positive electric charge (protons), quanta of negative electric charge (electrons in fermions or boson states, which are part of neutrons

and atomic nuclei) and quanta of energy, impulse, moment of momentum (apeirons).

4.   The leading role in the Universe energetic belongs to de Broglie longitudinal photons (of the first class, i.e. with the spin I=0), energy of which is twice as much as apeiron energy and is equal to hH, where h – is Plank's constant, H – is Hubble's constant.

5.   Longitudinal photons, polarizable and depolarizable by matter particles, are the carriers of gravitational, magnetostatic and strong interaction. Electromagnetic interaction is carried by photons with spin I=±1 and weak interaction is carried by neutrinos and apeirons with spin I=±0.5.

6.   All elementary microprocesses are irreversible, that correlates with circular character of transformations in Large Scale of space and time.

7.   In particular, there is an irreversibility of the process of photons and neutrinos motion. At each segment, equal to the length of de Broglie wave, photons and neutrinos lose energy hH, which is equal to longitudinal photon energy. In such a way, Hubble's law can be presented as the following:

$$\lambda = \lambda_1 \exp\left(\frac{r}{R}\right) = \lambda_1 \exp(Ht),$$

$$Z = \frac{\lambda}{\lambda_1} - 1 = \exp\left(\frac{r}{R}\right) - 1 = \exp(Ht) - 1,$$

where λ, λ_1 – are observable and laboratory wave lengths, r – is distance, R – is radius of gravitation interaction, which is equal to the radius of Metagalaxy, t – is time, Z – is cosmological red shift.

8.   As resulted upon this process, the excess of longitudinal photons is absorbed by matter. At that, mass is considered as measure of capacity, which is absorbed by matter in form of longitudinal photons. Thus, energy of the matter should be increased according to the law:

$$E(t) = m_\circ c^2 \exp\left(\frac{\varepsilon'}{c^2} t\right) \approx m_\circ c^2 + m_\circ \varepsilon' t,$$

at that,

$$\frac{\varepsilon'}{c^2} = \frac{H}{137^2},$$

where ε'- is the capacity, which is absorbed by unit mass in form of longitudinal photons, c – is velocity of light. In particular, electron of the 1st Bohr orbit in hydrogen atom (i.e. in this case at de Broglie wave length) absorbs energy hH at 1 period.

9.   Being in ionization state, intergalactic matter is the general portion of average density of matter in the Universe ρ_{av}, besides, the average value of absolute velocity of baryon component is close to c/137. Let's consider this correlation to be exactly executed.

CMBR is the most powerful cosmic radiation. Its specter is close to that one of black body at temperature

T_F=2.726K, i.e. its spectral density is maximal at frequency ν=160GHz. Cosmological red shift causes the increase of spectral density in radio-region (ν<160GHz) and the decrease of it in microwave region (ν>160GHz). Each of these processes is compensated by the inverse Compton effect, i.e. by the dispersion of radio-photons at matter corpuscle, first of all at protons. Calculations demonstrate, that average energy of absorbent radio-photons is equal to $0.45 \cdot 10^{-15}$erg (ν=68GHz) and average energy of radiated microwave photons is equal to $2.17 \cdot 10^{-15}$erg (ν=330GHz). There is one re-radiated microwave photon per one absorbed radio-photon. At that, the concentration of photons and CMBR spectrum remain unchangeable. Syunyaev and Zeldovich concerned the close inverse Compton-effect of CMBR dispersion on electrons in clusters of galaxies. Actually such an effect was discovered in 2 clusters of galaxies.

Thus, on transferring of energy to photons, matter corpuscles must fill the deficiency of energy by receiving it from longitudinal photons. In fact, there are observed demonstrations of longitudinal photons, they are "static fields". In this case it is a cosmic magnetic field, which accelerates charged particles of matter (Alfven). More detailed consideration let us to find a virial correlation between 4 main components of energy density:

$$\frac{\rho_{av} c^2}{137^2} = E_F = 2E_M = 2E_{kin},$$

where $r_{av} c^2$- is an energy equivalent of mass density of matter; E_F- is energy density of CMBR; E_M - is average energy density of magnetic field; E_{kin} - is average density of kinetic energy. Thus, some kinds of energy circularly transfer to another, which are interrelated (Fig. 1).

$$\frac{\varepsilon_{av} \rho_{av} V}{1.26} = E_F HV = 2E_M HV = 2E_{kin} HV =$$

$$= \frac{(\varepsilon_{av} - \varepsilon') \rho_{av} V}{0.26} = \varepsilon' \rho_{av} V,$$

where ε_{av} - is average capacity, radiated by unit mass in form of photons; V – is volume of 10^{81} cm^3 order, according to which the averaging is made.
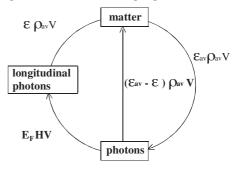
Fig.1
Energy transformation in Large Scale ε_{av}=0.0942 erg gr^{-1}sec^{-1} – is average energy, which matter unit radiates in unit time; ε'=0.07476 erg gr^{-1}sec^{-1} – is energy, which matter unit absorbs in form of de Broglie longitudinal photons in unit time; ρ_{av}=0.8730·10^{-29} gr cm^{-3} – is average matter density in the Universe; E_F=4.18·10^{-13} erg cm^{-3} – is energy density of cosmic microwave background radiation (CMBR); $V\approx$10^{81}cm^{-3} –is volume at which the averaging is made; H=1.562·10^{-18} Hertz.

10.   These correlations include pressures, densities and temperature T_F, i.e. we have the equation of the state of intergalactic matter, and thus of Metagalaxy and the Universe. Let us present this equation in simple form:

$$E_F = \frac{\varepsilon' \rho_{av} R}{c} \approx \frac{\varepsilon_{av} \rho_{av} R}{c}$$

and let us compare it with correlation for density of radiant energy on surface of a star * or of star system

$$E_* = \frac{\varepsilon_* \rho_* R_*}{3c} \approx \frac{\varepsilon_* \rho_* R_*}{c} .$$

It is an especially amazing analogy between Metagalaxy (and the Universe) and large-scale cosmic system g, for which

$$E_g \approx \frac{\varepsilon_g \rho_g R_g}{c} ,$$

at that $E_g \approx E_F$, $\varepsilon_g \approx \varepsilon_{av} \approx \varepsilon'$.

This equation agrees with the whole observed data of globular clusters, galaxies, groups and clusters of galaxies, in particular, with empirical correlations, which are magnitude - angular diameter.

11.   The stated approach lets to determine the values of many fundamental constants by different ways. As a case in point, the results of definite values ε_{av} and ε', erg g^{-1} c^{-1} are presented in the Table 2.

Table 2

#	Data	ε_{av}	ε'
1.	The boarder between two parts of the Main Sequence of stars	of 0.1 order	of 0.1 order
2.	The results of recalculation of observed star characteristics as respects to their centers	of 0.1 order	of 0.1 order
3.	The local minimum of star luminosity function near the Sun (according to G.A. Starikova's data)	of 0.1 order	of 0.1 order
4.	The correlation: mass - luminosity of white dwarf stars	of 0.1 order	of 0.1 order
5.	The correlation: mass - luminosity of neutron stars	of 0.1 order	of 0.1 order
6.	The correlation: mass - luminosity of globular clusters	less than 0.5	less than 0.5
7.	The correlation: mass - lumonosity of elliptic galaxies	more than 0.06	more than 0.06
8.	The correlation: mass - luminosity of spiral galaxies and irregular galaxies *Ir I*	less than 0.5	less than 0.5
9.	The correlation: mass - luminosity of galaxies as a whole	of 0.1 order	of 0.1 order
10.	The correlation: mass – luminosity of clusters of galaxies	of 0.1 order	of 0.1 order
11.	Empiric values of H, ρ_{av}, E_F constants	of 0.1 order	of 0.1 order
12.	The most exact values of h, e, G, E_F constants	0.0942	0.07476

12.   Uncontradictory description of Microcosm and the Universe promotes the better understanding of Life, which is inseparably unified with them. The statistical data manipulation of more than 100 catalogues of microphysics and cosmic objects let us to get more than 1000 empirical correlations and diagrams, and to determine, that they agree with theoretical correlations, which were received according to the ideas on circular character of energy transformations (Fig. 1) and of matter in the Universe.

HYPOTHESIS OF A THEORY OF EVERYTHING

Jack P. Gibson

www.crikcritter@infoave.net

This work grew out of an interest in curious occurrences, physical, mathematical and metaphysical. Many things just do not fit normal knowledge or are of unknown origin. Items such as gravity, time, mathematical equations of higher order, ghosts, e.s.p., etc. After a number of years, the problem began to appear to be not of this physical dimension but of a grander scale. A multi-dimensional space-time format seems to offer solutions to understanding most of the problems. In the following hypothesis all known physics and mathematics are considered to be valid. Metaphysical aspects, while not accounted for by physics and mathematics, are considered to be present in nature, either real or as a defect in physical processes, simply because they are experienced by so many people. The hypothesis will be kept simple because the details require the work of many specialists beyond my abilities and there is an endless list of speculative problems to which the hypothesis could be applied. To save time and distractions to the reader the following is stated as fact, knowing full well it may not be so, in order to present the most concise statement of the hypothesis.

The Universe, from the smallest to largest unit, is a quantum probability based fractal illusion. All matter exists in three-dimensional space, both internal and external. Any grouping can be considered a fractal space. It is both real and imaginary at the same time acting according to Eulers equation:

$$(e \wedge (i*Pi)) + 1 = 0$$

more useful in this instance is the general form:

$$e \wedge ix = -1 = \cos x + i \sin x = -\tan 45 \deg$$

which allows use of a variable where Pi , a constant, is used in the original. The key to understanding of multi-dimensional space time is the realization that Pi is a variable! As we know Pi is the lock on three-dimensional space. Because of its mathematical nature it can neither grow nor diminish, thereby locking in the three dimensional form of the fractal unit under consideration. Such a fractal unit is considered to be at rest. But Einstein's equation $E = mc^2$ includes speed or movement. When objects are moving relative to a fixed point, the moving object is foreshortened in the direction of movement. A circle becomes an ellipse and Pi becomes indeterminate letting the circumference fluctuate, according to its relative speed, between two and Pi in a circle of unit diameter. If one goes beyond the value Pi the Universe grows out of bounds without

limit becoming unstable. If the value goes below two then the Universe blinks out. I.e., one has exceeded the value of the constant c. Since all matter moves relative to a fixed fractal point and there are infinitely many points in the Universe of constantly changing velocities, the Universe is constantly adjusting its reality to the relative speeds of its components. Thus you get at times some weird things. Since not only time changes but the structure and observable mass also, one finds such things a matter appearing and disappearing as the small units of chaos move through the Universe. Changes in the local probability structure cause matter or reality to change in the image structure of the Universe.

To delve further into the aspects of what is happening, let us consider the following. Einstein's familiar formula gives the relationships for our three-dimensional fractal space. The inverse of the formula gives the speed with which any fractal space can change, including the Universe. There is both a positive and negative component to the change. If we consider our fractal space to be positive then we may consider any other point to be negative. There are an infinite number of such points and while the effect on our space may be small from any one point; the effect adds up. Any moving or changing of mass must effect the entire Universe. Mass and inertia are tied together in such a system. Measured mass is the attempt of the mass to return to zero relative speed in its associated fractal space according to the laws of physics, i.e. return to its lowest energy state. Inertia is the same effect of the changing state of the mass from one-dimensional state to another. Both are the result of efforts to change the dimensional state of mass. The positive aspect of the square root of the ratio of energy/mass is the view we behold from our position in space while the negative is the view from the opposite position.

In addition to the view of the Universe as being made up as fractal space, all moving at different relative speeds to any other fractal space, one must consider the make up of space having at the same time dimensional space, according to Euler's formula given above. There are at any moment an infinite number of spatial dimensions, defined by the relative speed of the fractal units involved, extending throughout the Universe. Each fractal unit is constantly changing its position in dimensional space. There are thus constantly changing energy states throughout the Universe both in relative position in real space and in dimensional space. While on one hand the distances across the Universe are immense in relative space, many points across the Universe are present in the same dimension at the same moment, possibly allowing for instance travel across space without the time penalty. This results in what might be considered a tuned circuit for the Universe or its components.

If we consider the structure of the relative Universe to be stored energy analogous to magnetic fields and the dimensional fields to be capacitive, then we can plot the results on a conventional two-dimensional chart

where x is the horizontal axis and the vertical is the imaginary axis. A well-known construction in electrical physics and which is known to very often follow relativity closely. That throws the negative side of i into the second quadrant and the positive into the fourth quadrant, if we consider the Universe to be reflective and x to be negative when i is positive. Euler's equation does not reflect a totally positive or negative result. One wonders at this point as to other equations where unity is set to one or higher dimensional equations where the three dimensional components are factored out leaving another component. The fourth is considered to be time but how do the remaining fit into a Universe as this hypothesis describes? The line of thought can be followed further into electrical analogy, which I leave to the reader. The important result is that there should be a resultant Q, figure of merit, of the Universe resulting in nodes, or peaks, of probability. The resultant tuned frequencies of the Universe can be calculated from known factors of the Universe. Such an effect should show nodes of reality where matter occurs.

Properly applied the above hypothesis gives speculative answers to most of the problems facing science today. Questions such as:

Is the Universe open or closed?

Both. At each fractal component of the Universe there is a separate universe each reaching limits beyond which it cannot exist. At the same time there is somewhere a top Universe that must ever remain open.

What is the structure of time?

Time results from the ever changing fractal Universe and goes forward because all justification of the Universe causes a corresponding change in reality. Time moves slower at higher relative speeds and as all time is perceived to be slower in other fractal units, changes in our time are perceived to always go forward.

What are such phenomena as ghosts, spirits, apparitions, etc?

Events such as these are fragments of probability left behind due to sudden changes in the probability of the illusion we perceive to be reality. Having little energy they are perceived but are not able to interact with the more forceful real reality. They float free in probability space interacting at random intervals with the more forceful realities of the real world.

Where is the missing matter of the Universe?

There may be clouds of matter floating about in deep space, however, most of the approximately 90% of matter missing will be found in the layers of dimensions making up space and which, though interacting, do not appear in our reality. Calculations show only about ten dimensions are active in any one reality. The rest curl up in a ball or knot. While an essential part of space or reality they are not perceivable from the fractal Universe of which they are a part.

Parapsychology?

Events of this type can be attributed to interconnections on the dimensional, or imaginary, level where there can be interactions between fractal units though not directly associated with each other in relative space. The manifestation varies or is temporary due to the constantly changing and adjusting due to interactions of the probabilities of the Universe. Due to the innate probabilities of each individual, one may be more susceptible or sensitive than other individuals.

Bible, prophesies, angels, demons, aliens, etc.

If one takes the Bible at face value, with some leeway for it's age and many translations, it pretty well describes what it purports to describe. Historic predictions and conditions of today. If we assume this hypothesis has any value then the passage in which God says "Let us make man in our image." takes on new meaning. If we assume the probability basis of the Universe and the constant changing due to justification of reality and time then the miracles listed do not seem so in violation of the physical world. The miracles only require some ability to control reality. Certainly well within the providence of a creator. It speaks of heavenly beings capable of traveling through the Universe in real time and some who interfered with mankind on the Earth and that they are still doing so today. If this hypothesis is correct then it is readily seen how such events could occur. Creation events closely compare with the way todays computers are made and organized. If man can do it, why could not the original creator? If one ignores a creator, then one is hard pressed for an answer as to how the Universe was created.

UFOs

If one accepts any part of the above then the functioning of UFOs begins to be understandable. They move through space by making spatial jumps through fractal nodes. Their appearing around magnetic and electrical sources maybe due to some, on our part unrealized, easy entry and exit to other space at those points. They are able to make right angle turns at high speeds because the speed is only from our viewpoint. From the viewpoint of the craft it is simply changing locations in space. The turning on edge may be only a different orientation of space at that point.

Particles "Out of the Vacuum"

As we shoot atomic matter at higher and higher speeds into nuclei we are able to fracture the construction of the building blocks of matter. The high speed fractal construction of probabilities of the unit used smashes into the target with enough speed to mix the probabilities resulting in new nodes from the total probabilities present. Various probabilities are ejected resulting in short lived particles in unstable nodes. At times fragments of probabilities appear out of nowhere as they form up to combine into larger nodes. Travel distance and speed observed may give a clue to the basic frequency of the Universe.

Black Holes

The midpoint of the tuned circuit of the relative structure and dimensional structure of the Universe. As matter spirals in, from the relative structure, to be torn apart into its basic probabilities it passes through to the dimensional structure of space which holds 90% of the matter. There it is available for recollection and use by the relative space.

Probability. Basic structure of the energy of space.

Everything operates at random but within preferred patterns set by the frequencies involved. If you look long enough anything can be found. As a result we find odd bones of prehistoric creatures that may have never existed. Weird things can happen. Odd pieces of structure can occur such as metaphysical events. The Q of space is sometimes sharp and sometimes rounded, spreading out to include things not really meant to be in the overall scheme of the Universe. Christ said "If you had the faith of a mustard seed, you could say to the mountain move and the mountain would move". (For those not of the Christian faith, this may be considered not as any proof but as a representative statement of the meaning of this paragraph.) That is in keeping with the quantum statements that nothing exists until it is seen and that we have some control over the probabilities. If the structure of space is based on probability then the next important question is 'What is a probability'. We look to probability as a simple mathematical work. But, what makes probability work?

● ●

JACK P. GIBSON

About the Author:

EDUCATION: University of North Carolina at Raleigh (Nuclear & Electrical Engineering), Air University, Gunter Air Force Base (Radio Fundamentals, Motorized Equipment) Western Electric Co Engineering Center

The entire Universe is based on mathematics but we have no idea what is underneath the mathematics. Are dimensional planes perhaps better represented by other number bases? Are some of the unsolvable mathematical problems solvable in other number bases?

Gravity

All forces in the Universe are the same. Gravity happens to be the one that works on our fractal space. Others, molecular, atomic, and nuclear are the same but work in different fractal space. All are the result of matter trying to reach its lowest potential.

The above are only random questions chosen without any order. Most other problems can in some way be answered in line with the hypothesis, if not in detail. Too many questions can be fitted to the hypothesis not to take a serious look at it even though it may seem a little far out. The number of answers from one simple statement of the structure of the Universe defends the idea better than details.

One possible proof, and a relatively simple one, occurs to mind. Einstein's theory of relativity was proved when NASA flew a clock in space and then determined that time did slow down. To test the above hypothesis I would like to see four clocks used in the following manner.

Four atomic clocks in sets of two each. Two to be left on the Earth and two to be placed in space for an appropriate time. At the end of that time one of the clocks on the Earth to be taken into space and compared to the two already in space. Bring one of the clocks in space down to the Earth and compare to the clock left on the Earth.

The clock taken to space should read slower compared to the clocks in space because the ones in space were at rest compared to the one on the Earth.

The clock brought back from space should read slower, the same as the first one flown by NASA, because the clock on the Earth was at rest compared with the one in space.

The two clocks left in space should be returned after an appropriate time and compared to the ones on the Earth. The original in space should now be slower than the original on the Earth and its mate from space. The fourth clock is unpredictable.

The author apologizes for any errors in theory, mathematics, etc. There was no one to consult on the hypothesis which is an original work of my own and drawn on many references of others from the past If it has any value I am indebted to the work of all the others whose work I relied on. Any errors are entirely my own and not attributable to others. This work is freely published in the public domain to be used by any and all who wish to do so. It is not to be copyrighted or patented in any manner so as to restrict others rights to the hypothesis or it's use.

The Charge and Mass of a Photon

Dzabrail Kh. Baziev

Sirenevy blv., 65 building 4, apt.55
105484, Moscow, Russia
(095) 461-9398, (866-22)-5-10-11

Abstract

The discovery of true elementary particle named **electrino**, which has a constant mass and constant positive charge and which is a material carrier of magnetic field, electric current and all kinds of emanation, was firstly practically applied at the modernization of wireless telephone. In the review V. Anpilogov writes: "The question on the influence of low intensity microwave radiation on human health still remains open for discussion for more than 50 years" [3]. Discussion on this question has been already inappropriate still it was definitely proved in the patent application "Device, which is made to put away the charged particles flux from the head of the user of mobile wireless phone". During the talk on mobile wirelessphone $2,6 \cdot 10^{22}$ particle/sec pass through user's brain, whereas their energy is $7,65 \cdot 10^{-19}$ Joule, and the energy of binding of molecules in protein polymers ranges at $4,3-7,6 \cdot 10^{-19}$ Joule according to L. Poling. From that we can conclude that microwave radiation of the radiotelephone with top antenna leads to the destruction of user's brain tissue. The author of the patent application D. Baziev (#2001105456, 28.02.01. in Russia and #PCT/RU02/00054 of the international application) offers to fix the antenna on the low part of the radiotelephone and to produce radiotelephones with minimal length within 10 cm. In this case the diagram of the directional radiation pattern is on the level of the user's chin and the brain is out of the direct exposure area. This harmless of the microwave radiation could not be proved before the discovery of "electrino".

Introduction

A systems analysis of all experimental and observation material gathered in physics, astronomy, and astrophysics from the times of Galileo let us reveal the following:

1.   Experimental materials do not agree with the existing physical theory.
2.   There is a certain fundamental disadvantage of the experimental material, which prevents to build a consistent theory.
3.   This fundamental disadvantage consists in the absence of a charge antipode of electron, which is in the form of a true elementary particle with a positive charge and finite mass.
4.   The proton and positron are not true elementary particles and neither of them can be a charge antipode of the electron because they are subjected to splitting.

5.   Discovery of the second true elementary particle with a positive charge could restore the charge symmetry in physics, thus leading to a radical revision of the existing theoretical physics and resolving its current crisis state.

Searching for this particle required to ascertain physical nature of Planck's constant. This became possible only after the structure of a light beam had been understood. Namely, it was the photon sector velocity, known as Millikan constant μ, rather than the speed of light c, that proved to be a constant, viz.:

$$\mu = \lambda_i^2 v_i = 119.916984 \text{ m}^2/\text{s} = \text{constant}, \qquad (1)$$

where λ_i and v_i are the wavelength and frequency of the *ion* monochromatic beam in the light beam.

This new quantity elucidated the physical nature of Planck's constant:

$$h = m_\varepsilon \mu \frac{\sqrt[3]{4\pi/3}}{2} =$$
$$= 6.6262681 \cdot 10^{-34} \text{ kg m}^2/\text{s} = \text{constant}, \qquad (2)$$

where m_ε is the mass of the second (after electron) true elementary particle to be called "electrino". From this expression we have

$$m_\varepsilon = \frac{2h}{\mu\sqrt[3]{4\pi/3}} =$$
$$= 6.85575729963 \cdot 10^{-36} \text{ kg} = \text{constant}. \qquad (3)$$

The electrino has a positive charge ε determined by

$$\varepsilon = \frac{m_\varepsilon n_\varepsilon e}{m_u - n_e m_e} = \frac{-3.229526609098 \cdot 10^{-54}}{1.6578584539 \cdot 10^{-27}} =$$
$$= 1.98764431671 \cdot 10^{-27} \text{ C}, \qquad (4)$$

where $m_u = 1.66057 \times 10^{-27}$ kg is the mass of an elementary atom accepted as a mass equivalent of one atomic unit; $n_e = 3$ is the number of electrons in one elementary atom; $e = 1.6021892 \times 10^{-19}$ C is the charge of an electron; $m_e = 9.038487 \times 10^{-31}$ kg is an improved value of electron mass; $n_\varepsilon = 2.418198867 \times 10^8$ is the number of electrinos in an elementary atom.

Thus, it is obvious that Planck's constant is the angular momentum of the electrino. Moreover, it was Planck's constant that concealed the second true elementary particle, which is the charge antipode of the electron discovered by J.J. Thompson as far back as in 1897.

The solution of Planck's constant has become a basis for the synthesis of the new theory of physics [1]. This theory in particular shows that the electrino is the carrier of the magnetic field and electrical current. It is a photon of radiation of all ranges, and serves as a universal carrier of energy and information. The electrino plays the role of a neutrino in moving along the first order trajectories.

The first experiment

An extraordinary importance and novelty of the new theory required **an experimental proof of the electrino**. For that several experiments were made in the Institute of General and Inorganic Chemistry, Moscow. The experiment was based on the following effects predicted by the theory.

1. If assume that electrino exists and that light beam is a flux of particles having positive charge and finite mass [1] we can conclude the following. At the discharge of the dc source through an incandescent lamp in which the current is converted to light and irreversibly emitted, the source weight in charged state must differ from its weight in discharged state. If we prove this difference experimentally we may say that light does consist of material particles of finite mass and a dc charge carried away by light is positive because an incandescent lamp (W=15 Wtt) does not emit electrons, which are the carriers of negative charge.

2. The second effect to prove was that the weight of a discharging dc source is *increasing* whereas its weight   when charged is *decreasing*.

To prove the validity of these predictions, several sealed containers with different dc sources inside were fabricated. The electrodes were brought out through glass insulators. The batteries were discharged through an electric lamp radiating in the visual and infrared ranges. The weight of containers was measured before and after discharge process with accuracy ΔW=±0,02 mg; balance error was equal to Δ = ± 0,05 mg the standard deviation of the measurements was within σ = ±0,03 mg; the buoyancy was calculated for each measurement of weight. In this paper, we present test results of only one container with four generally marketed GP rechargeable cells connected in series. The total battery voltage reached 5400 mV at 6000 mA/h charge capacity. The discharge was interrupted when the voltage dropped to 4000 mV, the duration of the discharge was measured accurate to one second. Two series of experiments were run: one in air, the other, under argon. Each series had ten charge-discharge cycles (Table 1 and Fig. 1). The total amount of the experiments and detailed discussion of results have been summarized in a recently published brochure [2].

The results of the above tests allow us to make the following conclusions:

1. Both galvanic and rechargeable cells during a discharge through an electric lamp show sufficient changes in their weight and charge thus proving that photons have a finite mass and a positive electric charge.

2. A new elementary particle, named electrino, derived from Planck's constant in August 1982, and published in May 1994, thus gets a complete and absolute experimental confirmation.

The second experiment

One of the concepts of the new theory is that the speed of light in vacuum is a function of photon frequency along the beam axis, according to the proportions:

$$c_i = \sqrt{\mu \nu_i} \quad [\text{m/s}], \qquad (5)$$

$$\nu_i = \mu / \lambda_i^2 \quad [\text{s}^{-1}]. \qquad (6)$$

According to the new theory, for the velocity of monochromatic light (solar light or mercury-discharge lamp, but not a laser) with a wavelength of λ_r=6.8×10^{-7} m (mid-point of the red spectral line), we have

$$\nu_r = \mu / \lambda_r^2 = 2.59336038 \cdot 10^{14} \text{ s}^{-1}, \qquad (7)$$

$$c_r = \sqrt{\mu \nu_r} = 1.76348505882 \cdot 10^8 \text{ m/s}, \qquad (8)$$

which is 58.823% of the speed c_v = 2.9979246×10^8 m/s of a violet beam with a wavelength of 4×10^{-7} m.

We have to account that, according to this theory, the laser beam is not a true light beam though it is created of electrinos. The speed of laser beam is equal to the speed of beam plus the speed of current in the conductor, viz.,

$$\nu_0 = 2.8992629 \cdot 10^8 \text{ m/s} = \text{const} \qquad (9)$$

If we select a monochromatic beam of ultra-violet light with a wavelength of λ_1 =4 · 10^{-8} m then its velocity will be c$_1$=10 C:

$$c_1 = \mu / \lambda_1 = \frac{119,916984 m^2 / \sec}{4 \cdot 10^{-8} m} =$$
$$= 2,9979246 \cdot 10^9 m / \sec$$

$$\nu_1 = \mu / \lambda_1^2 = \mu / 16 \cdot 10^{-16} m^2 = 7,4948115 \cdot 10^{16} \sec^{-1}$$
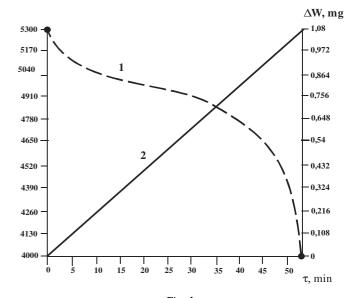
Fig. 1

Voltage drop [mV] of a battery and (2) weight increment [mg] of container #6 in an argon atmosphere during the second discharge cycle [minutes]. X-direction – is spark duration in minutes; Y-direction – is voltage of a battery; auxiliary Y-direction – is weight incensement (mg).

$$c_1 = \sqrt{\mu \cdot v_1} = \sqrt{8,987551907 \cdot 10^{18} m^2/c^2} = 2,9979246 \cdot 10^9 m/\sec$$
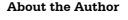
This experiment has been run yet, and it is offered for experimental verification with further publication of experimental results.

Table 1

Weight of container #6 (under argon) in charge-discharge experiments

Run	Measured value $W \pm \sigma$, mg	Charged battery		Discharged battery			Charge
		Buoyancy Gmg	Real weight $W_0 = W + G$	Measured value $W \pm \sigma$, mg	Buoyancy Gmg	Real weight $W_1 = W + G$	weight $\Delta W_z = W_1 - W_0$, mg
1	126825.13±0,02	85.031	126910.166 ±.0.02	126825.901 ±0.01	85.002	12691.903 ±0.01	0.737
2	126825.107±0.02	86.572	126911.679 ±0.02	126826.221 ±0.01	86.538	126912.759 ±0.01	1.080
3	126825.21±0.01	86.782	126911.992 ±0.01	126826.279 ±0.01	86.560	126912.839 ±0.01	0.847
4	126825.187±0.01	86.563	126911.749 ±0.01	126826.493 ±0.02	86.385	126912.878 ±0.02	1.128
5	126825. 65±0,04	86.290	126911.941 ±0.04	126826.65 ±0.01	85.836	126912.941 ±0.04	0.770
6	126827.28±0.00	85.187	126912.467 ±0.00	126827.990 ±0.01	85.204	126913.194 ±0.01	0.727
7	---	---	---	---	---	---	---
8	126826.98±0.00	86.182	126913.162 ±0.00	12682 7.897 ±0.02	86.308	126914.205 ±0.02	1.042
9	126826.95±0.00	86.307	126913.257 ±0.00	126827.757 ±0.01	86.402	126914.159 ±0.01	0.902
10	126827.25±0.00	86.294	126913.544 ±0.00	126828.35 ±0.00	85.729	126914.079 ±0.00	0.535

References

1. D.K. Basiev, Osnovy obyedinyonnoy teorii fiziki (Foundations of Unified Theory of Physics), Pedagogika, Moscow, 1994
2. D.K. Basiev, Zaryad i massa fotona (The charge and mass of a photon), Pedagogika, Moscow, 2001
3. V.P. Anpilogov, "The century of quality", #3, 2001, p.60

● ●

About the Author

When a child Dzabrail Kh. Baziev became a political exile along with all Balkarian people; in 1956 he was rehabilitated and in 1957 graduated from the secondary school with steady purpose to become an outstanding chemist. His first higher education is biological and chemical (two-profile department of Kabardino-Balkarian State University). In 1965 Baziev also completed his post-graduate study in Biological Department of Moscow State University.

At 1979 Dz.Kh. Baziev had published 25 scientific articles on ornithology and ecology, however, this period became a sudden turn in his scientific work. In order to elaborate the basis of theoretical biology, he came to the conclusion that biological process could not be described without understanding of its physical essence. On the other hand, it had become evident that there was no any solution for physical phenomenon, which is the basis of biological process.

In 1983 the scientist gave descriptions of his first fundamental discoveries. He found the solution of the physical essence of Plank's constant and pioneered the use of it in gases analysis. It was a revolutionary step in science since the synthesis of science was realized at the fundamental level for the first time.

As the result of this considerable work there was a new interdisciplinary theory of physics. The author created new thermodynamics of real gases and new electrodynamics, which differs from maxwellian one and it considers *electrino* as the carrier of magnetic field and electric current.

Dzabrail Kh. Baziev has succeeded in the systematic analysis of the vast experimental material and discovered that **electrino, as the true elementary particle with positive charge, is able to provide the connection of physics with biology, chemistry and other parts of the fundamental science. Thus it leads us to the radical reconsideration of all conceptions, existing in natural science.**

The Homopolar Motor: A True Relativistic Engine

Jorge Guala-Valverde

Norpatagonica-R&D Dept. S.Fe 449 Neuquen, Argentina
Q8300BG1, Confluencia Tech University Neuquen, Argentina
gual@ieee.org

Pedro Mazzoni

Fundación Julio Palacios Neuquen, Argentina
fundacionjuliopalacios@usa.net

Ricardo Achilles

Confluencia Tech University Neuquen,Argentina,
RA Biosystems Neuquen, Argentina
achilles@ieee.org

This article discusses experiments, which enable the identification of the seat of mechanical forces in homopolar-machines. Authors provide a suitable variation on a recent work "The Unipolar Dynamotor: A Genuine Relational Engine" [3], where "relational" implies "absolutely relativistic". The authors' view agrees with both Weber's recognition in the 19th century of the importance of relative motion in electromagnetic phenomena [4] and Einstein's 1905 statement concerning electromagnetism [5].

The Faraday disk: a reversible engine

The essential components of the homopolar machine, first conceived by Faraday in 1832, are shown in Figure 1. A conducting disk, free to rotate in the neighborhood of a permanent magnet, is attached to the end of a shaft. A closing wire provides a conducting path between two arbitrary points of the disk. Such a device exhibits *reversible* behavior.
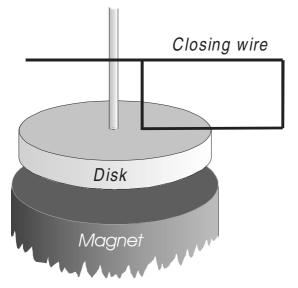
Fig.1
Faraday's setup magnet, disk and closing wire

A radial current path of length L takes place in a region of the disk when direct current (*dc*) from an external source is injected into the closing wire. The interaction of the current with the magnetic field produces a Laplace force [6]

$$\boldsymbol{F} = \int_{a}^{a+L} I(d\boldsymbol{r}x\boldsymbol{B})$$ causing the rotation of the disk. This

set-up is the *motor configuration.*

When the disk is spun by an external source of mechanical energy, an *emf* appears in it. The displacement of free charges is produced in this case by the Lorentz force $\boldsymbol{f} = q(\boldsymbol{v}x\boldsymbol{B})$, converting the conducting disk into an *emf* source able to drive *dc* through the whole disk plus closing-wire circuit. This set-up is the *generator configuration*.

A seemingly curious fact occurs in the motor configuration, when *dc* is injected into the circuit with the disk attached to the magnet. Both disk and magnet turn together.

Two rival theories, a relativistic and an absolutistic one, have been applied to understand the observed facts:

In relativistic view, generator configuration makes sense only when there is relative motion of the magnet with respect to either the disk or the closing wire. Also, a motor configuration will only take place if the *possibility of relative motion* between magnet and either disk or closing wire is enabled.
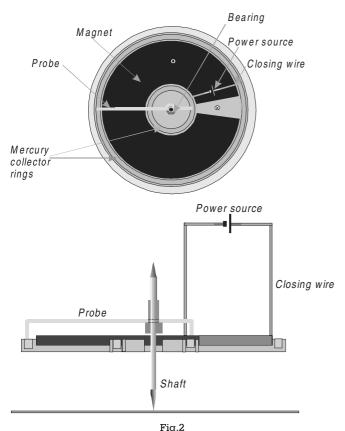
Thus, in the relativistic framework, with the magnet attached to the disk, the closing wire becomes the "active" part for the production of mechanical forces or *emf*. In this case the disk itself behaves as a "passive" element providing a closing-circuit current path.

Conversely, in the eyes of an absolutist, a generator configuration is enabled only because of the disk or closing-wire *absolute* motion. Here, absolute means "relative to a frame where the preponderance of the mass of the universe is at rest" [7,8]. In our case, the lab frame acts as an acceptable absolute-motion reference. Thus, from an absolutistic view, the magnet's rotation with ∂ B/t = 0 in each point of the surrounding space is unable to produce an *emf* on nearby conductors. When in a motor configuration, *dc* is injected in the circuit, and the absolutist assigns the observed rotation to the magnet "dragging" by the conductor. Here, the closing wire acts as a "passive" circuit element.

New experimental work, complementary to that currently known on the subject, introduces arguments in favour of the relativistic viewpoint. The related experiments, whose underlying physics rests upon a modified version of the original Faraday setup, are described in the following sections.

The asymmetrical rotor

Figure 2 shows the disk-shaped ceramic permanent magnet creating the axial magnetic field **B**. The removal of a 12° sector introduces a field-reversion region. Outgoing and ingoing **B** field lines are represented by the and symbols, respectively.

Fig.2
Layout of the Asymmetrical Rotor applied to the experiments

Two mercury collector rings are embedded in a wood cylinder. One is located close to the hollow-disk magnet inner rim and the other in the proximity of the outer rim. The magnet's inner and outer radii are 25 and 75 mm, respectively, and its height 25 mm. Its average flux density 2 mm above the magnet has been estimated to be 0.05 T based on a generator experiment with a rotating copper disk. The magnet-and-wood-cylinder body (the asymmetrical rotor from here on) is firmly anchored to a vertical shaft terminated in sharp points at both ends. While the lower one lays on a hard-polished surface, a conical bearing, enabling its almost frictionless rotation, centers the upper one.

Unlike the series-connected conductors diametrically anchored to the shaft in the Guala-Valverde case [3], only one radial conductor wire, a probe located 2 mm above the magnet's face, was considered. By mounting it on a bearing, its free rotation is permitted with its ends remaining in contact with both collector rings. A 12V lead-acid battery applied to the closing wire feeds the probe through the collector rings. In the first four experimental cases presented the closing wire remains firmly anchored to the lab. In two complementary experiments, rotation of the closing wire mounted on two shaft-centered bearings is allowed. Its behavior as

a probe occurs by the injection of *dc* from an additional closing-circuit wire anchored to the lab.

Experimental

Six experiments performed are described below:

1. Rotor anchored to the lab, probe free to rotate above the magnet's upward magnetic-field region: A radially-ingoing injected *dc* in the 0.2 A range was enough to overcome conductor-bearing and mercury-wire contact friction. A net *counterclockwise rotation* of the probe took place.

2. Probe anchored to the rotor above the magnet's upward magnetic-field region, with both free to rotate: A radially-ingoing injected *dc* in the 5 A range was enough to overcome conductor-plus-rotor inertia and friction. A net *counterclockwise rotation* of the probe took place.

3. Rotor anchored to the lab, probe free to rotate above the magnet's downward magnetic-field region: A radially-ingoing injected *dc* in the 0.2 A range was enough to overcome conductor-bearing and mercury-wire contacts friction. A net *clockwise rotation* of the probe took place.

4. Probe anchored to the rotor above the magnet's downward magnetic-field region, both free to rotate: A radially-ingoing injected *dc* in the 5 A range was enough to overcome conductor-plus-rotor inertia and friction. A net *counterclockwise rotation* of the probe took place.

5. Rotor anchored to the lab, closing wire free to rotate above the magnet's upward magnetic-field region: A 0.4 A *dc* injected in the inner collector ring was enough to overcome conductor-bearing and mercury-wire contacts friction. A net *clockwise rotation* of the closing-wire took place.

6. Rotor anchored to the lab, closing wire free to rotate above the magnet's downward magnetic-field region: A 0.4 A *dc* injected in the inner collector ring was enough to overcome conductor-bearing and mercury-wire contacts friction. A net *clockwise rotation* of the closing-wire took place.

Discussion of results

Experiments (1) and (3) can be explained using either absolutist or relativistic viewpoints because of the coincidence of the probe motion relative to the lab with the probe motion relative to the magnet.

Experiment (2) can be explained by a trivial absolutist argument founded on a hypothetic probe "dragging effect" on the magnet. A relativistic viewpoint recognizes the "active" rotational torque on the closing wire rather than on the probe where, hinging on Newton's third law, the whole action may be split in two:

Magnet-probe. The magnet produces a counterclockwise torque on the probe, and the probe exerts an equal but opposite torque on the magnet.

Magnet-closing wire. The magnet exerts a clockwise torque on the closing wire, and the wire an equal but opposite torque on the magnet.

With the probe attached to the magnet, there is no chance for relative motion between them. Consequently, due to the action-reaction cancellation, rotation is forbidden. Conversely, with the closing wire mechanically decoupled from the magnet, relative motion of the latter is permitted. The torque exerted by the closing wire on the magnet is responsible for the observed rotation.

Experiment (4): Due to its similarity with (2) a trivial relativistic explanation is applicable to the counterclockwise torque exerted by the closing wire on the magnet. There is no known plausible absolutistic explanation for it. As quoted above, the hypothetical dragging effect would produce a clockwise rotation in this case. The consideration of the experiments (2) and (4) suffices to reject the dragging hypothesis.

Complementary experiments (5) and (6) confirm the short-range extension of the field-reversion region founded on the closing-wire *clockwise* rotation (6). Briefly speaking, the closing wire is not sensitive to the field reversion and the magnet's *counterclockwise* reaction explains at once the outcome of (4). Clearly, experiments (5) and (6) show that the torque on the closing wire is independent of its location on the magnet.

Figure 3 depicts the two rotational torques involved in (2) and (4).
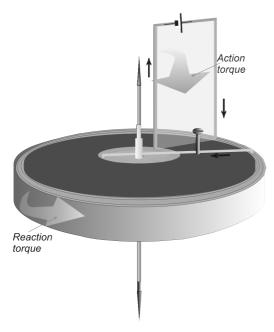
Fig.3
Rotational torques acting on the magnet and
on the closing wire

Topological and miscellaneous considerations

One of the keys to the success of the above described experiments lies in the dynamotor's magnet design (see Fig.4). The short-range field reversion region allows the inversion of the Laplace force on the probe, making the force on the closing wire insensitive to that ***B**-field* reversion.
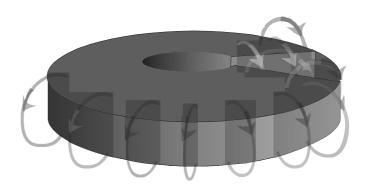
Fig. 4
The magnet's field-revision region

In all the above cases the electromagnetic forces between probe and closing wire were neglected because of its small magnitude compared to the predominant magnet-wire interaction forces.

The observed torques became, in all the experiments, independent of the location of the contact points between closing wire and collector rings. Also, the closing wire shape exhibited no noticeable influence on torques. These observations can be easily explained using the *div**B** = 0* fundamental law, Laplace force, and some elementary topological considerations.

Kennard [1], Bartlett [1], Panosky [7,8], Muller [9], Wesley [10] and some of this article's authors took absolutistic viewpoints when dealing with homopolar phenomena [11,12]. On the contrary, Weber [4], Assis [13], and Kelly [14] adopted a relativistic framework on the issue from the beginning.

By attaching the magnet to the disk in the original Faraday setup, the relative rotation between disk and closing wire remains unchanged. Therefore, in a generator configuration, the disk plus magnet rotation at with the closing wire at rest in the lab is entirely equivalent to the closing-wire rotation at – with the disk plus magnet at rest. This fact introduced a correct but physically "colorless" weak relativism to the homopolar generator description: the "unipolar generator really has three components, the magnet, the cylinder and the meter (including the contacts). A relative motion of the last two, not the first two, is required" [1].

A growing interest in basic electromagnetism [15,27] can not be ignored, and from time to time some authors, attempting to catch "free energy" from the space, have

claimed the design of homopolar engines with efficiency greater than unity, as can be checked by searching for *homopolar motor* on the Internet. The strict application of Newton's third law precludes the above non-physical possibility.

It is worthwhile to stress that the homopolar machine is a famous example where Faraday's flux rule fails. This fact worried Faraday himself and is clearly discussed by Feynman [28] who emphasized that the correct physics is always given by the Lorentz force law and the Maxwell fundamental equation *curl E = -B/t.* **Homopolar induction is fully understood using only the Lorentz force. Our experiments enhance the relativistic structure of the Lorentz force because the only relevant velocity is the velocity of the conductor relative to the magnet.**

References

1. J. Guala-Valverde and P. Mazzoni, "The principle of relativity as applied to motional electromagnetic induction". Am. J. Phys 63, 228-229 (1995).

2. J. Guala - Valverde, P. Mazzoni and Ro Blas, The quasilinear generator and = 0". Am. J. Phys. 65, 147-148 (1997).

3. J. Guala-Valverde and P. Mazzoni, "The unipolar dynamotor: a genuine relational engine". Apeiron 8, 41-52 (2001).

4. A.K.T. Assis, Weber Electrodynamics (Kluwer, Dordrecht, 1994).

5. A. Einstein, "Zur elektrodynamik bewegter körper". Annalen der Physik 17, 891-921 (1905). See also The Principle of Relativity. A.Einstein, H.A. Lorentz, H. Weil and H. Minkowsky, pp. 35-65 (Dover, New York, 1952).

6. G. Cavalleri et al. "Experimental proof of standard electrodynamics by measuring the self-force on a part of a current loop". Phys. Rev. E 58, 2505-2517 (1998).

7. W. K. H. Panofsky. Private communication (letter to J.Guala-Valverde, dated Jan 30, 1995).

8. W. K. H. Panofsky and M. Phillips, Classical Electricity and Magnetism. (Addisson Wesley, NY, 1955).

9. F. Müller, "Unipolar induction experiments and relativistic electrodynamics". Galilean Electrodynamics 1, N°3, 27-31 (1990).

10. J.P. Wesley. Private communication (letter to J.Guala Valverde dated Nov 01, 2001). See also "Progress in Space-Time Physics", Benjamin Wesley, Blumberg (1987).

11. J.Guala-Valverde and P. Mazzoni, "The motional electromagnetic induction revisited". Russian Academy of Sciences, 3rd Conference, pp.186-188. St. Petersburg (1995).

12. J. Guala-Valverde and P. Mazzoni, "The unipolar Faraday generator revisited". Galilean Electrodynamics, 4, 107-108 (1993).

13. A.K.T. Assis and D.S. Thober, "Unipolar induction and Weber's electrodynamics". Frontiers of Fundamental Physics, Plenum Press, NY, pp. 409-414 (1994).

14. A.G. Kelly, "Experiments on unipolar induction". Physics Essays 12, 372-382 (1999).

15. A.E. Robson and J.D. Sethian, "Railgun recoil, Ampere tension, and the laws of electrodynamics". Am. J. Phys. 60, 1111-1117 (1992).

16. A.K.T. Assis, Relational Mechanics (Apeiron, Montreal, 1999).

17. P. Graneau, "Electromagnetic jet-propulsion in the direction of current flow". Nature 295, 311-312 (1992).

18. T. E. Phipps and T.E. Phipps Jr., "Observation of Ampere forces in mercury". Phys. Lett. A 146, 6-14 (1990).

19. P.Graneau and N. Graneau, Newtonian Electrodynamics (World Scientific, Singapore, 1996).

20. V.F. Mikhailov, "The action of an electrostatic potential on the electron mass". Annales de la Fondation Louis de Broglie 24, 161-169 (1999); 26, 33-38 (2001).

21. A.K.T. Assis, "Comment on experimental proof of standard electrodynamics by measuring the self-force on a part of a current loop". Phys. Rev. E 62, 7544 (2000).

22. P. Graneau and N. Graneau, "Electrodynamic force law controversy". Phys. Rev.E 63, 058601-2 (2001).

23. T.E.Phipps and J. Guala-Valverde, "Simulation of amperian current elements by magnetic toroids". 21st Century Science & Technology 11, 55-65 (1998).

24. M. Bueno and A.K.T. Assis, Inductance and Force Calculations in Electrical Circuits (Nova Science Publishers, Huntington, N.Y. 2001).

25. H. Aspden, "Anomalous electrodynamic explosions in liquids". IEEE Trans. on Plasma. Sc. 14, 282-285 (1986).

26. G.M. Graham & D.G. Lahoz, "Observation of static electromagnetic angular momentum in vacuo". Nature 285, 154-155.

27. V. Dvoeglazov, "Essay on the nonmaxwellian theories of electromagne-Tism". Hadronic Journal Suppl. 12, 241-245 (1997).

28. R. Feynman, The Feynman Lectures on Physics, II. (Addisson Wesley,NY, 1964).

Weight Reductions Generated by Bucking-Field Permanent Magnets

LAB REPORT ON SmCo RING MAGNET EXPERIMENTS

Experiments conducted by:
William C. Simpson

New Horizons Research 600 Meridian Street Extension, #302 Groton, CT 06340
Tel. (860) 405-1157

The following experiments were conducted at the *Coastal Environmental Laboratory* (CEL) at Avery Point, Groton, Connecticut. (41° 19' 0.17" N. latitude x 72° 3' 50.27" W. longitude x 35 feet elevation above mean sea level) I wish to thank the personnel at the CEL for their generosity for providing the use of their *Mettler Toledo*® Model AG104 electronic scale for the measurements taken in the proceeding experiments. The AG104 electronic scale is an enclosed pan unit with a maximum mass range of 101-grams with 0.0001-gram readability.

The purpose of these experiments was to see if there is any detectable weight change when permanent magnets are forced together with their like-poles facing each other. The magnets were weighed individually, in both directions, with their field poles oriented vertically. The sums of the two individual magnet weights (magnet #1 and magnet #2) in each vertical orientation were compared to the weight measurements taken when they were assembled using the nylon bolt and wing nut depicted in **DIAGRAM 1**. The specifications for the two Samarium Cobalt magnets used in the following experiments are shown in **DIAGRAM 1**.

The first set of experiments with the SmCo Ring magnets were conducted January 14, 2002. An inverted paper cup was used to raise the test sample magnets 2.75" above the AG104 electronic scale pan in order to minimize possible magnetic interaction with the scale-sensing element, as depicted in **DIAGRAM 2**. The tare adjustment was used to set the scale readout to 0.0000-gram with the cup in place. The magnets were weighed individually. Magnet #1 weighed 9.9450-gram with the N pole facing up and 9.9397-gram with the S pole facing up. Magnet #2 weighed 9.9520-gram with the N pole facing up and 9.9443-gram with the S pole facing up.

The second set of experiments with the SmCo Ring magnets were conducted February 4, 2002. These experiments were shielded with Mu 80 magnetic

DIAGRAM 1
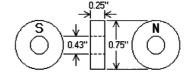
Editorial: This article is one more link between magnetizm and theory of aether, to my mind. It is possible to assume that in his experiments the author creates small but detectable changes in density of aether, that demonstrates itself as the weight changes.
Alexander V. Frolov.
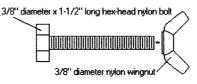
RARE EARTH MAGNET SPECIFICATIONS:

Samarium Cobalt (SmCo mixed) ~ SCIENTIFICS Cat. #B30307-30
Ring type. OD = 0.75", ID = 0.43", Thickness = 0.25"
Gauss = 8,000
density = 8.7-gram/cc

NYLON RETAINER BOLT AND WING NUT:

3/8" diameter x 1-1/2" long hex-head nylon bolt

3/8" diameter nylon wingnut
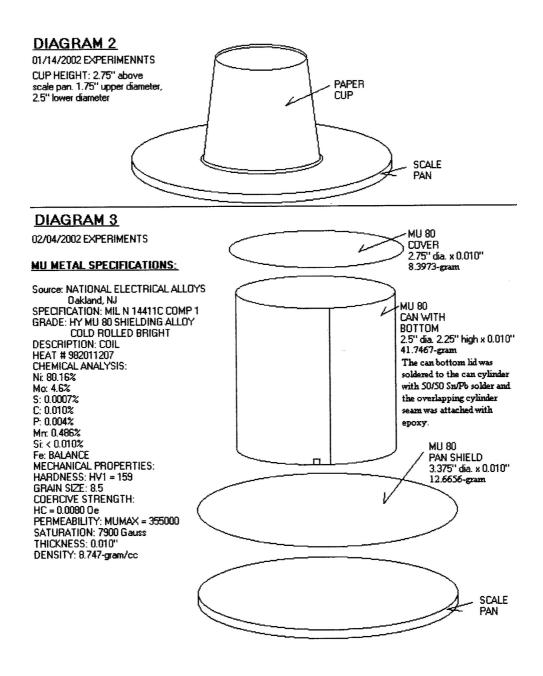
mass of nylon bolt plus nylon wing nut = 5.1610-grams

shielding material as depicted in **DIAGRAM 3**. The scale was tare adjusted to 0.0000-gram with the entire set of Mu 80 shield pieces in place. Then the magnets were weighed individually. Magnet #1 weighed 9.9483-gram with the N pole facing up and 9.9486-gram with the S pole facing up. Magnet #2 weighed 9.9527-gram with the N pole facing up and 9.9542-gram with the S pole facing up. The Nylon bolt and wing nut were placed in the Mu 80 shield can (without the magnets) and the scale was tare adjusted to 0.0000-gram. Therefore, the readouts would only be reading the weight of the bucking magnets.

The first column in **TABLE 1**, the vertical measurements, is the distance of separation d, or air gap, of the magnets. The second column shows the January 14, 2002 weight measurements of the two magnets, as shown in **DIAGRAM A**. The third column shows the January 14, 2002 weight measurements of the two magnets, as shown in **DIAGRAM B**. The fourth column

shows the February 4, 2002 weight measurements of the two magnets, as shown in **DIAGRAM C**. The fifth column shows the February 4, 2002 weight measurements of the two magnets, as shown in **DIAGRAM D**.

The horizontal measurement, as depicted in **TABLE 2**, **TABLE 3**, **TABLE 4** and **TABLE 5**, are through the four basic magnetic compass headings; North, East, South, and West respectively. They are referenced to **DIAGRAM E** and **DIAGRAM F** for the January 14, 2002 experiments and **DIAGRAM G** and **DIAGRAM H** for the February 4, 2002 experiments. The corresponding graphs of the force change plots, **GRAPH 1**, **GRAPH 2**, **GRAPH 3**, **GRAPH 4**, and **GRAPH 5** accompany each table. The forces were converted from the mass readings, which are a scalar measurement, to dynes. The convention used for the force vector was chosen as plus (+) for up, or a weight reduction, and minus (-) for a weight increase.

DIAGRAM 2

01/14/2002 EXPERIMENNTS

CUP HEIGHT: 2.75" above scale pan. 1.75" upper diameter, 2.5" lower diameter

PAPER CUP

SCALE PAN

DIAGRAM 3

02/04/2002 EXPERIMENTS

MU METAL SPECIFICATIONS:

Source: NATIONAL ELECTRICAL ALLOYS
    Oakland, NJ
SPECIFICATION: MIL N 14411C COMP 1
GRADE: HY MU 80 SHIELDING ALLOY
    COLD ROLLED BRIGHT
DESCRIPTION: COIL
HEAT # 982011207
CHEMICAL ANALYSIS:
Ni: 80.16%
Mo: 4.6%
S: 0.0007%
C: 0.010%
P: 0.004%
Mn: 0.486%
Si: < 0.010%
Fe: BALANCE
MECHANICAL PROPERTIES:
HARDNESS: HV1 = 159
GRAIN SIZE: 8.5
COERCIVE STRENGTH:
HC = 0.0080 Oe
PERMEABILITY: MUMAX = 355000
SATURATION: 7900 Gauss
THICKNESS: 0.010"
DENSITY: 8.747-gram/cc

MU 80 COVER
2.75" dia. x 0.010"
8.3973-gram

MU 80 CAN WITH BOTTOM
2.5" dia. 2.25" high x 0.010"
41.7467-gram
The can bottom lid was soldered to the can cylinder with 50/50 Sn/Pb solder and the overlapping cylinder seam was attached with epoxy.

MU 80 PAN SHIELD
3.375" dia. x 0.010"
12.6656-gram

SCALE PAN

DIAGRAM E
NOT TO SCALE

DIAGRAM F
NOT TO SCALE

ELEVATION VIEW OF THE VERTICAL EXPERIMENTS

DIAGRAM G
(CUT-AWAY VIEW)
NOT TO SCALE

NOTE: ALL MU 80 COMPONENTS ARE FABRICATED WITH 0.010" THICK STOCK.

DIAGRAM H
(CUT-AWAY VIEW)
NOT TO SCALE

NOTE: ALL MU 80 COMPONENTS ARE FABRICATED WITH 0.010" THICK STOCK.

NOTE:

January 14, 2002 Experiments: Start time: 13:27 hours EST, End time: 15:40 hours EST.

February 4, 2002 Experiments: Start time: 13:18 hours EST, End time: 14:50 hours EST.

TABLE 1:

Air gap d	01/14/2002 EXPERIMENTS OPEN, WITH PAPER CUP		02/04/2002 EXPERIMENTS WITH MU 80 SHIELDING	
	Diagram A N to N vertical 19.8893-gram (Sum of 1 & 2)*	**Diagram B** S to S vertical 19.8917-gram (Sum of 1 & 2)*	**Diagram C** N to N vertical 19.9025-gram (Sum of 1 & 2)*	**Diagram D** S to S vertical 19.9013-gram (Sum of 1 & 2)*
0.0 Inch	19.8759-gram 0.0134-gram weight reduction (0.06737%)	19.8757-gram 0.0160-gram weight reduction(0.08045%)	19.8760-gram 0.0265-gram weight reduction(0.13324%)	19.8758-gram 0.0255-gram weight reduction(0.12821%)
1/8 Inch	19.8761-gram 0.0132-gram weight reduction(0.06637%)	19.8751-gram 0.0166-gram weight reduction(0.08346%)	19.8760-gram 0.0265-gram weight reduction(0.13324%)	19.8763-gram 0.0250-gram weight reduction(0.12570%)
1/4 Inch	19.8763-gram 0.0130-gram weight reduction(0.06536%)	19.8748-gram 0.0169-gram weight reduction(0.08497%)	19.8760-gram 0.0265-gram weight reduction(0.13324%)	19.8768-gram 0.0245-gram weight reduction(0.12318%)
3/8 Inch	19.8765-gram 0.0128-gram weight reduction(0.06436%)	19.8753-gram 0.0164-gram weight reduction(0.08246%)	19.8760-gram 0.0265-gram weight reduction(0.13324%)	19.8777-gram 0.0236-gram weight reduction(0.11866%)
1/2 Inch	19.8774-gram 0.0119-gram weight reduction(0.05983%)	19.8753-gram 0.0164-gram weight reduction(0.08246%)	19.8757-gram 0.0268-gram weight reduction(0.13475%)	19.8809-gram 0.0204-gram weight reduction(0.10257%)
5/8 Inch	19.8776-gram 0.0117-gram weight reduction(0.05883%)	19.8754-gram 0.0163-gram weight reduction(0.08195%)	19.8779-gram 0.0246-gram weight reduction(0.12368%)	19.8806-gram 0.0207-gram weight reduction(0.10408%)
11/16 Inch	19.8777-gram 0.0116-gram weight reduction(0.05832%)	19.8748-gram 0.0169-gram weight reduction(0.08497%)	19.8773-gram 0.0252-gram weight reduction(0.12670%)	19.8832-gram 0.0181-gram weight reduction(0.09100%)

* Magnets #1 and #2 were individually weighed in the orientation used in each experiment and their separate weights were added together.

The following equation was used to calculate the weight changes, in dynes, in the proceeding graphs.

$$\overrightarrow{\Delta F} = k \cdot \Delta mass \cdot g$$

where

$$k = 980.665 \times dyne \times gm^{-1}$$

and

$$g = 9.80665\ m \times sec^{-2}$$

which is the local rate of gravitational acceleration.

The product of the measured changes in mass, $\Delta mass$, and g is denoted as follows on the graphs:

$$NNopen_{n,1} = \Delta mass \times g$$

for N-to-N pole facings in the open (or unshielded).

$$SSopen_{n,1} = \Delta mass \times g$$

for S-to-S pole facings in the open (or unshielded).
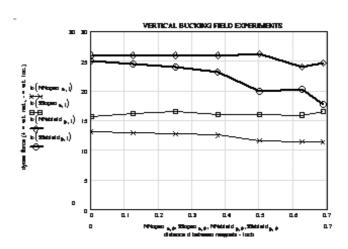
$$NNshield_{p,1} = \Delta mass \times g$$

for N-to-N pole facings shielded with Mu 80 shielding.
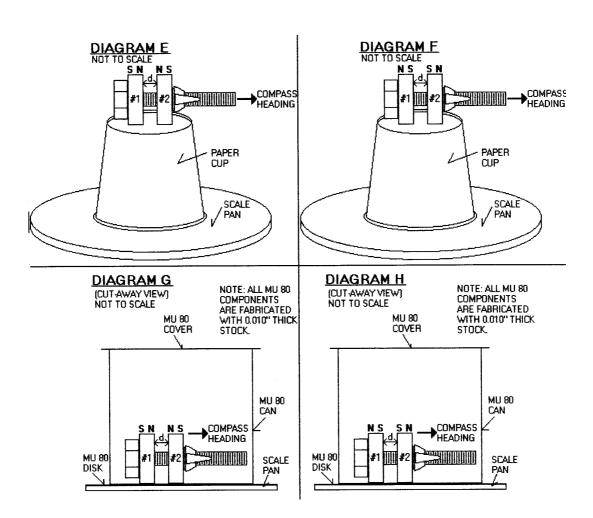
$$SSshield_{p,1} = \Delta mass \times g$$

for S-to-S pole facings shielded with Mu 80 shielding. In the subscripts, $_n$ and $_p$ refers to the respective number of data points per plot. The subscript $_1$ refers to the vertical change in force (weight change) axis and $_0$ refers to the horizontal distance d axis. In **GRAPH 1**, $_n = {}_p$.
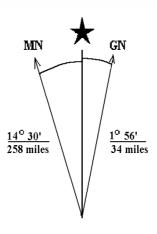
GRAPH 1:

ISOMETRIC AND ELEVATION VIEW OF THE HORIZONTAL EXPERIMENTS

MAGNETIC DECLINATION FROM THE LOCAL TOPOLOGICAL MAP:

MN ★ GN

$14°\ 30'$
258 miles

$1°\ 56'$
34 miles

1984 Magnetic Declination~ U. S. Geological Survey
New London, Connecticut Quadrangle Topological Map

TABLE 2
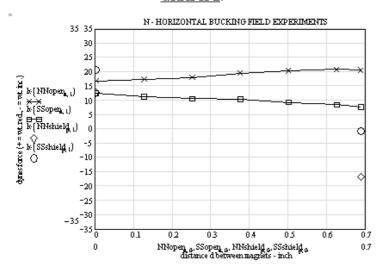
North # Heading	01/14/2002 EXPERIMENTS OPEN, WITH PAPER CUP		02/04/2002 EXPERIMENTS WITH MU 80 SHIELDING	
Air gap d	**Diagram E** N to N horizontal 19.8905-gram (Sum of 1 & 2)*	**Diagram F** S to S horizontal 19.8905-gram (Sum of 1 & 2)*	**Diagram G** N to N horizontal 19.9019-gram (Sum of 1 & 2)*	**Diagram H** S to S horizontal 19.9019-gram (Sum of 1 & 2)*
0.0 Inch	19.8735-gram 0.0170-gram weight reduction (0.08547%)	19.8778-gram 0.0127-gram weight reduction(0.06385%)	19.8890-gram 0.0129-gram weight reduction(0.06479%)	19.8810-gram 0.0209-gram weight reduction(0.10497%)
1/8 Inch	19.8728-gram 0.0177-gram weight reduction(0.08899%)	19.8790-gram 0.0115-gram weight reduction(0.05782%)	N/A **	N/A **
1/4 Inch	19.8721-gram 0.0184-gram weight reduction(0.09251%)	19.8798-gram 0.0107-gram weight reduction(0.05379%)	N/A **	N/A **
3/8 Inch	19.8705-gram 0.0200-gram weight reduction(0.10055%)	19.8800-gram 0.0105-gram weight reduction(0.05279%)	N/A **	N/A **
1/2 Inch	19.8698-gram 0.0207-gram weight reduction(0.10407%)	19.8811-gram 0.0094-gram weight reduction(0.04726%)	N/A **	N/A **
5/8 Inch	19.8693-gram 0.0212-gram weight reduction(0.10658%)	19.8818-gram 0.0087-gram weigh t reduction(0.04374%)	N/A **	N/A **
11/16 Inch	19.8696-gram 0.0209-gram weight reduction(0.10508%)	19.8827-gram 0.0078-gram weight reduction(0.03921%)	19.9190-gram 0.0171-gram weight increase(0.08588%)	19.9029-gram 0.0010-gram weight increase(0.00502%)

Compass Heading is approximate
* Magnets #1 and #2 were individually weighed with pole faces oriented vertically, with N up then with S up, and the results were averaged and added.
** Due to time constraints, these measurements were not taken.

GRAPH 2:

N - HORIZONTAL BUCKING FIELD EXPERIMENTS

$$volume := \pi \cdot \left[\left(\frac{0.75 \cdot in}{2} \right)^2 - \left(\frac{0.43 \cdot in}{2} \right)^2 \right] \cdot \left(\frac{1}{4} \right) \cdot in$$

$volume = 1.214963 \ cm^3$

$density = 8.7 \cdot gm \cdot cm^{-3}$

$mass = density \cdot volume$

$mass = 10.570177 \ gm.$

This is higher than the magnetized mass of each magnet.

However, some tables give a lower density for the SmCo magnet, $0.300 lb/in^3$, which equals:

$density = 8.303971 \cdot gm \cdot cm^{-3}$

$mass = 10.089017 \ gm.$.

NOTE:

The calculated mass of each magnet was determined by the following formula based upon the manufacturer's dimensions and density value.

This is still higher than the magnetized mass of each magnet. Does the SmCo material become slightly lighter in weight when it is magnetized?
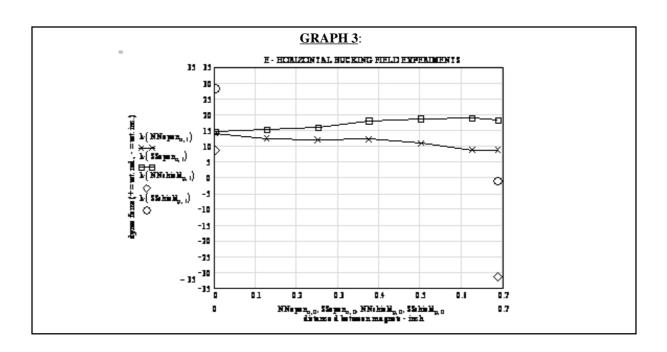
TABLE 3

East # Heading	01/14/2002 EXPERIMENTS OPEN, WITH PAPER CUP		02/04/2002 EXPERIMENTS WITH MU 80 SHIELDING	
Air gap D	**Diagram E** N to N horizontal 19.8905-gram (Sum of 1 & 2)*	**Diagram F** S to S horizontal 19.8905-gram (Sum of 1 & 2)*	**Diagram G** N to N horizontal 19.9019-gram (Sum of 1 & 2)*	**Diagram H** S to S horizontal 19.9019-gram (Sum of 1 & 2)*
0.0 Inch	19.8763-gram 0.0142-gram weight reduction (0.07139%)	19.8755-gram 0.0150-gram weight reduction(0.07541%)	19.8928-gram 0.0091-gram weight reduction(0.04570%)	19.8731-gram 0.0288-gram weight reduction(0.14464%)
1/8 Inch	19.8777-gram 0.0128-gram weight reduction(0.06435%)	19.8750-gram 0.0155-gram weight reduction(0.07793%)	N/A **	N/A **
1/4 Inch	19.8782-gram 0.0123-gram weight reduction(0.06184%)	19.8743-gram 0.0162-gram weight reduction(0.08145%)	N/A **	N/A **
3/8 Inch	19.8779-gram 0.0126-gram weight reduction(0.06335%)	19.8722-gram 0.0183-gram weight reduction(0.09200%)	N/A **	N/A **
1/2 Inch	19.8792-gram 0.0113-gram weight reduction(0.05681%)	19.8715-gram 0.0190-gram weight reduction(0.09552%)	N/A **	N/A **
5/8 Inch	19.8814-gram 0.0091-gram weight reduction(0.04575%)	19.8712-gram 0.0193-gram weight reduction(0.09703%)	N/A **	N/A **
11/16 Inch	19.8815-gram 0.0090-gram weight reduction(0.04525%)	19.8720-gram 0.0185-gram weight reduction(0.09301%)	19.9338-gram 0.0319-gram weight increase(0.16021%)	19.9030-gram 0.0011-gram weight increase(0.00552%)

Compass Heading is approximate

* Magnets #1 and #2 were individually weighed with pole faces oriented vertically, with N up then with S up, and the results were averaged and added.

** Due to time constraints, these measurements were not taken.

GRAPH 3:

E - HORIZONTAL BUCKING FIELD EXPERIMENTS

TABLE 4
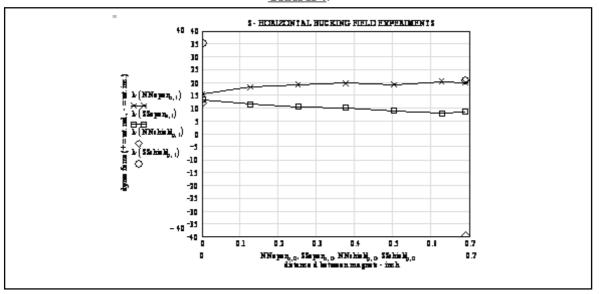
East # Heading	01/14/2002 EXPERIMENTS OPEN, WITH PAPER CUP		02/04/2002 EXPERIMENTS WITH MU 80 SHIELDING	
Air gap D	**Diagram E** N to N horizontal 19.8905-gram (Sum of 1 & 2)*	**Diagram F** S to S horizontal 19.8905-gram (Sum of 1 & 2)*	**Diagram G** N to N horizontal 19.9019-gram (Sum of 1 & 2)*	**Diagram H** S to S horizontal 19.9019-gram (Sum of 1 & 2)*
0.0 Inch	19.8746-gram 0.0159-gram weight reduction (0.07994%)	19.8769-gram 0.0136-gram weight reduction(0.06837%)	19.8896-gram 0.0123-gram weight reduction(0.06178%)	19.8660-gram 0.0359-gram weight reduction(0.18030%)
1/8 Inch	19.8720-gram 0.0185-gram weight reduction(0.09301%)	19.8788-gram 0.0117-gram weight reduction(0.05882%)	N/A **	N/A **
1/4 Inch	19.8709-gram 0.0196-gram weight reduction(0.09854%)	19.8797-gram 0.0108-gram weight reduction(0.05430%)	N/A **	N/A **
3/8 Inch	19.8704-gram 0.0201-gram weight reduction(0.10105%)	19.8803-gram 0.0102-gram weight reduction(0.05128%)	N/A **	N/A **
1/2 Inch	19.8711-gram 0.0194-gram weight reduction(0.09753%)	19.8814-gram 0.0091-gram weight reduction(0.04575%)	N/A **	N/A **
5/8 Inch	19.8698-gram 0.0207-gram weight reduction(0.10407%)	19.8825-gram 0.0080-gram weight reduction(0.04022%)	N/A **	N/A **
11/16 Inch	19.8703-gram 0.0202-gram weight reduction(0.10156%)	19.8817-gram 0.0088-gram weight reduction(0.04424%)	19.9423-gram 0.0404-gram weight increase(0.20290%)	19.8810-gram 0.0209-gram weight reduction(0.10497%)

Compass Heading is approximate
* Magnets #1 and #2 were individually weighed with pole faces oriented vertically, with N up then with S up, and the results were averaged and added.
** Due to time constraints, these measurements were not taken.

GRAPH 4:

TABLE 5
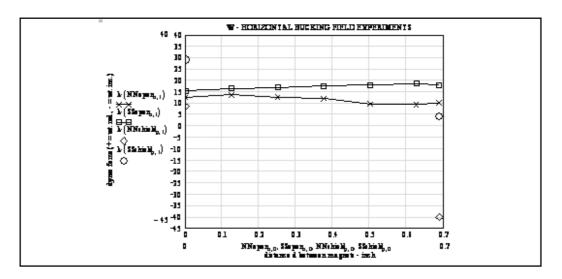
West # Heading	01/14/2002 EXPERIMENTS OPEN, WITH PAPER CUP		02/04/2002 EXPERIMENTS WITH MU 80 SHIELDING	
Air gap D	**Diagram E** N to N horizontal 19.8905-gram (Sum of 1 & 2)*	**Diagram F** S to S horizontal 19.8905-gram (Sum of 1 & 2)*	**Diagram G** N to N horizontal 19.9019-gram (Sum of 1 & 2)*	**Diagram H** S to S horizontal 19.9019-gram (Sum of 1 & 2)*
0.0 Inch	19.8777-gram 0.0128-gram weight reduction (0.06787%)	19.8748-gram 0.0157-gram weight reduction(0.07893%)	19.8933-gram 0.0086-gram weight reduction(0.04319%)	19.8724-gram 0.0295-gram weight reduction(0.14816%)
1/8 Inch	19.8767-gram 0.0138-gram weight reduction(0.06938%)	19.8737-gram 0.0168-gram weight reduction(0.08446%)	N/A **	N/A **
1/4 Inch	19.8777-gram 0.0128-gram weight reduction(0.06435%)	19.8733-gram 0.0172-gram weight reduction(0.08647%)	N/A **	N/A **
3/8 Inch	19.8783-gram 0.0122-gram weight reduction(0.06134%)	19.8727-gram 0.0178-gram weight reduction(0.08949%)	N/A **	N/A **
1/2 Inch	19.8806-gram 0.0099-gram weight reduction(0.04977%)	19.8722-gram 0.0183-gram weight reduction(0.09200%)	N/A **	N/A **
5/8 Inch	19.8811-gram 0.0094-gram weight reduction(0.04726%)	19.8715-gram 0.0190-gram weight reduction(0.09552%)	N/A **	N/A **
11/16 Inch	19.8803-gram 0.0102-gram weight reduction(0.05128%)	19.8723-gram 0.0182-gram weight reduction(0.09150%)	19.9427-gram 0.0408-gram weight increase(0.20491%)	19.8976-gram 0.0043-gram weight reduction(0.02160%)

\# Compass Heading is approximate
* Magnets #1 and #2 were individually weighed with pole faces oriented vertically, with N up then with S up, and the results were averaged and added.
** Due to time constraints, these measurements were not taken.
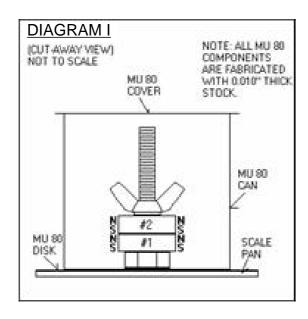
RING MAGNET #1, N UP: 9.9483-grams
RING MAGNET #2, N UP: $\pm$9.9527-grams
TOTAL WEIGHT: 19.9010-grams
WEIGHT INCREASE WITH OPPOSITE POLES ATTRACTING, AS DEPICTED IN **DIAGRAM I**, IN MU 80 SHIELD
where 19.9861-grams was the measured value:
19.9861-grams – 19.9010-grams = 0.0851-gram weight increase.

**THREE RIVERS COMMUNITY COLLEGE,
THAMES VALLEY CAMPUS
LAB REPORT ON SmCo RING MAGNET
EXPERIMENTS**

The following experiments were conducted at the *Thames Valley Campus* (TVC) of the *Three Rivers Community College*, Room #207 Chemistry Laboratory, in Norwich, Connecticut on March 8, 2002. (41° 30' 34.62" N. latitude x 72° 6' 13.63" W. longitude x 115 feet elevation above mean sea level) I wish to thank the instructors at *Three Rivers* for their generosity for providing the use of their *Sartorius*® Model # 2442 analytical balance for the measurements taken in the proceeding experiments. The *Sartorius* Model # 2442 analytical balance is an enclosed pan unit with a maximum mass range of 200-grams with 0.0001-gram micrometer readability and a precision of 0.05-mg standard deviation.

The purpose of these experiments was to compare the Avery Point vertical measurements conducted on the *Mettler Toledo*® Model AG104 electronic scale, in **TABLE 1**, with the *Sartorius* Model # 2442 analytical balance measurements recorded in **TABLE 6**. The same two Samarium Cobalt magnets (magnet #1 and magnet #2) weighed individually in each vertical orientation were compared to the weight measurements taken when they were assembled using the nylon bolt and wing nut depicted in **DIAGRAM 1**. The specifications for the two Samarium Cobalt magnets used in the following experiments are shown in **DIAGRAM 1**.

The first column in **TABLE 6**, the vertical measurements, is the distance of separation d, or air gap, of the magnets. The second column shows the weight measurements of the two magnets, as shown in **DIAGRAM A**. The third column shows the weight measurements of the two magnets, as shown in **DIAGRAM B**. An inverted paper cup was used to raise the test sample magnets 2.75" above the *Sartorius* Model # 2442 balance scale pan in order to minimize possible magnetic interaction with the balance, as depicted in **DIAGRAM 2**. The fourth column shows the weight measurements of the two magnets, as shown in **DIAGRAM C**. The fifth column shows the weight measurements of the two magnets, as shown in **DIAGRAM D**. These experiments were shielded with

Mu 80 magnetic shielding material as depicted in **DIAGRAM 3**. The resultant data of **TABLE 6** is plotted on **GRAPH 6**. The results of the previous experiments at *Avery Point*, from **GRAPH 1**, and the recent *Thames Valley* experiments, from **GRAPH 6**, are plotted on **GRAPH 7** for comparison. The Mu 80 magnetically shielded experiments on the *Sartorius* Model # 2442 analytical balance at *Thames Valley* are in close agreement with the data collected with the AG104 electronic scale at Avery Point. However, the *Thames Valley* data collected for the unshielded experiments is somewhat smaller in weight reduction. I attribute this to external interference. The *Thames Valley* setup included a nonferrous tabletop, as did the Avery Point setup. However, the *Thames Valley* balance table consisted of a steel frame and legs, which may have altered the readings. The Mu 80 shielding provided a more intrinsic method for accurate data collection.

The horizontal measurements were not taken in this set of experiments due to time constraints. A final experiment was attempted to replicate the relative weight increase with the opposite poles of the ring magnets "stuck" together, as depicted in **DIAGRAM I**; however, the magnets shattered during assembly!

TABLE 6

Air gap d	03/08/2002 TRCC EXPERIMENTS, @ TVC: OPEN, WITH PAPER CUP		03/08/2002 TRCC EXPERIMENTS, @ TVC: WITH MU 80 SHIELDING	
	Diagram A N to N vertical 19.8734-gram (Sum of 1 & 2)*	**Diagram B** S to S vertical 19.8726-gram (Sum of 1 & 2)*	**Diagram C** N to N vertical 19.8912-gram (Sum of 1 & 2)*	**Diagram D** S to S vertical 19.8929-gram (Sum of 1 & 2)*
0.0 Inch	19.8699-gram 0.0035-gram weight reduction (0.01761%)	19.8696-gram 0.0030-gram weight reduction(0.01510%)	19.8691-gram 0.0221-gram weight reduction(0.11110%)	19.8706-gram 0.0223-gram weight reduction(0.11210%)
1/8 Inch	19.8699-gram 0.0035-gram weight reduction(0.01761%)	19.8699-gram 0.0027-gram weight reduction(0.01359%)	19.8688-gram 0.0224-gram weight reduction(0.11261%)	19.8707-gram 0.0222-gram weight reduction(0.11160%)
1/4 Inch	19.8695-gram 0.0039-gram weight reduction(0.01962%)	19.8695-gram 0.0031-gram weight reduction(0.01560%)	19.8687-gram 0.0225-gram weight reduction(0.11312%)	19.8712-gram 0.0217-gram weight reduction(0.10908%)
3/8 Inch	19.8695-gram 0.0039-gram weight reduction(0.01962%)	19.8699-gram 0.0027-gram weight reduction(0.01359%)	19.8692-gram 0.0220-gram weight reduction(0.11060%)	19.8730-gram 0.0199-gram weight reduction(0.10004%)
1/2 Inch	19.8689-gram 0.0045-gram weight reduction(0.02264%)	19.8699-gram 0.0027-gram weight reduction(0.01359%)	19.8695-gram 0.0217-gram weight reduction(0.10909%)	19.8738-gram 0.0191-gram weight reduction(0.09601%)
5/8 Inch	19.8686-gram 0.0048-gram weight reduction(0.02415%)	19.8699-gram 0.0027-gram weight reduction(0.01359%)	19.8702-gram 0.0210-gram weight reduction(0.10557%)	19.8746-gram 0.0183-gram weight reduction(0.09199%)
11/16 Inch	19.8680-gram 0.0054-gram weight reduction(0.02717%)	19.8699-gram 0.0027-gram weight reduction(0.01359%)	19.8707-gram 0.0205-gram weight reduction(0.10306%)	19.8756-gram 0.0173-gram weight reduction(0.08697%)

* Magnets #1 and #2 were individually weighed in the orientation used in each experiment and their separate weights were added together.
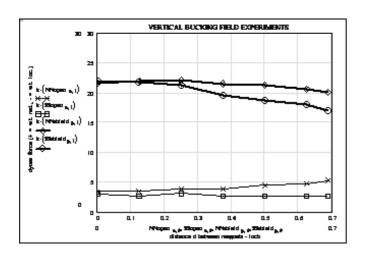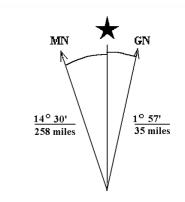
NOTE:
March 8, 2002 Experiments: Start time: 12:12 hours EST, End time: 13:47 hours EST.

MAGNETIC DECLINATION FROM THE LOCAL TOPOLOGICAL MAP
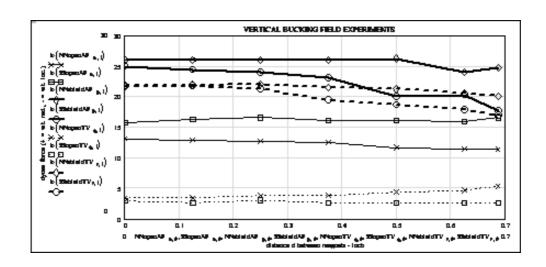
1983 Magnetic Declination ~ U. S. Geological Survey
Norwich, Connecticut Quadrangle Topological Map

GRAPH 7:

KEY TO **GRAPH 7**:

For N-to-N pole facings in the open (or unshielded) at Avery Point (AP):
NNopenAP
For S-to-S pole facings in the open (or unshielded) at Avery Point (AP):
SSopenAP
For N-to-N pole facings shielded with Mu 80 shielding at Avery Point (AP):
NNshieldAP
For S-to-S pole facings shielded with Mu 80 shielding at Avery Point (AP):
SSshieldAP
For N-to-N pole facings in the open (or unshielded) at Thames Valley (TV):
NNopenTV
For S-to-S pole facings in the open (or unshielded) at Thames Valley (TV):
SSopenTV
For N-to-N pole facings shielded with Mu 80 shielding at Thames Valley (TV):
NNshieldTV
For S-to-S pole facings shielded with Mu 80 shielding at Thames Valley (TV):
SSshieldTV

The subscripts for the data points $n = p = q = r = 7$ are all the same value in **GRAPH 7**.

Advanced Nuclear Waste Decontamination Technologies

Mark Porringa

Zeropoint Techtonix Inc, 430 Bass Lake Road, R R # 1,
Deep River, Ontario K0J 1P0, Canada
(613) 584-2960 fax: (613) 584-4616   porringam@aecl.ca

It is a review of nine alternative, peer-reviewed techniques as candidates for the global clean-up of nuclear waste.

The following is a reasonably comprehensive list of potentially effective nuclear waste treatment methods that might   be employed to treat the entire range of radioactive wastes that have proven to be such a daunting and horrendously expensive problem for the nuclear industry (in all its forms) with major, long term implications for the environment.

A wide variety of methods will probably be required to accommodate the many different radioactive waste sources including high and low level, solids, liquids and gases. Process names used here are in some cases just convenient labels used to categorize and set them apart from each other.

Theories on several of these processes are still quite speculative and solid evidence that would pass conventional peer review is still lacking. This is after all a very new field of science.

Some of these technologies are already well protected by international or national patents, with additional US and international patents pending, and further patents may be obtained on new developments as they are made.

The Brown's Gas-Metal Matrix Process:

The BG-MMX process utilizes a patented electrolysis cell of the Australian Prof. **Yull Brown**'s design that is said to produce a stoichiometric mixture of monatomic hydrogen and oxygen or possibly a quasi-stable water molecule raised to a high-energy state. This gas has some very peculiar properties including the ability to sublimate tungsten (6000°C) with an implosive flame that burns cool in air with a temperature of only 130°C.

The gas is used to heat a proprietary mixture of metals and/or metal oxides including the radwaste to be neutralized. A highly exothermic radiant reaction appears to result in the immediate reduction of radioactivity approaching 95% of the original levels judging from preliminary tests, within seconds of treatment. The process is conjectured to be effective with high level solid wastes and possibly gasses, but probably not liquids. The high temperatures involved may also preclude the processing of more volatile wastes.

Since 1991, this technology has been successfully demonstrated, on a small scale, at least 50 times to US, Chinese, Japanese and United Kingdom officials on a variety of nuclear waste products including Americium, Cobalt, Uranium, and Plutonium. The technique can be applied for the immediate decontamination of stockpiles of nuclear waste materials being held near nuclear power plants. The process is very simple, safe, and inexpensive to develop further into robotics application for on-site treatment with no foreseen environmental effects.

Photoremediation

The *Photoremediation* process of the American Dr. **Paul Brown** is essentially conventional physics, *albeit* applied in a new and novel way. The process involves the use of a high-energy electron beam impinged on a target, which in turn produces a monochromatic gamma radiation that is tuned to induce *Photofission* and *Photoneutron* reactions in the target material causing rapid neutralization of radioactive isotopes. The efficiency claimed exceeds 500% due to the high cross-section reactions in the Giant Dipole Resonance region. The 10 MeV electron beam produces typical fission reactions in the 200MeV range effectively turning high level solid wastes such as spent fuel into an energy source. The process is apparently intended for on-site treatment with some waste-partitioning required, an aspect which may not be desirable in certain countries.

While this idea is similar in topology to a system being developed by **Los Alamos National Labs**, Dr. Paul Brown's approach offers several advantages: no need for extensive chemical pre-processing and the energy required to effect transmutation is greatly reduced. No new technology needs to be developed, yet the engineering of such a photon reactor must be completed and it could itself become a practical method for generating power.

ZIPP Fusion

The ZIPP fusion process, identified by **Mark Porringa**, induces a wide variety of fusion reactions, resulting from the radial compression of individual diatomic and other simple molecules dissolved or suspended in a light

water, carbon arc electrolysis cell. A variety of other cell configurations are envisioned.

The process appears to produce only stable isotopes, which should therefore make it capable of stabilizing a wide variety of radioactive waste materials. The theory on the process draws from Condensed Charge phenomena, Brown's Gas implosion, cavitation bubble collapse and sonoluminesence - all variations of the Casimir effect - which is believed to cohere the Zero-point energy of Quantum Vacuum Fluctuations. Transmutations using variations of this basic process may be applicable to a wide variety of nuclear wastes and appears capable of operating with an efficiency exceeding 100%.

A major implication of this process is that the Strong force of the nucleus is understood as an ultra close range Casimir effect. **Oakridge** Nuclear Laboratories in the US in conjunction with several international collaborators have just (this month, in fact) announced a deuterium cold fusion process based on the essential elements of the ZIPP Fusion process first reported in 1998. The process is very simple and inexpensive to develop.

RIPPLE Fission

The RIPPLE Fission process is an adaptation of existing potential technology utilizing a supersonic ionized gas to aerosol a counter flow heat exchanger that envelopes the radioactive waste aerosol in a vacuum induced plasma vortex which appears to disrupt the matter stabilizing influence of the Quantum Vacuum fluctuations resulting in "gentle" low recoil fission reactions which produce only stable fission products, with excess neutrons being prompt converted to protons via quenched Beta emissions. The process is apparently proven with conventional non-radioactive wastes and is believed applicable to the entire spectrum of radwaste without the need for waste partitioning. This process is also conjectured to operate with over-unity efficiency.

The LENTEC Processes

The Low Energy Nuclear Transmutation Electrolytic Cells of the Cincinnati group produce a variety of transmutation reactions using a variety of exotic electrolysis cell designs that generally produce condensed charge clusters composed primarily of up to 10^{11} electrons each. These electron charge clusters produced with the use of special electrodes can penetrate the nuclei of larger atoms in solution and transmute these atoms into stable elements.

The range of design and operating protocols and potential applications are essentially limitless provided for the waste that is dispersed in the electrolyte. The reported transmutation of thorium to stable titanium and copper by the Cincinnati Group and by the Salt Lake City group is one of the most dramatic examples

of this type of treatment process. Application to other high-level liquid transuranic fissionable wastes such as surplus Plutonium seems likely. The glaring absence of normal fission yield energies is perplexing but probably explicable as another form of low recoil fission reaction, similar to RIPPLE fission.

The Plasma Induced/Injected Transmutation - PIT Processes (also known as HDCC)

Plasma Induced/Injected Transmutation processes run include a gamut from recent achievements dating back to the **Oshawa-Kushi** cold plasma transmutations reported in 1964. The patented high-density charge cluster process (HDCC) was first discovered by **Kenneth Shoulders** and added on to by **Harold E. Puthoff**. Later, the late **Stan Gleeson** discovered HDCC in properly processed solutions. Still later, **Alexander Ilyanok** of Belarus discovered HDCC, followed by **Vasiliy Baraboskin** in Russia.

The production of Condensed Charge Clusters and various plasma glow discharge phenomena in a variety of gaseous atmospheres is again implicated as the underlying cause with what should be by now an obvious connection with the coherence of Zero-point energy from the Quantum or Stochastic vacuum.

Desk-top high energy particle accelerators have also been envisioned, based on the "piggy back" principle, in which the clusters permit acceleration of "piggy-backed" heaver +ions to extremely high energies capable of causing fusion and transmutations in target materials including those in solution and the materials of which the electrodes are composed. Brown's Gas implosion and cavitation bubble collapse reactions are also believed to be prevalent in these types of cells due to the prevalence of electrolysis.

A high-density charge cluster technology was discovered and used by Stan Gleeson to stabilize radioactive liquid wastes and has been developed further in the last 4 years by a group led by **S-X Jin** and **Hal Fox**. Best results for radioactive liquids have been demonstrated in the processing of thorium for a 30-minute period and achieving a reduction of radioactivity of about 90% from a liquid sample.

Kervran Reactions

The very compelling evidence compiled by French Nobel Candidate Dr. **Louis Kervran** has identified a wide range of nuclear transmutations in biological systems that have not been adequately explained. Coherence of Zero-point energy via Casimir effects within the *Somatid* particles identified by the Canadian **Gaston Naessens** is implicated as a possible cause. A wide variety of *in vitro* and *in vivo* reactions are believed to be possible as proven in nature and numerous experiments typically involving a reaction medium composed of a dielectric fluid such as water. Highly radiation resistant microorganisms have been found

thriving in the core of nuclear reactors indicating the possibility of microorganisms being capable of transmuting some bioactive nuclear wastes in the course of the normal metabolism of such organisms.

The Monti Process

The Italian **Roberto A. Monti's** process involves confined explosions involving proprietary mixtures of materials that include radioactive waste. Ignition of such mixtures causes nuclear transmutations resulting in reduced radioactivity (to near-background levels) following combustion, gradually over 1 to 4 days.

This technique has been confirmed by the Italian **ENEA** and is supported by the French CEA scientists as a serious candidate for treatment of waste stockpiles. The system, as currently designed, required waste to be inserted into a chamber.

Higher group symmetry electrodynamics

Extremely weak, non-classical, higher group symmetry electromagnetic fields were found during a 1991 experiment made by **Glen Rein** to alter significantly the level of radioactivity in materials, even those in the environment. The experiments suggest that higher group symmetry electrodynamics modulate the quantitative and /or qualitative properties of radioactive species. If the non-classical fields directly affect the radioactive species, it is likely that the appropriate field parameters will be discovered to neutralize radioactive emissions. In 1999, a theoretical basis for the phenomenon was developed by the Welsh physicist, **M. W. Evans**, with the participation of Lt. Col. (retired) **Thomas E. Bearden**.

The technology is extremely simple and could be applied with minimum logistics for treating massive structures, *in-to* outdoors, such as the Chernobyl disaster site.

Experimental Investigations
of the Radioactive Isotope Half-Value Period Changing
in the Local Volume of Cause-Effect Relations

Igor A. Melnik

Pr.Frunze 232, Tomsk, 634021, Russia, Ph. (3822) 244555
breg@mail.ru

Nuclear-design methods of the elemental analysis are based on the property of the radioactive isotope decay rate constant. Half period as a constant quantity is defined by the time feature (the time flow is uniform in the every space point). The given postulate is confirmed by the long-term results and raised no doubts. But in last years some researches, investigating enough fine effects by change of the registered radiation intensivity, came to the conclusion about influence of space cycles on the time flow [1]. In his turn, N. A. Kozyrev during the investigation of active physical properties of time came to the conclusion about violation of its uniform flow in the local volume of the cause-effect relations, created by the cyclic motion (rotation, oscillation) of bodies [2,3,4].

Thus, the author get an idea to use a radioactive isotope cezium-137 as a "sensor", measuring the changes of time flow uniformity in the certain local volume of cause-effect relations. In basis there are following arguments: owing to a conception of time uniformity and considerable cezium-137 half-value period, the source activity must be permanent during the experiment time. By the time flow (period) change, i.e. changes of uniformity in the local volume of cause-effect relations, the half-value period – T is changing in the direct proportion. Source activity, respectively, is changing in the inverse proportion according to the law $\exp(1/T)$ in relation to the external space volume. Hence, registered gamma-quantum intension (amplitude impulse distribution) in the absence of the cause-effect relations is proportional to the function $N_0 \sim \exp(\ln 2/T_0)$. Then the proportion $N_0/\Delta N$, where $\Delta N = N_0 - N$ is made, and by means of it a half-value period difference is defined by the formula

$$1/\Delta T = |1/T_0 + \ln(\Delta N/N_0)/\ln 2| \qquad (1)$$

N_0 – selective average amplitudes of impulses at the case of static liquid (in the absence of the cause-effect relations);
N - selective average amplitudes of impulses at the case of rotation of liquid.

In this case, there were investigations of the determination of the gamma-quantum intension change (i.e. change of a half-value period) dependence on the angular velocity of the activator rotation, and also on the coordinates location and amount of cause-effect relations (Fig. 1).
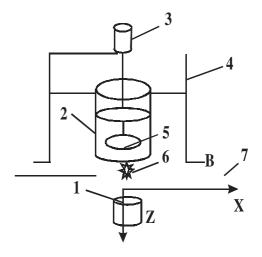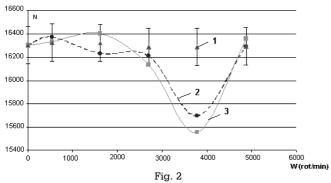
Fig.1

The following devices were used as measurement equipment: semi-conducting detector (SCD-63V) (1), preamplifier (PAG-2K), amplifier (BAI-3K) and analyzer (AMA-02F1). Energy gamma-line of 662 KeV was measured with the resolution 4 KeV. The gamma-quantum source was glued to the detector housing at the distance of 100 mm from its surface; so, any spatial change through coordinate axes was executed together with the detector to avoid even a tiny change of the source-detector geometry.

The vessel with a liquid (2) was placed above the source (6), vortex fluid motion was created by an activator (5), placed on the rod of electric motor (3). The glass with a liquid, connected with the motor and frame (4), was displaced regarding to the center of the revolved activator, what was the reason of the glass vibration in horizontal line, and, hence, one of frame sides vibration in vertical line (v). In its base, the frame was a square with the side of 200 mm. To assign the direction of the space cause-effect relations, one of frame sides was vibrating, and the opposite one (on the X axis) was fixed on the table (7). An experiment was made in such a way, that vibrating parts did not adjoin with the detector. The radius of glass is 50 mm, the distance from central axis up to the vibrating frame part is 100 mm. N-selection of the every value on the diagram (Fig. 2) corresponded to twenty measurements, roots from the average variance of numbers distribution $D \approx 160$ impulses.

Fig. 2

Dependence of photopeak-N area from the angular velocity of rotation – W, where 1 – is photopeak area at static liquid, 2 – is photopeak area at clockwise rotation, 3 – is photopeak area at anticlockwise rotation

During two months eighteen experiments were made (at the one geometry) of the given effect fluctuation study, and there were no considerable deviation. An effect of the time deceleration always appeared at the angular speed of the activator rotation W=3780 r/min (during the vibration of the whole perimeter of the frame base). If there was a vibration on the only one side of the frame base (on the X axis), then this effect appeared at the higher speed of rotation. Unfortunately, the maximum motor speed of rotation W_{max}=4880 r/min did not let to define the precise position for the next rotation point. During the experimental results extrapolation $W_2 \approx 5930$ r/min ($W_2 \approx \pi W/2$) was obtained.

In the table there are selective middle amplitudes of impulses -N=$\sum N_n/n$ roots from the numbers distribution average variance D, dispersion of the simple average G at the different directions of the liquid rotation (for the rotation point W=3780 r/min). The half period is estimated by the equation (1) and formula T=T_0+ΔT where T_0=30.2 year (the cezium-137 half-value period).

Liquid motion	N, imp.	D	G	T, year
Static liquid	16304.0	160.7	35.9	30.200
Clockwise	15696.0	162.0	36.2	30.412
Anticlockwise	15553.0	165.0	36.9	30.423

During the investigation of the activator angular speed of rotation dependence on the registered gamma-quantum intension, **there was discovered the time deceleration effect in the fixed point of ambient space of the glass with the liquid.** The effect was versatile, during the further study of the reasons of the effect disappearance, the following regularities were found:

1. Intension change appeared only at the case of asymmetrically fixed glass, when there appeared horizontal oscillations, transmitted to the vertical oscillations of the frame;

2. An effect disappeared, if the gamma-quantum source was placed in the glass center ($\sim 2 \div 3$ mm down from the glass bottom);

3. At the same speed of rotation but without liquid, with an eccentric activator, the time deceleration effect disappeared.

Will consider the system with liquid, its internal chain consisted of three cause-effect relations:

1. Activator-liquid;
2. Liquid-glass (frame);
3. Frame-table.

Glass oscillations were transmitted to the frame through the hard cohesion. There was only one cause-effect relation – an activator (a frame) – a table. Thus, amplitude of the time flow changing was, most likely, influenced on by the amount of cause-effect relation, and also, there was observed a quantum effect, dependent on the activator and liquid rotation frequency.

The time deceleration maximum amplitude appeared during the source displacement from the central axis of glass along the X coordinate to the distance ~ 5 mm. There appeared the necessity to check the given effect on space points along the all coordinate axes in the radius R $\approx$ 100 mm from the central point of the glass bottom (an extreme vibration point along the X axis was placed on this distance).

On this purpose there were made some experiments, results of which are shown on the (Fig. 3), (Fig. 4).
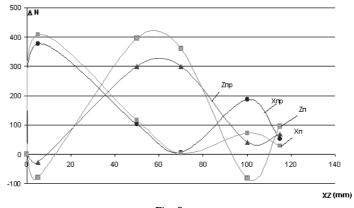
Fig. 3

Dependence of the increase of photopeak -ΔN area from the spatial interval in Cause-Effect Relations by X and Z coordinates, where $X_c Z_c$ – is clockwise rotation, $X_{ac} Z_{ac}$ – is anticlockwise rotation
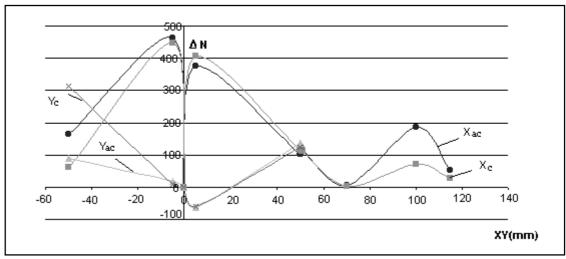
Fig. 4
Dependence of the increase of photopeak -ΔN area from the spatial interval in Cause-Effect Relations by X and Y coordinates, where $X_c Y_c$ – is clockwise rotation, $X_{ac} Y_{ac}$ – is anticlockwise rotation

Let us suppose that positive axis Z is directed from the glass bottom center to the ground and axis X – from the central axis of glass to the vibrated part of the frame (North-West), in this case Y is directed to the North-East. Along the all coordinates, in every adjusted space points on the distance R_i from the glass bottom center (R_i = 5; 50; 70; 100; 115 mm), there were forty measurements. At that in every point after ten measurements connected with the rotation there were measurements at the static liquid. It was made to avoid any systematic errors. The amplitude of the sample average impulses at the static liquid - $N_0 = 10550$ imp. In this case the root from the dispersion $\Delta = 120$, dispersion of the simple average $G = 19$. Amplitude increment was calculated by the formula $\Delta N = |N_0 - N|$. Following regularities were found:

1. If considering the difference of impulse amplitude (in the positive coordinate space) in the first cause-effect relation evidence (activator-liquid), i.e., to put the difference between the initial (5 mm) and final (50 mm) points of amplitude registration (their middle evidence between "clockwise" and "anticlockwise") $\Delta N_5^{50} = |N_5 - N_{50}|$ into the formula (1), then relations $\Delta T_Z / \Delta T_X = \Delta T_X / \Delta T_Y \approx 1.11$ ($\pi / 2\sqrt{2} \approx 1.11$)

2. Change of impulse amplitude difference along X is the antiphase of changes along Z and Y;

3. At the rotation clockwise and anticlockwise there takes place a periodical inversion of amplitudes difference relation;

4. At the liquid rotation clockwise and anticlockwise, there appears an obvious distinction in evidences of the increment ΔN in negative region of coordinate axes;

5. Along Y and Z-axes in points (5; 100 mm) there is observed insignificant time acceleration.

The whole cause-effect relation system was defined as an internal (activator-table), as an external one (ground - system center of gravity). **In the internal space volume time at the certain conditions breaks its own uniformity, at that the time period change is nonlinear and is defined by its quantum nature.** Therefore, standard clocks in causal relations must be considered regarding to the center of gravity and location of the measurement point in the internal system space.

References

1. Shnol S.E., Zenchenko T.A., Zenchenko K.I., PozharskyE.V., Kolombet V.A., Konradov A.A. Regular change of the statistical distributions thin structure as a result of cosmophysical causes. Kushnirenko E.A., Pogozhev I.B. Comment to the article of Shnol S.E. and Co. Progress of physical sciences. Vol. 170, #2, p.213-218, 2000.

2. Kozyrev N.A. Causal or asymmetric mechanics in the linear approximation. Pulkovo, 1958, p. 90.

3. Kozyrev N. A. Astronomic observations by means of time physical properties. Symposium transactions, Erevan, 1977, p. 209-227.

4. Kozyrev N.A. About possibility of bodies mass and weight under the influence of time active properties. Eganova I.A. Analytical survey of modern time-keeping ideas and experiments. Novosibirsk, 1984, p. 92-98.

5. Melnik I.A. Experimental researches of the time flow local deceleration. VINITI 5.02.92, N1032-mg92, #4, p.70.

UP-TO-DATE INVENTION

TILLEY ELECTRIC VEHICLE

Tilley Foundation, Inc.
131 Hiwassee Road
Lebanon, TN 37087, USA
615-443-5315
E-mail: cktilley@bellsouth.net

Nowadays there stays urgent the development of technologies, which could possibly be combined into a reliable, commercially successful advanced self powered vehicle with additional desirable but currently commercially unavailable features.

The advantages of electric vehicles seem to be evident – they are clean, quiet, powerful, require much less maintenance than gasoline or diesel-fueled vehicles, and are inherently much simpler and easier to manufacture. Their drawbacks have been a short range, long battery recharging time, and a heavy, bulky battery pack.

After several years of personal accomplishments in the alternative energy industry, **Carl B. Tilley, the inventor from USA,** was convinced that it was possible to build an electric car that could be powered without the help of external power to keep the battery charged.

The concept to produce a useful electric performance car that would last more than a few hours and would be economical to run, safe to drive around town or across the United States and never use a drop of fuel challenges the future of transportation as we know it today.

With the establishment of the **Tilley Foundation, Inc.**, in the year 2001, Carl Tilley set out to prove it could be done. It was an ambitious project and it broke ground on the facility in Tennessee that would build the first self-generating electric car.

Construction of a 1,800 square foot building, that was powered with another recently developed electric device, began in the year 2002. Electricity for this car is provided from a different energy invention, which was void of any outside power supply. It is ironic that one alternative energy device actually built the invention to power and build the electric car.

The **Tilley Electric Vehicle** (**TEV**), converted from a 1981 DeLorean, energizes the imagination and defies what has been accepted as a standard in the area of transportation for years.

From the selection of the proper car to be converted, to the advanced technology, which is on board, the **TEV** performs comparably to gasoline-powered vehicles. The difference is you have no need for fuel and you do not have to stop the vehicle to charge it after driving. There is no pollution and you can cruise the highways at the same speed as any other vehicle.

There is a new car on the road today. A car built with technology that defies the concept of fossil fuel powered cars, and can run coast to coast without ever relying on the battery being charged from an outside source.

The long awaited transportation revolution and the end of our reliance on fossil fuel has now begun **….the Tilley Electric Vehicle.**

The demonstration of a DeLorean powered by an electric motor and 12-volt standard car batteries is supposed to be on September 7, 2002, at the Nashville Superspeedway, USA. The battery bank is kept in a charged condition by the "on board" charger which is the device invented by Carl B. Tilley. Racing legend Bobby Allison is one of the guest drivers for this demonstration.

Details and results of the demonstration read in our next issue

The Problem of Time: Force as the Cause of Change of the Course of Time

Valentin P. Oleinik

Department of General and Theoretical Physics,
National Technical University of Ukraine "Kiev Polytechnic
Institute", Prospect Pobedy 37, Kiev, 03056, Ukraine;
e-mail: yuri@arepjev.relc.com
Internet: http://temporology.bio.msu.ru/OLEINIK/oleinik.htm.

Abstract

Material processes occurring in a physical system under the action of a force field necessarily influence the course of time along the trajectory of motion of particle. A general relationship is obtained which relates the course of time on one path section of a particle when moving in a force field to that on the other path section in the same inertial reference frame. According to the results obtained, the force in relativistic mechanics is not only the cause of acceleration of particle relative to an inertial frame of reference, but also the cause of change in the course of time along the particle's trajectory. **Therein lies the physical content of the dynamical principle underlying the special theory of relativity (relativistic mechanics).** *The applications of the theory developed to homogeneous fields - to the field of gravity and electromagnetic field, and to the gravitational field produced by a point mass particle are considered. Physical properties of the state of imponderability of particle in an external force field are investigated. It is noted that the change in the course of time in a force field is in no way connected with the change in space-time metric and is a direct consequence of the causality principle of relativistic mechanics.* **The existence of dependence of the course of time on the state of motion of particle in a force field points to the feasibility of controlling the course of time using force fields.**

Time is among the most common concepts, which are used constantly both in everyday life and in science. This is because all the events and material processes in the world happen in space and develop in time and, hence, the laws that govern space-time connections are the most general and hold for all the forms of matter. Nevertheless, time remains one of the most mysterious concepts of physics; its physical essence is not adequately revealed up till now [1-4]. The concept of time with difficulty yields to logical analysis.

From the point of view of common sense the essence of time is that time characterizes the duration of events and processes, indicates their natural sequence, at which the present, going away to the past, gives place to the future.

Isaac Newton gave a clear-cut characteristic of the concept of time, to which the majority of physicists adheres: "The absolute, true, and mathematical time in itself and by virtue of its nature flows uniformly and regardless to any other object". Though, according to Newton, time flows equally and uniformly and does not depend on the processes, occurring in the world, the daily experience speaks in favour of the fact that the course of time is not uniform. Depending on circumstances in our history, it seems to us that time either flies swiftly or hangs heavy on our hands; sometimes it even changes suddenly, by leaps. In connection with these speculations the question arises of whether the subjective sensations of non-uniformity in the course of time familiar to everyone have an objective basis.

In Newtonian mechanics time is of an absolute character, it does not change as one passes from one inertial reference frame to another and represents merely a parameter, whose change at the will of explorer results in the change of state of a mechanical system in accordance with the equation of motion.

In relativistic mechanics time remains a parameter describing the development of system. But now time and space are intimately linked with each other to form a single system, i.e. the 4-dimensional space-time. In going from one inertial frame of reference to another time gets entangled with spatial coordinates, so that time in one reference frame represents a "mixture" of time and coordinates in the other. Time ceases to be universal, the same in all inertial reference frames; it takes on a relative character.

The indissoluble association of time and space takes on special importance in the light of the concept of physical field, which was called by Einstein the most important discovery in physics after Newton. According to this concept, the occurrence in space of a force field means that space turns into a physical environment, which is capable to interact directly with other bodies and gains, thus, physical properties, becoming an active participant of physical processes. In view of the fact that **space and time are indissolubly related to each other, the presence of a force field in some area of space must necessarily result in the appearance of physical properties of time caused by the motion of body in this area.**

Thus, from the synthesis of the notion of space-time and of the idea of physical field it follows with necessity that **the course of time in a given region of space should depend on physical processes in this region, i.e. time, as well as space, should have physical properties [5-8].**

It should be emphasized that in special theory of relativity (STR) time and spatial coordinates are independent and formally equal in rights quantities, which determine the position of elementary events in space-time. On the other hand, time stands out in relation to spatial coordinates. The special role of time is due, from the viewpoint of geometry, to the

pseudoeuclidity of geometry of the 4-dimensional space. From the physical point of view, it is associated with the dynamical principle (causality principle), according to which the state of motion of a physical system at an instant of time t uniquely defines its behaviour at the next instant of time $t + 0$. The significance of dynamical principle lies in the fact that it relates the temporal evolution of system to the physical processes caused by force fields and in doing so it allows one to determine the course of time in the system, its possible dependence upon the character of physical processes, and not just the sequence of events and their duration.

The idea about the existence of the physical properties of time belongs to N. Kozyrev [9]. By introducing into mechanics an additional parameter taking into account the directivity of the course of time, Kozyrev has formulated causal (asymmetrical) mechanics from which it follows that time has physical properties. According to the results of theoretical and experimental investigations conducted by Kozyrev and his followers [9-13], events can proceed not only in time, but also with the help of time, **information being transmitted not through force fields, but via a temporal channel, and the transfer of information happens instantaneously. The appearance of additional forces, associated with the physical properties of time and capable to fulfill work, testifies that time can serve as a power source.**

In the papers by I. Eganova [12] and M. Lavrent'ev and I. Eganova [13] it is stated the problem of direct experimental research of the physical properties of time to ascertain the relations of a new type between phenomena and to discover new methods to change the state of substance. In [14] O. Jefimenko investigated the dynamical effect of the slowing-down of time.

According to [6-8], the conclusion that physical properties of time exist follows strictly from relativistic mechanics, without introducing any additional hypotheses. The physical properties of time are of purely dynamical nature: their existence results from dynamical principle. **The availability of physical properties of time is manifested in that time has a local inhomogeneity: its course along the trajectory of motion of a point particle in a force field is continuously changed, and this change in the course of time is a result of the action upon the particle of a force field in the inertial reference frame, in which the motion is considered.**

Editor's note: The author gives a detailed consideration of the physical content of the local dynamical inhomogeneity of time. Considering the motion of a classical point particle under the action of a force field in the inertial reference frames, that moves relatively to each other, Valentin P. Oleinik derives 73 equations, that help him to obtain the following conclusion (mathematical details and physical reasoning may be found in http://temporology.bio.msu.ru/OLEINIK/oleinik.htm.*)*

The elucidation of the physical nature of time is one of the most important problems of theoretical physics. The purpose of research on the problem of time is to study the physical properties of time, i.e. to ascertain the possible interrelation between time and material processes. In particular, it is of interest to find out

- whether the flow of time depends upon physical processes and whether the back influence exists (i.e influence of the change of the time course on physical processes);

- what mechanisms of the change of the course of time are available;

- what factors are capable to speed up or to slow down the flow of time.

In papers [5-8] on the basis of Lorentz transformations relating to coordinates of points, lying on the trajectory of motion of particle in a force field, the phenomenon of local dynamical inhomogeneity of time is predicted. The main result consists in the proof that material processes occurring in a physical system under the action of a force field necessarily influence the course of time along the trajectory of motion of particle. The case in point is the change of the course of time along particle's trajectory in one inertial reference frame as compared with that in the other.

In this paper the next step is made: the relationship is obtained which relates the course of time on one path section of a particle when moving in a force field to that on the other path section in the same inertial reference frame. The main idea underlying the approach developed results from the analysis of Lorentz transformations and consists in that **the course of time of a particle moving by inertia, i.e. of a particle being not exposed to force, should be uniform.**

As is well known [17,18], the existence of dependence of the course of time upon the gravitational field potential is predicted with the general theory of relativity (GTR). According to GTR ([17], p.303), time flows differently at the different points of space in one and the same reference frame. Since "gravitational field is nothing more nor less than a change of the space-time metric" ([17], p.313), one can assert, apparently, that the change in the course of time is due, in the view of GTR, to the change of the 4-space metric. It should be emphasized that in the present paper gravitational field is considered as an ordinary force field, and the particle motion is supposed to occur in pseudo-Euclidian space-time. The main formulas of the article, (22) and (25), describe the change in the course of time in an arbitrary force field at different spatial points in one and the same inertial reference frame. As is seen from the results received, the change in the course of time in a force field is in no way connected with the change of space-time metric. It is conditioned by the force field action on particle in inertial reference frame and is a direct consequence of the dynamical principle underlying relativistic mechanics.

It should be emphasized that the existence of **dependence of the course of time on the state of motion of particle in a force field points to the feasibility of controlling the course of time using force fields.**

Note an important peculiarity of the non-inertial reference frame, in which the imponderability state of a particle is attained: **there is such a space-time region in which the reference frame at hand can be approximately considered as inertial.** In connection with the fact that such reference frames (it is natural to call them **quasiinertial** in contradistinction to the **true inertial** reference frames) are, generally speaking, not equivalent to each other (see previous section), the derivation of a rigorous criterion for inertial reference frame acquires especial significance. The dynamical criteria for defining the inertial and non-inertial states are considered in the papers by B. I. Peschevitsky [19]. The heliocentric reference frame seems to be among the quasiinertial reference frames, being inertial with adequate accuracy only in a restricted region of space (for example, within the limits of our Galaxy) [16].

The author is grateful to Yu.D. Arepjev for his interest to the paper and stimulating discussions.

References

1. Blokhintsev D.I. Space and Time in the Microworld (Nauka, M., 1970) (in Russian).

2. Prigogine I. From Being to Becoming: Time and Complexity in the Physical Sciences (W. H. Freeman & Co., San Francisco, 1980).

3. Prigogine I. and Stengers I. Order Out of Chaos (Bantam Books, New York, 1983).

4. Logunov A.A. Lectures on the Theory of Relativity and Gravitation: Modern Analysis of the Problem (Nauka, M., 1987) (in Russian).

5. Oleinik V.P. The Newest Development of Quantum Electrodynamics: Self-Organizing Electron, Superluminal Signals, Dynamical Inhomogeneity of Time, Physical Vacuum and Nature, 4, 3-17 (2000).

6. Oleinik V.P., Borimsky Ju.C., Arepjev Ju.D. New Ideas in Electrodynamics: Physical Properties of Time. Semiconductor Physics, Quantum Electronics & Optoelectronics, 3, #4, 558-565 (2000). E-print: quant-ph/0010027.

7. Oleinik V.P. Superluminal Signals, Physical Properties of Time, and Principle of Self-Organization, Physics of Consciousness and Life, Cosmology and Astrophysics, 1, 68-76, (2001); Borimsky Yu.C., Oleinik V.P. The Course of Time in Classical and Quantum Systems and Dynamical Principle, Physical Vacuum and Nature, 6, (2001) (in print).

8. Oleinik V.P. The Problem of Electron and Superluminal Signals. (Contemporary Fundamental Physics) (Nova Science Publishers, Inc., Huntington, New York, 2001).

9. Kozyrev N.A. Selected Transactions (Leningrad University Press, Leningrad, 1991) (in Russian).

10. Lavrent'ev M.M., Eganova I.A., Medvedev V.G., Olejnik V.K., and Fominykh S.F. On Scanning of Celestial Sphere by Kozyrev's Sensor, Doklady AN SSSR, 323(4), 649-652 (1992) (in Russian).

11. Akimov A.E., Kovaltchuk G.U., Medvedev B.P., Oleinik V.K., Pugatch A.F. Preliminary Results of As-tronomic Observations of Sky by the Kozyrev Procedure. Academy of Sciences of Ukraine, Central Astronomic Observatory. Preprint CAO-92-5P, 1992, p.16 (in Russian.).

12. Eganova I.A. The World of Events Reality: Instantaneous Action as a Connection of Events through Time, Instantaneous Action-at-a-Distance in Modern Physics (Nova Science Publishers, Inc., New York, 1999).

13. Lavrent'ev M.M. and Eganova I.A. Physical Phenomena Predicted and Revealed by N.A.Kozyrev, in the Light of Adequacy of Space-Time to Physical Reality, Phylosophy of Science, 1(3), 34-43 (1997) (in Russian).

14. Jefimenko O.D. Electromagnetic Retardation and Theory of Relativity (Electret Scientific Company, Star City, 1997).

15. Khaikin S.E. Forces of Inertia and Imponderability (Nauka, M., 1967).

16. Sivukhin D.V. The General Course of Physics. Mechanics (Nauka, M., 1979).

17. Landau L.D. and Lifshits E.M. The Classical Theory of Field (Pergamon Press, Oxford. 1985).

18. Pauli W. Theory of Relativity (Nauka, M., 1983).

19. Peschevitsky B.I. Dynamical Criteria for Inertial and Noninertial States, p.1 and 2. Phylosophy of Science, 1(7), 79-84 (2000); 1(9), 99-109 (2001) (in Russian).

Time and its Physical Relationships

Andrew Michrowski

President, The Planetary Association for Clean Energy, Inc., 100 Bronson Avenue, # 1001, Ottawa, Ontario K1R 6G8 Canada.
(613) 236-6265; fax: (613) 235-5876
pacenet@canada.com

Time cannot be absolutely defined, and there is no inseparable relation between time and signal velocity.
Albert Einstein [1]

Time does not exist by itself

The phenomenon of time emerges in relationships – as an expression of properties of physical bodies and changes that occur to them.

Time is a factor of energy. Time has to do with the *increase* and *decrease* of energy. For example, as energy is brought down to a "zero level", time is "eliminated", so in a sense, time cannot be "compressed" - only eliminated. In the zero-energy level, electrons occupying this level in unlimited numbers are available through state transitions for the building of matter and the vacuum [2]. So it is the extent and the nature of energy flow that determines the characteristics of time.

How do we know all this?

In his seminal foundations of physics work of the early 1900s, **Sir Edmund T. Whittaker** demonstrated by canonical quantization that there exist physical, time-like and longitudinal photons *in vacuo* [3,4,5]. The 2 scalar potential functions, *F* and *G* which completely characterize an electrodynamic field due to electrons in the ether are:

$$F\,(x,\,y,\,z,\,t) = \sum \frac{e}{4\pi}\, \sinh^{-1} \frac{\overline{z}'-z}{\left\{\left(\overline{x}'-x\right)^2 + \left(\overline{y}'-y\right)^2\right\}^{1/2}}$$

$$G\,(x,\,y,\,z,\,t) = \sum \frac{e}{4\pi}\, \tan^{-1} \frac{\overline{y}'-y}{\overline{x}'-x}$$

In these equations, for the fundamental case in which a field is due to any number of electrons moving in any way, we observe that time emerges only through the displacement of energy. Another way of putting it would be that time emerges through change in energy.

These photons have an independent physical existence. Whittaker himself observed, after computation that the "total disturbance at any point, due to this system of waves, is independent of the time, and is everywhere proportional to the gravitational potential due to the particle at the point" [6]. **A**. **D**. **Sakarov** admitted that the gravitational field is a "conglomerate of loose things and not a fundamental field of nature at all [7].

Everything electromagnetic, and probably gravitational, starts from these potentials, not fields, and under certain circumstances, there may exist photons without fields being present at all. In the *vacuo*, the longitudinal light photon travels in the direction of the beam, like an energy capsule, as a scalar four-potential-function energy standing-wave field, with many different frequencies, with an internal symmetry based on circular polarization [8,9], an energy field or nexus that "has an end, but no beginning". The time-like and space-like parts of the four potential are photons with spin −1, 0 and +1 that are longitudinally directed, and which are observed in the **Compton** and the photoelectric effect [10].

Movement of light affects time

Philip S. Callahan designed an elegant experiment that shows how variations in the movement of light affect time [11]. Changes in exposure settings of photographs of same objects, including coherent light laser spots results in shift of position of images. The more coherent the light, the less apparent is a shift in time. He suggested that time is neither absolute nor independent of photon activity of space.

We can also state, as a corollary, that the *movement* of light generates time. After all, the electrodynamics is associated with photons. This is particularly significant in time engineering, as will be seen later.

Time and life

Now, it is well known that the ability of cells to sense the presence of light is a primary function of life itself. If a cell can sense light, it is alive; if it cannot, it is dead [12]. Callahan was able to observe that time increments were detected on light-detecting surfaces of living organisms such as the cuticles of leaves.

The Russian time researcher, **Nikolay A**. **Kozyrev** considered that living systems "consume" time for their life-energy [13]. **Velimir Abramovich** suggests that living organisms are naturally-driven "time machines". They each have an inbuilt time that serves as a "code" to structure their own physical totality and to regulate their own functioning. Thus their "local time" acts as a "time operator" ("time condition") frequency [14]. The nature and level of electromagnetic fields in living systems could therefore be considered as indicators of their "energy level" and how it affects and adjusts the inherent rate of time-flow.

Time and consciousness

We append to these statements the notion that, yes, time is "consumed" by living organisms – but only if they are conscious. Essentially, time can be perceived by measurement, which always requires a conscious observer.

When we measure, we observe the differentials of energy flow. It is the measurement of these differentials - as we note from the Whittaker equations of scalar fluxes - that allows us to the measure the equivalence of time. When we measure differentials, we are effectively creating our notion of time.

It is difficult for humans to conceive that time does not exist when humans think about it. **Saint Augustine** speaks for all humans with his observation:

> *While I do not think about time, I know that time exists. When I begin to think about it, I stop understanding what it is.*

With such conditioning, humans cannot come to grips with the notion that the Universe has no beginning and no end. It is like the paradigm of absolute nothingness – people cannot deal with the concept of no time because, effectively, consciousness, like life, consumes time. One could advance the notion that thought itself is time in motion. When we think, we are creating time. Life is movement – and the brain registers energy differentials and their associated fluxes of scalar potentials.

Time and causal mechanics

Since time is the result of movement of energy (and accordingly, light), then time is associated with the cause-effect processes linked to a first position of energy to the next. In other words, time is innate to causal mechanics.

Variations in energy flow, logically, lead to variations in the characteristics of time. They also permit variations in causality.

Conversely, changes in time lead to changes in physical structure [15]. This phenomenon was proven by Kozyrev and has been labelled as the *Kozyrev effect* [16]. He demonstrated that changes in the course of time affect the performance of electronic components. Figuratively speaking, a transistor is like a corral in which light behaves in a certain way. By changing the way that light behaves, a transistor becomes valueless.

To create an extra-temporal causality (with linkages to another level/dimension) one must change the light movement. Changing the light patterns means changing the behaviour of a wave, and its concordant photonic reality. By altering the photons, we make them go to another dimension.

Changes in time can effect change in living systems [17]. The engineering of "time-polarized" waves has the promise to target and amplify natural healing procession in living organisms. It is these natural activities that would restore diseased cells to their original and healthy condition [18]. Such time engineering may also include the reversal of the effects of AIDS, smallpox, anthrax, and most bio warfare agents, with treatment times of only a few minutes per week, with no more than 3

treatments required in all. Eventually it may also be possible to reverse the effects of genetic disorders, effect limb regeneration, and cure spinal cord injuries [19].

Engineering causality

Variation in the density of energy determines variation in the "the course of time". By the "speed of course of time" is meant the rate of causal transformation and the input of additional forces into systems (including mechanical tensions). According to Russian scientists [20, 21,22] there are interesting possibilities in deploying engineering for causal mechanics.

In preventive time engineering, one could delay the approach of a known cause and to artificially close the consequence loop, and thereby annulling it from ever achieving an effect. In other words, one can make the effect "happen" before its normal time, disrupting space structure with its related "speed of the course of time". One can also make it "happen" after its expected deadline. This technology could have interesting implication in strategic situations (preventing a extra-planetary body from attaining a collision course).

According to the Russian experience, when the spatial structure is disrupted by time-engineered causal mechanics, the affected region undergoes relative greater entropy (or, less order). The volume of space is forced out to somewhere else, generating torsion fields, much like a balloon will drift away from denser air. A similar phenomenon occurs when the velocity of a mass increases, the force emerges against it, called "inertia" [23]. Now, to increase velocity, the energy of the mass increases. In the case of time, as the movement of energy increases, interaction or reaction with another dimension ensues to compensate for that primary change [24].

The boundary layer between the two states of space can then act as a mirror and the approaching agent may be reflected back to its source. For example, a light beam may be reflected back to its emitter, in full, or in part, depending on the engineering.

With space-time engineering, we could develop teleportation systems [25]. The course of time goes from the past to the future, in the direction of greater disorder. Going back to the past represents deceleration. The etheric continuum is perceived by Kozyrev is containing variations of "density" of structural elements. The "denser" the etheric region, the slower is the course of time. A zone of accelerated time course would be forced out into "rarefied" ether. A zone of slowed time would be forced into denser ether, hence the basis for a teleportation technique.

In vivo experiments with a Time Machine

For over 15 years, a Russian association of scientists has conducted experiments with acceleration and deceleration of time with 4 prototypes of time machines

[26]. Light-heartedly, the units are called "muskrat traps" since the experiments conducted in remote forest were disguised as a high-tech electromagnetic technology for trapping muskrats. The time machine units are spheres ranging in diameters of 30cm, 1 meter and 2.1-meter. The shells are encased with coils designed to produce convergent waves.

Team leader **Vadim A. Chernobrov** describes converging electromagnetic waves as moving from a periphery to a central point. They are observed when a hoop is thrown into the water and inside the hoop the waves converge. If a potential is applied to do work and to initiate the energy differential process, the other reverse direction scalar (the reverse-time energy flow) must react. Thus, compensation of time - in the form of the deceleration or acceleration of the rate of time - can take place [27].

The first trials involved mice, in which most (25 out of 31) died. Eventually, there were successful 2-hours runs of time travel. An experiment with a dog that was clearly frightened also showed no ill effects. This led to experiment with humans, the first being **Ivan Konov** who, on August 26, 2001 decelerated into the past by 3% of planetary time during a half-hour trial. Dozens of others have experienced the phenomenon and report such sensations as: quicker pulse, giddiness, itching skin, body twisting, numbness at extremities and a case of an out-of-body experience. Harmful effects on living systems do not appear to be linked to the change of the rate of time, but rather to the variations of the time rate value among regions of a living organism.

Some individuals reported visual experiences such as "starry sky", "luminous vortices" and colour spots. Individuals observing outside of the time travel machine noted headaches. The most interesting phenomena occurred just before the start-up: significant presence of ozone for several hundreds of meters around the machine, which was located in a forest. Also noted were strange lighting effects in the sky above the apparatus, accompanied by sounds that inexplicably appeared to generated from inside.

Factors affecting the rate of time

The experiments yielded interesting observations: the phenomenon of the rate of change of time varies according to the hour of the day and according to the lunar phase. The rate can be influenced by a variety of external inputs, including mechanical vibration.

The transition into the future differs from than into the past. It is like movement from any point in a tree – where downwards represents past time. There are many paths possible towards the future – upwards, along the branches, but only one towards the past – downwards to the trunk. The return from the past time is possible only if the time traveler does not interfere with occurring events – or the possibility of returning to another branch of the tree. However, a return move from any variant of future time is possible regardless of the behaviour of the traveller.

The Russian time-travel experiments point to a relationship between inertia and time. In changes of rates of time, the region adjacent to the spheres develops a boundary layer effect, appearing as an aura of "white mist". The greater the time differential, the denser is the mist.

A similar phenomenon has been observed, and captured on film, with some experiments conducted by **John Hutchison** involving remote-controlled lifting and disruption of objects [28,29]. It may be that the *Hutchison effect* involves causal mechanics.

Time and frequency

Time may be viewed as a process – or "change-of-space" in any direction that does not exist in our dimension [30,31,32]. In physics, new properties are commonly acquired as the result of change in some property: charge, current, induced magnetic field, etc. Here, the new property becomes a new dimension. For the frequency of oscillations, the formula is $f = 3/\lambda$ [l/s], where λ is wavelength in [m]. Here, the velocity of light is equal to 3 (the 10^8 mathematical degree is omitted since it is a question of scale of measurement only).

Therefore, the analogy between our dimension and frequency gives us a new notion, which is curvature ρ: $\rho = 3/r$ [l/m] and $f = 3/\lambda$ [l/s]. The 3-dimensional radius is represented by $R = \lambda/\rho = r/3$ [m] and time as a period of oscillation has the relationship: $T = \lambda/f$ [s]. **Time can be considered to be equivalent to the radius of curvature ρ if the linear radius r and the wavelength λ are the same. This is a condition for the spatial resonance effect.** Note that in this analysis, *"m"* and *"s"* are unlike when length is measured in meters in our dimension. However, for a new dimension it is possible to use equal units for (m) of 4th dimension and conventional "second". Furthermore, light (photons) is possible in our dimension only as a process in such a spatial resonator.

Experiencing time dilation

Based on the above discussion, it is proposed that we experience changes in rate of time in our daily life. During sleep, as our energy level decreases, so it can be argued that time decreases and we "go" into another dimension. Aspects of what is observed during the dream-state do not obey the rules of our familiarity of physical existence, and conventional causality - because the rate of time is different. As we start our dreaming, and as we emerge from dreaming, the recalled experiences resemble more our regular experiences. Before and after sleep, our brain frequency tends to resemble the daytime's. In effect, understanding our dream state's sense of time may be a reference key to comprehending the physics and causality mechanics of time engineering.

Time and planetary gravity

The Earth's mass appears to be in continual growth. 250 to 350 million years ago, our globe may have been half size - with all of the continents as one landmass [33]. In ancient sediments, the natural angles of slope in sand beaches greatly exceeded those of today, indicating that gravity has on our planetary surface has increased 8-fold, several times, during the last 1.5 billion years. Yet the planet's average density may not have changed – only the acceleration of free fall [34,35].

There could also be another explanation possible for the change of slope of beaches. The pull of the moon may have been different in the past.

Also, the planetary magnetic fields could have increased over the millions of years, through interactions with the solar flux of hydrogen atoms. The sun is in constant explosion – production of energy differential. Earth and other planets could be responding with harmonics to compensate for the solar activity, leading to an overall increase in magnetic fields. Such a phenomenon may give the illusion that the physical body is growing larger. In other words, with time, the force of gravity would alter planetary mass and energy.

Assuming that the Earth's density has not increased, it is possible account for, mathematically, the relative increase – growth processes - of the nuclei of terrestrial atoms, including the doubling of mass of nucleons and of electrons [36]. Such calculation also accounts for the emission of 2 different photons by hydrogen atoms (also known as the "red shift" described by **E. Hubble**).

The phenomenon can be explained with the time-like and longitudinal photons described by the bi-directional 2 scalar potential functions [37,38]. Could it be suggested that matter is gravity minus time? In other words, gravity is related to accumulation of energy differential (time) in mass.

The value of gravity varies throughout the planet, in part because of the poles and in part due to local density of matter. **Kirill P**. **Butusov** has noted a correlation between places of civilization and regions of greater gravity. A faster rate of evolution may be associated with such gravity zones. In these zones there would be a greater influx of scalar potentials. Time would be more "authenticated" by these energy flows into conscious beings. Butusov reminds us that time has a "positive energy" and flowing into nuclei of atoms or a "negative energy" flowing out of the nuclei of atoms [39].

The outflow would be representative of gravitational energy. Longitudinal waves are known to be able to enter and to leave nuclei. Such flows of time must come from other dimensions. After all, the surface of any elementary particle separates our dimension from another. This leads to an interesting possibility in which all time-associated processes between dimensions are synchronized.

Time reconsidered

Arguments have been laid that suggest that time is equal to energy differential (including movement of light). Living systems "consume" time as part of their consciousness and measuring processes.

It is possible to engineer causality. An understanding of higher-order electrodynamics is required. Techniques exist for the generation of scalar potentials. Causality technology has many applications. They include: therapeutics, energy generation, consciousness technology, inter-dimensionality, defence systems, teleportation, and of course, "time travel".

Appreciation is expressed for guidance in this discussion by Thomas E. Bearden and Bernard de Montréal.

References

1. Einstein, Albert. How I created the theory of relativity. [Translation by Yoshimara A. Ono.] /Physics Today. Volume 35 (8), August, 1982. p. 45-7. [Lecture given by Einstein in Japan, on learning of his Nobel Prize.]
2. Phipps, Jr. Thomas E. Heretical Verities: mathematical themes in physical description. /Classic Non-Fiction Library, Urbana, 1986. p. 397-405
3. Whittaker, Edmund T. On the partial differential equations of mathematical physics. /Mathematische Annalen. Volume 57, 1903. p. 333-355.
4. Whittaker, Edmund T. On an expression of the electromagnetic field due to electrons by means of two scalar potential functions./ Proceedings of the London Mathematical Society. Volume 1, 1904. p. 362-372.
5. Whittaker, Edmund T. A history of the theories of aether and electricity. Volume 1 and 2. London: Thomas Nelson & Sons, 1953.
6. Whittaker, Edmund T. On the partial differential equations of mathematical physics. /Mathematische Annalen. Volume 57, 1903. p. 354.
7. Sakarov, A. D., Vacuum fluctuations in curved space and the theory of gravitation. /Soviet Physics Doklady. Vol. 12, 1968. p. 1040-1. [English translation.] Original in: Doklady Akad. Nauk. USSR, Vol. 177, 1967. p. 70-1.
8. Evans, Myron W., Physica B. Volume 182, 1992. p. 227
9. Evans, Myron W., and S. Kielich (editors). Modern nonlinear optics. [Special topical issue of Ilya Prigogine and Stuart A. Rice: Advances in Chemical Physics. Wiley, New York 1992, 1993, 1997, and 2001] Volume 85 (2).
10. Institute for Advanced Study (Budapest). On Whittaker's F and G fluxes, Part III: the existence of physical longitudinal and time-like photons. // Higher symmetry electrodynamics: a collection of AIAS papers. [Special Issue. Journal of New Energy.] 2000. p. 7-1 – 7-5.
11. Callahan, Philip S. and Kevin. Sinewaves of spacetime. / Newsletter of the Planetary Association for Clean Energy. Volume 9(2&3), April 1997. p. 8-9.
12. Jibu, et al. Evanesecent (tunnelling) photon and cellular "vision". /Biosystems. Vol. 43, 1997. p. 65-73.
13. Kozyrev, Nikolay. A. Selected works. University of St. Petersburg. 1991. [In Russian]. Also: On the way to understanding the time phenomenon: Construction of time. A. P. Levich, editor. World Scientific Press. 1995.
14. Abramovich, Velimir. Experimenting with Time. /New Energy Technologies. Volume 3, November-December, 2001. p. 13-5
15. Frolov, Alexander V. Practical application of time rate control (TRC) theory. /New Energy Technologies. Volume 3, November-December, 2001. p. 15-18.
16. Kozyrev, Nikolay A. The possibility of experimental study of the properties of time. /National Technical Service, US

Department of Commerce, Springfield, Virginia. (JPRS 45238). [Undated.]

17. Bearden, Thomas E. Renaissance healing, a concept whose time has come. /Proceedings of the United States Psychotronics Association. Volume 9, 2000. p. 1-2.

18. Bearden, Thomas E. Vacuum engines and Prioré's methodology: the true science of energy-medicine. I and II, /Explore! For the Professional. Volumes 6 (1), and (2) 1995.

19. Bearden, Thomas E. Private communication. February 2002.

20. Frolov, Alexander V. Practical application of time rate control (TRC) theory. /New Energy Technologies. Volume 3, November-December, 2001 p 15-8.

21. Kozyrev, Nikolay. A. Selected works. University of St. Petersburg. 1991. [In Russian]. Also: On the way to understanding the time phenomenon: construction of time. A. P. Levich, editor. World Scientific Press. 1995.

22. Kozyrev, Nikolay A. and V. V. Nasonov. On some properties of time found by means of astronomical observations. / Collection: Problems of research of the universe. Volume IX, M-L, 1980.

23. Puthoff, Harold E. The energetic vacuum: implications for energy research. /Speculation in science and technology. Volume 13 (3). p. 247.

24. Frolov, Alexander V. Trilateral spacetime effect. / Newsletter of the Planetary Association for Clean Energy. Volume 9(2&3), April 1997. p. 10-13.

25. Frolov, Alexander V. Practical application of time rate control (TRC) theory. /New Energy Technologies. Volume 3, November-December, 2001 p 15-8.

26. Chernobrov, Vadim. Experiments with a man in the Time Machine. /New Energy Technologies. Volume 3, November-December, 2001 p. 6-8.

27. Frolov, Alexander V. Trilateral spacetime effect. / Newsletter of the Planetary Association for Clean Energy. Volume 9(2&3), April 1997. p. 10-13.

28. Calante, Pelayo and Andrew Michrowski (compilers). The Hutchison File. The Planetary Association for Clean Energy, 1996. p. 16-7.

29. Hathaway, George D. The Hutchison effect – a lift and disruption system. /New Energy Technology. The Planetary Association for Clean Energy, 1990. p. 77-103.

30. Frolov, Alexander V. Trilateral spacetime effect. / Newsletter of the Planetary Association for Clean Energy. Volume 9(2&3), April 1997. p. 10-13.

31. Ouspensky, Pavel D. A new model of the universe. New York, 1971.

32. Frolov, Alexander V. The application of potential energy for the creation of power./ New Energy News. Volume 2(1), May, 1994.

33. Kirilov, I. V. Increase in volume of rocks is one of the reasons of tectonic deformations. /Academy of Science of the USSR Geologist. Volume 1, 1963.

34. Smirnov, L. S. and Ju. N. Lubina. On the possibility of studying the change in gravity together with geological time. /Reports of the USSR Academy of Science. Volume 187, Number 4. 1964.

35. Maxlow, James. Earth expansion – the definitive proof. / Nexus. Volume 8 (3), May 2001. p. 47-51.

36. Butusov, Kirill P. Time is a physical substance. /New Energy Technologies. Volume 3, November-December, 2001. p. 8-13.

37. Bjerknes, K. A. Vorlesungen ueber hydrodinamische fernkraefte. Leipzig, 1900-2.

38. Yarkovsky, I. O. Universal gravitation as a result of formation of ponderable matter inside heavenly bodies. Moscow, 1889.

39. Butusov, Kirill P. Time is a physical substance. /New Energy Technologies. Volume 3, November-December, 2001. p. 8-13.

Time as Phenomenon of the Expanding Universe

Michael H. Shulman

7 (095) 357-80-33, 7 (095) 421-11-31
E-mail: shulman@dol.ru

Preface

In 1992 the author of this words, having been stimulated by Kozyrev's book [1], started to reflect on Time meaning and Time and Space asymmetric roles during the Universe Expanding. The development of these ideas has led to the work [2], it is available now (the Russian version only) on the website of the Institute of time nature explorations (grant #00-07-90211 of the Russian fund of basic research).

I would like to thank the Chairman of the Russian Interdisciplinary Temporology Seminar Dr. A. Levich from Moscow State University for his constant support and friendly interest. Also I would like to thank A. Moskowsky for the 20-year discussion of the physics history and philosophy.

The said work [2] pretends to revise radically a number of basic physical concepts of the Space - Time, Motion and Energy nature. It includes a detail analysis and mathematical calculations. Only a brief account of the main part of this work is presented below.

Introduction

The nature of time is not yet enough clear for natural science. In Newton mechanics time was presented as some universal formal parameter. Its value rises steadily at every point of the Universe by unknown for us reason. Each physical process occurs in space in correspondence with the time course.

In the Special Relativity (SR) time and space are integrated to the common 4D-continuum. However, in this theory the time component having imaginary factor seems also to be "exotic". In this concept the increase of time is also implied in each reference frame.

The General Relativity (GR) allowed linking the time properties with gravitational fields and the space geometry. The time currency started to be associated with a spatial expansion of the Universe.

The theoretical physics traditional approach to the process description is based upon the considering of time course as primary (original) one. There are also in the modern physics [3] several attempts to deduce the time concept as secondary one from different fundamental (microscopic) concepts.

However, the third way (inverse to the first one) is possible and forms the basis of this paper. A starting point of this way is the following question: "Does any universal process exist which could *generate* physical time?"

(Editor's note: The same question was formulated and the answer was proposed by Alexander V. Frolov in 1996, report "Matter as process", Scientific congress "New Ideas in Natural Sciences". It was assumed that similar process can be produced by special technical methods also.)

Such fundamental cosmic process really exists and it is well known in the modern science. **It presents the Universe expansion** and was opened at the first third of the 20th Century by the American astrophysicist E. Hubble and others [4]. It means the general increase of distances between all 3D-bodies. The same scattering of two-dimensional-figures happens on the surface of some spherical balloon during air incoming. The centre of this sphere does not belong to the surface; all points of the sphere (the Universe) are equivalent.

Some time earlier the theoretical physics had come to the same results. As it is well known, the Einstein's GR was published in the 1916. After that Friedmann (1922) proposed the concept of the expanding Universe. For example, in the book [5] a description of the basic cosmic model is given. Hereinafter this model is called "Einstein-Friedman model", or "EF-model". In this model the Universe is presented as 3D- hyper surface of a 4D- sphere with increasing radius. Of course, the curvature of the 3D-hyper surface increases with time too.

Basic hypothesis relative to time nature

Some simple and pictorial views consist a basis of the new concept. Hereinafter it is called briefly as "The Spherical Expanding Universe Theory (SEUT)".

In the SEUT, as well as in the EF-model, in every time the Universe represents the 3D-hyper surface of a 4D-sphere. However, there is one very important difference. In the Einstein's theory the spatial components of the metric tensor are opposite in sign to the time's one. For example, we may consider time as imaginary quantity, then spatial coordinate as a real one. On the contrary, in the SEUT the 4D-continuum is considered as purely

Euclidean, all the four coordinates are real quantities. The usual spherical geometry can be used on a surface of the 4D-sphere.

As it is well known, in the GR the Age of the Universe can be *calculated* using the EF-model or a similar one. Usually, the radius-age dependence is not a direct proportionality in such GR models. However this result may be deduced if to neglect the global pressure of matter that fills the Universe. In [2] it is demonstrated, that an account of the static pressure of matter follows to the Universe radius linear dependence on its age (see below).

On the contrary, in the SEUT the time universal course is *manifested*. The Universe age is *identified* with a current Universe radius divided by the velocity of light. Numerous important consequences may be deduced from this statement. On the other hand, it allows avoiding many other arbitrary postulates in the model.

Mechanical motion and maximum velocity in the SEUT

The SEUT states, there is no unlimited set of independent mechanical motions. Only world lines of moving bodies exist. Each of them has some inclination relative to the time line, which presents a normal to the hypersurface of the 4D-sphere. It is *an inclination angle that defines the spatial motion velocity*. At the increase of sphere radius the intersection point of word line and current hypersurface "moves" with exact correspondance with a modern physics prediction.

In particular, immovable objects (stars) have zero inclination, their world line are normal to the hypersurface. Hence they "scatter" according to the Hubble law, their mutual velocity is proportional to mutual distance. If a body world line has some inclination relative to normal, the angle is more than zero. But it can't exceed 90°, therefore *maximum* mechanical motion *velocity* appears *naturally*, it is equal to the velocity of light.

Let us consider three variants of motion (see Fig.1).
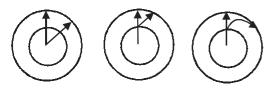
Fig. 1
Phenomenon of a "motion" of point on a sphere surface for immovable (at the left), uniformly moving (at the centre) and non-uniformly moving (at the right)

The left picture illustrates the Hubble effect. The right picture presents a general case of motion with acceleration. The central picture corresponds with an inertial motion; its world line is direct. In this case the moving body displacement increases proportionally to

the Universe radius increment. So, *inertial* motion is not postulated in the SEUT, it appears as natural model consequence.

At a large 4-sphere radius values all the relationships of SR and usual mechanics laws are applicable approximately in the SEUT. A Special Relativity light cone transforms to all the hyper surface of the 4D-sphere. But the analogy is not complete, because an absolute remote SR area degenerates to this 3D- hyper surface in the SEUT (see Fig. 2).
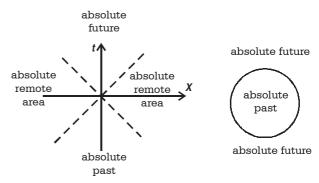
Fig. 2.
4D- continuum areas in the SR (at the left) and in the SEUT (at the right)

SEUT and Minkowski geometry

Let us consider small increments of time and space coordinates along body world lines during the Universe expanding. It is enough to consider a small area of the Universe, so we can neglect its curvature. Then it is acceptably to replace approximately concentric hyper surfaces ("isochrones") by parallel hyper planes. The space-hold corresponds with a representative point "drift" perpendicularly to isochrones, an inertial motion corresponds with displacement along inclined direct lines between isochrones.

At each time the Universe is represented by a certain isochrone that contains all the real spatial points. Let us accept that 4D-sphere radius increment divided by velocity of light presents invariant measure of (absolute) time increment. We will also state that this quantity has the same value in each *inertial* reference frame, i.e. at a motion along each *direct* world line.

Let the angles of world line inclinations from normal direction are enough *small*. Then metric relationships like Minkowski geometry ones appears in our purely Euclidean 4D-continuum. In particular, well known relationship

$$c^2\, ds^2 = c^2\, dt^2 - dr^2$$

can be deduced from the Pythagorean theorem. It connects a spatial component *dr* with a time component *dt* (at moving reference frame) through velocity of light *c*. Here *ds* is an absolute time interval (between two 4D-events at a immovable reference frame). **Hence, if velocities aren't very high, the Lorentz transform is correct in different inertial reference frames.**

On the Einstein's relativity principle

If the world lines inclinations from exact normal direction cannot be accepted as small, then Minkowski geometry relationships are correct approximately only. It means that Einstein's relativity principle is correct (in the SEUT) only for reference frames that move with velocities enough small relative to *selected* reference frame. Such reference frame is linked hardly with a body at (absolute) rest, i.e. drifting along radial world line.

The selected reference frame existing reminds of old ether theories that contradict to the Special Relativitiy views. It seems, these theories became a thing of the past irretrievably. In fact, the velocity of light in vacuum is constant everywhere and everywhen. However, the reference frame existing can be detected in principle as a light signal frequency bias, i.e. with the help of Doppler effect. Well, this phenomenon is really detected by the modern astrophysics!

The temperature diagram of the Cosmic Microwave Background Radiation (CMBR) coming to the Solar system from all the sides of the Universe is presented on Fig.3. The data was registrated during 4 years by the Cosmic Background Explorer (COBE) satellite (NASA Goddard Flight Centre, COBE Science Working Group).
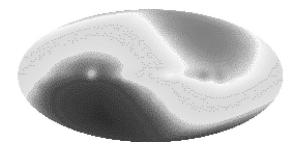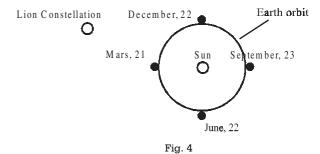
Fig. 3
The anisotropy of the Cosmic Microwave Background
Radiation (CMBR)

The well-known Russian scientist J.B. Zeldovitch in the Editorial Addition to [6] in connection with earlier experiments notes that careful measurements **allowed to find out some anisotropy of CMBR.** An antenna oriented to the Lion constellation detects that the radiation temperature is 0.013% more, than mean temperature. The radiation temperature in the opposite direction is 0.013% less, than mean. **Generally, a temperature varies continuously between these two values.** The isotropy presents only for some imaginary observer. ***The Solar system, Earth move to the Lion constellation relative to this observer having velocity 390 ± 60 km/s.*** Hence, as a result of the Doppler effect, a incoming radiation seems to be more hot, and an overtaking radiation seems to be more cold. This example shows that for observer of any point of the Universe this CMBR is isotropic. We may consider this observer and the connected reference frame as selected one. The selected reference frame existing at the Universe every point looks like the physicists commonly

held view preceding to Relativity. They thought that the light presented ether oscillations occupying whole the Universe. They thought also that a reference frame connected with ether was preferable, or selected. They tried to detect the Earth motion relative to ether. We know that these experiments gave the negative result: any ether doesn't exist. But the Universe evolution follows that when CMBR is observed (and only in this case!), the selected reference frame (called sometime "new ether") appears. ***The new ether or CMBR just realises the motion according to Hubble's law.***

The modern NASA's data allows to put the relation of the Solar system velocity to the velocity of light equal to 0,15%. It is enough small value justified Special Relativity and Minkowski geometry relationships application. But can we believe this phenomenon to be an exhaustive proof of the SEUT accuracy?

To test it we propose a not complicated observational experiment. If the CMBR anisotropy is due to the real selected frame existence, then it may be detected for any electromagnetic radiation. In particular, an anisotropy of solar radiation has to exist at the different year periods. It has to be detectable in August, when the both solar radiation and CMBR come to the Earth from the Lion costellation side (see Fig. 4). In February these sourses are opposite in disposition relative to the Earth, therefore the solar radiation anisotropy direction has to be opposite. The expected effect value (with account of the Lion constellation straight ascendancy and obliquity of the ecliptic) is approximately equal to 300 km/s, i.e. nearly 0,1% of the velocity of light. In November and May the anysotropy has to be practically absent.

Fig. 4
The Sun and Lion constellation disposition relative to the Earth

Probably, an analogous SEUT test in a laboratry is realizable with help of artificial radiation sources.

Particle mass, energy and impulse

So, we consider the Universe as expanding 3D-hypersurface of a 4D-sphere. Mass localisation places in the Universe present the points of the hypersurface intersection by world lines. So, **these world lines have a real physical meaning, not abstract illustrative** this one. We may expect this physical meaning to be more essential than simple word expression.

Particularly, while the Universe global analysis is making, we may suppose that such fundamental

particle feature as its mass at rest presents some *relative* value. Such relation (some kind of a quantum number) may include, for example, 4D-sphere (the Universe) diameter and some characteristic size like de Broglie wave period that is inversely proportional to the mass. This hypothesis may make clear *inertia* nature as two characteristic times *relation*. It may also explain the *rest-energy* notion.

Meanwhile, the Universe radius increases with time. Well, what happens to mass? If a de Broglie wave period increased proportionally to time, we couldn't generally detect the Universe expansion, including famous "red shift". But if particle wave periods are constant, then *matter mass has to rise proportionally to the Universe age and size*.

In the Relativity (like Minkowski geometry) we use vectors having imaginary projection to time axis and real projections to space ones. Particularly, it is true for velocity, acceleration, and energy-impulse 4-vectors. As against, vectors having all the real components are only used in the SEUT. At that, a 4-interval value (length in pseudo-Euclidean space) of some relativistic vector answers the absolute time axis projection of a corresponding SEUT-vector, and imaginary component of a relativistic vector (time of motion) answers the corresponding vector length in purely Euclidean continuum of the SEUT. For example, the energy-impulse vector module presents such quantity. Its projection to absolute time axis is energy at rest divided by velocity of light, and its projections to spatial axis are impulse components. This quantity is *constant* while the particle movement is *inertial* one.

A jump to *non-inertial* motion in the SEUT is connected with a corresponding state vector *changement* law. So, if particle motion velocity changes, its *energy at rest* doesn't change, therefore full acceleration at a time interval can be calculated using the difference between new and old impulse values. Thus, the non-uniform motion equation in the SEUT can be found like SR as time derivative of an impulse expression.

The force-acceleration relation depends on a mutual orientation of force and velocity vectors in the both SR and SEUT. But in Relativity a reference frame velocity can be choised arbitrary, for example it can be zero, then the relation will be equal to one.

On the contrary, in the SEUT an *absolute* velocity is presented, it is defined by the world line inclination relative to the normal. Let the Earth move with any velocity relative to the immovable (selected) reference frame. Then we will be able to detect the absolute velocity using two measurements, the first one along the world line, and the second one in a perpendicular direction.

If this absolute velocity is really defined by direction and value following from CMBR anisotropy effect, then we can expect a relative difference near $2,25 \cdot 10^{-6}$ between longitudinal acceleration and transversal one.

Local gravitational fields of particles

What does the SEUT talk about body gravitational fields? Let us imagine all the bodies as immovable and drifting exactly along the *radial* world lines. If there is a mutual gravity attraction effect between two bodies in such Universe, an observer will detect some curvature of their world lines. They will seem to be bending one to another instead of a radial divergence. In essence, in this case we may replace a world line by a gravitational field line. Then the analogy allows us to identify an Universe isochronous intersection with an equal potential surface that these field lines have to be *normal* to this surface. So, we arrive to a presentation that a Universe isochronous intersection is not strictly concentric hypersurface. It is perturbed by some kind of craters (see Fig.5), that centres correspond with gravitating bodies.

Fig. 5
Local body gravitation field

The inclination angle of a crater profile relative to non-perturbed sphere hypersurface is equal exactly to the inclination angle of a normal relative to strict radial direction. Hence, a local gravitation field intencity measure agrees practically in each point with body velocity measure that we used earlier. It authorizes energy concept using for both mechanical motion and gravitation phenomenon.

SEUT and General Relativity

Let us discuss some GR's aspects. Is it acceptable to neglect pressure of matter? When Einstein searched for his early cosmological static model solution, he had to introduce a cosmic constant in his equation. This constant answered a ***negative matter pressure,*** that Einstein could not determine a meaning. In a non-stationary model a solution exists independently on cosmic constant presence, therefore it may be put often as zero. As rule, bodies' velocities may be put as zero too; therefore (*dynamic*) pressure is usually neglected.

However, we insist on necessity to account a *static* pressure of gravitating matter. Really, it can be ignored in the case when Einstein's relativity principle is applicable. Accordingly with it a gravitation field can be *always* replaced by reference accelerated frame. In this case a purely kinematical side is only accounted. However, *not every* field may be considered (even locally) as uniform one (see Fig. 6). Let the radius of a field source (or a *probe particle*) have the same order that the mutual distance. Then the Einstein's equation connecting space geometry with matter physical features seems to be incomplete. More precisely, it is incorrect to put exactly equal to zero a static pressure

in the matter density tensor, it is necessary to introduce its (unknown, calculable) value accounting **the continuum deformation energy.**
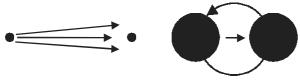
Fig. 6
At the left a locally uniform gravitation field is presented, the right field can't be considered as uniform one even locally

Fig. 7
If space features *do not depend* on time, then the closed system energy is *constant* (at the left). But if space features *evolve* in time, then the isolated system energy *have not to be constant.*

Are the proposed amendments important? Specialists know, that the Metagalaxy gravitation radius is *in fact* comparable with its real size. **In [2] we have showed that the Universe radius was *less* than its gravitation radius.**

It is shown also in the same work [2], that a resulting gravitational pressure in the Universe is *negative* and it is responsible for the Einstein's cosmic constant. This fact seems to be evident because a gravitation force aims to *gripe* any matter accumulation. **But it is possible to conclude it by a non-trivial way.** Let us consider a matter pressure as a reactive force operating within a uniform sphere of incompressible liquid. A pressure dependence on internal density is presented in [7]. We can see [2], **that if the sphere gravitation radius exceeds its geometric radius not more than approximately 1% (or it is still less), then a sudden negative change of the pressure appears at the internal abroad. This phenomenon may be explained as a volume "expansion" due to a metrics perturbation.**

The consideration of static pressure allows not only to find out a *new* (linear in time) cosmologic solution, but also to calculate a dependence of the Universe gravitational pressure on the radius of the Universe. This *negative* value has the representation like that one for a non-relativistic sphere (a star or a planet, for example). Also we would like to note, the formulation of density-Universe radius in the SEUT is exactly the same that the formulation of so-called *critical* density in the EF-model.

Two very important circumstances are clarified for all that. First, the **Universe mass was turned out as *linearly increasing* function of the 4D-sphere radius, and it is not a constant. A famous Einstein's programme is realized unexpectedly in the SEUT: a matter features (density) are reduced to a space features (curvature).** In other words, a necessity to introduce a mass distribution in the equations externally ("by hands") is eliminated in the SEUT. This operation is need in the GR to find out a spatial metrics changement law.

Secondly, the seeming paradoxicality of University mass (and energy!) non-conservation make us to reflect on conditions that the *accomplishment* allows to the energy conservation law correctness (see Fig.7).
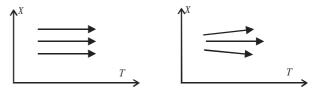
It is evident, we believe, that the energy can be exactly constant only in such physical system (or in whole the Universe) for which space features (in particular, a curvature) are strictly constant in time also. However, the both modern physics and SEUT issue from the opposite concept. Hence, this state can only be accomplished approximately, moderately of a bit of the modern rate of a relative space curvature evolution. This rate has order 10^{-10} per year for the modern Universe.

N.A.Kozyrev [1] basing on astrophysical observations stated the common star radiation origin that has to be due to the time-energy transformation. Accordingly with the SEUT, the relative increment of star mass (and its rest energy) is equal to the Universe age relative increment. It is interesting that the Sun mass relative lost due to the radiation consists in 10^{-15} per year, i.e. five orders less than mentioned above energy increment.

Universe origin and closed geometry

The cosmological EF-model could not say anything on the Universe origin. On the contrary, the work [2] approach allows an obvious way to study the problem.

As it is noted in [7], the metrics of any sphere area having a non-zero density is perturbed relative to Euclidean one, its geometry agrees with 4D-sphere hypersurface geometry. For non-collapsing sphere its gravitation potential relief is like a very small *"pit"* that gravitation radius is much less than its geometric size. However, when the density rises, the metrics perturbs more and more, and the pit transforms to some kind of *"crater"*. The crater is connected with the external surface by a narrow neck. Only this neck or its part is visible for an external observer, and the gravitation insurmountable barrier transmutes an object central area into "a lost world".

From the point of view of the external world, the central area presents a "black hole" absorbing irreversibly all the matter and radiation. On the other hand, for our Universe inhabitant the "navel-string" connecting with the external world has to seem a spherical "white hole", to which a matter and radiation are coming continuously (and, may be, carry out an information on the external world features). There is an old Russian fiction science book called "Sannikov Land", where an internal gigantic

trench concerning central small star is described. Our model seems to be like this picture.

Is it possible that we live in such a black hole? The present hypothesis answers affirmatively this question. The negative sign of the matter pressure due to continuously increasing of our world size allows to such conclusion. And the University self-closing can be physically explained by the way.

On the other hand, as it is shown in [2], in spite of matter average density negligibly small, the Universe gravitation radius is more than its geometrical radius; hence, it presents a black hole. This condition accomplishment agrees the Universe self-closing, the boundary absence in spite of its finite volume. Also, this fact confirms our assumption that the Universe rest energy localisation area does not exceed the gravity operation area.

A specific model of star collapse is created in the modern General Relativity. In general, it can study in *three* different reference frames. As a rule, the "point mass" models are used. *The first* model is linked with an external observer; the *second* one accompanies a matter falling to the black hole. *The third* model presents an internal reference frame, i.e. an observer within collapsing object.

From an external observer's point of view the matter falling time to the black hole is infinitely large. However, in an accompanying reference frame it is finite. Since in the accompanying reference frame time and space coordinates are expressed through the both types of external reference frame coordinates. What is more, in the internal reference frame the time and space coordinates quite trade places, the metrics tensor components are depending on time. Further, any matter point history in this accompanying reference frame starts at the zero moment and finishes after same universal time period in a special (singular) point, after which nothing exists ("time barrier").

As we believe, another lacing between internal and external collapse pictures will be possible, if we consider a non-point collapsing object. Nobody wonders now at a situation, when a time period can be finite in one reference frame and infinite in another one. **Therefore, we can believe, unlimited black hole** *collapse* **in the external Super-Universe may seem to present unlimited** *expansion* **of our Universe observing inside.** This expansion seems to *start* from a singular point, and the same point is the history end of all the matter of the external Super-Universe that fall to the black hole. I would like to note especially, it does not mean that internal time pass in opposite to external one. **Rather, it is possible to state, time within a black hole passes ortogonally to external one.**

References

1. Kozyrev N.A. Selected works. - Leningrad University, 1991.
2. Shulman N.H. Site of the Institute of time nature exploration (Russian-language version): www.chronos.msu.ru , Project of Chair-laboratory of time as phenomenon of expansion, 2001.
3. Vladimirov Yu. S. Relational theory of space-time and interactions. Part 2. Theory of physical ineractions. Moscow university, 1998.
4. Sharov A.S., Novikov I.D. A man, who discovered the Univerce explosion. Edvin Hubbl's life and work. Moscow, Science, 1989.
5. Einstein A. The essence of Relativity. Moscow, IL, 1955.
6. Wineberg S. First three minutes. The modern approach to the Univerce origin. Moscow, Energoizdat, 1981.
7. Tholmen R. Relativity, thermodynamics and cosmology. Moscow, Science, 1974.

The Experiments on Thermo-Gravitation

This review of the article by Alexander P. Schegolev, the scientist from Saint Petersburg, was received by NET editors from our reader vladrim@mail.ru and presents his own view about Schegolev's experiment [1]. The opinion of our editorial board is not fully in agreement with the author's conclusion. Also we have no information who is vladrim@mail.ru.

It is known from the science history that the very experiment gives a push to revising of old knowledge; it also checks the new designs and conclusions. The knowledge of physical theories is based on the experiment; the experiment confirms hypothesizes or refuses them. Making experiments, we ask questions to the nature. And it always answers us on the clear pointed question. However…

Michael Faraday was trying in vain to find out the relationship between gravitation and electricity. These experiments were repeated on the modern level. Further, there was made an attempt to screen gravity force, the influence of environment on gravity was also trying to be researched. Many efforts were spent on finding out of the gravitational radiation falling to the Earth from depths of the Universe, as well as artificial generation of gravitational waves.

The experimental studies of weight change must be under attention. In particular, the attempt to find the differences in weight after sharp turning of body from the quiescent state into the state of rotation around its own axis was undertaken. The experiments of the influence of strong magnetic field and temperature on the weight of a body were made.

But alas! No changes of weight were discovered in previous experiment *(Editorial: Perhaps, the author has no information about sucessful results. We reported about such results in our magazine)*. Analyzing these experiments and theoretical premises, the author of the given article has made an unusual experiment imitating the heat motion in the Earth from core to peripheries. For that experiment there was used the steel ball with 100 mm diameter. The cone hole was made in the ball up to its center. The ball was installed by the hole upwards on laboratory scales with 50 mg scale factor and laser beam was directed inside (into the hole). The directed heat flow outgoing from the center of the ball was created by this way. While the surface temperature increasing, the arrow of scales became to be rejected aside weight decrease. The temperature was measured by the contact thermocouple. After an hour and half, approximately, when the temperature was 300 degrees Celsius the laser was switched off. The difference (the decrease) in weight against initial value (in the cold state) was four grams per 4200 grams of the test body.

Further, the ball was getting cold slowly on the scales and its arrow was creeping to the initial position. For acceleration of this process, the ball was periodically
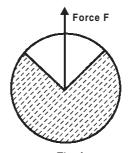
Fig. 1
The ball with cone hollow

blown on by pressure air. It was the check, if the air (heated by the ball) influences on scales or not. The stability of its data independently on actions of pressure air stream excludes such suggestion. When the temperature of the ball became the same with room temperature, its weight return to the value nearly initial. However it is necessary to add, that this "nearly" is about 200 mg. This confirms that the change of the weight was not occurred because of the evaporations of metal from action of laser beam, and we were the witnesses of absolutely unusual phenomenon. *(Editorial: Perhaps, it is necessary to take into account the deformation).*

That is all concerning the question, which was given to nature by the author of the given article. However, one more doubt remains: did the heat radiation (coming from the ball) affect on mechanism of scales? To check this, the control experiment was made, under which the same ball was heated by usual way in the electrical furnace. In spite of its temperature was about 600 degrees Celsius and the ball was placed on scales for a long time (until full cooling down), the arrow did not move from the initial position. Thus, we have really turned out face to face with a phenomenon requiring an explanation.

If the weight change in this experiment has happened in consequence of gravitational interaction, then, therefore we must revise some fundamental concepts. Today it is difficult even to assume the consequences. The only thing, which is possible to say certainly, is **that divergent on radius uni-directional (single-vector) heat flow** is the object for observation, absolutely unknown to us or unnoticed before, which holds the ensemble of surprises. Up to now, we have dealt only with **chaotic** heat motion, which was researched by the thermodynamics and heat transmission.

For analogy, it is possible to give the example **of the electric current arising, which is possible to get only under directed electrons moving.** In general, more than ten experiments were made, and all of them have given the same result: the weight of the body was decreased. Who will solve this enigma?

Editor's note: The question is presented above. The answer is the aetherodynamics theory. Any directed (unidirectional) heat flow is also a flow of aether. The mass changes are the demonstration of natural mechanism of existence of this mass as aether vortex (Alexander V. Frolov).

References

1. Collected reports "Untraditional scientific ideas about nature and its phenomena", #1, club FENID, Gomel, 1991.

The RotoVerter from arkresearch

Editor's: The description of this invention was received from Hector D. Perez Torrez, designer of the "RV" Rotoverter and TV transverter OU "transformation" devices.

Here is the first prototype, used to test a 3PH generator. Light bulb was a 100W 120V, AC generator required 380W for excitation to 120VAC plus the light bulb load for a total of 480W. Input to rotoverter was 240W for a total of 200% efficiency from the prime mover. Friction loss and prime mover loss was not calculated, PF unity, 120VAC unto a purely resistive load excitation pure DC120VDC3.1666667A (380W) + 100W = 480W. - 240W=240 excess.

It is a common 3PH dual winding 230/460V motor wired to 480V run at 120v as a ROTOPHASE converter. That's the beauty of it, OFF the shelve components preferably totally enclosed motors (so fan can be removed) low friction bearings, from 3HP to 7.5HP. Re-rating hp can be from 1/7 to 1/3 the original HP (some motors can run up to 1/2 HP capacity but will require extreme care and cooling…. and exact tuning to load).

System requires starting and running capacitance; the perfect starting capacitance is the one that gives same plate current value as 480V but running at 120V. The best running capacitance is the one that gives the lowest Amperage reading at programmed load. (ALL capacitors are AC 370V OIL "no electrolytic").

Some motors are better than others; also for generator use you must choose the over-unity generator and motor combination to obtain OU. It looks easy to gain it, but requires quite a good choice of items and common sense. In this Research we have found even a few turns or a run weld in stator can change drastically the results. Up to date best performance has being obtained from US (motors 7.5 HP, BALDOR 3,5, HP, GE 3HP totally enclosed, dual winding 230/460V). Higher HP will require professional expertise in industrial electricity and power eng. (not recommended for amateur experimenter). Anyone engaged in this experiments must be familiar with safety procedures and basic electric and mechanic knowledge. Voltages and rotating machinery must be handled with great care. SEE basic diagram and connection.
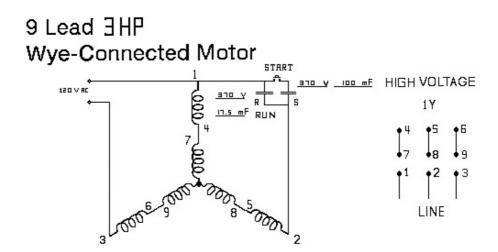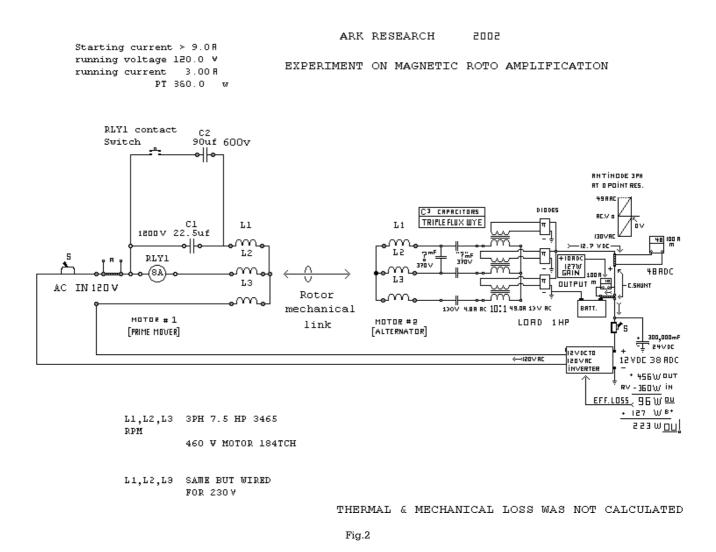
Fig. 1

Latest UPDATE BELOW 7-01-02

Starting current > 9.0 A
running voltage 120.0 V
running current 3.00 A
PT 360.0 w

ARK RESEARCH   2002

EXPERIMENT ON MAGNETIC ROTO AMPLIFICATION

RLY1 contact Switch   C2 90uf 600v

C1 1200V 22.5uf   L1 L2 L3

RLY1 (8A)

AC IN 120V

MOTOR #1 [PRIME MOVER]

Rotor mechanical link

C3 CAPACITORS TRIPLE FLUX WYE   DIODES

L1 L2 L3   7mF 370V "7mF 370V

130V 4.8A AC 10:1 49.0A 13V AC

MOTOR #2 [ALTERNATOR]   LOAD 1HP

ANTINODE 3PH AT 0 POINT RES.
49 AAC
AC.V 0   0V
130VAC
12.7 VDC
+10ADC 127W GAIN OUTPUT   48 100 A m
100A   48 ADC
BATT.   C.SHUNT

12VDC TO 120VAC INVERTER   300,000mF 24VDC
12 VDC 38 ADC
456W OUT
RV - 360W IN
EFF.LOSS < 96 W OU
+ 127 W B*
223 W OU

L1,L2,L3 3PH 7.5 HP 3465 RPM
460 V MOTOR 184TCH

L1,L2,L3 SAME BUT WIRED FOR 230 V

THERMAL & MECHANICAL LOSS WAS NOT CALCULATED

Fig.2

Subject: RV Basic level 1 Full MODEL Disclosure (Public domain)

This is the RV (Level 1) plan of a full looped RV system:

Battery provides primary power for 12VDC to 120VAC. As to run prime mover (Roto-converter), second motor acts as ansquirrel cage self-exited generator, a triple flux-capacitor LC tank tuned to best Standing wave condition as to create standing wave current node internally in battery at 0 voltage to battery "negative resistor". At 0 volts "voltage" a negative current is created as to maintain a reverse flow (charge) to battery exceeding the forward drain of the inverter demand, detuning system with a forward charge at 10 amperes with a voltage rise of approximately 0.83333 V over the battery. Voltage charge produces OU transform from the 0 point standing wave component. System gains energy from stochastic resonance within the LC tank components draining energy from "thermal" signature of the Aether and K thermodynamic-thermoelectric ambient heat (Electron spin). This is a full disclosure of an operational and tested device. System is made of standard off shelve items. Tuning is made by changing capacitor values and the proper selection of standard items for its construction, 3PH motors, 10:1 12V or 5:1 24V transformers with the proper core and winding values (standard) off shelve, diode bridges capacitor (all standard).

Warning: System opens (NON standard) space-time anomaly as time is reversed due to aether energy transform....
Extreme warning: Do not exceed 10KW Nor use of trans-uranic elements near unit as they may reach critical mass by regressive "inversed" decay. PB 206, U235, U238 must be maintained as far as possible from unit.
Extreme Warning: Dangerous Toy, Eldridge, Event horizon and hell raiser effects may be created by protoplasmic fields at extreme potentials PK.
Use wisely. You Can create Paradise or open the gates to Armageddon.
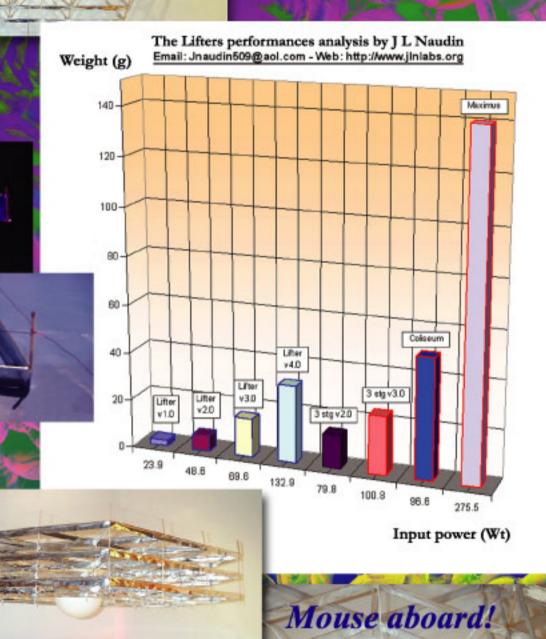
The choice is yours now....

Hector D Perez Torrez

Lifter Project
by Jean-Louis Naudin
http://www.jlnlabs.org

The Lifters performances analysis by J L Naudin
Email: Jnaudin509@aol.com - Web: http://www.jlnlabs.org

Weight (g)

140

120

100

80

60

40

20

0

Maximus

Coliseum

Lifter v4.0

Lifter v3.0

Lifter v2.0

Lifter v1.0

3 stg v3.0

3 stg v2.0

23.9   48.6   69.6   132.9   79.8   100.8   96.6   275.5

Input power (Wt)

Mouse aboard!

The 1st Worldwide Electronaut Lifter Project

9 771684 728301

New Energy Technologies

Single-Wire Electric
Power Transmission
20 kWt!

News from France
Electrostatic propulsion:
60g payload

Also in this issue:

• Cold Fusion by Plasma Electrolysis of Water

• News of Hydrogen Energetics

• Unusual Permanent Magnet Motors

• New Energy and Propulsion Systems

New Energy Technologies magazine Back issues 2001-2002

Julia V. Sukhova
Translator

Kate M. Pomerantseva
Designer

Olga O. Leontyeva
Editor

New Energy Technologies

History of invention: Poliakov's vortex drive

Also in this issue:

New Energy Technologies

July-August 2001

Antigravitation system

Report on Russian version of J.Searl's experiments:
7 KW output 35% weight loss

New Energy Technologies

Time Machine

New Energy Technologies

Time Control experiments

Also in this issue:

New Energy Technologies

MEG 500%

New Energy Technologies

September-October 2001

Acad. Oleg Gritskevich's Hydro Magnetic Dynamo: 1500 KWt power without any fuel!

Also in this issue:

New Energy Technologies

Happy New Year! 2003

New Energy Technologies

ball lightning
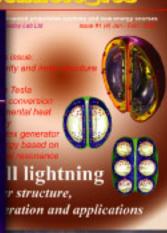
Kirill P. Butusov
Scientific Advisor

Alexander V. Frolov
General Director
"Faraday Laboratory" Ltd

Searl Effect Technology

http://www.sisrc.com

Experimental craft construction
(self-rotating permanent magnet system)

15 kWt Searl Effect Generator

LENR Experiments
(Low Energy Nuclear Reactions)
"Cold Fusion"

http://www.lenr-canr.org

Read in this issue!

NEW ENERGY TECHNOLOGIES #10

TESTATIKA

Review of well-known electrostatic system

Editor comments by Alexander V. Frolov
General Director, Faraday Lab Ltd

A running "free energy" machine coming from Switzerland, Europe. It was developed over a 20 years Research period by a religious group called Methernitha. This group lives in Linden, Switzerland. The head engineer of this superb machine, Mr. Paul Baumann discovered its principles while observing nature. He claims its running principle was found by studying the lightning effects from nature. The documents being offered here shed light on this energy marvel.

These documents are the result of work of people who have witnessed this wonder machine over the years... And here are the facts:
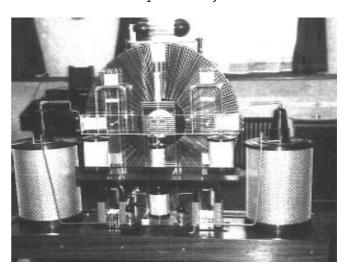
· The Testatika is a rotary-type machine that runs on it's own, once started by revolving it's two discs by hand!

· The machine not only runs on it's own energy, but produces also a huge amount of excess power, at least 3 KWtt of power! This is almost enough to supply a small house with one machine!

· The machine is about 70cm wide, by 40cm deep and is about 60cm in height!

· It delivers from 250 volts to about 320 volts direct current, depending on the humidity in the air! At this voltage it can supply at least 10 Amperes of pulsating direct current!

· Testatika is not a perpetual motion device, but an energy machine that collects it's huge amount of energy from the ions contained in air. However, there are some technological secrets implemented to overcome the normal drag-resistance of conventional generators. This is but one of it's secrets held by the Methernitha group.

There are many different sized Testatika machines, some of the smaller units deliver only about 200 to 300 watts, none of which are mass-produced. These devices are still laboratory prototype units.

Methernitha is a spiritual community (Christian Alliance) http://www.methernitha.com. They wrote: "We are fortunate in gaining the experience that paradoxically the most beautiful and useful results can be achieved by just using the most simple means. Never did we use any borrowed capital because we want to stay free Swiss citizens and do not want to be hindered or even bound in any way in the pursuance of our aims."

The two contrary-rotating discs generate an electrostatic charge. One disc represents the earth, the other the cloud. Using grid electrodes the charges are bound. After that they are collected by non-contacting so-called antenna keys and then sorted.

After being initially turned on by hand, the discs rotate by themselves according to the electrostatic laws about attraction and repulsion. A rectifying diode keeps the cycles in steady state. Otherwise the impulses of attraction and repulsion would accumulate and cause the discs to run faster and faster. The correct speed is of great importance and for optimal power generation the discs have to run quite steady and slow.

By means of grid condensers the energy is stored and then uniformly discharged, at the same time reducing the high voltage and building up power with additional devices. Finally the machine supplies a uniform direct current, which varies according to the size of the model. The machine furnishes about 3-4 kWt permanent output, depending on humidity, whereby the electric potential ranges from 270 to 320 Volt. High humidity of the atmosphere prevents the build-up of electric potential. The drier the air is, the better.

No doubt, through the so far achieved results one main objective has been reached, namely to prove that it is possible to use Free Energy. Nevertheless the research work is not yet completed.

To the educated physicist many things of this machine may seem impossible, maybe even crazy. Maybe he is also offended by the conceptions used to explain the whole. Only partly we could use the concepts of conventional physical terminology to explain and define only approximately the functions and properties of the various parts of the machine.

After all it will be necessary to create some more new concepts like the one we have already used before, when we termed the non-contacting collectors of electric charges as antenna keys.

This machine puts experts, which are just trained in conventional physics to a very hard test, because its mode of action is not explainable with the state of the art of officially accepted physical knowledge, or at the most only partially explainable. However also a trained specialist should remain free and independent in his thinking, and should avoid to be limited by the temporal framework of publicly admitted knowledge in any science.

It has to be noted that the established science was already many times forced to change or give up some of its very fundamental concepts. Think about Galilee, to name only one example. Our human society almost condemned this man as a sorcerer and magician, just because he investigated and discovered a truth that seemed unacceptable by the established science of the days.

The book knowledge of any times is not wrong, but it is incomplete, and therefore allows to draw wrong conclusions.

There was used information from the official web site: http://www.methernitha.com

Official adress of Methernitha: Methernitha Genossenschaft Administration, Moosbuehlweg 2, 3517, Linden, SWITZERLAND

Official E-mail of Methernitha: info@methernitha.com

COLD FUSION BY PLASMA ELECTROLYSIS OF WATER

Ph.M. Kanarev

The Kuban State Agrarian University,
Department of Theoretical Mechanics
13, Kalinin Street, 350044 Krasnodar, Russia
E-mail: kanphil@mail.kuban.ru

Tadahiko Mizuno

Faculty of Engineering, Hokkaido University,
Kita-ku, North 13, West-8 Sapporo 060-8628, Japan

Abstract: It has been disclosed that transmutation of the atomic nuclei of alkaline metals and the atomic nuclei of the cathode material takes place during plasma electrolysis of water.

Key words: atom, nucleus, proton, neutron, electron, cathode, low-current.

INTRODUCTION

Cold nuclear fusion is the first hypothesis of a source of additional energy in heavy water electrolysis. Fleischmann and Pons, the American electrochemists, are the authors of this hypothesis [1]. They reported about it in 1989. Since that time a large number of experiments has been carried out in order to obtain additional energy from water [2], [3], [4], [5], [7], [8], [9], [10], [11], [12]. We continue to discuss this problem.

THE FIRST EXPERIMENTAL PART

In order to check this hypothesis, the following experiments were performed. Two cathodes were made of iron with mass of 18.10 g and 18.15 g. The first cathode operated during 10 hours in KOH solution; the second cathode operated during the same period in NaOH solution. Mass of the first cathode remained unchanged; mass of the second one was reduced by 0.02 g. The voltage by plasmaelectrolysis process was 220 V and the current (0.5-1.0) A (Fig.1). The indices of the consumption of the solution and the gases being generated were as follows (Table 1).
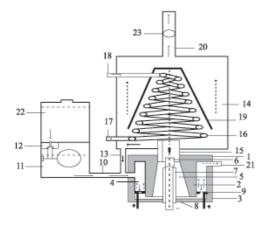
Fig. 1.
Diagram of gas generator. Patent # 2175027:
1 - lid of the reactor; 3 - body of the reactor; 6 - the cathode;
9 - the anode; 11 - solution dosing unit; 16 - cooler; 20 - pipe for gas release; 23 – anemometer

Table 1
Experimental results

Indices	Water consumption, kg	Volume of gases, m^3	Energy expenses, kWh/m^3
KOH	0.272	8.75	0.28
NaOH	0.445	12.66	0.21

In order to increase safety of experimental results, the volume of the gases introduced with the help of anemometer is reduced twofold.

It is known that from one litre of water it is possible to produce 1220 litres of hydrogen and 622 litres of oxygen. Quantity of the gases generated by the plasma electrolytic process is much greater than it is possible to get from consumed water (Table 1) [6]. It gives the reason to think that not only water molecules, but also the nuclei of alkaline metals and the atomic nuclei of the cathode material serve as a source of these gases. The analysing experiment has been performed in order to check this fact.

Tadahiko Mizuno, the famous Japanese scientist (the co-author of this article), who works at the Division of Quantum Energy Engineering Research group of Nuclear System Engineering, laboratory of Nuclear Material System, Faculty of Engineering, Hokkaido University, Japan, kindly agreed to perform chemical analysis of the cathode samples with the help of the nuclear spectroscopy method (EDX). Here are the results of his analysis. The content of chemical elements on the surface of non-operating cathode is as follows (Table 2).

Table 2
Chemical composition of the cathode surface prior its operation in the solution

Element	Fe
%	99.90

The new chemical elements have appeared on the working surface of the cathode, which works in KOH solution (Table 3).

Table 3
Chemical composition of the surface of the cathode, which operates in KOH solution

Element	Si	K	Cr	Fe	Cu
%	0.94	4.50	1.90	93.00	0.45

The chemical composition of the surface of the cathode, which operates in NaOH has proved to be different (Table 4).

Table 4
Chemical composition of the surface of the cathode, which operates in NaOH solution

Element	Al	Si	Cl	K	Ca	Cr	Fe	Cu
%	1.10	0.55	0.20	0.60	0.40	1.60	94.00	0.65

Thus, the hypothesis concerning the participation of the nuclei of alkaline metals and the atomic nuclei of the cathode material in the formation of gases during plasma electrolysis of water has experimental confirmation. Let us carry out the preliminary analysis of the data being obtained (Tables 2, 3, 4).

THE FIRST THEORETICAL PART

In any of these cases, the atoms and the molecules of hydrogen are formed. The part of it is burned and the other goes out with the steam. We have already shown that the processes of fusion of the atoms and the molecules of hydrogen and its isotopes result in occurrence of additional thermal energy [6]. Numerous experiments show that up to 50% of additional thermal energy are generated during the plasma electrolysis of water, it is less than the results of the calculations originating from the existing cold fusion theories [6]. That's why it is necessary to analyse energetics of the particle creation process during the atomic nucleus transmutation.

Having considered the model of the electron we have found out that it can exist in a free state only when it has a definite electromagnetic mass [6]. Being combined with the atomic nucleus it emits a part of energy in the form of the photons, and its electromagnetic mass is reduced. But stability of its condition does not become worse, because the energy carried away by the photons is compensated by binding energy of the electron in the atomic nucleus [6].

If the ambient temperature is increased, the electron begins to absorb the thermal photons and to pass to higher energy levels of the atom reducing binding with it. When the electron becomes free, it interacts with the atom only if the ambient temperature is reduced. As this temperature is reduced, it will emit the photons and sink to lower energy levels [6].

If the electron is in a free state due to an accidental external influence on the atom and the environment has no photons, which are necessary for it to restore its mass, **it begins to absorb the ether from the environment and to restore its constants in such a way**: mass, charge, magnetic moment, spin and radius of rotation. The electron acquires the stable free state only after it has restored its all constants [6].

Thus, if an interchange of the free state and binding state with the atom takes place due to the accidental influences on the atom, **the electron restores its electromagnetic mass every time due to absorbing the ether. It means that actually it plays the role of a converter of the ether energy into the thermal photon energy.**

The Japanese investigators Ohmori and Mizuno [4] registered neutron radiation during plasma electrolysis of water and reported that not only the nuclear process, but also the process of the electron capture by the free protons can be the source of this radiation.

As hydrogen plasma is generated during the plasma electrolytic process of water electrolysis, there exists a tendency of the capture of the free electrons by them.

It is known that rest mass of the electron is $m_e = 9.109534 \times 10^{-31}$ kg, rest mass of the proton is $m_p = 1.6726485 \times 10^{-27}$ kg, and rest mass of the neutron is $m_n = 1.6749543 \times 10^{-27}$ kg. The difference between the mass of the neutron and the mass of the proton is equal to $\Delta m_{np} = 23.058 \times 10^{-31}$ kg. It is $23.058 \times 10^{-31} / 9.109 \times 10^{-31} = 2.531$ of the mass of the electron. Thus, the proton should capture 2.531 electrons in order to become the neutron. The question arises at once: what will happen to the remained of electron mass $(3.0-2.531)m_e = 0.469m_e$? The disturbed balance of masses in this process is explained by modern physics in a simple way: a neutrino is created [6].

As the neutrino has no charge, it is very difficult to register it. If the neutrino takes the excess mass away or replenish the lacking one, can the elementary particles execute this process by themselves?

As the photons are emitted and absorbed only by the electrons, the proton, which absorbs the electrons, cannot convert the remainder of mass of the third electron into the photon. If the electron is absorbed by the third one and gives more than a half of its mass to the proton in order to convert it into the neutron, the remaining part of mass $(0.469m_e)$ of the electron, which has no possibility to become the photon, is converted into a portion of the ether, which "is dissolved" and mixed with the ether in the space. The fact that plasma has no photons with the mass corresponding to the part of mass of the third electron, which has not been absorbed by the proton during its conversion into the neutron, can serve as a proof of such affirmation. Let us calculate energy of such photon [6].

The difference the mass of the neutron and the proton is equal to $\Delta m_{np} = 23.058 \times 10^{-31}$ kg. If we subtract this value from the mass of three electrons, we'll get mass m_F, from which the photon should be formed [6]

$$m_F = 3m_e - \Delta m_{np} = 3 \times 9.109534 \times 10^{-31} - 23.058 \times 10^{-31} = 4.270602 \times 10^{-31} \text{ kg} \qquad (1)$$

If the photon is formed from this remainder of mass m_F, its energy will be [6]:

$$E_{ph} = m_F \times C^2 = \frac{4.270602 \times 10^{-31} \times (2.997924 \times 10^8)^2}{1.602189 \times 10^{-19}} = 23.956126 \times 10^4 \, eV \qquad (2)$$

This value of energy corresponds to roentgen spectrum, that's why the creation of each free neutron should be accompanied by the creation of one roentgen photon. If it does not take place, we have two opportunities: the first one – we should think that in the case when the neutron is created, the neutrino was formed from mass $m_F = 4.270602 \times 10_{-31}$ kg and flew away in the unknown direction; the second one – there were no conditions for the formation of the photons in the process being considered, and mass, which failed to be formed as a particle, "was dissolved" in the ether. Which variant is closer to the truth [6]? There is no exact answer, but it is known that the Japanese scientists registered only neutron radiation with intensity of 50,000 neutrons per second, and they failed to register roentgen radiation [4].

If in this process the roentgen photons were created, they would not exceed heat efficacy of the plasma electrolytic process, because they would not be the thermal photons. The thermal photons are radiated and absorbed when the electrons make the energy transitions to the energy levels, which are the most remote from the atomic nuclei, where the infrared photons and neighbouring ones from the optical range of the spectrum with energies of $\approx(0.001-3.3)$ eV are generated (Table 5) [6].

Table 5
Electromagnetic spectrum bands

Bands	Wave-length, m	Energy, eV
1. Low- frequency band	$\lambda \approx (10^7...10^4)$	$E \approx 10^{-15}...10^{-11}$
2. Broadcast band	$\lambda \approx (10^4...10^{-1})$	$E \approx 10^{-11}...10^{-6}$
3. Microwave band	$\lambda \approx (10^{-1}...10^{-4})$	$E \approx 10^{-6}...10^{-3}$
4. Relic band (maximum)	$\lambda \approx 1 \times 10^{-3}$	$E \approx 1.2 \times 10^{-3}$
5. Infrared band	$\lambda \approx (10^{-4}...7.7 \times 10^{-7})$	$E \approx 10^{-3}...1.6 \times 10^{-2}$
6. Light band	$\lambda \approx (7.7 \times 10^{-7}...3.8 \times 10^{-7})$	$E \approx 1.6 \times 10^{-2}...3.27$
7. Ultraviolet band	$\lambda \approx (3.8 \times 10^{-7}...10^{-9})$	$E \approx 3.27...1 \times 10^2$
8. Roentgen band	$\lambda \approx (10^{-9}...10^{-12})$	$E \approx 10^2...10^5$
9. Gamma band	$\lambda \approx (10^{-12}...10^{-18})$	$E \approx 10^5...10^9$

Thus, the neutron fusion processes in plasma electrolysis of water will not generate additional thermal energy. But the appearance of the neutrons in plasma will promote the formation of the nuclei of deuterium and, possibly, of tritium. As the balance of masses remains almost unchanged, we have no reason to expect that **additional energy will take place** when deuterium and tritium are formed. But it is sure to appear during **fusion of the atoms of deuterium and tritium, i.e. the hydrogen atoms [6].**

In order to become a proton, the neutron should radiate something, which mass is $\Delta m_{np} = 23.058 \times 10^{-31}$ kg. Let us convert this mass into energy [6].

$$E_{ph} = \Delta m_{np} \times C^2 = \frac{23.058 \times 10^{-31} \times (2.998 \times 10^8)^2}{1.602 \times 10^{-19}} = 1.294 \times 10^6 \ eV \qquad (3)$$

This energy corresponds to the gamma range photons, i.e. not to the thermal photons, and this process does not give additional energy. Thus, if the process of the formation of the helium atoms takes place during plasma electrolysis of water, it should be accompanied by gamma radiation. If there is no such radiation, but the helium atoms are formed, the neutrino takes away the above-mentioned portion of mass Δm_{np} or this mass, which has no opportunity to be formed as the photon, "is dissolved" in the environment, i.e. it is transferred into the state of the ether [6]. As the roentgen photons and the gamma photons are not the thermal ones, this process gives no excessive thermal energy [6].

Another variant is possible. When the atoms of alkali metal bombard the cathode atoms, they are destroyed completely and destroy the atoms of the cathode materials. Under the notion "completely" we'll understand such state when both the atom and the nucleus are destroyed. In this case, the protons of the destroyed nuclei begin to form the hydrogen atoms. The process of fusion of the atoms and the molecules of hydrogen generate additional thermal energy [6]. But one should bear in mind that if plasma disintegrates water molecule into hydrogen and oxygen and if these gases contact plasma, hydrogen is combined with oxygen, and water is formed. Noise generated by plasma is hydrogen microexplosions. Taking into consideration the above-mentioned fact the larger the volume of hydrogen burnt in plasma, the smaller its volume in the gas-vapour mixture. It means that such reactor operation modes are required when quantity of burnt hydrogen is minimal one. Our theory allows us to have such results.

As iron is the cathode material, the nuclei of its atoms are the targets of the atomic nuclei of potassium, alkaline metal. During the transmutation of the iron nuclei (Fig. 2 b), the atomic nuclei of chromium (Fig. 2 a) and the atomic nuclei of copper (Fig. 2 c) are formed [6].

a) Cr (24,28)   b) Fe (26,28)   c) Cu (29,34)
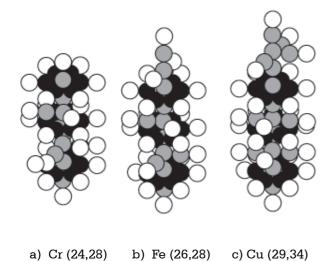
Fig. 2.
Diagrams of the atomic nuclei of: a) chromium, b) iron, c) copper

When the atomic nucleus of iron (Fig. 2 b) pass into the atomic nucleus of chromium (Fig. 2 a), two protons and two neutrons are released; two atoms of deuterium or one atom of helium can be formed from them. If the neutrons pass into the protons, four atoms of hydrogen are formed.

It is easy to see (Fig. 2) that the atomic nucleus of iron (Fig. 2 b) should lose two upper protons and two neutrons in order to pass into the atomic nucleus of chromium (Fig. 2 a).

Three additional protons and six neutrons (total 9 nucleons) are required for the formation of the atomic nucleus of copper (Fig. 2 c) from the atomic nucleus of iron. As on the cathode surface (Table 3) the number of chromium atoms, which probably are formed from the atomic nuclei of iron, four times more than the number of atoms of copper, then the solution is sure to have superfluous protons and neutrons of the destroyed atomic nuclei of iron, and we can determined their approximate relative quantity.

Let us suppose that four nuclei of the iron atoms pass into the nuclei of the chromium atom. The total quantity of free protons and neutrons (nucleons) is equal to 16. As one atom of copper falls on each four atoms of chromium, 9 nucleons are spent for the formation of one nucleus of the copper atom, and 7 nucleons remain free.

a) K (19,20)   b) O (8,8)   c) Si (14,14)
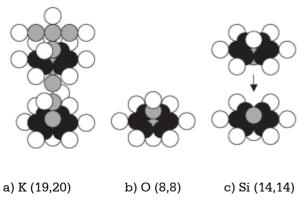
Fig. 3.
Diagrams of the atomic nuclei of:
a) potassium, b) oxygen, c) silicon

Let us see what is formed when the nucleus of the potassium atom is destroyed. Potassium is situated in the first group of the fourth period of the periodic law. Its nucleus contains 19 protons and 20 neutrons (Fig. 3 a) [6].

In Fig. 3 a, we can see a weak link of the nucleus of the potassium atom [6]. It is situated in the middle of its axis neutrons. When the transmutation of the nuclei of the potassium atoms takes place, the nuclei of the oxygen atoms can be formed (Fig. 3 b) as well as its isotopes and the nuclei of the silicon atoms (Fig. 3 c).

The analysis of the structure of the nuclei of the potassium atom (Fig. 3 a) shows that it is the most probable source of the nucleus of the silicon atom (Fig. 3 c), which atoms appear on the cathode (Table 3).

It is easy to count that during the destruction of one nucleus of the potassium atom and the creation of one nucleus of the silicon atom 5 free protons and 6 free neutrons, i.e. 11 nucleons, are formed.

Thus, the transmutation of the nuclei of the iron atoms and the potassium atoms results in the formation of free protons and neutrons. As the protons cannot exist in free state, the hydrogen atoms are created from them. If the protons are connected with the neutrons after the destruction of the nuclei of the iron atoms and the potassium atoms, the formation of deuterium, tritium and helium is possible.

Let us pay attention to the main fact – absence of the sodium atoms in the cathode material. It is natural that the potassium atoms have appeared on the cathode, which operated in KOH solution (Table 3). Why are no sodium atoms on the cathode, which operated in NaOH solution? The answer is as follows: the nuclei of the sodium (Fig. 4,a) atoms are completely destroyed during the plasma electrolytic process. The presence of potassium on the surface of the cathode, which operated in NaOH solution (Table 4), can be explained by insufficient ablution of the reactor after the operation with KOH solution.

As free protons and neutrons appear during the destruction of the nucleus of the sodium atom (Fig. 4,a), some nuclei of this element begin to form the atomic nuclei of aluminium (Fig. 4, b), chlorine (Fig. 4, c) and calcium (Fig. 5).

But not all free protons and neutrons are spent for the construction of the atomic nuclei of aluminium, chlorine and calcium. A part of them is spent for the hydrogen atom formation.

If we knew the total quantity of transmutating atomic nuclei of iron, potassium and sodium as well as the exact composition of the gases generated during the plasma electrolytic process, it would be possible to determine the atomic nuclei being formed from additional nucleons. Now we can only suppose that the majority of new nuclei are the protons, i.e. the nuclei of the hydrogen atoms. The increased volume of the gases generated during the plasma electrolytic process is explained by it [6].

a) Na (11,12) b) Al (13,14) c) Cl (17,18)
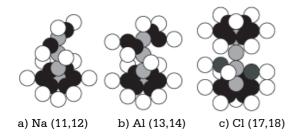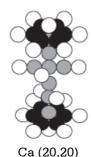
Fig. 4.
Diagrams of the atomic nuclei of:
a) sodium, b) aluminium, c) chlorine

Ca (20,20)

Fig. 5.
Diagram of the nucleus of the calcium atom

The analysis of these Tables shows that transmutation of the nuclei of iron, of which the cathodes are made, results in the formation of chromium and copper in both cases. Apparently, aluminium, chlorine and calcium are formed from the destroyed sodium nuclei. In any case, free protons and neutrons are formed.

But not all free protons and neutrons are spent for the formation of the atomic nuclei of copper, aluminium, chlorine and calcium. A part of them is spent for the formation of the hydrogen atoms. In any case, the atoms and the molecules of hydrogen are formed. The analysis has shown that plasma electrolytic process extracts not more than 0.005 kg of alkaline metal from one litre of the solution. It appears from this that if all neutrons of the atomic nuclei of the molecules of water and alkali metals are transferred into the protons and the atoms and the molecules of hydrogen are formed, the formed volume of gas will be considerably less than the one registered during the experiment (Table 1). A question arises: where do additional gases come from? In order to get the answer on this question we made the next experiment.

THE SECOND EXPERIMENTAL PART

First of all we take into account, that high temperature of plasma forms the conditions when a set of various processes takes place at the cathode. First of all, water is boiled and evaporated. At the same time, one part of water molecules is disintegrated with a release of the atomic hydrogen; another part of the molecules forms the orthohydrogen molecules. A part of water molecules is disintegrated completely and is released at the cathode together with hydrogen and oxygen. A part of hydrogen is combined with oxygen again generating microexplosions (noise) and forming water.

During plasma electrolysis of water, water vapor, hydrogen and oxygen are released simultaneously. If vapor is condensed, gas mixture is released. In order to measure gas flow rate the electronic anemometer have been used. Diameter of the electronic anemometer was equal to internal diameter of the gas make tube (23, Fig. 1). Its readings were registered and processed by the computer. The experiment was performed dozen times, and each time its readings were reproduced with small deviations [11]. But we had no hydrogen analyzer, that's why the results being obtained cannot be considered as final ones. We admonished it in all editions of the book Water is a New Source of Energy with such a phrase: "We abstain from lending an official status to these results with the hope to get necessary financing and to repeat them with a complete set of the necessary devices" [12, page 176].

In the middle of the year of 2002 we received small financing, which allowed us to make a new reactor and to buy some measuring instruments, in particular the scales with the measurement limit up to 600 g and accuracy of 0.02 g. Careful preparation allowed us to increase duration of continuous operation of the reactor (to 10 and more hours) and to register solution consumption for gas production.

The main difficulty of operation with the hydrogen is in the fact that its mixture with air (4-74)% or oxygen (4-94)% is combustible, and the fact was emphasized more than once during the experiments that made the researches be very careful. The second difficulty during hydrogen quantity measurements generated by the plasma electrolytic reactor is in the fact that its molecule has the smallest dimensions, that's why it penetrates easily to the places where the molecules of other substances do not penetrate. Molecular hydrogen diffuses easily even into metals. For example, one volume of palladium absorbs up to 800 volumes of hydrogen.

Gas flow speed was measured with the help of various anemometers, its readings being registered with the help of the computer. Numerous measurements and numerous analysis of gas flow speed measurement accuracy with the help of the anemometers showed that error of a conventional anemometer can be 100%.
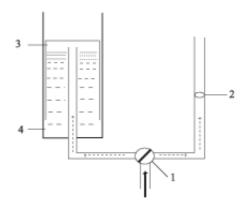
Fig. 6.
Diagram of measurement of flow rate of the gas and its volume:
1 - tap for gas flow movement direction switching,
2 – anemometer, 3 – graduated tank, 4 – water tank

It is known that it is possible to produce 1220 litres of hydrogen and 622 litres of oxygen from one litre of water. Quantity of the gases generated by the plasma electrolytic process is much greater than it is possible to get from consumed water (Table 1). It was a strong reason for a search of the measurement error. For this purpose, the diagram of measurement of flow rate of the gases and their quantity was used (Fig. 6).

The results of the measurements were as follows. The anemometer showed that 200 litres of gas mixture penetrated through it during 10 minutes. Nearly one litre of gases was in the graduated tank during this period.

Thus, the measurement of gas flow with the help of the anemometers distorted the result 200 fold. It should be mentioned that the reactor operated in the production mode of hydrogen and oxygen in the cathode zone. As a result, their mixture burst. The pulses of these explosions increased the readings of the anemometer.

It has become necessary to return to the reactor operation modes when no oxygen is released in the cathode zone. Our theory allows us to do this easy.

PROTOCOL
of tests of the first model of low-current Electrolyzers

It is known that it is possible to produce 1.22 l of H_2+ 0.622 O_2= 1.843 (H_2+O_2) from 1 ml of H_2O

Table 6
Experimental results

Indices	1	2	3	Average
1-duration of experiment, hour	1	1	1	1
2-voltage, V	70	70	70	70
3-current, A	0.038	0.080	0.098	0.072
4 – power, W	2.7	5.60	6.44	4.91
4-volume of consumed solution, ml	1.67	3.98	4.32	3.32
5-density of the solution, kg/l	1.04	1.04	1.04	1.04
6-volume of consumed water, ml	1.60	3.83	4.15	3.19
7-volume of the gas mixture being produced, l	2.95	7.06	7.85	5.95
6-volume of hydrogen being produced, l	1.95	4.67	5.07	3.80
7-energy consumption per 1 l of hydrogen, W·h/l	1.38	1.20	1.27	1.28
8-energy consumption per 1m³ of hydrogen, kWh/m³	1.38	1.20	1.27	1.28
9-existing energy consumption for production of 1 m³ of hydrogen from water, kWh/m³	4.00	4.00	4.00	4.00

CONCLUSION

Transmutation of the atomic nuclei of alkaline metals and the atomic nuclei of the cathode material during plasma electrolysis of water existed. Plasma electrolytic process opens new prospects in study of matter on the nuclear, atomic and molecular levels. The low-current electrolysis allows us to get the inexpensive hydrogen from water.

REFERENCES
1. M. Fleischmann, S. Pons and M. Hawkins. Electrochemically Induced Nuclear Fusion of Deuterium. J. Electroanal. Chem. 261, 301 (1989),
2. ICCF-7 ACCEPTED ABSTRACTS. Infinite Energy. V. 4, Issue 20, p. 59…69.
3. Harold L. Fox. Cold nuclear fusion: essence, problems, influence on the world. View from USA. Production group SVITAX. M.: 1993, 180 pages.
4. T. Ohmori, T. Mizuno. Strong Excess Energy Evolution, New Element Production, and Electromagnetic Wave and/or Neutron Emission in Light Water Electrolysis with a Tungsten Cathode. Infinite Energy. Issue 20, 1998. Pages 14-17.
5. T. Mizuno. Nuclear Transmutation: The Reality of Cold Fusion. Infinite Energy Press. 1998. 151 pages.
6. Ph. Kanarev. Foundations of Physchemistry of Microworld. Krasnodar, 2002. 330 pages.
7. Kenneth R. Shoulders, "Method of and Apparatus for Production and Manipulations of High Density Charge", U.S. Patent 5,054,046, issued Oct 1, 1991.
8. Ken Shoulders & Steve Shoulders, "Observations on the Role of Charge Clusters in Nuclear Cluster Reactions", J.of New Energy, vol. 1, no 3, pp 111-121, Fall 1996, 7 refs, 22 figs.
9. Hal Fox, Robert W. Bass, & Shang-Xian Jin, "Plasma-Injected Transmutation", J. of New Energy, vol. 1, no 3, Fall 1996, pp 222-230, 23 refs, 4 figs.
10. Shang-Xian Jin & Hal Fox, "High Density Charge Cluster Collective Ion Accelerator", J. of New Energy, vol. 4, no 2, Fall 1999, pp 96-104, 47 refs, 4 figs., 3 tables.
11. Ph.M. Kanarev. Water is the Main Power Carrier of Future Power Engineering. Journal of New Energy. An International Journal of New Energy Systems. Vol. 6, No.2. Pag. 101-121.
12. Ph.M. Kanarev. Water is New Source of Energy. The Third Edition. Krasnodar 2002. 194p. (In English).

LENR
(Low Energy Nuclear Reactions)

Editorial: There is a collection of some papers on LENR (Low Energy Nuclear Reactions), also known as Cold Fusion. CANR, Chemically Assisted Nuclear Reactions, is another term for this phenomenon. These original scientific papers are reprinted with permission from the authors and publishers.

Website http://www.lenr-canr.org features a growing library of scientific papers about LENR and an extensive bibliography of journal papers, news articles and books about LENR.

COLD FUSION: What is it and what does it mean to science and society?

Edmund Storms

Cold fusion is important because it promises to be a new source of pollution-free, inexhaustible energy. In addition, it is important because it reveals the existence of a new way nuclei can interact that conventional scientific theory predicts is impossible. What then is this phenomenon that suffers such promise and rejection?

Energy can be obtained from the nucleus in two different ways. On the one hand, a large nucleus can be broken into smaller pieces, such as is experienced by uranium in a conventional nuclear reactor and by the material in an atom bomb. This is called fission. On the other hand, two very small nuclei can be joined together, such as occurs during fusion of deuterium and tritium in a Hot Fusion reactor and in a hydrogen bomb. This process, called fusion, also takes place in stars to produce much of the light we see.

The fission reaction is caused to happen by adding neutrons to the nucleus of uranium or plutonium to make it unstable. The unstable nucleus splits into two nearly equal pieces, thereby releasing more neutrons, which continue the process. As every one now knows, this process produces considerable waste that is highly radioactive. The uranium used as fuel also occurs in limited amounts in the earth's crust. As a result, this source of energy is not ideal, although widely used at the present time.

The normal hot fusion reaction requires two deuterium or tritium nuclei to be smashed together with great energy. This is accomplished by raising their temperature. However, this temperature is so high that the reactants cannot be held in a solid container, but must be retained by a magnetic field. This process has proven to be very difficult to accomplish for a time sufficient to generate useable energy. In spite of this difficulty, attempts have been under way for the last

40 years and with the expenditure of many billions of dollars. Success continues to be elusive while the effort continues.

Cold fusion, on the other hand, attempts to cause the same process, but by using solid materials as the container held at normal temperatures. The container consists of various metals, including palladium, with which the deuterium is reacted to form a chemical compound. While in this environment, the barrier between the deuterium nuclei is reduced so that two nuclei can fuse without having to be forced together. Because the process causing this to happen is not well understood, the possibility is rejected by many conventional scientists. Difficulty in producing the process on command has intensified the rejection. While this difficulty is real, it has not, as many skeptics have claimed, prevented the process from being reproduced hundreds of times in laboratories all over the world for the past 13 years. As you will see by reading the reviews and papers in our Library (see http://www.lenr-canr.org/LibFrame1.html), the process continues to be reproduced with increasing ease using a variety of methods and materials.

What is the nature of this process and why has it been so hard to understand? To answer this question, a person needs to understand the nature of the barrier that exists between all nuclei. Because all nuclei have a positive charge in proportion to their atomic number, all nuclei repeal each other. It is only the surrounding electrons that hold normal matter together, with the nuclei being at considerable distance from each other, at least on the scale of an atom. When attempts are made to push the nuclei closer, the required energy increases as the nuclei approach one another. However, when deuterium dissolves in a metal, it experiences several unique

conditions. The surrounding metal atoms produce a regular array that is able to support waves of various kinds. These waves can be based on vibration of the atoms (phonons), vibration of the electrons, standing waves of electromagnetic energy, or a wave resulting from conversion of the deuterium nuclei to a wave. In addition, the high density of electrons can neutralize some of the positive charge on the deuterium nuclei allowing a process called tunneling, i.e.. allowing passage through the barrier rather than over it. The mechanism of this neutralization process is proposed to involve a novel coherent wave structure that can occur between electrons under certain conditions. All of these wave processes have been observed in the past under various conventional conditions, but applying them to the cold fusion phenomenon has been a subject of debate and general rejection.

While the debate based on wave action has been underway, people have proposed other mechanisms. These include the presence of neutrons within the lattice. Normally, neutrons are unstable outside of the nucleus, decomposing into a proton, an electron, and a neutrino. Presumably, this reaction can be reversed so that neutrons might be created in a lattice containing many free electrons and protons. Having no charge, the neutron could then interact with various atoms in the lattice to produce energy. These neutrons might also be hidden in the lattice by being attached to other nuclei in a stabilized form, to be released

when conditions were right. Several particles normally not detected in nature also have been proposed to trigger fusion and other nuclear reactions.

While search for a suitable mechanism has been underway, an understanding of the environment that triggers the mechanism has been sought, the so-called nuclear-active-environment. Initially, this environment was thought to exist in the bulk of the palladium cathode used in the Pons-Fleischmann method to produce cold fusion. It is now agreed that the nuclear reactions only occur in the surface region. Recent arguments suggest that this surface layer does not even require palladium for it to be nuclear-active. Nuclear reactions have now been produced in a variety of materials using many methods. The only common feature found in all of these methods is the presence of nano-sized particles of material on the active surface. If this observation is correct, four conditions seem required to produce the nuclear reactions. First, the particle must have a critical small size; second, it must contain a critical concentration of deuterium or hydrogen; third, it must be constructed of certain atoms; and fourth, it must be exposed to a source of energy. This energy can take the form of a sufficiently high temperature, a significant high flux of hydrogen through the particle, application of energetic electrons or charged particles, or application of laser light of the proper frequency. Until, the importance of these factors is understood, the effect will continue to be difficult to replicate.

Technical Introduction to LENR-CANR

Edmund Storms

At low energies, the Coulomb barrier prevents nuclei from coming together and fusing to form a single nucleus. To initiate a nuclear reaction, several methods are used. Nuclear reactions are normally initiated by pushing two atoms together with enough force to overcome the Coulomb barrier by brute force, or by using neutrons which penetrate the nuclei without seeing a barrier. (Neutrons have no electrical charge, so the Coulomb barrier does not stop them.) These forces are normally provided by high-temperature plasma or by accelerating ions to high energies. In contrast, LENR describes the mechanism and conditions that cause a variety of nuclear reactions to take place with relatively low activation energy. These unique conditions reduce the need for excessive energy. The normal method forces the nuclei together, while the new method encourages them to come together. The challenge has been to understand the unique characteristics of the necessary solid structure such that this structure could be generated at will.

Because the proposed method is unique, at odds with current nuclear theory, and is still difficult to reproduce, support for studies in many countries, but not all, has

been very limited. Nevertheless, considerable information has accumulated over the last 13 years since Profs. Stanley Pons and Martin Fleischmann showed the world the possibilities inherent in this phenomenon. Much understanding is buried in conference proceedings and reports that are not available to a serious student. This information will, as time permits, be made available on this site. Students of the subject are also encouraged to use this site to interact with other people in the field and provide objective critiques of the work published here.

PHENOMENA DISCUSSED IN SOME OF THE PAPERS

At least 10 ways have been demonstrated to produce anomalous heat and/or anomalous elemental synthesis. A few of these methods will be described here. For course, not all of the claims are worthy of belief nor are they accepted by many people. Nevertheless, the claims will be described without qualifications in order to provide the reader with the latest understanding.

conditions. The surrounding metal atoms produce a regular array that is able to support waves of various kinds. These waves can be based on vibration of the atoms (phonons), vibration of the electrons, standing waves of electromagnetic energy, or a wave resulting from conversion of the deuterium nuclei to a wave. In addition, the high density of electrons can neutralize some of the positive charge on the deuterium nuclei allowing a process called tunneling, i.e.. allowing passage through the barrier rather than over it. The mechanism of this neutralization process is proposed to involve a novel coherent wave structure that can occur between electrons under certain conditions. All of these wave processes have been observed in the past under various conventional conditions, but applying them to the cold fusion phenomenon has been a subject of debate and general rejection.

While the debate based on wave action has been underway, people have proposed other mechanisms. These include the presence of neutrons within the lattice. Normally, neutrons are unstable outside of the nucleus, decomposing into a proton, an electron, and a neutrino. Presumably, this reaction can be reversed so that neutrons might be created in a lattice containing many free electrons and protons. Having no charge, the neutron could then interact with various atoms in the lattice to produce energy. These neutrons might also be hidden in the lattice by being attached to other nuclei in a stabilized form, to be released

when conditions were right. Several particles normally not detected in nature also have been proposed to trigger fusion and other nuclear reactions.

While search for a suitable mechanism has been underway, an understanding of the environment that triggers the mechanism has been sought, the so-called nuclear-active-environment. Initially, this environment was thought to exist in the bulk of the palladium cathode used in the Pons-Fleischmann method to produce cold fusion. It is now agreed that the nuclear reactions only occur in the surface region. Recent arguments suggest that this surface layer does not even require palladium for it to be nuclear-active. Nuclear reactions have now been produced in a variety of materials using many methods. The only common feature found in all of these methods is the presence of nano-sized particles of material on the active surface. If this observation is correct, four conditions seem required to produce the nuclear reactions. First, the particle must have a critical small size; second, it must contain a critical concentration of deuterium or hydrogen; third, it must be constructed of certain atoms; and fourth, it must be exposed to a source of energy. This energy can take the form of a sufficiently high temperature, a significant high flux of hydrogen through the particle, application of energetic electrons or charged particles, or application of laser light of the proper frequency. Until, the importance of these factors is understood, the effect will continue to be difficult to replicate.

Technical Introduction to LENR-CANR

Edmund Storms

At low energies, the Coulomb barrier prevents nuclei from coming together and fusing to form a single nucleus. To initiate a nuclear reaction, several methods are used. Nuclear reactions are normally initiated by pushing two atoms together with enough force to overcome the Coulomb barrier by brute force, or by using neutrons which penetrate the nuclei without seeing a barrier. (Neutrons have no electrical charge, so the Coulomb barrier does not stop them.) These forces are normally provided by high-temperature plasma or by accelerating ions to high energies. In contrast, LENR describes the mechanism and conditions that cause a variety of nuclear reactions to take place with relatively low activation energy. These unique conditions reduce the need for excessive energy. The normal method forces the nuclei together, while the new method encourages them to come together. The challenge has been to understand the unique characteristics of the necessary solid structure such that this structure could be generated at will.

Because the proposed method is unique, at odds with current nuclear theory, and is still difficult to reproduce, support for studies in many countries, but not all, has

been very limited. Nevertheless, considerable information has accumulated over the last 13 years since Profs. Stanley Pons and Martin Fleischmann showed the world the possibilities inherent in this phenomenon. Much understanding is buried in conference proceedings and reports that are not available to a serious student. This information will, as time permits, be made available on this site. Students of the subject are also encouraged to use this site to interact with other people in the field and provide objective critiques of the work published here.

PHENOMENA DISCUSSED IN SOME OF THE PAPERS

At least 10 ways have been demonstrated to produce anomalous heat and/or anomalous elemental synthesis. A few of these methods will be described here. For course, not all of the claims are worthy of belief nor are they accepted by many people. Nevertheless, the claims will be described without qualifications in order to provide the reader with the latest understanding.

The most studied method involves the use of an electrolytic cell containing a LiOD electrolyte and a palladium cathode. Current passing through such a cell generates D+ ions at the cathode, with a very high effective pressure. These ions enter the palladium and, if all conditions are correct, join in a fusion reaction that produces He-4. Initially palladium wire and plate were used, but these were found to form microcracks, which allowed the required high concentration of deuterium to escape. Later work shows that the actual nuclear reaction occurs on the surface within a very thin layer of deposited impurities. Therefore, control of this impurity layer is very important, but rather difficult. The use of palladium is also not important because gold and platinum appear to be better metals on which to deposit the impurity layer. This method is found, on rare occasions, to generate tritium within the electrolyte and transmutation products on the cathode surface. Different nuclear reactions are seen when light water (H_2O) is used instead of D_2O, although the amount of anomalous energy is less when H_2O is used. These observations have been duplicated hundreds of times in dozens of laboratories.

Application of deuterium gas to finely divided palladium, and perhaps other metals, has been found to generate anomalous energy along with helium-4. Both palladium-black as well as palladium deposited as nanocrystals on carbon have shown similar anomalous behavior. In both cases the material must be suitably purified. Palladium deposited on carbon can and must be heated to above 200/260°C for the effect to be seen. When deuterium is caused to diffuse through a palladium membrane on which is deposited a thin layer of various compounds, isotopes that were not previously present are generated with isotopic ratios unlike those occurring naturally.

A plasma discharge under H_2O or D_2O between various materials generates many elements that were not previously present. When the electrodes are carbon and the plasma is formed in H_2O, the main anomalous element is iron. This experiment is relatively easy to duplicate.

Several complex oxides, including several superconductors, can dissolve D_2 when heated. When a potential is applied across a sheet of such material, the D+ ions are caused to move and anomalous heat is generated.

If deuterium ions, having a modest energy, are caused to bombard various metals, tritium as well as other elements not previously present are generated. These ions can be generated in a pulsed plasma or as a beam.

When water, either light or heavy, is subjected to intense acoustic waves, collapse of the generated bubbles on the surrounding solid walls can generate nuclear reactions. This process is different from the fusion reaction claimed to occur within a bubble just before it disappears within the liquid because neutrons are not produced in the former case, but are produced in the latter case. This method has been applied to various metals in heavy water using an acoustic transducer and in light water using a rotating vane which generates similar acoustic waves...

HOW TO EXPLAIN THE CLAIMS

A major problem in deciding which model might be correct is the absence of any direct information about the nature of the nuclear-active-environment. At this time, two important features seem to be important, the size of the nanodomain in which the reactions occur and the presence of a deuterium flux through this domain. The domain can apparently be made of any material in which hydrogen or deuterium can dissolve. Until the nature of the nuclear-active-state (NAS) is known, no theory will properly explain the effect and replication of the claims will remain difficult.

When fusion is initiated using conventional methods, significant tritium and neutrons are produced. In addition, when other elements are generated, they tend to be radioactive. This is in direct contrast to the experience using low energy methods. These products are almost completely absent and, instead, helium-4 is produced. When radiation is detected, it has a very low energy. This contrasting behavior, as well as the amount of anomalous energy, has made the claims hard to explain using conventional models. This difficulty has been amplified by a failure of many skeptics to recognize the contrasting effect of the environment, a plasma being used in the older studies and a solid lattice of periodic atoms being present as the new environment.

Over 500 models and their variations have been proposed, some of which are very novel and some are variations on conventional ideas. Most models attempt to explain the nuclear reaction once the required environment has been created, without addressing what that unique environment might be like. These models involve conversion of a proton (deuteron) to a neutron (dineutron), creation of an electron structure that is able to neutralize the barrier, conversion of deuterium to a wave which interacts without charge, and the presence of otherwise overlooked neutrons and/or novel particles. Many of the models will have to be abandoned or seriously modified once the nature of the nuclear active environment is understood.

It Started in 1989 . . .

Peter Hagelstein

Many of us recall the controversy surrounding the announcement of claims of observations of fusion reactions in a test tube that were made in 1989. At the time, these claims were greeted with considerable skepticism on the part of the physics community and the scientific community in general.

The principal claim of Pons and Fleischmann

The principal claim of Pons and Fleischmann in 1989 was that power was produced in palladium cathodes that were loaded electrochemically in a heavy water electrolyte. The evidence in support of this was a measured increase in the temperature in the electrochemical cell. There was no obvious evidence for nuclear reaction products commensurate with the claimed heat production. Fleischmann speculated that perhaps two deuterons were somehow fusing to He-4 through some kind of new mechanism.

Rejection by the physics community

This claim was not accepted by the physics community on theoretical grounds for several reasons:

First, there was no mechanism known by which two deuterons might approach one another close enough to fuse, since the Coulomb barrier prevents them from approaching at room temperature.

Second, if they did approach close enough to fuse, one would expect the conventional dd-fusion reaction products to be observed, since these happen very fast. Essentially, once two deuterons get close enough to touch, reactions occur with near unity probability, and the reaction products (p+t and n+He-3) leave immediately at high relative velocity consistent with the reaction energy released. To account for Fleischmann's claim, the proposed new reaction would seemingly somehow have to make He-4 quietly and cleanly, without any of the conventional reaction products showing up, and would somehow have to arrange for this to happen a billion times faster than the conventional reaction pathway. Most physicists bet against the existence of such a magical new effect.

Third, the normal pathway by which two deuterons fuse to make He-4 normally occurs with the emission of a gamma ray near 24 MeV. There was no evidence for the presence of any such high energy gamma emission from the sample, hence no reason to believe that any helium had been made.

Finally, if one rejects the possibility that any new mechanisms might be operative, then the claim that power was being produced by fusion must be supported by the detection of a commensurate amount of fusion reaction products. Pons and Fleischmann found no significant reaction products, which, given the rejection of new mechanisms, implied an absence of fusion reactions.

An alternate explanation is proposed

The physicists decided in 1989 that the most likely reason that Pons and Fleischmann observed a temperature increase was that they had made an error of some sort in their measurements. When many groups tried to observe the effect and failed, this led most of the physics community to conclude that there was nothing to it whatsoever other than some bad experiments.

The claim of Jones

A second very different claim was made at the same time in 1989 by Steve Jones. This work also involved electrochemistry in heavy water and the observation of reaction products corresponding to the conventional dd-fusion reactions. The initial publication showed a spectrum of neutron emission that Jones had detected from a titanium deuteride cathode loaded electrochemically. The response of the physics community was skeptical, as the signal to noise ratio was not particularly impressive. Given the polarization of the physics community in opposition to the claims of Pons and Fleischmann (which were announced essentially simultaneously), the physicists were not of a mood to accept much of any claims that fusion could happen in an electrochemical experiment at all. Jones went to great lengths to assure fellow scientists that his effect was completely unrelated to the claims of Pons and Fleischmann, and was much more reasonable.

Also rejected

Physicists had reason to be skeptical. Theoretical considerations indicated that the screening effects that Jones was relying on were not expected to be as strong as needed to account for the fusion rates claimed. As this experiment could not seem to be replicated by others at the time, it was easy for the physics community to reject this claim as well.

Cold fusion, weighed and rejected with prejudice

Cold fusion, as the two different claims were termed, was dismissed with prejudice in 1989. The initial claims were made near the end of March in Utah, and the public refutation of the claims was made at the

beginning of May. It only took about 40 days for the physics community to consider the new claims, test them experimentally, and then announce loudly to the world that they had been carefully weighed and rejected.

Following this rejection, physicists have treated cold fusion rather badly. For example, Professor John Huizenga of Rochester University was selected to be co-chair of the DOE ERAB committee that met to review cold fusion and issue a report. Shortly afterward, he wrote a book entitled Cold Fusion, The Scientific Fiasco of the Century, in which he discusses the claims, the experiments, and the extreme skepticism with which the new claims were greeted. Robert Park discusses the subject in his book entitled Voodoo Science. You can find many places where physicists and other scientists happily place the cold fusion claims together with claims of psychic phenomena.

A Science Tutorial

Talbot Chubb

First it is important to recognize that there are four distinct types of energy production:
1) chemical energy, that powers our cars and most of our civilization;
2) nuclear fission energy, as used to generate about 15% or our electricity;
3) hot fusion nuclear energy, which powers the sun and most stars;
4) cold fusion nuclear energy, which appears as unexplained heat in a few experimenter's laboratory studies and which most scientists believe is impossible.

The three types of nuclear energy produce 10 million times as much heat per pound of fuel than occurs with chemical energy. How do these types of energy differ? To understand this question you need to know some chemistry and physics.

Lesson 1

Nature has provided us with two types of stable charged particles, the proton and the electron. The proton is heavy, normally tiny, and has a positive charge. The electron is light, normally large and fuzzy, and has a negative charge. The positive charge and the negative charge attract each other, just like the north pole of a magnet attracts the south pole of a magnet. When you bring two magnets together with the north pole of one facing the south pole of the other, they pull together, bang! When they bang into each other they release a little bit of energy in the form of heat, but it is too small an amount to easily measure. To pull the magnets apart you have to do work, which is another way of saying you have to use up energy. It's almost like pulling a rock back up a hill. Rolling the rock down a hill actually creates a little heat, and pulling the rock back up the hill takes energy. In the same way the positive charge of the proton pulls on the negative charge of the electron and they stick together releasing energy in the process. The result is a hydrogen atom, designated H. A hydrogen atom is nothing but a fuzzy electron hugging a compact proton. The proton is the nucleus of the hydrogen atom. If you knock the electron off the hydrogen atom you get a positive ion H+, which is nothing more than the original proton. An ion is the name applied to an atom or molecule that has lost or gained one or more electrons, hence is no longer electrically neutral.

Lesson 2

As you know, nature has provided us with more than one type of atom. We have oxygen atoms, nitrogen atoms, iron atoms, helium atoms, etc.. How do these atoms differ? The answer is that they all have different types of nuclei (plural of nucleus, from the Latin). And these different nuclei all have different numbers of protons inside them, which means they all have different plus charges. The nucleus of the helium atom has 2 protons inside it, hence has plus 2 charge, and requires 2 electrons to neutralize its charge. When 2 electrons stick to it, it becomes a helium atom. The oxygen nucleus has 8 protons and has charge 8. When 8 electrons stick to it, it becomes an oxygen atom. The nitrogen atom has 7 electrons, and the iron atoms something like 26. But all the atoms are built more or less the same way, with a compact positively charged nucleus embedded in a cloud of fuzzy electrons. The difference in size between the compact nucleus and the fuzzy electrons is enormous. The sun has a diameter only about 100 times that of the earth. The electron cloud on an atom has a diameter which is about 100,000 times that of the nucleus. Cube these numbers to get the difference in volumes.

Lesson 3

We now are in a position to understand what chemical energy is. The atoms, all electrically neutral, can actually join with each other and release more energy. This is another way of saying that they can join into more stable configurations. The electrons in an atom try to configure themselves so as to get as close as possible to their nucleus, but their fuzzy nature requires that they take up a certain volume of space. However, if they join together with the electrons of another atom they can usually find a tighter configuration that leaves them closer to their beloved

beginning of May. It only took about 40 days for the physics community to consider the new claims, test them experimentally, and then announce loudly to the world that they had been carefully weighed and rejected.

Following this rejection, physicists have treated cold fusion rather badly. For example, Professor John Huizenga of Rochester University was selected to be co-chair of the DOE ERAB committee that met to review cold fusion and issue a report. Shortly afterward, he wrote a book entitled Cold Fusion, The Scientific Fiasco of the Century, in which he discusses the claims, the experiments, and the extreme skepticism with which the new claims were greeted. Robert Park discusses the subject in his book entitled Voodoo Science. You can find many places where physicists and other scientists happily place the cold fusion claims together with claims of psychic phenomena.

A Science Tutorial

Talbot Chubb

First it is important to recognize that there are four distinct types of energy production:
1) chemical energy, that powers our cars and most of our civilization;
2) nuclear fission energy, as used to generate about 15% or our electricity;
3) hot fusion nuclear energy, which powers the sun and most stars;
4) cold fusion nuclear energy, which appears as unexplained heat in a few experimenter's laboratory studies and which most scientists believe is impossible.

The three types of nuclear energy produce 10 million times as much heat per pound of fuel than occurs with chemical energy. How do these types of energy differ? To understand this question you need to know some chemistry and physics.

Lesson 1

Nature has provided us with two types of stable charged particles, the proton and the electron. The proton is heavy, normally tiny, and has a positive charge. The electron is light, normally large and fuzzy, and has a negative charge. The positive charge and the negative charge attract each other, just like the north pole of a magnet attracts the south pole of a magnet. When you bring two magnets together with the north pole of one facing the south pole of the other, they pull together, bang! When they bang into each other they release a little bit of energy in the form of heat, but it is too small an amount to easily measure. To pull the magnets apart you have to do work, which is another way of saying you have to use up energy. It's almost like pulling a rock back up a hill. Rolling the rock down a hill actually creates a little heat, and pulling the rock back up the hill takes energy. In the same way the positive charge of the proton pulls on the negative charge of the electron and they stick together releasing energy in the process. The result is a hydrogen atom, designated H. A hydrogen atom is nothing but a fuzzy electron hugging a compact proton. The proton is the nucleus of the hydrogen atom. If you knock the electron off the hydrogen atom you get a positive ion $H+$, which is nothing more than the original proton. An ion is the name applied to an atom or molecule that has lost or gained one or more electrons, hence is no longer electrically neutral.

Lesson 2

As you know, nature has provided us with more than one type of atom. We have oxygen atoms, nitrogen atoms, iron atoms, helium atoms, etc.. How do these atoms differ? The answer is that they all have different types of nuclei (plural of nucleus, from the Latin). And these different nuclei all have different numbers of protons inside them, which means they all have different plus charges. The nucleus of the helium atom has 2 protons inside it, hence has plus 2 charge, and requires 2 electrons to neutralize its charge. When 2 electrons stick to it, it becomes a helium atom. The oxygen nucleus has 8 protons and has charge 8. When 8 electrons stick to it, it becomes an oxygen atom. The nitrogen atom has 7 electrons, and the iron atoms something like 26. But all the atoms are built more or less the same way, with a compact positively charged nucleus embedded in a cloud of fuzzy electrons. The difference in size between the compact nucleus and the fuzzy electrons is enormous. The sun has a diameter only about 100 times that of the earth. The electron cloud on an atom has a diameter which is about 100,000 times that of the nucleus. Cube these numbers to get the difference in volumes.

Lesson 3

We now are in a position to understand what chemical energy is. The atoms, all electrically neutral, can actually join with each other and release more energy. This is another way of saying that they can join into more stable configurations. The electrons in an atom try to configure themselves so as to get as close as possible to their nucleus, but their fuzzy nature requires that they take up a certain volume of space. However, if they join together with the electrons of another atom they can usually find a tighter configuration that leaves them closer to their beloved

nuclei. For example, 2 hydrogen atoms can join together into a more compact configuration if each hydrogen atom contributes its electron to a 2-electron cloud, which the separate protons share. In this manner they form a grouping of the 2 electrons in a single cloud, together with the 2 isolated protons spaced apart from each other but still within the electron cloud. The result is a heat-producing chemical reaction H + H => H_2. (The => means "goes to" or "becomes".) The H_2 configuration is the hydrogen molecule, and when you buy a tank of hydrogen gas, H_2 molecules is what you get. Furthermore, the 2 electrons of the H_2 molecule and the 8 electrons of the O atom can find a still more compact configuration by combining their electrons to create the water molecule H_2O, plus heat. The water molecule is really a single cloud of electrons in which are embedded the three point-like nuclei to form a minimum energy configuration. So when we burn oil or coal we reconfigure the electrons to produce more stable configurations of point-like nuclei embedded in electron clouds, liberating heat. So much for chemical energy.

Lesson 4

We have slid over one point in the above discussion. How does Nature make a nucleus containing two or more protons in the first place. After all, each of the protons has a positive charge, and the positive charges repel each other very strongly when they are separated by a tiny distance, equal to the distance across a nucleus. The repulsion of like charges is just like the repulsion between the north poles of two magnets when they are pushed together the wrong way. Something must overcome this repulsion, or else the only kind of atoms we would have would be those of hydrogen. Fortunately, this is not what we observe. The answer is that there is a second kind of force which acts on protons. This is the nuclear force. The nuclear force is very strong but requires particles to almost sit on each other to have any effect. Also, there is a second kind of heavy particle, which is just like a proton, except that it has no positive or negative charge. It is not pushed away by the proton's plus charge. This other kind of particle is called the neutron, since it is electrically neutral. A peculiar fact of life is that it exists in stable form only inside a nucleus. When not in the nucleus it changes into a proton, an electron and a very light anti-neutrino in about 10 minutes. But it lasts forever inside a nucleus. Anyway, the neutron and the proton very strongly attract each other once they get close enough together, and then they combine to form a highly stable pair called a deuteron, which we designate D+. The single deuteron, when it combines with a single electron, forms the heavy hydrogen atom called deuterium, designated D. A second nuclear reaction occurs when two deuterons make contact. When they can be forced together so as to make contact, the 2 deuterons fuse,

making a doubly charged particle. The grouping of 2 protons and 2 neutrons is even tighter than the proton-neutron grouping in the deuteron. The new particle, when neutralized by 2 electrons, is the nucleus of the helium atom, designated He. Larger groupings of neutrons and protons exist in nature and serve as the nuclei of carbon, nitrogen, oxygen, and iron, etc. atoms. All of these groupings are made possible by the very strong nuclear force, which is felt between particles only when they are in contact or share the same nucleus-size volume of space.

Lesson 5

We can now understand normal nuclear energy, which is really nuclear fission energy. During the early history of the universe massive stars were formed. In the explosion of these massive stars, lots of different types of nuclei were formed and exploded back into space. Second and later generation stars and planets were formed from this mix, including the sun. In the explosion process probably every possible stable configuration of protons and neutrons was produced, plus some almost-stable groupings, such as the nucleus of the uranium atom. There are actually 3 different types of uranium atom nuclei, called uranium-234, uranium-235, and uranium-238. These "isotopes" differ in their number of neutrons, but they all have 92 protons. The nuclei of all uranium atoms can go to a lower energy configuration by ejecting a helium nucleus, but this process occurs so rarely that the Earth's uranium has already lasted over 4 billion years. But the uranium nuclei are unstable in another way. In general, groupings of protons and neutrons are happiest if they have about 60 protons-plus-neutrons. The uranium nuclei contain more than three times this number. So they would like to split in two, which would release a lot of heat. But nature doesn't provide a way for them to split apart. They have to first go to a higher energy configuration before splitting in two. However, one of the three forms of uranium nucleus found in nature called uranium-235 and designated ^{235}U, gains the needed energy if it captures a neutron. The energized nucleus that results from neutron capture then splits apart with the release of an enormous amount of energy, and incidentally with release of additional neutrons. The additional neutrons can then split more uranium-235 nuclei, keeping the reaction going. This is what happens in nuclear power plants, where the heat, which is the end product of the nuclear splitting process, is used to boil water, generate steam, and turn electrical generators. (One also gets lots of radioactive products, which are a nuisance to dispose of safely.)

Lesson 6

We are now also in a position to understand hot fusion nuclear energy. As mentioned in lesson 5, the groupings of protons plus neutrons is most stable when the numbers of neutrons and protons approximate those

found in the nucleus of an iron atom. Just as uranium has too many neutrons plus protons to be comfortable, so the light elements like hydrogen, helium, carbon, nitrogen and oxygen have too few. If the nuclei can be made to make contact under proper conditions, they can combine to create more stable groupings, plus heat. This is the process of fusion. Nature has found a way of doing this in stars like the sun. All Nature has to do is heat compressed hydrogen hot enough and wait long enough and hot fusion will occur. If Nature were to start with deuterium, which already has a paired proton and neutron, the task would be relatively easy in a star. Temperature is a measure of how much speed an atom of a given type has as it bangs around inside a cloud of such atoms. The higher the temperature, the higher the speed and the closer the atoms get to each other momentarily during a collision. In a star the temperatures are high enough that all the electrons quickly get knocked off the atoms, so one is really dealing with a mixed cloud of electrons and nuclei. At very high temperature the nuclei occasionally get close enough during collisions for the pulling-together short range nuclear force to turn on. Then the nuclei can stick together and go to a lower energy grouping of protons plus neutrons, releasing heat. Hot fusion nuclear energy is an attempt to carry out this process in the lab, using deuterium and mass-3 hydrogen (whose nucleus is a compact grouping of 1 proton and 2 neutrons) as the gas. Hot fusion requires that the gas be contained at temperatures of hundreds of millions of degrees, which can be done with the help of magnetic fields, but only for 1 or 2 seconds. The hope is to contain the gas for longer times. During the period of high temperature containment nuclear reactions occur during collisions. The main form of energy release is ejection of high energy neutrons and protons. The proton energy quickly converts to heat. The neutron energy can also be converted to heat but makes the equipment highly radioactive. It then becomes difficult to repair the equipment, which could make hot fusion a poor candidate for commercial power production. In any case hot fusion power is a dream that is still probably at least 50 years away. But most scientists view hot fusion as the only way to achieve fusion power. Hot fusion produces less radioactivity than fission power, is environmentally benign, and has a virtually limitless fuel supply on earth (many millions of years at present energy usage rates).

Lesson 7

So now we come to cold fusion. Cold fusion may provide an easier and non-radioactive way of releasing nuclear fusion energy. Cold fusion relies on a different way of letting the protons and neutrons in one nucleus make contact with those in another nucleus, so that the nuclear force can bring them into a more stable configuration. The requirement for any nuclear reaction to occur is that the reacting nuclei occupy the same volume of space. This condition is called particle overlap. In hot fusion particle overlap is brought about briefly by banging the nuclei together so as to overcome momentarily the repulsion of the two positive charges which try to keep the particles apart. In cold fusion particle overlap conditions are achieved by making deuterium nuclei act as fuzzy objects like electrons in atoms, instead of like tiny points. When either light or heavy hydrogen is added to a heavy metal, each hydrogen "atom" occupies a position inside the metal where it is surrounded by heavy metal atoms. This form of hydrogen is called interstitial hydrogen. With interstitial hydrogen the electrons of the hydrogen atom become part of the pool of electrons of the metal. Each hydrogen nucleus oscillates back and forth through a negatively charged electron cloud provided by the electrons of the metal. They can be thought of as moving back and forth like the pendulum in a grandfather clock. This vibration exists even at very low temperature, due to a peculiarity of a branch of physics called quantum mechanics. The vibration is called zero point motion. The nucleus then becomes a fuzzy object, like the electrons in an atom. But this amount of fuzziness is not enough to permit a hydrogen nucleus to make contact with another hydrogen nucleus. To get two or more hydrogen nuclei to share the same volume one must go one step further. In a metal electrical current is carried by electrons that act more like vibrating matter waves than like point particles. If electrons did not become wave-like inside solids, there would be no transistors and no present day computers. This wave-like kind of electron is called a Bloch function electron. The secret of cold fusion is that one needs Bloch function deuterons. One needs wave-like deuterons inside or on the surface of a solid in order that two or more deuterons share the same volume of space. But once the Bloch function deuterons are created, the nuclear force comes into play and the protons and neutrons making up the deuterons can rearrange themselves into the more nuclearly stable Bloch function helium configuration, with release of heat. To study cold fusion the experimenter has to force deuterons to assume the wave-like form and keep them in the wave-like state. Cold fusion experiments demonstrating release of excess heat show that this can be done. But at present no one knows how to do it reliably. Since cold fusion promises millions of years of energy without the problems of global warming or radioactivity, a real effort should be made to learn how.

For more tutorials go to www.hometown.aol.com/cffuture1 and www.hometown.aol.com/cffuture2

LENR (Low Energy Nuclear Reactions) Experiments

Review from
http://www.lenr-canr.org

Have you ever wondered what a physics laboratory looks like? They are seldom spacious or organized the way they are shown in movies. Most LENR researchers work at universities or home laboratories, with tight budgets in a crowded space. They keep old, broken equipment on shelves to scavenge parts for new experiments. In this section we present some photographs of equipment provided by researchers, and close up pictures of equipment. The actual cells, cathodes and other equipment used in electrolysis experiments often have an ad-hoc, home-made appearance, because they are made by hand. They have to be; they are unique, one-of-a kind prototypes. Nothing quite like them has ever been made before.

A visitor seeing a LENR experiment the first time may feel disappointed. It looks like any other electrochemical experiment. The heat or neutron flux produced by the experiment are so small they can only be detected with sensitive instruments. A null cathode that produces no effect looks exactly like an active cathode. The difference between one cathode and another is in the microscopic structure, or the traces of elements mixed in with the palladium. Only one kind of cold fusion looks dramatic i. e. the glow discharge reaction.

Here are a few photographs of cold fusion cells and devices (also see the cover page).
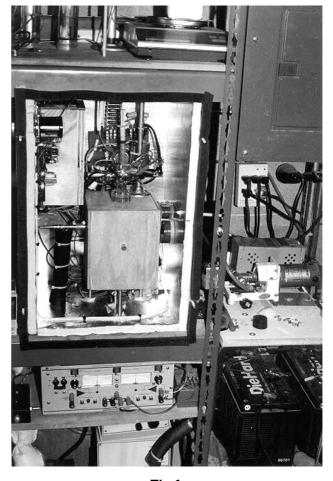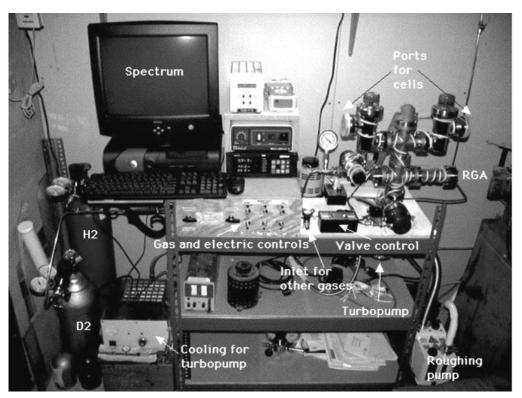
Fig.1
Box Calormeter

On Fig. 1 there is a calorimeter constructed by Edmund Storms. Note the DieHard® battery, lower right, that serves as an unninterruptable power supply. A power failure can ruin an experiment. Whenever possible, inexpensive, ordinary materials and instruments are used. However, experiments are never cheap, and they cannot be done on a shoestring. The equipment, arranged for another experiment (see Fig. 2), costs about $40,000.

Fig.2 (On the left)
Vacuum system to prepare particles for gas loaded cold fusion cells, courtesy E. Storms.
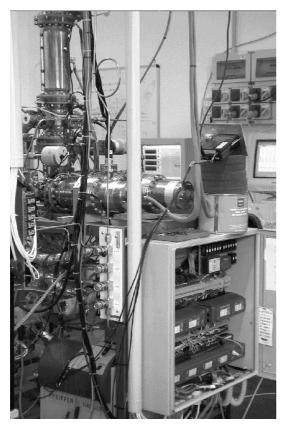
Fig.3
A high resolution mass spectrometer used for on-line helium detection during a cold fusion experiment at C. R. ENEA Frascati. (http://www.frascati.enea.it/nhe/)

Fig.4
A cell at ENEA Frascati

Fig.5
A flow-type cell, courtesy E. Storms

Fig.6
Close up of a Miley-style cell, courtesy E. Storms
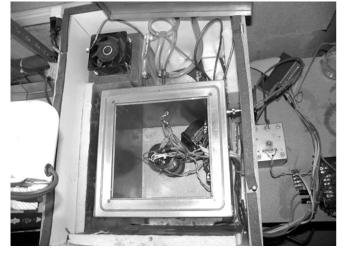
Fig.7
A cell installed inside a Thermonetics Seebeck calorimeter with the lid removed, courtesy E. Storms
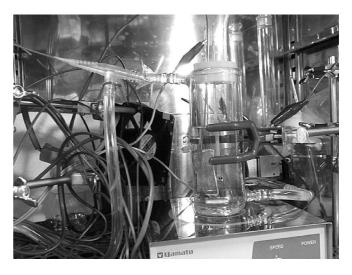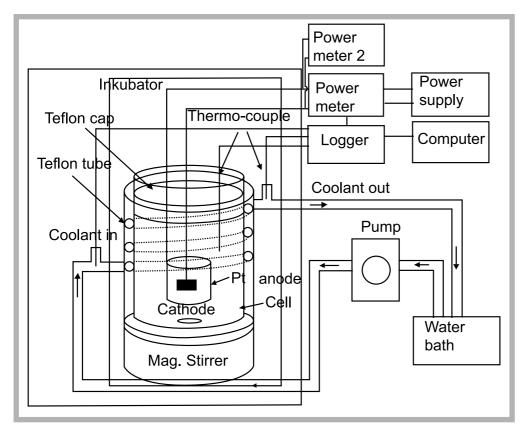
Fig.8

On the Fig. 8 you can see a glow discharge electrochemical cell at Hokkaido University, courtesy T. Mizuno. The cell is installed inside a crowded constant temperature air-cooled chamber. It placed on a magnetic mixer. Cooling water is pumped through the plastic tubes attached to the top and bottom. The muffin fan at the back circulates the air in the chamber
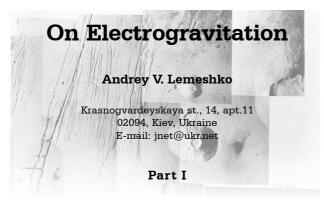
Fig.9

A schematic of the calorimeter shown above.

Hydrogen power engineering

Faraday Laboratories Ltd, Moscow, and Spectrum Investments Ltd, London, started joint R&D project on hydrogen power engineering. Photo: Alexander V. Frolov, Faraday Laboratories Ltd and Nicholas Moller, Spectrum Investments Ltd. The project includes designing and building of prototype to use hydrogen recombination process for heat generation.

On Electrogravitation

Andrey V. Lemeshko

Krasnogvardeyskaya st., 14, apt.11
02094, Kiev, Ukraine
E-mail: jnet@ukr.net

Part I

"let's go to the Mars!"

Nowadays it becomes evident that exploration of deep space by means of rocket equipment is impossible. Aircrafts, which run on jet thrust, are too expensive and unreliable. Besides, they are too slow-speed if were considered on a scale of solar system. For example, the flight to the remote areas of our planetary system can drag on tens years. But the main disadvantage of rockets is their low load-carrying capacity. Thus, the most powerful transport system "Progress" can deliver less than 100 ton of load to the orbit of the Earth, and only 1 ton to the orbit of the Mars. Rather natural question arises as to whether any alternative ways of space exploration exist? Are there any transport systems, which can compete with rocket equipment on the interplanetary routs of future? Actually, at present there is only one technology, which is alternative to rocket ones – it is the so-called light sailers, using light pressure for acceleration. Laser and maser can be also used for their acceleration from satellites. However, there are also some disadvantages here.

There is also one more transport system, which is undeservedly consigned to oblivion. It uses electricity in acceleration aggregate. This transport system or the electric propulsion system is a result of researches and investigations of two little-known, but extremely talented American physicians and inventors, Thomas Townsend Brown and Paul Alfred Biefeld (the last one was also a professor of Astronomy).

Thomas T. Brown was the first who discovered electric principle of this propulsion system. Thus, in twenties of the XX century Thomas T. Brown, being the student of secondary school, became interested in X-rays. He wanted to reveal if the rays, outgoing the X-ray unit, could take positive effect. For his researches the inventor had got Coolidge Tube, the device, which radiates X-rays and consists of a glass tube. Deep vacuum is created in this glass tube. Anode and cathode are placed in the tube. Cathode radiates electrons and anode brakes them. X-rays are created at striking of electrons against anode. Brown used Coolidge Tube in the way nobody had done before. For ease of handling the researcher suspended the device on wires, which run to anode and cathode parallel to the Earth. During the operation of the device he noticed that every time when current fed to the tube, the tube was moved aside and tended to make slight progressive motion. Subsequent experiments demonstrated that the deviation value depended only on the value of voltage, which is between anode and cathode. The higher voltage is, the more deviation.

X-rays were neither here not there. Much later at participation of Paul A. Biefeld, the same tendency to move was revealed at plane disc capacitors. The reason, which causes this motion, is the same, i.e. voltage, which exists between plates and not between anode and cathode as in Coolidge Tube.

Having run series of experiments, the researchers proved that electric energy could be directly transformed to mechanical. They also devised the physical principle, which were included in the scientific annals as Biefeld-Brown effect.

Editor's: Let us note that earlier Ampere and Faraday have been working on Electrokinetic effects which are easily detected at strong current. Modern researches on this point are known as "Sigalov's effect" (force appears in electric conductor which is bent at angle and at current impulse).

The essence of this effect lied in the fact that charged disc electric capacitors tend to move in the direction of their positive pole. At formulating of the essence of this effect the scientists consciously did not mention Coolidge Tube in order to demonstrate that according to their experimental observations, electron streams were not involved in generation of electromotive force. This effect of the direct transfer of electric energy to mechanic one (Biefeld-Brown effect) is observed, when current is fed to the Coolidge Tube or to the plane disc capacitor.

However, all this was realized much later, when in 1923 Brown became a student of Dennis University in Greenville, Ohio, where he met his teacher and later on a coauthor, Paul A. Biefeld. In school time the inventor came to the conclusion that the reopened by him phenomenon has nothing in common with X-rays and that high voltage, used for rays generation, is the basis of this phenomenon. Besides, Brown designed a device named "Gravitor". It looked like a usual bakelite box and was made as a simple construction, which consisted of several flat aluminum plates. The plates were placed as coins in a rouleau and separated with dielectric. It had only to place the box on the scale and connect it to some energy source with 100 kV voltage as the device either lost or put on about one percent of its weight that depended on polarity. An outside observer, who was not familiar with the essence of this effect, could think that mass was really changed. *(Editor's: Weight but not the mass is changed here. Weight is the force. There is a possibility of partial compensation of the weight by another force.)* But this was not the case. For better understanding of the processes, which take place at gravitor operating, let us make a mental experiment. Let us take a weight, put it on the scale and then raise it a little. The scale will certainly show that the weight has become lighter. After that let us press the weight then the scale will show that it has become heavier. However, in fact mass does not change. In the same way motive force, caused by high voltage, slightly raises the gravitor and at changing of polarity presses it. At that it seems that there is some change in weight. Thus, as if by chance, the scientist has discovered effect of direct transition of electric energy into mechanical one. *(Editor's: Let us specify the author's terminology. In T.T. Brown's Patent of 1927 it was mentioned that there*

was generated a force which partially compensated weight. The matter was always about the generation of x-force while gravitational field remained unchangeable).

Having graduated from the University, from 1926 up to 1952 Brown already by himself was being occupied with development of his electrical propulsion system. At the same time whether in chase of fame or in hope to obtain money for his researches, T.T. Brown began asserting that he had discovered something new in physics, viz "electrogravitation", i.e. some connecting effect between gravitation and electricity. *(Editor's: In my opinion, T.T. Brown has never posed a problem in such a way. The matter always concerned the fact that X-force appears while gravitational field does not change.)* As for the development of the invention, it came to the decrease of weight of the device and increase of DC voltage, which fed the plates of the "gravitor". As a result the devices could fly and lift weight which greatly exceeded their own. Thus in 1953 in his laboratory Brown demonstrated the flight of aircraft which had a disk form. The device made 51 m/c (180 km/h), flying at circular course of 6 m diameter. This device was nothing but very lightweight capacitor in which by means of the special construction electromotive force was redirected in two planes upward and sideward. It made the device rise in air and fly around the mast. Current of 50kWtt voltage was supplied to the central mast by the wire. Then speed of "flying disks" became higher, the payload capacity was increased but that was again resulted by decrease of weight and increase of the supplied voltage. T.T. Brown so succeeded in decreasing of the thickness of capacitor plates and in making his devices superlight, that the witnesses of these demonstrations called these devices as "air films".

Later on all works in this area were placed on secret list and then closed because of lack of prospects. Thus, accounts and experiments demonstrated that it was impossible to overcome terrestrial attraction entirely and go to outer space by means of the gravitor because there are no such natural materials which could take huge electric and heat loads. Besides, sufficiently massive electric power station would be needed to produce required currents. *(Editor's: Thereupon the following question appears: why the author looks for "currents" while the essence of the technology is in applying of high voltage but not of the currents?!)* Moreover some alternative was made, i.e. jet engines. Gravitor could not compete with them by above-mentioned and quite objective reasons. In time, since the mechanism of transition of electric energy into mechanical one was not disclosed and Brown's populist idea has received some publicity, this effect became surrounded with idle talks and guess-works. However the scientists who researched this very effect, has developed only three theory wh ich could explain its existence.

The first theory was suggested by T.T. Brown, the discoverer of this effect. To his dying day Brown asserted that he had discovered the effect which could connect gravitation and electricity, i.e. "electrogravitation". But this theory can be easily refuted by practice. It is enough to put Brown's bakelite box to the scale in such a way as to place the plates of the "gravitor" at right angle to the surface of the scales.

Then poles of the "gravitor" will be placed at the same level and parallel to ground and as a consequence electromotive force will influence in no way on the scale, since this force is directed sideward but not upward or downward. The scale will accurately show that there are no changes in weight and hence there is no **electrogravitation**. *(Editor's: The author will obtain propulsive force and it is directed not upward and downward but sideward. However the effect exists in any case. The changing of weight appears only when propulsive force generated by the device is directed against the weight force, i.e. upright.)*

The second theory was suggested by T. Brown's opponents. They asserted that electromotive force appears as a result of the so called "electron wind", i.e. electron streams which exist between the plates of the "gravitor". In their argumentations Brown's opponents rest upon the following facts which are well-known to every physicist. Fast electrons, as well as photons, have dual properties, i.e. interacting with matter and environment, they behave both as a wave and as a material particle. Since light or photons carry energy, then they heat bodies which are in their way and put pressure on the illuminated surface etc. Similarly electron streams carry heat or kinetic energy and hence they can put pressure on the anode of Coolidge Tube and get it moving forward. This theory seems to be interesting, however it explains appearance of electromotive force only in Coolidge Tube, but there is no explanation why discoid capacitors tend to move. Point is that there are no free electron streams in the capacitors. Usually between the plates of capacitors there is a dielectric which brings electron streams to nothing. If there is no electron wind, then what makes capacitors move?

Editor's: There is always a surface charge and reactive outflows of ions. But it is just a partial explanation of Biefeld-Brown's effect.

The third theory is based on the following fact. It is well known that electrons can have heat or Brownian chaotic motion. Free electrons, placed in a conductor, are in the similar chaotic heat motion before voltage is applied to this conductor. The higher temperature of the environment is the higher speed of this heat motion. According to school course of physics, heat energy or energy of chaotic motion of molecules (electrons) can be entirely transferred into mechanical one. If all molecules (electrons) start to move simultaneously and in the same direction, and if they push some piston toward this direction then heat energy of molecules (electrons) will be entirely transferred into mechanical work. In other ways, this piston will move until molecules (electrons) calm down. It is considered that this process is unrealizable in practice.

However, it seems that this is not quite the case, i.e. it is possible to regulate chaotic heat motion of electrons. Obviously this process takes place in the capacitor and in Coolidge Tube. It is no secret that when negative electrons try to move to the neighbor positive charged electrode, then dielectric layer which is placed between the plates of the capacitor prevents it. Electrons rest upon this layer and start to heat. Their internal energy is also increasing. The higher voltage is the higher heating of electrons, i.e. their capacity to have chaotic heat motion increases. However, chaotic motion of

electrons is not observed on the capacitor plates, since the directed force (voltage) influences electrons. Electrons tend to move upward, downward, to the right and to the left, but voltage prevents it. Thus they just are forced to move in space in one direction and with the same speed. Capacitor or gravitor has to move alongside with electrons because plates of the capacitor (gravitor) become a piston which is pushed by heated electrons. This piston is in progressive motion. It starts to move under the influence of electrons, or rather together with electrons. The higher voltage is, the higher temperature of electrons and hence the higher their speed. Therefore speed of capacitor (gravitor) increases at voltage increase. There is a usual chain, i.e. electric energy transfers into heat energy and heat energy transfers into mechanical one. Approximately the similar process takes place in Coolidge Tube, but there the heat of electrons is caused by thermoelectric emission on the cathode. Electrons evaporate from the cathode surface. Voltage, existing between anode and cathode, makes electrons move in one and the same direction. They move towards anode, which serves as piston and takes heat push upon itself, i.e. it transfers heat energy of electrons into mechanical work. It is clear that the higher voltage is the more intensively electrons are heated. Therefore electrons more intensively influence anode and the suspended tube is deviated to a greater extent. (*Editor's: Nowadays this very explanation is the most admitted one.*)

Resting upon Biefeld-Brown's theory and experimental results and at sufficient financing, already within the next few years it would be possible to create a unique electric engine which can operate on hot or quick electrons. Besides there will appear a possibility to orbit the first spaceship equipped with a propulsion system similar to gravitor one's. In near future scheduled cargo-and-passenger service could be organized within planetary system. First of all such transportations can be organized between the Mars, Moon and Venus orbits that will let to start active colonization of these planets.

Thus, more than 200 flights to the Moon and back and about 70 flights to the Mars are possible by means of the gravitor which is made of modern fusions and dielectric materials and which is placed on the Earth orbit. At that there is a minimum risk for its breakdown during the flight, because gravitor has no movable parts and no explosives are used. Negative consequences for the crew in an improbable emergency are insignificant. Even if high voltage causes disruption of dielectric layer between the electrodes and voltaic arc appears then the spaceship, equipped with such a propulsion system, will mechanically arrive its destination. The source of energy will be its only trouble spot and it will happen only if nuclear reactor instead of solar batteries is used. There is also an idea to attach dwelling capsules and cargo bays, equipped with such electric engine, one after another, like carriages are attached to a locomotive. It will let to equip this interplanetary vehicle in several stages by compactly packed modules which are delivered from the Earth. Unfortunately, this project exists only on paper and support of government or financial institutions is not expected in the near future. Faint hope is rested upon enthusiasts but there are too few of such people,

besides almost all of them are rather hardly related to space flights and science. Most of scientists even hear nothing about Biefeld-Brown Effect, because it has never become widely known, since all works of this field, except the very first experiments from the USA, were run and then closed in secrecy.

Part II

"…it's time to go to the stars"

Due to the theory of relativity there is an ingrained belief of several generations that it is impossible to move with more than 300 000 m/c speed, i.e. to move faster than light, since the postulates of this theory read that mass is directly depended on speed. Calculations demonstrate that while speed of some accelerated body verges towards light speed its mass will increase and in the point of equilibrium ($V = c$) it will unrestrictedly increase. Hence acceleration will tend to zero and speed will not virtually increase, no matter how long acceleration speed acts on the object. In other words, the accelerating mass dissipates speed. In principle it is correct but another conclusion can be also drawn from the dependence of mass and speed, for example, the following one: to accelerate an object to the speed which exceeds light speed, mass of the accelerated body should decrease and its speed should increase. Any physicist will say that this statement is correct. At first sight it is practically impossible to realize this idea therefore it was wrongly give to writers of science fiction. They added this idea to their armory and the hypothetical device, which realizes it, was named as gravitational engine. Let us realize this idea from the practical point of view and basing only on facts and logic.

Thus let us apply to the facts and give the description of one experiment. Professor of Pulkovo Observatory N.A. Kozyrev is the author of this experiment, he was also the first to discover the phenomenon of lunar volcanism. Kozyrev used a gyroscope, i.e. the device consisting of two rings of different diameter. These rings are placed athwart one in another and movably jointed. Top is attached to the inner ring through the cardan. The scientist put usual thermos filled with hot water near the beam scale. The top of the gyroscope was preliminarily spun up counterclockwise. At that balance indicator showed that gyroscope top at 90 gram weight became 4 milligram lighter in weight. Then Kozyrev started to pour water of room temperature inside the device through the vinyl chloride tube fixed into the hole, which was made in the plug of the thermos. Seemingly it is impossible to influence upon the gyroscope operating and its weight by a balloon filled with hot water, which is being cooled. Besides the thermos consists of a double-walled container which practically entirely excludes heat exchange with the environment. However balance indicator moved at one or two points, i.e. such connection existed.

This experiment can be divided into two steps. At the first stage the thermos filled with hot water is placed near the gyroscope and we can register the decrease of the top weight. At the second stage water of room temperature is poured into the thermos and the scale again shows that the weight has been changed. Somehow Kozyrev explained the second stage of this

experiment. He assumed that when we pour cold water in the thermos, then the equilibrium of the system is broken because some irreversible processes take place there. Cold water can not cause temperature increase of water in the thermos. Until the system come to equilibrium at a new level, i.e. until the same temperature is set in the whole volume of the thermos, this process will cause the condensation of time which "additionally" influences the top. However the scientist missed that the weight of the top had decreased long before the moment when cold water was poured into the thermos, i.e. before irreversible processes appeared there. *(Editor's: Evidently, the author of the article is not well familiar with Kozyrev's researches and with works of other experimenters who investigated this problem.)* In other words, at the first stage of the experiment there is nothing to condense time and that insignificant weight condensation, which was equal to 4 milligram, absolutely does not fallen into his theory. Some other process is presented there.

It is quite possible that at the first stage of the experiment we deal with nullification of the top weight, i.e. mass of the top tends to zero. Some conclusion arises from this assumption, i.e. hot water can influence the mass of the top in some still incomprehensible way. *(Editor's: The point is not in water temperature but in the process of changing of the entropy.)* Thus there is a simplest and primitive model of the gravitational engine, viz there are hot water along with gyroscope and the required decrease of mass at the "outlet". Certainly, it is very bold assumption but it can be easily checked. Near the gyroscope there should be placed thermos filled with not boiling water (of 100°C temperature) but with water of 50°C temperature. If the weight of the top decreased by one half (for example, by 2 milligram instead of 4 milligram), then we can surely ascertain that the hotter water in the thermos is the more decrease of mass. Besides, each 100°C of water heating will decrease mass of the top by 4 milligram. It is not very difficult to calculate the temperature at which mass of the top will verge toward zero and the top will start accumulating negative mass.

Let us now assume that our experiment was successful then water as well as any other matter cannot be heated to such high temperature. However it is possible to heat electrons. They are very compact and have insignificant mass and can be heated to very high temperature. It is necessary to take several plates then to place a dielectric between them and to apply voltage. Electrons rest on the dielectric and start heating. The top can be rotated anti-clockwise by means of electric engines, i.e. capacitor and gyroscope should be combined in one system with common center of gravity. It is not very difficult, as the saying goes, it is just an engineering problem. The higher temperature of electrons is the more decrease of the top mass. Finally there is a moment when mass of the capacitor-gyroscope system will reach zero and this electric machine will rise to the surface of the gravitational field of the Earth or any other planet. It will be Biefeld-Brown's force that will make our apparatus taking off the gravitational field of the Earth. This very force will start to accelerate our apparatus in the space vacuum and top of the gyroscope will lose its mass which appears at acceleration. Thus it is quite possible to reach speed, which is close to the light one, or even to overcome the threshold of light speed.

Part III

"…what is new?"

What is implied by gravitational waves? This question has been exciting the scientists from the half of the XX century. But still nowadays, in spite of all attempts of the scientists to dissolve the problem, these waves were not discovered. There is a standard way to discover them, which is based on general relativity. Basing on this theory, scientists assume that gravitational waves should change in some way the weight of material objects. According to this assumption the scientists suspend very heavy balls to very precision scale and then try to trace changes of their weight. There were only negative results. It seems that mass changes so quickly and to such short period of time that scale fails to react upon these changes. However there is another way which seems to be very promising.

Dependence of time and gravitation is a well-known fact. Thus speed of time course depends on force of the gravitational field of an object. Stars and planets can be considered as an example. The more intense attraction near them the more slowly time passes there. In other words, the greater mass of the planet the more slowly time passes near it. It is possible that oscillations of masses, which generate gravitational waves, in some way change speed of the time course along the whole way of the propagation of gravitational waves. In other words, gravitational waves are always attended with slight time fluctuations. Time starts to pass a little faster or a little more slowly as compared with its usual course. These changes can be traced by means of usual quartz plates. Let me remind of the fact that quartz plates are used at some models of clocks to keep time. Thus, oscillations of gravitational masses produce in space both gravitational waves and time fluctuations (chronowaves), which can be easily detected. Possibly these chronowaves are the part of gravitational waves. This assumption is already a scientific fact which is unfortunately ignored by more than one generation of researchers.

Professor N.A. Kozyrev was the first who surmised about the existence of time ways (chronowaves). He called them as "time flows". The scientist worked out and run a simple experiment to confirm his hypothesis. Telescope and quartz plates were used. Quartz plates were placed in focus of the telescope, which was pointed to some bright star. Its objective lens was covered with black paper or tin plate in order to exclude the influence of light beams. At that quartz plates reacted upon the presence of chronowaves. Thus there was changed the frequency of oscillations of plates which were placed in focus of the telescope.

Besides the scientist discovered that in focus of the telescope there were changed electroconductivity and volume of some matters. It is explainable since some parameters of space as well as speed of passing of some physical processes and phenomena depend on the speed of time course. Outwardly it appears in change of electroconductivity and volume. In spite of the fact that during the experiments tin plate (thick metal cover) was used some skeptics insisting that the point is in infrared radiation which is produced by the heated cover. However they was silenced by Kozyrev's researches. Basing on the fact that we usually see stars not where they really are, but at the place they were at the moment

of emanation of light signal, the scientist calculated the location of Procyon star, which is the nearest to the Earth. Kozyrev pointed the telescope to this "clear" part of the sky zone that allowed to avoid the influence of infrared radiation and to fix the location of the star. Thus it is nothing but chronowaves generated by the star that can change oscillation frequency of quartz plates.

After Kozyrev's death this field of research is not considered by official science and the very existence of chronowaves is denied. Only some theorists warily impute the above-listed effects to the action of some torsion fields and waves the existence of which is rather questionable. However chronowaves exist and they can be used in practice, for example, to get information from any point of our galaxy in several seconds. **It is quite possible since chronowaves have no mass and thus they are propagated more quickly than light waves.** However it is still a question what will transmit this information to us because the transmitter of these waves yet has not been invented. *(Editor's: It is interesting what mass of light waves the author means. It is a pity that the author of the article did not read 9 previous issues of NET magazine! There was a detailed demonstration of the connection of Kozyrev's theory and experiments with the theory of longitudinal waves in aether. If to replace Kozyrev's notion of "waves of time density" by the notion of "waves of aether density" then we will get a real experimental approach which can help to solve the problem of antigravitation and time control.)*

Of course theoretically chronowaves can be also generated without participation of great gravitational waves (it seems that heat processes can also generate them). However no particular success was achieved in this field. Thus by means of chronowave transmitter it is possible just to "listen" to remote stars the light of which will reach the Earth in many years. This receiver is very simple and it can be made by anyone who knows a little about radio engineering. *Under home conditions it is better to use a miniature incandescent bulb (lamp with filament tungsten) as a receiver and usual ohmmeter as measuring instrument.*

If in usual receivers radio waves are excited by weak electric currents existing in antenna then chronowave antenna is constantly under tension. Chronowaves do not excite current there but change some characteristics of it, influencing on electroconductivity of the matter which was used for the antenna (let us remember Kozyrev's experiments). Later on these insignificant changes are transferred in audio signal or fixed by any other means. That is the principle of operation of the device.

Editor's: These experiments on the registration of flicker effect in more detail are described in A.M. Mishin works which were published in previous issues of our magazine. As the reader could notice, the editors' opinion in many respects does not coincide with the author's point of view. (Alexander V. Frolov)

References

1. *G.Ya. Myakishev, B.B. Buhovtsev,* Physics, *M.: Prosveschenie, 1991*
2. *A.S. Kuzovkin, N.N. Nepomnyaschy,* What happened to torpedo-boat "Eldridge"? *M.: Znanie, 1991, Series "Znak voprosa" #3, p.37*
3. *S.N. Zigunenko,* How the time machine is made? *M.: Znanie, 1991, Series "Znak voprosa" #5, p.35*
4. *A. Einstein and gravics, Collection of articles, M.: Mir, 1979*
5. *A.D. Chernin* Physics of time, *M.: Nauka, 1978*
6. *A.I. Veinik* Thermodinamics of natural processes

Time Machine

Alexander V. Frolov gave this interview to the Spain magazine "Mas Alla de la Ciencia" ("Science"). The interview concerns some questions about scientific-research work on investigation of active properties of time. Let us remind that in 2002 Faraday Lab Ltd and Vadim A. Chernobrov (Moscow) started the join Time Machine Project.

Miguel Segui: How does it value the results obtained by the prototype of time machine?
Alexander V. Frolov: Usually it is about 3% changes, i.e. 3 sec per 100 sec of experiments.
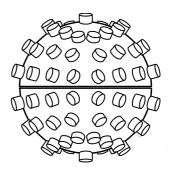
M.S.: How other devices are preparing inside the project Time Machine?
A.F: Now we have project with special electromagnets, which are emitters of the longitudinal waves. So, other devices are electronics parts to provide impulse current. But it is not the only one version of the system. If the emitters of the longitudinal waves are based on other principles so all device has other design.

M.S.: Do you believe that some day the time trips will be possible?
A.F: Yes, sure. We have the clear theory for it and it is based on understanding of physical sense of the aether,

its relation with notion of time and with concept about existence of elements of matter in space-time. According to aether-vortex theory any element of matter is created from aether and its temporal parameters depend on density of aether.

M.S.: What practical applications can have the prototypes that are developing?
A.F: Any change in the time course is the method of influence onto biological systems and the medical aspect is the main application. Also any physicist know relation between G (the gravity constant) and time course (rate of time). For example, time is slower on the surface of Earth than in space. So, local time changes (which are changes in density of aether or direction of aether wind) can be used to get propulsion force without reactive mass

flow. Also we can hope that some new materials can be produced in special area of slowed or accelerated time course.

M.S.: Which are the main difficulties of developing of these devices at the moment?

A.F.: For us now it is a part of the work that is related with designing of the powerful current electronics circuits. Also there are no known analogies for patent work, but we hope to complete our patent claim in March of 2003.

M.S.: Is it foreseen that they carry out experiments with human beings and the machine of modification of the time, just as V. Chernobrov carried out?

A.F.: We, i.e. Faraday Laboratories Ltd, are developing small unit for testing of the principles. In future we'll work with other design and with participation of the pilot (human passengers). But it will be the system of other kind. Let me explain: now we are working to get small local change of the aether density, so called "chronal charge". It is analogy with electric charge, which produces electric field in space. If the electric charge is

moving then it will produce magnetic field. According to our plans after confirmation of the principles we are going to create design with moving "chronal charge" to generate "chronal field". There are suppositions that this field can be used practically for antigravitation propulsion transport.

"FRCM" – Avalanchedrive
Fractioning and Replacement of a Constant Mass

Murilo Luciano Filho, Brazil

murilo@intrumenti.com.br, avalanchedrive@hotmail.com

For the while, this project has only these two names, as above. There is still a lot to do upon this development that involves free energy and / or "over-unity". It is designated to be of free use and application by everybody and everywhere, without any royalties just like it was a very old idea, which is now opened for entire community use. The inventor has enough strong reasons for this will.

This is a kind of donation, a personal donation, for the very best future of the Earth. Pioneers are needed (late pioneers?) Any person may be involved in this development to make money since there are no barriers for that. This means that this is an open idea and in this way it must stay. The principles are new and original and the energy involved is quite huge. In the inventor's mind there is realized the possibility to create an expert hands-on group to finish the project. In this article there is a rough draw which seems to be enigmatic but in fact it can clear the understanding of the principle and show the situation at which body may offer controlled spatial variation of length for the same weight.

The short text and a schematic draw (see Fig.1) are the way to show the principles and a few possible construction solutions. The photo shows a part of the device which can clear the so called weight localized rarefaction. Possibly the understanding of capacity for an observer will be a little forced. If necessary author can send the full patent requirement text, which contains 54 pages and 32 figures, not in English but in Portuguese.

FRCM – "AVALANCHEDRIVE"
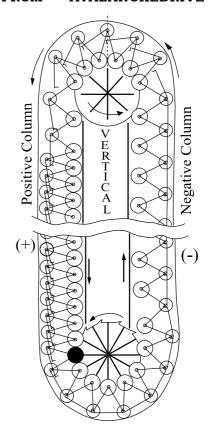
Fig. 1

Understanding of **FRCM / avalanchedrive** is a challenge in itself. When you start to learn about FRCM you will find complete original problems to deal. **Free your mind basing on some mechanical and physics knowledge and then avalanchedrive will come to make a part of your life. Feel free to work.**

PATENT REQUIREMENT RELEASE

This patent requirement is basically the application of a new physical principle which could be defined and found at least 400 years ago, so simple it is. Surely it is one of such things which was let behind by human mind and concern. FRCM is odd and amazing. The key for this project is a special body that can behave like a solid and like a fluid, at the same time, with combined characteristics just as designed and required.

The mass potential of a specially designed segmented body is hold and managed, and throughout proper means is sequentially fractured while suspension balance is kept. This causes, after start, a constant and cyclic movement, since arrangement goes, and the conducting and forcing form of the mass is not interrupted.

Also called "avalanchedrive", this principle work is based on just three main parts or components: 1st is the special segmented body – a chain; 2nd is the stationary and external assembling to hold and conduce the chain; 3rd is the straight vertical, in order to achieve the maximal weight storage position in the arrangement.

The chain is an endless repetitive zigzag construction with weights and defined angles that looks like an entire and elongated ellipse. Its design makes easy the change of its profile and form (mutant profile) that will be contracted or elongated, according to the way it is organized, supported and driven. When contracted or expanded, the chain assumes its maximal or minimal weight, in comparatively the same heights and level, but at different cross sections (tunneling?).

For distribution of the chain track the external assembling forms a kind of duct or rail, which is also elliptical. It allows to the chain to be contracted and expanded, to change direction, move, and pass away, as desired. The chain follows the way that the rail allows, in four different zones: mass-united zone, or positive column, or weight capacitor; the lower reversion input zone; the liberation zone, or negative column, with same height of the positive one; and the upper reversion zone, and its "zero point", or non-resistance top.

Both reversion zones are composed mainly of wheels. However, while the lower zone has to hang, open and bolt the chain, in order to change its profile and natural falling-down trajectory, the upper has a very passive function, that is just to let the chain cross over, and avoid any turn back possibility.

Fact is that in all circuit the chain follows with passivity the "voids" of trails, but assumes a very strong positive and pressure action in mass-united zone, especially in the button, where to the wheel there is applied all the active potential weight of the device, formed by the entire stack of the full contracted state, forcing movement.
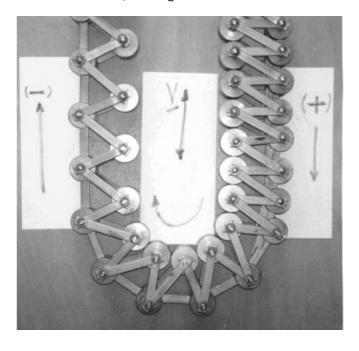
Photo of FRCM (Avalanchedrive)

It is easy to understand how and why FRCM works. Weight of the positive column is directly connected – as a compressed spring – against the relatively lighter negative column, through lower reversion wheel, where happens a kind of flux (the "solid flux") of the chain, that never can find a state of rest. Cycles of "breaking" of the chain can beconsidered as the instant of touch of each corner of the chain to the lower step wheel. To complete the circuitry, the chain excess, which is much lighter, passes over the upper wheel and turns back to the positive column top. It is impossible to turn the full subtracted potential to its source but mechanically the easier job to be done in FRCM.

FRCM manages and converts mass in energy...

The chain flows from the positive column, naturally finds changed profile and reverses to opposite way, and then it is pushed up to the negative column and to top. Finally it is collected, friendly, to restore the potential, at non-stop run! The only alternative to the chain is to move and move, and apply the positive surplus of weight to wrench under axle of the wheel.

This FRCM principle allows develop the equipment which is going to be able to take energy, work and force from gravity potential, so as it happens from wind and water at electrical generator machines, today. The potential is kept in such critical situation, that the only way for it is to escape and move. Besides in consequence of the suspending mass state the linear constant repetition of event will suffer. Water and other fluids do not offer "mutant profile" with fixed value of pressure, just as solid materials. There are many arguments for this view.
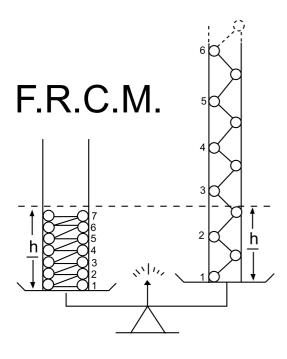
Fig. 2
Segment of a chain

Considering all mechanical losses, a part of the mass will be very active and applied in eccentric, or radial position to the wheel, even with the risk to cause too high speed. FRCM manages and converts mass in energy.

See a non-scale schematic draw (Fig. 2) and photo of a chain segment to compare densities between columns at right and at left.

A theoretical case can be calculated: at total chain weight - 100, general losses - 20, total negative resistance - 30, active or positive surplus is 50 – 30 = 20. This surplus that may be of 2kg, 200kg or 2,000kg, depending on scale, will force and free edge of the wheel, while the total weight keeps confined in the device. In the above case the difference of balance is 1.66. This means that the flowing velocity of the negative pile is 1.66 times higher than the falling of opposite positive pile. Just like a "solid venture", this change and relation is fixed, and in other cases may be varied or calculated to 3, 4 or even more! In all cases the speed must be hold that is not very easy job while one faces gravity acceleration.
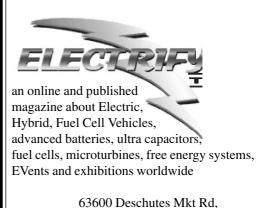
The author of FRCM conceptions feels like these ideas have been around for many centuries, and that they are now discovered just like old draws. And this can be the bigger and the best moment to release this. Many thousands of different designs and solutions are coming in the future at looking for the better performance, costs and durability. Author thinks it to be strange that previous guesses could not reach this macro-physical concept. To build FRCM circuits, even re-applied or used old pieces, for example from ships and trains, will be useful.

This is only a start to a "new-old" development and clue to the sources of the modern mechanical engineering. Certainly some oppositions should be overcome. It is expected that other names are also going to be created and proposed to FRCM, but "avalanchedrive" seems to be a good one.

Author expects to get the invention and concept credits but not royalties and would also be glad to keep working on this concern. So, this message is a kind of invitation...

Editor: Unfortunately we have no photo or video documents of the operative device. We wait for readers' comments on this invention.

Complete text of the patent is avaible in Pourtuguese only.

Institute for Planetary Synthesis

P.O. Box 128, CH-1211 Geneva 20, Switzerland
Tel. 41-022-733.88.76, Fax 41-022-733.66.49
E-mail: ipsbox@ipsgeneva.com

website: http://www.ipsgeneva.com

Hydrogen-Powered Vehicles at Least a Decade Away

Peter Behr
Greg Schneider

President Bush's vision of a hydrogen-powered, non-polluting "Freedom" car for the next generation of American motorists pulled out silently from a Newport Beach, Calif., garage with Gregg Kelly at the wheel, bound for his office 10 miles away.

Kelly, president of a California robotics company, happens to drive a Toyota prototype of a hydrogen-fueled car, one of a handful in the United States today.

It will take at least a decade before a host of technological, economic and political barriers are overcome, permitting a fleet of these revolutionary vehicles to appear on U.S. highways, industry experts said. But by including the goal of hydrogen fuels in his State of the Union message Tuesday, Bush has opened the door to a fledgling movement that has already attracted a surprising coalition of supporters.

Environmentalists, automakers, oil companies and coal producers, engineering labs and strategists have seized on hydrogen as an almost too-good-to-be-true power source. It is abundant in water and air, it burns cleanly and it could free the nation from its dependence on Middle Eastern oil.

"For President Bush to frame the goal as he did is significant," said Jeremy Rifkin, consultant and author of a book advocating a transition from oil and gas to hydrogen. "How much is made of this, time will tell."

The president said he hoped that Americans born today would learn to drive in hydrogen-powered cars, a schedule that auto experts said could technically be met. But whether these vehicles will be commercially available depends on a huge array of variables.

First, the technology is still incomplete and unaffordably expensive. The specially equipped Toyota Highlander that Kelly drives has no price tag. The Japanese manufacturer, after investing millions of dollars in research, lent the vehicle to a University of California research project that Kelly's company supports. "My checkbook isn't fat enough," Kelly said.

The car is powered by electricity generated in a fuel cell by chemically combining hydrogen and oxygen. The engine spits out water drops instead of the carbon dioxide and other pollutants generated by burning gasoline.

With foreign manufacturers committed to press ahead, Detroit's carmakers have had to accelerate their research programs. In June, Ford Motor Co. will unveil a prototype car that uses hydrogen to power an internal combustion engine – part of a "bridging strategy" to help ease hydrogen into the marketplace until fuel cells are fully developed.

General Motors Corp. has developed a fuel cell-powered, car-sized "skateboard" – four wheels attached to a platform less than a foot thick, to which any kind of car body could be buckled.

Rather than use fuel cells, BMW has refitted 10 of its $70,000 Model 745 sedans with hybrid engines that burn either gasoline or liquid hydrogen directly. It could be mass producing them by the end of the decade at a "reasonable" cost for its customers if there were enough hydrogen fueling stations to power them, said spokesman Gordon Keil. "We're trying to get [fuel suppliers] interested in hydrogen. We've not met with a lot of enthusiasm."

As daunting as the engineering challenge is the need for a national hydrogen fuel infrastructure – factories to produce the fuel, pipelines and trucks to distribute it and stations to store and sell it. Environmentalists dream of a totally "green" strategy in which solar or wind power is used to separate hydrogen from water – an approach whose costs now would be prohibitive. A nearer prospect is producing hydrogen from natural gas or coal, however in either case, the carbon dioxide byproduct would have to be injected underground to avoid a huge increase in greenhouse-gas emissions, experts say.

Rifkin argues that an eventual scarcity of oil and gas, decades ahead, will push prices of these fuels up to a point where hydrogen becomes cost-competitive. "It isn't a problem that will yield to technology alone," agreed David M. Nemtzow, president of the Alliance to Save Energy.

While all the major automakers are developing fuel-cell technology, most are cautious about hyping it. "We don't want to get too exuberant about it in that sense, overselling it," said Greg Dana, vice president for environmental affairs at the Alliance of Automobile Manufacturers.

Fresh in some minds is the experience of the Clinton administration, which launched a high-profile, $1.5 billion research venture with the

Detroit automakers a decade ago to produce an 80 miles-per-gallon family car. No cars emerged, and the Bush administration halted the venture in favor of its hydrogen strategy.

Some of the president's political opponents contend the hydrogen option is a way of deflecting criticism over administration policies favoring energy production over conservation. "The president seems content with the auto industry's approach: 'Don't make us do anything today'," said the Sierra Club's Daniel Becker. Others say it does not go nearly far enough. Sen. Byron L. Dorgan (D-N.D), chairman of

the Democratic Policy Committee, said recently, "It's moving in the right direction. But his proposal is rather timid. I think we need a bolder plan."

Bush's spending plan for the hydrogen project, $1.5 billion over five years, represents a $500 million increase over his current budget. The administration proposes to earmark $273 million for the 2004 fiscal year, but did not offer many specifics yesterday. The funding would support research on fuel cells, vehicle technology and distribution issues.

The magnitude of the goal demands an effort on the scale of the Apollo Moon project, Dorgan said yesterday. "You have to set benchmarks for five, 10 years out."

UNUSUAL PERMANENT MAGNET MOTORS

Thomas Valone

Integrity Research Institute,
www.integrityresearchinstitute.org
1220 L St. NW, Suite 100-232, Washington, DC 20005
Email: iri@erols.com

Abstract

Permanent magnet motors that try to achieve unusual overunity efficiencies with changes in wiring geometry, electronic switching schemes and magnetic configurations often are not successful. There are some designs that should be regarded as conventional and others as promising. Hopefully this article will help the reader to tell the difference before investing or accepting investment. Note: patents can be viewed for free at www.uspto.gov and also http://gb.espacenet.com/espacenet.

Introduction

An article about permanent magnet (PM) motors would not be complete without first reviewing the basic configurations that are present on the market today. Commercial PM motors are necessarily DC motors since their magnets are permanently polarized before assembly. Many PM motors which use brushes are switching to brushless motors that promise less friction and wear. Brushless motors include electronic commutation or step motors. A step motor, often used in the automotive industry, offers more continuous duty torque per unit of volume than any other electric motor but it is often a lower speed motor. The electronic commutation design is applicable to the switched reluctance (SR) motor. The SR motor substitutes soft iron in the place of higher cost permanent magnets for the outer stator and instead has an inner PM rotor.

Brushless motors in general produce torque from current in the armature by the application of Faraday's Law. The ideal PM motor has a linear torque vs. speed curve. There are both outer rotor and inner rotor designs that are standard in PM motors.

Fig.1

Lenz's Law
Induced B-field opposes motion.

To point out the focus of many of the problems with analyzing motors, the *Motion Control Handbook* (Designfax, May, 1989, p. 33) says that there is a "very important relationship between torque and back emf that is sometimes not understood." This relates to the electromotive force (emf) that is produced by the application of a changing magnetic field (dB/dt). In engineering terms, the "torque constant" (N-m/amp) equals the "back emf constant" (V/radian/sec). In physics, the motor terminal voltage

Detroit automakers a decade ago to produce an 80 miles-per-gallon family car. No cars emerged, and the Bush administration halted the venture in favor of its hydrogen strategy.

Some of the president's political opponents contend the hydrogen option is a way of deflecting criticism over administration policies favoring energy production over conservation. "The president seems content with the auto industry's approach: 'Don't make us do anything today'," said the Sierra Club's Daniel Becker. Others say it does not go nearly far enough. Sen. Byron L. Dorgan (D-N.D), chairman of

the Democratic Policy Committee, said recently, "It's moving in the right direction. But his proposal is rather timid. I think we need a bolder plan."

Bush's spending plan for the hydrogen project, $1.5 billion over five years, represents a $500 million increase over his current budget. The administration proposes to earmark $273 million for the 2004 fiscal year, but did not offer many specifics yesterday. The funding would support research on fuel cells, vehicle technology and distribution issues.

The magnitude of the goal demands an effort on the scale of the Apollo Moon project, Dorgan said yesterday. "You have to set benchmarks for five, 10 years out."

UNUSUAL PERMANENT MAGNET MOTORS

Thomas Valone

Integrity Research Institute,
www.integrityresearchinstitute.org
1220 L St. NW, Suite 100-232, Washington, DC 20005
Email: iri@erols.com

Abstract

Permanent magnet motors that try to achieve unusual overunity efficiencies with changes in wiring geometry, electronic switching schemes and magnetic configurations often are not successful. There are some designs that should be regarded as conventional and others as promising. Hopefully this article will help the reader to tell the difference before investing or accepting investment. Note: patents can be viewed for free at www.uspto.gov and also http://gb.espacenet.com/espacenet.

Introduction

An article about permanent magnet (PM) motors would not be complete without first reviewing the basic configurations that are present on the market today. Commercial PM motors are necessarily DC motors since their magnets are permanently polarized before assembly. Many PM motors which use brushes are switching to brushless motors that promise less friction and wear. Brushless motors include electronic commutation or step motors. A step motor, often used in the automotive industry, offers more continuous duty torque per unit of volume than any other electric motor but it is often a lower speed motor. The electronic commutation design is applicable to the switched reluctance (SR) motor. The SR motor substitutes soft iron in the place of higher cost permanent magnets for the outer stator and instead has an inner PM rotor.

Brushless motors in general produce torque from current in the armature by the application of Faraday's Law. The ideal PM motor has a linear torque vs. speed curve. There are both outer rotor and inner rotor designs that are standard in PM motors.

Fig.1

Lenz's Law
Induced B-field opposes motion.

To point out the focus of many of the problems with analyzing motors, the *Motion Control Handbook* (Designfax, May, 1989, p. 33) says that there is a "very important relationship between torque and back emf that is sometimes not understood." This relates to the electromotive force (emf) that is produced by the application of a changing magnetic field (dB/dt). In engineering terms, the "torque constant" (N-m/amp) equals the "back emf constant" (V/radian/sec). In physics, the motor terminal voltage

is equal to the back emf minus the IR drop due to internal resistance. (Example: V = 8.3 v, back emf = 7.5 v, IR drop = 0.8 v.) This physics principle, also referred to as **Lenz's Law**, was discovered by Friedrich Lenz in 1834, three years after Faraday invented the homopolar generator. The oppositional nature of Lenz's Law, and its back emf, is built into a physical law called **Faraday's Law**, which is at the root of motor drive. The back emf is the reaction of the changing current in the coil. In other words, the changing magnetic field naturally creates a back emf because they are equivalent.

Therefore, it is recommended that Faraday's Law be carefully reviewed first before proceeding. An article such as "Faraday's Law—Quantitative Experiments" (*Amer. Jour. Phys.*, V. 54, N. 5, May, 1986, p.422) will help convince the valiant new energy experimenter that the change in flux which causes a back electromotive force (emf) is INHERENTLY equal to the back emf. It cannot be avoided or circumvented for excess energy benefit, unless the amount of magnetic flux change per time is also altered. They are two sides of the same coin. The energy into an inductive coil style of motor will naturally equal the energy out. Also referred to as "electrical induction," the changing flux "induces" a back emf.

Switched Reluctance & Field Switching Motors

To explore an alternative method for inducing motion, the "Permanent Magnet Motion Conversion Device" by Ecklin, patent #3,879,622, uses rotatable shutters for alternately shielding the poles of a horseshoe magnet. Repeated again in the Ecklin #4,567,407 "Biased Unitized Motor Alternator with Stationary Armature and Field," the idea of switching the magnetic field with a "flux switch" is common to these types of motors. To illustrate the underlying principle, Ecklin states, "The rotors of most of today's generators are repelled as they approach a stator and are attracted back by the stator as soon as the rotor passes the stator in accordance with Lenz's law. Thus, most rotors face constant nonconservative work forces and therefore, present generators require constant input torque." However, "the steel rotor of the unitized flux switch alternator actually aids the input torque for half of each rotation as the rotor is always attracted and never repelled. This construction makes it possible for some of the current or power fed to the motor windings to magnetically feed through a solid magnetic path to the AC output windings ..." Unfortunately, Ecklin still to this day has not achieved a self-running machine.

Also related is the Richardson patent #4,077,001 which discloses a low-reluctance keeper physically moving in and out of engagement with the ends of a magnet (p.8, line 35). Lastly, the Monroe patent #3,670,189 uses a related principle but accomplishes gating with the passing of rotor poles between permanent magnet stator poles. Monroe's claim 1, seems by its length and detail, to have almost guaranteed its patentability but of course its utility remains questionable.

It seems unlikely that as a closed system the Field Switching Motor can become self-running. In many examples, a small electromagnet will be necessary to help push the keeper into a synchronized rhythm. The Magnetic Wankel from Popular Science (June, 1979) can be compared in a basic manner to this type of invention. Also, the Jaffe patent #3,567,979 can also be compared (see abstract). The Minato patent #5,594,289 is also of a similar type as the Magnetic Wankel and quite intriguing to many people.

It has been found with inventions such as the Newman motor (U.S. Patent Application Serial No. 06/179,474), a nonlinear effect such as an impulse voltage is advantageous for overcoming the Lorentz force conservation effect of Lenz's Law. Also similar is the mechanical analog of the Thornson inertial propulsion device which uses nonlinear impact to transfer momentum along an axis perpendicular to the plane of rotation. A magnetic field contains angular momentum which only becomes apparent under certain circumstances such as Feynman's Disk Paradox, where it is still conserved. The impulse technique may possibly be used to advantage in this Field Switching Motor if the field switching can be done fast enough, with a rapid rise time, but more research is needed.
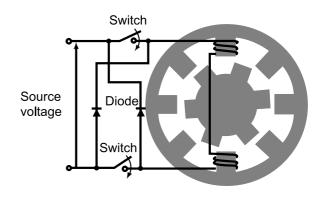
Fig. 2
Switched Reluctance Motor (*IEEE Spectrum* 1/97)

The best Switched Reluctance Motor that also has full accommutation is the Dr. Harold Aspden patent #4,975,608 which optimizes the performance of the coil input and operating above the knee of the B-H curve. Switched reluctance motors are also explained and praised in *IEEE Spectrum* (1/97).
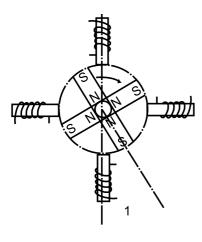
Fig. 3

Adams Motor

The Adams motor has attracted many followers including an endorsement from *Nexus* magazine as the best free energy motor they have seen. The performance of the machine, however, can be fully explained by Faraday's Law. The pulsing of adjacent coils which moves a magnetized rotor is actually following the same configuration as a standard switched reluctance motor. The delay that Adams speaks of in an Internet posting of his motor can be understood from the exponential voltage (L di/dt) of the back emf. The latest addition to this category, which gives credit to the Adams motor, comes from down under with PCT WO 00/28656 awarded to Brits and Christie in May, 2000. The simplicity of this motor is immediately obvious with the switchable coils and permanent magnet on the rotor. The patent also makes it clear that the "input DC current as supplied to the stator coil produces the magnetic repulsion force and is the only outside input to the overall system for total movement...." It is a well-known fact that all motors work on this principle. The key to their design is on p.21 of their patent where the inventors want to "maximize the influence of back EMF which tends to maintain rotation of the rotor/armature in a single direction." All of the motors in this field-switching category try to achieve this effect. Figure 4A of Brits and Christie disclose the voltage sources "VA, VB, and VC." Then, on page 10 it is stated, "At this time current is applied from the power source VA and continues to be applied until the brush 18 is no longer in contact with one of the contacts 14 to 17." There is nothing unusual about this design compared with the more sophisticated attempts listed previously in this section. All of these motors require an electrical power source and none of them are self-running.

When pulsing a coil with the passing of a permanent magnet, a suggestion that would help prove the claim for free energy is not to use battery power for the coil current. Instead, the amazing Weigand wires are recommended (*Pop. Sci.*, May, 1979) that exhibit a huge Barkhausen jump of magnetic domain alignment and a very well-defined pulse shape. Having a coil wrapped around a Weigand wire produces a substantial pulse of several volts with a changing external magnetic field passing a certain threshold. No electrical input power is required for this pulse generator.

Toroidal Motor

As compared to motors on the market today, the unusual design of the toroidal motor is similar to the Langley patent #4,547,713 with a two-pole armature in the center of the toroid. If a single-pole design is chosen, with for example North poles at each end of the armature, this would resemble the radial magnetic field for the armature which the VanGeel patent #5,600,189 uses. The Brown patent #4,438,362 assigned to the Rotron company, utilizes varying magnetization segments for a rotor in a toroidal air gap. The best example of a carousel toroidal motor is the Ewing patent #5,625,241, which also resembles the Langley patent mentioned above. Based upon magnetic repulsion, the Ewing invention uses a microprocessor-controlled carousel, basically to try and take advantage of Lenz's law and get a jump ahead of the back emf. The Ewing invention may be seen in operation, with co-inventor David Porter, in the commercial video, "Free Energy: The Race to Zero Point." Whether it may be more highly efficient than other motors on the market remains an open question. As the patent states, "it is also possible to operate the device as a motor using a pulsed direct-current power source" (col. 7, par. 30). It also contains a programmable logic controller and power control circuit which the inventors thought would send it over the top of 100% efficiency.

Unless a prototype proves to be successful in achieving a torque or force conversion linkage, the internally propelled magnet may be left without a practical application. Commercialization of these types of motors may not be favorable, since many competing designs are currently available on the market, with high flux linkage.

Linear Motors

The area of linear induction motors is well known in the literature. Schaum's Outline Series, *Theory and Problems of Electric Machines and Electromechanics* (McGraw Hill, 1981), explains that these are the same as cutting the rotor and stator of a standard induction motor and laying them out flat. The late Dr. Laithwaite, author of

Motion Without Wheels, was famous for monorail designs for trains in England based on linear induction motors.

The Hartman patent #4,215,330 is an example of one that achieves a linear motor transportation of a steel ball up a magnetized incline of approximately 10 degrees. Another invention in this category is the Johnson patent #5,402,021, which uses permanent arc magnets on a four-wheel cart, exposed to a parallel track of alternating permanent magnets which are in a fixed position. An even more amazing permanent magnet patent is the Johnson #4,877,983 which an eye witness has seen operating at the Johnson home in a closed loop for hours. It is reasonable to assume that a pickup coil could be positioned nearby so that each trip would result in a pulse of electricity to charge a battery. The Hartman patent could also be arranged in such a circular track so that perpetual motion of the first kind can finally be demonstrated.
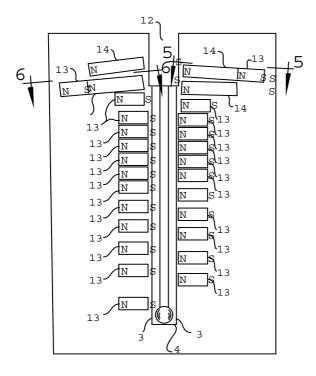
Fig. 4

Hartman patent #4,215,330

The Hartman patent is based upon the same principle as the famous electron spin experiment in physics called the Stern-Gerlach experiment. With an inhomogeneous magnetic field (one that is non-uniform) the force on an object with a magnetic moment is the gradient of the potential energy. Every physics textbook points out that this type of field, that is strong at one end and weak at the other end, will result in a unidirectional force on the magnetic object equal to dB/dx. That is exactly

what the Hartman patent possesses (note spacing of magnets). Therefore, the resulting force propelling the ball up a ten degree incline, in the x direction, is in keeping with the laws of physics.

With state-of-the-art magnets, including ambient temperature superconducting magnets which are now finishing the development stage, a demonstration of impressive cargo weight will be shown to be transportable without maintenance electricity costs. Superconducting magnets have the unusual property of retaining the initial magnetized field for years, without the need for periodic energization to restore the initial field strength. Examples of the state of development of the superconducting magnet market can be found in the Ohnishi patent #5,350,958 (lack of cryogenics and lighting system output) as well as the reprinted article from *IEEE Spectrum*, July, 1997 on magnetic levitation.

Static Electromagnetic Angular Momentum

In a provocative experiment with a cylindrical capacitor, Graham and Lahoz (*Nature*, V.285, No.15, May, 1980) have expanded upon the proof published by Einstein and Laub in 1908 that the Lorentz force needs an additional term to preserve action and reaction. The article they cite has been translated and published in my book, *The Homopolar Handbook* (described below). Graham and Lahoz emphasize that there is a "real angular momentum density to r x (E x H)/c²" and suggest how to see this energy effect in permanent magnets and electrets.

This is encouraging work, with an impressive source of Einstein and also Minkowski for its information. It is possible that it may have a direct application for the homopolar generator as well as the magnetic energy converter mentioned below since both have an axial magnetic field and a radial electric field like the cylindrical capacitor experiment of Graham and Lahoz.

Homopolar Motor

My book, *The Homopolar Handbook* (HH), covers experimental tests and history of the Faraday discovery, including Tesla's contribution to it. Recently however, there have been new developments into a multi-rotor design of a homopolar generator, similar to the invention of John R. R. Searl.

Recurring interest in the Searl device, as pictured on the cover of *Antigravity*, the biography of Searl by John Thomas, should also center on the

homopolar generator (HG). Preliminary analysis reveals that there are actually two separate HG phenomena occurring simultaneously, one which can be called the "revolution" effect (#1) and the second that could be called the "rolling" effect (#2). The first effect can be visualized as magnetized segments of an imaginary solid ring revolving around a common center. As suggested by drawings in HH, p.141-2, there are precedent designs that allow for segmenting an HG rotor.

With this model in mind, the #1 effect can be calculated, for 1 Tesla strength magnets, magnetized axially, adjacent to a single ring 1 meter in diameter, to produce more than 2 volts emf across each roller, (E-field directed radially from outer diameter of rollers to outer diameter of the adjacent ring) with say, 500 RPM. Note that this #1 effect is independent of any rolling of the magnet. The magnetic field in an HPG is tied to space and not to the magnet so rolling will not affect this large scale homopolar generator's Lorentz force effect (HH, p.10).

The #2 effect, located within each roller magnet, is the one noted in *Electric Spacecraft Journal*, Issue 12, 1994, (HH, p.160) where each roller, is a small homopolar generator. This effect is found to be somewhat weaker as it generates electricity from the center of each roller to its periphery. This design is like Tesla's HG (HH, p.81) where a rolling belt is contacting the outer edge of a circular magnet. With rollers in the vicinity of a tenth of a meter in diameter rolling, without slipping, around a 1 meter ring, approximately a half of a volt will be generated. The Searl design of ring magnetic material will normally strengthen the roller's B field.

It is important to realize at this point that the principle of superposition applies to these two effects. The #1 effect is a uniform E field across the diameter of the roller. The #2 effect is a radial effect as stated above (see HH, p.6-8). However, only the emf in the section of a roller between the two contacts, say at the center of the roller and its edge which contacts the ring, will actually cause current flow in any external circuit. This realization means that the effective voltage from the #1 effect will be half of the available emf, or a little more than 1 volt, which is still about double of the #2 effect. Upon applying superposition in the limited region indicated, we also find that the two effects oppose each other and the two emfs must be subtracted. The result of this analysis is that approximately one half of a volt of regulated emf will be present to generate electricity from a single set of rollers and one ring about 1 meter

in diameter. As current is drawn, a Ball Bearing Motor effect will also take place (HH, p.54) that actually pushes the rollers along, assuming the roller magnets have a reasonable conductivity *(Thanks to Dr. Paul La Violette for this reminder)*.

In a related work, (*Tech. Phys. Lett.*, V. 26, #12, 2000, p.1105-07), Roshchin and Godin have published experimental results of their one-ring device, called a "Magnetic Energy Converter," with rolling magnets on bearings. It was designed as an improvement to the Searl device. Though my above analysis does not depend upon the ring being made of magnetic material, Roshchin and Godin did so. Their findings are encouraging and detailed enough for researchers to find renewed interest in this type of magnetic motor.
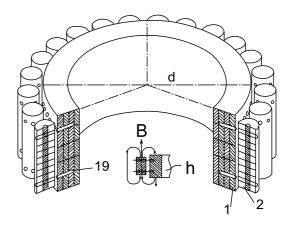
Fig.5

Magnetic Energy Converter in the experiment by Roshchin and Godin (Russia)

Conclusion

So far, a couple of permanent magnet motors may have achieved perpetual motion, which exceeds 100% efficiency. Of course, conservation of energy concepts have to be considered and the source of the alleged extra energy examined. If permanent magnet field gradients do offer a unidirectional force, as the textbooks predict, then it is about time for its conversion toward useful work. The roller magnet geometry, now called a "magnetic energy converter" is also a unique style of magnetic motor. Exemplified in the Russian patent #2155435 by Roshchin and Godin, it is a magnetic motor-generator that shows potential for excess energy output. Since it relies upon the circulating cylindrical magnet rolling around a ring, the design is actually a generator rather than a motor. However, as they utilize the torque produced by the self-sustained motion of the magnets to run a separate electrical generator, it is working as a motor.

Hydrogen Energetics

Review by Alla Pashova

A Russian writer Ludmila Ulitskaya, who is rather far from energy problems, says: "I'm quite sure that cheap electric energy sources have been already worked out and are hidden in oil king's safes. However such projects won't be taken out of the safes until the last oil drop is combusted. They don't want redistribution of money, world, power, and soon". Experts are sure to agree with the writer.

Now only ideas which can coexist together with the traditional oil power engineering and with a system of world oil distribution can escape the safes. Some expensive scientific toys promising future universal welfare are created to reassure ecologists, viz automobiles equipped with hydrogen engine. According to estimation of Japan representatives of motor car industry, installation of the hydrogen engine into such a car as a classical Sedan now comes to about $700 000. Approximate cost of a hydrogen bus named Kitaro achieves the astronomic amount of $1.25 million.

The hydrogen engine consists of several fuel elements, which are known as fuel cells. Hydrogen under pressure of 1.5-2.7 atmospheres comes to an anode. A cavernous catalyst splits the molecules into electrons and protons. The electrons set the electric engine in motion, and the protons come through a membrane acting to a cathode as an electrolyte. Here the catalyst combines them with the working electrons and with atmosphere oxygen into water molecules. It should be noted that the Europeans and the Americans are extremely charmed by this water streamlet which is exhausted instead of poisoning gases. Moreover, output of the fuel cell is 3-5 times more than output of the petrol engine.

The first hydrogen power station inaugurated in Las Vegas, Nevada, in 2002, (see Fig.1, 2) represents a system of the fuel cells with the proton penetrable membrane as an electrolyte (they are designed and produced by experts of Plug Power Inc.). The station produces hydrogen transforming and cleaning natural gas and generates electric power combining hydrogen stored in reservoirs with atmosphere oxygen. The USA Energy Department and Air Products Inc. together paid $ 10.8 million for this project.

It is necessary to note that the priority branch of the hydrogen engineering is providing new means of transport with fuel, and electric power production is just the second aim. The mentioned station produces electric power in addition to its main function. Nevertheless, if fuel market begins to decrease then the electric power payments will provide the "hydrogen magnates" with stable profit.

Fig. 1
Hydrogen power station

Nowadays the hydrogen automobiles allow oil kings keep the system of centralized fuel distribution and the infrastructure of service stations which will provide the means of transport with methanol, natural gas with hydrogen blend, and liquefied or gaseous hydrogen. Thus interested companies control the hydrogen engineering and scientific thought.

Moreover, oil can be applied as it is useful for board reforming (conversion), i.e. it can be used as a hydrogen source. The systems based on conversion have been known for a long time but there was need to work at them.

Russian experts improved the conversion system by replacement of the catalyst by plasma. Thus the conversion occurs in gas discharge of HVF appearing in the blend which needs to be converted. According to experts' opinion the Russian system is portable and has high output. In 2001 a group of experts of Russian Centre of Automobile Engine represented experimental prototype basing on Chevrolet Pickup S 10.

The ideal of modern hydrogen engineering is the following: "There should be minimal changes in the system of fuel distribution, non-polluted air, and thin streamlet of distil exhausted". However, evidently, the exhausted water is an ideal source for hydrogen fuel reproduction by means of high effective electrolyzing. If the closed system is worked out we would obtain an energy source powered by continuous chain of electrolyzing and recombination whose efficiency would be more than 100 %.

What are the known ways of hydrogen production? The greatest amount of the gas is produced on the base of catalytic conversion of hydrocarbon with water vapor. Temperature of the process depends on the catalyst composition. It is known that temperature of propane reaction can be decreased to 370° using bauxite as a catalyst. Approximately 95% of by-product carbon monoxide is further used in the reaction with water vapor.

A significant part of the total hydrogen production is given by a method of water gas. The essence of the method lies in reaction of water vapor with coke that is followed by the producing of carbon monoxide with hydrogen mix. The reaction is endothermal, it occurs at 1000°C. The heated coke is processed by the vapor; extracted purified mix of gases contains some hydrogen, some carbon dioxide, and great share of carbon monoxide. Further vapor processing of the carbon monoxide at 370°C increases the hydrogen extraction. The amount of carbon dioxide increases as well however it is easy to be removed by passing the gases mix through a scrubber sprayed by a water contraflow.

Fig. 2

There is a well-known iron-vapor method according to which vapor is passed above iron at 500-1000°C. Hydrogen obtained by this method is usually applied to hydrogenise fats and oils. Composition of the iron oxide depends on the process temperature. Iron-3 oxide (Fe_3O_4) prevails at the temperature below 560° C. If the vapor is passed above the iron at the temperature above 560° C then iron-2 oxide (FeO) share increases. A slight admixture of carbon monoxide is removed when the heated mix passes above a catalyst. At this time the carbon monoxide is transformed into methane.

In the processes of oxidation and thermal cracking of hydrocarbons at soot production hydrogen is produced as a by-product.

The next effective method is methanol-vapor one. It is an endothermal reaction which is proceeds in common iron reactors at 260° C temperature and at 20 atmospheres pressure.

There should be also mentioned a catalytic reaction of ammonia decomposition at which nitrogen and hydrogen is produced. The reaction can be profitable if it is necessary to produce great amount of hydrogen. The method is useful if the obtained hydrogen is directly applied.

Electrolysis is the oldest method to produce hydrogen. Direct current comes to electrodes, the cathode collects hydrogen, and the anode accumulates oxygen. The technology makes hydrogen to be too expensive energy carrier. There is often used a technology of hot processing of water vapor at 700-900° C accompanied with light petrol and heavy liquid fuel which bleeds oxygen. This method is quite expensive as well.

As it is known, **wasteful power consumption of classical electrolysis** is caused by the fact that it is used to overcome forces of hydrate bound of ions with water molecules and to compensate endothermal effect of water decomposition. Therefore, ions reduction at corresponding electrodes requires more current intensity than in the case of absence of this physical phenomena. Hence production of 1 cubic meter of hydrogen requires 18-21.6 MJ, and total power consumption exceeds 50 MJ (taking into account the electric power production). Therefore hydrogen becomes too expensive.

In 1888 D.A. Lachinov patented a method of non-contact electrolysis. Improvement of this method promises huge amount of cheap hydrogen and appearance of high effective energy source operating as a closed cycle. The main problem of Lachinov's method is a gas layer covering the electrode in some time and impeding the reaction. It was proposed by I. A. Goryachev to prevent the gas layer using pulsating electric field. A.V. Frolov has proposed to increase electrolysis efficiency by means of rotation. Centrifugal force causes more swift detach of gas blebs from electrodes surfaces. Power consumption to overcome frictional force in the construction and to generate potential electric field is insignificant as compared with output. Hence efficiency of the system may exceed 100%.

There is also described the experimental device for production of hydrogen and oxygen from water where modulated voltage (not dc voltage) is applied to the electrodes. Modulation frequency is in connection with proper oscillation frequency of water molecules as well as with spatial structure. Possible efficiency of water electrolysis in spark discharge which removes oxygen admixture should be investigated . Water electrolysis at the radiation

by electromagnetic waves of light range needs to be investigated as well.

Ikar Research Centre informs that plasma electrolysis can be the most probable source of cheap hydrogen. In 1987 a group of Russian scientists patented the first plasma-electrolytic reactor. Since the reactor had been worked out at a defense establishment then the patent was restricted and not covered by press. The patent contains a structural scheme of the reactor and some results of cleaning and disinfection of water by plasma. The patent does not represent any information of additional energy generated by plasma or hydrogen production.

In April of 1989 American scientists Pons and Fleishman published their experimental results on additional energy production at common water electrolysis. They claimed cold fusion to be source of this energy. However there is no reliable proof for this phenomenon.

In 1996 Yu. Beklyamishev, one of the co-authors of the first plasma-electrolytic reactor, published his experimental results. They demonstrated that there was additional energy in the plasma-electrolytic process. However he did not explain the energy source.

In 1998 there were published new experimental issues of appearance of additional energy in the plasma-electrolytic process. A group of Russian scientists tested one of the plasma-electrolytic reactors and officially fixed the additional energy. A report of the testing session was published in issue #22 of "Infinite Energy" magazine. In May of 1998 the third edition of a book named "Crisis of Theoretical Physics" was published by Prof. F. M. Kanarev. It contains data of additional energy production at plasma electrolysis of water defining the energy source. Soon Ohmori and Mizuno (Japan) published their results in works of Vancouver conference on cold fusion and in issue #20 of "Infinite Energy". Ohmori and Mizuno observed neutron radiation occurring at a plasma process as well as iron, chrome, nickel, and carbon appearance on a wolfram cathode. That seemed to be a strong evidence of cold nuclear fusion at plasma electrolysis of water. Ohmori and Mizuno have explained neutron radiation as a result of electrons captured by protons. Nevertheless their conclusions raise doubts as cold fusion would have produced much more additional energy than it was fixed.

In 1996 there appeared the first publications where hydrogen atoms fusion instead of nuclear fusion was supposed as the additional energy source at usual electrolysis as well as at plasma source. In Russia

first experimental results demonstrating energy consumption decrease for hydrogen production at plasma electrolysis of water were published in 1999 by Prof. F.M. Kanarev. (See F.M. Kanarev's article in this issue of NET).

Fig. 3
Honda FCX-V3 uses hydrogen as a fuel. Hydrogen is fed under high pressure in the engine.

Nevertheless we have to note that high efficiency electrolysis is possible! O. Hvolson in his "Physics" (Berlin, 1923) explains a method of designing of a machine which can produce heat due to positive difference between energy of hydrogen combustion and energy consumed to hydrogen production by means of water electrolysis. In this case we do not consume energy to split the atoms. It occurs due to intermolecular forces at water dissociation by sulphuric acid ions. Energy is consumed only to neutralize charges of existent hydrogen ions and acid residue ions. Hydrogen combustion produces the energy which would have been consumed to split the atoms in the air. **Hence 67.54 Kcal of energy can be produced at 5 Kcal consumed. (F. Lepehin)**

High effective electrolysis application is clear future of energetics. Nowadays Stuart Energy Inc applies water electrolysis as a hydrogen source in a frame of hydrogen-fuel project. Experts of Stuart Energy Inc have designed a refueling unit which produces hydrogen and stores it in a 104-pound reservoir. Thus several auto are provided with fuel and it takes a couple of minutes to refuel.

It is quite simple to predict social and economical consequences of innovation of high effective energy source operating as a closed cycle energy system. Economic activity and private life of people will be independent of cities, of their industry and power engineering. People will move out of the cities and they will use compact and powerful energy sources there. Hence, decentralization of world economics will happen.

Regions of any country become more free from the central authority, the power of which nowadays is based on centralized fuel energetics.

On the Longitudinal Electromagnetic Waves

Alexander V. Frolov

General Director, Faraday Lab Ltd
Phone/fax: 7-812-380-3844
Email: office@faraday.ru

Concerning acoustic waves, we deal with longitudinal oscillations of the medium, since degree of air (medium) compression and rarefication changes along the direction of the wave spreading. Notion of the medium of electromagnetic waves propagation, i.e. notion of "aether", as well as the very possibility of the existence of longitudinal electromagnetic waves is disputable for some scientists. Let's clarify the situation and demonstrate that usual photon is longitudinal wave of energy density, which can be described as Umov-Poynting vector.

The transverse character of electromagnetic waves means that vector of electric field and vector of magnetic field are directed across the wave line. However, these vectors are just our subjective way to describe the process. Notions of electric and magnetic fields can be replaced by the notion of **unified helical field**, since to describe the motion of the point along the helical line there should be concerned the linear transfer (it is detected as electric field) and the process of rotation (it is described with the magnetic field). Thus notions of electrodynamics are just one of the ways to describe reality. Energy density of the given point of space is the real (objective) parameter of the wave. This energy density is described by the known Umov-Poynting vector $\overline{S} = \overline{E} \times \overline{H}$.
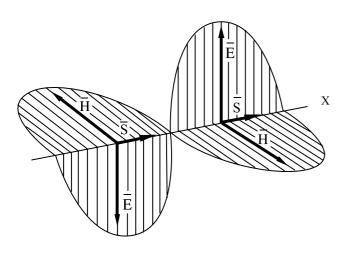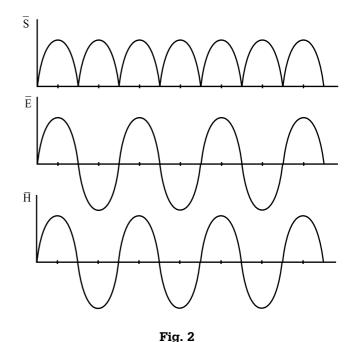
Fig.1

Let us consider electromagnetic wave in classical representation (Fig.1). Then we discover that direction of Umov- Poynting vector coincides with the wave line. The vector is unidirectional and "pulsating", because its quantity changes from zero to some maximal value and then it is reduced to zero, besides it takes place at half of the period of transverse wave. So, it is the explanation of the fact that frequency of longitudinal oscillations is twice as much than frequency of transverse oscillations (Fig. 2). **Previously it was known from the mechanism of energy interchange between longitudinal and transverse plasma oscillations and from the phenomenon of parametrical resonance. However the physical meaning of this phenomenon was not disclosed.**
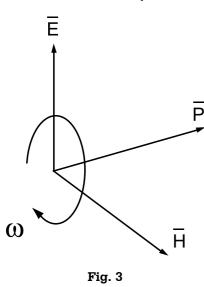
From the presented here conception it follows that from the physical point of view, electromagnetic waves are **longitudinal oscillations of energy density**. In usual case these oscillations are unidirectional pulsations that determines the ability of the photon to be moving unidirectionally. Practically it is possible to create other types of photons, i.e. types of oscillations of energy density with qualitative new physical properties. It can be achieved by setting of definite functions and superposition of $\overline{E}$ and $\overline{H}$ vectors.

For example, in 1996 a conference "New Ideas in Natural Science" was organized by us in Saint-Petersburg, with the participation of 30 foreign guests and more than 100 Russian scientists. The report made by Academician Ignatyev, Krasnoyarsk, aroused great interest. During the experiments with rotating of crossed vectors $\overline{E}$ and $\overline{H}$ (see Fig. 3) there was created Poiting's vector, which corresponds to propulsion force of 60 N (about 6 kg).

Fig. 2

The experiment is demonstrated on the photo (see Fig. 4), where the diameter of the device is equal to 4 meters and ends of the coils are to toroidal capacitors. This experiment was made in Krasnoyarsk.

Fig. 3

Since it is impossible to consider vacuum, where some form of energy can exist, as "emptiness" then we can speak about vacuum as about some medium. Faraday and Maxwell, classics of electromagnetic theory, wrote exactly about deformations, stresses and expansion of aether. From this point of view electromagnetic waves are analogues of the waves of longitudinal deformation of elastic medium. More than 60 years ago Nicola Tesla wrote: "I showed that the universal medium is a gaseous body in which only longitudinal pulses can be propagated, involving alternating compressions and expansions similar to those produced by sound waves in the air. Thus, a wireless transmitter does not emit Hertz waves which are a myth, but sound waves in the ether, behaving in every respect like those in the air, except that, owing to the great elastic force and extremely small density of the medium, their speed is that of light." [1]

Nowadays, the development of engineering and the new views upon the phenomena of electromagnetism, impel us to consider physical **vacuum as material medium of the special type**, which has the well-known properties, in particular electrical and magnetic properties. Moreover, this medium has energy, and energy density can be changed in case of propagation of any photon. Thus, as Tesla stated in his article "The True Wireless": "The Hertz wave theory of wireless transmission may be kept up for a while, but I do not hesitate to say that in a short time it will be recognized as one of the most remarkable and inexplicable aberrations of the scientific mind which has ever been recorded in history".
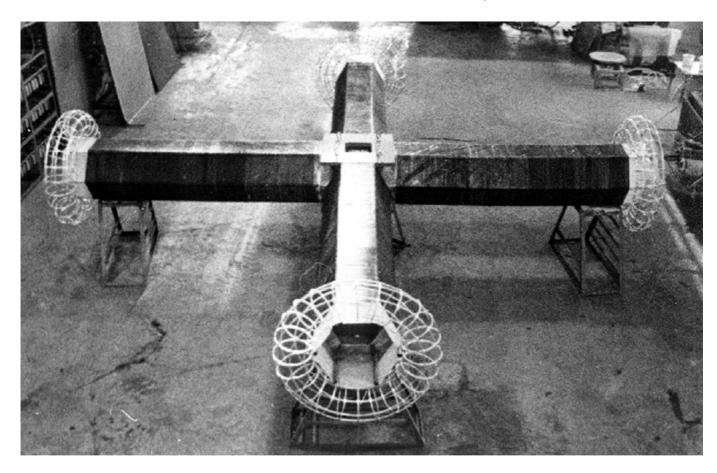
Fig. 4

References

1. "Pioneer Radio Engineer Gives Views on Power", New York Herald Tribune, Sept. 11, 1932.

"OUTSIDE THE BOX" SPACE AND TERRESTRIAL TRANSPORTATION AND ENERGY TECHNOLOGIES FOR THE 21ST CENTURY

Theodore C. Loder

tedloder@aol.com

Institute for the Study of Earth, Oceans and Space
University of New Hampshire
Durham, NH 03824

Abstract

This paper reviews the development of antigravity research in the US and notes how research activity seemed to disappear by the mid 1950s. It then addresses recently reported scientific findings and witness testimonies - that show us that this research and technology is alive and well and very advanced. The revelations of findings in this area will alter dramatically our 20th century view of physics and technology and must be considered in planning for both energy and transportation needs in the 21st century.

Historical Background

Townsend Brown's Technology of Electrogravitics [1]

In the mid 1920's Townsend Brown [2] discovered that electric charge and gravitational mass are coupled. He found that when a capacitor is charged to a high voltage, it has a tendency to move toward the positive pole. His findings, which became known as the Biefeld-Brown effect, were opposed by conventional minded physicists of his time.

The Pearl Harbor Demonstration. Around 1953, Brown conducted a demonstration for military top brass. He flew a pair of 3-foot diameter discs around a 50-foot course tethered to a central pole. Energized with 150,000 volts and emitting ions from their leading edge, they attained speeds of several hundred miles per hour. The subject was thereafter classified.

Project Winterhaven. Brown submitted a proposal to the Pentagon for the development of a Mach 3 disc shaped electrogravitic fighter craft. Drawings of its basic design are shown in one of his patents. They are essentially large-scale versions of his tethered test discs.

Review of Issues from the 1950s

In 1956, a British research company, Aviation Studies (International) Ltd. published a classified report on Electrogravitics Systems examining various aspects of gravity control. They summarized the pioneering work of Townsend Brown and then described the use of electrogravitic thrust as follows:

"The essence of electrogravitics thrust is the use of a very strong positive charge on one side of the vehicle and a negative on the other. The core of the motor is a condenser and the ability of the condenser to hold its charge (the K-number) is the yardstick of performance " [3].

In one of their conclusions, based on Brown's work, they suggested that: "Electrostatic energy sufficient to produce a Mach 3 fighter is possible with megavolt energies " [4].

In spite of Brown's solid research, they later stated that, "One of the difficulties in 1954 and 1955 was to get aviation to take electrogravitics seriously. The name alone was enough to put people off" [5]. It seems that is as true today as it was in the 1950s.

A report by another British company, Gravity Rand, Ltd. in 1956, agrees with this assessment and states: "To assert electrogravitics is nonsense is as unreal as to say it is practically extant. Management should be careful of men in their employ with a closed mind or even partially closed mind on the subject." [6]

However, a trade press magazine, The Aviation Report, made numerous references to antigravity projects and listed many of the companies pursuing research in this area. Quotes from The Aviation Report listed in the Aviation Studies (International) Ltd. Report [7] are suggestive of what was going on behind the scenes.

In 1954 they predicted that: "... progress has been slow. But indications are now that the Pentagon is ready to sponsor a range of devices to help further knowledge."... "Tentative targets now being set anticipate that the first disk should be complete before

1960 and it would take the whole of the 'sixties to develop it properly, even though some combat things might be available ten years from now." (Aviation Report, 12 October 1954) [8].

During this time period many of the major defense and technology companies were cited as either having research projects or activities in this new field. For example: "Companies studying the implications of gravitics are said, in a new statement, to include Glenn Martin, Convair, Sperry-Rand, and Sikorsky, Bell, Lear Inc. and Clark Electronics. Other companies who have previously evinced interest include Lockheed, Douglas and Hiller." (Aviation Report, 9 December 1955) [9].

Others of these reports mention: AT&T, General Electric, as well as Curtiss-Wright, Boeing and North American as having groups studying electrogravitics.

During the same time period, the Gravity Rand report notes that: "Already companies are specializing in evolution of particular components of an electogravitics disk." [10]

However, in the area of predictions, the Aviation Report stated the following based on an extrapolation of technology development: "Thus this century will be divided into two parts – almost to the day. The first half belonged to the Wright Brothers who foresaw nearly all the basic issues in which gravity was the bitter foe. In part of the second half, gravity will be the great provider. Electrical energy, rather irrelevant for propulsion in the first half becomes a kind of catalyst to motion in the second half of the century." (Aviation Report, 7 September 1954) [11].

Looking back it is easy to say that they missed the mark. Did they really miss it by a half a century? Reading through these reports it is quite obvious that there was much interest in antigravity among a number of very high profile companies, as well as in the Department of Defense. What happened to this interest and why was it all downplayed during the following four plus decades? After all, T. Brown had shown that there is a demonstrable connection between high voltage fields and gravity. Why has it taken until the 1990s for more than just a few scientists to look at these results and publish on them in the open literature? A review of recent statements by former military personnel and civilians connected to covert projects begins to shed light on research activity in these areas over the last half century. **And it appears that there had been significant breakthroughs during this time period, well shielded from both the scientific and public eye.**

Recent Scientific Developments

In this section we consider developments in the antigravity field since the late 1980s and why the confluence of scientific findings and the testimony of

witnesses associated with the military and covert groups indicates that a gravity solution with technological implications has been found.

Although general relativity has not been able to explain Brown's electrogravitic observations, or any other antigravity phenomenon, the recent physics methodology of quantum electrodynamics (QED), appears to offer the theoretical framework to explain electrogravitic coupling. Recent papers by members of the Institute for Advanced Study Alpha Foundation are putting a solid theoretical foundation onto the antigravity effects within the theory of electrodynamics and include papers by Evans [12] and Anastasozki et al [13].

Earlier in a 1994 breakthrough paper, Alcubierre showed that superluminal space travel is, in principle, physically possible and will not violate the tenants of the theory of relativity [14]. Puthoff [15] later analyzed these findings in light of the present SETI (Search for Extraterrestrial Intelligence) paradigms that insist that we could not be visited by extraterrestrial civilizations because of the speed-of-light limitations dictated by the general relativity theory. He suggests that super-luminal travel is indeed possible. This leads to reduced-time interstellar travel and the possibility of extraterrestrial visitation, which our limited under-standing of physics and scientific arrogance has "forbidden" in some sectors for most of the 20th century.

The second aspect of these physics findings deals with the zero point or vacuum state energy shown by the Casimir effect [16], which predicts that two metal plates close together attract each other due to imbalance in the quantum fluctuations. The implications of this zero point or vacuum state energy are tremendous and are described in several papers by Puthoff [17] starting during the late 1980s. Bearden [18] and colleagues have also written extensively on the theoretical physics of zero point energy and additionally have described various technological means of extracting this energy (for example see the recent paper by Anastasozki et al [19].). A theoretical book on zero point energy (and antigravity) was published by Bearden in 2002 [20]. There is significant evidence that scientists since Tesla have known about this energy, but that its existence and potential use has been discouraged and indeed suppressed over the past half century or more [21].

The coupling of the electrogravitic phenomena observations and the zero point energy findings are leading to a new understanding of both the nature of matter and of gravity. This is just now being discussed in scientific journals (though some evidence suggests that it has been understood for decades within the black project covert community). The question that is being addressed is: what keeps

the universe running? Or more specifically, where do electrons get their energy to keep spinning around atoms? As electrons change state they absorb or release energy, and where does it come from? The simplistic answer is that it is coming from the vacuum state. Puthoff [22] describes the process as follows: "I discovered that you can consider the electron as continually radiating away its energy as predicted by classical theory, but **simultaneously absorbing a compensating amount** of energy from the ever-present sea of zero-point energy in which the atom is immersed. An equilibrium between these two processes leads to the correct values for the parameters that define the lowest energy, or ground-state orbit (see "Why atoms don't collapse," NEW SCIENTIST, July 1987). Thus there is a DYNAMIC EQUILIBRIUM in which the zero-point energy stabilizes the electron in a set ground-state orbit. It seems that the very stability of matter itself appears to depend on an underlying sea of electromagnetic zero-point energy."

Furthermore, it appears that it is the spinning of electrons that provides inertia and mass to atoms. These theories, linking electron spin, zero point energy, mass, and inertia have been presented in a number of recent papers, such as those by Haisch [23] and colleagues and provide us with a possible explanation of the Biefield-Brown effect. It appears that an intense voltage field creates an electromagnetic barrier that blocks the atomic structure of an atom from interacting with the zero point field. This slows down the electrons, reducing their gyroscopic effect, and thus reducing atomic mass and inertia, making them easier to move around.

Evidence of Extensive Antigravity Technology

The B-2 Advanced Technology Bomber

In 1993, LaViolette wrote a paper [24] discussing the B-2 bomber and speculating on its probable antigravity propulsion system, based on a solid understanding of electrogravitics, [25] the aircraft's design and the materials used in its manufacture. It appears that the craft is using a sophisticated form of the antigravity principles first described by T. Brown. Support for this thesis came from the Aviation Week and Space Technology (March 9, 1992), which reported that the B-2 bomber electrostatically charges its leading edge and its exhaust stream. Their information had come from a small group of former black project research scientists and engineers suggesting the B-2 utilizes antigravity technology. This information was supported by Bob Oechsler, an ex-NASA mission specialist who had publicly made a similar claim in 1990. These findings support the contention that there have been major developments in the area of antigravity propulsion which are presently being applied in advanced aircraft.

LaViolette later states the obvious that "the commercial airline industry could dramatically benefit with this technology which would not only substantially increase the miles per gallon fuel efficiency of jet airliners, but would also permit high-speed flight that would dramatically cut flight time." [26]

The Hunt for Zero Point [27]

This recent book contains some of the strongest evidence yet for major efforts and success in the field of antigravity technology. The author, Nick Cook, who for the past 15 years has been the Aviation Editor and Aerospace Consultant for Jane's Defense Weekly, spent the last 10 years collecting information for the book. This included archival research on Nazi Germany's antigravity technology and interviews with top officials at NASA, the Pentagon and secret defense installations. He shows that America has cracked the gravity code and classified the information at the highest security levels. **Because antigravity and its allied zero point energy technologies potentially offer the world a future of unlimited, non-polluting energy it has been suppressed because of the "huge economic threat".** His findings support those reported by many of the Disclosure Project witnesses cited above.

Antigravity Technology Demonstrations

Although T. Brown reported many of his findings nearly a half century ago, other experimenters have just recently begun to reproduce his work and report on it in the open literature and on the WWWeb. For example, Davenport [28] published the results of his work in 1995 supporting the findings of T. Brown, while Bahder and Fazi [29] in 2002 described their assessment of the forces associated with an asymmetric capacitor. Transdimensional Technologies [30] in the USA and J. Naudin [31] labs in France have posted on the WWWeb: diagrams, web videos, and data on their versions of antigravity "Lifters" based on an extension of Brown's work. It is a sad commentary on this whole area of research to see that public science is requiring us to demonstrate principles that were demonstrated nearly fifty years ago.

There have also been a number of other demonstrations of "antigravity" phenomena by researchers throughout the world. This includes the work of Brazilian physics professor, Fran De Aquino, and such devices as: the Searl Electrogravity Disc, the Podkletnov Gravity Shield and Project Greenglow, the Zinsser Kineto-baric Field Propulsion and the Woodward Field Thrust Experiments on Piezoelectrics. All of these are described in more detail by Greer and Loder. [32]

Implications of This Research

Antigravity and zero point energy research and their applications are finally being addressed by some of the open scientific community. This means there will have to be a rewriting of textbooks in this area so our new generation of students can apply this "new knowledge." Its application will lead to major breakthroughs in transportation technologies both earthside and in outer space. The implications are that we have the potential for human exploration of our solar system and beyond, if we have the will, within our lifetimes. It also means that the majority of 20th century space technology will be obsolete and in fact may already be so.

The zero point or vacuum state energy source is seen as a totally non-polluting energy source, which has the potential to replace all the fossil fuels on this planet. It also will provide the energy needed for long range space flights. This means that fuel cells and solar cells in common use today for space flight energy applications will only be needed until we transition to these new energy technologies.

Based on an analysis of trends in antigravity research over the last half-century and the information provided by numerous witnesses, it appears that there is both good and bad news. The good news is that it appears that we (at least covert projects) have already developed the theories of antigravity, and additionally have developed working spacecraft based on these principles. The bad news is that these technologies have been developed for at least several decades, at the public's expense and that human kind has been deprived of these technologies, while continuing to waste energy using less efficient and pollution enhancing technologies.

Supporting this contention is the following quote from Ben Rich, former head of the Lockheed Skunkworks. Just prior to his death, he stated to a small group after a lecture [33] that: "We already have the means to travel among the stars, but these technologies are locked up in black projects and it would take an act of God to ever get them out to benefit humanity…" He further went on to say that, 'anything you can imagine we already know how to do.' Strong words from a knowledgeable deep insider and words that support what a number of the witnesses stated as well.

As the reality of this knowledge begins to be understood, there will be an outcry among space scientists not on the inside for release of these technologies to allow all of us to explore space. There will be major changes in the way that NASA does its business, though predicting these changes is difficult.

Not only has space exploration in the public sector suffered, but our planet's environment has suffered as well. Thus as this knowledge begins to sink in there will be an outcry among all concerned citizens on this planet for release of these technologies to allow all of us to reduce and ultimately eliminate global warming and environmental pollution that so threatens our way of life. These technologies will not only affect space travel technologies, but will also have a profound effect on transportation and energy production on the earth's surface.

In conclusion, we might consider the observation made by Halton Arp [34]: "We are certainly not at the end of science. Most probably we are just at the beginning!"

References Cited

1.   Quoted from: LaViolette, P. A. 2000. Moving Beyond the First Law and Advanced Field Propulsion Technologies. In T. Loder (ed.), "Outside-the-Box" Technologies, Their Critical Role Concerning Environ-mental Trends, and the Unnecessary Energy Crisis. Report prepared for The U.S. Senate Environment and Public Works Comm. www.senate.gov/~epw/loder.htm.
2.   Brown, T. T. 1929. How I control gravity. Science and Information Magazine, Aug. 1929. Reprinted in Psychic Observer 37 (1): 66-67.
3.   Aviation Studies (International) Ltd. 1956. Electro-gravitics Systems: An examination of electrostatic motion, dynamic counterbary and barycentric control. p. 14. In Valone, T. (ed.), 1994. Electrogravitics Systems: Reports on a new propulsion methodology. Integrity Research Institute, Washington, DC 20005.
4.   Ibid. p. 27.
5.   Ibid. p. 19.
6.   Gravity Rand Ltd. 1956. The Gravitics Situation. p. 54. In Valone, T. (ed.), 1994. Electrogravitics Systems: Reports on a new propulsion methodology. Integrity Research Institute, Washington, DC 20005.
7.   Aviation Studies (International) Ltd. 1956. Electrogravitics Systems: An examination of electrostatic motion, dynamic counterbary and barycentric control. p. 11. In Valone, T. (ed.), 1994. Electrogravitics Systems: Reports on a new propulsion methodology. Integrity Research Institute, Washington, DC 20005.
8.   Ibid. p. 34.
9.   Ibid p. 41.
10. Gravity Rand Ltd. 1956. The Gravitics Situation. p. 47. In Valone, T. (ed.), 1994. Electrogravitics Systems: Reports on a new propulsion methodology. Integrity Research Institute, Washington, DC 20005.
11. Aviation Studies (International) Ltd. 1956. Electrogravitics Systems: An examination of electrostatic motion, dynamic counterbary and barycentric control. p. 32. In Valone, T. (ed.), 1994. Electrogravitics Systems: Reports on a new propulsion methodology. Integrity Research Institute, Washington, DC 20005.
12. Evans, M. W. 2002. The link between the Sachs and O(3) theories of electrodynamics. In Evans, M.W. (ed.), Modern Nonlinear Physics, Pun 2. 2nd ed., Advances in Chemical

Physics 19:469-494.

13. Anastasovski, P.K., T.E. Bearden, C. Ciubotariu, W.T. Coffey, L.B. Crowell, G.J. Evans, M.W. Evans, R. Flower, A. Labounsky, B. Lehnert, M. Mészáros, P.R. Molnár, S. Roy, and J.-P. Vigier. 2001. Anti gravity effects in the Sachs theory of electrodynamics Foundations of Physics Letters. 14(6):601-605

14. Alcubierre, M. 1994. The Warp Drive: Hyper-fast travel within general relativity. Classical and Quantum Gravity, 11, L73.

15. Puthoff, H. E. 1996. SETI, The Velocity-of-Light Limitation, and the Alcubierre Warp Drive: An Integrating Overview, Physics Essays 9:156.

16. Lamoreaux, S.K. 1997. Demonstration of the Casmir force in the 0.6 to 6 μm range. Physics Review Letters. 78:5.

17. Puthoff, H. 1989. Gravity as a Zero-Point Fluctuation Force." Phys. Rev A., 39(5):2333-2342. Puthoff, H. 1989. Source of Electromagnetic Zero-Point Energy." Phys. Rev A, 40(9):4597-4862.

18. See the Tom Bearden web site for an extensive listing and copies of his papers at: www.cheniere.org.

19. Anastasovski, P.K., T.E. Bearden, C. Ciubotariu, W.T. Coffey, L.B. Crowell, G.J. Evans, M.W. Evans, R. Flower, A. Labounsky, B. Lehnert, M. Mészáros, P.R. Molnár, J.K. Moscicki, S. Roy, and J.P. Vigier. 2001. Explanation of the motionless electromagnetic generator with 0(3) Electrodynamics. Foundations of Physics Letters, 14(1):87-93.

20. Bearden, T. 2002. Energy from the Vacuum: Concepts and Principles. Cheniere Press, Santa Barbara, CA.

21. Valone, T. 2000. The Right Time to Develop Future Energy Technologies. in T. Loder (ed.). "Outside-the-Box" Technologies, Their Critical Role Concerning Environmental Trends, and the Unnecessary Energy Crisis. Report prepared for The U.S. Senate Environment and Public Works Comm. www.senate.gov/~epw/loder.htm.

22. Puthoff, H. 1990. Everything for Nothing. New Scientist, 28 July 1990, pp. 52-55.

23. Haisch, B., Rueda, A. and Puthoff, H. 1994. Beyond E =mc2; A First Glimpse of a Postmodern Physics, in which Mass, Inertia and Gravity Arise from Underlying Electromagnetic Processes. The Sciences, 34:26. Haisch, B., Rueda, A., and Puthoff, H. 1997. Physics of the Zero-Point Field: Implications for Inertia, Gravitation and Mass. Speculations in Science and Technology,

20:9. Haisch, B. and Rueda, A. 1998. An Electromagnetic Basis for Inertia and Gravitation: What Are the Implications for 21st Century Physics and Technology? in El-Genk, M.S. (ed.), Space Technology and Applications International Forum-1998, DOE CNF-980103, CP420, p. 1443. Haisch, B. and Rueda, A. 1999. The Zero-Point Field and the NASA Challenge to Create the Space Drive. Proc. NASA Breakthrough Propulsion Physics Workshop, NASA/CP-1999-208694, p. 55.

24. LaViolette, P. 1993. The U.S. Antigravity Squadron. p. 82-101. In Valone, T. (ed.), 1994. Electrogravitics Systems: Reports on a new propulsion methodology. Integrity Research Institute, Washington, DC 20005.p.82-101.

25. LaViolette, P. A. 1992. Electrogravitics: Back to the future. Electric Spacecraft, Issue 4, pp. 23-28. LaViolette, P. A. 1993. A theory of electrogravitics. Electric Spacecraft, Issue 8, pp. 33-36

26. LaViolette, P. A. 2000. Moving Beyond the First Law and Advanced Field Propulsion Technologies. in T. Loder (ed.). "Outside-the-Box" Technologies, Their Critical Role Concerning Environmental Trends, and the Unnecessary Energy Crisis. Report prepared for The U.S. Senate Environment and Public Works Comm. www.senate.gov/~epw/loder.htm.

27. Cook, N. 2001. The Hunt for Zero Point: Inside the World of Antigravity. Broadway Books, NY. 256pp.

28. Deavenport, L. 1995. "T.T. Brown Experiment replicated. Electric Spacecraft Journal. Issue 16. Oct. 1995. (Reprinted in: Valone, T. (ed.), 1994. Electro-gravitics Systems: Reports on a new propulsion methodology. Integrity Research Institute, Washington, DC 20005)

29. Bahder, T.B. and Fazi, C., "Force on an Asymmetric Capacitor," Army Research Laboratory, v51 ARL-TR.nb. Avail. at: http://xxx.lanl.gov/abs/physics/02110. 2002.

30. Transdimensional Technologies, 906-E Bob Wallace Ave., Huntsville, AL 35801.

31. http://jnaudin.free.fr

32. Greer, S.M. and T.C. Loder III. 2001. Disclosure Project Briefing Document, 492 pp. Available on CD from: The Disclosure Project, P.O. Box 2365, Charlottesville, VA 22902. Also available from: www.disclosureproject.org.

33. Lecture given at UCLA Engineering Department on March 23, 1993

34. Arp, H. 1998. Seeing Red: Redshifts, Cosmology and Academic Science. Montreal, Aperion. (p. 249).

Congress "The Time Machine"

COMMERCIALISING the "SEARL EFFECT" for ENERGY and PROPULSION SYSTEMS

The "Searl Effect", discovered by J.J.R. Searl, is a method of extracting energy. Some current expressions for the source of this energy being The Space Fabric, Quantum Space Field, and Zero Point Energy.

SISRC Ltd has been formed to develop and license Searl Effect Technology (SET) on a global basis.

THE COMPANY

SISRC Ltd is the company formed to administer the implementation of the Searl Effect Technology, (SET) invented by J. R. R. Searl. SISRC Ltd designs, develops and implements Searl Effect Technology as it is initiated in various applications and territories. SISRC Ltd is the administrative hub of the group and will continue to be based in the UK. SISRC Ltd will grant production and marketing licenses for Searl Effect Technology applications to different companies in specific territories. Currently proposed related companies include:

* SISRC -Germany, SISRC -Iberia, SISRC - Sweden, SISRC - Australia, SISRC New Zealand.
* SISRC -AV (Audio Visual) provides computer graphics presentations of the SET.

BACKGROUND

The Searl Effect Generator (SEG) technology, as applied to the commercial market, had been previously developed to the point where a few prototype SEG generators were made, and used for electricity generation and motion. Commercial interest at that time focused on the SEG's transport potential and, under commercial pressure to deliver a fully functioning system, the original generators were used and lost in a series of vehicular propulsion experiments and demonstrations. Funding was insufficient to continue with the manufacture of the required larger-scale pressurized cabin machines - resulting in the termination of the project at that time.

Although all the operating principles, precise proportions and weights of the required materials are known for three of the four required operating materials, the precise data of the original magnetic layer is uncertain. The objective of the current R&D programme is to re-establish the original magnetic layer using modern and more efficient materials.

Originally, the layered materials were constructed and magnetized by the now-defunct Midlands Electricity Board under the direction of John Searl (see colored photo of the experimental craft construction on the cover page).

Modern magnetic materials have advanced considerably, and old ones discontinued, so a series of tests need to be conducted to establish the optimum materials and processes. These tests need to comply with the working criteria required and must lead to a cost-effective manufacturing process.

Fig.1
Experimental ring and rollers

In recent times SISRC has been re-establishing the original research. Due to the very limited funding that has been available, only a partially functioning demonstration prototype of the SEG principles has been possible. This prototype consists of the innermost of the three composite rings required and several rollers.

We would like to hear from anyone who worked on or was involved with Searl Technology prior to 1983. Also anyone who has any old technical data, photographs or films relating to the technology. Such information could greatly assist this technology to reach the marketplace for the benefit of all and would be dealt with in the strictest of confidence.

TECHNICAL DESCRIPTION

Physically the Searl Effect Generator (SEG) consists of three concentric rings each made of a composite of four different materials which are also concentrically attached to each other. The three rings are fixed to a base. Surrounding each of the rings, and free to rotate around them, are rollers - typically 10 on the first ring, 25 on the next and 35 on the outer ring. Surrounding the rollers on the outer ring are coils which are connected in various configurations to supply either AC or DC current at a variety of voltages.

Multiple magnetic poles are imprinted on the rings and rollers to form frictionless magnetic bearings. These also arrange the static charge into opposing charge clusters which cause the rollers to rotate around the circumference of the ring (as shown in Fig. 2).

Some expressions currently in use to describe the source of the energy for the SEG are The Space Fabric, Quantum Energy field of Space or Zero Point Energy. This is an unlimited and constant source of energy which can be made to flow when the correctly proportioned masses concerned are stimulated by the correct frequencies creating an 'open system'.

The idea of utilising this source of energy is currently the subject of various devices and experiments such as the 'Lamb shift', 'Casimir Effect' and the work of the Russian Nobel Prize winner Ilya Prigogine. However these devices and experiments tend to only prove the existence of the energy and not a method to create a coherent, ordered flow to produce useful power.

Fig. 2
15 KWt Searl Effect Generator (SEG)

In contrast, John Searl has discovered that, in order to create a steady and stable flow, all the masses of the device (and the stimulating frequencies) must conform to precise values determined mathematically by the 'Law of the Squares'. A machine constructed to these principles produces a stable and useful power output.

DEFINITION OF A SURFACE OPERATING S.E.G. (J. Searl) 15.09.00

A Linear motor operating on a magnetic bearing with the characteristics of an auto-transformer. The S.E.G. is defined as a device, which is constructed from 2,124 component parts, which make up 3 plates and 66 roller sets (see figures on the cover page). 12 of the 2,124 components create the 3 plates, which act

as reaction components. 2,112 components are employed to create 66 roller sets, which act as active components. Each roller set consists of 8 segments constructed from 32 components. Each segment cannot be less than 34 grams in weight, as the law of the squares defines that value as the lowest value suitable for the reasonable generation of electricity. Therefore the smallest roller set must weigh 272 grams, making a grand total of 2,244 grams per roller set for the smallest surface bound SEG.

Tolerance should be about 0.05 gram per roller set. The larger the error the greater is the loss of power within the unit. Therefore the total tolerance for the smallest SEG roller set must not be greater than 3.30 grams - above this factor the SEG will not function. **For the best results, the tolerance across the total 66 roller sets should not exceed 0.05 grams!**
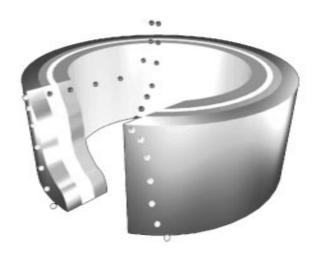
Fig.3

The S.E.G. is a step up rotary transformer. In fact it's a 'three rotary transformers' operational system, within a unit. The inner transformer output is fed in to the input of the second plate which increases the output of the second unit, which output feeds as an input to the final unit, thereby increasing its finaloutput to a very high voltage. Therefore the S.E.G. is just a prime mover for the production of clean electrical energy. The output windings must be designed to step down this output to 240 volts at 15KWt's.

During 1968 it being upon this issue, as development progress both here and in the USA, new findings are being created, and updates will be added to this page, as they are certified. When the SEG rollers are brought into close proximity to the SEG Ring, the Searl Effect resonant magnetic field causes negative ions and electrons to be drawn into and accelerated through the machine. This process is assisted by the highly electron-attracting rare earth metal Neodymium.

The unique mechanical and material arrangement of the SEG pulses the neodymium to continually release and replace the surplus electrons to provide electrical or mechanical power, or both.
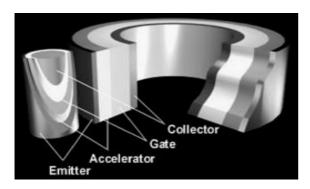
Fig.4
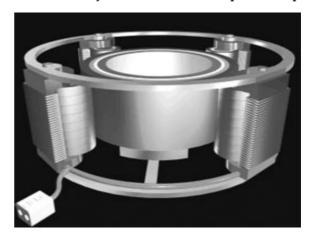
DEVELOPMENT

Prior to the production of complete 15KWt Searl Effect Generators (SEGs), a minimum of two demonstration Ring & Roller prototypes are to be produced.

The "Ring" is typical of the innermost of the three rings required to make a complete SEG. The 69-roller sets in a complete three ring SEG are identical. Six roller sets will be made for the prototype inner rings so that the Searl Effect can be demonstrated.

The production of a self-running Ring & Roller prototype will establish the precise sequence and parameters of electrical, magnetising and material processes required

for the SEG and will demonstrate electrical power generation. An operating single inner ring with 1-8 rollers will also determine if a particular material will function correctly and at what level of power output.

Fig. 5
Demonstration ring and rollers

The five phases of the development programme that commenced in October 1999 have been completed and the rollers successfully magnetised with 'Searl Effect' magnetic fields. A sixth phase is now required to apply the technology developed in Phase five to the "Ring". This sixth Phase resulting in a demonstration Ring & Roller prototype has duration of 6 months.

NEWS REVIEW

Scientific Breakthrough Liberates Energy Users from Fossil Fuel Dependence

Information from
http://www.genesisworldenergy.org/genesis_world_energy.htm

Story originally published by Diana Echeverria, USA

Director of Public Relations
Guy Rome & Associates, Inc.
208-345-4143 208-602-0325 (cell)

Technology breakthrough harnesses energy from the molecular structure of water

BOISE, ID - Dec. 5, 2002 - Genesis World Energy, a privately funded consortium created by a group of military and space program research and development specialists, today unveiled a scientific breakthrough that allows consumers to easily access the energy contained within the hydrogen and oxygen molecular structure of ordinary water. This scientific breakthrough provides a limitless, low cost and environmentally clean source of energy that can be implemented with minimal cost and effort. The viability of using water as an energy source, previously a theoretical concept, is now a reality. "Water has always been the source of life on

this planet, now it will also transform the way we create energy" said Charles Shaw, corporate counsel and spokesperson for Genesis World Energy. "The implications for worldwide energy generation and consumption are nothing less than staggering."

The Edison Device

The first application of this technology is represented in the "Edison Device", a self-contained, self-sustaining energy generation unit. Roughly the size of an outdoor air conditioning system, the power source can be quickly and easily installed in any home or business to provide virtually unlimited energy from any available water source. The Edison Device utilizes the existing electrical wiring and natural gas plumbing in a home or business to replace the energy provided by utility companies. The home version of the Edison Device produces approximately 30 kWtt of combined gas and electrical energy per day. By comparison, the typical home uses between five to six kilowatts per day. The commercial model is capable of producing 100 kilowatts of energy per day. The energy generation portion of the devices has no moving parts. In fact, the only "mechanical" aspects of the equipment are small circulation pumps and micro-valves, making the Edison Device both silent and virtually maintenance-free. A minimum amount of water is used over an estimated 20+ years of service life.

Interesting Publications of the Last Year

Discovery by a Group of Scientists Headed by Valerian Sobolev

Some time ago mass media announced that a sensational discovery was made by a group of Russian scientists headed by Valerian Sobolev. This discovery aroused ambiguous attitude of physic community. We have written about this fundamental and, to a certain extent, revolution discovery. Let us revise the fact that Sobolev claimed 7 scientific discoveries which were made, i.e. the process of depletion (a special electrochemical process), magnetic discharge, a new energy source, a method of low temperature plasma generation and superconductor. A laboratory system of the experimentally disclosed process as well as its industrial prototype is easy to be realized in practice for creation of new energy sources and wide-ranging production of ultrastrong materials. In many cases these materials can replace existing constructional materials.

The materials produced as a result of the process are multielement chemical compounds which are new states of matter. This new state of matter has **a time-changing magnetic field that can be EMF source in a coil of a generator.** Ordered structures of matters which are in the new modified state are nothing but a magnet charge. Materials containing the magnet charge and representing a continuous matters are **new energy sources.** Due to the new state matters become able to produce electric power as well as to generate low temperature plasma. It is easy to be realized in the process of common technological procedures. That promises designing of propulsors for "unsupported" transportation systems in near future.

Basing on realization of the disclosed process and using new materials the group of Russian Scientists headed by Sobolev together with American businessmen has created superfine and flexible glass for packing. The glass was called as "strong glass". It seems to demonstrate higher pressure stability than steel. A method of production of these materials was patented in 1999. In the patent the scientists of Valerian Sobolev's group are represented as authors of this new method, and the owner of the patent is Dynelec Corp (Columbus, Ohio, USA). You can read about the patent at the Web-site of http://patft.uspto.gov/netahtml/srchnum.htm (patent #5,964,913, October 12, 1999).

Sobolev's group has appeal to the Russian government for sponsorship; however only foreign investors have provided funds for new energy sources developing. According to Russian Information Agency "News", Sobolev's group has signed a $168 million contract with one of Canadian companies for developing industrial production of energy sources. Manufacturing of such energy sources **can change energy supply system all over the world**. According to the contract the Canadian company is going to finance building of at least two plants. One of the plants is going to be built in Russia, and the other one is planning to be established in Canada. Each plant is supposed to produce 70 thousand of the self-running energy sources a year. Power output of the sources will come to 3-10 kWt. In other words, in the nearest future every person will be able to buy such an energy source and to apply it in household.

Single-Wire Electric Power System
(see photo on the cover page)
Experimental Results of Russian Scientists

Scientists of the All-Russia scientific research institute of electrification of agriculture (VIESH) academician D.S. Strebkov, engineer S.V. Avramenko, dr., A.I. Nekrasov, post-graduate student O.A. Roshchin developed a new method and the equipment for transmission of electric energy on a single-wire line using resonant idle operation mode and reactive capacitive currents for transmission of active electric power. Tesla transformers and frequency converter were used at the experiments.

First there was created the experimental sample of single-wire electric power system (SWEPS) with **10 kW** electric capacity and 3000 V voltage. As a result, obtained SWEPS electric parameters a hundred times exceeded parameters of a usual two-wire or three-wire alternative and direct current line.

In the end of 2002 there was made an attempt to increase transmitted capacity by using of more powerful condensers, which were installed in resonant circuit. There was developed the electric technique of

20kW single-wire electric power system (SWEPS) with two Tesla transformers. As a result parameters of a low-voltage winding of the step-down transformer were changed. They **exceeded parameters of a usual two-phase or three-phase ac line or dc line in two hundred times.** At room temperature effective specific transmitted electric power was 4 MW/mm^2 and specific current density was 600 A/mm^2. These parameters could be achieved for existing methods of electric energy only at use of special materials in a mode of low temperature superconductivity. The measurements which were made at wire with diameter of 1mm, 100 microns and 80 microns, demonstrated that parameters did not depend on diameter of a wire. There was also experimentally confirmed the property of a single-wire line to transfer active power without essential losses on line resistance. Irradiation losses at low frequency 3,4 kHz were small. In single-wire power system the 80 microns wire plays a role of directing system for an electromagnetic energy flow, which runs from the generator to the load.

We present update information on the experiments with Lifters or asymmetrical capacitors, which use High Voltage to produce a thrust. **By Jean-Louis Naudin it was demonstrated with "Maximus" experiment, that a Lifter can be scaled up and also that such a device is able to lift up to 60 g of payload (total weight: 194 g). According to Naudin, it is now possible to build a craft which will use the Biefeld-Brown effect to fly silently and without moving parts only powered by electrical energy.** *It was also declared that on January 8th, 2003, there was successfully done two historical flights with a mouse as a test pilot of the Lifter "Maximus"* **(propellantless electrokinetic craft)**. *Below there is an analysis of electrogravitation experiments made by Jean-Louis Naudin and Tim Ventura. (See color photos on the cover page).*

Review of Electrogravitation Experiments made by Jean-Louis Naudin and Tim Ventura

Tim Ventura

Tim Ventura Website: http://www.americanantigravity.com
Email: TVentura@seattle.telecomsys.com, tventura6@atbi.com

There is a spreadsheet containing a jpeg-snapshot of data that I have assembled based upon Jean-Louis Naudin's published results (JLN Labs Website: http://jnaudin.free.fr. and http://www.jlnlabs.org). In the graphs that I've created, it seems to indicate that current plays more of a role in propulsion than voltage does — i.e.: for a given amount of power in watts, raising the current and decreasing the voltage seems to create a higher level of thrust.

In light of this, I have been increasing the thrust of my own Lifters by creating an electrical-bypass of the "load-resistor" on my power-supply's high-voltage output. This has an interesting result:

I use a current-driven power-supply, which means that if no load is connected to it the voltage will build up on the high-voltage output until arcing occurs. In my case the voltage will build up to around 65kV, at which point the power-supply will automatically shut down. Conversely, if a very light load (such as a short circuit) occurs, the opposite effect happens and the power-supply will deliver much higher current at a much lower voltage until the supply is overdrawn and once again shuts down.

Normally the output load-resistor constrains the current, and in doing so it maintains the voltage on the high-voltage output at the nominal 50kV output level. However, bypassing the output load-resistor allows the power-supply to deliver voltage and current that are based almost entirely on the type of load connected to it.

When I connect a normal Lifter to the bypassed power-supply, the voltage will build across the air-gap until ions begin to flow in a conduction-current across the air-gap. Although this begins to happen at approximately 15kV, it seems to have some type of "peak efficiency' at approximately 22.5 kV. The amount of current climbs to approximately 11mA at this voltage.

This method of experimental setup seems to allow the Lifter to "find its own sweet-spot" for operation, instead of using the output-resistor to "force" a specific voltage on it for operation. This appears to maximize the thrust output during operation.

Lifter Efficiency Spreadsheet

Description	Lift capacity (grams)	Length (cm)	Efficiency (g/m)	Lifter Weight (grams)	Voltage (kilovolts)	Corona Air-Gap (centimeters)	Current (mA)	Power (watts)
Lifter 1	3.3	60	5.5	2.3	41.9	3	0.57	23.9
Lifter 2	9.6	180	5.3	6.6	43.35	3	1.12	48.5
Lifter 3	20	360	5.6	16	27.5	3	2.53	69.5
Lifter 4	36	720	5	32	44	3	2.01	132.9
3-Stage Lifter 3	54	1080	5	24	30	4.5	8.06	240
Coliseum Lifter	90	2160	4.16	50	31.769	4.5	8.06	254.15

New Electric Fire Technology

Valery D. Dudyshev

Doctor of Technical Science, Professor,
Corresponding Member of Russian Ecological Academy
ecolog@samaramail.ru
http://www.intrasoft.ru/nizot

Abstract

The article proves importance and prospects of development of combustion technologies. In particular there is considered application of a new electric fire technology for environmentally appropriate combustion of any matters and gases. The technology uses electric fields as combustion catalyst. There is observed application of technology in heat-and-power engineering, transport heat engines, disposal units etc. [1, 2]. It is demonstrated that the new technology allows intensify combustion processes and increase their controllability (i.e. the control of temperature, gases pressure, gradient of heat conductivity, and so on). There is made a conclusion about availability of the technology to solve critical energetic and ecological problems of the civilization.

We hope that this article will excite interest of a wide circle of readers, i.e. of professionals in the area of combustion and heat technologies, physicists, ecologists, and those people who are interested in new scientific ideas.

Global Ecological Problems are the Problems of Ineffective Combustion of Hydrocarbon Fuel

The ecological problems become more and more serious and threaten to grow into world ecological catastrophe. The main cause of the atmosphere pollution in megapolises is imperfection of combustion technologies (of heat-and-power engineering, heat machines, transport engines, waste combustion…). It has been proved that their share of pollution of the planet atmosphere comes to 70-80%. The combustion technologies mean any technologies of combustion of fuel, matters and gases. The combustion technologies are the most popular technologies in the world. The modern civilization without the combustion technologies is impossible. There are many industries, which apply these technologies, such as heat-and-power engineering, transport, metallurgy, food industry, oil-and-gas refining industry, chemical industry, waste combustion neutralization.

Therefore the global ecological problems will not be solved until the mankind develops the combustion technologies. The article describes and discloses the essence of the new technology of ecologically appropriate and effective combustion of fuel and wastes of any type.

Why is it difficult for ecologists to conserve nature?

Modern methods and technology used for solving of the ecological problems consist in **analysis** of extent and sources of the environment pollution (ecological monitoring), and, moreover, in **refinement of atmosphere, water and soil, which are used in different technologies or have been polluted due to the imperfection of the technologies** (it is refinement from such toxic components as drinking and run-off water, exhaust and waste gases etc.).

Unfortunately, methods of measuring of the huge spectrum of toxic matters, which are thrown into the atmosphere at matters combustion, as well as the methods of their utilization are impartially difficult, expensive and imperfect. Even using of an ideal technics for measuring of the atmosphere pollution is not effective since it is a struggle with **consequences** of the combustion and other technologies imperfection but not with **causes** of the atmosphere pollution.

Ecological and energetic effectiveness of the known combustion technologies

It is known that real effectiveness of transformation of chemical energy of fuel in the combustion process is low. For example, in heat engines it comes to 25%, effectiveness of transformation of heat energy into electric energy in thermoelectric power stations does not exceed 40%. If energy consumptions of mining, processing and delivery of the fuel to consumers are taken into account then the summary efficiency of the existent combustion technologies (of heat machines and devices) comes to no more than 10 – 15%! It means that more than the half of chemical energy of the fuel is transformed into heat and different toxic matters and waste gases, which pollute the planet atmosphere. They cause acid precipitation, a global "greenhouse" effect, which threaten to cause the climate warming, the world flood, and final poisoning of the living nature. Thus the share of imperfect power engineering in the nature pollution comes to 70 – 80%! How is it possible to cleanse the planet atmosphere, especially the environment of world megapolises, in the situation when the amount of toxic matters produced by transport and industries is comparable with the amount of rest pure air?

Until the mankind learns burn matters and gases by effective and ecologically appropriate way the planet atmosphere will remain polluted and in near future it can become uninhabitable. Thus we will not solve the ecological problems until we gain the understanding of the combustion processes and processes of combustion transformation of matter chemical energy into heat energy, and then into other useful types of energy (i.e. electric energy, mechanical energy, light energy).

Physical Essence and Problem of Classical Combustion of Matters

Combustion is one of the most difficult phenomena, which are known by the humankind. From the scientific point this phenomenon is a chain reaction of sequential fragmentation of fuel particles into smaller charged radicals; it is physical chemical processes of transformation of chemical energy of intermolecular connections as well as combustion also includes physical processes of transformation of energy into heat and light on molecular and atomic levels. Many other processes, which proceed simultaneously, are involved.

From school years we know that combustion is a process of interaction of fuel with an oxidant that is accompanied by heat and light energy generation. In higher school the words of "as well as by cryptic energy of chemical connection of waste gases" are added to the school definition. The combustion processes are studied and improved by scientists and experts of different areas (chemists, physicists, heat-and-power engineering specialists, thermalphysicists etc.). There are known fundamental investigations of combustion chain reactions made by such Russian scientists as N.N. Semenov, Ya.B. Zeldovich and their followers.

Until now intensiveness of fuel combustion is increased by air blowing into the combustion zone that increases the amount of waste toxic gases thrown into the atmosphere. **Let us arouse several questions, which seem naive at first sight. Why is an oxidant (air or oxygen) needed for matter combustion? Is it possible to do it without any oxidant?** How does the combustion process begin and proceed? There are a lot of vague questions in physics of combustion. For example, how can the temperature and the intensiveness of the combustion be regulated? Can the heat conductivity of the flame be controlled? How can heat motion of particles be regulated in the flame and in the waste gases, and what can it cause? There is another problem of combustion. It is the very hydrocarbon fuels, which are applied at modern heat processes. The great Russian scientist, D.I. Mendeleev stated that to use oil is the same thing as to stoke a stove with banknotes.

Since the hydrocarbon fuels are complicated chemical matters and the combustion processes are imperfect then in the process of their combustion a great amount of different by-product matters and toxic gases are produced. They waste unused self-energy of fuel into the atmosphere and pollute our planet.
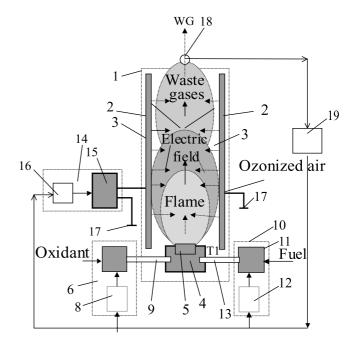
Physical essence of the new electric combustion technology

How is it possible to burn the hydrocarbon fuel by environmentally appropriate way? How can this environmentally appropriate technology be realized in

practice? A brief answer is following: **it is necessary to make such conditions of combustion of organic fuel, and to introduce such a combustion catalyst that the energy of intermolecular and intramolecular connections of the organic fuel becomes absolutely free. At that the chemical energy can be transformed into energy of electromagnetic radiation, for example, into light energy and heat energy without generation of by-product polluting matters and gases. Then a working body (for example, water) is effectively heated by this directed concentrated electromagnetic radiation. In this process effects of electromagnetic waves reflection and concentration are used, or the electromagnetic radiation is directly transformed into electric energy.** In this case there is a new opportunity to regulate flame temperature and to extremely decrease quantity of the oxidant, i.e. to create organics combustion with minimal quantity of waste gases.

Is it principally possible to burn organic matters and gases without the atmosphere pollution using electric field as a catalyst? It is possible if parameters of this field are correctly chosen. More precisely it is possible if huge Coulomb forces of the electric field are correctly regulated by interaction of electrically charged particles of the fuel and the oxidant with force lines of the electric field.

One variant of an experimental device is represented in Fig. 1.

Devices for approbation of the new electric combustion technology

Fig.1 a
Plan of the experimental device
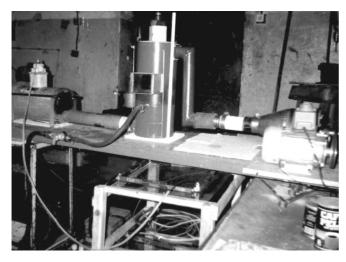
Fig. 1 b
Photo of the experimental system

A structure chart of the experimental device, which was designed to investigate the new electric combustion technology, is demonstrated in Fig.1a. The device contains a body (1) equipped with flat electrodes, which are insulated from the body (2), (they can be placed in either horizontal flat or vertical flat). The electrodes (2) are located on opposite inner walls of a combustion chamber (3). The device is equipped with a mixer (4) with a device for supplying of blended fuel to the zone of combustion. At the same time the device (5) is used for electrical combustion of the blend. The described device is equipped with an air track (6), which contains an oxidant activator (7) joined with a regulator (8) by a control circuit and with the mixer (4) by an air pipe (9). The regulator (8) serves for regulation of the oxidant activation extent. At the end of the air pipe it is possible to place a vortex device (it is not shown in the figure). Also the device is equipped with a fuel track (10) containing a fuel activator (11) and a regulator (12) of the activator and consumption of fuel. The block (11) is joined with the mixer (4) by a fuel pipe. The device is equipped with an electric combustion activator (14) containing a high-voltage transformer (15) of intensity and frequency joined to its regulator (16) by a control circuit. An electric outlet of the block (15) is joined to one of the electrodes (2), and the second outlet is safely electrically grounded by a grounding mat (17). The high-voltage wire of the outlet of the block (15) is connected with the electrode (2) through a bushing insulator (it is not demonstrated in Fig.1a). The device is equipped with a gas toxicity calculator (18) joined to the inlet of a mode optimizer (19), which is a control system for interacted regulating of all the parameters of combustion. For that the outlet of the mode optimizer (19) is joined to the inlets of control of the regulators (8), (12), (16).

The device operates in the following way. At first an activated oxidant of O1 is applied through the air track (6), activator (7) and air pipe (9) to the mixer (4). Then an activated fuel of F1 is applied through the fuel track (10)

and the activator (11) to the same mixer (4). A blended fuel is prepared in the mixer (4) and then is atomized and combusted by a sparkle of the block (5). In the combustion chamber (3) flame and waste gases are processed by strong alternating electric field, which is generated by the block (14) in a gap between the electrodes (2). In the process of combustion waste gases toxicity is measured by the special toxicity sensor (18). Depending on current toxicity the parameters of flame combustion are regulated by the mode optimizer (19). More precisely the oxidant consumption and the extent of its activation are changed by the regulator (6), the fuel consumption and the extent of its activation are changed by the regulator (12), the intensity and frequency of the alternating electric field generated by the block (14) in the combustion chamber (3) is changed by the regulator (16). Let us note that the electric field in the combustion chamber (3), viz in the gap between the electrodes (2), catalytically influences on both the flame and the waste gases. The essence of the process lies in the fact that the processes of fragmentation and oxidation of fuel radicals and of toxic oxide molecules are accelerated. Intensiveness of combustion and of toxic gases refinement increases as well as the intensity of this field and its frequency do. As a result of the interconnected regulation of all the listed parameters fuel of any kind can be fully, intensively, "cleanly" combusted.

In Fig.1b there is a photo of the operating experimental device designed to investigate the processes of influence of electric field on the process of matters combustion and of cleaning of waste gases. The photo represents following things.

1. In the left side there is a furnace with a high-voltage electrode in a higher part of its body.
2. In the centre there is a vertical column of the electric combustion cleaning (after-burning) of toxic gases in the electric field; on the top of the column a high-voltage electrode can be seen. Gas pipes designed for toxic gases supply–withdrawal are connected with the column and located to the right and to the left from it.
3. A regulable blower is represented in the upper right side of the picture. It is designed for toxic gases withdrawal and connected with the gas pipe by the column.
4. At the foot of the picture there is a regulable high-voltage tension source (the electric field source), which is connected with the furnace and the column of toxic gases cleaning by high-voltage wires.

It is experimentally proved that combination of two stages of the combustion activation (i.e. in the furnace and the column) ensures ideal cleaning of toxic gases at combustion of any toxic matters.

Some Results of Experiments

Our experiments and investigations of many-sided influence of electric and high-voltage electromagnetic fields on the combustion process have proved that such practically ideal condition of fuel and matters combustion is possible to be realized in practice [1].

Low-powered static and alternating electric fields (i.e. the fields of constant sign and of variable sign) of more than 1kV/cm intensity were used as combustion catalysts as well as high-frequency electromagnetic fields of low power with some frequency of oscillations of molecules in the flame (flame power is 0.1 – 1% of heat power of the flame of the combusted organic fuel).

Peculiarities of Oxidants Application in the New Technology

It is known from the thermodynamics and combustion theory that optimal ratio of the oxidant mass, for example air, and the fuel is approximately 1:16 in an average combustion process. In our experiments with the electro-field catalyst the ecologically appropriate combustion of the hydrocarbon fuel (mazut, straw oil) was achieved at oxidant deficiency (for example, at the ratio of oxidant mass and the fuel of 1:1). For experts it means that there is a real possibility for 10 – 15 times decrease of amount of waste gases of any heat machines and to while their former power is the same. As the experiments demonstrate carbon and hydrocarbon are absolutely removed from the waste gases. In the experiments oxides of hydrogen and nitrogen were 4 – 8 times decreased and flame existence was 5 – 10 times increased.

The issues of the experiments prove the hypothesis about possibility of effective environmentally appropriate combustion as a process of direct transformation of chemical energy of organic fuel into electromagnetic radiation energy of the flame (including heat and optic diapasons). The transformation is accompanied by removal of polluting toxic components from the waste gases that occurs due to many times intensification of the combustion process under action of electromagnetic catalysts.

Operations of regulable activation of fuel oxidants (simultaneous or separate), which are introduced into the combustion technology, ensure additional improving of the combustion process. Especially it occurs at heavy oil fuel combustion and water-fuel emulsion combustion that was experimentally tested by us. The process becomes especially effective if the flame of the combusted activated blended fuel is additionally processed by alternating electric field. Due to introduction of the operation of all the combustion parameters regulation (of consumption of fuel, oxidant, of their activation extent, and of their combustion intensiveness extent), according to the information of the waste gases toxicity, it is possible to achieve effective combustion of fuel and waste products of practically all kinds.

Our experiments demonstrate that combination of the very flame procession with procession of the waste gases and air (i.e. an oxidant) by electric field is very effective for the waste gases cleaning. The essence of this additional cleaning of the waste gases lies in fragmentation of carbon particles and exhaust opacity by electric forces of an alternating field as well as in after-oxidation of some toxic oxides in the medium of an ozonized oxidant. Energy consumption for activation of the flame combustion by strong electric fields is small and does not exceed 1–3% of heat energy of the flame. Advantage of this invention is universality of the application for combustion of any inflammables. It is possible due to widening of the diapason of the electric field parameters regulation (of intensity and frequency), especially in the mode of their interconnected regulation.

The essence of catalytic action of the alternating electric field on the flame combustion process consists in effective breaking of dipole radicals of fuel by an activated (dipole) oxidant. Moreover, the essence lies in better mixing of layers of combusting flame with the oxidant that occurs due to removal of a doubled electric layer from the limit line of the flame. Thus this technical solution allows achieve new positive effects due to its significant peculiarities, i.e. extending of application area of the known electric combustion method over the combustion process of any inflammables as well as it allows significantly increase controllability of the flame combustion process.

Let us note that in the experiments on the combustion of organic fuel in strong electric fields the regulation of the flame temperature and of its existence was achieved at unchanged consumption of fuel and of oxidant. That was achieved by changing of the parameters of the combustion electric-field catalyst (intensity and frequency) of a longitudinal electric (electromagnetic) field. Rotation and stabilization of the flame was achieved by a rotating transversal electric field. Changing of the flame height was realized by the longitudinal electric field.

The investigation, which has been performed by us, proves that directly acting on the flame the very electric field which directly influences on the flame and emission of electrons flow (ideal type of oxidation) into the flame can most effectively intensify the combustion process and make it harmless for the humankind and for the environment!

It has already been experimentally proved that energy consumption required for generation and regulation of this electric field and of the electrons flow for intensification and environmental

appropriateness of the combustion is quite small relatively the combustion energy and comes to fractions of a percent of the flame energy. Thus our experiments prove that the best **"oxidants" and combustion catalysts are** not superfluous air but **the electron and the electric field!**

Regulation of Heat Conductance of the Flame and the Heat Flow

As our experiments have demonstrated, the electric field can act as an effective combustion catalyst as well as a regulator of its intensiveness; moreover, it can control even a vector of heat conductance. It is proved by the experiments that the parameters of this field can be regulated as well as temperature of the flame and gradient of the flame heat conductance. Interesting experimental results were obtained measuring full heat of combustion of the same quantity of fuel at the usual method of fuel combustion and at the method, which uses combustion electric catalysts, even in the case of oxidant deficiency. In the last case the energy of fuel combustion almost 1.5 times increases that can be explained by fuller transformation of fuel chemical energy into electromagnetic radiation. At the usual combustion methods the chemical energy of the organic fuel was not completely used and remained as a cryptic summary chemical energy of intermolecular connections of many toxic waste gases, which were exhausted into the atmosphere by heat devices. Basing on the performed experiments it may be supposed that, evidently, specific heats of matters are 20-50% higher at this method than at their usual combustion method. The essence of the new electric combustion technologies consists in this new physics of combustion.

The author has already got patents for invention of Russian Federation [3 – 12] for the methods of regulation and intensification of matters combustion processes.

Some peculiarities of atomization, inflammation and combustion of organic fuel in electric fields

We have not discussed all the potential capabilities and advantages of the new electric combustion technology for different areas of technics. Let us demonstrate them in more details.

One of characters of the new electric combustion technology is **effects of oxidant ozonization, of electrostatic atomization and electrostatic injection of electrically charged particles of fuel and the oxidant that is followed by generation of the finest aerofuel opacity on a molecular level in a combustion chamber**. Naturally, such fine atomization of the fuel causes its easier evaporation, inflammation and combustion especially in the medium of the ozonized oxidant. **The mechanism of fuel electrostatic fragmentation is physically explained by Coulomb interaction of repulsion from each other of electrically likely charged fuel drops (particles) that is accompanied by their progressing fragmentation and corresponding decrease of their mass and electric charge**. As the experiments have shown the extent of the fuel drops (particles) fragmentation depends on initial electric potential of fuel charging and initial size of injected fuel drops (particles), which for their part depend on configuration and size of a fuel-injection nozzle as well as on pressure occurring in a fuel line of the heat machine.

Generated by dipolar high-voltage potentials catalyzing electric field can be introduced into the atomization zone or (and) the combustion zone of the combustion chamber of an engine. Its Coulomb forces accelerate motion of electrically charged particles of fuel and oxidant to an opposite electric potential, which is connected with, for example, a piston of an engine. Thus electric field acts as an electrostatic pump that allows decrease pressure in a fuel line as well as allows practically ideally atomize the fuel and mix it with the oxidant. Moreover, it lets simplify and improve the systems of injection and inflammation of the blended fuel in heat machines and devices, for example, in internal combustion engines or in boiler plants. Their application can cause additional improving of energetic and ecological characters of the combustion technologies. According to our information, such high-performance fuel-injection nozzles have yet been unknown in technics therefore they have not been applied in heat machines (injector internal combustion engine).

Is it possible to combust water? Water as a fuel!

More amazing experimental results were obtained at 40-80% dilution (emulsification) of liquid organic **fuel**, for example diesel oil, with **habitual water**. Summary energy as heat and light, which is generated in the process of such blend combustion, was not practically changed that can be explained by liberation of energy of chemical connections of water as well as of fuel. In the process of the experiments on combustion of the emulsion at first **it was transformed into the finest water vapor on the molecular level by means of capillary electroosmosis and of electrostatic atomization. Then dipolar water molecules, which had been electrified by field, were fragmented into hydrogen and oxygen, and then the hydrogen was effectively combusted in the medium of the ozonized oxygen.** Let us note that at this mechanism of water "evaporation" and of following splitting of water molecules into hydrogen and oxygen the electric field expends energy, and heat of organic fuel combustion just accelerates (catalyze) this process.

The most amazing and incomprehensible fact is that the electric field transforms water into "vapor" and breaks the water molecule into hydrogen and oxygen practically **without any expenditure at minimum of energy consumption**. Electric power of the intensity high-voltage transformer, which is necessary for strong field generation, lies in the interval from several watts to tens of watts. As the experiments have demonstrated electric consumption of the high-voltage source practically is not changed at correct shunting of the flame by the electric field (i.e. through an air gap). Current consumption practically did not increase depending on mode of fuel atomization and its combustion (of flame height, of combustion intensiveness…).

There are only two conditions of effective work of static electric field as an electrostatic pump-atomizer of fuel and as a catalyst of blended fuel combustion. The first one is intensity of the field in the zone of fuel atomization and in the zone of flame combustion. The second one is enough emission of electrons into the blended fuel flow. In this mode Coulomb forces make work of electrostatic pressure generation and of electrostatic fragmentation of particles and molecules of fuel and water. The forces repulse likely charged drops of water. Heat motion of fuel radicals, which are combusted and fragmentized in the flame, impedes their chemical recompounding into water molecules in the zone of combustion. Moreover, it causes proceeding of a very physical chain reaction of hydrogen combustion in the flame.

Therefore additional light and heat energy, which is generated in the flame by combustion of hydrogen generated from water molecules that occurs in the ozonized oxygen, does not decrease summary energy of combustion of blend of fuel with water but increases it.

Thus using of electric and electromagnetic fields as the strongest catalysts of combustion of organic fuels and any matters clears great **prospects** of combustion technologies improving. Moreover it allows create ecologically appropriate heat machines and devices and 20-50% increase their effectiveness due to fuller transformation of chemical energy of inflammables into heat or light energy.

Ways of radical improvement of heat machines or about a new mechanism of transformation of heat energy into mechanical energy and into kinetic one

For clear realization of causes of extremely low output of modern heat machines that has generally lead the civilization to the ecological catastrophe it is necessary to understand their common principle of operation as well as a cause of heat energy non-effective using in them.

A mechanism of transformation of heat energy, which is generated by fuel combustion, is the same for all known heat machines. It consists in generation and transformation of superfluous pressure of a heated working body (i.e. gas, vapor etc.) into kinetic energy of a working element of the heat machine (i.e. a piston of an internal combustion engine, a turbine of an aviation engine, a reaction jet flowing out a rocket nozzle etc.) in special chambers of the machines.

It is also known that the higher the temperature of the heated working body, for example of a gas, the higher initial pressure in the working chamber of a heat machine. **Why output of heat machines is so low?** Any expert of thermal physics, thermodynamics, and heat machines can answer that efficiency (output) of heat energy transformation into mechanical one is defined by the second law of thermodynamics and is clearly illustrated by Carno heat cycle. According to these postulates, **output** of an ideal heat engine does not depend on a working matter and on the engine construction but is defined by temperatures of the working body in the starting point and in the final point of the cycle, i.e. by the temperatures of the heater and of the refrigerator of the **heat machine**. Real output of the heat machines is limited by heat stability of materials and by imperfection of engine constructions.

Nevertheless known thermodynamic processes and lows of heat motion of particles and molecules are significantly changed in strong electric fields and demonstrate new prospects for improving of heat machines.

A solution of the problem can be briefly formulated as: to increase output of heat machines it is necessary to use a new mechanism of redistribution of heat energy into energy of directed pressure of a compressed working body (i.e. gas, vapor, etc.) on the working element of the heat machine. At the minimal pressure it should be redistributed on sidewalls of the working chamber.

Can it be realized in practice? On the face of it the technical solution is unrealizable nevertheless it exists. It is possible to redistribute and to regulate heat motion

(pressure) of heated gas inside a closed reservoir and, hence, its temperature in a certain direction. To achieve this aim **it is necessary to introduce static electric field into the combustion chamber of a heat machine and to orient heat motion of electrically charged and dipolar molecules of expanding working bodies (i.e. gas, vapor) along force lines of the electric field by electric Coulomb forces**. Something similar occurs, for example, in liquid crystal cells of electronic timer, in Kerr cells (electric optic effect) at periodical application of electric field to them that causes dipolar molecules turn along a field vector as well as change of light penetrability of these matters.

There is a difference between this known in electrooptics phenomenon and our case. The difference lies in the fact that polarized gas molecules remain movable along force lines of the electric field in contrast to liquid crystals, which do not. This fact causes redistribution of parameters of heat energy (i.e. pressure, temperature, and heat penetrability) of dipolar molecules of heated gas just along force lines of the field. The more the intensity of the field at the initial temperature of the working body is the more the difference of pressures on the sidewalls of the chamber and on the working element, for example, on an engine piston.

Heat motion of polarized particles of heated gas can be decelerated by combination of three electric fields of constant sign in accordance with all three coordinate axes; hence it is possible to significantly and quickly decrease temperature and pressure of the gas. In this case the heat energy of the heated gas makes jump transformation into electromagnetic radiation.

Editor: Historically this method, i.e. plasma retention by electric field, was proposed by Oleg Lavrentiev in 1948. He had 7-grade education and served as a sergeant in Armed Forces in Sakhalin. After he sent Stalin a letter containing a phrase, as "I know a secret of hydrogen bomb creation" he was invited to Moscow to set his ideas out to academicians. His ideas were not lost nevertheless the scheme of plasma electrostatic retention was not applied ("Expert" magazine #23, 18 of July of 2001). In 1950 Sakharov and Tamm proposed a scheme of a toroidal magnetic thermonuclear reactor which has been developed until now. Why is it so? It is difficult, expansive and practically unreal…

Thus introduction of strong electric fields into heat machines allows significantly increase effectiveness of transformation of heat energy of a working body into mechanical and kinetic energy of working elements of the machines by means of directed regulation of temperature and pressure of heated gas,

for example, in the starting point and in the final point of a working stroke of a piston. In other words it allows increase output of the machines.

APPLICATION AREA OF NEW ELECTRIC COMBUSTION TECHNOLOGY
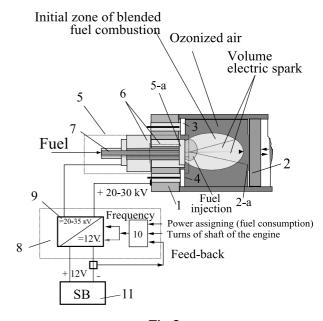
Practical application of the new combustion and thermal technologies

The new technology is universal and applicable in practically all spheres of technics. Therefore we believe that further development and application of this new technology of fuel and waste products combustion is very important for radical improving of all the heat machines and of all thermal technologies. As the civilization uses hydrocarbon fuel and matters in its life circle then just this new technology can solve critical ecological and energetic problems of the civilization.

It is impossible to view in details all proposed perspective technical solutions based on this technology [1-25] within one article. Therefore we give only one striking example.

Environmentally appropriate engine for motor transport

Since the transport, which uses thermal internal combustion engine (ICE), is most harmful for the environment then let us discuss ways of their ecological and energy improving. Several years ago the author patented "method of intensification of ICE operation" [7]. The essence of the invention consists in introduction of controllable electric field into combustion chambers during the whole operation period of an engine by special monoelectrode spark-plugs (Fig.2).

Fig.2a
Plan of an environmentally appropriate ICE (for transport)

1. – combustion chamber;
2. – piston, 2a –heat-resistant surface of the piston (zone of electric-spark discharge)
3. – admission valve (its canal is not indicated)
4. – exhaust valve (its canal is not indicated)
5. – combined mono-electrode spark-plug; 5a – fuel nozzle with hollow central electrode and end disk electrode
6. – electric insulator of the spark-plug – fuel nozzle
7. – fuel pump (for example, an electrostatic one)
8. – high-voltage regulable transformer (electric field source)
9. – force block of tension high-voltage transformer (=12V/25kV)
10. – system of regulation of electric field source (9)
11. – board current network =12V (SB is a storage battery of an automobile).

This structure chart briefly demonstrates basic components of a new ICE, where there is directed pressure of gases on a piston. In particular, many inventions of the author are realized in practice here, i.e. semi-digital spark-plug, electrostatic fuel nozzle (5), electrostatic fuel pump (7). A new mode of volume inflammation of blended fuel has been realized in practice, i.e. "a spark coming from a disk electrode (5-a) to a piston (2-a)". Since it is possible to regulate the electric field intensity generated by a high-voltage source of tension then an advance angle of blended fuel inflammation can be regulated, gases pressure on the piston at explosion stroke of ICE operation can be regulated as well.
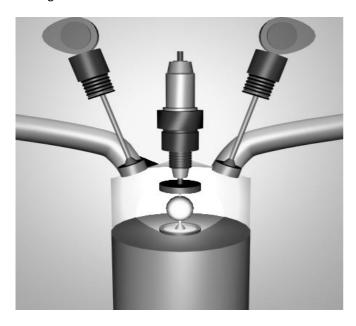
Fig.2b
Photo of a simplified construction of the new ICE

Fig.2b demonstrates simplified three-dimensional construction of the proposed energetically and ecologically perfect ICE. There are observable elements such as a combustion chamber, a piston, valves, a monoelectrode spark-plug, and an electrostatic fuel nozzle (in the centre on top), which is connected with the spark-plug. In the centre of the combustion chamber

it can be seen volume inflammation of the blended fuel at spark appearance from end electrode to the piston.

As a result a summary positive effect of ecological, construction and energetic improving of ICE is achieved, i.e. effective cleaning of exhausted gases directly in the combustion chambers of the engine, significant simplification and perfection of a fuel injection system, improvement of system of distribution and electric inflammation of the blended fuel. In this engine a distributor (as well as its analogues) is removed at all since sparking and intensive inflammation of the blended fuel automatically appears between central electrode of the spark-plug and the piston which comes to the upper "dead" point. The central electrode of the spark-plug is constantly under high tension. The advance angle of ignition is regulated by change of the electric field intensity. Powerful multipoint ignition causes simultaneous intensive inflammation of the blended fuel that occurs throughout the whole chamber. The electric field as a powerful combustion catalyst intensifies the process of the blend combustion at the explosion stroke of the engine and at after-burning of waste gases directly in the combustion chambers at the following output stroke of the engine operation. Directed along the axis of the piston in the combustion chambers this electric field serves as a transformer of gases heat energy into mechanical energy of the thermal engine pistons. That is caused by the fact that the field orients heat motion of the expanding gases along the axis of the pistons in combustion chambers of the engine at explosion stroke of ICE just. It causes redistribution of heat energy and increase of the gases pressure on the very pistons that significantly improves effectiveness of transformation of heat energy of the fuel combustion into mechanical energy of the piston motion (theoretically the improvement is by two-three times), i.e. it two-three times increases output of a classical thermal engine making it come to 70-80%.

The electric field, which is introduced into the combustion chambers of an internal combustion engine, ensures significant economy of fuel (up to 30-40%) at saving of its working characteristics. It occurs due to fog electrostatic spray of fuel and to the fuel electrization as well as due to oxide ozonization. Moreover it occurs as a result of deep after-burning of hydrocarbon components of fuel, combusting blend and waste exhaust gases. This method allows effectively regulate temperature of the blend combustion in the chambers while required compression in cylinders is the same, for example, to minimize nitric oxide generation in the exhaust gases. As a result there is no necessity in external devices for cleaning of exhaust gases of internal combustion engines; ecological appropriateness improvement can be simultaneously achieved. Additional aerosol hydro-alkaline processing of these gases can allow totally clean **exhaust gases** of the transport, which operates on thermal engines.

Workability of such an environmentally appropriate engine in two-stroke and four-stroke variants is experimentally demonstrated. There are also experimentally shown decrease of all toxic components in exhaust gases, 20-30% increase of useful power of the engine, and simultaneous decrease of fuel consumption.

Thus practical application of the new electric combustion technology can exert revolutionary influence upon propulsion engineering development and upon increasing of ecological compatibility and effectiveness of the transport, which operates on thermal engines.

Diagram of operations of technology of effective using of refinery wastes in heat-and-power engineering

| 1. Mixing of oil products combustion with water | 2. Combined activation of oil emulsions | 3. Electrostatic atomization of water-fuel blend | 4. Electric and waste gases cleaning |
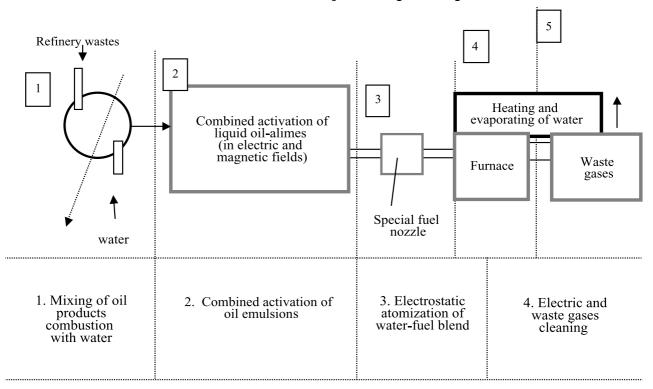
Fig.3
Technology of environmentally appropriate combustion of refinery wastes as fuel for boiler plants

The author has patented other technical solutions of improvement of different devices, which are based on these technologies. These solutions concerning boiler plants, gas turbine engines and jet engines and many other heat machines and devices allow increase their effectiveness and simultaneously significantly improve their ecological factors. As an example of application of this technology in heat-and-power engineering there is a diagram of operations of the technology of the environmentally appropriate combustion of refinery waste as a fuel for boiler plants (Fig.3). Unfortunately the limits of one article do not allow discuss these inventions in details nevertheless the author will realize it in practice in future works.

Conclusions:

1. The existent methods of solving of the ecological problems are ineffective as well as work of organizations, which deal with ecological and nature conservation activity. It is caused by the fact that they are oriented to search and remove consequences of ecological pollution of the nature instead of their causes.

2. The article demonstrates real causes of global ecological problems, which consist in imperfection of technologies of generation and transformation of energy.

3. Using of strong electric and electromagnetic fields of low power as combustion catalysts allow significantly improve ecological factors of combustion technologies and of devices, which realize the technologies in practice. In other words it allows realize in practice "clean combustion of fuels and wastes and possible existence of "clean" heat technics".

4. Application of electric and electromagnetic fields in the combustion technologies allows significantly increase effectiveness of transformation of chemical and heat energies of fuel into mechanical and electric energies.

5. The electric combustion technology allows realize in practice principally new ways to control combustion process as well as to control many thermal and kinetic processes (i.e. processes of pressure, heat conductance, temperature, etc.), i.e. allows increase output of heat machines.

6. The new electric combustion technology is a universal method of solving of ecological and energetic problems of the civilization and a universal way of radical improvement of technics (i.e. of the transport, boiler plants, oil-and-gas processing plants, combustion wastes recycling plants, etc.).

References

1. V.D. Dudyshev Electric combustion technology is an effective way to solve energetic and ecological problems //"Ecology and Industry of Russia" ("Ekologia I Promyshlennost Rossii") magazine, #3 1997;

2. V.D. Dudyshev How is it possible to save the civilization and the nature from global ecology pollution? //"Ecology and Industry of Russia" ("Ekologia I Promyshlennost Rossii") magazine, #11 1997;

3. V.D. Dudyshev Method of combustion control. Patent of Russian Federation #2071219 of 19.04.1994;

4. V.D. Dudyshev Method of intensification and regulation of combustion. Patent of Russian Federation #2125682 of 06.06.1995;

5. V.D. Dudyshev Method of electric combustion of refuse and wastes. Patent of Russian Federation #2117870 of 06.06.1995;

6. V.D. Dudyshev Method of electric combustion cleaning of waste gases. Patent of Russian Federation #2125168 of 15.11.1995;

7. V.D. Dudyshev Method of combustion intensification in a fire-chamber of a boiler plant. Patent of Russian Federation #2079766 of 14.06.1995;

8. V.D. Dudyshev Method of flame extinguishing, Copyright of USSR #1621234 of 12.03.1988;

9. V.D. Dudyshev Method of decrease of toxicity of exhaust gases of motor transport. Patent of Russian Federation #2117179 of 20.02.1996;

10. V.D. Dudyshev New method of environmentally appropriate matter combustion as a radical way of solving of global ecological problems. // Collected reports of II international congress of "Environment for us and future generations: ecology, business and human rights in new conditions", Russia, Samara, 1997;

11. V.D. Dudyshev New method of refuse electric combustion // Collected reports of III international congress of "Environment for us and future generations: ecology, business and human rights in new conditions", Russia, Samara, 1998;

12. V.D. Dudyshev Problems of ecological education and upbringing of the youth // Collected reports of II international practical conference of "Pedagogical activity as a cultural activity", Russia, Samara, 1999;

13. V.D. Dudyshev Environmental safety of motor transport //"Ecology and Industry of Russia" ("Ekologia I Promyshlennost Rossii") magazine, #5 1997;

14. V.D. Dudyshev Perspective technical works out and inventions of ecological improvement of motor transport. //"Ecology and Industry of Russia" ("Ekologia I Promyshlennost Rossii") magazine, #12 1998;

15. V.D. Dudyshev Method of ICE exhaust gases cleaning, i.e. electric combustion cleaning and electric filter at ICE output. Patent of Russian Federation #1404664;

16. V.D. Dudyshev Problems and ways of ecological improving of native motor transport. //"Ecology and Industry of Russia" ("Ekologia I Promyshlennost Rossii") magazine, #11 1998;

17. V.D. Dudyshev Method of internal cleaning of exhaust gases of ICE. Patent of Russian Federation #2165031;

18. V.D. Dudyshev Method of intensification of ICE operation. Patent of Russian Federation #2135814;

19. V.D. Dudyshev Method of decreasing of toxicity of ICE exhaust gases and a device of its application. Patent of Russian Federation #2135814;

20. V.D. Dudyshev Method of intensification and regulation of combustion. Patent of Russian Federation #2125682;

21. V.D. Dudyshev Method of heat machine control. Patent of Russian Federation #2134354;

22. V.D. Dudyshev Environmentally appropriate ICE. // "New technologies" ("Novye tekhnologii") magazine #2 2001 Samara;

23. V.D. Dudyshev New electric combustion technologies. // "New technologies" ("Novye tekhnologii") magazine #3 2001 Samara;

24. V.D. Dudyshev New electric combustion technologies. // "New technologies" ("Novye tekhnologii") magazine #4 2001 Samara;

25. V.D. Dudyshev New electric technology of fire non-contact extinguishing and ignition prevention. // "New technologies" ("Novye tekhnologii") magazine #9 2002 Samara;

New Effect of "Cold" Evaporation and Dissociation of Liquids Based on Capillar Electroosmosis

Valery D. Dudyshev

Doctor of Technical Science, Professor,
Corresponding Member of Russian Ecological Academy

ecolog@samaramail.ru
http://www.intrasoft.ru/nizot

There is discovered new electric physical effect of intensive "cold" evaporation and dissociation of liquids and aqueous solutions into fuel gases **without any energy consumption** due to high-voltage capillar electroosmosis [1].

Prospects and problems of hydrogen engineering

Effective obtaining of hydrogen from water is a long-standing tempting dream of the civilization. That is connected with the fact that there is a huge amount of water on the planet, and hydrogen engineering promises the possibility to obtain unlimited quantity of "free" energy obtained from water. All the more, the very process of hydrogen combustion in oxygen medium, which is obtained from water as well, ensures ideal high-calorie and environmentally appropriate combustion.
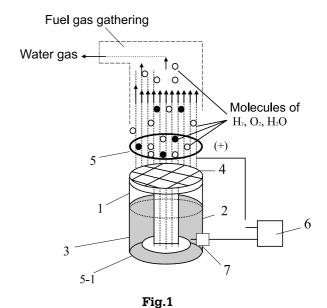
Ecological and energetic problems are very actual nevertheless they have not been effectively solved. All known methods and devices of production of hydrogen and other fuel gases are ineffective since there is no a real high-performance technology of evaporation and splitting of liquid molecules. The main cause of ineffectiveness of the analogous consists in their difficulty and in energy consumption for breaking of intermolecular connections at dissociation of water liquid fractions.

Physical-chemical structure of even habitual tap water is quite complicated since there are numerous intermolecular connections, chains and other molecular structures in water. In particular, in habitual tap water there are different chains of oriented water molecules, which are peculiarly connected with admixture ions (cluster formations), its various colloidal compounds and isotopes, mineral matters as well as various dissolved gases and admixtures.

It is a paradox but in the living nature there is a long-standing effective way of electric capillar delivery and "cold" evaporation of liquid, which allows transform it into gaseous state without heat energy and electric energy supply line. This natural effect is realized in practice by plants, which deliver aqueous solution and make its "cold" evaporation by capillar electroosmosis. It is quite comprehensible that this natural energetically perfect technology is applicable in methods of liquids transformation into fuel gases. The author of this article has designed such experimental devices of cold electric capillar evaporation of liquids according to electric pumps of trees (Fig.1-3).

The simplest operating device, which experimentally realizes in practice the effect of high-voltage capillar electroosmosis of the "cold" evaporation and dissociation of water molecules, is demonstrated in Fig.1.

New Electroosmotic Capillar Method of Obtaining of Fuel Gas from Water

Fig.1
Simplest device of capillar electroosmosis of liquids

First experiments on the electric capillar dissociation of liquids were made with using of habitual water as well as its solutions and water-fuel emulsions of various concentrations as liquids. In all these cases fuel gases were successfully obtained in spite of the fact that these gases greatly varied due to their composition and heat capacity. The experiments on the electroosmotic evaporation and dissociation of liquids are realized in practice by the following way. First a wick (3) and a porous evaporator (4) are moisten with a water-fuel blend (emulsion) (2) then the blend (2) is poured into a reservoir (1). Then a high-voltage source of tension (6) is switched on and high-voltage difference of potentials (about 20 kV) is supplied to the liquid at some distance from the capillaries (i.e. from the wick (3) and the evaporator (4)). The source of electric field is joined to the device by electrodes (5-1) and (5). A plate perforated electrode (5) is placed above the evaporator (4) surface at a distance, which is enough to prevent an electric breakdown between the electrodes (5) and (5-1). Electrostatic forces of longitudinal electric field acts on the liquid. As a result dipolar polarized molecules of the liquid move along capillaries of the wick (3) and evaporator (4) from the reservoir to an opposite electric potential of the electrode (5) (i.e. electroosmosis occurred). Liquid molecules are detached from the evaporator (4) surface by these forces and transformed into a visual fog, i.e. the liquid is transformed into another aggregative state at minimal energy consumption of the electric field source (6). After that they provide electroosmotic elevation of this liquid. In the process of detaching and collision of evaporated liquid molecules with molecules of air and ozone as well as with electrons there is occurring partial dissociation between the evaporator (4) and the upper electrode (5) in an ionization zone. At the process a fuel gas is produced, which can come thorough a gas collector (7), for example, into combustion chambers of motor transport engine.

It has been experimentally shown that change of intensiveness of process of evaporation and dissociation of vapor molecules depends on change of distance from the electrode (5) to the evaporator (4). Moreover, this dependence is conditioned by the following factors, viz by changing of the evaporator area, kind of the liquid,

quality of capillar material of the wick (3) and the evaporator (4), parameters of the electric field as well as the source of intensity (of power) (6).

The author's first experiments on this simplest device, which were organized in 1986, demonstrated that "cold" water fog (i.e. gas) appears in capillaries from liquid (i.e. water) at high-voltage electroosmosis without any observable energy consumption but just using potential energy of the electric field. This conclusion is evident since in the process of experimenting consumed electric current of the field source was the same and equal to the consumed current of the source idling. This current was not changed depending on the appearance of the liquid evaporation.
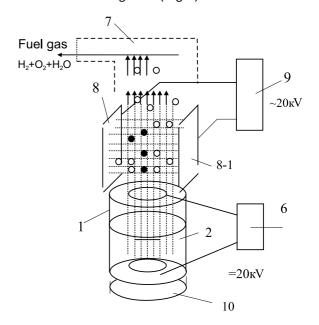
The experiments demonstrated that capillar electroosmosis evaporated quite significant quantity of water (1 liter) without any energy consumption for 10 minutes at a 10-centimeter-diameter capillar cylinder. That is to say that the consumed electric power (10 Watts) of the electric current source, i.e. of the tension high-voltage transformer (20 kV), was unchangeable and did not depend on mode of its operation. It has been experimentally stated that the whole consumed energy supplied by the current network is insignificantly small comparably with the energy of liquid evaporation. It can be explained by the fact that power was consumed only to generate the electric field and did not increase at liquid capillar evaporation that occurred due to work of an ionic pump and of a polarized pump. Hence the effect of cold electric-capillar evaporation of liquid is very economical in respect to the process energy consumption.

In spite of the fact that energetic essence of this process has not been disclosed it is evident that both "cold evaporation" and water dissociation are realized in practice by potential energy of the electric field. More precisely, the visual process of evaporation and water splitting into H_2 and O_2 at the capillar electroosmosis is realized by powerful Coulomb forces of this strong electric field.

Editor: It is not the most surprising fact. The most astonishism is aroused by school-day stereotypes that work of a field at a closed cycle is equal to zero. These stereotypes have been kept in mind of people for a long period of time. Everybody understands that a field can do work but if a body falling from some height is accelerated in a potential field and its kinetic energy increases then it requires energy consumption to relevate the body up to this height. Nevertheless, the analogy of a gravitation field with an electric one is not one-valued since the electric field may be generated only at a part of trajectory of the accelerated body motion. An electric field can be pulsating, it can be screened or it is possible to change its direction at the reverse part of the trajectory in such a way that the field constantly accelerates the body. Hence a principal conclusion can be made: summary work of a potential field may not be equal to zero. This conclusion has earlier been proposed by A.V. Frolov in his article published in the USA (Newsletter of the Institute for New Energy. May 1994. p. 1-4).

In principle this uncommon electroosmotic pump-evaporator-splitter is an example of the perpetual motion machine of the second type. Thus the high-voltage capillar electroosmosis of aqueous liquid provides really intensive and energetically free evaporation and splitting of water molecules into the fuel gas (H_2, O_2, H_2O) by means of using of potential energy of the electric field.

To produce more complete dissociation of water molecules into the fuel gas it is necessary to make the whole water molecules collide each other and be split into molecules of H_2 and O_2 in an additional transversal alternating field (Fig.2).

Fig.2
Device for production of fuel gas by electroosmosis. The device is equipped with an additional high - voltage splitting center of liquid molecules by electric alternating field.
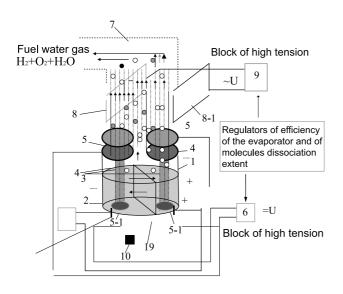
At the second stage of water dissociation the energy of the second electric field is used, more precisely, powerful electrostatic forces are used to intensify oscillation resonant process of "collision-repulsion" of electrified water molecules represented as water gas. The result of this process is complete breaking of liquid molecules and generation of fuel gas molecules.

Conditions of optimal dissociation vary due to a kind of the liquid, to capillaries properties, and to the field parameters. These conditions are caused by required productivity of the process of dissociation of concrete liquid. Fig.2 demonstrates in details functional structure and composition of the device equipped with two sources of the electric field.

In the case of preliminary division of initially chemically neutral water into chemically active fractions (i.e. acid fraction and alkaline fraction) realization of the technology of production of fuel gas from water becomes possible at temperature below zero (up to –30°C). In winter it is quite important and useful for motor transport. This "fractional" electrically activated water does not freeze at degree of frost; hence the device designed for hydrogen production from such activated water can operate at environment temperature below zero and at degree of frost.

This principle of additional chemical activation of water (or liquid) is realized in practice in the device

(Fig.3). In contrast to the devices mentioned above (see Fig.1, 2) this device is supplied with an electrochemical activator of liquid (3) with evaporators (4).

Fig.3

Hybrid device equipped with two sources of electric field and liquid electric activator
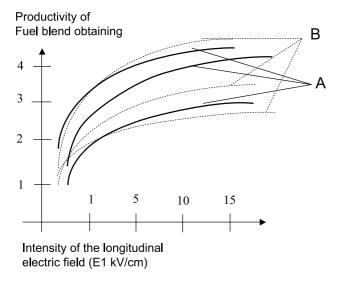
Fig.4

Productivity of the method increases as well as oscillation frequency of the second transversal electric field (A) and evaporating area (B) increase.

There is a known and low-expenditure progressive electric technology by Stanly Mayer, which has been worked out to obtain fuel gas from water (Mayer cells). Our technology is more progressive and ensures higher productivity than Stanly Mayer's technology does [3]. It can be explained by the fact that this electroosmotic effect of evaporation and liquid dissociation combined with a mechanism of the electrostatic pump and the ionic pump ensures intensive evaporation and dissociation of liquid as well as effective detachment of gas molecules from the dissociation zone. The process of gas molecules detachment is accompanied by acceleration from the

upper end of the capillaries. Therefore in our case the effect of screening of the working zone of molecules electric dissociation is not produced. All these processes proceed at minimal energy consumption, which is similar to analogous energy consumption. Moreover, the process of fuel gas production does not slow down as the process in Mayer's technology does therefore gas productivity of our method is significantly higher than that of this progressive analogue at similar minimal energy consumption.

Some technical and economical aspects of the new technology realization

In the near future production run of these high-effective electroosmotic generators of fuel gas from practically any liquids (including tap water), which are based on the proposed new technology, can be established. At the first familiarization level it is especially easy and economically appropriate to realize in practice a variant of the device of transformation of water-fuel emulsion into fuel gas. A prime cost of the production-run device for generation of fuel gas from water of 1000 m^3/hour productivity comes to approximately 1 thousand of US dollars. Consumed power of such an electric generator should come to no more than 50-100 Watts. Therefore such compact and effective fuel electrolyzers can operate practically in any motor car. As a result heat engines can work on any hydrocarbon liquid or even on habitual water. Mass application of these devices for the motor transport can cause immediate energetic and ecological perfection of the motor transport as well as designing of an environmentally appropriate and economical heat engine. Approximate financial expenditures for working out and designing of the device for fuel gas obtaining from water, and for bringing the investigation of the first testing device of 100 m^3/sec productivity to an experimental-industrial model come to about 450-500 thousands of US dollars. That contains the expenditures for projecting and investigation, for designing of the very experimental device and of a testing bed, which is necessary for approbation and engineering development of the device. The author is interested in business and creative cooperation with those companies, which can provide this project with investments to bring the device to the experimental-industrial model and introduce the perspective technology into practice.

Conclusion

Electroosmotic "cold" evaporation and dissociation of water and aqueous solutions through capillaries is a perspective way of highly productive fuel gas production at minimum of energy consumption.

References

1. V.D. Dudyshev New electric combustion technology is an effective way of solving of energetic and ecological problems // "Ecology and Industry of Russia" ("Ekologia I Promyshlennost Rossii") magazine #3 1997;
2. "New Energy News" magazine, May 1994. P. 1 – 5;
3. Stanly Mayer Method of production of fuel gas. Patent of the USA #4.936,961;

Conceptual Hurdles to New Millennium Physics

Donald Reed

E-mail: torsionpower@yahoo.com

Abstract

Time, space, energy and mass form the four-fold conceptual basis for gauging physical reality. The following paper, as a follow-up to a previous exposition [1] which focused on the necessity to change the current paradigm for time, continues in this same vein, but will also consider in greater depth the interrelations of this phenomenon with the other three yardsticks cited above. Again, information garnered from a wide variety of sources will be considered. We hope to provide, through just such a unique eclectic format, the beginnings of a possible fresh understanding of the workings of nature and perhaps ultimately furnish a conceptual basis for extending the structure of current physical theory to compatibly encompass the elements of a unified framework of physics and metaphysics.

Introduction

In the former article cited above, by investigating the following varied sources and research [2-17], we came to the inescapable conclusion that the phenomena of time and space are considerably more intimately related than is currently suspected by modern science, and will require a drastic re-working to fit the conclusions of the various evidence cited. Towards this end, the adoption of a more expansive paradigm for these yardsticks was suggested, which incorporates a fluid-field nature for time and space where both are derivatives of the fundamental ground-form of energy in flux or oscillation. These new approaches involve the inclusion of a Kozyrev-type of "substantial"(active) time-flow as opposed to the conventional "relational"(passive) concept of time, where it is used as a static parameter signifying duration. The substantial aspect of time pre-supposes that it is an essence which can and does affect physical processes, and that those same physical systems can cause a reverse action on time [8]. Such active fluctuating (deformable) types of time or space, implies the establishment of a revolutionary notion: positing completely *non-scalable* metrics for both time and space. This is in direct contrast to all contemporary orthodox models for physical reality, either in Einsteinean relativity (Special or General theory), quantum field theory, or even superstring/supersymmetric theory, all of which continue to consider both of these yardsticks from their relational (length or durational) standpoints. Consequently, all these formalisms require scalable metrics of some sort for their proper description (for refreshing viewpoints on this matter, see [7]). For instance, in the standard equations of quantum theory, time is regarded merely as an unchangeable static parameter. When we later consider applying these novel substantial aspects of time to the edifice of quantum theory, we will see that time must then become a "hidden variable". It will be seen that by considering time in this manner, a clearer and more tractable explanation of the inevitable probabilistic aspects of quantum theory, evidenced in the signature Uncertainty Principle, complementarity and non-locality will arise, without having to invoke the counter-productive and ill-conceived Copenhagen Interpretation.

Oscillatory Models for Time and Space

Upon accepting non-scalable metrics for time and space, we observe that a similar field nature for **energy** and **mass** must in turn also be postulated. Moreover, from the Killick description of how (sub-atomic) tachion-pairs operate [6], shuttling their energy back-and-forth in a free-wheeling but purposeful manner and creating oscillatory features of time and space by their action, we should consider the possibility of another unprecedented concept: a "value-motivated" energy might be at the foundation of the structural integrity of physical matter. This is conceivable when considering Killick's description of the tachion-pair dynamic/evolutionary cycle as necessarily including the 3-step process of observation – reflection – action (**trinitivity** of motion). Along the same lines, from the Smith book **The New Science** [5], we learn that a so-called "tempic field" energy exists, which could be described as the parent structure out of which our standard conception of "clock-time" (entropy changes) results. The tempic field is essentially a scalar (but not static) function which has vectorial nature only in terms of its distribution or *gradient* in space. Because of the nature of the tempic field, its derivatives – the electric and magnetic fields can operate on each other in a specific geometric/topological manner, to produce a local change in the *time-frame* of matter, to use a term coined by the entity Kryon [4]. This theoretical description of the alteration of inertial/gravitational mass and time-frame has possibly seen recent actual demonstration in the dramatic experiments of John Hutchison [10] and Rudolf Zinsser's "kinetobaric" effect [11], as well as unpublished research of both Wilbert Smith and Ken Killick with electric caduceus-wound coils [5,6].

New Models for Relativistic-Fluidic Vacuum-Structure and Possibility of its Manipulation

All of this evidence allows us to conclude that measurable changes in relativistic parameters of time, space, mass and energy might not only be a feature accompanying rapid uniform movement of physical objects (Special Relativity), or representative of large gravitating astrophysical objects (General Relativity). Indeed, by relying on current limited paradigms, contemporary physics may have missed ascertaining the possibility of being able to alter these same relativistic parameters by the artificial technological manipulation of the tempic (vacuum) fields of sub-atomic particles in stationary matter, by use of specific electromagnetic fields. Tom Bearden, for one, has articulated on these various "futuristic"-type technologies in his many writings over the years [15]. We have recently seen that some of the novel theoretical conceptions of the more visionary physicists such as David Hestenes on the zitterbewegung (vacuum "jitter") phenomenon exhibited by the electron [12-14], has finally caught up with some of these advanced ideas by presenting new mathematical demonstrations (using geometric Clifford-algebraic) manipulations of the Dirac equation. In summary, the Hestenes' study concludes that the Dirac wave function and its properties, including

the Dirac equation and relations to physical observables such as energy-momentum, spin and position probability current, all possess heretofore obscured important geometric relations. These results imply that probabilistic features of the quantum theory of the electron/positron arise principally from the electromagnetic interaction of the accompanying zitterbewegung-spin field of these particles with the ambient dynamic vacuum. This is, of course, in direct contrast to the conventional received view that ascribes wave-particle duality as a property of matter that is completely independent of the nature of its interactions. This revolutionary geometric interpretation of electron dynamics incorporates in its model an electron spin which arises from a helical or spiral world-line in space-time. The essential unprecedented feature of the Hestenes' zitterbewegung idea is the association of the spin with the local circulatory-helical motion characterized by the *phase* of the electron wave function. Thus, we reach the conclusion that the complex phase factor of the electron wave function can be directly associated with an objective helical motion of the electron which is, in turn, a derivative of the zitterbewegung. One intriguing feature of this structure is a frequency of oscillation that is inversely proportional to the scalar radius of curvature of the particles' helical world-line. Moreover, the Clifford-algebraic analysis reveals that this oscillation frequency is identical to electron/positron *mass*, revealing a possible key variable particle mass-energy (*frequency measure*), which is in inverse relationship to particle size. It is clear that this new model has important classical implications not yet considered by established physics which nevertheless directly correspond to some of the key features of sub-atomic behavior enumerated above and previously. Here, we refer to the tachion-pair dynamics [1,6], and also to the microscopic dynamics of elementary particles revealed by the selected esoteric sources previously considered [1-5].

Another researcher who echoes many of these conclusions is C. Sano [21]. Sano built on the work of A.P. Smirnov [22] who postulated that Newton's Third Law of action/reaction actually modeled "screw" structures, implying that elementary particles (specifically electrons/positrons) possess chiral-spiral field configurations. Accordingly, Sano posited that all actions/reactions are transmitted between actors and reactors by parallel or perpendicular clutching of the rotating chains of electromagnetic spirals of the hidden electrons and positron-pairs of the vacuum. Also, similar to the Hestenes' development cited above, Sano postulated that the radius of the outer electromagnetic spiral surrounding the electron/positron pair can change, oscillating in size around either particle, and thus producing the particles' electric or magnetic character. Supporting his theory, Sano cites the key research of I.M. Shakhporanov [23] whose experiments claimed that magnetic monopoles were generated, by employing an electrical circuit based upon Moebius band topology. Some of the unusual phenomena demonstrated by this apparatus, tending to support the magnetic monopole hypothesis, was transformation of diamagnetic substances into paramagnetic, the ferromagnetization of normally non-magnetizable materials (graphite, etc.), acceleration of chemical reactions, acceleration or deceleration of the decay of radioactive materials, etc. Sano also claimed that

extraction of energy from the vacuum was possible using rotational action/reaction using magnetic monopoles.

Referencing this research to the current exposition, we recall that the key element of Killick's hypothetical tachion-pair operation was the similar non-linear/non-orientable Moebius-type dynamic cycle which results in the corresponding deformation (compression or rarefaction) of time/space/energy parameters [1,6]. In this regard, the remarkable similarity of this model to the research of Sano and Shakhporanov may be much more than mere coincidence. In fact, later we shall examine new research outlining an apparatus (yet untested), which claims to overcome the Coulomb barrier in low energy nuclear reactions (LENR), and achieves nuclear fusion by producing local time-dilation of soft photons in proximity of the deuteron reactants.

Additional Key Russian Research

To motivate the reader's sensibilities towards consideration of some of these unorthodox ideas, we defer to the previous article [1] in which many of these notions and mentioned research are explored in greater depth, as well as consider the following corroborative research.

One intriguing example of such experiments is the work of V. Chernobrov, from which he has claimed to demonstrate both acceleration and deceleration of local time-rate, within a small spherical enclosed volume conducted since 1988 [18]. The experimental system to produce these effects, was a set of electromagnets, connected in series and parallel and installed inside the globe-shaped surface in several layers. In various arrangements including up to 3 to 5 of such layers, these electromagnetic working surfaces (EWS) of various diameters were installed inside each other (similar to the Russian toy doll "matrioshka") with the maximum EWS diameter was about 1 meter, and the minimum (internal) diameter of 115 mm. With this configuration, Chernobrov claimed to measure small but detectable deceleration (-30 sec/hr.) and acceleration (+30 sec/hr.) of time within the sphere to time monitored outside its field of influence. One interesting difference was noted between the slowing down vs. the speeding up of time. The deceleration occurred considerably more smoothly and steadily whereas with acceleration, sharp discontinuous jumps were observed. These instabilities accompanying time-acceleration was observed in connection with cycles of the moon, diurnal fluctuations, and also operator presence. Chernobrov also noticed another phenomenon that also was reported in connection with the alleged legendary Philadelphia experiment, where matter in different time-frames apparently exhibited strange relative optical phenomena [see 1,4]. Specifically, the human eye in the time-frame exterior to the experiment perceives matter within the time-frame created by the apparatus as either transparent or surrounded by a vague white mist. We note with interest that transparent "shimmering" effects of substances in the target area were also occasionally a feature of Hutchison effect [10].

Academician A. Chernetsky produced what he termed a self-generating discharge (SGD) in a plasma that exhibited longitudinal energy density waves from a

structured vacuum. Some unusual effects noted were over-unity energy generation (C.O.P. > 1), as well as change of the electrical conductivity of matter (reduction of the resistance of resistor) placed between the capacitor plates of the SGD. A local structured vacuum was definitely produced since the resistance value remained unchanged even when the generator was turned off. Here reference must be made to the Kozyrev experiments [1,8], in which a type of similar *memory* process was activated ostensibly within the vacuum. Specifically, it turned out that in experiments with a vibrating torsion balance (or pendulum), at points of support the emerging additional forces did not disappear when the irreversible process (vibration) was stopped, but remained in the system for an appreciable time. The SGD plasma device may have also produced a detectable change in local time-flow rate as evidenced by decrease in frequency of a quartz oscillator placed in the discharge of the generator. The Chernetsky generator thus possibly caused anomalies in time-rate at a local space position. There were also basically anecdotal phenomena where psychic ability of personnel in proximity to the SGD was apparently enhanced [19]. The latter effects are not inconceivable once the intimate connection of consciousness to space and time is ascertained, from consideration of not only hypothetical "value-motivated" tachion-pair dynamics, but from the more prosaic studies as we shall see next.

Pathological Studies in Time-Perception

We can motivate further understanding for the claimed intimate connection of time to space by considering the results of a recent study of patients possessing a disjointed sense of time by Metod Saniga of the Slovak Academy of Sciences [20]. Saniga discovered the brain is hard-wired to perceive space and time as interconnected. Specifically, time pathology is apparently always accompanied by space pathology, in a sense that space either loses dimensions or acquires other dimensions. To quote Saniga "When time seems to stop, people often feel as if space becomes 2-dimensional. On the other hand, when the subject feels they perceive the past, present and future all at once, they simultaneously have the impression that space has infinite dimensions". This phenomenon is apparently not culturally endemic since Saniga illustrates that both pathologies cross cultural lines, evidencing similar studies cited from Italian, German and English psychological journals. In his report, Saniga combined mathematical models ("pencil-conics") and pathology reports of schizophrenic, drug-induced and other abnormal perceptions of time. His current work also encompasses studies of near-death experiences. He found that most of those who claim to have allegedly crossed over to the "other side" and back, tell similar tales. For that brief moment of near-death, the universal subjective experience of all individuals in this state of consciousness is that time loses its meaning. Although such evidence can at best be considered as anecdotal, since subjective conscious experience transcends the possibility of scientific proof, nevertheless perhaps these results from pathological and near-death studies also give us a hint towards new conceptions of time and space that necessitate both phenomena to be inextricably linked.

Investigation of the Possible Internal Properties of Time

One inescapable conclusion that results from all the above varied studies, either scientifically or psychologically based, and which cries out for future experimental verification, is the possible existence of an internal structure for time. Such a structure also implies the necessity for constructing a new edifice for physical reality that incorporates non-scalable metrics for the four fundamental yardsticks. We shall first investigate supporting evidence for internal time structure and subsequently the various implications of space, time, energy or mass that is non-scalable.

First, accepting an internal time structure, we are led to conclude that in quantum theory, time must then attain "hidden variable" status. One recent study that brilliantly articulates this notion, is the thought-provoking paper by X. Chen [24]. By positing 3 time variables as quantum hidden variables, Chen derives the Dirac equation classically. Moreover, he demonstrates that the non-intuitive property of "spin" of an electron or positron , arises naturally as a topological property of 3-dimensional time + 3-dimensional space. By extrapolating from this model, Chen then concludes that the inherent probabilistic aspects of quantum theory itself, as evidenced in wave-particle duality, Uncertainty Principle, quantum non-locality ("entangled" particles), etc., can be interpreted as the behavior of a single particle in 3 + 3 time-space. Chen postulates that the three dimensions of time geometrically form a "time sphere", with a generic point on the sphere possessing the following 3 coordinates: time radius, and two "time angles". The mathematical formalism arising from the process of stereographic projection from the north pole of this sphere, having radius of one-half, to any point on the spherical surface, incorporates both the positive-energy (north hemisphere) and negative-energy (south hemisphere) solutions to the Dirac equation (see Fig. 1 for clarification; note Z is a four-component spinor wave function). Also, by considering the evolution of a single particle, from the standpoint of this model of internal time-space, we can derive a picture of different paths on the time sphere of different weights, and on each path causality is satisfied. Through this process, Chen derives a purely classical explanation of the originally quantum-mechanically canonized Feynman Path Integral concept. This result emerges since each path from the time-sphere center to the surface corresponds to each Feynman path, and the surface of the sphere corresponds to the "surface" of the wave function. Chen also classically explains the processes inherent to Bose-Einstein-condensation (BEC) and superconductivity with this model. In such phenomena, two particles with the same spatial coordinates, cannot possess the same time angle, and thus will not have any interaction with each other and occupy the same quantum state as evidenced in BEC and superconductivity. Finally, Chen's solutions of the Dirac equation for a free particle correspond to Hopf bundles in monopole theory, and each Hopf fiber corresponds to each plane wave with different momentum states. This picture corresponds to wave packet diffusion in quantum theory. When a particle is in a fixed momentum state, each space point can contain only one Hopf bundle (one time angle), and various different time angles will be distributed in the whole

space but with the same Hopf bundle. Consequently, that particle can be found everywhere. This picture appears to describe the Uncertainty Principle classically using 3 + 3 dimensional time-space. Along similar lines R. Kiehn [25] has also recently underscored the important but overlooked classical connection between spinors, minimal surfaces and the Hopf map.

Recently, Chen's work has been further developed by H. Kitada [26] who, by introducing both 3-dimensional time and energy operators, sheds new classical light on the uncertainty relation that holds between these two parameters as well. Moreover, Chen is not the only reseracher to derive the Dirac equation classically. R.A. Close has published a paper which presents a classical mathematical description of circularly-polarized waves in 3-dimensions [27]. It turns out that these chiral space waves are satisfied by a four-component wave function which satisfies a Dirac equation. Furthermore, much like the Hestenes' zitterbewegung interpretation of quantum theory, the term normally associated with electron mass in the Close equation, introduces a rotation or oscillation frequency of the propagation direction.

Classical models for nuclear processes have also recently been proposed which incidentally also imply internal time structure. Notable among these, C. Cagle claims to have developed a fusion energy device employing LENR based upon such a classical theory [28]. Normally, Deuterium nuclei are diffuse in momentum space (having high relative velocities). The process Cagle outlines produces a compactification of their momentum space (low relative velocities), so that the deuterons develop a common de Broglie wavelength that is greater than or equal to the inter-particle distance. This is claimed to be accomplished by passing soft x-ray photons near the region of two deuterons in a lattice structure of Lithium Deuteride. **The soft x-ray, when absorbed , produces a region of total *time-dilation*, causing two effects: first, ionization of atoms by strongly repelling any associated electrons in the area, and secondly and most importantly, the physical extent of the time-dilation causes two adjacent normally repelling Deuterium nuclei to overlap in a common momentum space; that is, their relative velocities achieve very low values.** Consequently, due to the time dilation, for a very short time their common de Broglie wavelength exceeds their inter-particle distance. Thus, they become strongly attractive and undergo nuclear fusion.

Cagle also claims to clarify misconceptions about the fusion process in a thermonuclear bomb. He maintains that it is not due to extreme kinetic energies (high temperatures) of particles as supposed in current paradigms, but due to nuclear processes caused by absorption of a time-dilated soft photon flux, produced by Compton scattering of hard x-rays from a fission igniter, passing through a foil of depleted Uranium. Again, just like the controlled nuclear fusion process, this causes overlapping of deuterons in momentum space (low kinetic energies) for a few pico seconds, and subsequent fusion with normal exothermal processes ensuing.

Furthermore, as a fundamental component of his LENR fusion device, which ostensibly produces time dilation and controls energy production from the fusion process, Cagle incorporates a topological field structure termed an electromagnetotoroid. The toroidal field current oscillates between toroidal and poloidal modes in a dynamic cycle which is amazingly virtually identical to Killick's description of the oscillation dynamics of a single unit toroidal tachion [1,6](also see Cagle's website for animated simulation).

Regarding dynamics of astrophysical structures, Cagle further claims that the stellar jet core star of HH30 is also a gigantic electromagnetotoroid. During the poloidal current mode, vast quantities of matter are produced and ejected along the poloidal axis when the mode changes from poloidal to toroidal. This leads one to consider the possibility that the source of superluminal gamma ray bursters, which have heretofore mystified astrophysicists and defied explanation in terms of current paradigms, might be the result of large- scale abrupt changes in the time-frame of celestial vacuum regions, subsequently causing a boost in light velocity.

Implications of Non-scalable Metrics

When postulating fluid-field natures for the four yardsticks of physical reality: time, space, energy and mass, we must assume the existence of a *non-scalable* metric for our vacuum structure. Such a non-scalable vacuum, absent of a defined reference frame, must of necessity possess a *dual* nature. That is, the primary feature of a dual vacuum structure implies that infinitely small quantities must be treated on an equal footing with those that are infinitely large. In other words, information encoded into infinitesimal elements, is also instantly present in the unbounded infinite extents as well. This is tantamount to the existence of a holographic information encoding and transmitting vacuum field, which would structure events in space and time as a non-Markovian chain. In a non-Markovian chain of events, the prediction about the next link in the chain, requires a knowledge of **all** links, not just the one preceding it.

Metod Saniga's research into mystical perceptions of superconscious reality appears to support such a primordial non-Markovian holographic mapping of time and space. To quote from a transcript of such a vision: "I wake up in a whole different world…a different space…This space was distinct from the one we all know. It had different dimensions, everything contained everything else. One was situated in a state of being in which the 'will be' (future) and the 'vanishing' (past) were already included, and this being was my consciousness. It contained it all. The 'being contained' was present very vividly in a geometric way in the form of circles of different sizes which again were all part of a unity since all of the circles formed exactly one circle. The biggest circle was a part of the smallest and vice versa."[20].

Such a structure of time and space can best be topologically encoded in a non-orientable structure such as the Moebius band or Klein bottle. Similar to the data presented in the above mystical revelations and in the previously treated Killick tachion-pair dynamics [1,5], in such configurations "inside" and "outside" lose their meanings and meld into one another; ordinary dichotomic relations distinguishing thesis from antithesis are sublated and supplanted by a higher unity defining the evolutionary process of the system. In the

mathematical edifice abstracted from such a vacuum structure, duality rather than exclusivity of field structures holds sway. This in turn, presupposes a static-dynamic triality of fundamental field structures, characterized by the three magnitudes: zero, infinity and the mediating factor of unity, the latter being an indication that each of the other two field extremes are in perfect balance. Accordingly, we will assume that the stability (coherency) of non-scalable fields results whenever more than half their reality is in common.

Further development pertaining to a specific algebraic-geometric structure that would inherently incorporate this field model, will be carried out in a future paper. Nevertheless, the interested reader can skirmish on this frontier by consulting the relevant recent references to a Clifford-algebraic structure which encodes the projective duality of "space" and "counterspace" into a model for mechanics on the quantum level [29]. This promising model accounts classically for the phenomenon of quantum non-locality. It also heralds a new version of quantum field theory which, by treating electron-positron pairs as topologically non-orientable, is free of the detrimental divergences in self energy and charge, thus obviating the necessity for the ad hoc prescription of renormalization so endemic to current theory [30].

However, due to the limited scope of the current treatment, here we shall only make general comments on the significance of the above-mentioned concept of field triality. Although this model may appear foreign to current physical theory, we underscore that exactly such a system was delineated by W. Smith in the book, The New Science [5]. Observing, as we have [1], that this book in some parts of its exposition can cause confusion, we carefully choose the following selected passages that are most instructive in clarifying the notion of non-scalable metrics and in pointing the way to new paradigms (my comments in parentheses). General comment on non-scalable metrics: "Unity is half way between zero and infinity and always remains the fulcrum about which all other values regardless of scale pivot". On the electric field: "Between the two limits of zero and infinity and through unity there is divergence which we recognize as the electric field, but with the exception that there is no point charge at zero. Our awareness establishes the charge at radius unity with exactly half of it being 'inside' and the other half being 'outside'". On tempic field dynamics: "The tempic field being purely scalar in nature merely contributes to the manner in which changes can occur in the system. If, however, through some characteristic of configuration, the tempic field within a composite particle displays some irregularity, this will manifest as a 'vibration', and if the magnitude of the vibration is sufficient as to cause the interpenetrating fields to exceed the half-and-half point , the whole system will come apart: radioactivity. When a system does come apart, those field which were coherent and interpenetrating in the correct proportion will remain so and take off down the tempic field gradient and become radiated energy". On velocity of light/Planck's constant: "Within the universe we perceive, we are reasonably satisfied that the maximum value of all the coherent fields involved in our particles and radiated energy have the same value. Planck's constant is the numerical expression of this value, and the velocity of light is the expression of the numerical value of the (local) tempic field intensity". On nuclear fusion: "If a region is selected in which there

are two fields of the same kind, same magnitude, same direction, such that very nearly half the reality of each is within the region, then the two fields are just on the verge of becoming coherent. If the fields are not coherent, the total energy in the region is the sum of the energies of the two fields; i.e., twice the square of the field intensity of each integrated over the region, or twice the energy of the two fields incoherent. This represents the 'packing energy' of bits and pieces of atomic nuclei, and also points the way to the precipitation of energy out of the cosmic background (vacuum engineering)". Notice how this description, written 45 years ago, of how a tempic field gradient (time-stress) operates between atomic nuclei to produce coherency (half-in half-out condition), perfectly parallels the recent Cagle view, which claims the fusion process takes place only as a function of time-dilation [28]. Finally, on gravitation: "With the exception of skew electric fields (electric field possessing tempic field gradient) all the other fields of an aggregate mass may be considered as static because they have no component of the tempic field at right angles to them. The skew fields (spiral-helical?) on the other hand, are dynamic because they do have a quadrature tempic field component. Furthermore, skew fields are largely incoherent (gravitation cannot normally be shielded) simply because the usual almost random orientation precludes their meeting the half-in requirement of form to become coherent. Since the gravitational field is due to the skew electric field, or stated differently, to the induction from the 'motional magnetic field' (longitudinally moved magnetic field), this is the logical region to explore for the mechanism by which fields may be produced to combine with the gravitational field (of Earth) to produce a resultant more to our liking (alteration of local gravitational potential)".

This last quote describes the gravitational field of a mass as a residual field phenomenon, similarly to the Sakharov and Puthoff conclusions which attribute gravitational and inertial mass to the interaction of accelerated or gravitating matter with the zero-point-vacuum-fluctuations (ZPF) causing a vacuum reaction force [31]. Moreover, similar to the Hestenes' claims, in their recent papers [32], Haisch/Rueda/Dobyns propose that, via this new interpretation of inertial mass as an acceleration-dependent electromagnetic (Lorentz) force, that a former postulate of quantum mechanics appears to be derivable classically via the interpretation of rest mass as the energy of the ZPF driven zitterbewegung; that is, the de Broglie wavelength of a moving particle, may be derived from Doppler shifts of the Compton frequency oscillations associated with zitterbewegung that occurs when a particle is placed in motion.

For further studies of physical theories with non-scalable metrics, the reader is directed to the excellent work of A.A. Nassikas [16]. Like few theories hitherto postulated, Nassikas posits a fundamental probability density function for vacuum energy, out of which oscillatory-deformable sub-atomic level physical aspects of time and space then emerge. This is the reverse to most contemporary paradigms, which view energy as a derivative of matter, time and space, even at the quantum level. Finally, A. Frolov has used Nassikas' theory to explain over-unity energy generation that has been demonstrated in some LENR electrolytic cells of the Pons-Fleischmann variety [17].

Editor: Actually Prof. Nassikas wrote in this patent that the idea which is described in the patent was proposed by Alexander Frolov. In 1996 these questions were discussed by us in Saint-Petersburg. Specifically, a Palladium cathode over-saturated with protons produces an imbalance of the vacuum engine in this area, with an accompanying change in the local time-rate and subsequent breakdown in the Coulomb barrier of the nuclei as per schemes articulated by C. Cagle [28] and T. Bearden [15].

Conclusions

In this journey through the latest research and speculations involving new interpretations of the four physical yardsticks: time, space, energy and mass, we hope the reader and technical specialists/theorists have been inspired to continue research along the lines suggested in the above dissertation. In this regard, certain open-ended questions present themselves that focus squarely on the viability of technological future developments in the new energy field. First, could the missing element in our eventual understanding of all devices featuring documented over-unity energy generation, change in mass (gravitational potential), LENR-based transmutation of elements and the amelioration of radioactivity, etc., be due the alteration of local time-flow in sub-atomic vacuum fields within the apparatus? Secondly, could the frustrating feature of the capriciousness of over-unity power and the like to yield to testable replication in many cases, be due to currently unperceived uncontrollable aspects of time and the vacuum which must be addressed in order to solve these problems? Thirdly, could incorporation of non-orientable topological structures such as the Moebius band, Klein bottle, etc. in new models of electrodynamic field structure, be instrumental in finding the answers to both of the previous questions? With sufficient probing for possible answers to such questions, the present author has the firm belief that new paradigms are certain to soon result that will crystallize these thoughts into viable scientific hypotheses subject to experimental testable verification. As an offshoot and definite bonus of this process, possibly a new more expansive understanding of the role of the vacuum in both nature and consciousness will be in the offing.

References

1. D. Reed, "A New Paradigm for Time: Evidence from Empirical and Esoteric Sources", Explore!-for the Professional, vol. 4/5 July/Sept., 2002.
2. J. Roberts, unpublished remarks as transcribed by W.H. Kautz.
3. J. Roberts, The Seth Material, Prentice-Hall, Inc., 1970, pp. 292-298.
J. Roberts, The "Unknown" Reality, Prentice-Hall, Inc., 1986.
4. L. Carroll, Alchemy of the Human Spirit (Kryon Book III), The Kryon Writings, 1995.
L. Carroll, Letters From Home (Kryon Book VI), The Kryon Writings, 1998.
L. Carroll, Passing the Marker (Kryon Book VIII), The Kryon Writings, 2000.
5. W. Smith, The New Science, Fern-Graphic Pub., 1964.
6. D. Reed & K. Killick, "Tachion Energy Theory", Energy Unlimited, 1978-1983.
7. A. Correa & P. Correa, "Consequences of the Null Result of the Michelson-Morley Experiment: The Demise of the Stationary Aether, the Rise of Special Relativity and the Heuristic Concept of the Photon", Infinite Energy, no. 38, July-Aug. 2001, pp. 47-64. A. Correa & P. Correa, "The Sagnac and Michelson-Gale Experiments", Infinite Energy, no. 39, Sept.-Oct. 2001, pp. 32-49.
8. N. Kozyrev, "On the Possibility for the Experimental Investigation of the Properties of Time", Time in Science and Philosophy, Prague, 1971, pp. 111-132.
N. Kozyrev, "An Unexplored World", Soviet Life, 1965.
A.P. Levich, On the Way to Understanding the Time Phenomenon (Part II: The Active Properties of Time According to N. A. Kozyrev), World Scientific, Singapore, 1996.
9. D. Reed, "Torsion Field Research and Implications for New Physics and Energy Technologies", Jour. New Energy, vol. 4, no. 2, Fall, 1999, pp. 151-164.
10. J. Hutchison, "The Hutchison Effect Apparatus", Proc. of the 1st Symp. On New Energy, Denver, May, 1994, p. 199.
J. Hutchison, "Inside the Hutchison Effect", Extraordinary Science, vol. III, issue 4, Oct-Dec. 1991, pp. 23-26.
11. T. Valone (ed), Mechanical Energy from Gravitational Anisotropy, Integrity Research Institute, Washington, DC, 1996.
W. Peschka, "Kinetobaric Effect as Basis For a New Propulsion Principle", Raumfahrt-Forschung, Feb, 1974 (in German); trans. By D. Reed, Infinite Energy, vol. 4, issue no. 22, 1998, pp. 52-56.
D. Reed, "Translator's Analysis and Comments on the Zinsser Effect Device, Infinite Energy, vol. 4, issue no. 22, 1998, pp. 57-59.
12. D. Hestenes, "Quantum Mechanics from Self-Interaction", Found. Phys., vol. 15, no. 1, 1985, pp. 63-87.
13. D. Hestenes, "The Zitterbewegung Interpretation of Quantum Mechanics", Found. Phys., vol. 20, no. 10, 1990, pp. 1213-1232.
14. D. Hestenes, "Zitterbewegung Modeling", Found. Phys., vol. 23, no. 3, 1992, pp. 365-387.
15. T. Bearden, Extracting and Using Electromagnetic Energy from the Active Vacuum, Association of Distinguished American Scientists, Huntsville, Alabama, 2000.
T. Bearden, "Giant Negentropy in the Common Dipole", Proc IC-2000, St. Petersburg, Russia, 2000(in Press)
16. A.A. Nassikas, " The Hypothesis of the Unified Field and the Principle of Its Dual Interpretation", Proc. Of III Int. Conf. On Problems of Space Time and Gravitation, Russian Academy of Sciences, St. Petersburg, Russia, 1996.
17. A. Frolov, "The Work Created by Means of a Potential Field", Proc of III Int. Conf. On Problems of Space Time and Gravitation, Russian Academy of Sciences, St. Petersburg, Russia, 1996.
18. V. Chernobrov, "Experiments on the Change of the Direction and Rate of Time Motion", Proc. Of III Int. Conf. On Problems of Space Time and Gravitation, Russian Academy of Sciences, St. Petersburg, Russia, 1996.
19. A.V. Chernetsky, "Processes in Plasma Systems with Electric Charge Division", Deutsche Vereinigung fur Schwerkraft-Feld Energie e. V. no. 25, Mar. 1991, no. 27, Feb. 1992.
20. M. Saniga,"Unveiling the Nature of Time-Altered States of Consciousness and Pencil-Generated Space-Times", Int. Jour. Of Transdisciplinary Studies, vol. 2, no. 2, pp. 8-17.
21. C. Sano, "Twisting and Untwisting of Spirals of Aether and Fractal Vortices Connecting Dynamic Aethers", Jour. New Energy, vol. 6, no. 2, Fall 2001, pp. 178-184.
22. A.P. Smirnov, "Hyper-Physics - Physics of Reality", Kneeling Before the Truth, pp. 62-100, Materials of the 2nd Int. Scientific Clarification Conf.-2000, St. Petersburg, Russia,(2000).
23. I.M. Shakhparonov, "Interaction of Kozyrev-Dirac Emanation Methods of Detection and Interaction with Matter", Proc. Of III Int. Conf. On Problems of Space Time and Gravitation, Russian Academy of Sciences, St. Petersburg, Russia, 1996, pp. 175-187.
24. X. Chen, A New Interpretation of Quantum Theory – Time as a Hidden Variable, Apr. 2001, xxx.lanl.gov/abs/quant-ph/9902037.
25. R.Kiehn, Spinors, Minimal Surfaces, Torsion, Helicity, Chirality, Spin, Twistors, Orientation, Continuity, fractals, Point Particles, Polarization, the Light Cone and the Hopf Map, www.uh.edu/~rkiehn.
26. H. Kitada, Three Dimensional Time and Energy Operators and an Uncertainty Relation, July 200, xxx.lanl.gov/abs/quant-ph/0007028.
27. R.A. Close, "Torsion Waves in Three Dimensions: Quantum Mechanics with a Twist", Found. Phys. Lett., vol. 15, no. 1, Feb. 2002, pp. 71-83.
28. C. Cagle, (2001), www.singtech.com/.
29. O. Conradt," Mechanics in Space and Counterspace", Jour. Math Phys., vol. 41, no. 10, 2000, pp. 6995-7028.
30. B. Fauser "Projective Relativity- Present Status and Outlook", Gen. Rel. Grav, vol. 33, 2001, pp. 875-887.
31. H.E. Puthoff, Phys. Rev. A, vol 39,(1989), p. 2333. B. Haisch , A. Rueda & H.E. Puthoff, Phys. Rev. A, vol 49,(1994), p.678.
32. B. Haisch, A. Rueda & Y. Dobyns, "Inertial Mass and Quantum Vacuum Fields", Annalen der Physik, (Sept. 2000).
B. Haisch & A. Rueda, "On the Relation Between a Zero-Point-Field-Induced Inertial Effect and the Einstein-de Broglie Formula", Phys. Lett. A, vol. 268, (Apr. 2000), pp. 224-227.

Resonant Phenomena Occurring in Alternating Current Circuit

Alexander V. Frolov

Tel/fax: 7-(812)-380-38-44
E-mail: office@faraday.ru

There is a classical (according to manuals) notion that resonant phenomena can not influence on efficiency of a transformer or a motor as in a capacitive circuit or in an inductive circuit power produced at minimal power at the input of an oscillation circuit is reactive (let us remind that active power is measured at active resistance).

At the beginning of the last century this aspect was viewed differently. Advantages of a resonant case in alternating current circuits were used in practice. Let us appeal to a rare book by J. Claude-V. Ostwald named "Electricity and its applications by popular language" (I.N. Kushnerev Press, Moscow, 1914, p. 463).

"The phenomenon proceeds in a corresponding electric circuit as well as it occurs in hydraulic model: if self-induction and capacity parallel connected with each other are under influence of an alternating electric propulsion force then the total current coming through the system is equal to the difference of currents which pass two certain paths.
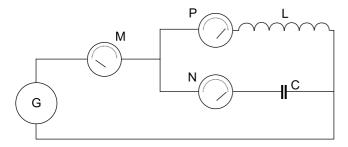
Fig.1

… join ammeters to the general circuit (M) and to either path (P and N). If P demonstrates 100 Amperes and N demonstrates 80 Amperes then the total current will be equal to 20 Amperes instead of 180 Amperes. Thus alternating current has its own "summary" so we should consider its condition. …capacity introduction compensates self-induction action in some way… let us begin to change the self-induction by moving a core into. What will happen if the current coming through the coil achieves 80 Amperes, i.e. is equal to the current observed in the path with a capacitor?
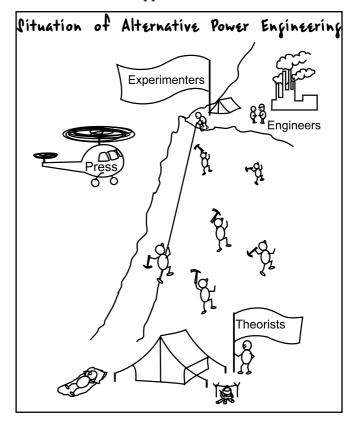
As you guess, since the total current is equal to difference between currents passing the paths then now it will be equal zero. It is an incredible case:the device produces zero current dividing into two paths and in each of these paths current is equal to 80 Amperes. It is a good example for the first acquaintance with alternating current, isn't it?"

Andrey A. Melnichenko (Moscow) is one of modern investigators who research this phenomenon. Any motor

of alternating current can be considered as inductance. A circuit consists of motor coils and some capacitor connected in series with the motor winding. Thus if we take the circuit, consisting of motor coils and a capacitor which is connected in series to motor winding and adjust it in resonance, then mechanical power occurring on the motor shaft is produced at zero (minimal) power consumption of an alternating current source.

Melnichenko applied a simple method of voltage increase by meanse of resonance: he succeeded in obtaining of normal voltage for operation of standard motors of 50 Hz 220 V from a source of 50 Hz 110 V and 70 V. The circuit consumption for overcoming of its active resistance (of coils) can be considered as insignificant. Low frequency currents require a large capacitor. Nevertheless even at higher frequency, for example at 400 Hz, the system can be compact and effective. This method is worth to be applied in a scheme consisting of an alternating current motor in resonance mode and an electric generator which has a stable load. Change of load causes change of rotation speed therefore the system requires to be readjusted for resonance.

Experiments with powerful alternating current motors (about 100 Amperes as J.C. Ostwald wrote) working in resonance mode should demonstrate all advantages of the resonance mode application.

Space Power Generator
and Paramahamsa Tewari Update

Submitted by Toby Grotz, USA

http://www.tewari.org

A new generation of Space Power Generators is being built by Paramahamsa Tewari. The new design is expected to achieve substantial gains over previous models which has been measured over unity by experts in the utility industry as well as by independent consultants. Details are presented on the web site http://www.tewari.org.

From the Electron to a Perpetual System of Motion

Paramahamsa Tewari, B.Sc. Engg

As is well known, an electron, despite high-speed interactions with electric and magnetic fields and other particles of matter, remains unaffected structurally—maintaining its mass, charge, inertia, and locality after the interactions. This single fact itself is sufficient to postulate on the existence of some unique universal entity constituting the electron, such that the structure explains the known properties and behavior of the electron – as to how it sustains the collisions with the other particles and, yet, remains permanently indestructible without any reduction in the quantities of its basic properties. A theory that explains this enigmatic fact is framed and described in detail elsewhere. It reveals that the electron is a perpetually rotating system, a space-vortex (vortex of absolute vacuum) that through the process of motion in electric current, and interaction with external magnetic field can also lead to the development of a system partially violating Lenz's law and, thereby, capable of achieving perpetual motion in a machine. Such a conclusion has a new theoretical basis, as well as experimental confirmation – briefly outlined in this paper.

The basic understanding of the interaction of electric current with magnetic fields requires deeper knowledge of the fundamental nature of the electric current as well the magnetic field; this, in turn, leads to an inquiry on the nature of "electric charge" and its distribution in the electron structure. The origin of electron mass and charge, electrostatic and electrodynamic forces are described below with the vortex structure of electron, which further facilitates explanation of atomic structure and, thereafter, an over-unity efficiency generator. Due to brevity, predominantly qualitative-descriptions of the physical processes involved have been presented.

The full theory and diagrams are presented in From the Electron to a Perpetual System of Motion at http://www.tewari.org.
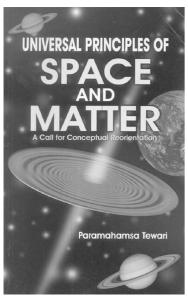
Universal Principles of Space and Matter
(A Call for Conceptual Reorientation)

A new book, *Universal Principles of Space and Matter* has just been published by Paramahamsa Tewari. Arangements are being made with the publisher to provide these books outside of India. The price is expected to be about $30 depending on shipping costs from India.

A new theory of matter, that confronts with the existing concepts of space in the contemporary physics.

The basic phenomena dealt with are:

* Structural interrelationship between space and matter
* Origin of mass, inertia, and electric charge
* Creation of the electron from space

* Discovery of new fundamental equations on mass and charge
* Derivation of the presently known universal constants (gravitational, Coulomb's constant, dielectric, magnetic permeability, electron charge, electron mass, Planck's constant etc.) with the postulate of a single universal costant – the speed of light in the absolute vacuum
* Discovery of an inward force in nuclear structure against the Coulomb repulsive forces, hitherto unknown
* Relationship between light and gravity
* Theoretical derivation of the surface gravity of the Earth, Sun and the planets
* Discovery of electrical repulsive forces between the Sun and the planets, unknown in celestial mechanics
* Derivation of the planetary orbits
* Prediction of the continuous creation of universal matter at glactic centers and existence of electrical forces of interaction btween the stars and galaxies, so far least suspected
* Identifying the fundamental particle of matter
* Revelation of conceptual errors in the modern understanding of the basic nature of light
* Vindication of Einstein's conclusion of the speed of light as the limiting speed
* Vindication of Descartes' principle of property-less ether.

New Reviews of P. Tewari's work

New reviews of P. Tewari's work have been received from Dr. John A. Wheeler and Prof. Umberto Bartocci. A copy of Universal Principles of Space and Matter was forwarded this summer to Dr. John A. Wheeler at his summer residence in Maine.

Dr. Wheeler saw the development of modern physics while working with Neils Bhor at age 27 and was a colleague of Albert Einstein's at Princeton. Credited with being the "father of the Black Hole Theory", Dr. Wheeler is well schooled in quantum mechanics and relativity.

After receiving his copy of Universal Principle of Space and Matter Dr. Wheeler called the book "a unique gift". Further reviews of P. Tewari's work by Dr. Wheeler can be found at: http://www.tewari.org/Critical_Reviews/critical_reviews.html.

Prof. Umberto Bartocci

Universita' di Perugia
Dipartimento di Matematica e Informatica Via Vanvitelli
06100 PERUGIA - ITALY
Tel.: (39)-075-5002494
E-mail: bartocci@dipmat.unipg.it

This is a very singular book, in front of the current paradigm of contemporary Physics, a "cartesian-inspired" work which calls for reorientation in the foundations, by wisely warning that:

The conclusion of the modern physics that absolute space, time, simultaneity, and space filling media are discredited ideas is certainly premature (p. 178).

The books deals with arguments such as: Discovery of Charge and Mass Equations; Fundamental States of Cosmic Energy, Fields and Forces; Gravitation; Universal Constants; Motion of Electron; Atomic Structure; Light; Creation of Cosmic Matter (about Tewari's physical conceptions see also the second section of this Episteme's special issue http://www.dipmat.unipg.it/~bartocci).

Rotating device powered by permanent magnets

Minato Wheel

http://fdp.hemsida.net

Experiments made in Sweden
by Eric Vogels

Read about launch vehicle "Lightcraft" in the review
"Commercial exploration of space"

http://www.lightcrafttechnologies.com
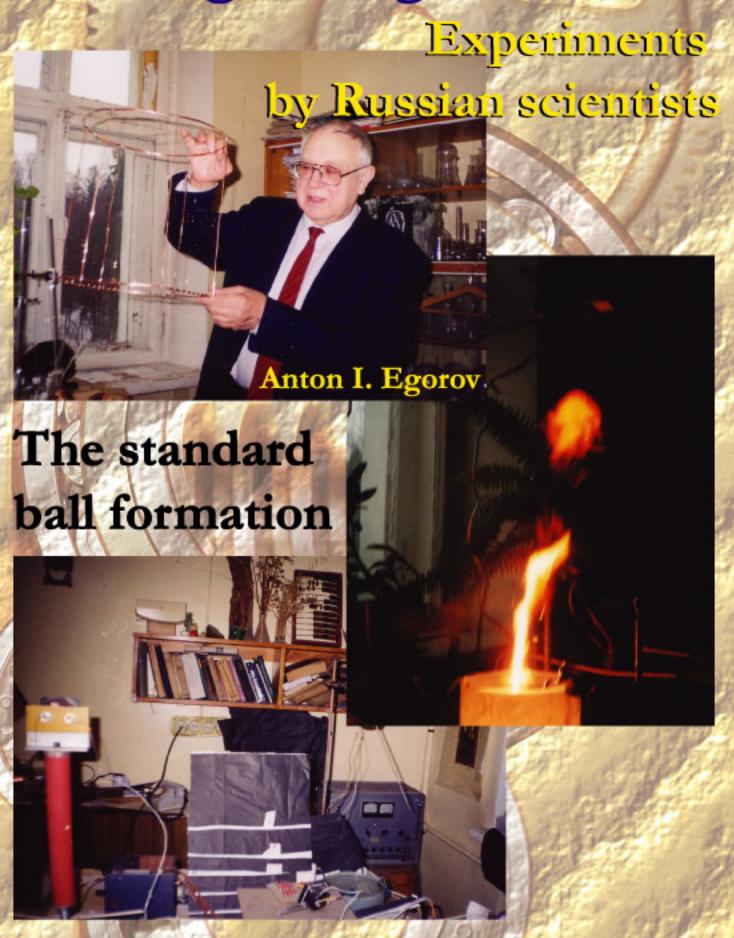
"Lightcraft" is made
for space flights
by means of megawatt
laser beam
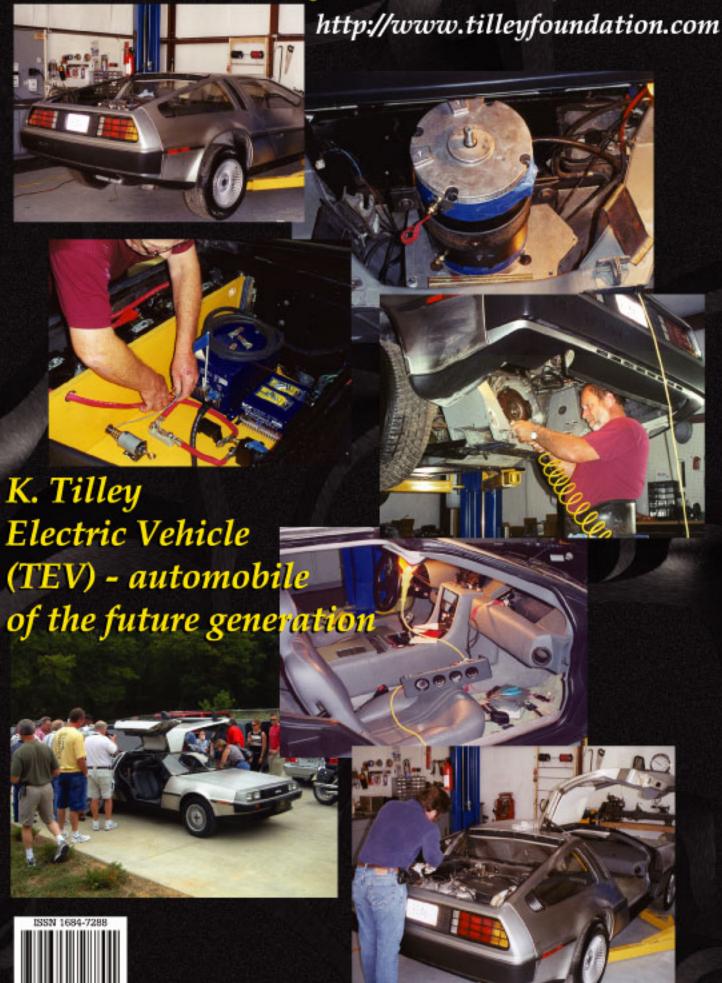
Lightcraft Technologies, Inc.

Ball Lightning control

Experiments by Russian scientists

Anton I. Egorov

The standard ball formation

Read in this issue!

Tilley Foundation, Inc.
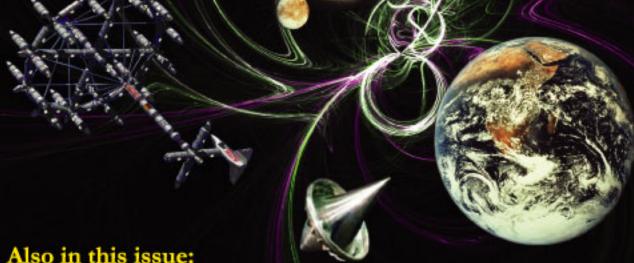
http://www.tilleyfoundation.com

**K. Tilley
Electric Vehicle
(TEV) - automobile
of the future generation**

New Energy Technologies

Commercial exploration of space

Also in this issue:

- New experiments on magnetic motors

- Ball lightning in laboratory environment

- Alternative aircrafts and space propulsion systems

NEW ENERGY TECHNOLOGIES #11

Perfect Energy Source

Minato wheel. Experiments in Sweden

Eric Vogels, Sweden

E-mail: fdp@hemsida.net
http://fdp.hemsida.net

Fig. 2

The self-running bicycle wheel was shown to the public at the First International New Science Symposium in 1997, held in Korea. The inventor of the wheel, Mr. Kohei Minato, was a speaker during the symposium. On www.keelynet.com you can find the quote of an eye-witness:

"The motor is actuated by moving the N pole of a large permanent magnet (the drive magnet) toward the wheel. As this magnet is moved toward the wheel, the wheel starts to spin. As the magnet is moved closer to the wheel it spins faster.

The acceleration of the wheel is rapid. So rapid in fact, as to be startling. To put it another way I was very impressed. The motor works. And it works very well. In the film clip (see http://fdp.hemsida.net) a slight pumping action of Minato's hand holding the magnet is apparent. When I braced my hand so that there was no pumping action, the motor still ran. In fact it seemed to run better.
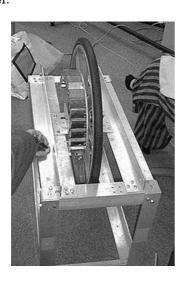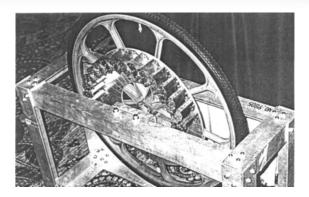
Pumping action by the hand held magnet **is not** the power that drives the motor. When the drive magnet is moved away from the wheel it coasts rather quickly to a stop and comes to rest in a manner typical of any spinning bicycle wheel. Again when the wheel is at rest and a large magnet is moved up to the wheel it starts to spin. At no time it is necessary to touch the wheel to get it rotating."

Fig. 3

Fig. 1
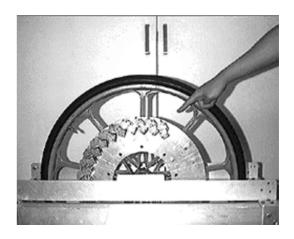
Fig. 4

Since the symposium in 1997 and the first publications in the Internet several people have tried to replicate the wheel, as it seemed to be a **perfect energy source for the future**. Some claims are made that replication was successful but no proof in the form of pictures or video clips are given.

Because I have a great interest in magnets and free energy and the fact that I did a lot of experiments to find a device that could be rotated only by means of permanent magnets, I decided to try to replicate the wheel by myself.

This journey started by searching on the Internet and collecting all the material that was available. A good way to sort all the found material was building my own website at http://fdp.hemsida.net where all my findings are presented.

One of the devices I build was made from a 'how to build a Minato wheel'-manual that I found on the Internet.
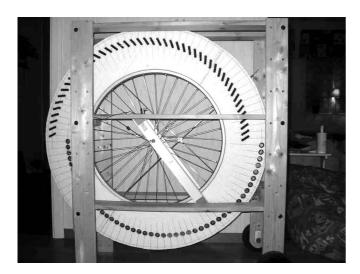
Fig. 5

Unfortunately this wheel did not show any movement at all. I mounted the magnets at several angles and distances from the rim without achieving any positive results. Since the size of the wheel (1 meter diameter) was not very practical to handle and since the results were negative I searched for an easier way for testing. I found that the use of Styrofoam, an old turntable and Neodymium disc magnets kept the whole project within the edges of my kitchen table. I developed a computer program to help me design wheels, since I want to be able to replicate my own wheel, in case I find a model that works. I do not believe in an engine that works after several weeks of tuning and that fails to function as soon as one magnet is replaced. Individual tuning is okay to optimise a working design but if a design does not show the potential to rotate by itself it's a flawed design.

After optimising the way to build the small wheels, I could design and make a wheel in 30 minutes.

I made a test scenario and the results for every test were posted on the web site.
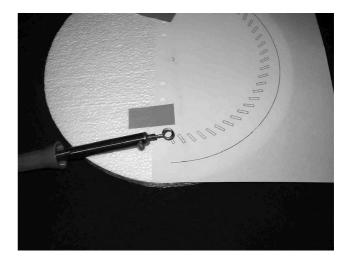
Fig. 6

I searched for the 'perfect' angle, number of magnets and position. The set-up with the strongest thrust was used as the base for the other experiment. By this time I realized that I was not really trying to rebuild the Minato wheel but that I wanted **a rotating device, powered by permanent magnets.**

When for the first time I decided to split a track of magnets that covered 180 degrees of the wheel in a number of smaller tracks, **the results became much better**.

Fig. 7

By using this way of placing the magnets, every track differs a little bit from the next track, depending on its place on the wheel. The angle of the magnets influences on the thrust that is given by the stator magnet, depending on the speed that the track is entering the magnetic field of the stator. In other words: the track at the beginning of the wheel, with magnets covered side of the wheel, gives less thrust than the track at the end. This is important since a track with a lot of thrust has a big 'sticky spot' that should pass the stator. This 'sticky spot' stops the wheel during its rotation just before the first track enters the magnetic field of the stator.

During the last experiments the stator magnet changed place and pushed against the magnetic fields of the tracks from above. Simply because more thrust was developed by this way. The next wheel will have the tracks mounted on a different level. It means that the first track will have a bigger distance to the stator magnet than the last track. This should make the sticky spot weaker and the final 'kick off' stronger. The final wheel will be mounted vertically, like the Minato Wheel.

Thanks to the invention of the Neodymium magnet in 1983, magnets became much more powerful while the size and length decreased. Before 1983 a lot of the experiments could not be done since the size of the magnets made the positioning of several magnets in tracks like this was impossible. It is my personal believes that the strength of these magnets will lead to results that are impossible according to the physical law books, because these magnets did not exist when those books were written.

Until the moment I write this I have not found the perfect energy source yet but by exploitation all the material and findings on my web site I hope that more people get interested and will help searching for a great energy device that will not pollute the air which our children and grand children have to breath.

Mechanism of Drive-Free Motion

Sergey A. Gerasimov, Russia

Physics Department, Rostov State University, Rostov-on-Don, 344090
Email: GSIM1953@mail.ru

The article presents results of the experimental study of the motion created by vibrations of an internal mass of the system of bodies accompanied by impacts of the unbalanced load with the external body. This type of propulsion drive is known by a number of names. Among these are the **vibrational propulsion device** *and* **reactionless machine**. *Sometimes it is called the* **inertioid** *[1, 2]. The vibrational transposition is proved to go on by means of internal forces of a system of bodies [3-5]. The Tolchin's inertioid [6] is considered to be the first device that used the forces of inertia to create the reactionless infinite motion in space. We are not in a position to be a judge of this. There exist a number of projects of such machines but experimental results concerning such kind of motion are very limited. Below there are the experimental results on average velocities of such a motion and the description of a propulsion device a main particularity of which is absence of wheel-drive.*

Fig. 1
Scematic representation of a vibratory-impact self-transposition

The unbalanced load in this device is an electric motor E of mass m that executes undumped vibrations relative to a platform P of mass M with four wheels W which can roll on a horizontal surface L with rolling friction the coefficient of which is k. The frictional force is determined to be a force which adjusts to keep the cart from motion across a surface. A disk cam C at one end of the axle of the motor ensures a prescribed character of the vibrations and elastic impacts between the load m and the follower B of radius a. In present experimental device, the cam C consists of two semicircles of different radii r and R as it is shown in Fig.1. In this experiment $r=0.03$m, $R=0.05$m and $a=0.01$m. The electric motor and the platform are coupled by a connecting spring S. The force F by means of which the electric motor is pressed to the follower varies linearly from $F=4$N at $x=0.04$m to $F=4.8$N at $x=0.08$m. The compressed spring S is necessary not only for creating close contact between the cam and the follower. The restoring force of the spring produces the transposition of the cart in a direction opposite to **F** when the follower moves without contact from x=2R-r+a up to an impact at x=r+a. The impact suppresses the transposition. Another mode of transposition is also possible when the impact of the cam on the follower is a reason of the transposition of the cart in the direction of the force **F**. In this case the frictional force extinguishes the transposition of the cart.

Friction between the load of mass m and the cart is negligible since the corresponding effective coefficient is less than 0.001. The same is for the friction between the cam and the follower. The mass of the spring is $m_s=0.007$ kg , and the mass of the cam is $m_c=0.019$ kg. The total mass of the wheels is $m_w=0.082$ kg. This value can be useful for a theoretical

During the last experiments the stator magnet changed place and pushed against the magnetic fields of the tracks from above. Simply because more thrust was developed by this way. The next wheel will have the tracks mounted on a different level. It means that the first track will have a bigger distance to the stator magnet than the last track. This should make the sticky spot weaker and the final 'kick off' stronger. The final wheel will be mounted vertically, like the Minato Wheel.

Thanks to the invention of the Neodymium magnet in 1983, magnets became much more powerful while the size and length decreased. Before 1983 a lot of the experiments could not be done since the size of the magnets made the positioning of several magnets in tracks like this was impossible. It is my personal believes that the strength of these magnets will lead to results that are impossible according to the physical law books, because these magnets did not exist when those books were written.

Until the moment I write this I have not found the perfect energy source yet but by exploitation all the material and findings on my web site I hope that more people get interested and will help searching for a great energy device that will not pollute the air which our children and grand children have to breath.

Mechanism of Drive-Free Motion

Sergey A. Gerasimov, Russia

Physics Department, Rostov State University, Rostov-on-Don, 344090
Email: GSIM1953@mail.ru

The article presents results of the experimental study of the motion created by vibrations of an internal mass of the system of bodies accompanied by impacts of the unbalanced load with the external body. This type of propulsion drive is known by a number of names. Among these are the **vibrational propulsion device** *and* **reactionless machine**. *Sometimes it is called the* **inertioid** *[1, 2]. The vibrational transposition is proved to go on by means of internal forces of a system of bodies [3-5]. The Tolchin's inertioid [6] is considered to be the first device that used the forces of inertia to create the reactionless infinite motion in space. We are not in a position to be a judge of this. There exist a number of projects of such machines but experimental results concerning such kind of motion are very limited. Below there are the experimental results on average velocities of such a motion and the description of a propulsion device a main particularity of which is absence of wheel-drive.*

Fig. 1
Scematic representation of a vibratory-impact self-transposition

The unbalanced load in this device is an electric motor E of mass m that executes undumped vibrations relative to a platform P of mass M with four wheels W which can roll on a horizontal surface L with rolling friction the coefficient of which is k. The frictional force is determined to be a force which adjusts to keep the cart from motion across a surface. A disk cam C at one end of the axle of the motor ensures a prescribed character of the vibrations and elastic impacts between the load m and the follower B of radius a. In present experimental device, the cam C consists of two semicircles of different radii r and R as it is shown in Fig.1. In this experiment $r=0.03$m, $R=0.05$m and $a=0.01$m. The electric motor and the platform are coupled by a connecting spring S. The force F by means of which the electric motor is pressed to the follower varies linearly from $F=4$N at $x=0.04$m to $F=4.8$N at $x=0.08$m. The compressed spring S is necessary not only for creating close contact between the cam and the follower. The restoring force of the spring produces the transposition of the cart in a direction opposite to **F** when the follower moves without contact from x=2R-r+a up to an impact at x=r+a. The impact suppresses the transposition. Another mode of transposition is also possible when the impact of the cam on the follower is a reason of the transposition of the cart in the direction of the force **F**. In this case the frictional force extinguishes the transposition of the cart.

Friction between the load of mass m and the cart is negligible since the corresponding effective coefficient is less than 0.001. The same is for the friction between the cam and the follower. The mass of the spring is $m_s=0.007$ kg , and the mass of the cam is $m_c=0.019$ kg. The total mass of the wheels is $m_w=0.082$ kg. This value can be useful for a theoretical

analysis. Thus, the total mass of the unbalanced body is chosen to be much larger than the mass of the cam or the spring: $m = m_E + m_C + m_S \approx m_E$.
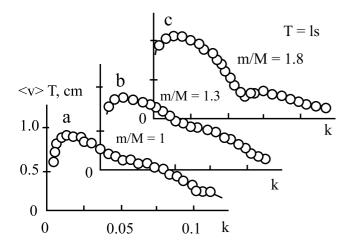
Fig. 2
Frictional coefficient dependence of average velocity of the platform at the period of vibrations $T=1$s for various mass ratios m/M:
(*a*) $M=0.9$ kg , (*b*) $m=1.2$ kg , (*c*) $m=1.6$ kg

At least in the case of irreversible mode, one could expect that the value of average velocity of transposition $<v>$ must be proportional to the number of impacts per unit of time. In the other words the path traveled by the cart per one impact must not depend on frequency of vibrations. This is a reason why the dependence of the product $<v>T$ versus the value of the friction coefficient k and ratio of masses $d = m/M$ is investigated in this work. Measurements were carried out for two magnitudes of rotation period $T= 1$s and $T=6$s of the cam. The obtained results are presented in Fig. 2 and Fig. 3. First of all, the assumption mentioned above is not confirmed.
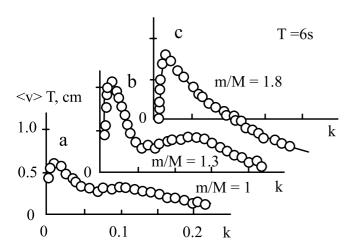
Fig. 3
Average velocity of the platform $<v>$ as a function of frictional coefficient k at $T=6$s for various mass ratios m/M: (*a*) $M=0.9$ kg , (*b*) $m=1.2$ kg , (*c*) $m=1.6$ kg

The value $<v>T$ for the period of the rotation $T=1$s sufficiently differs from that for $T=6$s measured at the same conditions. Besides, when the mass ratio is large the cart can change its direction of transposition. The reason of these results is not clear but this device provides a challenge to explain and investigate this kind of motion that enables us to discover the reactionless motion if it is probable. One should pay attention to a fact that the infinite transposition of the platform takes place even if the friction coefficient k is small.

References

1. Gulia N.V. *Inertia.* // Moscow: Nauka. 1982.
2. Aspden H. Anti-gravity Electronics. // *Electron and Wireless World.* 1989. V. 95. No 1635. P. 29-31.
3. Nappo F. Sulla Influenza Indiretta Delle Forze Inertne sul Moto del Baricentro. // *La Ricerca Scientifica (Rendiconti).* 1965. V. 8. No 1. P. 3-14.
4. Gerasimov S.A. Anisotropy of Frictional Force and Vibrational Transposition. // *Problems of Applied Physics.* 2001. V 7. P. 85-88.
5. Gerasimov S.A. Self-Similarity of Vibrational Motion in a Resistant Medium. // *Journal of Applied Mechanics and Technical Physics.* 2002. V. 43. No 1. P. 90-92.
6. Tolchin V.N. *Inertioid.* // Perm: Perm Book Publisher. 1977.

About the Author

Sergey A. Gerasimov graduated from Faculty of Experimental and Theoretical Physics of Moscow Physical Engineering Institute in 1976. Received Degree of PhD in Physics and Mathematics in 1987. Author of about 70 articles on Astrophysics, Atomic and Radiation Physics, Classical Electrodynamics and Mechanics. In present - Associate Professor of Department of General Physics of Rostov-on-Don State University. The fields of scientific interests are questionable problems in physics: self-interaction, self-transposition, unipolar induction.

Production of Ball Lightning in Laboratory Environment

Report by our correspondent Alla Pashova

Three years ago a working device producing a ball lightning in laboratory environment was designed in Saint-Petersburg Institute for Nuclear Physics (SPINP). The produced ball lightning is accessible for detail investigation and quite stable. The lifetime of the ball lightning comes to about one second that is rather significant for alike artificial formations. The experiments on the device made by scientists of SPINP, i.e. A. E. Egorov, G. D. Shabanov, S. Stepanov, are not supported or financed. Let us note that every scientist of the group searches proofs for his own hypothesis of nature and structure of the ball lightning at all.

A leading expert of SPINP, Anton I. Egorov, pays attention to dethronement of scientific myths:

— There is a myth of ball lightning that is created by mass media. The mythical ball lightning is a concentrate of mysterious energy which is extremely dangerous for a human. It destroys houses, kills animals, pursues people. After meeting it a human can lose his hair or teeth and different misfortunes begin to happen. Supposing a simple story of a farmer-eyewitness: "It thundered, and a fist-sized fire ball rolled down along a drainpipe. It fell into a barrel of water, the water gurgled. I came up to it and put my hand into the water. The water seemed to become warmer…". After republishing of the story by several newspapers a dramatic story about a ball lightning which has evaporated a barrel of water appears. No wonder that such familiar attitude to facts causes hundreds of hypotheses of ball lightning nature.

— **What is your hypothesis about ball lightning structure?**

— At the beginning of 90th I. D. Stakhanov, a member of Institute of Magnetism (IZMIRAN), developed a special method to interview eye-witnesses that resulted a right notion on ball lightning phenomenon. According to Stakhanov, ball lightning is a clot of hydrated plasma which is generated in wet air at electrical discharge.

Water as a chemical compound is remarkable for its anomalous properties: combining of two lightest elements does not generate gas but produces a high-boiling liquid. This is caused by extremely irregular distribution of electrons in a water molecule. Due to this property it acquires properties of an electric dipole. Water molecules interact with charged ions, aerosol particles, and with each other in a special way.

If a positive ion and a negative ion are introduced simultaneously into a puff of warm wet air then water dipoles immediately produce hydrate shells around the ions. When the hydrated positive ion approaches the hydrated negative ion additional water molecules are drown into gaps between them. As a result, there is a stable cluster in which the charged ions are conserved. The cluster consists of two ions of opposite charges and the hydrate shell. Water molecules prevent the ions' approaching and recombination, hence, lifetime of the ions in the cluster increases up to tens of minutes, i.e. in 12-13 orders. Interaction of clusters causes open-chain structures followed by space structures. That is to say, there is appeared a clot of cold hydrated plasma that accumulates great energy (up to 1 kylojoule per liter). The clot of plasma loses this energy at recombination of ions.

— **Could you, please, tell about the design of the device? What processes proceed when the device is operating?**

— Our task is to introduce an abundant population of ions into a puff of warm air saturated with water vapors. A base of the device for laboratory reproduction of ball lightning is a capacitor bank which is able to be charged up to 5.5 kV. The positive pole of the capacitor bank is connected to a ring electrode by means of a copper bar. The ring electrode is placed on a bottom of a polyethylene reservoir filled with water. The negative pole of the capacitor bank is connected to a carbonic electrode which is placed in the centre of the reservoir near water surface. A quartz pipe encloses the electrode in such a way that it is possible to drop water or to put some natural matter on it.

To generate a ball lightning 2-3 drops of water are put on the electrode. When impulse discharge occurs a bright plasma spout escapes the centre of the electrode that is accompanied by a quiet plop. A glowing plasmoid which is an artificial ball lightning parts from the plasma spout. It comes up slowly in the air and then disappears falling to pieces in 0.2-0.3 seconds.

We have made thousands of experiments for investigation of ball lightning properties, i.e. defining size, lifetime, colour, average temperature, excessive charge, content of a dust component.

It was ascertained that the artificial ball lightning is generated in a narrow interval of breakdown tensions. The average size of such a ball lightning is 12-20 cm,

and its lifetime comes to 1 second. Temperature of the ball lightning is not very high, i.e. 50° C. This can be defined if to take into account speed of rising of the ball lightning. If the plasmoid is accepted as a puff of warm wet air of 14-centimeter diameter which in atmosphere comes up at 293 K at speed of 1-1.2 m/sec then, consequently, its temperature should not exceed 330 K.

Colour of the lightning varies greatly and depends on presence of aerosol of matter trapped in the moment of discharge. Usually the lilac central part of the plasmoid is surrounded by a diffusive yellowish layer. Some admixture of natrium salt and calcium makes the core of the plasmoid yellow or orange.

If the central carbonic electrode is replaced by an iron or copper or aluminum one then the fundamental character of the phenomenon does not change. However, colour of the plasmoid depends on a radiation spectrum of excited atoms of the electrode, i.e. iron plasmoids are whitish, copper plasmoids are greenish, aluminum ones are white with reddish shimmer.

— **A generated ball lightning exists for about 1 second. How can it be made more stable?**

— Lifetime of an artificial ball lightning depends on many conditions, i.e. size and geometrical form of the central electrode, voltage between the electrodes, value and duration of a current impulse, temperature and electroconductivity of water which is put on the central electrode. Besides, lifetime of the plasmoid can be changed by introducing an additional dispersive phase into it. We have tested tens of matters and begun to investigate suspensions of colloidal graphite and fine-dyspersated ferric oxide.

A suspension of 3 g of colloidal graphite, 8-10 ml of acetone (which played role of penetrating agent), and 90 ml of water is put on the central carbonic electrode. When an electrical discharge occurs a layer of the suspension forms a flying spherical plasmoid. It comes up slowly and disappears in 0.3-0.8 seconds. The core of the plasmoid has a colour of flame, i.e. colour of burning carbon.

To prolong the existence of the generated ball lightning without application of aerosols it will be possible to use the so-called "Faraday's cylinder" whose production has been already begun. For the same purpose G.D. Shabanov proposes to put a stopping potential on a probe of detention.

— **There is an opinion that physical nature of ball lightning is similar to the process of controlled thermonuclear fusion. In this case, if your work on generation of a stable ball lightning is successful then you will be a competitor of the expensive project of controlled thermonuclear fusion.**

— I think that it is totally incorrect. Hydrated plasma is the first enemy of the thermo-nuclear fusion as water molecules do not allow neutrons approach each other. Effective cold fusion should be realized in organic liquids, for example, in heavy acetone or in a water-free medium. Somehow, it should be an absolutely "dry" process. No experiments on real "dry" cold fusion have been realized in practice. It has not been also examined the surfaces on which the combination of heavy hydrogen atoms produces maximal heating.

Scientists should pay attention to two most effective cold fusion processes. The first one expects association of two atoms of deuterium occurring on a totally dry deuterated surface which consists of, for example, zirconium deuteride. In the moment of fusion of a deuterium molecule local heating appears, and neutrons depart. The other perspective method of realization of the cold fusion process requires an absolutely "dry" organic liquid, i.e. liquid acetone in which hydrogen atoms are replaced by deuterium atoms (C_3D_6O) or by atoms of cyclic compound of $C_6(D_2)_6$. A tellurium or zirconium tip of an ultra-sonic dispersant is placed into a reservoir of this liquid. Cavitation blebs are formed on the surface of the dispersant. Neutron output comes to 10^4 particles. Maximal neutron output, which was achieved by Lipson, an American experimenter, consists of 10^8 neutrons at a desired result of 10^{13}. Certain quantity of neutrons can be obtained during ultrasonic cavitation which is accompanied by a phenomenon of sonoluminescence. Due to sound resonance the only cavitation bleb is generated in acetone. When the bleb collapses weak glowing is observed. The cause of this phenomenon consists in gas heating occurring in the bleb that is the result of high pressure produced by its collapse. The burst can last from 1/20 up to 1/1000 sec. Light intensiveness depends on quantity of gas in the bleb. If gas is absent in the bleb then the glowing does not occur. Light emission of the bleb is very weak, it becomes visible if it is strengthen or in absolute darkness.

— **Is it rightful that cold fusion is the future of world power engineering?**

To my mind another direction seems to be more perspective, i.e. extraction of uranium from sea water and then its burning in heavy hydrogen reactors like one which exists in Canada. Photo voltaic accumulators can also become a successful approach of the alternative traditional fuel engineering. By the way, a working model of such a device to utilize free solar energy has recently been created in our Institute (official web site: http://www.pnpi.spb.ru).

Editor: Read the publications on this theme in following issues of our magazine. Below there is a description of other attempts to generate a ball lightning in laboratory environment or at home. Besides, we publish an article dedicated to the problem of laser control of ball lightning. In the article there are photos (also see the cover page) and a scheme of the working device designed by this scientific group.

Ball Lightning Experiments

Ball Lightning in the Microwave

This is a great experiment to try at home. It requires a microwave oven, a candle, a toothpick and a lighter. First you put the candle (~1-2 inches in height) in the microwave (remove glass plate from bottom so candle sits on metal). Put the toothpick in the candle sticking straight up. Light the toothpick on fire so that flames are leaping off the tip. Shut the door quickly and turn on oven full blast. There will be loud popping noises and then balls of fire will leap from the toothpick and fly around inside the microwave while making a buzzing sound like a bee. If it doesn't work at first try to move the position of the candle in order to find the "hot spot" in the oven for it to work.

Real Ball Lightning Generated by Pulsed Power Inductor

This experiment is very DANGEROUS. The author did this one a few years ago. The Idea was got from an article about a guy generating ball lightning using a high current transformer (TBA). The author had an idea of using an inductor to store large amounts of electrical energy. The conductor on the end of the stick touches the metal ring. This completes the circuit, and start the inductor. Then there was used the air compressor nozzle to blow out the arc as the wire was pulled away. The copper wire explodes and creates rapidly rotating and burning molten balls of copper. These 'Balls of Fire' exhibit many of the properties of real ball lightning.

Electric Discharge Produced into Air Half-Space

Gennady D. Shabanov, Russia

Tel. +7(271)46477
E-mail: discharge@gtn.ru

Oleg M. Zherebtsov, Russia

Tel. +7(271)46272
E-mail: omzher@mail.ru

In the article a possibility of streak lightning control by means of low intensive laser emission is observed.

During investigation of an electric discharge into air half-space [1] it was noticed that this discharge can be controlled by a low intensive laser beam. Now there is a problem of laser control of lightning discharge [2]. However, numerous works on this approach demonstrate that "the hope to get a quick solution of the problem of lightning control by laser emission has not been confirmed" [3].

Careful observation of this problem in [2] has shown ways out the situation. The authors of [2] consider plasma channel produced (by means of laser) in free atmosphere at a possible greatest height to be of doubtless interest of the science of lightning. Finally, creation of the plasma channel should be of benefit for lightning protection. The authors of [2] give notice that "there are many difficulties of fundamental and practical importance on this path".

Weak theoretical understanding of lightning generation causes pessimistic estimations of solution of the problem. The article [2] notes particularly that "there are neither adequate theory, nor numerical calculations and qualitative understanding of the phenomena defining the speed of a leader... The situation of a theory of the leader channel is little better (from quantitative point of view)...".

Realistically the following statement can refer to the lightning discharge: "The electric discharge appeared to be very "unhandy" for theoretical description but the most interesting phenomenon in the experimental aspect" [4].

Experimental Part

In this work a capacitor bank with 0.6 mF capacity, which can be fed up to ~5 kV, was used to produce impulse discharge into air half-space. A scheme of the device is presented in Fig.1. At connection/disconnection of a discharger 5 a "spout" is let out of an electrode 3. The spout carries the potential of the cathode (virtual cathode) at a significant height into air half-space. A probe placed at the height of ~15 cm fixes a potential which is similar to the potential occurring at the cathode. The researches have demonstrated that the produced formation continues to glow for several hundreds of milliseconds (the glow is fixed from a zone located at 15-45 cm above the cathode). Typical time of the discharge comes to 100±20 msec and depends on the cathode material. Electric field generated in the spout comes to less than 8 V cm^{-1}.

Ball Lightning Experiments

Ball Lightning in the Microwave

This is a great experiment to try at home. It requires a microwave oven, a candle, a toothpick and a lighter. First you put the candle (~1-2 inches in height) in the microwave (remove glass plate from bottom so candle sits on metal). Put the toothpick in the candle sticking straight up. Light the toothpick on fire so that flames are leaping off the tip. Shut the door quickly and turn on oven full blast. There will be loud popping noises and then balls of fire will leap from the toothpick and fly around inside the microwave while making a buzzing sound like a bee. If it doesn't work at first try to move the position of the candle in order to find the "hot spot" in the oven for it to work.

Real Ball Lightning Generated by Pulsed Power Inductor

This experiment is very DANGEROUS. The author did this one a few years ago. The Idea was got from an article about a guy generating ball lightning using a high current transformer (TBA). The author had an idea of using an inductor to store large amounts of electrical energy. The conductor on the end of the stick touches the metal ring. This completes the circuit, and start the inductor. Then there was used the air compressor nozzle to blow out the arc as the wire was pulled away. The copper wire explodes and creates rapidly rotating and burning molten balls of copper. These 'Balls of Fire' exhibit many of the properties of real ball lightning.

Electric Discharge Produced into Air Half-Space

Gennady D. Shabanov, Russia

Tel. +7(271)46477
E-mail: discharge@gtn.ru

Oleg M. Zherebtsov, Russia

Tel. +7(271)46272
E-mail: omzher@mail.ru

In the article a possibility of streak lightning control by means of low intensive laser emission is observed.

During investigation of an electric discharge into air half-space [1] it was noticed that this discharge can be controlled by a low intensive laser beam. Now there is a problem of laser control of lightning discharge [2]. However, numerous works on this approach demonstrate that "the hope to get a quick solution of the problem of lightning control by laser emission has not been confirmed" [3].

Careful observation of this problem in [2] has shown ways out the situation. The authors of [2] consider plasma channel produced (by means of laser) in free atmosphere at a possible greatest height to be of doubtless interest of the science of lightning. Finally, creation of the plasma channel should be of benefit for lightning protection. The authors of [2] give notice that "there are many difficulties of fundamental and practical importance on this path".

Weak theoretical understanding of lightning generation causes pessimistic estimations of solution of the problem. The article [2] notes particularly that "there are neither adequate theory, nor numerical calculations and qualitative understanding of the phenomena defining the speed of a leader... The situation of a theory of the leader channel is little better (from quantitative point of view)...".

Realistically the following statement can refer to the lightning discharge: "The electric discharge appeared to be very "unhandy" for theoretical description but the most interesting phenomenon in the experimental aspect" [4].

Experimental Part

In this work a capacitor bank with 0.6 mF capacity, which can be fed up to ~5 kV, was used to produce impulse discharge into air half-space. A scheme of the device is presented in Fig.1. At connection/disconnection of a discharger 5 a "spout" is let out of an electrode 3. The spout carries the potential of the cathode (virtual cathode) at a significant height into air half-space. A probe placed at the height of ~15 cm fixes a potential which is similar to the potential occurring at the cathode. The researches have demonstrated that the produced formation continues to glow for several hundreds of milliseconds (the glow is fixed from a zone located at 15-45 cm above the cathode). Typical time of the discharge comes to 100±20 msec and depends on the cathode material. Electric field generated in the spout comes to less than 8 V cm^{-1}.

Fig 1
A scheme of a device made for producing of long-living plasmoids

1 – a polyethylene reservoir, 2 – a ring electrode, 3 – a central electrode, 4 – a capacitor bank of 0.6 mF capacity, 5 – a discharger, 6 –water or aqueous suspension drop, 7 – a quartz pipe, 8 – a carbonic or metal electrode, 9 – a copper bar.

The spout was acted by weak laser emission of less than 1 mW at 22-centimeter height. The laser beam was directed perpendicular to the discharge axis, the spout achieving the laser beam moved along the beam towards the laser.

In Fig.2 the spout has moved ~8.5 cm along the laser beam, and a usual sphere formation was generated. Due to the horizontal motion it was distorted if to be compared with usual sphere formation. The usual sphere formation is represented in Fig.3 (also see the cover).

Fig. 2
Motion of the leader channel (spout) along the laser accompanied with the sphere formation
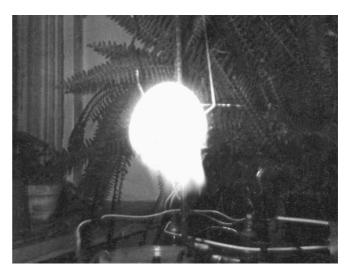
Fig.3
The standard ball formation

Discussion

As it is evenly mentioned in [5], results of model experiments are difficult to be applied directly to laser control of lightning because in short intervals characteristics of the discharge differ from characteristics of lightning discharges. Actually, at comparing considered current and the field existing in a lightning (i~100 A, ~3 V cm^{-1}) with these phenomena occurring in a laboratory spark (~1 A, ~300 V cm^{-1}) incorrectness of modeling of this process becomes obvious. From the other hand the authors of [2] note that "the leader channel is like a channel of electric arc… At current strength of ~100 A plasma of the channel of the arc is supported by fields the densities of which come to several volts by a centimeter. The lightning has such leader currents".

Even an air arc of atmosphere pressure has a field of about 100 V cm^{-1} at currents of about 1 A. The generated discharges (spout) accompanied by the field of less than 8 V cm^{-1} (maximal current appearing in the discharge gap is 50-60 A) are more appropriate for modeling the leader channel of the streak lightning than typical discharges used for investigation of these processes, for example, like [6].

At first approximation the leader channel is considered as an ideal conductor in the article [2]. We make research to define the field in the discharge (spout) more exactly. The article [2] makes the following consideration about a cause of occasional generation of new leader heads: "the surface of *equipotential* plasma conductor (channel) *has* a property of *instability*. There is an occasionally generated sharp jut. An intensified field appears at the jut along the edge. Under the influence of the field the jut becomes to grow in any direction including at the significant angle to the weak outer field". The aforesaid seems to explain why our leader channel changes its direction and runs at right angle to its initial motion. (Fig.2). Weak harmonic action of the laser beam to the leader channel causes generation of a new head which continues motion "on the significant angle".

The effect of plasma motion towards a light beam is a demonstration of a general tendency of propagation of the discharges to an incident electromagnetic field [7]. "Area occupied by plasma usually increases towards the laser emission" [8]. Leading character of motion of this formation is confirmed in [9] as well as the interaction with the laser beam is confirmed in [10]. It should be taken into account that in the works [9-10] experiments were performed at devices which generated such a discharge. However, that discharge was by 2 orders weaker than the discharge generated by the device represented in this work. Naturally, the results were less defined. Comparison of the discharges is presented in [11].

According to our data, the leader channel (spout) has a very abrupt bound (less than 1 mm). In this layer the field can come to ~30 kV cm^{-1} (at height of 15 cm).

Conclusions

Due to the assumption [2] about *instability* of the surface of the *equipotential* leader channel there has been successfully performed the "control" action on an electric discharge which models a streak lightning. It has been achieved by means of weak harmonic oscillations made by the laser. This mechanism is supposed to be applied for streak lightning control.

References

1. G. D. Shabanov. Optical properties of glowing formations // Letters in the Magazine of Technical Physics. 2002, V.28, I.4, P. 81-86;

2. E. M. Bazelyan, Yu. P. Rizer. Mechanism of attraction of lightning and problem of lightning laser control (Nowadays Physics) // the UPS. 2000. V. 170, #7, P.753-769;

3. A.D. Starikov, Yu. A. Rezunkov. Lightning discharge control by laser emission. // the Optic Magazine. 1999, V. 66, #3, P. 15-16;

4. B. E. Meyerovich on the path to realization of electromagnetic collapse // the UPS. 1986. V. 149, #2, P.221-257;

5. Miki Megumu, Uada Acushi, Shindo Takatoshi. Characteristics of laser controlled discharges occurring in long air gaps // the Optic Magazine, 1999, V. 66, #3, P. 25-29;

6. P. Rembo, J. Biggert, V. Kubechek, J. Schwartz, A. Berstein, J. Dilet, R. Bernstein, K. Shtalkopff. Laboratory investigations of lightning discharge initiated by laser // the Optic Magazine, 1999, V. 66, #3, P. 30-35;

7. Yu. P. Rizer Laser spark and distribution of discharges. Moscow: Science (Nauka), 1974. P.308

8. A. A Mak, N. A. Solovyev. Introduction into physics of high temperature laser plasma. Leningrad: Publishing House of Leningrad University. 1991. P. 152;

9. S. E. Yemelin, A. L. Priozersky, V.S. Semenov, G. E. Skvortsov Characteristics of dynamic state propagation in stream of capillary discharge. // Letters in the Magazine of Technical Physics. 1997, V.23, I.19, P. 54-59;

10. R. F. Avramenko, A. Yu. Gridin, A. I. Klimov, V. I. Nikolaeva. Experimental investigation of power-consuming compact plasma formations. // Collected articles Ball lightning in laboratory. Moscow: Chemistry. 1994;

11. G. D. Shabanov, O. M. Zherebtsov, Experimental modeling of ball lightning analogue. // Theses of 10th Russian conference on ball lightning. Moscow (Dagomys). 2002. P. 17-20.

Free Energy

Alexander V. Frolov, Russia
Faraday Laboratories Ltd
http://www.faraday.ru, tel/fax 7-812-3803844

In general the conception was formulated in 1995 and today we can say that the concept of physical vacuum, which is a new source of energy, finds more and more supporters. The fundamental works about nature of "zero point energy" are published, for example, Andrew D. Sakharov [1], Hal T. Puthoff [2] and many other interesting works. It is clear now that space or "physical vacuum" has its internal structure, therefore it can be used as a new source of energy if we organize the process of changing of this structure. Moreover, according to some theories, the existence of reality (i.e. the World of some certain parameters of space and time) is defined by the function of probability of energy density. For example, Dr. Nassikas, Greece [3], proves that it is not possible to consider the space without its energy, and there is no space without energy. The internal structure of reality is coexistence of two forms: gravitational energy and electromagnetic energy. Any local increase of the first one should produce decrease of the second one, so the sum amount of the change is zero.

In some other articles about energy transformation processes (gravitational form of energy into electromagnetic heat radiation of mass, for example) we can find that both increase of entropy and the inverse processes (decrease of entropy) are possible and in this case the electromagnetic energy can be converted into the gravitational form, that is shown in details in the works of Nobel laureate I. Prigozhin, Order and Haos. Man's new dialog with Nature, London, 1984. Since **the direction of time** (the time course) **and direction of the entropy change** (increase or decrease) are related notions then free energy technologies are considered by Kozyrev as methods of practical application of natural time course [4] that is presented in aether-dynamics by Frolov as aether flow of some density and this aether density determines the time rate as hardness of cause-effect connections for any process, and also for the process of existence of matter in space-time of this aether density.

According to this theory, in any point of space it is possible to get power by means of energy transformations without any consumption of mass-fuel. We can say also that in this case some change of the energy density of space should be detected.

Let's clarify some determinations:
1. The Potential (lat. Potentia that means "force"). In physics this is scalar parameter, it's gradient expresses the intensity of field of a certain force. In common sense, the potential is possibilities, which exist for execution of some task, for completion of some work.
2. The Work is a quantitative parameter of energy transformations. The transformation means here change of form.
3. The Energy (Greek "Energie" means "action, activity") is a quantitative characteristic for different forms of motion.
4. The Power is amount of work per unit of time.

According to the given determinations by The Soviet Encyclopedic Dictionary, edition of 1988, Moscow, **the fact of presence of potential (scalar) field, for example, electrical or gravitational filed, is real possibility to produce some work if we can organize change of energy forms. Let's note that power source is not required to keep the potential field in force. It is free.**

...the potential (scalar) field can produce real work!

The example of this work, which is produced by the field: body falls in gravitational field and when it strikes on the ground then some part of its potential energy is transformed to heat, that is the work as transformation of energy forms. So, there is a conclusion: the potential (scalar) field can produce real work! But we have considered only a half of cycle and in classical case in the second half of the cycle it will be necessary to produce the same work against the field to raise the body to the initial point.

Let's formulate the task to produce the work periodically and to get the power in load from this process. Usual mistake is to accept the particular case (the same body returns back in the same field) as a single possible case. But in special case changes of the system are possible, for example, the field intensity is not a constant but some variable value (alternating or pulsing), or the body changes its own parameters. In this case in each of half-cycle of the process the field can produce real positive work to accelerate the body.

The main technological solutions are obvious: **it is necessary to create gradient of field in space** (full or partial screening of trajectory of the body, which is moving in the field) **or gradient of field in time** (pulsing mode of field). This is quite easy for electric and magnetic fields, but for system, which uses gravitational field to produce the work, we can assume changes of parameters of the body only.

It is possible to understand why professional physicists dislike the question about possibility to use scalar (potential) fields to produce useful work in a load since they think about The Law of Energy Conservation. To find mutual understanding it is necessary "to upgrade" this Law for 4-dimentsional case of real physical system. It is necessary to introduce **the notion of the structure of space-time** where the considered process is created. In other words, for real practical engineering tasks it is necessary to consider **space-time of the real process** but not an abstract space-time. Usually the energy density of technical processes is small in comparison with natural energy density of space (aether density), which is a result of real astrophysical processes, i.e. motion of planet, star, galaxy. If we discover structure of this real rhythm of the space-time of our planet then we'll be able to design it in our technical devices to use aether-dynamics as theoretical basis.

So, in orthodox physics there is the unchallengeable formulation: the work of potential field on closed trajectory of motion is equal to zero. Yes, it is right for only case: if one part of work is positive (the acceleration) and another part is negative (the deceleration). But one part of the trajectory or a part of periodic process with the negative work can be excluded by different methods: by means of spatial superposition, pulsing mode and change of interaction polarity or by the screening of electromagnetic interaction.

For example, minor changes in vacuum tube design (the grid is located under cathode) allows increasing the kinetic energy of electrons and to increase emission current by means of the potential on the grid only. Also vector potential of magnetic field or gravitational potential can be used by similar way.
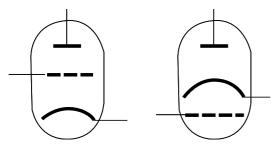
Fig. 1

Besides this way it is possible to use pulsed mode and switch-off the primary energy source before the emission electrons will reach the anode, Fig.2. In this case there is not the conductivity current between anode and cathode and the primary source is not discharging during its work.

Therefore, it is not a news that potential field can produce real work. In any textbook there are examples of positive and negative half-cycles that result to zero net work. But for the case of consequent execution of two processes the parameters of one of the processes can be changed, that **the work, which is produced on the closed trajectory can be formed as two or more parts of positive work.** Important aspect is following: it is necessary to determine the point (moment) of change the sign of the interaction and at that point (moment) to change the parameters of the process accordingly.
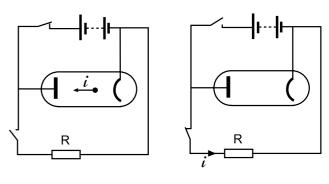
Fig. 2

The good sense requires the answer: what is the source of the power to produce this work if this proposed concept is right? Let's notice that before the considered examples, the existence **of power interactions of potential fields** must make the same question. For example, how the ordinary permanent magnet (i.e. its vector potential) holds a piece of metal making work against force of gravity without any fuel? How the potential field can move and accelerate ions, i.e. kinetic energy of ions can be increased without any fuel? What provides the forces of elasticity? Let's try to find answers from consideration of inner structure of electric and magnetic field, especially let's develop **our understanding of the notion of gradient, which describe properties of space-time design in area of this field.**

The concept of potential as bi-directional flow of photons and anti-photons was proposed by English mathematician E. Whittaker, and then it was developed by Dr. Thomas E. Bearden [5]. In this concept, the generalization of the Third Newton's law looks as the requirement of complementary pair to the process of the electromagnetic radiation. Since "process" means a change of information in time, this paired anti-process is reversed in time. Of course, it is development of process to its own future, but from our point of view, it goes from future to past. According to generalized Third Newton's law the radiation of photon is paired with anti-photon. In this case, the internal space-time structure of electric potential field is formed by two contrary flows of energy: photons spread from charge source and the anti-photons "inflow" into the charged mass. Let's notice that this concept defines the relationship of charge and mass. The charge without mass does not have any sense.

The flow of energy outgoing from charged mass is responsible for all phenomena of radiation. Incoming flow of energy is responsible for the gravitational interaction. Therefore, the notions "radiation" and

"gravitation" can be considered as complementary pair; that is considered in details in concept of Josef Hasslberger [6].

...it is impossible to get "something" from "nothing"

There is a quite correct question: since "something" can not be created from "nothing" then what and where will be changing if we create the process of free power dissipations in local area of our space-time by means of asymmetrical potential interaction?

Let's try to present a "process" as some change of "information" in time and from this point we'll get the conclusion about results of this energy disbalance of the natural internal structure of potential field: in this case the entropy process in direct time (heat dissipation in load) should be balanced with equal anti-entropy process in reversed time. In other words, the disbalance is change of the space-time curvature and changes in the time rate.

So, it is impossible to get "something" from "nothing" but if we have understanding of the balance (process in time and anti-process in reversed time) then in the Universe the 4-dimentsional balance is not violated. It is assumed here that it is impossible to create one process but it is possible to create two opposite balanced processes, and each of them produce real work in the load. In astrophysical consideration it was stated in 1964 by Academician Gustav Naan, Estonia, Tartu. He wrote [7]:

"In our real world we could extract any amount of energy from vacuum if some technology provides at the same time the extracting of the same amount of energy for anti-world. Total sum value of energy is equal to zero."

Let's note also that similar conception of "dynamical zero" was applied in ancient India mathematics, i.e. "zero" is not "nothing" but it is hidden possibilities (balance of forces).

One more interesting question appears: what is about reality of the particle of matter after we have claimed that its mass-parameters are parameters of certain process? With this idea the material world as a whole is certain process and "stability" is not a property of some object but a parameter of its existence, which is a process in space-time of some certain energy density and some certain structure. By analogy the vortex in liquid is a process but it is not a liquid.

Thereafter, as electron was presented by Shredinger as wave packet and by Whittaker as function of two scalar potentials, the old idea of instability or **dynamic structure of matter** has the possibility of experimental testing and development as a

teleportation technology. This idea is technology of space-time engineering, i.e. creation of the space-time with some certain parameters where curvature (or rate of time) determined rate of existence of the matter in space. It is related with some energy density, which can be increased or decreased. Since by this way it is possible to consider any material particle of substance as certain process, which is balanced by corresponding time-reversed process, so there is no theoretical difficulties to develop technologies of chemical transmutation, materialization, dematerialization, teleportation etc.

So, the using of potential energy to create a process of dissipation of power in load does not violates the Law of Conservation, and this Law can be generalized: the total energy of four dimensional system is amount of energy of processes in time and energy of processes in reversed time, it is constant and it is equal to zero.

Now let's try to review some free energy projects (the systems to produce work without consumption of fuel). Russian Peter the Great had intention to visit Germany in 1725 to test the Orferius' device. There is a very old description of "perpetually rotating wheel", which was made in India by inventor Bhaskar in 1150! From that times the mind of inventors is developed to other modern systems but due to the efforts of scientific groups, which are interested to keep in force the ideas of primitive materialism, the great idea of free energy transformation is distorted to such extent that any person, who began to speak about free energy, had a chance to get the name of "mad". Why? The reason is common understanding of the "power", which is "some work per unit of time" and generally it can be presented only as result of some transformation of matter structure, i.e. disintegration, chemical reaction, nuclear decay, nuclear synthesis or any change of structure of a matter. In any case, a material (the firewood, oil products or nuclear fuel) is considered as the fuel, regardless of its transformation method.

Some concepts did not consider the fields (electromagnetic, gravitational and others) as a kind of matter. So hypotheses, and even successful experiments on transformation of "non-material" type of energy in energy of material object (into the work) were not taken into consideration. The physics is a study about measurable and tangible quantities. New measurement methods let us work with a new physical phenomenon. So, we can see that **real situation in alternative energy is changing due to experimenters efforts** but not from the great theoretical team.

Some time ago the electric energy was not considered as a material object, but gradually people have been able to refuse the gas pipes, which were real material source of power for the gas light lamp, in favor of electric wires for electrical illumination. In a short time, I think, it will be possible to refuse the wires and we'll

consider the aether (physical vacuum) as unlimited energy source if we organize **the process of transformation of space-time parameters.** It will be necessary to drop the old conception of "primary source of power", which should be connected with the consumer by some method and to develop conception of free energy source in any place "on-demand".

Let's consider, what the term "free energy" means today. The energy in general sense means the "ability of body to produce some work". The energy of closed system is constant. Certain device can look like "perpetual mobile", but nobody will be shocked because the way of energy "inflow" is known. For example, solar panel battery is obtaining its power from external source of light. But in general case, 3-dimensional observer can see nothing similar to the inflow of energy into the system if multi-dimensional energy balance is not analyzed. In other words, "perpetual mobile" is a right name since for its description it is necessary to use notions of "Time", "Eternity", "Causality" and other categories, which are more related with philosophy and religion but not with modern physics.

The "perpetual mobile idea" is really value to be the purpose of serious scientific work. In the book "Great experiments in physics" published by "World", 1973, Professor G. Lipson wrote: "Joule was the person of a very practical kind of mind and he was enthusiast of the perpetual mobile idea". I hope that it is not necessary to explain here who was Joule. However, "practicality" of free energy generators is obvious only for energy customers, but not for energy producers, who created the centralized system of energy distribution. This is the main reason of absence of alternative fuel-less energy systems in the modern market.

Let's consider the existing classification of "perpetual mobiles":

1. "Perpetual mobile" of the first kind is a design, which can "create energy". It is disputable aspect and all patent offices refuse to consider the patent claim of such type. They answer that "energy can not be created or destroyed" but energy can be transformed from one type into another type.

2. "Perpetual mobile" of the second kind is the collector of environmental heat. It is not a "thermo-pair" which uses temperature difference to produce electricity, but it is the "heat pump". This type of devices works with negative entropy, or more exactly, with sintropy. The terminology still is not defined but we can say that in entropy systems the produced work is equivalent to the dissipated heat and the work, which is produced by sintropy systems is equivalent to some absorbed environment heat.

3. The "perpetual mobile" of the third kind is a demonstration of perpetual motion without friction. The analogue is electric current in superconductors. Development of this idea is creation of systems with negative friction. In electromagnetic systems it corresponds to the known cases of the "negative conductivity", i.e. some electrical circuits in this mode can generate output power.

Additionally, let's show that "creation of energy" is possible in theory, for example: two processes of equal power compensate each other $A + B = 0$. Let's assume that some technology creates another (inverse) process as: $0 = A + B$ i.e. two processes of some power in sum create zero result. In general principle, also there is possibility to use many processes balanced situation as $A + B + C + \ldots = 0$ and this interesting conception is known as theory of multipolarity.

Let's consider some quite real (to my mind) examples from the history of development of free energy technologies. Nikola Tesla's investigations are not well known to modern scientists and engineers. In his works on development of wire-less telecommunication Tesla used flat spiral coils as a secondary winding of transformer. The magnetic field of such coil is radial and it is placed in the plane of the coil. In 1995 the author of this article experimented with similar flat spiral coils. I have to claim that when such coil is operating as secondary winding and the solenoid is the primary winding of the transformer then we can measure asymmetrical mutual induction, i.e. connection of active load (lamp) to output circuit of the transformer is free from input power in the primary winding. It is the simplest example of technical realization of the asymmetrical cause-effect connection, described by Kozyrev in his theory of active properties of time.

... "creation of energy" is possible in theory...

Another Tesla's invention is his resonance transformer. Modern electrical engineering describes transformer with forced electrical oscillations and radio engineering considers operation of resonance systems mainly. Tesla put the question on transformation of power in resonance transformer and by this way the efficiency can be more than 100%. With high frequency currents and high power level Tesla used single-wire terminals as loads, i.e. the lamps and other single-wire receivers of power (motors) were powered from high frequency changing electric field. Such single-wire terminal does not consume any power from primary source because it uses the change of potential in point of connection to conductor (let's note also that for maximum efficiency this point of connection should be one of the maximums of standing wave).
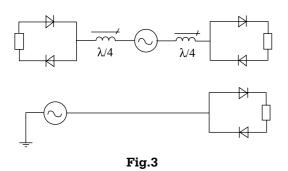
The notion about "free vibrations" belongs to Tesla and this term describes sinusoidal oscillations in electric circuit that is created after short non-sinusoidal impulse due to real vibrations of the free electrons. Resonance mode of the free vibrations can be the real way to excess power output.

Original Tesla's approach to electrodynamics allowed him to build in 1934 fuel-less car with electromotor, which was powered from some 12 vacuum tubes generator of unknown design.

The standing waves of electric field that were observed by Tesla during thunderstorm brought him to conclusion about possibility of the system to power remote energy consumers from energy generator without any transmission lines and without radiation methods. He assumed that it is necessary to create special standing wave of electric potential (or variable in time electric potential field) around the generator, then the unlimited number of loads (lamps, motors) in area of this potential field can be powered if they are tuned in resonance with oscillations of the generator. Let's notice that in each receiver the power can't be more than power of this generator but it is possible to install many independent "receivers" without mutual interference.

The modern investigations on these problems sound as sensation, because Tesla's works are unknown for the modern generation of scientists. Of course, modern electronics components and the tools facilities allow to create real "miracles" in comparison with the past age experiments. For example, engineer Avramenko described his work on single-wire power transmission in Journal of Russian Physical Ideas, 1991, No.2, and in journal "Inventor and rationalizator" 1992, No. 5, 6. The light bulb (or ventilator) was used as load of the single-wire power transmission line. This line can be made of high resistance material, for example, tungsten, but the power can be transmitted without heating of wire! It is possible to say that in this experiment a wire does not transmit power from the generator to the load, but the wire is the conductor of information signal, which is created by polarizational current opened and described by M. Faraday.

It is not difficult to repeat the experiments with single-wire line: it is necessary to place two diodes on the end of a line, which is connected to secondary windings of high voltage transformer (I used television set high voltage unit) by such a way that different poles of the diodes are connected to the line, Fig.3.

Fig.3

Two other poles of diodes create the source of potential difference (voltage), from what it is possible to charge the capacitor or to power the load (luminescent bulb). This diodes scheme is named as

"Avramenko's diodes plug". In my experiments it was determined that high efficiency mode is resonance mode in real line and in this case the maximum change of potential is created in the point of connection of the "Avramenko's diodes plug". There is well known formulas to calculate this resonance as quarter-wave antenna vibrator system. Of course, high frequency and high potential allow creating high power in the load. In 2001-2003 New Energy Technologies magazine have published new experimental results on single-wire power transmission reported by research team from Moscow (Prof. Strebkov, Avramenko, Nekrasov and others). For example, they built and tested lines from 20 to 100 Kwtt power level!

... the electric potential field can create non-compensated force in the system and to produce a work without any power input.

One more well known researcher on the subject of free energy was Thomas Townsend Brown. He considered creation of reactionless propulsion force by means of electric forces only. Ionization is not considered here! According to his works, the electric potential field can create non-compensated force in the system and to produce a work without any power input. English patent by T. T. Brown #300,311 of August 15, 1927 describes the method to create propulsion force and power from electric energy source only. In this first patent it was claimed that in ordinary flat electric capacitor (two flat plates and dielectric between them), which is charged up to 50 kilovolts and more, Brown discovered propulsion force. This force moves the capacitor to positively charged plate direction. It is only one of his ideas and in his other patents of 1930 - 1965 Brown has described many new methods to create propulsion force and free power in load by means of electric field only (scalar potential field as a source!).

... the efficiency of "electric system can be million to one"

We have to exclude ideas on electrokinetic apparatus since it is just a reactive method and propulsion force is result of ionization flow. Especial case is Brown's **idea to create the asymmetry of electrostatic forces** by means of some special form of surface, USA patent #3187206 of June 1, 1965, application of May 9, 1956 (Fig 4).

The schemes and descriptions by the Brown's patents are undoubtedly the work of great practical value. As was mentioned by Brown, the efficiency of "electric system can be million to one" because the potential field can produce real work, for example, rotate some electro generator, but it does not change the primary source of field.

In 1927 T. Brown demonstrated the devices in Ohio, later he worked in France. His works in France were

June 1, 1965   T. T. BROWN   3,187,206

ELECTROKINETIK APPARATUS

Filed May 9, 1958

power supply

power supply
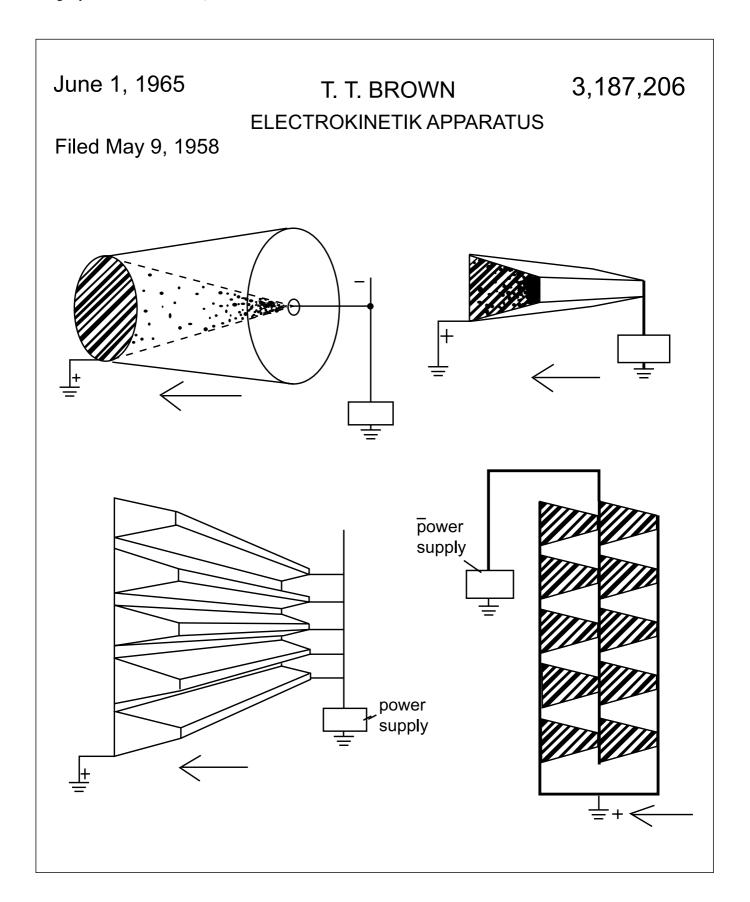
Fig. 4

Electrokinetic apparatus by T.T. Brown

Besides, there is the simplest example of creation of real work by means of potential field that is also resulting from the Brown's works. Usually two plates of electric capacitor are equal to each other. However, if one of the plates is small and another one is large then the electric field between them is not isotropy field and in this case there is some **gradient of intensity of the field**. In such field any dielectrical object, for example a ball, will be polarized unevenly and due to this fact some force should make it to be moving aside, where the field has the greater intensity. I have to note for mathematicians that since the intensity is "gradient of potential" then gradient of intensity is the **gradient of the gradient**, i.e. it is the second derivative of potential. This idea is an example of the well-known rule: the change gives the new quality.

The example of creation of the propulsion force by means of potential field is also connected with "perpetuum mobile" task, since conductivity currents in the capacitor are very small and it almost does not require power consumption (after being charged once time) and the system can produce mechanical work permanently, in this case it is the work against the gravity force. In general case, if the design allows asymmetrical energy transformations, then the surplus output power and reactionless propulsion force can be created in this system.

Most likely future aerospace systems, which are based on the electrogravity, are the most perspective direction of free energy technologies. Why not for the power engineering? It is clear that now there are some existing fuel heating systems, heat stations and power industry to provide by some traditional way all current needs of the society and due to this fact the innovation of any free energy technology is related with hard competition. However, for commercial programs for cosmos the reactive rockets principles are not acceptable more. Each satellite during its operation should produce profit to compensate large expenses for the rocket-carrier. Only fuel-less propulsion systems can allow developing space commercial programs that are new infinite market. Let's note that the gravitational (reactionless propulsion) technologies are not related with cosmodrome and their cost can be quite acceptable to realize the project with private funds.

... future aerospace systems, which are based on the electrogravity, are the most perspective direction of free energy technologies.

There are some known examples of free energy systems.

In 1921 The Seattle Times, as well as Denver Post of August 8, 1921 published the articles about inventions of Alfred Earl Hubbard. His device included the central core with coil and eight remote coils placed around the central core. After primary impulse, the impulses in all coils were powered and rotating magnetic field was created in central coil. The power produced in the central coil was quite sufficient for self-excitation of the system and for producing of useful work in the load (motor). The boat and the car with electromotor, which was powered from the Hubbard's generator, were demonstrated.

In 1928, Lester Hendershot invented the electric generator of 300-Watts power. This device was designed of details used in radio-receiver to get oscillator (500 kilohertz) and non-inductive coil. Later, in 1970, William Cooper experimented with non-inductive bifilar coils. He used induction phenomenon in the case of zero magnetic component (two-wire winding or flat spire coil).

The Cooper's USA patent 3610971 of 1971 describes **the principle and the device to create power in secondary circuit without reaction on primary circuit**, as well as method to get reactionless propulsion force for aerospace application. Cooper also has found that specially designed coils can produce the field, which can not be screened and this field has some common parameters with the gravitational field.

The gravitation is considered by Cooper as a polarization of atoms in gravity field of planet. So he declares in description of his patent: "the electronic generator... of super high frequency creating the pulsing electric field of single polarity... acting in opposite direction to the Earth gravitational field... that to depolarized the atoms and to release them from the gravitation".
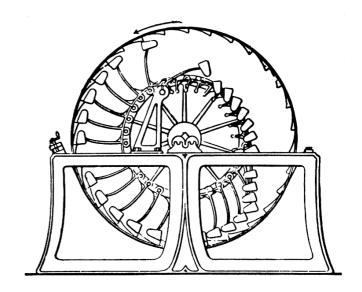
Fig.5

By the way, the gravitational field itself can be used to get a power. "Unbalanced wheel" is a well known design. The weights on the one side of the wheel, which is rotating in vertical plane, can be organized to be moving to axis, but on the another side the same weights can be organized to be shifted from the axis to the periphery of the wheel. By this way there is some

constant shifted center of gravity in the system and it can be permanently rotating system. One of the inventors who built such wheel is Hugo R. Fraga, Havana, Cuba (The Perpetual Motion Mystery. R.A. Ford, Lindsay Publications Inc., Bradley, IL 60915, USA, 1987, see Fig. 5).

The earliest information about such systems is dated of 1150 and the name of inventor is Bhaskar, India. He used the tangential disposed pipes, which were half-filled with water. In France (1235-1240) William de Onnecure demonstrated self-rotation wheel with seven weights. In Italy (1438) Mariano de Jacopo has built the system made of eight bars disposed in the plane of rotation, and the bar can be fold up in the middle like elbow joint to provide rotation. One of the well-known and documented events of real demonstration of perpetual rotation wheel was mentioned in 1620. Edward Somerset (Second Marquis of Worcester), author of the book "Century of Inventions", 1963, has built and tested the wheel of about 4 meters in diameter, 14 weights of 25 kilograms each. The test of this machine was organized in London, in witness of King Karl, Grand Duke Hamilton and Grand Duke Richmond, and there are files in royal archives about this test. The descriptions of these and other systems are published in the book "Perpetual mobiles: past and present time" by Brodiansky, Moscow, Energoatomisdat, 1989.

Fig.6

In different idea, which is known from Leonardo Da Vinchi drawings, lifting of water is produced by the helical "Archimedes' screw" of small diameter with large centrifugal acceleration, which reduces weight, but lowering of water was organized with the screw of other (large) diameter, so the force of weight is working to rotate this screw by the weight of the falling water. The paradox of these systems will be removed if to consider them as systems of variable topology, as it was done at

the beginning of the present article. Practically, the **cycle is separated here into two processes** (the lifting and falling of mass) in the system with different parameters (the topology) for the first stage and the second stage of the cycle, but herewith **it is necessary to consider two different physical systems, not one and the same.** In that case, the classical theory can explain the work created by potential gravitational field of our planet as energy exchange between two different systems.

Other well known topic is research projects by John Searle, i.e. the "Searle's disks" (Fig. 6). It is necessary to note that the inventor mentioned in his articles anti-gravitational effect and free energy output also. The address is: John Searle, 13 Blackburn Lower Strand, Graham Park Estate, London MW9 5 NG, United Kingdom.

In several words we can say that rotor makes free electrons to be displaced to the peripheries of the system. With sufficient velocity it was mentioned that there is phosphorescence and ionization around the disk. It is possible to assume that main effect is based on well known Lorenz forces and understanding of the Poynting vector, which is circulating in this system. The ionization currents are closed through the space from periphery to the center, and self-rotation of the disk is provided by the classical Lorenz force, since the current interacts with magnetic field of the rollers.

In Russian experiments of 1992 Roshin and Godin built similar system of 7KWtt power output and they claimed that 100 kg axial force and areas of decreased temperature in environmental also were detected. Fig.7 demonstrates main parts of the system by Godin and Roshin.

It is necessary to note that similar anti-gravitational effects appearing for the case of over-unity operation were observed by different inventors independently. For example, in 1990 Floyd Sweet demonstrated his invention named as "vacuum triode amplifier" VTA. The barium magnets were pre-conditioned by special method to be used in special "trigger mode". This "bi-stable condition of magnet" provides possibility of transition from one direction of field to another direction due to the weak control signal, which was provided from external generator. It is known that if the material was pre-conditioned by the magnetic switching of 60 Hz frequency then its control signal must have the same 60 Hz frequency. A part of output power was closed to provide feedback and additionally some power can be used in output coil for the load. Tom Bearden studied the scheme of vacuum triode amplifier and confirmed that it demonstrates the work with negative energy. It means that the work in the load is connected with use of negative time. In this negative time, according to Bearden, the gravity is repulsing force. The experiments on VTA demonstrated that VTA decreased its weight according to level of the power, which is extracted from vacuum. Additionally we can
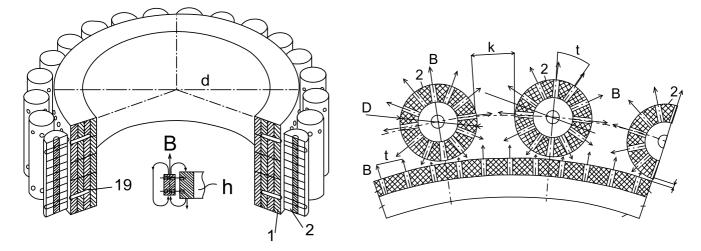
Fig.7

say that permanent magnets and coils of VTA were self-cooling during operation and the temperature difference was about 20 degrees in contrast with the environmental temperature.

One of VTA schemes includes two sets of magnets 4 x 6 x 1 inch, placed on two walls of frame. The attraction is created between them. Output and controlling coils are located between them. The axes of output coils are parallel to the magnetic field lines, but the axis of control coils are placed under 90 degrees angle. The secret of system is the "conditioning process", which "brings the magnets to the special condition". It is necessary to create great number of micro-cracks in the magnet due to re-orientations of magnetic domains. In such "half-magnet" the domains get the ability to be orientated in the same direction in a weak "control" magnetic field. In fact, they are not domains but large parts of magnet's material, separated by micro-cracks, that is to say acoustic domains. Many researchers repeat Floyd's works. Let's note that arc discharge of alternating current through magnet barium ceramics directly can provide the best results of the "conditioning" process. The coil of "conditioning" is not necessary in this case. The frequency of alternating current must be corresponded to the frequency of the control signal. Thereby, Sweet was creating **the bi-stable solid-state condition of magnetic substance.** The acoustic resonance is the reason of oscillations with the frequency according to the control weak magnetic field. Floyd Sweet died on July 5, 1995 at age of 83 years old. It is known, that his widow sent the archives to some great Automobile Corporation.

... the extraction of space energy is result of transformation of vacuum energy but from the other hand the energy density in this case determines so called "time rate"

It is interesting to note again that the magnets of VTA demonstrated self-cooling during operation, up to 20

degrees difference in comparison with the environmental temperature. It is one more example of relation between notion "density of time" and "energy". We can say that the extraction of space energy is result of transformation of vacuum energy but from the other hand the energy density in this case determines so called "time rate".

Kozyrev's articles [4] on causal mechanics theory and experiments describe possibility to use "time course for producing of useful work". Kozyrev introduced notion "density of time" and he demonstrated experimentally several methods how to change the density of time, which depends on irreversible processes intensity. Powerful "generator" of such processes is biosphere of our plane and it creates **season and daily changes of the density of time**. It is known that VTA power output also was variable in different time of day and night. It can be explained by Kozyrev. Next step in logical development of this idea is **to change notions from the "density of time" to "density of aether"** [10].

Relation between magnet phenomena and aether circulations was known from the beginning of the electrodynamics and now we can assume that VTA was real example of asymmetrical cause-effect connection, where the hardness of this connection depends on the density of aether. In this case the season and daily variation of the aether density are reason of VTA output power variations. So, we can make a conclusion: conception of **asymmetrical cause-effect connections** should be used as theoretical basis of all over-unity systems.

Generation of extra power in nonlinear materials (ferrites and dielectrics) was considered by Nikolay E. Zayev, Journal of Russian Physical Ideas, #1, 1991. Discovery was claimed as "Cooling of some dielectrics by changing electric field with generation of energy", Russia discovery #32-OT-10159, November 14, 1979; the inventions were also claimed as "Method of transformation of heat energy of dielectrics into electric

energy", Russian patent claim #3601725/07 (084905), of June 4, 1983 and "Method of transformation of heat energy of ferrites into electric energy", Russian patent claim #3601726/25 (084904), of April 3, 1983. This theory is not about some transformation of space-time structure but in any case the practical application of conversion of environmental heat is very important because this work is real basis of free energy systems.

In one of Zaev's articles, which were published in Journal of Russian Physical Ideas, he quoted from K. Zialkovsky: "If the heat can be transmitted from cold body to hot body, then it must have enormous importance, and not only philosophical or scientific, but also practical importance. The Clausius postulate is not confirmed in this case. The gravitational force, as well as other reasons (number of the reasons is unknown) break this postulate… heat can be transmitted from cold body to hot body but only as the result of some exclusive conditions", published in Russian, "The Second beginning of thermodynamics", Kaluga, Russia, 1914. So, the inventor of free energy system should provide this "exclusive conditions" to organize collection and transformation of environmental heat in his free energy system.

Another well-known free energy system is Swiss electrostatic machine. In spiritual commune Methernitha, Linden in Switzerland, since 1980 several free energy devices have been generating total power of 750 kilowatts. From the technical point of view, these devices are modernized electrophore generator. Permanent magnets also included into design of these devices. The machine of 20 cm diameter produces about 200 watts, and a big machine has the disk of 3 meters and it produces about 30 kilowatts, Fig. 8.
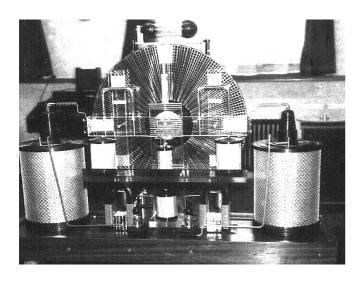
Fig.8

One of the modern technical decisions, which are very close to this Swiss machine is patent USA No. 4897592 by William Hide, January 30, 1990. This device is

"system to generate power from electric field". It is one more example of work, which can be produced by potential field, in particularly by means of electric field that can be used as free source of power. The energy (the potential energy) is the possibility to produce work and the power is a work per unit of time, i.e. it is a process. The properly organized process, for example acceleration of rotor in Hide's machine, uses the potential field on the part of positive work (acceleration) and the author of the patent provides meta screen on the part of the trajectory, where the field decelerates the rotor.

… it is "perpetuum mobile" and it can not be patented even if it really works!

One more example is Reed's motor, which uses energy of permanent magnets. By the description of 1991 it is made of four disks (two immovable discs and two rotating discs), and eight magnets are placed on them. Howard Johnson used similar method, USA patent #4151431, Fig.9

U. S. Patent   Apr. 24, 1979   Sheet 1 of 2   4, 151,431
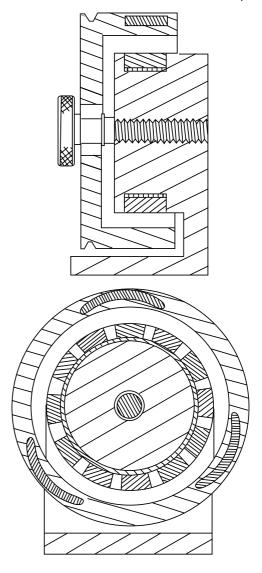
Fig.9

Journal "Science & Mechanics" of 1980 describes this invention. Hovard filled the application in 1973 but he has got the confirmation only in 1979! The reason of delay is very clear: it is "perpetuum mobile" and it can not be patented even if it really works! Johnson found clear and simple description of generation of power in his device and explained it as "extraction of power from inner energy of electron spin in ferromagnetic material".

From text of his description it follows that USA patent #4,151,431 of April 24, 1979, "Permanent magnet motor", author Howard R. Johnson, application #422,306 December 6, 1973 was developed from the prototype that is USA patent #4,074,153 of 1978, class of international classification H02K 41/00E:

"The invention is directed to the method of utilizing the unpaired electron spins in ferromagnetic and other materials as a source of magnetic fields for producing power without any electron flow as occurs in normal conductors, and to permanent magnet motors for utilizing this method to produce a power source. In the practice of the invention the unpaired electron spins occurring within permanent magnets are utilized to produce a motive power source solely through the superconducting characteristics of a permanent magnet and the magnetic flux created by the magnets are controlled and concentrated to orient the magnetic forces generated in such a manner to useful continuous work, such as the displacement of a rotor with respect to a stator. The timing and orientation of magnetic forces at the rotor and stator components produced by the permanent magnets to produce a motor is accomplished with the proper geometrical relationship of these components."

...conception of asymmetrical cause-effect connections should be used as theoretical basis of all over-unity systems.

It is reported that functioning Johnson's model produced about 5 kilowatts power free of any primary source of energy. Let's note that Johnson writes in his patent about permanent magnet as about system with "super conductive parameters". The currents of electrons in permanent magnet are manifestation of real superconductivity and for this case it is not necessary to provide the cooling for zero ohmic resistance. Moreover, the "resistance" must be negative since the magnet could save and renew its magnetized condition. Thereby, any permanent magnet is the example of perpetuum mobile of the third kind on the micro level. Also we can say the same about each atom.

Also, let's note that in general case motion (rotation) can be created due to the discussed above gradient of field, which in Johnson's device is result of asymmetry in "rotor-stator" system. By the similar way the gradient of velocity of airflow above and below wing creates the gradient of pressure and this fact produces great lifting power in airplanes.
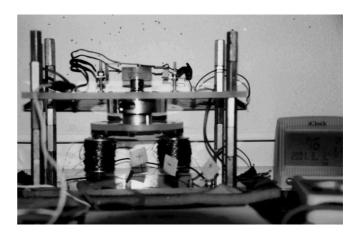
Fig.10
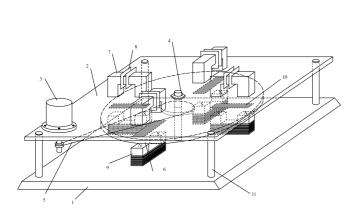
Well-known variant of permanent motor-generator is Adams motor, Fig.10. The rotor with radial orientated (the same pole outward) permanent magnets is rotating and creating inducted currents in stator coils, which are placed around rotor in the plane of rotation. From the point of traditional electrical engineering, any motor-generator without closed magnet flux is not high efficient device. However, exactly open magnetic flux of the Adams motor allows to take off power without deceleration of the rotor. We can assume that in this case phenomenon of electromagnetic induction is not important but in this design there is magnetic induction only, i.e. magnetization and demagnetization of cores in the field of the moving magnet. It is a perfect analogy with phenomena of electric induction that is "electrization by influence". Similar "magnetization by influence" differs from electromagnetic induction and secondary magnetic field in winding of generator is not related with deceleration of the rotor. Robert Adams works with Harold Aspden under patenting of their system. Adams is more than 70 years old but from our correspondence with him we can say that he is going to build demonstration version of 10 Kwtt generator.

...any permanent magnet is the example of perpetuum mobile of the third kind on the micro level.

There is also special name "alternators" for this class of devices, which use interruption of magnetic flux, for example it is the device by USA patent of John Echlin #4567407.

The experiments to investigate the alternator principles were organized also by the author of this article and it was demonstrated that ferrite core of the generator coil is self-cooling. The simplest experiment is based on electro motor, which rotates iron plate and it periodically appears in the gap between magnet and coil. But it is necessary to note that change of the flux in the coil area should be organized by such a way to decrease the flux of the field in the rapprochement half-cycle and to increase the flux for the moving off half-cycle. In this case the

rotor is accelerated by the secondary field (back-EMF). From 1994 to 2003 several experiments were produced and main principles were claimed in the patent description, Fig.11.
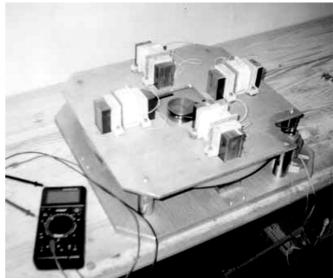
Fig.11

One more topic is "extraction of power from air" and Josef Swenson has conducted the series of simple experiments to develop it. The frequency of natural pulsations of electric field of planet is about 7.5 Hz and it is well known from Tesla's age. Swenson works with frequency 375 kilohertz and antenna of 10 meters. Please, contact for more details: Josef Swenson 423 North 15th Street, Moorhead, Minnesota

56560, USA. However, everybody remembers from the school story about simplest electrical experiments by Lomonosov and Rihman, who investigated arc discharge in gap between iron wire from a roof ("antenna") and ground wire. Let's include the resonance circuit "inductance-capacity" and diode rectifier to get some useful work in the load "from atmospheric electricity", Fig.12.

In 1900-1930 a lot of articles were published in technical press about Henry Moray. His demonstration systems produced more than 50 kilowatts free power output. It is known that Mr. Yakovlev (from USSR Foreign Department headed by Mr. Molotov) visited Morey in November of 1929 in New York to test his devices. The devices consist of capacitors, coils and special electronic-vacuum lamps.

In 1990 journal "Magnets", 2 (3) published article, which describe analogy between Moray's devices and Hubbard's coils, which can extract power by means of inner energy of nucleuses of materials if special resonance is created. In 1978 Cospray Research Institute has published the well-known book "The Sea of Energy" by T. N. Moray, in which theory of Moray is presented most completely.

RQM Raum-Quanten-Motoren Corporation (Schmiedgasse 48, CH-8640 Rapperswil, Switzerland, fax 41-55-2125209) offers for free energy devices of different power level: RQM 25 kilowatt and RQM 200 kilowatt. The principle of work is based on an invention by Oliver Crane and his theory. Web site http://www.rqm.ch. But I have to note that in present time they are developing capitalization of the company

Fig.12

mainly (actives are above 650 million dollars) than innovation of the new technology.

One more historical example: in 1925-1945, Hans Koler demonstrated his free energy devices. The system was built in Germany and it produced 60 kilowatts of free power. The description includes six permanent magnets and coils, which were superposed in plane of hexagon form. Each magnet is core of the coil.

Another interesting topic is unipolar induction effect, which is well-known from Faraday. This effect creates electro motive force (EMF) in rotating disk if axial magnetic field is applied to the disk. One of the well-known practical developments in this area is device by Bruce de Palma. In 1991 he has published the results of his tests, from which it follows that deceleration of the rotor due to back EMF in the case of unipolar induction is less than in traditional electro generators. So output power of system can exceed the power, which is necessary to rotate the rotor.

Really, motion of electrons in magnetic field, which is perpendicular to plane of rotation, is the reason of the Lorenz force and this force acts in radial direction that can not be the reason of deceleration. Indian research on this topic is developing by P. Tewari. In New Zealand there is research group headed by Dr. Ashley Gray. In 1994 the leader of Japanese market MITI published report about progress in 40 KWtt unipolar generator, which uses superconductors for its electromagnets. The interest of Japan to alternative energy projects can be explained by the position of Japan on fuel market.

There is a well known rule: Demand is related with Proposals. It is easy to imagine the prospects of local introducing of free energy systems in one or several countries, if some producers of product will be able to exclude expenses on electricity and fuel from cost sales. Other countries of their own rich natural resources (for example, oil) will be in problematic position on the new international market, mainly due to the fact that their industry and transport are oriented to conversion and consumption of oil fuel that increase the cost of all products.

... increase of the spark gap produces more surplus power in the load of the circuit.

One more modern free device was invented by Wingate Lambertson, USA. In his device free electrons get the additional energy passing through the number of thin metal-ceramic composed layers. The units were designed by the authors and each unit can generate 1600 watts, and it is possible to connect them in parallel. The address of author: Dr. Wingate Lambertson, 216 83rd Street, Holmes Beach, Florida 34217, USA.

Especially the researches on free energy with plasma processes should be noted here. In 1980-1990 Alexander Chernetsky, Yury Galkin and others have published the

results of experiments on creation of "self generated discharge" SGD. The electric arc was placed consecutively into secondary circuit of electromagnetic transformer and it produces real increase of power in load and reduction of consumption power in primary circuit of transformer. The author of the present article produced simplest experiments to investigate the arc (electric discharge) in electric circuits and possibility to create the mode of "negative resistance" in this circuit was confirmed. One of the effects was demonstrated in 1996 during the conferences "New Ideas in Natural Science", St.-Petersburg.

Adjusting parameters of arc (distance between two electrodes) it is possible to see that consumption current is decreasing until zero and then it can change its direction i.e. this system begins to generate the power. During similar experiment of 1971 by Dr. Chernetsky substation transformer in Moscow Aviation Institute was destroyed in result of strong "reversed current" impulse, which exceeded consumed power in 10 times more. According to Chernetsky's concept, the reason of this mode is well known phenomenon of plasma instability and **pinch-effect for great currents.** However, the author of this article tested device, which demonstrated similar effect (switching on the load in secondary circuit of transformer and in the presence of arc in this circuit, consumption power does not increase, but reduces) for small currents about 300 mA.

Since for pinch-effect it is necessary hundreds Amperes then it was offered another explanation: the surplus power in this circuit appears due to the acceleration of electrons in the gap between electrodes, i.e. particles of plasma are **accelerated by means of electric potential field between two electrodes**. It is noted during the experiments that increase of the spark gap produces more **surplus power in the load of the circuit.** To avoid mistakes the measurements of the consumed power were organized in DC (direct current) battery circuit and therefore there is no any reason to speak of phase shifts mistakes to try to explain skeptically this effect.

... waves of density of time are used by organisms for their vital activity.

Today theory and experiments on self-generating discharge are quite well developed to build free energy systems of any power scale. The reason of delay in its practical development is a complex problem: this work leaves the frames of classical physics. In his book "About physical nature of bio-energy and its simulation", Moscow, Publ. VZPI, 1989, Dr. Chernetsky considered the structure of biological fields and bio-energy processes in living organisms from the point of **longitudinal waves conception.** Self-generating discharge in the mode of negative resistance produces such longitudinal waves and they are self-sustaining (self-powered energetically) and it is considered as field of living object.

Really experimentators of the Chernetsky's group, who worked with SGD device detected influence of biologically active radiations and fields, which can be not screened by usual methods. It was reported by Chernetsky that parameters of this radiation can be selected to accelerate the development of plants and biomass or to suppress it. So, we should speak about artificial living biological system or biological form of energy for this class of free energy devices. Perhaps by the same plasma oscillation way all living organisms provide its vital activity, since long time ago it was known that metabolism and food can not provide enough energy for vital processes.

Nikolay A. Kozyrev also wrote about "reason of life" and he confirmed that waves of density of time are used by organisms for their vital activity. Between "waves of density of time" and "waves with longitudal component" there is a clear analogy. Kozyrev and Chernetsky experimentally demonstrated methods of creation of such waves.

...any free energy system should change the causality in surrounding space-time.

New Energy News magazine, March 1996, wrote about attempts to innovate for American aerospace stations special power source, which uses similar plasma technology: anomalous electric discharge. The USA patents #5416391 and #5449989 belong to Dr. Paulo Correa and Dr. Alexandra Correa, Canada. In their report on free energy Denver conference it was claimed that efficiency is about 483% .

Let's note one more free energy topic: high efficient electrolysis. Classical electrolysis as decomposition of electrolyte in electric field is a wonderful example of work, which is produced by field and it can be organized by such a way to be free from the primary energy source (battery). The traditional scheme uses closed circuit of current through electrolyte and the battery, so the battery is discharged during the operation with electrolytic cell. However any physics textbook confirms that **ions in electrolyte are moving due to electric field only, i.e. work to organize the displacement of ions and heat power, which is connected with this work, are produced by the potential field and expenses of the primary power are not required.**

The current through the battery, which is created in usual closed electric circuit destroys the primary difference of potentials in the battery but it is not some necessary condition. For correct organization of the experiment the products of electrolysis (gases) can be created almost free and their utilization (burning) can provide more heat power than input electric power.

Prof. Latchinov, the real member of Russian Physic-Chemical Society, who patented his method of electrolysis in 1888, mentioned that in some cases the electrolytic cell is freezing during its operation. This is an effect of the law of Conservation, which forces to return the surplus power by means of heat environmental energy. In the experiment by Latchinov the electrolytic cell can create gases of high pressure and consumed power is the same as for the case of low pressure gases. However, it is clear that high pressure gases can produce more work than low pressure gases do. This question was sensational problem in scientific societies of 1888 and it is not solved yet completely.

One of other variants of high efficient electrolysis was investigated by Igor Goriatchev, Russia. Instead of usual 3 Volts level of electrolysis, Goriatchev uses 0.2 Volt pulsing mode. He claimed ratio output/input as 1500% efficiency and he hopes to increase this value twice in more perfect design.

Professor Kanarev from Krasnodar wrote about his experiments on plasma electrolysis and has proved that in electrolysis of water output power can be more than input power.

Real example of "perpetuum mobile of the second kind" is invention by Russian engineer Albert Serogodsky (Moscow) and German engineer Bernard Sheffer (Berlin). They have patented new system for direct transformation of environmental heat into electricity, Germany patent #4244016. Retro-condensation of mixture of benzine and water is organized in closed system under temperature of 154 ⁰C degrees. You can try to get more info from: Werkstatt fur Dezentrale Energleforschung, Pasewaldtstrasse 7, 14169 Berlin, Germany.

The fundamental theoretical researches on direct transformation of environmental heat to useful work were provided by Real Member of The Russian Physical Society Mr. Gennady N. Buynov, St.-Petersburg. The description of his project on "The Mono-thermal device" was published in journal "Russian Ideas" #2, 1992.

In 1995 the scientific journal of Russian Physical Society #1-6 published article "Perpetuum mobile of the second kind (paired gas-chemical cycle)". The author Gennady N. Buynov proposed to consider that **entropy function can be abortive**, i.e. it can be undetermined in some place if reversible chemical reactions are presented in the system.

Herewith, the circular integral of entropy is not a zero and in this case the heat function but not entropy function (according to the Gess law) becomes the function of condition.

Buynov offers to use four–oxide of nitrogen as working matter for this cycle. His works are excellent example of scientific enthusiasm, which (in combination with financial interest of the customers) could produce real results for Russia many years ago. Let's note that

priority of this discovery belongs to Russia in spite of attempts of other scientists to claim and develop this idea now as their own work.

We can make a very interesting conclusion if we analyze history of so called "cold fusion" discovery. According to de-classified materials of 1960, priorities of Russia in this topic are obvious. In 1989 Pons and Fleshman have reported about results of their experiment. In 1995 Russian Journal "Inventor and Rationalizator", #1 has published article about invention made by Ivan S. Filimonenko that was named in 1957 as "warm nuclear syntheses". In 1957 he detected **extra power output in process of heavy water electrolysis** and he mentioned several applied aspects, for example, propulsion force and possibility to reduce radioactivity by means of this process. In 1960 Kurchatov, Korolev and Zhukov have supported the ideas of the author. Russian Government adopted secret resolution on this work:

1. Investigation of energy generation.
2. Development of propulsion without reactive mass flow.
3. Research on protection from radioactivity.

But in next several years this work was suppressed by people of nuclear power plant team. The only system of such type named as TOPAZ was innovated for Russian aerospace systems. World-wide innovation of this technology is a real way to introduce "warm reactors of syntheses" and it is not necessary to wait for results of high-cost "Tokomak" project and other thermonuclear researches. Let's note that secondary effects (propulsion force and influence on radioactivity) are possible due to using of "free energy" aspect if output power is result of change of space-time parameters.

In 1994 Journal "Russian Ideas", #1-6, it was published an interesting document "Conclusion of The Moscow City Council Commission on the question about Ivan Filimonenko's discovery and its development". In this document it was recognized that it is vitally necessary to renew this works. But in 2003 we still have nothing new on this topic. Why? It can be assumed that the Problem of innovation for this technology is possible military application of the methods since influence on radioactivity (for example, remote reduction of radioactivity of some object) is area of interests of the Defense Department. The fact that energy generators by Filimonenko can be used for quick restoration of the present ecological balance is not so important in this case. The same conclusion is about propulsion method, which was proposed by Filimonenko. Mr. Korolev knew about this method; however present space programs are still based on rockets and reactive principles, and anti-gravity flying machines we can see only in fantastic movies.

At the same time, development of commercial cold fusion projects was started in some countries, for example: Patterson Power Cell is introduced in Texas, USA (Clean Energy Technologies Inc., Dallas, Texas, fax 214-458-7690). More than thirty patents were owned by ENECO Corporation, which is collecting the main technological solutions in this area. The production of electrolytic thermal cells was started by Nova Resources Group., Inc., Colorado.

In August of 1995 Atomic Energy of Canada, Ltd. Company, which is member of The Planetary Association for Clean Energy, has published the review on modern methods of conversion of nucleus wastes and deactivation. Two new technologies were offered for introduction: contact processing by "Brown's gas" and remote processing by scalar (torsion) fields. Let's note that the technology proposed by Canadians and Filimonenko's technology demonstrate the effect of influence on the rates of radioactive decay.

These examples are only small part of real situation. Main references on publications are foreign and it can lead to wrong conclusion that Russia is delayed in this direction of new technologies development. In fact, Russia has more talented inventors and researchers than any other country. However, condition for work, patenting and publications of ideas are not the same, and usually Russian technologies cannot reach the level of international market. This problem depends only on real and official state policy with respect to inventors and scientists. In real life financial support of scientific institutes is mainly subsidy for management of the institutes, but not for science. The inventions and discoveries always were made by a certain real person, but not by Institute or some scientific team.

In Russia of last age and in the other world on the whole the institutes and laboratories have been creating for a new scientific problems, discoveries or new directions in science. It was necessary to claim about discovery and provide priority for own country to get official support. Main schools of thought appear by this natural way. By the same natural way the necessary in existing of some scientific institute can be removed when the idea grows up to serial production stage. If there are no any fresh ideas in this school then the institute should be transformed in design office of the production plant on this topic. It is almost impossible to create a new research institute in modern Russia, so really new ideas (if they are not ranged in frames of some existing scientific directions) can not be developed and they can not create a new school of thought in Russia.

… it is possible to make a conclusion about grandiose misinformation of society…

People (carriers of the new ideas) have to leave Russia to realize their sensational ideas on free energy and antigravitation topics. Why they do not work with Russian Academy of Sciences? It is the

rhetorical question. Usually after many years of correspondence with patent office or with official science bodies the authors can find that their ideas are published in "serious scientific magazines" but without any respect to their names...

Attachment 1 presents some information about patented technologies. When we study old and modern patent documents, it is possible to make a conclusion about **grandiose misinformation of society**, which leads to appearance of two different Worlds, separated by the level of knowledge: evident and hidden knowledge. The achievements of the second hidden world could change our planet, give a chance to remove all energy and ecological problems. Besides, we have discussed that some free energy systems (for example, self generated plasma discharge) have also the medical-biological aspects. This "influence" from free energy system is related with negative entropy processes in area of the operation of the system so some components of biological systems can be changed to less entropy. The design of free energy system defines the type of this influence. It was noted before that operation of any free energy system should be considered in high topology space-time as multidimensional system to see what the reason of the effect is.

So, since the rate of time course is determined by Nikolay A. Kozyrev as rate of cause-effect transformations, then any free energy system should change the causality in surrounding space-time. In this case we can assume that it creates quantum physics effects on the macro level. It is interesting to assume Heisenberg's uncertainty, tunnel effect and manifestation of wave characteristics (up to diffraction of objects) for macro level.

Some experimental data by Kozyrev is related with quantum effects, which were detected in his experiments with rotating and vibrating gyroscopes. This technology is the basis to design real teleportation systems, which will change parameters of space-time to allow changes of position of some material object from one point of space to another point of space (without transference on the distance between these points) by means of combining these points in the same place of space for some time.

The process of study of new technologies in alternative power industry and gravitation is developing actively in the world. Besides secret programs and institutes, it is possible to make a conclusion that activity of this work in countries of limited fuel resources is more efficient. Now Russia has rich **natural materials and oil resources but in the short time this advantage will not play any role in development of economy.**

Industrial and defense power of any country will depend on free energy technologies, knowledge on the biologically active energy and reactionless propulsion methods.

The new technology creates not only a new technical systems but also **new economical systems**. It is not physics but policy... Development of great Russian territories with industry of free energy technologies for home and commercial application is the way to change world economical balance in favor of Russia. It is difficult to say now what financial-economical group of modern Russia is most interested in development of this direction of science. The purpose of any financial-economical group is power on the market of energy resources, but when the free energy technologies are developing, then people and industrial or agricultural producers will be more independent from centralized system of energy and oil distribution, therefore, they will be more independent from influences of central authorities.

From the point of view of serious business, there is only one real argument in favor of developments of any really new technology: it should lead to increase of profit and expansion of the market. In this sense, it is possible to compare the new energy technologies with beginning of the steam machine age or with appearance of electric machines and illumination. This means the super profits and serious fight with competitors. To develop this way any efforts of scientists are not sufficient work. It is necessary to join them with the efforts of large business structures, which are interested to create new market of energy and power engineering in parallel to present monopoly fuel-energy market or to develop commercial exploration of space by means of new propulsion principles. In particular, telecommunication space satellites and projects on colonization of space could be the nearest commercial directions of the new market.

References

1. Sakharov A.D. "Quantum Fluctuations of Vacuum in Curved Space and Theory of Gravitation", Reports of Academy of Sciences USSR, vol. 12, 1968, page 1040.
2. Puthoff H.T., Ph. Review E, vol.48, num.2, p.1562-1565, "Extracting energy and heart from the vacuum"; Physical Review A, vol. 39, num. 5, "Gravity as a zero-point-fluctuation force".
3. Nassikas A.A., The Hypothesis of the Unified Field and the Principle of its Dual Interpretation, III International Conference "Problems of Space, Time, Gravitation", St.-Petersburg, 1994.
4. N.A. Kozyrev, Selected works, published by Leningrad State University, 1991, p.202, in Russian.
5. Gravitobiology, by T.E. Bearden, 1991, Tesla Book Company, P.O. Box 121873 Chula Vista, CA 91912, USA. Library of Congress Catalog Card Number 86-50553.
6. Hasselberg Josef, New Beginning of Thermodynamics, http://hasslberger.com, Hasslberger, Josef "The inventor and society" in Raum&Zeit #4, October 1989, Hasslberger, Josef "Vortex, the natural movement" in EXPLORE, No.5, Vol.3, 1992.

7. Gustav Naan, Symmetrcial Universe, Tarty Astronomical Observatory, Vol. XXXIV, 1964.

8. New Results of Development and Testing of Single-Wire Electric Power System, Prof. Dmitry S. Strebkov, Eng. Stanislav V. Avramenko, Dr. Aleksey I. Nekrasov, Eng. Oleg A. Roschin, New Energy Technologies, #5(8), 2002.

9. An Experimental investigation of the Physical Effects In a Dynamic Magnetic System. V.V. Roschin and S.M. Godin, New Energy Technologies, #1, 2001.

10. Practical application of time rate control theory. Alexander V. Frolov, New Energy Technologies, #3, 2001.

Attachment 1

Methods and devices to create power without external sources and reactionless motion systems

3913004 October 14, 1975, Method and equipment to increase electric power, Robert Aleksander.

4975608 December 4, 1990, Motor with switchable magnetic resistance, Harold Aspden.

5288336 Converters of heat into electricity, Harold Aspden, see also patents 5,065,085 and 5,101,632

4622510 November 11, 1986, Parametric electric machine, Ferdinand Kap.

2912244 1959, Gravitational System, Ottis Karr.

4006401 February 1, 1977, Electromagnetic generator, V. Rivas

3811058, 3879622 Motors with permanent magnets.

1835721 December 8, 1931, Motor with permanent magnets, A. Povel.

1963213 June 19, 1934, Magnetic motor, G. Pose.

1859643 May 24, 1932, Motor with permanent magnets, G.L. Worsington.

1859764 May 24, 1932, Magnetic device, G. Baugon.

2982261 Mac Klintok's Air motor.

4595843 June 17, 1986, Transformer of rotation magnetic flux, Robert Del Vechio.

4567407 January 28, 1986, Motor - alternator, John Eklin.

3368141 January 6, 1968, Transformer in combination with permanent magnets, K. Garon.

3890548 June 17, 1975, Motor with pulsing capacitor discharge, Edwin Gray.

4595852 June 17, 1986, Electrostatic generator, Robert Gandlach.

4831299 May 16, 1989, Homopolar generator of alternating current, Enakishy Khasaka.

4249096 February 3, 1981, Electric dynamo, Barbara Nikoks.

3610971 October 5, 1971, Electromotive generator of electric field, Williams Couper.

4897592 January 30, 1990, System producing power from energy of electrostatic field, Williams Hyde.

4151431 April 24, 1979, Motor with permanent magnets, Hovard Johnson.

4806834 February 21, 1989, Electric circuit of inductive conductors, transformers and motors, Erl Kening.

3374376 March 19, 1968, Electric generator, Raymond Kromry.

3977191 August 31, 1976, Power source, Robert Brett.

3670494, Method of converting of atomic energy in kinetic energy.

4709323 November 24, 1987, Converter of parallel resonance, Charles Lien.

5146395 September 8, 1992, Power source using two accumulating circuits, Richard Mac Kee.

4210859 June 1, 1980, Inductive device with two orthogonal windings, Paul Meretsky.

4500827 February 19, 1985, Linear electric generator, Thomas Merit.

4904926 February 27, 1990, Electric generator of magnetic motion, Mario Patsishinsky.

4945273 July 1990, High effective electric machine, Josef Pinkertone.

4883977 November 28, 1989, Converter of magnetic power, Dennis Regan.

4077001 Electromagnetic converter, Frank Richardson.

5018180 May 21, 1991, Conversion of energy, Kennet Shoulders.

4652771 March 24, 1987, Transformer, Theodore Speach.

477 2816 September 20, 1988, Conversion of energy, Jefry Spens.

4748311 May 31, 1988, Inverter, Fridrikh-Verner Thomas.

International patent H02K 31/00, 39/00 dated June 24 1982, Closed part of unipolar machine, Adam Trombly.

4687947 August 18, 1987, Electric circuit for conserving of power, Melvin Kobb.

4772775 September 20, 1988, Generation of plasma flux in electric arc, Sam Lich.

The USA patents 5416391 and 5449989, Paulo Correa.

4432098 and 4429280, Transmission of information by means of magnetic vector potential, Raynolds Gelinas.

Great Britain, #547668, January 30 (September 7) 1942, Motor with permanent magnets, Stenly Hichkok.

Great Britain, application # 2282708A, Motor with permanent magnets, Robert Adams, Harold Aspden.

4394230 USA patent, July 19, 1983, Henry K. Pukharich.

2251775 Great Britain patent, April 20, 1994, Thermoelectric conversion, Harold Aspden.

5288336 USA patent, Thermoelectric conversion, Harold Aspden.

The USA patents on electrogravitation

1363037 Goddard, December 21, 1920;

2004352 Simon, June 11, 1935;

2210918 Karlovitz, August 13, 1940;
2588427 Stringfield, March 11, 1952;
2231877 Bennet, 18 February, 1941;
2279586 Bennet, 14 April, 1942;
2305500 Slayter, December 15, 1942.
English patent 300,311 August 15, 1927, Townsend Braun.
French patent 1003484 November 1951, Electrogravitation;
3187206 June 1, 1965, Electrokinetic equipment, Townsend Brown.
3022430 February 20, 1962, Electrokinetic generator, Townsend Brown.
3018394 January 23, 1962, Electrokinetic converter, Townsend Brown.
2949550 August 16, 1960, Electrokinetic equipment, Townsend Brown.
1974483 September 25, 1934, Electrostatic motor, Townsend Brown.

Attachment 2

Organizations

· Faraday Lab Ltd, Lev Tolstoy Str. 7, St. Petersburg, 197376, Russia.
· The Russian Physics Society, 141002, Moscow reg., Mytishy, B. Sharapovskaya str. 3. Fax 095-2926511
· Academy for Future Sciences, P.O. Box FE, Los Gatos, CA 95031, USA.
· AERI, Advanced Energy Research Institute, 14 Devonshire Mews West, London W1N 1Fp, Great Britain.
· ADAS, Association of Distinguished American Scientists, P.O. Box 1472, Huntsville, AL 35807, USA.
· Borderland Sciences Research Foundation, P.O. Box 429, Garberville, CA 95440-0429, USA.
· Center for Action, P.O. Box 472, HCR 31, Sandy Valley, NT 89019, USA.
· Electrodynamics Gravity, Inc., 35 W. Tallmadge Ave., Akron, Ohio 44310, USA.
· Fusion Information Center, P.O. Box 58639, Salt Lake City, Utah 84158-0369, USA
· Gravity Power Research Association, 36 Mountain Road, Burlington, MA 01803, USA.
· GRI, Group Research Institute, P.O. Box 438, Nelson, New Zealand. Dr. Ashley Gray.
· High Energy Enterprises, P.O. Box 5636, Security, CO 80931, USA. Fax 719-4750582.
· Institute for Advanced Studies at Austin, 4030 Braker Lane W., Suite 300, Austin, TX 78759, USA.
· INE, Institute for New Energy, 1304 South College Avenue, Fort Collins, CO 80524, USA.
· Integrity Institute, 1377 K Street, NW, Suite 16, Washington DC, USA. Fax 202-543-3069.
· Orgone Biophysical Research Laboratory, Inc., P.O. Box 1395, E1 Cerrito, CA 94530, USA.
· Quantum Biology Research Laboratory, P.O. Box 60653, Palo Alto, CA 94306, USA.
· SEA, Space Energy Association, P.O. Box 11422, Clearwater, FL 34616, USA.

· Tesla Book Company, P.O. Box 121873, Chula Vista, CA 91912, USA.
· Tesla Incorporated, 760 Prairie Av., Craig, CO 81625, USA. Fax 303-824-7864.
· Journal Explore, P.O. Box 1508, Mount Vernon, Washington 98273, USA.
· Electric Spacecraft Journal, P.O. Box 18387, Asheville, NC 28814, USA. Fax 704-683-3511.
· Nexus New Times Magazine, P.O. Box 30, Maplepton Old, 4560, Australia. Fax 074-429381.
· Journal Cold Fusion Times, P.O. Box 81135, Wellesley Hills MA 02181, USA.
· Journal Infinite Energy, P.O. Box 2816, Concord, NH 03302-2816, USA.
· Journal 21st Century Science & Technology, P.O. Box 16285, Washington, DC, 20041, USA.
· Journal Cold Fusion, 70b Route 202N, Petersborough, NH 03458, USA.
· Brown's Gas International, 5063 Densmore Av., ENCINO, California 91436 USA.
· ENECO Inc., 391-B Chipeta Way, Salt Lake City, Utah 84108, USA. Fax 801-5836245.
· "Robert Adams and Company" 46 Landing Road, Whakatane, Bay of Plenty, New Zealand. Robert Adams,
· Methernitha, 3517 Linden, Switzeland. Manager Francis Bosshard.
· Swiss Association for Free Energy, P.O. Box 10, 5704, Egliswilli, Switzeland.
· Space Research Institute, Box 33, Uwajima, Ehime 79, Japan. Dr. Shinichi Seike. Fax 895-24-7325.
· Nuclear Power Corporation, 581 400 Karnataka, India. Project Director Dr. Paramahamsa Tewari.
· Cosmic Energy Foundation, Neptunuslaan 11, 3318 E1 Dordrecht, Netherlands. Dr. Martin Holwerda
· Sabberton Research, P.O. Box 35, Southampton S097BU, England, Dr. Harold Aspden.
· Labofex, Experimental and Applied Plasma Physics, Ontario, Canada, Dr. Paulo N. Correa.

Some General Properties of Matter and Energy Sources

Dr. Eugene D. Sorokodum

Volochaevskaya Street, 40-b, Flat 38,
111033, Moscow, Russia
Telephone: (7) - (095) -362 80 84
Email: e40dum@dol.ru http://vortex.viptop.ru

Introduction

Nowadays there are appear more and more attempts to disclose new methods of obtaining energy from the ambient space, i.e. from heat, electromagnetic, gravitational fields, physical vacuum, aether, etc. (See, for example, publications in New Energy Technologies [1-3]). The publications demonstrate that researchers meet various incompletely investigated physical processes. These scientific areas are difficult to be investigated. All this makes obstacles for development of works on creation of new energy sources. **In this work there is made an attempt to demonstrate general properties of energy sources of any physical nature. This attempt is based on a general analysis of properties of matter.** A theory of transformers is used to investigate general properties of matter.

Action of all physical, technical and biological systems is expressed in energy transformation. Numerous theories based on particular (specific for some system) methods are applied for description of these systems. However, if the number of degrees of freedom and of elements inside a system increases then many theories are not able to describe operation of the systems. First these problems appeared in electrical engineering, radio engineering, automation and acoustics. The theory of transformers is applied to these fields of science. The theory represents a complicated system as a "black box" having several inputs and outputs. Operation of the numerous elements occurring inside the box is represented as some equivalent functions reduced to the inputs and outputs.

In the last decades methods of solution of mechanical dynamic tasks by the method of complex resistances are developed as well as representation of elements as linear transformers [11] and finite elements in liquid [14]. This tendency can be applied to the mechanics of

Devoted to memory of Academician A.A. Harkevich

liquids and gases. Now there are successfully developed those concepts which assume observation of models having very few degrees of freedom to be enough for analyzing processes in hydrodynamic systems [10]. However, a mathematical apparatus for description of transformers operation which is well-developed in these areas of science and engineering has a special view and is applicable only for these scientific areas.

Academician A.A. Harkevich developed a theory of a linear transformer up to the level of the general theory of transformers which is applicable for transformation of any types of energy [24]. The general theory of transformers proposed by A. A. Harkevich is applicable for description of various energy sources, flying and swimming objects, functioning of different animals' organs, and technological processes. In this work some general properties of matter and energy sources are investigated, according to the general theory of transformers.

General theory of energy transformer

The whole ambient space, from the microworld to the macroworld, is filled with energy. According to different theories, space is represented as a compact medium (i.e. having distributed parameters) or a medium consisting of a limited number of discrete elements (i.e. having concentrated parameters). On the analogy of hydrodynamics [10, 14] the compact medium can be represented as an equivalent system with a limited number of degrees of freedom. Hence, the whole space can be represented as some system consisting of elements and communications between the elements with a limited number of degrees of freedom. Energy exchange occurs due to the degrees of freedom. Energy transmission occurs if energy gradient is presented in the ambient space. Due to the energy gradient a force tends to realize transmission in the space [4]. The elements can be systems as well.

Hence, the more we observe dividing the elements on the systems and the systems on the elements the more we will penetrate into the microworld (i.e. atoms, elementary particles, physical vacuum, aether, etc.). The more we combine the elements in the systems, and the systems in the new larger systems the more we observe the macroworld (the Solar System, galaxies etc.). All the systems and the elements are interconnected. The systems and their elements are

transformers of energy. Energy motion occurs in the smallest part of space. Consequently, the whole space can be represented as a system consisting of the energy transformers. In the general case due to every type of energy limits of a transformer consist of outer limits (i.e. communications with the macroworld) and inner limits (i.e. communications with the microworld). Dividing into the macroworld and the microworld occurs in relation to the size of a transformer for every type of energy. Types of energy coming through communications of a transformer and inside it may differ, i.e. mechanical, heating, electromagnetic, chemical and other known and unknown types of energy.

The processes in which a great number of interacting elements and different types of energy participate are very complicated and do not allow describe the processes accurately by modern mathematical methods. Hence, there is a problem to find such methods of solution of the tasks which without disclosing all the communications inside the element can give the understanding of the way an element moves in the system. The following premises can be made for the method of solution of the task of a system and its elements' motion:

1.   Motion of all the elements in the space is characterized by energy exchange occurring among them;
2.   We are interested in a certain limited area for every individual type of energy. The chosen limited area will be called as **a transformer**;
3.   The transformer has degrees of freedom both on its limits (sides) and inside it (inner degrees of freedom);
4.   Further this limited area (the transformer) which has or is able to have a limited number of degrees of freedom (sides) at its limit will be observed;
5.   Interaction between this transformer and the ambient space occurs only through these degrees of freedom (sides) by means of energy exchange;
6.   Motion of energy between the elements of the transformer occurs according to its degrees of freedom inside the transformer. There can be a limited or unlimited number of degrees of freedom.
7.   All the space is full of the transformers. All the transformers adjoin each other without gaps. Energy exchange between the transformers occurs through their sides which do not have a size but reflect general kinematical and dynamic characteristics of the energy transferred through these sides.

Editor: The full variant of the article includes mathematical description of operation of energy transformers which is followed by these conclusions:

-     There can be any number of different types of elements having a corresponding number of degrees of freedom and any type of energy inside the transformer. However, on every side of the transformer a generalized force has the same value and depends only on change of energy according to this degree of freedom. Therefore, two transformers are considered to be equal if the generalized forces (energy changes) on all the sides are equal. In this case it is not necessary for the inner structure of the transformer, number of inner degrees of freedom, and energy types of these two transformers to be equal. This is **a principle of equivalency of transformers at the equivalency of the forces acting at the sides of transformers**.

-     In the general case the generalized force at any side depends not only on energy exchange occurring at this side but on energy exchange occurring among the sides or at other sides of the transformer. The generalized forces are produced by energy distribution in the space.
-     A transformer is characterized by the fact that there are different types of energy at its different input sides (or the energy can be of the same type but having other characteristics of motion).

Resistances of the interaction provide information about physical properties of the transformer, in particular, about physical interaction between the sides. At that a number of inner degrees of freedom in this transformer as well as the reactions at the other sides do not play any role. Proper resistances of the sides and resistances of the interaction provide information about inner physical characteristics of the transformer reduced to equivalent values at the sides. Hence, it is possible to have two transformers having equal equivalent resistances of interaction for all the sides. However, according to their geometrical and constructional characteristics and types of energy, the transformers will be different. The resistances may be a function of kinematical characteristics (**a nonlinear transformer**) or of time (**a parametrical transformer**). Moreover, it can have constant values (**a linear transformer**).

It is appropriate to consider physical properties of matter included in the volume of a transformer only due to resistances at the sides of the transformer.

Structure of the transformer

Every inner degree of freedom can be represented as a series circuit. By analogy with electric circuits [6, 7, 11, 16-18] the transformer can consist of various circuits. An unlimited number of degrees of freedom allows represent a transformer consisting of an unlimited number of chains. The circuits have series, parallel, or mixed junctions. A part of a circuit whose elements have the same generalized displacement is called as a branch. The branch can consist of one or several elements. A place where three or more branches are joined is called as a multiple junction. A circuit is considered to be a closed path including several branches and multiple junctions. All the elements of a chain connected in series have equal generalized displacement (as well as equal speed and acceleration). The generalized force acting on the

whole circuit is equal to the sum of forces acting on the elements of the series circuit.

The elements connected in series can be replaced by one element in such a way that the generalized displacement and the summary generalized force would not change. In the case of a parallel connection all the branches of the circuit are joined to the same pare of multiple junctions and are under influence of the same generalized force. Parallel circuits can be replaced by series equivalent circuit and vice versa [6, 7, 11, 17, 18]. Hence, a number of inner degrees of freedom and a quantity of chains may be decreased as well as increased. In this case resistances occurring on all the sides will be constant.

Structure of the linear transformer

The simplest transformer is a one-side transformer having one inner degree of freedom…

If to the input of the transformer we deliver generalized displacement (or force) which depends on time as a pure sinusoidal signal then the linear transformer will have sinusoidal reaction of the same frequency. For the sinusoidal signal with fixed frequency the linear transformer (including a transformer having an unlimited number of inner degrees of freedom) can be represented as an equivalent transformer reduced to this input as one chain. An equivalent transformer placing at this input at other fixed frequency of sinusoidal disturbance will be represented as a chain having one degree of freedom but different values of chain elements.

If the signal at the input of the transformer is of complicated time-periodical form then it can be decomposed to Fourier series. Every harmonics of the Fourier series will produce its own chain. The general complicated signal will produce the complex chain consisting of compound sum of elementary series chains. This complicated chain consists of elementary chains interconnected in series or in parallel and combined in multiple junctions and circuits. The construction principles of this complicated chain can be based on methods of identification and synthesis which are well developed in electrical engineering, automation for linear and non-linear transformers [9, 12, 13]. These principles are formally useful for transformers which transform energy of any physical nature. Identification produces so much elementary chains as the number of inner degrees of freedom. Every elementary chain reflects motion by one inner degree of freedom. Physical analogy occurring among motions of different nature is actual here [11, 16, 18]. Values of the generalized masses, elasticities, dissipative and active elements can depend on kinematical variables (non-linear chains), on time (parametrical chains), or they can be constant (linear chains).

If a series circuit includes mass and elasticity then it will have resonant frequency. At this frequency reaction of mass and elasticity will be absent in the summary reaction. It is equal to the fact that we will know nothing about the value of mass (and elasticity) and, moreover, about its presence at all. The mass can have huge value, but it will be absent for us. Hence, if we assume a transformer as an atom then the atom may include elementary chains having huge masses (much more than the mass of the Earth), but we will not know about it until we apply such frequency to the input which explicates this mass.

Any energy transformer including a transformer with distributed parameters can be represented as a system of elementary series and parallel chains connected in a certain way. A concrete transformer can have various types of these connections. All of them can be included into another combination of connections that is accompanied by change of values of masses, elasticities, dissipative and active elements. However, in this case equivalency of reaction should be fulfilled at a certain diapason of frequencies on all the sides of the transformer.

There is a special spectrum of resonant frequencies for every combination of connections of the transformer. There will be an unlimited number of degrees of freedom and, hence, an unlimited number of resonances for the transformer with distributed parameters (for example, an elastic nail, a compressible fluid having a limited size). Our influence on the transformer usually has a certain diapason of frequencies. As the result of a limited diapason of excitation frequency the transformer will represent a system having a limited number of inner freedom, even if the transformer has distributed parameters.

Values of equivalent elements depend on oscillation frequency. Moreover, according to known laws, several parallel circuits can be transformed into a series one and vice versa. Taking it into account the following conclusions can be made:

1.   The generalized mass, elasticity and dissipative elements do not have constant values in nature. Their value depends on frequency of the process, i.e. they depend on the character of time-change of the disturbance acting on the transformer.
2.   The generalized mass, elasticity and dissipative elements are products of time-space change of energy.

Types of energy transformers

Transformers can be nonlinear, parametrical and linear. The transformer can be **active** (having an internal source) and **passive** (having an external source). The passive transformer can never be an energy source (by definition). A transformer can accept or transform one type of energy (monoenergetic transformers) or several types of energy (polyenergetic transformers). The polyenergetic transformer includes a mechanism and

corresponding elements and chains which allow transform one type of energy into another one. Fundamentally, all the transformers are polyenergetic transformers of energy, however many of them can be represented as monoenergetic ones since other types of energy participate weakly in them. Designing a transformer it is more convenient to put the energy source out the transformer. Let us further classify the passive transformers.

The passive transformers can belong to the following types:

1. Simple transformers

In this case energy is produced at the output due to transformation of energy coming to the inputs into energy of another type or having other characteristics. The following transformation can serve as the example.

An electric transformer: resistance of one value comes to the input, and the resistance of another value comes from the output (a type of energy is the same).

A furnace for combustion of fuel: energy of chemical connections comes to the input and heating energy comes from the output (energy of radiation may be neglected).

A Wind Generator, Hydroelectric Power Station: kinetic energy of moving air or water comes to the input, and electric energy comes from the output.

2. Energy intensifiers

In this case a transformer intensifies energy coming to one of the inputs due to energy coming to the other inputs (or to the other input). Below there is an example for a *monoenergetic transformer*. Energy (an electric signal having certain parameters) comes to the input of a transformer, and the output energy has the same characteristics but it is more intensive. It can occur due to electric energy coming to the other input of the transformer.

A heat pump represents an example for a *polyenergetic transformer*. Low potential heat energy of the ambient space (air, water, ground) comes to the input of the heat pump, and electric energy from a power network comes to the other input. The output heat energy has value which is equal to the sum of the coming heat energy of the ambient space and electric energy coming from the power network through the electric engine of the compressor. The output heat energy excesses energy coming from the power network by several times. The output energy is always lower than the sum of the low potential heat energy and the electric energy coming to the input. Hence, the output of a heat pump is always less than unit.

Efficiency of the heat pump consists in the fact that a consumer pays for electric power produced by power network only (use of the low potential heat of the ambient space is free). However, the output heat energy is several times more than the energy which can be produced by the electric power coming to the input.

3. Active oscillator

An active oscillator is a device of a certain type. Energy of time-constant characteristics comes to its input, and at output there is energy of time-periodical characteristics. Energy with time-periodical characteristics can come to the input as well since these characteristics are not connected with the time-periodical characteristics of the output energy. The transformer can operate in a mode of an active oscillator if it has the following features:

1. Indirect connection as a series circuit: one of the outputs is connected to an additional transformer whose output is connected to one of the inputs of the transformer. The additional transformer provides certain changes of the input signal (time delay).
2. Energy comes to the input (it can be time-constant or time-periodical).
3. The transformer must have a certain type of non-linearity.

Examples of the active oscillator

Internal combustion engine: the indirect connection is the system of combustion, the non-linear element is the system of admission and exhaust valves, and the energy source is energy of chemical connections of fuel.

Various electric generators: all of them have the indirect connection, the non-linear element, and the energy source.

The active oscillators differ from the electrical intensifiers qualitatively. The difference consists in the fact that the active oscillator can operate and receive energy from the ambient space without additional energy coming to it (from a power network, for example).

Theorists and experimenters try to create a self-supporting self-organizing system in their works on creation of alternative sources. This fundamentally correct tendency requires using theory of active oscillators. There is the developed theory in electrical engineering, automation, and other scientific fields [25]. To simplify application of these theories it is necessary to use analogy between equal processes which take place in different physical fields.

4. Rectifiers

Time-periodical energy comes to the input of the transformer. The output energy has time-constant or practically time-constant characteristics. If the transformer has a non-linear element or elements of a certain type (a diode or a one-sided valve) then it can

operate in the mode of a rectifier. The examples are electrical rectifiers and pumps of a valve type.

Properties of energy transformers

General properties:

1. A transformer can transform energy of one type as well as transform one type of energy into another type.
2. The generalized kinetic, potential and dissipative energies are specific peculiarities of energy change in the space and time.
3. The generalized masses, elasticities and dissipative elements are products of energy change in space and time.
4. Values of the generalized masses, elasticities and dissipative elements (existing inside the transformer as well as reduced to the equivalent values on the sides of it) depend on a temporal character of changes of kinematical or dynamic disturbances. Values of the generalized masses and elasticities at the sides of the transformer are lower than the corresponding values inside the transformer.
5. Energy interchange between macrostructures and microstructures can occur through a transformer.
6. One area of space can "know" about another area of space through energy exchange only, i.e. through generalized dynamic and kinematical interactions. In the light of the fact that chains of different transformers can have similar physical properties (for example, an equal resonant structure) interference of these transformers seems to be possible including interference occurring at a great distance.

Properties of the passive monoenergetic transformer:

1. Transformation of characteristics of the same energy type.
2. The output energy can be both equal or lower than the sum of energies coming to all the inputs. The sum of the output energies decreases due to dissipative losses occurring inside the transformer.

Properties of the passive polyenergetic transformer:

1. One energy type coming to an input can be transformed into another energy type coming from the output.
2. The sum of energies of all the outputs can be equal to the sum of energies of all the inputs or less than it. The sum of the output energies decreases due to dissipative losses occurring inside the transformer. The output will always be lower than unit. If the energy coming from certain of the outputs (within the limits of one output) is considered as a positive effect then the output will be less than the mentioned value.
3. Energy of one and the same type comes to the input and from the output while other energy types can come from other outputs. This property can allow increase one type of energy coming from an output at the expense of the other types of energy coming to the inputs.

Analysis

This article is aimed to provide general properties of the energy transformers and to analyze some problems of creation of renewed energy sources, according to these properties. There are made various attempts to design a renewed energy source which would produce energy without fuel consumption. In the light of the above mentioned results, the researches on creation of the renewed energy source may be represented by the following way. Energy can be produced from the macrostructures and the microstructures.

In the case of the macrostructure, energy can be produced by a simple transformer, an electric intensifier or an active oscillator. Methods of production of energy from the ambient space by means of simple transformers (thermoelectric and hydroelectric power stations, wind generators, etc.) are developed sufficiently by the humankind. Works on producing energy from the ambient space by means of energy intensifiers are on its initial stage. Heat pumps, which utilize low potential heat energy by means of Freon-compressor heat pumps, are successfully introduced. One of the perspective approaches is replacing such a heat pump by a vortex oscillating heat pump which does not contain Freon and a compressor [3, 5, 19, 22]. In future it will be possible to replace the energetic pump by a new energy transformer of the type of an active oscillator. In this case the energy source will always obtain energy from the ambient space without using additional energy from a power network. Energy sources of the type of the active oscillator are internal and external combustion engines, stream engines, etc.

In the general case a transformer can contain different energy types and has communications with **outer microstructures**. It should be noted that the outer microstructures can be included in the geometrical size of the transformer. Energy of this microstructure can be huge; hence, this energy can be obtained from them for a very long period of time. Atomic reactors can serve as an example for this fact. The types of energy in these microstructures can be represented by known types (electromagnetic energy, nuclear energy) and unknown types (whose numerous quantity can be considered). These energy types exist in the ambient space. However, almost all the transformers of energy produced by a human (except the nuclear reactors) do not interact with the energies, and we do not obtain energy from these microstructures.

The task of creation of a new energy source consists in designing such an energy transformer which could obtain energy from the microstructures and transform it into the type of energy which is needed to a consumer. In this case all the designed transformers will not have over unit output. Efficiency of these transformers will be defined by the cost of the energy produced by them. This energy depends on a ratio of

energy coming to one of the inputs (electric power) (for example, in heat pumps) to the output energy. If the output energy is much more than the artificial energy which comes to one of the inputs then this transformer can be very useful for a consumer.

New high effective energy sources are often claimed to be created. According to the observed facts, existence of such sources is practically possible. Nevertheless, realization of this source will depend on our knowledge of physics of the microstructures and methods of transformation of energy of the microstructures into such type of energy which can be used by a consumer. Physics of microstructures is investigated badly, and many types of energy are totally unknown. Therefore, modern scientists try to create the new energy sources at random. In this case the following results can be achieved:

1. The high effectiveness of an energy source (over unit output) does not correspond to reality.
2. The output energy of the energy source is actually higher than the input energy (the source of the energy intensifier type).
3. The energy source actually produces energy without artificial input energy (the source of the active oscillator type). It can occur if an inventor failed to recognize the source of energy coming from the microstructures. It can be connected with particular or total lack of exploration of physics of the microstructures. Moreover, the fact is caused by transcendent difficulty of disclosing energy sources from the macrostructures.

Conclusions

It is principally possible to create an energy source whose output energy would be higher than its input energy (an energy intensifier) or an energy source which would produce energy without additional input energy (an active oscillator).

1. Various energy sources or transformers of energy of the macrostructures and microstructures can be designed.
2. Practical value of the energy source is defined according to cost of its output energy instead of the output value.
3. Designing new energy sources it is useful to consider them from the point of view of transformers. It is worth to define all the communications of the transformer and to state experimentally energy at all the accessible communications of the transformer.
4. Developing theories of sources it is expedient to use physical analogy and to take into account ready results of works on theories of transformers, chains, etc. of electrical engineering, radio engineering, automation and other scientific fields.
5. In the light of the fact that it is planned to obtain energy from the microstructures it is necessary to pay attention to new probable types of radiation and to their influence on a human.

References

1. Frolov A.V. The work Advanced Energy and Propulsion Systems based on Chronal Reaction Method // New Energy Technologies. - 2001, 2. p.51-55.
2. Frolov A.V. Reactionless Propulsion and Active Force // New Energy Technologies. - 2001, 2. p.56-58.
3. Sorokodum E. Recycling of energy of the atmosphere by means of vortex // Russian technologies for industry "Renewable Energy" IWRFRI'2001,may 28-30, 2001, Saint-Petersburg. Abstracts. - 2001, p. 92-93.
4. Sorokodum E. On general nature of forces. New Energy Technologies. 1(4), 2002, p.30-36.
5. Sorokodum E. D. Vortex heat-generators. New Energy Technologies Issue. Vol.2(5), 2002, p.17-76.
6. Andreev V.S. Theory of nonlinear electric circuits. M.: Radio and Communication. 1982, p.280
7. Atabekov G.I. Theory of linear electric circuits. M.: Soviet Radio. 1960, p. 712
8. Berezkin E.N. Lectures on theoretic mechanics. Part 11. Dynamics of the system, dynamics of solid body, analytical dynamics. M.: MSU - 1968, p.314
9. Blakyer O. Analysis of nonlinear systems. Transl. from English. Edited by Hohlov R.V. M.: Mir. – 1969, p. 400
10. Gledzer E.B., Dolzansky F.V., Obuhov A.M. Systems of hydrodynamic type and their application. M.: Nauka – 1981, p. 366
11. Druzinsky I.A. Mechanical circuits //L.: Mashinostroenie. – 1977, p. 240
12. Kononenko V.O., Plahtienko N.P. Methods of identification of nonlinear mechanical oscillating systems
13. Zakrzhevsky M.V. Oscillations of essentially-nonlinear mechanical systems. Riga, "Zinatne". – 1980, p.190
14. Ladikov Yu.P. Stabilization of the processes in continuums. M.: Nauka. – 1978, p. 432
15. Merkin D.R. To the question on forces' structure // Applied mathematics and mechanics. - 1975, 39, 35. p. 929-932
16. Oltson G. Dynamic analogies. M.: State Edition. Foreign Literature. - 1947, p.223
17. Popov E.P. Theory of linear systems of automatic regulation and control. M.: Nauka. – 1989, p.302
18. Puhov G.E., Vasilyev V.V., Stepanov A.E., Tokareva O.N. Electrical modeling of the tasks of structural mechanics. Edition of Academy of Science of Ukrainian SSR. - 1963
19. Rodionov B.N., Sorokodum E.D. Vortex energetic. Constructional materials, equipment, technologies of the XX century. 3 (26). 2001, p. 28, 29
20. Sorokodum E.D. Theory of transformers for nonlinear biomechanical oscillating systems. Taganrog institute of radio engineering. – Dep. in VINITI, 7.05.1980, #1948-80 Dep. – 1980, p. 38
21. Sorokodum E.D. On the application of theory of nonlinear transformers for the calculation of complex mechanical oscillating systems. Reports at the scientific conference "Problems of nonlinear oscillations of mechanical systems". Kiev. - 1978
22. Sorokodum E.D. Vortex source of energy. International scientific and social conference. Prospects of preservation and developing of the united civilization of the planet. Culture. Ecology. Space. 26-31 of May, 2002
23. Strelkov S.P. Introduction to the theory of oscillations. M.: Nauka. – 1964, p. 440
24. Harkevich A.A. Theory of transformers. State Energetic edition, M.-L.: 1948, p. 191
25. Harkevich A.A. Auto-oscillations. / Harkevich A.A. Selected works in 3 volumes, V. 2, M.: Nauka – 1948, pp. 253-379.

Commercial Exploration of Space

Review
by Olga Leontyeva, Editor
http://www.faraday.ru

Of late years the mankind has greatly advanced in space exploration. New spaceships are created, automatic apparatus are launched to the planets of solar system, space stations are orbited. A man has passed to outer space and begun exploring the planets of solar system. More and more specialists and people of different professions are involved in the development of space industry. However to present day only a few of them has succeeded flying into space.

At the present state of affairs space flight is very expensive and a serious reason should exist to forward a man into space if he or she does not relate to the aims of professional cosmonautics. However in last years there has appeared a certain breakthrough in the solving of the problem. Nowadays space technologies gradually turn from the sphere of experimental and scientific researches to the area of practical application. The time has come for a man to realize the real space flight without being the professional cosmonaut.

What are the ways to solve the problem? No doubt that special attention should be paid to the development of new space technologies, search of new types of fuel and attraction of investments to the sphere of space tourism.

April 28, 2001 can be considered as official date of birth of space tourism, when there was launched the space ship "Soyuz TM-32" with the first space tourist aboard. Almost in a year, on April 25, 2002 the space tourist #2 South African Republic person Mark Shattlword started on his space journey.

Today many companies give the opportunity to make a real space flight for all comers who have enough money and health. It is promised the providing of the most modern space technologies and the most perfect space equipment. It can be created a furor by the "Minimum program" of the Russian company "Atlas Aerospace" which is made by the members of Yu.A. Gagarin Center of training of cosmonauts.

In recent years at the international market there appear more and more companies which deal with search and encouragement of inventors who work on creation of alternative propulsion systems. Activity of "X Prize Foundation" company can be considered as an example.

The X PRIZE Foundation

722-A Spirit of St. Louis Blvd
St. Louis, Mo. 63005
Tel: 636-519-9449, Fax: 314-533-6502
http://www.xprize.org
E-mail: press@xprize.org

The X PRIZE is a $10,000,000 prize to jumpstart the space tourism industry through competition between the most talented entrepreneurs and rocket experts in the world. The $10 Million cash prize will be awarded to the first team that:

-        Privately finances, builds & launches a spaceship, able to carry three people to 100 kilometers (62.5 miles)
-        Returns safely to Earth
-        Repeats the launch with the same ship within 2 weeks

The X PRIZE competition follows in the footsteps of more than 100 aviation incentive prizes offered between 1905 and 1935 which created today's multibillion dollar air transport industry.

For more than 30 years, the general public has waited for an opportunity to enjoy the space frontier on a first-hand basis. The X PRIZE Foundation is working to make space travel possible for all. The spaceships that compete for the X PRIZE are designed to carry passengers.

Since its inception in May 1996, the X PRIZE Foundation has registered more than 20 teams from seven countries to compete for the prize. The X PRIZE is fully funded through January 1, 2005, through private donations and backed by an insurance policy to guarantee that the $10 million is in place on the day that the prize is won. Additional funds are still being raised by the X PRIZE Foundation to implement the competition (judging, media, event management, etc.) and continue the Foundation's education mission.

The X PRIZE was inspired by the early aviation prizes of the 20th Century, primarily the spectacular trans-Atlantic flight of Charles Lindbergh in The Spirit of St. Louis which captured the US $25,000 (US$) Orteig

prize in 1927. Through a smaller, faster, better approach to aviation, Lindbergh and his financial supporters, The Spirit of St. Louis Organization, demonstrated that a small professional team could outperform a large, government-style effort.

The Societal Benefits of the X PRIZE include:

*   Creation of a new generation of heroes
*   Inspiring and educating students
*   Focusing public attention and investment capital on this new business frontier
*   Challenging explorers and rocket scientists around the world; and,
*   Vehicles built for the X PRIZE will eventually serve four different industries:
-        Space Tourism
-        Low-cost satellite launching
-        Same-day package delivery
-        Rapid point-to-point passenger travel.

In Fig. 1 it is demonstrated the typical X Prize trajectory.
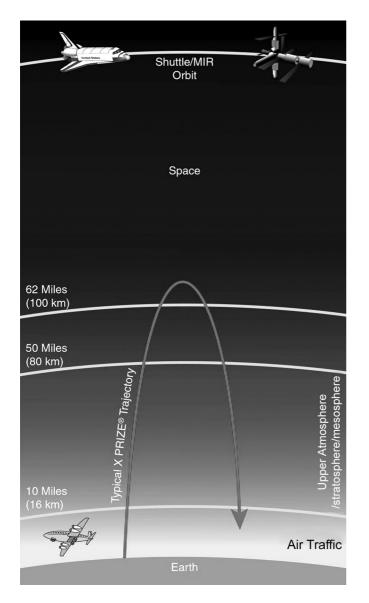
Fig. 1

The Da Vinci Progect

http://www.davinciproject.com

Fig. 2
"Wild fire"

The **da Vinci Project** will launch its spacecraft ("Wild Fire") from the world's largest helium balloon. The 3,270 kg (7,200 pound) rocket will be tethered 720 meters (2,400 feet) below the balloon and lifted over the course of an hour to an altitude of 80,000 feet. The 10,000 pound thrust, liquid oxygen, kerosene engines will fire the first stage and the rocket will fly an initial angular trajectory to clear the balloon. The spacecraft then will transition to vertical flight to its apogee of 120 km in space. The rocket will reach a maximum speed on both its ascent and re-entry of Mach 4, or 4,250 kph (2,650 mph).

An innovative ballute will protect and stabilize the rocket on re-entry. A flyable parachute will be deployed at 25,000 feet and the rocket will descend under control, guided by GPS, to a predetermined landing zone. The da Vinci Project has already successfully conducted full-scale rocket motor test and has built a full-scale mockup of their vehicle.

"Discraft" corporation

http://www.xprize.org/teams/teams.html
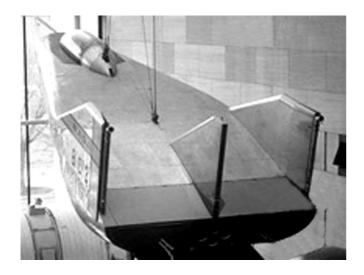
John Bloomer, the team leader, is an aerospace engineer and he has worked on many aerospace progects, including Apollo and holds more than 60 patents on a disc plattorm aircraft. Bloomer's ship utilizes "Blastwave" Pulsejets.

Flight Sequence

Fixed, 7850-ft^2-area, laminar-flow wing take-off at about 60 mph within about 150 ft, featuring climb with gradual air-breathing acceleration (according to a fixed program) at fixed angles, to exit the atmosphere at Mach 10 on an unpowered ballistic arc to reach 75-mi. altitude: return on down-leg of same unpowered arc to gradual power-on flare-out re-entry of the atmosphere in simple reverse sequence of the take-off velocity profile. Range above 100,000 ft is about 480 mi. which is covered in about 5 minutes.

"Kelly Space & Technology"

http://www.kellyspace.com

Fig. 3
"LB-X"

The vehicle is a rocket-powered delta wing glider with a liquid oxygen and kerosene liquid rocket engine. The spacecraft is prepared and fueled at the takeoff airport. The spacecraft is towed to release altitude behind a conventional jet powered aircraft such as Boeing 747 aircraft. Upon release from the tow aircraft, the main engine is throttled up for boost phase. The vehicle nominally coasts to an apogee altitude of 100 kilometers. The vehicle then glides to a landing at the takeoff airport for checkout and refueling prior to the next flight.

Flight Sequence

The lifting body will be towed to launch altitude behind another aircraft, and the rockets will be ignited. The craft will return to the landing site and make an unpowered, horizontal landing.

"Lone Star Space Access"

http://www.dynamicar.com

The Cosmos Mariner employs air-breathing jet propulsion for take-off and landing from conventional

airports and rocket propulsion for ascent from cruise flight in the stratosphere to 30 or 40 nautical miles altitude. From there, the vehicle coasts to a target altitude of around 65 nautical miles. The air frame is designed to interface with two jet engines (turbofan or turbojet) each with 20,000-lbs static thrust or less. For rocket propulsion, the Cosmos Mariner will use the Aerojet AJ26-NK31A, a staged-combustion kerosene engine. The vehicle is designed to take off and land from conventional runways.
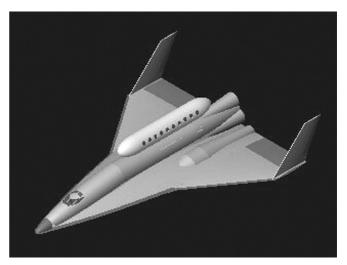
Fig. 4
"Cosmos Mariner"

Along with X Prize Foundation it should be mentioned **ALLTRA** *Company (Germany). ALLTRA consists of a small group of space experts. The main objective of ALLTRA is to 'sell' the space idea to a broad public and to identify future commercial opportunities in the space sector.*

On the official ALLTRA website http://www.alltra.de you can find collection of artist's views of the projects which are aimed at decrease in space ships value by means of using of new types of engines. Besides the Company deals with the development of space hotel projects.

Alternative Aircrafts and Space Propulsion Systems

Editor: Nowadays all over the world there are made numerous attempts to create new types of aircrafts and alternative space propulsion systems. Below we publish the review of some interesting devices which are presented in the modern market.

"Arbortech Pty.Ltd"

http://www.airboard.com.au

Fig. 1
Airboard 2000

General Technical Specifications

Total payload, including rider — 100 kg (220 lb)
Operating time — 1 hour on full tank of fuel
Construction — Fiber glass/High-impact plastic shell, Aluminum frame, Rubber skirt
Starting — Electric key-start, Battery included
Engine — Briggs & Stratton 4-stroke
Fuel tank capacity — 5 litre (1.3 US gal)
Fuel type — 85 Octane unleaded

How does it work?

Airboard uses Hovercraft air cushion principles to glide just above the ground. The air cushion is generated from a purpose designed engine and fan which are suspended below the Airboard shell. In addition to providing an air cushion for the Airboard to ride on the fan also provides a fast stream of air exiting from the rear of the craft to provide forward thrust – just like a hovercraft. To help provide better acceleration the Airboard also includes a unique friction drive wheel at the rear. When the rider wishes to accelerate forward, weight transfer is used to bring the friction drive into contact with the ground. By engaging the friction drive clutch the Airboard can be accelerated forward without losing the feel of hovering above the ground. The control of the Airboard is provided by weight transfer of the rider, similar to surfboards, skate boards and snow boards. In operation the Airboard can be started, stopped and steered in a controlled manner and this means that riders can perform stunts, trick maneuvers and race around tight tracks against each other. In this unique way the Airboard is the first ever vehicle to deliver the advantages of hovercraft vehicle without the disadvantages of proof acceleration and handling.

"Trek Aerospace, Inc."

http://www.solotrek.com

Fig. 2

Trek Aerospace

Preliminary Specifications and Predicted Performance

Normal Gross Take Off Weight	800 Lbs.
Fuel (15 U.S. Gallons)	98 Lbs.
Mission Payload, net of fuel	352 Lbs.
Takeoff/Landing Distance	0 (VTOL)
Maximum Speed	70 Mph
Range	120+ Miles
Hover/Loiter Endurance	2+ Hours
Engine Type	Advanced Int. Combustion
Fuel Requirements	Heavy-Fuel or Gasoline

Special Features: 100% fly-by-wire control system with electronic stability augmentation; Intuitive, easy to fly safely; Minimal field service requirements; Rugged, efficient power train.

DM AeroSafe

http://dmaerosafe.freeservers.com

Fig. 3

EAGLE vertical take-off and landing aerial rescue platform

DM AeroSafe is a small research and development team, which has developed a totally new high-rise rescue technology to retrieve trapped people from areas which cannot be reached by conventional aerial ladder, conventional helicopter or a helicopter equipped with a Heli-Basket.

This technology could give rise to a new class of air transportation means, used for safe close-in maneuvering around tall structures, even inside the highly populated areas.

Eagle Aerial Rescue Platform's Performance Summary

Dimensions:

Length - 42 feet (12.8 m)
Width - 42 feet (12.8 m)
Height - 16 feet (4.8 m)

Weights:

Max. Gross weight - 5000 pounds (2268 kg)
Payload (Crew of two plus 10 rescued people) - about 2000 pounds (about 900 kg).

Propulsion System:

Four (4) variable collective pitch Ducted Propellers
Propeller Diameter - 7.8 feet (2.4 m)
Engines - four (4) four-cylinder radial piston aero engines with forced air cooling system 250 hp each (1000 hp total)

Performance:

Max. Duration - about 5 hours without refueling
Max. Airspeed - 40 knots (75 km/h)
Max. operating altitude - about 7000 feet (about 2200 m).

"LTAS/CAMBOT, Inc."

http://www.lvcm.com

Passenger Craft "Ltas 30-Xb"

The ships have rigid monocoque hulls, hybrid powered vectored thrust control and full active buoyancy control. (LTAS US Patent Pending).

This small 2-3 person craft at 70 to 80 feet in diameter will demonstrate ALL production systems and is designed for the LTAS FAA Type Certification program.

NASA's Langley Research Center

http://science.nasa.gov

NASA researchers are studying insects and birds, and using "smart" materials with uncanny properties to develop new and mind-boggling aircraft designs.

The "personal aircraft" that replaces the beloved automobile in people's garages may still lie in the realm of science fiction or Saturday-morning cartoons, but researchers at NASA's Langley Research Center (LaRC) are developing exotic technologies that could bring a personal "air-car" closer to reality.
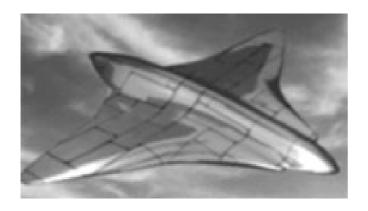
Fig. 4

And air-cars are just the beginning! Self-healing wings that flex and react like living organisms, versatile bombers that double as agile jet fighters, and swarms of tiny unmanned aircraft are just a few of the science-fiction-like possibilities that these next-generation technologies could make feasible in the decades ahead.

Laser Beam Flight

Lightcraft Technologies, Inc. (LTI)

http://www.lightcrafttechnologies.com

Lightcraft Technologies, Inc. is a new company committed to providing low-cost access to space through the use of beamed energy propulsion. (See color photos on the cover page).

Fig. 1

In 2000 at the High Energy Laser Systems Test Facility (HELSTF), Lightcraft Technologies, Inc. (LTI) set a new world's altitude record of 233 feet (71 meters) for its 4.8 inch (12.2 cm) diameter laser boosted rocket - in a flight lasting 12.7 seconds.

Although much of the flight was spent hovering at 230+ feet, the Lightcraft sustained no damage and will fly again. Besides setting the new altitude record, the craft demonstrated the longest ever laser-powered free flight and the greatest "air time" (i.e., launch-to-landing/recovery). LTI launched a total of seven vertical flights between 8:30 am and 11:30 am with three Lightcraft weighing less than 1.8 ounces (51 grams). Two of the flights by Lightcraft #3 reached 159 and 184 feet with the same propellant load!

...set a new world's altitude record of 233 feet!

The record flights were powered by the 10 kW pulsed carbon dioxide laser named "PLVTS" by the organization that owns it: the Directorate for Applied Technology, Test and Simulation (DATTS). Even though PLVTS was suffering from an arcing or grounding problem that caused it to run erratically, the laser power was still adequate to propel the craft to record altitudes.

What is a Lightcraft?

A Lightcraft is a 1kg launch vehicle, made from high temperature ceramic materials, that flies into space on a megawatt laser beam.

Fig. 2

The Lightcraft is both a single-stage-to-orbit launch vehicle and a satellite. If you have any further questions or comments, write or call LTI headquarters in Bennington, VT. The company representatives would be delighted to send you more information, or answer any inquiries over the phone.

How does it work?

A ground based laser is the power source that propels the Lightcraft into orbit. Lightcraft can deliver payloads into space for a fraction of the cost of traditional rockets because most of the engine stays on the ground, thereby unburdening the craft from having to lift the energy source for its propulsion system.
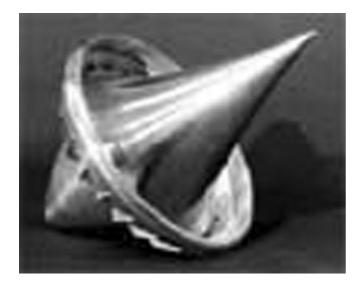
Fig. 3

The back side of the craft is a large, highly polished parabolic mirror that is designed to capture the laser beam projected at it from the ground. The mirror focuses the beam, rapidly heating the air to 5 TIMES the temperature of the sun, creating a blast wave out the back that pushes the vehicle upward. As the beam is rapidly pulsed, the vehicle is continuously propelled forward, on its way to orbit.

History of Lightcraft

1987 — Prof. Leik Myrabo invents Lightcraft for SDIO.

1997 — First successful wire-guided tests at WSMR. Solved flight stability difficulties, much like the Wright brothers did with the airplane.

1997 — Lightcraft broke Goddard's 41 ft., 1926 first successful rocket flight - but this time with no on-board fuel.

1998 — Record flight of 99 ft. with air breathing Lightcraft engine.

1999 — Record flight of 128 ft. with first rocket Lightcraft engine.

2000 — LTI sets new world record for highest flight (233 ft), longest flight time, and heaviest vehicle.

How can LTI reduce launch costs?

Conventional Launch — $175,000,000
The Lightcraft — $46,000

Chemical Rockets:

- carry massive propulsion source on board
- are expendable
- extremely costly
- prone to explosion due to fuel on board

Laser Propulsion:

- propulsion energy source remains on the ground!
- Lightcraft are inexpensive to manufacture and extremely light weight
- highly reusable power source is never subjected to the risks of flight

Lightcraft Technologies, Inc.

1914 Walloomsac Rd.
Bennington, VT 05201
Office: 802-447-6275
FAX: 802-447-8216
E-mail: tmyrabo@lightcrafttechnologies.com

Alternative space propulsion systems Star Drive

Mark R. Tomion, USA

http://www.stardrivedevice.com

Re: U.S. Patent **6,404,089** for the **Electrodynamic Field Generator**, **(EDF),**
issued June 11, 2002 to Mark R. Tomion.

The 'official' name of the "StarDrive device", per the U.S. Patent and international PCT Applications, is **Electrodynamic Field Generator.** The EDF Generator uses banks of permanent magnets and rotating Field Coils to produce a very-high DC rotor voltage, and plane-parallel ring electrode arrays to electrostatically expand and control that voltage *as applied to the hull*, so that huge quantities of external Field electrons may be accelerated to energy levels that are usually reached only with a particle accelerator! It's somewhat like a glorified arc welder whose output is deliberately shorted to its own housing, and the DC voltage and current across the emitter and collector housing sections can be thermionically increased to values that are generally observed only in lightning: but the Field's *current density* is limited to a value which falls short of damaging the hull!
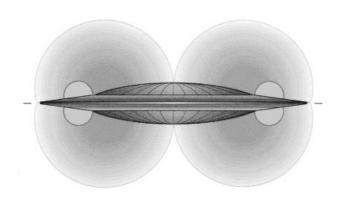
Fig. 1
StarDrive device hull & electrodynamic
Field configuration

As depicted above (Fig. 1), electrons circulating in the external Field envelope can achieve an impact velocity at the central collector sections which is very nearly that of light, and applied magnetic fields allow broad modulation of the Drive Field current's properties. The

Primary Arrays shown in the generalized schematic diagram below (Fig. 2) have control grids which allow an arc resistance imbalance to be imparted to the otherwise symmetrical Field current, so that they *render the two relativistic current impulses variably non-isometric:* thereby yielding thrust that is essentially **reactionless**! And the simple DC *Primary Power System*, like the early Faraday disk dynamo, *is wholly rotor-based . . .*

<u>Note</u>: It can be seen that the propulsive thrust developed by a StarDrive vessel is essentially brute-force in nature – it's produced simply by means of a controlled variable imbalance in the continuous *physical impact* of the two external hemitoroidal electron current streams with the collectors! If these two Field currents were of equal magnitude, no net force would be developed. However, if the "lower" current stream is stronger than the "upper", the vessel will be propelled away from the stronger current – in the "upward" direction. Since there's no 'backward' exhaust produced in the process, this type of thrust is truly and demonstrably reactionless in nature.
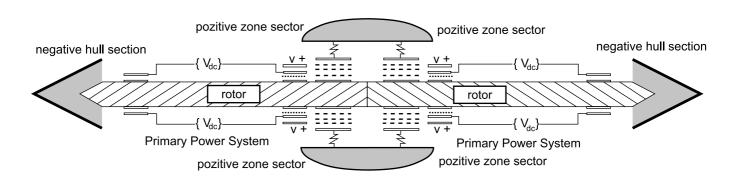
Fig. 2
Generalized schematic of rotor & dual induction ring assemblies

Needless to say, tremendous quantities of heat are produced in the StarDrive device's electron "targets" or collector housing sections, and liquid sodium must be pumped through each Primary Array's ceramic resistor network as a coolant. However, this excess heat in ground-based units may be used in the *commercial generation of electric power and desalinization of seawater*.

In fact, because an intense arc discharge field has the unique capacity to absorb vast quantities of quantum background energy, the EDF Generator is so efficient that the latter task may become truly cost-effective for the first time! And not only will large **over-unity** StarDrive Dynamo units be able to produce electric power at 60 to 720 MW output levels, they'll be able to do so for many years before the permanent magnet banks must be remagnetized!! *The only truly external input energy*

required in the interim *is that necessary to initially bring the rotor up to speed . . .*
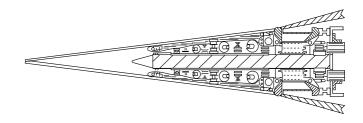
Fig. 3
A denumbered version of Fig. 1
from the EDF Generator Patent

Those of you who find this advanced technological prospect for the 21st century as exciting and fascinating as we do should consider making the

inventor's book *StarDrive Engineering* a valuable addition to your personal or reference library.

A Layman's Description of the StarDrive Device

Nearly anyone who endeavors to gain an initial understanding of the *Electrodynamic Field Generator*, even a scientist or engineer, is likely to ask for a concise layman's explanation of "how it works". This isn't easily accomplished, for this device represents an unorthodox and multidisciplinary technology. However, the overview provided below will discuss the operative characteristics of the machine's simplified *electric power generation variant* in what is hoped to be the most direct manner possible. In this case, when people ask the question above, what they generally mean is: "By what means is *over-unity* operation achieved in a 'StarDrive' Dynamo?". It is assumed here that the reader has not only already become acquainted with certain basic aspects of the design, but also understands that over-unity operation is an absolute prerequisite for any viable system of light-speed interstellar propulsion.

By way of further background, the formative mechanical design basis of the EDF Generator is of course the original Faraday disk dynamo. For whatever reason, no one seems to have bothered trying to develop this simple machine into a more sophisticated *and patentable* form before now. The principal limitation of Faraday's disk dynamo in its original form was that, when one or more permanent magnets were used to pass flux directly through the plane of a solid conductive rotor, a rather high-loss heavy current at very low voltage was produced. The first design improvement was therefore to use rotor-mounted toroid field coils in order to generate a much higher-voltage primary current, and to segment the rotor to reduce "eddy current" losses. Also, the toroid coil configuration absolutely minimizes Lenz losses, or the magnetic "drag" that is experienced by any conventional generator's rotor.

To eliminate the use of brushes, it was necessary to apply traditional vacuum tube design and operating principles. Fortunately, most of the original patent work in this field has passed into the public domain, so incorporating certain aspects of that work into the EDF Generator presented no impediment to its patentability. By using plane-parallel electrode arrays instead of brushes to charge the rotor, it is possible to limit that portion of the induced rotor current which passes through the field coils to a very low level – effectively isolating them from the actual output circuit. More importantly, however, it then becomes possible to thermoelectrically charge the Generator's housing itself in such a way that *it* carries the device's full output circuit current instead!

The reason for this unorthodox design parameter is that it was desired to actually incorporate a standing electric arc field into the output circuit, to take advantage of the electron's inherent ability to absorb quantum background energy [including *zero point energy*, if and as necessary]. As a result of a thorough study of lightning, the inventor of the StarDrive device reasoned that the electrons comprising any naturally-occurring bolt of lightning had to *recover* (or absorb) an amount of ambient photonic energy equal to that which they expended in transit – in order to satisfy the conservation of energy principle. In such a case, it is not necessary that "we" do the *work* of moving charge *against* a potential gradient; the work may be done by the charge itself in being attracted *along* the potential gradient (or voltage level).

And since it is known from the field of welding that it takes less energy to sustain an arc than it does to initiate it, it therefore becomes possible to create an electrical circuit that outputs more energy than it requires as input. This is exactly what the EDF Generator does – by incorporating a standing arc field in its output circuit. Using the StarDrive device as our mechanism, "we" only provide the work-energy required to establish and maintain the external field's potential gradient, by initiating rotor rotation and bringing the thermoelectric elements up to temperature. The electrons in the electrodynamic field do all the rest . . .

Further Notes from the Inventor

In conjunction with one of our *StarDrive Generator* prototype project funding proposals, we are presently working on an interim proof-of-concept experiment for our proposed 24 kW air-cooled EDF Generator prototype. This full-scale mock-up of the 30"-dia. Generator's rotor and dual induction ring assemblies is intended to demonstrate the fundamental design principal discussed at the close of the Technical Overview (linked to our website's Method of Operation Summary page), whereby the voltage electrostatically induced on the rotor anode rings which power each Primary Array should be roughly one-third (1/3) of the Field Coil voltage (because of the capacitive dual induction ring geometry of the Primary Power System). For safety reasons, the Field voltage in all *air-cooled* StarDrive *Generators* will be limited by design to 850 VDC, and to 1,400 VDC in the larger *liquid-cooled* StarDrive *Dynamos*.

The experiment will also assist greatly in the derivation of remaining production model specifications, and will in fact incorporate production-quality rotor segments and electrode rings. Should this proof-of-concept experiment be successful, not only will the ability of our over-unity 24 kW Generator prototype to deliver large-scale DC output that's compatible with standard AC inverters (for utility grid distribution or off-grid conventional use) be virtually assured, but a major milestone incentive in our existing funding proposals will have been fulfilled as well. Further

updates like those below will be forthcoming on the *News* page of http://www.stardrivedevice.com.

01/28/03 - <u>International Patent Filings Secured!</u>: We are very pleased to report that we were successful in our efforts to secure numerous international (PCT) Patent Application filings for the *Electrodynamic Field Generator* by the final deadline of January 21, 2003! These important filings were effected in Australia, Canada, the People's Republic of China, the European Union (including France, Germany, Italy, Spain, and the United Kingdom), India, Japan, Mexico, the Russian Federation, and South Africa.

The securing of these key Patent Application filings adds immeasurable value to our StarDrive Engineering Project overall, as it will greatly protect and enhance our investors' upside global market potential (assuming, of course, that our *24 kW StarDrive Generator prototype* is successful)! Be sure to check back from time to time for further updates as we proceed into the development phase of the Project.

11/07/02 - <u>Academic Reference</u>: Those of you kind visitors to our website who would like to have the benefit of an informed and unbiased academic opinion regarding the Electrodynamic Field Generator are welcome to contact John J. Tulip, Ph.D., Exec. Vice-Pres. of *American International University*. This consideration also applies of course to those parties who may be interested in securing a direct participation in our forthcoming EDF Generator Prototype Project. Dr. Tulip has not only expressed much-appreciated support of our efforts to introduce this important new technology, but has also had the opportunity to review our technical manual *StarDrive Engineering*. You may contact Dr. Tulip via e-mail at TulipJJ@aiuniversity.edu although we ask that you expect him to field serious and respectful inquiries only. Should you desire to speak with him by telephone, please be assured that he will endeavor to return your call whenever circumstances permit if you provide him with the proper phone number.
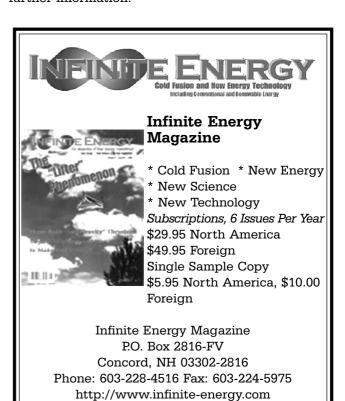
10/07/02 - <u>Joint Venture Agreement Announced!</u>: Mark Tomion, founder and president of Archer Enterprises and inventor of the recently-patented *Electrodynamic Field Generator*, is very pleased to announce that he has signed a Joint Venture Agreement with Affirm Technology Partners of Carlsbad, California to build a working prototype of his over-unity 'StarDrive' device's electric power output variant. The co-developers are planning to commence construction of a small air-cooled **StarDrive Generator** unit with a projected output rating of 24 kW and a housing diameter of only 30 inches, at a total weight of under 50 lbs., before the end of November 2002.

Should this exciting project be successful, it would represent an historic milestone in the development of over-unity electric power generation technology.

Not only is this small prototype EDF Generator expected to demonstrate *a minimum Coefficient of Performance in excess of 20:1*, but the design employed is completely linearly-scalable in a very broad range of sizes that would include liquid-cooled **StarDrive Dynamo** units with output ratings of up to 1 gigawatt! The most remarkable feature of these large Dynamo units is that an amount of recoverable thermal energy comparable to their respective electrical outputs will be made available for desalinating seawater, or for use in centralized municipal and industrial hydronic heating systems. And this capability would make the large-scale desalinization or distillation of water truly cost-effective for perhaps the first time ever.

Interested parties are welcome to contact Mr. Tomion at office@stardrivedevice.com (585-526-6817) for further information.

Prospects of Hydrogen Energetics

Ph.M. Kanarev, Russia

E-mail: kanphil@mail.kuban.ru

Hydrogen is the only pollution free and inexhaustible energy carrier. But the implementation of such attractive properties of hydrogen is restrained by large expenses of energy for its production from water. Modern level of knowledge gives the opportunity to reduce these expenses [1], [2], [3].

It is known that a gram-atom is equal numerically to atomic mass of the substance, and a gram-molecule is equal numerically to molecular mass of the substance. For example, the hydrogen gram-molecule in the water molecule is equal to 2 grams, and the oxygen gram-atom is equal to 16 grams. The gram-molecule of water is equal to 18 grams. As the mass of hydrogen in the water molecule is $2 \times 100/18 = 11.11\%$ and the mass of oxygen atom is $16 \times 100/18 = 88.89\%$, the ratio between quantity of hydrogen and oxygen is preserved in one litre of water as well. It means that 1000 grams of one litre of water contain 111.11 grams of hydrogen and 888.89 grams of oxygen.

One litre of hydrogen has mass of 0.09 grams, one litre of molecular oxygen has mass of 1.47 grams. It means that from one litre of water it possible to produce $111.11/0.09 = 1234.44$ litres of hydrogen and $888.89/1.47 = 604.69$ litres of oxygen. Thus, one gram of water contains 1.23 litres of hydrogen [1].

Now energy consumption for production of 1000 litres of hydrogen from water is 4 kWh and of one litre – 4 Wh. As it is possible to produce 1.234 litres of hydrogen, then $1.234 \times 4 = 4.94$ Wh are spent for production of one gram of water now.

Instruments and Equipment Used for the Experiment

A special experimental low current electrolyzer, a voltmeter of the highest accuracy (accuracy class 0.2, GOST 8711-78), an ammeter of the highest class of accuracy (accuracy class 0.2, GOST 871160), a balance with value of a division of 0.10 grams and 0.010 grams, and a stopwatch with value of a division of 0.1s.

Experimental Results

Indices	Sum
1 – duration of electrolyzer operation connected to the supply line, in 6 cycles t, min	6x5=30.0
2 – readings of voltmeter V, volts	13.6
3 – ammeter readings I, amperes	0.02
4 – power consumption ($P=V \times I \times \tau/60$), Wh	0.136
5 – duration of electrolyzer operation disconnected from the supply line, in 6 cycles t, min	6x55=330.0
6 – solution mass change m, grams	0.44
7 – mass of evaporated water m', grams	0.02x6=0.12
8 – mass of water converted into gases m''=m-m', gram	0.320
9 – power consumption per gram of water converted into gases P'=P/m'', Wh/grams of water	0.425
10 – existing power consumption per gram of water converted into gases P'', Wh/grams of water	4.94
11 – reduction of power consumption for hydrogen production from water, K=P''/P', times	11.62
12– quantity of released hydrogen, $\Delta M = 0.320 \times 1.23 \times 0.09 = 0.035$, grams	0.035
13 – power content of hydrogen being produced ($E=0.035 \times 142/3,6 = 1.397$, Wh)	1.397
14 – energy efficacy of water electrolysis process (Ex100/P), %	**1027**

Note: Gas output is clearly observed during many hours after the electrolyzer is disconnected from the electricity supply.

Conclusion

Low ampere water electrolysis is a way for production of inexpensive hydrogen from water and hydrogen energetics.

References

1. Ph.M. Kanarev. The Foundation of Physchemistry of the Micro World. Krasnodar, 2002. 320 pages
2. http://book.Kanarev.innoplaza.net
3. hppt://www.n-t.org/tp/ns/if.htm.

Heater Producing Healthy Effect

The First Device of Healthy Life Support in Fuel-Energy Industry

A. Belyaeva, L. Savelyeva, O. Bondarenko, Kirghizia

http://www.leteco.h1.ru
Email: leteco@mail.ru

Nowadays problems of rational use of resources including energy resources are very important. Lack of energy-efficient technologies causes consumption of great amount of electric power, coal, and mineral oil. From another hand, in the XXI century one of the main approaches of human society development is turned to healthy life-style and development of ecologically appropriate technologies. Hence, basic direction of heating systems development should correspond to, at the least, two requirements, i.e. effectiveness (energy-saving) and ecological appropriation (ecological functioning). Moreover, it is necessary to take into account additional requirements for modern works:

- Relatively low prime cost of the systems;
- Minimal operating costs;
- Availability of a system of temperature mode control;
- Use of domestically produced materials for the systems.

The aim of the work is creation of a universal electric device of natural ecologically appropriate materials. The device should maintain relative air humidity of natural atmosphere in a quarter, make its ecology healthier, meet all the listed requirements, and represent new generation energy-saving system designed for heating of industrial and domestic areas according to features of technical solution.

A.L. Belyaeva is the author of this work. The invention of this heating device was acknowledged as the best invention of Kirghiz Republic of the last two years. A.L. Belyaeva was called as a laureate of a competition of "The Best Inventing in Kirghiz Republic in 2001-2002".

Solving this problem the author based on work experience existing in the area of semi-conductors production. Actually, the model was worked out in the common area of electric engineering and industrial crystals growing. Using of knowledge and skills of the both areas made creation of this device possible.

It should be noted that initially the invention of the heating device, which is discussed here, was connected with necessity to improve microclimate and air atmosphere in a semi-conductor shop since the industrial process required optimal conditions. Hence, the device was observed as an element of the industrial process. However, soon other positive characteristics of the device were disclosed, i.e. when it was installed in a quarter all visible mould disappeared. Laboratory investigations stated that the operating device annihilated all pathogenic microflora. This rediscovered feature allowed using the device both in domestic and industrial area. After series of following laboratory investigations and bench tests construction of the device was changed and improved that allowed prepare it for line production.

Ceramic electroconvector: general characteristics

The working name of the final version of the model is *Ceramic Electroconvector TY 2971-006-22997241-2002*. Ceramic Electroconvector is an industrial and domestic electric heater of direct stationary action. It has high effective heat emission and satisfies ecological, sanitary, medical, and fire-prevention requirements.

At the same time it should be mentioned that by several characteristics this electroconvector differs from other known models of electroconvectors as well as from other existent heaters. It may be observed as a representative of an independent, specially created group of heating devices.

One of the main characteristics of the electroconvector is presence of constructive heating carbonic elements made of ecologically appropriate natural *non-metal* materials. Essentially, the electroconvector construction does not contain metal (the only metal part of the device is its supporting construction).

Production of heat of physiologically comfort zone requires 0.3 kW/h energy consumption which is 3-10 times less than energy consumption of known models of heating engineering. The Ceramic Electroconvector influences positively on ecology of a room. Room heating occurs better and more softly

as conducting carbonic elements can be heated maximally up to 100° C. As a result oxygen is not burnt, and air is not overdried in a room. Achieved minimization of metal content in the constructive elements of the device increases the level of ecological compatibility both of electroconvector constructions and operation.

The device accumulates no static electricity, neutralizes harmful magnetic field generated by alternating current in the conducting element (it is typical for all the other electrical household appliances). Therefore, **the additional positive effect** is produced and higher ecological characteristics of functioning of this electroconvector are confirmed.

Insulating strength of ceramics prevents electrical shock accidents. Ecological compatibility of the electroconvector is provided by materials of the construction. The base of the device is a studied natural silicate fiber which has quantitative and qualitative content of useful chemical elements which are the closest ones to the group of medical adsorbents listed in a medical encyclopedia. The ceramics is adjusted to emit electromagnetic waves only in infra-red spectrum.

The electroconvector produces heat waves in the average IR spectrum (8.4-8.6 mkm) which is maximally approximated to the diapason of heat waves generated by a human (9.37 mkm). It annihilates humidity of buildings independently of outer space humidity. At the same time it neither burns oxygen nor overdries air.

Healthy effect is produced by all the constructive elements made of ecologically appropriate natural materials. Electric power is transformed into heat emission by conducting elements. This process causes a mode of generation of a continuous heat spectrum of radiation. The heat radiation is similar to heat spectrum of radiation generated by a human. At the same time, this feature together with resonant oscillations of the crystal lattice of the ceramic cylinders produces a destroying effect on pathogenic and conditionally pathogenic microorganisms.

From the point of view of room ecology the proved healthy effect of the operating electroconvector becomes very significant. The effect considers continuous presence of a human in the room, i.e. risk of pathogen infection through respiration objectively decreases.

Application of the ceramic electroconvector is especially actual in patient care institutions and children's institutions, in special precision industries and space technologies. It can also be used in saunas with dry vapor.

The ceramic electroconvector is designed for unsupervised continuous work.

Structure of the electroconvector producing the healthy effect

Shortcomings of known electric heaters are: great electric power consumption (0.75-3.0 kW/h), big number of metal details, complex technical performance, and use of a necessary additional blower as a ventilator. Big number of metal details decreases ecological compatibility and productivity of the heaters. The listed devices have to use high temperatures on heat-release surfaces for warming up rooms up to the level of physiological comfort. This causes increase of energy consumption. Moreover, using of metal heating elements influences on air and relative humidity in the room. According to available data, no existent electroconvectors have healthy influence on ecology of a room.

The represented ceramic electroconvector contains a carrying frame with horizontal boards which have convective gaps. The carrying frame has heat-release monolithic hollow ceramic cylinders whose walls contain longitudinal through holes. Heating carbonic conducting elements and de-energized carbonic rods are built in the through holes. The heating conducting elements are connected in parallel-series circuit at the output of the cylinders with it's ends placed into insulating supports of the carrying frame.

Constructive heating elements are the main differences of the device. All the heat generating constructive elements, i.e. conducting and de-energized heating elements, as well as heat-release surfaces of ceramic cylinders have contiguous spectra of infra-red radiation.

Energy-efficient effect

The electric scheme of connection of the conducting elements provides different modes of work of the device. According to these modes, energy consumption is in the interval of 0.05-0.3 kW/h. The mode of 0.05 kW/h is calculated on a supporting level of warming-up of a room. Maximal energy consumption (0.3 kW/h) corresponds to the superior limit of the temperature mode of heating of working heat-release surfaces of the ceramic cylinders. In this case temperature of the heat generating elements, i.e. de-energized carbonic rods and conducting carbonic elements) lies in the limit of max 100°C. This produces a significant potential resource of electric strength and of durability of the used elements. The de-energized carbonic rods function as heat accumulators at switching on and switching off the device. Heating the conductors the de-energized rods accumulate heat through the ceramic walls of the cylinder till their temperature becomes equal to the temperature of the conducting elements. Appearing electromagnetic resonance between the conductors and the de-energized carbonic rods

intensifies infra-red radiation of the ceramic wall. Accumulative heat potential of the de-energized carbonic rods allows maintain uniform radial heating of the heat-release ceramic surface of the cylinder without decreasing energy consumption. In this case additional conducting elements of infra-red radiation become unnecessary.

The heating efficiency of the ceramic electroconvector was estimated by independent experts. Surface density of the radiation flow was calculated by formula of Stefan-Boizmann distribution law. Taking into account heating of the cylinders' surfaces up to $70°$ C this value came to 727 W/m^2. **Total heat generated by the electroconvector per hour comes to 600 kcal or 698 W** at the total area of the radiation surfaces of 0.96 m^2 (on the basis of 1 kcal=1.163 W/h according to [1]). The electroconvector consumes 300 W/h and produces 698 W/h. That is to say that it effectively transforms electric energy into heat energy. Operational modes of the electroconvector are based on analysis of the heating effect produced by different devices, i.e. a tube metal heater (TMH) having a conducting metal element of Nichrom, a ceramic cylinder having a Nichrom conducting element, and a ceramic cylinder having a conducting element of carbonic ribbon. The carbonic ribbon produces high heating efficiency. Temperature on the surface of the ceramic frame is up to $80°$ C and temperature on the conducting element is $100°$ C. Hence, the device equipped with the conducting element of the carbonic ribbon does not produce excessive heat radiation.

The electroconvector consumes 300 W/h and produces 698 W/h.

After one-year operation of the preproduction models in a private school it was noticed that number of respiratory illnesses and influenza among the pupils slumped, condition of skin became better, attacks of bronchial asthma among the teachers stopped, and allergic itch left the patients who suffered from allergy. A side effect was that flowers began to grow better, and those which had not blossomed began to blossom at least. Obviously, a combination takes place there: air cleaning of microorganisms, humidity normalization, warming comfort, and influence of pyramidal ceramic structures on water vapors which are transported by warm blasts.

Applied Know How

Ambient air in rooms is a complex substance including various chemical compounds, ions, dust parts, water vapors, infectious and potentially infectious microflora, etc. The electroconvector is represented by a ceramic hardphase crystal structure. Cold air blast moves close to the ceramic surface. It meets combined oscillation of crystal microlevel structures of ceramics. *Filtering electromagnetic screen* appears that breaks shell of pathogens and potential pathogens. It is a performance of **sanitation properties**. Atmospheric water contacts with structures of ceramics, then it is cleaned and structured. After that water cleans air which is breathed in by a human. Hence, the organism becomes healthier. It is a performance of the **healthy effect**. A clean room warmed uniformly improves human's health.

Main Performance Attributes of the Ceramic Electroconvector Producing Healthy Effect

Nominal required power	0.05-0.3 kWt/h
Voltage of the feeding network	220 ± 22 V
Frequency of alternating current	50 Hz
Temperature of the conducting element in operation mode	50…110° C
Temperature of the heat-release surface of the cylinder	39…90° C
Surface density of radiation flow	727 Wt/m^2
Quantity of radiated heat	600 kcal/h
Class of protection	1
General area of heat-release surfaces of the cylinders	9600 cm^2
Sizes	410 x 400 x 75 mm
Weight	18-21 kg
Durability	30 years

The ceramic electroconvector is designed as a floor construction for repetition work.

References

1. Heat Engineering Reference-book, Moscow, Energy (Energia), 1975, V. 1, p. 12.

About the author

After graduating from Polytechnic University of Frunze city Alexandra L. Belyaeva (1953) participated in launching of semiconductor production. She was given a rank of Perfect Inventor and Rationalyzer for invention and rationalization action. In 1987 her invention named Method of Production of Monosilicon Seed Crystals was introduced into manufacture, according to close copyright of USSR. Since that year this introduction has allowed grow monosilicon having better semiconductor properties. She was given a rank of Inventor of USSR for the invention.

Alexandra L. Belyaeva has acknowledged and given a rank of Inventor of Kirghiz Republic. Since 1994 in collaboration with Russian specialists of ceramics she has been dealing with organization of ceramic productions in Kirghizstan. Here are the inventions by Belyaeva: Method of Production of Seed Crystals and Its Variants (Patent #42 KG), Ceramic Mass for Insulators' Production (Patent #43 KG), Ceramic Mass Having Heat-Radiating Properties (Patent #464 KG).

In 1992 Belyaeva was rewarded with a Silver medal of VDNH (Exhibition of Achievements of National Economy, Moscow) for development of technologies for production of constructive nitride-cadmium items of semiconductor wastes.

Her Method of Production of Nonexpendable Seed Crystals is at introduction stage. The seed monocrystals produced by the new method will allow grow ribbon monocrystals having certain properties. It will be possible to produce items made of the monocrystals which will meet requirements of energy-saving and ecological appropriation. These devices represent non-aging powerful energy sources, various semiconductive devices with no inner microdeffects and with unlimited durability, structural water filters.

Since 2002 she has been dealing with organization of production of ecologically appropriate industrial-domestic appliances causing healthy effect. The invention of Ceramic Electroconvector Producing Healthy Effect is now introduced. Energy-saving of the new ecologically appropriate electroconvector exceeds energy-saving of all the existent heating systems.

Belyaeva is a laureate of competition of The Best Inventing in Kirghiz Republic in 2001-2002.

Inertial Propulsion Device

Vitaly E. Senkevich, Russia

E-mail: hhhhha@mail.ru

A body is at rest or moves linearly and uniformly until it is not influenced by an external force.
(School course of physics)

Forget everything that you were taught at school.
(Arkady Raykin)

This propulsion device consists of an engine and a body. The engine (see Fig.1) is remarkable for its movable stator (S) which can make free rotation as well as a rotor (R). When the engine starts the stator and the rotor begin to rotate in opposite directions. Thus the engine has two ends and one of them is connected to a flywheel (F). This flywheel begins accelerated rotation.

A cross-beam (CB) is connected to the second end of the engine where a rotating momentum appears. Under the influence of this momentum the cross-beam presses down one of the supports placed on the body (for example, Sup.1). As a result a force which is compensated by acceleration of the flywheel (F) appears on the support. When the flywheel is accelerated up to certain speed a control system (CS) switches the windings of the engine to change the direction into the opposite one (reverse). At that the cross-beam also tends to turn to the other side and presses down the second support (Sup.2). Thus the cycle repeats. It should be noted that forces acting at the supports are **codirected** and they move the whole device.

Fig.1

About the author

After graduating from Polytechnic University of Frunze city Alexandra L. Belyaeva (1953) participated in launching of semiconductor production. She was given a rank of Perfect Inventor and Rationalyzer for invention and rationalization action. In 1987 her invention named Method of Production of Monosilicon Seed Crystals was introduced into manufacture, according to close copyright of USSR. Since that year this introduction has allowed grow monosilicon having better semiconductor properties. She was given a rank of Inventor of USSR for the invention.

Alexandra L. Belyaeva has acknowledged and given a rank of Inventor of Kirghiz Republic. Since 1994 in collaboration with Russian specialists of ceramics she has been dealing with organization of ceramic productions in Kirghizstan. Here are the inventions by Belyaeva: Method of Production of Seed Crystals and Its Variants (Patent #42 KG), Ceramic Mass for Insulators' Production (Patent #43 KG), Ceramic Mass Having Heat-Radiating Properties (Patent #464 KG).

In 1992 Belyaeva was rewarded with a Silver medal of VDNH (Exhibition of Achievements of National Economy, Moscow) for development of technologies for production of constructive nitride-cadmium items of semiconductor wastes.

Her Method of Production of Nonexpendable Seed Crystals is at introduction stage. The seed monocrystals produced by the new method will allow grow ribbon monocrystals having certain properties. It will be possible to produce items made of the monocrystals which will meet requirements of energy-saving and ecological appropriation. These devices represent non-aging powerful energy sources, various semiconductive devices with no inner microdeffects and with unlimited durability, structural water filters.

Since 2002 she has been dealing with organization of production of ecologically appropriate industrial-domestic appliances causing healthy effect. The invention of Ceramic Electroconvector Producing Healthy Effect is now introduced. Energy-saving of the new ecologically appropriate electroconvector exceeds energy-saving of all the existent heating systems.

Belyaeva is a laureate of competition of The Best Inventing in Kirghiz Republic in 2001-2002.

Inertial Propulsion Device

Vitaly E. Senkevich, Russia

E-mail: hhhhha@mail.ru

A body is at rest or moves linearly and uniformly until it is not influenced by an external force.
(School course of physics)

Forget everything that you were taught at school.
(Arkady Raykin)

This propulsion device consists of an engine and a body. The engine (see Fig.1) is remarkable for its movable stator (S) which can make free rotation as well as a rotor (R). When the engine starts the stator and the rotor begin to rotate in opposite directions. Thus the engine has two ends and one of them is connected to a flywheel (F). This flywheel begins accelerated rotation.

A cross-beam (CB) is connected to the second end of the engine where a rotating momentum appears. Under the influence of this momentum the cross-beam presses down one of the supports placed on the body (for example, Sup.1). As a result a force which is compensated by acceleration of the flywheel (F) appears on the support. When the flywheel is accelerated up to certain speed a control system (CS) switches the windings of the engine to change the direction into the opposite one (reverse). At that the cross-beam also tends to turn to the other side and presses down the second support (Sup.2). Thus the cycle repeats. It should be noted that forces acting at the supports are **codirected** and they move the whole device.

Fig.1

Unlimited Accelerated Nonreactive Motion

by G.P. Ivanov

Information from http://tts.lt/~nara/ruspopul.htm

Bias of centre of inertia of the closed system is a phenomenon exceeding the bounds of modern scientific conceptions. At the same time it is a way to the new marvelous world of earlier unknown laws and phenomena of nature. Researches made by G.P. Ivanov, Russia, have allowed him come to the following conclusion: it is a quite realizable task to create technical devices which can move under the action of nonreactive forces. However a purposeful scientific-research spade-work is required for the reliable registration of them by modern experimental facilities. According to the author during the whole XX century the known idea of latent impulse were misleading the scientists from the serious research of impulse-energy processes existing in systems at the presence of quasi-stationary electric and magnetic fields. According to G.P. Ivanov, it is related with the fact that the notion of "latent impulse" has nothing in common with the real momentum, since the very existence of "latent impulse" and "latent energy" which attends it, would make it impossible, for example, to adjust radio equipment since all effective capacitances change their value a hundred and thousand times as much (it depends on their orientation with respect to the magnetic field of the Earth).

Fig. 1, 2 demonstrate the patented by G.P. Ivanov method of realization of nonreactive motion (G.P. Ivanov, Yu.G. Ivanov. Method for production of propulsion. Patent #2172865, M., 2001). Fig. 1 demonstrates a device which consists of magnetized core with the attached metal electrodes.
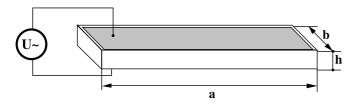
Fig. 1
The simplest "nonreactive" element

When alternating voltage is applied the device together with the center of inertia of the whole system (including power source and lead) will oscillate under the action of nonreactive force. It will move along the direction which is perpendicular to the vectors of electric and magnetic fields inside the core.

On Fig. 2 there is an analogous device supplied with a cylinder core. Magnetization of the core is defined by current of the coil which is wound around it (see Fig.2).
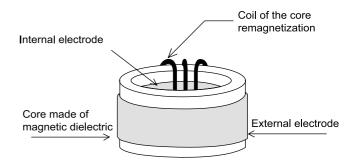
Fig. 2
Diagram of the device which can be in unlimited accelerated nonreactive motion

Let us supply the electrodes of the device with such voltage which is enough to change field density in the core (for example, according to the law $E = E_0 \sin\omega t$), and the coil with voltage enough to change the magnetization (according to the law $M = M_0 \cos\omega t$). Then nonreactive force which is constant in its direction will act on the device along the axis of the cylinder. The average of the force is $F_{cp} = \pi f E_0 M_0 V/c^2$, where E_0, M_0 are the amplitudes of density values of the electric field and amplitudes of the core magnetization, **f** is frequency, **V** is core capacity. As a result the device can either move with acceleration or act against external forces. The researches allow the author to prove the validity of the following theorem: **At motion of the open-loop system (device) the work made by nonreactive force could not be realized by means of decrease of energy of the proper (appurtenant to the system) power source.** Where this energy comes from if there are no artificial power sources outside the device? However everywhere there is such form of matter as electrovacuum. It allows us come to a conclusion that nonreactive forces make work by means of decrease of electrovacuum energy.

Existence of electrovacuum does not contradict to the modern physical picture of the world. On the contrary providing the realization of laws of momentum and energy conservation, this idea originates from and organically supplements it. The theory of electrovacuum opens quite realizable prospects in different fields of human activity which seem to be fantastic and impossible. It also proposes unusual ways to solve many problems which are considered as insoluble. For example, it becomes possible to create nonreactive cosmonautics and private aircrafts. Energetics will be changed beyond recognition since power sources which require no material fuel will occupy the place of big and small modern electric power stations. The analogous list could be continued. There are presented quite realizable prospects related to inexhaustible reserves which are hidden in the ambient space.

Revolutionary Current

Suresh Kumar Baliyan, India

E-mail: suresh_baliyan@rediffmail.com
suresh_baliyan@yahoo.com

*Electricity is one of the most wonderful inventions of the 18th century. It can be produced by various methods in which different types of energy are used such as mechanical or chemical energy. In this article we discuss a new type of methods in which **electrostatic energy** is used.*

In this method we use **electrets** as an energy source. Electrets are permanent polarized dielectric material which is made by cooling dielectric material in a high intensity electric field. When we place an electron in the electric field of a point charge, it is influenced by a force. If the direction of the force is such that the electron moves in a closed path then it represents a current in the opposite direction along the closed path. Here closed path means a metal wire loop in which the electron movement is responsible for the current.

The charge of the electrets remains constant for many years (100) and there is no loss of energy because we use only the property of electrets that they apply force when a charge is placed in its electric field. Since here we create energy in the form of electric current then it violates the Law of conservation of energy.

Let us discuss the method in three steps:

1) Fundamental
2) Equivalent circuit
3) How we can use it as a potential source of electricity.

1. When we put a metal rod in the electric field of a point negative charge then the electron is influenced by repulsion force which moves in arrow direction and the electric field is cut by putting an earthed metal plate from any direction. When we place four charges on the corner of the metal frame and shield the electric field in particular direction as shown in Fig.1 then the force on the electron which is placed in metal frame will be in the direction of arrow and this makes a loop. The force influencing on the electron will be continuous, so the current which moves in direction opposite to the electron movement will induced in the metal frame.

2. The equivalent circuit of Fig.1 is shown in Fig2. It demonstrates that a 'V' volt battery and a resistance 'R' can be replaced by an arm of the metal frame. The polarity of the battery is shown in Fig. 1. A current of

magnitude (V/R) will be induced in the circuit by this method.
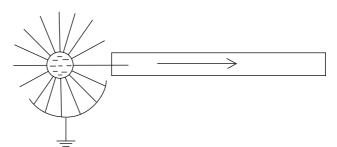
Fig. 1a
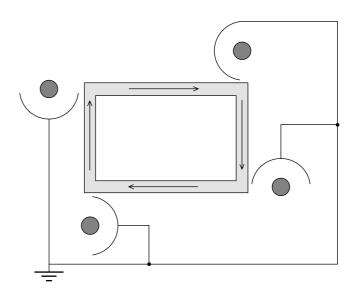
Fig. 1b
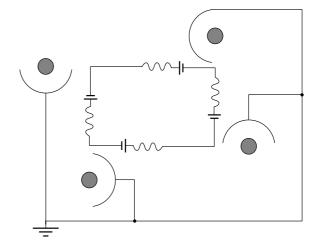
Fig. 2
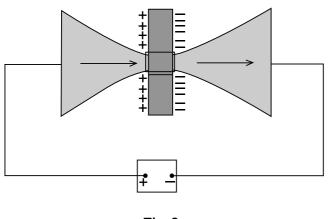
Fig. 3

3. We can use another device as a potential source (see Fig3.). Let us take an electret and make a hole at the centre. A hollow thin walled metal cylinder is fitted in the hole and a metal frame is taken as shown in the Fig. 3. We can use this metal cylinder as an electric field shield which may affect the direction of the force influencing on the electron. We may use this device as a potential source of electricity which will give electricity until the charges on the electrets vanish. The charge on the electrets remains constant for many years. Thus we can create energy and the problem of energy shortage can be solved by this method forever. We are trying to make a prototype of this but due to lack of equipment facility we are not able to demonstrate a working model. However we are trying to modify it.

NEWS REVIEW

Russian scientists are preparing new application of energy of geothermal waters

http://www.sciteclibrary.ru

A way for economical use and utilization of energy of geothermal waters was found in the Institute of Geothermal Problems (Russian Academy of Sciences). The new technology can be applied for heating in different purposes, and can compete with the power engineering, which uses the conventional energy carriers.

Geothermal springs are ideal for generating electricity by means of using of their permanent heat. This is especially important for Kamchatka, which is rich in these springs; however they are almost never used in mass power engineering, but only serve as an attraction for tourists, who admire beauty of Kamchatka geysers. At the same time the region itself freezes every year because of shortage of fuel for electric power stations.

What prevents us from using the geothermal springs?

The problem is that the storages of most of geothermal water fields have low and medium temperatures. This does not allow providing their competitiveness as regards conventional energy carriers. During tens of years this fact was an obstacle to the development of geothermal energy.

A solution was found in the Institute of Geothermal Problems. It was brought out that at many exploited geothermal fields wellhead overpressure exceeds 5-10 MPa and more. These waters contain fair quantity of dissolved organic gases. The scientists have found out that methane content of these waters exceeds 90 %. And until now at exploitation of the fields these types of energy have not been properly utilized.

The scientists of the Institute of Geothermal Problems have developed a technology of the optimum utilization of energy of geothermal waters and have increased the thermodynamic effect of the process.

This aim was fulfilled by means of transmission of thermal energy of geothermal water through the intermediate heat exchangers to the secondary heat carrier. Chemical energy of dissolved gases was used as an additional source of energy. The transmission was held by the use of primary and secondary separators. The distinctive feature of their technology is that associated potential energy of geothermal water is used as an additional source of energy. Expander and compressor placed on the same shaft are used as potential energy converters. Gas-holder and gas control point are used for utilization of energy of dissolved gases.

Thus on the bases of this technology geothermal energy can be effectively developed that will be competitive with fuel hydrocarbon energy.

Tilley Electric Vehicle

Tilley Foundation, Inc.

131 Hiwassee Road
Lebanon, TN 37087
http://www.tilleyfoundation.com
E-mail: cktilley@bellsouth.net

Editor: The advantages of electric vehicles were proved more than once. No fuel is required to set them in motion. Along with evident advantages of electric vehicles, such as their powerful characteristics and harmlessness for environment there is a side benefit, i.e. much less maintenance as compared with gasoline or diesel-fueled vehicles is required. Moreover it is easier to manufacture such vehicles.

In the previous issues of New Energy Technologies magazine we have already acquainted our readers with Tilley Electric Vehicle designed by Carl B. Tilley (USA). Below there is some up-to-date information and photos from the inventor. Besides we also publish an article devoted to the similar types of fuel-less motors.

After several years of personal accomplishments in the alternative energy industry, Carl B. Tilley was convinced that it was possible to build an electric car that could be powered without the help of external power to keep the battery charged.

The concept to produce a useful electric performance car that would last more than a few hours and would be economical to run, safe to drive around town or across the United States and never use a drop of fuel challenges the future of transportation as we know it today.

With the establishment of the Tilley Foundation, Inc., in the year 2001, Carl Tilley set out to prove it could be done. It was an ambitious project and it broke ground on the facility in Tennessee that would build the first self generating electric car.

...you have no need for fuel and you do not have to stop the vehicle to charge it after driving.

Construction of a 1,800 square foot building, that was powered with another recently developed electric device, began in the year 2002. Electricity from the building built the car from a different energy invention, that was void of any outside power supply. It is ironic that one alternative energy device actually built the invention to power and build the electric car.

From the selection of the proper car to be converted, to the advanced technology which is on board , the **Tilley Electric Vehicle TEV** performs comparably to gasoline powered vehicles. The difference is you have no need for fuel and you do not have to stop the vehicle to charge it after driving. There is no pollution and you can cruise the highways at the same speed as any other vehicle.

The rear mounted electric motor provides over 130 SAE net horsepower at 5,500 rpm. It offers a 3 speed automatic transmission that is smooth shifting and totally silent running. All this is combined with rack and pinion steering and a 35/65 rear weight bias that enables fast, sensitive handling and needs no power assistance.

...battery system will be fully charged at all times while in use.

It has 4 wheel disc braking for fast progressive, fade-free stopping. Counterbalanced gull-wing doors need only 14 inches of clearance. The rear sporty louvers are aerodynamic designed so that it almost eliminates any drag effect. All this with a stainless steel body makes for a great car.

Control center for the battery bank only allows what is needed to keep the batteries charged while in operation no matter what the speed or discharge from the battery bank. Your battery system will be fully charged at all times while in use. Simply get in, start the car and drive like any other vehicle.

A 1981 DeLorean was converted as the Tilley Electric Vehicle.Conversion of the car began in late June of 2002. State of the art metal fabrication to construct support for the electric motor, battery bank, control center and the TEV device was completed in July of 2002.

Several tests were made to validate the TEV technology. One of the last tests was made on September 7th, 2002. It has been demonstrated that after 17.3 miles driven on the Superspeedway at speeds ranging from 80MPH to 96MPH independent engineer certified batteries were full.

Assembly Pictures (see also the cover page)

Photos by Robert Gaither

Fig. 1
Removing Gas Motor

Fig. 2
Fabrication
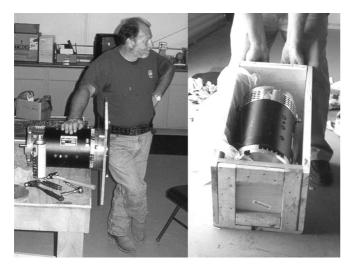
Fig. 3
Drive Motor

Fig. 4
Fitting Parts

Fig. 5
Transmission Work

Fig. 6
Motor Mounted

Fig. 7
Making Connections

Fig. 9
Special Wiring &Guages

Fig. 8
About Ready

Fig. 10
Car Unveiling

Trends in the Application of Motor-Generators

Adrian Akau, USA

E-mail: adrianakau@aol.com

If the Tilley generator-motor should enter into the world market, some curious consequences may result, the most important being the transition of the Honda and Toyota hybrid cars into full fledged electrics.

First of all, a comparison should be drawn between the Tilley and the two hybrid cars presently being sold, the Honda Civic and the Toyota Pirus should be made.

The Honda Civic and the Toyota Pirus both use charging systems with a gasoline motor for better milage. The Tilley motor-generator is a stand-alone electric vehicle. The Honda motor-generator is just 60mm thick and provides (10kW or 13hp). The Toyota Pirus has a 44hp unit (American Version) which feeds power into electric motors at the wheels. Both Honda and Toyota gasoline motors are off at 0 mph. Only the electric system is used until the power demand reaches 10 kW; then the gasoline motor automatically kicks in. The Pirus is able to get higher milage in city driving than in country driving from the fact that the ratio of the power from the electric part to power to the gasoline part of the motor is greater at lower than at higher speeds, that is, less power is needed to run the car in city driving than in country driving because of the lower speeds and air resistance.

Fig. 7
Making Connections

Fig. 9
Special Wiring &Guages

Fig. 8
About Ready

Fig. 10
Car Unveiling

Trends in the Application of Motor-Generators

Adrian Akau, USA

E-mail: adrianakau@aol.com

If the Tilley generator-motor should enter into the world market, some curious consequences may result, the most important being the transition of the Honda and Toyota hybrid cars into full fledged electrics.

First of all, a comparison should be drawn between the Tilley and the two hybrid cars presently being sold, the Honda Civic and the Toyota Pirus should be made.

The Honda Civic and the Toyota Pirus both use charging systems with a gasoline motor for better milage. The Tilley motor-generator is a stand-alone electric vehicle. The Honda motor-generator is just 60mm thick and provides (10kW or 13hp). The Toyota Pirus has a 44hp unit (American Version) which feeds power into electric motors at the wheels. Both Honda and Toyota gasoline motors are off at 0 mph. Only the electric system is used until the power demand reaches 10 kW; then the gasoline motor automatically kicks in. The Pirus is able to get higher milage in city driving than in country driving from the fact that the ratio of the power from the electric part to power to the gasoline part of the motor is greater at lower than at higher speeds, that is, less power is needed to run the car in city driving than in country driving because of the lower speeds and air resistance.

American car companies are beginning to develop their own starter-generators to "save an extra 10% on the gas milage". Are they doing this because they don't want to be left behind in the milage competition or because they really understand the nature of the starter-generator motors used by the companies producing the hybrids?

With the advent of the Tilley motor-generator, a new factor enters into the situation. If the system proves valid, does this mean that Honda and Toyota are out of the running? Hardly not! It is likely that these companies have allowed or even planned for this contingency with larger capacity motor generators which would do a similar job. With their fine cars and superb engineering, the transition from a hybrid to a pure electric might be costly but not too difficult to engineer. Each of the two hybrid companies may already have been built, tested vehicles of this nature. However, since the primary purpose of the car companies is to make money it is doubtful if this full-fledged fossil fuel-less type will be placed on the market unless competition so requires. A car using the Tilley motor-generator might certainly push them in this direction.

Should the Tilley remains undeveloped, one might expect the second level hybrid car to arrive in a few years from Honda and Toyota. These cars should have greater electric generator-motor capacities and smaller gasoline engines. These systems could give small cars much higher gas milage and could also be placed in larger, more elegant vehicles such as the Honda Accord and the Toyota Camrey.

The transition to fuel-less motors should hopefully be slow and painless for both the pocket book as well as the human psych. If scientists cannot be convinced by studying conventional scientific laws on how these motors work, perhaps they will better see the need for the promulgation of new laws in this area.

We know that at the present time, both Honda and Toyota motor generators (M.G.) have a powers assist function while the Tilley stands alone. Let us look at the present situation (we will use the Toyota U.S. M.G. because it is the more powerful version):

Honda and Toyota classify their M.G.'s as permanent magnet types; Carl Tilley says his is and advanced D.C. motor.

Power output:

Honda is given at 10 kW at 3,000 rpm or 13 hp
Toyota is 33 kW at 1,040-5,600 rpm or 44 hp
Tilley is up to 135 hp depending on rpm's

Voltage/Battery (Ni-MH=Nickle Metal Hydride, AH=amp hours)

Honda: 144V, 120 Ni-MH cells@1.2V ea., 6.5 AH
Toyota: 274V, 228 Ni-MH cells@1.2V ea.
Tilley: 144V,12-12V lead acid (Wal-mart), 1200AH

Physical Characteristics of each M.G.

Honda: 60 mm wide
Toyota: unknown
Tilley: 9" dia., 146 pounds

The main effort should be to implement the transition away from the use of fossil fuels. We know this can be done but it takes proper attitude. Proper attitude takes knowledge and knowledge takes willingness to learn. Willingness to learn takes desire to learn and desire to learn takes humility. Unfortunately, humility is a characteristic that many people, especially learned ones lack. *Editor's: Carl Tilley's comments are also given below.*

Very Good…you seem to know what we already were aware of…before we could mass produce our Tilley car I am sure some auto company would come out with basically the same thing…I do believe they already have it and they are just waiting for the right time. The good news is that at least the Tilley car lighted their fire to get them started.

Carl Tilley

Read in the next issue!

In April 12 of 2003 scientific conference "The Time Machine" was organized by Faraday Laboratories Ltd in Moscow. There were presented the reports by V.A. Chernobrov, A.V. Frolov, A.V. Rykov, E.D. Sorokodum, V.J. Kosyev, A.N. Solonyi, V.A. Atsukovsky. There was discussed design of the device made by Faraday Laboratories Ltd. as well as main principles of control on temporal characteristics of physical processes by changing of density of space energy, i.e. aether density according to patent claim.

Details are in the next issue!

Electric Vehicle in Russia

Review by Correspondent Alla Pashova, Russia

The director of *EV* (*Electric Vehicles*) company located in Tolyatti (Russia), Alexander Mukhanov states: "If during 2 centuries intellectual efforts of a scientific thought were concentrated on an electric engine instead of the internal combustion engine then now we would have driven electric vehicles, and the greenhouse effect would not have exist".

The electric vehicle has driving-wheels which are set in motion by an electric engine, and it is powered by an electric battery. The electric vehicle appeared in Great Britain and France in 1880 and it is significantly older than the automobile equipped with the internal combustion engine.

At the beginning the speed and the fuel distance of the electric and gasoline vehicles were approximately the same. The main disadvantage of electric vehicles was a complicated system of recharge since there were no usual transformers of alternating current into direct one. Hence, the electric vehicle was recharged in a quite difficult way. An electric engine operated on alternating current was used to recharge it. The electric motor rotated a shaft of the generator which was connected to batteries of the electric vehicle. However in 1906 a rectifier which was simple to operate was invented. Despite its principle of operation was quite complicated (mercury vapor was used for transformation of alternating current into direct one) it has given a great stimulus for development of automobile industry.

There were no essential proves of advantage of gasoline vehicles as compared with electric vehicles. Nevertheless, even at that time there was an opinion that electric vehicles run more slowly and to shorter distances. However "gasoline" records were also insignificant and comparable with results produced by the electric vehicles. At the same time producers of electric vehicles did their best to demonstrate the advantages of these vehicles. If you remember, Walter Baker, one of the most famous American constructors and producer of the electric vehicles, achieved the speed of 130 km/h driving his car. An electric vehicle produced by Borland Electric company run from Chicago to Milwaukee (the distance of 167 km/h along non-asphalted road) without recharge. Next day after recharging the electric vehicle returned to Chicago by its own power without meeting any incidents. During the journey its speed came to 55 km/h.

In 1899-1900 a hereditary Russian nobleman Ippolit Romanov made an experiment on designing of the first Russian electric vehicle. Since these vehicles had been designed to run in Saint Petersburg then the city council required to produce them in the same place. In 1899 Romanov's first electric vehicle was made. Its general design was borrowed from English cabs in which a cabman sat on a high dickey placed behind passengers. Romanov's electric cab had two passenger seats situated in front of the dickey in a half-cabin having side and back windows. The cabin was equipped with a hood. The seat of a driver was placed behind and above the cabin; a box containing an accumulator was located under the driver's seat. The vehicle was four-wheeled. Diameter of the front wheels was smaller than those of the rear wheels. The front wheels were fixed by elliptical springs and were driving ones. They were connected to two independent electric motors by a roller chain drive. The regulated rear wheels had a smaller diameter and were fixed by spiral springs.

This first electric vehicle was equipped with lead accumulator which had 36 banks. It required recharging every 60 versts (1 verst – 3500 feet). The total power of both the electric motors was equal to 4 hp. Design of the vehicular part of Romanov's electric vehicle was borrowed from the models produced by an American company named *Morris-Salom*. This company had produced electric vehicles since 1898; however those models had wheels of greater diameter as they were equipped with pneumatic tires, while Romanov's vehicle had wheels with light rubber rims. Both the electric vehicles had two electric motors, but the distinction of Romanov's electric vehicle consisted in the presence of 6-row ball bearings in the wheels.

Romanov's second cab was built in 1900. This model had entirely closed and glazed cabin for passengers. The chain drive was replaced by a gear; however the basic sizes remained the same. This model was equipped with an accumulator designed by Romanov. The general weight of the electric vehicle was 45 poods (750 kg), and the weight of the accumulator came to 22 poods (362 kg). It should be noted that weight of American and French electric vehicles exceeded these figures. The speed of both Romanov's models of the electric vehicles came to 15 km/h.

Romanov's first electric bus was built in the same 1900. The electric bus weighted 100 poods (1600 kg) could make speed up to 10 km/h. For reasons beyond Romanov's control, traffic of the electric vehicles in Saint Petersburg was not organized.

A vehicular company named *"Frezer and Co."* participated directly in production of Romanov's

electric vehicles, i.e. a running gear of these vehicles was created by this company. In January 1900 *The Cyclist* magazine reported that this company had built an electric vehicle which had already been tested. A picture of this first electric vehicle by *"Frezer and Co."* can be found in advertising publications of those years. Various firms proposed the innovation for sale and described its technical characteristics.

Frezer electric vehicle was four-seated, had two engines whose total power came to 7 hp. The advertisement booklets reported as following: "The accepted system of accumulator is remarkable for its solidity and life-time. Capacity of the elements is about 15 Amperes/ hour per a kilogram of electrodes. The size of the battery is defined according to calculation of 120 W/h per one ton and per one-kilometer of the distance; its weight is equal to 30-40% of the total weight of the vehicle including a payload". Weight of Frezer electric vehicle came to 70 poods (1120 kg). It made the speed of 15-18 km/h and required recharging every 35-50 versts of the path. The second variant of Frezer electric vehicle differed from the first one for less weight of the accumulator which was located above the rear axle.

In addition to the four-seated vehicles, *Frezer* Company produced two-seated electric vehicles equipped with engines of 3.5-hp power. The two-seated electric vehicle was remarkable for its more perfect steering tube. There is known one specimen of this model purchased by somebody from Riga (Latvia). Moreover, on the territory of *"Frezer and Co."* there was a station for recharging accumulators of the electric vehicles.

In the period of the Soviet Union pilot batches of electric vehicles began to be produced only after the II World War. In general there were small lorries applied for transportation inside great buildings, for example, in a main post office or an airport.

Now there is a great probability that Moscow will be the first Russian city where the electric vehicles can find mass application. Russian capital suffers from gas pollution which is especially heavy in the center of the city. At the same time the budget of the city allows acquire own ecologically appropriate transport. Now financing of production of the electric vehicles is realized through the Fund of Ecologization of Moscow Transport. The means are assigned due to income taxes coming to the budget of the city.

To tell the truth, citizens of big cities know electric vehicles very well, i.e. usual trolleybuses and trams are electric vehicles despite they are not autonomous. An autonomous public electric transport has one advantage which is especially valuable in the conditions of the cities overcrowded by cars. This advantage is their mobility. Trolleybuses are inseparable with their wires that causes decrease of their maneuverability. For example, they cannot pass several cars which have been parked wrongly. In this case a maneuverable and autonomous electric vehicle will run to the center of the road and pass the obstacle with ease.

A Moscow company named *Eltran* which deals with exploitation of electric transport has developed a model of EV which runs the distance of 60 kilometers without recharging. Total recharging of this electric vehicle takes about 5 hours, however a half of required energy they can obtain for 1 hour. Hence, if the accumulators are recharged before their full discharge then this vehicle can operate constantly. However, a developed infrastructure of charging stations is necessary for this aim.

From the economical point of view, EV does not yield to trolleybuses and trams which house more passengers but run twice more slowly than the autonomous and compact EV. Therefore EV does not experience difficulties in jams in the conditions of the traffic of the city. It maneuvers easily in thick traffic current.

Unfortunately, now EV cannot replace automobiles equipped with internal combustion engines. Imperfection of its accumulator batteries does not allow it to become a public vehicle. The battery imperfection causes a small run on one recharging, long cycle of recharging, and high price of the electric vehicle.

To tell the truth, EV has important advantages. Maintenance charges of EV are lower than the charges of the standard automobile requiring expenditures for support of cooling systems, powering systems and exhausting systems. The lifetime of the electric engine comes to 10 thousands hours. Quantity of operations for maintenance of the engine is minimal. For example, it is necessary to change brushes in the dc motor from time to time. As for a modern three-phase electric motor and synchronous ac motor they are practically maintenance-free.

EV is easy to drive. To start the car you should only insert the key, turn it and press the accelerator pedal. You do not need to make any manipulations with adherence or gearshift.

Use of EV is justified in so called zones of higher environmental requirements that are cities, parks, vacation resorts. Electric buses, developed by *Eltran* run in the public green space of All-Russia Exhibition Center. There are about ten compact commercial EV operating in Moscow.

Taking care of environmental sanitation the management of AZLK (big automobile plant) has developed EV on the basis of two production automobile models "Moskvich-2141" and "Moskvich-pikup-2335". "Moskvich-Elektro" (Fig. 1-2) at fully loaded mass of 2060 kg accelerates up to 60 km/h at 15 seconds. Maximum speed of the load-free vehicle is 110 km/hour. Cruising range at one battery charging

is 100 km, and it comes to 80 km with 400 kg of load. At present Electrical Vehicle "Moskvich" is filled with imported component parts, which are cheaper but functional. In time it will be supplied with Russian equipment that will make it cheaper.

Fig. 1

Fig. 2
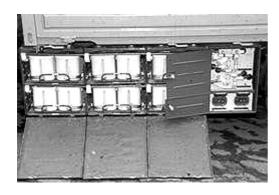
Fig. 3

The model of truck equipped with electric motor "ZIL-Electro", the authors of which being called "AVEKS" and "Optimum-electro", also enjoys the support of the Fund of Ecologization of Moscow Transport. Various privileges and free passage to any location in public green zones are promised to the future owners of "ZIL-Electro".

Forty-eight lead-acid traction batteries of roll type (Optima battery) are hanged in pairs along the ramps of the truck. They are united into 4 sections (Fig.3). Capacity of these batteries is enough for 70 km running. Probable charging station for these machines is the loading/unloading point. Charging time varies from 30 to 60 minutes. Substantial disadvantage of

the model is that batteries take away a great percentage of carrying capacity. Among the advantages of the model there are small internal resistance, fast recovery (to 400 A), discharging to zero level without serious consequences.

A traction induction unit "ATAD-Optimum 50/120" serves as the engine for "ZIL-Electro". Its weight is only 100 kg and it doesn't require any diesel generator or transmission that compensates a little the loss of carrying capacity.

The engine is very simple. It is a non-contact rotor of a "squirrel cage" type rotating on the bearings. No brushes are used. Thus expensive maintenance is postponed for uncertain date. On the other hand there is asynchronism. It means that some equipment is needed for converting into three-phase current and further frequency and amplitude adjustment. However it is expensive and complicated.

In spite of all existing disadvantages, Electric Truck is considered to have a bright future ahead of it. There several reasons for that:

1   The vehicle is manufactured from cheap production component parts.
2   The system of optimum vector control of the drive is introduced. (The torque and shaft speed of rotation is regulated precisely, energy of the batteries is used rather efficiently.)
3   Microprocessor system with feedback coupling and great number of sensors (current sensor, heat sensor, velocity sensor, voltage sensor) minimizes losses, prevents the motor and batteries from overheating, protects mains from short circuit in case of an accident.
4   The vehicle is reasonably priced (for such an exotic object) – about $26 000 USD subject to serial production.

Volzhsky automobile plant has already been engaged in research of EV for a quarter of a century. Over 10 original models have been designed and produced for these years. They have been appreciated abroad as well as in Russia. These are electric vehicles "Poni", "Oka", "Elf", "Gnom", "Niva", "Rapan" "Lada-golf", etc.

The models manufactured on the basis of VAZ-1111 "Oka" became the most popular among them. These EV received many different rewards, and became world-renowned. For example, VAZ-111E "Oka", manufactured in 1993, kept all merits of a production midget car. Use of electric motor makes it a non-toxic and noiseless vehicle. Efficient fast-acting short circuit protection eliminates current rush, providing absolute car operating safety.

In EV of VAZ manufacture two direct-current motors are commonly used as a power-generating set. The first is a 25kW capacity motor with torque of 110 Nm.

Another one has 40 kW capacity and torque of 190 Nm. Motors of the first type are usually mounted on light vehicles, such as "Golf", "Oka-Electro", "Elf", while high-power motors are usually used for VAZ-2108, VAZ-2109, "Niva".

The first models of electric vehicles used to be equipped with nickel-zinc batteries. But as life time of these batteries is not long, it was decided to start using nickel-cadmium batteries, manufactured at Saint-Petersburg plants "Rigel" and "Istochnik". Nickel-cadmium batteries are power-consuming, they withstand temperature of –40°C. The only drawback of these batteries is their cost, and as a consequence a high cost of the vehicle itself. Because of that the final choice has been made in favor of lead-acid storage batteries, which were mounted at "Gamma Golf" in particular, thus reducing its price by several times. The batteries are located under the driver and passenger seats. They allow discharge of 80-85% and provide cruising range without recharge of up to 100 km within city area and several times more on a highway. Power current is transmitted from the electric motor to the front wheels through single-reduction gear unit, which substitutes the transmission.

For the present time electric vehicles are not developed to take the place of automobiles with internal-combustion engine in all industries and spheres of application, but only as a specific vehicle for highly specialized utilization. They are utilized when use of internal-combustion engine is objectionable or impossible.

It is considered that so-called hybrid models of EV would be able to replace automobiles with internal-combustion engines. These are vehicles with two motors, an electric motor and an internal-combustion engine usually running on diesel oil. In this case the combustion engine works constantly, but under the operation modes of little air pollution. Besides, fuel consumption is also much reduced.

In this direction real commercial success is possible. For example, "Toyota-Pirus" has already been chosen as a personal vehicle by tens of thousands of customers, this being a good result for such an original construction.

Nowadays three circuits of hybrid propulsion system are generally known. The simplest one is a series circuit, in which combustion engine operates together with a generator, and battery or generator powers electric motor providing propulsion. Actually this is the same circuit of electric transmission that is used at quarry trucks. Its main disadvantage is great losses of energy at transmitting the torque to the wheels. In parallel circuit the output shafts of the motor-generator and combustion engine are rigidly bound, and it doesn't allow working in steady-state mode (i.e. with permanent rotations and load).

In the third circuit, which is also the most commonly used there are an electric motor, combustion engine and a generator. The output shafts of all these units are bound by planetary differential. This allows almost lossless distribution of power between the units, and provides sustained performance of the combustion engine. The disadvantage of this circuit is the extreme complexity of coordination of units operating.

A hybrid EV was produced in Russia by automobile plant "Izhmash" though it has not been put in mass production yet. At the developing of the propulsion system instead of unique components there were used units of Russian mass automobile production that is one of the fundamental design solutions. "Orbit" Izh-21261 was used as a base for the device. It was equipped with gasoline engine (of 30 hp power and 650 cm^3 capacity), drive dc motor ПТ-125-12 (of 120V voltage and 49 H/m torque) and eight accumulators 6СЕ-55. Twin-engined propulsion system works according to the parallel circuit of engine joint. Electromotor serves as starter and at the acceleration it operates simultaneously with internal-combustion engine. On reaching some definite speed the electromotor changes its operation mode to the mode of generator and charges the accumulators. When the loads at gasoline engine increase then the electromotor begins to operate together with it. Operation of the hybrid propulsion system is controlled by starting regulation electronic equipment. Control unit, speed transducer of crankshaft of the internal combustion engine, detector of the accelerator pedal etc. are responsible for coordinated work of the engines.

During the tests fuel consumption of the hybrid vehicle "Orbit" was less by 20% than that of the usual model. For Russian prototype it is a good qualitative characteristic, however foreign designers reach better results, for example, "Crysler ESX3", which was presented in 1998 at Geneva auto show, consumes 3.3 liter of diesel oil per 100 km of path.

Representatives of specialized Moscow companies producing EV assert unanimously that these are hybrid electric vehicles which should change public transport with internal combustion engine. To encourage the automakers it is useful to create the proper laws drawing on foreign experience. For example, in California, USA, automakers whishing to present their production in the state market should put out 2% of automobiles with null blast. Legal system also supports an automobile user who is provided for free parking and free or cheap recharge. The user is granted with maximum of discounts to encourage him buying EV which is still twice as expensive. However it is said that in one of the villages situated near Moscow where the so called new Russians live, everybody drive electric vehicles leaving their cars with gasoline engine outside the gates. It would be quite good if EV turns to the real vehicle from the extravagancy of nouveau riches and beloved creation of ecologists.

The Richard Clem Motor and the Conical Pump

An Investigation of the Clem Motor

Robert Koontz, USA
rdkoontz@attbi.com

In December of 1992 Jerry Decker posted an article on the KeelyNet BBS, about a self-running motor that developed excess useable power. The information, gathered from newspaper and individual sources, gave an anecdotal account of the motor invented in 1972 by Richard Clem of Flower Mound, Texas. New information has since been added and can be found on http://www.keelynet.com/energy/clem1.htm.

Richard Clem worked with heavy machinery for the city of Dallas. He used asphalt-spraying equipment, which pumped liquid asphalt. He noticed the asphalt pump would continue to run for up to 30 minutes after the power was turned off. It was this discovery that led to the development of the motor. Modifications he made eventually resulted in a substantial 350 horsepower output from a 200-pound motor. Clem is said to have often driven a car, powered by this motor, up and down Central Expressway in Dallas. He claimed it didn't use any fuel, and only needed a change of oil every 150,000 miles.

The motor had only one moving part, a cone shaped rotor mounted vertically on a hollow shaft. Spiral channels cut into the cone wound around its length and feed into peripheral nozzles at its large end. When fluid flowed through the spiral channels it was ejected out the nozzles and caused the cone to spin. At a certain velocity, the rotating cone became independent of the starter pump and began to operate by itself. At an operating speed of 1800 to 2300 RPM the fluid heated up to 300 F, requiring a heat exchanger. Vegetable oil was used because at 300 F water boils and conventional engine oil breaks down.

A 12-volt battery was the only other power source. Clem never applied for a patent because his motor design was derived from the asphalt pump that was already patented. Fifteen companies turned him down before a large coal company offered to back him and signed contracts to sell the motor. Soon after the deal was signed, Richard Clem died of a heart attack

The above account contains only what I considered to be relevant for analysis of the Clem motor. Visit http://www.keelynet.com/ for the original material.

The gear pumps, typically used for asphalt spraying, do not match the description of the pump used by the city of Dallas back in 1972. There should be public records showing what equipment manufacture the asphalt sprayer was purchased from. Since the asphalt pump was patented, I searched for a pump patent that met the following criteria:

1) Patent issued on or before 1972.
2) Delivered pressure equivalent to a positive displacement gear pump.
3) Cone shaped rotor with spiral channels.
4) Self-propelling action.
5) Capable of pumping a viscous fluid like asphalt.
6) Large heat transfer to pumped fluids.

The following illustration (Fig.1) is from US Patent 3,697,190 (Truncated Conical Drag Pump). The patent was issued October 10, 1972 (criteria 1) and appears to match the description of the asphalt pump that Clem converted into his motor.
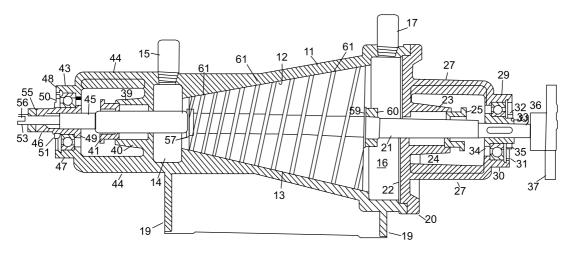
Fig.1

Housing 11, Conical interior wall 12, Conical rotor 13, Inlet chamber 14, Inlet pipe 15, Outlet chamber 16, Outlet pipe 17, Support feet 19, Detachable end cap 20, Rotor shaft 21, End cap wall 22, Boss 23, Packing 24, Adjustable gland nut 25, Bracket arms 27, Bearing boss 29, Bearing 30, Snap ring 31, Inner race 32, Sleeve 33, Shoulder 34, Retainer nut 35, Reduced diameter outer end 36, Coupling 37, Packing 39, Retainer 40, Gland nut 41, Bearing boss 43, Integrally formed bracket 44, Shaft reduced diameter 45, Bearing sleeve 46, Bearing 47, Snap ring 48, Inner flanged 49, Inner race 50, Nut 51, Shaft reduced diameter 53, Lock nut 55, Flat faces 56, Snap ring 57, Washer 59, Nut 60, Helical channel 61, Channel base 63, Channel sidewalls 64.

This is a high-pressure, low volume drag pump that can be used in place of conventional positive displacement pumps (criteria 2). It has a conical rotor that has a close fit clearance with the stationary housing wall. Delivered pressure is limited by back flow across the radial clearance and is inversely proportional to the square of the clearance. As a result, even a small increase in radial clearance would rapidly reduce pressure. The rotor is cone shaped so that the clearance can be controlled by axial adjustment of the rotor relative to the housing wall.

The conical rotor has two helical channels (criteria 3), in the form of square threads, spaced 180 apart for balance. The channel depth decreases as the rotor diameter increases. Fluid enters the channels at the small end of the rotor. The fluid is induced to rotate with the channel by boundary layer drag. The boundary layer is the thin layer of fluid adhering to the channel surface. Molecular cohesion tends to drag the adjacent fluid with the boundary layer. The fluid is also in contact with the housing wall. The boundary layer drag against this stationary wall slows the rotation of the fluid in the channels. Because the fluid rotates slower than the rotor, it is forced through the channels towards the large end of the rotor. In addition the fluid is forced towards the large end by centrifugal force.
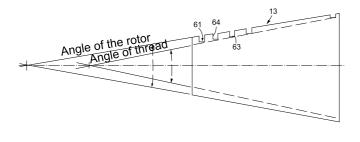
Fig.2

The above drawing illustrates the proportional decrease in channel depth as the rotor diameter increases. Why was this done? Note that as the diameter doubles so does the circumference. This means the fluid has to travel twice as far in the same time to maintain a constant slip velocity. By reducing the channel depth in half (cross-section area = depth x width) the fluid velocity is doubled thereby keeping the slip constant.

The spiral channels could be thought of as very long convergent nozzles. The increase in fluid velocity is in the opposite direction of the rotor spin. We should expect a reaction force from the acceleration of the fluid. This thrust would be directed tangent to the circumference and would increase the spin torque on the rotor. Even without the peripheral nozzles, that Clem later added, the pump rotor experiences a thrust force in a direction that would self-propel it (criteria 4).

Because fluid drag is the primary pumping force, it is well suited for viscous fluids like asphalt (criteria 5). The long channels also represent a large sliding surface area with frictional losses that would transfer heat to the pumped fluid (criteria 6).

All six of the patent search criteria have now been met. Of course this doesn't prove that it is the asphalt pump Richard Clem worked with.

A peculiar condition indicated by the patent is that as the velocity increases in the channels the pressure also increases. Bernoulli's Law requires the pressure to drop proportionally as the velocity increases. Assuming an ideal fluid without losses, when the channel depth is reduced in half, the cross section area is also half and this doubles the fluid velocity and the fluid pressure should drop in half. So what is going on here? There is a centrifugal component that would add to the fluid pressure.

My guess is it's too small to overcome the predicted pressure drop. Here is what I think may be going on. As the diameter and velocity increases the drag force propelling the fluid through the channel is proportionally greater. Energy is being added all along the length of the channel. Whatever the reason, if this high-velocity, high-pressure fluid is feed into tangent peripheral nozzles at the rotor large end, the energy will be converted to shaft horsepower.

The Clem motor is producing 350 shaft-horsepower and a large heat energy component. Where is this huge amount of energy coming from? Recent quantum mechanics zero-point field (ZPF) theories may point to the answer. From an article available at "BEYOND E=mc^2" Bernhard Haisch, Alfonso Rueda & H.E. Puthoff [1]:

"Our work suggests inertia is a property arising out of the vast, all-pervasive electromagnetic field we mentioned earlier, which is called the zero-point field (ZPF). The name comes from the fact that the field is held to exist in a vacuum-what is commonly thought of as "empty" space-even at the temperature of absolute zero, at which all thermal radiation is absent."

ZPF researchers theorize that mass, inertia and gravity are not intrinsic properties of matter but the interaction of matter with the zero-point field. By all pervasive it is meant that the ZPF exists not only in empty space but it is passing through your body right now and everywhere else. When you throw a stone you are interacting with this field since the ZPF resists change in motion. In essence the ZPF is the modern day aether.

The amount of energy making up the ZPF is thought to be enormous. Is the fluid acceleration in the Clem motor interacting with the ZPF in such a way as to rectify it and draw energy from it? Is it a hydraulic aether-diode? The fluid, in the Conical Drag Pump, flows through long convergent channels. Disregarding the boundary layer, is this accelerated flow laminar? Would such a long orderly flow entrain the aether energy?

From the perspective of the rotating channels the fluid appears as the discharge from a long nozzle. To exaggerate, if the fluid was held fast to the housing wall, the rotating channel would travel through the stationary fluid. This would be equivalent to achieving 100% efficiency. In reality the fluid is slipping against the stationary housing wall so that the rotating channel (nozzle) is moving faster than the fluid discharge velocity. Assuming the reaction thrust as the only propelling force, this would give efficiency greater than 100%. So, as the slip increases the reaction thrust decreases, but the efficiency increases.

Assuming the Conical Drag Pump is the pump Clem used, can it answer the following?

1) Why was a hollow shaft used?
2) Why was the cone mounted vertically?
3) Why was a starter pump needed?
4) How were the peripheral nozzles added?
5) How was the motor RPM regulated?
6) How did a large coal company get involved?
7) Was this kind of pump ever used in asphalt sprayers?
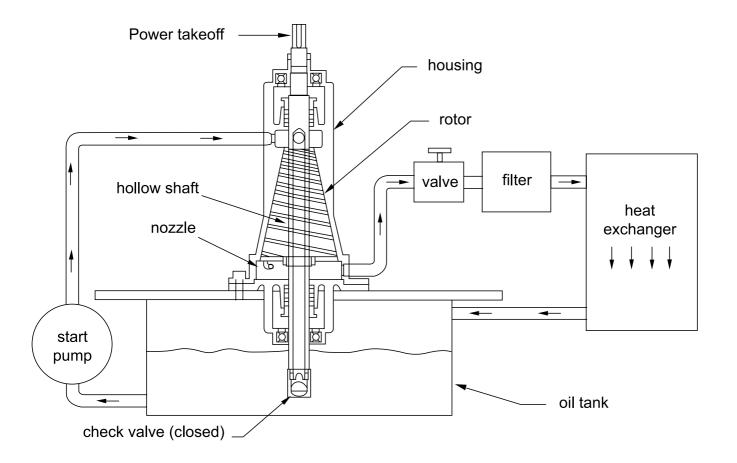
Fig.3

Clem motor shown in start mode
The arrows show oil flow

The above drawing shows a hypothetical Clem motor based on the Conical Drag Pump. The motor is mounted vertically so that the check valve on the hollow shaft is submerged down in the oil tank. The hollow shaft extends from the oil tank through the rotor into the inlet chamber. The start pump draws oil from the tank and forces it up

the external feed line connected to the inlet chamber at the small end of the rotor. This fills the hollow shaft and forces the check valve closed. The oil flows into the spiral channels and out the peripheral nozzles. The reaction thrust of the nozzles spins the rotor. The oil flows through the return line, through the valve, filter, and heat exchanger and back into the tank. The start pump is most likely a standard hydraulic gear pump. It continues to pump until the rotor spins up to its operating speed. The combinations of a start pump and check valve would be a simple way to both prime the motor and spin up the rotor.
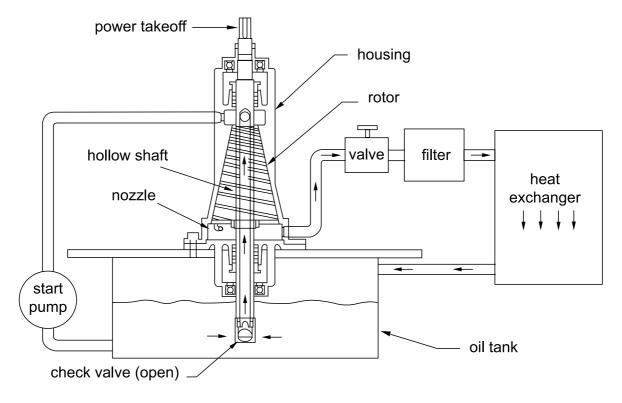
Fig.4

Clem motor shown in operation mode
The arrows show oil flow

Once the start pump is shut off the check valve is free to open. Oil is drawn up into the hollow shaft to the inlet chamber at the small end of the rotor. The spiral channels pump the oil down towards the large end of the rotor. A plate is attached to the large end of the rotor and fits with a close clearance with the housing wall. Nozzles attached to the outer edge receive high-pressure oil from the spiral channels. The jet reaction thrust from the nozzles delivers shaft horsepower to the power takeoff at the shaft top. Adjusting the valve to create hydraulic backpressure regulates the motor RPM. Closing the valve stops the motor.

When I first read about the Clem Motor I found it odd that a deal had been made with a coal company. Was there a connection with the pump? After finding the Conical Drag Pump patent, I wanted to contact the inventor Walter D. Haentjens of Barrett, Haentjens & Co., Hazleton, Pennsylvania. Otto Haentjens founded Barrett Haentjens & Co., in 1916. The business began in the coalmines of Pennsylvania with Otto Haentjens original patent on the balanced opposed impeller multi-stage volute pump. The company still supplies pumps to the coal industry.

They have expanded to other markets and their pumps are installed in many industries worldwide. It is now known as Hazleton Pumps Inc., after its acquisition by The Weir Group.

I contacted Peter Haentjens, the VP/General Manager of Hazleton Pumps, by e-mail to find out if this pump had ever been put into production. He replied that they had not done anything with the patent.

An unusual pump design would have a tough time competing in the market with an industry standard like gear pumps. The Dallas asphalt sprayer may have been a one of a kind field test of the pump design. Or the pump manufacturer offered it for testing to an asphalt equipment company in the hopes of generating interest in it.

References

Bernhard Haisch, Alfonso Rueda & H.E. Puthoff, "BEYOND E=mc²" //The Sciences, Vol. 34, No. 6, November / December 1994, pp. 26-31 copyright 1994, New York Academy of Sciences.

Spontaneous Flow Heat Pump
PACES : The Alternative Energy

Jean-Luc Brochet, France

http://www.new-energy-paces.com
Email: brochet.jean-luc@wanadoo.fr

"Paces" is a new high performance electronic process. It is not a traditional heat pump fitted with some electronic gadgets to improve its output, but a truly revolutionary process totally unused up to now. There are no moving parts, not even a moving fluid in it. "Paces" is an electronic process because for its development the pump's fundamental element uses micro-electronic techniques.

...an average of 9000MW could be produced, that is to say the equivalent of several nuclear power stations.

The principle consists in attracting the gas neutral molecules onto a so-called "electrostatic" plate, to accelerate them and heat the plate. An intense electric field is applied in a capacitor with micro-pores covering the plate. The neutral molecules are polarized and accelerated when they penetrate these micro-pores where the intense electric field exists. Each molecule accelerates and absorbs electrical energy when it enters into a pore. But in turn it decelerates and gives off an equal amount of energy upon its exit from the pore.

The molecules, by going back and forth between the plates, continually give off and take energy, thus resulting in a total consumption equal to zero.

The gas fluid does not undergo any change of thermodynamic state, contrary to all other heat pump processes. A thermodynamic cycle remains at the level of each gas molecule, but not at the level of the entire set of molecules.

There is more to this new process, it is not just heat pump process added to an already long list: **these new characteristics also enable some new applications.** Besides the traditional heat pump applications, due to its excellent coefficient of performance this process makes it possible **to produce electricity by cooling the environment.**

For instance, if the Rhine was equipped with heat exchangers into which diverted water could flow, thus cooling its temperature by just one degree, an average of 9000MW could be produced, that is to say the equivalent of several nuclear power stations. Please

note that this process would also enable **both electricity and fresh water to be produced from seawater,** an interesting application for areas of the world where water is a scarce resource.

Thus we have at our disposal an ecological process for producing electricity, it would become conceivable to produce hydrogen in great quantities; vehicles would be hydrogen powered. Ozone, CO2 or any other type of pollution would become a thing of the past.

It will most probably be the energy source of future generations, ecological and excellent, inexhaustible, powerful yet completely harmless, stable and steady (contrary to the sun and wind); an invention capable of re-launching the world economy, in particular giving impetus to the currently depressed new technology sector.

However, you have probably noticed that this invention requires advanced technology, and the few French laboratories capable to develop this process have proven inaccessibility to do it for independent researchers such as the author of the article. Besides, the invention's claimed qualities, the revolutionary aspect was very often interpreted by examiners as 'utopian', even before they read the document! Having tired of battling against concept fixed for the past two centuries, the author of the article **has now decided to place this project within the hands of the international scientific and technological community,** in order to give the best chance of success to the invention.

It will most probably be the energy source of future generations!

Initial development requires the construction of a prototype; three possibilities are described on the website (http://www.new-energy-paces.com). As there is no longer legal protection abroad, anyone is free to experiment and to market, as he or she wishes, in all other countries outside of France.

Please help me to spread the word about this project, for example through scientific forums on the Internet. This will allow you to receive feedback and gather other opinions. Your participation, even the most modest, will be of use. To those of you who help this project to see the light of day, all of humanity will be indebted.

Registration of Gravitational Waves

Vladimir N. Petrov, Russia

173001, apt. 76, 10 Bolshaya Saint-Peterburgskaya st., Veliky Novgorod
E-mail: petvn@km.ru

Registration of gravitational waves is one of fundamental problems of physics. At the beginning of the last century A. Einstein's works predicted existence of these waves. Nevertheless, despite numerous attempts are made in different countries of the world these waves have not been fixed up today. Josef Veber, an American physicist working in 60th of the XX century, is sure to be called as the first experimenter who disclosed gravitational waves. Nowadays lots of many-million projects on registration of gravitation waves are developed and realized (LIGO (USA), GEO-600 (Germany-England), VIRGO (Italia), and TAMA (Japan)). However no positive results were achieved.

Failures in registration of gravitational waves can be explained by the fact that researchers have erroneous notion of the essence of these waves. This erroneous notion is laid in an experimental project that causes negative results.

Many researchers believe that influence of gravitational waves on the bodies should be resulted in deformation of these bodies (i.e. in change of mutual place of particles of a material body). All the attempts to disclose the gravitational waves are based on this notion. Now two types of ground gravitational antennas are supposed as priority.

The first type supposes the registration of mechanical oscillations of a massive test body that is initiated by influence of gravitational waves on it.

The second can register changes of a distance between space-apart free masses when gravitational waves act upon them. Great attention is paid to the second type of antennas in the developed projects. Failure attempts of registration of gravitational waves can be explained by their low intensiveness and insufficient accuracy of existing measuring equipments. Therefore, now there are made various attempts to register gravitational waves produced by such great cosmic phenomena as confluence of black holes. More accurate instruments and measuring equipments, for example, a laser interferometer, are developed. Nevertheless, positive results are hardly to be obtained.

Here is one of the fallacious explanations of action of gravitational waves on a body: *"Passing of gravitational waves changes an interval between objects transferring them one from another like two boats sometimes are approached sometimes moved from each other by sea waves"*.

Following this example to explain influence of the gravitational waves on bodies placing on the Earth, it can be said that all bodies are in one boat and raising or sinking of the boat on sea waves does not cause change of the distance between the bodies. However, this example seems to be very simplified for explanation of influence of the gravitational waves on bodies. In fact, the case is much more difficult.

According to A. Einstein's theory, bodies moving with variable acceleration will radiate gravitational waves. **Gravitational waves represent the essence of changes of gravitational field occurring at light speed.** Since the gravitational field is a deformed space-time then the gravitational waves cause change of deformation of the space-time. Change of deformation of the space-time is accompanied with change of deformation of geodesic lines (i.e. lines by which all the bodies move).

A body moving by a geodesic line whose deformation is changed changes its acceleration. Change of acceleration of the body will change gravity applied to the body in this area of space. Hence, influence of gravitational waves on the body occurs through gravity which influences on it.

It is known that a fundamental difference between gravity and other forces appearing at a direct contact with a body consists in the fact that gravity provides all the elements of the body (all its points) with equal acceleration (deformation can not occur), and other forces influence on certain parts of the surface of a body and so cause its deformation.

Hence it is senseless to try to measure deformation of a body or change of a distance between test bodies occurring under influence of gravitational waves. It is necessary to note that, in particular, when a body is placed on an unmovable support relatively to the Earth, value and the direction of gravity coincides with weight of the body. Therefore, in this case gravitational waves can be registered at measuring of changes of the body weight.

An experiment on registration of the gravitational field of the Earth by measuring change of weight of

a test body was made. Before the beginning of the experiment there was set a problem to register gravitational waves produced by the Mercury and the Venus at approaching to the Earth. The gravitational field in which the Earth moves changes due to superposition of gravitational waves of other planets on it. These changes were necessary to be registered.

The experiment was as follows: a test body (a 100 grams weight) was weighted on an electronic balance in equal time intervals of 14 days. The experiment was lasting for 12 months. In the experiment it appeared that change of a distance between the Earth and the mentioned planets causes change of weight of the test body. The change of weight of the body occurred in proportion to the distance between the planets. The test body was weighted in the same conditions and in the same place. The performance of the experiment is so easy that every person can made it.

It is known that weight of a body changes (decreases) at moving along the Earth surface from its pole to the equator. Change of weight of a body locating in the same place has not been fixed until now.

The fixed change of weight of the test body proves change of gravity applied to it and, consequently, change of the gravitational field in which the test body moves as well as the Earth does. **These changes of the gravitational field were caused by motion (superposition) of the gravitational waves produced by the mentioned planets at their approaching towards the Earth at the distance of the existent gravitational field.**

Hence, the Earth and all the bodies locating on it move in the constantly changing gravitational field, therefore, constantly change their weight. Nevertheless, as it is known, change of the gravitational field is the influence of gravitational waves on it. Hence, measuring changing of weight of bodies we can speak about registration of gravitational waves.

In search of the 4th dimension

From http://home.ural.ru/~meop/index.html

High-Energy Hyper-Low-Frequency Electric Field

Yury V. Ivanko, Ukraine
E-mail: ux01w@hotmail.com

The article represents a practical and theoretical research on possibility of existence of a high-energy hyper-low-frequency electric field which is interpreted by modern measuring instruments and subjective perception as a static field. Besides there are observed a problem of the field registration, a hypothesis of relic origin of the registered field and a hypothesis of wave nature of the Universe.

A passenger on board a ship sailing in the ocean will never notice action of waves of high and low tide. At the same time, weathering waves of several numbers produce a dangerous storm. However, an ocean liner is designed for such a storm therefore the passenger would just experience some discomfort. It is another case if tide wave hides reefs… I wish our ship, i.e. the Earth, the Solar System, the Galaxy, and the Universe, not to be lead to such a place by any ignorant "navigator"!

One of the most mysterious persons in the history of electricity physics was an outstanding inventor Nicola Tesla (1856-1943). When the majority of scientists developed researches of microworld particles he followed the opposite scientific path. He was interested in the electrical potential of the whole Earth. He researched ways to influence on it, control its state and methods of its regulation. Therefore many of his patents, experiments as well as a purpose of constructions and devices built according to his ideas arouse perplexity and misunderstanding of modern scientists.

a test body was made. Before the beginning of the experiment there was set a problem to register gravitational waves produced by the Mercury and the Venus at approaching to the Earth. The gravitational field in which the Earth moves changes due to superposition of gravitational waves of other planets on it. These changes were necessary to be registered.

The experiment was as follows: a test body (a 100 grams weight) was weighted on an electronic balance in equal time intervals of 14 days. The experiment was lasting for 12 months. In the experiment it appeared that change of a distance between the Earth and the mentioned planets causes change of weight of the test body. The change of weight of the body occurred in proportion to the distance between the planets. The test body was weighted in the same conditions and in the same place. The performance of the experiment is so easy that every person can made it.

It is known that weight of a body changes (decreases) at moving along the Earth surface from its pole to the equator. Change of weight of a body locating in the same place has not been fixed until now.

The fixed change of weight of the test body proves change of gravity applied to it and, consequently, change of the gravitational field in which the test body moves as well as the Earth does. **These changes of the gravitational field were caused by motion (superposition) of the gravitational waves produced by the mentioned planets at their approaching towards the Earth at the distance of the existent gravitational field.**

Hence, the Earth and all the bodies locating on it move in the constantly changing gravitational field, therefore, constantly change their weight. Nevertheless, as it is known, change of the gravitational field is the influence of gravitational waves on it. Hence, measuring changing of weight of bodies we can speak about registration of gravitational waves.

In search of the 4th dimension

From http://home.ural.ru/~meop/index.html

High-Energy Hyper-Low-Frequency Electric Field

Yury V. Ivanko, Ukraine
E-mail: ux01w@hotmail.com

The article represents a practical and theoretical research on possibility of existence of a high-energy hyper-low-frequency electric field which is interpreted by modern measuring instruments and subjective perception as a static field. Besides there are observed a problem of the field registration, a hypothesis of relic origin of the registered field and a hypothesis of wave nature of the Universe.

A passenger on board a ship sailing in the ocean will never notice action of waves of high and low tide. At the same time, weathering waves of several numbers produce a dangerous storm. However, an ocean liner is designed for such a storm therefore the passenger would just experience some discomfort. It is another case if tide wave hides reefs… I wish our ship, i.e. the Earth, the Solar System, the Galaxy, and the Universe, not to be lead to such a place by any ignorant "navigator"!

One of the most mysterious persons in the history of electricity physics was an outstanding inventor Nicola Tesla (1856-1943). When the majority of scientists developed researches of microworld particles he followed the opposite scientific path. He was interested in the electrical potential of the whole Earth. He researched ways to influence on it, control its state and methods of its regulation. Therefore many of his patents, experiments as well as a purpose of constructions and devices built according to his ideas arouse perplexity and misunderstanding of modern scientists.

Having formulated my own hypotheses I often think why such a Great Genius as Nicola Tesla took his invention away with him.

Danger of this invention lies in simplicity of production of devices for generating (detecting) energy.

Practical Prerequisites

Prerequisites of this and other hypotheses were some undeclared effects occurring in practical wireless communication as well as investigation of devices for distant transmission of electric power.

Distant energy transmission was demonstrated by Nicola Tesla in 1892 in London and in 1893 in Philadelphia. However, even now the way he did it remains unknown.

In 1977-1985 I had to work a lot with radio transmitting equipment of different power of middle-wave (MW) and short-wave (SW) diapasons. According to fundamentals of physics, intensive electromagnetic field is produced around antenna curtain connected to a radio-frequency transmitter. There are brightly glowing gas-discharge electrovacuum devices at the distance up to several meters in this field. Attention was paid to the fact that more than ten daylight lamps of 80 W were successfully "glowed" at 40 W power of a transmitter. In this case a distant correspondent did not note significant decrease of a level of a received signal at the indicator of the receiver. It had to return to this fact in many years. The data of this experiment are represented in a particular document.

There is one more interesting effect which is disclosed when transmitting equipment (TX) and antennas (ANT) are adjusted. An incandescent lamp, which is connected to a certain place of a break of the antenna curtain or of a power feeder (L), glows brightly. The antenna circuit is not closed as galvanic element. (See Fig. 1).
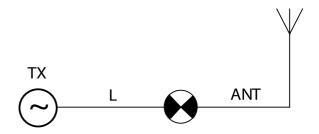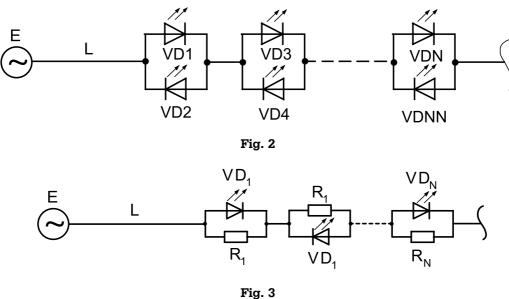
Fig. 1

Hence, the power line of the incandescent lamp is as if it is single-wire. It also had to return to investigation of this effect in many years. The data of this experiment are represented in a particular document. As in the case of the incandescent lamps, the correspondent did not note significant decrease of the level of the received signal at the indicator of the distant receiver.

S. V. Avramenko designed a plug of semiconductor diodes. Connecting this plug to a generator of alternating voltage of 10-10000 V by means of a single-wire line in the load of the plug he discovered current, which was continuous by the direction but pulsating by the value. Electric current measured in the single-wire line is very little, hence, the impression of superconductivity is produced, i.e. it is possible almost to avoid energy losses in the wires.

My experiments also represent a visual demonstration of the effect. For example, several links of light-emitting diodes connected inverse-parallel glow in the single-wire line. Garlands of light-emitting diodes and lamps having a single-wire power line can be produced. It is interesting that in this case power consumed by the generator do not increase practically (See Fig. 2, 3, 4). It was noted that if a standing wave is created around the generator "then an unlimited number of consumers would be able to apply a change of a value of this field to produce power in a load in their place" *(Editor: This phrase is in inverted commas since it is a part of the well-known article "Free Energy" by Alexander V. Frolov (Read in this issue, p. 15)).*

Fig. 2

Fig. 3
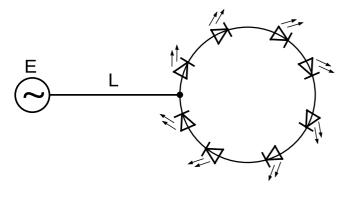
Fig. 4

Russian scientists investigated this phenomenon and proposed an explanation of producing active power in the load by means of reactive capacitive current. This was made applying resonant properties of the single-wire line made of a metallic conductor. Further, possibilities of application of nonmetallic conducting mediums for transmitting electric power were investigated. However, the researchers pay attention for the fact that this explanation is insufficient.

A task group named "Analysis" from Voronezh city (Russia) made a qualitatively new explanation of results of S. V. Avramenko's experiment. The works of this group from Voronezh are devoted to the comparison of properties and characteristics of so-called inertial and inertialess currents occurring in circuits at low frequencies. Their general and particular features have been disclosed. In the works there are demonstrated conditions at which conductivity caused by inertialess discharges predominates in conductors and conditions at which currents caused by conduction electrons predominate. There are demonstrated a description of S. V. Avramenko's experiments and the conclusions made by the researchers. The authors cite data of their test experiments which prove a part of conclusions made by S. V. Avramenko and his colleagues.

However this explanation does not have a right to exist as it does not have variants for practical application.

Results of my theoretical and experimental researches allow provide a **fundamentally new (!)** explanation of energy "transmission" having occurred in the experiments performed by S. V. Avramenko, investigations by D. S. Strebkov, V.A. Kuligin and other investigators. *(Editor: See publications of these works in previous issues of our magazine)*. Moreover, they allow explain origin of many physical phenomena and processes including the origin of non-inertial charges and currents and their visualization.

First Hypothesis

Recently a number of scientists all over the world have declared a thought that surplus power is produced in the systems having overunit output due to inability to identify correctly all the existent energy sources. And a so-called phenomenology is observed due to the inability to deal with different types of energy (or fields).

In physics a negation of an overunit device follows a well known state which is considered to be true in other fields of knowledge, i.e. energy conservation law. It should be noted that it is formulated for isolated (closed) systems. I have devoted some time to the investigation of this state and to practical experiments and come to the following conclusion: there are **no isolated (closed)** systems in the nearest cosmos which can be observed by us!

Particular physical, chemical and other processes may actually be observed in closed circuits for making calculations with sufficient approximation.

Show me an isolated system, and I will prove that it is open.

Hence, according to fundamental physical laws, energy does not appear from nothing and not disappear to nowhere. However, the source of oscillations, i.e. our generator, does not provide a load with energy; nevertheless, power is produced in the load. Energy conservation law must be fulfilled! The classical formulation of the energy conservation law is as following: total energy of an isolated system is not changed in the course of time. According to this, the only fact remains valid, i.e. the single-wire system is not isolated from outer influence, hence, energy is consumed from some other source which is outer in relation to the system?! In this case our generator is one of sources of information about an amplitude, frequency, and phase.

Calculations and experiments have allowed made a following supposition. Avramenko's diode plug is a particular case of a device known in radio engineering for a long time, i.e. AM detector (a peak-detector, a limiter, a frequency mixer). I have examined the other known circuits of AM detectors and frequency mixers. The investigations are continued and by this time the supposition has been confirmed.

Let us accept an artificial generator (Tesla's transformer or any other one) as a main generator (or a main oscillator) and a hyper-low-frequency (HLF) oscillation of a huge amplitude as an envelope curve. Let us name it as RW ("relic wave") without placing emphasis on the sense of the name.

Let us suppose that the field can be of:
- local origin (artificial radio transmitters);
- atmospheric origin;
- geomagnetic Earth origin;
- the Moon – the Earth;
- the Sun – the Earth (the Sun as a nuclear reactor producing electromagnetic radiation, the Solar System);
- galactic origin;
- Universal origin – the Relic Wave; in contrast to the relic radiation occurring in the diapason of SHF (i.e. in

contrast to the convenient notion) it is the diapason of HLF. - Etc.

The researches have demonstrated that the field of local and atmospheric origin may be excluded. The other variants require to be developed. Nevertheless, the variant of the Universal scale seemed to be the most probable. There is some reason for this supposition: the modern notion of the birth and the state of the Universe, i.e. the Big Bang and the expanding Universe. The known variants of scenarios of the Big Bang are based on a nuclear explosion of enormous power. The nuclear explosion is accompanied by an electromagnetic impulse (disturbance). It can be supposed that the Big Bang caused forming of a field having enormous amplitude values and long (great) period of oscillations. Probably, we deal with this field.

The second hypothesis about inconstancy, i.e. about wave nature of the Universe

A Russian proverb says: "Everything passes, everything changes". Constant electric voltage does not exist (!). That, what is considered as the constant voltage, really is a constant component (occurring at a certain time interval). This component is formed by combining of variable sinusoidal oscillations and/or is a quite low frequency fundamental. Hence, it is a non-sinusoidal "changing" having amplitude linear part at the time interval of the observer.

For example, in reality a usual storage battery of "direct current" can not support invariable voltage, i.e. when a discharge appears the voltage decreases (changes in time, oscillates with a non-sinusoidal oscillation and a quite low frequency fundamental), when a charge appears the voltage increases.

It is necessary to observe the constant voltage occurring after a rectifier and even a stabilizer as a constant component existing in the time interval from switching on to switching off. This will correspond to that is proposed by Fourier!

Show me a device producing constant voltage, and I will prove that the voltage is not constant.

Conclusions

If the supposition is totally confirmed then the statement that an electric field plays a fundamental role in the Universe will be valid.

We live in an electric field of a huge potential but we do not notice it. Since **our reference point is the amplitude value of RW field in our point of space** then the potential is equal to zero for our perception and for measuring instruments. Besides, **RW has an amplitude linear part at the time interval of the**

observer. Hence, we consider RW field existing as unrevealed or as weak interactions in natural processes. Nevertheless, this influences directly on the whole surrounding material world.

Artificial production of heterogeneities in the RW field can cause its significant visualization.

According to the concept of the physical field, which was called by Einstein as the most important discovery in physics since Newton's time, every body generates a force field in the ambient space (for example, the electric field occurring if the body has an electric charge). This force field becomes apparent when a test body located in a certain point is influenced by a force.

Discovery of the fields of this scale allows define this concept more accurately. I would like to restate the information mentioned above in the following way: every non-homogeneity of physical vacuum (aether), which is registered by our perception or by measuring instruments as a physical object or a physical field, interferes with RW (according to other interpretations, it absorbs or rereflects RW, or becomes excited) producing new wave fields. This perceived physical field has frequency which is higher than RW frequencies. It is perceived as static in the time interval of observation. Hence, the field generates a charge and not the reverse. Any linear or non-linear transmission (motion) of a material or field object changes non-homogeneity which is generated by this object.

A question about measuring of parameters of the Universe remains open. Can an oscillation of the period of T=14 billions years and of the amplitude of A~T be seen, perceived, registered or measured?

The used literature and references are not cited in the article due to its great volume. The reader can familiarize with them at the web-site of http://www.efir.com.ua. The complete text of the article and other materials can be received from the author.

To the Question of Work Made by Electrostatic Field

Alexander V. Frolov, Russia

General Director, Faraday Lab Ltd
Tel./Fax.: 7-812-380-3844
Email: office@faraday.ru

We know some simple examples of work making due to the forces, which appear in electrostatic field. Since the field itself does not require energy consumption from the source (not taking into account the charge leakage), then free energy can be received with these forces. The first phenomenon that we are going to consider is a phenomenon of **electrostriction**. Mechanical forces appearing in dielectric under the influence of electrical field tend to deform it. Sometimes these forces are small, but they can be huge in special dielectrics. The character of deformation also depends on non-linearity of electrical field. Suffice it to remember that heating of a body takes place during deformation, and we can make a conclusion on possible using of the given effect in practice. Periodical deformation can be created due to the rotor or any other methods to change the field.

The second effect is not so popular. It was found by Hertz in 1881 that there is a rotation of dielectrical cylinder (or ball) in permanent electric field if it is created in some liquid or in gas (see Fig.1).
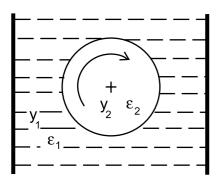
Fig.1

Here $\varepsilon 1$ is a dielectrical permittivity of the liquid, $\varepsilon 2$ is a dielectrical permittivity of the rotor, $\gamma 1$ is a conductivity of the liquid and $\gamma 2$ is a conductivity of the rotor. This effect was discovered by Hertz, then it was described by G. Quincke, Germany. Also Japan scientist I. Sumoto studied the effect in 1955. Modern research work was made by K.M. Polivanov, Moscow. There is the so called equation by Polivanov describing special conditions, which are necessary to begin rotation ($\varepsilon 1/ \varepsilon 2 = \gamma 2/\gamma 1$ is the Polivanov's condition).

Forces of electrostatic field produce this rotation and it is a real free energy system that can trap energy from inner structure of potential field. Let's try to describe the mechanism of this effect and then we'll be able to increase the power of the system up to the level of industrial application. So, why does it work? To my mind, there are some differences in conditions for polarization of the rotor and molecules of liquid or gas those are surrounding the rotor since there is a difference in permittivity and conductivity.
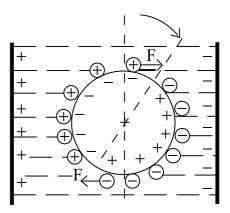
Fig.2

Due to this reason the molecules are polarized both by the field of electrodes and by the field of rotor. The rotor is polarized in the electrical field of electrodes, and molecules of liquid on its surface are polarized by the electric charge of the rotor, but not according to direction of the field. So, the rotor is surrounded by "screen" of molecules on its surface. The electric charge of this screen partially compensates the field of electrodes.

When some angle is created by the first initial turn, there is some part of the rotor surface, where molecules of liquid on the surface of the rotor are attracted to electrodes and it is the reason for future rotation. After some angle of the turn the polarization in this point of the rotor surface is changed but new molecules are incoming in the so called "sector of attraction" and the rotation is always accelerated. This well-known effect of 1881 is a very good example of possibility to produce useful work in load by means of electrostatic field only.

One more interesting effect is known as Faraday effect. In 1836 Faraday noted that raising of liquid upwards takes place in condenser with liquid dielectric (plates are installed vertically). During this process electrostatic field makes the work against gravity. A. Gyemant in 1926 established that value of this force is proportional to the square of voltage on condenser. Later in 1955 this phenomenon was studied in details by I. Sumoto, Japan. That's why in physical encyclopedias this effect is called "Faraday-Sumoto effect". In Tareev's book [1] it is pointed: "Under high voltage this phenomenon leads to flowing and turbulent boiling of liquid". I should remember for those, who see nothing unusual here, that it does not necessary to consume the power from initial source. Creating an initial field in electric capacitor, then we can use the received mechanical work. It is evident that the gradient of electrical field creates the conditions for movement of liquid dielectric. A task to create conditions for liquid circulation is more complex, but it has solution, if we take into account the presence of one more static field, i.e. gravitational field. Joint action of electrostatic and gravitational fields stipulates the circulation of liquid dielectric even in the simplest constructions. Besides, electrostatic filed can be partially screened.

The analyzed examples should draw attention of experimenters to these obvious ways of how to create useful work by means of electrostatic field.

References

1. Tareev B.M. Physics of dielectrical materials, Moscow, Energoisdat, 1982, p.199 – 200.

Editor: Below we publish the comments of our reader.

Letter On
Hertz-Quincke-Sumoto Effect

from Doug Marett
Email: doug.marett@sympatico.ca

…As far as I can tell, the original reference by Hertz is "On the Distribution of Electricity over the Surface of Moving Conductors", Wiedemann's Annalen, 13, pp.266-275,1881. Hertz's discussion of this phenomenon is cursory at best, having very little experimental work included. The real phenomenon appears to have been discovered by W. Weiler in 1893 (Zeitschrift fur den Physikalischen und Chemischen Unterricht, Vol.6, pp194-195). Weiler observed that a glass cylinder placed in a poorly conducting liquid between two spherical electrodes began to rotate when the electrodes were connected to an electrostatic generator. In 1896, George Quincke reported the same phenomenon and published a comprehensive report on it. This was in Annalen der Physik, Ser.3, Vol. 59, pp.417-486. Subsequent investigators have tended to attribute the discovery to Quincke, when in fact Weiler was the first to pioneer the work.

I do know that P.E. Secker et al. performed work on this field, references of which are available in the English language. These are:

P.E. Secker, et al., (1968) Journal of Applied Physics, Vol. 39, pp.2957-2961, and
P.E. Secker, et al., (1970) Journal of Physics D: Applied Physics Vol.3, pp 216-220.

I hope that this information might be of use to you.

BOOKS REVIEW

The Foundations of Physchemistry of Micro World

Ph. M. Kanarev

The Second Edition

The book was published in Russian and English; you can also read it at http://book.Kanarev.innoplaza.net

The new axiomatic of natural sciences is given in the book; on its basis, quantum physics and quantum chemistry have been returned to the classical way of development. The first steps are made on this way, which have led to discovery of the structure of the photon, the electron, and the principle of the formation of the atomic nuclei, the atoms and the molecules.

The Planck's Law of radiation of perfect blackbody is given on the basis of classical concepts, and the connection of quantum phenomena with the laws of classical physics is proved.

The application of the new theoretical results to the solution of practical energy tasks on the basis of plasma electrolysis of water is shown. Due to this electrolysis, additional heat energy and the energy containing gases (hydrogen and oxygen) are generated. Cold Nuclear Transmutation of the atomic nuclei of alkaline metals and the atomic nuclei of the cathode material takes place during plasma electrolysis of water.

The book is intended for physicists, chemists and other specialists who are seeking the new directions for understanding the foundations of the micro world and the new energy sources.

Comments to Electro-Reactive LIFTER News

Alexander V. Frolov, Russia

General Director, Faraday Laboratories Ltd
E-mail: office@faraday.ru
http://www.faraday.ru

March 21, 2003 we got news from France about electro-reactive propulsion system.

Blaze Labs reached 100g PAYLOAD level.

You will find all the details of the Saviour's experiment at: http://blazelabs.com/exp14.htm.

This electro-reactive ionization-flying model requires 46 kVolt, 4 mA, i.e. about 200 watts to fly with 100 g useful load.

It is interesting to note that Jean-Louis Naudin's previous opinion of 1997 – 1999 about priority of the Frolov's asymmetrical capacitor now is changed. Sometimes people wish to re-write the history. It is possible and it is easy. Naudin's web page about http://jnaudin.free.fr/lifters/story.htm (see Fig. 1) is not started from the real beginning of the story. He forgot our discussion of 1997 and also photos and MPEG video I have send to him when he has started his way in electrograviticis.

If you remember the name of Naudin's first asymmetrical capacitor "Frolov's Hat" (see Fig.2) then you know why there is this name of this technology. But really it is not important to try for some serious reply from Jean since he has no personal post address, phone, or his photo on the web site…

Also it can be useful to visit this page http://www.faraday.ru/t-cap.html to know about something **more important than electric ionization flying models (Lifters),** since it is just a reactive ionization way, which is similar to rockets.

Ideas now developing by us are not aimed to increase the power level (from 1 gram to 100 gram propulsive force). It is **a qualitatively new idea**; it is really electrograviticis instead of "electro-reactive Lifter".

So**, what is about real "history of the question" instead of the French version?** The question here is not about a priority, it is nonsense after T.T. Brown's patents. As an example the NASA patents on asymmetrical capacitors can be mentioned since the ideas were opened before the NASA patent and there is nothing new in it. The problem is that people who develop reactive ionization Lifters develop only primitive reactive technology. **It is not essence of T.T. Brown research but it is the distortion of his ideas.**

So, the team in France is working to develop and support ideas of secondary and wrong method. Why? Perhaps they either do not see the real way or have payment for the wrong way **to mask a real work.**

Fig. 1

Fig. 2
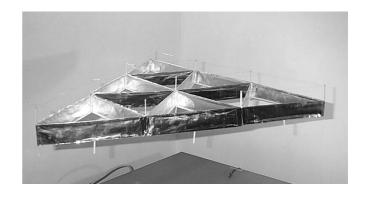
Josh Werrmann (Email: jsh111@yahoo.com): I wanted to ask you a few questions about an article titled "Highly Efficiency Electrolysis" by A.V. Frolov. In this article it is stated that Dmitry A. Latchinov patented a method for electrolysis, where one of the electrodes is insulated completely from the water. It is also stated that another scientist, Igor Goryachev, used a method of pulsed electric fields. I don't know if you know, but inventor Stanley Meyer has a patent that covers both of these processes together, in a way. His patent is U.S. patent number: 4936961. Take a look at this. In the patent it states EXPLICITLY that there is a pulsed electric field, where a condition of NO CURRENT is preferred. This is very similar to the above to Russian scientists, except that the patent states a condition of resonance is necessary. I am wondering do the two scientists that are described require resonance in their devices? Or just plain pulsed electric fields, where one electrode is insulated from water.

Another patent I would like to refer you to is Archie Blue's electrolyser, U.S. patent number: 4124463. This device is similar to A.V. Frolov's idea, to get the oxygen and hydrogen bubbles off the electrodes, except he uses a blower to blow air in the cell, instead of rotating the cell like A.V. Frolov does. His invention also uses the conductivity current to work.

Alexander V. Frolov: As far as I know resonance is not created in this case. The main idea is the removal of gaseous film which appears on the surface of electrodes by rotation or some other methods.

NEWS REVIEW

Giant magnets lead the world to the new source of energy

http:// www.sciteclibrary.ru
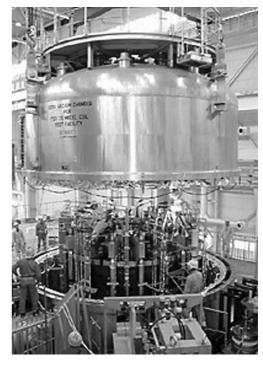
The system of 150-tons magnets which have been developed by scientists of the USA, Japan and Russia opens a new era of safe and unlimited energy. In this system nuclear fusions serve as a source of energy. They accumulate heavy chemical elements not by means of nuclear reactions but by ultrahigh plasma pressure.

After supplementary research is held which aims to reduce manufacturing costs of the giant magnet weighing 925 tons, this magnet will be produced and demonstrated at the opening of the International Thermonuclear Experimental Reactor (ITER). This magnet in its turn will become a part of a bigger system, that is combined into a magnet weighing approximately 10 000 tons. The task of ITER is the demonstration of the process of nuclear fusion, as an energy source. During the process of nuclear fusion the light elements are combined by immense pressure, thus producing heavier elements. During this production process a lot of energy is emitted. The task of giant high-power magnets is to create magnetic fields, which must hold and control plasma, or to charge electrically the gas, in which the fusion is being held.

In Japan the system of 150-tons magnets serves as adjustment system of 925-tons magnets, which will be finally put into operation and heat up the ITER plasma. Two additional giant magnet systems will confine the plasma and will control its form. The model for one of them is presently being examined in Germany; the model of the other is in project.
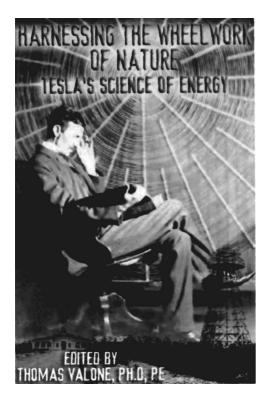
Cylindrical 150-tons magnets have three main parts: external module, built by the Japanese team, internal module, built by the American team and a thin rod in the core which is equipped with process control equipment. Three different rods were separately checked, two of them were built in Japan, another in Russia.

Harnessing the Wheelwork of Nature

(340 pgs. Adventures Unlimited Publishers, 2002)

Thomas Valone
Email: iri@erols.com

It is a new book by **Thomas Valone**, who edited this anthology in time for the **Wardenclyffe Tower Centennial (1903-2003)**. This book presents for the first time, the feasibility argument for Tesla's most ambitious dream, the wireless transmission of power. Pictured on the book's cover near his feet, the 187-foot Wardenclyffe Tower was Tesla's means to deliver natural 8 Hz electricity anywhere in the world, by longitudinal waves.

Unknown to most electrical engineers, Nikola Tesla's dream answers the energy crisis worldwide, saves electrical conversion losses, and provides a real alternative to transmission lines. In Dr. Corum's contributed papers, he explains Tesla's magnifying transmitter, which Tesla compared to a telescope. Corum points out that "the tuned circuit of his magnifying transmitter was the whole earth-ionosphere cavity resonator." This fact helps explain why Tesla stated, "When there is no receiver there is no energy consumption anywhere. When the receiver is put on, it draws power. That is the exact opposite of the Hertz-wave system...radiating all the time whether the energy is received or not." Thus, with Tesla's futuristic transmission of power, source dissipation will only be experienced when a load is engaged in a tuned receiver somewhere on the earth. This fact alone represents **a major leap forward** in electrical transmission efficiency, even one hundred years later.
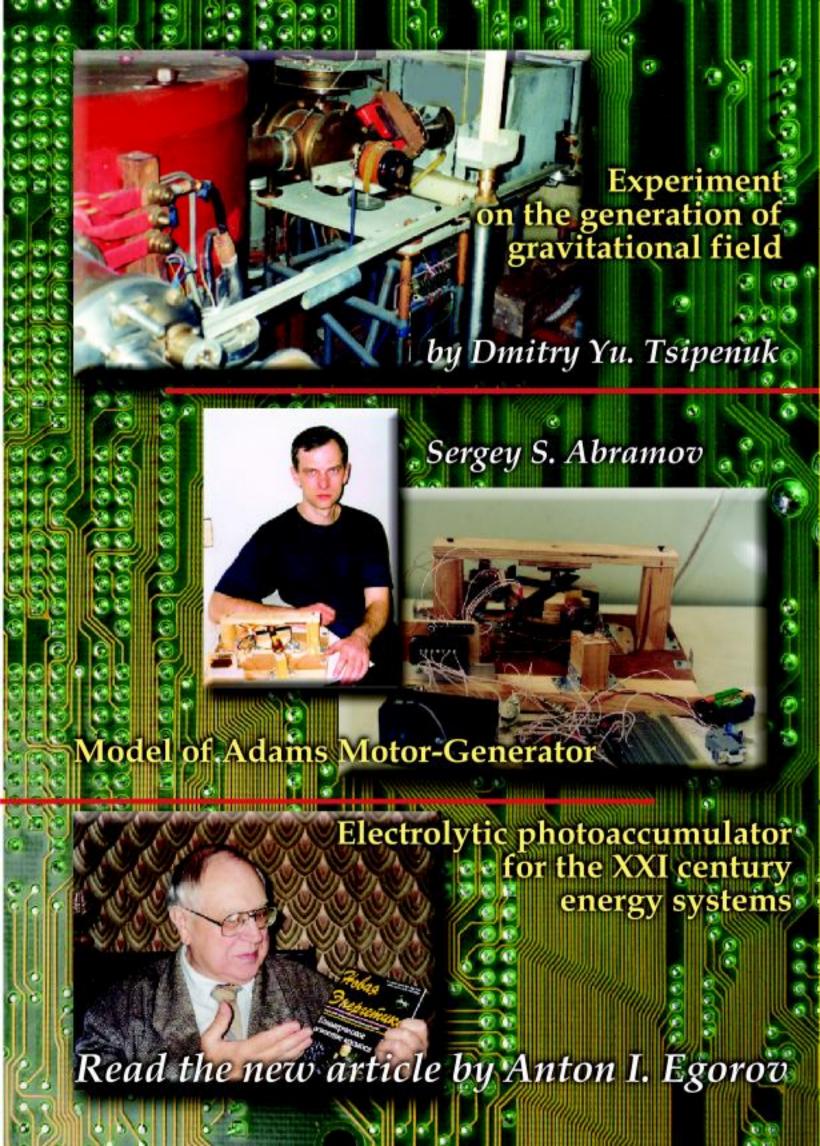
Why wasn't the prototype of Wardenclyffe finished in 1903? Tesla offered this visionary conclusion: "The world was not prepared for it. It was too far ahead of time. But the same laws will prevail in the end and make it a triumphal success... Let the future tell the truth and evaluate each one according to their work and accomplishments. The present is theirs; the future, for which I really worked, is mine."

Up until now, there has been a general malaise regarding the lack of scientific comprehension of Tesla's greatest dream. For example, the Serb National Federation notes, "With the exception of the first biography of Tesla by John J. O'Neill, science editor of the *New York Herald Tribune*, and published in 1944, unfortunately no biographer since has had the necessary scientific/engineering academic credentials to discuss Tesla's work in the various fields." Contributors to **Harnessing the Wheelwork of Nature** are primarily physicists and engineers who are experts in Tesla technology. Their wealth of knowledge demonstrates their mastery of this extraordinarily progressive and technical subject. Finally, the best academic credentials have been brought to bear on the world's greatest electrical futurist.
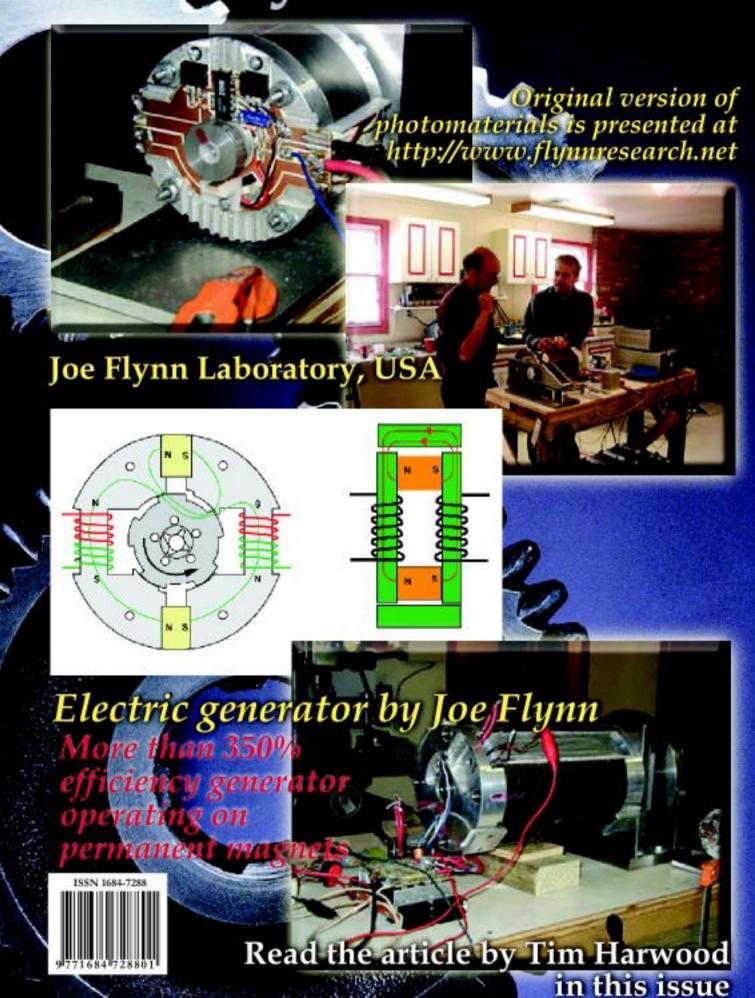
This is a very readable and profusely illustrated reference volume on wireless transmission of power, besides being an excellent biographical gold mine of Tesla history. Nick Cook, editor of *Jane's Defence Weekly* and author of *The Hunt for Zero Point* says, "Tesla is one of the great overlooked geniuses of science and electricity. His full story deserves to be told. Tom Valone sheds important new light on his life and work."
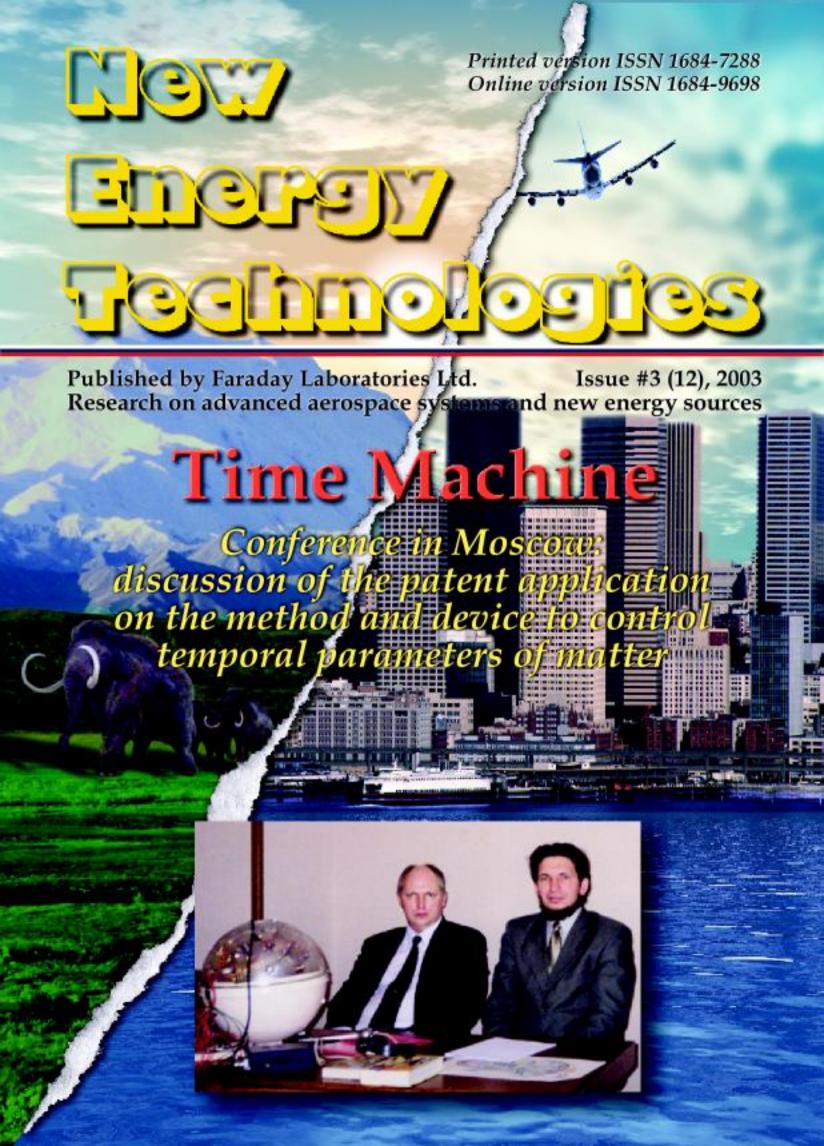
Integrity Research Institute will hold a Tesla Energy Conference & Expo on November 8-9, 2003 to celebrate the Wardenclyffe Tower Centennial (1903-2003) in conjunction with the Tesla Wardenclyffe Project, Inc. (www.teslascience.org).

See www.IntegrityResearchInstitute.org for more details.

Experiment on the generation of gravitational field

by Dmitry Yu. Tsipenuk

Sergey S. Abramov

Model of Adams Motor-Generator

Electrolytic photoaccumulator for the XXI century energy systems

Read the new article by Anton I. Egorov

Flynn Generator

Joe Flynn Laboratory, USA

Electric generator by Joe Flynn

More than 350% efficiency generator operating on permanent magnets

9 771684 728801

Read the article by Tim Harwood
in this issue

New Energy Technologies

Time Machine

*Conference in Moscow:
discussion of the patent application
on the method and device to control
temporal parameters of matter*

Time Machine

Experiments by research group "KOSMOPOISK" Summer, 2001

Device designed by Faraday Lab Ltd, 2002

Alexander V. Frolov
Vadim A. Chernobrov
April 12, 2003, Conference hall
Hotel "Cosmos", Moscow

NEW ENERGY TECHNOLOGIES #12

Editorial: On April 12 of 2003 a scientific conference "The Time Machine" was organized by Faraday Laboratories Ltd in Moscow, Russia. It was devoted to the experiments on control of space-time physical properties. At the conference there were discussed problems of time and gravitation in the context of etherodynamics, experiments and applied aspects of these technologies. Below we publish a review of the main reports presented at the conference.

The First Results of the Works on the Designing of Devices to Control Parameters of Physical Processes (of Time)

Further Plans on Designing of the Time Machine

Vadim A. Chernobrov, Russia

"KOSMOPOISK", Nagatinskaya 19A, 111533, Moscow, Russia
E-mail: chernobrov@kosmopoisk.org

To conduct the experiments on the influence upon physical Time (density of space energy) some special devices were used as a general method of such influence. These devices can create converging waves which can cause the appearance of quasi-monopole in the confined space. *Quasi-monopole* is a part of space which has some parameters of hypothetical unitary monopole or bunch of such particles (in particular, it allows registering one magnetic pole by means of measuring equipment from the outside at some distance from this pole).

The pilot experiments have shown that it is very difficult (if not impossible) to create long-living quasi-monopole by means of permanent magnets or electromagnets operating on direct currents (in this case quasi-monopole represents a space with one outer and one inner magnetic pole). It can be explained by the fact that lines of force of the "inner pole" invariably find a weak spot in the heterogeneous surface of magnets and break out. As a result, at the device along with one "outer" magnetic pole there is a local output of magnetic lines of the "inner" pole.

During the designing of new devices there was a task to create a quasi-monopole situation in the confined space. This situation should be created not uniformly but transiently by pulsation method. Frequency of work of electromagnetic oscillators first of all was selected depending on linear dimensions of the devices. Selection of the frequency was made in such a way that one period of pulsation does not exceed the period of time which is necessary for electromagnetic waves to reach the center and opposite waves of the device.

At the designing of laboratory devices, which generate converging longitudinal waves, several different principles to obtain required parameters were considered in the multi-layer quasi-monopole, which works in high-frequency mode. Several types of the devices were realized at different degrees of development and with different success. It was shown that the simplest devices were that ones which used electromagnetic (solenoid) oscillators connected in series and in parallel. In different experiments between 3 and 5 such surfaces were used. These surfaces were called electromagnetic work surfaces (EWS). All layers of EWS of different diameters were mounted in series in each other (like matreshka). The outer layer was either mounted at force shell or simultaneously represented such a shell by itself.

The size of the maximal EWS was about 0.9 m, the diameter of the minimal (inner) EWS was equal to 115 mm that was enough to place laboratory animals inside the control detection devices. Laboratory animals were used to determine the consequences of the influence of converging spherical electromagnetic waves. Payload, (i.e. that which was directly used for transfer in Time-Space), included the afore-mentioned detection devices and (occasionaly) laboratory animals. The term "payload" was coined by analogy with the term which is used in cosmonautics. Volume of payload section was placed in the center of symmetry of the Time Machine (TM). In all the earliest Machines (except the 7th model) this volume still has not exceeded the volume of a football. The device with an outer diameter of 2.1 m and inner payload section of 1 m has the maximum size. It allows making human-aided experiments.

At different stages of the experiments the calculations were made by all available known modern methods to fix time. All types of electronic, quartz, mechanical and several specially made doubled quartz generators were used (there were compared frequency readings of measuring and etalon heat-insulated generators which were placed at a distance). Certain experiments used lightguiding diodes and some other methods. Before and after the experiment (more rarely during the experiment) readings of measurement clocks were periodically compared with those of an etalon clock and with signals of exact time which were transmitting by radio. Other physical factors causes side effects upon some types of measuring devices, for example, upon quartz-crystal clocks. However, doubling of measurement methods allowed essentially decreasing inaccuracy of measurements.

At some operating modes (which were not always predicted) the change of Time speed was attained (Prof. Nikolay A. Kozyrev called it density of Time t/t_0). This change came to about a fraction of a second per an etalon hour. Let us take usual "etalon" earth time as $t_o=+1$ then it becomes clear that it is speed range of $+0.99 < t/t_o < +1.01$ which is researched in the experiments. Thus being placed inside the device, the inanimate objects and animals were transferred in the Future (with "above-zero" speed) more slowly or faster than those around them. It occurred at all operational modes of the device (deceleration or acceleration).

Difference of Time (gradient of Time speed or curvature of Space-Time field) was observed not only inside the TM, though there is no doubt that a maximal value of changed Time was registered inside the smallest

"matreshka". As was expected, during the experiments Time change was also registered outside the device. However such change which had an opposite sign was smaller than the change inside the device approximately by an order of magnitude. It entirely corresponds to geometric laws, i.e. in proportion to the cube of the distance).

In other words, TM influences not only its inner part and pay load but also the environment. It bears a strong resemblance to jet propulsion but in Time and not in Space. It is a flight which is realized by rejection of Time instead of mass.

Thus it was determined that the processes of deceleration and acceleration of Time distinctly differ in their nature and consequences. In such a way the deceleration was considerably smoother and more stable. During acceleration there were observed sudden changes in readings and this operational mode was characterized by general instability and dependence on any (or many) external factors. Particularly, acceleration instability also consisted in the following: at fixed power the value speed of Time depended on the time of day and situation of the Moon. Possibly it also depended on some other factors including the presence of an operator or other people near the device. Even insignificant external influence, for example, mechanical shaking, caused the change of speed value which sometimes was rather significant.

Inside the laboratory devices there was also registered that **Time can change with some sluggishness**. After the changed Time speed influenced some physical object (for example, soil) then residual effects were observed at it for some period of time. These effects can be eliminated only by the influence of another speed of Time.

Preliminary general conclusions

The Present is the transfer or transformation of the polyvariant easily changeable Future into the univariant unchangeable Past. Thus flights in the Past (at "negative" density-speed t/t_0) and in the Future will happen in different ways. They can be compared with the motion of an ant along the tree: from any point of the tree (i.e. from the Present) there is only one way downwards open to the ant (i.e. in the Past) and many different ways upwards (i.e. in the Future). However among all the ways to the Future undoubtedly there are most probable, low-probable and almost improbable variants for development of the Future. The less probable this variant of the Future the more unstable and energy-intensive the motion to the Future will be. According to

the "law of the crown of tree", return to the Present is possible only if when being in the Past the traveler does not interfere in the course of events and does not change the course of the past History. Otherwise the chronotraveler will return to the parallel Present from the Past by another branch of History. Penetration to the Future from the Present is hampered by the choice of the branch for transference. However return from any variant of the Future into the Present is possible at any scenario if there are no fusions of different variants of History...

In other words, we have a circumstantial evidence of the assumption that Time has more than one dimension. Thus there is an affirmation of the theoretical inferences

of R. Bartini who believed that Time has 3 dimensions. Hence we can consider our terrestrial globe as 6-dimensional where the dimensions are: length; width; height; age or date of Time; variant of History or blur of Time; density or speed of Time. Thus the notion of "Arrows of Time" is completely absent in the fourth dimension (date of Time) but it is a special case of the notion of the sixth dimension i.e. speed of Time. At the same time the notion of speed of Time also relates to the physical notions of gravitation and energy. Thus the notion of "Einstein-Rosen bridge", which was introduced in 1916, or notion of "worm course", which was introduced by John Willer in the end of the fifties, are connected with transference in the 5th and 6th dimensions.

Method and Device to Control Temporal Parameters of Physical Processes by Means of Changing of Energy Density of Space

Alexander V. Frolov, Russia

General Director, Faraday Lab Ltd
Tel./fax: 7-812-380-3844
Email: office@faraday.ru

This invention belongs to the methods and devices to provide control on rate of physical processes (that includes the process of the existence of matter in space-time) by means of increasing or decreasing of energy density of space (i.e. energy density of physical vacuum or density of the aether).

Let us consider the history of the invention:

Earlier there were proposed some methods and devices to influence the rate of physical and chemical reactions,

biological processes or period of oscillation of the system. In the works by N.A. Kozyrev [1] there is a description of the experiments on the influence of some process (for example, process of evaporation or crystallization of matter) upon the period of another process, which serves as a detector and can be compared with reference oscillation process. In one case, the rate of oscillations of the detector decreases in the surrounding area near the process of matter evaporation. In another case, the rate of detector oscillations increases in the surrounding area near the process of matter crystallization. If we use a term of "entropy" then it is possible to say that the processes which are accompanied with entropy increasing (for example, conversion of matter from solid state into liquid one) influence on the matter (surrounding processes) in such a way that entropy of systems decreases. In another case, for example, near the process of crystallization, entropy of systems increases in the surrounding area near this process. Kozyrev used the term "wave of density of time" and he made a conclusion that in addition to "directivity" of time (time course) there are active properties of time, for example, "density of time".

To develop this approach for applied purposes it is necessary to use in-depth analysis of the physical sense

the "law of the crown of tree", return to the Present is possible only if when being in the Past the traveler does not interfere in the course of events and does not change the course of the past History. Otherwise the chronotraveler will return to the parallel Present from the Past by another branch of History. Penetration to the Future from the Present is hampered by the choice of the branch for transference. However return from any variant of the Future into the Present is possible at any scenario if there are no fusions of different variants of History…

In other words, we have a circumstantial evidence of the assumption that Time has more than one dimension. Thus there is an affirmation of the theoretical inferences

of R. Bartini who believed that Time has 3 dimensions. Hence we can consider our terrestrial globe as 6-dimensional where the dimensions are: length; width; height; age or date of Time; variant of History or blur of Time; density or speed of Time. Thus the notion of "Arrows of Time" is completely absent in the fourth dimension (date of Time) but it is a special case of the notion of the sixth dimension i.e. speed of Time. At the same time the notion of speed of Time also relates to the physical notions of gravitation and energy. Thus the notion of "Einstein-Rosen bridge", which was introduced in 1916, or notion of "worm course", which was introduced by John Willer in the end of the fifties, are connected with transference in the 5th and 6th dimensions.

Method and Device to Control Temporal Parameters of Physical Processes by Means of Changing of Energy Density of Space

Alexander V. Frolov, Russia

General Director, Faraday Lab Ltd
Tel./fax: 7-812-380-3844
Email: office@faraday.ru

This invention belongs to the methods and devices to provide control on rate of physical processes (that includes the process of the existence of matter in space-time) by means of increasing or decreasing of energy density of space (i.e. energy density of physical vacuum or density of the aether).

Let us consider the history of the invention:

Earlier there were proposed some methods and devices to influence the rate of physical and chemical reactions,

biological processes or period of oscillation of the system. In the works by N.A. Kozyrev [1] there is a description of the experiments on the influence of some process (for example, process of evaporation or crystallization of matter) upon the period of another process, which serves as a detector and can be compared with reference oscillation process. In one case, the rate of oscillations of the detector decreases in the surrounding area near the process of matter evaporation. In another case, the rate of detector oscillations increases in the surrounding area near the process of matter crystallization. If we use a term of "entropy" then it is possible to say that the processes which are accompanied with entropy increasing (for example, conversion of matter from solid state into liquid one) influence on the matter (surrounding processes) in such a way that entropy of systems decreases. In another case, for example, near the process of crystallization, entropy of systems increases in the surrounding area near this process. Kozyrev used the term "wave of density of time" and he made a conclusion that in addition to "directivity" of time (time course) there are active properties of time, for example, "density of time".

To develop this approach for applied purposes it is necessary to use in-depth analysis of the physical sense

of the "time density" notion. Connection of notions about "time directivity" and "entropy of the system" was demonstrated in the work "Introduction into thermodynamic of irreversible processes", 1964 by Ilya Prigozhin [2]. In the work "Quantum fluctuations of vacuum in curved space and theory of gravitation" by A.D. Sakharov [3] the conception of vacuum structure was suggested. In the USA the work "Can the vacuum be engineered for space flight applications?" by H.E. Puthoff [4] is well-known. The author considered the applied aspects for study of vacuum structure and described the method and device to obtain propulsive force by means of changes in vacuum properties.

A substantive conception of time and methods for creation of waves of energy density were also considered by Prof. K.P. Butusov in the work "Time is a physical substance", 1991 [5]. In the book "What is The Time?" by Yu. G. Belostotsky [6] the connection between the notions of time and aether was demonstrated. This connection was considered from the point of view of astrophysics there.

We can also say that the modern conception of aether is successfully developed by V.A. Atsukovsky in his works [7].

In my articles, for example, "Physical principles of the Time Machine" [8], it was demonstrated that to develop experimental works on the topic it is useful to clarify the terminology and to consider **"waves of time density" as longitudinal waves of energy density in space.** In this case the notion of "time density" has a physical sense of energy density (aether density).

This approach can be realized practically by means of classical electro-technical and radio engineering methods and it is a development of aether-dynamical conception on the nature of electricity and magnetism by M. Faraday, "Experimental researches on electricity", volume 3, [9].

Let us consider a usual bipolar magnet from the point of view of aether-dynamics. Then it is possible to say that it is inflow and outflow of aether, i.e. it is a balanced energy system which does not change energy density in space. In this case it is evident that creation of magnetic monopole or modeling of quazi-monopole by means of electro-dynamical methods is a technical basis to create some local change of energy density in space.

Electric processes could also be used alongside with the magnetic phenomena. For example, in another book "Symmetrization of Maxwell-Lorenz equation" by Prof. Butusov [10] the creation of longitudinal wave was also

considered. It was demonstrated that an electrically charged sphere can radiate longitudinal wave when the sphere radius is changing, i.e. when its surface is changing while the value of electric charge is constant.

One more well-known method is described in the book "Experimental gravitonics" by Polyakov [11]. There is a consideration of the generation of gravitational waves at the high-frequency magnetization and demagnetization of ferromagnetic material, i.e. at the powerful volume magnetostriction. Since at this phenomenon there are changes of matter density (i.e. changes of energy density in space, which is occupied by matter), then volume magnetostriction is a special case of changes of energy density.

Earlier Vadim A. Chernobrov had described a method and device to control temporal characteristics of physical and chemical processes by means of creation of the magnetic monopole (quasi-monopole). In this magnetic mono-pole there is a convergent wave, which is created by several sources situated in the spherical frame. According to this method in the multilayer spherical structure where every layer (the so called "electromagnetic work surface") is an assembly of electromagnets, by means of series connection of the layers the wave is created, which converges to the center of the device. The device has the same outside magnetic poles of the electromagnets (and the same inner poles) and thus a model of macroscopic magnetic monopole is created.

We assume that at in-phase operation of all sources of waves, interference of longitudinal waves provides some change of value of energy density of space in the focus of the system.
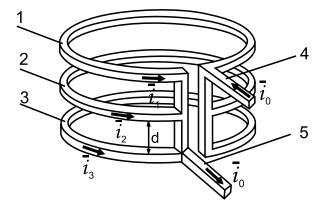
Experimental facts prove that detectors installed in the center of the device (for example, mechanical or electromagnetic oscillators) show change of period in their own oscillations. We have protected them by shielding them from heat radiation as well as from other kinds of electromagnetic influence. Thus it is possible to assert that the detectors decelerate or accelerate their oscillation period depending on the energy density, which is generated in the center of the device.

However for the experiments made by means of such a device, accurate adjustments of all wave sources are required to provide their in-phase operation. At the same time, operational stability of the system depends on the operational stability of each of the wave sources. Increase of the impulse frequency causes increase of
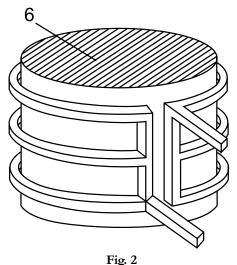
the effect; however, it is limited by the parameters of electromagnets and generator of impulses. Besides, to increase the effect it is necessary to use more powerful energy sources since the current in the windings of electromagnets determines the value of the magnetic field of the created quasi-monopole.

Since the efficiency of such systems directly depends on the frequency and the value of changes of energy density in space, then in the next version of realization of this technology we suggest using of plasma shells instead of electromagnetic working surfaces. This will allow significant improvment in the specific parameters of the device.

Thus let us consider general engineering principles of operation and outline the ways to develop this method. Fig. 1 represents a three-layered electromagnetic emitter. This electromagnetic emitter is designed according to the invention in which the directed radiation of wave of energy density is created along the axis of the device.

Fig. 1
Three-layered electromagnet

Fig. 2
Three-layered electromagnet with ferrite core

The device is designed according to the idea by Vadim A. Chernobrov for creation of the directed wave of energy density by means of phase shift in propagation of impulse front in three current branches, namely i_1, i_2, i_3. These branches are displaced along the electromagnet axis at some distance d.

The device works in the following way. When the pulsed generator is activated, front of current pulse i_0 appears at the output 4. Impulse front at branch 1 advances impulse front at branch 2 that is caused by spatial shift of current branches 1, 2, 3 relatively to each other along the electromagnet axis at the distance d. Impulse front at branch 2 in its turn advances impulse front at branch 3 for a certain time T. The second output of the electromagnet 5 is placed in such a way that impulse front at branch 1 will phase lag behind the impulse front at branch 2 (which in its turn will phase lag behind the impulse front at branch 3) for the same period of time T. Therefore at branch 5 the united impulse front is generated again.

Time T can be calculated in the following way:

$$T = d/c \text{ (seconds)} \qquad (1)$$

where c is a constant of propagation of impulse front. This constant is known as velocity of light.

At each impulse the T (i.e. the value of relative lag of impulse front) is a constant value. Thus high-frequency consequent excitation of layers of the electromagnet appears at each impulse. The frequency of the excitation is calculated in the following way:
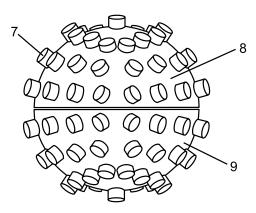
$$f = 1/T \qquad (2)$$

where T is relative lag of impulse front in seconds.

There is an example of frequency calculation: for the shift distance d=7 mm we can calculate a lag $T = (7/2.997924) \times 10^{-11} = 2.335 \times 10^{-11}$ (seconds) and frequency f=1/T approximately comes to 4.28×10^{10} (Hertz).

Thus this design of three-layered electromagnetic emitter allows creating the waves of super-high-frequency band (for example of millimeter range) without the use of a semiconductor or other radio components.

It is very expedient to use the electromagnets designed with magnetostrictive material cores, that will significantly increase energy density of the longitudinal

wave, which is generated by the multilayer electromagnet. In Fig. 2 there is an emitter with the core. In the case of high-frequency ferromagnetic magnetostrictive materials 6 the efficiency of emitter operation significantly increases.

Fig. 3
Spherical design

Fig. 3 represents the spherical distribution of emitters 7 at the upper 8 and lower 9 hemisphere of the frame which could be opened in order to place detectors and different objects inside. It can also allow to establish in what way the changes of density of space energy influence the properties of different materials, velocity of physical and biological processes as well as chemical reactions. The installation of detectors 10 inside the device is shown on Fig. 4.
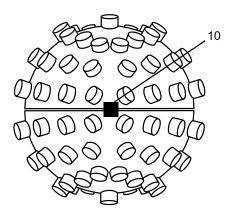
Fig. 4
Detectors inside the system

Another version of design is represented in Fig. 5, where the suggested method is realized by means of a spherical electric capacitor with three coats 11, 12, 13. Each capacitor coat is connected to the outlet of three-phase pulsed generator 14.
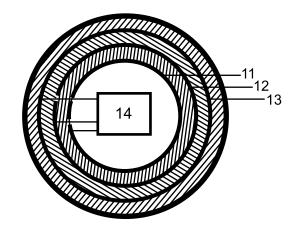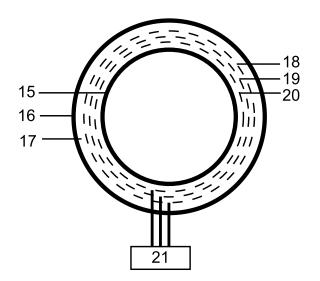
Fig. 5
Three-layered spherical capacitor

In this case the wave of energy density is created without electromagnetic emitters and this principle is not related to the modelling of magnetic quasi-monopole. The device operates due to the control unit, which provides the high-frequency changes of electric potential at each coat in such a way that the mode of high-frequency converging or diverging wave of energy density is created. In fact it is a standard three-phase generator but it produces not the rotation of the rotor of some electromotor but **"compression" or "decompression" of aether.** Aether is "pumped" in the center of the device or "pumped out" of the center.

In this case there is no need to tune separate sources of waves to make the device work in in-phased mode. It ensures reliability of the device operation if to be compared to the quasi-monopole. Besides, much less energy is necessary for the processes of charging and discharging of multi-layer spherical electric capacitor than for creation of magnetic field by means of conductivity currents.

Since the efficiency of such systems directly depends on the frequency and value of changes of energy density in space, we suggest the use of plasma shells instead of electromagnetic work surfaces for the next version of the device. It will allow significantly improvment in the specific parameters of the device. For that it is enough to place the electrodes of the multi-layers capacitor in a low-pressure gas area and these electrodes should be made as gauze electrodes. At that the wave is created in plasma, which is excited layerwise by several gauze electrodes placed in a spherical space between the inner and outer spherical bodies of the device. Therefore this version of design of the device can be considered as **the manipulation of the plasma method.**

Fig. 6 is a plan of one more design version. It is made as an inner frame 15 and outer frame 16, the space between them is filled with some gas 17. Three electrodes 18, 19 and 20 are connected to the three-phase pulsed generator 21. **Consequent excitation of plasma layers by electrodes 18, 19 and 20 creates the wave of energy density.** Propagation of this wave can be directed both to center of the device and from the center of the device.

Fig. 6
Wave in plasma
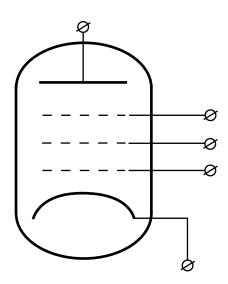
Fig. 7
Schematic electric circuit

In Fig. 7 there is a schematic electric diagram of the design.

To conclude. The work on time control has just started. We have clearly determined the main physical principles of operation of such devices, which can change the aether density in some given volume of space and thus influence temporal parameters of any physical process. The small experimental results today allow us to make real positive condusion on availability of this method and on the possibility of its practical application in applied aspects. The first aspect is antigravitation propulsion technology and we are developing the methods to detect mass (weight) changes in the time control experiments to prove this applied possibility. Another area is medical applications of the changes in the aether density.

Russian Federation patent claim #2003110067 was filled April 9, 2003. At present time we are interested in marketing for this technology as well as in search of additional investment and partners.

References

1. N.A. Kozyrev, Selected works, Leningrad State University, 1991
2. I. Prigozhin, Introduction in thermodynamics of irreversible processes. M., 1964
3. A.D. Sakharov, Quantum fluctuations of vacuum in curved space and theory of gravitation, Reports of USSR Academy of Sciences, vol. 12, 1968, p. 1040
4. "Can the vacuum be engineered for space flight applications & Overview of theory and experiments", Dr. H.E. Puthoff, Infinity Energy, July-November, 1997
5. K.P. Butusov, Time as physical substance. Collection of articles "Problems of space and time in modern natural science", Issue 14, L. 1990, pp. 301-311
6. Yu.G. Belostotsky "What is The Time?" Saint-Petersburg, 1991
7. V.A. Atsukovsky "General etherodynamics", M., 1990
8. A.V. Frolov, Physical Principles of The Time Machine, New Energy Technologies #3(6), pp. 8-10, Saint-Petersburg, 2002
9. M. Faraday, Experimental researches on electricity, vol. 3, M. 1959
10. K.P. Butusov, Symmetrization of Maxwell-Lorenz equation. Problems of Space and Time in modern natural sciences, vol. 15, L. 1991
11. S.M. Polyakov, O.M. Polyakov "Introduction in experimental gravitonics", pp. 58-59, M. 1991
12. V.A. Chernobrov "Mysteries of Time", M. 1999

Aetherodynamics as a New Field of Physics
Theory and Experiments

Vladimir A. Atsukovsky, Russia
Email: atsuk@dart.ru

A crisis exists these days both in Natural science on the whole, and, in its basis, i.e. physics. This situation is caused by fundamental errors in the methodology of its theory. The postulate method and predominance of mathematics above physical sense can be also considered as the reasons for this. Crisis situation has also taken place in the past and the way out was always to use a deeper level of matter organization than the accepted one.

A large amount of material on elementary particles of matter is collected in physics. It was discovered that all these particles can be transformed in each other. Besides that, there was discovered the ability of vacuum to create such particles at strong electromagnetic fields. In this connection it becomes clear that all these particles and vacuum have a common building material, i.e. a physical medium which fills all the world space. This medium was renamed **aether** and the element of the medium was renamed **amer**.

The worked out methodology of aetherodynamics allowed determining that aether is a usual viscous coercible gas for which all laws of usual dynamics of gases are valid. It has allowed to determine its characteristics for near-Earth space and then to describe the structures of primary stable elementary particles (i.e. proton, neutron, electron, photon, atomic nuclei, atoms and some molecules) as well as physical essence of general fundamental interactions (i.e. strong and weak nuclear interactions, electromagnetic and gravitational interactions) and some physical phenomena.

Also developed was the model of aether circulation in the Universe within the limits of perpetually existent matter, usual Euclidean space, and evenly flowing time. Formation and decay of matter, formation and decay of celestial bodies and galaxies as well as functional classification of galaxies are also included there.

To confirm some theses the author and his research team conducted several experiments mainly on electromagnetism that gave positive results. The research was conducted on testing of the presence of aether wind. These research works have confirmed the results obtained by D. Miller in 1925.

Report by Vladimir A. Atsukovsky

Electromagnetic Gravitational Interaction

Vadim Y. Kosyev, Russia

http://uft.h1.ru; http://uic.nnov.ru/~kovy2
Email: uft@inbox.ru

In the artide some mechanisms of electromagnetic gravitational interaction will be considered in the view of the Unified Theory of Field, Space and Time. See the complete description of The Unified Theory of Field, Space and Time at http://uic.nnov.ru/~kovy2; http://uft.h1.ru or in the book [1] which has the same title.

First of all, let us consider the structure of Space-Time where the radiation propagates. In our World gravitation is the unique substance which exists everywhere and gets over any obstacles. There are no known methods of insulation of gravitational field in modern science. It is impossible to imagine space and gravitation separately. Gravitation exists everywhere where there is some space. The gravitational field created by all masses of our metagalaxy is the aether in which cosmic objects moves and electromagnetic oscillations are propagated. The space surrounds us since the whole matter carries gravitational charge of only one sign. From astronomical research of cosmic space it follows that radius of metagalaxy is equal to the critical (gravitational radius) and hence gravitational potential is equal to $c^2 \sim 10^{17}$ $[m^2/c^2]$ in each point of space.

In our space the sum potential of the electric field is equal to zero. All bodies and space-time as a whole are electrically neutral. This assertion follows from two unique properties of gravitational space-time:

1. Values of electric charges of different signs of elementary particles are exactly equal.
2. There is an equal number of elementary particles which carry electric charges of different signs.

If electric potential is equal to zero in the given point of space then energy of alternating magnetic field passes entirely to the electric field and radiation gains the parameters of electromagnetic oscillations. However electric potential of positive and negative signs can prove its properties at the simultaneous charging of different local spatial regions. In the electric field the character of radiation differs from that one which is observed in ideal gravitational space-time (without electric potential).

In the presence of electric potential some part of magnetic energy is spent to create gravitational alternating field. Radiant energy is absorbed. Electrically charged spatial regions are perceived by us as filled with a strong absorbing substance. At the same time if the potential of the electric field can be compared to the potential of the gravitational field then spreading of radiation becomes impossible.

Change of both electric and gravitational field results in the creation of a magnetic field in the region of space-time which has a dual electrogravitational nature. Change in the magnetic field results in the creation of both electric and gravitational fields. The amplitude of electromagnetic and magnetogravitational constituents of the unified electromagnetic gravitational oscillations depends on field potential of opposite nature. The electromagnetic constituent is determined by gravitational potential and the magnetogravitational one is determined by electric potential. Transference of gravitational masses of matter in electrogravitational field-aether causes the creation of the proper magnetic field. Coming from the direction of magnetic field some force influences upon the moving electrically neutral masses. This force is similar to Laurence force.

Electromagnetic gravitational converter designed according to the Searl Effect (Fig. 1) visually demonstrates the mechanisms of electromagnetic gravitational interaction. A detailed description of the experiment is presented in the article [2] by Vladimir Roshschin and Sergey Godin (see http://www.n-t.org/tp/ts/dms.htm).

The device consists of a cylindrical stator of about 1 meter in diameter which is surrounded by 24 cylindrical rollers. Stator and rollers are made of magnetic material and they are magnetically linked (there is no contact between them). Vector of the magnetic field of the stator and rollers is vertically oriented along the axis of the cylinder but it has opposite direction. Rollers are mounted on the movable separator which circles round the stator. Each roller rotates on its axis in the same direction. The weight of the device is 350 kg. During rest, the device is electrically neutral and has proper gravitational charge, inertial mass, magnetostatic field of the stator and rollers.

On rotating of the magnetic system the following effects were observed:

· Depending on the frequency (up to 35%) the weight of the device was decreased.
· At a frequency of 550 rpm there is a spontaneous acceleration of the system and turns of the rotor abruptly increase (in quadratic dependence). To stabilize the mode it had to take off the excess energy to active load (up to 7 kWtt) by means of electromagnetic transducers.
· Magnetic field was distributed in a room as concentric surfaces of 5-8 cm thickness and 50-60 cm period. Depending on speed of rotation of the magnetic system there was a fixed temperature decrease from 0 to 8° within the regions of space which were curved by magnetic field.
· The glowing (corona discharge) appeared around the working converter.

Appearance of all mentioned effects is caused by the simultaneous presence of electric, magnetic and gravitational fields in the area of the converter.
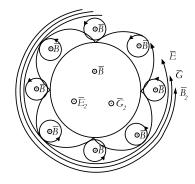
Fig. 1
Electromagnetic gravitational converter

Because of the Searl Effect a very complicated configuration of electric, magnetic and gravitational fields appears in the device. Rollers having their own field B rotate around the stator which has its field B. Cycloidal motion of numerous magnets which are built in the rollers causes change in the magnetic flux. EMF E appears in the area of rotation of the rollers. EMF is directed along the perimeter around the device. The electric field creates stationary waves which are registered around the device as concentric electromagnetic gravitational walls. Magnetic rollers should be made non-conducting in such a way as to allow electric field penetrating inside. In the presence of the electric potential change of the magnetic flux causes appearance of gravitational field G. This field is directed along the perimeter around the device. In the presence of electric potential the Lorenz force influences the gravitational masses of the rollers. These gravitational masses move in the external magnetic field of the stator. The Lorenz force is directed transversely to the velocity along the cycloid and in the direction of the field B. The value of the Lorenz force depends on the electrical potential, magnetic intensity, mass of the rollers and their traverse speed. The electric potential in its turn depends on speed of rotation of rotor of the magnetic system. As a result the Lorenz force depends on speed according to square law. Rotating gravitational masses of the rollers generate magnetic field B_2. Field B_2 generates derived fields E_2 and G_2 etc.

Spontaneous acceleration of the system does not depend on the direction of rotation. Directions of fields and forces change at change of the direction of rotation that corresponds to acceleration in the opposite direction. When the direction of rotation is changed the weight of the device changes. When rotation is in one direction the field G_2 is directed upwards (decrease of weight), when rotation is in another direction, it is directed downwards (increase of weight). In the presence of electrical potential many other interesting but still unstudied phenomena are observed (for example, curve of space, change of speed of time-flow, changes of ambient temperature…). Magnetogravitational converter transforms gravitational energy of space-time into energy of electric field which in its turn is transformed into mechanical energy of the rotating magnetic system and electric energy of the load. Energy resources of the future are not coal and gas reserves or nuclear power. They are in the inexhaustible energy of gravitational aether of our space-time.

Reference

1. V.Ya. Kosyev. Unified Theory of Field, Space and Time. Nizniy Novgorod, "Arabesk", 2000.
2. New Energy Technologies #1, 2003, p.35.

Medium For Existing of Matter in Nature

Anatoly V. Rykov, Russia
Email: rykov@uipe-ras.scgis.ru

By medium for existing of matter in Nature we understand physical vacuum which is a category determining all spheres of matter "life" (from particles of microworld to gravitational interactions in the Universe). Matter can not exist without this medium. Thus a question emerges, viz: how physical science can be developed without taking this fundamental aspect into consideration?

According to the Einstein postulate, in a void light always propagates with limited speed, which does not depend on the motion mode of a radiating body. It is a statement of deep physical sense which lies in the fact that only some physical medium can possess such a property. Indeed, if velocity of light, which was radiated by a body, further does not depend on speed of this body then it is possible only in a certain medium. For example, in air sound propagates with a certain speed which does not depend on the speed of the source and is determined only by density and volume elasticity of air. Thus, according to the Einstein postulate, there is a physical medium instead of void and velocity of light depends on the parameters of this medium (as is well known, velocity of light is equal to the square root from the product of inverse values of electrical and magnetic conductivity of vacuum).

The author of this article made an attempt to research this physical medium [1]. The author used a well-known experimental fact that at interaction of a photon with a charged real particle this photon transforms to electron-positron pair. Besides, it was taken into consideration that photon is an electromagnetic phenomenon. The research allows the following conclusion: the medium named in physics as vacuum (before the XX century it was called aether) is created by electric dipoles from (+) and (-) elementary charges. These dipoles are surrounded by magnetic (mass) continuum. There were determined dipole intervals, elasticity of decompression and ultimate strength of this interval. What does this model of medium mean?

1. This model is a physical validating for the "birth" of electron-positron pair at energy which is necessary to break dipole and create the "clot" of mass of these two particles. A certain model for the "birth" of mass must exist. It is not clear as yet but can be represented as a vortex of magnetic continuum inside the charge shell of electron and positron.

2. Let us suggest that values of (+) and (-) charges differ at 7.848981×10^{41} Coulomb, then this difference is sufficient for the medium to be a source of gravitation and inertia. According to Newton's law of gravity, a weak electric charge of medium (all material bodies exist in this medium) causes all bodies to attract one another (under Coulomb's law). On the other hand, weak medium charge of a like sign creates repulsive forces which manifest themselves in the form of the expanding Universe. Thus it becomes clear the amazing uniformity of gravity and forces of negative pressure for the Universe. The mentioned difference of values of (+) and (-) charges of medium dipoles is not used as arbitrary parameter but it logically follows from its electrical structure [2].

3. Hypothesis of nature of gravitation is confirmed by calculations of the deflection angle of electric waves by the Sun. Calculated angle differs from the experimental value only in the fifth sign, which depends on the accuracy of several physical values used in calculation formula. There is practically an absolute coincidence with Einstein's theory. The difference is that it is a concept of space and time (i.e. geometry) which prevails in the general theory of relativity while in the nature of gravitation physical basing is used. Velocity of light is unstable and determined by medium state which depends on electric, magnetic and gravitational potentials.

4. The existence of "black holes" relates to medium structure and nature of gravitation. At the edge of "black holes" the ultimate acceleration from gravity is realized. It causes breakdown of connections in electric dipoles of medium, creation of matter and antimatter (the so called "evaporation" of black holes which was theoretically predicted by E. Hoking, England). However at the border of a black hole the velocity of light is equal to zero since its propagation

medium disappears. According to Einstein's theory it is such a deceleration of time that electromagnetic oscillations gain zero frequency.

5. Naturally the medium is a carrier of all types of electromagnetic radiation, beginning at stationary electric voltage and ending with super-high-frequency "photons", which can be determined not as electromagnetic but as magnetoelectric phenomenon. In the latter case magnetic continuum of medium has a crucial importance since it determines very small degrees of magnetoelectric disturbance. These degrees are thousands of times less than those of a hydrogen atom. It is reasonable that such small degrees creates illusion that a photon possesses properties of particles.

6. Medium structure directly leads to the notions of Quantum Mechanics, beginning at quantification of electronic "orbits" in atoms. This medium determines the "allowed" spots for electrons to be placed around a nucleus. Thus medium is a necessary place for the existence of all matter or matter of the Universe. The so called Compton length of electron wave is one of the validations of this statement. It is directly calculated to a high accuracy according to electric structure of vacuum.

7. Thus Plank's constant is not a mysterious "quantum of action", on the contrary it is entirely determined by medium parameters. Thereby the crisis (which conventional physics is accused of) can be logically overcame by the introduction of medium which is capable to take radiation in electromagnetic region only by quanta. Plank's constant is always presented at all quantum approaches. It is additional evidence in favor of the necessity to take into account the medium as natural place for existence of all the matter in Nature.

8. It is still a question what processes take place in the centers of galaxies. The observations show that the centers of galaxies create star matter. They often flow out the centers and settle themselves at approximately the same plane. It is an evidence of the fact that centers of galaxies quickly rotate and the favorable conditions for stars to reject matter are created. Similarly planetary systems are created around the rotating stars. It is thought that centers of galaxies are gigantic black holes. In the context of the concept of medium for matter existence it can be set up a hypothesis that being at some special state the medium creates stellar systems, i.e. galaxies.

9. Astrophysicists more and more trend to accept the existence of unknown "dark" matter, which occupies approximately 70% of all matter. It is said that due to antigravitation property this dark matter is responsible for the expansion of the Universe. Hypothesis on the nature of gravitation gives the affirmative replies to such suggestions as: expansion of the Universe is caused by weak electric charge of the medium and distributed mass of magnetic continuum is the very dark matter.

10. All elementary particles (electrons, positrons, mesons, protons, neutrons etc.) are in the medium and interact with it. In the case of electrons and positrons this interaction causes the great extension of dipoles of medium which directly adjoins to borders of particles. This extension helps photons to break the particles. In case of protons, there is such a breakdown of the medium at their borders that protons turn to be dressed in "coats" of virtual electrons and positrons. And medium is shown to be in entire state only when reaching the first Bohr orbit. This interaction of the medium and particles leads to the factors which determine the life time of some of them. Thus life time of a neutron is up to 30 minutes depending on the state which it has while leaving the nucleus. For mesons "the tearing" Coulomb forces, which exist between the medium and particles, are very powerful that makes the life time of mesons very short. However if the particles moves with a high speed relatively to the medium, then these forces noticeably decrease and if the speeds of motion is close to velocity of light then these forces become very small. The life time of such particles noticeably increases. In Einstein's theory it is said about "deceleration" of time. Finally the life time of particles is determined by the inner steadiness and outer influence of the medium. Protons have fantastic binding energy and they cause such great external destructive effect that their life time becomes immense.

11. When particles move in medium with high speeds, there is a concentration of magnetic continuum which is recognized as increase of mass of particles at increase of their speed. Evidently, we can continue the list of physical phenomena which relate to the presence of medium for existing of matter in Nature. However it seems to be enough to admit that medium (physical vacuum, aether) is of a great importance for the very existence of the Universe and for the processes which take place there. "Mechanism" of gravitation and inertia has a special importance since

it is the only thing which can make clear the real mechanism of Nature. It is possible that the methodology, which is accepted in physics, is necessary for more accurate description of phenomena but it is not enough for understanding of the nature of "space" and matter. Research of the medium for existing of matter will be able to meet the conditions sufficiency.

The understanding of vacuum structure, which is created by electric lattice from charge dipoles, surrounded with magnetic continuum, gives an opportunity to control the forces of gravitation and inertia. The medium of vacuum can be influenced by:

1. The radiation which has frequencies coming to the frequency from point #11 of the list of parameters.
2. Electric voltages which exist in vacuum (it is not very promising because of real matter breakdown).
3. Magnetic intensities (magnetic flux density). It is the most promising influence method (1-10 Tesla is enough to compensate terrestrial gravity).
4. Transformations of low accelerations to high accelerations of impact type.

Potential electric and magnetic energy is immense in vacuum medium. Reasoning from energy of one dipole, which is equal to 1.6×10^{-13} Joule, we will derive the value of electric energy equal to about 10^{+31} Joule per one cubic meter of the medium that is equivalent to mass annihilation of 10^{+15} kg!

References

1. Rykov A.V. Foundations of aether theory// RAS, M., 2000, p. 54
2. Rykov A.V. Hypothesis on the nature of gravitation// MSU, M., 2001, pp. 59-63

Spartak M. Polyakov

(09 January, 1931 – 04 June, 2003)
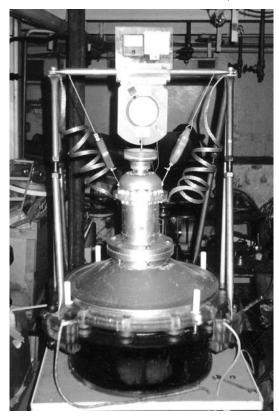
Spartak M. Polyakov, a legendary physicist-experimentalist, known for his research in the field of gravitation, has died. Polyakov was the author of more than 50 research works, among them "Introduction into experimental gravitonics». Polyakov was the creator of the new model of photon. He also conducted numerous research in the field of electrodynamics, gravitational phenomena and superlight connection.

Spartak M. Polyakov graduated from Kishinev State University with degree in "General Physics". For many years he worked at the top secret military engineering department "Istok" (Russia).

Plyakov's alternative physical theory allows explaining such phenomena as magnetostriction and optical magnetization. The basic postulate of this theory states that the speed of propagation of gravitational waves is dozens of times faster than velocity of light regarded by the traditional science as the limit. In his experiments Polyakov demonstrated such methods of generation of gravitational waves as precession of gyroscope and remagnetization of ferromagnetic.

While working for "Istok", Polyakov designed on his own a device which is possibly the first gravitational motor in history. Total specific thrust produced by rotation of gravitating mass comes to 2.5 kg/kWt. This index is close to that produced by the engines of modern helicopters, which is equal to 8 kg/kWt. Practical application and further development of Polyakov's ideas can provide humanity with new kinds of communication, gravitational engines and free energy devices.

Adams Motor

Principle of Operation and Experimental Data

Sergey S. Abramov, Russia

Email: a_serge@cards.lanck.net

Adams' motor-generator represents the type of devices which use, as their creators claim, so-called "free energy". The term "Zero point energy" is also used in some sources [1, 2]. Due to quanta-mechanical fluctuations, this energy exists even at zero temperature. Adams' motor-generator belongs to the group of Switch reluctance motors [3]. Robert Adams, **former Chairman of the Institute of Electrical Electronics Engineers, USA (New Zealand section)**, designed this machine in the late sixties of 20th century. Similarly to all the devices utilizing free energy (referred to in come sources as "overunity devices"), Adams' device remains practically unknown to the general public. **The device is rather simple to assembled even at home, which I experimentally proved. However, it is necessary to be very careful while choosing the model parameters. As to the latter I have managed to collect quite a big number of instructions from existing sources; the summary of these instructions is presented below in this article. Based on these instructions, a low-power model can be assembled even without a mathematical analysis and modeling of electromagnetic field. Such model would certainly facilitate optimization of the device.**

Adams' motor is most frequently a DC machine; however, it can also use an AC source through a rectifier. In the latter case only the adjustment of the device and its control system can be provided.

Editorial: We disagree with some assertions of the author; however this article is of great interest.

My experiments on my own model do not yet allow me to make an unambiguously positive conclusion concerning the possibility to generate excessive energy. Experiments with my new control system designed on the base of AVR controller AT90s2313-10PI (it is
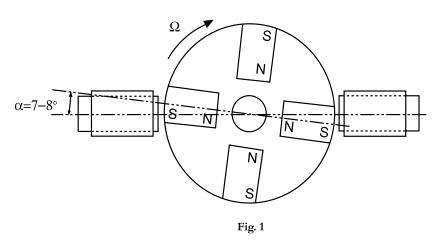
produced by Atmel company (http://www.atmel.com) will allow to be more specific. Below there is a general analysis of the motor principle of operation and a number of recommendations concerning the construction and technology. I do not propose to take this as compulsory rules to follow; other technical solutions are possible.

Basing on the principle described in this article, R. Adams (the link to his articles is available at: http://www.aethmogen.com/wri/intro.shtml) created a few DC motor-generators which operate on permanent magnets. Some of them, according to information found on the Internet, have manifested 690% electrical efficiency and 620% mechanical efficiency. These devices operate at room temperature without overheating. My device has shown between 1 and 3 degrees overheating after an hour of functioning. However, it is easy to prove that such overheating is predictable for an average current of 0.15 A in coils of 35 mm long and 25 mm in cross sectional diameter. I have not been able to prove the data published on the Internet concerning the Adams motor capability to operate when the stator temperature is a few degrees lower than that of the environment. The temperature of the coil and of the power transistor is a good indicator of correctness of the circuit set-up and of functioning of the control circuit. There were cases when transistor and coil were noticeably heated after adjustment. Usually this was explained by a bad choice of points of transistor switching or by too extensive current impulses in the stator (which must amount to approximately 25% of period length). After the required adjustment the motor continued to operate almost without overheating.

Adams' motor was first mentioned in Australian Nexus Magazine in 1992. Later, Harold Aspden (Britain) proposed a slightly improved version of the motor and received Great Britain patent No. 282708 [4], which strongly reminds of the original version published by the above magazine. **Adams' device** represents an electrical motor and/or generator consisting of a rotor

with radially directed permanent magnets and of a stator also constructed with a few radially directed and periodically magnetized cores with winding. (Fig. 1). In some models axial orientation of magnets and coils are also used.

Permanently magnetized poles of rotor can include any number of poles, even an odd number. Analogous poles of the magnets (all N poles or all S poles) are directed outside. A version with alternating poles is also possible; such model allows the torque to increase. In this case, after passing a rotor pole the stator is demagnetized by the current impulse and begins to be attracted by the magnet of different polarity. This circuit requires a more complicated control; on the other hand, it manifested rather good results in certain models.

Fig. 1

Poles with winding placed on the rotor are radially oriented in order to obtain a supply of energy emerging as a result of the influence of counter emf from the rotor poles. Steel or iron cores are used for the poles of the stator with winding. It is also possible to use other materials, at that the core must have high magnetic inductivity and low level of magnetization reversal losses. The stator winding consists of a few hundred turns. The current inducted by the magnet in this winding will have the polarity which will cause repulsion of the magnet. Since the electromagnetic state of stator changes quite significantly and quite fast, then the stator core can be considered to be the most crucial element of the device. Ignoring this fact was one of the most frequent mistakes made by those who tried to reproduce Adams motor.

The current induced in the stator is the function of:
· field size,
· number of winding turns,
· speed of flux changes.

Resultant parameters of this device cause each pole to

be attracted or repulsed by stator poles when the rotor is in certain position in case when the rotor is unbalanced. To achieve this effect it is required to switch the input current in control coils after the signal from sensor of rotor position. R. Adams used a mechanical switch as a sensor. My device and a number of other devices use the signal from two Hall sensors. However, according to experimenters' information, better results are achieved if a position optical sensor is used.

Time of switching of impulses is determined by the size of the motor itself, i.e. the speed of motor rotation, location of rotor magnets towards the stator windings and the distance the rotor magnets pass while moving by the poles with stator winding.

It is necessary to take into account that any part of this motor can be modeled based on the existing electromagnetic theory and no part of the motor is in conflict with any laws of electromagnetism. There are so many ways to construct Adams' motor that any version may be considered to be correct.

One can say that the frequently pulsating electromagnetic process in the stator core is what allows Adams' device to function as a kind of diode which borrows energy from the field of permanent magnet but then does not return that energy in full.

5 stages can be defined in the periodical process which takes place in stator:

1. The magnet is attracted to the stator core. The permanent magnet is attracted to the iron core of the stator with winding. While doing so no consumption of electrical current takes place. It is as if kinetic energy is borrowed from an internal ferrite magnetic source and is supposed to be returned into the stator.

2. Stator core is magnetized. During the period when the magnet is positioned in front of stator core they both comprise a single magnetic conductor with an air gap and the stator core becomes an extension of the magnet side it faces. It is usually supposed that the energy "borrowed" on the first stage is getting back now.

3. Stator core is demagnetized. When the stator core becomes rotor magnet extension, the circuit closes and current impulse gets to stator windings. I have seen the instructions saying that the angle between

stator axles and rotor magnet must amount to 7-8 degrees as shown in Fig. 1. However, my model made it clear that at increase of speed of rotation it is necessary to start the coil a little earlier, when the magnet axle has not reached the stator axle. Probably this applies to the circuit with a Hall sensor only and if an optical switching is used the making angle will be different.

Magnetic field of this current acts to compensate magnetization of the stator, which is caused by the field of rotor magnet. Consequently, the summed current significantly compensates attractive force between rotor and stator and the rotor can freely rotate by using the inertia obtained at stage 1. This process is characterized by the fact that this current impulse is amplified by the current inducted in the stator winding by rotor magnet which, in accordance with Lentz law (1834), counteracts the power which induced it. Consequently, kinetic energy obtained as a result of attraction of the rotor to the stator at stage 1 is transformed into electrical demagnetizing impulse in stator winding during the period when the rotor and stator directions are congruent. This is the unique overunity characteristic of this model. However it is obvious that instead of returning this energy the motor transforms it into electromagnetic demagnetizing field.

4. Restoration: when the rotor is removed from the stator attraction zone the latter looses energy and returns to its initial demagnetized state. Decreasing electromagnetic field creates a current wave of reverse polarity which can be stored in the capacitor.

5. Reiteration of the process: This periodical process is renewed as described in stage 1 during the next magnetization of the stator, excluding the fact that emf preliminarily stored in the capacitor, on term of presence of suitable electrical circuit, can be used for facilitating stator demagnetization or even used to supply the load.

It may be briefly summarized that the frequently pulsating electromagnetic process in the stator core is what allows Adams device to function as a kind of diode which borrows energy from the field of the permanent magnet but does not return that energy in full. The important characteristic of such motors is that the stator windings are used for demagnetizing and not for magnetizing as it could seem from the first sight.

It is noteworthy that there is a small pause between attraction to the stator and repulsion from the stator. The effect of attraction to the core takes place a split second before the repulsion effect manifests clearly. This pause being the reason of electromagnetic asymmetry

creates conditions necessary for achieving overunity effect. If the attraction to the core and repulsion by means of Lentz currents were taking place simultaneously and with the same power there would not be any overunity characteristics. That is why the rotor must be as lightweight as possible. From this point of view, T. Harwood's model is the most lightweight of the known models. In Harwood's device the magnets are mounted between two CD disks fixed on the shaft by means of plastic washers and glue. My model is heavier, which can be considered as one of its disadvantages.
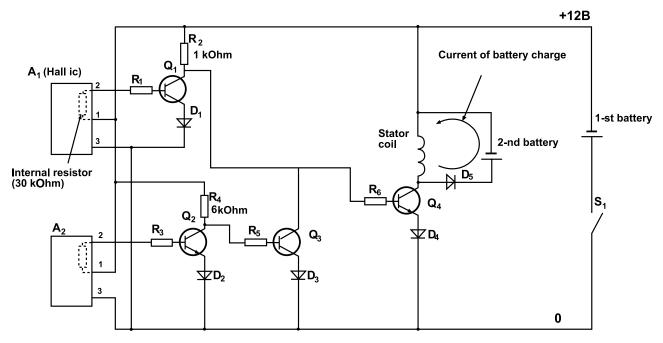
The principle of operation of Adams' motor is based on the balance, which creates the electromagnetic asymmetry. To get the motor to operate the magnet must be attracted to the stator core which must have a smaller cross-section area in order to create attraction without any significant repulsion effect from the stator windings mentioned above. When stator and rotor axles are congruent the Lentz induced current must be sufficient for compensating the natural attraction of the magnet to the stator core. Consequently, stator windings must have enough turns for demagnetizing effect, but not to the extent that this effect fully manifests before the rotor reaches the stator axle when Lentz current has its maximal value.

During my experiments at 12 V voltage and on using two independently controlled stator coils the speed of rotation reached 3400 rpm. Please note that while reproducing such device it is necessary to take certain measures in order to ensure safety in case of possible breakdown. **The magnet disconnected from the rotor may be dangerous!**

Technological recommendations are as follows:

1. The device must be low power. It is better not to try to begin with a motor functioning in kilowatt range. This is feasible only on condition of having all necessary technological documentation which is not available at the moment.

2. The preferable voltage for the first model is 12 V. If the voltage is less the speed of rotation is too slow for indicating the expected characteristics of the device.

3. The best magnets are ferrite ones with dimensions 4x4x5 (where 5 is the magnet length). The practice has shown that at 12 V voltage neodymium-iron-boric (NdFeB) magnets cause a jerky rotation of the rotor.

4. The side of the stator core facing the rotor must

Control circuit with hall sensors

R₁,R₃,R₅,R₆,R₈,R₉, - 100 Ohm

Fig. 2

have the size which is 4 times smaller than the corresponding side of the magnet. If cross-section area of the stator is larger, a bigger part of magnet field comes to the stator core when their axles coincide and thus there is nothing to induce Lentz' currents in the stator windings. It is a common point of view that it is necessary to try to minimize the volume of a device and to obtain the maximum efficiency at minimal material expense. In practice, it has always been the goal while designing electrical machines to decrease losses in stator I²R. As for the Adams motor, it requires not only the use of disproportionate magnets but also stator windings with disproportionate number of turns specially designed to obtain maximum Lentz' currents that is achieved by hundred of turns of winding.
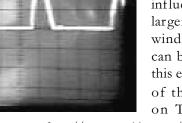
5. It is necessary to define approximately the effective zone of the magnet field. If practically applicable magnet field is equal to, for example, 8 cm, and the stator has a 10 cm long winding, then more than 20% of turns will not be efficiently crossed by magnetic force lines and will only create an excessive mass of the device. To define the degree of effective action of the magnet we can put a

paperclip on the table and move it gradually in direction of the magnet until the paperclip is attracted to it. Actually if we take into account friction losses then the magnet influence zone will be a little larger. That is why the stator winding in the axle direction can be 10% larger than that in this experiment. The description of this test has been found on Tim Harwood's website (http://www.geocities.com/theadamsmotor/cdmotor.html).

6. The air gap clearance between the stator and the rotor must not exceed 1 1.5 mm.

7. Use as little metal in the device as possible. It is preferable that the metal is used in the core and stator windings only.

In order to increase the efficiency of this motor, it is necessary to build it in a manner, which allows removing the counter emf from the stator windings. To do that, this emf may be taken off and stored in the capacitor. The article published by Nexus magazine and Great Britain patent No. 282708 consider special generator windings; however, no sufficiently detailed data on operating rules are provided. Michael Smith (Australia, http://www.Fortunecity.com/greenfield/bp/16/content1.htm) has unequivocally informed me in one of his letters that
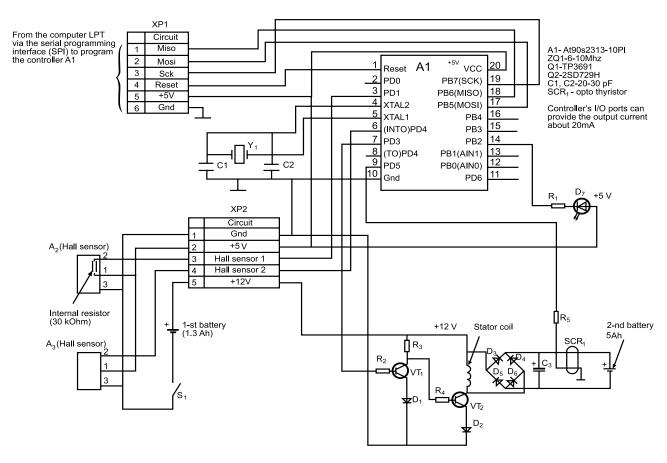
Fig. 3

he has not achieved generation of excessive energy in such a system. During his experiments a two-battery circuit proved to be more effective. In this circuit, during a part of periodical process the energy is stored in the capacitor and then a command is transferred to a thyristor, which discharges it into the second battery. At that capacity, the second battery must be no less than 4 times more than the capacity of the first one. Otherwise the excessive energy does not have enough time to be stored during the discharge. I have also managed to provide the charge of the second battery, but the control circuit has not been assembled fully yet, as it is shown below in Fig. 4. Better results are expected when its final adjustments together with AT90s2313 controller program have been made.

I managed to start my first model of the motor in April, 2002. Afterwards, I spent approximately six months increasing its rotational speed from 750 to 3200-3400 rpm, decreasing vibrations and improving control

> *In order to increase the efficiency of this motor, it is necessary to build it in a manner, which allows removing the counter emf from the stator windings.*

circuit. In order to achieve a better rotor balance I had to re-construct it twice. It is very important to align the axles of the bearings with maximum precision; otherwise a considerable decelerating torque will manifest. The shaft penetrates the lower moving base. It is possible to rotate the base at a small angle for the precise alignment of axles and then to fix it with screws and nuts.

In order to decrease aerodynamic losses, two veneer parts are mounted between the magnets. Thus I managed to increase the speed, although the rotor weight has also been increased.

Stator cores are made of plates taken from a disassembled radio transformer. Tim Harwood used nails with winding, however, my own results with such core proved to be poor. Dimensions of the core are 10x11x50 mm.

The type of power source is also important. First, I connected a 9 Volt accumulator of "Krona" type in series

with three metal-hydride 1.2 V accumulators. The speed of rotation did not exceed 1500 rpm. But when I used a lead/acid accumulator with 1.3 Ah capacity, the speed increased to 2600 rpm if there was one coil on the stator.

Four magnets mounted on the rotor have the dimensions of 20x20x35 mm and are fixed on a 105 mm glass fiber laminate disk. The current impulses proved to be too wide, by up to 40%. In order to make them shorter (down to 25-30%), I had to use the control circuit (Fig. 2) with two Hall sensors. At the signal from the first sensor the stator current is started, the second sensor switches it off. Many experimenters used a timer to control the impulse length while working with Adams' motor that is more practical since impulses are supposed to be wider during the start. I took this factor into account while designing the controller circuit. Current impulses are shown in Fig. 3. Their fronts are supposed to be shorter; it is probable that the coil has more inductivity than necessary. The impulses amplitudes are slightly different which is explained both by the difference in volume of induction of the magnets and by difficulty in achieving similar air gaps while working at home.

I have provided the charge mode of the 2-nd battery at my two-battery design. After 75 minutes of operation of the device the source lost 0.17 Volt whereas the second battery was charged at 0.36 Volt. The capacity of both batteries in this experiment was equal. Besides after such charging the second battery started to discharge quickly. The circuit where stator current charges the battery directly has to be considered ineffectual (see Fig. 1). To evaluate the charge, which is gained in non-hermetic accumulators, the density of electrolyte can be measured.

To obtain a more uniform torque I added the second stator which is controlled independently. This required installing two more Hall sensors and an additional power transistor. The angle between axles of the coils amounts to 135 (180-90.2=135) degrees. When the current is present in one part of the stator it is absent in another and vice versa. The speed has increased up to 3200-3400 rpm, and I deemed the further increasing of this characteristic unnecessary.
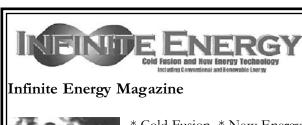
Increasing the number of circuit elements does not seem a good idea. Futhermore the adjustment process becomes more complicated. In order to improve the circuit of battery charge adding a timer circuit is required. Thus, I decided to use a controller circuit. A simple Basic program has been developed for AVR controllers. This program operates in mode similar to transistor circuit, but its capability can be significantly increased due to the built-in processor timers. Today program improvement is the most efficient way to solve the task of generation of excess energy in this circuit.

This article is meant to elucidate the principles of operation of one of the simplest devices which pretend to become an "overunity device", "free energy machine", "perpetual motion machine", whatever you call it. Probably someone will try to create such motor-generators on their own. I hope that my article will serve as a guide and will help to avoid the mistakes made by many experimenters (including myself) before they managed to build their own model.

References

1. Puthoff H.E. Source of vacuum electromagnetic zero-point energy. Phys. Rev. A 40.4857-4862; also 44. 3385-3386
2. Bernard Haich, Alfonso Rueda, Puthoff H.E. Physics of the zero-point field: implications for inertia, gravitation and mass. Speculation in Science and Technology, Vol.20, p.p. 99-114, 1997 (preprint version)
3. Miller, Switched Reluctancy Motors & Their Controls, ISBN: 10881855-02-03
4. Patent No. GB 2,282,708 (from NEN, Vol. 4, No. 8, December 1996, pp. 1-7).

Prediction and Experiment on Field Transformation in the Model of Extended Space

Dmitry Yu. Tsipenyuk, Russia

119991, Vavilov str., 38, Moscow
E-mail: tsip@kapella.gpi.ru

A series of preliminary experiments on checking the possibility of generation of gravitational field at deceleration of charged massive particles in matter was carried out.

Introduction

In previous works [1-3] generalization of the special theory of relativity (STR) for the five-dimensional extended space with metric (+;-,-,-,-) was offered.

The model of extended space (ESM), combining electromagnetic and gravitational interactions, was made. For this, there was made (1+3)-dimensional space extension $M(T;\vec{X})$ of Minkovsky to (1+4)-dimensional space $G(T;\vec{X},S)$. Let us call it extended space. As the 5-th additional coordinate the value already existing in Minkovsky space, i.e, S interval

$$s^2 = (ct)^2 - x^2 - y^2 - z^2 \qquad (1),$$

is used.

Let us note that attempts to combine gravitation and electromagnetism have a substantial background.

Modern approaches to this problem trace back to the work of F. Klein [10] in which he proved that classical Hamiltonian mechanics can be represented as optics in the space of a great number of dimensions.

Then T. Kaluza tried to generalize Einstein's theory of gravitation to include electromagnetism in this theory as well [11]. He proposed to consider (1+4)-dimensional space with metric depending on potentials of the electromagnetic field. Kaluza's idea was evolved by O. Klein [12], G. Mandel [13] and V. Fock, and the model they had created got the name of the Kaluza-Klein theory. They proved that the trajectory of a charged particle has the form of a geodesic line with zero-length in 5-dimensional space.

In his works on 5-optics Y. Rummer [15] proposed to assign action dimensionality to the new dimension and to consider it periodical with the period equal to Plank's constant. Note that rest mass of particles in all these constructions unlike the model of extended space evolved in the works [1-7] was considered a fixed value. Subsequent development of multidimensional theories is given in the monograph [16].

A separate approach is represented by multidimensional constructions in the theory of strings and superstrings [17].

Approach to construction of (1+4) dimensional space evolved in [18] is close to the proposed model of extended space. Here it is proposed to use mass (matter) as the 5-th coordinate. However, in this model, as its originators admit, it is impossible, for example, to create the energy-pulse tensor. There is no such disadvantage in the extended space model [8].

Mechanics of a material point [1, 2, 7] and electrodynamics [1, 8] were made in the introduced extended space. Besides Lienar-Vihert potentials [6, 19] corresponding to such a model were also considered and properties of solutions of Maxwell augmented system of equations which are in conformity with these potentials were analyzed there.

Gravitational effects in extended space, such as the second orbital velocity, red shift and light deflection [4, 20, 21] were considered. It is proved that the formulas received in the general theory of relativity for calculation of values of these effects can be received by an absolutely different method within the framework of the extended space model as well.

It was proved [6, 19] that the fields in the model of extended space can change their signs. Such change of field-intensity sign and, consequently, change of sign of Lorenz force can be associated with radiation reaction of these fields which occurs when charged partides move with acceleration.

Thus, on the one hand, it was proved in the model of extended space that it is possible to get certain formulas describing gravitational effects of the general theory of relativity [4,20] using the technique of turns in extended space. On the other hand, it was proved that the electromagnetic field can be a source of gravitational field [6, 19].

Besides, a moving massively charged particle under deceleration can create a variable gravitational field around itself [9, 6, 19]. The following experiment was offered for experimental check of the latter assumption. In this experiment probable occurrence of gravitational field at deceleration of relativistic electrons was determined by change of oscillations of a massive torsion pendulum.

Experimental device

A narrow bunch of relativistic electrons from a microtron 1 (average power of the bunch is 450 Wt, electrons energy is 30 MeV) was directed to a brake target (position 2 or 3) made of wolfram exactly where deceleration of accelerated electrons took place.

A special torsion pendulum suspended on a vertical suspender 5 made of a springy metallic string with 1,8 mm diameter was placed near the brake target to register gravitational field which could probably appear at electrons deceleration. The length of the suspender made is 85 cm. The pendulum could rotate freely on the suspender only in horizontal plane.

The pendulum consisted of a light aluminum rod 4 (with a length of 120 cm) on the ends of which massive loads 6 and 7 made of non-magnetic material were fixed. The weight of each load was equal to 4kg. In the center a pendulum was fastened to a vertical suspender 5 by a special mounting preventing slippage during turns. To reduce the influence of magnetic inducings the pendulum was grounded and additionally screened by metallic grid from all sides. The period of free oscillations of the pendulum made were about 40 s.

Rigidity of the pendulum vertical suspender could be changed by means of limiting the length of effectively operating part of the suspender. As a result, the period of oscillations could be continuously changed within the limits of 40 to 27 s.

To reduce the influence of mechanical noise and to introduce additional attenuation in pendulum oscillations two liquid dampers 10 and 11 located near the pendulum massive loads were used.
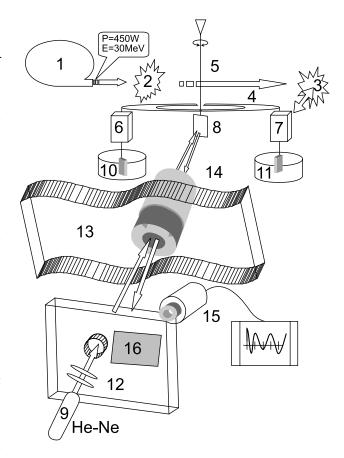
Fig. 1
Experimental device
1 – microtron, brake target made of wolfram – positions 2 or 3, 4 – rod, 5 – vertical suspender, 6 and 7 – massive loads, 8 – mirror, 9 – He-Ne laser, 10 and 11 – liquid dampers, 12 – optical system, 13 – concrete protection, 14 – observation channel, 15 – video system, 16 – screen.

Pendulum deflections were observed on a graduated screen by deflection of a laser beam reflected from a flat mirror 8. For this, the beam from a continuous He-Ne laser 9 through the optical system 12, which constricts the divergence angle of the laser beam, was directed to the mirror through a special narrow channel 14, located in concrete protection 13 around the microtron. By means of a video system 15 the beam reflected by the mirror was registered on the screen 16 located at a distance of 500 cm from the mirror. The video system allowed remote checking of vibrations of the laser spot and additionally enlarged the visual angle up to 12 times. The diameter of a focused laser beam on the screen was made 0.15 mm. The maximum turn angle of pendulum for the reflected beam to remain within the receiving channel was approximately 2 degrees. The accuracy of turn angle registration of the whole system was 5×10^{-4} degrees.

The pendulum was placed in such a way that one of the massive loads were close to the brake target at a distance

of about 20 cm. There was also an opportunity to move the brake target from one end of the pendulum (position 2) to the other (position 3). This allowed changing the place of deceleration of electron bunch at constant parameters of all unaccounted mechanical noise and magnetic inducing. Thus, direction of pendulum torsion was changed under probable exposure of occurring gravitational radiation.

Below there is a photo of the experimental plant (see also the colored photo on the cover page).

Calibration Measurements

To make measurements it was necessary to select optimal parameters of the pendulum (masses of loads, suspender rigidity and the value of oscillations attenuation). On the one hand, while carrying out the measurement it is desirable that the amplitude of pendulum oscillations should be as maximal as possible. On the other hand, the beam reflected from the mirror should not go outside the limits of observation, restricted by the diameter of the narrow observation channel in radiation protection around the accelerator. Besides, the typical operating time of the loaded accelerator usually is 10-15 minutes. Necessity to accumulate the minimum of sufficient statistical data within this time limited oscillations period and the time of setting of the pendulum in a new equilibrium position at outside influence. All these requirements were as far as possible taken into account during selection of the final setting parameters.

An example of free oscillations of the pendulum in the presence of minor mechanical vibrations caused by the operating of vacuum pumps is given in Fig. 2, series I (the experiment took place on 31 May, 2001). The diagram shows the amplitude of laser beam oscillations on the screen 16 (upper and lower rows of values) depending on the number of oscillation. The laser beam is reflected from the mirror 8 which was fixed to the pendulum. The diagram also shows the current central equilibrium position (the central row) calculated by these amplitudes. Series I represents oscillations at influence

of the background mechanical noise. Series II represents the response of the pendulum to minor permanent outside force. Accuracy in determination of position of the center of a light spot was 0.1 mm.
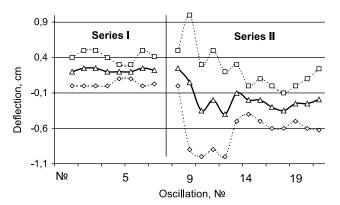
Fig. 2
Calibration Measurement 31 May, 2001

Measurement was carried out with one liquid damper in service and with increased rigidity of suspender (it was made by means of limiting the effectively operating suspender length). The period of free oscillations in these series was 29 sec. In this case there were set continuous oscillations of the pendulum around the average value of balance of 2.2 mm with the average amplitude of values fluctuation of about 0.2 mm.

Air cooling of one of the massive loads by a very light continuous air flow was carried out to study response of the pendulum to a minor constant external force. In this case (Fig. 2 Series II) noticeable change of pendulum oscillations already took place after 3-4 periods. Absolute setting of a new balance took place after 7-8 oscillations.

In the case of another series of calibration measurement (held on 7 June, 2001) both liquid dampers were used and rigidity of suspender was decreased. The period of free oscillations of pendulum was about 40 sec.

Addition of the second damper and decrease of suspender rigidity caused, on the one hand, increase amplitude of pendulum oscillations at influence of the external force and, on the other hand, in that case noticeable change of the equilibrium position of the pendulum took place after 1-2 oscillations.

Periodical checking of the invariability of initial central position of pendulum balance in time was also carried out. Thus, for example, in the series of measurement of 7 June 2001 measurement of equilibrium position was checked not only before the start of the main series of measurement, but also 2 hours after completion of the main works.

Experimental Results and Their Analysis

Within the period from 17 May, 2001 to 7 June, 2001 7 measurement series were carried out at various operation modes of the accelerator and at various pendulum parameters.

A record of check of equilibrium position of the pendulum was carried out before and after switching off the electron bunch (as well as during calibration measurement). At the same time, all electric inducing and mechanical noise remained stable within the whole measurement period. This was achieved by means of additional switching on all the devices which were used during measurement (water and vacuum pumps, magnetron, deflecting magnets, etc.) and their switching off only on completion of the measurements.

In Fig. 3 there are results on measuring the central position of the pendulum when brake target is in position 3 (see Fig. 1). Series I and III on the diagram correspond to check measurement directly before switching on and several minutes after switching off the electron bunch. Series II-A and II-B totally reflect pendulum oscillations at the time when the accelerator is operating (for about 10 minutes) and for some time after the bunch is off. Additionally, a trend line is drawn (averaging by 3 points).
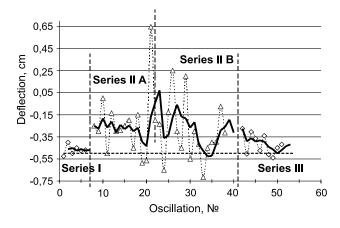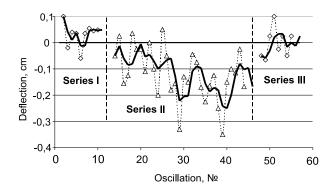
Fig. 3
Measurement of central position of pendulum equilibrium when brake target is in position 3.

Results of a similar experiment are given in Fig.4. The only difference in this experiment is that the brake target is in position 2. Also a trend line is added (averaging by 3 points). Series I and III are check measurements made directly before switching on and after switching off the electron bunch. Series II are pendulum oscillations at the time when accelerator is operating.

Fig. 4
Brake target in position 2

From qualitative comparison of trend lines (Fig. 3 and Fig. 4) it can be derived **that there is a correlation between switching on the electron bunch and the average deflection of the pendulum from equilibrium position if compared to checked series before and after switching on. At that, direction of deflection changes depending on what pendulum load the brake target is close to.**

Unfortunately, due to circumstances beyond the control of the author it seems to be difficult to improve experiments accuracy or to accumulate much of statistical data by now. Estimate of the value of the force which may cause such a shift of position of pendulum equilibrium was carried out. In the experiments this deflection did not exceed 1-2 mm (in the units of registering scale). Calibration of a rigid suspender (if it applies to a massive load at a pendulum end) gives the upper boundary of this force of not more than 10^{-6} N.

Conclusion

A series of experiments were made on checking the possibility to generate a field at deceleration of charged massive particles in matter.

Electrons accelerator was used as a source of charged particles. A narrow bunch of relativistic electrons (average beam power is 450 Wt, electrons energy is about 30 MeV) was directed at a brake target made of wolfram where deceleration of accelerated electrons took place.

Measurement proved appearance of statistically reliable deflection of a torsion pendulum, one of massive loads of which was located close to a brake target by the time of deceleration of relativistic electrons.

Change of direction of pendulum torsion at shift of a brake target from one end of the pendulum to the other was also registered. The value of the force which causes pendulum deflection has the upper boundary of   N.

Of course, these first experimental results on checking the predictions made on the basis of development of the model of extended space are of preliminary nature and need more thorough checking. That will be the basis of future experiments.

References

1. Tsipenyuk D. Yu. Andreev V. A, "Extended space and model of combined interaction", Short reports on physics FIAN, No.6, pp. 23-24, (2000); gr-qc/0106093

2. Tsipenyuk D. Yu., Andreyev V. A., "Explored in Russia" E-magazine,60, (1999); http://zhurnal.ape.relarn.ru/articles/1999/060.pdf

3. Tsipenyuk D. Yu., Andreyev V. A., "Structure of extended space", Preprint IOFAN, 5, 25p., Moscow, (1999)

4. Tsipenyuk D. Yu., "Field transformation in the model of extended space: prediction and experimental test", Gravitation&Cosmology, Vol.7, No.4(28), pp336-338, (2001); physics/0203017

5. Tsipenyuk D. Yu., "Field transformation in the extended space model: prediction and experimental test", Short reports on physics FIAN, No, 7 p.39-49, (2001); physics/0107007

6. Tsipenyuk D. Yu., Andreyev V. A., "Lienar-Vihert potentials for the extended space model", Short reports on physics FIAN, No 6 p.3-15, Moscow,(2002); physics/0302006

7. Tsipenyuk D. Yu., "Explored in Russia" e-magazine, 81, p.907-916, (2001); http://zhurnal.ape.relarn.ru/articles/2001/081.pdf

8. Tsipenyuk D. Yu., Andreyev V. A., "Electrodynamics in extended space", Preprint IOFAN, 9, 26p., Moscow, (1999)

9. Tsipenyuk D. Yu., Andreyev V. A., "Interaction in extended space", Preprint IOFAN, 2, 25p., Moscow,(2000)

10. Klein F. Zeits.f.Math.a.Phys., 375, (1901) (see translation in collection "Variation principles of mechanics", M.: Physmatgis, 1960)

11. Kaluza Th. Sitz.d.Preuss.Akad., 966, (1921) (see translation in collection "Albert Einstein and gravics", M.: Mir, 1979)

12. Klein O. Zeits.f.Phys., 37,895, (1926)

13. Mandel H. Zeits.f.Phys., 39,136, (1926)

14. Fock V. Zeits.f.Phys., 39,226,1926

15. Rumer Yu. B. Investigations on 5-optics, M., Gostehizdat, 1956

16. Vladimirov Yu. S. Dimensionality of physical space-time and integration of interactions. M., MGU, 1987.

17. Green M., Schwartz G., Vitten E. Theory of superstrings, v.1, 2, M.: Mir, 1990

18. Wesson P.S. Space, time, matter: Modern Kaluza-Klein theory. Singapoure, World Scientific publishing Co.Pte.Ltd, 1999

19. Tsipenyuk D. Yu., Andreev V.A., "Lienar-Vihert potentials and Lorenz force in extended space", Preprint IOFAN,1,20p., Moscow,(2001)

20. Tsipenyuk D. Yu., Andreev V. A., "Gravitational effects in extended space", Preprint IOFAN, 4, 15p., Moscow,(2001)

21. Tsipenyuk D. Yu., "Field transformation in the model of extended space: prediction and experimental test", Preprint IOFAN, 5, 24p., Moscow, (2001)

22. "Tsipenyuk D. Yu., report "Electromagnetic and gravitational interaction in extended space" at the Conference of Nudear Physics Department of the Russian Academy of Sciences (RAN) "Physics of Fundamental Interactions", 27 November-1 December 2000, ITF, Moscow, http://www.itep.ru/

23. Tsipenyuk D.Yu. and Andreev V.A., "Interval as the fifth coordinate" proc. of 5-th Int. Conf. on Gravitation and Astrophysics of Asian-Pacific Countries, PFUR, Moscow, 2001, pp.29-30. http://rgs.da.ru/

24. Tsipenyuk D.Yu., "Direct transformation of the electromagnetic field to gravitational field in the model of extended space: predictions and possible way of its experimental test", proc. of 5-th Int. Conf. on Gravitation and Astrophysics of Asian-Pacific Countries, PFUR, Moscow, 2001, p.28. http://rgs.da.ru/

25. Tsipenyuk D.Yu., "Model of extended space: Prediction and test experiments on possible transformation of electromagnetic field into gravitational field", proc. of XVIth Workshop on High Energy Physics and Quantum Field Theory (QFTEP), Moscow, Russia, 2001, pp.398-405. http://theory.sinp.msu.ru/~qfthep/2001/Proceed2001.html

26. Tsipenyuk D.Yu., "Model of extended 5-d space and possible checking experiments", presented at 5-th Moscow international ITEP school of physics (30-th ITEP winter school of physics), 20-28 Febr., Moscow, 2002, http://www.itep.ru/

27. Tsipenyuk D.Yu., report "Second experiment on checking prediction on field transformation in extended space" at the scientific conference of nuclear physics section OFN RAN "Physics of Fundamental Interactions", ITF, 2-6 December 2002, Moscow, http://www.itep.ru/

28. Urbah V. Yu., Mathematical statistics, M., USSR Academy of Sciences Publishers, 1963.

Joe Flynn's Parallel Path Magnetic Technology

Tim Harwood, USA

Email: timharwood@usa.net

There is a widespread opinion common to the mainstream academic community and also to various alternative scientific forums, that some kind of exotic new physics will be required to design and implement over-unity technologies. That is to say electrical motors, electrical generators, or other apparatus, which produce an excess of magnetic force or energy above the value actually inputted.
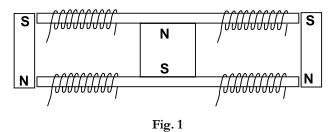
However, this has recently been experimentally demonstrated not to be the case, as I have validated myself in simple $20 experiments undertaken at home with parts bought from the local hardware store. It is the purpose of this article to educate readers that with care, thought, and a little work, it can be demonstrated that existing textbook physical law, freely allows for the extraction of excess electrical energy from magnetic systems.

The Flynn Research Project

Joe Flynn has been engaged in magnetic flux research for over 25 years now. His work is long standing, comprehensive, and in later years, well funded. It is reported $7m has been spent to date, with over $1m alone developing a revolutionary high performance magnetic motor. His equipment is validated, and apparently already in mass production for select customers. Yet few researchers have heard of Joe Flynn. This surprising situation will hopefully shortly be changed, and Joe Flynn awarded the scientific accolades he deserves, for being the genius master mind behind one of scientific history's most outstanding research projects. Since many lines of research have been formulated and explored by Joe Flynn, the following article presents only a brief summary of some of his best art apparatus, but is nonetheless sufficient to convey the basic ideas.

The first illustration (Fig. 1) is taken from Joe Flynn's US patent 6,246,561, and explains a simple magnetic force multiplication experiment, which forms the basis for the Flynn magnetic art. If the windings on either side of the central magnet, which are normally connected in series, are properly pulsed, the field of the permanent magnet in the center will be diverted to the opposite side of the core flux path provided. Or in alternative language, the side of the core that is pulsed is demagnetized, relative to the field of the permanent magnet used in the apparatus. This is elementary textbook physics anyone can understand.

Fig. 1

1.75 times more force is delivered to the legs of the core than is provided by the electrical input to the control coils

So what is surprising about this apparently simple apparatus is that the armature on the side of the flux core will contain 1.75 times more units of magnetic force, that could be manifested by the electrical input to the apparatus alone. Since the ability to arbitrarily move the force from one point to another is the basis for motion or work, however simplistic, we therefore have a basis for a system that can be developed for practical technological purposes. Expressed in alternative language, we also have the capability to engineer a time varying magnetic field, without the need for moving parts, which will allow development of systems that output electrical energy. Both capabilities are highly desirable, and offer substantial opportunity for technical development.

Following on from this basic experiment, there is a second simple and logical improvement in layout illustrated in Fig. 2, which should be obvious, but has been shown not to be the case. In this instance, the pulse is centrally located, and a dual flux field layout employed, which both demagnetizes the core relative to one magnet, and magnetizes it relative to the other. Since the two actions are complementary, the input required to manifest the flux switching effect is halved, therefore doubling 'efficiency.'
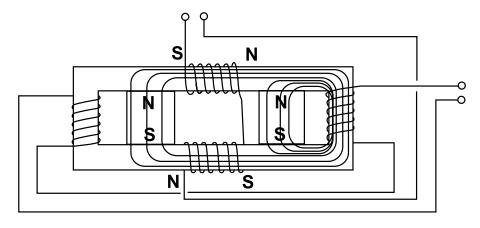
Fig. 2

3.47 times more force is delivered to the legs of the core than is provided by the electrical input to the control coils

It should be noted that while the efficiency is doubled, the absolute output may not be significantly improved. This is because the major weakness of this effect and technology is flux saturation of the core, with values depending upon the specific properties of the B-H curve of the core material employed, limiting the absolute output of both layouts the same.

The previous statements are not required to be taken on trust, and simple experiments have been proposed by Joe Flynn, such that anyone can validate this effect for themselves. Figure 3 is a simple experiment taken from the Flynn website (http://www.flynnresearch.net), that can be used to validate the principals put forth in this article.

Simple Magnetic Force Multiplication Experiments

| 421 grams | 1721 grams | 3845 grams | 1091 grams |
| One magnet | Two magnet | Parallel Path | Conventional |
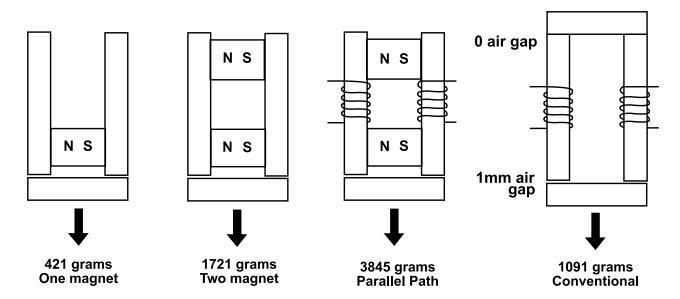
Fig. 3

Parallel Path can deliver 3.47 times more force to the legs of cores than any competing conventional technology

An even simpler non electrical flux experiment was proposed by GM in the Parallel Path Egroup. My apparatus is illustrated below in Figure 4. It is no more than magnets and steel staple strips, bought from a local hardware store for a total of under $10. The Parallel Path effect can be replicated with identical apparatus, at only a slight increase in cost and complexity, with the addition of a simple 12V polarity reversible power supply, such as those commonly sold to power computer speakers, among other applications.

Simple Magnetic Force Experiments
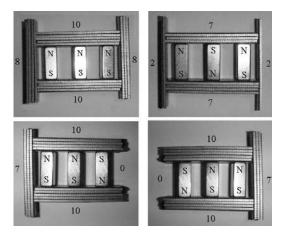
Fig. 4

Relatively small changes in layout produce large changes in force
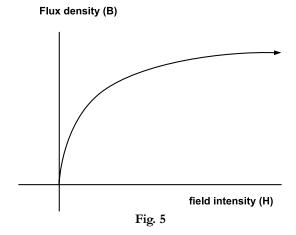
Conservation of Energy / Field Potential

One of the aspects of the Flynn technology people find most difficult to understand, is how you can have a device that delivers 3.47 times more magnetic force than is electrically inputted, yet not violate accepted principals of text book physics, as stated in the introduction. The key point here is conservation of energy. Magnetic fields do not gain energy – they are conservative. You can only ever obtain less energy from a magnetic field minus losses, than is in fact present. I feel this apparent puzzle can not be better explained, than by reference to Joe Flynn's own words:

"Since the Parallel Path System produced 3.47 times more force than the conventional system, with the same electrical input, it appears to violate conservation, this is only true when observed from a traditional view point. The system contains three flux producing sources (2 magnets and an electromagnet) which together are capable of producing a far greater force than is actually produced. All of the flux sources together can produce a force of 13.11 units, therefore in the physical sense a loss of 1 - (9.01 / 13.11) = 31% is realized."
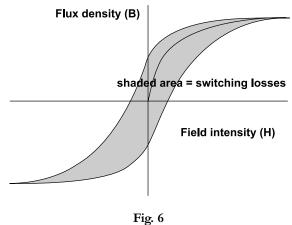
So the system is 350 % efficient, in terms of delivered magnetic force compared to net electrical input, yet still conforms to the accepted physical principals of energy conversation, by being only 69 % efficient, in terms of the fields present in the system. However surprising this result may appear, the analysis presented is in outline correct, with the difference between fields present in the system, and net electrical input, being the important concept presented.

Losses in the System and Optimisation

Fig. 5

In order to properly optimise flux cores, an appreciation of the physics that underlies the transfer of flux within a core is required. The normal magnetization curve, or B-H curve, is a mathematical relationship between applied field intensity H, and resultant flux density manifested in the core B. It varies according to core material, and the curve will shift, if there is a starting magnetism within the core, such as that provided by the field of a permanent magnet. If the start magnetism is excessive, the core is saturated, and will not properly respond to the applied force H. A simple B-H curves is illustrated in Fig. 5.

Hysteresis is a delay between applied magnetic force H, and resultant flux density B, that again varies according to material type. It also manifests as a delay between the termination of force H, and the manifestation of flux density B. So, the system will not turn on instantly, and will not turn off instantly, in simple terms. This is because the magnetic memory of the core, means a flux vector remains within it, even when the application of magnetic force H has been terminated. If we apply a reversed force H to the core, the basic B-H curve is now expanded as in Fig. 6, with the memory effect also illustrated.

Fig. 6

Thus as can be seen, to return to the initial switched state, the remnance magnetism must now be overcome, hence input once in operation, will be greater than that required for the very first pulse. The area within the hysteresis curve gives a rough estimate for the amount of wasted energy, and along with other conventional sources of losses resultant in flux transfer within a core, is what reduces the efficiency of flux cores from maximum values of 2, or 4, down to values such as 1.75 or 3.47, typically.

Motor Apparatus

Simple Parallel Path Technology Demonstrator Motor
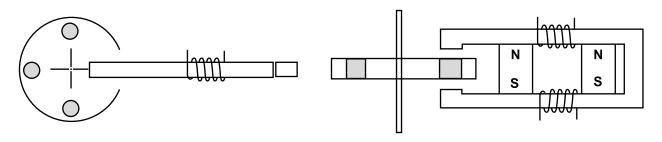
Fig. 7

Designed to demonstrate core principals, not provide over-unity

Although numerous practical applications abound for this effect, electric motor design remains the most outstanding opportunity. To this extent, again a few simple images, should be sufficient to explain how the basic flux switching apparatus, can be turned into a highly efficient electrical motor.

The first motor shown in Fig. 7 is one I have proposed to validate the flux switching effect at a most basic level. It illustrates the point made in the Flynn patent, that the armature of the core can be removed, and replaced with a motor flux path. This first motor is not claimed to be highly efficient, but it helps one to understand how the transition from simple flux core to motor takes place.
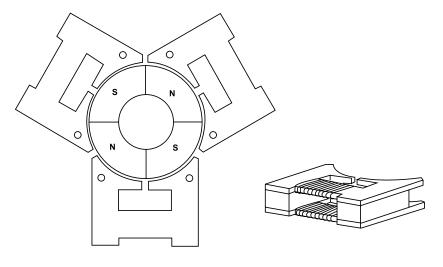
Fig. 8
Magnetic force is alternately switched from one leg to the other, imparting motion to the rotor sections

The next motor shown in Fig. 8 is again taken directly from the Flynn patent, and illustrates the next intermediate step to motor design. The fields of the permanent magnets are alternatively switched from one side of the surrounding flux cores to the other, alternately interacting with N and S poles on the rotor, imparting motion to the central rotor shaft.

With proper financial support, and the facilities to have metglas cores custom moulded, Joe Flynn was able to develop his final best art, shown in Fig. 9. No detailed performance numbers have been released for this motor, whose precise performance characteristics remain proprietary to Joe Flynn at this time. But the optimisation is so expert, it is stated to posses certain exotic properties, such as cool ambient operation, even during prolonged periods of continuous load. This 'cold running' is said to be of great interest to the American military, as it offers excellent stealth performance characteristics.

Steel Armature

Magnets

Coils

Flux paths

Linear Actuator

N S

N

S

S

N

N S

N S

Coils

N S

Magnets **Steel Armature** **Flux paths**
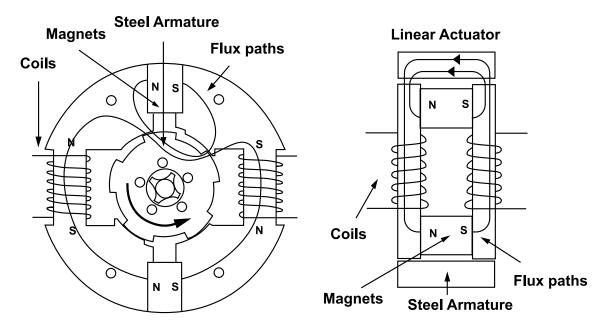
Fig. 9
Optimal Flux Core Motor Construction

Electrical Apparatus

Many readers will no doubt have noticed the similarity of the first illustration presented in this document, to the so called 'Tom Bearden MEG.' This is fair comment, and Joe Flynn has always highlighted this issue. However, it has been commonly stated Joe Flynn has simply developed mechanical apparatus, and the MEG with its electrical functionality, is distinct art, more advanced than the mechanical Flynn apparatus. However, this is shown not to be the case by a careful examination of the Flynn patent, in which the following is stated in the 'Power Conversion' section:

'The construction (shown in Fig.10 A) utilizes four control coils and a single permanent magnet and the construction (shown in 10 B) uses two control coils and two permanent magnets. The flux that would normally be supplied by a primary winding is supplied by the static flux of the permanent magnet or magnets and the control coils convert this static flux into a time

varying flux in a novel way. Both arrangements use two secondary coils, the secondary coils are placed in the region of the continuous flux path that would be occupied by an armature or rotor in the linear or rotary arrangements. The regions of the flux paths that perform work are the same in all cases.'

'By alternating the polarity of the control coils during one cycle, one working region experiences an increasing flux and the opposite region experiences a decreasing flux and during the next cycle the opposite occurs. This results in the induction of a voltage in the secondary coils that is decided by the magnitude of the change in flux in the working region and the time in which this change occurs. The novelty of this discovery is that the primary flux inducing the voltage in the secondary coils is supplied by the permanent magnet or magnets and is far greater than the flux supplied by the control coils.'

N
S

A

N
S

B

N
S

C

Fig. 10
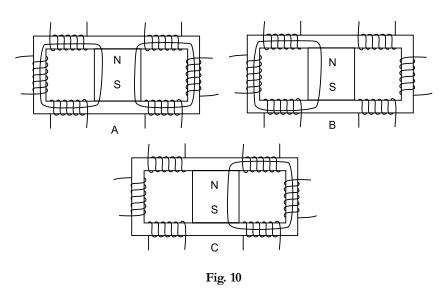
Fig.10 taken directly from the Flynn patent makes the point even clearer. As can be seen, the device illustrated is in all functional respects absolutely identical to the so called 'Tom Bearden MEG.' This identical prior art, therefore calls into question the intellectual property rights of Magnetic Energy LTD, as the same invention can not be patented more than once. Joe Flynn has also stated that his intellectual property rights will be robustly defended, by legal action if necessary, and he regards himself and his company as being in possession of exclusive rights to the so called 'MEG' unit.

> *the input and output circuits must be closed in series. The disclosure of this technique amounts to putting the basic MEG methodology fully into the public domain.*

As regards replication of electrical output orientated flux core devices, certain important details need to be stated. For example grade 8 ceramic magnets should be used, so as to avoid flux saturation of the core. A basic error, many early experimenters wasted time on. The requirement for strong magnets to obtain over-unity results, is as much of a myth, as the idea new physics is required.

But perhaps the greatest trade secret of the electrical devices, one which several lengthy non disclosure agreements are required to be signed before it can be disclosed, is that the input and output circuits must be closed in series. The disclosure of this technique amounts to putting the basic MEG methodology fully into the public domain.

The reason for this circuitry requirement is obvious enough, with only a little analysis. If the output circuit is closed when the input circuit is activated, then the input energy simply leaks into the output circuit, as in an ordinary transformer. So no flux switching effect is manifested, and the field of the permanent magnet is static in time. Thus you have an ordinary transformer, with reduced efficiency, because of the core flux saturation effect provided by the permanent magnet.

This is one of the most important point to make about the Flynn apparatus. If you approach it as if it is a normal piece of scientific equipment, then proper optimisation is not greatly problematic. For example more turns on the output coils, simply means more voltage and less current, exactly as standard textbook equations predict. Generally, problems only occur, if you imagine the effect is based upon exotic scalar type or vacuum energy physics, when in fact it is ordinary flux manipulation within a core.

Present Status of the Flynn Project

Initially Joe Flynn was remarkably open about his work and research. However, since performing a working demonstration of various advanced hardware samples for the American Department of Defence, little has been heard.

I want to clearly emphasize I do not speak for Flynn research, nor am I in any way connected with Flynn research, and by consequence, have no inside information whatsoever as to the present status of the project. But we all sincerely hope, that the project has not been swallowed whole by the American deep black military industrial research complex.

However, even if this is the case, it does not mean the technology is lost. Extensive and generous details have been provided by Joe Flynn of his research, both in his patent deposition, website, and other comments, such as to enable persons of scientific training and skill, to replicate the effects stated.

While replication of the electrical effect remains extremely demanding, the mechanical apparatus is very easy both to understand and replicate. There is no reason why scientists and home tinkers together, can not build Flynn type flux core motors, and explore over-unity flux manipulation for themselves. The future has arrived, and it is simpler and cheaper than anyone imagined to be possible.
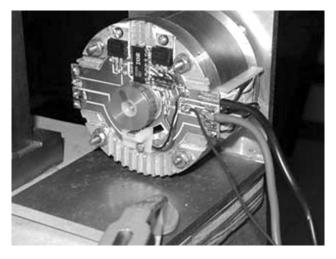
Flynn Research Company

http://www.flynnresearch.net

Photo 1

3.3" 1.2" stack height 1/2 hp weight 59 oz

Photo 2

Dynamometers, Power Analyzer etc.

Editor: Below we publish information and photos, represented on Flynn Research Company website (http://www.flynnresearch.net), and a description of the patent on methods for controlling the path of magnetic flux.

Flynn Research is dedicated to research focused on the novel application of permanent magnet and electromagnetic technology. Magnetism is a field that has potential for tremendous growth from both a science and application perspective. The researchers of Flynn Research Company believe that magnetism is one of the least understood and most misinterpreted of the natural forces, with the exception of gravity.

> *Everything known about magnetism is based on "effect and relationships" without a clear understanding or provable definition of what is a line of magnetic flux.*

Even though much work has occurred in the advancement of magnetic materials, little advancement has occurred in the basic understanding of magnetism. The field of magnetism is based on both theory and 'myth' and is generally described as a 'phenomenon'.

We still do not know what a line of flux is and how it travels through space. We know flux "appears" to originate within a permanent magnetic material, forms a loop from one end to the opposite end of the magnetic material, appears to occur without a time constant, produces a force (attractive and repulsive) between other permanent magnets and "magnetically permeable materials and has a relationship to current flow. Everything known about magnetism is based on "effect and relationships" without a clear understanding or provable definition of what is a line of magnetic flux.

The research is based on the "magnetic force of attraction effect" that is related to magnetic flux by the number of lines of flux occupying a given area or flux density squared. The simple fact that if the number of lines of flux occupying a given area "doubles" the force of attraction becomes four

Photo 3

8" dia x 8" height motor presentation

Photo 5

Technology Discussion

Photo 4
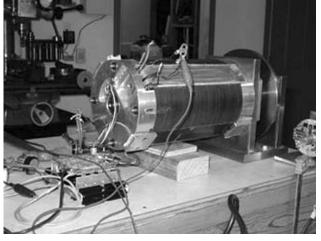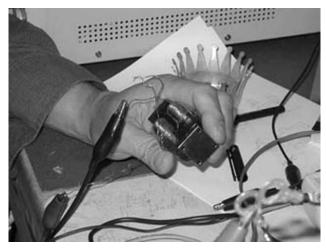
8" X 8" motor testing

Photo 6

Parallel Path Test Apparatus

times greater. The basic model shows that with specific structures electromagnetism acting with permanent magnet materials can divide and multiply force in a manner that cannot be explained with conventional physics.

Rotary devices, linear devices, reciprocating devices and power conversion devices are now a patented product of this research. The goal of the Company is to commercialize their devices for use in an energy dependent world. Flynn Research is a research & development company and in cooperation with Magnetic Revolutions LLC licenses their technologies for use in the electric motor and power conversion industries.

The researchers do not construct their own test equipment nor write capture and data evaluation programs but use industry / scientific accepted products. Close to $1.5 million has been expended developing, protecting and evaluating the technology. Many fine minds have been involved in the development and evaluation of the technology. Many presentations have been given both to motor companies and academic groups. The prototypes have all been professionally built, which include a 1/2 hp 3.3" dia 1.2" stack height, the assembled motor weighs 59 oz and a motor 8" dia with a stack height of 8" currently undergoing testing.
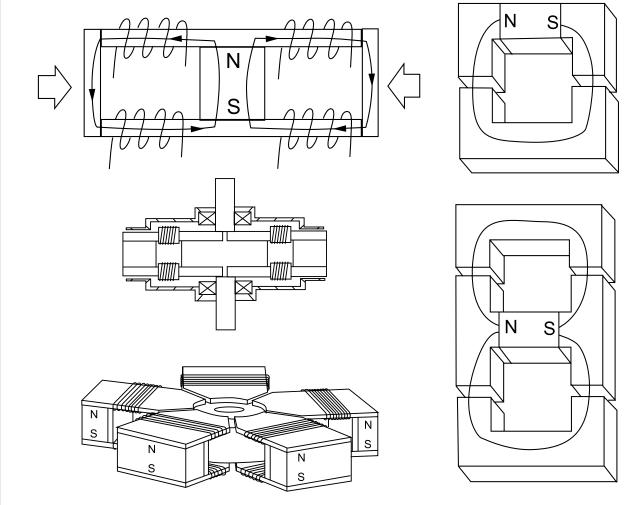
United States Patent No. 6,246,561
June 12, 2001

Methods for controlling the path of magnetic flux from a permanent magnet and devices incorporating the same
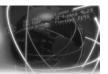
A permanent magnet device includes a permanent magnet having north and south pole faces with a first pole piece positioned adjacent one pole face thereof and a second pole piece positioned adjacent the other pole face thereof so as to create at least two potential magnetic flux paths. A first control coil is positioned along one flux path and a second control coil is positioned along the other flux path, each coil being connected to a control circuit for controlling the energization thereof. The control coils may be energized in a variety of ways to achieved desirable motive and static devices, including linear reciprocating devices, linear motion devices, rotary motion devices and power conversion.

Editorial: The principle of designing of the device (two counter parts of the flux are used) resembles Φ-machine or Gramm's generator. Read in this issue more details on these devices.
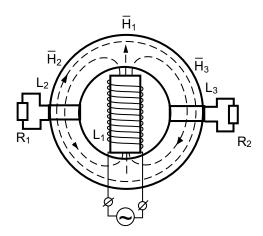
Flux-machine And Its Analogues
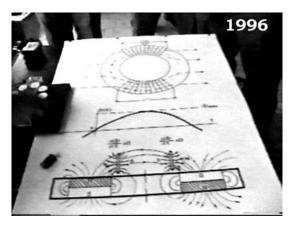
Review prepared by correspondent **Alla Pashova,** Russia

Flux-machine (or Φ-machine, since configuration of its field resembles the Russian letter "Φ") was designed by Alexander V. Frolov during the first half of 1990s. Φ-machine description was published more than once on the pages of scientific periodicals (1994, Institute of New Energy, Newsletter, June 1994, p.9.; 2002, New Energy Technologies, 2002, p.3), and it is well known to many researchers concerning themselves with such kinds of engineering.

Let us consider the arrangement of Φ-machine; see Fig. 1 (first published in 1994). A report was presented at the conference «New ideas in natural science», 1996 in Saint Petersburg (see photo in Fig. 1). The primary coil is mounted in the center of generator; two secondary ones are diametrically wound on a ring core. An air gap between ring and central magnetic circuits are of particular importance. **Two magnetic fluxes from two coils are balanced, and, thereby, there is no reaction in the primary circuit.**
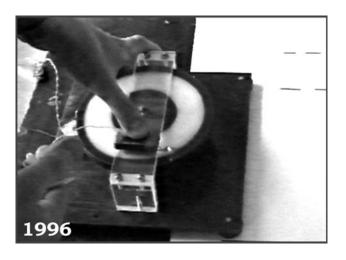
Fig.1
See also Fig. 7, p.29 – the analogy is evident

The device bears some similarity to the Gramm's generator (Zenob Theophyl Gramm, 1826-1901, Belgium-France, took out a patent for an electric ring-rotor generator in 1869). In Gramm's generator (Fig. 2) the ring rotor with a toroidal winding rotates. The toroidal winding touches two diametrically located conducting brushes. It turns out that in the ring of the rotor all winds of one rotor half create a field which is directed towards a field created by the other rotor half.
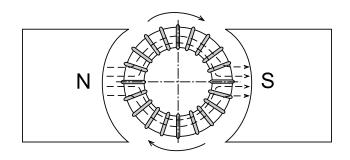
Fig. 2

An example of analogous device is represented in Fig. 3 (information is from the website: http://www.skif.biz/energy/arhiv1-6.shtml), and also in Fig. 4 (we have written about this invention in New Energy Technologies, Issue #5 (8), 2002, article by V.I. Boryak, Email: spin@i.com.ua).

F-motor

$$\Sigma \bar{H} = \bar{H}2 + \bar{H}3 = 0$$
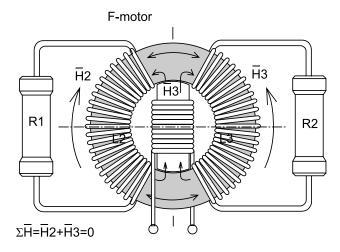
Fig. 3
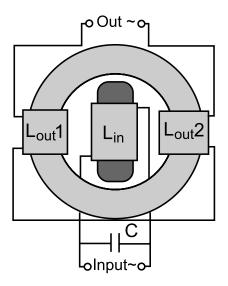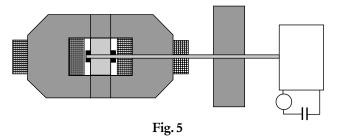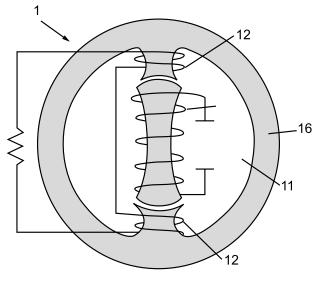
Fig. 4

In August 1999, according to Stephen Hartman (Hartman Multimedia Service, Email: hart@harti.com, info@ccard.net), a German research team designed a toroidal generator. As stated by the researchers, it obtained more than 1.200 W by load while efficiency exceeded 100%!

This subject has become very popular among different researchers. Fig. 5 illustrates a design with a magnet rotating in the center (designer - Olaf Berens, Email: olaf.berens@prognost.com).

Fig. 5

One more example from the USA: in February, 2003 Donald Hofmann (USA) filed an application for patenting "Generators and transformers with toroidally wound stator winding». Below we publish the description of the patent.
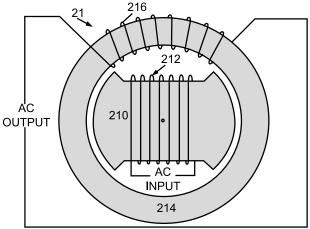
Fig. 6

Inventors: **Steven L. Sullivan, USA; David L. Goulet, USA; Donald Hofmann ,USA.**

Electrical generators are provided with toroidally wound stator windings electrically connected in series; a high permeability stator core, preferably an amorphous magnetic alloy material, glassy metal or HYPERCO™ 50 laminations; and a rotor. The toroidally wound stator coils and the stator core trap essentially all of the flux fields generated by the stator coils within the stator core. Since there is essentially no magnetic field leaving the stator, there is essentially no flux field interaction with the field generated by the rotor. The reduction of flux field interaction also reduces counter torque.

According to another embodiment of the invention, open positions of a rotor may be filled with magnetic material, preferably iron. Filling open portions of the rotor may assist in reducing undesirable flux leakage from the rotor. By trapping substantially all of the flux within the rotor, interaction between rotor and stator flux is reduced. In this manner, counter torque is reduced thereby increasing the overall efficiency of the device.

A prototype of this embodiment was constructed using a standard 10 kWtt gas-powered generator. The stator was removed from the generator and its housing. The stator windings were removed from the stator and rewound by hand using a No. 10 size copper wire with 180 winds wrapped in a toroidal fashion around approximately 180 degrees of the stator.

The stator was then reinstalled in the modified housing and re-attached to the gas-powered generator. A standard 12 volt car battery was attached to the input of the rotor. A 12.92 volt input with 0.8 Amps was measured as the input to the rotor. The output was measured as 6.5 volts with a 40 Amp output. A series of input and output measurements were taken for various inputs.

Editor: Thus input power is 10 Wt, and output power is 260 Wt.

So, the old well-known ideas have found new ways of embodiment, though their essence remains unchanged. Let us note that Faraday Labs Ltd has been working on creating a prototype of □-machine with a toroid of 200 mm in diameter.

Please, read more about this in the next issue!

Editorial: We publish the specification of several interesting patents, which were taken out by Russian inventors for recent years.

Russian patents on alternative energetics

- №93001754, 1996.06.27, Converter of gravitational forces into energy, V.V. Mironov and others
- №92008720, 1995.02.10, Slavic method to produce energy by conversion of gravitational forces, V.V. Mironov
- №93006696, 1995.04.30, Supporting converter of gravitational forces into energy, V.V. Mironov
- №2001121071, 2003.04.10, Method to create energy in liquid, heat-generator and heat-and-power device, A.Yu. Baurov and others
- №2132109, 1999.06.20, Generator of mechanical energy, A.Yu. Baurov and others
- №2001125794, 2003.05.10, Generator of static electricity, S.I. Danilov
- №2001120796, 2003.04.10, Electric power device, D.M. Beliy
- №98116077, 2000.05.10, Heat engine (monotherm, "perpetual mobile of second-type"), V.I. Likhachov and others
- №93048971, 1996.04.20, Float engine, I.P. Tchinarev
- №94023174, 1996.03.27, Gravitational-hydrostatic engine, I.P. Tchinarev
- №98112650, 2000.03.20, Water engine, V.A. Gylchuk
- №2001115953, 2003.03.20, Potential engine by Prokopenko, V.F. Prokopenko
- №2001115954, 2003.03.20, Potential amplifier by Prokopenko, V.F. Prokopenko
- №2001124364, 2003.04.20, Drum of gravitation (gravity), I.A. Strelnikov
- №95107181, 1997.02.20, Method to convert energy of physical vacuum into energy of physical space, O.K. Polev and others
- №92008695, 1995.04.20, Method to get overunity efficiency, Yu.V. Karasev and others
- №93006851, 1995.04.30, Principle, method and device for circulation of mass by force of gravitation and inertia, G.S. Kirichenko
- №93039885, 1996.05.20, Hydro-gravitational electric power station, L.S. Konkov
- №93036371, 1995.11.27, Method to convert energy created in result of interaction of earth's gravity force and air bearing capacity into electric energy, V.I. Kovalenko
- №93025690, 1996.07.27, Method and device to convert heat energy into mechanical one, A.I. Lendyaev
- №2001122885, 2003.04.20, Rotary method to convert magnetic energy into mechanical one, L.N. Mezentsev
- №2001106783, 2003.02.10, Gravitational source of energy, A.D. Yurik and others
- №2001115968, 2003.03.20, Method to convert energy, V.S. Gorelyuh

According to another embodiment of the invention, open positions of a rotor may be filled with magnetic material, preferably iron. Filling open portions of the rotor may assist in reducing undesirable flux leakage from the rotor. By trapping substantially all of the flux within the rotor, interaction between rotor and stator flux is reduced. In this manner, counter torque is reduced thereby increasing the overall efficiency of the device.

A prototype of this embodiment was constructed using a standard 10 kWtt gas-powered generator. The stator was removed from the generator and its housing. The stator windings were removed from the stator and rewound by hand using a No. 10 size copper wire with 180 winds wrapped in a toroidal fashion around approximately 180 degrees of the stator.

The stator was then reinstalled in the modified housing and re-attached to the gas-powered generator. A standard 12 volt car battery was attached to the input of the rotor. A 12.92 volt input with 0.8 Amps was measured as the input to the rotor. The output was measured as 6.5 volts with a 40 Amp output. A series of input and output measurements were taken for various inputs.

Editor: Thus input power is 10 Wt, and output power is 260 Wt.

So, the old well-known ideas have found new ways of embodiment, though their essence remains unchanged. Let us note that Faraday Labs Ltd has been working on creating a prototype of Φ-machine with a toroid of 200 mm in diameter.

Please, read more about this in the next issue!

Editorial: We publish the specification of several interesting patents, which were taken out by Russian inventors for recent years.

Russian patents on alternative energetics

- №93001754, 1996.06.27, Converter of gravitational forces into energy, V.V. Mironov and others
- №92008720, 1995.02.10, Slavic method to produce energy by conversion of gravitational forces, V.V. Mironov
- №93006696, 1995.04.30, Supporting converter of gravitational forces into energy, V.V. Mironov
- №2001121071, 2003.04.10, Method to create energy in liquid, heat-generator and heat-and-power device, A.Yu. Baurov and others
- №2132109, 1999.06.20, Generator of mechanical energy, A.Yu. Baurov and others
- №2001125794, 2003.05.10, Generator of static electricity, S.I. Danilov
- №2001120796, 2003.04.10, Electric power device, D.M. Beliy
- №98116077, 2000.05.10, Heat engine (monotherm, "perpetual mobile of second-type"), V.I. Likhachov and others
- №93048971, 1996.04.20, Float engine, I.P. Tchinarev
- №94023174, 1996.03.27, Gravitational-hydrostatic engine, I.P. Tchinarev
- №98112650, 2000.03.20, Water engine, V.A. Gylchuk
- №2001115953, 2003.03.20, Potential engine by Prokopenko, V.F. Prokopenko
- №2001115954, 2003.03.20, Potential amplifier by Prokopenko, V.F. Prokopenko
- №2001124364, 2003.04.20, Drum of gravitation (gravity), I.A. Strelnikov
- №95107181, 1997.02.20, Method to convert energy of physical vacuum into energy of physical space, O.K. Polev and others
- №92008695, 1995.04.20, Method to get overunity efficiency, Yu.V. Karasev and others
- №93006851, 1995.04.30, Principle, method and device for circulation of mass by force of gravitation and inertia, G.S. Kirichenko
- №93039885, 1996.05.20, Hydro-gravitational electric power station, L.S. Konkov
- №93036371, 1995.11.27, Method to convert energy created in result of interaction of earth's gravity force and air bearing capacity into electric energy, V.I. Kovalenko
- №93025690, 1996.07.27, Method and device to convert heat energy into mechanical one, A.I. Lendyaev
- №2001122885, 2003.04.20, Rotary method to convert magnetic energy into mechanical one, L.N. Mezentsev
- №2001106783, 2003.02.10, Gravitational source of energy, A.D. Yurik and others
- №2001115968, 2003.03.20, Method to convert energy, V.S. Gorelyuh

- №2002131190, 2003.04.20, Method to convert heat energy into useful work, G.R. Umarov and others
- №2001122676, 2003.05.27, Device to get energy by conversion of energy from one state to another, T.A. Trushina and others
- №2131636, 1999.06.10, Fuel-less engine, V.E. Alekseenko
- №5037775, 1996.10.10, Magnetic engine, V.E. Alekseenko
- №94003087, 1995.12.27, Gravitational engine, A.A. Voznyukov
- №93058095, 1996.06.27, Perpetual mobile, Yu.S. Parshutin
- №93056706, 1996.07.27, Perpetual mobile, A.V. Remezovich
- №93039002, 1996.01.20, Gas-dynamic perpetual mobile, A.I. Lendyaev
- №94011000, 1995.11.27, Perpetual mobile by Makagyan, V.S. Makagyan
- №97114829, 1999.06.27, Perpetual mobile by Makagyan, V.S. Makagyan
- №95114965, 1997.08.10, Electric perpetual mobile by Abrakitov, V.E. Abrakitov
- №9512209, 1998.02.20, Perpetual mobile, V.V. Sharov
- №99111572, 1999.09.27, Perpetual mobile, N.M. Rotar
- №98116343, 2000.05.10, Engine-electric saw (perpetual mobile), V.V. Smirnov
- №2000101256, 2001.11.20, Perpetual mobile, V.D. Rykov
- №2000120592, 2002.07.20, Perpetual mobile, K.I. Harazov
- №2001117783, 2003.03.20, Magnetic perpetual mobile, S.N. Verevkin
- №2001123502, 2003.04.20, Magnetic engine, A.E. Ryumin
- №5032711, 1995.02.20, Ferromagnetic engine, V.P. Levkin
- №94019782, 1996.01.10, Device for demonstration of conversion of permanent magnet energy, M.F. Ostrikov and others
- №95103846, 1996.11.27, Magnetic generator, M.F. Ostrikov and others
- №95112010, 1997.06.27, Method to convert permanent magnet energy into rotary motion, A.V. Starostin and others
- №2143170, 1999.12.20, Method to convert energy of mechanical loading into energy of repeated transference, V.I. Rahovsky and others
- №2000119415, 2002.06.20, Method to convert energy of fields of permanent magnets into mechanical work, Yu.S. Pilipkov
- №2001109811, 2003.02.27, Method to capture and convert energy of physical vacuum into electric energy, S.N. Kovalev
- №99121374, 2001.11.10, Perpetual mobile, E.M. Volodin
- №94026259, 1996.05.20, Device to convert magnetic field energy into kinetic energy, P. Imrish

Device for conversion of magnetic field energy into kinetic energy

Author: Pavel Imrish

Fig. 1

The invention refers to a device for conversion of magnetic field energy into kinetic energy. The device has a rotating wheel with at least two radially opposing non-magnet holders used as guide ways for at least two permanent magnets, respectively. The permanent magnets are mounted in the holders so that there is a possibility to remove them. From the both sides of the wheel plates made of magnetic material are mounted axially; the plates surround the wheel partially. Depending on direction of the both poles, namely on location of the similar and opposite poles towards each other, compression element is situated on the holders, or between the wheel and the outer end of the permanent magnet located at the furthest radial distance from the axle of the wheel, or between two permanent magnets. (The device operation principle is obvious from Fig. 1).

Editor: We have found an example of a similar device whose description is presented in the book by R. Ford The Perpetual Motion mystery [1].

In this case, there is an analogous process, during which half of the cycle is screened and the rotor is supposed to rotate permanently (see Fig. 2).

1. RA. Ford, The Perpetual Motion mystery. Lost Technology Series, p.23.
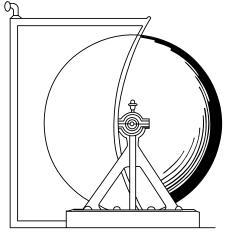
Fig. 2

Gravity spaceships

Review on Grigory R. Uspenskiy's works, Russia

http://space21.boom.ru/gravity.htm

The level of development of modern astronautics is primarily determined by the energy capabilities of space carriers. So, nowadays, the single-mission carrier rockets equipped with chemical engines allow space exploration within the solar system. These carriers have delimited the near-earth space in the form of a geostationary orbit, where the practical-purpose space complexes operate.

Newer and higher levels of quality will be reached by cosmonautics upon its mastering gravity power engineering. Flights towards the nearest stars will become possible and by the end of the next century this will be followed by travels throughout Galaxy.

Gravity engines are structurally simple (**two bodies of different density are rigidly connected**). To form some practicably significant value of thrust it is required to use absolutely new technology regarding creation and retaining of matter of high density which can be compared to that of atomic nuclei. For instance, at an engine mass of about 2 t, it is possible to attain 10 N thrust using bunches of aluminum and lead nuclei. The nuclei are approached to each other at a distance comparable with sizes of these bunches.
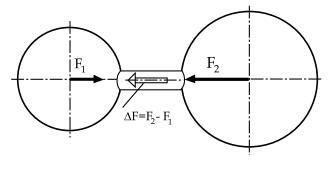
Fig. 1

Use of matter which is denser than nuclei bunch, increase of mass of the gravitating bodies, and reduction of the distance between the bodies causes increase of thrust. So, for a level of density of gravity holes (i.e. for extremely dense state of matter in which it is not attracted by other bodies) limit value of acceleration of the gravity engine reaches the order of 10^{100} ms^{-2}.

In engineering, we usually use units of distance as meters, centimeters, millimeters, and microns. Let us consider one of them – millimeters. With such a size of the gravitating bodies and distance between them, it is possible to obtain substantial thrust forces of the gravity engine and, accordingly, accelerations of its motion.

So, using an engine of 20 ton mass we will get the thrust of 2×10^4 N, with mass of 200 ton we will get the thrust of 2×10^6 N, and so on. Thus, by increasing the engine mass by one order of magnitude, we obtain increase of thrust by two orders, while sizes of the bodies remain unchanged. But acceleration, in this occasion, remains constant and equal to approximately 1 m/s^2.

Decrease in size of gravitating bodies of the engine leads to the corresponding increase of thrust by an order. Decrease of size is realized by increase of density of these bodies by 3 times up to 0.3 mm at the same masses. The acceleration they produce is increased by an order as well, i.e. up to 10 m/s^2. Decrease of sizes of the gravitating bodies and the distance between them down to 0.1 mm results in further increase of engine thrust by one more order and also increase of acceleration up to 100 m/s^2. If size of the bodies is 1 micron then acceleration increases up to 10^6 m/s^2.

It is apparent that even with up-to-date technological possibilities of miniaturization the gravity engine with masses of dozens and hundreds of tons is capable to create great thrust forces and form accelerations considerable enough to fly across the Galaxy. Therefore, the problem of creating a gravity engine is, mainly, the problem of producing and retaining the high-density matter. It will be possible after studying the mechanism of interaction between matter & gravitational substance followed by developing techniques for synthesizing of high-density, large-mass, and small-size substance from this matter.

It is possible to control the value of thrust of the gravity engine changing the distance between gravitating bodies. Thrust direction can be changed by turning the rigid connection of the gravitating bodies. The engine can

be activated by bringing the gravitating masses together, and switching-off by moving them apart.

In a 24-hour period, such a ship can reach a speed of 10^6 m/s and cover a distance of about 10^{10} m. In a month, with a top speed of 3×10^7 m/s the ship will cover the distance of 10^{13} m; in a year, with a speed of 4×10^8 m/s the ship will cover a distance of 10^{15} m; in 10 years - 4×10^9 m/s and 10^{17} m, respectively. Apparently, the ship with sufficient over-load can be used for flights within the solar system and for manned flights towards the nearest stars.

When transporting unbreakable and non-urgent cargoes, the acceleration can be increased up to a few dozens of unities. The flight duration might be also increased by several tens of years. This extends the area of utilizing the gravity ships with over-loads of several unities. Besides these ships can be used for transporting operations within near vicinities of the Galaxy.

The high-speed flight will demand protection against approach flow of matter. So, per second (with a ship speed of 10^{10} m/s) 10^{-12} kg of matter will approach the ship. At that density of interstellar material is 10^{-24} kg/m^3 and midship area is 10^2 m^2.

The great speed of approaching matter will create a substantial resisting force. At a speed of 10^{10} m/s, this force will come to the order of 10^{-2} N, whereas with a speed of 10^{18} m/s it will come to 10^{14} N. This is a great value, but as compared to thrust of such a ship which is to equal to 10^{17} N, the former value is a small one. That is why it is possible to overcome such resisting force.

Intercommunication with these ships might be, most likely, realizable by means of distortion of gravitational field. It is possible that the gravitational field distortion will be formed, on the contrary, by generating the matter from the gravitational field, and, most probably, by a method as yet unknown.

Floyd Sweet Bench Test DVD

On Velocity of Drive-Free Motion

S.A. Gerasimov , V.V. Stashenko, Russia

Physics Department, Rostov-on-Don State University,
Zorge St. 5, 344090, Rostov-on-Don, Russia

Editorial: We publish a summary of the article. The original text you can receive from the authors.

A drive-free system made on the basis of a planar mechanism is described. The experimental results on average velocities of the drive-free propulsive system are presented in a scaled view.

During usual motion, a system is repealed from the surface in the case of its motion on a plane or from the medium when it moves in a resistance medium. This kind of motion is achieved by using a drive mechanism. In contrast to the usual motion, the drive-free propulsive system moves due to interaction of a body of a system with another body of the same system. Sometimes such machines are called inertioids [1] or vibration propulsive devices [2]. To produce such kind of motion it is sufficient to provide anisotropy of the resistance force [3-5] or asymmetry of the internal force [6]. One of the simplest ways to do it is to use a simple two-link planar mechanism. A device for such a motion is shown in Fig. 1.

Fig. 1

Experimental device

This device with a total mass of M+m consists of a platform P on which an electric motor E rotating a drive rod R of length r is mounted. This is only one part of the planar mechanism. Another link is the connecting rod C of length c which connects the unbalanced load L and the drive rod R by means of two bell bearings B. The unbalanced load L of mass m on the rod I slides in guide G. The basic distinction of this mechanism is in that this variant of drive-free machine allows us to analyze the experimental data on average velocities of

motion. Actually the only forces, which act on the platform and are collinear to the moving direction, are the force **F** caused by vibrations of the load L and the frictional force $\mathbf{F}_f$. The platform starts to move when the force acting on the platform becomes greater than the frictional force.

Let us discuss possibilities of the real propulsive system shown in Fig. 1. Measurements were made at r=0.01 m and at three mass ratios m/M. The values of frictional coefficients were measured for each parameter of the system and vary from k=0.25 to k=0.4. The system starts moving when theoretically the drift does not take place. When motion becomes reversible, the velocity of drive-free drift does not decrease.

Thus drive-free motion is possible even if the frictional coefficients are very small. When increasing the frequency of vibrations velocity does not decrease. We can not discuss the existence of some third force acting on the platform (we can suggest the existence of frictional force $\mathbf{F}_f$ and the internal force **F** caused by vibrations). Let somebody else take the liberty of making such a conclusion!

References

1. Tolchin V.N. Inertioid. // Perm: Perm Book Publisher. 1977. Blekhman I.I. Vibrational Motion. // Moscow: Nauka. 2000. Nappo F. Sulla Influenza Indiretta Delle Forze Inertne sul Moto del Baricentro. // La Ricerca Scientifica (Rendiconti). 1965. V. 8. No 1. P. 3-14.
2. Gerasimov S.A. Anisotropy of Frictional Force and Vibrational Motion. // Problems of Applied Physics. 2001. V 7. P. 85-88.
3. Gerasimov S.A. Self-Similarity of Vibrational Motion in a Resistant Medium. // Journal of Applied Mechanics and Technical Physics. 2002. V. 43. No 1. P. 90-92.
4. Gerasimov S.A. A Real Model of Vibratory-Impact Propulsive Device. // Problems of Applied Physics. 2000. V 6. P. 117-118.
5. Langhaar H. L. Dimensional Analysis and Theory of Models. // New York: Willey. 1951.

ELECTROMAGNETIC SELF-ACTION

S.A. Gerasimov, A.V. Volos, Russia

Physics Department, Rostov-on-Don State University,
Zorge St. 5, 344090, Rostov-on-Don, Russia

The torque of a self-action exerting on the mobile part of the reactionless engine is measured. It is shown that there exists a value of the height of the mobile electrode at which the torque of self-action is maximal.

There is an opinion that a body can not act on itself [1]. The existence of the so-called force of self-action is believed to contradict to the law of conservation of momentum. This is nothing but prejudice. Though the experimental confirmations of existence of self-action [2-4], conventional science is ready to refuse modern electrodynamics and make up a new theory of electromagnetism [1, 5] in order to save Newton's third law in use. It is comprehensible. First of all, these are the theoretical [5] and experimental [3] errors. The equivalence [5] of the Biot-Savart force is mathematically coarse since in this case the highest terms of expansion of force of self-action are cast out. This equivalence violates law of action and reaction and Ampere force law for which the principle of equality and collinearity of action and reaction forces is valid. Non-linearity of dependence of the torque of self-action on the current intensity [3] makes us doubt in the validity of these results. Moreover, typical values of force [2, 4] and torque [3, 6] are too small even if direct current in the circuit is significant. It is required to pass through the direct current of hundred amperes to produce the considerable displacement or turn of a body. As a result, small values of the effect caused ambiguity in the explanation of the phenomenon [1].

In fact, searching the reactionless propulsive devices we usually forget about the magnetic self-action which arises when a body consisting of a magnet and incomplete electric circuit can move violating law of action and reaction [7]. This violation is proved theoretically [8] but peculiarities of this motion are not well discussed. The principle of such a motion is shown in Fig. 1. This is the magnetic interaction between two current elements one of which is a part of a closed circular loop L and another is perpendicular to the first one. Since the force $d\mathbf{F}_{jm}$ acting on any current element of the loop L is perpendicular to the density of current $\mathbf{j}_m$ then the Z-component of the torque $d\mathbf{N}_m = [\mathbf{r}_m \times d\mathbf{F}_{jm}]$ is equal

to zero while torque which exerted on the second current element by the magnetic field of the loop, does not.
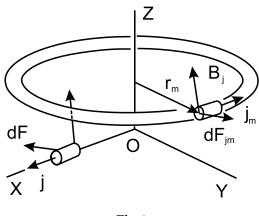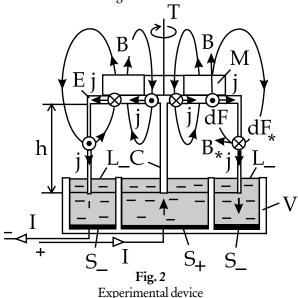
Fig. 1

Violation of law of action and reaction.
The force $d\mathbf{F}_{jm}$ with which the magnetic field $\mathbf{B}_j$ of another current element acts on the current of density $\mathbf{j}_m$, is not equal nor opposite to the force $d\mathbf{F}$ with which the magnetic field $\mathbf{B}$ of the first current element acts on the current of density $\mathbf{j}$.

An experimental device is shown in Fig. 2. A commercially available ring-shaped carbon-steel magnet M (inner radius – 20 mm; outer radius – 55 mm, height – 25 mm) of 2.2×10^5 A/m magnetization is located on the cover of a cylindrical electrode E suspended by thread T. The electrode E is furnished with a central electrode C of the same height h and 5 mm diameter. The radius of the electrode E is 130 mm. The open end of electrode E and the central electrode C are submersed in a conducting liquid L_+ and L_- placed in two volumes of a vessel V so that the depth of submergence of these parts is about 5 mm. In this experiment the conducting fluid is 10% solution of copper sulfate ($CuSO_4 5H_2O$). The vessel V consists of two thin coaxial plastic cylinders of 2 mm thickness. The radii of the plastic cylinders having the common bottom are equal to 10.5 cm and 18 cm. The height of the vessel is 12.5 cm. A disk and a ring-shaped electrodes S_+ and S_- of 1.5 mm thickness are placed on the bottom of the vessel to supply the direct electric current of intensity I. All conducting parts of the device are made of copper. The thickness of the electrode E is 1.5 mm.

When the direct current I of density $\mathbf{j}$ flows through the electric circuit, the magnet and the electrode E rotate in the direction of the magnetic force $d\mathbf{F}$ which is proportional to the vector product $[\mathbf{j} \times \mathbf{B}]$ as shown in Fig. 2. This is a force of self-action by means of which the mobile part of this device consisting of the magnet M and the electrode E acts on itself. However there is no force of reaction which could cause such a rotation. This is really true since a ring-shaped magnet is equivalent to two cylindrical surfaces with the surface current of density $\mathbf{j}_m$. The force of self-action $d\mathbf{F}$ acting on the cover of the electrode is compensated by the force of self-action $d\mathbf{F}_*$ acting on the cylindrical part of the electrode E. Magnetic induction field $\mathbf{B}_*$ "does its part" as shown in Fig. 2. Therefore, it would be appropriate to find out how the height of the electrode E influences the value of the torque $\mathbf{N}$. Such an influence is demonstrated in Fig. 3.
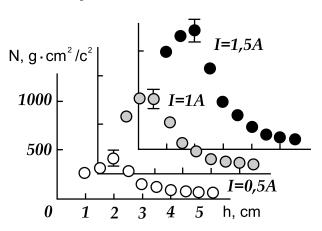
Thus there exists the value of the height h at which torque of self-action is maximal. This is the first result of the present work. At $I = 1$ A and $h = 2$ cm the electrode E turns at angle of 2.2 radian (126 °) with respect to the equilibrium position. Such a turn corresponds to 3.4×10^2 gxcm^2/s^{2}rad, i.e to the constant of torsion of the thread. The second result is that the maximum value of the torque of self-action N at the current $I = 1$ A is even larger than the value of the torque produced by the traditional unipolar device [3] at the current 50 A.

In fact, this work represents an attempt to draw attention to a more effective and simple practical application of the self-action. It remains only to transfer electric current in an unclosed electrical conductor and such a possibility really exists.

References

1. Graneau N. The Finite Size of the Metallic Current Element. // Physics Letters A. 1990. V. 147. N. 2-3. P. 92-95.
2. Sigalov R.G., Shapovalova T.I., Karimov H.H., Samsonov N.I. Magnetic Fields and Their New Applications. // Moscow: Nauka. 1976.
3. Das Gupta A.K. Unipolar Machines. Association of the Magnetic Field with the Field-Producing Magnet. // American Journal of Physics. 1963. V. 31. N 6. P. 428-430.
4. Cavalleri G., Bettoni G., Tonni E., Spavieri G. Experimental Proof of Standard Electrodynamics by Measuring the Self-Force on a Part of a Current Loop. // Physical Review E. 1998. V. 58. N 2. P. 2505-2517.
5. Christodoulides C. Equivalence of the Ampere and Biot-Savart Force Law in Magnetostatics. // Journal of Physics A. 1987. V. 20. N 8. P. 2037-2042.
6. Serra-Valls A., Gago-Bousquet G. Conducting Spiral as an Acyclic or Unipolar Machine. // American Journal of Physics. 1970. V. 38. N 11. P. 1273-1276.
7. Gerasimov S.A., Volos A.V. On Motion of Magnet in Conducting Fluid. // Problems of Applied Physics. 2001. V. 7. P. 26-27.
8. Gerasimov S.A. Self-Interaction and Vector Potential in Magnetostatics. // Physica Scripta. 1997. V. 56. N 3-4. P. 462-464.

Fig. 2
Experimental device
(•) and (x) – directions of magnetic forces acting on various parts of the mobile electrode E

Fig. 3
Dependence of the torque N on the height of the electrode h at various values of the direct current I in the circuit

Uranium Photoaccumulator

Anton N. Yegorov, Russia

St.Petersburg Institute of Nuclear Physics, Russian Academy of Sciences, Gatchina, 188350, Leningrad region, Russia
http://www.pnpi.spb.ru, Email: bti@isppd.pnpi.nw.ru

Photoaccumulators are galvanic elements consisting of two communicating vessels, one of which is exposed to light and another is kept in darkness. Ionic composition of electrolyte, which fills these vessels, depends on intensity of illumination. If an inexpensive electrode is placed in each vessel, then a potential difference will appear. If the electrodes are closed at external working resistance the electron stream will begin to equalize ionic composition and the difference in illumination intensity will tend to disbalance it. As a result, a certain working mode will be established which will allow to utilize the photoaccumulator for production of industrial electrical energy. As distinct from the solar battery, which works while exposed to the light, the photoaccumulator stores some part of solar energy in its electrolyte which is supplied with electrical energy after sunset too.

The idea of photoaccumulator is not a new one. It was established in the end of 19th century that it is feasible to create a photoaccumulator containing electrolyte made of the following mixture: $Fe^{2+} + Hg^{2+} = Fe^{3+} + Hg^+$.

This photoaccumulator was not adopted in practice because of high toxicity of the electrolyte and very low EMF (approximately 0.018). Development of technology is accompanied by a widening range of materials and matters which can be used in large scale production and power industry. Among such materials are, in particular, titanium, depleted uranium and rare-earth elements. Nuclear power industry uses U235 isotope only. Naturally occurring compound contains only 0.72% of U235. Hundreds of thousands of U238 from which U235 has been extracted are kept as useless stock.
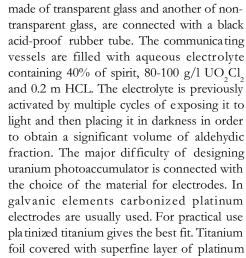
In the end of sixties in one of radiochemical laboratories of LINP (Leningrad Institute of Nuclear Physics) P. N. Moskalyov repeated the same experiment over a long period of time. In the morning he placed a tightly closed retort filled with uranyl-chloride soluted in compound of water, spirit and hydrochloric acid on the window-sill. The solution in the retort changed its color from yellow to emerald-green. Before leaving the laboratory Moskalyov removed the retort with green solution from the windowsill to a closed chest. In the morning Moskalyov retrieved the retort with the solution (which was already yellow) from the chest and placed it on the sill. The solution became green again and the whole process repeated daily.

Chemical processes in uranium electrolyte are rather complicated: first, under the light influence the uranyl ion oxidizes ethyl alcohol, which is then transformed to aldehyde:
$$UO_2^{+2} + C_2H_5OH^+ = U^{iv}(OH)_2 + C_2H_4O.$$

In the dark ions of urany-4 interact with aldehyde and are transformed to UO_2 uranyl ion and spirit again. Thus, **this cyclic process can take place over a significant period of time being supported by the energy provided by light quanta of visible light which are transformed into the heat.**

The idea of utilizing this process in order to obtain electrical energy emerged in the late nineties. The mechanism of uranium photoaccumulator is very simple (Fig. 1): two glass vessels, one made of transparent glass and another of non-transparent glass, are connected with a black acid-proof rubber tube. The communicating vessels are filled with aqueous electrolyte containing 40% of spirit, 80-100 g/l UO_2Cl_2 and 0.2 m HCL. The electrolyte is previously activated by multiple cycles of exposing it to light and then placing it in darkness in order to obtain a significant volume of aldehydic fraction. The major difficulty of designing uranium photoaccumulator is connected with the choice of the material for electrodes. In galvanic elements carbonized platinum electrodes are usually used. For practical use platinized titanium gives the best fit. Titanium foil covered with superfine layer of platinum is currently widely used in electrochemical industry and is procurable.

In the transparent vessel the titanium petal-shaped electrodes are parallel the light flow, so the light quanta move freely through the solution.

In working condition each photoaccumulator produces 10 mA of current at 0.3 volt voltage, so they are to be connected in large batteries, both in series and in parallel.

It is also necessary to consider the aspect of safety. Until now, the depleted uranium has been used for one purpose only, namely, for manufacturing of cores for armor-piercing shells. When used in this manner, the uranium is pulverized, which leads to environmental damage. The battery of photoaccumulators is placed in hermetic metal chest; the front panel of the latter must be made of solid safety glass. Such a system will protect the photoaccumulator battery from malicious intent and the security staff from weak uranium radioactivity.

International Prize on Power Engineering "GLOBAL ENERGY"

Zhores I. Alferov

International Prize "Global Energy" was first presented in St. Petersburg on June 15, 2003. The bonus fund of $900,000 was shared between three scientists "whose work has been and is still important both to the last century and future research", said Zhores Alferov, Chairman of the Global Energy Prize Award International Committee.

Nick Holonyak, Professor at the University of Illinois (USA), was awarded for "fundamental contributions to the development of power silicon electronics and invention of the first semi-conducting light-emitting diodes in a visible part of the spectrum". Thyristor invented by Holonyak allows the transformation of direct current into alternating and vice versa, to direct this process, to store and accumulate energy. This device is used for every electric locomotive, for frequency transformation. Such devices help to save significant amounts of energy, thus, about 30 percent of all energy produced in the world is processed through thyristors.

said the Chairman of Expert Commission, Academician Vladimir Fortov. "This is one of the key inventions leading to the search of new ways of sustainable energy saving".

Gennady Mesyats, Academician of Russian Academy of Sciences, and **Ian Douglas Smith**, Senior Scientist at The Titan Pulse Science Division, were awarded for giving birth to a new direction in the field of power engineering, i.e. power pulse energy. Due to their research, commutation of high-level currents at megavatt levels of voltage has become possible; a number of powerful current choppers have been created, futhermore, there have been developed transformer constructions which allow avoiding energy loss in power transmission lines. These research and innovations resulted in the creation of a number of unique pulse power machines and devices widely used in Russia and abroad ("Aurora", "Helia" (USA), "Sinus", "Gamma", "Maus", "Pik" (Russia) and others).

Diploma of Global Energy Prize laureate

Nick Holonyak's other invention, i.e. semi-conducting light-emitting diodes in a visible part of the spectrum, has led to development of a new field of the modern power engineering. Supposedly, efficient and safe light-emitting diodes will replace daylight lamps in the next ten years.

"Although Nick Holonyak's invention dates back to the end of the 50ies of the last century, it remains current"

Teleportation

Review prepared by correspondent Alla Pashova, Russia

For conventional science, the term "teleportation" is not worthy of serious consideration unless ascertained by compulsory "quantum" teleportation. Thus, teleportation is unconditionally referred to microworld phenomena and, in fact, comes to distant information transfer. Spatial transference of a macroobject of definite mass has been excluded.

Teleportation of states

What does **quantum teleportation** mean? During active development of quantum theory, in 1935, the so-called EPR-paradox (Einstein-Podolskiy-Rozen paradox) was formulated in the well-known work "Can quantum-mechanical description of reality be full?" written by Albert Einstein, Boris Podolskiy, and Natan Rozen.

The gist of the paradox is as follows. There are two particles interacting for some time, thereby forming a common system. From the position of quantum mechanics, this coupled system can be described with a certain wave function. When interaction is over and particles scatter within arbitrarily large distances, they still will be described by the same function as before. At that, state of each separate particle cannot be known in principle that is apparent from uncertainty relation. Only when one of the particles enters a receiver, which records its parameters, the relevant characteristics of the other one emerge (exactly emerge, but not become known!). Thus instant unlimitedly distant "transmission" of quantum state of the particle is possible. Therewith, teleportation of the particle itself and transference of mass do not take place.

Einstein and his colleagues believed that existence of such particles predicted by quantum mechanics prove theory incompleteness. Thereof, the scientists inferred the necessity of other parameters (besides wave function) to describe quantum states. Otherwise, from the local viewpoint, correlations between elements of such a system could not be understood. It was far much later, when Bell showed that some of measurements could define these correlations and exclude any local hidden parameters. It was not until early 1980-s that famous experiments were performed finally eliminating a possibility of local hidden parameters.

In 1980, Alan Aspect experimentally proved that EPR-paradox in quantum world takes place indeed. Special measurements of state of EPR-particles indicated that EPR-pair not only has a common origin, but in addition, that one of the photons somehow "get to know" the way the second one was changed. In further experiments, existence of EPR-paradox was affirmed, even if particles of EPR-pair were removed from each other over a distance of 10 kilometers or so.

In 1993, Charles H. Bennett and his colleagues worked out a method to transfer the quantum state of some object of the microworld to another quantum object by means of EPR-pair and called this method "quantum teleportation". In 1997 a group of experimentalists under the direction of Anton Zeilinger for the first time implemented quantum teleportation of the photon state in the University of Innsbruck.

In such a way, researchers keep on improving the process of quantum teleportation. In 2001 Danish scientists managed to link gas particles spaced at a substantial interval from each other, by transmitting information about quantum state from one particle to another by means of laser. The quantum teleportation between two gaseous clouds were attained by Eugene Polzik and his colleagues in Orkhus University. They succeeded in coupling about million of cesium atoms, whereas the previous record was only four atoms.

Scientists of Australian National University destroyed a laser beam and nearly instantly recreated it in another point in space; in other words, they teleported photons of the laser beam. In contrast to previous similar experiments, the physicists managed to obtain the required result in 100 percents of cases. Ping Koy Lam, the head of the task group of Australian University, claimed that the first atom of solid substance was likely to be teleported within near three to five years. However, as most scientists admit, a task to teleport a human remains almost impracticable. Even teleportation of atoms, as compared to that of photons, is much more complicated process. It is even harder when dealing with molecules. It is basically possible (though practically very difficult) first to transfer a molecule to a minimum-energy state (ground state) causing it to radiate a certain

sequence of photons. These photons will find themselves in a certain superposition containing all the "quantum" information, which was available in the molecule. Thereafter, it is possible to teleport photon states by means of EPR-pairs. Moreover, it is also required that the classically measured information about a molecule. If molecule of minimum-energy state is present in the receiver, then this molecule, by interacting with teleported photons in a required order, will transform to the quantum state identical to that of the initial one. Consequently, the quantum state of molecule of a certain material will be transmitted, actually with velocity of light. When that happens, the quantum state at the transmitting side will be destroyed.

The human organism comprises about 10^{27} atoms. To save and transmit information on properties of that number of particles seems to be practically unachievable. "Theoretically, nothing prevents us from doing that, but complexity of the problem is such that now no one seriously thinks about the solution" – states Ping Koy Lam.

Being a method of information transmission, quantum teleportation has found its application in quantum computers, whose information is stored in the form of a set of quantum states. Impossibility to wiretap and copy transmitted information is considered to be an advantage of such computers. Those researchers, who, nevertheless, wish to answer the question of "How to teleport matter, but not its state?" have to seek for more perspective theories and techniques.

Teleportation of material objects

Those people, who really want to realize instant spatial transportation of objects, i.e. teleportation, should refer to studying properties of Space and Time. Quantum teleportation has a certain finite velocity that cannot exceed that of light. The genuine teleportation assumes that an object should set off from a starting point to a finishing point (these points differ by a certain distance X), at that the transference time comes to zero. The object to be teleported is not changed or taken to atoms to be gathered later at a distant point of space according to information transferred to this point. (Fig.1).

The object disappears from one place and simultaneously appears in another place. How is that possible? A body will disappear from point A and appear in point B if to bend space in such a way as to let point A and point B coincide. Then the object will instantly appear in point B since there is no interval between points A and B. Teleportation could be realized by a device, which would make it possible to superpose points A and B.
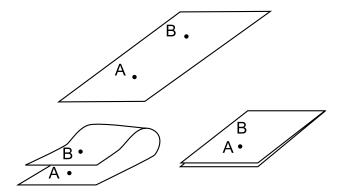
Fig. 1

Space is supposed to be unbendable without enormous energy consumption. However, Alexander V. Frolov points out that this issue is not so unambiguous: "Normally we consider space in connection with "natural" course of time existing in it. That is some degree of space curvature. Let us assume that it can be changed. The space curvature can be considered as acceleration or deceleration of time. Acceleration always demands, for instance in mechanics, some energy consumption. But if we "decelerate" time, energy is liberated and it can be accumulated for subsequent use".

K.Z. Leshan suggests surrounding a transferred object with a closed surface consisting of vacuum holes. Inside such a "hole sphere" there is geometry similar to that of a black hole. This place is absolutely isolated from the external Universe. No radiation is able to penetrate through the hole in space and time. For an observer, who is inside the hole sphere, the distance between sphere center and its border is infinitely large, since spatial metrics is ever-varying from the center to the border. Distances between the points is continuously shortened so that the distance between any couple of points comes to zero at the very hole surface. A matter transmitter can have inner or outer hole surface. In the first case a teleportation station has a spherical chamber to place the object. Equipment to produce holes should be located upon the outer side of the sphere. Such a station is capable to provide hundreds of launches a day by instantly expulsing spaceships to deep space over distances of millions of light years.

From microcosm towards macrocosm

Simeon Bocharov (member of Chemistry and Biochemistry Department, University of Delaver, Newark, USA) considers teleportation phenomenon using microobjects as an example and applying an interesting conception of protomatter.

In S. Bocharov's opinion, many paradoxes of the present-day science could be solved under condition of considering the whole existing matter to be a single continuum, i.e. protomatter. At this approach, the microcosm objects are not independent ones, being represented in the form of distortions of the very continuum and its manifestations here and now. Protomatter, whose distortion degree is beyond modern possibilities of detection, corresponds to vacuum. In the present-day paradigm redistribution of protomatter distortion corresponds to motion of particles. The important peculiarity is a refusal of such concepts as structure, dimensions, mass and other macroscopic characteristics with respect to microcosm objects, since here they are not considered as separate entities.

For experimental justification of his theory, S. Bocharov suggests to consider teleportation of microobjects incorporated in fullerens under low temperatures and pressure.
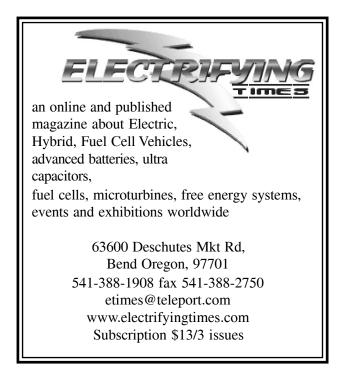
As a basis for reasoning he takes the fact that identical or similar conditions, whereon distortions are located, bring them to the state of identical or similar by lability/diffuseness. And vice versa, distortions, which are similar by lability/diffuseness, influence their near surroundings, creating, as a result, similar macroscopic states. In such a case protomatter distortion (in some spatial domains and under similar conditions) will cause appearance of similar distortions in another domain, whose degree of removal depends on presence of other distortions and their characteristics. In other words matter will be teleported from one spatial domain to another.

Possibility to realize teleportation of microobject causes the well-known phenomenon, which is nowadays described as embedding of particles into inner hollows of spheroid fulleren molecules without reacting with them. As object of teleportation there can be used distortions classified as elementary ones, such as hydrogen, helium or stable matters (noble gases). In both cases the influence of objects upon surroundings is minimized.

The researcher believes that in case of successful experiment, new pattern of matter structure will be confirmed, and valuable teleportation of microobjects (with prospects of such possibility for macrocosm objects) will be demonstrated.

One more approach to teleportation of physical macroobjects was considered in the work "Practical application of time rate control" (New Energy Technologies No. 3, 2001) by Alexander V. Frolov. It is assumed that density of space (aether) energy determines rate of passing of any processes including the very process of matter existence. Changes of aether density (increase or decrease) must result in the emergence of a force analogous to that of buoyancy, though acting towards the fourth dimension. This "chrono-motive force" (CMF) is also an analogue of electromotive force (EMF) and can be generated by analogy with electrodynamics. According to Alexander V. Frolov, laws of quantum mechanics as to discretization of levels of energy of material system, which exist in the domain of increased or decreased aether density, are valid in the macrocosm as well. Teleportation (as a transition from one state of the system to another one) can be studied with electron transference from one orbit to another as an example with the only difference that for the teleported object not only its location, but also the very spatial properties are changed. In aether of different density (after discrete transition) the same object will have different space around it, wherein time is decelerated or accelerated. Experiments of this field have already been in development stage.

Therefore, modern theoretical physics has handed the problem of teleportation to researchers-experimentalists, who possess sufficient breadth of mind. Perhaps, using teleportation technologies, they will manage to fundamentally alter the process of space exploration and raise our civilization up to radically new development level.

"Mass defect" in Home Conditions

Prokofy V. Sherbak, Russia

Mitinskaya Str., 40-1-244, Moscow, 123430, Russia
Tel.: (095)950-4135
Email: Prokofy@mail.ru

The idea to conduct experiments on "mass defect" demonstration appeared after a cycle of seminars, which took place in1993-1996 at the Moscow Aviation Institute under the direction of V. I. Patrushev, Doctor of Technical Sciences, Professor of "Designing of aerohydrodynamic systems" Department (the author of the article is also a graduate of the Department). At the seminars, an enterprising group studied and developed an applied theory of "Displacing fields" by Alexis V. Murlikin and an associate "Theory of energy exchange processes". Later the group was called **"Group studying non-inertial transference"** (non-inertial natural processes).

The experiment was aimed to test some theoretical suppositions, namely, that it is possible to influence on existent energy flows which input and output to the matter. At that the simplest way to influence indirectly is to change the medium the flows come through. In general, optic experiments on luminous flux refraction show the same. But light refraction and change of speed of light propagation at passing through different mediums is one thing; and change of mass of a material body is something new that has not ever been dealt with. Moreover you can consider light (i.e. electromagnetic radiation) to be the secondary manifestation of output energy flow. Besides mass defect is very important for nuclear physics because it "helps" to develop this branch and stimulates drawing "energy dividends" in splitting reactions, decay reactions and nuclear fusion reactions. But unfortunately we can not touch element nucleus and even million nuclei while we can easily touch metallic balls of 1 gram weight.

Let us note that a concept of mass is one of the most uncertain in physics. We can not measure mass directly. It is possible to do it only indirectly, by gravity, using scales (it does not matter what kind of scales are used), or by kinetic momentum (in this case mass is a measure of inertia) by means of dynamometers.

Thus it is evident that change of WEIGHT shown by scales is not MASS change as measure of matter quantity. Since one of the most important points of the theory of "Displacing fields" is creation of a vehicle of new generation, then one of the major tasks is to overcome gravity (to decrease weight). And this "home experiment" shows the way to solve it. However we can call it "home" only in part, because for weighing there were used electronic scales (mass-comparator with measurement accuracy of 0.1 microgram. (See Fig. 1).
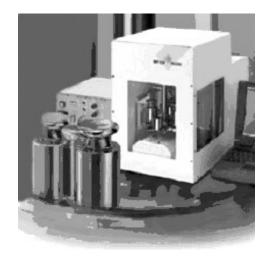
Fig. 1

Precision scales METTLER TOLEDO allows making:
High-accuracy weighing in the range
from 0.1 microgram to several tones
Measurement with resolution up to milliard points

Two sets were designed for weighing. The first one had an aluminum (Al) ball-kernel which weighed 1 gram and a lead (Pb) casing-shell consisted of two parts (half-spheres) which also has weight of 1 gram. The second set had on the contrary a lead kernel and an aluminum casing. The sets were disassembled and then hermetically assembled to make a single device with no gaps (See Fig. 2).

Since it had to be done with great accuracy and it was a piece article, not a Moscow product company undertook to produce it. And only one of the students, Nicholas Sorokin, a young boy with skilful fingers, had

helped. He invented a technology which allowed making balls of the necessary size at home conditions. He was literally pickling every micron of metal with acid and finally got the necessary size and weight.

So, the weight of a non-assembled set was: 1 gram (weight of kernel) and 1 gramm (weight of shell). Weight of an assembled set, according to the "Theory of energy exchange processes" by Murlikin, is not equal to the simple sum of the non-assembled components, and mass defect would be different for various sets right up to the change of sign.
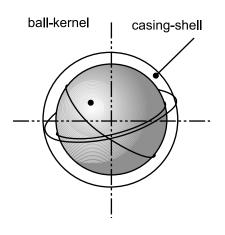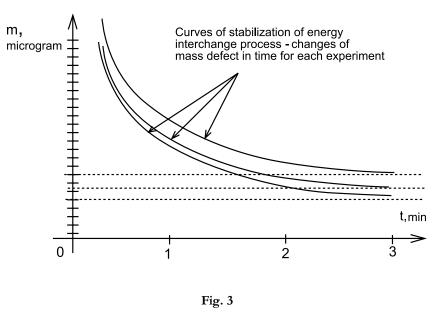
Fig. 2

Set of experimental balls

More than 50 experiments was carried out on weighing for every set. Assembled sets as well as non-assembled sets were weighed. **It was confirmed that there was an interaction between input and output flows for MATTER MAINTENANCE. It became apparent in the form of mass defect. Defect appeared in the sixth sign, i.e. it comes to the range from 0.0002% to 0.0007% of "kernel" mass (or "shell" mass). At that the lesser mass defect corresponds to aluminum shell, while the greater one corresponds to lead shell. Accuracy of weight**

measuring by the mass comparator exceeded the acquired result by 10 times. So we could not tell about inaccuracy of measurements. So we had to apply to the "Russian center of testing and certification" which was very famous all over the world (Rostest-Moscow).

In general that is all, we have got an answer for ourselves, and the period of testing is behind. We have to advance; very much is still to be done. In addition let us mention one more surprise we got during the experiments. The matter concerns some time delay in receiving final results of every weighing. A qualitative picture of it is represented in Fig. 3. We did not expect that this effect would appear at such a rough level of measurement of energy exchange processes.

Fig. 3

Time stabilization of the process for receiving final weight

The subsequent report and detailed discussion of the experimental results by specialists (including physicists of various specializations) resulted in an unexpected non-recognition of facts and distrust. The main argument was a demand to increase the number of experiments up to 5-10 hundreds. And only then scientists would be ready to accept facts. It was quite a predictable reaction for the orthodox science in the middle of 90s. It remains to hope that if the discussion took place today it would have a paved way. However it is not a fact.

In conclusion let us note that this experiment on revealing mass defect ranks with famous experiments, in which rotating gyroscopes also demonstrate mass defect (decrease of weight) and even one of higher order than in our experiment. But in return we have no rotation, no chemical and nuclear reactions, while mass defect is presented.

Let us add that it is possible to complicate the task: to make a double casing and to choose other materials for "kernel" and "shell". (See Fig. 2). In our case low prices and availability made us use Al and Pb. The results will be more interesting, for example, with Li and Os (and with other supertransuranic elements).

Aether as Unified Field

Alexander M. Mishin, Russia

Planernaya Str., 79-208, St.Petersburg, 197373 Russia
E-mail: samish@mail.ru

Based on the original observations and experiments, the article gives more precise definitions of aether model, than which was previously elaborated. General laws of the Universe aetherodynamic are considered. There is described a new physical reality in the form of quasi-real aetherodynamic structures ("topological harmonics") generated by dynamics of the substantial world.

At the present-day stage of physics development words of Maugham, an English philosopher, take on particular topicality: "The great verities are too important to be new". Indeed, we are increasingly making certain that our remote ancestors were familiar with fundamental laws of the Universe; furthermore, they knew these better than we do. But which methodology of cognition of Nature and what kind of information sources did the ancient scientists have? Today, we can openly say: they had not ordinary experience only, but also esoteric, pretersensual one, without feeling any necessity to be divided into materialists and idealists. For more details on evolution of physical ideas, refer to work [1].

In discovering all over again, I also had to elaborate a "cellular taction" strategy, which enables the most important characteristics of aetherodynamic processes to be sensually perceived and evaluated. The main thing is that all my sensory observations are definitely reproduced at laboratory experiments while the simplest physical equipment is used.

We may get reliable knowledge about Nature from Nature itself only. Thus foundation of classical physics describing usual substantial world is also based on empirical facts studied by Galilei, Newton, Faraday and many other physicists-natural philosophers. I also would like to defend great Newton against attacks on his adherence to inductive methods which really brought imperishable values into science.

A new convolution of cognition is possible on condition of introduction into science of new concepts based on empirical study of physical entities previously unknown. Thereupon, I share the thought of Elena Ventzel, professional mathematician: "Mathematical methods are not useful, but harmful until phenomenon is not studied at a pre-mathematical, humanitarian level". It is ideological and logical language that may be used today to discuss the aether problem, whose solution calls for comprehension of natural-science facts, which are beyond traditional notions settled over centuries.

The long-term investigations have confirmed that exhaustive definition of a fundamental natural entity was given by Rene Descartes: "Universe does not contain anything but aether and its vortexes". This is not merely a postulate; this is an objective summary of empirical observations of Nature phenomena. In any academical model of microcosm there is no answer to the question: what kind of substance are electrons, quarks, strings made of? That is the very substance our forefathers called aether. Aether is unified field indeed; and it appears that for nearly his whole life Einstein had been searching for something that was under his foot.

It must be recognized that there is no undistorted, quiescent aether in Nature; as well as no zero-size vortexes exist. Therefore, in a customary sense, the aether concept is pushed behind transcendental horizon and turned into an inconceivable entity whose mystique is tantamount to religious ideas. However, all quantum vortex-wave distortions of the superfluid three-dimensional aether, which have an appearance of tori, threads, solitons and occupy spatio-temporal spectrum from zero to inter-universe scale, are material and contain energy under scientific interpretation. Any spaces such as turbulent fields, physical vacuum, gravitational fields and, of course, matter are material. All of them are etherodynamic structures of the real world. Spatial hierarchy of aether vortices is referred to as quantum stairs, fractal structure or "matreshka" [2-5].

To understand basic laws of aetherodynamics it is necessary to give a general definition for classical matter

and other aether states. As a first approximation, let us give the name of matter to aether microscopic **left-screw** self-oscillating vortex-wave systems (elementary particles), whose existence and parameters are conditioned by higher hierarchical systems. This is our displayed world, with its electromagnetic fields and fundamental constants. Let us refer to vortex-wave structures of any vortex size, which in the considered space domain are **balanced** by a number of left- and right-screw vortices corresponding to matter and antimatter with prefix "quasi" to a free aether. Stable vortex lattices with alternating direction of helicity can be also considered in this case. Under natural conditions everything but classical matter or electromagnetic and gravitational fields can be related to the free aether. In the first place, these are the so-called physical vacuum and vortex fields, which attend gravitation. They represent anisotropic nonlinear subspaces and occupy definite places on spatio-temporal spectrum of the world aether. Particular free subspace creates an aggregate of topological harmonics [5] attending all the physical processes. Satellite of the gravitational field is distinguished because it belongs to specific class of stable vortex lattices.

Apparently, in general case, energy of free aether is virtual for our world due to its helical symmetry and quasi-matter, from the view of difference in sizes of typical vortices which correspond to protomatter. But this is not the entire point. There is also superfluidity of aether, whose vortex viscosity has marvellous properties. As a result, there are created phenomena of inertia and energy-information barrier separating material world from constant influence of quasi-real structures or turbulated space.

Classical inertia, as vortex viscosity, arises in the microscopic and more fine-structure free aether (in Newtonian space) and ever regularly reveals itself during acceleration of material bodies. However everything is different at stage of macrovortex aether, where inertia has properties of adaptation. Here it is affirmed that inertia phenomenon is "spread" throughout the spatial-temporal spectrum of vortex distortions of aether field. At that nature of inertia is changed. Within topoharmonic subspace in laboratory scales, the inertia law "diminishes" in time according to exponential dependence, whose time constant is determined by specific conditions and varied over wide limits (from seconds to many days). On the expiry of this time, inertial intercoupling transforms to the law of flicker effect. It may be said that flicker effect specify

penetrability of energy and information barrier after expiry of time of paraphysical regular phenomenon [6]. Consequently, most of time the interaction with free macroaether is of random character and should be evaluated by mean observation.

To extend conceptual scope of our investigation it may be added that in classical hydrodynamics a liquid, along with ordinary inertia, has determined vortex macroinertia, which is created by vortices of the liquid itself. Therefore, it is necessary to keep on comparing processes at all levels of the unified field of aether. For instance, electric inductance is a kind of specific inertia, and topological harmonics of electromagnetic and other phenomena are subjected to the energy-information barrier (under laboratory conditions).

In the above arguments, the principle of relativity is latently and unconsciously presented. However, this complicated question needs to be separately considered. Physical nature of the energy-information barrier and reason for dependence of the inertia properties upon the size of vortices of free aether remain unclear, too. However, it can be supposed that classical elementary particles, as distinct from protomatter, have self-oscillating properties and are commensurable with vortices of the surrounding free world; and that the above-mentioned energy-information barrier does not exist for them on microscopic section of the spectrum. The gist of the barrier itself comes to "memorizing" topoharmonic processes by Earth's gravitational fields and laboratory equipment. Turbulent fields (physical vacuum) do not have such a "memory".

Fig.1
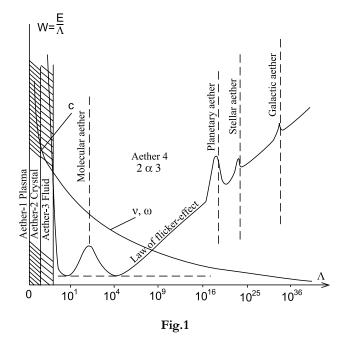
Fig.1 depicts diagrams of spectral density of vortices' energy; diagrams of rate of interaction transfer v and circular frequency ω depending on sizes of vortices of the world aether Λ (in picometers). As we can see, velocity of distortions propagation v is equal to velocity of light C in the physical vacuum, i.e. in electron sizes, exceeds C in nanocosm and tends to zero toward megacosms. Circular frequency of vortices rotation and course of physical time have the analogous qualitative dependence. However, vortices energy W has a feature and grows toward both ways from the lab scales; the aether numbers have been assigned conditionally, but all the specified phase states reflect some physical reality.

One of the most complicated questions is a definition of vortex matter in each particular case. The diagram demonstrates energy of free aether in the form of protomatter (simplest elementary particles – vortexes), and energy of classical elementary particles as helically definite self-oscillating emissions of aether field is localized in the most nonlinear subspace (physical or substantial vacuum). Unification of the elementary particles into atoms and macrobody does not denote direct transition to parallel world with different fundamental constants, whereas change of vortex size in the diagram exactly implies such a transition, though at a level of protomatter. This is a very intricate and crucial point. For example, a star is, unconditionally, an elementary particle of the relevant level of the Universe, even though comprising the ordinary matter.

Left wing of energy spectrum reflects property of the turbulent field of aether to gravitate, to sink down to the "bottom" transferring energy to the vortices of lesser scales. This phenomenon of distributed "gravitation" is available in every space point and explains a least-action principle. An illustrative analogue of this regularity is represented by the Earth's gravitational field and structure. Dense plasma assumed as iron core is situated in the center, and higher - there are magma, solid crust, water and air. These phase states exist in free aether within universe scales as well. Consequently, in femtocosm, and maybe at an even deeper energetic "bottom", there must be a plasmic subspace; evidently, it is assignable that aether translated from Greek means "fire".

Increase of energy to the right is connected with extending a dynamic band of the vortices spectrum, as the scale increases. In our world, this increase follows the flicker effect law, but this is only what we perceive across the energy-information barrier. Actually, at this section the vortex energy must increase well more

strongly, because **our observation capabilities are limited** by accessible matter processes. Turning back to stars, one may affirm that modern science is unable to evaluate their real energy (evaluations are considerably underrated). The Galaxy vortex entrains such deep levels of multidimensional space-aether to its rotation that this causes violation of the Newton's law of inertia. Notion of "hidden mass" is unnecessary for explaining dynamics of galaxies. It is quite enough to take into account that differential rotation entrains the fine-structure aether (inertial subspace), and this process results in decreasing the inertia and external centrifugal forces. Unfortunately, Fig. 1 reflects only a characteristic size of the galactic vortex and does not visually demonstrate its active band of the spectrum. The finer is the space structure, the more inertial and closer to the absolute reference frame is the space. Obviously, the non-homogeneous, stereodynamically multidimensional and multiphase aether requires a perfectly new theory of random fields, which would also make allowance for the phenomenon of the material world.

Energy motion processes or spectral energy-cascades along abscissa axis are of decisive importance for existence of our world and the Universe. These processes have unusual properties. The "violet" cascade is attended with reduction of vortices size, absorption of matter energy and tends to increase energy concentration at the "bottom" of the world aether (near ordinate axis on Fig.1). This regularity experimentally confirmed in both spatial and temporal domains is a direct consequence of the above-mentioned phenomenon of distributed gravitation and clarifies an existence of the left wing of the spectrum. In classical physics "the violet" cascade effect is reflected in the least-action principle as well as in the thermodynamics laws.

The "red" energy cascade (right wing of the spectrum) corresponds to increase of vortices size and is accompanied with energy liberation. To start it up under earthy conditions special technologies are called for [7]. This has been confirmed with laboratory experiments and underlies the "perpetual motion" theory, where energy is pumped from nanocosm to the classical material world. Conception of artificial biofield [6], I have developed, considers methods of creating the aether vortex-wave macroscopic-scale distortions in physical systems. As a matter of fact, we deal with **ways of extending of natural spatio-temporal spectrum of aether (which settled into itself) by creation of a subspace of the topological subharmonics of the classical elementary particles, atoms and molecules**

(physical bodies), within the context of the etherodynamics fundamental law [5].

Even within action of fluctuating energy-information barrier, the spectrum right wing exhibits existence of natural processes in Nature that, supposedly, violate the known laws of thermodynamics [8]. But, as far as Nature cannot conflict with itself, we have to recognize that there is another physics, which "works" in geographic and greater scales, where role of the energy-information barrier demands to be reappraised. To all appearance, the universe vortex partialyl entrains plasmic subspace of aether into its rotation, and conditions for realizing "red" energy-cascade and generating matter are created on the sections of the maximum density gradient ("spectral" non-linearity). But the same way as a fish in ocean does not know reasons for storms and currents, we will never learn which force untwists the Universe handwheel, whose energy feeds our substantial world.

There are two components of free aether field that are the most essential for the present-day physics. The first one (left wing) is positioned on the spectrum beside the "bottom" in the form of dense liquid-crystalline "plasmatic" medium transforming to the Newtonian inertial subspace (physical vacuum). Since inertia is as regular as electric inductance is, the first subspace proves to be especially material and not such free, because it has properties which were imposed by the Universe rotation and distributed "gravitation". Let us conventionally limit the spatial spectrum of the first component with a nucleon size. The second component of aether space (right wing of the spectrum) stretches towards larger scales.

Except for known cosmic objects, this is an unknown ocean of the macrovortex and really free aether, or topoharmonics, which are born by dynamics of the substantial world. It is an experimentally proven fact that topoharmonics are generated by photons, electrons, and all the moving bodies [5, 9].

The second component has an ability to conversely affect the matter it was generated by as well as other material objects via "flickering" forces [10, 11]. This special subspace turns out to be doubly virtual, a genuine phantom. That is why, it has been winning the status of a real physical entity with such a difficulty, while Chinese philosophers were familiar with the same thousands years ago, separating entities "yang" and "yin".

The laboratory experiments indicate that topoharmonics have not only properties described in [5], but also an

ability to interact with the space, creating a static domain of the excited aether in the course of propagation of the vortices-waves. At that physical bodies placing within this space volume are "charged" [2, 9]. The mentioned active domain (horizontal route) is "separated" by the Earth's gravitational field as follows: quasi-substantial constituent rapidly settles down creating vertical flow, but some phase structures are disintegrated very slowly (days, months, years).

The surprising thing is that biosystems equally belong to both aether components, not experiencing any constraint from the side of the energy-information barrier. The so-called human biofield is a topoharmonic part of physical body. It occupies its place on the spatio-temporal spectrum (Fig. 1). Quasi-substantial constituent (yang) and antiquasi-substantial one (yin) are strictly balanced, and acupuncture points and chakras are an analogue of Hartmann's geophysical grid, which is well-known to paraphysicists.

Conceptual generalization of physical ideas in the context of unified field of aether gives a constructive, cognitive impulse in solving of different problems, such as Nature's choice of exclusive laws for existence of "left-screw" material world as well as the problem of flicker-effect. At that, researching into the physical processes responsible for proton positive charge is of fundamental importance.

In conclusion, let us take note of conventional character of dividing the aether field into two components by the form of energetic spectrum. As a matter of fact, topoharmonics are generated by matter towards both larger spatial frequencies (subharmonics) and smaller ones (harmonics) and fill all levels of the Universe. The aforesaid is aimed at making perception of the most studied aspect of the **new physical entity** (vague due to diversity of hypothetical descriptions which exist in publications on this subject) more accessible.

Reference

1. A.P. Smirnov, I.V. Prokhortsev. Order principle. – Saint-Petersburg: ZAO «P and K», 2002. - 296 p.
2. A.M. Mishin. The aether model as a result of the new empirical conception. New ideas in natural sciences. (On materials of International Conference). Part 1 "Physical". - St.-Petersburg: RAS, 1996, p. 95-104.
3. A.M. Mishin. Fundamental properties of aether. Fundamental Problems of Natural Science. Series «Problems of the Universe research», fascicle 21 – Saint-Petersburg: RAS, 1999, p. 176-176.
4. A.M. Mishin. Physics of parallel worlds. / Fundamental Problems of Natural Science and Technics. Series «Problems of the Universe research», fascide 23 - Saint-Petersburg: Publishing

House of the Saint-Petersburg State University, 2001, p. 258-269.

5. A.M. Mishin. Etherodynamics basic law. / Fundamental Problems of Natural Science and Technics. Series «Problems of the Universe research», fascicle 26, part III. - Saint-Petersburg: Publishing House of the Saint-Petersburg State University, 2003, p. 206-218.

6. A.M. Mishin. Physical system with artificial biofield. / Fundamental Problems of Natural Science and Technics. Series «Problems of the Universe research», fascicle 23, - Saint-Petersburg: Publishing House of the Saint-Petersburg State University, 2001, p. 258-269.

7. V.F. Zolotarev, V.V. Roschin, S.M. Godin. About space-time structure and some interactions. - Moscow: Publishers «PREST», 2000. - 309 p.

8. V. Starr. Physics of phenomena with negative viscosity. - Moscow: MIR, 1971.

9. V.V. Kvartalnov, N.T. Perevozchikov. Discovery of a "non-physical" component of OKG radiation. Journal «Parapsychology and Psychophysics». - Moscow: 1999, No. 2 (28), p. 64-67.

10. A.M. Mishin. Longitudinal thermomagnetic effect. / Fundamental Problems of Natural Science and Technics. Series «Problems of the Universe research», fascicle 26, part III. - Saint-Petersburg: Publishing House of the Saint-Petersburg State University, 2003, p. 219-228.

11. A.A. Efimov, A.D. Shpitalnaya, Y.A. Zakoldaev. Eruptive prominences and earthquakes in the view of global space anisotropy. / «New Ideas in Natural Science». Series «Problems of the Universe research», fascicle 19, part II. – Saint-Petersburg: RAS, 1996, p. 403-413.

GLOBAL ENERGY

Philip M. Kanarev, Russia

The Kuban State Agrarian University, Department of Theoretical Mechanics
13, Kalinin Street, 350044 Krasnodar, Russia
E-mail: kanphil@mail.kuban.ru

Lately, the notion "Global energy" has become widely spread as a prize corresponding to this notion has been instituted in Russia. Since the Euclidean times, an unwritten law exists in science: to give definition to the notions, which are involved in scientific analysis. It is done for the purpose that everybody who uses this notion can understand the sense implied in it.

The Global energy problems have been discussed for a long time; they are well known. Depletion of natural energy carriers (oil, gas and coal) is the first problem. Environmental safety of energy carriers is the second problem. It is generally recognized that the solution of the issues connected with the aggregate of these two problems is of a global character. The results of scientific research, which should deal with global energy, originate from it. First and foremost, they are such scientific investigations, which result in the possibility to use an inexhaustible and environmental friendly energy carrier. It has been known for a long time. It is hydrogen produced from water.

Why hydrogen and why from water? At combustion of hydrogen, water is regenerated; thus, the energy carrier is inexhaustible. As far as inexhaustibility and environmental safety are concerned, hydrogen has no competitors. However implementation of these qualities is restricted by large energy expenses for hydrogen production from water. For hydrogen production, modern electrolyzers use from 10 to 20% more energy than it is produced at combustion of hydrogen.

It is easy to imagine what financial and intellectual resources of the world are included in the search of the ways to reduce energy expenses for hydrogen production from water. In Russia many scientific institutions of applied research and educational institutions deal with this problem. There is a Research Hydrogen Institute.

The associations of scientists on hydrogen energetics have been established in USA and Europe. This year, they carry out their regular scientific conferences, to which the author of this article has been invited.

Editorial: Let us note that it is not necessary to coin new scientific term "global energy", since quite for a long time the notion of "free energy" is used. This term represents the idea of the possibility to freely use energy by a consumer.

Energy problem is global not due to depletion of oil and gas, but due to their environmental unsafeness. However the confirmations exist that the world owners of energy resources do not bother about the problem of environmental unsafeness of modern energy carriers.

House of the Saint-Petersburg State University, 2001, p. 258-269.

5. A.M. Mishin. Etherodynamics basic law. / Fundamental Problems of Natural Science and Technics. Series «Problems of the Universe research», fascicle 26, part III. - Saint-Petersburg: Publishing House of the Saint-Petersburg State University, 2003, p. 206-218.

6. A.M. Mishin. Physical system with artificial biofield. / Fundamental Problems of Natural Science and Technics. Series «Problems of the Universe research», fascicle 23, - Saint-Petersburg: Publishing House of the Saint-Petersburg State University, 2001, p. 258-269.

7. V.F. Zolotarev, V.V. Roschin, S.M. Godin. About space-time structure and some interactions. - Moscow: Publishers «PREST», 2000. - 309 p.

8. V. Starr. Physics of phenomena with negative viscosity. - Moscow: MIR, 1971.

9. V.V. Kvartalnov, N.T. Perevozchikov. Discovery of a "non-physical" component of OKG radiation. Journal «Parapsychology and Psychophysics». - Moscow: 1999, No. 2 (28), p. 64-67.

10. A.M. Mishin. Longitudinal thermomagnetic effect. / Fundamental Problems of Natural Science and Technics. Series «Problems of the Universe research», fascicle 26, part III. - Saint-Petersburg: Publishing House of the Saint-Petersburg State University, 2003, p. 219-228.

11. A.A. Efimov, A.D. Shpitalnaya, Y.A. Zakoldaev. Eruptive prominences and earthquakes in the view of global space anisotropy. / «New Ideas in Natural Science». Series «Problems of the Universe research», fascicle 19, part II. – Saint-Petersburg: RAS, 1996, p. 403-413.

GLOBAL ENERGY

Philip M. Kanarev, Russia

The Kuban State Agrarian University, Department of Theoretical Mechanics
13, Kalinin Street, 350044 Krasnodar, Russia
E-mail: kanphil@mail.kuban.ru

Lately, the notion "Global energy" has become widely spread as a prize corresponding to this notion has been instituted in Russia. Since the Euclidean times, an unwritten law exists in science: to give definition to the notions, which are involved in scientific analysis. It is done for the purpose that everybody who uses this notion can understand the sense implied in it.

The Global energy problems have been discussed for a long time; they are well known. Depletion of natural energy carriers (oil, gas and coal) is the first problem. Environmental safety of energy carriers is the second problem. It is generally recognized that the solution of the issues connected with the aggregate of these two problems is of a global character. The results of scientific research, which should deal with global energy, originate from it. First and foremost, they are such scientific investigations, which result in the possibility to use an inexhaustible and environmental friendly energy carrier. It has been known for a long time. It is hydrogen produced from water.

Why hydrogen and why from water? At combustion of hydrogen, water is regenerated; thus, the energy carrier is inexhaustible. As far as inexhaustibility and environmental safety are concerned, hydrogen has no competitors. However implementation of these qualities is restricted by large energy expenses for hydrogen production from water. For hydrogen production, modern electrolyzers use from 10 to 20% more energy than it is produced at combustion of hydrogen.

It is easy to imagine what financial and intellectual resources of the world are included in the search of the ways to reduce energy expenses for hydrogen production from water. In Russia many scientific institutions of applied research and educational institutions deal with this problem. There is a Research Hydrogen Institute.

The associations of scientists on hydrogen energetics have been established in USA and Europe. This year, they carry out their regular scientific conferences, to which the author of this article has been invited.

Editorial: Let us note that it is not necessary to coin new scientific term "global energy", since quite for a long time the notion of "free energy" is used. This term represents the idea of the possibility to freely use energy by a consumer.

Energy problem is global not due to depletion of oil and gas, but due to their environmental unsafeness. However the confirmations exist that the world owners of energy resources do not bother about the problem of environmental unsafeness of modern energy carriers.

In history of science, the facts of annihilation of the scientists who have won success in reduction of energy expenses for production of hydrogen from water have already been registered. The requesters of these actions think that they will lose their profits with the coming of hydrogen energetics. They do not understand that this process cannot be abrupt. It is impossible to replace the infrastructure of the existing energy carriers by infrastructure of hydrogen energetics within one or even ten years. Besides, infrastructure of hydrogen energetics will not be created on a blank place. It will be integrated into the existing infrastructure of energetics gradually; and its owners will automatically become the owners of hydrogen energetics. The first step has already been made in this direction. In the USA, a decision has been taken to equip all filling stations with pumps to fill the cars with hydrogen.

It is known that a priority of results of theoretical investigations is their publication in press. Usually, such priority is a personal one. Generally a patent is a priority of the results of experimental investigations. As a rule, this patent belongs to a group of authors. A published patent is a genie released from a bottle. No finesse of the authors to hamper a reproduction of experimental data given in a patent without the participation of the authors can stop the process of their implementation. Thus, the authors or a group of the authors who have filed an application for a patent are deprived automatically of the opportunity to influence the process of practical realization of their ideas.

In Russia, the state is a main patent holder of the global patents. Due to the well-known reasons, it has proved to be unable to control the course of scientific investigations and to forecast significance of their results.

It is known that if it becomes possible to reduce energy expenses for hydrogen production of water fivefold, it will be the cheapest energy carrier. Russia has already got technology, which reduces these expenses tenfold and more. However another way of looking is more perspective. Is there any use to decompose water into hydrogen and oxygen and to use hydrogen as fuel for heating, for example, of water in heating systems? Is it possible to make water generate heat? It turned out that, it is possible.

In Russia, three firms ("Yusmar", "Termovikhr" and "Noteka") sell cavitation heating equipment with energy performance index up to 150%. Official science looks awry at this activity, since such results conflict with one of the main laws of physics: law of conservation of energy. But market profit is stronger than this law.

Meanwhile, engineering practice has already proved that additional energy in the form of heat is generated in the ventilation systems and in the systems of water cavitation. Thorough scientific analysis of this problem shows that physical vacuum is the most probable source of additional energy in the systems of ventilation and water cavitation. Valence electrons of destroyed molecules of water take energy from physical vacuum and release it during repeated fusion of these molecules.

Why is additional energy generated in the air systems of ventilation and in systems of water cavitation? Because they are mechanical systems and mechanical destruction of chemical links requires half energy as compared with thermal destruction of these links. This is the main reason why one fails to increase energy performance index of cavitation processes over 200%.

Certainly, an increase of efficiency of any process by 30 or 50% is a good result; if it is obtained, it is possible to get even better one. But what if a water molecule is destroyed not mechanically, but electrodynamically? In this case, it becomes possible to find resonance frequencies of influence on the molecules and therefore to reduce considerably expenses of electrical energy for their destruction. Subsequent fusion of destroyed molecules will release determined quantity of energy unavoidably. It is a simple idea, and it has already been implemented. At electrodynamic influence on water molecules, electrical energy is converted into thermal energy with tenfold energy performance index. It means that if we spend 1 kWh of electric energy, we will get 10 kWh of thermal energy. To obtain such results, it is necessary to have knowledge of physchemistry of the microworld, which corresponds to knowledge of the 21st century, and it has already been published. Every month more than 1000 foreign scientists become familiarized with this knowledge at http://Kanarev.innoplaza.net and http://book.physchemistry.innoplaza.net.
The Russian speaking readers get this information from: http://www.n-t.org/tp/ns/if.htm, http://www.ikar.udm.ru/sb28-2.htm and http://www.n-t.org/tp/ts/eb.htm.

I hope that now the readers will know the essence of the notion "global energy" and will understand those results of scientific researches which can really solve the related problems.

Energy Balance of Fusion Processes of Oxygen, Hydrogen and Water Molecules

Philip M. Kanarev, Russia

The Kuban State Agrarian University, Department of Theoretical Mechanics
13, Kalinin Street, 350044 Krasnodar, Russia
E-mail: kanphil@mail.kuban.ru

There is revealed the cause of appearance of additional energy during formation of covalent bonds in the fusion processes of oxygen, hydrogen and water molecules, besides the source of this energy is described.

Introduction

Engineering practice connected with servicing of ventilation systems allows revealing appearance of excessive thermal energy in circulated air. Similar phenomenon has been registered in systems of water circulation with the devices for its active cavitation. The results of our investigations explain not only a cause of these phenomena, but they give an opportunity to perform quantitative calculations for energy processes, which generate additional thermal energy [1], [2], [3], [4], [5].

Theoretical part

An oxygen atom is the eighth element of the periodic table. It is situated in the sixth group. The structure of its nucleus is given in Fig. 1 [1], [2], [3].
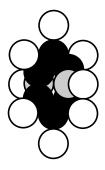
Fig. 1
Diagram of nucleus of oxygen atom: light – the protons, dark and grey – the neutrons

In Fig. 2 a diagram of the oxygen atom originating from the structure of its nucleus is given (Fig. 1). It has eight electrons. The electrons situated on the axis of symmetry are the most active ones (1, 2). Other six electrons situated in the plane, which is perpendicular to the axis line (a line of symmetry), by means of their total electric field remove electrons 1 and 2 from the nucleus at a large distance at that forming conditions for their large activity during the interaction with the electrons of the neighbouring atoms [1], [2], [3].
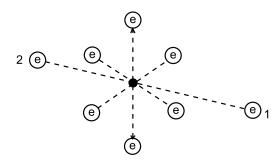
Fig. 2
Diagram of the oxygen atom

The least ionization energy of the electron of oxygen atom is equal to $E_i = 13.618$ eV. Binding energy of this electron with the atomic nucleus corresponding to the first energy level is equal to $E_1 = 13.752$ eV. Let us call this electron the first one. The calculation of energy indices of this electron, including its binding energies E_b with the atomic nucleus, according to the formulas (1) and (2), gives the following results (Table 1) [1], [2], [3].

$$E_{ph} = E_i - \frac{E_i}{n^2} = E_i - \frac{E_1}{n^2} \qquad (1)$$

$$E_b = \frac{E_1}{n^2} \qquad (2)$$

Table 1
Spectrum of the first electron of the oxygen atom

Values	n	2	3	4	5	6
E_{ph} (exp.)	eV	10.18	12.09	12.76	13.07	13.24
E_{ph} (theor.)	eV	10.16	12.09	12.76	13.07	13.24
E_b (theor.)	eV	3.44	1.53	0.86	0.55	0.38

The oxygen molecule structure is given in Fig. 3, a. It is formed by means of a connection of unlike magnetic poles of axis electrons of two oxygen atoms [1], [2], [3]. It is known that the fusion process of the oxygen molecules is accompanied with a release of 495 kJ/mole of energy, or in calculation for one molecule

$$E_b = \frac{495 \cdot 1000}{6{,}02 \cdot 10^{23} \cdot 1.602 \cdot 10^{-19}} = 5.13 eV. \quad (3)$$

What principle does the Nature follow by distributing energy of 5.13 eV between the electrons of oxygen molecule (Fig. 3, a)? Energy of 5.13 eV is a thermal binding energy between the electrons 1 and 2' of two oxygen atoms (Fig. 3, a). When the oxygen molecule is formed, it is emitted in the form of the photons by the electrons, which enter into the bond. Hence it is equal to an amount of energies of two photons emitted by these electrons. Consequently, each contacting electron emits a photon with energies of 5.13/2=2.565 eV=E_b (Fig. 3). According to Table 1, in this case the valence electrons are situated between the second energy level and the third one [1].
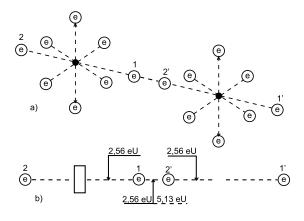
Fig. 3
Diagram of binding energy distribution between the electrons in the oxygen molecule

Two oxygen atoms are combined into a molecule in an excitation state. The excitation state is the state of an atom when its valence electrons are situated at such distances from the nuclei when the binding energy E_b between them is reduced to the thousandth of fractions of an electron-volt. In such state the atom can loose an electron and become an ion. Otherwise, without loosing electrons it is combined with an electron of the neighbouring atom by the valence electron, and a process of formation of oxygen molecule begins. It is an exothermic process when the axis valence electrons 1 and 2' emit photons, descend on lower energy levels and release 2.565x2=5.13 eV.

Let us pay attention to the fact that energy 5.13 eV is released by two electrons, which form a bond with energy of E_b=2.56 eV. In modern chemistry this bond is called a covalent bond. In order to break this bond it is necessary to use 2.56 eV of mechanical energy. For thermal cleavage of this bond, double quantity of energy is required, i.e. 5.13 eV. It is explained by the fact that the photon energy of 5.13 eV is absorbed by two electrons simultaneously. Only in this case, both electrons will be transferred to the highest energy levels with minimal binding energy E_b when they are disconnected, and each oxygen atom becomes a free one.

Thus, energy expenses for destruction of oxygen molecule depend on the method of influence upon the bond. During thermal action upon the bond it is destroyed when energy is 5.13 eV. During mechanical effect upon the bond, it is necessary to spend 2.56 eV of energy in order to destroy this bond. Therefore energetic of fusion process of the oxygen molecule depends on method of its destruction.

After thermal destruction of the oxygen molecule process of its formation begins from emission of the photons with energies of 2.56 eV by both valence electrons, and the previous electrodynamics binding energy (E_b=2.56 eV) is restored between the electrons of both atoms.

Thus during thermal destruction of the oxygen molecule the same amount of thermal energy is spent than that which is released during its further formation. No additional energy appears during thermal dissociation of oxygen molecule and at its further fusion.

If oxygen molecule is destroyed by a mechanical method, then it is necessary to spend 2.56 eV of mechanical energy for this purpose. Valence electrons of oxygen atoms are in a free state at lack of energy, which corresponds to such state, as there is no process of absorption of 2.56 eV of energy by each of them. The electrons cannot remain in such state; they should replenish immediately the energy, which they have failed to receive during a mechanical break of the bond between them. Where should they take it from? There is only one source: the environment, i.e. the physical vacuum filled with aether. They convert aether into energy of 2.56 eV immediately. The next stage is a connection of two oxygen atoms, whose valence electrons have replenished the reserves of their energy by means of aether. This process is accompanied by emission of the photons with energies of 2.56 eV by two electrons. Thus energy of absorbed aether is

converted into thermal energy of the photons. If we spend 2.56 eV of mechanical energy for destruction of oxygen molecule, we will get double quantity of energy (2.56x2=5.13) eV during further fusion of this molecule. Additional energy is equal to 2.56 eV.

Much experimental data show that in ventilation systems thermal energy of circulated air exceeds electric energy spent for a fan drive. Now we know that this energy is generated at mechanical destruction of covalent bonds in the molecules of gases, which the air consists of.

Using the above-mentioned method, let us analyse energetic of water molecule, which sometimes generates additional thermal energy. A water molecule consists of one oxygen atom and two hydrogen atoms. Binding energies E_b of the hydrogen atoms with its nucleus are given in Table 2 [1], [2], [3].

Table 2
Spectrum of hydrogen atom

Values	n	2	3	4	5	6
E_{ph} (exp.)	eV	10.20	12.09	12.75	13.05	13.22
E_{ph} (theor)	eV	10.198	12.087	12.748	13.054	13.220
E_b (theor.)	eV	3.40	1.51	0.85	0.54	0.38

It is known that combination of hydrogen and oxygen is accompanied by an explosion, but its cause remains unknown. Let us try to find it.

Energy of fusion of hydrogen molecule is equal to 436 kJ/mole, or 4.53 eV per a molecule. As the molecule consists of two atoms, then the above-mentioned energy is distributed between them. Thus energy of one bond E_b between the hydrogen atoms is equal to 2.26 eV (Fig. 4). At mechanical destruction of this bond 2.26 eV is enough. At thermal destruction of this bond double quantity is required (2.26x2=4.53 eV) [1].
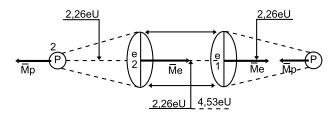
Fig. 4
Hydrogen molecule

In order to form two water molecules, it is necessary to break two hydrogen molecules and one oxygen molecule into atoms. At mechanical destruction of covalent bonds

2.26x2=4.53 eV is required to break two hydrogen molecules and 2.56 eV to break an oxygen molecule. Sum of these energies is equal to 7.13 eV. If the destruction processes of the above-mentioned molecules are carried out with a thermal method, then 4.53+4.53=9.06 eV is required for the destruction of two hydrogen molecules, and 5.13 eV is required for the destruction of one oxygen molecule. In total, it is equal to 14.19 eV. The difference between the energy spent for mechanical and thermal destruction of covalent bond of hydrogen and oxygen molecules is almost double.

It is known that during fusion of one mole of water 285.8 kJ or 285.8x1000/6.02x10²³x1.6x10⁻¹⁹=2.96 eV per a molecule are released. As a water molecule consists of one oxygen atom and two hydrogen atoms, 2.96/2=1.48 eV falls per the bond (Fig. 5). Hence the electrons of hydrogen and oxygen atoms in water molecule are between the forth energy level and the fifth one at the usual temperature (1.48/2=0.74 eV = E_b), Table 1,2 [1].
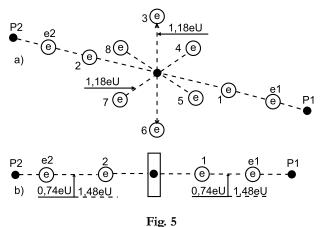
Fig. 5
Diagram of water molecule:
1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8 are the numbers of the electrons of oxygen atom; P_1, P_2 are the nuclei of the hydrogen atoms (the protons); e_1 and e_2 are the numbers of the electrons of hydrogen atoms

Thus when two hydrogen molecules $2H_2$ and one oxygen molecule O_2 are destroyed by the thermal method, 14.19 eV are spent. As a result of fusion of two water molecules ($2H_2O$), 2.96x2=5.98 eV is released. There is some disbalance here since fusion process of water molecule is an exothermic one and 2.96 eV is released by one molecule. The given calculation shows that (14.19-5.98)/2=4.10 eV is absorbed during fusion of one water molecule. What is the cause of this contradiction?

The oxygen atom in the water molecule should reduce its volume when the transition from gaseous state into

liquid state takes place. It will happen when the ring electrons of oxygen atom descend on lower energy levels (nearer to the nucleus). They will emit the photons and their total energy will be equal to energy spent to destruction of two hydrogen molecules and one oxygen molecule, i.e. 14.19 eV. Since two water molecules have 12 ring electrons, each of them will emit $14.19/12 = 1.18$ eV $= E_b$ (Fig. 5). It is more than energy ($E_b = 0.74$ eV) of binding of axis electron with the nucleus, and it shows that the ring electrons are situated nearer to the nucleus than the axis ones.

In this case quantity of energy produced due to fusion of two water molecules $(14.19 + 5.98)$ eV exceeds energy, which was spent for the destruction of two hydrogen molecules (9.06 eV) and one oxygen molecule (5.13 eV). Energy difference of 5.98 eV is divided between two water molecules. It means that $5.98/2 = 2.99$ eV or 285.8 kJ/mole fall per a molecule. It corresponds to the existing experimental data completely [1].

The above-mentioned facts clarify a cause of the explosion, which takes place when hydrogen is combined with oxygen. Simultaneous transition of six ring electrons of each oxygen atom in the nascent water molecules to lower energy levels is accompanied by simultaneous emission of the photons, which generate explosion phenomenon.

Let us pay attention to the fact that two binding energies E_b between valence electrons e2 and 2 and between 1 and e1 are shown in Fig. 5, b. Energy of one electrodynamics bond is equal to $E_b = 0.74$ eV. If this bond is destroyed by the thermal method, $0.74 \times 2 = 1.48$ eV is required. This energy will be released during further fusion of the water molecule from hydrogen atom H and hydroxyl ion OH$^-$. In this case, no additional energy is generated.

Therefore the given bond is destroyed by the mechanical method spending 0.74 eV per a bond, each electron will have energy deficit equal to 0.74 eV after bond destruction. This energy will be immediately absorbed from the environment and will be emitted during the repeated fusion of the water molecule from the hydrogen atom H and the hydroxyl ion OH$^-$. At mechanical destruction of one bond of water molecule, the covalent chemical bond forms $E_b = 0.74$ eV of additional thermal energy, which is registered in systems of water cavitation constantly (as we have already noted) [1], [2], [3].

It is known that water molecules combine and form clusters. If the bonds between the molecules in the clusters are covalent ones, mechanical destruction of these bonds should be accompanied by a release of additional thermal energy as well [1], [2], [3].

Experimental Part
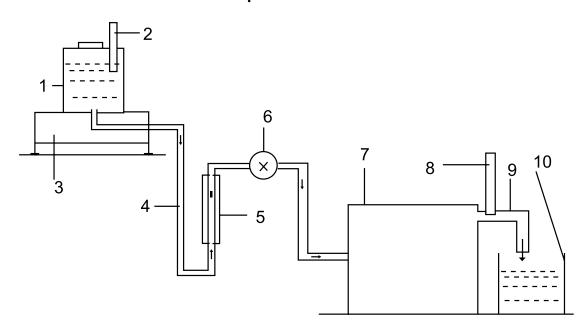
Fig. 6
Diagram of the experimental device: 1 - reservoir for solution; 2 - thermometer; 3 - electronic scales; 4 - solution supply duct; 5 - rotameter; 6 - feed solution regulator; 7 - a special thin plasma reactor is in the process of patenting; 8 - thermometer; 9 - discharge of heated solution; 10 - inlet reservoir

Thus, chemical bonds between the atoms in the molecules and the molecules in the clusters can be destroyed mechanically, by electrodynamic and thermal influence. We have already shown that the mechanical way of destruction of such bonds requires half energy as compared with thermal energy. It appears from this that energy expenses for electrodynamic destruction of these bonds should be less than thermal expenses as well. Electrodynamic impact on the bond gives the opportunity to form the resonance modes where energy expense for the destruction of these bonds is reduced to greater degree. In order to check this hypothesis a special experiment was carried out. It was connected with electrodynamic destruction of chemical bonds of water molecules with a changing frequency of impact. To test this hypothesis the check experiment was prepared and carried out by (besides the author of this article) A.I. Tlishev, G.P. Perekotiy, D.A. Bebko, D.V. Korneev. A diagram of the experimental device is given in Fig. 6. The results of this experiment are given in Table 3.

Table 3
Protocol of control test

Indices	1	2	3	Mean
1 – mass of the solution, which has passed through the reactor m, kg.	2.112	2.153	2.118	2.128
2 – temperature of solution at the input of the reactor t_1, degrees	24	24	24	24
3 – temperature of the solution at the output of the reactor t_2, degrees	33.5	33.5	33.5	33.5
4 – differential temperature of the solution $\Delta t = t_2 - t_1$, degrees	9.5	9.5	9.5	9.5
5 – durability of the experiment $\Delta \tau$, s	300	300	300	300
6 – reading of voltmeter V, B	25.0	25.0	25.0	25.0
7 – reading of ammeter I, A	1.40	1.40	1.40	1.40
8 – electric power consumption according to indices of voltmeter and ammeters, $E_2 = I \times V \times \Delta \tau$, kJ	10.50	10.50	10.50	10.50
9 – power spent for heating of the solution, $E_3 = 4.19 \times m \times \Delta t$, kJ	84.10	85.70	84.31	84.70
10 – reactor efficiency index according to the reading of voltmeter and ammeter K= E_3 / E_2	**8.00**	**8.16**	**8.03**	**8.06**

Fig. 7
Photo of heat reactor

In the Russian market three firms (Yusmar, Termovikhr and Noteka) sell cavitation water heating equipment with energy efficiency index of 150%. Soon, an air heating devices with the same efficiency will be produced. The processes of mechanical destruction of covalent bonds of the air gas molecules, molecules and clusters of water and their further fusion serve as a source of additional energy generated by these devices [1], [2], [3].

Conclusion

Analysis of energy balance of the molecules with covalent bonds shows the possibility of additional thermal energy formation during mechanical and electrodynamics destruction of these bonds.

References

1. Ph.M. Kanarev. The Foundation of Physchemistry of Micro World. Krasnodar. 2002. 320 pages. (In Russian).
2. Kanarev Ph.M. The Foundation of Physchemistry of Micro World. The second edition. (In Russian). http://www.ikar.udm.ru/sb28-2.htm
3. Kanarev Ph.M. The Foundation of Physchemistry of Micro World. The second edition. (In English).
http://book.physchemistry.innoplaza.net
4. Kanarev Ph. M. Energy Balance of Fusion Processes of Molecules of Oxygen, Hydrogen and Water. (In English) http://Kanarev.innoplaza.net
5. Kanarev Ph. M. Energy Balance of Fusion Processes of Molecules of Oxygen, Hydrogen and Water. (In Russian)
http://www.n-t.org/tp/ts/eb.htm.

The Fourth State Of Matter (Plasma Energy) Power Generation

Bruce A. Perreault, USA

http:// www.nuenergy.org
Email: nuenergy@cyberportal.net

Under the proper configurations and in the correct pre glow discharge environment more electrons can be released than what is required to trigger the release. This release of energy attains a high frequency oscillation that is indicative of the metal or metals involved in its release.

The release of high frequency energy from metals and semi metals (semi conductors) through the mechanism in the pre-glow discharge leads to the generation of radiant energy. This correlation has been identified through my findings. The release of high frequency energy from the atoms of electrical conductors is credited to my identification of the mechanism in the pre-glow discharge, or fourth state of matter. This has lead to extremely efficient alternative energy circuits.

> *The release of high frequency energy from the atoms of electrical conductors is credited to my identification of the mechanism in the pre-glow discharge, or fourth state of matter. This has lead to extremely efficient alternative energy circuits.*

The pre-glow discharge condition occurs when a sufficient amount of charge difference is applied across the gap of two electrical conductors. It makes a hissing sound if the electrodes are surrounded by air. The electrical properties between this gap change: electrons become "stripped" from their respective atoms and are liberated. In this state, air is **ionized** and is transformed into a **plasma** and is no longer a gas. It is now in the fourth state of matter, the other three being solid, liquid, and vapor (gas). The fourth state of matter is a good conductor of electricity, its average resistance being much lower than that of the same substance in its gaseous state.

A good readily available spark gap combination is lead and iron. This combination generates plenty of radiant energy and causes noise to be heard on a radio in its vicinity. As a general rule, the better the thermoelectric difference between the dissimilar couple the more radiant energy that will be generated when it is exposed to a plasma field.

Early in the summer of 1981, the pre glow had first caught my attention. This is where I had observed it between two plastic insulated hook-up wires from radio shack. The plasma between the two wires was called into existence because of a high voltage power supply that I had obtained for my electrogravitic experiments. The two wires were twisted together and given a charge of around ninety kilovolts.

It was not until 1989 when I observed a high frequency signal on my oscilloscope coming from the pre-glow discharge phenomenon. These signals were coming from across the room and originated from a crude component that I had built. This crude component consisted of a guitar wire that was centered through a section of PVC tubing. Around this tube was wrapped a coil of insulated transformer wire. This was my first ion-valve. It was excited with the same power supply where I had observed the plasma effect several years previous.

I knew that my ion valve was generating high frequency oscillations using air ions but did not find any practical applications for it until six years later. It was in this year (1995) when I realized the importance of the ion valve and its associated high frequency ion field, known as radiant energy to Moray, it being the essential principle behind his energy receiver.

In one experimental set-up, it was confirmed that when a charged capacitor is discharged through a spark gap that the stored energy is transferred by way of high frequency electrical oscillations. It was found that these oscillations occur directly before the discharge of the capacitor, thus the term, pre-glow discharge. It was found that during the pre-glow discharge plateau, energy is transferred from a primary to a secondary electrical coil. Directly after pre-glow discharge, a surge of current is measured. At the point of current surge is where most

of the stored energy in the capacitor is released as wasted heat. It was apparent that by maintaining the pre-glow discharge plateau a very efficient mode of energy transfer and conversion can be obtained. Logically what is required is a control mechanism. This is where my ion valve finds its niche. Upon further investigation, it is found that it keeps pre-glow discharge oscillations at their plateau, and suppresses current surge in a spark gap. It is a self-regulating quenching device. When it is placed in series with an air-core transformer and arc gap, its plasma hisses smoothly, the arc in the spark gap is almost silent and is very small. Continuous oscillations can be seen on an oscilloscope. A light bulb connected to the secondary will glow brightly. This result is not possible without the ion valve included in the circuit. The ion valve has the added feature of preventing back electromotive force, generated from inductive loads, from being discharged back through the circuit. Without the ion valve, energy is normally lost when it is discharged and is transformed into heat. Using the ion valve therefore has the effect of conserving energy.

Fundamental Radiant Energy Device

"Standard" scientific principles are not being violated. There is no fringe science involved with radiant energy power generation. This is a very old source of energy being extracted and harnessed in a unique way through my discoveries. What I have discovered is practically a limitless source of energy. Radiant energy has existed since the beginning of time. What I hold claim to is an improved method to generate and to convert radiant energy, kinetically active ions, cosmic energy, call it what you will, into useful electrical power. Think of the radiant energy power generator as a type of energy detonator that liberates great quantities of energy with only a small exciting spark. No laws of physics are being violated. No new laws are being implied. They are being expanded. The concept is not that much different from how a lighted matchstick is able to start a bonfire.

The power generated from my circuits comes from the transformation of matter into radiant electricity. It does not come from the splitting of atoms. To obtain high wattage from a spontaneously radioactive substance would require unsafe amounts of radioactive material.

Under the right conditions, ordinary matter can be made to generate intense surges of radiant energy that can be heard on a radio receiver as static noise. Build a device that can efficiently capture this energy and convert it into useful electrical currents and you will have yourself

a powerful source of electrical power. This device will be powered by artificially disintegrating matter as described by Gustave Le Bon in his book "The Evolution of Matter" and in his book "The Evolution of Forces".

Energy and matter are two distinct entities of the same manifestation. Matter represents a stable condensed form of energy. Heat, light, electricity, etc., are uncondensed vibrations of matter oscillating at differing rates. "Cosmic Energy" is the term that Le Bon used to define matter and energy as being one and the same manifestation. He theorized that when stable matter is disintegrated it is transformed into energy that we recognize as heat, light, electricity, radioactivity, etc.

Semiconductors will generate intense surges of electron oscillations that become powerful sources of radiant energy. A simple **ion valve**, or call it what you will, can be used to generate and convert this form of radiant energy into useful electromagnetic oscillations. A tuned transformer can be used to directly convert these oscillations into to a practical voltage and amperage. This unique valve is shown in Fig. 1. Before it can function it must be connected to a suitable voltage source. The circuit in Fig. 2 demonstrates the full working concept. Other embodiments are also possible. The proof of concept circuit reveals how radiant energy can be generated and converted into useful electrical currents. Many additional stages can be added for more power. Many other circuit and component configurations can also be used but the fundamental conversion principle remains the same. The circuit and components shown should give you a very clear idea of how the technology works. The actual mechanics and electronics of building and validating a radiant energy prototype are relatively simple. Contrary to what some people might think, dangerous levels of radioactivity are never used in my devices.

Ion-valve Converter Technology Explained

The ion-valve converter (ion-valve) shown in Fig.1 has an axial negatively charged tungsten cathode wire that extends the length its cylinder and is capable of emitting secondary electrons. The anode cylinder is positively charged and is made from a semiconductive material that will readily capture electrons.

Within a few milliseconds the accumulated negative ions are attracted to the positively charged onrushing atomic ions. When the negative and positive charges collide they

neutralize each other generating high frequency electrical oscillations.

There appears to be a common thread shared between several alternative energy devices. It is the pre-glow discharge. The report on the **Hans Coler** device released by the British Government indicates that there is excess energy released when electrical contacts are opened and closed. The **Lester Hendershot** device utilized a buzzer circuit that opened and closed its electrical contacts. In the **Alfred Hubbard** coil pre-glow discharge flowed through electrical contacts, a distributor cap and radium soaked spark plug. The **Joseph Newman** motor used a sparking commutator. **Thomas Moray** invented a glowing, cold cathode discharge tube that was the heart of his radiant energy device. **Hermann Plauson** was granted U.S. Patent No. 1,540,998 that used spark gaps to convert atmospheric energy. **Frank Wyatt Prentice** was granted Canadian Patent No. 253,765 that detailed his invention, which lighted 50 sixty-watt carbon lamps with an input of only 500 watts. His invention utilized a spark gap driven high frequency tuned resonant system. **Chancy Britten** used ion-valves constructed with a central wire that was surrounded by a coil of wire which is described in his US Patent No. 1,826,727. Britten's valve was said to have lit up his home in the 1930's according to a local newspaper article of that time period. **Alexander Chernetski** experimented with what appears to have been a type of ion-valve that was filled with hydrogen gas. It is said that he got up to five times more energy out of his device than what he put into it. **Edwin Gray** was granted U.S. Patent No. 3,890,548 for his efficient spark gap driven capacitive-discharge motor. He improved on this patent by replacing the spark gaps with a pre-glow discharge switching tube. His U.S. Patents No. 4,595,975 and No. 4,661,747 describes this tube in detail. Gray's patents claim to conserve battery power by sending unused energy back to the supply batteries. On close examination, we also find that his switching tube is actually a quenching device.

Radiant energy was generated during the pre-glow discharge cycle that also contributed to recharging the batteries. **Paulo N. Correa** and **Alexander N. Correa** obtained patents to a pulsed pre-glow discharge system that recovers energy and recharges a battery.

I have found that radiant energy is generated when a plasma field is in contact with the atoms of an electrical conductor. Most importantly, the quantity of radiant energy is greatly increased when the plasma field occurs between the inter-electrode couple of two differing electrical conductors. That, the wattage produced will depend largely on the type of electrode materials that

are used. I do not suspect that the above referenced inventors were aware of this amplifying mechanism.
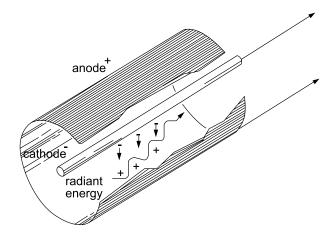
Fig. 1

Ion Valve

In the embodiment in Fig. 1 the negative charge on the wire in the ion-valve negatively ionizes any gas that contacts it. These ions rush towards the positively charged cylinder. When a metal ion that carries an excess electron hits head-on with an elementary differing positively charged onrushing metal ion a violent union of the two metals occurs. This causes the newly formed bimetallic alloy to violently oscillate, break up (dissociate) and to liberate a burst of electrons. The **"sea electron model"** helps to explain this effect. According to the sea electron model metals are bonded to each other through electron sharing. The model suggests that metal atoms be bathed in a sea of valence electrons. If this model is taken one step further it can be seen that when metallic atoms are dissociated from each other excess electrons are released in the form of electrical oscillations of high frequency (radiant energy). This occurs because the electrons no longer take part in the inter-atomic binding force that existed before the dissociation took place. It becomes clear that the freed electrons will add amperage to the output circuit to which it is connected. Henceforth, the equation **I x E = P** holds true in this system. Where, "I" represents the electrons (amperage), "E" electromotive force (ionic voltage), and "P" the power generated.

Obtaining Electrical Energy from the Transformation of Cosmic Energy

Matter is cosmic energy in a condensed state according to Le Bon and Moray. What this means is that matter can be excited its plasma state and caused to rapidly disintegrate transforming itself into electricity.
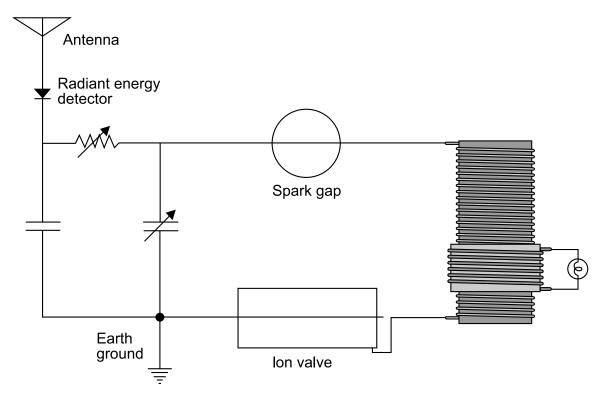
Fig. 2

Proof of Concept

The proof of concept shown will obtain energy from the dissociation of matter bringing the circuit to life. It does this by creating a plasma field between differing electrical conductors. Electrons are unleashed and feedback to the circuit where they are converted into useful power.

Plasma oscillating on the correct wavelength will act like a spark on a mass of explosive material but releasing electrical particles instead of heat. This is to say that the excited fourth state of matter (plasma) causes condensed energy (solid matter) to become uncondensed (radiant energy). The reaction will be far superior to the force that invoked it in the first place because the energy stored in matter is released. The energy that is condensed in the elements of matter is immense. The result is that an enormous amount of energy is released with only a slight loss of matter. Gustave Le Bon proved this when he demonstrated that the action of solar light and from electric arcs on bodies produced electric particles similar to those of uranium. He showed that it caused all bodies to disintegrate to different degrees.

the excited fourth state of matter (plasma) causes condensed energy (solid matter) to become uncondensed (radiant energy). The reaction will be far superior to the force that invoked it in the first place because the energy stored in matter is released

According to the law of conservation, when we give to a material body a determined quantity of energy, this energy might be transformed, but the body will never give back a quantity in excess of what it received. This principle is considered too self-evident to be disputed. It makes sense that matter can only give up energy that is given to it and is unable to create excess energy. Without violating this law, matter can be excited into giving up its stored inter-atomic energy. Condensed matter can become uncondensed if its oscillations become violent enough and henceforth transforming itself into radiant energy. No laws have been violated. They have been expanded. The first law of thermodynamics describes the principle of the conservation of energy. It states that "energy is not created or destroyed; it merely changes form". The fact is that the creation or destruction of energy is a result of matter being broken down or built up. They both go hand in hand.

Naturally occurring radioisotopes were created through the billions of years of **cosmic ray** bombardment of ordinary matter. Their matrixes became unbalanced. The

correct trigger will cause these isotopes to seek their original balanced state. Enormous amounts of electrical energy can be obtained from the transformation of stored cosmic energy. These isotopes contain a very old energy reserve that can be released in a unique way with my discoveries.

Have you ever wondered about spontaneous radioactive decay? Is it really a super charged state of matter? If an atom can become ionized by either gaining or by losing electrons then why can there not be a nuclear ionization too? I hypothesize that atoms do become ionized on the nuclear level by gaining or losing neutrons. This may appear incidental but could be at the very heart of an ultra-chemistry. It is highly probable that this hypothesized phenomenon is behind natural spontaneous radioactive decay and explains many unanswered questions about nuclear science.

Liberated Energy

With a slight excitement from a pre-glow discharge in a spark gap, or even with no excitement at all, as we observe in spontaneously disintegrating radioactive bodies, such as U235, we can obtain large quantities of energy. Clearly, we did not create this liberated energy, since it already exists in matter, but we release it under the right conditions. This is being done without violating the law of energy conservation. The idea that matter could be transformed into energy was absurd before the acknowledgement of nuclear transformations.

A Nu Science is on the horizon. It involves the means of transforming matter into energy without splitting atoms. This science recognizes several isotopes of matter that spontaneously liberate energy as observed in naturally occurring radioisotopes. My research indicates that it is also possible to artificially speed up the natural decay process of condensed energy (matter) using a minute plasma field, as from a pre-glow discharge, etc… With a very small quantity of energy, we will be able to produce a very large quantity of energy without splitting the atoms.

Capture Capacitor

Nature offers us cosmic energy that manifests itself in many different forms. Electricity is only one of its manifestations. From this knowledge, we can obtain electrical power with no moving parts. The natural world contains many storehouses of this cosmic energy. Energy is all around us just waiting to be transformed.

The capture capacitor is one such example. It is called a capture capacitor because it captures and transforms electrical charge into electrical current. It does this with the aid of naturally occurring radioactive matter (N.O.R.M.). Put a pair of dissimilar metal electrodes together with a porous ceramic dielectric material sandwiched between them, along with a weak electrolyte and you have built a capture capacitor. In a low power capture component there exists a minute impurity of N.O.R.M. It is always present in clays and is usually present in ceramic materials.

If you want a capture capacitor to generate more power all you have to do is to add additional amounts of radioactive material to the dielectric. Lead–210 is the optimum choice because it has a half-life of around 22.3 years and is a pure beta (electron) emitter. Its half-life is almost twice as long as tritium. This means that it is feasible to build a component that will put out power for several years with little maintenance. Lead-210 is a decay product of radon gas. The parent source of radon is uranium. Therefore, uranium ore can be powdered and mixed into the ceramic material.

The atomic ions emitted from naturally occurring or artificially induced radioactive transformations can be directly converted to electrical power. The circuit shown can be used to convert radiant energy into useful electrical currents. Additional stages can be added for more power. The circuit shown gives a general idea of how such an energy conversion device functions. By no means is this technology limited to this one circuit, configuration, or source of radiant energy.

A new type of high field superconducting magnet from Oxford Instruments has enabled physicists at the University of Nottingham to balance the force of gravity and levitate heavy and dense materials such as lead, gold and diamonds. The patented Minimum Condensed Volume™ (MCV™) Cryofree™ superconducting magnet, developed and manufactured by Oxford Instruments in collaboration with the University of Nottingham, is the first of its kind in the world. Unlike conventional superconducting magnets, the MCV magnet never needs to be refilled with liquid helium and yet can generate a field over 300,000 times stronger than the Earth's magnetic field. MCV has a very small footprint and, operating at 4.2 K with a room temperature bore, can generate highly stable magnetic fields up to 16 Tesla.

http://www.oxford-instruments.co.uk

◆ Polish inventor Zygmunt Orlowski called attention of the scientific society to his perpetual motion machine **METOZ**, which according to the author after further improvement will be able to extract energy from the earth's gravitation.

http://www.nets.pl/~metozor/perpetual_motion_machine.htm
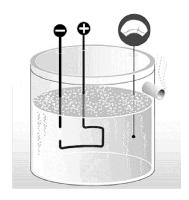
◆ It is necessary to change behavior of people in order to decrease environmental damage. This was the message of **"Green Week 2003"** which took place since June 2 through June 5 in Brussels.

The conference's key issues were three aspects of United Europe environmental policy: sustainable production and consumption, renewable energy and water supply.

Green Week is the first environmental forum of such a scale. Three thousand participants from all over the world represented governments and funds, industry and mass media. The exhibition organized in the framework of Green Week included 62 displays from 14 European countries and were dedicated to the newest environmental technologies and projects. During the Green Week 26 conferences and seminars took place, as well as a great number of press conferences and actions for young people.

◆ **British researchers (**Gardner Watts company) **believe that they have made a groundbreaking scientific discovery after apparently managing to "create" energy from hydrogen atoms.**

The device represents "thermal energy cell" which appears to produce hundreds of times more energy than that put into it. If the findings are correct and can be reproduced on a commercial scale, the thermal energy cell could become a feature of every home, heating water for a fraction of the cost and cutting fuel bills by at least 90 per cent.

http://www.telegraph.co.uk

◆ **Gravity Conversion Rotary Device**

The below figure is from
http://www.theverylastpageoftheinternet.com/newclaims/GravityMotor/gravity_motor.htm

Does it really work?

THE MARCUS DEVICE CONTROVERSY

Tim Ventura, USA

Email: tventura6@attbi.com
http://www.americanantigravity.com
http://www.americanantigravity.com/marcus.html

Editorial: This overview is devoted to the fantastical device created by inventor Marcus Hollingshead that encountered more than its share of publicity and controversy between November 2002 and March 2003. You can participate in discussion on aggroup@yahoogroups.com.

The problem with Marcus has been that he was pressured by too many people to produce too fast results. I started talking to him in November, and he is always sounded like an honest, rational man with a good heart. The problem is that once people started to hear his private claims that he could lift something like 2 tons of weight, things kind of went south.

While people in general have been very well-meaning, they are desperate to solve many of our current energy-problems, and when Marcus appeared with a potential solution it got out of control. Pretty soon film crews were showing up at his house unannounced, and he was getting unwanted phone calls from people who had looked up his number online.

In my opinion, it is really a problem of a "social dynamic" at work here – too many people, with too much access, all at once. This also correlates to the type of person that different people are. For instance, I am a very open person, and I really do not value my privacy a heck of a lot — therefore, when TV crews drop by with 5 minutes notice (and they have), I tend to just let them in for a demo. However, Marcus, who is much more of a private person, seems to have become a bit overwhelmed at this proposition.

Also, keep in mind that I had initiated working with the media because I felt that it was time for the excellent work in the Lifters groups to see the light of day. There was some debate about this, but the Lifters group as a whole has greatly benefited from being about to tell people about this new technology.

Marcus had not actually "gone public" about his work. He had leaked information about his research to a few people, and from there it was leaked to several others, who in turn told their friends about it. Unlike the Lifter technology, which has hundreds of people that can talk about how it works and where it came from, Marcus technology was represented solely by himself. That means that everything surrounding his device came back ultimately to him alone. Without any real group ownership of the expertise behind the device

As I said before, Marcus was new to the publicity, and did not have time to prepare the resources that the rest of us have had to answer questions, provide demo materials, etc. Naudin and Saviour have a masterful manner with regard to teaching people about Lifter technology, but they have had years to prepare this information and perfect a method of presenting it to people.

Most of us in the AG groups tend to proselytize for the technologies that we believe in. I know that I do, and if you haunt the newsgroups much you will notice that everybody there believes in something and can go on for months non-stop telling the world about it (again, I do this). Marcus, however, does not really have this personality — he is more of a "take it or leave it" type of person.

For me, this was another indicator that he was the "real deal". You have to understand that I have never seen working prototype pictures of the Marcus device, and all that I had to go on was the feeling that I got from interacting with him on the phone and online. The fact that he did not try to "sell me" on the idea was a big plus. He told me about the device, and his story was always consistent. The other people that he talked to also had a consistent story – I have not talked to anybody and heard a different version than I heard from Marcus himself. That is a big plus from the credibility perspective.

Marcus initial goal (from when I started talking to him in November) was to gradually ease into working with

the public to tell them about the technologies he was working on. Unfortunately, I probably aggravated the issue a great deal, because his early descriptions of the technology might have gone unnoticed if it had not been for some of the things he had mentioned about his research.

When I read Marcus' firsts posts on the device, my very first thought about his claims was that they were bogus. Judging from the reaction of the Antigravity newsgroup, I gathered that a few other people also had the same initial reaction. The reason might be a little selfish – after you hear claims but do not see results for a long enough period of time, you tend to protect yourself emotionally by becoming skeptical to the idea that somebody can be lifting hundreds of pounds of weight using a completely new and revolutionary technology.

Nonetheless, something that Marcus had said resonated with me. I remember that he was talking about his results being based on a study of the Earth's fields, which is something that I had read about myself during the college years. Telsa had done a lot of work involving the Earth's electrical and magnetic-fields, and I had always felt that this research might come in handy later as a potential basis for Antigravity research. However, I did not have any specific ideas, and began asking Marcus questions offline to find out more about his research.

In reality, I am nobody special, so I think that perhaps this would have happened in any event no matter what my reaction would have been. Certainly I am not the only person that took an early interest in his work, and from what I learned later he had already been a little bit too honest in the BBC online newsgroup before he ever became involved with the Antigravity newsgroups.

From January to mid-February Marcus became like somewhat of an addiction in the newsgroups. This was a strange phenomenon to watch, but if he did not answer questions in the newsgroups for even a day people started asking whether he had been kidnapped or the government had assassinated him.

You have to understand that most inventors tend to segregate their time into "public" and "private". I do, Naudin does, and everybody does this. When you talk to the public about what you have built, you really get into it — but when you are actually working on it, you tend to hole up in the garage and put the entire world on "ignore" until you have finished with whatever it is that you are doing.

Marcus really started to get publicity in late November 2002, and it built up over a few week period of time. By mid-December, he had a healthy following in the Antigravity newsgroup and people in the 5 or 10 other AG newsgroups were developing more than just a passing interest. Great stuff for Marcus – he had thought that he was the only person doing this research, and it turned out that lots of people shared this common interest with him. We had lots of really valuable and productive exchanges.

Marcus bided his time working on the projects – he had initially stated that he could lift around 200 pounds of weight with his November version (prototype #161, if I remember correctly). He did not have a digital camera, and he did not want to publish photos until he had a better prototype anyways. That was OK with me – I am used to work with a variety of inventors and came to realize a long time ago that everybody has their own style. I was content to wait until Marcus had additional data, and the only thing that I insisted upon was that sooner or later he ante-up and provide some photographic evidence.

Despite lacking photos or video evidence, Marcus did have documentation. In fact, he wrote more documentation about his device than I had ever hoped to receive. He cranked out about the equivalent of 30-pages of "real" documentation in a very detailed form within 1-month, and had the email equivalent of many more pages in postings about how the device worked online. Marcus had already been publishing details online for about 2.5 months.

Despite the incredible amount of published data that Marcus was able to complete, in some ways it made things worse for him than not having anything at all. The reason was the nature of his research. My work, currently focused on Lifters, was in a technology that is easy to explain – the device is built like this, it works like that, and it can be described in a manner similar to some other thing ....basic, easy to explain, and easy to compare.

After all, Lifters have been accused by science of being ion-wind devices. If nothing else, rebutting this claim gives us someplace to start – something to compare against to provide people with an idea about how the device works. Additionally, we had tons of video and photographic evidence to back up our claims. In Marcus case, the documentation that he provided made things worse because his technology is so utterly different. It is not ion-wind, nor the Biefeld-Brown effect, nor

apparently the Searle effect. In fact, the more than you tried to pin down exactly what it was, the harder it became to describe it.

Also, its not like he could simply fall back onto describing the construction of the device **– reason being that it contained a series of interrelated coils with a unique configuration that were intrinsically tied to the operation of the device.** Every time he wrote a detailed summary of the construction of the device, we had come away with more questions than we had started out with. After a time I gave up trying to understand how it was constructed, because I only had bits and pieces.

Marcus was using an arrangement of 6-coils, and what are described as "bifilar windings". Essentially, this means that you wind two wires together around a coil and then tie one of the ends to another, making the two wires essentially one long wire wound "against itself" down the length of the armature its on. There are 6 of these armatures on the device, mounted around a central RP (or reference point).

Marcus created all of the terminology for these parts – this lends additional credibility to the idea that he had had 7 years of experience with it. These are ideas that you just do not "make up" for publicity. For instance, the bifilar windings on the armature-coils are self-cancelling fields, and even a basic-electronics education will tell you that. However, the interesting thing is that once you really start to get into the advanced "post-scientific" research on magnetic fields you start to see self-cancelling magnetic coils all over the place. The reason is apparently that while the "B-field" *(Editor: i.e. magnetic field)* of the coils cancels, the "A-field" *(Editor: i.e. vector potential)* that Tom Bearden keeps talking about does not, which means that you can isolate the really interesting effects from the coil without having to deal with the high field-intensity effects from normal electromagnetism.

Marcus had described these six armatures as being activated in a series, or order, to obtain results. Each of the coils was spun by an electric motor mounted on the armature, and when the coil was spun up to a certain speed and "stubs" mounted a periodic intervals on the side of the armature were fired in sequence the antigravity effect was created.

Marcus Antigravity effect was a directional force that was applied in a unique manner depending on which coils were activated. This means that by activating (for instance) coils 1 and 3, he could create an antigravity effect and move the device left – or something to that effect. Turning on and off each set of coils gave him movement on one axis of thrust, which corresponded to X, Y, or Z in a standard 3-D geometric graph. Since you can move in either direction down any given axis of thrust, this means that you have 6 axis of movement height (up and down), width (left or right), and depth (forward or backward). His device provided movement on any axis by either one coil or an arrangement of coils.

For a while Marcus did not want to talk about side effects, but I pressured him into it. The reason was that I have seen side-effects that were pretty darned strange in a number of different experiments, and I was willing to bet that if I pressured him a bit he would talk about what he had seen but did not want to reveal (for fear that people would not take him seriously). It turns out that I was right.....

Marcus had talked about the RP, or "Reference Point" upon several occassions. This is a multi-layered device that acts somewhat like a capacive element. It sits in the direct center of the Marcus device, and it is the reference-point for the entire device. The RP is manufactured from cast-iron, and Marcus says that he has a local company build them for a few bucks each by pouring iron into a mold based on one of his designs.

You can active the RP at the same time that you activate the coils. You have coils rotating around the RP, with "stubs" on the coils firing periodically at points corresponding to spots on the surface of the RP. Meanwhile, you also have an electrical charge on the RP itself, which means that there are a lot of elements interacting at once to create a very complex dynamic.

One of the interesting side effects was a darkening and "blurring" effect of the RP, as if light was being reflected off it. Another was a Star-Trek like "force shield" around the RP. These only occurred when all of the coils were activated at once. Also note that since the coils are opposing in nature (one for each direction on each axis), that when you are creating the force field effect the device cannot be levitating. However, the device is operational, and you have a force-field that you can apparently bounce a heavy hammer off without being able to penetrate it (Marcus description).

Another interesting note is that the force-field effect can be modified to create a vacuum. I am not sure how

Marcus noticed this, but he had said that it appeared to create a vacuum inside of the field's boundaries during operation. Interestingly, it also ran very cold – apparently down to a hundred degrees below zero, but only within the localized boundaries of the field.

I am not a professional physicist, but this is something that has been reported with the Searl effect and several other experiments, and the reason that I believe it occurs is because you are taking the kinetic energy of the device as well as some of the kinetic energy of its molecules (i.e.: heat energy), and injecting it into another dimension. After all, anytime we directly modify a gravitational field we are creating a dimensional effect, but in normal life we do not notice it because the boundaries between gravitational fields are very gradual.

Well, in the Marcus device the boundary between gravitational fields is not a several thousand mile-long gradient like the Earth's field is – instead of you have a gradient perhaps 10-times more intense focused within a 3 to 4 inch area. That means that you are creating essentially a rift in time and space (self-healing) that is kept open by the energy that you are pumping into the device.

the energy input is used only in putting the device into another frame of reference, but that any interaction between us and our "normal" frame would have to be modified for any interactions with the "modified" frame.

To the best of my knowledge, this is the most accurate description that I have seen yet for why his device does this. Marcus himself could not explain why these effects occurred, and to be honest I scared him more than a little when I told him my theory.

In the hypothesis that I just put forth on the origin and functionality of the Marcus device effect, the interesting this is that there really is not a direct correlation between input energy and the effect itself. That is because you are not using the input energy to actually cause an effect – you are essentially using the input energy to translate the device into another dimension (although it is still partially within ours).

Einstein called these "frames of reference". The idea is that the energy input is used only in putting the device into another frame of reference, but that any interaction between us and our "normal" frame would have to be modified for any interactions with the "modified" frame.

Again, this takes place in normal physics – but usually it involves motion, and normally it takes place over a vastly larger gradient of time/space/whatever. The difference between two frames is the difference between two locomotives moving at different speeds – the energy input goes into accelerating each locomotive up to that speed, but the actual work is performed if those two trains interact is solely a product of the frame of inertial reference (mass & velocity = energy).

Another excellent example is a helium-balloon. You put the energy into condensing the helium and pumping it into the balloon, but it is not the helium that creates lift – it is the surrounding atmosphere. In a very real sense a helium balloon gets its energy from the surrounding environment. The energy that you put into "maintaining flight" in a helium balloon is only the strain on the fabric used in holding the helium into the confines of the bag that encloses it. With the Marcus device, I would bet money that it is not the input energy creating these effects – it is instead the difference in frames of dimensional/inertial reference between "our" environment and the "device's" environment, whatever that difference may be.

You see, even though this sounds like a load of BS, magnetism is not real. This is not an idea that I am making up – in fact, it is an entire chapter in the physics 101 textbook kicking around downstairs in my house. Take two magnetic fields, and project them in the same direction at the same speed. Field A can not interact with Field B, because neither of the fields really exists – they are merely ripples on a pond, and that pond is the background of the time-space continuum. People that believe in relativistic gravitational effects take for granted that things like this happen – after all, gravity is not a force per se in relativity – only a modification of the dimensions of time-space. Well, most people do not realize that Einstein based his theory of gravitational force on his study of magnetism. Magnetism is the same thing – it is a modification of the fabric of time-space.

Take two magnetic fields that did not interact from a moment ago, and now change the direction that one of them is traveling in. Suddenly, the two fields that could not even see each other a moment ago now create an incredible "torque" – this is the same thing that we see in bar-magnets and electric motors. This is the "torsion field" research.

Bar magnets are different than pure fields because they are composed of the discrete fields of thousands of tiny magnetic "domains". That is why the fields from bar-magnets are never "invisible" to each other – it is because that the fields in bar magnets are too jumbled to ever really "line up" to the point of being invisible. Pure fields can do this, however, reinforcing the supremacy of Einstein's relativistic effects with relation to electromagnetism.

Anyhow, that is about it for now – I will try to come up with a more detailed picture for you on this if you like, but I expect that you will probably have more questions about Marcus theory and device in near future. It is a very complex idea underlying his research, but the basis of it is the idea of "rotating magnetic fields".

If you want to do additional research on your own into related fields of study, I would definitely look up "relativity and magnetism" – it provides an excellent example of how to visualize relativity theory in the study of magnetic field interactions. This is something that electronics engineers are not taught, which is why you have never heard of this in an engineering sense before. However, in physics is a well-known concept, although most physicists prefer to work with quantum mechanics rather than relativity these days.

In terms of rotating magnetic fields, you can look up "torsion fields" – again, the Russians have the best understanding of advanced torsion field physics, although their best material probably has not been translated yet. Additionally, rotating magnetic fields are the basis for the Searle Effect and the Hamel device.

Marcus was intrigued by Searle's claims, because they appear to have matched many of his own results. Interestingly, Marcus had developed his work within an "intellectual vacuum" and had never heard of Searle before I told him about the similarities. Nevertheless, force-fields, ice-cold operating temperatures, and antigravity seem to be a pervasive similarity between all manners of experiments that have been reported using rotating magnetic fields. I had assumed that Searle's claims were bunk, but after hearing about similar effects from Marcus research it led to reconsider some of the criticism surrounding Searle lately.

One a final note – one group that may lend additional credibility to this research is Godin and Roshchin in Russia. They obviously benefit from the years of knowledge that the Russians accrued in magnetic field

systems theory, and they attempted a replication of the Searle effect device some years back (and claimed to get some results). I hear that they have been working on a revised version of their experimental setup recently and hope to have even better results in the very near future.
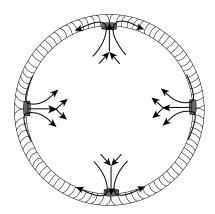
Fig. 1

Magnetic flow for a bifilar-wound toroid that is split at four points on the toroid. This configuration occurs when the coils in the nubs are charged to match the charge on the toroidal coil. The configuration is a quadra pole with a minimum magnetic field at the center

Fig. 2

Marcus recommends the Kikusui 6000L and 18000L multipurpose AC power-supplies
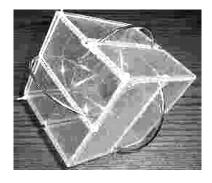
Fig.3

A scale-model mockup of the ring-arrangement within the Marcus device, showing the interlinking coils
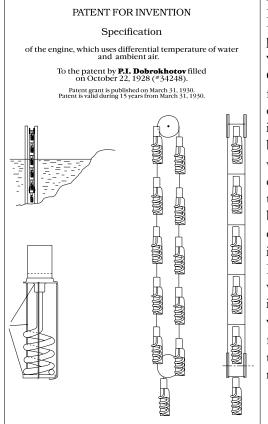
Systems of conversion of thermal energy to mechanical one

Review prepared by correspondent Alla Pashova, **Russia**
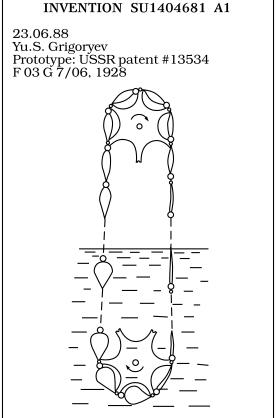
There is a wide class of closed-cycle heat engines using differential temperature of water and ambient air. This kind of systems enables thermal energy to be directly converted to mechanical one so as to perform a useful work. We publish patent specifications of two analogous devices of this kind.

PATENT FOR INVENTION

Specification

of the engine, which uses differential temperature of water and ambient air.

To the patent by **P.I. Dobrokhotov** filled on October 22, 1928 (#34248).

Patent grant is published on March 31, 1930.
Patent is valid during 15 years from March 31, 1930.

In 1928 **P.I. Dobrokhotov** proposed a design of such an engine. It represents an endless chain thrown over a pair of blocks and partly immersed into water. The chain consists of coiled pipes filled with a volatile liquid (such as sulfurous anhydride or ammonia). One end of each coil is fastened to a frame, while another end is fastened to a cylinder piston mounted on the same frame. When overwater elements are heated by means of ambient air, the liquid inside the coil evaporate. Vapor put pressure upon the pistons which being in motion compress air in the cylinder, and thereby reduce volume of each element. When submerging, the element gradually cools down, thereupon causing a decrease in pressure of vapor of the liquid, which is enclosed within coils. The pistons move in backward direction, and the volume of air available inside the cylinder increases. Increase of volume results in increase of water buoyancy force that sets the device in motion.

INVENTION SU1404681 A1

23.06.88
Yu.S. Grigoryev
Prototype: USSR patent #13534
F 03 G 7/06, 1928

In 1980, **Y.S. Grigoriev** developed his forerunner's idea by improving the system described above. The inventor aspired to enhance the effectiveness of this method of conversion of heat energy to mechanical one. He suggested fixing the volume of chambers filled with a heat-sensitive actuating medium at its minimal magnitude before immersing of those chambers into warm water. In water the actuating medium heats and partially evaporates. At a maximum depth of submersion, the chambers are released from fixation to be expanded during emersion. Thus one may avoid expansion of the chambers during their submersion. Futhermore, there is a possibility to activate the device and get the useful work without preliminary spinup from an external drive.

Iliya R. Prigozhin
(25 January, 1917 – 28 May, 2003)

Iliya R. Prigozhin, aged 86, Nobel Prize Winner, Belgian scientist of the Russian origin, died on 28 May in Brussels. Prigozhin made a number of prominent discoveries in the field of thermodynamics and statistical mechanics of nonequilibrium processes. In particular, he developed a concept of irreversibility as applied to thermodynamics. Prigozhin was studying time as a physical phenomenon. In 1977, he was awarded the Nobel Prize for chemistry "for works on thermodynamics of nonequilibrium processes".

The scientist formulated one of the major theorems of the theory of nonequilibrium processes. This theory was later named after him. According to Prigozhin's theorem, stationary state of the system corresponds to minimal entropy generation. The outstanding physicist was also an initiator of applying methods of theory of nonequilibrium processes in biology.

Thermodynamics principles were enunciated in the middle of the XIX century after the invention of a steam-engine, when interaction of heat, electrical, and mechanical work aroused a higher interest. In accordance with the first law of thermodynamics representing an energy conservation principle, energy neither disappears nor appears in any closed system, but transforms from one form to another.

The Prigozhin's theorem sounds as follows: stationary state of the system (under conditions impeding attainment of equilibrium state) corresponds to the minimal generation of entropies. If there are no such impediments, then production of entropy reaches its bare minimum, i.e. zero. The theorem was proved by Prigozhin in 1947.
In thermodynamics the nonequilibrium specifically open systems were of most interest for Prigozhin. In such systems either or both (matter and energy) interchange in reactions with an environment. At that, quantity of matter and/or energy increases or decreases in the course of time.

It is obvious that human society as well as the biological environment is an example of dissipative and nondissipative structures. In the 60s and 70s, Prigozhin developed his theory of dissipative structures and described the formation and development of embryos. Critical points of bifurcation in his mathematical model are correlated with a point, where a biological system becomes consecutive and stabilized.

For his scientific career time, the physicist was awarded over 40 scientific rewards and admitted as an honorary member into national academies of many countries all over the world.
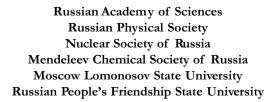
The 11th Russian Conference on Cold Nuclear Transmutation of Chemical Elements and Ball-Lightning (RCCNT&BL-11) is to be held during September 28- October 5, 2003. The place of the Conference is in Dagomys near the city of Sochi.

The program of the Conference includes the following subjects:
· Experimental research in cold nuclear transmutation (fusion) and ball lightning;
· Theoretical models with respect to cold nuclear transmutation (fusion) and ball-lightning effects;
· Applied to these problems technologies and devices.

The Organizing Committee of the Conference is pleased to invite you to attend the Conference. The terms of your participation are as follows:

The full cast is $900, which will include the registration fee, hotel reservation and living, three daily buffet meals, conference proceedings, transportation from the Sochi airport and back, social dinner and special excursion or entertainment.

The languages of the Conference are Russian and English.

The total cost can be reduced to $800 if transferred before August 10 to the account of the Organizing Committee, which is to be announced on having received from you a confirmation about your decision to attend the Conference.

If you make a decision to take part in the Conference, please, let us know before July 1 about the title and abstract of your report.

Contact telephone: (7) (095) 196-9476 (ask Mr. Igor Goryachev), Fax: (7) (095) 196-6108
Email: gnedenko@kiae.ru; Bazhutov@erzion.madi.ru; bazhutov@izmiran.rssi.ru; bychvl@orc.ru
Address: I. Goryachev, Russia, 123182 Moscow, 1 Kurchatov Sq.,
Research Institute of High Technologies at RC "Kurchatov Institute"

Letters from our readers

Thank you for publication of my article. Your magazine becomes more and more popular.

My special thanks to Editor-in-Chief Alexander V. Frolov. Whatever they say or write in the press, he has done a great work and it is not only my own opinion. He has managed to do that everybody had been waiting for a long time. My colleagues (not only from Rostov-on-Don State University but also from other Rostov Institutes of higher education) ask me personally send the best regards to the editorial staff of your magazine.

Sergey A. Gerasimov

Free energy?

The scientific community says that it cannot exist. Where did we hear that before? Academician Valery Sobolev from the Academy of Sciences, the head of the research group working on the experiment says: "This is not some new physics, but just experiments that have been performed very seriously. Make surge of electrons from the environment, remove them, deplete the fused electrolyte with basic typical metals; what you derive from it is what cannot be produced by chemical methods. This is a new state of substance." As the researchers say, first they discovered a particular electrochemical process where high-temperature materials in a new state are the product. This in its turn allowed to discover a new state of substance, new class of materials, a new source of energy, a new method of cold plasma generation, a new superconductor. See whole article at: http://english.pravda.ru/science/19/94/379/9675_energy.html

Josef Hasslberger

Personal home page on physics, energy technology, social and economic issues: http://www.hasslberger.com

Interference disc generator with permanent magnets

Inventor Alan Francoeur, Canada

Carl Reich

Bud Johnson
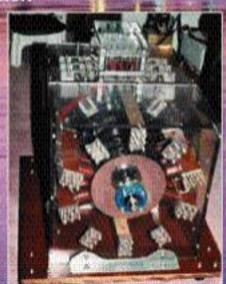
Vortex heat pump
Efficiency
200% and more!

Inventor: Vladimir Susorov
(812) 342-2652
8-901-976-5151
susorow@rol.ru
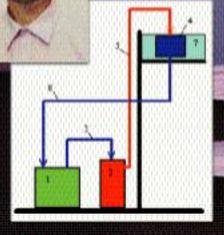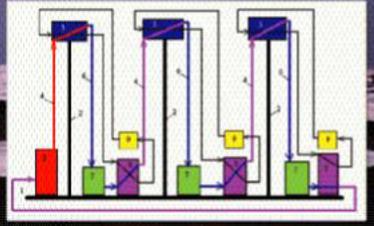
Gravity-heat power system

Author: Vladimir Sukhanov Wladimir.Sukhanov@soros.ksu.ru
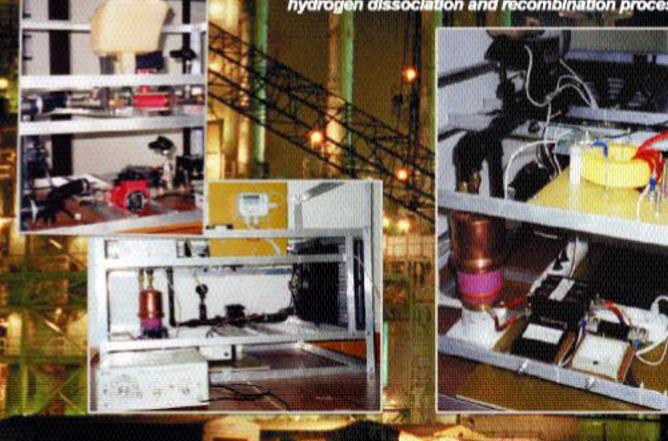
New Energy Technologies
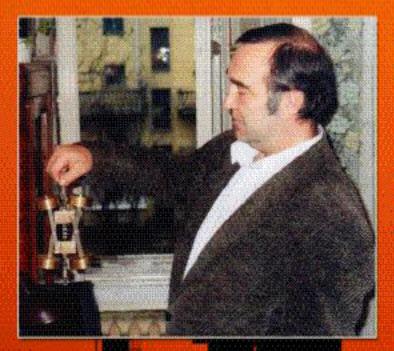
In this issue:

- atomic hydrogen in power engineering
- magnetic generators
- capillary perpetuum mobile
- Hutchison effect

*Photos from Faraday Laboratory:
test bench for measuring the effectiveness of
hydrogen dissociation and recombination processes*
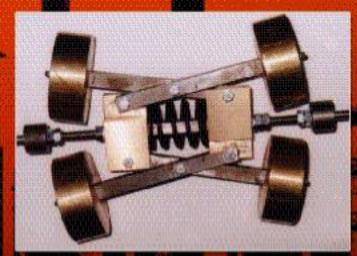
Bogomolov's Invention

Over-unity from elastic forces of spring, compressed by rotation.
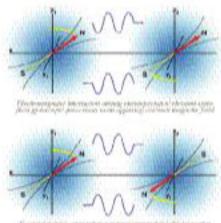
Read in this issue!
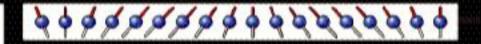
Spin Wave Laser of Ines Espinoza, USA

Spin Wave Technology
INITIAL RELEASE

George J Bugh

Precession

N

Spin

S

Electron Symbolic Diagram

Faraday Lab News

One of the most interesting research projects of our company in the year 2003 has been the research on hydrogen dissociation and recombination processes. It has taken us about half a year to build a special vacuum tube and in October, 2003 we obtained some experimental results on the heat output and efficiency of the system. The system we designed in our laboratory is shown in Fig.1 and also on the cover. The water-cooling system and the heat measurement system make it possible to measure the heat output within the range of 100 W to 5 kW with pinpoint accuracy. In the year 2004 we are planning to go on with our research work.

Fig.2

We have completed the second stage of designing and developing a high-efficiency magnetic generator with the neodymium permanent magnets of 1.25 Tesla. We confirmed the possibility of double output increase from the usage of two magnetic induction counter fluxes produced by the two coils wound on the generator core (Fig.2).

Our laboratory continues designing and perfecting a powerful "alternator"-type generator with permanent magnets and a drum-type rotor. We will give our readers more detailed information after we are aware of the patent examining result.

Our research on "The Control of Temporal Characteristics of Physical Processes by means of Ether Energy Density Change" is also awaiting the results of the patent examining group. This research on time and the construction of the "time machine" is not a pure theory but it has quite real prospects of being applied to the aerospace industry as a propulsion method.

Fig.1

It is worthy to note that now the alternative energy prospects in Russia do not entirely depend on financial factors. The cooperation is important between researchers, investors and organizations interested in the innovative development of Russian industry rather than in the development of Russia as the world primary natural resource is also important. Progressive political and public organizations should develop and introduce alternative energy programmes as well as render support to local researchers. The successful innovation of new technologies is impossible without this support and lobbying government. Let us hope that the year 2004 will bring along new opportunities and promising contacts.

Alexander V. Frolov
General Director Faraday Laboratory Ltd
http://www.faraday.ru

Novozhilov's Motor
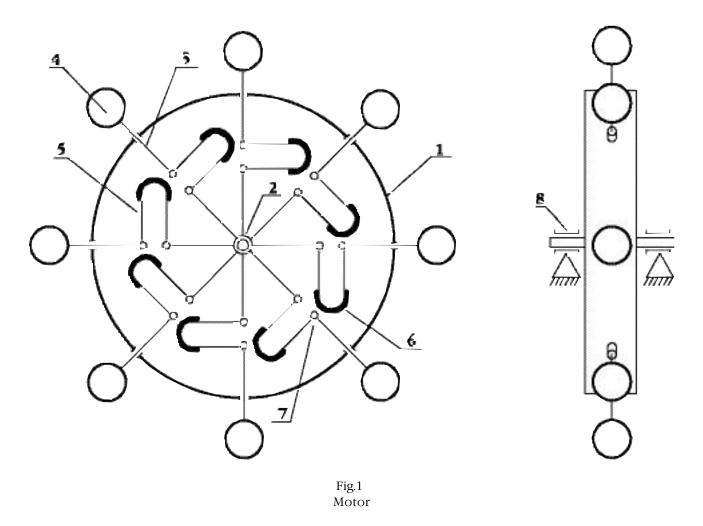
Yury N. Novozhilov, Russia
Bratislavskaya Str., 25-6, 390035, Ryazan,
Tel.: (80912) 72-12-72

An interesting but a very simple motor has been designed. It operates on the basis of heating differences of its components due to temperature variations of contacting environments or due to variable radiation intensity.

Motor structure

The motor structure (see Fig.1) includes a metal or plastic wheel (1). In the center of the wheel there is an axis (2), on which spoke ends are fixed (3). Other spoke ends come through a hole in the wheel rim. On the spoke end there are weights, for example, in the form of small balls (4).

Fig.1
Motor

The structure peculiarity is preconditioned by a loop-shaped part placed on each spoke (5), which has a form of a metal strip or core. An arched bimetal component is built in the center of each loop-shaped part (6). Joints can be fixed at the joining point of loop-shaped parts and spokes to simplify the motor movement (7).

In the motor structure described arched bimetal components become straight when heated. The motor axis ends are placed in bearings (8).

To initiate the motor movement the loop-shaped parts need to be in mediums (zones) with different temperature. For instance, the lower part of the wheel may be placed into hot water (9) and the upper part will stay in the air (10).

Motor operation

When the motor is in a medium with identical temperature, for example, in the air, the temperature of all bimetal components will also be the same; therefore, they have identical form. In this case all spokes will similarly project over the wheel rim and all weights have similar distance from the wheel axis.

This state makes the whole system balanced and immovable. But if the motor wheel is partly placed into water with the temperature exceeding that of the ambient air **the bimetal components in water will become straight and shift the axis weights from the wheel axis.** This phenomenon initiates motor operation.

Let us consider this process in more detail.

On touching water, the bimetal component in the loop-shaped part becomes straight and shifts a weight from the wheel axis. The wheel becomes unbalanced, obtains torque and turns clockwise. This rotation makes the following bimetal component on the next loop-shaped part of the following spoke touch water. This bimetal component also becomes straight and shifts a weight from the wheel axis, generating an increased torque that turns the wheel clockwise.

At the same time a bimetal component comes from hot water on the left side of the wheel in zone "A". The component cools and restores its initial form, i.e. it curves more and pulls the weight on the spoke to the rotation axis. This leads to a decrease of its counterclockwise torque that affects the wheel.

The loop-shaped parts on the left side (A) and the right side (B) of the motor wheel will cause asymmetry in the number of weights projected by the spokes. On the motor left side (A) the weights will be projected from the wheel axis when the spokes are located in corner "C". On the right side

(B) the weights on the spoke axes will be shifted from the axis when the spokes are located in corner "D". Fig.2 shows that corner "D" is far larger than corner "C". This means that more weights will be shifted on the right side of the wheel in zone "B" than on the left side in zone "A".

Fig.2 shows that the wheel weights generating a clockwise torque are projected on the right side. On the left side in zone "A" only one weight is projected and it generates a counterclockwise torque. More weights shifted from the wheel axis on the right side will generate a greater clockwise torque than the weights shifted from the wheel axis on the left side. This is the cause of the wheel clockwise rotation.

This interesting effect is achieved due to the loop-shaped parts on the wheel spokes with bimetal components placed on them. When the next wheel spoke reaches corner "D", the bimetal component connected with it touches hot water, becomes straight and shifts the corresponding weight further from the wheel rotation axis. The motor wheel continues rotation, making the next bimetal component touch water. It is also heated, becomes straight and shifts the corresponding weight from the wheel rotation axis. The wheel continues rotation. Bimetal components are touching water in succession. On the left side, in zone "A", the bimetal components successively come out of hot water, cool in comparatively colder air, return to the initial sharply curved form and pull the weights on spokes to the wheel rotation axis. This is the reason for the wheel torque to decrease.

Mass movement from the axis in a rotating object commonly causes reduction of rotation speed. And, on the contrary, the rotation speed increases when the mass comes close to the axis. In motor zone "A" the weights come close to the rotation axis after the corresponding bimetal components come out of hot water, and the same number of weights move from the center in zone "B", i.e. these effects on the rotation wheel compensate each other.

In essence this is a heat machine. The heat transfer from a warmer medium – water – to the cold medium – air – is achieved owing to the heat capacity of the band-form bimetal component. This is the reason for fast heating and cooling processes. Due to the fact that bimetal components are not large, not so much heat is needed for their heating.

The motor will operate when the air temperature exceeds that of water but in this case it rotates counterclockwise.

There is another model of this motor when nitanol components are used instead of bimetal ones. Nitanol is a memory metal alloy that changes shape when reaching certain temperature. In this instance, the nitanol component is normally curved but becomes straight when heated (for example, up to 50^0 C), and the weight on the spoke end moves from the wheel rotation axis initiating rotation of the wheel. That means similar operation of a nitanol-based and bimetal-based motor.

The motor structure is very simple and its operation does not require power or fuel supply: it is enough to place its wheel into the water the temperature of which is different from that of the air.

The motor structure may be further developed: for example, a focused sun ray can be used for the heating purposes; the bimetal component can be heated with a common electric lamp on one side of the wheel, the required heat may come from a heating radiator, stove or burning gas-jet. Such motor may be heated when installed on a mantelpiece, etc.

This article describes the motor model that can be used as a toy. Being supplied with looking-glass units it may be applied to get various luminous effects or may be installed in the shop showcases, or else at exhibitions. This motor is also able to operate in a gravity force environment, even on the Moon. There direct sun rays may heat bimetal components to 200^0 C, and the temperature of the components located in the shadow almost reaches absolute zero, i.e. the temperature difference in this instance is over 400^0 C, which enables constant efficient motor operation.
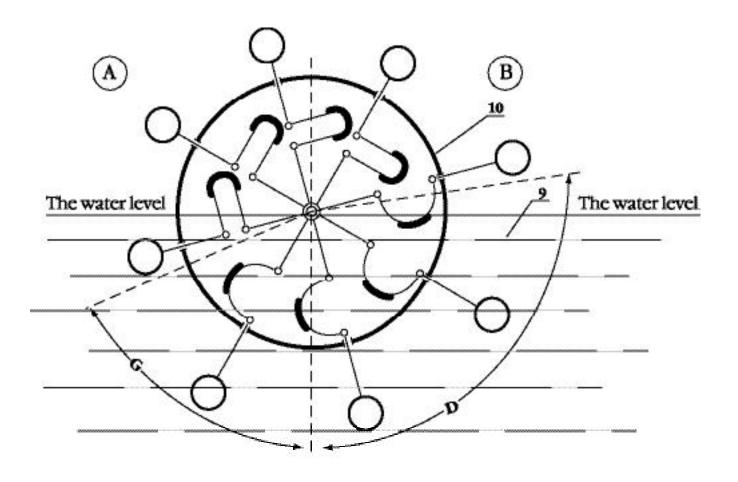
Fig.2
The motor in operation

Self-Interaction in Electromagnetic Rotation

S.A. Gerasimov , V.V. Stashenko, Russia
Physics Department, Rostov State University, Rostov-on-Don, 344090
Email:GSIM1953@mail.ru

Introduction

The electromagnetic rotation is the motion of a magnetized body ina direction perpendicular to both the vector of magnetization J_m and the direction of the electric current j in a liquid inside which the magnet is located (Fig. 1).

Editor: Readers can compare this vector composition and the device scheme of Godin and Roschin with the Searl experiments. The similarity is evident.   *A. V. Frolov*
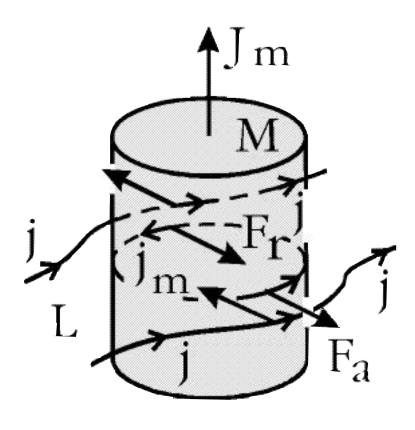
Fig.1
Electromagnetic rotation. A magnet M of magnetization J_m that is partly or entirely submerged in a conductive liquid L with a direct current of density j is moving in the direction of the force $F_a + F_r$

The force producing such a motion is sufficiently weak and, normally, the phenomenon is observed at rotation. Although, this is quite a well-explored phenomenon [1-6], nobody knows what makes the magnet rotate [4]. There is an opinion [2,3] that the motion of the magnet in the conductive liquid is caused by the forces of attraction $\mathbf{F}_a$ and repulsion $\mathbf{F}_r$ between currents of density $\mathbf{j}$ flowing in the liquid and surface magnetization currents $\mathbf{j}_m$ of the magnet, often called the Ampere currents as shown in Fig. 1.
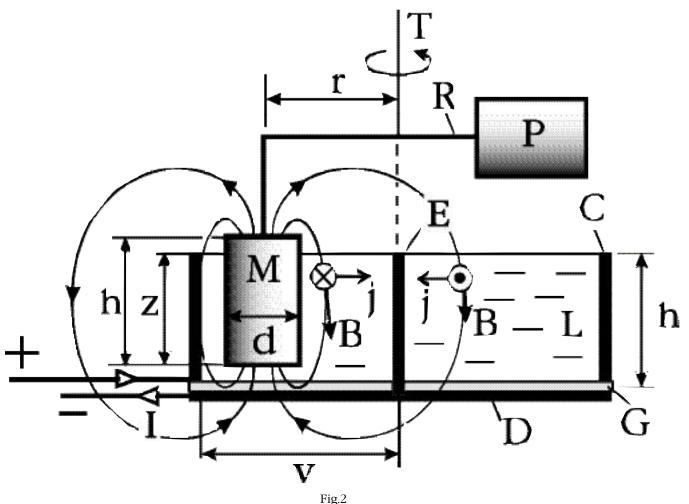
The external magnetic field of a long cylindrical magnet originating far from either pole is zero. Therefore, no force is exerted on charges moving in the liquid far from the ends of the magnet. Nevertheless, the magnet still moves in the liquid with the direct current even if it is only a thin magnetized needle [5]. Thus, the deeper the magnet is immersed in the conductive liquid, the more liquid gathers around it. The deeper the immersion is, the higher the total force must be. That should be so.

In reality, it is quite different. During intermediate immersions when the magnet is partly submerged in the liquid, the torque N does not depend on the depth of immersion, in the other words, currents flowing round the cylindrical magnet do not influence the exerting force acting [6]. Moreover, during shallow immersions, the magnet moves together with the liquid. **This is none other than *the self-interaction* [7].** The conductive liquid under the magnet experiences the magnetic action. The direction of this force coincides with the direction

of the magnet motion. **Thus, the part of the conductive liquid moving in this direction under the action of the magnetic field B, affected by the frictional forces in the liquid causes the motion of the magnet in the same direction.** The only way to find out the role of the self-interaction in this phenomenon is experimental investigation. It would be appropriate to exclude the currents flowing under the magnet. In this case the magnet must rotate in the opposite direction.

Experimental system

A commercially available cylindrical magnet M of magnetization $J_m = 1{,}95 \cdot 10^5$ A/m and a balanced load P connected by a rocker R are suspended by a thread T as shown in Fig. 2.

Fig.2

The experimental set and its parameters: h=50 mm, r=35 mm, d=25 mm, v=70 mm, the diameter of the central electrode E is 5 mm, the thickness of the bottom G is 2 mm. (×) and (·) are directions of the force acting on current elements of current density j in the magnetic field of inductance B

The magnet is immersed in the 5% copper sulfate solution ($CuSO_4$) so that the depth z of immersion can vary. A vessel containing the conductive liquid L is large enough for the magnet to be almost entirely immersed. The cylindrical surface C of the vessel and the central electrode E of the system are made of non-magnetic materials. The bottom of the vessel G is, of course, insulator. The magnet is coated with an insulating moisture-proof varnish. The length of the electrode E equals the height h of the vessel. A direct current of strength I passing through the cylindrical electrode C, the conductive liquid L, the central electrode E and the disk electrode D generate a torque of electromagnetic origin which results to the rotation of the magnet. The disk electrode D is intended to provide the system with the symmetrical supply of the current.

Experimental results

The size of this experimental device differs from that described previously [6]. **As a result we have obtained the torque N, which is about ten times more intensive than the former one.** But the main result is that the torque does not change its sign when the magnet is being immersed in the conductive liquid (Fig. 3).
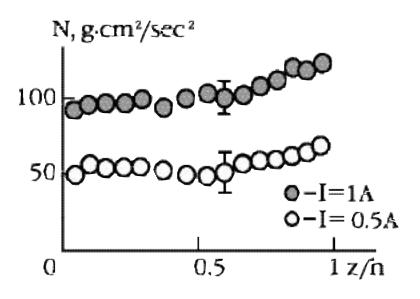
Fig.3
A typical experimental dependencies of the torque N
acting on the magnet depending on the depth of immersion z

When the magnet is almost entirely submerged in the liquid the depth of which equals the height of the magnet, no currents are flowing under and above it. In this case the rotation of the magnet is expected to be the result of drag action of the rotating liquid located in the intermediate field relative to the magnet. This part of the conductive liquid is rotating in the direction opposite to that of the motion of the magnetized body. It seems to be the right way. The magnet pushes the liquid away and, therefore, is moving in the opposite direction. No, this is wrong. If it was correct, this effect would also occur during the shallow immersion. At small z the magnet and the liquid rotate together. So far we still do not know what makes the magnet rotate.

S.A. Gerasimov

References

1. Faraday M. Experimental Researches on Electricity. // London: Ed. by R. and J.E. Taylor. 1839.
2. Ampere A.M. Theorie Mathematique des Phenomenes Electrodynamiques. // Paris: Blanchard. 1958.
3. Sigalov R.G., Shapovalova T.I., Karimov H.H., Samsonov N.I. // Magnetic Fields and Their New Applications. // Moscow: Nauka. 1976.
4. Gerasimov S.A., Ershov A.V. What Makes a Magnet Rotate? // Physics Education (Moscow). 2002. V. 22. P. 70-75.
5. Grabovsky M.A., Mlodseevsky A.B., Telesnin R.V., Shaskolskaya M.P., Yakovlev I.A. Lecture Demonstrations on Physics. // Moscow: Nauka. 1965.
6. Gerasimov S.A., Ershov A.V. Mechanism of Electromagnetic Rotation. // Problems of Applied Physics. 2001. V. 7. P. 34-35.
7. Gerasimov S.A. Self-Interaction and Vector Potential in Magnetostatics. // Physica Scripta. 1997. V. 56. N 3-4. P. 462-464.

Capillary Motor

Iosiph I. Elshansky, Russia
Koshtoyantsa St., 1a - 75, 119454 Moscow
Email: ewrik@bisinter.ru

For several decades the author has been organizing a contest for young inventors on the radio, television, in mass media and the Internet. There have been accumulated thousands of engineering solutions that belong to schoolchildren and youth. There are many original ones, including perpetual mobile. Though unfeasible in principle, they have interesting structure and competent engineering solutions.

For example, a child's dream to create an oblique roof over a city or field and direct the rain flow to a turbine to obtain mechanical work is of little use. But it's quite another matter if this child takes a pencil, a sheet of paper and tries to make a sketch or a drawing of such construction. Even if the construction is primitive and unfeasible, the child will get his first engineering experience and self-reliance.

I can still remember one peculiar case. Once the editors were instructed (it was in the times of the USSR) to assist an honored inventor of new machines. It was a Stalin Prize laureate, creator of a special type of lime that was widely applied in construction (I will not disclose his name). The inventor was given (that was not common practice) a large room in a shared apartment situated in a prestigious block of apartments in Moscow. It turned out that all room space, except for narrow passages at the walls, was occupied by a huge table. On the table up to the ceiling there were some pipelines, glass and metal vessels, retorts and other laboratory ware. The most impressive thing was retorts heated by gas coming through a hose from the shared kitchen. All that staff was bubbling, hissing and steaming. The inventor was creating a perpetual mobile!

I will give one more example of a situation common for the editors of the "Inventor and Rationalizer". Once we had a respectable-looking visitor who made an odd request to get the President of the French Academy of Sciences to respond to his letters about a perpetual mobile

plan. The essence of Alexander Rodionov's (Maloyaroslavets, Russia) invention was that "in accordance with Newton's and Guerin's laws fluid flows up through capillaries and turns a wheel when flowing down (see Fig.1).
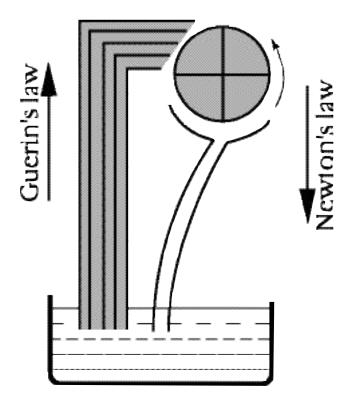
Fig. 1
Perpetuum-mobile

There are many similar projects in the history of engineering. Hence, this case may be considered as typical. We all know that the molecular adhesion forces (moistening) that push the fluid upwards will stick to it and the capillary motor will never work. But is the idea totally unfeasible? Since false modesty is inappropriate when it comes to perpetual mobile, I will present my ideas on this not so honorable subject for the reader's judgment.

It seems that all perpetual mobile inventors start not with a pencil and a sheet of paper but with experimenting on magnets, oblique plane, wicks, wheels, springs and other materials at hand. My first heat (perpetual) motor was also the result of an experiment.
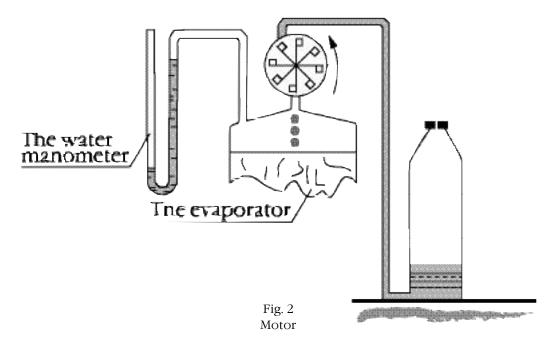
The "Capillary" idea of Alexander Rodionov haunted me. I recalled that the great Lomonosov devoted lots of time to studying molecular adhesion and capillarity. They are present in everyday life, let alone the nature, especially in plants that would not be able to exist without them. How else would moisture flow up the trunks and stems? But, on the other hand, according to Mikhail V. Lomonosov's data, water flows up only for the maximum of several dozens of millimeters even through the thinnest capillary. But trees may have the height of several dozens of meters! If, as it is customarily considered, moisture flows from one capillary to another of its own accord, why not suppose that a capillary perpetual mobile is feasible? Explanations that moisture in plants flows up due to root pressure do not sound plausible. So where is the truth?

Years have passed since that visit of A. Rodionov. Now, just like I used to sympathize with, as it then seemed, a rather odd inventor, now my relatives sympathize with me. One can not blame them: for weeks and months there have been flowerpots all around the apartment - on the tables, window-sills and bookstands. With bottles, tubes and self-made water manometers to follow.

Once, when I was assembling a device, I could not find two similar glass tubes and had to put in the tube of thin polyethylene. But no matter how hard I worked the water in the communicating vessels was at different levels. In the glass tube the water level was always higher. It could not be otherwise, if you come to think of it, but isn't it the right time the words "made of equally wettable material" were inserted into the communicating vessels law?

Here is a primitive experiment: make a hole in the bottom of a plastic flowerpot containing soil and a plant, and insert there one end of an elastic tube. The other end is inserted into the bottom of a plastic bottle containing water (see Fig. 3). In accordance with the communicating vessels law, the water will flow from the bottle into the flowerpot. When we see that the soil has been made wet, the experiment shall get more complicated: elevate the flowerpot so that its bottom is higher than the liquid level in the bottle. In some days we shall notice that the soil has not dried up and the water level in the bottle has lowered. One should not be a Solomon to guess that the soil or the roots of the plant transfer the water from the lower to the higher level. Here is a typical natural perpetual mobile!

The water manometer

The evaporator

Fig. 2
Motor

It is no use referring to the molecular adhesion forces since they can not be applied at such height differences. What is it then? A molecular collision as in a boiling kettle? But a leaf has neither high temperature nor much space. Nevertheless, water evaporates both from the soil and leaf surfaces. At the same time there is rarefaction under the evaporating surface. Can it be the rarefaction that pulls up new portions of water?
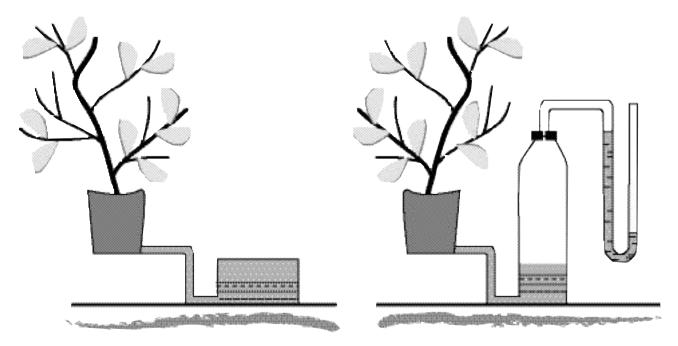
Fig. 3
Rarefaction

Let us make the experiment still more complicated. Put the leg pipe of a liquid manometer into the bottle cork. (Fig. 3) Almost immediately the water level in the closest leg to the bottle will start rising. It means that there is rarefaction in the bottle. Can it be the rarefaction that "rules" the plants?

Most likely, the essence of the mistake made by Rodionov and other authors of capillary motors consisted in attempts to get the water outflow from the capillary. **If it is not flowing out but evaporating, as it is common for the soil or plants, then, probably, vacuum will manifest itself and the capillary perpetual mobile will start working.**

I made my first capillary perpetual mobile many years ago (see Fig. 4). And it worked: though slowly, the wheel was steadily turning. No doubt, it was due to the heat inflow from the air. Therefore, such motor will work if there is a temperature difference and relative humidity of surrounding air is below 100%.
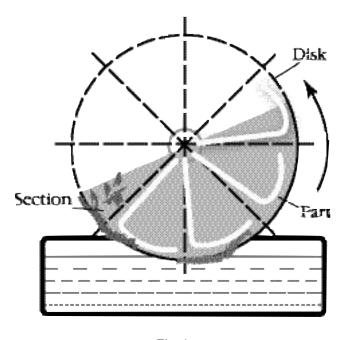
Fig. 4
Capillary Motor

The heat motor operating principle is clear from this figure. The disk (many disks on the common axis) is divided into isolated sections. Their surface is covered with a moisture-proof piece of material (filtered paper, cloth, etc.). The part of each section somewhat gets under the base of the next one. Hence, a small part of the base of one section and a part of the part following the section can get into water simultaneously. Due to the capillary moistening the section and the part will start to absorb water. Since the section is shifted about the center of gravity, the turning moment is bound to appear. The section that is out of water starts to dry up, the moment will increase and the wheel will start turning.

Having determined that, though slowly, the motor is turning, the author applied to a patent authority for a patent on the invention of the "Perpetual mobile", meaning it as a joke. I hoped that the experts (I knew some of them personally) will understand this joke. But, unexpectedly, the device was considered an invention, though under the name of the "Heat motor" (certificate of authorship USSR # 1455040).

Basically, the motor is similar to the project of A. Rodionov. I would not be surprised if he protested. The same capillaries and the spontaneous rise of liquid on the moisture-proof material. The only difference is that the liquid does not flow out but evaporates from the capillaries.

Almost without any reason - one can not predict his eccentricities - I have recently made one more capillary motor (see Fig. 3). Perhaps, it resulted from my experiments with plants. This motor directly and spontaneously lifts water to a higher level, which is more convincing. Moreover, water flows in the form of drops (or a stream) and turns the propeller! The motor is quite operable and has even been shown on TV. But do not try to verify it on your own - such work is useless without certain know-how. The author would not like to disclose the "secret" yet. I could still make a patent application.

The Continuous Rotation Device

The essence of this invention is that in a closed circle the rotation of the object occurs without any outer influence or any power sources (electric energy, oil, diesel oil, etc.), which results in the rotation of the rotating part of the device. The torque can be easily enhanced by means of transmitting it to the reduction system. At that rate, the necessary rotation speed and rotation power can be acquired.

The device is small, easy to transport, mobile (both, in operation and switch-off), simple and inexpensive to make and assemble. It is economical, ecological and weather independent.

The device can be used in any industrial or household appliance field where the continuous rotation is required. It is especially important to note that this device can be used to generate energy on a large industrial scale as well as in small laboratories, in mountains and remote districts, in tunnels, at sea, etc. for it does not require any power lines.

Patent Claim Priority:
#20030059, April 19th 2003

For more information contact the author of the invention:
Eldar Sariyev,
Azerbaydzhan, Baku,
Tbilisskiy Prospekt, 75-26;
Tel: + (994 12) 92-47-73, 98-95-02;
Email: eldar_sariyev@yahoo.com

Gravity-heat Power System

Vladimir N. Sukhanov, Russia
Kosmonavtov Str., 35-39, 420061 Kazan
Email: Wladimir.Sukhanov@soros.ksu.ru

Natural hydrologic cycle is a widely recognized phenomenon. Water evaporates from the ground and water reservoir surfaces, generally, due to the Sun heat, then moves to the superstructure atmospheric layers where it is condensed, and precipitates onto the ground surface, but on higher levels compared with evaporation surfaces. In this process water is also purified and desalted. From the higher levels water flows to its main evaporation points, forming streams like brooks and rivers where water power plants could be established. Flowing to the lower surface layers with lower potential energy, water in the Earth's gravitational field performs work that can be utilized.

Natural hydrologic cycle principle is used in the gravity-heat power system (USA patent No. 3953971, International class. F03G7/04 of May 4, 1976).

In this system the temperature difference between ground surface layers (the mountain foot and its top) is used to produce electric power and obtain fresh water. The temperature difference does not change much with change of height, and the system effectiveness is quite moderate, which can be named as its drawback.

The system utilizes free environmental energy. Its efficiency (converted to the process maintaining energy) tends to infinity.

The author proposes a new gravity-heat power system that can substitute modern heat power plants. It contains all installation components as per USA patent No. 3953971 except for the heat exchanger on the ground surface whose functions are performed by a conventional steam boiler.

Gravity energy component **G** in the proposed system:

$$G = X_m \cdot T\, g\, H\,,$$

where

♦ X_m – fluid flow,

♦   **T** – time of operation,

♦   **g** – acceleration of gravity,

♦   **H** – tower height between the steam boiler and the freezer (condenser).

This formula does not allow for vapor density of operating fluid.

The vapor density is insignificant as compared with the operating fluid density.

Energy **P**, required to maintain operation:

$$P = X_m \cdot T\, q\,,$$

where **q** – specific fluid vaporization energy

Efficiency **Қ** – of the system should not be lower than 80%

To obtain efficiency that equals 120% the following is required:

$$H = 2,2q/g$$

Or **H** = 25,4 kilometers.

Construction of such towers is too complicated for modern technology. Therefore, a stratospheric balloon that is linked to the ground surface by a flexible twin-core hose rope may be used. One core is designed to send down fluid and the other to send up vapor. Flowing down to the ground surface through the hose, the fluid will generate fluid column pressure. The fluid will cross water-turbine generator cascades, after each of which the fluid pressure will decrease and the fluid will continue its way down.

There is an alternative. To make the tower several times lower the evaporation (at the tower foot) and condensation (at the tower/mountain top) should be phased (in the form of cascade) at various pressure values and with utilization of the same heat energy. For this purpose a heat carrier is used that will transfer heat from the tower (mountain) top to its foot. This operation will enable the tower height segmentation into **H/n** sections where **n** is the number of grades in a cascade.

Cascade structure is shown in Fig. 1
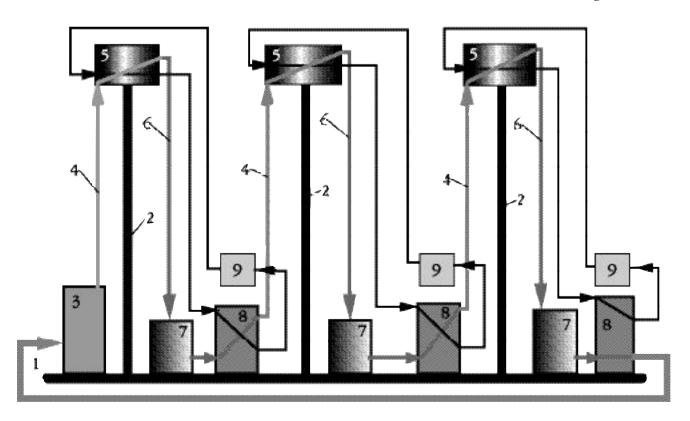
Fig. 1
Cascade

where

> 1 – ground surface,
> 2 – tower component or the smoke-stack of the steam boiler,
> 3 – steam boiler,
> 4 – steam pipe,
> 5 – heat exchanger and condenser,
> 6 – pressure pipeline,
> 7 – water-turbine generator,
> 8 – heat exchanger and evaporator,
> 9 – circulation pump,
> 10 – pipeline of the heat carrier circulation.

Cascade (operating fluid, water) with 500 meters

of height can contain several dozens of grades (50 and more). **In this case the cascade efficiency may approach 120%.**

Decreasing the tower height to 500 meters (for water) will allow for utilization of conventional water-turbine generators and standard equipment.
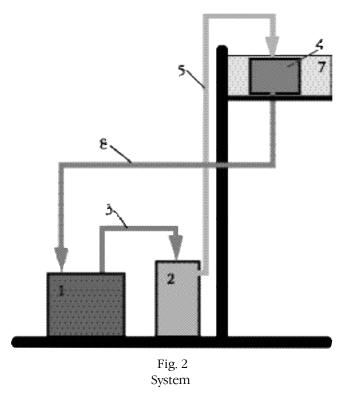
In the proposed cascade the heat energy is required to maintain the cascade working capacity when Earth's gravitational field energy is utilized. In the author's opinion there are still other ways to use gravitation.

The system scale is its main drawback. Therefore, partial utilization of the proposed principle may

seem more attractive. The proposed engineering solution was simple.

In a thermal power station the condenser is installed on the top of the tower (mountain). After the condenser the water lift in the water tower finished at the steam boiler pressure pipe (omitting the pump that was no longer necessary). Energy required for pressure pipe operation was saved. In other words, the water tower was utilizing the Earth's gravitation at the conventional juncture of vapor condensation in the steam plant.

Such proposal was made on June 17, 1982 in the patent application USSR N3453603/06, (101161) expert code 060701KH. However, the utilization of free and environmentally friendly gravity energy did not arouse interest even on the part of patent experts.

Fig. 2
System

The author is looking for serious partners.

The Alternative Energy Potential in Russia

According to the International Energy Agency (IEA) calculations, total investments into the energy industry constitute approximately 330 billion dollars annually. Almost half of this sum (150 billion annually) is allotted to the development of the electric power industry. This information only partially reflects the potential of the alternative energy development and does not include the market growth factor upon the introduction of autonomous power system technologies. Vast territories of the planet have not been sufficiently developed yet due to the absence of local energy resources and power lines. From this point of view, Russia is the country with an enormous consumer demand potential provided that the mass production of autonomous fuel-less energy systems guarantees low production prices.

Alexander V. Frolov
Editor-in-Chief

Modern Perpetual Mobile

Review prepared by correspondent Alla Pashova, Russia.
Based on the Internet pages and other information sources

It is common knowledge that any experimental information, which is against a conventional scientific paradigm, is considered to be false, extracted from the society and finally is turned into something **classified and elite.**
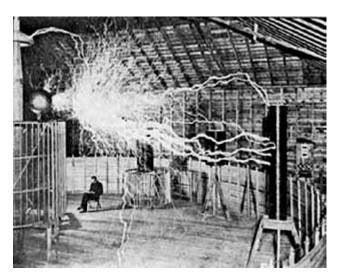
Politics-oriented science as a whole and natural science in particular often result in misrepresentation and falsehood of **popular knowledge** that turns it into the fighting weapon of socio-political organizations, states and their groups.

World-outlook and political contradictions of any society often determine science development strategies. In 1885 Nicola Tesla presented his transformer in action by means of which he lit carbon lamps in a 25 miles circle without any cords, conductors or switches using the 5000-HP turbine of the Niagara hydroelectric power station. Afterward, he obtained financial support for one of his energy projects.

On a special testing ground Nicola Tesla built vacuum-energy systems. However, in 1885 the systems, as well as the testing ground, were destroyed as it became evident that if they went on the mankind would never need organic fuel again. But the destruction of the systems and testing ground does not at all mean the destruction of papers and documents...Ever since that moment people have been trying to find "free energy".

The experiment of distant lighting of carbon lamps without using any cords was repeated only once by the physicist Filippov. He managed to light the lamps in Tsarskoe Selo employing the electric generating systems in St. Petersburg. Filippov died in 1914 under mysterious circumstances.

In 1917 the Portuguese American Andres invented non-convetional fuel for an internal combustion engine. The essence of his invention was in some inexpensive chemicals, which he dissolved in water (some drops of chemicals per pail of water). A special state committee tested the new fuel during the New York - Washington - New York automobile races. After the races one of the largest oil monopolies in the U.S. offered Andres 2 million dollars in cash for the documents and all rights for his invention and later locked all the information in their safes. Two days later after getting the money Andres disappeared. (The information was disclosed by V. Vasilevsky, the former chief of the scientific and technical intelligence department of the KGB of the USSR, who had been in charge of the department since 1930).

The above-mentioned examples show that there were a lot of attempts to develop revolutionary energy technologies. But what then are the grounds for the 'energy crisis' complaints? The answer is simple: the desire of a group of financial and energy multinational corporations for an economic, political and, finally, for a total control of the world. That is why there is no room for "free-energy" hunters in our science, not even as laboratory assistants, not to mention some higher positions.

Practice often negates scientific dogmas, especially when it comes to the efficiency of different devices. In general, the traditional understanding of efficiency is quite limited and should be forgotten. Instead of the traditional notion "efficiency" we should consider the notion "energy-conversion efficiency" (ECE), which has no limits. In 1974 in the USA a six-stroke internal combustion engine was designed which had a double ECE. The fifth stroke of the engine operation included water injection; the sixth was characterized by the water vapor introduction. Firstly, the engine had a higher ECE than that of the Carnot cycle. Secondly, taking the 55 % ECE of the contemporary internal combustion engine, the ECE of a six-stroke engine exceeds 1.

> *Practice often negates scientific dogmas, especially when it comes to the efficiency of different devices. In general, the traditional understanding of efficiency is quite limited and should be forgotten. Instead of the traditional notion "efficiency" we should consider the notion "energy-conversion efficiency"...*

Before the war there appeared "studebekkers" with the fuel consumption of 5.5 l per 100 km. But the fuel-economy record was set by the Japanese. In 1986 they built up an automobile, which used only 0.055 l of fuel per 100 km (about 44 g). Unfortunately, now we do not have plants, which could manufacture automobiles of the kind.

In 1832 Tomson came up with the idea of **a heat-pump unit**. Stating the unity and interconvertibility of substance movements, he proved that the mechanical energy consumption can restore stray heat. At that time cross-Atlantic ships had low-temperature steam engines, which employed exhaust steam and ether vapors. The efficiency of those engines was already higher than the Carnot cycle efficiency.

Now with the help of the facts acquired during the last century we will prove the scientific inconsistency of the orthodox model of the second stage of thermodynamics. In 1941 the English physicists O. Hougen and K. Watson published their work featuring the experimental fact that the ammonia-saturated vapor pressure in liquids was higher than the general pressure. For example, with the general pressure of 50 atm and the temperature of 0^0 C, such pressure was 17 % higher. This means that having placed a semitransparent partition and a turbine between two containers it could have been possible to build up a natural-heat vapor-converter. This method was used by **von Platen, the Nobel prizewinner from Sweden, who constructed a self-rotating centrifugal machine, which provided a 1000 atm pressure when ammonia interacted with water. The heat emitted was enough to compensate friction losses**. It is also known that the Carnot principle cannot be applied to closed cycles. W. Vielstich, 'Combustion Cells', 1968: **"If an entropy change of a reaction is negative, it can exceed 1**. It means that a certain amount of energy can be obtained from the natural heat. Such an effect is possible in electrochemical generators, which employ a direct oxidation process before oxidation and dioxidation".

A demonstrative example of scientific experiments withdrawn from science is discovery # 13 "The knock power-transfer regularity" made on December, 18th, 1962, which makes it possible to create a mechanical "perpetual mobile". The experiment shows that the conventional "knock theory" does not work in practice: **the bouncing energy of a body after it has been knocked can be higher than its energy before it has been knocked**.

Trying to get some recognition, **E. Aleksandrov, Doctor of Engineering Science, made his demonstrative experiment in front of many different commissions: a chilled-steel ball when falling from a 10 m height onto a firmly-fixed chilled-steel plate made a 14-15 m-high bounce**. That was the notorious 'perpetual mobile' as it is. It went on like this until somebody decided to explain the result of the experiment by a metal lattice internal

energy. At once, everything was clear. Since that moment the above-mentioned principle has been successfully employed in percussion-action machines. This principle can also be used in simple electric-power systems.

Now we can see that electro-technicians had already constructed demonstrative 'perpetual mobile' machines 10 years before politicians and economists started to speak about the 'energy crisis'.

In 1921 the mass media wrote about A. Hubbard who invented an electromagnetic generator without any external energy supply. The Hubbard generator was used as a boat motor.

> *...now we can see that electrotechnicians had already constructed demonstrative 'perpetual mobile' machines 10 years before politicians and economists started to speak about the 'energy crisis'...*

In 1928 L. Nidershot invented a 300 W electric generator, which did not require any external energy supply. The device consisted of a radio-technical oscillation generator (500 kHz) and a coil. After 68 years there appeared publications about A. Melnichenko who repeated the experiment.
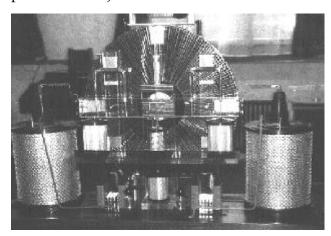
In 1927 T. Brown (England) obtained a patent on the ways of originating a moving power and energy using an electric field. Later, in 1955 while working in France, he presented a system with the speed-capability of several miles per hour using a 2000 eV field. After that he had to stop his experiments and was sent to the USA.
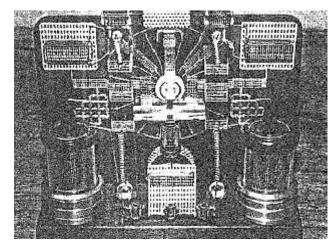
In 1943 N. Tesla presented an electric-motor automobile. The energy was generated by a previously-unknown generator.
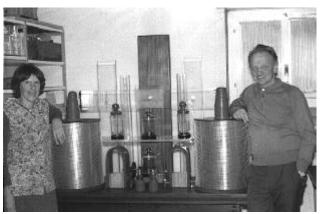
In 1960 Stovbunenko (whose research work results were subject to a special verdict of the Military-Industrial Complex) presented his motor, which made it possible to move in his old automobile 'Moskvich' around the city for the whole day utilizing the power of a standard automobile battery.

In 1980 there was a qualitative break through in electro-technical "perpetual mobiles". Baumann's electrostatic machines of the total capacity of 750 kW started functioning in the religious community of Liden (Switzerland), serving all daily needs of the village. (See the photos below)

The photos are taken from www.free-energy.cc

Thus, in 1980 there appeared a community with no energy problems, no need for organic fuel and no fear for the 'energy crisis'.

In 1881 N. Sluginov discovered an energy imbalance that occurred in the water electrolysis process. In his experiments he got that the output energy was 30% higher than the input energy. In 1980 American scientists recreated this energy imbalance and proved that while employing the steam turbine rejected heat, the water electrolysis efficiency reaches 120%.

This information introduces a story about an energy system invented in 1957 under the guidance of I. Filimonenko. The system did not simply generate energy in the form of a high-pressure vapor and output hydrogen and oxygen but also absorbed radiation. In 1960 the USSR Central Committee and Cabinet Council gave a special secret ruling, known as "The Three 'K's'" (Keldysh, Kurchatov, Korolyov) to go on with the research in this system. However, after Kurchatov's death the project was "oppressed" and later on after the death of Korolyov the project was completely cancelled. The special committee of the USSR Academy of Sciences stated that the system was functioning against "the Law of Nature". I. Filimonenko was dismissed and expelled from the party. Later, in 1980-1991 the experiments were partially renewed. Several testing systems were constructed in the Chelyabinsk region but the construction was never finished and the use of a mobile system for eliminating the damage caused by the Chernobyl accident was refused. This story is a demonstrative example of the traditional rejection of promising projects by science, which could be very beneficial for Russia.

Theoretical Background of 'Perpetual Mobile'

Originally, the term 'entropy' was used only in connection with the reasoning about limited or eternal nature of the Universe. Later it came to be used to describe the functioning principles of thermal machines. Now there exist more than 600 contradictory definitions for 'entropy', which are actually the results of a long and unfinished discussion between the supporters of Dekart and Leibnitz, who defined 'motion' in different ways. It is these permanent contradictions in the theoretical fundamentals of physics that make it impossible to explain the existence of a 'perpetual mobile'. However, standard physics has never denied the possibility of creating energy technologies allowing the ECE higher than 1.

We should remember that the basis of the so-called variational calculation is the mathematical apparatus technique of the conventional mechanics. It seems that if system behavior equations directly depend on time, this system cannot fall under any conservation laws. **This is the proof of a complete failure of the conventional energy conservation law!**

> *It is these permanent contradictions in the theoretical fundamentals of physics that make it impossible to explain the existence of a 'perpetual mobile'*
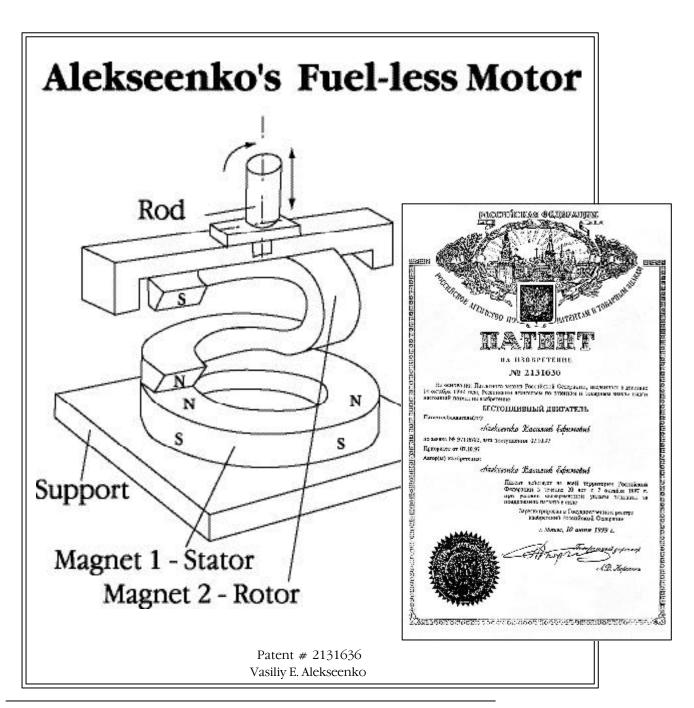
In time-independent thermodynamics the existence of 'perpetual mobile' can be explained by the system internal energy usage. There exist two kinds of thermodynamic systems. Some of them when being heated or affected in some other way start increasing their internal energy while other systems show the internal energy decrease. The latter are called negative absorption systems. The standard version of the first law of thermodynamics does not cover all the processes occurring in such systems. The output of a negative absorption system can be higher than its energy. The additional output is acquired by the gradual internal energy loss.

To cap it all, there are more than a hundred experimental facts that show the limited nature of the Maxwell theory. They were obtained by scientists from different research institutes and construction bureaus, were tested and registered. Thus, for example, in 1973 in the USSR the acoustic magnetoelectricity effect was discovered. The author of the discovery proved the

interaction of electrons with ultrasonic waves with a 1000-times energy increase. This is against the Maxwell theory, which absolutely denies effects of the kind. But the limited nature of the theory was never accepted.

However, the examples of the machines in action prove that since 1834 when the first refrigerator was invented, when the cross-Atlantic ships were equipped with low-temperature ether-vapor steam-engines, the contemporary science had no right to introduce 'the second holy principle', especially in the orthodox form of 'the Carnot cycle efficiency'. The modern theoretical physics cannot provide grounds for the negation of creating over-unity devices. That is why we should rely on the physicists-experimentalists who develop the science in a practical rather than theoretical way.

Alekseenko's Fuel-less Motor

Patent # 2131636
Vasiliy E. Alekseenko

Aerospace Defense Research Finds Free Energy and Antigravity Possible

Dr. Ines Espinoza, USA

email: dr.ines@vasantcorporation.com

Editor: it is worth mentioning that the first gravitational-wave physical mechanism and the mechanism of spin-effect "grazer" (gravitational lasers) designing were described by S. M. Polyakov and O.S. Polyakov in the book "An Introduction to the Experimental Gravitational Studies", Moscow, 1991.

After a 7-year research study, a senior staff aerospace defense engineer, George J. Bugh, concludes economically free energy and even antigravity are possible.

A 7-year study of "free energy" devices, sometimes called "over unity" devices, was done to determine if any of these devices generated power by transferring energy from unknown sources and if so to determine where the energy was coming from. Included in the study is research of related devices with claimed antigravity effects. The study attempted to determine validity of claims, commonalities of device characteristics and to determine how these devices could work. **The results conclude that some devices can generate economically free energy. This study also concludes there is a possible link between gravity and electromagnetism that can be exploited to generate antigravity or electrogravity effects.**

The majority of the study was to come up with a theory to explain how the devices could work. In his research, Mr. Bugh used mostly classical electrodynamics rather than quantum electrodynamics. In Quantum theory, the wave-like characteristics of matter are described using abstract probability waves. However, Bugh proposes that the wave characteristics of matter may also be described as coming from a very real sea of unseen electromagnetic standing waves among all matter. There is a slide show presentation at the website that explains the differences between the Quantum and Classical way of explaining particle interactions.

According to classical electrodynamics, all electrically charged particles, like quarks of protons and neutrons as well as orbital electrons for example, **should radiate away energy from precessional and precessional plus orbital motion**.

Precession
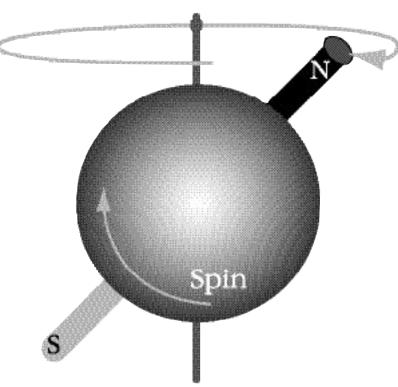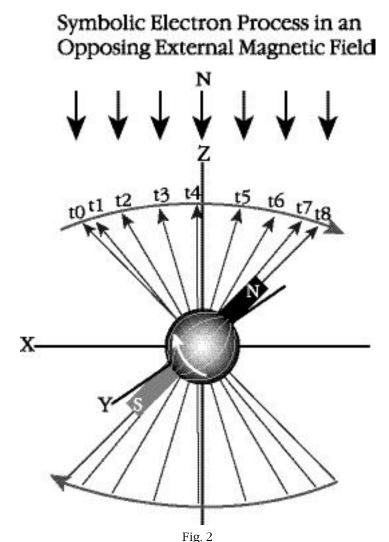
Fig.1
Electron motion

If in fact this really happens then all electrically charged particles can be radiating away energy all the time. However, all particles can also absorb just as much energy from all other radiating particles. The absorbed energy applies electromagnetic forces that naturally move all similar type particles into harmonious precessional motions with all other particles. This results in a vast sea of electromagnetic standing

waves among all matter. Even free particles would move into precessional motions that are in sync with the established sea of standing waves.

Symbolic Electron Process in an Opposing External Magnetic Field

Fig. 2
Electron precession

There can be a hidden yet strong tendency towards harmony among all matter in the universe due to these unseen standing waves and spin interactions among all matter. This tendency can overcome to a great extent the tendency towards chaos and heat death of the universe. This tendency can also be exploited to perform work.
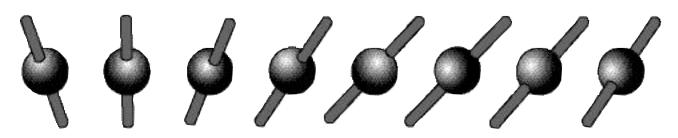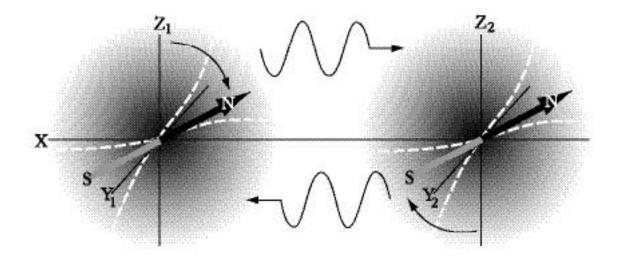
Fig. 3
Spin wave

This is an interaction among all matter that Ernst Mach alluded to as necessary to cause matter's characteristic of inertia. Einstein later called this Mach's Principle. Einstein studied Mach's ideas while developing his theory of General Relativity.
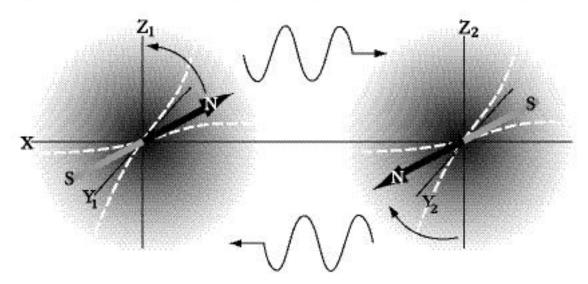
Bugh describes inertial resistance to acceleration as caused by electromagnetic forces. Changes in position of a mass will cause phase differences to develop between the precessional motions of the particles of that mass relative to the sea of standing waves. This in turn causes electromagnetic force that resists a mass from changing its position.

The research papers are published in a book and a CD titled "Spin Wave Technology Initial Release".

Spin Wave Technology

Electromagnetic interaction among uncompensated electron spins from gyroscopic precession in an opposing external magnetic field.

Electromagnetic interaction among compensating electron spins from gyroscopic precession in magnetic fields manifested from apparent relative motion of protons of the nucleus

Fig. 4.
Spin wave technology

At the end of the book it suggests that it should be possible to create computer simulations of particle interactions using classical electrodynamics to demonstrate both inertial resistance and gravitational attraction and it should be possible to simulate devices that manipulate these particle interactions to demonstrate antigravity effects.
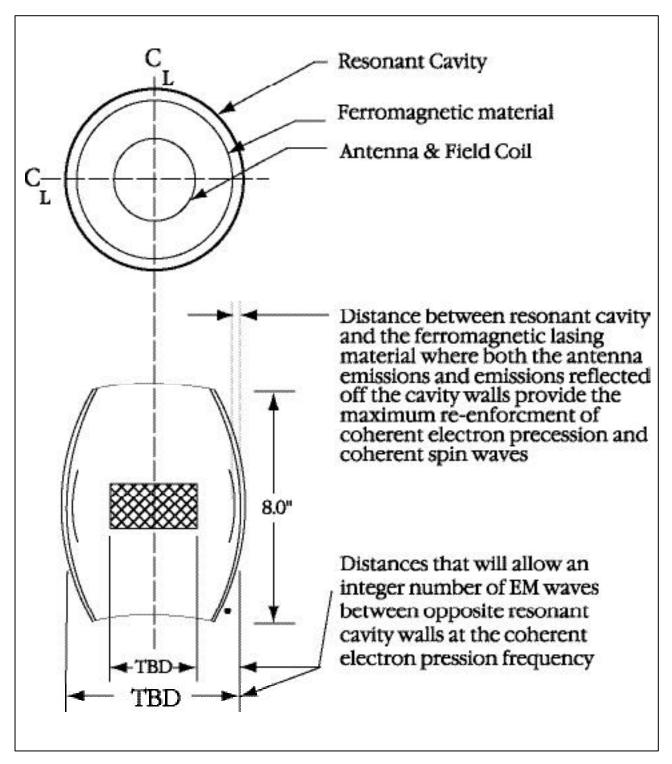
Fig. 5
Spin wave laser

More information is available about the research results at the website: www.vasantcorporation.com.

On Physics of Electromagnetism
Mechanical Analogue or Pure Mechanics?

Yury V. Ivanko, Ukraine
E-mail: ux0lw@hotmail.com

After publication of the article "Study of possibility of a high-energy hyper-low-frequency electric field" in the "New Energy Technologies" magazine, Issue #2, 2003 I am often asked why I have mentioned the Big Bang in my hypothesis.

I would like to reassure atheists since I do not back the Big Bang hypothesis. But I had to base myself on something. At present the origin of the Universe as a result of the Big Bang has priority and is recognized by the academic science.

Both theorists and experts have long noticed a deep analogue between vortex motion of air currents and electromagnetism. My vision of the physics of electricity and electromagnetism is fully based on existence of a vortex capable physical environment. What is considered to be and is measured **as electric voltage, electric current, magnetic or gravitational interactions is nothing but similar-originating phenomena - the result of vortex flow environment affecting our detectors - dissimilar formations for these vortex flows**.

For instance, let us consider three vectors for the flow along the skin-layer of the line conductor - aerial emitter, together with alternating voltage attached to it (Fig.1):

1) longitudinal - showing as electric voltage, the gradient of potentials between the emitter feeding point and the emitter cold end, U;

2) tangential - showing as amperage - electric current, I;

3) radial - showing as the interacting force of two flows - magnetic field (attraction/repulsion), H (not to be mixed with the commonly used term of magnetic intensity).
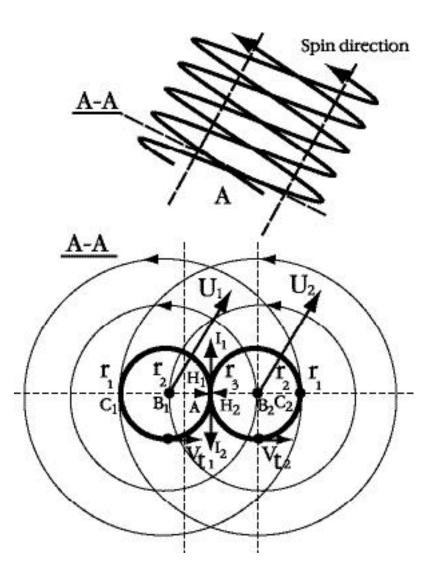
Fig.1
Interaction of two left-handed homogeneous parallel flows.

Let us consider it step by step:

Consider line conductor AB with length L in free space (Fig. 2).
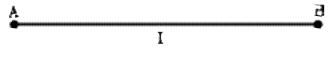
Fig.2
Line conductor in free space.

Let us assume that he is not affected by and fields. Then the gradient of potentials between A and B equals zero. Let us apply sinusoidal voltage from the generator output to point A (Fig. 3).
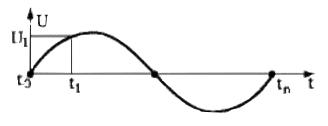
Fig.3
Sinusoidal voltage at the generator output.

Let us consider the initial time point t_0. The generator output voltage is U=0. At time point t_1 the generator output voltage has changed and took on value U_1.

It is necessary to note that (See Fig. 2) the propagation speed is finite: c=300000 km/sec. Point B will "learn" about the voltage alteration only in time $t_B=t_1+L/c$. Therefore, at time point t_1 between points A and B appears gradient of potentials $\Delta\varphi = U_1$. So what is the direction of vector U_1? Right, along conductor AB.

What practice says

One should not be a physicist or radio mechanic to notice small electro-shock of ungrounded metal objects close to aerials of powerful transmitters. Specialists term them as "electromagnetic inducers". Has an expert ever measured the actual characteristic of the field intensity distribution along a line conductor? Why should he? Everyone knows from school lessons how alternating voltage is distributed along the conductor, the length of which is comparable with the wave length (Fig. 4).
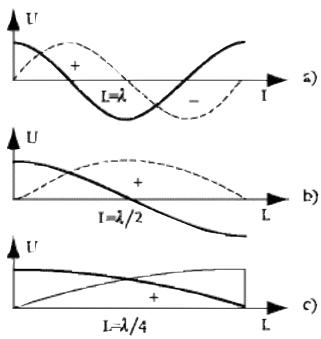
Fig.4
Classical representation of voltage distribution along a linear vibrator a) for λ, b) for $\lambda/2$, c) for $\lambda/4$.

Now let us consider what experimental measurements suggest.

An experiment of measuring the field intensity distribution along the line conductor is shown below. A classic field indicator (FI), assembled as per scheme in Fig. 5, was used as an intensity measuring instrument.
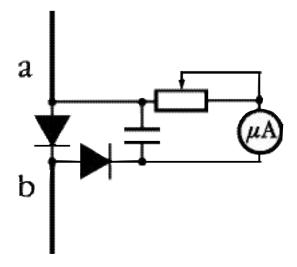
Fig.5
Field indicator principle diagram.

FI was located in immediate proximity to the vibrator but had no galvanic contact with it. Experimental frequencies were selected in

accordance with the standing wave coefficient minimum (SWC) for λ, $\lambda/2$, $\lambda/4$. Sinusoidal signal generator was connected to one end of the vibrator (Fig. 6a).

To better understand diagrams in Fig. 6 curves are drawn at the upper and lower ends of each axis L that corresponds to the vibrator location. The curves were run with FI horizontally located on both sides of the vibrator.

From Fig. 6d it is clear that the diagram is axisymmetric and looks like a conic funnel.

Meanwhile, the vibrator directional diagram measured by the monitor receiver far more distant than λ, shows the characteristic that coincides with the simulated one through the Matlab-6 system (See Fig.7). As you can see from this figure, the spatial characteristic of the directional diagram is in the form of a toroid.

Fig.6
Measured field intensity
along a linear vibrator.
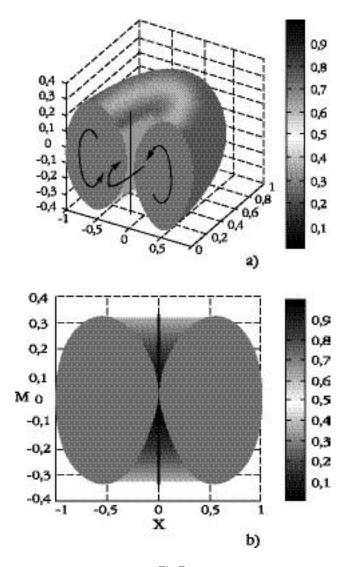
Fig.7
Matlab-6-simulated directional diagram of the semi-wave vibrator

A series of alterations was made to explore vortex ether dynamic processes with variable wave length and frequency in line conductors, solenoidal and flat coils, etc.

For certain purposes the solenoidal coil may be considered as a shortcut linear vibrator. On respective frequencies the field intensity distribution along the solenoid corresponds to the linear vibrator. This data may prove useful to many modern engineers of the Tesla transformers and generators. To increase voltage on the cold end a toroid capacitor is set in the Tesla transformers. Nuclear physicists use the hemisphere capacity for the particle accelerators. Thus, a voltage of millions of volts may be achieved.

Flat coils are best explored in terms of field intensity distribution (See Fig. 8)
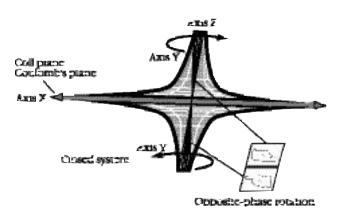
Fig.8
Field intensity distribution for a flat coil in a closed resonance circuit.

Field intensity distribution on a resonance frequency is correct.

The practical experiment for the case in fig. 6d has shown that the neon lamp that is connected with the vibrator end will be off. And this is with a 100 W generator! It is a paradox, one would say. The measurement diagram shows a "splash" of the field intensity at the vibrator end but we feel nothing. Indeed, when the FI is located as shown in Fig.9 for $\lambda/4$, the "electrodynamic vacuum" will generate. The device showed "0" intensity, which conforms neither with the diagram in Fig.6 nor with the diagram in Fig.7.
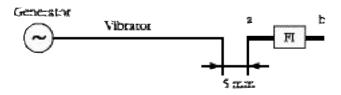
Fig.9
Field indicator shows "0" - "electrodynamic vacuum".

The same "vacuum" in the center of tornado was observed by people in the epicenter.

Remember what is measured with the field indicator (an ampere meter) along the linear vibrator. The Ampere force!

So, both people and their environment are in rotation process. The Earth rotates around its axis and around the Sun. The Sun rotates around the Galaxy center. The Galaxy rotates around the center of the Universe. The Universe rotates...

Every space point has an inceptive rotation impulse (torque). Let us remember the analogy. Water flowing out of the tub rotates counterclockwise in the northern hemisphere and clockwise in the southern hemisphere. If you set a right-handed torque in the northern hemisphere, the water will continue to flow counterclockwise.

The electromagnetism is the same. It has a natural left-handed rotation. Nevertheless, practical radiotechnology is familiar with right-handed fields artificially generated by transmitters.

The commonly used term of magnetic interactions is easier to understand if we consider the electromagnetic field as a vortex flow. Two left-handed homogeneous parallel flows are shown in Fig.1. At the point of interaction A of vector projection, the speeds of flow propagation on section plane **A-A** have opposite direction and compensate each other. The actual flow density is $\rho_1 < \rho_2 < \rho_3$. Reduced pressure occurs at point A. The flows are attracted. The resulting attraction vector for the whole flow is radially directed. The counter parallel flows will have composition, i.e. overpressure, and will repel.

One should note that graphic presentation in Fig.1 for vectors H and I for the etherdynamic systems is possible only in special cases. In dynamic vortex flows the current intensity vector is actually directed towards the flow movement and coincides with the vector direction of its propagation speed (V). The resulting vector H remains a radius-vector only for the considered point of interaction of two flows. The flow energy parameters are defined by its propagation speed V (Fig.1).

I am convinced of existence of ether vortex flows in the Universe. Modern astronomic and cosmological surveys confirm my hypotheses of aether Hyper-fields existence on a Universal scale.

> # The commonly used term of magnetic interactions is easier to understand if we consider the electromagnetic field as a vortex flow.

Even an amateur in aerodynamics and dynamic of gas vortex may make cosmological conclusions:

♦ vortex initiation implies the initial gradient flow of at least two counter flows;

♦ energy parameters of the emerging vortex flow can not exceed those of the parent flows

♦ there exist ether flows with energy exceeding that of our Universe

♦ our Universe has not originated from a point and is not finite. It is the spiral (vortex) structure of our Universe that testifies against the Big Bang hypothesis.
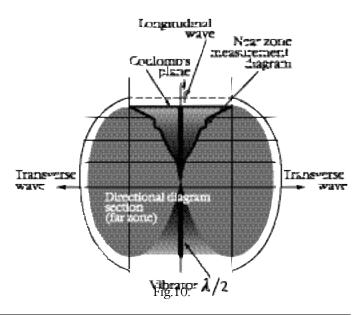
Conclusions:

Practical radiotechnology is familiar with the key difference between the field intensity distribution diagrams of aerial emitters in near and far zones. After combining diagrams 6d and 7b (Fig.10) it is possible to draw certain conclusions.

When transverse waves (radio waves) are formed around the aerial vibrator, the double transformation of the initial flow geometry starts:

♦ **the first flow is a homogeneous spiral flow on the conductor skin-layer;**

¨ **the second flow is a non-homogeneous vortex flow of the near zone;**

¨ **the third flow is a toroidal flow of the far zone.**

The toroid volume alteration in the far zone (as per the transmitter vibration frequency) forms volumetric planar transverse vibrations (spherical waves) that are called electromagnetic or radio waves. The gradient of potentials alterations (as per the transmitter vibration frequency) provoke changes of the Coulomb plane, which form longitudinal vibrations with a narrow directional diagram.

Fig.10.

The longitudinal flow is assumed to be formed as a chain of toroids (like smoke rings)

Ether-dynamic approach provides grounds for more substantial conclusions and assumptions. A new approach to energy and communication systems is made real. Further results of the experiments with transmitters and aerials, assembled on ether-dynamic principles, enabled to draw the following conclusions:

- all reasons, preventing transformation of the transmitter power into the power of transverse radio waves, are evident;

- all reasons for the transverse wave phase lagging with the increase of distance from the emitter, are also evident;

- besides the toroid that forms the transverse wave, the second flow generates a crucially new radiation that has a very narrow directional diagram along its longitudinal axis;

- the aerial ignores wave geometry for the second flow and its longitudinal derivative;

- the radiation along the second flow axis has a very high penetrating power;

- the radiation along the second flow axis has no signs of polarization.

The list of references is not shown in this article due to its size. It can be looked up at **www.efir.com.ua .**

NEWS

In October 2003 the second stage of the research on the "time control" was completed. In the photo below you can see Chernobrov V. A. and Frolov A. V. in the laboratory, October 31st 2003.

The second stage conclusions are quite interesting, however the usage of timers (chronometers) as detectors is proven to be inappropriate for they are subject to magnetization and their indication variations cannot be reliable in this case.

The next stage will feature the following method of detection of the time rate changes (the rate of the matter existence) that is the radiation wave-length measurement. If it is possible to achieve significant results then we will be able to detect the change of the laser ray colour in the area of the effect and its linear path deviations. The experiments will be held to register the weight changes of the detector at the expected influence of the produced effect on the ether density.

Our company looks for cooperation with corporations, which are interested in the application aspects of these technologies.
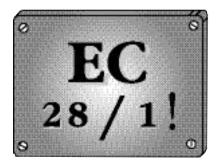
Frolov A. V.
General Director, Faraday Lab Ltd
7-812-3803844
http://www.faraday.ru

CELL OF THE THIN PLASMAELECTRIC HEAT GENERATOR

Ph. M. Kanarev, A.I. Tlishev, Russia

E-mail: kanphil@mail.kuban.ru

The main task of the experiment was to check the hypothesis: "Electrodynamic influence on the water molecules gives the possibility to significantly reduce energy expenses on destruction of their chemical bonds; further fu-sion of these molecules considerably increases the output of additional energy in the form of heat".

In order to solve this task, special experiments were carried out as regards the electrodynamic destruction of chemical bonds of water molecules by electric pulses of various frequencies.

Photo of the Thin Plasmaelectric Heat Generator

CHECK TEST RECORD FOR PLASMAELECTRIC HEAT GENERATOR

Table 1

	Indices	1	2	3	Avg.
1	mass of the solution, which has passed through the reactor m, kg.	0.470	0.432	0.448	0.450
2	temperature of solution at the input of the reactor t_1, degrees	22	22	22	22
3	temperature of the solution at the output of the reactor t_2, degrees	66	66	65	65.67
4	temperature difference of the solution $\Delta t = t_2 - t_1$, degrees 44	44	43	43.67	
5	durability of the experiment $\Delta\tau$, s	300	300	300	300
6	reading of voltmeter V, V	4.50	4.50	4.50	4.50
6'	**Reading of oscillograph , U, V**	**4.47**	**4.47**	**4.47**	**4.47**
7	reading of ammeter I, A	2.1	2.1	2.1	2.1
7'	**Reading of oscillograph , I, A**	**2.2**	**2.2**	**2.2**	**2.2**
8	electric power consumption according to indices of voltmeter and ammeters, $E_2 = I \cdot V \cdot \Delta\tau$, kJ	2.84	2.84	2.84	2.84
9	power the heated solution, $E_3 = 4.19 \cdot m \cdot \Delta\tau$, kJ	79.64	80.01	80.72	80.46
10	**reactor efficiency index K = E_3 / E_2**	**28.04**	**28.17**	**28.42**	**28.21**

Supply voltage and current were measured with the help of a voltmeter, an ammeter and an oscillograph (Fig. 1-4)

Fig. 1
Voltage
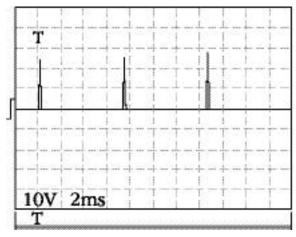
Fig. 2
Voltage

Fig. 3
Current
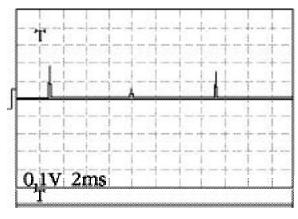
Fig. 4
Current

Process parameter calculation according to the oscillograms (Fig. 1-4) to the check test record (Table 1) gave the following results:

♦ Pulse scale 10.

♦ Average voltage amplitude according to Fig.1 and Fig. 2: Ua_{av} = (23+25+28+10+26+29) x 10/6 = 235 V.

♦ Average current amplitude according to Fig. 3 and Fig. 4: Ia_{av} = (20+6+17+7+10+19+3) x 10/7 = 117 A.

♦ Pulse repetition period T = 7.4 ms. Pulse duration t_p = 0.28 ms.

♦ Pulse frequency f = 1000/7.4 = 135.1 Hz. Relative pulse duration S = 7.4/0.28 = 26.32.

♦ Space factor Z = 0.5/26.32 = 0.019.

♦ Average pulse voltage U_{av} = 0.019 x 235 = 4.47 V.
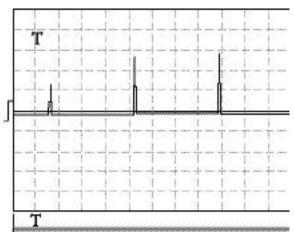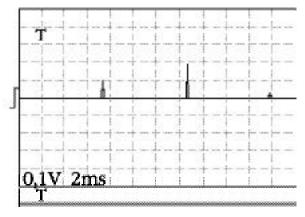
♦ Average current in pulses I_{av} = 0.019 x 117 = 2.22 A.

Thus, it is possible to consider that the experimental test of energy efficiency of the water electric heat generator with the help of two methods gives practically identical results and confirms the above-mentioned hypothesis concerning the possibility to generate additional energy in the processes under consideration. It should be noted that as during measurements the pointer instruments of high class of accuracy of 0.2 have been used (relative conventional gauging error does not exceed 0.2%), and oscillographic measurement accuracy is much lower (usually, about 5%), the readings of the voltmeter and the ammeter should be considered more accurate.

Commercial efficiency of the water electric heat generator will depend on pulse generator economy. Since effi-ciency of powerful pulse

generators can be near one unit, energy efficiency in industrial plants that use the considered heat generators should not differ greatly from the data obtained during laboratory research.

Simplicity and one hundred per cent reproducibility of the described experiments open a prospect for quick commercialization of the water electric heat generator.

REFERENCES

1. Kanarev Ph.M. The Foundation of Physchemistry of Microworld (the second edition). (In Russian)
http://www.ikar.udm.ru/sb28-2.htm
2. Kanarev Ph.M. The Foundation of Physchemistry of Microworld. The second edition. (In English).
http://book.physchemistry.innoplaza.net
3. Kanarev Ph.M. Water Electric Generator of Heat.
http://Kanarev.innoplaza.net

Professor Kanarev looks for co-projects with prospective investors.

Review

TransWorld Energy,
8110 Bent Oak Lane Spring, Texas 77379, USA
Email: donsm1@earthlink.net
http://altenergy-pro.com

Don Smith is a University degreed professional in science & engineering. Served in three wars; WWII, Korea and Vietnam. He has enjoyed a long and successful profession as an executive in the petroleum industry. His life long outside interests include electronics and engineering. A popular walk on substitute for University Professors in physics, chemistry, biology and computer assisted drafting. Teaching style similar to Richard Feynman. He enjoys celebrity status in Japan and Saudi Arabia.

About 20 years ago, the book "Inventions, Researches and Writings of Nicola Tesla", resulted in his reconstructing, as a way of understanding the many theories and devices shown in the book. From this encounter, a very strong bonding resulted. The object then became putting his thinking inside that of Tesla, such that expanding upon and extrapolating areas not yet reached by Tesla.

Technological advances in materials provide sourcing for devices not possible at earlier periods. For example, magnetic permeability which is the counter part of negative resistance is an open field for experimentation today.

Don does not sell his inventions, but trades licenses for shares in companies which then incorporate the new technology into their marketing systems. As such, he is on the Board of directors of several well established ventures located in Japan, Brazil, Mexico and Saudi Arabia.

Successful reproductions of Don's technology are present in Finland, Saint Petersburg - Russia, Yugoslavia, Romania, Japan, Hong Kong, and numerous other Countries. His book "Resonance Energy Methods" has a circulation of 40,000 copies in worldwide in many languages.

generators can be near one unit, energy efficiency in industrial plants that use the considered heat generators should not differ greatly from the data obtained during laboratory research.

Simplicity and one hundred per cent reproducibility of the described experiments open a prospect for quick commercialization of the water electric heat generator.

REFERENCES

1. Kanarev Ph.M. The Foundation of Physchemistry of Microworld (the second edition). (In Russian) http://www.ikar.udm.ru/sb28-2.htm
2. Kanarev Ph.M. The Foundation of Physchemistry of Microworld. The second edition. (In English). http://book.physchemistry.innoplaza.net
3. Kanarev Ph.M. Water Electric Generator of Heat. http://Kanarev.innoplaza.net

Professor Kanarev looks for co-projects with prospective investors.

Fantastic Projects

Smith's Generator

Review

TransWorld Energy,
8110 Bent Oak Lane Spring, Texas 77379, USA
Email: donsm1@earthlink.net
http://altenergy-pro.com

Don Smith is a University degreed professional in science & engineering. Served in three wars; WWII, Korea and Vietnam. He has enjoyed a long and successful profession as an executive in the petroleum industry. His life long outside interests include electronics and engineering. A popular walk on substitute for University Professors in physics, chemistry, biology and computer assisted drafting. Teaching style similar to Richard Feynman. He enjoys celebrity status in Japan and Saudi Arabia.

About 20 years ago, the book "Inventions, Researches and Writings of Nicola Tesla", resulted in his reconstructing, as a way of understanding the many theories and devices shown in the book. From this encounter, a very strong bonding resulted. The object then became putting his thinking inside that of Tesla, such that expanding upon and extrapolating areas not yet reached by Tesla.

Technological advances in materials provide sourcing for devices not possible at earlier periods. For example, magnetic permeability which is the counter part of negative resistance is an open field for experimentation today.

Don does not sell his inventions, but trades licenses for shares in companies which then incorporate the new technology into their marketing systems. As such, he is on the Board of directors of several well established ventures located in Japan, Brazil, Mexico and Saudi Arabia.

Successful reproductions of Don's technology are present in Finland, Saint Petersburg - Russia, Yugoslavia, Romania, Japan, Hong Kong, and numerous other Countries. His book "Resonance Energy Methods" has a circulation of 40,000 copies in worldwide in many languages.

Abstract

Mr. Don Smith has discovered that Ohm's Law of Resistance does not apply to Magnetic Resonance that travels unrestricted for great distances. Therefore, multitudes of electrons are disturbed. The Magnetic moments are translated into usable electric energy. The Magnetic Dipole provides an unlimited source of electrical current. Mr. Smith's "Dipole Transformer" has been pending since last September.
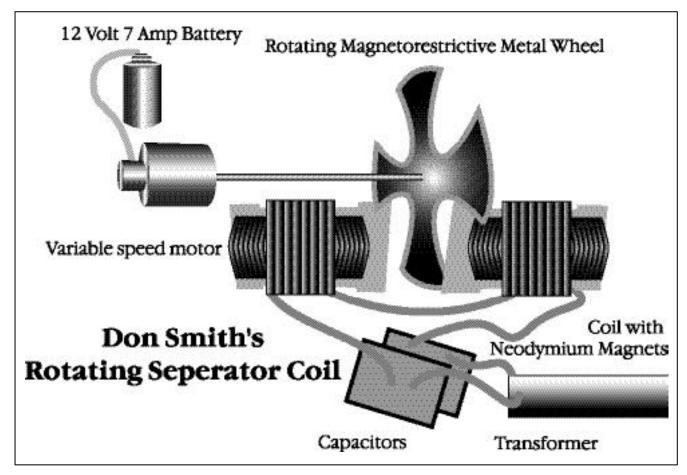
Fig.1
Smith's Energy Receiver

Useful energy occurs as the result of imbalances of ambient background energy and it is a transient phenomenon. In conventional circuits, the electrical field is in a closed system that is damped out with heat loss, which severely limits its utility. **The flip side of the electron generates magnetic waves, which is an open system, not subjected to heat loss. These being unrestricted are the universal source of energy. Universally present electrons are flipped to their electrical position, resulting in useful energy.** When properly constructed an electrical circuit can become self sustainable once started. An obvious corollary would be that the number of radio or television receivers in operation does not deplete the magnetic wave source providing the service. The key source of unlimited energy is Magnetic Resonance. To understand this requires putting a stake through outdated physics. An obvious example is the piano where the key impacts the one note giving one sound, which resonates with its two side keys providing a much higher level. Magnetic Resonant Energy clearly amplifies demonstrating more energy out than in. **Excess energy consequent to a reaction is called Free Energy and can be very large as is in the case of Magnetic Resonance.** The intentionally ignorant physicist makes a habit of ignoring this fact.

Useful electricity is obtained from disturbed electrons, which radiate magnetic fields and waves. The generator disturbs and collects this
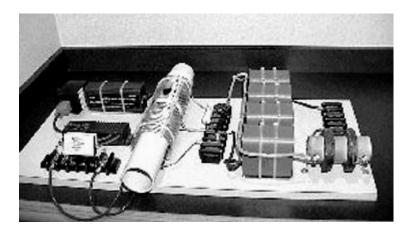
Fig.2
D. Smith's Energy Receiver

Editor: in September 2003 Donald Smith took part in the annual "Inventor's Week-end" Conference where he presented the report on his invention. In this issue you can find more details on the conference.
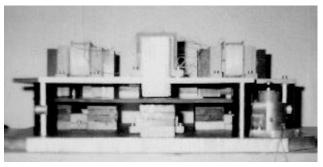
*It is worth of a note that we have received **a number of negative comments on this inventor's work**. However, we thought his articles to be quite interesting and decided to publish them. We would be glad to get readers' comments, who are familiar with the work and inventions of Donald Smith.*

emitted electron energy. These electrons remain fully in tact and undiminished until the end of time. This Energy is free and the cost of accessing it depends on the ignorance of the collector. With an appropriate collector system an unending source of environmentally benign, inexpensive, available energy everywhere, is provided.

NEWS

News from Farady Lab

Disk permanent-magnet generator
Faraday Lab Ltd

In our lab we are still working at the optimization of the alternator design (electro-magnetic generator with the permanent magnets). We have introduced the drum rotor instead of the disk rotor into the new design of the alternator. The operation mechanism is the same, namely, the alternation of the magnetic flux near the generator coils occurs as a result of the rotating elements operation of the rotor, which "shunt" the magnetic flux.

Frolov A.V.

Strategies for Launching a New Over-Unity Device

Ryan S. Wood, USA
14004 Quali Ridge Drive, Broomfield, CO 80020

Problem description: With any singly successful over-unity energy device comes a host of business, technical and financial problems and opportunities. A public announcement permanently will lead to a "Pons & Fleishman" effect that at best delays public success and at worst derails the entire technological effort. Careful attention needs to be applied to the marketing launch, replication, patents, legal defense and finances.

Potential Solution: With a few working devices that generate 100-500 horsepower it is relatively easy to hook these units to the electrical gird and generate monthly checks from the utilities. The law states that major utilities must purchase electricity from any supplier at "cost avoidance" rate now typically, between 6 and 10 cents per kilowatt-hour. This law, California Public Utilities Commission - Rule 21, for example, is designed to help small hydro-electric producers and solar or wind farms. There is a safety requirement of grid transfer switches, but they are not terribly complicated or expensive. The entire equipment set-up must be approved by the utility, however, if you start with a diesel electric generator or small hydro plant it can be approved, operating and stable before the clandestine switch or hybrid operation with an over-unity machine. The law is strongly supportive of the energy producer and disconnection for non-safety or maintenance reasons is exceeding rare.

A key benefit of this approach is that you have established repeatability by having multiple working sites, you have established that it can generate money and the technology does real work and you have created several independent locations where press and scientists can visit to validate the over-unity effectiveness in-situ.

Typical revenues would be as follows:

Generator Horse Power	100	200	300	400	500
Annual $, 90% uptime @ 6 c/kWh	$ 35,100	$ 70,199	$ 105,299	$ 140, 398	$ 175, 498
Monthly payment @ 6 c/kWh	$ 2,92	$ 5,850	$ 8,775	$ 11,700	$ 14, 625
Annual $, 90% uptime @ 10 c/kWh	$ 58,499	$ 116, 999	$ 175, 498	$ 233,997	$ 292, 496
Monthly payment @ 10 c/kWh	$ 4,875	$ 9,750	$14, 625	$ 19,500	$ 24, 375

It will take money without the strings of investors to champion and defend a new breakthrough technology into the energy marketplace and this strategy offers a quiet way to prepare for the ultimate launch and resulting scientific and media frenzy that will ensue. It will take years for the business to form, products to be built and marketing and acceptance and industry confidence to be established. All during those years this strategy can generate cash to support engineering and operations.

**Please call if there are questions at 303-941-9663 (cell),
Home: 720-887-8071
Ryan S. Wood**

Fantastic Projects

The Hutchison Effect – An Explanation

Mark A. Solis, USA

http://www.geocities.com/ResearchTriangle/

Email: your_neighbor_2000@yahoo.com

People often ask, "What exactly is the Hutchison Effect?" This brief essay is an attempt to answer that question to the satisfaction of the majority. First of all, the Hutchison Effect is a collection of phenomena which were discovered accidentally by John Hutchison during attempts to study the longitudinal waves of Tesla back in 1979. In other words, the Hutchison Effect is not simply a singular effect. It is many.

The Hutchison Effect occurs as the result of radio wave interferences in a zone of spatial volume encompassed by high voltage sources, usually a Van de Graff generator, and two or more Tesla coils.

Editor: We can call this effect "The H. Wells Effect" because he was first to describe it in his book "The Invisible man". The main character of the book used two sources of electromagnetic vibrations and Wells said that they were not Hertz waves but something else. "But the essential phase was to place the transparent object whose refractive index was to be lowered between two radiating centers of a sort of ethereal vibration..."("The Invisible Man", chapter 20).

A. V. Frolov

The effects produced include levitation of heavy objects, fusion of dissimilar materials such as metal and wood, the anomalous heating of metals without burning adjacent material, spontaneous fracturing of metals (which separate by sliding in a sideways fashion), and both temporary and permanent changes in the crystalline structure and physical properties of metals.

Fig.1 represents the proof of Hutchison Effect based on metal blocks. Deformation occurred at room temperature as a result of complex interaction of electromagnetic fields.

The levitation of heavy objects by the Hutchison Effect is not - repeat not - the result of simple electrostatic or electromagnetic levitation. Claims that these forces alone can explain the phenomenon are patently ridiculous, and easily disproved by merely trying to use such methods to duplicate what
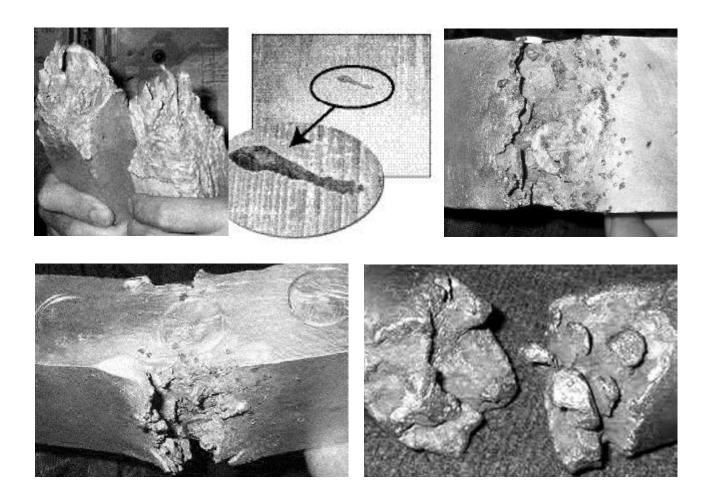
Fig.1

Cold melting of metals

The upper left: steel, The lower left: aluminium with coin prints and with a coin inserted in a partially open split;
The lower right: fully torn aluminium bar; The middle upper and right: a section part of the aluminium block,
into which a wood block is fused (brown matter)

http://www.rumormillnews.com/JOHN-HUTSHISON2.htm

the Hutchison Effect has achieved, which has been well documented both on film and videotape, and has been witnessed many times by numerous credentialed scientists and engineers. Challengers should note that their apparatus must be limited to the use of 75 Watts of power from a 120 Volt AC outlet, as that is all that is used by Hutchison's apparatus to levitate a 60-pound cannon ball.
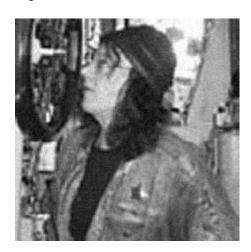
The fusion of dissimilar materials, which is exceedingly remarkable, indicates clearly that the Hutchison Effect has a powerful influence on Van der Waals forces. In a striking and baffling contradiction, dissimilar substances can simply "come together," yet the individual substances do not dissociate. A block of wood can simply "sink into" a

metal bar, yet neither the metal bar nor the block of wood come apart. Also, there is no evidence of displacement, such as would occur if, for example, one were to sink a stone into a bowl of water.

The anomalous heating of metal without any evidence of burning or scorching of the adjacent materials (usually wood) is a clear indication that possibly the nature of heat may not be completely understood. This has far-reaching implications for thermodynamics, which hinges entirely on the presumption of such knowledge. It should be noted that the entirety of thermodynamics is represented by the infrared portion of the electromagnetic spectrum, which is insignificant in a

context of 0 Hz to infinite Hz. The anomalous heating exhibited by the Hutchison Effect shows plainly that we have much to learn, especially where thermodynamics and electromagnetism meet.

The spontaneous fracturing of metals, as occurs with the Hutchison Effect, is unique for two reasons: (1) there is no evidence of an "external force" causing the fracturing, and (2) the method by which the metal separates involves a sliding motion in a sideways direction, horizontally. The metal simply comes apart.

Doctor John Hutchison

Some temporary changes in the crystalline structure and physical properties of metals are somewhat reminiscent of the "spoon bending" of Uri Geller, except that there is no one near the metal samples when the changes take place. One video shows a spoon flapping up and down like a limp rag in a stiff breeze. In the case of permanent changes, a metal bar will be hard at one end, like steel, and soft at the other end, like powdered lead. Again, this is evidence of strong influence on Van der Waals forces.

The radio wave interferences involved in producing these effects are produced from as many as four and five different radio sources, all operating at low power. However, the zone in which the interferences take place is stressed by hundreds of kilovolts.

It is surmised by some researchers that what Hutchison has done is tap into the Zero Point Energy. This energy gets its name from the fact that it is evidenced by oscillations at zero degrees Kelvin, where supposedly all activity in an atom ceases. The energy is associated with the spontaneous emission and annihilation of electrons and positrons coming from what is called "the quantum vacuum." The density of the energy contained in the quantum vacuum is estimated by some at ten to the thirteenth Joules per cubic centimeter, which is reportedly sufficient to boil off the Earth's oceans in a matter of moments.

Given access to such energies, it is small wonder that the Hutchison Effect produces such bizarre phenomena. At the present time, the phenomena are difficult to reproduce with any regularity. The focus for the future, then, is first to increase the frequency of occurrence of the effects, then to achieve some degree of precision in their control.

The spontaneous fracturing of metals, as occurs with the Hutchison Effect, is unique for two reasons: there is no evidence of an "external force" causing the fracturing, and the method by which the metal separates involves a sliding motion in a sideways direction, horizontally. The metal simply comes apart.

Editor: On November 17th 2003 we got to know that the inventor John Hutchison can eventually lose his home laboratory. The property can be confiscated upon court order due to neighbours' complaints. Apparently, it is dangerous to conduct experiments of the kind at home and even within a town. We wish him success!

A. V. Frolov

A SIMPLE DEVICE FOR HEAT TO ELECTRICAL ENERGY CONVERSION BY MEANS OF FERROELECTRICS

A. Ries, A. Z. Simoes, M. A. Zaghete, J. A. Varela,

Institute of Chemistry, Universidade Estadual Paulista, Rua Prof. Francisco Degni s/n,
14801-970 Araraquara-SP, Brazil
Email: ries@posgrad.iq.unesp.br

E. Longo,

Department of Chemistry, Universidade Federal de Sao Carlos, Rodovia Washington Luis - km 235, 13565-905
Sao Carlos-SP, Brazil

Introduction

A few years ago, Zaev [1, 2] demonstrated experimentally the possibility of heat to electrical energy conversion by means of ferroelectrics. A capacitor filled with a ferroelectric material was charged and discharged periodically at a temperature just a little lower than the Curie point. According to Zaev, the capacitor must have a nonlinear capacitance $dC/dV > 0$, which means the capacitance increases with rising voltage. Besides these experimental results, it was proven by a theoretical calculation that the electrical energy obtained during discharging can reach up to 1.35 of the energy introduced to charge the capacitor. The present paper presents an inexpensive and simple electric circuit which can be used to prove heat to electricity conversion experimentally. Moreover, the physical mechanism of heat to electricity conversion is explained in the form of a thermodynamic cycle.

Thermodynamic cycle for energy conversion

The following thermodynamic cycle is composed of four reversible steps. It works only at a temperature just a little lower than the Curie point, where the dielectric constant is highly temperature dependent. Fig. 1 shows the relative dielectric constant of a representative ferroelectric ceramic as a function of temperature.
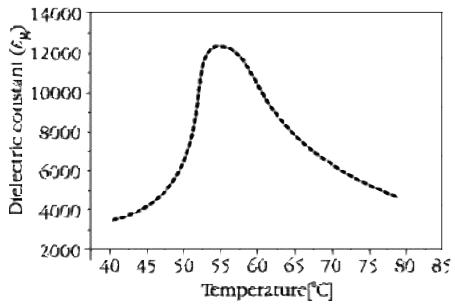
Fig. 1
Relative dielectric constant versus temperature for a barium strontium titanate ceramic (80% Ba, 20% Sr) prepared by the author. Curie point = 55⁰ C.

As it can be seen, just below the Curie point in the range from 50 to 55⁰C, small changes of the temperature cause high changes of the dielectric constant.

Furthermore, to understand the conversion mechanism, it is necessary to understand the electrocaloric effect. When an electric field is applied to a dielectric medium, the latter is polarized. For ferroelectric materials, the parallel domain alignment is the most important part of the total polarization. During the successive alignment of the domains, some material parameters in particular entropy, heat capacity and temperature change. Since the material possesses less degrees of freedom in the polarized state, its entropy and heat capacity are reduced. As a consequence, provided that no heat exchange with the environment is possible (adiabatic conditions), the temperature increases. It is very important to understand that the energy for warming of the dielectric is not taken from the polarizing electric field. The increase in temperature is a result of the decreased heat capacity only.

From this, it can be derived easily what means "nonlinear capacitance".

When a capacitor is charged adiabatically which means its voltage increases faster than any heat exchange with the environment is possible, due to the electrocaloric effect, the temperature of the dielectric must also increase. As it can be seen from Fig.1, below the Curie point, an increasing temperature leads to a higher dielectric constant. Assuming that both temperatures, the one before charging and the other after charging are still below the Curie point, one can say that the dielectric constant increases with an increase in voltage.

Since the capacitance is proportional to the dielectric constant, the capacitor has a nonlinear characteristic $dC/dV > 0$. In the same way it can be concluded that adiabatic charging just a little above the Curie point reveals a nonlinear capacitor characteristic with $dC/dV < 0$.

Quantitative experimental measurements on the electrocaloric effect in some representative ferroelectric and antiferroelectric materials were published by Thacher[3].

STEP 1: Adiabatic charging of the capacitor

We consider a capacitor filled with a ferroelectric medium at an environmental temperature a little lower than the Curie point.

An adiabatic charging of a capacitor (no heat exchange) effects an increase in temperature and capacitance due to the electrocaloric effect. We assume that this increase in temperature is so small that the temperature remains below the Curie point. Finally, the capacitor is completely charged while the dielectric medium has a higher dielectric constant and therefore a higher capacitance than it posseses at the environmental temperature.

To go further to step 2, the capacitor is hold under conditions where no discharge is possible, e.g. it is disconnected from the power supply.

STEP 2: Thermal equilibration

After a short time, the charged capacitor has cooled down to the environmental temperature. While cooling down, the dielectric constant and capacitance decrease. But the charges of the capacitor plates remain constant. As a consequence, the voltage and the electrical energy increase. This can be readily recognized from the general capacitor equation $q = C V$ (q = charge, C = capacitance, V = voltage):

$$q = \text{constant} = C_1 V_1 = C_2 V_2$$

STEP 3: Adiabatic discharging of the capacitor

While discharging the capacitor the temperature and capacitance decrease (again heat capacity changes) due to the electrocaloric effect, leading to a further increase in the available electrical energy. The ferroelectric medium posseses now a final temperature below the temperature of the environment.

In order to proceed with step 1, it is necessary to reach the environmental temperature. An inflow of heat from the environment to the dielectric material is required.

Electric circuit to observe energy conversion
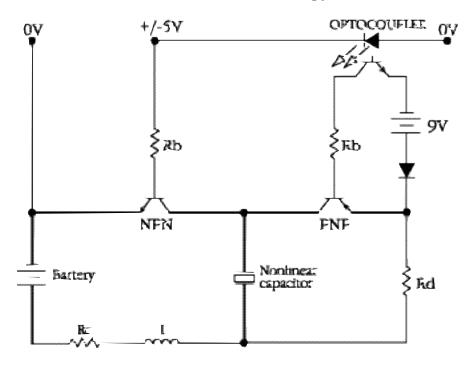
Fig. 2
Electric circuit for testing the energy conversion effect. The connections to the square wave generator are labeled with 0V and +/- 5V, the resistors Rb are to adjust the maximum base current of the transistors.

Assuming the experimenter has a nonlinear capacitor, the set-up shown schematically in Fig. 2 is proposed as a possible conversion device. The circuit contains two different types of transistors (NPN and PNP) which fulfill here the function of a switch.

The NPN junction transistor consists of two n-type semiconductors (called the emitter and collector) separated by a thin layer of p-type semiconductor (called the base). On the other hand the PNP junction transistor consists of a thin layer of n-type semiconductor lying between two p-type semiconductors. The base is the ON/OFF switch for the transistors. If a current flows to the base, there is a path from the collector to the emitter, where a current can flow (switch is ON). If there is no current flowing to the base, then no current can flow from the collector to the emitter (switch is OFF).

The charging-discharging process is controlled by a square wave generator which produces an output signal switching from +5V to -5V. The switching frequency is adjustable from 0.1 Hz up to at least 10 kHz. This output signal is applied to the bases of both transistors.

During the time the square wave generator output signal is +5V, a base current flows through the base-emitter junction of the NPN transistor which creates a low resistance path between the collector and the emitter. As a consequence, the capacitor is charged by the battery. The collector-emitter junction of the PNP transistor has a very high resistance, because here no base current flows. Therefore the capacitor is not discharged at the same time. When the output signal switches to -5V, a current flows to the base of the PNP transistor and not to the base of the

NPN transistor. Now the capacitor is discharged.

In order to understand the function of the inductance in Fig. 2, we analyze the thermodynamics of the charging process.
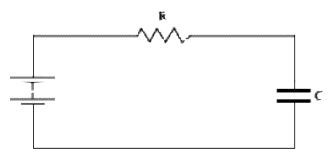
Fig. 3
Simple circuit for charging a capacitor

If a linear capacitor of capacitance C is charged to a voltage V through the load R according to Fig. 3, the energy $W = 0.5\,C\,V^2$ is stored in the capacitor. During the charging process, a time-dependent current I(t) flows:

$$I(t) = V/R \exp(-t/RC)$$

This current develops the heat Q in the load:

$$2Q = R \int I^2(t)dt = 0,5CV^2$$

Here the integration limits are from zero to infinity. This calculation shows, that the energy taken from the battery is the energy stored in the capacitor after charging plus the heat produced in the load, also $2 \cdot C\,V2$. One can see that the heat Q is not dependent on the resistance value R.

The above used equations are only valid in case of a one-step charging process.

If the capacitor is charged stepwise to the final voltage V, e.g. using a ramp generator, and each voltage step effects a voltage increase , the total heat produced in the load is (N = number of voltage steps):

$$Q = N\,0,5\,C\,(V/N)^2 = 0,5\,C/N\,V^2$$

Now the energy taken from the source is:

$$W = 0,5 \cdot (1 + 1/N)1/2\,CV^2$$

If the number of steps N tends to infinity, the heat Q tends to zero.

This energy loss in the load dramatically influences the efficiency of any conversion device and must be taken into account, otherwise all experimental attempts to observe energy conversion would fail.

A more detailed discussion on charging a capacitor and the unavoidable energy losses was given by Heinrich [4] and Gupta et al. [5].

The inductance in the circuit (Fig. 2) effects a slower rising of the current during the charging process (due to self induction) and can reduce the heat generated in the load dramatically.

Acknowledgments

References

1. N.E. Zaev, Yu.S. Spiridonov, Capacitance as a converter of heat to electrical energy, Russian Electrical Engineering, Vol. 69, (2000) pp. 69-72
2. N.E. Zaev, Research on the Capacitance Converter of Environmental Heat to Electric Power, New Energy Technologies, issue 2, (2001)
3. P.D. Thacher, Electrocaloric effects in some ferroelectric and antiferroelectric Pb(Zr, Ti)O3 compounds, Journal of Applied Physics, Vol. 39, (1963), pp. 1996-2002
4. F. Heinrich, Entropy change when charging a capacitor: A demonstration experiment, American Journal of Physics, Vol. 54, (1986), pp. 742-744
5. V.K. Gupta, G. Shanker, N.K. Sharma, Reversibility and step processes: An experiment for the undergraduate laboratory, American Journal of Physics, Vol. 52, (1984), pp. 945-947

Fantastic Projects

The Gates Motor

A. Akau, USA
Email: adrianakau@aol.com

The Gates motor company has produced a motor that does not run on fossil fuel or on electricity. It comes in a 28 HP and a 5,000 HP version. When linked to an electric generator, the larger motor will produce 2,200 kW.

My name is Adrian Akau. I am a recently retired school teacher, having taught science and math in the public school system, state of Hawaii for the past 36 years. One of the classes I taught was on energy.

Our world should be reaching the half-way mark in easily accessible oil by about the year 2016. Since the rate of oil usage is becoming higher each year, it is unlikely that the oil supply will last as long as the 140 years since the first well was drilled in Pennsylvania. We will become more dependent upon OPEC with all the political pressures and problems that accompany this type of dependency. As the easy oil is consumed, we must look for

ways to extract less accessible oil such as from shale. The added expense will be passed on to the consumer.

The burning of coal is not the answer either because coal cannot supply convenient energy as does oil. An oil-based economy cannot transfer over readily to natural gas; there is not enough natural gas available and it is again, not a convenient and concentrated source as is oil. We also have serious pollution problems with the burning of fossil fuels (natural gas being the exception) but the burning of all fossil fuels have contributed to the serious problem of global warming.

It may take all of 50-80 years to transfer to a non-fossil fuel economy. The transfer must be made slowly so as not to disturb the infrastructure of our economy which is presently based upon fossil fuels. We must gradually create a new infrastructure that is non-fossil fuel dependent.

> *The motor incorporates a unique spring configuration to provide rotation*

The production model of the motor is 24 inches high by 48 inches in length. Connected to a generator it will provide sufficient power for about eight hundred US homes. It is designed to be tough and to last a long time. It uses a high grade airplane synthetic engine oil

to prevent friction and the build up of heat. Only the oil filter needs to be changed. The motor has special needle bearings and portions of the motor are made of high quality steel.

The Gates motor is designed to run 24 hours/day, 365 days/year without incurring any fuel costs. The larger size motor would come in pairs; the spare motor being used as a back-up unit should the regular motor be turned off for maintenance such as to change the oil or in case there should be any problems with the first motor. The company is willing to enter into a contract for maintaining the motor after installation.

The Gates motor represents a major breakthrough in motor design technology and provides practical solutions to environmental and fuel conservation concerns. **Finally, a completely mechanical motor has been developed.** It can deliver the power needed in a wide variety of service applications without any waste products or emissions to adversely affect the environment. This revolutionary new motor utilizes spring power technology. Unlike conventional motors which must reach a maximum rpm level before the desired horsepower, the Gates motor provides maximum horsepower instantly by virtue of the torque stored in the springs.

The basic operating principle of the Gates motor involves a series of springs configured to provide the required motor rotation and power delivery. Consider, if you will, the operating principle of a grandfather clock. Once the clock is wound, it continues to operate until it runs down and stops. The springs must then be rewound so it will operate again. Suppose the clock is continually being rewound

as it operates. Then the clock would run continuously. This condition is what forms the basis for the operating principle of the Gates motor. The motor incorporates a unique spring configuration to provide rotation. The springs inside the motor are wound and preset at the factory at the time the motor is assembled. The amount of torque wound into the springs at the factory determines the horsepower of the motor. Inside the motor are a multiple of springs positioned horizontally in a circular arrangement. As the motor operates, the springs are unwound a set number of degrees. A double ratchet system at one end of the motor rewinds the degrees used back into the springs. As the springs are unwinding, **the power generated from all the springs reset each spring (one at a time) during each revolution of the motor**. It is this reset action that produces and delivers power from the springs to the flywheel located at the opposite end of the motor. The flywheel serves to ensure the smooth operation of the motor and to convert the springs into useable horsepower. The smaller motor has 50 foot pounds of torque at a shaft speed of 3000 RPM and will produce 28 HP. The HP can be altered by factory adjustment. The speed of the engine is controlled by a hydraulic pump which provides pressure upon the power shaft.

Contacts: Gates Motor Corporation, P.O. Box 715, Hauula, HI, USA 96717 Email:gagates@earthlink.net

Editor: We tried to get the video of this device operation from Gates Motor Co., but after a long consideration it was not provided since the authors are competitor-conscious.

Alexander V. Frolov

Longitudinal Waves

Cold Electricity

Adrian Akau, USA

Email: adrianakau@aol.com

Dr. Peter Lindemann in his book "The Free Energy Secrets of Cold Electricity" presents the story of this type of electricity which really is not electricity as electricity is normally meant to be understood. Cold electricity behaves differently than normal electricity. Regular electricity may be used in the process to generate this cold form but this transformation is not the type of change in voltage and current that occurs in a transformer. Rather, it is the extraction of a form of current from "normal" electricity by a process that uses high voltage.

In discussing the Edwin Gray motor, Dr. Lindemann relates a demonstration by Gray. Gray used a 6 volt car battery with lead wires running to a system he had devised using a voltage booster and a series of capacitors which raised the voltage to 3,000 volts. He then closed a switch that ran the high voltage into two electromagnets which caused a loud popping sound and cause the top electromagnet weighing a pound and a quarter to be propelled over two feet into the air. Gray claimed that only 1% of the system's energy was used with 99% going back to the battery. He said that he had 'split the positive' with his system.

Other evidence of using this fractionated electricity was Gray's use of a small motorcycle battery (15 amps which would normally produce $W = V \times A = 6 V \times 15 A = 90$ watts) to run concurrently six 15-watt electrical light bulbs, a portable 110 volt T.V. set and two radios. A glowing 40 watt light bulb running off the system was dropped into water without the glass breaking; the bulb gave off light but not the heat that accompanied a bulb run by regular electricity.

This would mean that tungsten in the filament of the light bulb was not resisting the flow of this fractionated electricity and that this "cold electricity" was causing the luminous glow by some other means.

According to Gray's Patent #4,595,975, low voltage was chopped into pulsating DC by passing it through a multi-vibrator (buzzer like a door bell). Then the pulsed DC was sent through the low voltage winding (primary) of a transformer which changed it to pulsating high voltage DC current at the secondary side. The pulsating high voltage DC was rectified by a full wave bridge and changed into high voltage DC.

The high voltage DC was used to repeatedly charge a capacitor as the current was sent to briefly discharge across a spark gap (rated at 3000 volts). The discharge of the spark across the gap had to be in one direction only and its duration was controlled by the size of the capacitor and by the strength of a magnetic field encompassing the gap. This magnetic field had a quenching effect because it caused a back EMF each time the discharge occurred. The current from the discharge across the gap was then sent through a resistor and then to a vacuum tube (the conversion switching element tube).

Another of Edward Gray's patents "Efficient Electrical Conversion Switching Tube Suitable for Inductive Loads" (April 1987, patent 4,661,747) described the switching tube. It utilizes a low voltage anode (positive plate), a low voltage anode (positive plate) and one or more electro-static or charge receiving grids (located between the positive

plates and the cathode or negative plate supplying the electrons). This tube's function was to 'split the positive'. A normal vacuum tube usually uses only a single anode at a particular voltage to control the voltage flow within the tube. The function of the charge-receiving grids was to collect the "cold electricity".

The most unusual part of this Power Supply circuit consisted of devices specifically designed to remove excess energy when the Switching Tube was functioning. A spark-gap protection device, served to "protect the inductive load and the rectifier elements from unduly large discharge currents". As stated, the rectifier elements are the two anodes and the grids in the Switching Tube. In a normal vacuum tube, no protection would be necessary because the maximum power of the tube would be based upon the electricity provided to heat the tube filament and to charge the anode (voltage x amps). Therefore, the excess energy comes from the process occurring as the spark gap affected electrical pulses pass through the Switching Tube. The process of extracting the "cold electricity" places danger of overload upon the system. (Please take note that the "electricity" from the Switching Tube is no longer the normal type of electricity we have from our batteries or from an electrical outlet but rather a completely new form with entirely different characteristics.)

The description continues, "Should the potentials (voltages) within the circuit exceed the predetermined values fixed by the mechanical size and spacing of the elements within the switching tube, the energy is dissipated (bypassed) by the protective device to the circuit common (electrical ground)" by two strategically placed diodes (devices that permit the passage of electricity in one direction only). The question now arises "What is the cause of this large amount of excess energy which must be dumped to ground through device acting like a lightning rod in order to prevent the circuit from burning out?"

To examine the cause of the excess energy source, we must go back over a hundred years to 1889. Heinrich Hertz had just announced

in 1887 that he had discovered electromagnetic waves and Nicola Tesla was attempting to duplicate Hertz's experiments. Tesla used abrupt and powerful electric discharges produced with banks of capacitors charged to very high potentials and was able to explode thin wire (copper bus bars). He came to the conclusion that Hertz had mistakenly associated electrostatic inductions (electrified shockwaves in air) for true electromagnetic waves.

The explosion of the copper bars by means of the "disruptive discharges" from the capacitor bank produced sharp shockwaves which struck Tesla with great force across the entire front of his body. Tesla said they felt more like powerful gunshots rather than electrical sparks. They produced effects similar to lightning or to those produced by high voltage DC generators previously discussed; the simple closing of a high voltage DC generator caused a stinging shock. AC generators were not in use in this pre-AC era and it was shown, later on, that AC generators did not produce these effects.

This shock was first assumed to be the result of residual static charging. It stood straight out of highly electrified conductors, seeking ground paths which included workmen and switchboard operators. In long cables, Tesla estimated that this electrostatic concentration was several orders in magnitude greater than any voltage the DC generator could actually produce. It caused a hedge or crown of bluish needles or spicules to point at right angles to the cable or straight from the electrical cable line into the surrounding space. The bluish needles appeared the very instant the switch was closed and disappeared a few milliseconds later, after which the system functioned normally. However, anyone through whom the blue needles passed, especially in large regional power systems which used high exceptionally high voltages, usually did not survive. Generators rated at a few thousand volts produced hundreds of thousands or even millions of electrostatic volts during the start-up pulse. Highly insulated, heavily grounded relay switches had to be installed to protect workers from certain death.

Engineers at this time assumed **the effect to be caused by a "bunching" action which occurred when a powerful force was not able to move charge sufficiently quickly through a system.** (A similar "choking effect" also happened with large steam engines; if steam was introduced too rapidly, the steam engine could explode.) The metal of which the wire was composed somehow offered resistance to the charge carriers before they were able to move away from the generator terminals. It seemed that the wire acted as a blocking force to the electrons or to some unknown part of the electrons for the first few milliseconds, rather than as a conductor. The powerful, deadly bluish spikes sprang from the line until the current charges actually "caught up" with the applied electrical field. It was as if the spicules were a form of relieving pressure on the system by converting the voltage impulse into some other form.

Tesla began wondering why the electrostatic field moved faster than the actual charges. He believed that this effect could help him find electric waves better than his capacitors because the line resistance caused the electrostatic charges to bunch together into a density much greater that obtainable with his capacitors.

Tesla understood that ordinary capacitor discharges were oscillating currents or spark currents which "bounced" between each capacitor plate until their stored energy was dissipated. The high surge voltage of the DC generator exerted such a high one way pressure on the dense line charges, due to the millisecond resistance of the metal, that possible voltage "bounces" were also oscillations of current as was true with the capacitors. Tesla used every means possible to block the "back-rush" (bouncing) of the oscillating current in order to prevent the supercharge to prematurely decline; he wanted to maintain this powerful "bunching" effect as long as possible in order to study it and to make use of it.

His face and hands experienced a penetrating shockwave; a sharp pressure and an electrical irritation were brought on at the sudden closing of the switch. His face and hands were especially sensitive to these shockwaves which caused a "stinging" effect at close range. Tesla believed that he was being struck by material particles approaching the vapor state as they were thrust from bluish crowned wire.

Later on, he was to discover they were not gas particles. **He placed himself behind a glass shield but to his amazement, he still felt the shockwaves and stinging effects; the glass shield did not protect him.** These stinging rays could be felt at great distances from their sources and, to his amazement, would penetrate shields of both glass and copper. Tesla knew that normal electrostatic charges spread over the surface of a metal (copper, for example) shield so that the stinging effect could not have an electrostatic origin and therefore was not electrostatic in nature but was from some other yet unknown source.

Joseph Henry in 1842 had noticed the magnetization of steel needles by the discharge of a Leyden Jar (type of primitive condenser made with a glass bottle). The Leyden Jar was at the top floor of a building while the needles were in the basement. Dr. Henry, noting the passage of these magnetizing rays through brick walls, oak doors, stone and iron flooring and tin ceilings believed that the spark given off by the discharge released "light-like rays" that passed through the material obstacles with ease before magnetizing the needles.

Elihu Thomson, a physics instructor in 1872 had been attempting to make sparks from a Ruhmkorrf Spark Coil more clearly visible for his physics students. He attached one pole of the coil to a cold water pipe and noted that the previously blue spark changed to white. He then attached the other pole to a large metal table top and produced a silver-white spark that would be clearly visible to all attending his lecture. He went to the door of the room to notify his colleague but received a strong shock from the door knob. Turning off the Ruhmkorrf coil prevented the brass knob on the oak door to stop shocking. He returned with his friend, again turned on the coil and discovered that all metal objects in the entire building, no matter how distant

from the coil or insulated from the floor, produced long and continuous white sparks upon the touch of a penknife or screwdriver.

The device Tesla perfected was far superior to the Ruhmkorff Spark Coil. The effect of his disrupter device was so strong that a single wire placed in an oil bath produced what he had originally but mistakenly thought to be gaseous streams so powerful that they visibly depressed the oil into a depth of about two inches. Tesla concluded that "besides the air, another medium is present".

> *...he placed himself behind a glass shield but to his amazement, he still felt the shockwaves and stinging effects; the glass shield did not protect him. These stinging rays could be felt at great distances from their sources and, to his amazement, would penetrate shields of both glass and copper...*

Tesla had been able to perfect his device by placing a capacitor between the switch and the D.C. generator thus increasing the power and protecting the generator windings in much the same manner as the diodes Edwin Gray's Switching Tube protected Gray's circuit. Tesla also raised the voltage and quickened the "make-break" rate of the switch to increase the power level by placing a powerful permanent magnet crosswise to the discharge path of the high voltage output of the DC generator wires. The magnetic field caused the discharge arc to automatically "blow out"; the charge passing through the wires in the presence of the magnetic field built up reverse emf (electromotive force or voltage).

Tesla believed he had discovered a new type of electricity with special characteristics. This form of electricity did not consist of alternating waves. **They were longitudinal waves** composed of successive shocking waves with effects that could be seen and felt at a distance. **Vector components of these shock waves were unidirectional. They were able to force charges in the direction of their propagation.** In his patent #787,412, "Art Of Transmitting Electrical Energy Through The Natural Mediums" (April 18, 1905), Tesla calculated the mean velocity of the waves propagated by his device to be 471,240 Km/sec. Knowing that the velocity of light is 300,000 Km/sec would indicate that the type of transmission to which Tesla is referring is different than standard electromagnetic radiation; these special longitudinal "Radiant Energy" waves moved faster than the speed of light.

After conducting hundreds of experiments, Tesla found that "Radiant Energy" longitudinal waves **could penetrate all materials and cause "electronic responses" in metals such as copper and silver.** Impulses exceeding 0.1 millisecond duration produced effects such as pain, mechanical pressures, explosion of thin wires and vibration of objects. Impulses of 1.0 microseconds caused the sensation of physiological heat; at still shorter lengths white light would fill the room. Impulses less than 100 microseconds were safe to work with and Tesla planned to use them for his power broadcast system since they could pass through all matter.

In 1890, Tesla discovered that placing a long single turn copper helix near his magnetic disrupter became covered with an envelope of white sparks. Effects were strongest when the helical coil was placed within the disrupter wire circle. In this "shockzone", the coil was surrounded by a blast of long, fluid like silvery streamers which clung to the surface of the coil, flowing over the coil at right angles to the windings. Tesla hypothesized the electrostatic-like effect was due to radiant transformation rules requiring measurements of discharge lengths and attributes of the helix used (number of turns, diameter, etc.). (Editor: resonance)

The new induction law he discovered showed that radiant shockwaves became much stronger when encountering segmented objects. The radiant shockwaves

"flashed over" the outer skin of the helix from end to end without passing through the windings of the coil; shockwaves of 10,000 volts introduced to a 24 inch coil rise to 240,000 volts. The greater the resistance in the helix turns, the higher the maximum voltage. This was completely different from magneto-induction. Remember that he was not working with electricity but with radiant shockwaves.

> *Aether particles were incompressible and could easily pass through space and matter with a speed much greater than the speed of light. This was pure radiant matter but, at the same time, pure Radiant Energy. Cold electricity is one of the forms of this Radiant Energy*

This transformer he invented used radiant shockwaves to produce pure voltage without current. Each transformer had to be "tuned" by adjusting the disrupter to a specific impulse duration. At that point, voltage impulses could flow smoothly, flowing over the copper surface much like a stream of water in a pipe. No amperage could be detected but if the stream was aimed at a distant metal plates, "current" was produced which reached several hundred or even thousands of amperes. Tesla then began to wonder what made up this white, currentless stream.

Tesla determined that normal charge carriers (electrons) could not travel as quickly as the radiant pulse; no current moved the coil because the electrons were choked in the metal lattice of the coil. **The radiant pulse moving over the surface of the coil was not electronic in nature.** He placed the legs of a heavy U-shaped copper bus bar directly to the disrupter primary and then connected the short-circuited system to several incandescent lamps. These lamps glowed with a brilliant cold white light as

with Gray's light bulb, proving that the power for the light was not electrical in nature. Tesla believed that the electrons were blocked from flowing through the wire while the radiant pulse was released over the coil surface as a "gaseous" pulse (splitting the positive, according to Gray).

Tesla came to believe that voltage could be viewed as streams of aether under various states of pressure and that his transformers affected the aether as to produce the luminous effects he observed. In his patents, he describes his "light-like rays" as tightly constricted aether streams propelled from his transformers along infinitesimal ray lines along which an incompressible movement occurs instantly through space on all points along its path. Aether streams were being drawn in through his transformer at higher natural pressure and then accelerated in the electrical discharge. The voltage in his transformer could control the brilliance of light in a room but this type of light was almost impossible to register on film. He could heat up a room or cause cool breezes by controlling the voltage in impulse duration in his transformer.

Tesla saw electrical current was really a complex combination of aether and electrons. Through the application of a disrupter, the electrons were removed from the gap by the magnetic field while the aether steams continued to flow through the circuit. He considered aether particles highly mobile with infinitesimally small mass and cross-section as compared to electrons. They were incompressible and could easily pass through space and matter with a speed much greater than the speed of light. This was pure radiant matter but, at the same time, pure Radiant Energy. Cold electricity is one of the forms of this Radiant Energy.
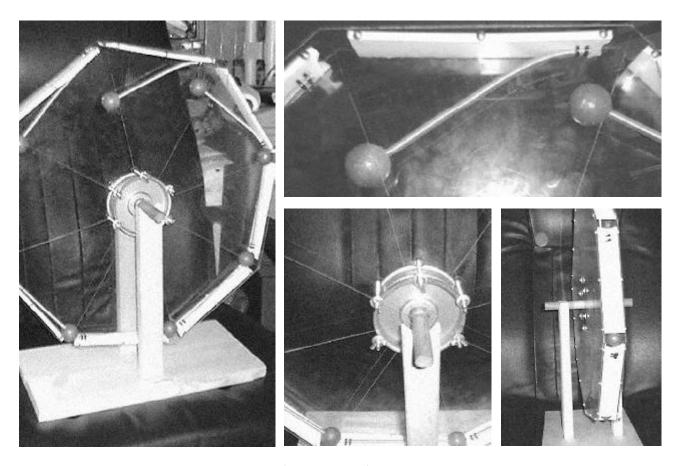
Edwin Gray, Dr. Nicola Tesla and Dr. Thomas Henry Moray all used radiant energy technologies. It is important to understand that the Laws of Thermodynamics and Maxwell's equations do not pertain to "Radiant Energy" technologies.

Fantastic Projects

Gravity Conversion Rotary Device

Review is prepared by editor Tatiana Ezhova

Here another fuelless perpetuum mobile is presented.

The system design

The design includes a wheel with spring spokes. Pegs may be fixed inside the wheel to balance movement of weights on springs. All parts should be homogenized as to dimension and weight. The author used 4 oz. lead balls and the 3/16" springs. The wheel measures 9" in radius as measured from hub center to center of each lead ball at outer periphery. This device is actuated and stopped by the hand. Its speed is self governing, it ramps up to speed quickly and simply stays there.

Note: you can find more detailed information about the device at
http://www.greaterthings.com/News/FreeEnergy/Directory/GravityMotors/photos/.
Also read in this issue article "Novozhilov's motor" that describes another wheel motor that does not require any fuel for its operation.

Torsion Technollogies

Xing-liu Jiang, Xiong-wei Wen, China

Science School,

Beijing University of Aeronautics and Astronautics, Beijing 100083

and

Li-jun Han, China

Department of Materials Science and Engineering,

Beijing University of Aeronautics and Astronautics, Beijing 100083

ABSTRACT

Highly localized nuclear activation in electrochemical systems and other electrical discharge processes have been observed by many laboratories in the world. This report is an attempt to explain such anomalous phenomena by using torsion field theory and axion model. Anisotopic behaviours of radiation products, burst character, "heat after death" of excess energy release in electrical discharge systems are considered to be interpreted by the torsion coherence of vortex dynamics with the zero-point energy induced by localized intense field emission of micro-protrusion of the cathode, and the dynamic Casimir effect of transient evolution of triple region of gas, liquid solution, and electrode protrusion. Axion model and Primakoff's effect are proposed for explanation of nuclear transmutation without noticeable gamma radiation.

Nuclear products with high concentration, unidentified tracks with highly collimated lines of low energy nuclear reactions in the electrochemical systems were recorded by CR-39 solid detectors and photo-films, and localized spots with chemical alterations were observed at our laboratory. It is suggested to carry out intensive study of vortex dynamic for explaining the anomalous phenomena in wide area of nature and laboratories. Analysis of vortex dynamics with wide range from pitting corrosion of electrochemical system, laboratory plasma, tornado, to quasar spiral model with extremely high energy cosmic rays in the center region, leads to a conclusion for that vortex dynamics creates torsion fields responding to the anomalous effects.

I. INTRODUCTION

Many laboratories in the world have observed nuclear reactions and **excess heat** in electrochemical systems. The mechanism of such anomalous phenomena is not being well understood according to normally accepted physics.

Nuclear products with high concentration and tracks with highly collimated lines of low energy nuclear reactions in the electrochemical systems were recorded by CR-39 solid detectors and films at our laboratory [1,2]. These facts suggest that quasar model with spiral structure and extremely high enrage cosmic rays in the center could be used to explain the mechanism. It is supposed to use the concept of torsion field to interpret the observed phenomena, typically, the properties of axion acceleration, memory effect, and the polarized nuclear reactions with torsion effect [3].

II. PHENOMENA IN NATURE AND AT LABORLATORIES

The vortex and spiral structures are the archetype that appears at all levels of nature and laboratories, for example, atom structure, vortex lattice in superconductors, dense plasma focus, lightning, quasar etc.

Recent report of dark matter annihilation at the galactic center describes that the cold dark matter near the galactic center is accreted by the central black hole into a

dense spike [4]. Particle dark matter annihilation makes the spike to be a compact source of photons, electrons, positrons, protons, antiprotons and neutrinos. It reminds us for that there is a similarity among pitting corrosion with electrochemical noise, laboratory plasma pinching (dense plasma focus, for example), fast laser induced ion beams [5] and quasar spiral model with high-energy cosmic rays in spiral center in spite of large dimension difference. Comparing the experimental results of electrochemical cells with excess heat and nuclear transmutation to astrophysics phenomena, it is supposed that the investigation of vortex dynamics of torsion coherence with the zero-point energy is essential for tapping the zero-point energy.

As it is predicted by quantum mechanics that the vacuum is seething with active energy, even at temperature of zero point Kelvin. This zero-point energy (ZPE) can be thought as an infinite number of virtual photons that are popping out of the vacuum and going back in, but should be a measurable effect en masse. To exam the origin of ZPE background, the interaction of matter with the ZPE can be treated on the basis of charged point particles interaction with a background of electromagnetic zero-point radiation with spectral-energy density.

Based on observation in the experiments, the following features are considered in order to understand the experimental results with electrical discharge systems.

A. ELECTROCHEMICAL DOUBLE LAYER

In an electrolytic cell, the electrolysis with high conductivity and the electrochemical double layer with large layer-capacitance lead to a typical structure of the cathode potential distribution similar to the cathode drop of glow discharge in low gas pressure. For a compact layer the thickness of the double layer is equal to one ionic layer, across which there is a linear fall of potential. Thus, high electric field exists in some regions on the surface of the cathode.

The local enhancement of the electric field on the cathode surface with the double layer is related to the protrusions and cracks similar to the tip discharge in air or in a vacuum. The current distribution depends strongly on the surface roughness and the work function of the electron emission. A high transient current density $(> 10^8 A/cm^2)$ could be expected due to enhanced field.

B. ENERGY CONCENTRATION

On the cathode surface, the high persistent electrical fields $(>10^7 V/cm)$ and large equivalent capacitance $(>25 \mu F/cm^2)$ lead to a high energy concentration in the double layer [6]. The concentrated field on the tips of the protrusions or cracks after a long-loading period with deuterium on the palladium cathode surface creates a high transient electron flux because of the large distributed capacitance and the negligible inductance in a localized discharge mini-network. The experimental data show that the reactions take place only in some restricted areas that have specific properties. The idea of micro fusion due to the results of energy concentration and the high deuteron flux could be used to explain the nuclear transmutation.

C. TORSION FIELD AND THEIR EXPERIMENTAL MANIFESTATIONS

Elementary particles have the moment of quantity of motion, i.e. spin. If in any substance the spins of particle have a preferable direction, then it is interpreted as spin polarization of the substance. Every substance creates a torsion-field (or called spin-field or axial field) in the space surrounding it when polarized by spins [7]. The superposition of torsion field, generated by the atomic and nuclear spins of each molecule, determines the intensity of torsion field in the space surrounding each molecule. Torsion field has strong penetration ability and does not interact with the crystal lattice of substances. The torsion field created by rotation of some sort of matter is concentrated in two opposite beams propagating along the rotation axis. The intensity of torsion-field with some

lower constant value can be retained for several weeks after the rotation is stopped. Such property of vortex mater has been recently observed in type II superconductors with magnetic flux line lattice [8]. The studies of vortex matter of type II superconductors have shown a number of puzzling phenomena associated with vortex motion, including: low-frequency noise and slow voltage oscillations; a history-dependent dynamic response, and memory of the direction, amplitude duration and frequency of the previously applied current.

Some behaviors of the torsion-field effect have been observed in the experiments of electrolysis regarding the so-called cold fusion, such as when the gas bubble chains come out from the protrusions of the cathode surface a long time after switching off the electrolysis potential. The more surprising thing is the heat after death, which has been recorded by many labs. This phenomenon could be explained by the persistence effect of the torsion-field produced by vortex dynamics of tip effect.

D. EXPERIMENTAL RESULTS IN THE ELECTROCHEMICAL CELL

CR-39 plastic films possessing with a high degree of optical clarity and isotope in track response, and are sensitive to neutron, proton, tritium, alpha, and other charged particles, were used to detect the products of nuclear reactions. The films of CR-39 were immersed in the NaOH electrolyte of heavy water and placed adjacent to the tips of the cathode [9]. After 110 hours, electrolysis experiment with the applied voltage 1 V and current 2 ma, the solid detector was etched by 6.25 N NaOH solution in 70^{0}C for 11 hours. The photomicrograph shows the cluster of tracks with a cycle crater of 100 μm in diameter and 25 μm in depth. According to the etching condition, the energies of the most of the particles, P, T, α are estimated roughly to be in the range of 1-4 MeV. On the backside of same region of the CR-39 film detector, one can clearly see a few of tracks in the circle area or

nearby. Such tracks are believed to be created by recoil-protons of forward incident neutrons. High concentration of the cluster of nuclear tracks could be explained by the quasar spiral model and by the crystal channeling effect [Fig.1]. The experimental results of the generation of tritium with single crystal metal of Pd show that none of the generation of tritium has been revealed by using non-single crystal electrodes [10]. The importance of the crystal channeling effect for nuclear reactions in the electrochemical systems can be inferred.
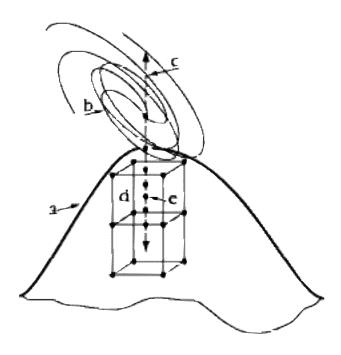
Fig.1
Schematic presentation of a micropinch spiral
by tip effect in the electrolysis cell:
a) tip of the electrode; b) spiral structure of
micropinch; c) electron beam; d) crystal channel;
e) ion beam

To determine the spatial distribution of radiation active sites (RAS), Black-white 135 films of 27 DIN have been used to image the position of the RAS. After a 1,5 year of deposition in glass tube of finishing electrolysis experiments with light water electrolyte for more than 200 hours running, the patterns of RSA were clearly formed on the films after exposure of 100 hours [2]. The bright spots corresponding to the tips of palladium cathode edges can be seen due to

the tip effect. The effect of magnetic field on the traces of the charged particles has been observed while the Pd samples exposing to the films, which were folding and wrapping up the sample, were inserted between couple magnets. The tracks stretching along the film surfaces confirm that the tracks were created by charged particles, electrons for example, with low energy about some keVs. Highly oriented tracks can be observed by autoradiography by using normal films locally[Fig.2].
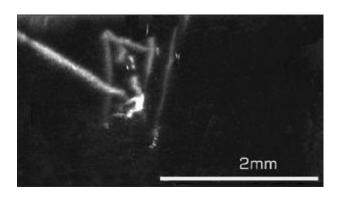
Fig.2
Autoradiography of charged particle tracks of beta delay isotopes on the surface palladium cathode. Some tracks of beta particles are paralleling the cathode surface.

E. SONOLUMINESCENCE AND "BUBBLE NUCLEAR FUSION"

Some scientists of Oak Ridge National Laboratory in America reported their articles of bubbles experiments in Science. Experimental results show that the radiation lights of sonoluminescence possess three characters: short duration with picoseconds; wide continual spectrum; highly oriented thin beams. **Based on those characters, vortex dynamics with axial acceleration of bubble collapse could be inferred.** Nuclear reaction with abnormal gamma radiation was observed [11]. Dr.Claudia Eberlein describes her conclusion on sonoluminescence that only the ZPE spectrum matches the light emission spectrum, which must be a ZPE phenomena [12]. The effect of torsion field on nuclear reactions along the axis of vortex should be taken into consideration

for the low ratio of the nuclear products of n/T due to spin polarization of reaction particles.

Axion model and the Primakoff effect are proposed for explanation of nuclear transmutation without noticeable gamma radiation. Many laboratories in the world have been engaged in several experiments to search for axions, light neutral pseudoscalar particles yet to be discovered. The axion would be produced in the solar core through the Primakoff effect if its mass is a few electronvolts and could be detected in the laboratory.

III. CONCLUSION

Researchers of new energy study of "cold fusion" type should pay great attention to the general processes of electrolysis to find the key points, which could play a major role in the transit from the electrochemical processes to processes of torsion and the nuclear processes. From the authors' point of view, the evolution of double layers is of importance to understand the anomalous effect, typically on the protrusions of cathode. The change of space-time near the tips due to torsion field generated is expected to delivery the zero-point energy, and dynamic Casimir effect for the evolution of gas bubbles on the tips are expected to generate photons and excess heat [1]. The yields of transmutation products are related to the current distribution on the cathode surface. The cathodes of thin wire were benefit to the generation of nuclear reactions and excess heat for electrochemical systems. Careful examination of the evolution of electrochemical double layer will lead to a good understanding of pitting corrosion with electrochemical noise, and further to recognize the anomalous excess heat and nuclear reactions.

Heat after death was observed at many laboratories. It is believed that the persistence behaviors of torsion field can be used to explain such anomalous phenomena.

The contact between beads coated with a thin metallic layer or multilayered film and

palladium black particles could be regarded as point-contact similar to the tip-effect [13].

We may say that it is expected to reveal the puzzles of the mechanisms of high-Tc superconductivity with pinning vortices by the torsion field theory [14,15].

REFERENCES

[1] Xing-liu Jiang, Jin-zhi Lei, Li-jun Han, Dynamic Casimir Effect in an Electrochemical System, J. New Energy, Vol.3, No. 4, 47(1999).
[2] Xing-liu Jiang, Chang-ye Chen, Li-jun Han, Tip Effect and Nuclear Active Sites, Proc. of the 7th Intern. Conf. on Cold Fusion, Vancouver, April, 1998, pp.175.
[3] Don Read, Excitation and Extraction of Vacuum Energy Via EM-Torsion Field Coupling Theoretical Model, J. New Energy, Vol. 3, No. 2/3, p.130(1998).
[4] P.Gondolo, J.Silk, Dark matter annihilation at galactic center, Phys. Rev. Lett. 83, 1719(1999).
[5] BPS, Laser light in , stream of protons out, Physics Today, Jan.2000,p.9.
[6] G.Korluem and J.OM. Bookris, Textbook of Electrochemistry Vol. II. Elsevier Publishing company Amstorsan , 1951. P.364

[7] A.E.Akimov, G.I.shipov, Torsion fields and their Experimental Manifestations, Journal of New Energy, 2(2), 67(1999).
[8] Y.Paltiel, E.Zeldov Y.N.Myasoedov el. al. Dynamic instabilities and memory effects in vortex matter, Nature 403, 398 (2000).
[9] X.L.Jiang, L.J.Han and W.Kang. Concentrated energy and Micro Nuclear Fusion, ICCF6, Oct 1996, Japan p.580.
[10] R.L.Matlock, F.E.Collins, G.R.Bancher, Anomalous tritium found in the recombined off gasses during electrolysis using crystal cathodes. Elem. Energy(cold fusion), 26, 28(1998).
[11] Taleyarkhan R P, West C D, Cho J S, Lahey Jr R T, Nigmatulin R I, Block R C. Evidence for Nuclear Emissions During Acoustic Cavitation. Science, 2002 295: 1850~1862.
[12] Claudia Eberlein. Theory of quantum radiation observed as onoluminescence, Phy.Rev.Lett.53,2772(1996)
[13] G.H. Miley, G.Narne, M.J.Williams, J.A.Patterson, J.Nix, D.Cravens, and H. Hora, Quantitative Observation of Transmutation Products Occurring in Thin-Film Coated Microspheres During Electrolysis, Proceedings of ICCF-6, OCT. 1996, Japan, p. 629.
[14] T. Matsuda, K. Harada, H. Kasai, O. Kamimura and A. Tomomura, Observation of Dynamic Interaction of Vortices with Pinning by Lorentz Microscopy, Science, 271, 1393(1996).
[15] G.W. Crabtree and D.R. Nelson, Vortex Physics in High Temperature Superconductors, Physics Today, April 1997, p.32.
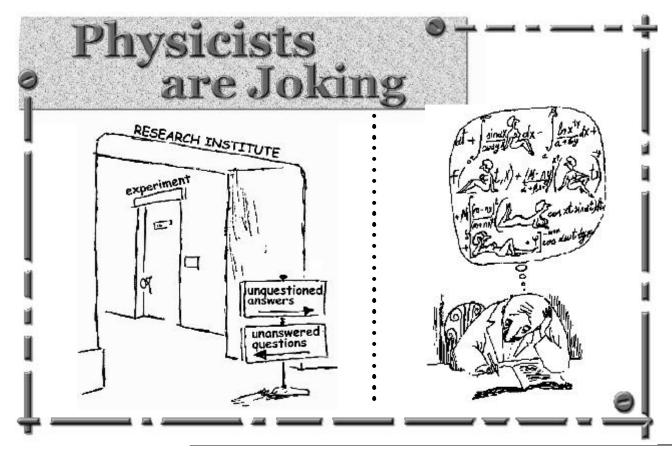
Fantastic Projects

The Invention of Roman Solomyanny

Our previous issue featured an article about Roman Solomyanny who came to our office and told us amazing things. He said that during his army years (according to his words, he was in the military intelligence) he made a radio technology invention and later on built a free energy generator. The inventor claimed that his device had been working for a certain period of time without any fuel and had been producing power enough for heating and lighting his countryside house. We could not ignore such an intriguing piece of information. Moreover, Roman promised to build and present his device in 2003. We paid him for this interesting story to be published in the issue and prepared for the continuation...

Alas, to no avail... His mobile phone was silent and we started to worry about the inventor's health. Fortunately, we managed to contact his parents on his home telephone (Roman lives in St. Petersburg) and they told us that the chap was OK. It seems he's lost his interest in us. But we still hope that Roman did invent something really exciting and not only polished up his talent for writing science fiction articles. Those people, who want to know the details about this invention or discuss it with the inventor himself, can get in touch with us for his contact information. Anyway, we will be very pleased to see him again full of new exciting stories. We have already introduced the 'Humour' section into the magazine and are planning to start the 'It Just Can't Be So' section.

Editor

Anti-Gravity: The Holy Grail of the 21st Century

Bruce A. Smith, USA
PO Box 1676, Yelm, Washington 98597
Email: brucesmith@rainierconnect.com

A Primer on the Role of Electromagnetic, Electrostatic, and Torsion Fields in Anti-Gravity and Field-Effect Propulsion

Before visiting a University of Washington physics professor to talk about electrostatic propulsion, and hopefully anti-gravity, I realized: *Birds defy gravity. So do 747's for that matter. They apply the laws of physics and lift off the ground. That's anti-gravity, isn't it?* Yes, that's true, I suppose, in a metaphorical sense. But seagulls, jumbo jets and space crafts manifest anti-gravitation effects strictly speaking. What I want to address here is not the overcoming of gravity but the neutralizing of it.

Dr. Eugene Podkletnov, one of the foremost researchers in anti-gravity, and whose work is sought by NASA, Boeing and British Aerospace (now known as BAE Systems) describes the hunt for anti-gravity the greatest scientific quest of this century. He calls for an international effort, akin to the Manhattan Project that developed the atomic bomb, to conquer the secrets of anti-gravity, and usher in a new era of scientific understanding whose technological development will be at a scale so vast that the potential outcomes are merely hinted at by our previous achievements.

Just getting such a project off the ground will require unprecedented international cooperation, and public disclosure as well; the potentials are that vast, that scary, and that dangerous. Dr. Dan Marckus, noted British avionics expert, states in The Hunt for Zero Point, the seminal work-to-date on anti-gravity written by Jane's Defence Weekly aviation editor Nick Cook, that the secrets of anti-gravity in the wrong hands will make thermonuclear weapons look like firecrackers.

The secrecy surrounding anti-gravity research is phenomenal. Boeing refuses to publicly acknowledge any activity in anti-gravity development despite the fact that its competitor and sometime sub-contractor, British Aerospace (BAE Systems) is, the latter providing funds for four university research efforts as part of its Project Greenglow, one of which was a Podkletnov replication experiment headed by Dr. Clive Woods at the University of Sheffield,. Further, Nick Cook publicly, and privately to me in an email, states quite directly that George Muellner, former director of Boeing's ultra secret Phantom Works, claims Boeing sought the services of Dr. Podkletnov to unlock the secretes of his gravity-shielding research. Cook says that Muellner states Boeing was denied Podkletnov's services due to the objections of Russian officialdom, which the Russian-born Podkletnov must pay attention to, apparently, despite the fact that he works in Tempere, Finland. Dr. Podkletnov, wisely perhaps, chooses not to clarify these particulars despite our several emails.

Perhaps Boeing can deny any activity on anti-gravity because NASA is doing its own research, and as a prime contractor to NASA, such as by running the Space Shuttle Program, Boeing probably knows what NASA knows. NASA spent $600,000 recently in its Breakthrough Propulsion Physics program (BPP) to purchase Podkletnov replication equipment. Inexplicably, that equipment sits in boxes in NASA's Marshall Research Center in Huntsville, AL, awaiting more funding; according to an email I received from NASA propulsion researcher, Ron Koczor.

But enough with this business; what do we know about anti-gravity?

The search for that answer has taken me to some exciting and obscure places in this world, like the Aeronautics and Astrophysics lab at the Seattle campus of the University of Washington. I called those folks because Nick Cook in The Hunt for Zero Point, mentions that UW received a NASA contract to study theories of inertia as part of its BPP program. *That's a good place to start,* I thought, but it took backtracking to BPP Project Director Marc Millis at NASA's Glenn Research Center in Cleveland to find Dr. John Cramer at the UW Physics Department. His mission was to confirm with Dr. James Woodward the latter's 1996 preliminary research into the loss of gravitational mass in a targeted piece of metal from oscillating capacitors. Although Woodward's initial data appeared encouraging, NASA's Millis told me that their funding dried up before completing their research. Furthermore, the entire BPP became unfunded in 2002 and now in 2003 has become a hazy, privatized version of its former NASA subset self.

However, UW is continuing related research, such as magnetically confined fusion energy generators and that, for me, by using electromagnetism to contain an inner field makes it a close cousin of anti-gravity and field-effect propulsion. I spoke with Professor Uri Shumlak who told me that he and other UW staff from the Department of Aeronautics and Astronautics, along with a bevy of their grad students, are building a prototype of a fusion generator called HIT, which stands for Helicity Injected Torus.

This donut ring-shaped torus encloses a roundish chamber. Within that chamber a vacuum is first created, and then a volume of hydrogen gas is introduced and heated to a few million degrees Celsius, which separates the electrons and protons from their atoms turning the whole stew into a quasi-neutral foam of plasma. Then the torus envelopes the plasma with a magnetic field to keep it away from the sides of the chamber enabling the plasma mass to stay hot, and

keep the rest of Seattle cool. (While I was standing next to his little eight foot long gizmo, Prof. Shumlak assured me there was no danger of a couple million degrees of heat escaping. The heat density of the plasma was "too low" for me to, well, break a sweat over. His quote was, "There's no more heat mass inside that chamber than what's contained in a cup of coffee." I sure hope you're right, Doc.)

Then, once the plasma field is contained, the magnetic field squeezes the plasma, fusing the nuclei of one hydrogen atom into another. As the hydrogen couples combine, a helium atom is created and a neutron is released, along with lots of energy in the form of heat. One day, such a generator will give us unlimited amounts of electricity, as the heat can produce electric voltage.

Lots of electrical power on the cheap the UW predicts; and the Department of Energy agrees, once the details of building reliable magnetic field generators are solved. What does magnetic fusion have to do with anti-gravity? Two things: first, magnets. Electromagnetism seems to be one of the major players in anti-gravity, particularly the use of electromagnetic fields to contain other fields, such as plasma fields in the HIT, or torsion fields, but more about that later. Secondly, the HIT works, or is about to. It's real and mainstream science embraces it, while anti-gravity is, well, a little more out there and reliable data is harder to obtain. So the technology of HIT lays a base that other research can build upon, such as not only containing other fields, but also building field effect propulsion systems, the most elementary of which is electrostatic propulsion, and aspects of that are already being applied by NASA.

Electrostatic propulsion uses electrical fields differently than electromagnetism does. In EM a current flows and creates a field, while in electrostatic systems the current is static and a charge builds up a field, such as in a capacitor.

These theories are utilized on NASA's Deep Space I, a probe bound for the outer reaches of our solar system. On Deep Space I, the

propellant, a tankful of xenon gas, is excited electrostatically into positive ions. The engine has a negative charge at the exit end, so the charged xenon rushes out the tail pipe with a greater thrust than if it was just using conventional chemical propellants. In fact, the electrostatic propulsion system on Deep Space I allows it to fly at 60,000 mph, or 10,000 mph faster than it would with a conventional rocket. In addition, only 82 kg of xenon is needed for its entire mission, so with its smaller mass and weight Deep Space I will fly along side its intended target, a comet, and drag race on equal footing while filming and conducting studies. Again, not anti-gravity per se, but electrically charging Deep Space I's fuel-field sets the stage for a closer look at electrostatic propulsion.

Taking that closer look is Tim Ventura and his fellow researchers at American Antigravity, an organization based in Kirkland, WA. Ventura and his crew use electrostatic asymmetrical capacitors to create a field that levitates objects, such as their small, kite-like "lifters." These lifters are very light, weighing only a few ounces, and have balsa wood struts that support the capacitors. When two capacitors of different size receive their share of a 30,000 volt charge, the lifter lifts- no motors or wings.

How, no one really knows in my judgment; and the phenomenon is replete with controversy and mystery. But as one who has seen a lifter fly, let me tell you what one looks like and what I saw when Tim Ventura's took off.

Tim has been building lifters since he was a kid and has perfected a four-foot, by-four-foot, by four foot triangular lifter which has flown so many missions in his garage that the silver aluminum foil has turned white. The thin, chopstick-like balsa wood ribs that hold the aluminum foil in place are joined every few inches by a vertical strut (much like a telephone pole on a HO model railroad set) which sticks up and secures the copper or stainless steel wire of the upper capacitor. The ribs are intersected every ten inches or so by the strut of an interior triangle, since the whole lifter is composed of interconnected isosceles triangles which give the necessary strength to the balsa wood frame. All told

there is about 30 linear feet of aluminum foil and a similar run of wire.

The lower and larger capacitor is a strip of aluminum foil stretched between the horizontal balsa wood struts. The second capacitor is a thin strip of 50 gauge wire mounted about one inch above the aluminum foil. As capacitors they store electrical charge but don't pass it on in a current.

Fig.1
Lifter

The negative lead goes to the lower aluminum foil and the positive lead is attached to the upper wire. The three corners of the lifter are tethered to the work table so that the electrical leads from the power source are not broken off in flight.

The power source kicks out 15,000 volts at 250 watts. Tim uses a voltage generator made by Information Unlimited, Inc, but before the current reaches the capacitors, the voltage is stepped up to 30,000 volts by Tim's homemade voltage multiplier stack. At full throttle the lifter is straining at the tethers, bending the balsa wood frame near the point of fracture.

Throw the switch and at around 17,500 volts the lifter begins to quiver in take-off. At the full power of 30,000 volts the lifter is roaring and a noticeable downward breeze is observed. Many physicists call it "ion wind," and say that it is how the lifters fly. But what exactly is ion wind, and can it be the cause of flight?

"Ion wind is the movement of ionized air particles," according to Ventura, "which flow downward according to electrical charge." Here's his theory:

The positively charged wire on the top part of the lifter steals elections from the surrounding air, leaving the effected air molecules positively charged. These positively charged air molecules, or ions, then head downward toward the large source of negatively charged electrons generated by the aluminum foil. These air molecule ions are bigger and heavier than the electrons seeking them, so there is a net thrust downward pushing the whole lifter up. That's the theory, and frankly all I can do to verify the theory is to tell you what others tell me. Before I do that, though, let me tell you what I experienced standing next to a levitating lifter.

In flight the lifter emits a high whining, hissing buzz, and I could feel a good breeze coming up at me from the work table underneath the lifter. Also, standing next to the lifter but not touching it, the hair on the back of my head started to rise up in electrostatic-like fashion.

Fig.2
Lifter

To analyze the air currents Tim blew baby powder at the top of the lifter. The majority of the particulate cloud was drawn into the middle area of the lifter and then sucked downward. A kind of vortex was created at

times, for intermittently I could see a cloud forming into an organized column beneath the lifter and then spreading out in 360 degrees once it hit the work table surface.

Electrostatic propulsion uses electrical fields differently than electromagnetism does. In EM a current flows and creates a field, while in electrostatic systems the current is static and a charge builds up a field, such as in a capacitor

Is that ion wind? Well, there certainly was a breeze, and it sure felt like air, but how would I know if it was ionized? Something definitely sucked the baby powder down, but was it more than just regular air blowing past me? Again, I don't know.

Is the movement of wind why lifters fly, regardless of whether it is ionic or not, or is the wind just a by-product and not the propulsion? Could the capacitors be creating a field that neutralizes gravity, allowing the craft to levitate? Or are they creating some kind of new field that is localized and the surrounding ambient field pushes this "field-bubble" up, much like a helium balloon is pushed up by the surrounding heavier air trying to fill the emptier "field" of the lighter helium?

Ventura thinks at least two phenomena are at work. Ion wind is definitely one he feels, for the breeze is self-evident. However, he thinks a second effect is at work, too, and many agree with him. Most speculation concerns what is called the Biefeld-Brown effect, the "Brown" being T. Townsend Brown, whose name is well known in early quantum research and whose work is prominently discussed in Nick Cook's The Hunt for Zero Point.

The Biefeld-Brown effect, according to Ventura, is the theory that high voltage, air-gapped capacitors with different or asymmetrical capacities generate a net

directional force upwards from the larger element to the smaller element, which on the lifter is from the aluminum foil to the wire. This force then pushes against the ambient energy field of the surrounding area, perhaps pushing against a more rigid energy field of the zero point energy field.

Brown apparently made his case for these electromagnetic effects, receiving patents in the 1960's for his research. NASA's Dr. Jonathan Campbell at Marshall Research Center in Huntsville confirmed to me that he also, has received a patent recently for his research into the thrust effects of asymmetrical capacitors.

Editor: By the way, this patent is meaningless from the point of view of a prime claim. Before that there had been many publications on the subject.

<div align="right">

A.V. Frolov.

</div>
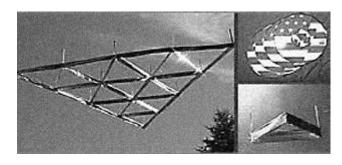
Fig.3
Lifter

However, prominent physicist Hal Puthoff, whose research is a broad swath across the fields of the 'new physics', featured in both The Field and The Hunt for Zero Point, and who was also the military's "Top Psychic" as the twelve-year director of the CIA's remote viewing squadron, has a different perspective: "I'm quite certain at this point that the so-called 'lifter' phenomena is just an electrostatic ion wind phenomena, not 'antigravity.'"

But Dr. John J. Rusek, Adjunct Professor of Aeronautics and Astronautics at both Purdue University and the United States Air Force Academy, says that "Initial findings of 'classroom' experiments with lifters show ionic wind to be way too small a factor, by three orders of magnitude." Dr. Rusek has formed a technological company, Swift

Enterprises, to continue this research and bring it to the level that is "presentable to the mainstream physics community."

Along these lines, Jean-Louis Naudin shows on his extensive web site, not only how to build a lifter, but also several photos of research into the ion wind issue. Naudin's team has wrapped test lifters in plastic yet they still produce anti-gravitational effects.

Others may have a clue to the second or even a third force at work. Researcher Fran De Aquino, professor of physics at Maranhao State University in Sao Luis, Brazil, is described in the literature as showing that "bubbles of localized space-time" can exist in variance to the surrounding fields. Anecdotal experience suggests that the lifters may be undergoing such space-time anomalies.

Editor: At this point we need to interrupt the author as he has already completely confused the reader. I would recommend referring to Thomas T. Brown's patent: USA patent #3,187,206, 1965.

<div align="right">

Alexander V. Frolov

</div>

The Hunt for Zero Point states that NASA sought the services of Dr. Eugene Podkletnov, and although their replication research languishes, The Hunt claims that researcher Ning Li, of Huntsville, AL is pursuing this line of research as a private contractor to NASA.

Another Huntsville operation, Transdimensional Technologies, is exploring these multi-faceted phenomena as well, and its extensive web site shows it to be a frequent contractor to NASA, including research into "asymmetrical capacitive propulsion," and capacitor-based devices to test "ion wind" forces. Jeff Cameron, of Transdimensional, is said by Ventura to be "the father of the lifter," having developed them while exploring anomalous torsional effects of high energy lasers. The lasers twisted and at the time it was considered a nuisance. But the unknown forces at work later led Cameron to found Transdimensional, develop lifter technology to a commercial level, and subsequently patent many pieces of related technology. Unfortunately, I have been unable to reach Jeff

Cameron or anyone at Transdimensional for any kind of confirmation.

Nevertheless, how would gravitons be blocked, or gravity shielded?

Dr. Hal Puthoff says there are two ways of looking at it. First, one can look at the issue from a quantum point of view, that there is a particle exchange between the gravitons and something else, and the net effect is anti-gravity. The how's and why's of that are speculative, so Puthoff turns to a classical approach for answers. He prefers looking at "engineering the vacuum." To do that one must first look at the vacuum.

As I understand it we are all in the vacuum, everything is. The "vacuum" is the matrix that contains all matter and all energy. It is the engineering perspective of the zero point energy field, or the *"Field"* as popularized by Lynn McTaggart in her masterpiece The Field. Puthoff shared with me statements from fellow researcher Dr. T. D. Lee that state: "The vacuum is the seat of energetic particle and field fluctuations, and ... is the seat of space-time structure ... that encodes the distribution of matter and energy.... The vacuum is energetic in its own right."

Thus energy can be drawn from the field; and spacecraft can have "vacuum propulsion systems, or propellant-less propulsion," in other words, field effect propulsion.

At any rate, more and more physicists are thinking that the vacuum can give them a whole lotta oomph, enough to propel spacecraft; and when they learn how to corral it, a whole bevy of new phenomena may be encountered, including anti-gravity. This new potpourri of research is being called by many the "new physics." And although his approach is classical, Dr. Hal Puthoff seems to be sensing what's out there waiting to be discovered.

Puthoff's current research as been to explore "the perturbation of atomic or molecular ground states, hypothesized to be equilibrium states involving dynamic radiation/ absorption exchange with the vacuum fluctuations. In this model atoms or molecules ... are expected to undergo energy shifts that would alter the spectroscopic signatures of excitations involving the ground state." Puthoff says he's had no success so far with this approach, but his words remind me of De Aquino's speculation that objects lose mass as they absorb energy. Pull energy from the field around you and you lose weight. Bingo, lift-off. **But how does one pull energy from the field?**

Editor: Some solve this problem by means of the ether density changes, which are performed with the help of vortex longitudinal-wave technologies.

A.V. Frolov

Torsion fields might play a role here according to many, and the literature on anti-gravity is filled with the phrase, "torsional effects." But what exactly is a torsion field? "It has something to do with spin," Nick Cook told me on the phone. "You have a torsion field when you spin something. Add a little electromagnetism and you might have anti-gravity." That's the short-hand version of it and here's a deeper look.

Mike Wright, resident physics expert at BeyondTheOrdinary.Net web stream radio, told me this: "When forces create curvature (such as rotation) in more than two planes, a torsion field results. Not only does the object go around, but it goes around and 'down' or 'up', and the up/down movement is an additional acceleration in that dimension. EM and gravitational fields differ by having a magnitude of force and only one direction of movement.

"A tornado is a structure of air in air. A whirlpool is a structure of water in water. So, because more than two planes are involved, objects can be created from 'nothing'; that is to say that objects can be created from the medium of the environment, such as a tornado from two air masses of differing temperature."

So spin plus movement is the key. Again, Tim Ventura is on the hunt. He demonstrated to me **that spinning magnets will cancel out their magnetic fields sufficiently so that two magnets facing each other with like poles will not push each other away if one of the magnets is rotating**

perpendicular to the force of opposition. It's not anti-gravity, but it gets us closer to the heart of the matter.

Further, Russian physicists have been researching the torsional effects of both subatomic particle spin, and the loss of gravitational mass in planets from the angular momentum of their orbits. Spinning makes something happen, but what? Tornadoes and Mother Nature might have a few clues.

Tornadoes spin, in a sense, although no one is Oklahoma who has spent a night in a storm shelter during an F5 event would describe the tornadoes in the night sky as *spinning*. Nevertheless, tornadoes have anomalous effects that are legendary: blades of grass stuck into mirrors, a piece of straw embedded flawlessly into a tree trunk. How? It seems as if the laws of mass, gravity and inertia are melted as winds swirl at speeds up to 300 mph in an organized vortex pattern. Is this a clue to melting the pull of gravity?

Getting information to this question has not been easy. Many scientists claim not to have even heard of torsion fields, including particle physicists at major US universities. So, again I turn to Nick Cook and The Hunt for Zero Point

Dr. Dan Marckus says that if "you generate a torsion field of sufficient magnitude the theory says you can bend the four dimensions of space around the generator. The more torsion you generate the more space you perturb. When you bend space you also bend time."

Marckus continues, "If you dipped ...one of these whirlpools ... into the zero point energy field, the seething mass of latent energy that existed on an almost undetectable level all around us [in the field would] ... react in an almost magical way by directing that energy."

The torsion field, in effect, is "a pump, a 'coupling' device that could dip into, and then direct, energy out of the zero point energy field." "But," Marckus continues, "the vortex wasn't a three-dimensional phenomena or

even a four-dimensional one. It couldn't be. For a torsion field to be able to interact with gravity and electromagnetism it had to be endowed with attributes that went beyond the three dimensions of left, right, up and down, and the fourth-dimensional time field they inhabited; something that the theorists for convenience sake labeled a fifth dimension-hyperspace."

Cook concluded that the torsion fields "bind with gravity ... to produce a levitation effect - - an antigravity effect," but "it wasn't doing so in the four dimensions of this world, but somewhere else." That somewhere else is hyperspace. **So how do we activate torsion fields and enter hyperspace?**

Dr. Eugene Podkletnov may have a clue.

Podkletnov, the Russian researcher working in Finland, has studied the gravity shielding effects of superconductors. Again, Nick Cook in The Hunt, relays vital information. Cook says Podkletnov claims, "If the superconductors are rotated considerably faster than 5,000 rpm ... the disc experiences so much weight loss that it actually takes off." Thus, torsion field creates levitation. I emailed Dr. Podkletnov to find out more about this issue. He replied: "[A] fast rotating object can, under certain conditions, cause the polarization of the volume that it occupies in space and around it. This polarization causes the gravitational effect as it modifies [the] local gravity field. The vortex of the polarized particles will create a vertical thrust with a certain force and spatial momentum. Some scientists call these polarized particles gravitons. The term graviton is an artificial one and at present we are not sure if it is a wave or a particle and what type of particle. Maybe it is a usual tachyon or a superluminal neutrino (a faster-than-light-particle). Polarization of the media means that the spins of electrons, protons, neutrons and of small subatomic particles that constitute the fabric of space or vacuum would be parallel. Then a kind of gravity well is formed and the objects tend to fall into this well. We observe this picture as an object rising to the sky. Polarization of the media (of space) causes some glow around the object as it acquires additional

energy and because of it, the glow around some objects is observed."

What I understand from Dr. Podkletnov is that gravity is the effect of spin -- the spin of all subjected particles, from the sub-atomic level and up being parallel; thus they are all aligned to fall into the gravity well of earth. And spinning objects, such as his superconducting discs, when influenced additionally by an electromagnetic field, will experience a shift in the spin of the sub-atomic and atomic elements. They will be turned and not be aligned in parallel. Thus, they are able to levitate.

But how to polarize the media and get things spinning? Enter Dr. Marcus Hollingshed, an enigmatic figure allegedly from Cambridge University. Dr. Hollingshed claims to have built a six-ringed toroidal coil antigravity device, which achieved great effect using rotating magnetic fields. In January 2003 he announced on the Internet that he has developed a 160kg vehicle able to lift in excess of 2000kg and that it has both horizontal and vertical drive features. His

device cannot only go up and down and sideways, but it can push things away and pull objects to it.

In addition, the field that the device purportedly generates is capable of being broadened and weakened, or narrowed and amplified in a lensing effect, with the field producing an absolute vacuum of 2.2m spherical diameter. Best of all, when it's cranked up the core of it goes invisible, although the term Dr. Hollingshed uses is that there is a "loss of reflected light." There are no reports of independent confirmation, and Nick Cook says he hasn't been invited to see it, so, he's skeptical.

Where does this leave us? Perhaps Dr. Podkletnov's words sum up our current situation. "Modern theoretical physics cannot give you the direct answer to your questions (levitation, torsion fields, etc.,) and a scientist who would agree to give you the answer cannot be regarded seriously, softly speaking. If you had asked Dr. Einstein if he were an expert on gravity, the answer would be NO. I can repeat his words: No, I am not a magician, yet; I am still learning."

ELECTRICAL LEVITATION

Wayne Macleod, USA
Email: dynamars2100@yahoo.ca, cwleod@shaw.ca

Gravity is the incremental slowing of time as we move closer to its source. If we imagine panes of glass stacked on top each other, one pane slightly denser than the one immediately above, a ray of light coming from above will constantly refract in a curved beam downward as it enters the stack. The same is true of a ray of light entering a gravity field. The analogy is not too far fetched because refraction is caused by a slowing of light in the denser medium. Of course, gravity affects material objects as well as light, but this is explained by every object traveling on a 'world line' in

spacetime. We can use light as in the glass example because light is its own world line.

Why the world lines of objects take the paths they do can best be understood by compressing our normal 3 dimensional space into 2 dimensions, length and height only. When we throw a stone into the air it rises and falls in a parabolic arc in these two space dimensions. That path in space is a complete mystery until we consider another dimension, time, a dimension we can imagine measured at a right angle to the plane of the 2 space

energy and because of it, the glow around some objects is observed."

What I understand from Dr. Podkletnov is that gravity is the effect of spin -- the spin of all subjected particles, from the sub-atomic level and up being parallel; thus they are all aligned to fall into the gravity well of earth. And spinning objects, such as his superconducting discs, when influenced additionally by an electromagnetic field, will experience a shift in the spin of the sub-atomic and atomic elements. They will be turned and not be aligned in parallel. Thus, they are able to levitate.

But how to polarize the media and get things spinning? Enter Dr. Marcus Hollingshed, an enigmatic figure allegedly from Cambridge University. Dr. Hollingshed claims to have built a six-ringed toroidal coil antigravity device, which achieved great effect using rotating magnetic fields. In January 2003 he announced on the Internet that he has developed a 160kg vehicle able to lift in excess of 2000kg and that it has both horizontal and vertical drive features. His

device cannot only go up and down and sideways, but it can push things away and pull objects to it.

In addition, the field that the device purportedly generates is capable of being broadened and weakened, or narrowed and amplified in a lensing effect, with the field producing an absolute vacuum of 2.2m spherical diameter. Best of all, when it's cranked up the core of it goes invisible, although the term Dr. Hollingshed uses is that there is a "loss of reflected light." There are no reports of independent confirmation, and Nick Cook says he hasn't been invited to see it, so, he's skeptical.

Where does this leave us? Perhaps Dr. Podkletnov's words sum up our current situation. "Modern theoretical physics cannot give you the direct answer to your questions (levitation, torsion fields, etc.,) and a scientist who would agree to give you the answer cannot be regarded seriously, softly speaking. If you had asked Dr. Einstein if he were an expert on gravity, the answer would be NO. I can repeat his words: No, I am not a magician, yet; I am still learning."

ELECTRICAL LEVITATION

Wayne Macleod, USA
Email: dynamars2100@yahoo.ca, cwleod@shaw.ca

Gravity is the incremental slowing of time as we move closer to its source. If we imagine panes of glass stacked on top each other, one pane slightly denser than the one immediately above, a ray of light coming from above will constantly refract in a curved beam downward as it enters the stack. The same is true of a ray of light entering a gravity field. The analogy is not too far fetched because refraction is caused by a slowing of light in the denser medium. Of course, gravity affects material objects as well as light, but this is explained by every object traveling on a 'world line' in

spacetime. We can use light as in the glass example because light is its own world line.

Why the world lines of objects take the paths they do can best be understood by compressing our normal 3 dimensional space into 2 dimensions, length and height only. When we throw a stone into the air it rises and falls in a parabolic arc in these two space dimensions. That path in space is a complete mystery until we consider another dimension, time, a dimension we can imagine measured at a right angle to the plane of the 2 space

dimensions. By multiplying the time of the object in flight by the speed of light, we have a three-dimensional coordinate system, not of space but of spacetime. We can then graph the world line of the object. So why does the object fall? It is because spacetime near massive bodies is curved. A remarkable fact is that the curved world lines of all objects in the same gravity field, whether of a thrown ball or fired bullet, have the same radius of curvature. Hence all objects fall with the same acceleration.

To neutralize gravity we must somehow 'straighten' the world lines of objects traveling in curved spacetime. It would be as if we had in our stack of glass panes a bubble, around which the density of glass became less on approach to the bubble. Then the ray of light, when close to the bubble, would refract opposite to the path it would normally take when traveling thought the rest of the glass. Similarly, if we could manufacture a 'time bubble' in a gravity field opposite to the time slowing known as gravity, we would have any object embedded in the time bubble isolated from that gravity field.

The Electrical Levitation theory can best be understood by first considering an analogy. Let us imagine a wheel spinning on an arm like a child's propeller toy. The arm also rotates, in a direction opposite to the spinning wheel. We consider the rate of spinning of the wheel from the point-of-view of two observers, one observer stationary on the ground, the other observer rotating with the arm. Obviously the two observers will not see the same rate of spinning on the wheel. Because the arm is rotating opposite the spin of the wheel, its rotation must be subtracted from the rate of wheel spin as seen by the stationary ground observer. This is not true of the observer rotating with the arm, who will see the spin of the wheel as if there were no arm rotation.

The concept is easier to envision with linear motion, such as of a man throwing a ball on a moving train. The velocity of the ball seen by the pitcher on the train will not be the same as its velocity seen by a stationary observer on the ground. As the stationary observer sees it, that velocity will have the train's velocity

subtracted from it if thrown against the train's velocity. It is the same with rotary motion: the velocity of the wheel for the stationary observer is slower because the arm's rotation is subtracted from it.

But suppose the wheel rotation is *the same* for the two observers! Something must be different between them, and that is time. As explained by Special Relativity for linear motion, time is not a universal constant; it differs between observers depending on their relative motion. The property of nature that *is* constant, that produces this relative time difference, is the speed of light. So we must look for a similar constant in nature for a relative time difference between observers in our rotary example. We have one in electron angular momentum, known as electron "spin," $h/4\pi = 5.28 \times 10^{-35}$ kg-m^2/sec, where h is Planck's constant. Like the speed of light, this quantity is constant for all observers, whether the observer is on a rotating system or stationary on the ground. Here is the tool for producing our time 'bubble'.

Let us now imagine a series of concentric rings, all rotating in the same plane and in the same direction. Electric current is pushed through these rings in the same direction as the ring rotation. (Current here is considered the flow of electrons, not conventional positive current.) The rotating rings are sandwiched between two magnetic plates, the function of which is to maintain the angular momentum of the current electrons oriented properly with ring rotation.

Analogous to the above example, each electron takes the place of the spinning wheel and the rotating arm is replaced by the rings. Thus, because electron angular momentum is a universal constant, an observer of the electrons in this rotating system will not have the same time as a stationary observer outside it. If each current electron has its "spin" oriented opposite the rotation of the rings, time on the rotating system would run faster than for a stationary ground observer, the same as in empty space relative to the Earth. The rotating system would therefore have the world line of empty space, not that of the

gravity field. Its spacetime would not be curved. Since gravity is a time phenomenon, such a system in a gravity field could not have the behavior of a normal object. This conclusion may seem erroneous considering that ring rotation could never reach relativistically significant velocities, but we have an analogy with magnetism that is caused by a Lorentz contraction of the distance between moving electrons. If we considered the diminutive drift velocity of electrons alone we would never conclude that magnetism was possible, but the effect is *accumulative* over trillions of electrons. The hypothesis here is that the same is possible with the trillions of free electrons oriented with a spinning ring, to produce an accumulative time effect.

We now come to the controversial part of this theory because the above treats electron angular momentum the same as angular momentum of a normal physical object, whereas the electron is a quantum particle and quantum particles have their own realities with bizarre consequences when analogized with our macro universe. For instance, the electron has quantum spin number 1/2, and such a particle would have 720 degrees in one rotation, not 360. Nevertheless, the electron *does possess* di-pole magnetism. It *does behave* as a spinning ball with negative charge. Electrical Levitation is therefore an empirical theory. The property of the electron that gives electron di-pole magnetism cannot be an actual physical rotation, but whatever that quantum property, if it produces di-pole magnetism there is reason to expect it to produce other macro physical phenomena as if it were.

The theoretical finding of General Relativity that time runs slower in a gravitational field was confirmed by the Pound-Rebka experiment in 1959. **It is not that gravity causes time slowing, gravity *is* time slowing.** Since time and energy are reciprocal, more time on our rotating ring system would mean less energy seen by an observer in that frame of reference than seen by a stationary observer on the ground, the opposite of the red shift of a gravity field. This

energy difference must equal the energy of the mass in a gravity field that is to be levitated, its energy of weight, and lost. Experimenters should therefore be aware that their device might radiate. But this is not a free energy machine. The energy of levitation comes from its magnetic field, and the electron magnetic moment energy turns out to be $V_e = mc^2$ divided by the electrical current, m is the mass to be levitated and c is the speed of light. This is an enormous amount, but becomes practical if enough electrical current can be sent through the rings. That means the electrical resistance of the ring material must be very low. For copper it is not. No material currently exists with sufficiently low electrical resistance at room temperatures, but **superconducting materials** exist that at cryogenic temperatures experience a dramatic loss of electrical resistance.

An experimental device can therefore be envisioned using a superconducting disc substituting for the electric rings. The disc would serve as a conductor for an electric current and would therefore need to be sliced along one radius with an insulator placed in the notch. Both edges of the notch would be connected to a power source by brushes rotating with the disc. With a counterclockwise disc rotation as seen from the top, to have clockwise electron "spin" the magnetic field between the plates would have to be up. Only the moving free electrons of the current will be available for any time alteration effect. These will also **produce a magnetic field, which it is reasonable to assume would be of the same time alteration effect as the electrons, thus producing the required alternate time "bubble".**

The resources required for an experiment using superconducting material at cryogenic temperatures are beyond this writer's means and an experiment has not been attempted, but an experiment at the Tampere University, Finland, 1992, using a superconducting disc suggests that gravity shielding is possible. Owing to the immense advantages gravitational shielding would give to the present interest in space exploration, effort toward its development would be logical. This essay may offer clues on how to begin.

Editor: I find the article by Wane McLeod quite interesting as his approach is very similar to the idea I first presented in my report at the "Space, Time and Gravitation" Conference which took place in St. Petersburg in 1998. The report was included into The Proceedings of the Conference, Part I, 1999. Before that the brief version of the article was published in English in the 'ELECTRIC SPACECRAFT' magazine, Leicester, North Carolina 28748 USA, Issue 27, 1997 p.30-31.

I managed to demonstrate that the ideas of Thomas T. Brown, especially his USA patent # 3,187,206 of 1965, are something more than just the force asymmetry in the electric capacitor. According to the concept presented in my report, by creating a matter property gradient (in particular, the dielectric permittivity gradient) we actually change the curvature of the electric force line in space. Normally, the natural space curvature accounts for the electric field potential decrease with the distance increase from the surface of the charged object. By creating the dielectric permittivity gradient (described by T.T. Brown in his patent of 1965) we change the natural distance potential gradient law. We can both increase and decrease this change and even reverse it. With the dielectric permittivity change square function, the natural space curvature is completely compensated and with more extent it is reversed and can be turned to negative. At that rate, the potential is not decreased but increased with the increase of the distance from the surface of the charged object. This is the essence of my concept that has never been considered before by any author. By creating the gradient described by the quartic function we get the same distance potential gradient law as in the natural conditions only with a different sign!

T.T. Brown, who discovered a force in capacitors with a special dielectric, offered the practical application of this concept.

However, he did not find the source of this force, which, according to my concept, is conditioned by two factors: the corresponding dielectric property gradient function and the elastic properties of the dielectric material, which is of no less significance. Normally, dielectric particles are attracted to the charged surface but when the reversion of the curvature of electric field force lines occurs, they are repulsed from it and we can use this propulsion force. Elastic deformations (including those occurring during the pulsating operation of the field) account for the reaction forces equivalent to the generated propulsion force. Thus, the momentum conservation law is in action, however, the device is still moving.

T.T. Brown also considered other ways of generating a force, such as the material magnetic property gradient. Logically, by analogy with the electric field we can consider the gravity field, which can be "designed" and "reversed" by means of creating a matter with the density gradient. At that rate, the gravity potential must change in accordance with a certain law when the distance from the gravity field source being increased.

We should also note that the local space volume levitation effect with the accelerated or decelerated time rate was first described in my articles "Physical Principles of the Time Machine", NET #3 (6), May-June 2002 and "Practical Application of the Time Rate Control (TRC) Theory", NET #3, November-December 2001.

Our company conducts experimental researches on creating new materials that possess the properties described. We are interested in serious business contacts with companies in the aerospace industry to further discuss eventual cooperation projects in this field, including *co-patenting*.

Alexander V. Frolov

Perpetuum Mobile Not in the Past but at the Present

Vladimir I. Likhachev, Russia
Krasnodarskaya str., 38/20-34, Moscow, 109386

In several issues of the "Nature and man. Light" magazine in 1995-97 my colleague E.Oparin and I wrote on the unscientific character of absolutizing the law of degradation of energy, on the important issue of creating the perpetuum mobile of the second kind utilizing infinitely available *environmental heat energy*. We even send a letter to Yury S. Osipov, the Russian Science academy President, but received no reply. Notwithstanding many official discussions, there are no well-reasoned objections to our arguments or proof on the part of "high" official science, because, in fact, we are right.

I have recently received one more confirmation: bright and feasible data on the negentropy cycle (the cycle with spontaneous reduction of entropy) with a chemically active working substance that will be described later.

After the publication of Victor M. Brodyansky's book "Perpetuum Mobile in the Past and at Present. From Utopia to Science and from Science to Utopia", Second Edition, one can not but return to these issues. More so because the foreword of V.A. Fabricant, member of the USSR Academy of Pedagogical Sciences, claims the law of degradation of energy to be the "law of nature" and supports shamefully the deformation of the monothermists, especially P.K.Oschepkov, by academicians P.Kapitsa, L.Artsimovich and I.Tamm ("Pravda" of November 22, 1959), followed by E. Velikhov, A.Prokhorov and V.Sagdeyev ("Pravda" of June 22, 1987).

After the publication of Brodyansky's book I met the author several times (notably at a special seminar in The Moscow Energy Institute) and expressed my opinion about his book: the book avoids serious discussion of the monothermists, stresses their failures which are quite normal in the initial development of perpetuum mobiles of the second kind.

For example, Brodyansky knew about Tsiolkovsky's discovery. Guay's book "On the Little-Known Hypothesis of Tsiolkovsky" is listed among the First Edition references. But Vladimir Brodyansky avoided analyzing this discovery both "in the past" and "at present". The Second Edition references even list the "Physical Thought in Russia" magazine, issue #1 of 1991, that contained for the fist and only time the modern edition of the "Law of Degrading of Energy" by Tsiolkovsky. "At present" V. Brodyansky knows my analysis of Boltsman's mistakes but he paid no scientific attention to my analysis either.

In Brodyansky's book the description level of chemical reaction cycles is even lower than that of Schpilrine. Schpilrine at least tried to present his arguments but here we see unsupported statements "justified" by the phrase "the detailed discussion would take too much space". Vladimir Brodyansky's analysis of anti-Stokes luminescence (pp.216-219) is also superficial. Dissipative and entropy processes prevail in it. But if there is evidence supporting higher frequency quanta than the frequency of radiating flux, **it is the evidence of negative entropy**. Vladimir Brodyansky not only is familiar with it and also shows it by the example of investigating the Sun and the Earth (p.247).

Vladimir Brodyansky's analysis of Rank's tube (pp.235-237) displays the same tendency. In the Rank's tube the dissipative processes also prevail. Its effectiveness as a refrigerator is lower than in the traditional schemes.

But one can not deny the existence of negentropy processes in it. It is these processes that "originate" the cold gas flow. And Brodyansky's "origination" on p.236 "The vortex tube in fact divides the coming gas into two fluxes: heated and refrigerated" - is totally false. That can be performed only by "Maxwell's demon" that does not exist in substance.

The refrigerated flux in the Rank's tube is formed by the "Tsiolkovsky's flux" by way of heat transfer "from cold to hot", from the tube center to its circumference by **centrifugal accelerations**. On its basis (to be more exact, on the basis of Finko's tube) the perpetuum mobile of the second kind can be created. And we have this engineering solution. E.Oparin and I made the corresponding patent application for an invention but the Federal Institute of Industrial Property again refused to consider such applications. Here one can see similarity with the causes of re-edition of Vladimir Brodyansky's book. And one need not be a big politician to admit the reality and understand the sources.

Environmental and, especially, anti-nuclear movement is invincibly expanding. Danger to human life and threat of ecological catastrophe are quite real. The Second Edition of Brodyansky's book protects behind scientific arguments those who use Russia as a source of easy money and then flee.

But we like our country - vast and austere. This austerity and space form REAL PEOPLE and support humanity and materialistic humanism of the energetic and talented, not just the rich.

In modern Russia the powerfully spread alcoholism, debauchery and drugs are the instruments of slavery. But the monothermy and development of alternative power engineering will become basis for Russia's revival and unprecedented prosperity.

Russians learn slowly, sometimes, very slowly, even disgracefully slowly. But we will learn. And then no one will stop us. The following tips are meant for those who are ready to risk their efforts and facilities in order to build alternative energy knowledge base: dissipative and negentropy processes are inseparable and very often their mechanism is the same. In our environment the dissipative processes are more effective and hide the negentropy ones. No dissipative process combination can generate the negentropy cycle. Look for examples in Brodyansky's book. To create the negentropy cycle and use the environmental energy at least one negentropy process is required that has effectiveness and negentropy exceeding entropy growth at all levels of the cycle.

News from "IntAlek" Company

William Alek [alekws@intalek.com] has updated the latest and greatest ZPOD system drawings:

hhtp://www.intalek.com/Index/Projects/SmartPAK/Projects/ZPOD/ ZPOD_System05.pdf

This is release 5.0

Here is the latest electrical schematic: http://www.intalek.com/ZPOD/ZPOD_System05.gif

Based upon his "preliminary" tests thus far, he estimates the COP is around 2.0. This estimate is interpreted from the following scope traces:

http://www.intalek.com/ZPOD/in.GIF

Alan Francoeur's Generator
Canada

Alan L Francoeur, Canada
Email: al.f@shaw.ca

This is my writing and development about the Interference disc generator, and the permanent magnet dynamo machine, and other related inventions. I have always been intrigued with electricity and magnetism and aetheric energies starting at a young age. Back in 1980 I wanted to do something to help get my large vehicles better fuel economy. With this goal in mind, I experimented and designed my first heat exchanger vaporizer system to do my part to clean up our cars and trucks, fig. 1, 2, and 3 are two earlier vaporizer units under construction. For more information about this fuel system, please refer to my vaporizer fuel system report. The main body of this writing is referring the permanent magnet dynamo system that has been in the making since 1987, starting after the development of the interference disc generator.

Fig. 1

Fig. 2

Fig. 3

I invented the Interference Disc generator concept while I was employed at Giant Yellowknife Mines NWT from 1983 to early 1986. The idea of using metal blocking plates to shield magnetic fields stirred in my mind while working around heavy electrical mining equipment, and 1000hp and other electric motors with exposed coils that have heavy metal around the outer casing. I did a search at the time and found John Ecklin's work very interesting with his application of the shielding effect. During my off time in Yellowknife, I was experimenting with the interesting effect of producing induction with a stationary coil mounted beside a stationary magnet with a small air gap maintained between the magnet and the coil. During the construction of my first disc machine, I called it the Interference Shielding effect because of the interference the blocking disc does to cause induction, thus the Interference Disc Generator fits the description. The first transformer coils I used to test the interference shielding effect were used from old radios, and the magnets were alnico types. Back in 1986 in Calgary Alberta, a friend Bud Johnson and I constructed the first test disc generator model using alnico magnets, fig. 4, and later ceramic magnets were installed. Months later I designed and began construction of another larger Interference Disc machine with horseshoe shape neodymium 35 grade magnets mounted on the outside, and with the N and S magnetic poles facing toward the coils in the center portion of the machine. The coils and magnets in this larger machine are mounted in reverse of the first Interference Disc generator, fig. 5, 6.
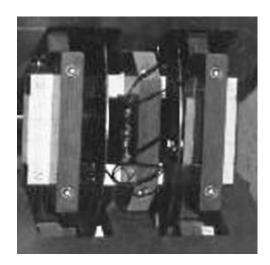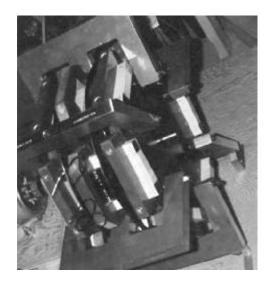
General description of the interference disc generator

The Interference Disc electrical generator is made of a stator (114) consisting of an array of even number parallel mounted bar magnets (112) arranged and supported (114) in a circular fashion equidistant from each other, where the polarity of the magnets (112) are alternating when viewed at either end. Fig. 7

Fig. 4

Fig. 5

Fig. 6
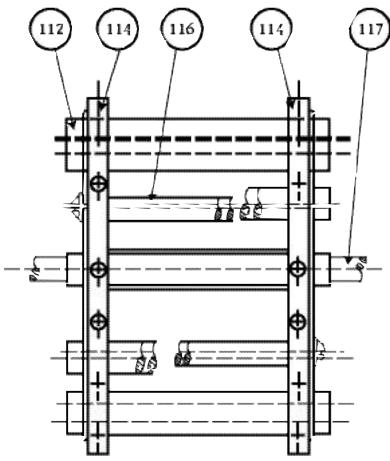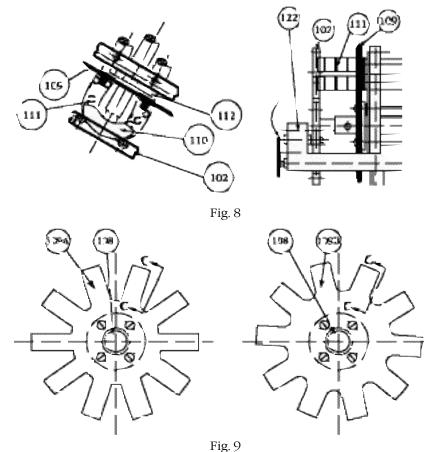
Fig. 7
Magnetic bars assembly (rotor)

Also in the stator fig. 8, (102) there are twice the number of coils (111) as bar magnets (112) wound in pairs on U-shaped cores (110). One half of the coil pairs mounted at one end of the bar magnets (112) in the same circular fashion, each corresponding to and aligned opposite to a pair of bar magnets (112) and separated from it by an air gap. On the other end of this pair of bar magnets (112) there are another set of coils (111) aligned likewise.
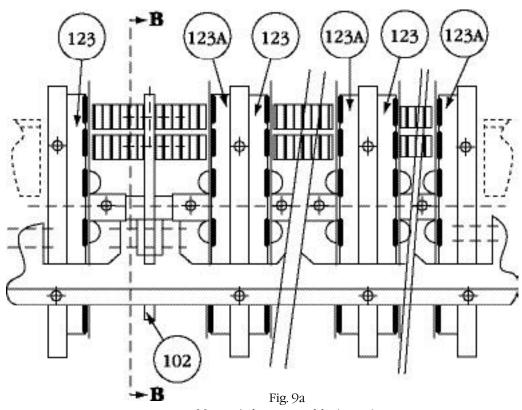
The rotor is made of two magnetically susceptible circular plates (109A or 109B) (such as iron or steel) Fig. 9, centrally mounted on an axle (107) fig. 7, which is in respect to the array of magnets and coils Fig. 9a.

Fig. 8

Fig. 9

The interference discs (109A or 109B) are separated from each other so that they can rotate in the air gaps between the magnets (112) and the coils (111). The interference discs (109A or 109B) have a number of **equidistant opening, either more or less in number than the number of the bar magnets (112)**.

The arrangement and size of the openings are such that when the discs (109A or 109B) are rotated by an outside motive force, they open the magnetic field between adjacent bar magnets (112), and the opposing coils (111) at both ends of the stator (114) simultaneously. Hence inducing an alternating electric current in the stationary coils (111) fig. 10.

By opening and closing the magnetic influx to the core (110) of the coils (111), an alternating current will be generated in the coils

Fig. 9a
Magnetic bars assembly (stator)
Option II: multable magnetic coil-disk assembly
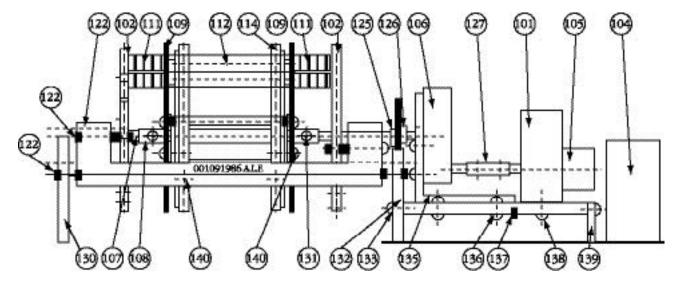
Fig. 10

(111) in a retro-order to the rotational direction of the interference discs (109A or 109B). Depending on the number of magnet-coil assemblies three phase AC current can be obtained. The regulation and attenuation of these currents can be achieved by known electric engineering methods (Fig. 10).

The efficiency of the unit would vary greatly depending on the speed of rotation, the width of the air gap, the strength of the magnets, and the materials used to construct the coils. I used nickel base amorphous metglass in the coils in both the smaller and larger machines, which as a result, shows greater efficiency as compared to conventional core laminates. Less energy is needed to spin the balanced disc rotor while causing a larger moving magnetic field to cause induction in the stationary coils. With this effect, it is easy to visualize the advantages this design has over conventional generators and motors. New testing of the coils will be conducted after the machine goes through all the upgrades to eliminate the problems with the warping interference discs.

The Interference Discs Generator described in this document **has the potential to produce more than unity effects** by easy turning of a magnetically balanced (non-warping) interference disc. Optimizing the device with closer tolerances and correctly selected materials and incorporating internal magnetic balancing, will add to the success

and improved performance of this unique generator design.

Improvements can be made with this design while the operating principal remains the same. Looking at the photographs included you will see the 1st proof of concept generator frame is constructed mainly from aluminum, this metal was used only because it was inexpensive material and easy to work with fig. 11. Non magnetic and non-conductive materials should be used to construct the generator frame supports to eliminate the eddy current losses. All of the nuts and bolts used to hold the disc generators together worked well for making the test machines capable to have adjustable air gaps, however, they can all be eliminated with design changes that preset the gaps and tolerances to optimize the conditions of the interference disc effect.
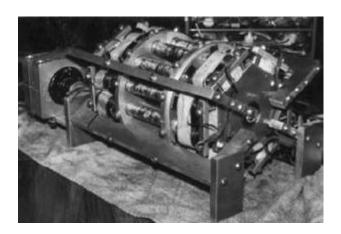
Fig. 11

Many improvements were adopted in the next larger #2 version of the Interference Disc generator fig. 12. Phanolic materials (non conductive and non magnetic) were used in the frame supporting the magnets and the coils, thus eliminating eddy current losses within the frame support. Large aluminum E bars were used to support the magnet frame support and the coil frame support with no noticeable eddy current losses. The aluminum used is positioned further away from the coils and magnets in the larger generator so as not to be affected by the magnets. Larger more powerful neodymium magnets and I shaped transformer coils were installed and tested in the larger machine which showed an increase in output power over the 1st machine fig. 13. Using more powerful neodymium magnets in this larger disc machine created some problems with the interference discs. Not only did they warp the discs they caused them to vibrate and chatter causing the fins to hit the magnets and the coils. I increased the air gap to over half an inch and moved the disc further away from the magnets to prevent damage. The effect was a reduction of magnetic flux reaching the coils that reduced the power output. The discs must be constructed much stronger and rigid if using neodymium magnet grade 35 or greater, then the air gap can be closed so more magnetic flux will reach the coils allowing for a greater electrical output.

The wiring of the coils circuit can be constructed by known engineering methods to achieve AC or DC power, and like any conventional transformer, wind the coils with heavy wire for more amps and more turns for more volts. The coils are stationary in this machine which makes it easy to harness AC power directly from the coils without brushes. All coils that are in phase can be wired in series or
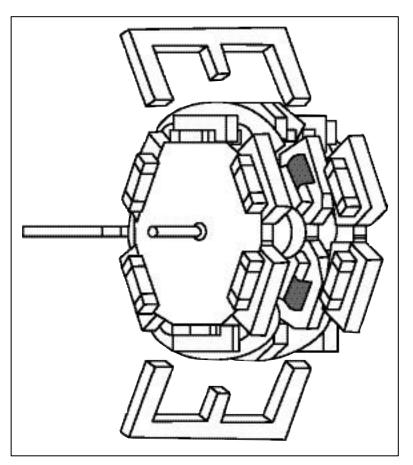
Fig. 12
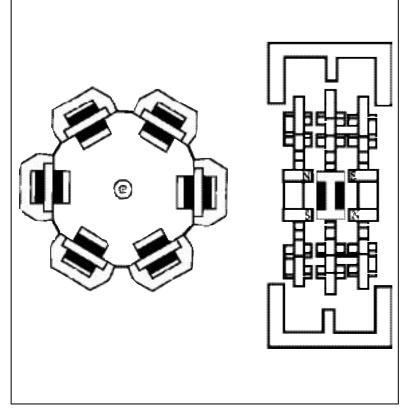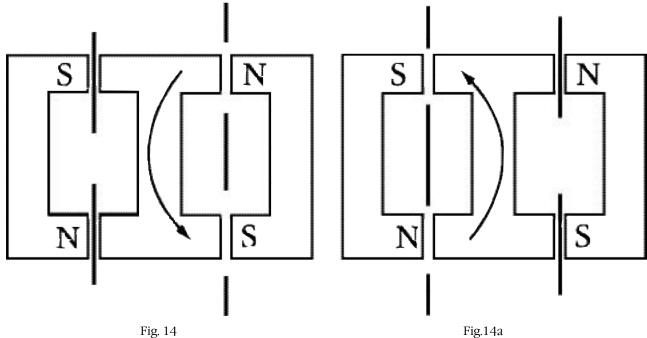
Fig. 13

parallel, the number of the blocking plates on the interference disc determines the phasing of the coils.

The diagram in fig. 14, 14a shows the path of the magnetic flux movement in relation to the position of the blocking plates of the interference disc. The magnetic field in the core/coil is switching polarity as the interference disc fins alternately moves in and out of the air gaps on each side of the coil. As you can see, depending on the position of the disc, positive and negative induction takes place for AC output of the coils. John Ecklin has achieved this effect using rotating blocking plates. I have achieved the same effect using balanced rotating interference discs with multiple stacks of isolated coils and poles mounted in a circle equal distance from each other.

Fig. 14   Fig.14a

The effect I reproduced with Gary Wesley's permanent magnet motor is related to the Interference Disc generator in the fact that blocking plates are used to shield the magnetic field, only we differ on methods to balance the blocking shields. Gary Wesley used springs to carefully balance the blocking plate, and I used a different number of interference fins working with the magnets to balance the blocking plates. The magnets in my Interference Disc machine become the springs.

More photos of both Interference Disc machines are shown in fig.15, 15a and 15b below.
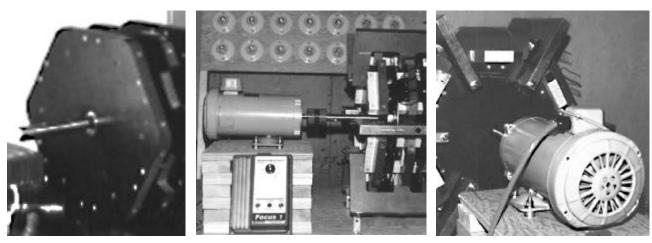
Fig. 15
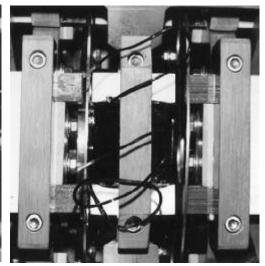
Fig. 15a
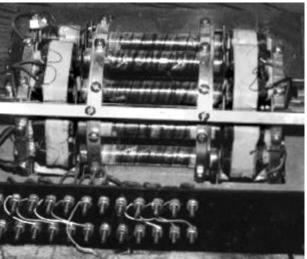
Fig. 15b

Closing comments on the disc generator

In closing this discussion of the Interference disc generator, I would like to go over and point out some of the concepts that I incorporated into the design of my permanent magnet dynamo.

As I made further progress and completed the later stages of the Interference disc generator, it became clear to me to use certain concepts of the machine and incorporate them into the design of my multiphase permanent magnet dynamo. Some of these concepts are explained here.

I have constructed several interference discs that have a different number of blocking shields, some with 10 blocking fins and some with 11 blocking fins and others with 12 blocking fins. They are all interchangeable on the machine to change the phase relations between all the isolated coils. The 12 finned disc will produce a single-phase dynamo with all the coils in phase, and the 10 finned disc on the machine will produce a three phase dynamo. One phase represents four groups of isolated coils, and the second phase represent the other four coils, and the four coils left are the third phase, for a total of twelve coils. All just by changing the number of fins on the interference disc and or adding more layers. Using 12 magnet poles and the 10 or 11 interference fins on the disc, the rotor discs becomes magnetically balanced and easy to rotate in spite of the load on the coils. The 12 finned disc has a larger holding force because

of the same number of fins as magnetic poles. However, it can be reduced to almost nil by adding more layers of interference disc and balance them against each other. Many in phase coils can then be added in series or in parallel to build your power levels to any desired potential.

Both machines have stationary coils, and the disc generator has 12 magnetic poles (6N and 6S), and the permanent magnet dynamo also has 12 magnetic poles (6N and 6S). The disc generator uses 10 or more fins on the interference shielding plate per rotor, and the permanent magnet dynamo has 10 or more coils around each rotor. There is the same number of interference blocking plates as there are induction coils on each of the two difference machines and the number of blocking fins and or coils are interchangeable. The back emf effects are different on both machines, the Interference disc generator demonstrates easy turning of the discs while the stationary coils are loaded, and when producing alternating current the permanent magnet dynamo rotor slows down when a load is placed on the stationary coils. Both machines produce AC power out of the coils and the Interference Disc generator has a closed magnetic circuit through the coils, and the permanent magnet dynamo has open magnetic circuit through the coils.

The Permanent Magnet Dynamo

I would like to begin this topic at this point by describing my permanent magnet dynamo machine.

I designed this machine to be completely interchangeable into many different motor generator combinations. These combinations involve different number of magnetic poles and different number of interchangeable coil poles in the same machine, two versions are possible, one with isolated coils and another with the coils that share a common core fig. 16.

We can change the magnetically balancing effect (*holding force*) by changing the number of coil poles or (*interference disc fins*) in relation to the magnetic poles. This turns the machine into a multipurpose, multiphase, variable output, and variable frequency ac dc permanent magnet motor generator system. I first designed this unique multi purpose dynamo in 1987 after I built my third Interference Disc generator.
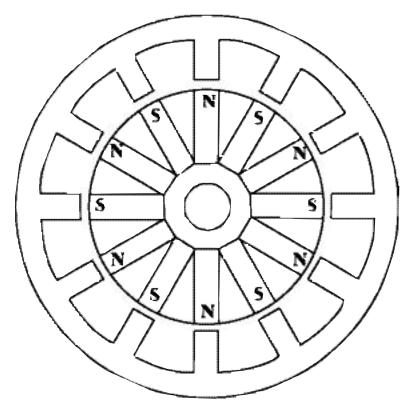
Fig. 16

Dynamo description:

Rotor:

It is well known that a bar magnet has its magnetic field concentrated at the N and S pole ends, and the half way line between the poles of a magnet is the neutral zone, this is the region where the magnetic field is canceled or neutralized. The *ferrous* keeper ring I designed for this rotor is mounted near the axle and it has machined flat decks so the magnets attach flush to the deck of the

Fig. 17

machined inner keeper ring which makes the active iron the region of the middle of the magnetic field (the neutral zone). Another way to view this is to imagine two 3" long bar magnets attached together, you now have a 6" long magnet. Bend this magnet in half and install iron at the U and it now becomes a horseshoe magnet with two 3" long pole ends. It's a powerful rotor design in the fact that each of the 3" long bar magnetic poles has the field strength of a 6" long bar magnet. More poles on the rotor will allow for higher frequency ac generation at lower rpms, twelve magnetic poles on each rotor is shown in fig. 18, 19.

Fig. 18

keeper ring. Because of this feature, flux leakage is reduced at the keeper ring and the magnetic field concentrates at the rotor poles. With the poles of the magnet positioned near the axle and attached to the keeper ring in the rotor, the magnetic field that was there is now forced to add magnetic field density to the outer magnetic poles on the rotor rim. The density of the magnetic field at the poles is now greatly increased which makes a very powerful small size rotor. The *ferrous* inner keeper ring (*active iron*) that is installed inside this rotor design, is also the *neutral zone* of the magnetic field when viewing all the combined permanent magnets in the rotor. Shown is a cut away view diagram of the rotor, fig. 17.

I utilize rare earth rectangular shape neodymium grade 35 bar magnets with the dimensions of 3" long and 1"x1" on the end poles. There are 12 bar magnets mounted 30 degrees apart in NSNS configuration, and the bar magnets are attached to a precision

Fig. 19

The drawing in fig. 20 and picture in fig. 21, shows twelve magnet poles in each rotor in relation to the position of the coils. Ten *amorphous* cores are shown mounted around each of three rotors before they were wound with magnet wire fig. 21. The machine I have constructed houses a total of three rotors side

by side that are mounted 10 degrees apart in relation to their *magnetic poles*, each rotor has twelve magnets installed for a total of 36 magnetic poles shown in fig. 20. This dynamo concept can be constructed to any size with unlimited numbers of rotors and coil combinations to fit any power requirements.
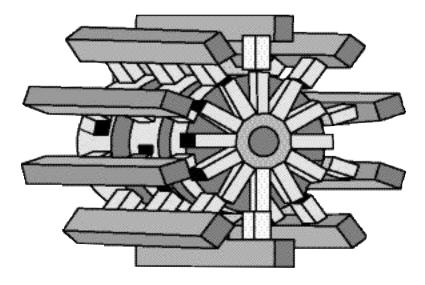
Fig. 20

Fig. 21

It is well known that a magnet exerts a force of attraction to iron bringing them closer together, after they have come together, they are in their **static position**. A force must be exerted to either the magnet or the iron in order to pull the magnet and the iron apart, removing them from their static position. The term **static position** is used to describe the point

when the magnet and the iron bar are at their nearest point.

As in the Interference Disc Generator, this Permanent Magnet Dynamo I am describing also uses an internal magnetic balancing effect which reduces startup torque on the rotor.

In this system, one set of magnets is in their static position in relation to the coils, such as the impulse coils. Another set of magnets on one side of the rotor is not in the static position, and there is another set of magnets that is not in its static position on the opposite side. One side is half in to the coils, and the other side is half out the coils, allowing the rotor to have minimal start up torque in turning the rotor. The magnets function in two jobs, the first with its velocity is to cause induction into the transformer coils producing ac power.

The second function, is the opposite pair magnetic fields on the rotor balancing each magnet out of their static position in relation to the coil positions at any given time, they cancel their holding force which puts the rotor at equilibrium. This reduces the amount of start up energy required to rotate the rotor resulting in higher efficiency. It allows the rotor and or multiple rotors to turn easily and efficiently despite the inherent powerful holding force of the rare earth neodymium magnets. With the three rotor machine configuration, I have connected 6 impulse coils in three phase to function as the motor impulse circuits with a hall effect brushless motor controller fig. 22.

Star wound three phase motor impulse coils.

Fig. 23

Fig. 22
Star wound
three phase motor impulse coils

Two more pictures of the one rotor dynamo option are shown with a 1hp dc motor turning the rotor with an 800 watt load on the coils, six 100 watt AC light bulbs, and two 100 watt 12 volt DC light bulbs, Fig. 25, 25a.

Fig. 24

Fig. 25

Fig. 25a
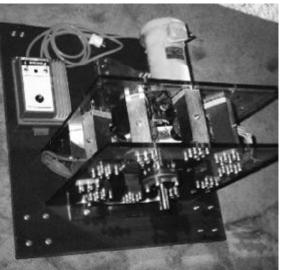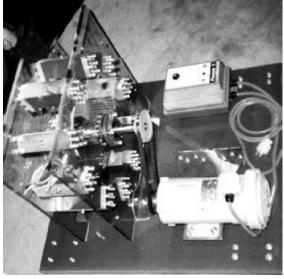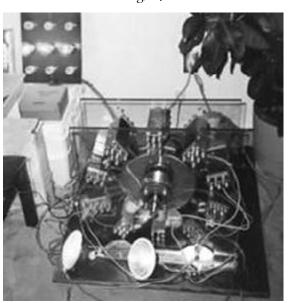
The efficiencies of this dynamo are so far inconclusive with regards to producing an endless self running machine. Our research is continuing to improve the efficiency by eliminating all conventional type ac and dc motors from this dynamo, and incorporating high voltage dc impulses of very short time duration's as Ed Gray did with his technology years ago. However, a description of my early self running attempts is included near the end of this dynamo report. These tests have manifested an abundance of heat in the 24 volt dc drive motor.

Another picture of the three-rotor dynamo configuration is shown with 12 regenerating ac to dc coils, and with the motor impulse coils removed fig. 26.
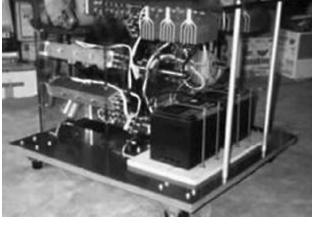
Fig. 26

Fig. 26a

Another close up of the regenerating coils and three phase motor impulse coils is shown on the dynamo fig. 27.

Fig. 27

Tests to produce an abundance of heat

I have testing the machine so as the output coils are connected to regenerate a 12 volt battery as the motor is turning the rotors. I used a bran new conventional permanent magnet 1/4 hp 24 volt dc motor that is running on 12 volts to turn the 110 pound 3 balanced rotors, and or the 35 pound 1 balanced rotor version.

The regenerating output coils produce AC to DC power with no noticeable ripple on the scope. The generated direct current from the coils is connected to go back into the battery, in which the motor uses to produce the torque needed to rotate the rotor. As this happens, the regenerated dc power from the coils is again going back into the battery first, and then to the motor. The result is that the battery supplies less power to the motor when the regenerating DC current is going into the battery. The motor takes on a load from two sources, one is from free wheeling the rotor with out loading or drawing current from the coils, and the other is the load induced on the motor when the coils are loaded to produce current.

The dc permanent magnet motor has shown that during one of many switch mode tests, it consumes 15 amps at 12 volts from the battery while a chosen number of regenerating coils supply ? the amount of current going back to the battery. The battery supplies 50% of the amps and the regenerating coils supply the other 50% amps. This effect can be changed depending on how many open isolated regenerating banks of coils are activated and loaded.

This test shows a 15 amp draw the motor while it is turning the rotors under load while regenerating current from the coils. It may be they balance each other and both battery and coils supply 7.5 amps each that make the total 15 amps draw on the motor. This accounts for the 15 amps total load that is shown on the dc drive motor. It produces an excessively large amount of heat in the dc motor that is useable output energy. On a larger scale the heat generated in a given motor can be enormous. More accurate measurements are needed to determine the true energy in verses energy out.

However, this electric heat pump effect can be altered to produce more or less heat depending on the size and type of the drive motor, and the amount of regenerating coils that are placed under load. Cooling tubes wound around the motor with water flowing through them is a way to pull the heat out for useful applications. Hot water from the drive motor and electric power from the coils at the same time.

After running the machine, the amorphous regenerating coils remain cool to the touch where as the conventional dc motor gets very hot with higher amps going through it. The machine also has a longer running time when the coils are regenerating the battery, as compared to running an outside equal load with the same amp draw, in that case the battery drains much faster.

This sheds light with the observation of high heat build up in the motor side (less efficient side) of the circuit while being cooler on the generator side (amorphous side) of the circuit. After hours of run time the battery begins to drain, when this happens, the battery begins to show tangible temperature changes from one side of the battery to the other. The whole negative side of the battery remains cool to the touch (temperature drop), while the whole positive side of the battery gets warmer to the touch (temperature rise). The effect is repeatable and only happens when the regenerating coils are connected to charge the battery as it is running. It may be approximately 20 degrees difference in temperature, depending on how many regenerating coils are activated sending its current to the battery. There must be exothermic reactions and endothermic reactions going on inside the battery motor generator combination that is causing this temperature difference. The load and heat generated can be changed the on the motor from the flick of a switch that activates and loads the output coils, which in turn dumps it's energy back into the battery pack or outside load. The efficiency ratio of the machine changes depending on how many and which banks of regenerating coils are activated, which again also effects the temperature difference manifesting on each side of the battery, motor, and amorphous coils.

Other tests

An Automotion dc brushless 3 phase motor controller with hall sensors was used to test the machine in fig. 26a. Tests have shown the 1hp dc motor and the three phase brushless dc motor controller will not be the answer to closing the loop on this motor generator machine. The brushless controller has a 50% duty cycle which will not manifest the electro radiant effect, and it also has a constant draw on the battery as a regular dc motor does. It is much less efficient than using very fast and short unidirectional dc impulses in the motor impulse coils to kick the rotor around. This brings the subject of Nikola Tesla's magnifying transmitter and Ed Gray's radiant energy impulse motors to light, and a possibly answer to closing the loop for a real auto-rotating machine.

Before I go further with this, I want to point out the many phase possibilities this dynamo has. If you look at the coil arrangements in the 10 coil machine, you can clearly see the coils that are in phase with each other. When a second and third rotor is installed with all the coils attached, one pair of coils on the first rotor is in phase with another pair of coils on the second rotor, and another pair of coils is in phase on the third rotor. With the ten coil to twelve magnet pole rotor assembly, the machine has five phases of isolated banks of coils. If twelve coil mounting bars are attached around the three rotors, and the three rotors are spiraled off set by 10 degrees, you will have a powerful three phase dynamo. If the rotors are not off set by 10 degrees and are lined up in phase with each other, all the coils on the machine will be in phase for a powerful single phase dynamo. The volts and or amperage can be tailored for an application by the winding of the transformer coils, and the machine produces 60hz at 600 rpm. This dynamo machine concept is also interchangeable into many other motor generator combinations, and sizes, and any volts or amps requirements, it all depends on the needs of the end user.

> *Cooling tubes wound around the motor with water flowing through them is a way to pull the heat out for useful applications. Hot water from the drive motor and electric power from the coils at the same time.*

It is possible to have super efficiencies with this system using unidirectional hv dc impulses of very short duration's at the make brake contact at the closure of the switch.

I have acquired two of Ed Gray's radiant energy impulse motors #4 and #5 to revive an almost lost technology. I am proposing to combine a special permanent magnet dynamo with less back EMF that is tailored to produce 5kv dc under 2000rpm. This dynamo will energize a 5kv dc capacitor bank and replace Gray's 12 volt to 5kv dc converter. The energized capacitor bank will discharge through the conversion tubes in the very same manner as in Gray's original circuit, only the capacitors will get energized from the high voltage dc dynamo instead of from a battery through an inverter. This version of a high voltage dc dynamo will be connected to and turned by Ed Gray's EMA motor, a starter motor will disengage after it begins running.

There are three banks of high voltage coils that are connected 120 degrees out of phase from each other, each bank represents 12 - 100 watt coils for a total of 1200 watts per phase. All isolated coils in each phase are wired in series to produce the high voltage dc potential to energize the capacitor bank. The isolated capacitor bank will discharge their potential through its conversion tubes in 120 degree increments each time the impulse coils are at their closes point toward each other. One isolated capacitor bank will discharge through the conversion tube with it disconnected from the dc dynamo circuit. The second isolated capacitor is at this point beginning to receive its charge from the dc dynamo, while the third capacitor phase is fully energized just before the switching circuit disconnects it from the dc dynamo for it discharge phase. This fully aligns all the isolated 3 coil phases in this permanent magnet dynamo system to the 120 degree three phase radiant energy impulse system of Ed Gray's EMA motor #5.

The plan is to eliminate all the batteries and converter and use a rotating high voltage dc dynamo in its place. Nikola Tesla used high voltage dc dynamos with capacitors as part of his magnifying transmitter to produce radiant electricity. So it seems logical to do the same thing, merging Ed Gray's radiant energy motor and our version of a high voltage dc permanent magnet dynamo. Could it regenerate a car, or power a home, and or a factory?

Shown below are pictures of Ed Gray's motors in fig 28, 29.

Fig. 28

Fig. 30
Bud Johnson
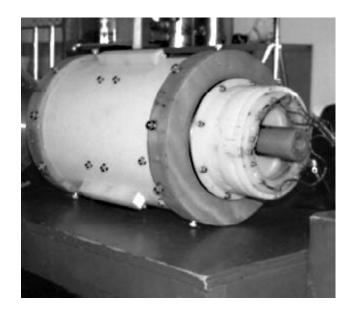
Fig. 29

I would like to acknowledge two friends of mine who have helped make the Interference Disc machine possible, Bud Johnson 1986 shown in fig. 30 and the late Dr. Carl Reich shown 1987 in fig. 31. I would also like to acknowledge Wilbert Griffith and Brian & Rose Langan for their contribution in helping us make these projects possible, and there are others who wish to remain anonymous. Bud Johnson also an inventor, was one of the first people who I met after relocating to Alberta from the NWT, he made arrangements for us to construct the first disc machine in a machine shop.

Fig.31
Dr. Carl Reich

Dr. Carl Reich was a pioneer in the alternate medical field and he published a book along with Robert R. Barefoot called "The Calcium Factor", copyright 1992. Through Carl's dedication and hard work with alternate health and energy, Dr. Carl Reich contributions have also helped made the Interference Disc machine and our Permanent Magnet Dynamo possible.

I also would like to thank my wife Jan Francoeur for being part of making this research possible, she has spent countless hours to prepare this report and assist in the reconstruction of these machines.
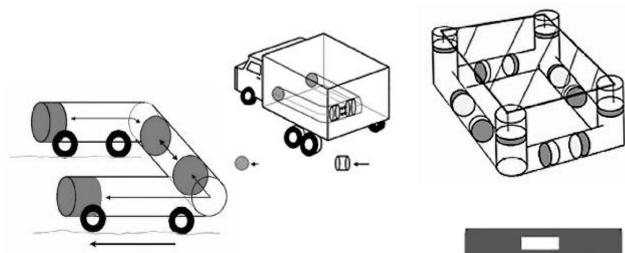
The test results and hypothesis I have written are not complete, and the research and development of the described magnetic energy machines is on going, and as such, the potential and performance and true efficiencies of these machines are still yet to be determined. This author knows that the aether is real and free energy systems are possible, and I will continue to work until I have completed the integration of Ed Gray's radiant energy motors with our larger version dc dynamo machine. When this happens, a new round of testing will begin with our attempts to run the two machines together in closed loop regenerating mode.

I hope I explained these energy machines in a way that you all can understand, and more information will be released as progress is made. *You may find this information useful with your quest to be energy independent. However, if you profit from any of my ideas I have described in this writing, then in all fairness, please remember to reward the inventor so research and development can continue.*
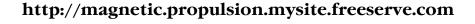
This is my gift to humanity.
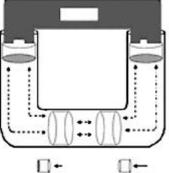
Interesting Information

New Propulsion Letter
from Paul Toomer <jorjencar@leeds322.fsnet.co.uk>

Please take a look at this new web site on how to challenge Newton's third law of motion at

http://magnetic.propulsion.mysite.freeserve.com

A NEW PARADIGM FOR TIME
EVIDENCE FROM EMPIRICAL AND ESOTERIC SOURCES

Donald Reed, USA
1032 Borden Road, Depew, NY 14043
Email: torsionpower@yahoo.com

The author of this article presents an experimental approach to the teleportation problem and time pace control and space regularity questions.

Part I of II

ABSTRACT

The following essay seeks to establish awareness, through a far-ranging careful examination of various empirically documented anomalous research results in the field of new energy, the long-suspected evidence provided by associated key legendary secret government project work in the USA and former USSR, maverick new theoretical models in foundational physics for elementary particles/fundamental electromagnetic wave-field structures, as well as remarkably corroborative related information from esoteric (psychically channeled) sources, of the necessity for the development of a new paradigm for mass, energy and especially time. After having been guided through this process, the reader will hopefully be motivated to acknowledge the importance of this imperative for a new understanding of the workings of nature, as well as gain hints for the associated future development of new viable sustainable energy sources and related technologies.

Introduction

When we come to examine the annals of physics over the past century, we find them replete with several competing core theories of the physical world, each attempting to demonstrate a unified conception of space, time, energy and matter. Notable among these, the most successful and formally canonized in academia, are special and general relativity, and quantum theory, the latter of which includes quantum electrodynamics and quantum chromodynamics as recent offshoots.

However, even these fundamental theories have fallen short in achieving this coveted goal, due to many reasons, not the least of which is their failure to account for the anomalous but substantial documented evidence continually presented over the years by new energy research and other related empirical evidence considered outside mainstream science. In this author's opinion, these weaknesses in current physics and its relative ignorance and/or selective omission of the findings of non-orthodox scientific research, stem primarily from an ill-conceived institutionalized conception of **time**, as an immutable linear flow against which everything involving **change** can be measured. This "relational" concept of time treats it as a specific passive property of physical systems and changes happening to them. It is a one-dimensional continuous and homogeneous entity geometrically describing the property of duration. This antiquated relational view of time is abstracted from our unique prejudiced viewpoint as sentient beings whose particular point of waking conscious focus is this camouflage physical reality, which is apprehended through the limitations circumscribed by the physical senses.

Accordingly, modern physics is built on the basis of this relational conception of time. However, the use of this conception has not

so far resulted in resolving all the problems associated with time. Moreover, so far even an essential definition of time has not been formulated in physics, there are only operational definitions indicating different methods of measuring time intervals.

In contrast, the "substantial" conception of time, advanced in this paper, implies that time is an independent phenomenon of nature existing side by side with matter and physical fields, whose active essence can and does affect objects and processes occurring in the universe. Moreover, the following dissertation argues, by positing that active substantial **change** is the basic concept and relational **time** is its derivative, that those objects and processes can also have a reverse action on time.

Accordingly, we will attempt to show, through a wide-ranging examination of new energy research and other information, the necessity for the establishment of a fluidic, elastic, field nature for true active time which is malleable; one in which even the local pace of time, and mass and energy content can be influenced artificially by intelligent technological control, or naturally by conscious intent, or by a combination of these two methods. To help motivate the reader's awareness for this imperative, we will also examine several esoterically-based sources from key selected psychically channeled transcripts. These will be taken from the following sources: unpublished comments by Jane Roberts on an altered state of consciousness[1] (indicated in this manuscript by J.R.), or published transcripts from **The Seth Material** and The **"Unknown" Reality** (indicated in the manuscript by UR)[2], published chronicles from the entity Kryon, channeled by Lee Carroll [3], and concepts from Wilbert Smith's legendary discourse: **The New Science** (NS) [4]. For easier reference, all psychically channeled transcripts will appear in italics, with my additional explanatory comments in regular type within parentheses.

Granted, our unique investigative foray, ranging as it does from the concrete arena of knowledge represented by the cutting edge of visionary science to the intangible arcane realms bordering on the spiritual, will of necessity lack the exacting logic of scientific rigor.

Nevertheless, we hope to provide, through just such a unique eclectic format, the beginnings of a possible fresh understanding of the workings of nature and perhaps ultimately furnish a conceptual basis for extending the structure of current physical theory to compatibly encompass the elements of a unified framework of physics and metaphysics.

As "unscientific" as this proposed venture may appear, especially to the contemporary physicist or theoretician, we unabashedly press on, secure in the belief that the currently perceived "mutually exclusive" bodies of knowledge defined through psychic means and that of orthodox physics are more closely linked than is currently suspected. Indeed, it will be demonstrated that that some of the psychically defined data bears a striking resemblance to the tenets of present empirical knowledge.

New Research

Theories Indicate Necessity for Novel Time Concept

A body of work which postulates a fluid-field substantial nature for time, is the esoterically-based book written by Wilbert Smith in the early sixties, **The New Science**. Here, Smith outlined a unified theory of all physical interaction by positing that an active mass-free field energy he termed the *tempic field* exists, and is the parent field structure out of which our passive relational linear clock time emerges. To be sure, this book and its specific format of exposition has its weaknesses, not the least of which is a writing style which taxes one's comprehension to the limit. All researchers who have attempted to connect Smith's knowledge with the frontiers of current scientific knowledge, new energy research, etc., have been frustrated by his introduction of terms which may or not have the same meaning as the corresponding terms in mathematical science. This practice

causes many passages to appear so vague as to cause total bewilderment on the part of the reader.

> *...the establishment of a fluidic, elastic, field nature for true active time which is malleable; one in which even the local pace of time, and mass and energy content can be influenced artificially by intelligent technological control, or naturally by conscious intent...*

In coming to investigate the source of Smith's theory 25 years ago, I came into contact with Kenneth Killick of Canada. Killick was the individual who served as the original mentor and for a time a colleague of Smith in the mid-1950's. Smith, whose background was in electrical engineering, found it very difficult to accept or understand the philosophical overtones of Killick's thought. Consequently, he resorted to the use of psychic mediums to try to verify the information provided to him by Killick. This is the origin of Smith's association with discarnate entities known to those familiar with his work as "the boys topside". Thus Smith's subsequent writings promote such confusion perhaps because he only obtained a partial understanding of these cosmic ideas, and he opted to writing in a kind of code basically to try to hide his own confusion. Through my own association with Ken, I discovered that The New Science is able to be put into reference with known facts once the spiritual-philosophical elements of Killick's teachings are duly integrated. When this is done, "Wib" Smith's book can teach much and can become a cornerstone to new energy science. Otherwise, it remains at best, a fragmentary enigma.

The work by Smith and Killick is pertinent to the theme of the present paper, since they both showed through experimentation with a special caduceus-wound coil, that so-called relativistic parameters of mass and gravity, energy, and time-flow, can be altered through intelligent artificial control. Adequate delving into some of the elements of these theories will enable us to glean new insight for transforming the current paradigm of time. Further details on Ken's so-called tachion energy theory can be found in this author's earlier expositions on this subject in issues of **Energy Unlimited** (1978-1982)[5].

Smith's main error is in postulating a fundamental "spin" dynamics based upon conventional continuous rotation. As Killick points out, such a concept of spin on the microscopic level, precludes any possibility of true evolutionary change, in the cosmic sense.

Also, as we shall see presently, the continuous spin concept obviates expression by anything in the universe, of its personal moral responsibility. However, with tachion energy theory intact and untrammeled, the impersonal dualistic concept of interaction between two polar entities, such as is expressed not only in ordinary classical Newtonian physics, but its 20th century successors, relativity and quantum theory, is supplanted with the omnipresent workings of a **trinity** at all levels and manifestations of reality.

Indeed, the fundamental tachion field (mass-free) energy has **three** components: two polar opposite entities (a positive "charge" and a negative "charge"), and the ability for these two to be in what is called "static-dynamic balance". The static-dynamic balance completes the trinity.

A simple physical macroscopic manifestation of static-dynamic balance can be seen in two people arm wrestling. As the energy of one participant is brought to bear against that of the other, we will see a vibration or oscillation once a balance of their energies is obtained. As more effort is expended, the vibrations will increase in frequency and decrease in amplitude. At this point we will see a static state relative to the two arms; neither causes loss of arm position of the other. But simultaneously we also have a dynamic situation in the rapid oscillation which

maintains, and is in turn sustained by the muscular energy which produces the static state of the arms. Both states mutually support each other's existence. The two component entities (the arms) resonate together, but without losing their own identity.

The implications of this last statement, missing in current physical theory, is unique to the system of tachion energy. We will see in the following that the dynamic functioning of these sub-atomic tachions is such that by their inherent ability to manipulate space and the time-frame of matter through static-dynamic balance, they do not harm anything else in their environment, nor are they affected (forced to lose their own identity) by the ambient environment. Accordingly, inertial mass is not an inherent component of tachion energy, but is a derivative of certain tachion field modes.

We spoke earlier of tachion "charge". We keep the word in quotes to underscore that this is not to be equated to electrical charge, but merely signifies two polar energy states of the primordial ground-form, out of which all known physical forces come to be manifest. These tachion energy states can be defined in terms of "rotational" motion. Again "rotation" must also be placed in quotes as it

does not signify the common idea of continuous spinning. Such a concept was suggested above in connection with evolutionary progress in its cosmic interpretation.

The tachion-pair could be described as executing a "back-and-forth" ratcheting movement. The tachion-pairs are analogous to the ends of a drum majorette's baton. But unlike the twirling motion of the baton, the tachion-pairs do not demonstrate the classic macroscopic continuous spin motion, but oscillate in a 3-component "clocking" action.

In Fig. 1 we have drawn a circle and have divided it into three 120 degree arcs. The first motion in the tachion cycle is an arc from the 0^0-360^0 location, to the 240 degree position. This movement is stated philosophically as the question, "Can I go?" In the second phase it swings back from the 240 degree position to the 120 degree point, and then returns to the 240 degree position. This graphically represents an analysis of the first question, and can be phrased as the "Let me think" component. Finally, then it proceeds forward another 240 degrees taking it past the 360 degree point to 120 degrees. This last stage is the action motivated from the analysis in stage two, and is entitled, "Yes I can". In this activity it will be observed that all path lengths are 240 degrees.
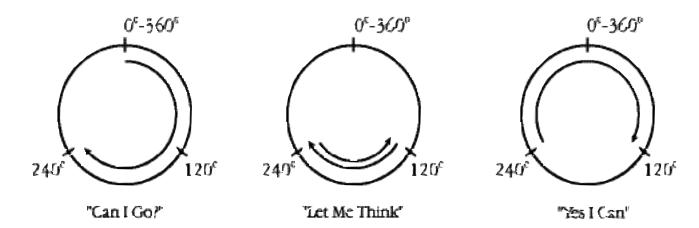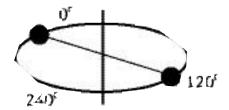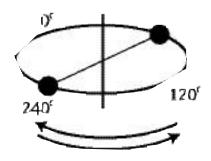
Fig.1
The 3-Component Tachion Movement

However, as representative of true evolutionary progress, the tachion-pair does not remain confined to the plane in its 3-phase cycle. After each "Let me think" stage, the entire pair unit could be considered to advance "upward", perpendicular to its plane of "rotation". The
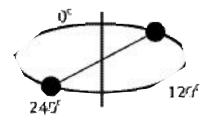
combined motions can be viewed as an elevation up an inclined ramp, screw-fashion (Fig. 2).
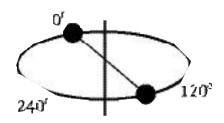
d) 240° Rotation. "Yes, I Can"

c) 120° & 120° Forward. "Let Me Think."

b) 240° Rotation, "Can I Go?"

ε) Initial Position

Fig.2
Tachion "Ratcheting"

Thus, while they clock themselves backwards in the plane, they never go back to where they were originally but only seem to do so from the point of view of an observer in the plane. This entire activity can be visualized as a diametrically opposed pair "rotating" in a plane, but there must still be considered an upward ratcheting movement. They execute the clocking motion simply because they adhere to the three principles of observation, analysis and motivation. A meaningful application of this idea to the structure of physics would eliminate the necessity for a totally impersonal type of interaction governed solely by force. Unlike all current theories of elementary particles, the tachion-pair, by its unique activity, thus expresses a personal moral responsibility. So this elemental energy of the universe never goes where it is not wanted, but only where it will not disturb its immediate environment.

The topological structure of each tachion in the pair is also significant in regards to this "ethical" modus operandi. First, tachions in their primordial state are massless, toroidal shaped fields which always occur in pairs. Like toroids, tachions will singly exhibit three motional degrees of freedom, to wit;

1. rotation around its major axis.

2. inner (P), or outer (N) rotation about its cross-sectional (poloidal) axis.

3. expansion and contraction of the field (each toroid pulsates radially about its cross-sectional axis).

As a pair-unit, the combined motions will give rise to the following possible orientations: two identical (N) rotations; (N) rotation - (P) rotation; two identical (P) rotations (Fig. 3).
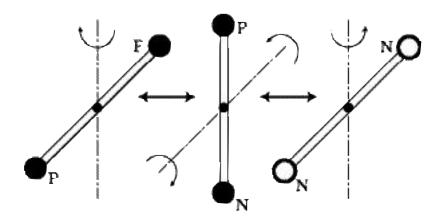
Fig.3
The Three Tachion Modes

The dual (P) or (N) rotations will always lie in the same plane, whereas in the "mixed" rotation mode, the orientations of the tachions will be mutually perpendicular. In the pair unit, the energy will shuttle

back and forth between the tachions by virtue of their harmonious expansion and contraction. The contraction of one pair partner is immediately compensated for by an equal amount of expansion in the other. When one is fully expanded and the other completely contracted, they will reverse roles executing the second portion of the cycle. There will be two points in the clocking cycle where the tachions will share an equal amount of energy ("field equity") stage. In each cycle of a tachion-pair the field equity stage is passed twice, a fact which is significant when topology of the field dynamics is considered (see [5]). Now, looking at the field geometry for the tachion-pair unit at the two field equity stages of the cycle, we observe that the two geometries are not identical but are *mirror images* of one another via a non-orientable field structure. See Fig. 5, which shows the isomorphism between the dynamics on a Moebius band (a non-orientable topological structure) and the tachion pair clocking cycle.

Moebius Cycle: Flags move in direction of arrows in 180° stages

0°		
180°		
360°		
540°		
720°		

Legend: Flag labeled R/L on Moebius corresponds to right/left tachion; (0°-360°). Flag pointing up/down corresponds to expansion/contraction in resp. tachion; (360°-720°) situation is reversed (U/D — cont./exp.); Flag masts pointing in same/opposite directions corresponds to max. field disparity/field equity for tachion-pair.

Fig.5

This suggests the remarkable idea that the space time points that the pairs generate are not, as commonly assumed, identical, static, and bereft of intrinsic character, but exhibit *enantiomorphic* topologies, which by virtue of their mirrored relationship exert upon one another a potential for dynamic interaction. For now we present a second diagram to illustrate the three pair energy modes: N-N, N-P, P-P, as well as one sequence of oscillation of the N-P pair (Fig. 4).

a) Three types of pairs:

N-N (horizontal)   N-P (mixed)   P-P (vertical)

b) Stages in clocking cycle of N - P pair (I thry V)

I ("Can I Go?")

II ("Let me Think")

III ("Yes I Can")

IV (same as II)

V (same as I)

Fig.4

In this figure we note a unique trinity of field operation: two stages of maximum field disparity (I and III) connected by the intermediate condition of field equity (II). Upon postulating the additional requirement that the pair will create a new space-time location every time the field equity state is reached, we see that with each cycle the unit will not return to its original state with respect to the environment, but will advance to new evolutionary states with each pulsation. In accordance with the above comments, the tachion-pair unit "ascends" the evolutionary spiral via this unique action we have termed "clocking" motion. In acccordance with the description in Fig. 4A, in Fig. 4B, stage I represents "Can I go?", stage II represents "Let me think", and stage III represents "Yes I can".

Now, in this regard, the previous analogy of the tachion-pair as likened to the ends of a baton, where the baton rises and falls as it rotates, is quite apt. However, unlike the ends of the baton tachions are not rigidly connected but possess much freedom of movement outlined above. On the other hand, much like the baton ends, they are mutually supportive of each other's activity and requirements, never seeking to overpower, or to be eclipsed by the identity of their partner. In this manner they exhibit personal moral responsibility, as we have previously stated. By their mutual

harmonious action tachion-pairs will progress in a true evolutionary fashion, while never harming anything else in the universe by their action.

> *...the dynamic functioning of these sub-atomic tachions is such that by their inherent ability to manipulate space and the time-frame of matter through static-dynamic balance, they do not harm anything else in their environment...*

Now, the above is an inherent characteristic of tachion-pairs as long as they go about their business individually- that is, in their pre-physical state. Now, when the three fundamental tachion-pair energy modes described above exhibit a slow clocking frequency, there is opportunity for them to join together whereupon we begin to see matter being formed. The element of mass, or inertia is provided by the binding activity of the (N-P) mode, which is a function of the slow oscillation of the pair unit. Besides the clocking frequency, the factor of inertial mass or density of physical substance is also dependent upon the amount of separation between the two pair components in each individual sub-atomic tachion-pair unit. In general, the denser or more massive an object is, the slower its microscopic tachions will clock, and the farther apart will be the individual toroid components. This is a classic push-pull situation, i.e., there is a key inverse static-dynamic balance relationship between tachion-pair pulsation frequency and their area of operation (density of field). The rest mass that any physical substance displays to macroscopic observation, is thus a direct function of the amount of energy supplied by the master field to sustain the oscillation of the pair-unit. Thus, a primary feature of tachion dynamics is the following: if we change the energy, we must expect to observe a corresponding change in the manifestation of the mass, and vice versa.

Consequently, in tachion dynamics there is a built-in interchangeability of energy and mass, an idea which concurs with similar conclusions in Einsteinean relativity (notably, $E = mc^2$).

But here is where tachion theory and relativity part company. We have seen that our postulated "clocking" pulsation of the pair is the factor, which determines both space and time. Both **space** (area of pair operation), and **time** (frequency of pulsation) are mutually dependent on what **we shall call the master field of thought and intention, which determines the clocking frequency**. From the dynamic influence of the master field arises subsidiary conditions of time and space which are truly "fluid" qualities of tachion operation. This is indeed consonant with the assumptions of a proper unified field theory in which all the factors of our objective world as apprehended by the physical senses, are subsumed under the relative state of a guiding master field. Moreover, under the geometrical constructs of such a theory neither space nor time should be subservient to the other but should retain their unique qualities in a mutually supportive relationship. This is guaranteed in tachion theory under the fluid give-and-take of the pair operation. Relativity, on the other hand, despite its logical consistency, does not meet the above requirements. To his great credit Einstein recognized the need to integrate time with space in a synthesis that would retain the distinctive qualities of both. The result was a theory, which extended the classical Euclidean concept of 3-dimensional space as a kind of "cosmic container" of matter, to embrace a structure of space, which arises from the laws interrelating its material content. Thus, for instance, in his General Relativity theory gravitation became interpreted as a distortion of the spatial fabric by sources of mass-energy in a non-Euclidean framework. Unfortunately, as a foundation of his theory, Einstein mistakenly assumed a subservient role of time to space. He tried to "freeze" time down into spatial-like dimensions utilizing metric equations, which were variants of a basic form. Before a true understanding of

gravitation is developed, the rationale for applying such metrics to this end should be seriously re-appraised. In short, instead of freezing time down into a spatial dimension in order to make it fit a world ruled by nothing but gravity, we must develop a conception of space sufficiently fluid to let true time have its proper place therein.

These and other similar ideas are articulated by Andrea and Paulo Correa in their recent insightful essay on the various serious shortcomings of relativity theory. They write: "Time is not treated by relativity as distinct in nature or in quality from the set of topological locations or lengths between points. Whether in the SR (Special Relativity) form of a flat Minkowski spacetime or in the GR (General Relativity) form of a curved Riemannian spacetime, the essence in relativity lies in its treatment of time as the fourth length of a 4-dimensional space. As the actual metric of a length of time is not fixed, only the intervals being invariant, one can no longer speak of the reality of timelines or of synchronicity" [6].

In their second installment, the Correas even imply the existence of a mass-free energy, which is an integral element of the Killick tachion energy theory: "From a strict physical viewpoint, only an energeticist position can make sense. While space and time may be considered to exist outside the function of matter, independently from it, *they cannot be conceived outside the function of energy*...the field remains conceptualizable (in Einsteinean relativity) only by the pseudo-Riemannian manifold, which, on its own, fails to analytically treat the difference in dimensionality between Space and Time, fails to differentiate between them as distinct manifolds, and fails to account for them as the intrinsic properties of energy in flux".

The tachion theory is such a model that delineates the functions of time and space in terms of a basic mass-free energy substratum. Now as we have seen, since tachion dynamics pre-supposes a static-dynamic balance feature connecting frequency of the pairs (fundamental time elements) with their area

of operation ("fluid" space configurations), it represents such a foundation upon which to construct such a theory which will harmoniously treat time and space on an equal footing without neutralizing the unique structural features of each. Since the decrease/increase in the clocking frequency of the tachion-pairs will result in a corresponding increase/decrease of area of operation, the local *pace of time* will also decrease/increase at that space-time location. This is due to the push-pull relationship between energy and time. The intrinsic energy of a tachion-pair will be defined to be its energy of "motion" (energy in the "convergent", pre-physical state). Thus we see that an increase/decrease in the clocking frequency also implies that the intrinsic energy of the pair will also follow suit. Consequently, the intrinsic energy available for a manifestation will increase/decrease as time pace allotted for this purpose decreases/increases. Moreover, the product of intrinsic energy and time interval will always be constant due to the perfect trade-off between both factors in the tachion clocking action. This relationship is remarkably similar to the quantitative statement of the Uncertainty Principle in quantum mechanics in the form: $E \cdot t = h$. This formula states that the product of the energy exchange of a quantum mechanical particle and the time interval required for that exchange to take place, is equal to the so-called "quantum of action", or Planck's constant.

Thus, as a concomitant of tachion dynamics, which is argued could also be the basis of electron spin geometry among other things (see [5]), *time* is made malleable; no longer continuous, or rigidly uniform as in Newtonian conceptions, or subservient to space as in Einsteinean relativity, time "flow" can go to zero, and can even reverse under the application of certain electrodynamic field configurations such as provided by the caduceus coil and other devices [5]. With tachion dynamics even the laws of causality will no longer hold. This is due to the fact that tachions have a much broader field of operation than the purely physical realm. Thus, many unusual demonstrated features relative to quantum theory, such as the principle of Indeterminacy, quantum non-

locality (EPR experiment), "entangled particles" as well as hypothesized qualities of an *aether* of space, can find their source in this microscopic non-linear electrodynamic clocking oscillation attributed to the tachions. In fact, the ultimate expression of time as well as space to our sensory perception, could be a direct function of these substratum pulsations. From this consideration there emerges a new dynamic model for **fundamental time** as a "fluid-elastic" field effect arising from the unique ratcheting oscillatory motion of tachion-pair entities. Ultimately, it will be seen that tachions may even form the structural essence of consciousness itself, thus providing the long sought-for unifying link between physics and metaphysics.

N. Kozyrev

Other Recent Russian Research Implying New Dimensions for Time

Another key researcher who postulated an active substantial role for time was the Russian astrophysicist Nikolai Kozyrev [7]. He argued that the gap between the exact (physical) sciences and the natural sciences will not vanish until the principle of causality differentiating cause and effect is placed at the basis of the exact sciences. This implies the objective directionality of time or its flow. We encounter numerous manifestations of this principle in our life and in natural science. Yet this principle is new in both mechanics and physics as a whole. The natural scientist's time is not Minkowski's geometrical time, nor is it the time of mechanics, theoretical physics, etc.

> *Nikolai Kozyrev argued that the gap between the exact (physical) sciences and the natural sciences will not vanish until the principle of causality differentiating cause and effect is placed at the basis of the exact sciences*

As Kozyrev argued, mechanics has been using only the "geometrical" property of time, its duration size, i.e., the intervals between the events under study. Timed, these intervals acquire the same passive properties as the interval measured between two points in space. It is only this property of time that the objective sciences assumed to be existing objectively, postulating that all other time properties are subjective. However, if we want to differentiate causes and effects, in reality the *flow of time* must be a physical quantity, duly expressed mathematically and entering the equations of mechanics. The physical meaning and mathematical expression of the flow of time can be obtained from the space-time properties of causality. Thus, processes in the world occur not only in time, but also *with the aid* of time. Time flow is an active property owing to which time may act on a material system. Consequently, it is in the properties of time that the source maintaining the vital processes of the world must be sought.

From these arguments, we can also derive a fundamental property of time. Let us assume that we have changed by a certain technique the flow of time in a material system. In this process we have perhaps changed the stresses within the system and hence its energy.

However, it is impossible to change the total amount of motion of the system, i.e., to obtain a momentum equivalent to an external action. In other words, time may carry energy but no momentum. Time is a non-momentum material reality. From the above property of the flow of time, Kozyrev concluded that it follows directly that the rotation of a body may be used as a device for changing the flow of time in a system. Time flows into the system in the cause-effect direction, the rotation increases the flow, and hence the system obtains additional energy.

In attempt to verify his theories, in the 1950s, Kozyrev thus performed experiments with spinning gyroscopes and discovered, in agreement with his predictions, that the weight of the spinning system changes slightly depending upon the magnitude of the angular velocity and the direction of

rotation. Although the effect detected was not large, the nature of the arising forces could not be explained by existing theories. By applying a vibrating framework to the gyroscope, Kozyrev also found that not only does time deliver an energy, but that near the cause-effect system *time density* changes. Time is rarefied near the generator and becomes denser near the receiver. In other words, time becomes stretched by cause and compressed by effect. In addition, the variation in time intensity is in inverse ratio to the first degree of the distance. This can be seen by the following consideration: Time is expressed by rotation and hence involves planes passing through a pole of the rotating system with any orientation in space. **In the case of lines of force issuing from a pole, their density decreases in inverse ratio to the square of the distance, while the density of planes can readily be shown to decrease with the first degree of the distance.**

Kozyrev discovered another property of time when investigating irreversible processes such as crystallization of a substance, condensation, or evaporation. This influence can be effected by any irreversible process and is registered by a measuring system without any preliminary excitation, i.e., when the cause and effect positions are not separated. In other words, apart from flow and density, time seems to have another property, causal orientation, resembling in a way the polarization of light [8]. This property proves to be so variable that even the sign of the observed influences may change and hence the reciprocal cause and effect positions become reversed.

Continuing his studies on the properties of time, Kozyrev (with V.V. Nasonov) conducted astronomical observations using a receiving system of a new type. When the telescope was directed at a certain star, the special detector positioned within the telescope registered the incoming signal even if the main mirror was shielded by metal screens. This fact implied that electromagnetic waves (light) had some component that could not be shielded by metal screens. When the telescope was directed, not at the visible but at the true position of the star, the detector

registered a signal that was much stronger. The registration of the true position of different stars could only be interpreted as the detection of star radiation that had velocities billions of times the velocity of light. It was concluded that the radiation from stellar bodies hence had a component, which was non-electromagnetic. Kozyrev also found that the detector measured an incoming signal when the telescope was directed at a position symmetrical to the visible portion of the star relative to its true position. This fact was interpreted as a detection of the future positions of stars [9].

From the 1960's onward, additional Russian research groups continued and expanded upon the work began by Kozyrev on the unique non-electromagnetic radiation that was apparently a concomitant of all rotating bodies, whether accompanying macroscopic spinning objects of great mass (cosmological or terrestrial), or at the quantum level exhibited by elementary particles possessing recorded anomalous spin features which were not accountable by standard theories. This emanation which was exhibited by rotating bodies was termed torsion radiation [10]. Subsequently it was learned that this unique radiation was a part of all living or inert substances. This so-called "torsion field" research was carried on mainly in secret in the former Soviet Union, and only became known to the Western nations after the fall of the Iron Curtain. Many effects attributable to alterations in time and gravity have been reported through this research. For more information on this topic the reader is directed to this author's review in reference 10 and references therein.

Part II of II

Summary of Part I

It is the intention of this multi-part dissertation to motivate an imperative for considering the eventual establishment of a more expansive paradigm for the phenomenon of time, one which views time from the "substantial" as opposed to the orthodox "relational" standpoint. The

substantial concept of time implies the existence of an **active** essence which can and does affect objects and processes occurring in the universe. Furthermore, approaching time from such a fundamental basis implies that by positing active substantial change as the ground form **prime mover** and relational time (**passive** "clock-time", or entropy changes) as its derivative, that those objects and processes can also have a **reverse** action on time.

Towards this end in Part I (hereinafter referred to as I), we considered the key research of the late astrophysicist N.A. Kozyrev who, in carefully controlled experiments which were subsequently successfully replicated, recorded phenomena which have hitherto been unexplainable by standard contemporary received knowledge- whether from the standpoints of Newtonian, Relativistic or Quantum physics. Kozyrev pointed out that only by considering time as an active essence, could these cited "anomalous" phenomena, which are virtual conundrums from the viewpoints of a relational (passive) concept of time, be duly formulated on a logical basis. Accordingly Kozyrev's associated "causal mechanics" incorporates an objective directionality of time flow, implying differentiation between "cause" and "effect". **Consequently, by applying a thermodynamically irreversible process to a physical system (example: vibration to a spinning gyroscope), the rotor in this instance would be observed to lose (or gain) a small but detectable percentage of its weight, depending upon the direction of rotation.** Moreover, in this process **linear momentum** (linear speed of rotation) is not changed, but energy is nevertheless delivered to the system by additional forces directed along the axis causing a change in **angular momentum**, and that near the cause-effect system of the irreversible process, **time density** is altered - rarefied near the generator and concentrated in proximity to the receiver. Kozyrev concluded that time is a non-momentum material reality.

Other experiments of an astrophysical nature showed that registration of the true position or future position (as opposed to visual-present-position) of different stars via the non-electromagnetic component of star radiation, demonstrated the existence of an energy essence, which was apparently instantaneous, or had a propagation velocity of at least a billion times the velocity of light. In this regard, Kozyrev opposed the conventional astrophysical paradigm, which posits energy generated/ emitted by stars is a physical consequence of thermonuclear conversion. Instead he maintained that via rotation, stars converted time essence into non-physical (or pre-physical) energy. The latter was nevertheless detectable on Earth by transduction through reflecting telescopes shielded by metal screens, of stellar radiation by a Wheatstone bridge. Hence the "impact" of time was detected by resistor electric conductivity changes (see I and references therein).

Leaving no stone unturned in our investigation, we also took up a discussion of the related Killick-Smith tachion energy model for fundamental (pre-physical) reality. Here we coined a new term- a **trinitivity** of action, which was underscored as a key feature of the operation of tachion-pair entities. Accordingly, we posit the existence of two polar topologically orthogonal toroidal fields, with the unique ability, by the mutual shuttling back-and-forth of their energies, to exist in a third auto-generated state called "static-dynamic balance". Now, since tachions are hypothesized to transfer energy instantaneously, inertial/gravitational mass is not a primordial component of tachion operation (see I). Here we see a striking similarity to the Kozyrev conception of the operation of time in interaction with a physical system - where energy changes are manifested without linear momentum alterations delivered. Likewise, the Smith book, **The New Science** (see I) treats **the hypothetical tempic field as a scalar quantity, which only has direction in relation to its distribution (or "density" change). Only through establishing what Smith termed a** *tempic field* **gradient does the tempic field possess vectorial nature.** Similarly,

Kozyrev viewed time like space as possessing both geometrical and physical properties. The geometric property of time is duration (its scalar component), while physically the course of time is similar to vectorial field propagation and the density of time to field intensity. Although Smith and Kozyrev apparently never were aware of each other's research, the following quote from Kozyrev reveals that they both made key profound discoveries about nature which indeed bear more than a superficial similarity: "Time density is a scalar quantity, just the one observed in the above experiments. Time density decreases with increasing separation from the process creating it. Therefore, a vector property corresponding to density gradient and tractable as time obtaining, should also be observed"[7]. However, in I we also enjoined the reader to observe caution and selectivity when attempting to separate the wheat from the chaff in Smith's book.

Accordingly, the previous ideas are substantially correct, whereas his concept of "continuous spin" of tempic field energy is basically flawed. Killick replaces this outmoded counter-productive notion with a key ratcheting motion, like the escapement of a watch, which is performed by the tachion entities composing a pair-unit. Through this unique "clocking-motion", a cycle of tachion-pair operation exhibits what could only be described as an **ethical modus operandi**, passing through the three stages of observation - reflection - action. By virtue of this 3-stage process, tachion-pairs demonstrate in their individual activity and in interaction with their environment - *personal moral responsibility*.

This is indeed an unprecedented notion which implies that a type of conscious thought process can be ascribed to tachion operation. This can be related to current notions from quantum physics, relative to quantum coherence of states - such as wave-function collapse, Indeterminacy, quantum non-locality (EPR experiment), "entangled" particles, etc. This may be an indication that in such cases, whenever the Principle of Causality is breached or at least compromised, we may be witnessing the unique effects of the inherent conscious microscopic non-linear clocking oscillation of the tachions.

Along these lines, although Kozyrev did not report observing any effects of time energy, which could be considered as "value-motivated", he did report on an equally mysterious "after-effect" in many experiments, which could only be construed as signifying a **memory** process. For instance, it turned out that in experiments with a vibrating torsion balance (or pendulum), at points of support the emerging additional forces did not disappear when the vibration was stopped, but remained in the system for an appreciable time. Interestingly, **their relaxation times were found to be independent of the mass of a body but were dependent on its density**. The largest effects with maximum preservation times were observed on porous materials like brick or volcano tuff. In enumerating on this unusual preservation action Kozyrev observed: "...a body placed for a certain time near an (irreversible) process and then brought to a torsion balance, produced the same effect on it as the process itself...aluminum showed no memory. The largest memorizing effect for processes of both signs has been shown by sugar"[7]. Also, his colleague Danchakov later observed in conjunction with biological experiments that water with decreased viscosity due to having been subject to the action of a process, exerted a distant action on water that had not been under such an action, causing its viscosity to decrease as well.

In this second part of the current dissertation, we will examine other important related information gleaned principally from esoteric sources, referenced in I. These have been obtained from books by Jane Roberts: **The Seth Material**, **The "Unknown" Reality** (UR) [2], unpublished transcripts (J.R.)[1], and transcripts from the entity Kryon channeled by Lee Carroll [3]. This information is remarkably corroborative with that from Kozyrev research and the tachion energy theory. Finally, we will cap off

our exposition with a brief examination of a bold new maverick physical theory of sub-atomic electron structure, featuring variable time/mass attributes, which could be the catalyst for bringing the cited elements from esoteric knowledge and empirical physics research (Kozyrev, etc.) out from their hitherto relative obscurity, to the forefront in our ongoing mainstream investigations in probing the cutting edge frontiers of not only physics, but those of the natural sciences as well.

Other evidence

When one compares the transcripts from various esoteric sources it's remarkable how similar is their description of nature's fundamental operations at the pre-physical level. For instance, a careful reading of the Jane Roberts' channeled transcripts from the entity Seth, reveals a remarkable close connection with the particles termed EE (electromagnetic energy) units and the above Killick teachings on tachion pair dynamics. But first a word of caution to the reader. We should resist the tendency to put into the frame of reference of our sentient physical experience, structures whose essence is fundamentally non-physical. The customary physical characteristics of duality and dichotomy of fields, and the related yardsticks of mass, length and time, for the most part, may not apply in this situation.

It would be impossible, however, to formulate a comprehensive model for the EE unit dynamics were none of the factors for gauging physical reality to be able to be applied to higher dimensional realms. Fortunately, one characteristic does survive the transition to the non-physical framework- the element of **pulsation**. Seth reports in [2] how EE units, much like tachion-pairs are built up and dynamically pulsate in response to thought patterns. First, depending upon the relative intensity of the emotional energy, they will instantly be drawn together in clumps or may just as quickly disperse. Furthermore, being of a pulsating nature, these units can expand and contract. Theoretically, there is no limit to their size or frequency of pulsation. Seth describes their operation in the following manner: **Now, there are electromagnetic structures, so to speak, that are presently beyond your instruments, units that are the basic carriers of perception. Their size varies. Several units may combine, for example. To put this as simply as possible, it is not so much that they move through space, as that they use space to move through. There is a difference**.

On this point, if our conceptions remain "earthbound" we will not perceive any difference between these actions, but once we cast our mental gaze beyond physical experience, an important distinction becomes apparent. To understand this, we need only reflect on the similar non-classical logic that is the basis for the non-orientable Moebius topology that we have seen governs the dynamics of the tachion-pair unit [5]. Tachions, whose translational movement is governed by the relative pulsation frequency, apparently enter and leave our level of reality at two times (field equity stages) during each pulsation cycle. Before leaving our plane, the tachion-pair constitute what we call a space-time point.

Upon returning to our level, due to the Moebius topology of the clocking cycle, their essence creates a new space-time point with enantiomorphic (mirror image) characteristics to the first. The resulting progress of the units in physical reality is thus manifested by a "jerkily discontinuous" movement. Summing up, since the units **are** the point they create, it can now be understood that the units **use** space (or the nature of the space-time points) to move through, rather than the case of macroscopic matter which moves continuously (or appears to) through space.

Seth continues his description of the EE unit dynamics: *Laws of attraction and repulsion are used and, in a manner of speaking, thermal qualities are involved, and this is the only hint that your scientists have received of them so far. The units charge the air through which they pass, and*

*draw to them other units. The units are not stationary in the way that, say, a cell is stationary. These units have no "home". They are built up in response to emotional intensity. They are one form that emotional energy takes. They follow their own rules of attraction and repulsion. As a magnet will attract with its filaments, so these units attract their own kind and form patterns which appear to you as perception. They are electromagnetic, in your terms, following their own patterns of positive and negative charge. In this instance, like definitely attracts like. The units are just beneath the range of matter. None are identical. However, there is a structure to them. The structure is beyond the range of electromagnetic qualities as your scientists think of them. Consciousness actually produces these emanations, and they are the basis for any kind of perception, both sensory and extrasensory. These emanations can also appear as sounds and you will be able to translate them into sounds long before your scientists discover their basic meaning. One of the reasons they have not been discovered is precisely because they are so cleverly camouflaged within **all** structures.*

*Being just beyond the range of matter, having a structure, but a non-physical one, and being of a pulsating nature, they can expand and contract. They combine qualities of a unit and a field, in other words. Since they are beyond the range of matter, upon which matter is formed, they will not follow the laws of matter, although at times they may **mimic** the laws of matter. It is almost impossible to detect an individual unit, for in its dance of activity it constantly becomes a part of other such units, expanding and contracting, pulsating and changing in intensity, in force, and changing **polarity**. It would be as if the positions of your north and south poles changed constantly while maintaining the same relative distance from one another, and by their change in polarity upsetting the stablility of the planet- except that because of the greater comparative strength at the poles of the units, a newer stability is almost immediately achieved after each shifting.* Even the altruistic motives of the tachion-

pair as cited by Killick parallels similar behavior of these EE units.

Again from J.R.: *The behavior of these units changes in the following manner. When a unit is in the act of combining with another, it aligns its components in a characteristic way. When it is separating itself from other units, it will align its components in a different way. The polarities change in each case, within the units. The unit will alter its polarities within itself, adapting the polarity-design of the unit to which it is being attracted; and it will change its polarity away from that design on breaking contact.*

Ken Killick has described the mutual action of several tachion-pairs bonding, as the origin of standard sub-atomic particles possessing features known to modern science such as mass, charge, spin angular momentum, magnetic moment, etc. Thus, according to tachion energy theory, the electron attains its validity, and maintains its structural integrity, by virtue of relations between the component pair dynamics [see [5]). Since for the bulk of their independent existence, tachion pairs are in the pre-physical state, we can speculate that they may actually be superluminal entities. Remarkably, J.R. echoes this view with similar notions: *...the electron achieves its validity because of these* (possibly superluminal) *orbital units* (tachions?). *What we see as an electron is not made of the same things as the orbital units, however; it is an **effect**... when you change the structure of the electron, you are changing the relationships between the orbital units. This change will require an application of energy. It may be possible to construct a chamber that would give the electron more freedom.*

Whatever we do now in the handling of electrons is not giving them enough freedom and we are structuring the way in which they can appear. The next observation made by Seth could prove to be essential in clarifying the true nature of time: ... *If electrons were given more freedom they would affect* **our notion of time in perceiving them. The way the measurements (on electrons) are made forces the electron to appear**

in a particular way, but actually it's flitting around, seemingly in many places in rapid succession (pulsing in and out of physical reality). Turning to the structure of elementary particles in [2], Seth offers a similar observation in which he describes the electron as commonly perceived by scientific measurement apparatus, as merely a shadow or facade of the actual electron entity which constitutes a multi-dimensional structure.

In terms of a structural model for the electron, Seth says it would be more appropriate to view these units as composed of *interrelated fields* rather than as the current conception of a particle or a wave. Correspondingly, both of these criteria are key elements of the tachion theory, which posits the electron as composed of two-pair tachion fields. The electron achieves its stability-integrity from the interaction of these free-wheeling units.

Electron Spin and Structure of Fundamental Time

The electron "spin" feature is also claimed to be integral to the exhibit of "time's arrow" in UR [2]: *The electron spin determines time "sequences" from your viewpoint. In those terms, then, a reversed spin is a reversed time motion...electrons, however, spin in many directions at once, an effect impossible for you to perceive. You can only theorize about it. There are "electromagnetic momentums" thus achieved and maintained- certain stabilities that operate and maintain their own integrity, though these may not be "equal" at all portions of the spin. There are equalities set up "between" the inequalities...time, in your terms, then, is spinning newly backward as surely as it is spinning newly into the future. And it is spinning outward and inward* (pulsing inward and outward of physical reality) *into all probabilities simultaneously.*

It is vital that you understand this inward and outward "thrust" of time, however, and realize that from this flows the consecutive appearance of the moment. The thrusting gives dimension to time that so far you have not even begun to realize... This inward and *outward thrusting allows for several important conditions that are necessary for the establishment of " relatively" separate, stable universe systems. Such a system may seem like a closed one from any viewpoint within itself. Yet this inward and outward thrusting condition effectively sets up the boundaries and uniqueness of each universal system, while allowing for a constant give- and-take of energy among them.* By their unique operation, the EE-units, which form the elementary particles such as the electron, serve as the conduit for this energy flow once it is transduced by elements of thought that Seth terms "consciousness units"(CUs). Continuing in UR on this subject Seth **describes how time can be alternately created or "broken down"**: *The consciousness units serve as source points or "holes"* (Black holes or White holes?) *through which energy falls into your system or is attracted to it- and in so doing, forms it. The experience of forward time and the appearance of physical matter in space and time and all the phenomenal world, results. As CUs leave your system, time is broken down. Its effects are no longer experienced as consecutive, and matter becomes more and more plastic until its mental elements become apparent.* These observations are corroborated by Kryon in his dissertations to follow.

Specifically, in the Kryon channelings, further insight on this electron "freedom" is given in the context of change of frequency: *...There is something we call the electron haze which is around the nucleus of the atom. The space between the energy haze and the nucleus (which is great), varies more than you think in matter. As the space varies, the speed* (frequency) *of the haze must change. It is in the physics where the speed of the haze is strong and fast that you have a different time- frame than your own... you have not yet accepted that an object can seem to be stationary- yet traveling (*vibrating*) very fast. Not in a linear time from point A to point B, but in the electron haze of its vibrating parts.*

J.R. corroborates these comments in this dissertation: *Einstein considered relationships of this sort that hold in the far universe as one increases velocity towards the speed of light,*

but there are also "inner" situations (altered **stationary** states) *that relate these quantities, and that are much easier to get into.* In regards to atomic structure to allow for frequency changes, Kryon adds: *What is it that makes the distance between the parts change? This is the puzzle for the scientists. For the area between the nucleus and the energy haze although vast, is not void. It is a patterned soup of energy (*the so-called "vacuum"*), and it is within the pattern of this null that changes the distance, and therefore the speed* (frequency) *of the haze.*

Mass, gravity and time are intimately related to this frequency change in the atom. Witness the comments from J.R.: ***Time exists as an invisible drag on matter and this is interpreted as gravity. Time exerts a definite force like gravity, and this is connected with the behavior of the electron.*** *However, since we always look at electrons in a certain way and gravity in a certain way, we miss the connection.* And this related comment as well: *There is another equation to be discovered that expresses the relation between time, mass and gravity.* Kryon reiterates this sentiment, along with relatively detailed scientific information: *Gravity is an absolute product of the characteristics of mass and time... one of which you may change.*

*What has been missing so far in your thoughts is how gravity is related to time, and that the entire issue of gravity, mass and time is non-linear. You have yet to develop the formula of physics. It is not here yet, and we are going to give you three attributes of the formula, but without the formula. These attributes are understood but the way they relate are misunderstood. Your science is just now beginning to see the shadows of them, however. The first attribute of the formula is the ability to understand the **density** of mass. Why is the electron haze so far from the nucleus? We have told you that you can change this distance, and in doing so, the density will change in the mass that is defined by the atoms being shifted. The electron haze will have to vibrate faster (this is possibly the "freedom" referred to earlier by J.R.), the closer it is to the nucleus; when the electron*

haze vibrates faster, its **time-frame** *will shift. Therefore, the second attribute of the formula is a time-shift, and they go together. Also, be aware that you make an erroneous assumption that the actual speed (frequency?) of the electron haze must always be the same no matter what the distance. This is not understood yet either. There is a difference between speed (velocity/translatory rate) and vibratory rate, and it has to do with the actual physical definition of the* **electron haze**.

Mass discrimination is the ability to control the density of mass. With a density shift will come a time-shift, and with a time-shift will come a third attribute...we will call the **reality of location**, or where the matter is... in which dimensional reality it goes to when shifted. Here is an axiom: **shifts in dimensionality when matter is changed in this fashion create a reality where the matter has to be to exist in its new form**. It might be inches from where you changed it or miles. That depends on how much it got changed. The difficult thing to explain to you is a concept that has not been recognized... that matter has a **reality index**, and that its core attributes are linked to where it exists in time and space. Therefore, the three attributes that must work together are **density, time-frame and location**.

Electromagnetic Field Manipulation of Cosmic Lattice and Time-Space-Matter

In regards to tapping this (mass-free) energy-haze-soup, between the atomic nucleus and electron shells, Kryon speaks thusly: *There's something we are going to call APD (atomic phasic displacement). This is a term that is going to refer to the ability to tap the (Cosmic) Lattice for unlimited energy. The Cosmic Lattice is balanced, but it is not quiet. The Lattice has astounding power. It has a flow of energy that I cannot explain to you, for there is no paradigm model for it yet in your thinking. Therefore, you would not easily understand. The Lattice has vents that we can best describe as necessary for the flow of energy. It balances the slight inequity of the*

polarity. The vents also have to do with time...you will always find two vents together. One will be prominent, the other will be secondary. You might graphically and clearly see one, but you will have to look carefully to see its partner. There are always two. This is an axiom or physical rule of the Lattice energy, and of the universe: This information remarkably parallels Killick's teachings on tachion energy pairs.

Witness this Kryon pronouncement:*Hiding within common atomic structure is a marvelous peek at something that will totally and completely mystify you, for it will seem to break all the laws of time and space. The "twins" are a pair of atomic parts that always relate to each other, and are always found in pairs. You will discover that when stimulated correctly, they will always move together as a pair. When you start separating them by distance to experiment, they will continue to move exactly together. If one's energy is converted, then the other will do the same. This will cause you to totally reexamine your ideas of time and space, for this condition will not follow the "ultimate speed" of transmission that you thought was correct...that of the speed of light. You will have discovered something that travels faster than you can ever measure.* Compare this statement with the torsion energy claimed by the Russians to travel at a billion times light speed [10].

In returning to the discussion on how to tap the Cosmic Lattice for energy, Kryon continues:*The vents are very necessary for the balance of your universal energy. The vents are also energy portals, (drains, to you), and are where the front of each Lattice cell touches the back...Like so many other physical processes, however, its going to take a tremendous amount of energy in order to unbalance even one cell's null attribute...Once you understand how to "prod" the null to unbalance itself, you will be rewarded with a steady flow of energy, far beyond what you put into it. This is accomplished since you create your own tiny "vent". An unbalanced cell creates a situation where the other cells around it will try to "feed" energy to the one that is unbalanced. This creates a tap that will pull upon the Lattice indefinitely, as long as*

your work matches the properties the Lattice expects to see. Kryon further expands on the specific method to accomplish this...*Here's how it works. Two magnetic fields together, postured in the correct way- a way that is very three-dimensional in your thinking process- will create a "designed magnetic field" that is very specific.*

> *...your math told you that there might be a possibility of invisibility and that was your goal. This was again because you did not understand that because the distance between the parts change, it doesn't necessarily mean that the overall size will dramatically change or that it might vanish...*

It's one you have never seen, and does not exist naturally. Start with trying several magnetic fields postured against one another- of unequal force and pattern, and at right angles. Don't make any assumptions. Think freely. Done in the right fashion, these two fields will create a third pattern which is unique and is the product of the original two. This third custom-created pattern is the one that you want to deal with, and is the one that has the potential of manipulating the Lattice. Once you have created it, you will know of its special qualities by how dramatically it changes the physics around it. And this important admonishment is given: Here is a caution. *Keep this experiment away from your body. Keep the experiment in check with your scientific methods. Go slowly. Understand what you're seeing before you go on to the next step. Do not expose yourself to any magnetic fields. Remotely conduct all energy experiments. Remember that magnetics also plays an important part within your body (DNA components).*

*Here is another. Understand that if you unbalance the Lattice too grandly and too greatly, you will have a **time displacement**,*

for the process also involves the property of **time**... *One of the actual physical players in the creative process of unbalancing the Lattice is the manipulation of the time-frame of matter.* **This is not time travel, but time displacement.** *It is where you are actually addressing tiny parts of matter, and changing the time-frame they are in. When the inequity of time-frames meet one another (*matter mixed up with differing time attributes*), the result is a displacement of distance (*reality of location*). Although there is no horrendous danger for Earth within this time displacement, it can and will affect the local situation within the experiment. In other words, it can create a matter-distorting effect, completely stopping the experiment, and actually dislocating the parts. We are not going to say any more about this at the moment, but the more astute scientific minds reading this will go to the next obvious step... and the answer is "yes", the Lattice is also the key to quick travel of large physical objects... even of very short distances.*

Possible Documented Demonstrations of Time-Space Warping

Such fantastic transformations were possibly evident in the Hutchison experiments [11], in which metal samples were catastrophically fractured when exposed to radiation from the unique electromagnetic field effect. It was also noticed that many physical objects of different composition which were separate in space before the electromagnetic field was applied, became inexplicably embedded in each other once these objects were radiated by the field effect. For instance, **pieces of wood contained metal knives**, etc. Other metal samples were catastrophically fractured in their molecular-atomic crystal arrangement, producing a substance which was uniform and geometrically symmetrical at one end but appeared to have the resemblance of corrugated cardboard at the other.

Also, similar to Kryon's assertion of the inevitability of time-shift with mass altering

phenomena, in Hutchison's work anomalous inertial impulses were recorded on film, sometimes resulting in the complete lift/levitation of various substances of different mass. We notice also anomalous inertial impulses were a feature of the Zinsser "kinetobaric" effect [12], in which due to excitation by **sawtooth microwave impulses with very fast rise time**, a sample attached to a torsion balance, deflected the balance for days and weeks after the original excitation was extinguished. Notice the similarity between these results and those of the Kozyrev experiments, some of which reportedly featured a memorizing preservation effect on a torsion balance, etc.

We also find additional confirmation from the basically anecdotal evidence from the alleged legendary Philadelphia Experiment in 1943, which apparently caused either large time- or space (teleportation) shifts in a Navy ship. In fact, in another piece Kryon himself possibly speaks directly about the Philadelphia Experiment, providing us with further insight into important possible new paradigms for time, mass and energy: *In all your questions regarding magnetics and the massless condition, you have never asked about what happened in your year 1943. You tried to create a massless condition with coarse equipment and little understanding of what you were doing. In the process you actually did create an unstable massless condition for a moment. Its instability created a situation where, instead of a true massless condition, you received one where the time-frame changed but the parts within the sphere of the time change did not have the fine-tuned synchronicity needed for a massless object. The result was an actual distance displacement of the object instead of a true massless condition. Indeed, humans were involved on the large object and their biology was damaged greatly. Your experiment was done in an atmosphere of desperation, and your goal was flawed. For your math told you that there might be a possibility of invisibility and that was your goal. This was again because you did not understand that because the distance between the parts change, it doesn't necessarily mean that the overall size will dramatically change (or that it might vanish).*

Although this may seem like a paradox to you, the internal mechanics of small particle behavior supports this. The change is measurable but very small, much like what happens with heat and chill...Many of you have guessed correctly that **magnetics and electricity play a critical role in the determination of the real attributes of mass**... *and the magnetic variables that determine the mass product, are often working within very small particles to create the density of an object and also its time-frame. The time frame of a massless object is slightly different than your own, making you to appear slightly slower than the massless object. Its reaction to more traditional mass molecules around it is also predictable: because of the very slight time displacement, it tends to change the number of electrons within the atoms directly in contact with it. This is a clue on how to detect a massless object even if you can't see it.*

The reason you felt the object (ship) would vanish was that you were able to simulate a "vanishing" in the laboratory with smaller objects. This observation was not consistent however, so you again were in desperation to try this experiment on a larger object. The "vanishing" was an illusion and was due to a distance displacement rather than an "in place" vanishing... does this give you a clue to long distance travel using magnetics and the vibratory rate of matter?... Only one human on the planet has ever captured a true massless condition, and even this was a coarse one and lasted for only for a few moments that were uncontrollable in scope. This massless condition was created in the primitive workshop of a great electrical scientist in your culture on the American continent not too long ago. If you were able to visit his workshop, you would note the holes in the ceiling and the patched glass-covered light port where his massless objects took off and wildly flew everywhere. If he had been born 50 years later he would have been able to control the attributes of the experiment. As it was, he did not have the precision tools you have now to direct and control such an experiment. It was his great passion to understand this phenomena, but because it was so uncontrollable and sporadic, he was never able to bring others to see it work, for he could not accurately create it consistently. This depressed him in his later years, for his was a great three-dimensional mind... When asked the identity of this scientist Kryon replied: The inventor of your multi-phase current, born in the land you now call Yugoslavia.

From the above information, there emerges a remarkably consistent picture suggesting that atomic structure may not be as rigid or immutable as formerly thought. Changing the fundamental frequency of vibration of atomic structure can perhaps apparently not only change the density of matter by altering the distance of electron shells from the nucleus, but in so doing alter the time-frame of that object, its mass and also the reality of location of that substance. Certainly, the implications of the Kozyrev research, among others, can possibly form the basis for the eventual technological implementation of these futuristic principles. Perhaps those experimenting with the relatively detailed data provided by Kryon on APD can actually realize this coveted goal.

Maverick New Theories in Physics Suggest Fluid Nature for Time, Space, Energy

The Dirac theory is to be understood as a theory of the electron with electromagnetic interactions. It consists of the Dirac wave function and its properties, including the Dirac equation and relations to physical variables such as energy-momentum, spin and position probability current. In spite of its indisputable mathematical successes, the Dirac theory is still without a completely satisfactory physical interpretation. In particular, the so-called *zitterbewegung* ("jitter motion") is a distinctive feature of the Dirac theory which continues to be the subject of conflicting interpretations in the standard scientific literature. The concept of zitterbewegung was introduced by Schrodinger to interpret high frequency oscillations in free-particle wave packets of the Dirac theory. These oscillations with angular frequency $2mc^2/h$ arise from

interference between positive and negative energy components of a wave packet. Schrodinger interpreted the oscillations as fluctuations in position of the electron about an average motion. However, this concept has not been interpreted in the bulk of the literature as having an objective significance, but has erroneously been viewed by standard theory as a mathematical artifact of the one-particle Dirac theory which does not appear in a correctly formulated quantum field theory.

However, as noted theoretical physicist David Hestenes suggests in the first of his recent article series in the journal, **Foundations of Physics** [13], it is only by interpreting the zitterbewegung literally and objectively as point particle motion, that a complete and coherent interpretation of the Dirac theory can be achieved. Moreover, this model has implications that have not yet been previously considered by established physics that relate directly to some of the key features of sub-atomic behavior enumerated in the tachion energy theory and also in the microscopic dynamics of elementary particles revealed by the selected esoteric channelings that we have previously considered in the present exposition.

In particular, it implies that the electron is the seat of a fluctuating electromagnetic field which oscillates with the DeBroglie frequency of the electron (1.6×10^{21} cycles/sec).

Thus, it tells us that a kind of electromagnetic wave-particle duality is implicit in the Dirac theory. Of course, this contradicts the conventional view that wave-particle duality is a property of matter which is completely independent of the nature of its interactions. If the zitterbewegung is an objective phenomenon, then it originates from electron self-interaction, since it persists in the absence of external fields. In this new theory which considers the zitterbewegung as an objective physical phenomenon, the electron mass and spin can be identified with the energy and angular momentum of electromagnetic interaction. It suggests that the self-interaction is such that there exist certain stable, non-radiating but accelerated states of motion; in particular, for a free

particle, this implies motion in a circle with the radius of a Compton wavelength- the zitterbewegung. The zitterbewegung implies that some of the mass, at least, is kinetic self-energy associated with a spin, and it reconciles the mass with a zero mass of the bare electron. Thus, according to this bold new theory, the electron spin arises from a helical world-line in spacetime. To be sure, some researchers have previously postulated such a helical electron dynamics. Unfortunately, such models have failed to explain why a helical motion for spin should depend on interference between positive and negative energy states or why the zitterbewegung should depend on the way a wave packet is constructed, or even how the zitterbewegung can be the origin for electron spin despite the fact that it vanishes for plane wave states that certainly describe a particle with spin.

The Hestenes model does offer an explanation for such effects and accounts for the ubiquitous feature of spin angular momentum as a function of the zitterbewegung. The essential unprecedented feature of the Hestenes' zitterbewegung idea is the association of the spin with a local circulatory-helical motion characterized by the phase factor of the electron wave function.

Thus, we reach the conclusion that the complex phase factor of the electron wave function can be associated directly with an objective helical motion of the electron, which is, in turn, a derivative of the zitterbewegung. Although the idea of helical motion connected with the electron has been considered before, it has not previously been related to electron phase to produce a complete interpretation of the Dirac theory.

Moreover, in the next installment of his dissertation [14], Hestenes argues that the zitterbewegung is not only an objective dynamical phenomenon associated with the electron, but is a ubiquitous phenomenon, with manifestation in every area of quantum mechanics, even in the non-relativistic domain. For instance, by showing that spin angular momentum can

be regarded as angular momentum of the zitterbewegung fluctuations, the zitterbewegung interpretation of the Dirac theory begun by Hestenes in reference 13 provides an explanation for the electron spin and magnetic moment in the physical circulation of momentum and charge. It also explains the mass as the energy of this circulation. Thus, the origin of the zitterbewegung is attributed to self-interaction of the electron with its own electromagnetic field. The relations derived by Hestenes in this article suggests that the interaction is of magnetic origin, since it has the form of a Larmor precession energy if spin angular momentum is proportional to a self-generated magnetic field. The so-called "rest mass" of the electron is thus a kinetic energy of self-interaction. It is this that gives the electron its inertial properties, and the flywheel-like nature of this inertia may be the ultimate origin of spin dependence in electron scattering. And the Heisenberg Uncertainty relations can now be attributed to the "zitterbewegung fact" that an electron cannot be confined to a region smaller than a Compton wavelength. Also, the stationary states of a bound electron exhibit a resonance of the orbital frequency with harmonics of the zitterbewegung frequency, which is imposed formally in the standard theory by requiring single-valuedness of the wave-function. Evidently, such resonances, so prominent in quantum mechanics, can be interpreted as zitterbewegung resonances. This leads to a new explanation of penetration of a potential barrier by sub-atomic particles as due to zitterbewegung fluctuations in momentum, and the Aharonov-Bohm effect as a shift in zitterbewegung phase. The zitterbewegung phase factor literally represents a physical rotation. The rotation rates of this phase in time and space directions are the source of the electron's energy, mass and momentum.

In his third paper [15], Hestenes draws a closer relation of the zitterbewegung dynamics to the Dirac theory by suggesting that the latter actually describes a statistical ensemble of possible electron motions, which are actually governed by the zitterbewegung sub-

structure. Since the energy-momentum of the electron can now be interpreted in terms of a rotation rate in the spin-plane, Hestenes then derives a corresponding relation which defines a variable mass for the electron-another unprecedented idea which is in agreement with the information given by Kryon in his dissertations and Ken Killick's tachion theory. The mass m, the scalar radius of curvature r and the zitterbewegung frequency all covary with changes in the rotation rate in the electron spin-plane. Hestenes obtains a relation demonstrating that the electron mass is inversely proportional to the zitterbewegung frequency. This conforms to the relativistic concept of mass as a measure of energy content. But here, mass is concluded to be primarily a **frequency** measure. This also conforms to DeBroglie's original idea that the electron contains an internal clock with frequency determined by its mass, though for a free particle, the zitterbewegung frequency differs from the DeBroglie frequency by a factor of 2. Moreover, the new key relation derived by Hestenes: m·r = 1/2h (h, Planck's constant), says that this frequency measures the radius of curvature of the electron world-line, so it is a thoroughly geometrical quantity. Thus, as mass increases the radius of curvature decreases, in concert with the tachion dynamics as well. All this suggests that the electron mass relates our externally imposed time scale to a time scale intrinsic to the electron.

The reader can see that the information transmitted by J.R. is also remarkably similar in this connection. It should be evident that there is introduced a new concept of mass here, though, to a certain extent, it was already implicit in the Dirac theory. The formerly vague concept of mass as some kind of material stuff is completely gone. Also, no longer is vanishing mass a distinguishing feature of particles moving with the speed of light.

Corroborating Research on Oscillatory-Fluid Nature for Time

In his recent thought-provoking dissertation [16], Tom Bearden relates of

the dynamic influence of time on a material system: "But we can also legitimately state that 'time is energy' and be rigorously accurate...Time is extremely compressed EM spatial energy...Without further elaboration, we speak of a 'mass' in which a small portion exists as 'masstime' rather than mass, as having been 'time-charged' or 'time-excited'.

The t-polarization wave in the time dimension is quite unique: The *spatial* energy of the wave is in equilibrium and not vibrating at all; instead, the photons comprising the wave are vibrating in their **time**-components... In short, mass m is changed into masstime mt by photon absorption... Rigorously, a mass does not really 'travel through time' continuously, per se, but proceeds with an overall serial change mechanism, driven by its total virtual and observable photon interactions, as m→ mt→ m→ mt→...We propose that this may account for the duality of particle and wave...The particle actually oscillates at a high rate between the m and mt states... Mass 'travels through time' by an extremely high oscillation between corpuscle-like state and wave-like state". Notice how Bearden's description of the macroscopic operation of time on a physical system closely parallels Hestenes' proposed model for of the zitterbewegung dynamics at the sub-atomic level which provides the electron (and possibly photons, etc.), with a time-substructure (its internal "clock").

We can see many other places in Bearden's treatise where the unique terminology chosen can now be put into direct reference with equivalent concepts and unique phraseology employed by many of the researchers examined in the current exposition. This cross-referencing certainly provides much needed clarification about key ideas for researchers currently involved with the development of this fledgling discipline that we shall term causal mechanics, after Kozyrev's designation.

All such efforts will help to place investigative endeavors currently scoffed at by establishment science on a firm rational foundation, as well as assist in synthesizing seemingly disparate but surprisingly related "anomalous" phenomena. For instance, to implement the science he has termed "vacuum engineering", Bearden often speaks of the necessity of establishing a "local time-stress of the **vacuum potential**". This process, which as we hope to have shown here is completely legitimate, is identical to what Smith calls creating a "tempic field gradient", Kozyrev's "alteration of time-density", or Alexander Frolov's "change in the local time-rate".

It can clearly be seen that such ideas can only be perceived as science fiction fantasy, if we observe strict adherence to all current received paradigms (even in superstring theory), which consider space and time purely from their relational standpoints. These theories must of necessity involve models employing scalable metrics for their proper description. However, once we embrace the novel view posited here that vacuum energy is primary and both local space and time are derivatives of this mass-free non-scalable dynamic non-local oscillating substratum, then we can conceive of space and time properly as complementary aspects of non-local conscious reality, neither fixed in a scalable manner or subservient to the other, but fluid and mutually interdependent features of energy in constant flux (see the related ideas voiced by A. Correa and P. Correa in I).

With this approach we will then come to acknowledge the technological feasibility of many of the "futuristic" claims made in the channeled transcripts. For instance, we can see that it will no longer be necessary to propel elementary particles to relativistic velocities, or to probe astrophysical systems possessing large gravitational fields, to recognize alterations in space, time and mass parameters, since these phenomena can equally as well be accomplished in the laboratory by modifying atomic structure of stationary matter through electromagnetic means. Once again, peruse the Kryon dissertations on this process, for it may be key to future technology.

For those who wish to further investigate these theoretical possibilities, the papers of **A. A. Nassikas** are recommended. Nassikas has postulated what very few researchers before him have theorized: the existence of a ground-form probability density function for energy, as a necessary precursor to the malleable (deformable) characteristics of time and space [18]. One of Nassikas' conclusions is significant in light of ideas articulated in the present exposition concerning the hypothetical tachion-pair model for reality (see I). Here we refer to the key push-pull oscillatory ("breathing") operation between space and time, which may be responsible for the structural integrity of matter as we know it (again re-read the Hestenes zitterbewegung model).

Researcher **Alexander Frolov** has taken Nassikas' theory even further to suggest an explanation for the **anomalous over-unity effect** that has continually been demonstrated in low-energy nuclear reactions (LENR) over the past decade [19]. In such so-called "cold fusion" cells the Palladium cathode is over-saturated with protons, producing a local imbalance in the vacuum engine, causing a local alteration in the time-frame of the experiment to compensate the local change in energy density. **Subsequently, as Frolov claims, this time-frame change converts non-local time-energy directly into heat energy, similar to Kozyrev's description of energy production by stars.** Perhaps this observation might provide the hitherto missing key in our understanding of fusion by electrolytic action.

Conclusions and Prospects

In the preceding paper it is sincerely hoped that the author has demonstrated ample evidence that will spur on researchers of a kindred spirit towards the development of new paradigms for space, energy, mass and especially time. All these concepts, as well as the foundations of current classical electromagnetic theory, are in need of a drastic overhaul before we can fully appreciate and understand the operations of

nature as it interrelates the metaphysical-mental realms with the physical level of reality.

At any rate, the continual appearance of research results, such as the Kozyrev effect, which up to present apparently resists explication in terms of conventional scientific paradigms, certainly offers clear evidence of the incompleteness of our knowledge of nature, even in this enlightened era since the dawn of the new millennium.

Accordingly, hints as to how the Kozyrev effect arises in association with the postulated active properties of time, and how the latter interacts with known physical forces, can assist us towards the development of a more comprehensive paradigm which embraces a wider spectrum of human knowledge - one in which the current conundrums rampant in the foundations of theoretical physics, and biological science disciplines as well, which have hitherto prevented the establishment of a unified model of all physical interaction, can find satisfactory solution. Also, such empirical evidence which generally flies in the face of current scientific wisdom, presents the greatest challenge to our ongoing search for new sustainable energy sources which will be of absolute necessity in the future.

In this light, if formally integrated into scientific thought, the tenets of tachion energy theory, which is based on an altruistic modus operandi, also may hold profound implications for the status of our very social, political and religious structures as well. Indeed, unlike the impersonally motivated interactions believed to be the basis for force interactions in modern sub-atomic physics, which help sustain our illusory belief in the supremacy of the ego, the philosophical basis of tachion dynamics is an able reminder of the humility of purpose which should be the guiding force whatever our walk of life. Like tachion-pairs, in the ideal social structure individuals will work side-by-side, yet achieving a common accord. United in the circle of their activity they will work together joyfully in freedom, each with his own task, yet always conscious of the common bond.

With the full import of these simple truths appreciated, tachions may afford a rational justification of the formerly "unprovable" mystical doctrine of the omnipresent intelligent plan behind the working of the universe at all levels of conscious reality. We will come to realize the profound truth of Einstein's vision of ultimate reality couched in his heretofore cryptic statement, *"God is subtle, never malicious"*.

REFERENCES:

1 J. Roberts, unpublished remarks as transcribed by W.H. Kautz.

2 J. Roberts, **The Seth Material**, Prentice-Hall, Inc. 1970. Pp. 292-298.
The "Unknown" Reality, Prentice-Hall, Inc., 1986.

3 L. Carroll, **Alchemy of the Human Spirit**, (Kryon Book III), The Kryon Writings, 1995.
Letters from Home (Kryon Book VI), The Kryon Writings, 1998.
Passing the Marker (Kryon Book VIII), The Kryon Writings, 2000.

4 W. Smith, **The New Science**, Fern-Graphic Pub., 1964.

5 D. Reed & K. Killick, "Tachion Energy Theory"(Parts I-IV), **Energy Unlimited**, 1978-1983.

6 A. Correa & P. Correa, "Consequences of the Null Result of the Michelson-Morley Experiment: The Demise of the Stationary Aether, the Rise of Special Relativity and the Heuristic Concept of the Photon", **Infinite Energy**, no. 38, July-Aug 2001, pp. 47-64.
"The Sagnac and Michelson-Gale Experiments", **Infinite Energy**, no. 39, Sept.-Oct. 2001, pp. 32-49.

7 N. Kozyrev, "On the Possibility for the Experimental Investigation of the Properties of Time", **Time in Science and Philosophy**, Prague, 1971, pp. 111-132.
"An Unexplored World", **Soviet Life**, 1965.
A.P. Levich (ed), **On the Way to Understanding the Time Phenomenon (Part II: The Active Properties of Time According to N.A. Kozyrev)**, World Scientific, Singapore, 1996 (rare English language excellent critical review of Kozyrev research and theories).

8 M. Lavrentiev, "Detection of the Reaction of Matter to an External Irreversible Process", **Sov. Phys. Dokl.**, Mar 1991, vol. 36, no. 3, p. 243.

9 M. Lavrentiev et al., "Remote Effects of Stars on a Resistor", **Sov. Phys. Dokl.**, Sept 1990, vol. 35. No. 9, p.818.
"Detection of the True Position of the Sun", **Sov. Phys. Dokl.**, Nov 1990, vol. 35, no. 11, p. 957.
"Scanning the Celestial Sphere with a Kozyrev Detector", **Sov. Phys. Dokl.**, Apr. 1992, vol. 37, no. 4, p. 163.

10 D. Reed, "Torsion Field Research and Implications for New Physics and Energy Technologies"**Jour. New Energy**, vol. 4, no. 2, Fall 1999, pp. 151-164 (and references therein).

11 J. Hutchison, "The Hutchison Effect Apparatus", **Proc. Of the 1ˢᵗ Symp on New Energy**, Denver, May 1994, p. 199.
"Inside View of the Hutchison Effect", **Extraordinary Science**, vol. III, issue 4, Oct-Dec 1991, pp. 23-26.

12 T. Valone(ed), **Mechanical Energy from Gravitational Anisotropy**, Integrity Research Institute, Washington, DC, 1996.
W. Peshka, "Kinetobaric Effect as Basis for a New Propulsion Principle", **Raumfahrt-Forschung**, Feb 1974 (in German); trans. By D.Reed, **Infinite Energy**, vol. 4, issue 22, 1998, pp. 52-56.
D. Reed, "Translator's Analysis and Comments on the Zinsser-Effect Device", **Infinite Energy**, vol. 4, issue 22, 1998, pp. 57-59.

13 D. Hestenes, "Quantum Mechanics from Self-Interaction", **Found. Phys.**, vol. 15, no. 1, 1985, pp. 63-87.

14 D. Hestenes, "The Zitterbewegung Interpretation of Quantum Mechanics", **Found. Phys.**, vol. 20, no. 10, 1990, pp. 1213-1232.

15 D. Hestenes, "Zitterbewegung Modeling", **Found. Phys.**, vol. 23, no. 3, 1992, pp. 365-387.

16 T. Bearden, **Extracting and Using Electromagnetic Energy From the Active Vacuum**, Association of Distinguished American Scientists, Huntsville, Alabama, 2000.
"Giant Negentropy in the Common Dipole", **Proc IC-2000**, St. Petersburg, Russia, 2000 (in press).

17 A.A. Nassikas, **The Hypothesis and the Equations of the Unified Matter Field**, in New Ideas in Natural Sciences (Part I: Physics), St. Petersburg, Russia, 1996.

18 A. Frolov, **Work Created By Means of the Potential Field**, in New Ideas in Natural Sciences(Part I: Physics), St. Petersburg, Russia, 1996.
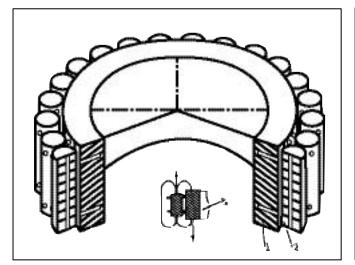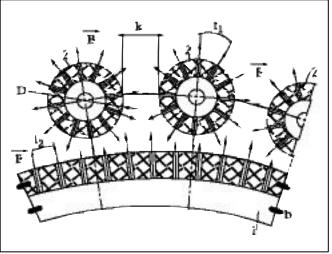
On the Rotating Permanent Magnet System

Alexander V. Frolov, Russia

7 Lev Tolstoy Str., St. Petersburg, 197376, Faraday Laboratory Ltd.

In one of our issues we published an article about the results of the experiment conducted by S.M. Godin and V.V. Roschin. They started in 1990 at Moscow Aviation Institute (MAI) when a technical physics laboratory was created in Machine Industry Projects Institute at the "Aeropromservice" Association. Their research work was financed by private investors and was continued in close cooperation with Chair 310 of MAI, especially with Prof. PhD. L.K. Kovalev, Prof. PhD. V.V. Rybakov and PhD. K.V. Ilyushin. By 1991 "a device for inner energy of matter conversion" had been designed and tested (according to the Technical Design Assignment). The prototype was finished in the middle of 1993 (Fig.1).
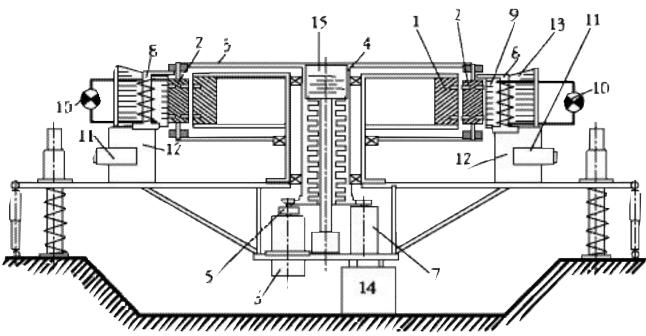
Fig.1

The experiments resulted in the possibility of creating a 7 kW output power in load after the rotor was sped up to 10 rps, but in the autumn of 1993 the laboratory was closed due to the investors' financial problems. Now their research work is continuing in Moscow and we hope the scientists will obtain new experimental results.

You can email S.M. Godin for more information at: smgodin@online.ru

Considering the theoretical basis of the functioning of these systems I should suggest a number of interesting details for prospective researchers.

S.M. Godin, V.V. Roschin et. al. (Physics of Negative Viscosity Phenomena. Prof. Victor P. Starr. Massachusetts Institute of Technology) spoke of vacuum (quantum medium) as **a physical medium possessing negative viscosity.** At that rate, it is worth making assumptions that can be useful to the developers of this topic. I think that standard (positive) viscosity of matter, from the physical point of view presupposes the presence of positive friction and a "work-to-heat" entropy transformation. Consequently, **negative viscosity** should correspond to the **negentropy cycle** "heat is converted to work". This is exactly the stray heat conversion once described by Tsyolkovsky in 1914. Apparently, **the medium of the kind supports self-sustained vortices** characterized by the surrounding medium heat absorption, which was mentioned yet not explained by S.M. Godin and V.V. Roschin.

It is possible that all the elements of matter are the self-sustainable vortex structures. To mathematically describe these physical mechanisms, the notions "heat-work-heat" transformation and "time" or "gravitation" should be interrelated. Russian philosopher Pavel D. Uspenskiy had been making related research since the year 1910.
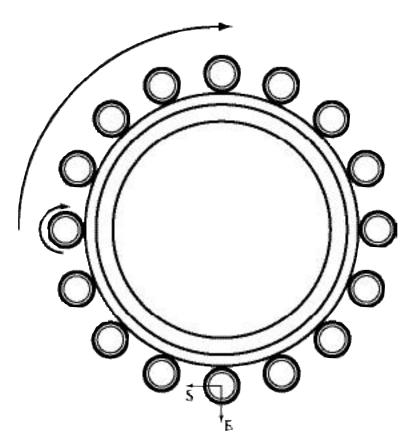
Fig.2

From the conventional point of view, this device (Fig.1) creates a circulating energy flux described by the Umov-Pointing vector (toroidal vortex) as the roller magnet field vector is vertical and the electric field is radial.
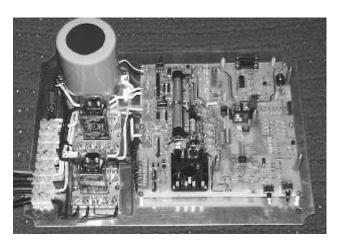
S.M.Godin (on the left) and A.V.Frolov (on the right), St. Petersburg, June 2001.

Inventor's Week Conference 2003, USA

Review is prepared by Editor Tatiana Ezhova

This year the annual Inventor's Week-end Conference was held on September 19-20 in Seattle, Washington. The conference featured several interesting inventions, including MEG.

Bill Alek demonstrated a device that he believed could let him detect Vortex-Energy. It was attached to a meter, and his belief was that if he walked into a naturally-occurring energy vortex carrying the device it would show him changes in gravitational and other energies. He cited the Vortices in Santa Cruz and Oregon as examples that might be good for experimentation.

Bill Alek
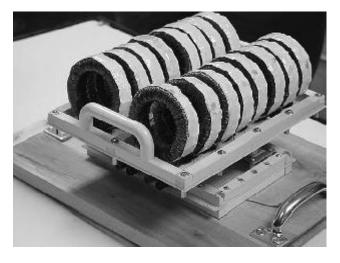
Z-Pod, Bill Alek

In his report "Introduction to Parametric Mass Fluctuation - a breakthrough in Energy and Inertialess Field Propulsion" Bill Alek presented the Z-Pod, developed to test a theory of solid-state parametric mass fluctuation. Here is the URL for a good overview of the device that he published online at www.intalek.com:

**http://www.intalek.com/Index/Projects/
SmartPAK/Projects/ZPOD/
ZPOD_System03.pdf**
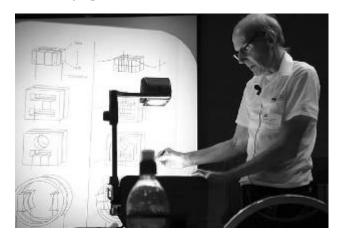
Rio Von Sternberg

Rio Von Sternberg was presented as the original inventor of the MEG. He apparently has a patent on the device; however, from his presentation I understand that his configuration is somewhat different than the model that J.L.Naudin and T.E.Bearden have been experimenting with.

Alexander Peterson had a very interesting presentation on optical-mirror magnetic field systems. The crux of his presentation involved cutting precise notches into magnetic coils to separate them into identical optical-isomeric shapes. Apparently, by cutting a thin line directly down the center of the transformer-core is believed by Peterson to increase the efficiency of electric motors by up to 50%.
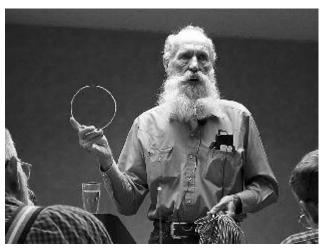
Alexander Peterson

Mark Plotkin, a well-known Washington DC attorney also took part in the conference. He is interested in new energy technologies and works with new technologies in collaboration with Mark Whitford at www.awetec.info. The photo of Mark shows him rotating a steel coil apparatus that was passed around the conference by Slim Spurling.

Mark Plotkin

Slim Spurling is an inventor from the Southwest, shown holding a helical-wound coil that he claims provides health benefits through an interface with zero-point energy. Spurling's belief is that this specific circumference of the coils provides a "Casimir-like Effect" that concentrates the energy.

Slim Spurling
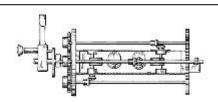
Donald Smith

Note: Donald Smith, a well-known inventor, also took part in this year's conference. His work is described in more detail in a separate article of this issue.
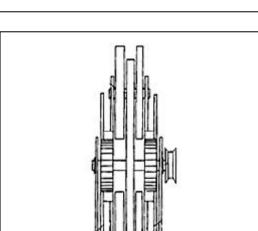
Full information on the conference and reports is presented at http:// ionvalve.com/iw/2003/ conference2003.htm.
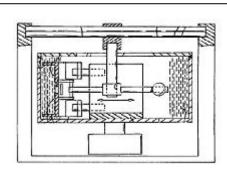
Information from www.rexresearch.com/inertial/
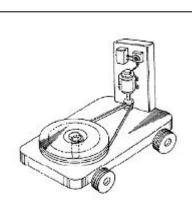
№ 6,290,622 (7/18/01)
Mechanical Force Generator
Murray, Lawrence D.

№ 6,259,177 (7/10/01)
Motion Imparting System
Deschamplain, Daviv
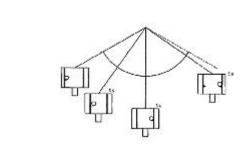
№ 5,890,400 (4/06/99)
Apparatus for Generating
a Propulsion Force
Oades, Ross A.
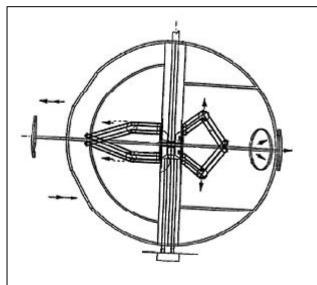
№ 5,937,698 (8/17/99)
Centrifugal Propulsi
on System
Kunz, William T.
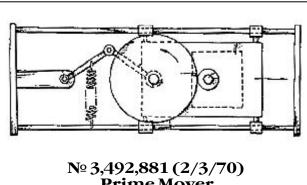
№ 6,089,511 (7/18/00)
Method & Apparatus
for Propulsion
Rasmussen, James K.
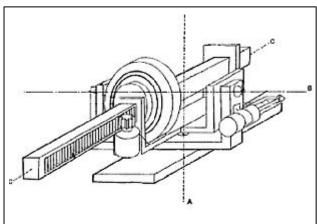
№ 5,966,986 (10/19/99)
Propulsion System
Laul, Virgil R.
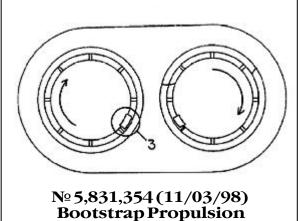
№ 5,673,872 (10/7/97)
Apparatus for Energy
Transformation & Conservation
Shimshi, Ezra.

№ 5,831,354 (11/03/98)
Bootstrap Propulsion
System
Stopplecamp, Timothy J.
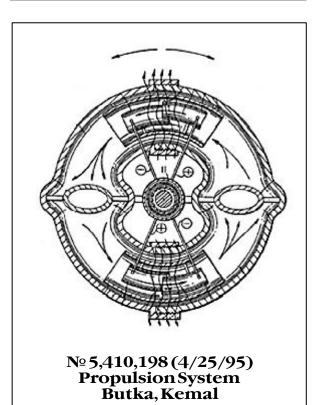
№ 3,492,881 (2/3/70)
Prime Mover
Auweele, Albert J. v.

№ 5,410,198 (4/25/95)
Propulsion System
Butka, Kemal
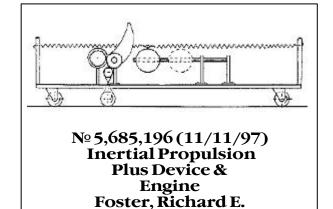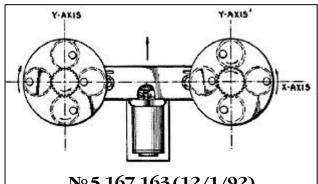
№ 5,860,317 (1/19/99)
Gyroscopic Propulsion System
Laithwaite, Eric R. &
Dawson, Wm.

№ 5,685,196 (11/11/97)
Inertial Propulsion
Plus Device &
Engine
Foster, Richard E.
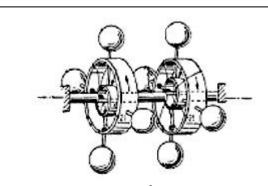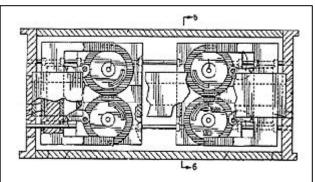
№ 5,167,163 (12/1/92)
Energy Transfer Device
McMahon, John C.

№ 5,182,958 (2/2/93)
Non-Linear Propulsion &
Energy
Conversion System
Black, James W.
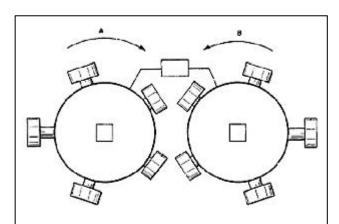
№ 5,557,988 (9/24/96)
Centripetally Impelled
Vehicle
Claxton, John C.

№ 5,782,134 (7/21/98)
Electromagnetically Actuated
Thrust Generator
Bouden, James D.
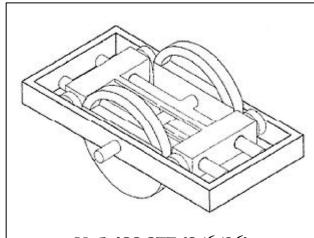
№ 5,156,058
Converting Rotary Motion
to
Lineal Motion
Bristow, Theodore R., Jr.
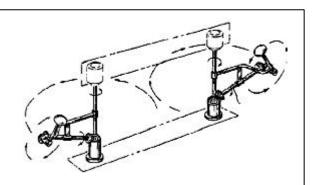
№ 5,488,877 (2/6/96)
Centrifugal
Inertia Drive
Lieurance, Richard L.
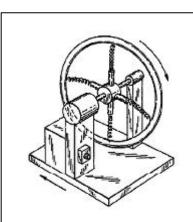
№ 5,024,112(6/18/91)
Gyroscopic Apparatus
Kidd, Alexander D.
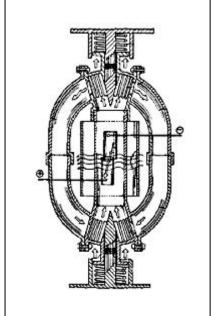
№ 4,801,111(1/31/89)
System for Propulsion &
Positioning
Rogers, Charles E., et al.
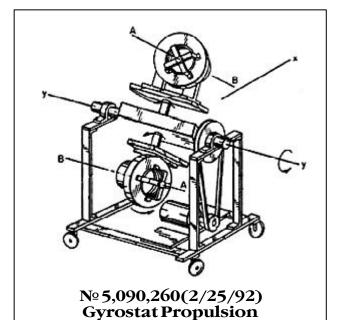
№ 4,991,453(2/12/91)
Centripedal Device for
Concentrating
Centrifugal Force
Mason, Lyle M.

№ 4,784,006(11/15/88)
Gyroscopic Propulsion
Device
Kethley, Lancelot I.
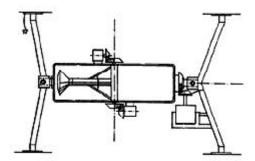
№ 5,111,087(5/5/92)
Propulsion System
Butka, Kemal.
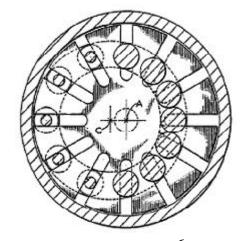
№ 5,090,260(2/25/92)
Gyrostat Propulsion
System
Derloy, M.S.& Derloy M.
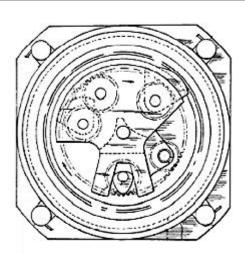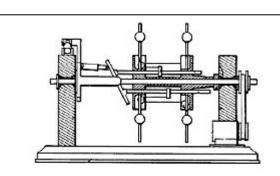
№ 4,884,456 (12/5/99)
**Centripedal Device for
Concentrating
Centrifugal Force
Zachystal, George J.**
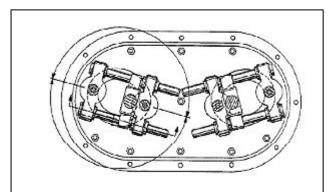
№ 4,788,882 (12/6/88)
**Flywheel
Fulop, Charles.**
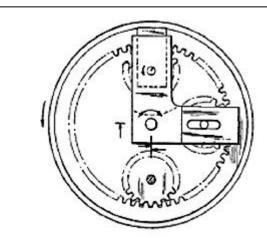
№ 5,042,313 (8/27/91)
**Conversion of
Rotational Output
to Linear Force
Montalbano, Paul J.**
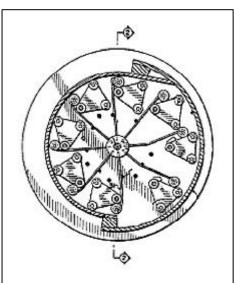
№ 5,054,331 (10/8/91)
**Controllable
Gyroscopic Propulsion
Apparatus
Rodgers, A.T.**
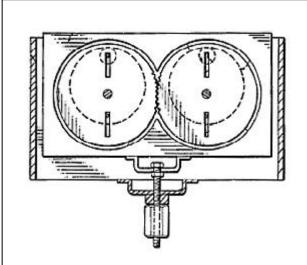
№ 4,770,063 (9/13/88)
**Universal Propulsion Powerplant &
Impulse Drive Unit
Mundo, James D.**
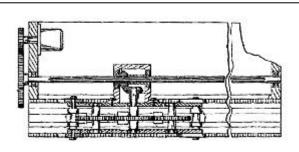
№ 4,856,358 (8/15/89)
**Conversion of
Rotational Output
to Linear Force
Montalbano, Paul J.**
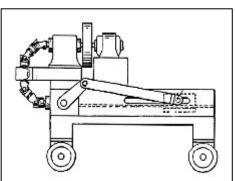
№ 4,744,259 (7/17/88)
Apparatus for
Producing a Directional
Unit Force
Peterson, Oscar F.A.
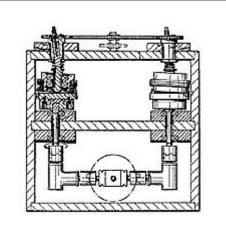
№ 4,712,439 (12/15/87)
Apparatus for Producing a Force
North, Henry.
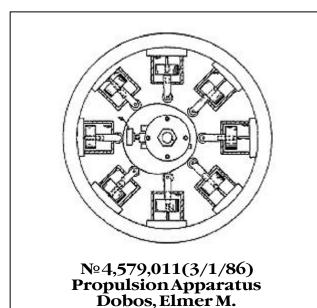
№ 4,242,918 (1/6/81)
Mechanical Propulsion System
Srogi, Ladislaw G.
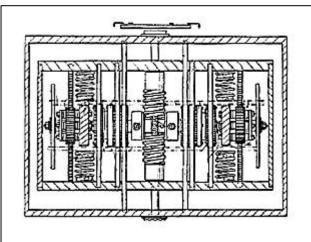
№ 4,674,583 (6/23/87)
Impulse Drive
Peppiatt, Alvin C., et al
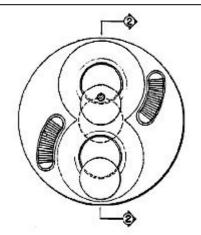
№ 4,409,856 (10/18/83)
Propulsion System
de Weaver, Fred, III.

№ 4,579,011 (3/1/86)
Propulsion Apparatus
Dobos, Elmer M.
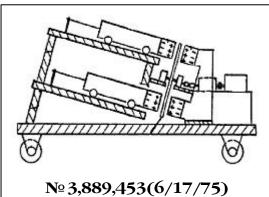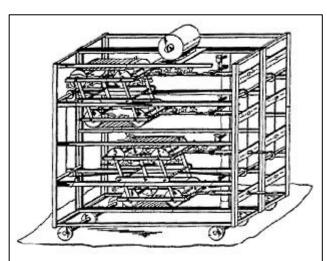
№ 4,577,520(3/25/86)
Mechanical Propulsion System
Colla, Joseph.
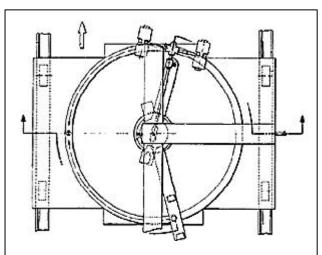
№ 4,631,971(12/30/86)
Apparatus for
Developing a Propulsive
Force
Thornson, Brandson R.
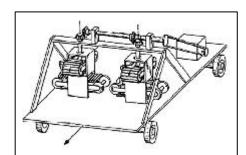
№ 3,889,453(6/17/75)
Propulsion System
Mast, Oscar.
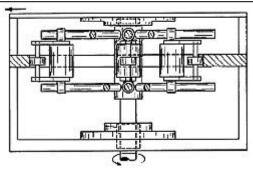
№ 4,726,241(2/23/88)
Continuous Force & Impact
Generator
Melnick, Harry S.
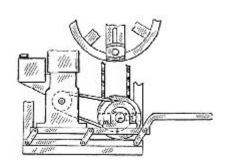
№ 4,238,968(12/16/80)
Conversion of Centrifugal Force
to Linear Force &
Motion
Cook, Robert L.
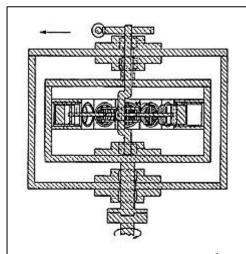
№ 4,261,212(4/14/81)
Unidirectional
Force Generator
Melnick, Harry S.
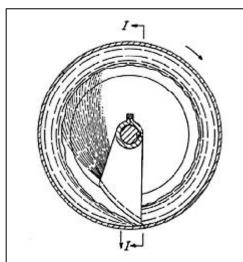
№ 3,968,700 (7/13/76)
Converting Rotary Motion into a Unidirectional Linear Motion
Cuff, Calvin I.
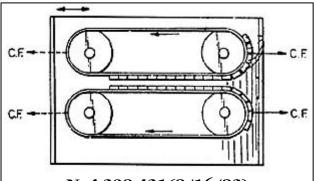
№ 4,347,752 (9/7/82)
Converting Rotary Motion to a Rectilinear Force
Dehen, Frederick L.
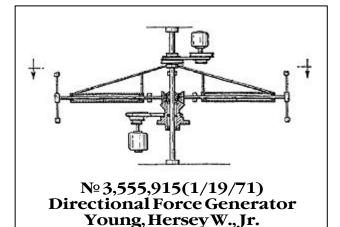
№ 3,998,107 (12/21/76)
Converting Rotary Motion into a Unidirectional Linear Motion
Cuff, Calviv I.
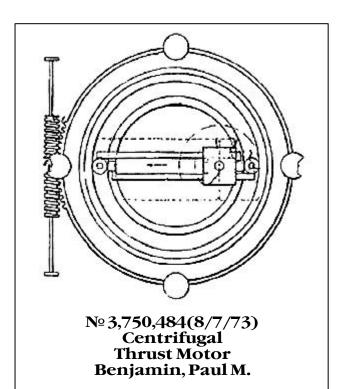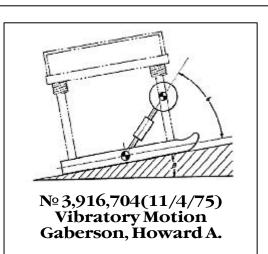
№ 3,979,961 (9/14/76)
Propelling an Object by an Unbalanced Centrifugal Force...
Schnur, Nicolas J.
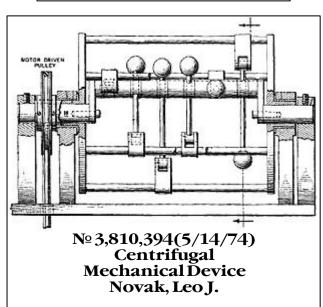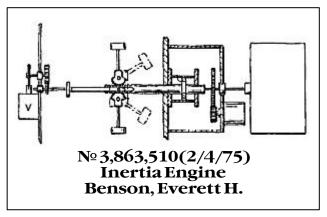
№ 4,398,431 (8/16/83)
Mechanical Power Transmitting System
Melnick, Harry S.

№ 3,555,915 (1/19/71)
Directional Force Generator
Young, Hersey W., Jr.

№ 3,863,510 (2/4/75)
Inertia Engine
Benson, Everett H.

№ 3,750,484 (8/7/73)
Centrifugal
Thrust Motor
Benjamin, Paul M.

№ 3,756,086 (9/4/73)
Propulsion System
McAlister, Roy E., et al.

№ 3,916,704 (11/4/75)
Vibratory Motion
Gaberson, Howard A.

MOTOR DRIVEN
PULLEY

№ 3,810,394 (5/14/74)
Centrifugal
Mechanical Device
Novak, Leo J.

№ 3,807,244 (4/30/74)
Device for Transforming Kinetic
Energy
Estrade, Fernand.

№ 3,584,515 (6/15/71)
Propulsion Apparatus
Matyas, Laszlo B.
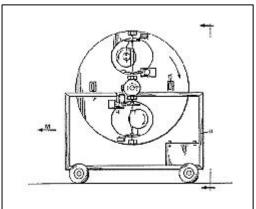
№ 3,196,580 (7/27/65)
Toy Vehicle Having...Self-Contained
Drive Means
Rakestraw, Robert G.
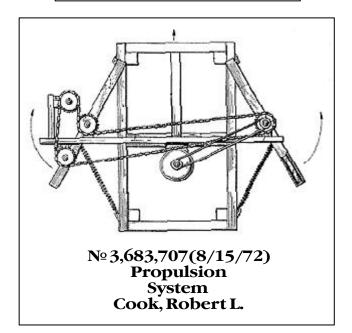
№ 3,266,233 (8/16/66)
Inertia Propulsion
Device
Farrall, Arthur W.
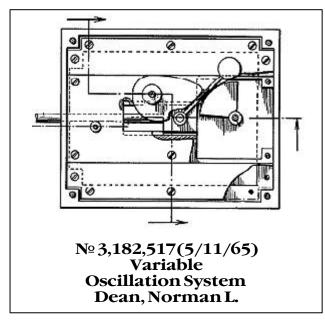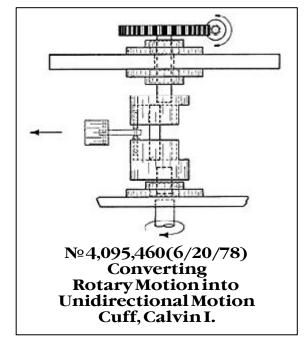
№ 3,177,660 (4/13/65)
Propulsion
Apparatus
Haller, Paul.
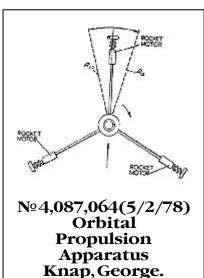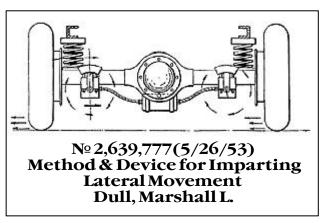
№ 3,653,269 (4/4/72)
Converting
Rotary Motion
into
Unidirectional Motion
Foster, Richard E.

№ 3,683,707 (8/15/72)
Propulsion
System
Cook, Robert L.

№ 3,182,517 (5/11/65)
**Variable
Oscillation System
Dean, Norman L.**

№ 4,095,460 (6/20/78)
**Converting
Rotary Motion into
Unidirectional Motion
Cuff, Calvin I.**

№ 4,087,064 (5/2/78)
**Orbital
Propulsion
Apparatus
Knap, George.**

№ 2,639,777 (5/26/53)
**Method & Device for Imparting
Lateral Movement
Dull, Marshall L.**

№ 2,886,976 (5/19/59)
**System for
Converting Rotary Motion into
Unidirectional Motion
Dean, Norman L.**

№ 3,203,644 (8/31/65)
**Gyroscopic
Inertial Space Drive
Kellogg, H. Dudley**

№ 2,636,340 (4/28/53)
**Direct Push
Propulsion Unit
Llamozas, Juan D. M.**

№ 5,150,626 (9/29/92)
**Translational Force
Generator
Navarro, T. L.**

JOURNALED TO A
VEHICLE AT EACH END
OF THE SHAFT
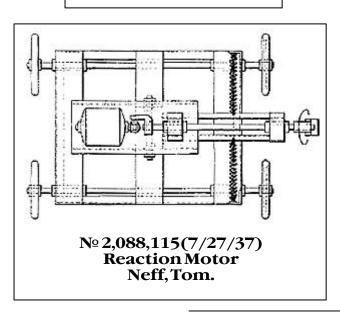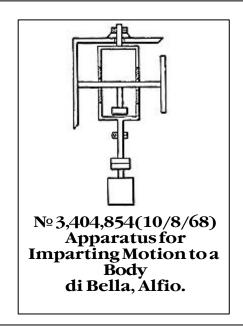
№ 3,238,714 (3/8/66)
**Thrust Motor
Schur, George O.**

RESULTANT

№ 2,009,780 (7/30/35)
**Centrifugal Variable Thrust
Mechanism
Laskowitz, Isidor B.**

№ 2,088,115 (7/27/37)
**Reaction Motor
Neff, Tom.**

№ 3,404,854 (10/8/68)
**Apparatus for
Imparting Motion to a
Body
di Bella, Alfio.**

The Free Energy Centrifugal Force Experiment
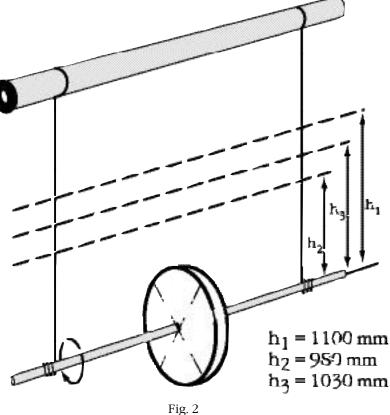
**This experiment is conducted by Faraday Lab Ltd
in cooperation with V. I. Bogomolov**

In the previous issue we wrote about the invention of Bogomolov V. I. The device shown in Fig.1 (and also on the cover) was constructed and tested in our laboratory.

Fig. 1
The Device

The simplified diagram is known as "Maxwell's Pendulum" (Fig.2). This is a disk set onto the horizontal axis with two attached strings. The upper ends of the strings are fixed to the crossbar.

$h_1 = 1100$ mm
$h_2 = 950$ mm
$h_3 = 1030$ mm

Fig. 2

If we wind the strings about the axis, the disk will lift (the height h) and store the potential energy of the Earth's gravitational field $E = mgh$ (m - mass of the flywheel; g - free fall acceleration; h - the height of the mass fall). If we let the pendulum go, we can observe periodic "up-and-down" damped oscillations: first, the string spins and potential energy converts into rotation kinetic energy; upon reaching the lowest point the disk, still rotating, goes up using rotation kinetic energy and then converts it again into potential energy. This device is interesting: due to the energy conservation law we can observe the usage of rotation kinetic energy of the flywheel, measuring only the h-parameter, the lift height of the flywheel strings in the second semi-oscillation compared to the height with which the pendulum started falling in the first semi-oscillation, the difference h1 - h2 of the two semi-oscillations is directly proportional to the losses of rotation kinetic energy for air resistance work and friction.

We have made "Maxwell's Pendulum" more complicated by substituting the flywheel disk for the Watt centrifugal governor in accordance with its description in the article (1). The main difference of the device from Maxwell's flywheel is that the flywheel inertia momentum changes by the centrifugal force operation at the lever transferring of weights (the total weight - 1200 g) from the minimum radius position (40 mm) to the maximum radius position

(90 mm). At that, the levers compress the string with the force of about 16 N.

There have been three stages of the experiments. During the first stage we define the necessary lift height of 1100 mm at moment when the string winds around the axle. When the flywheel falls from this height, the rotation speed and centrifugal force are achieved, which move apart the loads to the maximum radius (90 mm) and which **completely compress the string**. During the second stage the loads are fixed at the minimum radius position (40 mm), thus the compress string centrifugal forces are not involved any more and we can measure the air resistance and friction **losses of kinetic energy**. At this stage the flywheel lifts up to 980 mm losing 120 mm. During the third final stage the load fixing rods are taken away and *centrifugal forces are applied*. Just like during the second stage the Watt governor starts spin-falling from the height of 1100 mm. It compresses the string and lifts up to the height of 1030 mm thus **exceeding the second stage height by 50 mm**!

The experiment conclusions of the author:

1. At the third stage the flywheel exceeds the "loss height" h=980 mm. This means that the compression of the string was performed "for free".

2. At the third stage the flywheel converted kinetic energy into potential energy and lifted up 50 mm more. This means that in accordance with the principle of conservation of moment of momentum, the **outer compressed string energy force** has caused the moment of momentum change of the rotating masses, thus giving the additional acceleration to the flywheel and **increasing its kinetic energy "for free"**!

3. For the practical application of the Bogomolov generator in order to generate free energy it is necessary to achieve a high rotation speed (more than 10 000 rpm) and involve centrifugal forces to transfer the rotating mass to the less possible inertia radius difference.

The described centrifugal regulator diagram is not sufficient for larger experiments. For the industrial generator the author has a hydraulic-principle pneumatic string device drawing (know-how).

Editor: Also in this issue: the article on "Glen Gates Motor" by A. Akau. The principle is almost the same. The further implementation of this idea may soon design purely mechanical power-generating systems, which use inertia and centrifugal forces.

References:

1. Bogomolov V.I. "The Bogomolov Generator", New Energy Technologies, Issue # 4, 2003.

History of Perpetual Motion and Free Energy Machines

Web site http://www.phact.org/e/dennis4.html

Hundreds of people for centuries have attempted to solve the holy grail of energy production - **Perpetual Motion Machines**. Still to this day Eric Kreig gets weekly emails from people who feel they are about to get one working. Eric is very skeptical about free energy. But his collection of information is very interesting. Eric offered a special prize for those who will agree to publicly test their over-unity devices.

♦   **Villand de Honnecourt** 13th century had a drawing of one.

♦   **Leonardo da vinci** made a number of drawings of things he hoped would make energy for free.

♦   Jesuit priest, **Johanes Taisnerius** worked on a magnetic based perpetual motion machine.

♦   **Mimara** in 1518 designed a "self-blowing windmill".

♦   **John Dee** of 16th century reported seeing one - but wasn't allowed a closer look.

♦   **Cornelis Drebbel**, 1610, was an alchemist and magician supposedly made one.

♦   **Robert Fludd** 1630 proposed many machines -people were trying to patent variations of Fludd's device in the 1870's.

♦   **Edward Somerset** 1638 demonstrated many free energy water wheels to the king of France.

♦   **1635** - first of many English perpetual motion machine patents granted. - By 1903, 600 such patents had been granted. Free energy claimants love impressing people with patents.

♦   **Ulrich von Carnach** in 1664 in Germany designed a perpetual ball-moving machine.

♦   Scientist **Jean Bernoulli** (1667 - 1748) proposed a fluid energy machine.

♦   **Bockler** in 1686 made designs for self powered water mills.

♦   In 1712 **Johann Bessler aka Orffyreus** investigated 300 different perpetual motion models and claimed he had the secret of perpetual motion and got much investment money.

♦   **Dr Conradus Schiviers** in 1790 made a belt driven wheel.

♦   **Sir William Congreve** in 1827 tried a machine running on capillary action.

♦   Britisher **Henry Prince** 1866 described the first partially submerged perpetual motion machine.

♦   **Mark Zimara** of Italy had a huge air powered machine that never worked.

♦   **Horace Wickmam** of the USA got a patent to a machine with many balls that just rotate around.

♦   Austrian, **Alois Drasch** patented a machine in the US in 1868.

♦   German, **George Andreas Bockler** proposed 'self operating mills' using variants of Archimedes screws.

♦   **E. P. Willis** of Connecticut made money off a perpetual motion machine in 1870 - people eventually found out a secret source of power to it.

♦ **Charles Redheffer** in 1812 in **Philadelphia** made much money on a perpetual motion machine, tried to restrict scientific evaluation, but was eventually debunked.

♦ Scottish shoemaker **Spence** designed a magnetic based machine, which was debunked.

♦ **John Worrel Keely** of Philadelphia in 1872 (he also had a traveling show of exhibitions). He fooled many scientists with a machine, which appeared to run on water.

♦ **John Gamgee** in 1881 got considerable support for a machine very similar to Dennis Lee's, which used liquid ammonia - it got vaporized from heat readily available, thus expanding it would drive a piston. Gamgee thought the vapor would condense to liquid to start the cycle over again. The Navy appeared to have been fooled and showed it to president Garfield - it never went anywhere Tom Napier agrees that Dennis Lee may have resurrected Gamgee's engine.

♦ **J. M. Aldrich** was arrested for getting investors for his free energy machine in 1899 - he some how was able to avoid conviction and conned many investors. One of whom was finally able to inspect the machine found a hidden spring.

♦ **T.H. Moray** in the 20's demonstrated a "radiant energy device" to many people who were unable to find a hidden power source. Some how, the secret was said to have been forgotten.

♦ **Lester Hendershot** in 1928 got an Army commandant to endorse his free energy machine - but it was later found to have a hidden power source in the motor. His sons believe Lester lost his notes and that maybe they can rediscover how to get it to work.

♦ **Viktor Schauberger** claimed to have discovered some special vortex energy in water. Since he died in 1958, I don't know if his claims have been replicated, but people are still studying his works.

♦ **Mr Papf** in 1966 was a conspiracy believer alternative car engine got a few investors but killed someone during a demo. He tried to blame the problem on an investigating skeptic. He disappeared and became part of urban legend of scores of people, which the big conspiracy has been silencing for generations.

♦ **Guido Franch** was convicted of fraud in 1954 and 1973 of selling rights to distribute little green pills that would convert water into gas. He hid behind conspiracy theory and secrecy to avoid fair testing. A number of people have run this scam and many people still believe there are pill repressed by the oil companies.

♦ **Garabed T.K. Giragossian** in 1917 claimed to have a free energy machine. He was one of the early frauds to hide behind conspiracy theory. Woodrow Wilson signed a resolution offering him protection from some kind of conspiracy. After much fanfare, and delaying tactics his machine turned out to be a giant flywheel, which was charged up with energy slowly and put out a lot of energy for just a second. In spite of lack of proof of anything significant his followers still bothered the US congress for recognition.

♦ **Otis Carr** in 1958 sold stock for a company to manufacture UFO's and free energy machines from Oklahoma. He claimed inspiration from Tesla.

♦ **Edgar Cayce** even babbles about "Motor's with no Fuel".

♦ **McClintock** was claimed to use air as a fuel and had a patent.

♦ The **Evgray** machine scammed many investors (who didn't know how to test 'depleted' batteries).

♦ **Arnold Burke** in 1977 collected $800,000 of investor money (again, mostly from bible believing farmers) for a 'self acting pump'. He tried to hide behind religion. He called his device Jeremiah 33:3' Finally, an open test was done in 1979 and found a hidden source of electricity. His believers (with

an infinite supply of denial) still raised $250,000 to get out of a fraud conviction. He still went on making lots of claims with no evidence.

♦ **Robert Adams** in 1977 made all kinds of conspiracy and OU claims in New Zealand. Many still believe in the Adams Motor. - He had the obligatory battles over patents, debates over theory, debates over power measurement and dabbling in other areas of alt physics. He's 80 years old and said to have a scientific education. He has a lot of theories about Aether. Skeptical information.

♦ **Robert Stewart** in 1978 got over $3,000,000 of investment money (much from farmers) for a closed cycle engine using freon rather than water. This 'engine' used the same scheme John Gamgee tried to sell the navy in 1882. -Eric Krieg thinks this is the same approach Dennis Lee's free energy machine works on. I think he just faded away (people claim he was silenced).

♦ **Rory Johnson** of Elgin Illinois, claimed to have invented a cold fusion, laser activated, magnetic motor that produced 525 HP, weighed 475 lbs, and would propel a large truck or bus 100,000 miles. After signing a number of dealers, he moved all his equipment out of his labs, moved to CA and died. (To this day, folks say he was silenced by OPEC).

♦ **RJeseph Maglich** was a physicist and claimed to have a device in 1978, which harnessed fusion power from seawater. They say they put power in and get more power out. I've never heard of them since.

♦ **Howard Johnson** got a patent for a device that claimed to make free energy from a motor like device. As of 11/02, Stephen was claiming he would soon mail out samples of working ones. By 12/12/02, Stephen dropped out of contact.

♦ **Keith Kenyon** had a device claimed to produce more energy than consumed. Calculations seemed to not take power factor (also known as phase angle) into account. It never openly had its output

hooked up to its input. Even Dennis Lee tells his followers that all the *over unity motors* (claim to make more electricity than consumed) usually just fool people who can't measure power factor.

♦ **Muller:** Bill Muller and Carmen Muller of Germany raised money on an over unity motor and got a few followers, but never actually demonstrated one working.

♦ **Dennis Lee** Since 1988 has been promising to demonstrate free electricity "in a month or two". He is much like Newman in his mixture of religion & extremist politics, evasion of qualified investigators, endless promises, threatening detractors, etc. He had a Fischer engine, a CRD device and now, and OU motor device. Dennis has invested in Searle and Stanley Meyer and joined Pantone in 2001 in a 50 state tour.

♦ **Stanley Meyer** 1996 claimed to have a water powered car and was also big on mixing Christianity and patriot politics in with fringe science. Meyer was found guilty of fraud after his Water Fuel Cell was tested before an Ohio judge. It is rare for an inventor to be prosecuted for an invention that does not work, but Meyer's problem was that he had been selling "dealerships", offering investors the "right to do business" in Water Fuel Cell technology. Meyer refused to allow anyone else to measure his device. Dennis Lee invested in him. He died in early 1998.

♦ **Joseph Newman** in 1984 claimed to have a free energy machine based on alternative physics. Like many perpetual motion inventors, he sued the US patent office. Many people wrongly measured the true power output of this machine, (they didn't realize you must specially calculate power for non sinusoidal current consumption). He now refuses to ship a unit for testing. Ten years ago, inventor Joseph Newman gave an open week-long demonstration in the Super dome in New Orleans. Over 9,000 people attended from across the country (including Dennis Lee who reportedly wanted to join his ideas with Newman). Newman is suing some former

investors he claims are trying to steal his invention. I give more information. Evan Soule of Newman's organization offers a rebuttal.

♦ **Bruce De Palma** had a machine in 1986, which appeared to one Electrical Engineering professor to put out 4 times more power than consumed. Turned out it was just a measurement error. (We could go on and on with such examples).

♦ **Dr. Potapov** sold a device that was claimed to produce more energy than consumed.

Editor: Eric's skeptical remarks can be tolerated but sometimes he writes about the things he does not know. Potapov and his team have created a technology, which have been replicated and sold by dozens of companies in Russia (see the cover picture of the Susorov heat generator). There are several devices in St. Petersburg to be tested. The efficiency is 200 % and more. The operation principle: electric motor rotates in water and causes the heating of water. We have also received the information about another Russian invention, namely the close cycle vortex generator: "water rotation – vapour – turbine – electric power " (the power is from 100 kW).

Alexander V. Frolov

♦ **John Bedini** claims to have a free energy device.

♦ **Mr. Finsrud** is a Norwegian artist who made a sculpture where a metal ball moves for weeks apparently with no outside influence.

♦ **Don Watts** of Las Vegas in around 1990 had a patented **CEACU**, which stands for Centrifugal Energy Amplification and Conversion Unit - it turned out to be one more investment fraud.

♦ **Stephan Marinov** claimed to have proven much alternative physics and to have contacted a Methernitha that claims to have a Free Energy Machine. He committed suicide on July 15, 1997 but he left behind some intense rants.

♦ **Greg Watson** sold kits for a rolling ball and track that were thought to have over unity in 1997. Attempts of replication I know of have failed.

♦ **CETI** These people have claimed to have a device that puts out anomalous yet small amounts of heat - maybe cold fusion. They raised millions. As of 10/97, they have not been willing to have me come over and see for myself. They have said, *we want people to think it doesn't work so we won't have competition.* I've wondered if the energy may have come from not accounting for friction effects from the cooling flow through the pellets. (**Jed Rothwell**, a rational editor of Infinite Energy Magazine says *"however, tests with CETI cells at Motorola, SRI and the French Atomic Energy Commission show no measurable friction"*). Milton Rothman has a response: "I openly admit that I have not followed all the history of cold fusion claims and am generally ignorant on the subject".

♦ In January 1998 **Barbara Hickox** allegedly has a patent dating from 1981 for a fusion powered free energy system.

♦ **Paramahamsa Tewari** of India claims to have a device that is 200% efficient.

♦ **RQM** is a Swiss company selling FE machines found at www.rqm.ch.

♦ **Ted King** is looking for people to buy stock for a car he plans to drive across the country using just 2 12-volt batteries. You can contact Ted if you want to buy shares.

♦ **Bruce Perreault** has claimed to have discovered a new element, the plasmatron, ion pump, radiant energy device, etc.

♦ **Daniel Pomerleau** of Canada claims to have something that works, but he isn't interested in releasing it (as 12/97).

♦ **Entropy Systems** of Ohio 1999 Sanjay Amin got 1.6 million investment dollars for a device that would violate the 2nd law of thermodynamics. I've asked them to apply for my prize for proof. - They seem to have folded. See a rational review of Amin's claims.

♦ **Brian Collin** of Australia claims revelation from God *(like most of these people)* to make a free energy device. A Stephen Mark claimed he invented it.

♦ **Kawai** and **Takahashi** - both of Japan claimed in the 90's to have overunity devices.

♦ **Carl Cella** claimed to have one of the many cars said to run on water.

♦ **Robert LeBreton** in 1999 claimed to be making a 600 hp free energy machine.

♦ **Renzo Boscolio** in 1999 in Italy claimed to have low-energy nuclear reactions but refused to supply real proof that he promised to people who came out from Infinite Energy Magazine.

♦ **Doug Konzen** of Seattle says he has an overunity motor in Jan of 2000 that anyone can see.

♦ **Troy Reed** of Oklahoma was ready to issue licenses for manufacturing his permanent magnet motor etc. He's taking investment money for a device he claims puts out more heat energy than input energy. He says he's dumped a few million into his designs over the last 10 years and had little interest in my prize offer when I contacted him in 2001.

♦ **Kipper Motor.** In 10/00, Steve Elswick thought it was overunity. But David Sligar who paid $175 for plans could not get it working.

♦ **Ludwig Brits and Victor Christie** in 2001, claim the **Lutec** free electricity over unity motor/generator will soon be in Australia.

♦ **Jasker** in 2002, an Irish company has claimed to have free electricity. (Some have said it is just a joke).

♦ **Confidential Technology -Wayne Cochran** died 12/29/02 Crazy Jack Carey took over. They have been promising FE soon for about 20 years now.

♦ **Tom Bearden's MEG device:** many articles on the Internet.

♦ **Gurbakhsh Singh Mann of India** claims to have invented gravity and buoyancy perpetual motion machines.

♦ **Michael J. Marshall** in Las Vegas has a device called QSFG , which stands for quick start fuel-less generator he says 64 nations have asked him to build factories.

♦ **Carl Tilley and Robert Kibbey** in 6/2001 in Tennessee have claimed some over unity device and other stuff. Their demonstration failed in 9/02 and as of 11/02, they have been evading proper demonstrations.

♦ **Stephen Walker** in 9/2002 promised to send me and several others a free energy machine in mail.

♦ **PerEnDev** promised to make some kind of free energy by means of magnets.

♦ **Bill Muller** of Canada in 2003 claimed to have some kind of OU device. Independent tests found it under unity.

♦ **Energie:** In 2003 this Greek company promised a homopolar magnet (De Palma design) FE design by June of 2003. They actively seek investors.

♦ **GWE Genesis World Energy** In 2002 this group claimed to have 400 people who developed some device that sounds like it separates water into H2 and O2 using less energy than mainstream science says is possible. As of 2003, they have evaded independent confirmation. More information is available.

♦ **Steven Greer (Disclosure Project)** In 02.2003, Steven announced he had discovered some real sources of Free energy, which he promised to make sure get proven to the general public.

Tesla Energy Science Conference and Exposition

1220 L Street NW, Suite 100-232 Washington DC 20005

Tel: 800-295-7674

Fax: 301-513-5728

www.IntegrityResearchInstitute.org

Email: iri@erols.com

Saturday, November 8, 2003
Wireless Electricity Seminar

9:30 AM 10:15 AM

Opening Address: "Space Solar Power" – Dr. **Paul Werbos** Program Director, National Science Foundation

10:15 AM 12:15 PM

Special 2-Hour Presentation: "Nicola Tesla and the development of RF Power Systems" - Dr. **James Corum**, Physics Professor, research Scientist and Inventor and **Kenneth Corum**, Physicist, teacher, consultant.

2:00 Pm 3:00 PM

"Power Engineering Scalar Field Theory: Faraday vs. Maxwell and Longitudinal Wave Demonstration" – Professor **Konstantin Meyl**, Engineer, Author, Inventor of the Demo-Set, Professor at the University of Berlin

3:15 PM 4:15 PM

"Wireless Energy Through the Earth-Ionosphere Cavity" – Dr. **Elizabeth Rauscher,** Nuclear and Astrophysicist, Inventor of the ELF Earthquake Predictor and Triangulator.

4:15 PM 5:15 PM

"Masters of the Ionosphere HAARP Modifies the Polar Electrojet" – **BBC Video on Tesla Technology**, with Wiliam Terbo, demonstrating ionospheric excitation by radio waves.

6:30 PM 7:15 PM

Masters of the Ionosphere – BBC Video Presentation **repeated** for the Special Tesla Evening Event attendees

7:30 PM 8:30 PM

"The Wardenclyffe Dream: Tesla's Plan for Wireless Worldwide Distribution" – **Dr. Marc Seifer** Professor, Author of the best-selling book *Wizard, The Life and Times of Nikola Tesla*, presents an illustrated historical account.

8:30 PM 9:00 PM

High Voltage Tesla Coil Demo – **High Voltage Device** with **Music**: The Tesla Tower wind ensemble composition by Prof. **Holland**, Skidmore College

Sunday November 9, 2003
Electrotherapeutic and Tesla History Day

9:30 AM – 10:30 AM

"A Family Perspective on the Personality of Nikola Tesla. Review of the Popular Interest in this Scientific Icon" with Q and A Session – **William Terbo**, Engineer, Closest living relative of Tesla (Grand-nephew). Founder and Director of the Tesla Memorial Society.

10:30 AM 11:30 AM

"The Search for Free Energy: Genius, Vision and Psychology of Invention" – **Keith Tutt**, British Writer and Author of the book *The Scientist, The Madman, The Thief and their Lightbulb* that includes Tesla.

11:30 AM 12:15 PM

"Electrotherapy with Tesla Coil Design: Intorduction to Bioelectromagnetics" – Dr. **Thomas Valone** Physicist, Professional Engineer, Author of the new book, Bioeletromagnetic Healing: A rational for its Use.

12:15 PM 1:00 PM

Exhibitors Presentations – **Brief Presentations by exhibitors** (5-10 minutes each)

2:00 PM-3:00 PM

"Emerging Opportunity: cancer Electromagnetic Frequency Therapy" – Dr. **Mark Neveu** President, the National Foundation for Alternative medicine.

3:00 PM 4:00 PM

"Turn of the Century Electrotherapy Discoveries" – **Jefrey Behay** Director, The Turn of the Century Electrotherapy Museum.

4:00 PM 5:00 PM

"How a Crushed Leg Helped Me Discover High Voltage Electromagnetic Healing Device" – **Ralph Suddath**, Third generation Tesla Electrotheraphy Inventor, radio Host, Entrepreneur.

5:00 PM 5:15 PM

Closing Remarks – **Thomas Valone** Program Coordinator

The Conference Report Compilation can be purchased from T. Valone, Integrity Research Institute.

"Nornikel" and Alternative Energy

"Norilsky Nikel", the largest Russian non-ferrous metal producing company has announced the beginning of the cooperation with the Russian Academy of Science. Metallurgists are planning to invest into the development of the hydrogen energy and fuel cell R&D projects of the Russian Academy of Sciences. Accordingly, last week an agreement was signed. **Mikhail Prohorov**, the General Director of "Nornikel" said that they are ready to invest 20-40 million dollars annually into R&D projects of the Academy in this field.

"Expert" magazine, # 43, November 17-23, 2003

PERENDEV Magnetic Motor

Review

Shown below is a Magnetic Motor with Alternator (Patent Pending):

Fig.1

This is the "PerEnDev" (Perpetuum Energy Devices) company latest motor predicted to deliver some 60 kW. Motors can be built up to 4 mW.

Background of the Magnetic Motor

The Company started in 1969 with the development of a magnetic motor to drive an alternator to produce electricity. The concept was sound but the problem they faced was that the magnets that were available at the time (ferrite magnets) were not very powerful. The unit ran but had very little power and the project was abandoned.

In 1996 the "Perendev" company started to investigate the possibility of reviving the original idea, magnets had now come a long way and were very powerful (rare earth).

Fig. 2
Rare earth magnets

After the engineers successfully designed a new model, the company developed a 3 rotor system producing 6 kW, coupling this to an alternator through an 11:1 gearbox to produce electricity in 220volt and 380volt, single or 3 phase.

Fig.3

The units will be ideal for the small and large user, such as emergency, military, farms, plots,

industrial and large users... in fact any application requiring power.

Key Benefits Foreseen:

♦ No fuel costs

♦ Constant running

♦ Reliable

♦ Cost Effective

♦ Portable (6kw-120Kw)

Editor: In 2002 "Faraday Lab" got an offer from the company to buy their 6 kW generator for testing at the price of about $6,000. However, no contract was signed. The company is currently engaged in redesign of their motors and is looking for regional partners but they are not yet ready to produce on the line. In our issues we will try to inform the readers on their activities.   Alexander V. Frolov

Internet Pages

Lutec 1000

Jasker Power System
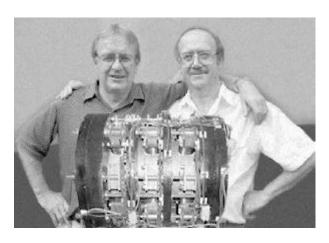
Electric Radial Motor

industrial and large users... in fact any application requiring power.

Key Benefits Foreseen:

♦ No fuel costs

♦ Constant running

♦ Reliable

♦ Cost Effective

♦ Portable (6kw-120Kw)

Editor: In 2002 "Faraday Lab" got an offer from the company to buy their 6 kW generator for testing at the price of about $6,000. However, no contract was signed. The company is currently engaged in redesign of their motors and is looking for regional partners but they are not yet ready to produce on the line. In our issues we will try to inform the readers on their activities.   Alexander V. Frolov

Internet Pages

Lutec 1000

Jasker Power System
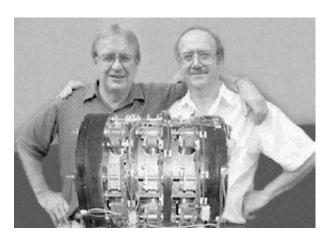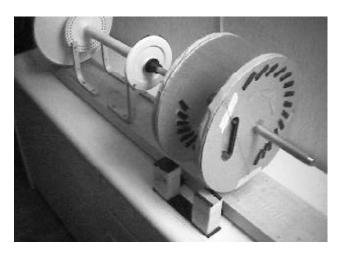
Electric Radial Motor

18 Meter Perpetual Wheel
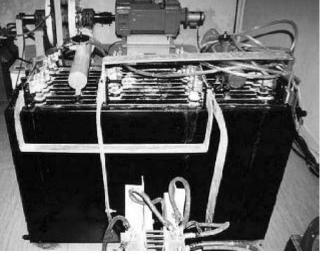
Minato Wheel, E. Vogel, Sweden
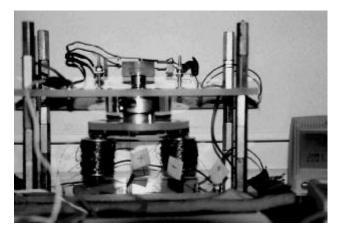
Generator from James W. German

Konzen
Pluse Motor

200-300 percent over-unity energy Space
Power Generator
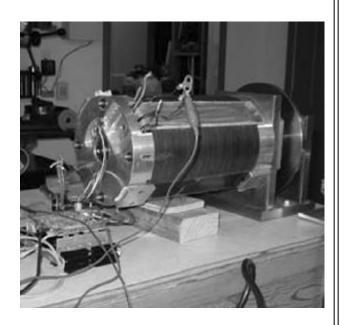
Adams Motor, Robert Adams

The RotoVerter
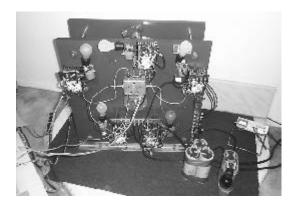
Bendini Pulse Motor
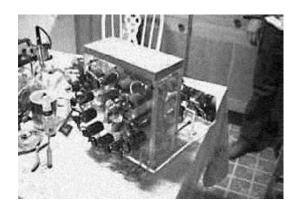
Motor based on Flynn Technology

Finsrud Device

The Muller Unit

Alte Olsen Generator

Entirely New Kind Of Generator Invented!

(1-26-2003) TASHKENT, Uzbekistan (UPI) – An Uzbek inventor said he has created a type of electrical generator that does not rely on the principle of electromagnetic induction – on which all existing generators are based.

The new generator employs a concept called **magnetic conductivity modulation** and it has potential applications in industry, communications, households and even the military, explained Vladimir Matveev, the inventor, a specialist in electronics.

Matveev said he is convinced he has created a fundamentally different machine.

"All electrical machines I know are based on the principle of interaction between the magnetic fluxes (lines of force) of their rotor (rotating member) and stator (portion that remains fixed)," he explained.

Such machines, Matveev said, are based on electromagnetic induction, a property of energy discovered by Michael Faraday, an English physicist and chemist, in the 19th century. The machines produce electrical current either by moving a conductor across a magnetic field or by regulating the flux of that field.

"My machine has a principal difference," Matveev told United Press International. "The magnetic field of its stator does not interact with the magnetic field of the rotor (because) its rotor is not a magnet – the rotor only changes the magnetic resistance of the stator," he said.

The stator in Matveev's generator contains a magnetic core with a permanent magnet and a detachable winding. A rotor with changeable magnetic resistance is placed at a cutoff point in the core's magnetic field. It is composed of alternating magnetic and air parts and can operate in either linear or rotary form.

When the rotor is set in motion, its alternating components pass through the magnetic core's cutoff point. When the magnetic part passes through the cutoff point its magnetic resistance decreases. When the air part passes through, its resistance increases.

This pulsing of resistance results in changing the magnetic conductivity of the magnetic core, which in turn produces an alternating electrical current in the core's winding. The frequency of the winding's current can be controlled by regulating the rotor's speed or by changing certain qualities of its magnetic or air parts. Also, the generator's electrical

The Muller Unit

Alte Olsen Generator

Vladimir Matveev's Electrical Generator

Entirely New Kind Of Generator Invented!

(1-26-2003) TASHKENT, Uzbekistan (UPI) – An Uzbek inventor said he has created a type of electrical generator that does not rely on the principle of electromagnetic induction – on which all existing generators are based.

The new generator employs a concept called **magnetic conductivity modulation** and it has potential applications in industry, communications, households and even the military, explained Vladimir Matveev, the inventor, a specialist in electronics.

Matveev said he is convinced he has created a fundamentally different machine.

"All electrical machines I know are based on the principle of interaction between the magnetic fluxes (lines of force) of their rotor (rotating member) and stator (portion that remains fixed)," he explained.

Such machines, Matveev said, are based on electromagnetic induction, a property of energy discovered by Michael Faraday, an English physicist and chemist, in the 19th century. The machines produce electrical current either by moving a conductor across a magnetic field or by regulating the flux of that field.

"My machine has a principal difference," Matveev told United Press International. "The magnetic field of its stator does not interact with the magnetic field of the rotor (because) its rotor is not a magnet – the rotor only changes the magnetic resistance of the stator," he said.

The stator in Matveev's generator contains a magnetic core with a permanent magnet and a detachable winding. A rotor with changeable magnetic resistance is placed at a cutoff point in the core's magnetic field. It is composed of alternating magnetic and air parts and can operate in either linear or rotary form.

When the rotor is set in motion, its alternating components pass through the magnetic core's cutoff point. When the magnetic part passes through the cutoff point its magnetic resistance decreases. When the air part passes through, its resistance increases.

This pulsing of resistance results in changing the magnetic conductivity of the magnetic core, which in turn produces an alternating electrical current in the core's winding. The frequency of the winding's current can be controlled by regulating the rotor's speed or by changing certain qualities of its magnetic or air parts. Also, the generator's electrical

output – its voltage – can be controlled by changing the configuration of the rotor's components, Matveev explained.

**Electrical machine assembly -
FEDORO V F 1996.10.10 1996RU-119822
(1998.09.27) G01R 31/34, 31/02**

Addnl.Data: VOROBEI V K   MATVEEV V A

NOVELTY - Device has electrical machine, non-brush field exciter with diode rectifier, two dynamics double-winding transformers, which primary windings are located on rotor and secondary windings on stator. One end of primary winding of second transformer is connected to rotor housing; another end is connected to common point of conductor which is connected between capacitor and cathode of semiconductor diode, which other terminals are connected to direct current terminals of diode rectifier. Semiconductor diode is connected to cathode group of rectifier; capacitor is connected to anode group. Secondary windings of transformers are connected to actuating member through generator of signal, which is proportional to resistance of insulation in excitation winding circuit.

USE - Electric power production

Matveev said his generator is different from an invention by Howard Johnson of the United States. Johnson discovered how to build motors that can run without input of electricity or any other kind of external energy. He obtained a patent in 1973 for describing electrical generation using only the energy contained in the atoms of permanent magnets.

Matveev also said some Russian inventors have experimented with a generator similar to his. Their generator changes its magnetic conductivity by changing temperature. However, the machine requires a lot of time to be heated and cooled alternately and results in a current frequency much lower than what generally is used in industry. Moreover, the Russian generator requires high steel density and greater mass.
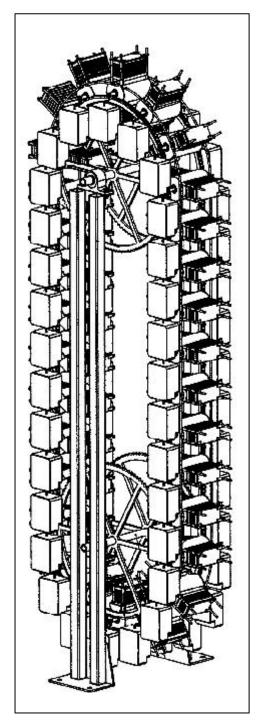
Matveev's machine generates electric energy of industrial frequency. Furthermore, he said his machine is simple, reliable and requires less steel and mass than conventional generators. It also can be adapted to flows of low speeds, such as weak water or wind streams. Matveev tested the generator in his former household in Kazakhstan before he patented it in Uzbekistan.
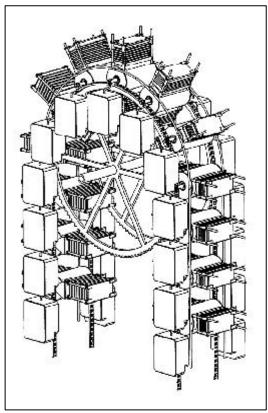
"I want to pass the invention on to all mankind," he said.
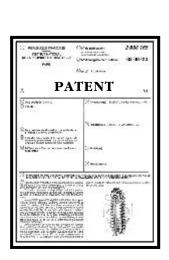
Boris Abdurakhmanov, director of the Uzbek Koinot (Cosmos) design office and head of the laboratory of semiconductors and photoelectricity of the Institute of Electronics of the Uzbek Academy of Sciences, told UPI: "Matveev has offered a fundamentally new approach to a problem of the creation of electric power generators."
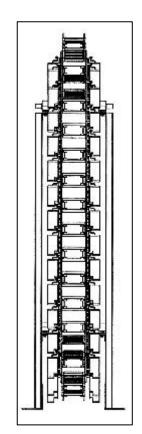
Utilization of the Gravity Force in Power Engineering
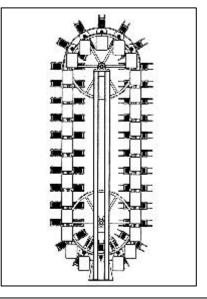
Editor: In the previous issue we made a review of Mikhail Smeretchanski's invention "Perpetual motor with magnetic control elements" (# 4, 2003). This invention was patented; shown below are some pages from the patent itself. You can contact the author by e-mail: smeretchanski.mikhail@wanadoo.fr, or the postal address: 13 av. Rochambeau 3800 GRENOBLE FRANCE

The Most Interesting Articles - 2003

In the year 2003 we have published more than 120 articles, mainly on the alternative energy, new propulsion principles and the development of ether dynamics.

"Cold fusion", low energy nuclear reactions (LENR) and highly-efficient electrolysis were represented by the works of Professor Kanarev, E. Storms, P. Hagelstein, T. Chubb and E. Cartlidge.

Almost every "New Energy" issue features articles on highly-efficient permanent magnet motor or generator experiments or patents of the kind. The articles by T. Valone, E. Vogel, A. Akau, T. Hardwood, A. Francouer and S. Abramov are of great value for engineers and researchers in this field.

The interesting articles by M. Filo, R. Koontz and V. Bogomolov reveal several principles of designing and building purely mechanical energy generating systems. All these systems possess one common feature: namely, the fact that a substance (a solid or fluid working mass) is accelerated in the gravitational field or in the centrifugal force field. The design characteristics of the system make it possible to obtain free energy.

We have published several articles by S. Gerasimov and his colleagues on the reaction-less propulsion device experiments. We hope that in the future we will keep in touch with these researchers.

The article by D. Reed on the new physics development concepts is worth mentioning too. The article by E. Sorokodum on new energy sources and the article by V. Chernobrov on the research into the active properties of time are of no less importance.

A. Egorov's article on the ball lightning makes it possible to form a number of experimental approaches to the problem of creation multi-purpose stable plasma objects.

Electrogravity questions, water-powered vehicles, longitudinal electromagnetic wave technologies, the Searl effect commercialization, capillary engines, resonance high-efficiency power-engineering, single-wire power lines, heat pumps and other similar research works were presented to our readers in the year 2003. We have minimized theoretical articles and we hope that the magazine has become more interesting and useful for the new energy practice development.

Alexander Frolov
St. Petersburg, Russia

There is interesting newsgroup of the site: http://www.overunity.com, Stefan Hartmann, email: harti@harti.com

Stefan Hartmann writes: This is the answer I got from Finsrud; it seems that the film they have done about him will be shown [on Discovery Channel] in 2004 when [if] I interpret this norwegian text right...

Subject: Documentary Film
Reidar Finsrud,

Dear Sir,

The Australian Broadcasting Company together with The Discovery Channel, have funded my company to make a documentary film entitled 'A Machine To Die For', the story of Perpetual Motion and the search for 'Free Energy'.
I have read extensively about your Perpetual Motion sculpture and we would be interested in traveling from Australia to Norway in order to film this now famous piece of work. At the same time we would request an interview with yourself.
If you are in agreement with this it is our intention to be in Norway on the 10th and 11th of July 2003. This documentary will be released worldwide and should produce considerable interest in your Gallery.

Mark Eliot
Catherine Jarvis and Mark Eliot
Romany Mill Studios

Hydrogenics Secures $3 Million from Japan Auto Makers

Letter from RemyC remyc@prodigy.net
Contacts: investors@ hydrogenics.com

Hydrogenics Secures $3 Million in Test Equipment Orders Japanese Auto Makers Select Greenlight Power for Fuel Cell Testing Equipment

TORONTO, Sept. 30 – Hydrogenics Corporation (Nasdaq: HYGS; TSX: HYG), a developer and manufacturer of fuel cell products, announced today that its wholly owned subsidiary, Greenlight Power Technologies (Greenlight) has received orders totaling US $3 million for fuel cell test stations from two leading Asian automotive customers. Both are repeat orders for multiple machines.

Cumulatively, Greenlight is providing seven Fuel Cell Advanced Test Stations (FCATS) to two major customers. The first order is for three 3 kW PEM FCATS L-Series test systems. The second is for three 12 kW PEM FCATS H-Series test systems and one 60 kW PEM FCATS HX-Series testing station. The stations are expected to be delivered over the next two quarters.

"Our decision to open an office in Tokyo, Japan over three years ago continues to pay dividends," said Pierre Rivard, President and CEO of Hydrogenics. "The Japanese market is advancing quite aggressively towards the commercialization of fuel cell technology, as evidenced by our growth in test equipment sales to the region over the past three years. We are delighted to secure these major contracts with customers who are clearly setting the pace in fuel cell development."

Greenlight fuel cell testing systems provide high precision instrumentation, combined with full-featured software. They deliver fuel cell testing results that prove the reliability, repeatability and versatility required for world-leading fuel cell development programs.

About Hydrogenics Corporation

Hydrogenics Corporation (Nasdaq: HYGS; TSX: HYG) is a leading clean power generation company, engaged in the commercialization of fuel cell technology and test stations for fuel cells. The company is building a sustainable business, in a potentially "game changing technology" for transportation, stationary and portable power. Hydrogenics, based in Mississauga, Ontario, Canada, has operations in British Columbia, Canada, Japan, the United States and Germany. For more information, please visit www.hydrogenics.com .

About Greenlight Power Technologies, Inc.

Greenlight Power Technologies Inc. (http://www.greenlightpower.com), a wholly-owned subsidiary of Hydrogenics Corporation, is a leading global supplier of testing and diagnostic equipment to the fuel cell industry. It has supplied fuel cell test equipment to the world's premier fuel cell stack manufacturers, component manufacturers, system integrators and research organizations. Greenlight provides a full suite of test equipment for fuel cell stack, stack component, reformer and system testing for companies focused on portable, stationary, and transportation fuel cell applications.

Hydrogen Fuel Cells
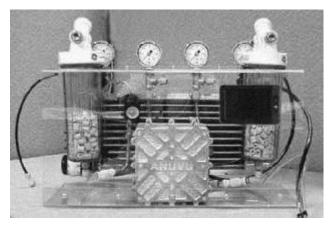
Anuvu Incorporated
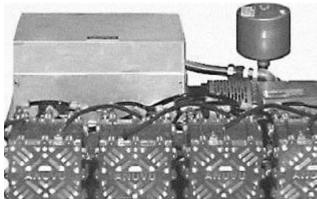
3980 Research Drive
Sacramento, CA 95838
USA
Tel: (916) 921-7040
Fax: (916) 921-7044
Email: anuvu@anuvu.com
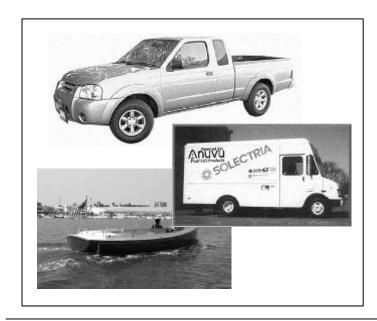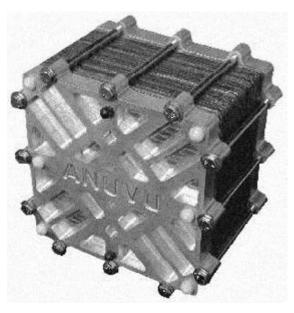
www.anuvu.com/home.html

Now our readers can get familiar with some hydrogen fuel cell development photos. It is worth of a note that the prices are high for the majority of people. For example, a hydrogen fuel cell car costs 100 000 dollars FOB Sacramento, CA. The next picture features a fuel cell van, which costs 150 000 dollars.

EXCESSIVE OUTPUT BY MEANS OF AIR IONIZATION

We have received an interesting article from California. Here is the short version of the article.

The Mechanism of The Electric Spark

Review of the research
by Leonard B. Loeb
Professor of Physics, University of California at Berkeley
and
John M. Meek, Research Engineer
Stanford University Press, Stanford University, California

Dedicated to Professor J. S. Townsend whose pioneer research and theory laid the whole foundation for the study of the mechanism of the electrical spark discharge.

Although the electric spark has been known to mankind in its various manifestations from time immemorial, its mechanism has to date been little understood. The initial clarification of the mechanisms involved is due to J.S. Townsend as a result of his brilliant researches in the early nineteen hundreds. On the basis of his theory of ionization by collision by electrons and positive ions, the fundamental mechanisms active and especially the coefficients required in their application were made available.

In 1936 the present senior author was forced to describe the mechanism of spark discharge in terms of a modified but distinctly unsatisfactory Townsend theory. In 1935 the discovery of photo-ionization in air by corona discharge indicated a solution was not far off. The turning point of a more successful theory came in the discovery of streamers in positive point to plane corona in 1936. The quantitative analysis of the self-propagating positive streamer in all breakdown phenomena became clearly evident as a result of the data concerning electron avalanches. As a result a qualitative mechanism of sparking by streamer propagation from anode to cathode functioning by means of photo-ionization in the gas was established.

The Townsend Sparking Criteria

It will not be necessary here to derive the famous equation of Townsend for the current [i] in a gap between electrodes as a function of the photoelectric current [io] from the cathode, the gap length [x] and the coefficients [a] and [B]. For this the reader can go to any standard text. *(Editor: the equation is omitted)*

In this equation the first Townsend coefficient [a] represents the number of new electrons created in the gas by an initial electron in its advance of 1 cm along the field axis from the cathode.

The second Townsend coefficient [B] in Townsend's original theory was the number of new electrons created by a single positive ion in its advance of 1 cm along the field from the anode.

The quantity [a] has been extensively studied in various gases. It varies with the ratio of field strength to pressure, X/p, where [X] is in volts per centimeter and [p] is in millimeters of Hg.

Note: the reason we are going through this is to determine the actual increase in current provided by the spark gap, and thus be able to design the circuit to avoid blowing out semiconductor components. It also provides a

sound and already proven scientific theory to work from giving us a good foundation and the confidence to proceed with technical design work.

The quantity [B] has been evaluated, albeit rather inaccurately, from the variations of [i] with [x] at various higher values of X/p, by many observers in different gases. Inasmuch as it has now been shown that there are numerous other mechanisms other than impact with positive ions, which can liberate the secondary electron, needed in discharge.

There has been an inclination to give up the mechanism of impact ionizations by positive ions in gas. The discovery of measurable photoelectric ionization in gas has now made it possible to explain such cases. The exact way in which photo-ionization in the gas could operate to cause a spark, was not clear until the development of the present **streamer theory**.

The Streamer Theory of Spark Discharge Anode Space-Charge Field Due to an Avalanche

Assume a spark gap of 1 cm in length. Assume that in air at atmospheric pressure the potential across the plates is 31,600 volts, which is the conventionally observed sparking potential [Vs].

Let us then calculate what happens in the field to one of those electrons. It starts across the gap, quickly acquiring an average random energy of some $E = 1/2mC^2 = 3.6$ electron volts and a drift velocity [v] in the field direction of about 1.5 to 2 times 10^7 centimeters per second. As it moves it creates new electrons at a rate of [a] per centimeters in the field direction so that in a distance [x] it and its progeny amount to e(ax) electrons, forming what is called an **electron avalanche**.

Therefore, e(ax) positive ions have been left behind by the electron group, virtually where they were formed in the 10^{-7} second of advance for the electrons in the distance x=q across the plates. As the electron avalanche advances, its tip is spreading laterally by the random diffusive movement of the electrons. From these data it is possible to compute the density of positive-ion space charge left behind at any point [x]. The value of [a] under these conditions is about 17, making e(aq)=e(17). The first ion pair is created at 0.0407 cm from the cathode. At 0.5 cm from the cathode there are 4914 ions, at 0.75 cm there are 3.66 times 10^5 ions, and within 0.0407 cm from the anode there are 1.2 times 10^7 ions. **Most electrons will be drawn to the anode except for some few that are bound by the positive ions, making a sort of a conducting discharge plasma in the avalanche.**

Such a distribution of ions does not make a conducting filament of charges across the gap, and hence in itself an avalanche that has crossed does not constitute a breakdown of the gap. Thus one must look further for the mechanism of the spark.

If Loeb and Meek are correct then if we assume a spark gap of 3 mm and a voltage of 5,000 volts there are roughly 2,000 electrons created by avalanche for every one electron leaving the cathode. They state that most of these 'free electrons' are absorbed by the anode. [This would certainly explain why the semiconductor components cannot handle the current gain.]

NOTE: Loeb and Meek make little reference to initial amperage. There are only two values they refer to 10^{-5} ampere and 10^{-12} ampere.

In conclusion: Sparks and Arcs are two different beasts. My initial research into the amperage necessary to form an arc does not apply to spark and the process of avalanche where this huge gain mechanism is possible.

Photoelectric Ionization in Gas as a Secondary Mechanism

Accompanying the cumulative ionization there is produced by electrons from four to ten times as many excited atoms and molecules. Some are excited to an energy exceeding the ionizing potential of some of the atoms and molecules present, either by excitation of an inner shell, by ionization and excitation, or in a **mixed gas like air by the excitation of molecules of higher ionizing potential, e.g., N2**. These excited atoms or molecules emit radiations of very short wave

length in some 10^{-8} second. This short ultraviolet radiation is **highly absorbed** in the gas and leads to ionization of the gas. In fact, the whole gas and the cathode as well are subjected to a shower of photons of all energies traveling from the region of dense ionization with the velocity of light. Thus nearly instantaneously in the whole gap and from the cathode new photoelectrons are liberated which almost at once begin to ionize cumulatively.

The Mechanism of Positive Streamer Formation

The photoelectrons created at points in the gas and at the cathode at any great radial distance from the avalanche axis will merely create other avalanches. Those in the gas will be short and those coming from the cathode region will be long and like that of the initial avalanche. Being smaller and, in any case, later in creation than the parent avalanche, such avalanches will be of no interest in breakdown. However, those photoelectrons created near the space-charge channel of positive ions, and especially near the anode, will be in an enhanced field, which exerts a directive action drawing them into itself. If the space-charge field [X1] is in the order of magnitude of the imposed field [X], this action will be very effective. In addition the values of [a] will be much enhanced.

The electrons from the intense cumulative ionization of such photoelectron avalanches in the combined fields [X] and [X1] which are drawn into the positive space charge feed into it, making it a conducting PLASMA which starts at the anode. The added fields will be most effective along [X] and so will the ionization. The positive ions they leave behind will therefore extend the space charge towards the cathode. These electrons also create photons, which produce electrons to continue this process. **In this fashion the positive space charge develops toward the cathode from the anode as a self-propagating positive space-charge streamer.**

As the streamer advances towards the cathode it produces a filamentary region of intense space-charge distortion along a line parallel to the field. The conducting streamer of a plasma consisting of electrons and ions extending to the anode thus makes a very steep gradient at the cathode end of the streamer tip. As this advances toward the cathode the photoelectron avalanches produced by radiation at the cathode, especially at the intercept of the extended streamer axis at the cathode, it begins to produce an intense ionization near the cathode. Hence the positive ions created there may increase the secondary emission. Thus, as the space-charge streamer approaches the cathode a cathode spot is forming which may become a source of visible light.

When the streamer reaches the cathode there is a conducting filament bridging the gap. As the streamer tip reaches the cathode the high field produces a rush of electrons towards the end of the streamer. This if followed by a current of electrons, gives a high-potential wave, which passes up the preionized conducting channel to the anode, **multiplying the electrons present by a large factor**. The channel is thus rendered highly conducting. If the metal can emit a copious supply of electrons because of the formation of an efficient cathode spot, the current of electrons continues the channel maintaining its high conductivity and **ever increasing in it**. This current, unless limited by external resistance, will then develop into **an arc**. It is, however, the intense increase in ionization by the potential wave, which gives the highly conducting channel characterizing the spark.

Conclusion: According to Loeb and Meek there are three means by which a spark in open air will provide a very large current gain. If this is true, it should be fairly easy to prove with inexpensive and unsophisticated equipment. Once the actual amount of current gain has been determined for the design parameters of the spark gap, then the rest of the circuit can be designed for the increased current value.

Editor: It is worth of a note that the current gain by means of ionization was patented by Pavel N. Yablotchkov (the patent of France # 120684, October 11th 1887). Some two years ago one of our issues featured an article about him. We think it is worth being published again.

PATENT of 1877 by Pavel N. Yablotchkov

Alexander V. Frolov
Faraday Lab Ltd,
Lev Tolstoy St., 7 St. Petersburg, 197376 Russia
Tel: 7-812-380-3844

Pavel N. Yablotchkov was born in 1847 near Saratov, Russia. He graduated as a Military Engineer in 1866 and spent several years in the Russian Army.

In 1872 he came to Moscow and started his activities in electrotechnical field. Since 1875 he had been working in Paris with the famous Louis Breget and his first French patent # 110479 of November 29th, 1875 was dedicated to an electromagnetic transformer. Then he developed and patented a lighting system (the well-known Yablotchkov electrical candle). In 1876 he patented a new electromagnetic transformer for industrial purposes, France # 115793 of November 30th, 1876.

The most interesting patent claim on over-unity devices by Pavel N. Yablotchkov is known as France patent # 120684, October 11th, 1877, "The system of distribution and amplification of electrical currents by means of atmosphere electricity..." The patent describes special capacitors connected in series with the load to increase the output current by means of ionization. Experiments were conducted together with the well-known physicists such as Dr. Maskar, Dr. Varren-Delaru and others and **they confirmed the 200 % efficiency of the circuit**. Now we will try to explain the method.
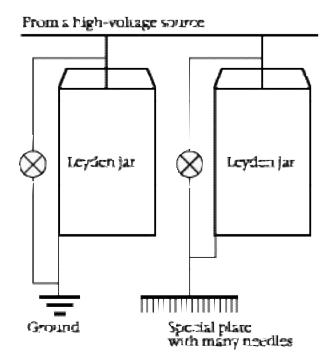
Fig.1 features a schematic drawing taken from Yablotchkov's patent. The Leyden jar is an asymmetrical capacitor, i.e. it is different in principle from a two-plate flat capacitor. The inner electrode of the jar should be connected to a high-voltage source and in this case the changes of the potential have an effect on the potential changes on the external electrode. It does not work in the opposite case and if you connect a high-voltage source to the external electrode no potential changes will be detected on the inner electrode. Connection to the ground or to a special plate (which is covered with many needles to increase air ionization) is necessary to attract the maximum number of electrons to the plate surface or to return the maximum electrons from the plate surface when potential changes on the external electrode are produced by means of electrical induction in the Leyden jar.

In conclusion I should mention one more supposition of the secrets of the well-known Swiss M-L converter (Methernitha). The main elements of the design are Leyden jar capacitors, which have the external surface made of perforated metal.

The other known fact is that great ionization of air is observed when the converter is in operation. So, the electrostatic machine can produce pulses of a very high voltage (potential difference) but it cannot be used as a source of a powerful current. In order to increase the current in the circuit we should apply a certain method and Yablotchkov's technology seems to be appropriate. A large surface of the external electrode of the Leyden jar can be a good solution to the problem. Maximum strong ionization allows us to obtain the output current several times stronger than the weak current generated by the electrostatic machine.

Konstantin Meyl

Scalar waves

From an extended vortex and field theory
to a technical, biological and historical use
of longitudinal waves.

Edition belonging to the lecture and seminar
„Electromagnetic Environmental Compatibility"

Preface to the lecture, 1st Edition 1996

The theme encloses the electromagnetic compatibility of both technical and biological systems. Only part of the electromagnetic wave can be considered for function troubles, namely the part that was absorbed and has rolled up to a vortex. The activity depends on the number of created vortices and of their lifetime, their decay.

The eddy current only manifests in conducting materials. In the air and in dielectric materials on the other hand the vortex of the electric field will form, also called the potential vortex. To calculate and to measure this vortex is our goal.

First we'll carry out a survey of the problems and the usual methods. From the analysis of unsolved problems the need for the introduction of the new vortex phenomena is deducted and an adequate field-theoretical approach will be chosen. Afterwards the potential vortices are calculated and their properties are discussed and interpreted. For the purpose of proving their existence, on the one hand the Schrodinger equation will be derived and on the other hand the quantum properties of the most important elementary particles will be calculated and compared with the well-known measured values. Measurement and calculation are in excellent agreement for weight, charge, magnetic moment and spin. So the theory not only proofs it's correctness, in addition it demonstrates it can achieve much more. The theory takes us to the unification of the well-known interactions and physical phenomena and shows itself as an unified theory. In the practical conversion and usage of the theory there will not only be informed but by all means also be provoked as an entrance in a fruitfully discussion. Fundamental questions will be taken up like: What is information, energy, temperature or smell? The connection to the theme of the electromagnetic environmental compatibility is formed by the technical and the biological usage of the potential vortices, the energy transmission of Nikola Tesla exactly like the in a similar way functioning nerve conduction. Here we already can expect biological reactions.

This lecture, held for the first time in the winter semester of 1995/96, is available in book form, as an edition belonging to the lecture. This lecture will not deliver ready recipes or instructions. The goal is reached when the critical sense of the listeners and readers has been inspired and discussions have been set going. Everybody has to draw the consequences out of such a theory by him- or herself.

In addition to this lecture a seminar is offered, wherein several themes are supplemented or deepened, different theories are compared and possible consequences are discussed. The appearance of an edition belonging to the seminar has started in 1998[i]. Regarding the conversion of consequences both politicians and scientists are equally addressed, because the electromagnetic environmental compatibility has developed to one of the most urgent problems of today's world. But in last consequence all of us bury the worldwide responsibility for our environment.

---

[i]: K. Meyl: Electromagnetic environmental compatibility, Part 2 and 3 of this book, Edition belonging to the seminar.

Table of contents
Page

Part 1 edition belonging to lecture "Electromagnetic environmental compatibility"

Page

Page

Page

1. Introduction

Here the extremely controversially discussed question of the environmental compatibility of electromagnetic fields will be persuaded. Limits should inform what is incompatible and what is compatible. But there are as many limits as there are commissions and specialists. And besides that differ the results from each other for several powers of ten. In course of time the legitimate doubts become unmistakable and the representatives of science slowly get to feel the burden of proof.

For the sake of efficiency, the actual discussion concerning the theme of electro-smog is analysed and the necessity to involve an until now unnoticed field phenomenon in the discussion about limits is derived: It concerns vortices of the electric field. These potential vortices, as they are called, have the corresponding properties to show biological effects even at the lowest field strengths. In any case it is not possible to exclude that at present the wrong physical phenomena are measured and made responsible.

A parable should bring clarity.

Lets imagine that the to us well-known and over our sense of touch understandable physical phenomenon of the temperature is unknown to us, neither measurable nor perceptible. Our weather station only exists of a barometer that could show us the air pressure and deliver us indications if good or bad weather is to be feared. We ready realize that there exists a connection between the air pressure and our health and make the to us well-known phenomenon responsible. When the pointer points to good weather we can go out lightly dressed. With bad weather we should take a coat, so we know from experience.

"Now we imagine the realistic situation that in winter we have a weather situation of high pressure but it's stone-cold outside. The weather station will display high temperatures with the result that some people will walk around with short-sleeved and open shirt, only to lie in bed with a cold in the evening. Of course the air pressure was to blame! Logically the "pressure sensitive", as they are called mocking, demand the limits for the allowed pressure to be reduced so far that no consequences for health are to be feared. Concerning the theme of allowed limits, science is asked and science proceeds in a systematic way: the pressure is investigated in the laboratory, isolated from all other parameters and so it is discovered that man catches no cold even at a substantially higher air pressure, so there is no reason to alter the limits.

Actually we would expect these at any time reproducible results to have a calming effect on the minds of the participants of the discussion and on the population. Instead the pressure sensitives time and again cite new knowledge that won't fit in the scheme. So is for instance stated that draught causes the same health problems although this pseudo effect has nothing at all to do with the air pressure. So owing to incomprehensibility and emotions the discussion about limits becomes a farce.

The fact that sensitive people react to effects of air electricity and possibly get ill without proof that some today measurable physical quantities are responsible should make us think. It is little calming watching our scientists poking at the dense fog whereas at the same time among the runners of the new telecommunication networks there spreads something like a gold-digger mood.

To introduce a new technology is not difficult, but to abolish it for reasons of the electromagnetic environmental compatibility is almost impossible!
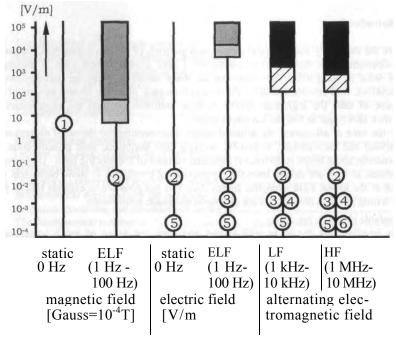
Fig. 1.1: Discussion about limits

■ Limits for professional exposition (electronics engineers) and
▨ Limits for non-professional exposition (population in general)
according to the Recommendation of IRPA/INIRC[ii].
▢ Limits according to VDE 0848 / 1989
▨ Limits according to VDE 0848 / 1992
⊛ experimentally determined threshold values of reactions of
biological systems [i]:

1 Increase of the activity of movement of birds
2 deflection of divining-rods
3 influence on the time of reaction of men
4 conditional reflexes of fish without electrical organs
5 conditional reflexes of fish with electrical organs
6 conditional muscular reflexes of men

taken from:
[i]: H.L. Konig: Unsichtbare Umwelt (Wetterfuhligk.), 5. Aufl., Bild 111, S. 123
Verlag Moos & Partner Munchen, ISBN 3-89164-O58-7
[ii]: Habiger u.a., EMV, Verlag Technik, Berlin 1992, S. 152

1.1 Discussion about limits

Whoever follows the public discussions concerning electro smog always sees two arguing parties, whose standpoints lie so far apart that they inevitably talk at cross purposes and there can be found no consensus.

On one side the "affected" find together who maintain to have found the electromagnetic radiation as the damaging cause for their problems. They are to be taken serious, even when only their personal sensitivity serves as means of measurement and proof and a more or less distinct sensitivity against electromagnetic phenomena. This group occasionally finds support of homeopaths who can base on reproducible laboratory results that fit as few into the view of life of science as the empirical statements of affected and possibly hurt people.

On the other side stand the representatives of the energy-supply companies and the runners of radio networks who argue with the needs of our modern industrial society and give "limits" prescribed to them by scientists. These, for their part, proceed according to strictly scientific methods. Their presented results are reproducible and there's no doubt about them.

The limits after all are fixed far below those that are recommended from a scientific viewpoint. Nevertheless both groups are separated from consensus by powers of ten. When we want to know how deep the ditch is we want to bridge, we should take a look at the determined limits (Fig. 1.1).

The limits stem from the 1RPA (International Radiation Protection Association) an organ of the World Health Organization that in turn has appointed the INIRC (International Non Ionizing Radiation Committee). These now state to have used all available scientific research results as basis for the given guidelines.

Moreover a safety range was worked into them. So the limits were fixed at substantially lower levels to guarantee that no health damage arises. In this way first the limits were determined for the people who for reasons of profession are exposed to electromagnetic fields.

For the population in general the limits for the so called non-professional exposition were reduced further to one half till one fifth for reasons of caution and care. In Fig. 1.1 these limits are registered. Thereby is distinguished between magnetic fields and electric fields that appear stationary or at extremely low frequencies (ELF describes frequencies between 1 Hz and 100 Hz). Moreover limits for low-frequency (1-10 kHz) and high-frequency (1-10 MHz) alternating electromagnetic fields are given.

The graph should serve as a rough orientation and show us the proportion of scale. As further information some thresholds of measured reactions of biological systems are registered (after Konig*[1]*). Because a logarithmic scale was chosen to fit all the values on one graph it becomes clear that between the first reactions and the recommended limits there lie up to five powers often. The ditch seems to be insurmountable.

Fig. 1.2:   Set of problems of environmental compatibility by means of the example of the handheld wireless telephones (handy).

<i>:   L.v.Klitzing: Neurophysiologische Einflusse durch elektromagnetische Felder wahrend und nach der Exposition, Med. Universitat zu Lubeck

1.2 Wireless telephones

Measuring technical surveys with regard to the influence of brain currents by digital radio signals by the university hospital in Lubeck have startled handy manufacturers and users equally [1]. Although in this case measurement errors could be detected, the „bugaboo on the wall" remains that we are sitting unsuspecting in a restaurant and a neighbour draws his handy out of his pocket to make a digital telephone call. Thereby synchronizing the brain currents within a radius of 100 meters on the broadcasting signal and occupying our brain useless with technical signals. The derivation will show that from the start this can't happen to all visitors, because as a prerequisite conditions of resonance must be fulfilled. But would there be an affected, he or she for sure would have considerable problems, because informations that are not picked up over the sense organs can neither be classified timely nor as regards content.

An affected whose brain has picked up technical signals not even is able to register by itself that it was fed with incorrect informations. It would be reasonable when the visitors of the restaurant would defend themselves and put the radio operator on the doorstep. The number of restaurants where apart from cats and dogs also handy's have to stay outside is increasing. How should we keep out of the way of electromagnetic fields? Should we walk around permanently with a steel helmet or even better in a knight's armour and even go to bed with them? It would be worse than in the dark middle ages.

Summarizing: it should be guaranteed that the operation of electro technical apparatus causes neither health damage nor unintentional influence or irritation. A systematic and scientific procedure should investigate in the laboratory all relevant physical phenomena individually for their interaction. Electro physics bases on two phenomena in connexion with electro-smog: on the one hand the radiation and on the other hand the thermal effect, but at a close look both factors prove to be of only little importance! In radiation measurements the intensity of the electromagnetic wave at a certain place is determined. In laboratory experiments the field strength is increased so long till biological reactions are observed. Thermal limits are determined in a similar way. As said, the values lie about powers of ten above those that possibly bother you when you hold a handy to your ear. It is true that the microwave radiation penetrates into your head but we also know that it marches out again on the other side and this visit in your head happens with the speed of light.

Exactly like this are guest in your body constantly your local radio station, your local television station the satellites with hundreds of programs and anyway the whole radio technical world even when you did not invite them.

For an electromagnetic wave to become receivable, the field strength must lie clearly above the common noise signal and this can only be achieved by a permanent overlap, by standing waves, like in a cavity tuned to a specific frequency or an antenna. As long as people don't let themselves grow antennas on their heads they hardly have to fear direct biological effects of electromagnetic waves.

That leaves as the second phenomenon the thermal effect. With a handy held to your cheek there comes into being a local fever in your head. But that is not at all unusual or unnatural for the human body. Something like that happens to a far greater degree when you take a hot foot bath or let yourself be irradiated at one side from the sun at a tourist grill.

Power of waves:

irradiated   stored   radiated
                            (absorbed)

$P_e \longrightarrow$ ΔP $\longrightarrow P_a$

local fever: $\Delta \vartheta = f(\Delta P)$

absorbed power: $\Delta P = P_e - P_a$

effectiveness: $\eta = P_a/P_e$
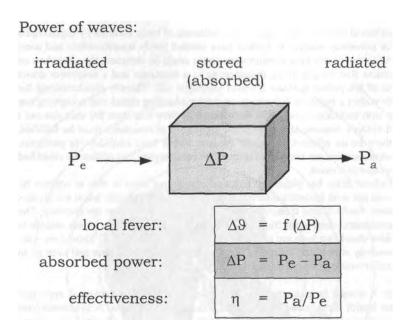
Fig. 1.3:   Damping of waves and ability to absorb of a body
(our head) if we are making a phone call with a handy.

a contribution to the theme dielectric losses

- capacitor
- high-frequency welding
- microwave oven

<i>:   K. Meyl: Potentialwirbel Band 1 [Al] (only in German),
        INDEL Verlag, Villingen-Schwenningen 1990, ISBN 3-9802 542-1-6
<ii>: K. Meyl: Potentialwirbel Band 2 [A2] (out of print),
        INDEL Verlag, Villingen-Schwenningen 1992, ISBN 3-9802 542-2-4

1.3 Absorption of waves

The with the theme dealing physicians logically have to put up with criticism that they work only with two phenomena that not at all can be involved authoritative in the causes for biological effects. A third factor can be considered, a field phenomenon until now stayed unnoticed by science: the vortex of the electric field, the so called potential vortex. A vortex is to be considered as an oscillation around a fixed point. Through that a permanent overlap is caused, like what happens at an antenna only that the vortex is not bound to the dimension of an antenna. The potential vortex is contracting and in this way reaches extremely high energy densities at very little spatial measurement, densities that lie far above those that field strength measurements are pretending to us [Al][i].
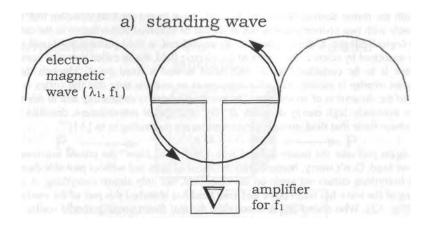
When again you take the handy at hand with which you „blow" the pulsed microwaves into your head. Don't worry, because with the speed of light and without provable damage almost everything comes out again on the other side, but only almost everything. A little damping of the wave has taken place and your head has absorbed this part of the irradiated wave (Fig. 1.3). Who claims this is already the thermal factor actually should realize that there exists no corresponding term in the wave equation. Here there are found merely two dual vortex phenomena as a possible damping term: the eddy current and the potential vortex. An eddy current damping is ruled out because of the bad conductivity of the head. But this favours his dual anti-vortex, the potential vortex [A1][i].

Seen physically the following is taking place in your head: the absorbed waves roll themselves up to vortices and through that become localized and overlap themselves permanently (Fig. 1.4b). In the course of time the vortices decay and produce the well-known eddy losses that lead to the measurable increase in temperature. When reactions or biological effects arise, simply and solely the vortex can be considered as the possible cause. Thereby play two points an important role: the number of the generated vortices and their lifetime that is determined by the time of decay.
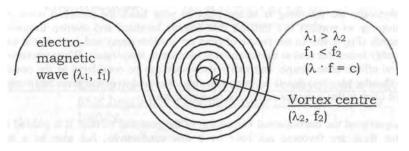
In anticipation of the mathematical calculation of the potential vortices it is pointed out here that these are favoured not only by a low conductivity, but also by a high dielectricity. Because water has an unusual high dielectricity ($\varepsilon_r = 80$) and our head consists predominantly of water doubts in dealing with handy's are reasonable.

Also the relaxation time constant representative for the lifetime can be calculated [A2][ii]. We must proceed from the assumption that both the number of the vortices and their lifetime, that is all the at a fixed point in time in our head existing and effective vortices, can be a cause and therefore have to be considered and investigated scientifically.

a) standing wave

electro-
magnetic
wave (λ_1, f_1)

amplifier
for f_1

b)   localized vortex = noise

electro-
magnetic
wave (λ_1, f_1)

$\lambda_1 > \lambda_2$
$f_1 < f_2$
($\lambda \cdot f = c$)

Vortex centre
(λ_2, f_2)

c) broadband antenna for EMC-measurements

λ_2

λ_1
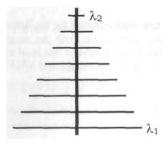
Fig. 1.4: Measurement of localized waves and vortices

1.4 Overlap effect

The graph at the left (Fig. 1.4) should clarify once more that only the in space localized and permanently overlapping field appearances can be considered as a cause for biological effects. This can concern an over an antenna standing wave (a) or a vortex (b) which is to be taken as localized by nature.

It would be allowed to in general speak only of a vortex because the standing wave can by all means be understood as a special case of the vortex. The essential difference is that the vortex is not bound to the size of a fixed antenna and can contract itself at any time to achieve in this way a substantial higher energy density. As a result this than will lead to an increased biological effectiveness.

It should be pointed at a further omission. In the discussion about limits, without exception, the absolute field strength of the broadcasting signal is valued and not the type of modulation. The last mentioned should actually not at all play a role according to the prevailing scientific opinion.

Totally different is the case with a vortex that acts damping. Such a vortex shows near it's centre a considerable smaller wavelength than more to the outside and through that it has a big frequency bandwidth [A5][i]. It is to be expected that in the extremely broadband pulsed signals of the digital networks the creation of vortices (or eddies) will be favoured considerably stronger than in amplitude- or frequency-modulated signals (AM/FM/C-network). In connexion with analog modulated radio- or handy-signals until now there never has been reported of any synchronization of the brain currents with handy-signals from a comparison of the EEG with the broadcasting signal.

Interestingly the for EMC-measurements usual stepped broadband antennas have exactly the construction that certainly would be favourable to the measuring technical registration of vortex phenomena (Fig. 1.4c).

With the dipole antennas of different lengths for different wavelengths there still are measured waves and not vortices but these measuring techniques is certainly accommodating to the until now unnoticed and stayed undiscovered vortex phenomenon. So there are some good reasons that the vortex is a dominating influential factor for EMC-problems.

By means of the example of the handheld wireless telephones can be studied and discussed with which set of problems the very young discipline of science of the environmental compatibility has to fight in the future. And in which ways there can be found approaches towards a solution of the problem. When the comfortable and trodden out ways of textbook physics do not lead to the goal than we will have to force our own way through the jungle of science.

At first we'll have to obtain a short overview of the actual level of research and knowledge. From the criticism to this we than can derive the tasks of the electromagnetic environmental compatibility and in particular the unsolved tasks.

<i>:   K. Meyl: Wirbel des elektrischen Feldes, eine neue Storquelle? EMC Journal 1/95, 6. J, S. 56-59.

EC
environmental compatibility

is the ability of a biological/technical system [i],

- to fulfil a certain function (task of operation)
- under given conditions of usage
  (aspect of compatibility: irradiated interference radiation)
- during its life / time of use (aspect of reliability)
  stressing its environment and other systems/objects
  which exist in it by electromagnetic interferences
  (aspect of compatibility: emitted interference radiation)
- endangering such systems/objects (protection of health
  and safety at work)
- or even threatening them (case of damage).

E M C ——————————————— **B C**
(electromagnetic compatibility)   (biological compatibility)

| artificial sources of interference | natural sources of interference |

| technical device | biological systems |

| Regulations of the German Post Office since 1992: EMC-law [ii] from 1996: EU -regulation | called EMEC thirties: radio operator disease today. E-Smog, HF-, SW-therapy diathermy, etc. | know how of druids magic esoteric medicine biology |

Fig. 2.1: Overview concerning environmental compatibility

[i]:   E. Habiger: EMV-ubergreifende Aspekte zu benachbarten Problemfeldern, Elektrie 48 (1994), Heft 5/6, Seite 163-161
[ii]:   EMVG: Gesetz uber die elektromagnetische Vertraglichkeit von Geraten, Bundesgesetzblatt Teil I vom 9.11.1992, S. 1864

2. Tasks

2.1 Tasks of the electromagnetic environmental compatibility

The environmental compatibility (EC) forms the generalization that includes both the electromagnetic compatibility (EMC) and the biological compatibility (BC). Besides the technical and functional goals of an undisturbed functional course it also pursues ethical and moral goals.
Technology should benefit to humanity and at the same time be in accord with nature. This goal will not be reached when this technology directly or indirectly is endangering humanity.
A direct attack on the health of people poses for instance the military usage of technical apparatus or the negligent usage, by pretended ignorance and unsuspicion.
Is a technology posing a danger to the environment so humanity endangers itself indirectly with this technology. After all are human beings a product of their environment. We always should reckon on the environmental sins taking revenge on us sooner or later.

In fig. 2.1 a formal definition is given that in particular concerns the claims for an undisturbed functional course: it concerns the compatibility aspects of unallowed emitted and irradiated interference radiations, the reliability and quality safety with which a function and task is fulfilled and finally the questions of the protection of health and the safety at work.

Moreover fig. 2.1 provides an overview and the structure of the 2nd chapter. First we'll treat the electromagnetic compatibility (EMC) that first of all deals with the influence of artificial but also natural interference sources on technical apparatus.
After that we'll throw a glance at the appearing fields in nature. The biological compatibility (BC) deals with the influence on biological systems.
An especially sensitive area of the environmental compatibility (EC) than describes the with a cross-link hinted influence of artificial interference sources on biological systems that is popularly described as „electro smog".

The numerous aspects of the environmental compatibility for instance in the areas of chemistry and biology that certainly are important, but do not fall in the area of electromagnetism, can't be treated in the here marked framework.
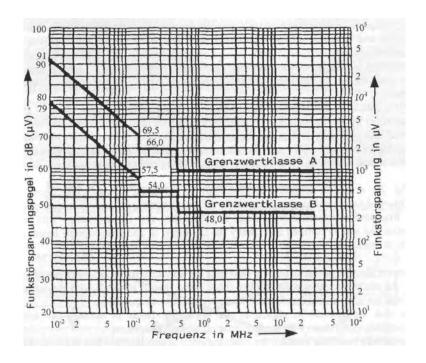
Fig. 2.2:   Classes of limits according to VDE 0871
(since 1-1-96: VDE 0875)[i]

---

[i]: Anton Kohling: Grundlagen der Funkentstorung in der Bundesrepublik Deutschland, etz Bd. 108 (1987), Heft 10.

2.2 Tasks of the electromagnetic compatibility (EMC)

First of all the EMC (electromagnetic compatibility) is concerned with the function of technical apparatus. Correspondingly rational and dry sounds the official definition: "electromagnetic compatibility (EMC) describes the ability of an electrical setting-up (i.e. of a construction element, of a construction group, of an apparatus or of an installation) to function in an electromagnetic environment without stressing this environment by electromagnetic effects in an unallowed fashion ".

Actually it concerns an old need for protection that should be as old as the usage of electro technical apparatus. But in the beginning no one cared about it. The spark gaps with which Heinrich Hertz 1888 in Karlsruhe has carried out the first radio technical experiments were genuine ,,polluters", that would have been detectible at several hundreds of kilometres distance with modern receivers. For these installations that he had assembled in the lecture room with his students, today he would hardly get a permission of operation and the since 1996 required declaration of conformity he would get not at all.

1925, as in Germany the number of radio listeners had exceeded the limit of one million, for the first time a need for protection appears in the certificate of approval for radio receivers: "The public telegraphs and telephone installations must not be disturbed by the radio receiver".
Later on every backside of the good old steam radios there was found the following hint (translated): "This apparatus meets the interference radiation regulations of the German Post Office". So the manufacturers were urged to measure the emission of their apparatus and in particular to screen the HF-oscillators in the superhet-receivers.

Since the fifties, in the VDE-institute EMC-examinations in the present day sense are taken. The main point of the measurements and the by the VDE recommended limits, however is about interferences bound to a circuit. On the supply lines of the network the prevailing conditions are reproducible so that standards can be put through (Fig. 2.2).

For measurements of interference radiation maybe the time was not ripe enough or the necessity was not big enough. The usual argumentation was: what we can't measure reproducibly, can not be forbidden and certainly not be put under punishment. Therefore merely recommendations were issued or impositions weak as wax were made like: "the interference field strength ... must be so small that an undisturbed reception is guaranteed as soon as the minimum field strength for utilization exists at the place where the antenna is mounted"[1].

In common parlance that means something like: "as long as no one bleats, everything is allowed". Within a connected industrial area there even existed an officially legitimized fools freedom. Merely at the fence of the industrial area limits had to be fulfilled.

Specially for the line-frequency of the screen one has decided to build a loophole in the law so that one didn't have to throw the TV sets, that so successfully had conquered the living rooms, out of the window. Of course the flickering screens did interfere exactly as before but this EMC-interference now was officially approved.
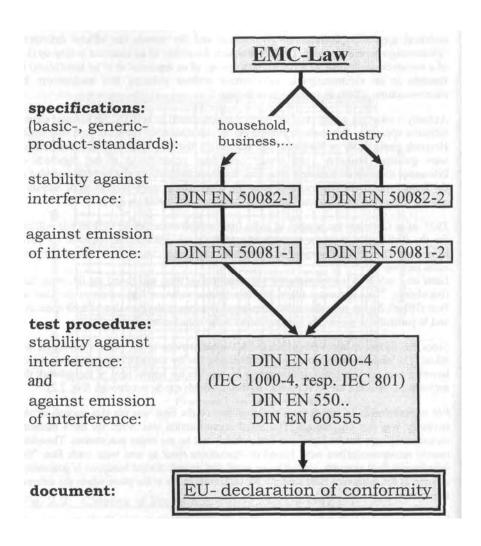
Fig. 2.3:   The way to EU conformity

2.3 Declaration of conformity

In the EMC times seem to have gone as the standardizers had to fit in with the insufficiencies of technology. Meanwhile the conditions have turned up. We owe this circumstance first of all the EMC-law of 1992 that doesn't name any limits but it states the political intention to demand from technical apparatus and installations an appropriate stability against interference and at the same time limit the sent out interference. As a consequence of this law the measurement facilities and measurement processes had to be standardized to get reproducible measurement results that are not influenced by the electromagnetic environment. That goes so far that even the floor covering of a measurement hall is dictated because the conductivity of the floor influences the degree of reflexion. Normally the examinee is situated on a revolving plate that is turned around for 360° during the measurement of the radio interference field strength. Is it however not possible to turn the examinee than the antenna has to be led around it, thereby again increasing the dimensions of the measurement hall. The distance to the antenna should be up to 10 meters. Moreover it must be possible to move the antenna, up till a height of 4 meters to register the influence of the reflexions on the floor.

Moreover there is to plan a reflexion free zone around the measurement track (in elliptical form) that depends on the reachable damping of reflexions of the used absorber. Used are pyramids of foam material soaked with carbon and increasingly tiles of ferrite or shieldings of wallpaper.

Taken all together for a measurement hall doing justice to standards there result considerable measurements of for instance 18 m length x 10 m width x 7 m height. Let's again come to talk about the EMC-law with which only the intention but not the way is fixed. To form the claims catalogue in a way that is fulfillable in general, some concrete prescriptions, the so called standards, have to be worked out. This task was transferred to the European committee for electro technical standardization CENELEC, which has established the workgroup TC 110 to at first work out some standards: The basic standards deal independent of product with general questions of the EMC, of the testing process and of the measurement environment.

The generic standards likewise deal independent of product with the so called fundamental technical standards for apparatus in their dependence of the respective electromagnetic environment (protected computer room or medical room, environment of the house, office or industry).

The product standards concern the EMC-standards referring to products (7 product families / approx. 50 products).

In Fig. 2.3 the arduous way through the jungle of paragraphs for a technical apparatus is outlined. Corresponding to the requirements of use, first the relating ES-standards for the apparatus have to be determined and than have to be measured according to own test standards based on the fundamental technical standards. When the allowed limits for stability against interference and for sending out interferences are not exceeded, the EC-declaration of conformity is handed out. Since 1.1.96 that declaration is needed when apparatus are commercialized or - stated more exactly - "put in circulation" and operated. When still further EC-guidelines are met in the end the CE-hallmark is awarded. Since 1.1.96 only with this hallmark the access to the common market of the EC is possible. Violations can be punished with fines and if need be with imprisonment. But there are great national differences in the EC. The Federal Republic of Germany with fines of up to 50.000 Euro counts as expensive for criminals.

Simulation of network for the measurement of the interference voltages U_{st1} and U_{st2}.
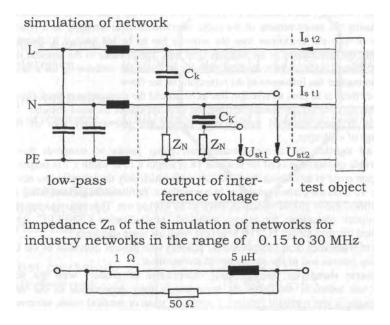
Fig. 2.4:   Simulation of network for the measurement of interference voltages.[i]

<i>:   acc. to Ernst Habiger: EMV, Huthig Buch Verlag Heidelberg (1992), ISBN 3-7785-2092-X

2.4 EMC-techniques to measure the emission of interference

Actually we already can be glad that it came to an europe-wide agreement for the regulation of the EMC-set of problems. But the question if we can be satisfied with what we have reached is still outstanding. All too often the lowest common denominator of the measurable and checkable was sought and not so much the technical possible was taken into consideration.

The main emphasis is put on the measurement of the emission of interferences. Traditionally the interferences bound to a circuit are registered in a frequency range up to 30 MHz. The corresponding wavelengths thereby can correspond with the length of the supply lines and form standing interference waves. Primarily the spectrum of the interference currents is measured e.g. over a HF-current converter. These currents produce a voltage drop over the internal resistance of the feeding network. Because the properties of the networks can vary very strong, a standardized end-resistor is required for the measurement of the interference voltage. For this purpose an imitation of the network is switched between the network and the examinee. This imitation in addition has the task to keep away the interference signals that come from the supplying network with the help of filter-elements (Fig. 2.4).

The measurement of the interference radiation, the field-bound interference emission, lakes place between 30 MHz and 1 GHz. For that a free field or an absorber-hall with little or no reflexions is required. The standardized distances of measurement are 3, 10 and 30 meters. The electric field strength is determined with dipole broadband antennas, the magnetic field strength with frame antennas. It must be possible to both vary the receiving antenna between horizontal and vertical polarization and to adjust the receiving antenna in the height and the position to the test object.

Typical measurement set up to measure the emission of interferences bound to a conductor[i]

A: shielded link conductor
B: bundle of conductors folded like a meander
C: connection to the reference mass
ME: receiver of interference signal
NNB: Simulation of network
PO: test object
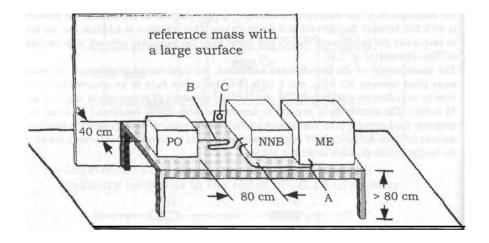
Fig. 2.5:   Measurement set up to measure the emission of interferences bound to a conductor,[i]

2.5 Electro-Smog

There is almost no end to the possibilities of variation and one needs already a lot of overview and experience to determine the field strength maximum. Nevertheless we have to ask ourselves if in this way really all emissions of interference are understandable, that popularly are described as ,,electro smog".

Smog is the combination of the terms Smoke and Fog. It therefore describes a pressure on the environment with fog like smoke. When for instance in the case of smog alarm all interference sources are switched off, which means all kilns are brought to a stop and all automobiles are stopped, than the fog like smoke therefore still is not vanished from the air. It just distributes itself and dissolves only very slowly.

The transfer of the smog idea on the electromagnetic interference radiation is bound to fail because, when the test object is switched off no emission of interference at all is detectable with the usual measurement means. Nevertheless the rainbow-press is trying to enumerate almost all electromagnetic field phenomena under the term ,,electro smog" without consideration of the fact that this term is not at all a collection term. From the sight of an expert one can only speak of smog when something like smog remains and stays active further after the switching off of an electro technical apparatus. It should be a phenomenon that is not understandable by the standardized measurements of interference radiation. Such a phenomenon would be e.g. the vortex of the electric field. However vortices are virtually not measurable in a direct way because they have the unpleasant property to whirl about around the measurement probe. But they will be detectable by their eddy losses and in the case of the electric field vortex appear as noise. Until now the standardizer however haven't planned to investigate the influence of an apparatus on the noise in the environment. Here we still grope in the dark.

At least the vortex shows a storing property that would justify the use of the idea "smog". We'll have to investigate the phenomenon.
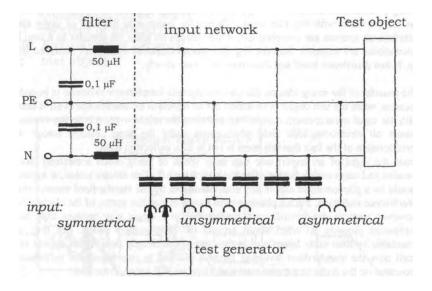
Fig. 2.6: Picking up of interference voltages in network lines.[i]

[i]:   Ernst Habiger: EMV, Huthig Buch Verlag Heidelberg (1992), ISBN 3-7785-2092-X

2.6 EMC-techniques to measure the stability against interference

The question is: what kind and what intensity of an electromagnetic interference can an apparatus cope with without limiting it regarding its technical function. For that test generators are used and with their help interference signals are produced in the test object. Fig. 2.6 shows the possibilities of a symmetrical, of an unsymmetrical and of an asymmetrical production of interference voltage signals in the power supply lines of an examinee. Over and above that the testing possibilities and testing methods are numerous. In principle the following processes are used:

1. The simulation and production of interference factors typical for the network like harmonic waves on network voltages, overlapping signal voltages, changes of network voltage, decrease of network voltage, network interruptions, network unsymmetries and network frequency changes.

2. The production of both energy-poorer and energy-richer interference impulses like they can form in energy-networks by switching acts or by the effect of lightning (burst).

3. The simulation of the course of events when static electricity discharges.

4. Low-frequency magnetic fields like those that can form by network frequency operating and loading currents or by short-circuit and lightning currents in the form of a pulse.

5. The stability against interference against the influence of an electromagnetic field also called radio interference firmness. For this purpose high-frequency generators and broadband antennas are used to expose the examinee to electromagnetic fields in a frequency range between 10 kHz and 18 GHz. At the moment tests are only performed between 27 and 500 MHz. The modulation of the carrier wave should be possible to be able to imitate the interferences by radio technology as realistic as possible. Thereby the field strength values can by all means reach up to several 100 V/m.

In accordance with expectation the result of this irradiation with an outside field is that every conduction path and every wire can act as an antenna and therefore can produce high-frequency currents and measurable potentials. Building parts of the analog technology as a consequence battle with problems of drift whereas with digital logic parts and computer parts the danger exists that switching states change unintentionally. Let us remember again the overlap effect of fig. 1.4. The electromagnetic wave itself marches w i t h the speed of light through the examinee. When a small part of the wave finds an object that it can use as an antenna than the localized overlap comes into play. This than as a cause is responsible for the effective and measurable antenna currents. Until here the text books help us to explain the problems that happen and to remove them logically.

However time and again cases are reported where textbook physics can't help us any further. Spectacular cases even came to court like e.g. the ABS (Antilock Braking System) of a truck that had failed due to EMC-interference radiation. As a consequence the brakes had failed. When after that the local radiation pollution is measured no anomaly at all can be discovered. The measurable field strength is not higher as is usual in the whole area. Maybe you also have made the experience that often the causes can't be found when your computer suddenly "crashes" out of the blue.

Here the mentioned vortex of the electric field is capable to deliver plausible explanations because it is not bound to the geometry of an antenna and in addition is highly active without being detectable with the usual EMC measurement methods of the interference radiation measurement!
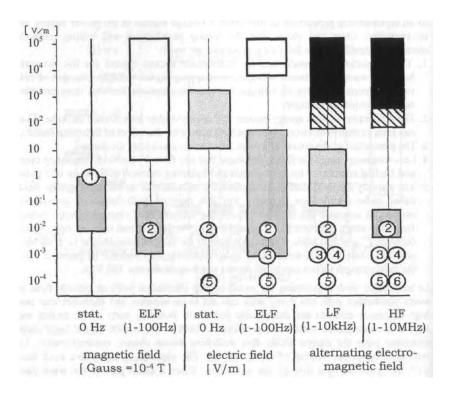
Fig. 2.7:   Intensities of natural electromagnetic fields
             (electric, magnetic and
             electromagnetic fields)

             In addition to fig. 1.1, page 3,
             magnetic field in Gauss (= 10^{-4} T),
             electric field in V/m.

<i>: A.S. Presman: Electromagnetic Fields and Life.
Plenum Press, New York - London, 1970

2.7 Tasks of the biological compatibility

The second leg of the environmental compatibility (EC) forms the biological compatibility (BC) besides the electromagnetic environmental compatibility. Whereas the interests of the EMC are looked after by electrotechnical engineers and electrophysicists, with the BC also doctors, biologists and architects are addressed.

Moreover this leg is already very old and already existed long before artificial interference sources could be created by mankind. The interaction between the arising interference sources in nature and the biological systems in general and specially men always interested the doctors, the priests, the druids and geomants, that not seldom looked after several functions in personal union equally. Unfortunately they as a rule have kept their knowledge and capabilities as secret knowledge, didn't make any recordings and merely initiated and trained their respective successors. Through that a great deal got lost and today non-medical practitioners, homeopaths and esoterics trouble themselves to take up to the far-reaching buried knowledge.

Because this concerns pure knowledge by experience, often the with the topic occupied persons themselves are not capable to say anything about the physical backgrounds and causes. One concentrates entirely on the under certain circumstances reachable results and only in rare cases on reproducable effects. In some areas the scientific assignment already has succeeded, have parascientific phenomena managed their admission in the so called "exact sciences", but in most experience disciplines the assignment is still due. There still is a lot to do here.

In the time as there not yet were operated any artificial interference sources on our planet, the senses of man naturally were a whole lot sharper for his electromagnetic environment as today. Today, where there scarcely is a place on earth where we are not irradiated by terrestrial transmitters, by satellites or by the netfrequency that is measurable everywhere. In the bluntness of our senses perhaps the hybris of modern man is founded, with which he wants to rise himself above esotericism, geomancy and other sciences of experience and thereby dispute the electric and magnetic fields their biological effectiveness.

The fields of natural origin form an electromagnetic environment for men, that they have adapted to and that they probably need for a life in accord with nature. The evolution has taken care for a corresponding adaptation.

In fig. 2.7 in addition to the limits from fig. 1.1 the intensities of natural electromagnetic fields are registered[i]. They lie clearly lower as the recommended limits but exactly in the area wherein the first reactions of living beings are observable.

When we ask us how much electromagnetism is good for us and how much harms us so the obvious answer is: exactly as much radiation as nature dictates in the fluctuations between day and night, between the months, years and in the end between the cycles of sunspots of 11 years. Here the guide value is found that man and nature have adapted themselves to. In fig. 2.7 the corresponding area between the natural minimum and maximum values is given.

Irradiation strengths of the field radiation in the biosphere and how the optical windows are situated in the atmosphere[i].
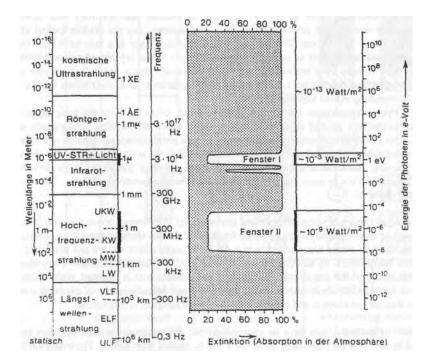
Fig. 2.8: Absorption dependent on frequency in the atmosphere

<i>:   entnommen aus: H.L. Konig: Unsichtbare Umwelt (Wetterfuhligk.), 5. Aufl., Bild 8, Seite 14, Verl. Moos & Partner Milnchen, ISBN 3-89164-058-7

2.8 Natural fields

Our electromagnetic environment has something to offer:
From the magnetic north pole to the magnetic south pole of the earth run the field lines of the earth's magnetic field that we are exposed to. With a compass we use the vector character of the magnetic field to fix our position. The induction averaged over time is approx. 50 uT. But it is overlapped by short-time fluctuations caused by geomagnetic storms in the ionosphere.

These storms again are caused by the eddy currents and the currents of charged particles that come from the sun. At the same time these eddy currents in the ionosphere together with the earth's magnetic field form a protective shield with a excellent screening effect for us inhabitants of earth.
In several layers like for instance the ozone and Heaviside layers a filtering and damping until the complete suppression of the very broad cosmic spectrum is caused. This extraterrestrial spectrum of radiation doesn't leave a single frequency out and has a lethal intensity for us.

Only for a little window in the frequency spectrum, radiation can pass almost undamped, as can be seen in fig. 2.8: the light with the spectrum of the colors. For this nature has donated man a sense organ so that man can protect himself against too high dose values. After all, who will look voluntarily into the sun? We only get into trouble when our sense organ doesn't function any more (for instance in the fringe range of the visible spectrum, the UV-range).

For other frequencies of electromagnetic radiation man neither has a sense organ but that doesn't mean that he is not influenced by these. Here, as in the UV-range he only indirectly notices that he has got too high a dose when he has to discover some influences on his well-being and his health. Without the help of neutral measurement apparatus he himself by no means is in a position to make a connection between an excessive exposition to radiation and his health problems.

When natural field strengths should be used as a measure for technical limits, so there should be paid attention to the fact that nature doesn't know intense continuous irradiation. The values are subject to powerful fluctuations that leave men and nature the chance to regenerate.
The television stations not even think it is necessary to reduce their broadcasting power after the end of broadcasts and further sprinkle the sleeping population with test signals, with senseless pictures of going by underground or nonstop program advertisements.
People need the intermissions. That again shows how good nature means it with us.

V/m in the
case of 1 kHz
bandwidth
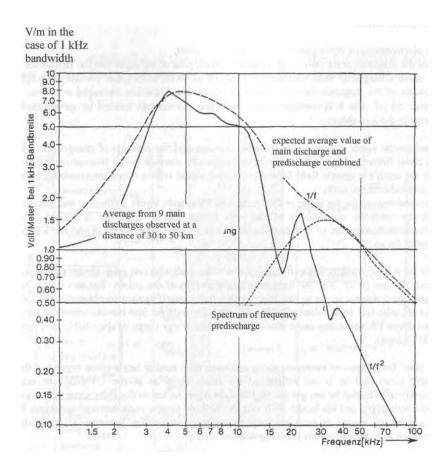
Fig. 2.9: Spectrum of frequency of one lightning, measured
field strength at a distance of 1.6 km from the place of origin. See Watt and Maxwell:[i,ii]

___ from:
<i>:   H.L. Konig: Unsichtbare Umwelt (Wetterfuhligk.), 5.Aufl., Bild 38, Seite 27, Verl. Moos & Partner Munchen, ISBN 3-89164-058-7, see <ii>.

2.9 Electricity of the air

The electrostatic field strength of the earth lies between 50 and 500 V/m. That is a whole lot considering that voltages off 60 Volts can be lethal for man. But a living person distorts the terrestrial E-field for reason of his own field and his electric conductivity, so that there exists no danger for him as long as he doesn't grow into the sky.

Maybe the dinosaurs had to become extinct because they were to big and for instance the E-field near the ground had risen with a jump by a meteorite that brought a high charge from the cosmos. That would explain why the smaller living beings could survive the natural disaster.

Also the thunderstorm electricity can become life-threatening. Burns, heart and brain failures are the most common consequences. After all the probability to be struck by lightning is four times higher as to have six right ones in the lottery.
Over the lightning channel of approx. 1 meter in diameter charges between 10 and 200 C are transported what results in current strengths of 2000 up to 200,000 A. The main discharge lasts between 10 and 50 usec. With the preceding and all the following discharges it lasts over a second.
Field strengths on the scale of 4,000 V/m are typical but in a distance of 5 km these wear off to 8 V/m. The frequency spectrum of a lightning reaches 4 powers of ten into the range of the radio waves. In fig. 2.9 is shown the field strength measured in a distance of 1.6 km from the place of origin[i,ii].

The origin of lightnings is still an unsolved problem after the well-known models (Wilson) arc not in a position to explain the reason for the origin of the potential difference of more than 100 million Volts required for the ionization of the air. Also the lightnings that struck in the direction of the ionosphere still are mysterious. We'll have to come back to this[iii].

[i]: H.L. Konig: Unsichtbare Umwelt (Wetterfuhligkeit), 5. Aufl., Bild 38, Seite 27, Verlag Moos & Partner Munchen, ISBN 3-89164-058-7, according to [ii].

[ii]: A. D. Watt and E. L. Maxwell: Characterisic of Atmospheric Noise from 1 to 100 Kc/s. Symposium on the Propagation of VLF Waves, Boulder, Col., Paper 35, Jan. 1957.

[iii]: see Part 1, chapter 5.4 and part 2, chapter 14.11.
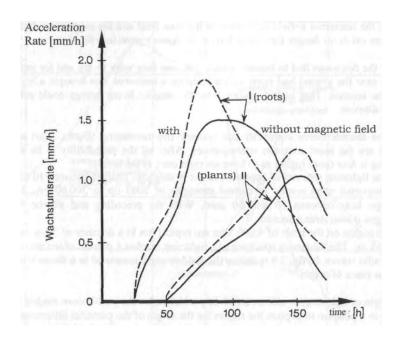
Fig. 2.10 A: Effect of a static magnetic field of 100 kA/m (0,12
Tesla) on the root (I) and on the plant (II) of barley
seeds.
plants in the magnetic field: dotted line
plants for checking: drawn line
according to Novitskii[iii]

[iii]:   Novitskii, Yu.I.: Effects of a magnetic field on the dry seeds of some cereals.
Proceedings of Conference on the Effect of Magnetic Fields on Biological
Objects, Moscow, p. 52, 1966.
Taken from: H.L. Konig: Unsichtbare Umwelt (Wetterfuhligkeit), 5. Aufl.,
Bild 72, S. 73, Verlag Moos & Partner Munchen, ISBN 3-89164-058-7

2.10 Biological effects

The in fig. 2.1 indicated connection between the EMC and the BC, by some authors inofficially described as EMC-environment (EMCE), describes the effect of artificial fields on biological systems. This concerns the sensitive range of tasks that is discussed extremely controversially in the public. The problem thereby is that the artificially produced field strengths lie above the natural field strengths for several scales. In the thirties first reports about troubles were provided by navy radio operators that complained about headache, dizzyness, concentration failure and indisposition. Besides these negative reports concerning the so called "radio operator disease" at the same time medical usages concerning high-frequency therapy were tested. In the beginning this diathermy called healing method still was a short wave irradiation. Today it is extended into the microwave range and uses the thermal effect of electromagnetic rays. The increased temperature of the tissue causes an increased local blood flow. This supports healing processes, loosens cramped muscles and can help in case of rheumatic fever. The advantage of the HF-irradiation compared to contact heat by a hot-water bottle or by infrared rays is the higher penetration depth. Herein short waves are superior to microwaves. But microwaves can be better focussed on a certain part of the body. Is the temperature further increased, so the tissue is damaged. This is used for the treatment of cancer and is called hyperthermy. Because cancer cells as a rule are flowed with blood worse than healthy cells, they are more sensitive to heat and therefore are faster destroyed than healthy cells at a correspondingly increased temperature. In this way for Instance in the USA cattle with a so called cancer eye are treated. For that the spot suffering from cancer is irradiated with 2MHz-waves for 30 seconds with a handheld apparatus of 10 Watts broadcasting power. The rate of succes is given to be 90%! The method of hyperthermy has not yet been able to establish in the area of the medicine for humans. Also at our college corresponding research work is carried out in co-operation with the radiological clinic of the university of Freiburg (Germany)[i].

The thermal effects of high-frequency fields are therefore well-known and subject of scientific research. On the other hand and in spite of numerous publications, non-thermal effects even today are denied by some scientists as non-existent[ii]. Here only a few counter-examples will be listed.

Fig. 2.10 A shows the effect of a static magnetic field of 0.12 Tesla on the root (1) and on thc plant (II) of barley seeds. The readable effect is an acceleration of the growth of the treated seeds (dotted line) compared to the plants for checking (drawn line)[iii].

---

[i]: H. Schulz, W. Oppitz: Lokale Hyperthermie durch hochfrequente Wirbelstrome, Medizin Technik 1, 1987.

[ii]: G. Nimtz: Mikrowellen, Einfuhrung in Theorie und Anwendung. 2. Aufl., BI-Wissenschaftsverlag 1990, ISBN 3-411-03203-0

[iii]: Novitskii, Yu.I.: Effects of a magnetic field on the dry seeds of some cereals. Proceedings of Conference on the Effect of Magnetic Fields on Biological Objects, Moscow, p. 52, 1966; taken from: H.L. Konig: Unsichtbare Umwelt, fig.72, p. 73, Verlag Moos & Partner Munchen, ISBN 3-89164-058-7
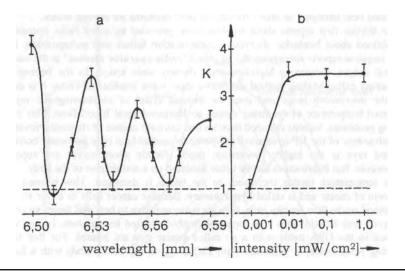
Fig. 2.10 B: Measured increase in the production (K) of   colicin
by colibacteria as a microwave effect

a)   as a function of the wavelength,
b)   as a function of the intensity of the microwaves,

according to Keilmann[i].

_____taken from: _____
<i>:   H. L. Konig: Unsichtbare Umwelt (Wetterfuhligkeit), 5. Aufl., Bild 106, S. 111.
Verlag Moos & Partner Munchen, ISBN 3-89164-058-7

A static field naturally produces no induction and hence no heating will arise. In the case of alternating fields the thermal effect in experiments is excluded by working with cxtremly low stimulations. The example after fig. 2.10 B shows the measured increase in the production (K) of colicin by colibacteria at only 0.01 mW/cm^2 microwave power[i].

In addition the example provides the interesting information that obviously only a certain frequency and it's harmonic waves increase the production, other frequencies on the other hand remain inactive. Because only minimal field strengths are used it more likely concerns an information-technical as an energetic effect (curve a). This statement is supported by the observation that an increase of the intensity not at all necessarily as a consequence also increases the production (curve b). What the colibakteria need is obviously neither energy nor heat but only a certain frequency that stimulates the colicin production or the growth.

Should it really be confirmed that biological effects of electric and magnetic fields can be produced by certain frequencies and can't happen by an energy transition so the discussions about limits must seem ample meaningless.

Maybe the one or the other in thought already draws a connection to the acceleration, the acclerated growth of kids, which is observed world-wide and stronger in cities than in the country. It started for approx. 100 years simultaneous with the electrification of the homes in the towns. In Asia the acceleration and also the electrification have started later. Other growth stimulating effects like radio waves, X-ray examinations, atomic tests and provable also the nourishment with vitamin B6 happened only until much later and at the most could support the actual effect.

But how should a proof be offered when anyway the field strength not at all can have a decisive influence on the growth of man after the statement of fig. 2.10 B? Which information is authorative? Where lies the responsible frequency window? Does the information actually manifest as frequency? Is the authorative influential factor also in this case not at all noticed and measured?

A lot of pressing questions are still outstanding. But in any case the numerous influential factors detected in experiments do not at all let themselves reduce to a sole factor, for instance the nourishment. For a family doctor it may be comfortable to be able to give an easy explanation: „Cause is the nourishment!" With such a reductionism on the other hand the actual cause stays in the dark and the asked questions in this way won't let themselves be answered.
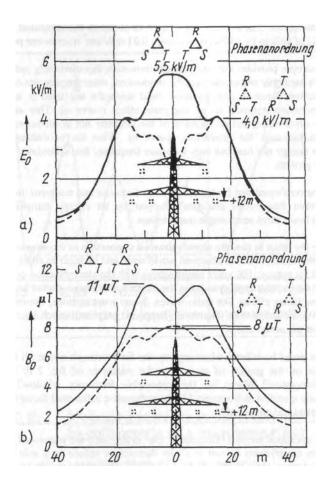
Fig. 2. 11: ____ profile of the 50-Hz-field on the ground
at 380kV/1kA in each circuit. [i]
a) electric field,
b) magnetic field.

____ taken from:
[i]:   E. Habiger u. a.: Elektromagnetische Vertraglichkeit, fig. 7.3, page 147 and
Fig. 7.1, page 146, 2nd Ed., 1992. Berlin, Miinchen: Verlag Technik.

2.11 Artificial fields

The scepticism of people feeling close to nature is especially directed against artificial fields that man can't see nor hear nor smell. Objects of doubt are first of all the installations for the creation, distribution and conversion of electric energy.

An essential role plays the fact how close the supplying and the draining conductors are to each other, so that the respective fields can compensate each other. The worst solution one can think of is realized at the electrified railway. Here the rails and the earth are used as the draining conductor for the current while there exists an ample large distance to the
supplying conductor. A compensation is almost impossible thus causing gigantic interference fields that are detectable even at a distance of 10 kilometers. The increased putting on of railway engines fed by rectified current is likely to aggravate the set of problems because the non-sinusoidal absorption of current is strongly afflicted with harmonic waves.
With high tension transmission lines (fig. 2.11) the interference field strength is reduced when the three cables are suspended with only little distance between them. But even the selected phase order can play a role. Of course the optimal compensation effect is
guaranteed with cables in the earth. But these are expensive and technically not realizable for such high voltage levels.

In the eighties also the computer screens got in the headlines. The terminals are furnished with a cathode ray tube and have a very broad radiation spectrum that already starts at 0 Hz. Here already static maximum values of 64 kV/m are measured[1]!

I'requency range	Measured maximum values E_{max} resp. H_{max}	30 cm in front of the screen
static field (0 Hz)	64 kV/m	
30 Hz. 60 Hz	10 V/m and	
	0.2 - 1 A/m	
5 Hz - 1 kHz	1800 V/m and	10 V/m and
	4 A/m	0,6 A/m
50 Hz - 0,5 MHz	1 A/m	
15 kHz-220 kHz	50 V/m and	15 V/m and
	1.1 A/m	0,17 A/m
3 MHz -300 MHz	< 0,2 V/m	

Fig. 2.11: Electromagnetic fields from screens[1]

system about	used frequency	measured value
radio broadcasting station (MW 2O kW)	6OO kHz	2...17 V/m
radio broadcasting station (SW 1OO kW)	15 MHz	1...25 V/m
SOS-transmitter on a ship (1OO W)	41O kHz	1...3 V/m
Epitaxiedevice (induction oven)	45O kHz	37...4OO V/m
HF-welting press (welding of plastic foils)	27,12 MHz	70...85 V/m
radar on a ship (TRN 311)	9,3 GHz	1...3O uW/cm^2
radar of an airplane	9,2 GHz	45O... 28OO uW/cm^2
domestic appliances measured in a distance of 3O cm:		
hand mixer	5O Hz	5O V/m
refrigerator	5O Hz	6O V/m

Fig. 2.12: _____ the electric field strength resp. Power density
in our environment.[i]

2.12 Protection against artificial fields

Artificial fields more or less always occur in the neighbourhood of electric apparatus and installations. Especially problematic are those that work with the free radiation of electromagnetic fields, that is all the radio broadcasting stations, handheld and radar transmitters.
Herewith it is important that not needed parts of the antennas are shielded, that antennas with little close by field pollution are used and that the stand should be situated at least 3 km remote from inhabited areas. For instance at radar installations damping values of 10 dB and more can be obtained only by using a corresponding tree growth.
This obviously concerns a damping of the waves in a dielectric manner. We'll have to come back to this because textbook physics does not know a corresponding damping term in the wave equation.

The radiation leaking out in case of the high-frequency welding of plastic foils and of the microwave oven should be minimized.
In the case of induction ovens or of motors an active shielding often causes problems so that for simple domestic appliances like a hand mixer and especially for the electric hair-dryer non proportionally high field strength values are measured. Fig. 2.12 informs about it.
Protective measures for the operator are hardly possible. To protect uninvolved people not only the apparatus but also the rooms and eventually whole parts of buildings had to be shielded and grounded.

Sometimes also fairly simple possibilities are helpful like e.g. the usage of a remote control. By clearing away the cable salat at the workplace and at the sleeping place induction loops can be removed. Alarm-clocks operated by batteries should have preference over those operated by the network. Mattresses with metal in them and spring-beds which clearly act as an antenna should be avoided. In extreme cases even so called "current-free switches" and shielded network lines are recommended (fig. 2.13).

In the area of the network supply lines a choking coil can help decrease the spreading of high-frequency interference radiation. It is especially important that all the conducting metallic objects like e.g. water pipes, heatings, steel racks, machines, switching racks, steel armaments and metallic windows should be grounded properly, because otherwise extremly high static charges could result instead of a shielding. Construction biologists recommend to when possible do without metals when building houses and furnishing, what of course is only realizable with limitation.

In any case numerous measures are known that to a lesser extent find their legitimation in classical physics, but more likely in precaution. As long as we do not know which phenomenon causes the electrosmog and we don't have a measuring-instrument at our disposal, precaution is really the only thing we can do irrespective of the effectiveness of the measures and of the arising costs!

transmission line
used voltages:
10/30/110/220/380kV

Transformer

Neutral earthing
(N = PE) !
underground cable
3 x 400 V
to the consumer loads

L1
L2
L3
N
main fuse

recommendation:
reactor with current compensation

Standard (!): grounding of the
neutral conductor

Electric
meter

PE
L1
N
to the installation
of the house
fuse (bedroom)

power supply
(i.e. 12 V DC)

contactor

*measurement of current
with amplifier*
(glow lamp)
consumer load
(bedroom)

Fig. 2.13:   About the circuitry and the problems involved
with a "current-free switches" installation

2.13 Unsolved tasks

The report concerning the actual state of research could be continued at will. But the expositions should suffice, to understand what are the tasks of the electromagnetic environmental compatibility (fig. 2.1) and which questions still have to be supplied with a solution. One can get deeper into every of the addressed points and then discover that some questions can be expressed sharper and maybe conceivable answers can be found, but at the same time and unavoidable the number of new questions increases faster.

Let us again take up the example of the handheld wireless telephones (chapter 1.2). At least it now is clear to us that the usage of the built-in microwave antenna of a handy is problematic. In the interior of an automobile it never should be used. If, however, one uses the antenna installed on the outside on the sheet metal then the damping and screening effect of the sheet metal chassis is advantageous at least for the handy user.

With that of course the central question is not answered. The question of what the cause is for the interfering and at worst health endangering effect of the HF-radiation. Field freedom we can't find anywhere on this world. Possibly we even need the fields. But then the question is how much is necessary, how much is healthy and how much makes us ill.

The gap of explanation especially gets clear in the case of the static or of the low-frequency magnetic field: away from technical interference sources normally fields on the scale of 10 nT are measurable. Construction biologists say that 20 nT, so twice that value, should not be exceeded at the sleeping place and maybe 50 nT at the desk. These values however are determined purely empirical.

When a person is examined in a nuclear magnetic resonance tomograph that person is exposed to a field that lies between 0.2 and 1.5 Tesla. that is a value 7 till 8 powers often higher than before mentioned without this leading to the death of that person. Entirely on the contrary this method is regarded as especially caring and safe compared to the X-ray examination.

Here again the legitimation of the thesis put forward is entirely comfirmed. The thesis that the well-known physically measurable and controllable phenomena can not be considered as a cause and that possibly a until now undiscovered field phenomenon should be called to account.

Should such a phenomenon exist it should be derived, calculated and proved. We must go to endless troubles and try everything. The actual difficulties wherein the electromagnetic environmental compatibility is stuck are a challenge.

fundamental physical
principle
(God)

cause

effect
= cause

effects
= causes

effects + effects
= causes + causes

effects + effects + effects
= causes + causes + causes

effects + effects + effects + effects
= causes + causes + causes + causes

nothing than effects (orderless chaos)
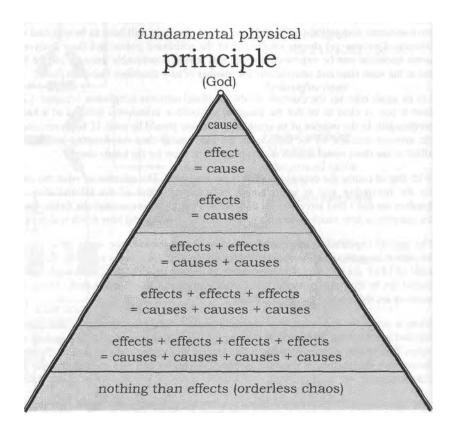
Fig. 3.0:   pyramid of causality

vortices are a consequence of the principle of causality

3. Approach

In the question, if there exists a still unknown phenomenon that influences the electromagnetic environmental compatibility, we must fall back far until upon the roots of our physical understanding. Here we find a fundamental principle that until today is not doubted and that is regarded as elementary, the principle of causality. Every result of a measurement, every interpretation is checked for causality and only after passing this examination it is accepted and published.

This principle of cause and effect has established, not only in physics but also in many other disciplines of science. Is an effect observed, so there immediately is asked for the cause. This principle encounters us in daily life[i].

When all observable and measurable effects ever can be assigned to a cause without force and without exceptional regulations then the logical result is a pyramid of causality. On top a fundamental physical principle is found, that is regarded as given by nature or as given by god and that with its properties is responsible as the cause for different effects. These effects again appear as the cause for new effects and so on (Fig. 3.0). Sometime we have removed us so far from the top of the pyramid that a direct reference to the describable effects can't be made anymore, so the impression could arise that it concerns an isolated and independent discipline. We should take care not to think in such a monocausal way, because both delimitation and avoidance of interdisciplinary working methods will inevitably steer us into a dead end!
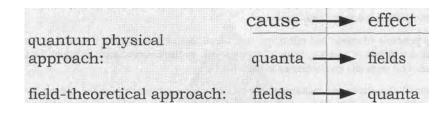
This pyramid of causality stands for the vision of a "unified theory", like it is demanded and sought-after by numerous research scientists. But as long as it is not found, we'll have to do with unsolved problems of causality. About this any number of examples can be given.

A physical principle based on the principle of causality is the vortex. This the eddy current demonstrates us clearly. The cause for its origin is an alternating field. According to Faraday's law of induction this induces a voltage that in a conducting medium results in a current according to Ohm's law. Around this current according to Ampere's law an alternating field forms, that points perpendicular to the current and overlaps the original alternafing field. This induced field first of all is an effect that overlaps the cause and itself becomes the cause. The effect that follows from that further overlaps and forms a new cause etc. In this way vortices form.

Vortices quasi represent the principle of causality.

---

[i]: When for instance a woman complains: "Doctor, my left knee hurts" (effect). The doctor diagnoses the cause: "Yes, that comes with age!" With that causality is established. "But doctor", says the woman, "my right knee is exactly as old as my left knee!" And already the doctor has a new problem of causality.

Principle of Causality:

	cause → effect
quantum physical approach:	quanta → fields
field-theoretical approach:	fields → quanta

violations of the principle of causality:

1. monopoles exist

2. starting point for the strong interaction

3. fields and quanta are a cause at the same time

4. hypothetical particles (gluons, quarks, etc.)

   5. transmission of information with speeds faster than light
     • with photons (University of Berkeley)
     • with microwaves (University of Cologne)
     • with laser beams (Technical Univ. of Vienna)

6. transmission of energy with speeds faster than light
     • with scalar waves (Nicola Tesla)

Fig. 3.1:   Causality or the principle of cause and effect

3.1 Principle of causality

Our physical view of life strictly obeys the rules of causality, the principle of cause and effect. But there are numerous cases, where causality at first could not be fulfilled anymore. Here alternate solutions had to be found to not endanger this very successful principle. A few examples should clarify this:

1. Technically it is impossible to produce a magnetic monopole. When a north pole is produced then the accompanying south pole is also formed. In the same way only the positive and negative pole can be assembled as the so called dipole. In the microcosm however we find monopoles. Electrons are such particles. To restore causality we must grant the microcosm its own laws that are not valid in the macrocosm! But this monocausal hypothesis contradicts the observation that the microcosm represents an image of the macrocosm and vice versa. Doubts if this assertion is allowed are reasonable.

2. Like charges repel each other and that the more the smaller the distance gets. In an atomic nucleus positively like charged protons are together at the smallest possible room without any repulsion happening. Arithmetically seen all atomic nuclei would have to explosively fly to pieces. But because this doesn't happen, shortly a new and supposedly fundamental interaction, the strong interaction, was introduced to save causality. Nevertheless this interaction now holds the like particles in a not explained manner together. Causality could be obtained only by the introduction of a new fundamental phenomenon.

3. When causality should hold as the supreme principle, it should be demanded with priority for the fundamental phenomena of physics. Instead, in quantum electrodynamics the particle is attributed the same physical reality as the field. With the wave-particle duality Heisenberg has given out the corresponding formula of compromise. This slaps the face of the principle of cause and effect.

Causality on principle allows only two approaches for a solution: the quantum physical approach. which holds the quanta as the cause for the fields, and the field-theoretical ašproach. wherein only the fields act as the cause. For both approaches there are good arguments. The field theorists cite that fields can exist also in the vacuum, so that there exist fields without particles but never particles without fields. Against that the quantum physicists hold that somewhere, even when quite far away, there exist particles and that the measurable fields merely are their action at a distance.

Both approaches first arouse the impression to be fully equal. In the course of the discoveries in the area of quantum physics, the corresponding approach has been able to establish. But it demands that all phenomena have to be understood as a consequence of particles. So should gravitons make gravitation possible, should gluons hold everything together and the quarks form the basic building parts. Meanwhile there is only worked with hypotheses. Out of poverty quantum physics meanwhile has said goodbye to strict causality, after the number of the violations of causality has risen that much and in every respect there is a lack of models of explanation. It seems as if the end is reached, as if the quantum physical approach to a large extend is exhausted.

Field-theoretical approach:

3rd Maxwell equation   4th Maxwell equation

$$\boxed{\text{Div } \mathbf{B} = O} \quad (3.3) \qquad \boxed{\text{Div } \mathbf{D} = \rho_{el}} \quad (3.4)$$

With the relations of material:

$$\boxed{\mathbf{B} = \mu \cdot \mathbf{H}} \quad (3.5) \qquad \boxed{\mathbf{D} = \varepsilon \cdot \mathbf{E}} \quad (3.6)$$

$$\mu \cdot \text{Div } \mathbf{H} = O \quad (3.3^*) \qquad \varepsilon \cdot \text{Div } \mathbf{E} = \rho_{el} \quad (3.4^*)$$

H: source free   **E**: non-vortical
       vortex field   source field

New <u>field-theoretical approach</u>: $\boxed{\text{Div } \mathbf{D} = O}$ (3.7)

thus: Div **H** = O (3.3**)   and $\boxed{\text{Div } \mathbf{E} = O}$ (3.7*)

H <u>and</u> **E**: <u>source free vortex fields!</u>

Einstein:

> "Is it conceivable, that a field theory permits us to understand the atomistic and quantum structure of reality? This question by almost all is answered with No. But I believe that at the moment nobody knows anything reliable about it"[i].

Pauli:

> "The electric elementary quantum e is a stranger in Maxwell-Lorentz' electrodynamics"[ii].

Fig. 3.2: The field-theoretical approach

[i]:   A. Einstein: Grundzuge der Relativitatstheorie, S 162, Anhang II; 5. Aufl., Vieweg,   Braunschweig   1974.

[ii]:   W. Pauli: Aufsatze und Vortrage uber Physik und Erkenntnistheorie. Vieweg, Braunschweig 1961, entnommen aus:
H. G. Kussner: Grundlagen einer einheitlichen Theorie der physikalischen Teilchen und Felder. Musterschmidt-Verlag Gottingen 1976, S. 161.

3.2 Field-theoretical approach

The field-theoretical approach is the very much older one. Until the last turn of the century the world in this respect still was in order. Max Planck, by the discovery of quanta, has plunged physics into a crisis.

Albert Einstein, who, apart from his lightquanta hypothesis, in his soul actually was a field theorist, writes: „Is it feasible that a field theory allows us to understand the atomistic and quantum structure of reality?". This question by almost all is answered with No. But I believe that at present nobody knows anything reliable about it[i]".

By the way the "No" can be justified by the fact that the field description after Maxwell is by no means able to the formation of structure so that it is not possible for quanta to appear as a consequence. The field-theoretical approach could, obstructed by Maxwell's field theory, not further be pursued and to this until today nothing has changed.

Nevertheless it would be an omission to not at least have tried this approach and have it examined for its efficiency. Maybe the above mentioned problems of causality let themselves be solved much more elegantly. For this however the Maxwell theory must be reworked to a pure field theory. With the well-known formulation it offends against the claim of causality, since it is field theory and quantum theory at the same time. To Maxwell himself the quanta were still unknown, but today we know that the fourth Maxwell equation is a quantum equation:

$$\text{div } \mathbf{D} = \rho_{el} \quad (3.4)$$

After this the electric field is a source field whereby the individual charge carriers, like e.g. electrons, act as sources to form in their sum the space charge density ρ_{el}. The other three Maxwell equations are pure wave equations. In this way the third equation identifies the magnetic field as source free:

$$\text{div } B = O \quad . \tag{3.3}$$

This for Pauli probably was the reason to call, "the electric elementary quantum e⁻ a stranger in Maxwell-Lorentz' electrodynamics"[ii].

Let's return to the principle of causality according to which in the field-theoretical approach the fields should act as a cause and not the particles. In a corresponding field description quanta logically have not lost anything. It is only consistent to likewise demand freedom of sources of the electric field:

$$\text{Div } D = O \quad . \tag{3.7}$$

When the electric field is not a source field, then what is it? The magnetic field is a vortex field. Hence it would be obvious to also conceive the electric field as a vortex field. Numerous reasons speak for it:

1. A non-vortical gradient field, like it is formed by charge carriers, merely represents a special case of the general vortex field. Only by the generation of quanta a source field can form as a special case.

2. The electromagnetic wave teaches us the duality between the E- and the H-field that are directed perpendicular to each other and are in a fixed relation to each other. If one of them is a vortex field then also the dual field must be a vortex field.

Duality:

$$\int_a^b \mathbf{H}\, d\mathbf{s} = I \qquad (3.1^*) \qquad\qquad \int_a^b \mathbf{E}\, d\mathbf{s} = -U \qquad (3.2^*)$$

Circulation along the closed path ds:

Ampère's law (3.1)   acc. to Maxwell: (3.2)   new: (3.8)

$$\oint \mathbf{H}\, d\mathbf{s} = I_{ein} \qquad\qquad \oint \mathbf{E}\, d\mathbf{s} = O \qquad\qquad \oint \mathbf{E}\, d\mathbf{s} = -U_{ein}$$

3rd Maxwell eq.   4th Maxwell eq.   new:

$$\text{Div } \mathbf{B} = O \quad (3.3) \qquad \text{Div } \mathbf{D} = \rho_{el} \quad (3.4) \qquad \text{Div } \mathbf{D} = O \quad (3.7)$$

With the relations of material:

$$\mathbf{B} = \mu \cdot \mathbf{H} \quad (3.5) \qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad \mathbf{D} = \varepsilon \cdot \mathbf{E} \quad (3.6)$$
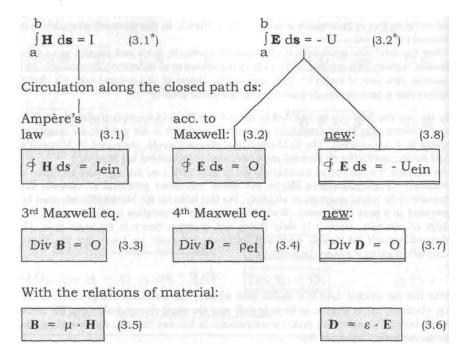
Fig. 3.3: The dual field description

Dual approach according to Jackson[i] or Lehner[ii]:

Div B = ρ_{magn} because of the 4th Maxwell equation: Div D = ρ_{el} (3.4)

ρ_{magn} = magnetic monopoles should exist,
otherwise dual extension (3.8) not allowed!

Caution: closed loop conclusion!
Maxwell theory proves the correctness of the Maxwell theory.
Result: search for magnetic monopoles unsuccessful.

[i]:   J. D. Jackson, Classical Electrodynamics, 2nd Ed. , John Wiley, New York, 1975, S. 251 - 253

[ii]:   G. Lehner, Elektromagnetische Feldtheorie, Springer-Verlag Berlin, Heidelberg 1990, S. 35 - 36 und S. 533 ff.

3.3 Duality

Duality is a fundamental physical principle. Opposite, but one another complementing phenomena can be assigned to each other in pairs, like e.g. (see fig. 8.8):

	Yin (female)	——		Yang (male)
	south pole	——		north pole
	$\ominus$	——		$\oplus$
R [Ω]	resistance	——	R^{-1} [Ω^{-1}]	conductance
U [V]	voltage	——	I [A]	current
E [V/m]	electr.field strength	——	**H** [A/m]	magnet.field strength
Q [As]	charge	——	ϕ [Vs]	magnetic flux
D [As/m^2]	electr.displacement	——	**B** [Vs/m^2]	magnetic induction
ε_0 [As/Vm]	electr.field-constant	——	μ_0 [Vs/Am]	magnet.field-constant
ρ_{el} [As/m^3]	electr.charge density	——	ρ_{magn}[Vs/m^3]	magnet.charge density
	induction law	——		Ampère's law
	potential vortex	——		eddy current
	(vortex of the electric field)			(vortex of the magnetic field)

First of all we find the duality confirmed in the case of the electromagnetic wave spreading in a homogeneous medium. Here the field pointers of E and H are directed perpendicular to each other and are in a fixed relation to each other. But if the wave is damped in the presence of matter, for instance by eddy currents, then by basing on Maxwell's field theory the duality will vanish.

A good example for perfect duality provides the integral of a field strength vector along the path from a to b:

$$\int_a^b \mathbf{H}\,ds = I \quad (3.1^*) \qquad \text{and} \qquad \int_b^a \mathbf{E}\,ds = U \quad . \qquad (3.2^*)$$

Urn if the integration takes place along a closed path then the circulation yields:

$$\oint \mathbf{H}\,ds = I_{eing} \quad (3.1) \qquad \text{and} \qquad \oint \mathbf{E}\,ds = O \quad . \qquad (3.2)$$

According to Ampere's law (3.1) the magnetic field can thus form enclosed currents and spatially spreading eddy currents. The electric field on the other hand should be irrotational (3.2).

Let's take the case that the electromagnetic wave is damped by eddy currents and the magnetic field in this way becomes a vortex field. The electric field itself that, as said, is in a fixed relation and perpendicular to the vortex field H, will show all the vortex-typical properties. Hence nothing would be more obvious as to also grant the electric field a formation of vortices:

$$\oint \mathbf{E}\,ds = -U_{eing} \quad . \qquad (3.8)$$

Critics of this dual approach, like for instance Jackson[i] or Lehner[ii], point out that with reference to the fourth Maxwell equation the electric field should be understood as a source field:

$$\text{div } \mathbf{D} = \rho_{el} \quad . \qquad (3.4)$$
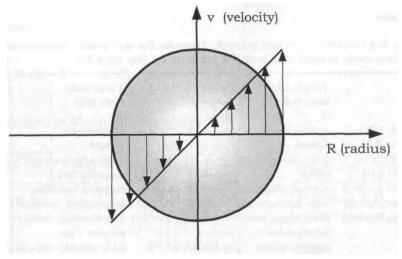
Fig. 3.4a: Velocity distribution v(R) for a vortex with rigid-
body rotation
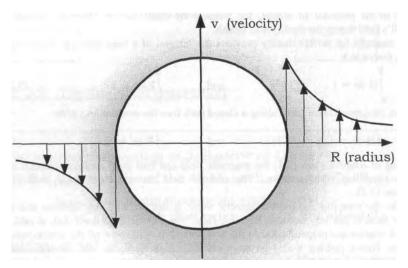
Fig. 3.4b: Velocity distribution v(R) in a potential vortex
(see Lugt[i]).

[i]   Lugt, Hans J.: Vortex flow in nature and technology. Krieger publishing
company, Florida 1995; page 30 and 31, ISBN 0-89464-916-7

For a complete duality from the existence of electric monopoles, individual in the space charge density ρ_{el} contained charge carriers, the claim for magnetic monopoles is derived. In spite of intensive search such north or south pole particles however until now could not be found. Herein from the sight of criticism is seen a confirmation for the assumption that Maxwell's field theory is self-contained and hence in principle may not be extended. The critics have a problem of causality: They postulate source fields that at the same time should be vortex fields. But if one asks how one should imagine such a field that is scalar and at the same time vectorial, then it looks as if no one has ever made any thoughts about it.

The from causality derived solution of the problem of lacking duality requires to extend the Maxwell theory in one point, by introducing the potential vortex of the electric field here and at the same time make a cut in another place:

$$\text{div } D = O \hspace{10cm} (3.7)$$

With this formulation, the assumption of a freedom of sources in principle, the complete duality already is reached: Now neither magnetic nor electric monopoles exist (Fig. 3.3)! At first we have to accept the loss of the electron hoping that the calculation in the end works out: the "exchange" vortices against particles, by which the quanta can be banned from the field theory, suggests that the elementary particles themselves are nothing else as spherical vortices that have found to an own physical reality.

3.4 Flow vortices

In fluid engineering convincing and strong indications for the correctness of the chosen approach can be found. It benefits us that hydrodynamic vortices are visible or can be the injection of smoke, e.g. in a wind-tunnel.
Already Leonardo da Vinci had observed at liquids that there exist two dual basic types of plane vortices: "Among the vortices one is slower at the centre than at the sides, another is faster at the centre than at the sides."
A vortex of the first type, also called "vortex with rigid-body rotation", is formed for instance by a liquid in a centrifuge that due to its inertia of mass is pressed to the edge because there the largest velocity exists. In an analogous way the electromagnetic vortex in electrically conductive material shows the well-known "skin effect" (Fig. 3.4a).
To explain the other vortex Newton describes the experiment where a rod is dipped into a liquid as viscous as possible and then is turned. In this potential vortex the velocity of the particle increases the closer to the rod it is (Fig. 3.4b).
The duality of both vortex phenomena becomes obvious when we make ourselves clear that in the experiment with the centrifuge the more liquid presses to the edge the less viscous the medium is. And that on the other hand the potential vortex forms the stronger the more viscous the medium is. As conclusion we read in text books that the viscosity of the liquid decides whether a vortex with rigid-body rotation or a potential vortex is formed.
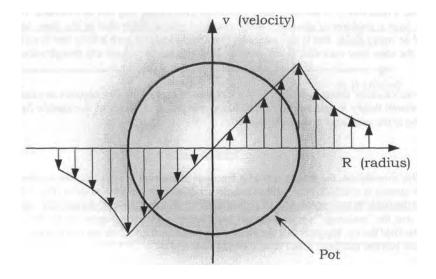
Fig. 3.5: Combination of a vortex with rigid-body rotation and a potential vortex (Lugt[i]).

[i]   Lugt, Hans J.: Vortex flow in nature and technology. Krieger publishing company, Florida 1995; ISBN 0-89464-916-7

3.5 Rankine vortex

When we, in a third experiment, immerse the centrifuge filled with water into a tough medium and let the centrifuge rotate, then inside the centrifuge a vortex with rigid-body rotation forms and outside the centrifuge a potential vortex forms (Fig. 3.5).

It is obvious that one vortex always causes the other vortex with the opposite properties and so the existence of one causes that of the other. So in the first case, that of the vortex with rigid-body rotation, outside the centrifuge potential vortices will form in the surrounding air, whereas in the second case, that of the potential vortices, the turning rod itself can be interpreted as a special case of a vortex with rigid-body rotation. Hence in all conceivable experiments the condition always is fulfilled that in the centre of the vortex the same state of "peace", that we can fix as "zero", prevails as in infinity.

When we take a tornado as an example, thus a whirlwind. In the "eye of the cyclone" there's no wind at all. But when I go away from this spot, then I'm blown to the outside. I can really feel the vortex with rigid-body rotation in the inside. If. however, I am standing on the outside, then the potential vortex tries to pull me into the vortex. This potential vortex is responsible for the structure and in the end also for the size of the tornado.

At the radius of the vortex, the place with the largest speed of the wind, an equilibrium prevails. The vortex with rigid-body rotation and the potential vortex at this point are equally powerful. Their power again is determined by the viscosity, which thereby fixes the radius of the vortex!

Therefore meteorologists pursue with interest whether a tornado forms over land or over water. Over the ocean for instance it sucks itself full with water. In that way the potential vortex increases in power, the radius of the vortex gets smaller and the energy density increases dangerously.

If the knowledge from hydrodynamics is transferred to the area of electromagnetism, then the role of the viscosity is taken over by the electric conductivity. The well-known current eddy occurs in the conductor, whereas its counterpart, the postulated potential vortex, forms in the bad-conducting medium, with preference in the dielectric. The duality of both vortices is expressed by the fact that the electric conductivity of the medium decides whether current eddies or potential vortices can form and how fast they decay, i.e. convert their energy into heat.
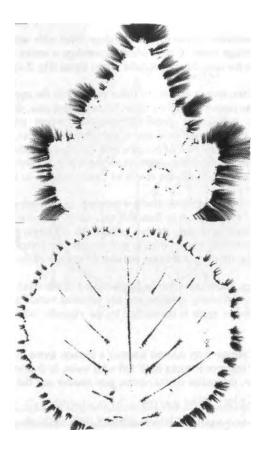
Fig.   3.6:   Kirlian   photograph   of   leaves[i]
structured corona discharges

[i]:   (produced by students of electronics in the laboratory for power electronics of
the Author, University of Applied Sciences Furtwangen 1991)

[ii]:   Kupfmuller, Karl: Einfuhrung in die theoretische Elektrotechnik,
Springer-Verlag Berlin, 12. Auflage 1988, page 453

[iii]:   Kupfmuller, Karl: Einfuhrung in die theoretische Elektrotechnik,
Springer-Verlag Berlin, 12. Auflage 1988, page 208

3.6 Vortex and anti-vortex

Fig. 3.5 shows that vortex and dual anti-vortex mutually cause each other. In high tension transmission lines we find a striking example for the combination of current eddy and potential vortex. Within the conductor current eddies are formed. Thus the current density increases towards the surface of the conductor (skin effect). Outside of the conductor, in the air, the alternating fields find a very bad conducting medium. If one follows the text book opinion, then the field outside the conductor should be an irrotational gradient field! But this statement causes unsolvable problems.

When vortices occur inside the conductor, then for reasons of a detachment of the vortices without jumps at the interface to the dielectric, also the fields in the air surrounding the conductor must have the form and the properties of vortices. Nothing would be more obvious as to also mathematically describe and interpret these so-called gradient fields as vortex fields. When looking exact this argument even is mandatory!

The as laws of field refraction known boundary conditions[ii] in addition demand steadiness at the interface of the conductor to the dielectric and don't leave us any other choice. If there is a vortex field on one side, then also the field on the other side is a vortex field, otherwise we offend against the law! Here an obvious failure of the Maxwell theory is present.

Outside the conductor, in the air, where the alternating fields find a very bad conducting medium the potential vortex not only exists theoretical; it even shows itself. Dependent among others on the frequency and the composition of the surface of the conductor, the potenial vortices form around the conductor. When the thereby induced potentials exceed the initial voltage, then impact ionisation takes place and the well-known corona discharge is produced. Everyone of us can hear this as crackling and see the sparkling skin with which high tension transmission lines cover themselves.

In accordance with the text books also a gradient field increases towards the surface of the conductor, but an even shining would be expected and not a crackling. Without potential vortices the observable structure of the corona would remain an unsolved phenomenon of physics (Fig. 3.6).

But even without knowing the structure-shaping property of the potential vortices, that in addition acts supporting and that we'll have to derive, it can be observed well that especially roughness on the surface of the conductor stimulate the formation of vortices and can produce vortices. If one is looking for a reason why with large frequency the very short impulses of discharge always emerge from roughness[iii], then very probable potential vortices are responsible for it. By means of a Kirlian photograph it can be shown that the corona consists of structured separate discharges (Fig. 3.6).

With this the approach is motivated, formulated and given reasons for. The expositions can't replace a proof, but they should stand a critical examination. Mathematical and physical evidence will be furnished later.
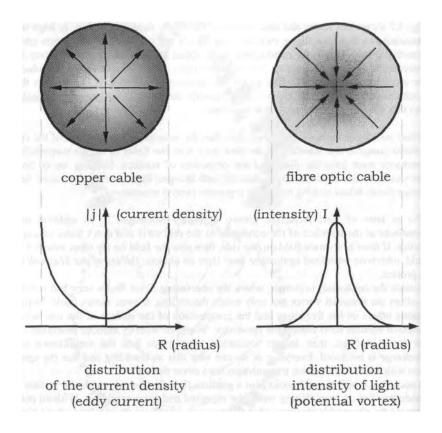
Fig. 4.1:   The distribution in principle of the intensity of light
                within a fibre optic cable[i] compared to the
                distribution of the current density in a copper cable

[i]   Meyl, Konstantin: Potentialwirbel, Band 1: Diskussionsbeitrage zur natur-
wissenschaftlichen Deutung und zur physikalisch-technischen Nutzung,
basierend auf einer mathematischen Berechnung neu entdeckter hydro-
tischer Wirbel, INDEL GmbH, Verlagsabteilung,
Villingen-Schwenningen 1990, ISBN 3-9802-542-1-6

4. Properties

4.1 Concentration effect

It can be assumed that until now there does not yet exist a technical application for the here presented potential vortex theory unless the phenomenon was used by chance and unconsciously. About this the transmission of optical light signals over fibre optic cable can be given as a typical example.

Compared to a transmission of energy impulses over a copper cable fibre optic cables show a considerable better degree of effectiveness. The derived potential vortex theory provides a conclusive explanation for this phenomenon and therefore is put here to discussion: If we cut through a fibre optic cable and look at the distribution of a light impulse over the cross-section, then we observe a concentration in the centre of the conductor (fig. 4.1).

Herc the duality between the vortices of the magnetic and of the electric field comes to light.   Whereas the current eddies in a copper conductor cause the "skin effect" as is well-known, potential vortices show a "concentration effect" and align themselves with the vortex centre. The measurable and in fig. 4.1 shown distribution of the light intensity in a fibre optic cable may confirm this phenomenon, the orientation of the potential vortex on the vortex centre.

For instance the calculation of the resistance of a copper cable provides as an important result an apparent decrease of the resistance directed towards the conductor surface. There the associated better conductivity as a consequence causes an increased current density. In the reversed direction, towards the centre of the conductor, consequently a decrease of the effective conductivity would be present, and this result is independent of the used material. According to the rules of duality this is a condition for the formation of potential vortices. As already said the conductivity is responsible for it, if the expanding eddy current with its skin effect or the contracting potential vortex with its concentration effect is predominant.

Usual fibre optic materials possess not only a small conductivity, but in addition a high dieletricity. This additionally favours the formation of vortices of the electric field. If one consciously or unconsciously supports the potential vortices, then there is a possibility that the life of the fibre optic cable is negatively influenced because of the concentration effect. Of course it can not be excluded that other effects, like e.g. reflections or the modes of the light are involved in the concentration effect. But it should be guaranteed that this actually concerns is causal phenomena and doesn't concern only alternative explanations out of ignorance of the active vortex phenomenon.

The formal mathematical reason for the concentration effect provides the reverse sign in Faraday's law of induction compared to Ampere's law (see also equation 3.1 and equation 3.8 in fig. 3.3).

	magnetic field strength **H**		electric field strength **E**

	eddy current	potential vortex
	magnetic dipole	electric dipole
	vortex of the conductor	vortex of the non-conductor
ideal case:	**superconductor**	**vacuum**
material properties which act amplifying:	**permeability**	**dielectricity**
result:	„skin effect"	„concentrations effect"
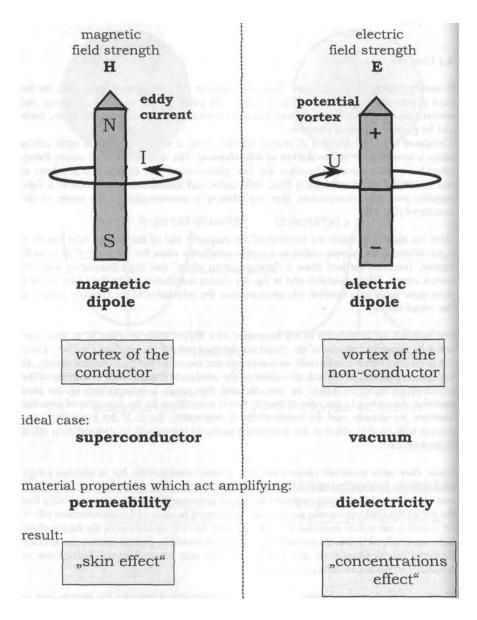
Fig. 4.2:   The acting as a dipole of
              current eddies   and   potential vortices

4.2 Duality of the vortex properties

The rules of duality dictate for the vortex of the electric and of the magnetic field the following characteristics:

1. Whereas currents and eddy currents demand a good conductivity, potentials and potential vortices can only form with bad conductivity, thus in a dielectric and best in the vacuum.

2. Eddy currents run apart, strive towards infinity and thus show the well-known "skin effect" with a spatially limited arrangement of the conductor. According to the rules of duality the potential vortex will strive towards the vortex centre and in this way will show a "concentration effect".

3. Another property of vortices is shown in fig. 4.2.
On the left side a plane eddy current is indicated. Since the discovery of Ampere's law it is well-known to us that such a circular current (I) forms a magnetic dipole standing perpendicular to the vortex plane.
On the right hand side the dual phenomenon is sketched. Here charges are piled up circularly to a planar potential vortex (U). Thereby an electric dipole forms, standing perpendicular to the vortex plane. This relation directly follows from the equations of the field-theoretical approach.
Whereas circular currents and current eddies produce magnetic dipoles, the postulated potential vortices will form electric dipoles.

With these three interesting properties some key questions of quantum physics, that until now have stayed a mystery to science (fig. 4.4), can be answered conclusively and without compulsion e.g.:

I.Why are there no magnetically charged particles?
The better the conductivity of a medium is, the higher as a consequence the number of free charge carriers is. the more strongly eddy currents are formed. The answer to question I is inferred   from   the   opposite   case:
In the ideal vacuum no charge carriers at all are present, why no currents, no current eddies and consequently no magnetic poles can exist.
With this well-known fact the first question already is answered. The question why in the microcosm there can not exist magnetically charged elementary particles, why the search for magnetic monopoles doesn't make any sense. Let's ask further:
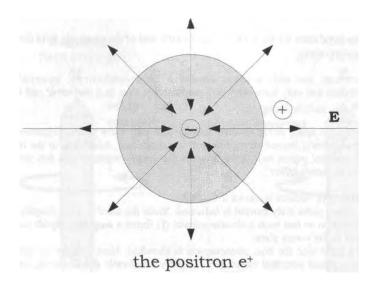
II.   Why are there only electrically charged particles?
Let us for that consider the dual conditions. The worse the conductivity of a medium is, the more the potential vortex -will be favoured that because of this property also can be understood as the vortex of the dielectric.
In the mentioned extreme case of the ideal vacuum, no electric conductivity is present for reason of the missing charge carriers. But this circumstance favours the potential vortex and that, according to fig. 4.2, forms electric poles and with this also the second question would be answered clearly.
It can be traced back to the boundary conditions of the microcosm that without exception electricallv charged particles are entitled to exist; a realization derived from the field-theoretical approach, that covers all experiences.

the positron e+

the elektron e-
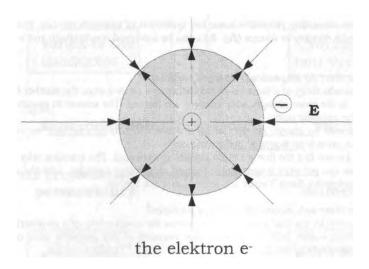
Fig. 4.3:   Elementarv particles as configurations of
potential
vortices

4.3 Derivation of the electron as an elementary vortex

The next key question necessarily has to be brought to a conclusive answer to save the principle of causality, so that we no longer have to postulate an own physics with its own laws for the microcosm:

III. Why do these particles show as monopoles?

More concrete the question has to read:
Where is the positive pole in a negatively charged electron, if it should be an electric dipole?
The only possible answer is:
In the centre of the particle!

Thus in the centre of the electron its positive pole is hidden and in the centre of the positron its negative pole is hidden. But we only observe these particles from the outside and for reason of the field conditions of the electron we measure a negative charge and for its antiparticle, the positron, a positive charge. If in each case we wanted to measure the electric fields included in the inside, we had to destroy the particle. Then a proof would not be possible anymore.

Here also a persistent mistake is eliminated by the for a long time known axiom that monopoles can not exist at all if one considers continuity! By means of technical-physical experiments this axiom is sufficiently secured.
The quantum physical approach is standing on uncertain ground if it is postulated that other laws of nature should apply to particle physics, if a second approach, the field-theoretical approach, is conceivable that does not know these problems!

The discussed concentration effect gives the potential vortex a structure shaping property. With that also the fourth key question can be answered:

IV. Why do the particles have the form of spheres?

The potential vortex is favoured in the particle-free vacuum of the microcosm because of the missing   conductivity. In connection with the   concentration effect the following conclusion can be drawn:
The extremely mighty potential vortex exerts a high pressure on the microcosm and on each particle.

With that also the fourth key question, why stable elementary particles are spherical, can be answered by the potential vortex theory:
Only the sphere is able to withstand a high outside pressure.
All other forms, like e.g. dipoles formed like a rod or a club would be instable in the presence of the extremely concentrating potential vortex. They would be immediately destroyed by the pressure of the potential vortex.

I.   Why are there no magnetically charged particles?

(the vacuum has no conductivity!)

II.   Why are there only electrically charged particles?

(in the vacuum only potential vortices can exist!)

III. Why do these particles show as monopoles?

(the other pole is locked up in the inside of the vortex oscillation!)

IV. Why do the particles have the form of spheres?

(for reason of the outside pressure by the concentration effect!)

V.   Why is the elementary quantum stable?

(without conductivity no decay of vortices takes place!)

VI. Why does for every particle of matter exist an antiparticle?

(there are two swirl directions with equal rights!)

VII. Why are particles and antiparticles incompatible?

(contrary swirl directions!)

Fig. 4.4:   Key questions of quantum physics

4.4 Quanta as field vortices

The fied-theoretical approach demands removing the electron from the field equations (eq. 3.7) and at the same time introducing the potential vortex of the electric field. With this vortex phenomenon there now is a possibility that the electromagnetic wave spontaneously rolls up to a vortex in case it is disturbed from the outside. The vortex particle that is formed in such a way owes its physical reality on the one hand the concentration effect of the potential vortex, that compresses this particle to the dimension of a tiny sphere and on the other hand its localization for reason of the oscillation around a fixed point.

The sphcrical elementary particles are being compressed to inconceivably small dimensions. Therefore they are capable to bind a comparatively high energy in their inside. This is confirmed by the mass-energy relation $E = mc^2$.   (4.1)

The fact that the energy is dependent on the speed of light can be judged to be a clear indication that quanta actually are nothing but oscillating electromagnetic packages, vortical oscillations of empty space!

The next question reads:

V. Why is the elementary quantum stable?

The worse the conductivity is, the more the potential vortex will be favoured, the more strongly the concentration effect will form, the smaller the spherical phenomena will get - the larger the authoritative relaxation time will be, i.e. the slower the decay of vortices and with that the more stable the vortex phenomenon will be.

In the microcosm, that comes the ideal case of a particle-free vacuum very close, the spherical vortices because of the missing conductivity have an absolute stability.

VI.   Why does for every particle of matter exist an antiparticle?

Since every vortex can also oscillate

in the opposite direction, there always exist two forms of formation of spherical vortices with equal rights, one of them is assigned to the world of matter and the other to the world of anti-matter.

VII. Why are particles and antiparticles incompatible?

For reason of the contrary swirl direction they are incompatible to each other. They have the tendency to destroy each other mutually, like two trains that want in the opposite direction on a single-tracked distance.

The quantum physical approach does not have an answer to these key questions. Until now scientists have merely thought about to what the observable contraction in the microcosm and the macrocosm can be traced back. Because the approach was not able to furnish an answer, without further ado some new matter was introduced: the sluons. These binding particles should be able to exert the necessary pressure. But until now no one has been able to observe or detect this fabulous matter. Nobody knows its structure and its composition. Despite missing evidence it is stated that this matter is mass less and at the same time lumped; it is invisible because it can't interact with any other matter, not even with the supposed building parts of the atomic nuclei, the quarks. But at the same time there should be exerted a pressure on the quarks, for which reason quarks again should be able to interact with gluons!
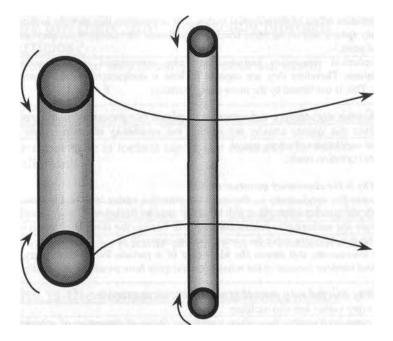
Fig. 4.5:   Two coaxial oscillating vortex rings (Lugt[i]).

[i]   Lugt, Hans J.: Vortex flow in nature and technology. Krieger publishing company, Florida 1995; page 42, ISBN 0-89464-916-7

4.5 The photon

The ability to form structures as a consequence of the concentration effect gives the potential vortex a number of highly interesting properties. To derive these properties we can make work easier when we fall back upon the observations and experiences of flow dynamics.

Here the vortex ring takes a special place. Its vortex centre is not closed, for which reason it is not stationary and propagates in space with a constant speed. It can be observed that the velocity of propagation increases with the ring diameter becoming smaller. By means of the vortex rings, that skilful smokers can produce with pointed lips, these properties can be made visible.

Now if two vortex rings run into each other with the same axis and direction of rotation then both oscillate around each other, by one vortex attracting the other vortex, thereby accelerating and thus contracting it. The second vortex then slips through the core opening and gets again slower and larger. Now the first vortex accelerates and plays the same game (fig. 4.5).

It would be obvious for the vortex of the electric field to have a corresponding property. The electron e- and with the opposite swirl direction the positron e+ will form such a potential vortex corresponding to the derivation. Two electrons, as like charged particles, would repel each other and surely will be out of the question for such a configuration. An electron and a positron however will attract each other and because of their incompatibility they will mutually destroy unless they open their vortex centres to form a vortex ring. Now the e- shows its positively charged centre that shows the same swirl direction as the e+ seen from the outside. Therefore the vortices don't hurt each other, when the positron slips through the opened vortex centre of the electron and vice versa.

This oscillating electron-positron pair has strange properties: seen from the outside one moment it is negatively charged and the next moment it is positively charged. Therefore over time on the average no charge will be measurable and no electromagnetic interaction will take place.

One moment the particle is matter and the next moment it is anti-matter. Hence no mass at all can be attributed to the particle. Interactions primarily takes place between both dual vortices. We can predict, the particle has neither mass nor charge. The environment merely sees a fast oscillating particle that only within every half cycle is capable of an interaction.

The centre of the oscillating particle is open, for which reason it is not stationary anymore. Instead it propagates in z-direction with the swirl velocity, which is the speed of light, in this way preventing a rotation around the x- or y- axis (fig. 4.6). In this way a polarizability is present.

The only possible and, as we will see, necessarily taking place rotation around the z-axis gives the particle a spin of the magnitude of a quantum of angular momentum. After all the rotation for e$^-$ and e$^+$ is of the same magnitude with a spin of each time $\frac{1}{2} \cdot \hbar$. There should be paid attention to the fact that for the case of an opposite sense of direction of the respective rotation around the common z-axis the spin on the average will be zero.

In addition the particle is characterized by an outstanding property: a periodically taking place oscillation with any frequency, but that frequency has to be constant. We now only have to take a table of particles to hand. Actually we will find a corresponding particle that has all these properties: the γ-quanta, also called photon.
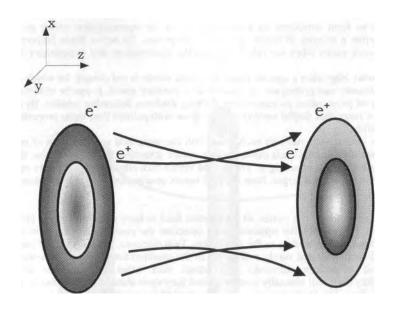
Fig. 4.6:   The photon as oscillating electron-positron pair

The decay of the γ- quanta (photon)[i]
    (= pair creation = Bethe-Heitler-process 1934):

$$\gamma \longrightarrow e^- + e^+$$

(4.2)

_____

    [i]   Nachtmann, Otto: Phanomene und Konzepte der Elementarteilchenphysik,
          Vieweg, Braunschweig 1986, S. 135, ISBN 3-528-08926-1

4.6 Pair creation

Proof for the correctness of the model concept provides the decay of the photon in an electron and a positron in the presence of a strong field, as for instance in an atomic nucleus. This observable decay is called pair creation or Bethe-Heitler process[1]:

$$\gamma \longrightarrow e^- + e^+ \quad (4.2)$$

In this process the elementary vortices for a short time get back their localization and are therefore detectable. Otherwise the electron and positron have the form of a sphere, the photon however rather has the form of two oscillating discs.

The photon doesn't participate in the electromagnetic interaction, because the electric field lines run from one disc to the other (from + to -). The field lines are not open as they are for e^- or e^+ (fig. 4.3). To open up the field lines an energy is necessary that corresponds to the sum of the two formed particles. But from this it by no means follows that this amount of energy will be released in the reversed and much better known process, where matter and anti-matter annihilate under emission of γ-quanta. At the end of the derivation the vortex model will provide us the desired answers on questions of the energy of photons.

Here first of all only the properties will be concerned. Experiments, in which light shows as a particle, are the photoelectric effect, the Compton effect and a lot more. According to the by Maxwell developed classical theory of light however is light an electromagnetic wave that is not quantized in any way, neither as sphere nor as disc, the wave nature of light as well has a physical reality and is secured by experiment. This is witnessed by the interference patterns of overlapping coherent light beams.

A concept in which light could exist at the same place and the same time both as wave and as corpuscle could never be brought into accord with the principle of causality. Formulas of compromise, like the uncertainty principle of Heisenberg that refers to the point of view of the observer, can't change anything about this dilemma. The dual nature of light, that in this context is gladly spoken of, rather consists of the fact that dependent on the local field conditions, any time and spontaneously the wave can roll up to a vortex. As an example of a violation of the principle of causality it has been indicated under point 3 (fig. 3.1) that both fields and quanta at the same time should be the cause of something. This concept was formulated by Maxwell and written down in modern quantum electro-dynamics by Dirac but in the field-theoretical approach we have dropped this concept because it violates all rules of causality in an elementary manner. Therefore it only is consistent, if we hold the view that the light is either wave or particle but never is both at the same time!

In the spontaneous transition of the wave to the particle all the important properties are conserved: the propagation with the speed of light, the characteristic frequency of the oscillation and the mentioned polarizability. The process of rolling up possibly takes place already in the laboratory, in a bubble chamber and at the latest in our eyes. To receive the electromagnetic wave, we had to have antennas. We actually see the photons. It therefore would be obvious if our cells to see only could perceive vortices, in this case photons. We don't possess a sense organ for fields and waves.
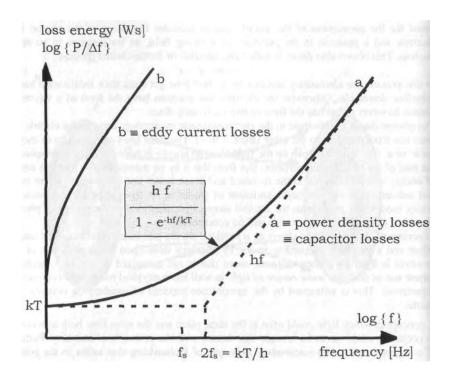
Fig. 4.7:   The power density shown against frequency for noise
(a) according to Kupfmuller[i],
as well as for dielectric losses of a capacitor (also a) and for eddy current losses (b) according to Mevl[ii] (b in visible duality to a).

[i]   Kupfmuller, Karl: Einfuhrung in die theoretische Elektrotechnik, Springer-Verlag   Berlin,   12.   Auflage   1988,   ISBN   3-540-18403-1
[ii]   Meyl, Konstantin: Dreidimensionale nichtlineare Berechnung von Wirbelstromkupplungen, Dissertation Universitat Stuttgart 1984

4.7 Noise

If, according to the field-theoretical approach, there exist electric field vortices then they will not only form the elementary particles in the vacuum, but will also macroscopically form and have an effect in larger dimensions.

Assuming a wave that rolls up to a plane vortex it would be obvious if polarization and velocity of propagation are conserved in the process. But how does it stand about the frequency?
The wave now will walk round a stationary point, the vortex centre. The propagation with the speed of light c will remain existent as the swirl velocity. For a plane circular vortex, where the path for a revolution on the outside is very much longer than near the vortex centre, there arises a longer wave length and as a consequence a lower frequency on the outside as more to the inside. With this property the vortex proves to be a changer of frequency: the vortex transforms the frequency of the causing wave in an evenly spectrum, that starts at low frequencies and stretches to very high frequencies (fig. 1.4). Exactly this property we observe in "white noise". The consistent conclusion would be that this concerns the vortex of the electric field. Anyone can, without big expenses, convince himself or herself of the localization, of the property to change the frequency and of the circumstance that vortices can be very easily influenced, that they avoid or again whirl about a place of disturbance, for instance an antenna. For that one only needs to tune a radio receiver to a weak and noisy station and move oneself or some objects around, then one is able to directly study the influences from the manipulation of the receiving signal.
But already the fact that the using and measurability of signals is limited by noise makes clear. which attention the potential vortex should be given.

Within a limited frequency range the power of the Nyquist or resistance noise is independent of frequency (fig. 4.7). This should be clarified particularly by the term "white noise" analogous to white light, where all visible spectral ranges independent of frequency have the same energy density.

But this relation doesn't hold for high frequencies of any magnitude. Here another noise-effect appears, that is said to have its cause in the quantum structure of energy[i]. Untouched by possible interpretations an increasing power of the noise is measured, that more and more turns into a being proportional to frequency (fig. 4.7, curve a). Interestingly this curve shows a remarkable duality to the power curve of eddy currents, likewise shown against the frequency, that for instance can be measured at eddy current couplings[ii] (fig. 4.7, curve b). This circumstance suggests a dual relation of the potential vortex of the electric field in bad conducting media on the one hand and the eddy current in inductive materials on the other hand[iii].

_____

[iii]: Meyl, Konstantin: Wirbel des elektrischen Feldes,
        EMC Journal 1/95, 6. J, ISSN 0945-3857, S. 56 - 59.

metallized film of polypropylen

glass plate

glass plate

a)   measurement set up according to Yializis and others[i]

b) after 40 hours   c) after 52 hours
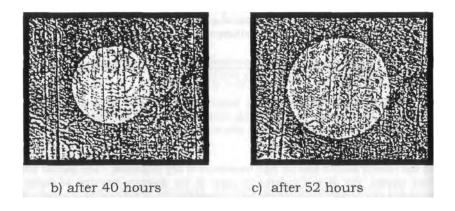
Fig. 4.8:   Measurement set up (a) and photo of vortex structure
in a metallized polypropylen layer capacitor (at 450 V/ 60 Hz/ 100°C)
Observation of the formation of a vortex (b) and (c).
(110 fold magnification), according to Yializis et al.[i]

[i]: A. Yializis, S. W. Cichanowski, D. G. Shaw: Electrode Corrosion in Metallized Polypropylene Capacitors, Proceedings of IEEE, International Symposium on Electrical Insulation, Bosten, Mass., June 1980;

4.8 Capacitor losses

Next the dielectric losses in a capacitor fed with an alternating voltage are measured and likewise put on against the frequency. At first the course is independent of the frequency, but towards higher frequencies it increases and shows the same characteristic course of the curve as the before mentioned power of the noise (fig. 4.7, curve a).

This excellent agreement suggests the assumption that the dielectric losses are nothing but eddy losses.
These vortex phenomena, caused by time-varying fields, are not only found in ferro-magnetic and conductive materials, but equally as dual phenomena in dielectrics and non-conductors.

As examples of practical applications the induction welding or the microwave oven can be mentioned. The process can be described in other words as follows: in both examples the cause is posed by high-frequency alternating fields that are irradiated into a dielectric as an electromagnetic wave, there roll up to potential vortices and eventually decay in the vortex centre. The desired and used thermal effect arises during this diffusion process.
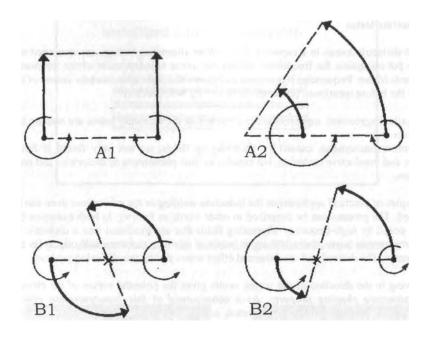
The striving in the direction of the vortex centre gives the potential vortex of the electric field a structure shaping property. As a consequence of this "concentration effect" circular vortex structures are to be expected, comparable to the visible vortices in flow dynamics (e.g. tornados and whirlwinds). At the same time the dual anti-vortex arises, the diverging eddy current. It takes, as is well-known, the given structure of the conductor, so in the technical literature one correspondingly talks of a "skin effect". Now if conductor and non-conductor meet as they do in a capacitor, then at the boundary area visible structures will form. Circles would be expected, if the eddy current in the inside and striving to the outside is equally powerful as the potential vortex that comes from the outside and concentrates.

Actually such circular structures are observed on the aluminium of high tension capacitors, when they were in operation for a longer period of time. The formation of these circles, the cause of which until now is considered to be unsolved, is already experimentally investigated and discussed on an international level by scientists (fig. 4.8) [i, ii].

These circular vortex structures can be seen as a visible proof [iii] for the existence of potential vortices of the electric field.
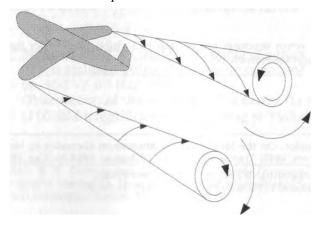
[ii]: D. F. Taylor, On the Mechanism of Aluminium Corrosion in Metallized Film Capacitors, IEEE Transactions on EI-19, August 1984, No.4, pp.288-293.
[iii]: Meyl, Konstantin: Wirbel des elektrischen Feldes, EMC Journal 1/95, 6.J, ISSN 0945-3857, S. 56-59.

Fig, 4.9:   Motion of two point vortices. (Lugt[i])
                A. with opposite direction of rotation
                B. with the same direction of rotation
                1. for equal vortex strength
                2. for unequal vortex strength

Example from practice for case Al:
vortex pair behind an airplane

4.9 Vortex lines and vortex streets

It can be assumed that the vortex of the electric field is relevant with regard to the electromagnetic environmental compatibility. This then holds not only for microcosmic and microscopic vortices, but also for macroscopic and larger dimensions. The individual vortices can join together to balls and lines. For the study of this process it is useful to again fall back upon experiences of flow dynamics.

The co-operation of individual point vortices has been investigated thoroughly in flow dyamics. Without any outside manipulation an individual vortex rotates on the spot. That changes in the case of two neighbouring vortices. Now it depends on their mutual strength and sense of rotation. If they have the opposite sense of rotation and equal strength then their centres of rotation move straight forward in the same direction. If however the direction of rotation is the same then both vortices rotate around each other (fig. 4.9).

In this way a multitude of point vortices is capable, to form in the first case whole vortex streets and in the second case spherical vortex balls. In principle a vortex string can also consist of a multitude of potential vortices pointing in the same direction; but it has the tendency to roll up to a vortex ball in case it is disturbed from the outside, as can be shown very clear by means of computer simulations[i].

As a starting-point for a discussion the thesis can be put forward that also electric field vortices, in nature usually consisting of a multitude of individual point vortices, appear as vortex strings and vortex balls.

Perhaps historians see in this property an answer to the question, how it was possible for the Romans to build streets straight as a die in the wilderness. Their land surveyors, the Augures, had at their disposal neither laser, nor any other suitable gauges. Their most important tool was the Lituus, the crook, that at its upper end was rolled up like a vortex in the sense of a flat coil shaped like a spiral.
The question poses what this strange object was used for. Perhaps the roman land surveyors tracked down any vortex lines with this crook and then used them to orientate themselves?
History still holds a lot of secrets, but for now only this indication is given. The following seminar will give enough opportunities for speculations and discussions[ii].

---

[i]: Lugt, Hans J.: Vortex flow in nature and technology. Krieger publishing company, Florida 1995; p.38, fig. 3.25, 3.26 and 3.27, ISBN 0-89464-916-7

[ii]: K. Meyl: Elektromagnetische Umweltvertraglichkeit Teil 2 und 3 Seminar-umdrucke, INDEL Verlag VS; see part 2 and 3 of this book.
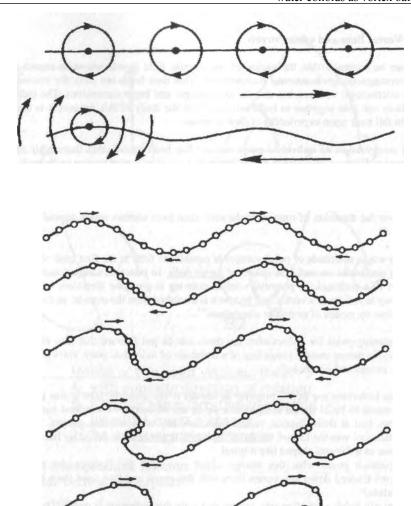
Fig. 4.10:   The rolling up of a vortex chain to a vortex ball
for the smallest disturbance
(case Bl in fig. 4.9) (Rosenhead[i]).

[i]:   L. Rosenhead: Formation of vortices from a surface of discontinuity. Proc. Roy. Soc. A 134, 1931, 170. taken from:

Lugt, Hans J.: Vortex flow in nature and technology. Krieger publishing company, Florida 1995; page 39, figure 3.29, ISBN 0-89464-916-7

4.10 Water colloids as vortex balls

We have to realize that in the biosphere we are staying in a relatively ideal dielectric. The two "capacitor plates" are being formed by the ionosphere and the earth. The potential vortex will, as said, be favoured by a bad conductivity and by a high dielectricity. Consequently it will dominate and take effect in the biosphere. In which way it takes effect is the central theme of the electromagnetic environmental compatibility.

Life in this world consists predominantly of water and water has a very high dielectricity! With that the effectiveness and the long life of the potential vortex increases. The human head for instance contains 7O% and plants contain over 90% water! But it does not simply concern H_2O, but structured water in a colloidal form. These water colloids could be vortex balls because they consist of a large number of water molecules in a spherical arrangement They form independent and insoluble particles with a negative electric charge (fig. 4.11). Water is not equal water thanks to this structure. One can buy healing water and corresponding sources are well-known and famous. Many an effect can be explained by means of a chemical analysis but not everything.

The highest age in this world is reached by the inhabitants of Hunza, in the mountains of norhern India at the foothill of the Hindu Kush, at an altitude of 2500 meters. They drink some muddy glacial water that is strongly colloidal. Hence it would be obvious that plants and also we ourselves need such water for our physique. Processes are known with which the advantageous vortex balls, say colloids, are produced artificially by mechanic or chemical treatment[i]. Levitated water, as it is called and as it is for sale nowadays, is said to be more healthy. Unfortunately people predominantly work empiric in this area, because science occupies itself with this topic only little or not at all.
Another problem is the fact that the colloids again fall apart quickly. The like negative charge favours this process. The liquid crystals have to be stabilized from the outside. In the case of the Hunza-water the colloids are surrounded by a vegetable layer of fatty acid and are protected in this way [ii]. It possibly is very obliging to nature, if the water colloids also in biological systems are stabilized in that way.
Everyone of us knows that fresh spring water tastes much better than stale, bottled water, even if the chemical analysis turns out of be absolutely identical. For this fact classical science is not able to give a cause - a further problem of causality. In any case should potential vortices with their structure shaping property be considered as a cause for the formation of water colloids. It surely causes no difficulties at all to interpret the colloids as vortcx bulls.
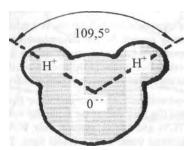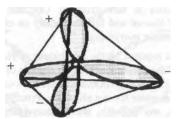
[i]: V. Schauberger: Die Entdeckung der Levitationskraft, Implosion 1995 Nr. 112 und:
N. Harthun: NaturgemaSe Technik - Wege fur die Forschung nach Viktor Schauberger, Verlag Delta Design, Berlin 1996.
[ii]: Flanagan: Elexier der Jugendlichkeit, Waldthausen Verlag Ritterhude 1992, orig.: Elixir of Ageless

H₂O: the angle of the bond between 2 H molecules =
104,5°
angle of the bond in excited state = 109,5°

electron   orbital   diagram   of   energy   (excited H_2O)   =   tetraeder
most stable liquid crystal = 8 tetraeder = star of octaeder
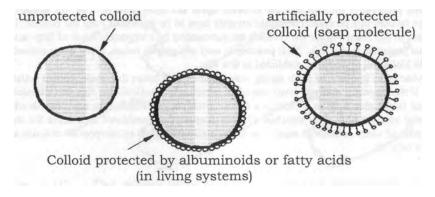
Fig. 4.11:   Water molecules and water colloids

4.11 Phenomenon of transport

The vortex principle is self-similar. This means that the properties of an individual vortex also for the collection of numerous vortices again appear and can he observed in a similar manner. That's why a vortex ball behaves entirely similar as an individual isolated vortex. The same concentration effect, that keeps the vortex together, shows its effect for the vortex ball and keeps it together also.

 Something corresponding holds for a basic property of potential vortices, being of a completely different nature. It is the property to bind matter in the vortex and carry it away with the vortex. Well-known are the vortex rings that skilful cigarette smokers can blow in the air. Of course also non-smokers can produce these air eddies with their mouth but these remain invisible. Solely by the property of the vortex ring to bind the smoke it becomes visible to the human eye.

If out potential vortex transports something then it rather should be a dielectric material, so preferably water. Therefore if in the environmental air we are surrounded by potential vortices that we can detect for instance as noise, then they are capable with their "phenomenon of transport", to pick up water and to keep it in the vortex. In this way the atmospheric humidity is explicable as the ability of the air particles to bind comparatively heavy water molecules. If the vortex falls apart then it inevitably releases the water particles and it rains. This is merely a charming alternative for the classical representation without claim to completeness.

Already the Romans have made use of this phenomenon to find water and sources. About this Vitruv[i] (from 23 BC) in his 8th book about architecture writes: "Before sunrise one has to lie down on the earth at the places, where to search for water,... and one has to look at the area... Then one has to dig at the place where there appears curling and in the air rising moist steam. Because this characteristic can not occur at a place where there is no water". The at a certain time of day and in certain seasons occasional in meadows and corn fields observable streaks or circular mostly moist places with differing vegetation, have to be judged as an infallible sign for the existence of this phenomenon.

This phenomenon of transport again appears for the discussed water colloids. The involved water molecules form a spherical object with a negative charge. They turn their negatively charged side to the outside and point with the positively charged end in the direction of the middle of the sphere. There, no longer discernible from the outside, a negatively charged ion can be, that is stuck, that no longer can escape and that gives the whole colloid a characteristic property. In this way nature knows various water colloids that constitute plants and animals. But starting at a temperature of 41°C the liquid crystals fall apart. This not by chance is the temperature at which a person dies. Already 10 millivolts per liquid crystal suffice for the electrically induced death.

The to a colloid identical structure we find in the structure of the atoms. Here the atomic nucleus is held in the inside of a vortex-like cloud of electrons, the atomic hull. We'll hit the phenomenon of transport a last time, when we derive the elementary particles. For the photon is already discernible the tendency of an elementary vortex, to take another vortex in its inside. Merely because the electron and positron are evenly matched a stable configuration is prevented for the photon.

<i>: Vitruvius Pollio, Marcus: Ten Books about architecture, WBG 1987

In chapter vortex calculation used differential operations:

field pointer (vector = **bold**):

$$\mathbf{A} = \mathbf{e}_x \cdot A_x + \mathbf{e}_y \cdot A_y + \mathbf{e}_z \cdot A_z$$

Gradient of the scalar function of position V:

$$\text{grad } V = \mathbf{e}_x \cdot \delta V/\delta x + \mathbf{e}_y \cdot \delta V/\delta y + \mathbf{e}_z \cdot \delta V/\delta z \tag{R1}$$

Divergence of the vector **A**:

$$\text{div } \mathbf{A} = \delta A_x/\delta x + \delta A_y/\delta y + \delta A_z/\delta z \tag{R2}$$

Curl (vortex density) of the vector **A**:

$$\begin{aligned}
\text{rot } \mathbf{A} = \ & \mathbf{e}_x \cdot (\delta A_z/\delta y - \delta A_y/\delta z) + \\
& + \mathbf{e}_y \cdot (\delta A_x/\delta z - \delta A_z/\delta x) + \\
& + \mathbf{e}_z \cdot (\delta A_y/\delta x - \delta A_x/\delta y)
\end{aligned} \tag{R3}$$

Laplace operator Δ:

$$\Delta \mathbf{A} = \delta^2 \mathbf{A}/\delta x^2 + \delta^2 \mathbf{A}/\delta y^2 + \delta^2 \mathbf{A}/\delta z^2 \tag{R4}$$

arithmetic rules:

$$\Delta \mathbf{A} = \text{grad div } \mathbf{A} - \text{rot rot } \mathbf{A} \tag{R5}$$

$$\text{div rot } \mathbf{A} = O \tag{R6}$$

$$\mathbf{A} \times \mathbf{B} = -\mathbf{B} \times \mathbf{A} \tag{R7}$$

$$\text{div } (\mathbf{A} \times \mathbf{B}) = \mathbf{B} \text{ rot } \mathbf{A} - \mathbf{A} \text{ rot } \mathbf{B} \tag{R8}$$

$$\text{rot } (\mathbf{A} \times \mathbf{B}) = (\mathbf{B} \text{ grad})\mathbf{A} - (\mathbf{A} \text{ grad})\mathbf{B} + \mathbf{A} \text{ div } \mathbf{B} - \mathbf{B} \text{ div } \mathbf{A} \tag{R9}$$

$$\mathbf{A} \times (\mathbf{B} \times \mathbf{C}) = \mathbf{B} \cdot (\mathbf{A} \cdot \mathbf{C}) - \mathbf{C} \cdot (\mathbf{A} \cdot \mathbf{B}) \tag{R10}$$

* important equations are given in a box
* new equations are underlined twice.

Fig. 5.0:   Collection of formulas for vector analysis

5. Derivation and interpretation

Vortices cause big problems to every measuring technician. They have the unpleasant property to whirl around the sensor even if it is as small as possible. Vortices avoid the smallest disturbance and then can hardly be detected reproducibly.

From the well-known eddy current we know of this problematic. Instead of the vortex, we
are forced to measure and analyse any effects that arise from the vortex. These can be measurements of the eddy losses or effects back on the stimulating field. But only provided that the effect actually occurs.
The prerequisite for an increase in temperature by eddy losses is that the vortex falls apart. In an ideal medium it unfortunately will not do us this pleasure.

As vrtex of the dielectric the potential vortex will find fairly ideal conditions in air or in water. How should a vortex be detected, if it does not produce any effect? The classical measuring technique is here at its wits' end.

From the duality to the well-known eddy current and by means of observation in the previous chapters numerous properties of the potential vortex have been derived. But these are not all the properties. The mathematical calculation of the electric vortex field, that we want to turn to now, will reveal still further meaningful and highly interesting properties.

The observation is important, but it can't replace an exact calculation. A strictly mathematical derived result has occasionally more expressiveness than a whole book full of explanations. It will be a big help to derive and to discuss the field equation that all considerations are based on.

We facilitate the mathematical work by vector analysis. Therefore it is useful that we choose the differential form (equation 5.1 and 5.4) instead of the integral form (equations 3.1 and 3.2 resp. 3.8).

1. <u>Ampère's law</u>:

$$\text{rot } \mathbf{H} = \mathbf{j} + \delta\mathbf{D}/\delta t \tag{5.1}$$

with $\mathbf{H} = \mathbf{H}(\mathbf{r},t)$

and Ohm's law: $\qquad\qquad \mathbf{j} = \sigma \cdot \mathbf{E} \tag{5.2}$

dielectric displacement: $\qquad \mathbf{D} = \varepsilon \cdot \mathbf{E} \tag{3.6}$

relaxation time: $\qquad\qquad \tau_1 = \varepsilon/\sigma \tag{5.3}$

$$\boxed{\text{rot } \mathbf{H} = \varepsilon \cdot (\mathbf{E}/\tau_1 + \delta\mathbf{E}/\delta t)} \tag{5.1*}$$

2. Faraday's law of <u>induction</u> (extended according to duality rules)

$$-\text{rot } \mathbf{E} = \mathbf{B}/\tau_2 + \delta\mathbf{B}/\delta t \tag{5.4}$$

with $\mathbf{E} = \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r},t)$

and the flux density: $\qquad\qquad \mathbf{B} = \mu \cdot \mathbf{H} \tag{3.5}$

$$\boxed{-\text{rot } \mathbf{E} = \mu \cdot (\mathbf{H}/\tau_2 + \delta\mathbf{H}/\delta t)} \tag{5.4*}$$

$$-\text{rot rot } \mathbf{E} = \mu \cdot (1/\tau_2) \cdot \text{rot } \mathbf{H} + \mu \cdot \delta(\text{rot } \mathbf{H})/\delta t \tag{5.5}$$

insert equation 5.1*:

$$-\text{rot rot } \mathbf{E} = \mu \cdot \varepsilon \cdot (\mathbf{E}/\tau_1\tau_2 + (1/\tau_2) \cdot \delta\mathbf{E}/\delta t +$$
$$+ (1/\tau_1) \cdot \delta\mathbf{E}/\delta t + \delta^2\mathbf{E}/\delta t^2) \tag{5.5*}$$

$$-\text{rot rot } \mathbf{E} = \Delta\mathbf{E} - \text{grad div } \mathbf{E} = \Delta\mathbf{E}, \tag{R5}$$

if: $\qquad\qquad \text{div } \mathbf{E} = O \tag{3.7*}$

abbreviation: $\qquad \mu \cdot \varepsilon = 1/c^2 \tag{5.6}$

3. <u>fundamental field equation</u>:

$$\underbrace{\Delta\mathbf{E}\cdot c^2}_{a} = \underbrace{\delta^2\mathbf{E}/\delta t^2}_{b} + \underbrace{(1/\tau_1)\cdot\delta\mathbf{E}/\delta t}_{c} + \underbrace{(1/\tau_2)\cdot\delta\mathbf{E}/\delta t}_{d} + \underbrace{\mathbf{E}/\tau_1\tau_2}_{e}$$

$$\tag{5.7}$$

Fig. 5.1:   Derivation of the fundamental field equation.

5.1 Fundamental field equation

We'll start from Ampere's law which provides a value for the current density at any point pace and this value corresponds to the vortex density of the magnetic field strength

$$\text{rot } \mathbf{H} = \mathbf{j} + \delta \mathbf{D}/\delta t \qquad (5.1)$$

We'll use Ohm's law:
$$\mathbf{j} = \sigma \cdot \mathbf{E} , \qquad (5.2)$$

the dielectric displacement:
$$\mathbf{D} = \varepsilon \cdot \mathbf{E} \qquad (3.6)$$

and the relaxation time:
$$\tau_1 = \varepsilon/\sigma , \qquad (5.3)$$

that indicates how fast the current eddies decay. So far we can fall back upon well-known relations.

The result is:
$$\text{rot } \mathbf{H} = \varepsilon \cdot (\mathbf{E}/\tau_1 + \delta \mathbf{E}/\delta t) \qquad (5.1^*)$$

The new electric field vortices demand the introduction of a corresponding time constant τ_2 that should describe the decay of the potential vortices, as an extension. The extended Faraday law of induction now provides a potential density, that at any point of space corresponds to the vortex density of the electric field strength:

$$- \text{rot } \mathbf{E} = \mathbf{B}/\tau_2 + \delta \mathbf{B}/\delta t \qquad (5.4)$$

with the flux density
$$\mathbf{B} = \mu \cdot \mathbf{H} . \qquad (3.5)$$

The result fulfils the required duality to equation 5.1^*:

$$- \text{rot } \mathbf{E} = \mu \cdot (\mathbf{H}/\tau_2 + \delta \mathbf{H}/\delta t) \qquad (5.4^*)$$

If we again apply the curl to equation 5.4^*

$$- \text{rot rot } \mathbf{E} = \mu \cdot (1/\tau_2) \cdot \text{rot } \mathbf{H} + \mu \cdot \delta(\text{rot } \mathbf{H})/\delta t \qquad (5.5)$$

and insert equation 5.1^*, we obtain:

$$- \text{rot rot } \mathbf{E} = \mu \cdot \varepsilon \cdot (\mathbf{E}/\tau_1\tau_2 + (1/\tau_2) \cdot \delta \mathbf{E}/\delta t + (1/\tau_1) \cdot \delta \mathbf{E}/\delta t + \delta^2 \mathbf{E}/\delta t^2) \qquad (5.5^*)$$

which according to the rules of vector analysis can still be further simplified: = rot rot E = ΔE - grad div E , where we should remember that the divergence has to vanish (div E = O. fig. 3.2, equation 3.7), should the corresponding field vortex be inserted!

Furthermore the following well-known abbreviation can be inserted: $\mu \cdot \varepsilon = 1/c^2$ (5.6)

With that the relation with the speed of light c simplifies to the sought-for field equation:

$$\underbrace{\Delta \mathbf{E} \cdot c^2}_{a} = \underbrace{\delta^2 \mathbf{E}/\delta t^2}_{b} + \underbrace{(1/\tau_1) \cdot \delta \mathbf{E}/\delta t}_{c} + \underbrace{(1/\tau_2) \cdot \delta \mathbf{E}/\delta t}_{d} + \underbrace{\mathbf{E}/\tau_1\tau_2}_{e} \qquad (5.7)$$

This equation describes the spatial (a) and temporal (b, c, d) distribution of a field vector. It describes the electromagnetic wave (a, b) with the influences that act damping. As dumping terms the well-known eddy current (c) and in addition the newly introduced potential vortex (d) appear.

Field vector: ψ = E, H, j, B or D

   1. elliptic potential equation:
   (stationary: t $\longrightarrow$ ∞ resp. $\delta/\delta t$ = O)

$$\underbrace{\Delta\psi \cdot c^2}_{a} = \underbrace{\psi/\tau_1\tau_2}_{e}$$

(5.8)

2. hyperbolic equation:
   (undamped wave equation)

$$\underbrace{\Delta\psi \cdot c^2}_{a} = \underbrace{\delta^2\psi/\delta t^2}_{b}$$

(5.9)

   3. parabolic equation:
   (vortex equation)

$$\underbrace{\Delta\psi \cdot c^2}_{a} = \underbrace{(1/\tau) \cdot \delta\psi/\delta t}_{c/d}$$

(5.10)

decay time of the eddy currents =
relaxation time: τ_1 = ε/σ (5.3)

decay time of the potential vortices =
relaxation time: τ_2 $\sim$ $\mu \cdot \sigma$ (5.11)

Fig. 5.2:   mathematically divisible individual cases.

5.2 Mathematical interpretation of the fundamental field equation

Every specialist will be surprised to find the Poisson equation (a, e) again as a term in the wave equation. This circumstance forces a completely new interpretation of stationary fields upon us. The new damping term, that is formed by the potential vortices (d), is standing in between.

Let us start with a mathematical analysis. We have applied the curl to equation 5.4*, then inserted equation 5.1* and obtained a determining equation for the electric field strength E. Of course we could as well have applied the curl to equation 5.1* and inserted equation 5.4*. This would have resulted in the determining equation for the magnetic field strength H.

If we insert Ohm's law (5.2) and cancel down the specific conductivity, or we put in the relations of material (3.5) or (3.6) and cancel down by u respectively ε, then the field equation can likewise be written down for the current density j, for the induction B or for the dielectric displacement D.

It just is phenomenal that at all events equation 5.7 doesn't change its form at all. The field vector is thus arbitrarily interchangeable! This circumstance is the foundation for the claim of this field equation to be called fundamental.

It does make sense to introduce a neutral descriptive vector ψ as a substitute for the possible field factors E, H, j, B or D.

The fundamental field equation 5.7 consists of three different types of partial differential equations: a hyperbolic (b), a parabolic (c and d) and an elliptic (e) type. On the left-hand side each time the Laplace operator (a) is found which describes the spatial distribution of the field factor.

The potential equation of the elliptic type (e) is known as Poisson equation. It describes the stationary borderline case of a worn off temporal process ($t \longrightarrow \infty$, resp. $\delta/\delta t = O$).

With this equation potentials and voltages can be calculated exactly like stationary electric currents (5.8).

The hyperbolic equation (b). known as wave equation, shows a second derivative to time. which expresses an invariance with regard to time reversal; or stated otherwise: the direction of the time axis can be reversed by a change of sign of t, without this having an influence on the course of frequency. Wave processes hence are reversible. Equation 5.7 makes clear that a wave without damping by no means can exist in nature. For that both time constants (τ_1 and τ_2) would have to have an infinite value, which is not realizable in practice. Seen purely theoretical, undamped waves could withdraw themselves from our measuring technique (5.9).

Both vortex equations of the parabolic type (c and d) only show a first derivative to time. With that they are no longer invariant with regard to time reversal. The processes of the formation and the decay of vortices, the so-called diffusion, are as a consequence irreversible. Seen this way it is understandable that the process of falling apart of the vortex, where the vortex releases its stored energy as heat e.g. in form of eddy losses, can not take place in reverse. This irreversible process of diffusion in the strict fhermodynamic sense increases the entropy of the system (5.10).

Because it poses an useful simplification for mathematical calculations, often the different types of equations are treated isolated from each other. But the physical reality looks different.

field vector: ψ = E, H, j, B or D

1. Borderline case: no conductivity (vacuum)
   ($\sigma = 0$; $1/\tau_1 = \sigma/\varepsilon = 0$):

$$\underbrace{\Delta\psi \cdot c^2}_{a} = \underbrace{\delta^2\psi/\delta t^2}_{b} + \underbrace{(1/\tau_2)\cdot \delta\psi/\delta t}_{d}$$

(5.12)

(damping by potential vortices)

2. Borderline case: ideal conductivity (superconductor)
   ($1/\sigma = 0$; $1/\tau_2 = 0$):

$$\underbrace{\Delta\psi \cdot c^2}_{a} = \underbrace{\delta^2\psi/\delta t^2}_{b} + \underbrace{(1/\tau_1) \cdot \delta\psi/\delta t}_{c}$$

(5.12*)

(damping by eddy currents)

3. Diffusion equation

$$\underbrace{\Delta\psi \cdot c^2}_{a} = \underbrace{(1/\tau) \cdot \delta\psi/\delta t}_{c/d} + \underbrace{\psi/\tau_1\tau_2}_{e}$$

(5.12**)

(vortex)

Fig. 5.3:   Two borderline cases of the damping of waves and
              the diffusion equation for the decay of vortices

5.3 Physical interpretation of the fundamental field equation

In nature the different types of equations always occur in a combined manner.

1. Let's take the concrete case of the particle-free vacuum. Here the specific conductivity is zero. The relaxation time constant $\tau_1 = \varepsilon/\sigma$ responsible for the decay of vortices tends towards infinity according to equation 5.3 and the terms (c) and (e) are cancelled from the field equation 5.7. What remains is the by potential vortices (d) damped wave equation (b) (equation 5.12).

2. The reversed case (with $\tau_2 \longrightarrow \infty$) will consequently occur in materials without resistance, super conducting materials. We now are dealing with the well-known case of the wave damped by eddy currents (equation 5.12*).

Virtually all in nature existing materials however don't fulfil these boundary conditions, from which it follows that both damping terms always occur together and in addition the stationary term (e) becomes active.
It is true that every antenna demonstrates that the electromagnetic wave is convertible in high-frequency alternating currents and voltages, which then are amplified in the receiver. But until this fundamental equation was written down it however was not understood that this transition takes place by means of a vortex. Used are either antennas from well conducting material, or wave guides and horn radiators, which only have a minimal conductivity, because they are filled with air. Actually the wave can be converted in two dual ways; by means of the rolling up to current eddies or to potential vortices (fig. 1.4). Now we finally are capable to explain, why wave guides make possible a better degree of effectiveness: Owing to the concentration effect of the potential vortex the HF-power is bound in the inside and not emitted until the antenna is reached as happens for a wire for reason of the skin effect.
Therefore, physically, one has to imagine this relation, which describes the transition of an electromagnetic wave into a vortex, in the way that the wave spontaneously can roll up to a vortex in case it is disturbed from the outside. The more vortices are generated, the larger consequently is the damping of the wave (equations 5.12 and 5.12*).

3. The life span of the vortices is limited and is determined by the electric conductivity. The at first stored vortices decay with their respective time constant τ. This process is described by the diffusion equation 5.12**. The final stage of the decaying vortices finally is described by the Poisson equation (a, e: equation 5.8).

If the vortex falls apart, it converts the in the vortex stored energy in heat. These processes are known from the eddy current. We speak of heating losses, that the stationary currents cause in the conductor material.
But new is the concept that such vortex phenomena can occur as dielectric losses in capacitors or in the air. The microwave oven or induction welding are good examples of this.
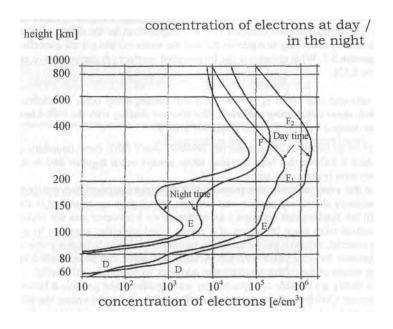
Fig. 5.4:   The dependency on height of the ionisation in the
ionosphere for medium latitudes .[i]

left curve: for a minimum of sun spots

right curve: for a maximum of sun spots

5.4 Phenomenological interpretation of the fundamental field equation

How does a damping by vortices take effect in practice? First of all we notice that the reception of broadcastings gets worse. "The information signal is neglectable regarding the noise" explains the radio engineer and means, the number of vortices increases at the expense of the wave intensity.

Why, does the pupil ask, is it so cold in space? There the sun shines day and night and in addition much more intensely than on earth! The correct answer would have to read that because of the extremely small conductivity no diffusion process can take place. We owe the warmth on our earth solely the here taking place decay of vortices. Responsible is the conductivity of the atmosphere.

In 60 km to 500 km height over the earth's surface, the region which is called the ionosphere, the gases predominantly exist in ionized form. There a very good conductivity prevails and eddy current losses are the result. Correspondingly high are the measurable temperatures. Besides the diffusion process the eddy currents carry out a damping of the cosmic radiation. We say the sunlight is filtered and reduced to a for nature bearable intensity.
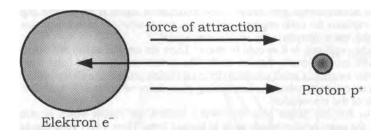
But not all frequencies are damped in the same way (fig. 2.8). We observe a blue shift, if we look into the actually black sky. The blue sky doesn't show any spots or clouds. The reason is to be sought in the skin effect of the eddy currents, which strive outwards. Since no edge of a conductor is present here, no skin can form. The vortices spread evenly over the ionosphere.

The potential vortex however is able to structure. It merely needs a bad conductivity and this it finds in lower heights between 1 km and 10 km. It damps the wave and with that also the light, for which reason we say it becomes darker, the sun disappears behind clouds.

The clouds well visibly form the discussed vortex balls and vortex strings. Clouds can form virtually from the nowhere during intense solar irradiation, i.e. the waves can roll up to vortices. But as a rule this takes place above the oceans. Here also the phenomenon of transport has an effect. Because of the high dielectricity the water surface favours the formation of potential vortices. So the vortices bind individual water molecules and carry them away. If a diffusion process takes place, in which the vortex decays, then it rains. This can happen in two different ways:

1. Either the conductivity increases. If for instance during intense solar irradiation air ions form, the sun is able to break up clouds and fog. Or when the air is raised in higher layers with better conductivity, because a mountain forces this, then it rains at the mountain edge.

2. For potential vortices the electric field is standing perpendicular to them. If at one point an exceptionally lot of vortices join together, which let the cloud appear particularly dark to black, then the danger exists that the ionization field strength for air is reached, in which case a conductive air channel forms along which the stored up charges discharge. Also lightning is a diffusion process, in which potential vortices decay and rain can form.

In connection with the electromagnetic environmental compatibility great importance is attributed in particular to the storage and the decay of electric vortices. There not only is an academic-scientific interest in the question, how many potential vortices are generated, how many are stored and how many decay, if we make a telephone call with a handy, if we are staying under a high-tension line or if we are eating food, which has been heated up in a microwave oven. The necessary mathematical description is provided by the fundamental field equation 5.7.
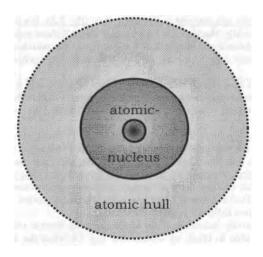
Fig. 5.5:   The structure of atoms in the view of the fundamental field equation

condition for equilibrium: $\tau_1 \quad = \quad \tau_2$ (5.13)

5.5 Atomistic interpretation of the fundamental field equation

Let's again turn to the smaller, the atomistic dimensions. Here positively charged protons and negatively charged electrons are found. Both are matter particles and that means that seen from the outside both have the identical swirl direction. For reason of the unequal charge conditions they attract each other mutually and according to fig. 4.9 rotate around a common centre of mass as differently heavy pair. Chemists say: "the light electron orbits the heavy atomic nucleus". With small balls they try to explain the atomic structure.

But the model is no good: it contradicts causality in the most elementary manner. We are dealing with the problem that according to the laws of electrodynamics a centripetally accelerated electron should emit electromagnetic waves and continuously lose energy, to eventually plunge into the nucleus.

Our experience teaches that this fortunately is not true - and Niels Bohr in order to save his model of the atom was forced to annul the laws of physics with a postulate founded in arbitrariness.

Actually this state only exists for a very short time and then something unbelievable happens: the electron can't be distinguished as an individual particle anymore. "It is smeared over the electron orbit" do certain people say; "it possesses a dual nature" says Heisenberg. Besides the corpuscular nature the electron should in case of its "second nature" form a matter wave, "the position of the electron is to be looked at as a resonance which is the maximum of a probability density", do explain us de Broglie and Schrodinger.

These explanations can hardly convince. If the electron loses its particle nature in its second nature, then it also will lose its typical properties, like for instance its mass and its charge. but this is not the case.

THE vortex theory provides clear and causal answers: if the electron were a ball it continuosly would lose energy, therefore another configuration forms that does not know this problem. Here the phenomenon of transport takes an effect. The electron opens its vortex centre and takes the tiny protons and neutrons as atomic nucleus up into itself. The Bohr electron orbit with that is not a path anymore, but is occupied by the whole particle as spherical shell. This is confirmed by the not understood measurements exactly like the photos of individual atoms with the scanning electron microscope.

But now an electron does in its inside have the opposite swirl direction as the proton seen from the outside. As a consequence a force of repulsion will occur, which can be interpreted as the to the outside directed current eddy, the force of attraction for reason of the opposite charge works in the opposite direction and can be interpreted as the potential vortex effect.

If both vortices are equally powerful: $\tau_1 = \tau_2$ \qquad (5.13)

or if both forces are balanced, as one usually would say, then the object which we call an atom is in a stable state.

It probably will be a result of the incompatible swirl direction, why a very big distance results, if the electron becomes an enveloping electron. On such a shell not too many electrons have room. Because of the rotation of their own, the electron spin, they form a magnetic dipole moment, which leads to a magnetic attraction of two electrons if they put their spin axis antiparallelly.

As a "frictionless" against one another rotating pair they form two half-shells of a sphere and with that occupy the innermost shell in the hull of an atom. If the positive charge of the nucleus is still not balanced with that, then other electrons is left only the possibility to form another shell. Now this next electron takes the whole object up into itself. The new shell lies further on the outside and naturally offers room to more as only two vortices.

approach:

$$\mathbf{E}\,(\mathbf{r},t) \;=\; \psi\,(\mathbf{r},t) \cdot e^{-\omega t} \qquad\qquad (5.17)$$

with $\qquad\qquad \omega \;=\; 1/\tau \;=\; (1/\tau_1 + 1/\tau_2)/2 \qquad\qquad (5.18)$

we insert the approach 5.17 and its derivations:

$$\delta\mathbf{E}/\delta t \;=\; -\,\omega \cdot \psi \cdot e^{-\omega t} + (\delta\psi/\delta t) \cdot e^{-\omega t} \qquad\qquad (5.17^{*})$$

$$\delta^2\mathbf{E}/\delta t^2 \;=\; \omega^2 \cdot \psi \cdot e^{-\omega t} - 2\omega \cdot (\delta\psi/\delta t) \cdot e^{-\omega t} + (\delta^2\psi/\delta t^2) \cdot e^{-\omega t} \qquad (5.17^{**})$$

into the fundamental field equation 5.7:

$$\Delta\mathbf{E} \cdot c^2 \;=\; \delta^2\mathbf{E}/\delta t^2 + (1/\tau_1) \cdot \delta\mathbf{E}/\delta t + (1/\tau_2) \cdot \delta\mathbf{E}/\delta t + \mathbf{E}/\tau_1\tau_2$$

and divide by $e^{-\omega t}$:

$$\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad (5.19)$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Delta\psi \cdot c^2 \;=\;\; & \psi/\tau_1\tau_2 && \text{(a) = (e)}\\
& -\,\omega \cdot \psi \cdot (1/\tau_1 + 1/\tau_2) && \text{(c, d)}\\
& +\,(1/\tau_1 + 1/\tau_2) \cdot \delta\psi/\delta t && \text{(c, d)}\\
& +\,\omega^2 \cdot \psi - 2\omega\,\delta\psi/\delta t + \delta^2\psi/\delta t^2 && \text{(b)}
\end{aligned}
$$

insert the frequency according to equation 5.18:

$$\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad (5.19^{*})$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Delta\psi \cdot c^2 \;=\;\; & \psi/\tau_1\tau_2 && \text{(a) = (e)}\\
& -\,(\psi/2) \cdot (1/\tau_1 + 1/\tau_2)^2 && \text{(c, d)}\\
& +\,(1/\tau_1 + 1/\tau_2) \cdot \delta\psi/\delta t && \text{(c, d)}\\
& +\,(\psi/4) \cdot (1/\tau_1 + 1/\tau_2)^2 && \text{(b)}\\
& -\,(1/\tau_1 + 1/\tau_2) \cdot \delta\psi/\delta t + \delta^2\psi/\delta t^2 && \text{(b)}
\end{aligned}
$$

summarized with equation 5.18:

$$\Delta\psi \cdot c^2 \;=\; \psi/\tau_1\tau_2 - \omega^2 \cdot \psi + \delta^2\psi/\delta t^2 \qquad\qquad (5.20)$$

Fig.   5.6:   Derivation of the Klein-Gordon equation (5.20) from the fundamental field equation (5.7)

5.6 Derivation of the Klein-Gordon equation

The valid model of the atom today still raises problems of causality, as has been explained. An improvement was provided by an equation, which was proposed by the mathematician Schrodinger 1926 as a model description. This equation in this way missed the physical root, but it nevertheless got international acknowledgment, because it could be confirmed experimentally. Looking backwards from the result then the physical interpretation of the probability density of the resonance of the waves could be pushed afterwards.

$$i \cdot \hbar \cdot \delta\psi/\delta t \;=\; U \cdot \psi - (\hbar^2/2\,m) \cdot \Delta\psi \quad (5.14)$$

The Schrodinger equation is valid for matter fields (of mass m), while the interaction with a outside force field the energy U indicates. It can be won from a wave equation by conversion, which possibly is the reason why it usually is called a wave equation, although in reality it is a diffusion equation, so a vortex equation!
For the derivation Schrodinger gives the approach of a harmonic oscillation for the complex wave function ψ:

$$\psi(r,t) \;=\; \phi(r) \cdot e^{-i\omega t} \quad (5.15)$$

if the entire time dependency can be described by one frequency $\quad f = W/h$

(de-Broglie relation): $\qquad \omega \;=\; 2\pi f \;=\; W \cdot 2\pi/h \;=\; W/\hbar \qquad (5.16)$

The high-put goal is: if the structure of the atom is determined by the fundamental field equation 5.7 then one should be able to derive the experimentally secured Schrodinger equation and to mathematically describe the discussed special case. Also we select at first an approach periodic in time:

$$E(r,t) \;=\; \psi(r,t) \cdot e^{-\omega t} \quad (5.17)$$

with $\qquad \omega \;=\; 1/\tau \;=\; (1/\tau_1 + 1/\tau_2)/2 \; . \qquad (5.18)$

We insert the approach 5.17 and its derivations into the field equation 5.7 and divide by the damping term e^{-wt}:

$$\Delta\psi \cdot c^2 \;=\; \psi/\tau_1\tau_2 \;-\; \omega \cdot \psi \cdot (1/\tau_1 + 1/\tau_2) \;+\; (1/\tau_1 + 1/\tau_2) \cdot (\delta\psi/\delta t) \;+$$
$$+\; \omega^2 \cdot \psi \;-\; 2\omega\,\delta\psi/\delta t \;+\; \delta^2\psi/\delta t^2 \qquad (5.19)$$

If as the next step the angular frequency according to equation 5.18 is inserted, then summarized the provisional intermediate result results:

$$\Delta\psi \cdot c^2 \;=\; \psi/\tau_1\tau_2 \;-\; \omega^2 \cdot \psi \;+\; \delta^2\psi/\delta t^2 \quad (5.20)$$

The derived equation 5.20 represents formally seen the Klein-Gordon equation, which is used for the description of matter waves in quantum mechanics and which particularly in the quantum field theory (e.g. mesons) plays an important role. Even if it often is regarded as the relativistic invariant generalization of the Schrodinger equation, it at a closer look is incompatible with this equation and as "genuine" wave equation it is not capable of treating vortex problems correctly, like e.g. the with the Schrodinger equation calculable quantization of our microcosm.

Schrödinger approach $\psi(\mathbf{r},t) = \phi(\mathbf{r}) \cdot e^{-i\omega t}$ (5.15)

with: f = W/h; de-Broglie relation:

$$\omega = 2\pi f = W \cdot 2\pi/h = W/\hbar \qquad (5.16)$$

the derivation:

$$\delta\psi/\delta t = -i\,\omega \cdot \psi$$

rewritten for ψ:

$$\psi = (i/\omega) \cdot \delta\psi/\delta t \qquad (5.21)$$

2. derivation:

$$\delta^2\psi/\delta t^2 = -i\,\omega \cdot \delta\psi/\delta t \qquad (5.22)$$

inserted in equation 5.20:

$$\boxed{\Delta\psi \cdot c^2 = \psi/\tau_1\tau_2 - 2\,i\,\omega \cdot \delta\psi/\delta t} \qquad (5.23)$$

= sought-for Schrödinger equation (usual notation):

$$\boxed{i \cdot \hbar \cdot \delta\psi/\delta t = U \cdot \psi - (\hbar^2/2\,m) \cdot \Delta\psi} \qquad (5.14)$$

comparison of coefficients is needed:
Einstein relation (with the speed of light c):

with (5.16): $W = m \cdot c^2 = \omega \cdot \hbar$ (5.24)

coefficient of the
imaginary part: $-2\,i\,\omega = 2(\omega/i) = 2\,mc^2/i\,\hbar$ (5.25)

comparison of coefficients
for the   !
real part: $\boxed{1/\tau_1\,\tau_2\,c^2 = U \cdot 2m/\hbar^2}$ (5.26)

kinetic energy of a particle moving with the speed v:

$$\tfrac{1}{2} \cdot m \cdot v^2 = W - U \qquad (5.27)$$

v = group velocity of the matter wave:

$$v = hf/mc \approx \hbar\omega/mc \qquad (5.28)$$

Eq.5.27: $U = W - \tfrac{1}{2} \cdot m \cdot (\hbar\,\omega/mc)^2$ (5.27*)

Eq.5.24: $W = \omega \cdot \hbar$; $(\hbar\omega/mc) = c$;   resp.: $m/\hbar = \omega/c^2$

In eq.5.27* the sought-for coefficient reads (according to eq. 5.26):

$$U \cdot 2m/\hbar^2 = 2\omega/c^2\hbar \cdot [\omega \cdot \hbar - \tfrac{1}{2} \cdot m \cdot c^2]$$

$$= 2\omega/c^2\hbar \cdot [\omega \cdot \hbar - \tfrac{1}{2} \cdot \omega \cdot \hbar] = (\omega/c)^2 \qquad (5.29)$$

Fig. 5.7: Derivation of the time dependent Schrodinger equation

5.7 Derivation of the time dependent Schrodinger equation

With the Schrodinger approach 5.15 and its derivations the derivation is continued:

$$\psi(\mathbf{r},t) = \phi(\mathbf{r}) \cdot e^{-i\omega t} \quad , \tag{5.15}$$

$$\delta\psi/\delta t = -i\omega \cdot \psi, \quad \text{bzw.} \quad \psi = (i/\omega) \cdot \delta\psi/\delta t \tag{5.21}$$

$$\delta^2\psi/\delta t^2 = -i\omega \cdot \delta\psi/\delta t \tag{5.22}$$

The for a harmonic oscillation won relations according to equation 5.21 and 5.22 are now inserted into equation 5.20:

$$\Delta\psi \cdot c^2 = \psi/\tau_1\tau_2 - 2i\omega \cdot \delta\psi/\delta t$$

This is already the sought-for Schrodinger equation, as we will see in a moment, when we have analysed the coefficients. Because, besides equation 5.16 for the total energy W, also the Einstein relation is valid (with the speed of light c):

$$W = m \cdot c^2 = \omega \cdot \hbar \ , \tag{5.24}$$

we can replace the coefficients of the imaginary part by:

$$2(\omega/i) = 2m c^2/i\hbar \tag{5.25}$$

To achieve that equation 5.23, as required, follows from the Schrodinger equation 5.14, a comparison of coefficients is carried out for the real part:

$$\overset{!}{1/\tau_1\tau_2 c^2} = U \cdot 2m/\hbar^2 \tag{5.26}$$

If thc kinetic energy of a particle moving with the speed v is:
$$\tfrac{1}{2} \cdot m \cdot v^2 = W - U \ , \tag{5.27}$$

then acccording to De Broglie this particle has the wavelength h/mv. The consideration of the particle as matter wave demands an agreement with the wave length c/f of an electro-magnetic wave (with the phase velocity c). The particle hence has the speed v, which corresponds with the group velocity of the matter wave:
$$v = hf/mc = \hbar\omega/mc \ , \tag{5.28}$$
if we insert v into equation 5.27 :
$$U = W - \tfrac{1}{2} \cdot m \cdot (\hbar\omega/mc)^2 \tag{5.27*}$$

According to equation 5.24 on the one hand the total energy is $W = w \bullet h$ and on the other hand the relation 5.28 gives $(\hbar\omega/mc) = c$ resp.: $m/\hbar = \omega/c^2$

Inserted into equation 5.27* the sought-for coefficient reads (according to eq. 5.26):

$$U \cdot 2m/\hbar^2 = 2\omega/c^2\hbar \cdot [\omega \cdot \hbar - \tfrac{1}{2} \cdot m \cdot c^2]$$
$$= 2\omega/c^2\hbar \cdot [\omega \cdot \hbar - \tfrac{1}{2} \cdot \omega \cdot \hbar] = \underline{(\omega/c)^2} \tag{5.29}$$

comparison of coefficients 5.26 is fulfilled if:

$$1/\tau_1\tau_2 c^2 \;=\; U \cdot 2m/\hbar^2 \;=\; (\omega/c)^2 \tag{5.30}$$

the angular frequency is given by equation 5.18. Therefore has to be valid:

$$1/\tau_1\tau_2 \;=\; \tfrac{1}{4}\,(1/\tau_1 + 1/\tau_2)^2 \tag{5.31}$$

resp.:

$$\sqrt{1/\tau_1\tau_2} \;=\; \tfrac{1}{2}\,(1/\tau_1 + 1/\tau_2) \tag{5.32}$$

arithmetic average = geometric average, if:

$$1/\tau_1 \;=\; 1/\tau_2 \text{ and: } \boxed{\tau_1 \;=\; \tau_2} \tag{5.13}$$

is valid. Eq. 5.23 is divided by c^2 and eqs. 5.30 and 5.25 are inserted:

$$\boxed{\Delta\psi \;=\; U \cdot \psi \cdot (2m/\hbar^2) + (2m/i\hbar) \cdot \delta\psi/\delta t} \tag{5.14*}$$

= *time dependent Schrödinger equation* 5.14.

replace $\delta\psi/\delta t$ acc. to eq. 5.21 with $\omega = W/\hbar$ acc. to eq. 5.24:

$$\Delta\psi \;=\; U \cdot \psi \cdot (2m/\hbar^2) + (2m/i\hbar) \cdot \psi \cdot (-i) \cdot W/\hbar \tag{5.33}$$

Schrödinger approach 5.15 for the function of position $\phi(r)$:

$$\Delta\phi \;=\; (U\,2m/\hbar^2 - W\cdot 2m/\hbar^2) \cdot \phi \tag{5.34}$$

$$\boxed{\Delta\phi \;=\; -\,2m/\hbar^2\,(W - U) \cdot \phi} \tag{5.35}$$

= *time independent Schrödinger equation.*

Fig. 5.8: Derivation of the time independent Schrodinger equation

5.8 Derivation of the time independent Schrodinger equation

The goal is reached if we are capable to fulfil the comparison of coefficients 5.26:

$$U \cdot 2\,m/\hbar^2 \overset{!}{=} (\omega/c)^2 = 1/\tau_1\tau_2 c^2 \tag{5.30}$$

The angular frequency w is given by equation 5.18. Therefore has to be valid:

$$\tfrac{1}{4}\,(1/\tau_1 + 1/\tau_2)^2 \overset{!}{=} 1/\tau_1\tau_2 \tag{5.31}$$

$$\tfrac{1}{2} \cdot (1/\tau_1 + 1/\tau_1) \overset{!}{=} \sqrt{1/\tau_1\tau_2} \tag{5.32}$$

As is well-known the arithmetic and the geometric average only correspond in case the variables are identical. In this case, as already required in equation 5.13:

$$\tau_1 = \tau_2 . \tag{5.13}$$

has to hold.
From this we can draw the conclusion that the Schrodinger equation is just applicable to the described special case (according to eq. 5.13), in which the eddy current, which tries to i n c r e a s e the particle or its circular path and the potential vortex, which keeps the atoms together and also is responsible for the stability of the elementary particles, are of identical order of magnitude.

As a check equation 5.23 is divided by c^2 and equations 5.30 and 5.25 are inserted:

$$\boxed{\Delta\psi = U \cdot \psi \cdot (2\,m/\hbar^2) + (2\,m/i\hbar) \cdot \delta\psi/\delta t} \tag{5.14*}$$

This is the time dependent Schrodinger equation 5.14 resolved for $\Delta\psi$.

Next we replace $\delta\psi/\delta t$ according to equation 5.21 with $\omega = W/\hbar$ acc. to equation 5.24:

$$\Delta\psi = U \cdot \psi \cdot (2\,m/\hbar^2) + (2\,m/i\hbar) \cdot \psi \cdot (-i) \cdot W/\hbar \tag{5.33}$$

If we separate the space variables $\phi(\mathbf{r})$ from time by the Schrodinger approach 5.15 we obtain:

$$\Delta\phi = (U\,2\,m/\hbar^2 - W \cdot 2\,m/\hbar^2) \cdot \phi \tag{5.34}$$

This quation 5.34 for the function of space coordinates $\phi(\mathbf{r})$ is the time independent Schrodinger equation:

$$\boxed{\Delta\phi = -2\,m/\hbar^2\,(W - U) \cdot \phi} \tag{5.35}$$

The solutions of this equation which fulfil all the conditions that can be asked of them (of finiteness, steadiness, uniqueness etc.), are called eigenfunctions. The existence of corresponding discrete values of the energy W, also called eigenvalues of the Schrodinger equation, are the mathematical reason for the different quantum postulates.
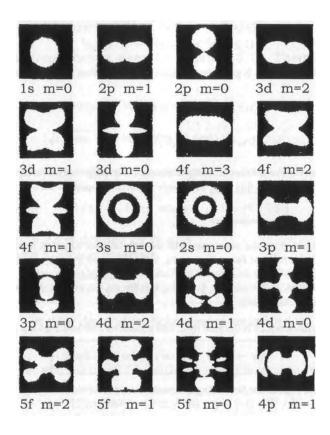
Fig. 5.9:   Photographs of models of the probability densities for
different states of the hydrogen atom.
The densities are symmetrical if rotated around the vertical axis[i]

taken from:

<i>:   U.   Gradmann/H.   Wolter: Grundlagen   der   Atomphysik,
AVG, Frankfurt a. M. 1971, P. 190.

5.9 Interpretation of the Schrodinger equation

The interpretation of the Schrodinger equation is still disputed among physicists, because the concept of wave packets contradicts the corpuscular nature of the elementary particles. Further the difficulty is added that wave packets at a closer look never are connected, run apart more or less fast, and really nothing can hinder them doing that. But for a particle the connection represents a physical fact. Then there can be no talk of causality anymore. The monocausal division into two different levels of reality, in a space-timely localization and in an energetic description, does not represent a solution but rather the opposite, the abolition of the so-called dual nature. As has been shown, the potential vortex is able to achieve this with the help of its concentration effect.

But from the introduction of this new field phenomenon arises the necessity to interpret the causes for the calculable and with measuring techniques testable solutions of the Schrodinger equation in a new way. Laws of nature do not know a possibility to choose! If they have been accepted as correct, they necessarily have to be applied.

Three hundred years ago the scholars had an argument, whether a division of physical pheomena, like Newton had proposed it, would be allowed to afterwards investigate them in the laboratory individually and isolated from other influences or if one better should proceed in an integrated manner, like for instance Descartes with his cartesian vortex theory. He imagined the celestial bodies floating in ethereal vortices. One absolutely was aware that the whole had to be more than the sum of every single realizaton, but the since Demokrit discussed vortex idea had to make room for the overwhelming successes of the method of Newton. And this idea after 2100 years was stamped, to in the meantime almost have fallen into oblivion.

Today, where this recipe for success in many areas already hits the limits of the physical possibilities, we should remember the teachings of the ancients and take up again the vortex idea It of course is true that only details are calculable mathematically and that nature, the big whole, stays incalculable, wherein problems can be seen.

If we consider the fundamental field equation 5.7, we find confirmed that actually no mathematician is capable to give a generally valid solution for this four-dimensional partial differential equation. Only restrictive special cases for a harmonic excitation or for certain spatial boundary conditions are calculable. The derived Schrodinger equation is such a case and for us particularly interesting, because it is an eigenvalue equation. The eigenvalues describe in a mathematical manner the with measuring techniques testable structures of the potential vortex .

Other eigenvalue equations are also derivable, like the Klein-Gordon equation or the Lionville equation, which is applied successfully in chaos theories. So our view opens, if chaotic systems like turbulences can be calculated as special cases of the same field equation and should be derivable from this equation.

The in pictures recorded and published structures, which at night should have come into being in corn fields, often look like the eigenvalues of a corresponding equation. The ripe ears thereby lie in clean vortex structures flat on the soil. Possibly potential vortices have charged the ears to such high field strength values that they have been pulled to the soil by the Coulomb forces.

Consequences resulting from the derivation of the Schrodinger
equation from the fundamental field equation 5.7:

1. *Any experiment which confirms the Schrödinger
equation is with that able to <u>confirm</u> at the same time the
existence of the newly discovered potential vortex and
the correctness of the field-theoretical approach.*

2. *Properties of the atomic hull and of the atomic nucleus,
which can be described with the Schrödinger equation,
can as of now be interpreted as an <u>electromagnetic</u>
phenomenon.*

3. *There exist <u>no particles</u> or wave packets from matter
waves, but only configurations consisting of <u>potential
vortices and current eddies.</u>*

4. *There exists <u>no matter!</u> What we call matter is nothing
but an electromagnetic state of oscillation of empty space.*

The relation between the energy of oscillation and the mass is
described by the relation named after Albert Einstein

$$E = mc^2 \qquad . \qquad\qquad (6.1 = 5.24)$$

Fig.   6.1:   Derivation of the Schrodinger equation,
power of proof and consequences

6. Theory of objectivity

6.1 Proof

A new theory only has chances on acknowledgment if it is provable. For that physical phenomena in the sense of the new theory are calculated and independently of this experiments are being carried out. If the calculations are confirmed by reproducible measurement results, then with that the correctness of the approach is proven.

In the here presented case we have chosen the field-theoretical approach instead of the usual quantum physical approach. As a consequence of this we had found as a new phenomenon the vortex of the electric field. With regard to the normally used Maxwell theory this resulted in changed field equations in a dual formulation. If both equations, each of which describes a source-free vortex field, are inserted into each other the result is an only in time and space formulated, generally valid and hence fundamental field equation (5.7, fig. 5.1).

This equation has many special cases; one of them, the Schrodinger equation, could be derived by using an approach which was harmonic in time. We renounced to give special solutions of the Schrodinger equation, because these are printed in numerous text books. On the other hand experiments are known, which are capable to confirm the theoretical solutions and thus to prove the Schrodinger equation. The eigenvalues of the equation describe for instance the shell-shaped structure of the atoms with the by Niels Bohr given radii.
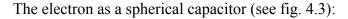
Now this already proven equation was derived from the new field-theoretical approach. Thus for the special case, the area where the Schrodinger equation is valid, the new theory can be said to be proven (fig. 6.1).
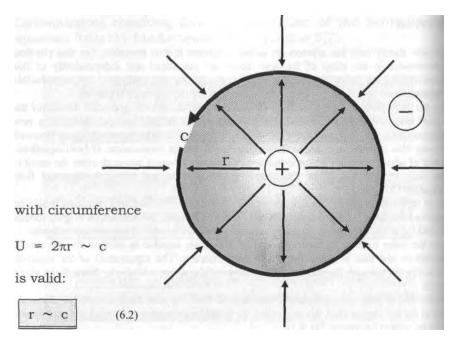
We still are not content with that and put another stone on top: we will calculate the quantum properties of the elementary particles for ourselves. These until now have only been measured. Today is merely sought for symmetries and for models of explanation, like e.g. the quark-hypothesis. From a calculation science is miles and miles away. We will compare the calculation results with the measurement values. Then everyone can check and compare for him or herself.

The conditions in an elementary particle are completely different. Here it concerns the vortex itself, whereas the model of the atom merely describes vortex properties, so-called actions at a distance. The differences in size and distances for an atom lie more than five powers of ten over those of a particle!

Here a new problem of causality comes to light, at which we now must have a critical look: the question of the by Einstein postulated constancy and universality of the speed of light. Seen from a relativistic and subjective point of view of an observer, Einstein by all means may be right. But may such a theory be generalized? How are the measurements concerning the speed of light and the relativity of space and time to be judged when looking at them objectively?

The current measurements of speeds faster than light speak a clear language and represent a challenge (fig. 3.1, violation of the principle of causality no. 5).

The electron as a spherical capacitor (see fig. 4.3):

with circumference

$$U = 2\pi r \sim c$$

is valid:

$$r \sim c \qquad (6.2)$$

field theoretical approach (vortex particles):
The amount of energy bound in the inside of the particle is identical with the free and measurable amount of energy on the outside of the particle.

(If the number of particles is left unchanged): _____
In an isolated system the sum of the energy is constant _____

(particle = electromagnetic vortex) _____
Energy is a state description of electromagnetism.

Fig. 6.2:   Derivation of the law of conservation of energy

6.2 Law of conservation of energy

Let the starting-point for our considerations be the electromagnetic wave in a particle-free vacuum. Here no vortices appear, so that the plane wave can propagate undamped with the speed of light, and in this way a transport of energy takes place. Electric and magnetic energy each are the same magnitude.

Let's now imagine the symmetry is disturbed as the wave is "slowed down" on one side. As a possible result the wave rolls up to a spherical vortex.

As we will see such a process is possible, for instance at impact on a strong field. Thus part of the energy is bound in the inside. This part from now on withdraws itself from every possibility to measure it. We can only measure the second part of the field energy, with which the particle interacts with its neighbourhood.

We c a n assume that: _____

The amount of energy bound in the inside of the particle is identical with the free and measurable amount of energy on the outside of the particle.

The same energy W_e = 0,51 MeV, we attribute to the electron for reason of its mass with the help of the Einstein relation (6.1), is also bound in its inside. This conclusion is also applicable to other elementary particles and with that to all matter.

We here again recognize the principle of the duality between the to the outside striving eddy current in the inside of the elementary vortex and the concentrating potential vortex on the outside. Thus also seen energetically both are of the same magnitude. Whereas in the case of the electromagnetic wave it concerns a symmetrical oscillation around "zero", by the process of quantization, by the rolling up to a spherical vortex, there forms an energetic state of space different from zero. The order of magnitude is determined by the number of elementary vortices, of which the particles and all matter consist.

Anti-matter forms the opposite energetic state and this again is for the particles of matter available in their inside in a bound form.

As long as we do not artificially produce new elementary vortices and thus keep the number of available vortices constant, the energetic state will not change, or as it is formulated in text books: _____

In an isolated system the sum of the energy is constant.

THE law of conservation of energy is not an axiom, but follows without compulsion from the vortex theory. It is not elementary, but a consistently derivable consequence of the field-theoretical approach, according to which solely the field acts as cause for all other physical phenomena, also for the conservation of energy! Because the cause of it is the electromagnetic field, the following has to hold: _____

Energy is a state description of electromagnetism.

Now we finally can explain why energy can be converted. Different forms of energy only are different forms of formation of the same phenomenon!

Of course this statement of the field-theoretical approach does not yet explain what, for instance, the temperature has to do with electromagnetism. I ask for some patience; no question will be left unanswered.

From

$$c \sim r \qquad\qquad (6.2)$$

follows:

> The speed of light determines the size of the elementary particles.

Energy of a capacitor:

$$W = Q^2/C, \qquad\qquad (6.3)$$

written down for the electron (with the Einstein relation):

$$W_e = e^2/C_e = m_e c^2 = 0{,}51 \text{ MeV} \qquad\qquad (6.1)$$

Capacity of a spherical capacitor:

$$C_e = \varepsilon_0 \cdot 4\pi r_e \qquad\qquad (6.4)$$

"classical" radius of the electron[i] is:

$$r_e = e^2/\varepsilon_0 \cdot 4\pi \cdot W_e \quad (6.5)$$

$$r_e = 2{,}82 \cdot 10^{-15} \text{ m} \qquad\qquad (6.6)$$

in the case of Kuchling[ii] the radius of the electron is:

$$r_e = 1{,}41 \cdot 10^{-15} \text{ m} . \qquad\qquad (6.7)$$

Fig. 6.3:   Calculation of the radius of the electron.

[i]:   Mende, Simon: Physik, Gl. 10.39, VEB-Leipzig, 4. Aufl.
[ii]:   Kuchling: Physik, Gl. At4, VEB-Leipzig, bis einschl. 11. Auflage 1974

6.3 Radius of the electron

For the crucial process, in which the electromagnetic wave rolls up to a vortex, it is for reasons of continuity to be expected that the velocity of propagation remains equal that thus for the vortex oscillation exactly like for the electromagnetic wave the speed of light is determining. The direction of propagation in the case of the vortex takes place perpcndicular to the in fig. 6.2 shown field direction of the electric field strength. Not even
in that both field-phenomena differ.
Summarizing: the propagation takes place with the speed of light c along a circular path with the perimeter $U = 2\pi r$. Therefore holds:

$$c \sim r \quad (6.2)$$

According to this equation the radius and with that the size of the electron is determined by the speed of light. Therefore the question of the size of the electron is raised.

The energy interpretation predicts that for the theoretical case of a change of size the energy density in the inside of the particle is influenced that however the quantity of the included energy remains unchanged. We therefore can further proceed from the assumption that the bound amount of energy is independent of the size of the particle!

Consequently for the elementary quantum the energy $W_e = 0.51$ MeV is assumed, which it has acccording to the Einstein relation $W_e = m_e c^2$. For the electron of mass m_e the with measuring techniques determined value is inserted.
The spherical electrode of a spherical capacitor with the above given energy W_e (according to eq. 6.1) and the capacity C_e (according to equation 6.4, fig. 6.3) represents a very realistic model of the negatively charged particle.
In this manner the classical radius of the electron is calculated to be[i]: $r_e = 2.82 * 10^{-15}$ m.

But in the case of Kuchling it only is half this size[ii], what according to equation 6.2 would mean that in the case of Kuchling the light would be on the way only half this fast [iii]. Therefore if one is careful, one prefers to be silent concerning this delicate theme and if one is honest, one admits not to know anything exact.
Not only the electron but also all the other elementary particles are according to the field-theoretical approach formed from concentrated potential vortices. For these equation 6.2 hence has to hold in the same manner, so that more generalized we can conclude:

The speed of light determines the size of the elementary particles.

This statement is incompatible with the assumption of a constant speed of light! Because then all elementary particles would have identical size. As is known, however, are the building parts of the atomic nucleus, the protons and neutrons very much smaller than individual electrons. The constancy of the speed of light is to be questioned. This question is of such an elementary importance that we are not content with these considerations and in addition undertake a mathematical derivation in the sense of the field approach.

[iii]: Difference = Thomas factor

The Maxwell laws, source free (figures 3.2 and 3.3):

$$\text{Div } \mathbf{D} = 0 \quad (3.7) \quad \text{and} \quad \text{Div } \mathbf{B} = 0 \quad (3.3)$$

Faraday's law of induction	and	Ampère's law

$\mathbf{E} = \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r},t)$ with $1/\tau_2 = 0$: $\mathbf{H} = \mathbf{H}(\mathbf{r},t)$ with $\mathbf{j} = 0$ resp. $1/\tau_1 = 0$

$$\boxed{\text{rot } \mathbf{E} = - \delta\mathbf{B}/\delta t} \quad (5.4) \qquad \boxed{\text{rot } \mathbf{H} = \delta\mathbf{D}/\delta t} \quad (5.1)$$

with: $\mathbf{B} = \mu \cdot \mathbf{H}$ (5.5) and $\mathbf{D} = \varepsilon \cdot \mathbf{E}$ (3.6)

if we again apply the curl to equation 5.4 and insert equation 5.1 (cf. fig. 5.1, eq. 5.5):

$$- \text{rot rot } \mathbf{E} = \mu \cdot \delta(\text{rot } \mathbf{H})/\delta t = \mu \cdot \varepsilon \cdot \delta^2 \mathbf{E}/\delta t^2 \quad (5.5)$$

thanks to missing divergence: $\text{div } \mathbf{E} = 0$ (3.7*)

    (fig. 5.2):

$$= \underline{\text{wave equation:}} \qquad \boxed{\Delta \mathbf{E} \cdot c^2 = \delta^2 \mathbf{E}/\delta t^2} \quad (5.9^*)$$

with the speed of light c: $\mu \cdot \varepsilon = 1/c^2$ (5.6)

Hertz' wave = transverse wave = plane wave with:

direction of propagation: $\boxed{v = dx/dt}$ (6.8)

$$\boxed{\mathbf{E} = E_z}, \quad \boxed{\mathbf{D} = D_z}, \quad \boxed{\mathbf{H} = H_y}, \quad \boxed{\mathbf{B} = B_y} \quad (6.8^*)$$

curl operation (in y-direction):   with equation 5.4:

$$\text{rot } \mathbf{E} = -d\mathbf{E}/dx = -d\mathbf{B}/dt \quad (6.9)$$

with 6.8: $d\mathbf{E} = (dx/dt) \cdot d\mathbf{B} = v \cdot d\mathbf{B}$ (6.9*)

or generally: $\boxed{\mathbf{E} = \mathbf{v} \times \mathbf{B}}$ (6.10)

Fig. 6.4:   Derivation of the laws of transformation

[i]: Prof. G. Bosse in his text book in reversed direction derives the Faraday law of induction from the law of transformation 6.10, which he again derives from considerations about the Lorentz force. G. Bosse, Grundlagen der Elektrotechnik II, BI 183, Hochschultaschenbucher-Verlag, Mannheim 1967

6.4 The Maxwell field equations

The laws of transformation of the electromagnetic field shall form the starting-point for the coming up considerations. To exclude any doubts with regard to the interpretation, the equations will be derived from the Maxwell laws under the assumption that no sources or charge carriers are present (fig. 3.2 and 3.3) and as a consequence no current density (j = 0) is to be expected. This corresponds to the vanishing of the time independent terms, which consequently are responsible for the occurring of force effects like e.g. the Lorentz force. Only at the end of this derivation we can understand the sense of this assumption (with $1/\tau_1 = 0$ and $1/\tau_2 = 0$). The procedure at first corresponds to that of fig. 5.1. Here the fundamental field equation had been derived from Faraday's law of induction and Ampere's law. With the assumptions made this time the in fig. 5.2 treated undamped wave equation is left (5.9, here 5.9*). Whom the derivation is still present can go in at this point.

In a sufficiently great distance from the source we are dealing with a plane wave, in which the field factors only depend on the direction of propagation x. The Hertz' wave is a transverse wave, in which the field pointers oscillate perpendicular to the direction of propagation and in addition stand perpendicular to each other:

$$v = dx/dt \quad (6.8), \qquad E = E_z, \quad D = D_z, \quad H = H_y, \quad B = B_y \qquad (6.8^*)$$

The curl, applied to the electric field pointer, itself points in the y-direction:
rot E = - dE/dx . This for the transverse wave carried out curl operation is now compared with Faraday's law of induction (5.4):

$$\text{rot } E = -dE/dx = -dB/dt \qquad (6.9)$$

The relation won in a mathematical way, with the speed fixed by (6.8), reads:

$$dE = (dx/dt) \cdot dB = v * dB \qquad (6.9^*)$$

The result of this derivation at first only is valid for the introduced simplification, for instance for the case of the transverse electromagnetic wave. Better known is apart from that the generalized formulation, which among others by G. Bosse[i] is called law of transformation.

$$E = v \times B \qquad (6.10)$$

With Ampere's law (5.1) we now should proceed in an analogous manner. The result is:

$$H = -v \times D \quad (6.10^*)$$

This equation 6.10* is given among others by Simonyi[ii]. Now that we know, under which circumstances these equations of transformation can be derived from the Maxwell equations, the actual work can start.

[ii]:   K. Simonyi, Theoretische Elektrotechnik, 7. Auflage VEB Verlag Berlin 1979. pp. 921 - 924; In addition see chapter 27.8 in part 3 of this book.

Laws of transformation:

$$E \;=\; \mathbf{v} \times \mathbf{B} \;=\; \mathbf{v} \times \mu \cdot \mathbf{H} \qquad\qquad (6.10)$$

$$H \;=\; -\mathbf{v} \times \mathbf{D} \;=\; -\mathbf{v} \times \varepsilon \cdot \mathbf{E} \qquad\qquad (6.10^*)$$

and

> We experience the magnetic field as an electric field
> and the electric field as a magnetic field
> simply and solely for reason of the same relative motion!

The component of the direction of motion perpendicular to the area defined by the field pointers:

$$E \;=\; v \cdot \mu \cdot H \qquad\qquad (6.11)$$

and

$$H \;=\; -v \cdot \varepsilon \cdot E \qquad\qquad (6.11^*)$$

with the <u>relations of material</u>:

$$B \;=\; \mu \cdot H \qquad\qquad (3.5)$$

$$D \;=\; \varepsilon \cdot E \qquad\qquad (3.6)$$

with the <u>speed of light</u>:

$$c \;=\; 1/\sqrt{\mu \cdot \varepsilon} \qquad\qquad (5.6)$$

<u>additional field</u>:

$$E_z \;=\; -v^2 \cdot \mu \cdot \varepsilon \cdot E \;=\; -(v^2/c^2) \cdot E \qquad\qquad (6.12)$$

resp.

$$H_z \;=\; -v^2 \cdot \varepsilon \cdot \mu \cdot H \;=\; -(v^2/c^2) \cdot H \qquad\qquad (6.12^*)$$

<u>basic field</u>:   E   resp.   H   (at v = O)

measurable <u>overall field:</u> (if v ≠ O)

$$E_o \;=\; E + E_z \qquad\qquad (6.13)$$

resp.

$$Ho \;=\; H + H_z \qquad\qquad (6.13^*)$$

Fig. 6.5:   Properties of transformation of the electromagnetic field.

6.5 Equations of transformation

As a consequence of the in fig. 6.5 again written down laws of transformation of the electromagnetic field (6.10 and 6.10*) magnetic phenomena can be traced back to electric phenomena and vice versa. The mathematical formulation reveals us the two sides of the same medal and points to a perfect duality between both fields and their factors of description.

Because a way exists, as is shown here, in which the equations of transformation can be derived from the Maxwell field equations, the same generally valid and extensive importance should be attributed to them. They can with the same right be called the foundation of electromagnetism. Wherein does lie its message for physics, the always curious researcher will ask? For that the relations of material 3.5 and 3.6 are completed:

$$E = v \times \mu \cdot H \quad (6.10) \qquad \text{und} \qquad H = -v \times \varepsilon \cdot E \quad . \qquad (6.10^*)$$

The here presented equations state, that we measure an electric field strength E, if we are moving with regard to a magnetic field H with the speed v and vice versa. The electric and the magnetic field therefore prove to be an experience of the observing person and we can say:

We experience the magnetic field as electric field and the electric field as magnetic field simply and solely for reason of the relative motion!

Let's assume, v is the component of the relative velocity (6.8), which stands perpendicular to the area defined by the field pointers (6.8*), then the equations of transformation (6.9* with 3.5) now read:

$$E = v \cdot \mu \cdot H \quad (6.11) \qquad \text{and} \qquad H = -v \cdot \varepsilon \cdot E \quad . \qquad (6.11^*)$$

If we are moving with the velocity v in a basic field which is present with the field strength E, then according to equation 6.11* we observe a magnetic field, which again according to equation 6.11 is to be interpreted as an additional electric field E_z:

$$E_z = -v^2 \cdot \mu \cdot \varepsilon \cdot E = -(v^2/c^2) \cdot E \quad (6.12)$$

In duality equation 6.11 inserted into equation 6.11* provides for the magnetic field strength a corresponding additional field H_z:

$$H_z = -v^2 \cdot \mu \cdot \varepsilon \cdot H = -(v^2/c^2) \cdot H \quad (6.12^*)$$

W e obviously owe the measurable overlap fields in a laboratory simply and solely to the relative velocity v with which the laboratory is moving. But now we must pay attention to the fact that a terrestrial laboratory rotates along with the earth, that the earth orbits the sun and the sun again rotates around the centre of the milky way. Eventually the whole milky way is on the way in the cosmos with a galactic, for us hardly understandable speed. If we further take into consideration that for every subsystem an additional field occurs as a consequence of the relative motion with regard to the super ordinate system, then one additonal field follows after the next and overlaps this one.

Let's imagine, the relative velocity could be reduced towards zero - and maybe we are moving around such a cosmic point - then here no overlapping field would be measurable.

<*>: A derivation using vectors is written in chapter 28 (part 3).

Additional field (from fig. 6.5):

(6.12)
(6.12*)

$$E_z = -(v^2/c^2) \cdot E \quad \text{and}$$

$$H_z = -(v^2/c^2) \cdot H$$

Superposition of the fields:
The additional field (E_z resp. H_z) overlaps the basic field
(E resp. H) to produce the measurable overall field (E_0 resp. H_0):

(6.13)

$$E_0 = E + E_z = E \cdot (1 - v^2/c^2) \qquad (6.13^*)$$

$$H_0 = H + H_z = H \cdot (1 - v^2/c^2)$$

transformed:

$$\left(1 - \frac{v^2}{c^2}\right) = \frac{E_0}{E} = \frac{H_0}{H}$$

(6.14)

for the Lorentz contraction holds apart from that:

(6.14*)

$$\left(1 - \frac{v^2}{c^2}\right) = \left(\frac{1}{l_0}\right)^2$$

From the comparison
Follows

(6.14**)

$$\frac{E_0}{E} = \frac{H_0}{H} = \left(\frac{1}{l_0}\right)^2$$

the proportionality:

$$\boxed{E, H \sim 1/l^2} \quad \text{and} \quad \boxed{E_0, H_0 \sim 1/l_0^2} \qquad (6.15)$$

Fig. 6.6:   The field dependency of the Lorentz contraction

6.6 Field overlap

Field vectors can be superpositioned. In this manner the additional field E_z resp. H_z which depends on the velocity, according to equation 6.10, overlaps the respective basic field (E resp. H) to produce the measurable overall field (E_0 resp. H_o):

$$E_0 = E + E_z = E \cdot (1 - v^2/c^2) \qquad (6.13)$$

$$H_0 = H + H_z = H \cdot (1 - v^2/c^2) \qquad (6.13*)$$

In the result something surprising the factor $(1 - v^2/c^2)$ appears, which is well-known from the special theory of relativity and for instance appears in the Lorentz contraction.
If we rewrite both equations for the characteristic factor and compare with the in a purely mathematical way, over the Lorentz transformation, won length contraction $(1 - v^2/c^2) = (l/l_0)^2$, then it becomes clear that the Lorentz contraction physically seen should have its cause in the changed field conditions which a with relativistic speed moving body finds with regard to a resting body.

$$1 - \frac{v^2}{c^2} = \frac{E_0}{E} = \frac{H_0}{H} \overset{!}{=} \left(\frac{1}{l_0}\right)^2 \quad (6.14)$$
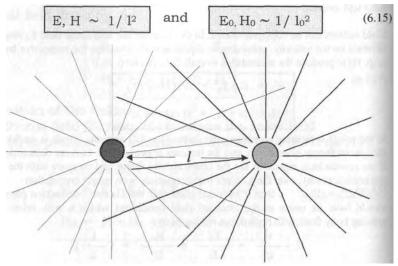
The equation is a compulsionless consequence of known physical laws. In this derivation actually no new factor was introduced and nevertheless a completely new picture for the natural scientific reality results[i].

In our observer system, where the field E_0 exists, a rule has its proper length l_0. In another system, which is moving with the speed v relative to the observer, as a consequence of the here prevailing field E the corresponding rule has a length 1. In which relation the factors stand to each other, is described by equation 6.14. Accordingly the following proportionality holds:

$$E, H \sim 1/l^2 \quad \text{and} \quad E_0, H_0 \sim 1/l_0{}^2 \qquad (6.15)$$

If we are exterior to a very fast moving body with velocity v, we immediately can observe how this body for reason of its relative velocity experiences the calculated additional field and in this way experiences a length contraction. If the observer is moving along with the body, then he purely subjective seen doesn't detect a length contraction, because he himself and his entire measuring technique is subjected to the same length contraction. From the axiomatic approach what would be, if the field, which itself only represents an experience, would determine perceptible space and its dimensions, quickly a fundamental realization can develop if the described experiences should coincide with real observations.

---
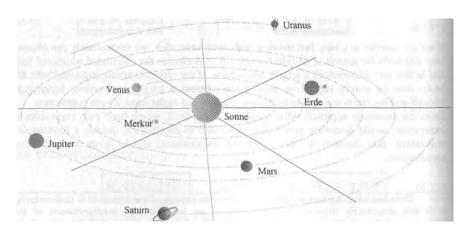
[i] : Because in this point of view the subjective status of the observer is determining, it is not completely impossible that there is an error in the interpretation of the equations of transformation (6.10 and 6.10*). But because we started from the same point of view of the observer for the derivation of the length contraction from the Lorentz transformation, here the same error is to be expected. In putting both results equal (6.14), a like constituted error on both sides will cancel out in any case and the result stays above all doubts!

$$\boxed{E, H \sim 1/l^2} \quad \text{and} \quad \boxed{E_0, H_0 \sim 1/l_0^2} \qquad (6.15)$$

(Model):

Two particles of matter each in the field of the other particle.

Two elementary particles or two accumulations of matter consisting of these are able to reduce the distance to each other for reason of their fields, which we interpret as a force of attraction.

B: (Example): The orbits of the planets in the field of the sun.

Fig. 6.7: The influence of the field on interactions.

6.7 Field dependent curvature of space

Let's assume, an accumulation of matter, as big as our earth, wanted to fly past the sun in the distance earth-sun. But it would not succeed. Because the fields arising from the sun decreases with increasing distance and according to equation 6.15 as a consequence the size of the particles of matter increases. The planet hence is more strongly contracted on its side turned towards the sun, as on the turned away "night side". It bends towards the sun and its flight path becomes a circular path around the sun. That is the interaction known as gravitation!

To an earth inhabitant this curvature reveals itself merely in the observation that the duration of sunshine at daytime is longer, than it would be expected to be under the assumption of the earth as a homogeneous sphere. In this context one willingly speaks of a curvature of space. Actually it is a curvature of matter under the influence of the field dependent length contraction.
Exactly this contraction the planets owe their circular orbits around the sun and by no means the equilibrium of forces between the force of attraction and the centrifugal force (fig. 6.7 B). It obviously is a fundamental mistake to think that gravitation would causally be connected with a force effect!
If, in this context, we speak of a force of attraction for the sake of our subjective observation, then we must realize that it merely can concern an auxiliary term founded in usefulness.
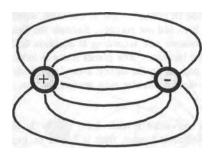
A thought experiment should bring us clarity (fig. 6.7 A). The field, which surrounds every particle of matter, reaches till infinity but becomes less effective with increasing distance. If the distance between two particles is 1, then one particle is in the field of the other particle. As a consequence of the field the length 1 reduces and in this way the size determining field increases, which again leads to a further reduction of length etc. As a consequence it can be observed that both particles are moving towards each other. We speak of a force of attraction, because we can't register the influence of the field with our senses.
In this way the consistent result that we and our environment at daytime must be smaller than in the night will as well remain hidden. We experience the effect only indirectly as gravitational pull of the earth.
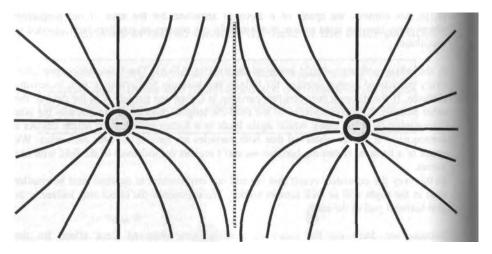
Because we don't see the cause of a subjectively observed force effect, for the electromagnetic interaction, just as for the gravitation, the field dependency of the length contraction will be responsible. Hence the following conclusion holds for both interactions equally way.

Two elementary particles or two accumulations of matter consisting of these are able to reduce the distance to each other for reason of their fields, which we interpret as a force of attraction.

Now the question still is open, why gravitation only knows forces of attraction, whereas the electromagnetic interaction also permits forces of repulsion and which are the causal fields for each.

A: The field lines of the E-field for unlike charged particles

B: The field lines of the E-field for equal charged particles

> The electromagnetic interaction of a particle is a result of the influence of the open field lines arising from it on the dimensions of space.

Fig. 6.8: The influence of the open field lines of the E-field

6.8 Electromagnetic interaction

A convincing answer to the open question provides us the analysis of the course of the field lines, on the one hand for charged particles and on the other hand for uncharged particles, which do not participate in the electromagnetic interaction. If at first we consider electrically charged particles, like e.g. electrons, protons or ions. Then all in common is that the towards infinity running field lines of the electric field are open. With this field the particle is able to interact with its environment. We measure a charge and an electromagnetic force effect. In the case of unequal charges, as is well-known, a field amplification and attractive acting forces are observed whereas for equal charges a field reduction results and repulsion is observed.

If we make a connection between the field conditions and the electromagnetic interaction in the sense of the proportionality (6.15), then the particle in reality is able to influence the distance to other particles merely with the help of its electric field. For unequal charges a compression of field lines arises, in which one particle stays in the focussed field of the other and vice versa. In this way a contraction of all lengths occurs and the observable attraction happens (fig. 6.8 A).
For equal charges the opposite case is present, in which even a local field freedom can occur (fig. 6.8 B). If the field tends towards zero on the dashed line, then the distance will go to infinity (according to eq. 6.15). Consequently, the observable effect that both bodies go away from each other, will reach to infinity.

Actually the electromagnetic interaction proves to be a result of the field dependent length contraction.

The electromagnetic interaction of a particle is a result of the influence of the open field lines arising from it on the dimensions of the space, in which it is.
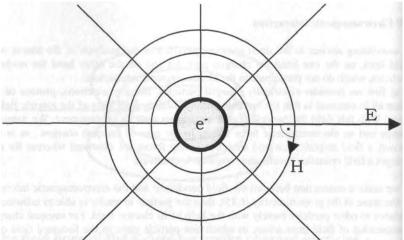
It is important that the field lines are open, for which reason they are bent away from like charges and are directed towards unlike charges. Subjectively seen we find out that as a consequence of the field reduction repulsive force effects and as a consequence of the field compression attractive acting force effects are observed (fig. 6.8).
The consequence of is every electric field is, as is well-known, a magnetic field standing perpendicular on it. The field lines of the magnetic field run parallel to the surface of the particle and have a closed course (fig. 6.9 A)!
Therefore no magnetic poles form, which would be measurable. Seen from the outside the particle behaves neutral magnetically seen, because of the closed course of the field lines.
An artificial field reduction and as a consequence observable forces of repulsion, like in the case of the electromagnetic interaction, hence in principle are impossible.
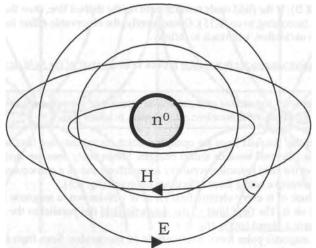
The effect of the magnetic field thus is limited to a geometrical manipulation of the environment, namely the curvature of space, with which we have founded the phenomenon of the attraction of masses and of the gravitation.

A: The open field lines of the E-field and the closed field lines of the H-field of an electrically charged particle (e.g. e-)

B: The closed field lines of the E-field and H-field of an electrically uncharged particle (e.g. of the neutron n°).

Gravitation is a result of the influence of the field lines with a closed course running parallel to the surface of the particles on the dimensions of the space, in which they are.

Fig. 6.9:   The influence of the closed field lines of the H-field.

6.9 Gravitation

For uncharged, neutral particles (neutron, atom, molecule etc.) both the magnetic and the perpendicular on them standing electric field lines have a closed course. Now both run parallel to the surface of the particle (fig. 6.9 B).
As is said, the density of field lines with a closed course can't be influenced from the outside. If we approach a particle, the consequence of an increase of the density without
exception is a decrease of the linear measures and thus a larger force of attraction. For this case of field lines with a closed course, for which in general it doesn't give a field attenuation and no forces of repulsion, there holds:

Gravitation is a result of the influence of the field lines with a closed course running parallel to the surface of the particles on the dimensions of the space, in which they are.

Both interactions logically have an infinite range. Both form a whole in the influence of the fields on the size conditions.
It surely is of the greatest importance that for this derivation of the field dependency of the Lorentz contraction from the known equations of transformation of the electromagnetic field we could do completely without the introduction of new factors of description or neglects.
Solely by consistent derivation and interpretation of the result the unification already has suceeded and the electromagnetic interaction and the gravitation could, with the derived field dependent Lorentz contraction, be traced back to a single basic phenomenon. Doing so we have to pay attention to the fact that the observer is subjected to the same Lorentz contraction as his measuring technique and therefore he can't see the field dependency at all. Merely as being an exterior observer it in rare cases will be possible to him to see the curvature of space in the presence of strong fields.

From this for an astronaut practical consequences result. If he namely would land on Jupiter, he would think flat hills to be gigantic mountains, that small he would be! Vice versa if he landed on the moon, high mountains would appear to be insignificant hills, not because of wrong altitude readings of the terrestrial mission control and measurement centre, but only because of his own body size. The astronauts of the Apollo missions were not prepared for this circumstance and after their landing on the moon were completely surprised, how little validity learned textbook physics has, hardly has one left the earth. They have brought photographs with them which prove the Lorentz contraction to depend on the field and therefore on gravitation.

The fact that force effects should arise from the interactions is an auxiliary concept and auxiliary description of the observing person founded in pure usefulness. The Lorentz force therefore shouldn't be regarded as cause anymore. It actually appears only as property of the field factors. Seen this way it only would be consistent to do without space charges and currents as a result of moving charges and to assume a source-free and quanta-free field description (fig. 6.4: $j = 0$).
From an unified theory it is demanded that it besides the electromagnetic interaction and the gravitation also is able to integrate the strong and the weak interaction. We will also solve this problem.

shining
star:

Strong gravi-
tational field:

observer:
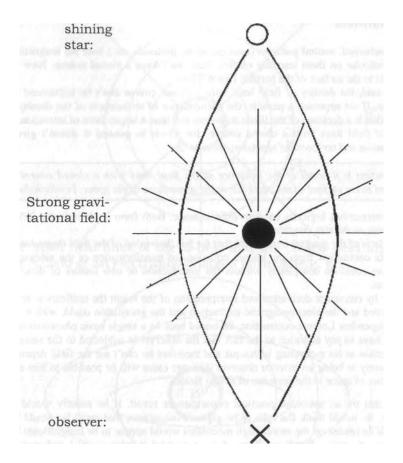
Fig. 6.10: Diversion of the light by a strong gravitational field.

Speed of light of the wave: $c = \lambda * f$ (6.16)

For the wavelength λ holds (because of eq. 6.15): $E, H \sim 1/\lambda^2$

From equation (6.16) follows (with f = constant):

$E \sim 1/c^2$, $H \sim 1/c^2$ (6.17)

The speed of light depends on the field!

6.10 Field dependent speed of light

But not only matter is bent towards a gravitational field. If we only think of the much cited phenomenon that the ray of light of a star is diverted towards the sun, if it passes very close to the sun on its way to us, like this has been observed for the first time during an eclipse of the sun in 1919 (fig. 6.10).
Quite obviously the field of the sun also slows down the speed of light. On the side of the ray of light which is turned towards the sun, the field is somewhat larger and the speed of light correspondingly is slower than on the side which is turned away, and with that the ray of light changes its direction in the observable manner. Exactly this relation willingly is interpreted as a consequence of a curvature of space.
The extremely strong field of a black hole can divert the light down to a circular path, in order to in this way catch and bind it. The light now orbits the black hole like planets the sun.

At this point the open-minded reader already might have tapped the confirmation of the proportionality 6.2 ($c \sim r$), which has been derived from the vortex model (fig. 6.2).
The sceptic is offered still another derivation: for the borderline case that the relative velocity v tends towards the speed of light c (fig. 6.6), according to equation 6.13 the measurable overall field E_o (and also H_o) will go to zero and equation 6.12, with $E_z = -E$ (and $H_z = -H$), will again turn into the wave equation (5.9*) after double differentiation (fig. 6.4).
The speed v = c so to speak forms the escape velocity, with which the electromagnetic wave runs away from the cosmic field. Under these circumstances of course neither an attraction of masses nor an electromagnetic interaction can be exerted on the wave.
If E_0 goes to zero at the same time l_0 tends to infinity (equation 6.15, fig. 6.6): i.e. the wave spreads all through space. This result entirely corresponds to the observations and experiences.

For the wave length λ and in the end for the velocity of propagation c only the self-field of the wave E resp. H is responsible. Because of

$$c = \lambda \cdot f \quad (6.16)$$

and the proportionality from equation 6.15: $\qquad E, H \sim 1/\lambda^2 \qquad (6.17*)$

obtain the new relation: $\qquad E, H \sim 1/c^2 \qquad (6.17)$

If the speed of light in the presence of matter decreases, then we now also know why. It is the field, which surrounds matter, that slows down the speed of light. Therefore a gravitational field is able to divert a ray of light in the same manner as matter which flies past. Finally moves the speed of light in the proportionality 6.17 to the place of the linear measure (in 6.15).
But if the rule fails one will try to replace by an optical measurement arrangement. In this manner the field dependency of the Lorentz contraction should be measurable; but it isn't!

From the comparison of the derived proportionalities:

$$
\begin{array}{cc}
(6.15): & (6.17) \\
E, H \sim \dfrac{1}{l^2} & \sim \dfrac{1}{c^2}
\end{array}
$$

follows:
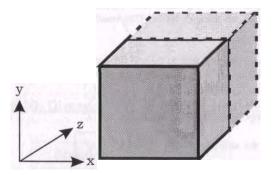
$$1 \sim c \qquad\qquad (6.18)$$

The speed of light is proportional to the measurement path. The variable speed of light is being measured with itself. The result at all events is a constant value.

The constancy of the speed of light is based on a measurement which is faulty from the principle!

Because of c ~ r: physical length contraction

Fig.   6.11:   Derivation of the length contraction (field dependent Lorentz contraction)

6.11 Universality

Why can't the rule be replaced by an optical measurement arrangement? The crucial indication provides the comparison of both derived proportionalities 6.15 and 6.17. According to them holds the same field dependency for both the Lorentz contraction and the speed of light:

$1/l^2 \sim 1/c^2$ or $\overline{1 \sim c}$ (6.18)

If the rule has proved to be useless, then we will experience the same disaster if we measure optically, i.e. with the speed of light.

Obviously both, the length 1 and the speed of light c as a length per unit of time, depend in the same manner on the respective local field strength. On the one hand do both measuring methods lead to the same result; but on the other hand will anything which can't be measured with one method, neither be measured with the other method. If now the speed of light is being measured optically, then the measurement path will be proportional to the speed of light and as a result will the unknown factor be measured with itself. The result of this measurement, which is faulty from the principle, at all events is a constant value, because here two variables which stand in direct proportionality to each other are related to each other.

Was the famous experiment of Michelson and Morley unnecessary, the result trivial? And how does it stand about the postulate of the universality of the speed of light? If we for that consider a cube (fig. 6.11). And we assume that the speed of light is a vectorial quantity, which in our experiment is for instance in one direction twice as large, as in the direction of the other two space axes. By means of the mentioned influence of the speed of light on the spatial length is, as a consistent consequence, the cube along this edge pulled apart to a cuboid. We however register this spatial body with our eyes, which is with the speed of light and that has increased proportionally to the length of the edges, for which reason we as subjective observer still see a cube in front of us and not a cuboid. If we trust an apparent objective measurement more than our sense organ and measure the three lengths of the edges of the cuboid again with a rule then we get three times the same length,   which   is   a   cube. We probably are dealing with an optical deception using the true meaning of the word.

If the by Einstein postulated universality and constancy of the speed of light in reality doesn't exist at all, we in no way would be capable to register this; neither to observe nor to measure it!

The Galilean theorem of the addition of speeds objectively seen still is valid, even if the fact that the speed of light apparently is independent of the speed of the source pretends us the opposite.

If for instance a light source is moved towards a receiving device or away from it, then the speeds will overlap, like for the passenger, who marches in a driving train against or in the driving direction through the corridor. For the ray of light also the fields, which influence the speed of light and the measurement equipment, overlap. As a consequence will a measuring technician, who himself is exposed to this overlapping field, always observe and "measure" the identical speed of light. The observer as a result imagines, there is an universality of the speed of light.

The field takes over the function of the aether.
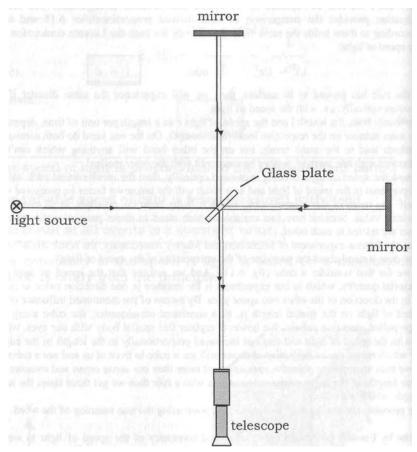
Fig. 6.12:   Experiment of Michelson and Morley to
detect an aetherwind[i]

<i>:   A.P.French: Special Relativity, Massachusetts Institute of Technology, 1966.

<ii>: Nikola Tesla: "This is the same as writing a business letter and forgetting the subject you wish to write about". To Einstein's Theories, Rare Book and Manuscript Library, Columbia University, 15.4.1932.

<iii>: Einstein proceeds in the same manner with the time dilatation, by assuming a time constant by definition for the derivation to present at the end of his derivation a variable time. And with that he presents a result which contradicts his approach completely.

6.12 Aether

Important experiments like the one of Doppler concerning the redshift or the one of Bradley concerning the aberration of the stars show only to clear, where the influence of the speed of light subjectively still is perceptible, or for laboratory experiments like the one of Michelson and Morley, where the influence isn't perceptible anymore, because the length of the interferometers always changes proportionally to the speed of light. The look in the stars at the same time is a look in cosmic areas, where completely other field conditions prevail and as a consequence completely other values for the speed of light and for the dimensions of space are present. The mentioned observations suggest that we together with our measuring station are moving through the cosmos and therefore a relative velocity has to be present with regard to an aether which determines the respective speed of light.

If we however constrict our range of vision and retire in a laboratory, then we no longer are capable to observe the influence of the field on the speed of light. The experiments of Michelson which Maxwell had prompted to and which Morley with a higher precision had repeated with the goal, to detect the aether, inevitably had to turn out negatively. The laboratory experiments resulted in the misleading picture, as if the earth was resting in the aether.

The not understood measurements will suggest any observer, he forms the centre of the universe and everything rotates around him, entirely in the sense of the Ptolemean view of life, which, although long ago abolished, here belated has experienced support. With a Swabia caper Albert Einstein has prevented a relapse into the dark Middle Ages and removed the open contradiction in the question of the aether, which once is measured as moving and another time as resting, by without further ado abolishing the aether. With that he undoubtedly has solved a central problem of physics and at the same time created a new one. As is known does the speed of light have a certain value, and therefore the question is raised, what determines is size. Exactly for this purpose a luminiferous aether had been introduced, however it is constituted.

Scientifically it does make little sense, to make an assumption, if at the end of the derivation the prerequisite is deleted without substitute. In such a case either in the approach or in the derivation is a principal error*[1]"*. Nikola Tesla comments on the working method of Einstein with the applicable comparison, as if Einstein had, while he was writing a business letter, forgotten completely the subject he wanted to write about (fig. 6.12[ii]).

The answer, which removes all contradictions and is entirely in accord with all observations and measurements, is obvious. Naturally a luminiferous aether exists, which determines the velocity of propagation and of course it by no means is bound to the observer.

As has been derived in figures 6.5 and 6.6, will for a relative velocity v arise a field, which according to proportionality 6.17 determines the speed of light. With that we have derived completely.

The field takes over the function of the aether.

The equations 6.10 also answer the question, why no aetherwind is being observed, although such a wind actually is present: we experience, as we have discovered, an E-field with „head wind" as a resting H-field and vice versa and therefore we aren't capable to detect the head wind in the aether!

Key questions of quantum physics (fig. 4.4 + continuation):

IV. Why do the particles have the form of spheres?
(with increasing E-field decreases c)

VIII. Why is the elementary quantum localized?
(in the vortex centre: c = 0, see figures 4.3 and 6.2)

IX. Why do the elementary particles have a spin?
(spherical form demands field compensation)

X. Why is the magnitude of the spin quantized?
(cosmic basic field determines the need of E_z)

XI. Why can speeds faster than light occur in a tunnel?
(a reduction of the cosmic basic field can only be realized locally in a tunnel)

to XI:
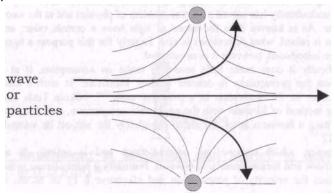
Fig. 6.13:   Consequences concerning the field dependency of the speed of light: spin effect and tunnel effect [i,ii]

---

[i]: Nimtz,G.: Instantanes Tunneln, Tunnelexperimente mit elektromagnetischen Wellen, Phys.B1.49, VCH Weinheim (1993) Nr.12, S. 1119-1120[*]
[ii]: Thoma, P., Weiland.T.: Wie real ist das Instantane Tunneln? Phys.Bl.50, VCH Weinheim (1994) Nr.4, S. 359-361[*]
[*]: The measurement results are in accord with the theory of objectivity, not however the contradictory attempts to interpret them [i] and [ii] et al.

6.13 Spin and tunnel effect

Only with the field dependency of the speed of light (6.17) we can understand, why the elementary quanta can form as spheres, like is drawn in the figs 4.3 and 6.2. In the centre the field lines run together, i.e. the field increases and the speed of light decreases. Only in this way it will be possible for the vortex oscillation to everywhere occur with the speed
of light, even in the inside of the particle! In the centre of the vortex particle the field in theory will become infinitely large and the speed of light zero. This circumstance again is the foundation why the elementary particles are localized and it answers key question VIII of quantum physics. The absence of a speed after all is the characteristic of an immobile thing.
The field dependency of the speed of light answers also further basic and up to today unanswered key questions of quantum physics, like why the elementary particles have a spin (IX) and why the magnitude of the spin is quantized (X).
A vortex particle after all does not exist alone in the world, but it is in the field of other particles. We can call this the cosmic basic field (E resp. H). This basic field overlaps the self-field and takes effect the strongest in the area of the spherical shell, where the self-field is correspondingly small. In order to keep the form of a sphere, this influence of the basic field has to be compensated. The additional field (E_z resp. H_z according to eq. 6.12) necessary for the compensation is produced by the particle, by rotating in a spiral around itself with a speed v which increases towards the outside of the spherical shell. Therefore does the elementary particles have a spin. The electron spin is therefore determined by the cosmic   basic   field.
Another effect of the field dependent speed of light is the tunnel effect. As an example we consider the two differently charged particles shown in fig. 6.8 A. The open, outside of the particles running, field lines of the electric field are predominantly bent towards the each time oppositely charged particle. If another particle wants to pass between the two, then it gets into an area of increased field strength. As a consequence it will be slowed down, because here a smaller speed of light is present.
Water molecules show with their polar nature exactly this property. Water has a remarkably high dielectricity e and slows down the speed of light correspondingly according to equation 5.6 ($\varepsilon \cdot \mu = 1/c^2$). The refraction of light at the water surface is an observable result of the reduced speed of light in the presence of matter.
If we now examine the case in which the two particles have the same charge as is shown in fig. 6.8 B (and fig. 6.13 belonging to XI). The field lines repel each other, so that exactly in between the two particles a field free area forms, in which the speed of light goes to infinity! This area acts like a tunnel. If we send through a particle exactly here, then purely theoretically seen it won't need any time to run through the tunnel, and for a short   time   the   signal   becomes   infinitely   fast.
If a particle hits only slightly besides the tunnel, then it will one-sidedly be slowed down and diverted by the respective field. We call this process reflection or scattering. Only the few particles, which exactly hit the tunnel, arrive behind the hurdle and in the ideal case even almost without loss of time!
The current measurements of speeds faster than light demonstrate in a convincing manner the superiority of the field-theoretical approach with regard to the nowadays normally used quantum physical approach.
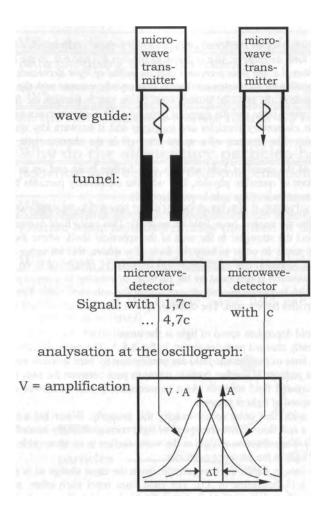
Fig. 6.14: The microwave experiment at the II.
Physical Institute of the University of Cologne to
measure speeds faster than light.[i]

[i]: Nimtz, G. : New Knowledge of Tunneling from Photonic Experiments, Proc. of
the Adriatico Research Conference, 1996, World Scientific Publishing
Company

6.14 Interpretation of the measured speed faster than light

Now the attempt can be undertaken, to interpret the spectacular experiments, in which a speed faster than light has been measured. It is reported[i] that in experiments with photons at the University of California in Berkeley on an average a speed of 1.7 times the speed of light has been measured by Prof. Raymond Chiao and his co-workers. At the Technical University of Vienna Prof. Dr. Ferenc Krausz already has obtained 2.4 times the, according to Einstein at maximum obtainable, speed of light with tunnelling laser light.

The first measurements of speeds faster than light have been carried out with microwaves at the University of Cologne[ii] by Prof. Dr. Gunter Nimtz and co-workers. They at first had published the measurement of a speed 2.5 times the speed of light. In the meantime they even have transmitted a symphony of Mozart with a speed almost 10 times the speed of light and with that have contradicted Einstein's hypothesis, according to which the speed of light in vacuum would be the highest possible speed for the transmission of signals. The different experiments only resemble each other in the point that the particles have to tunnel, because one has put a barrier in their way. This "tunnelling" apparently is the cause for obtaining speeds faster than light. With the prevailing physical view of life these measurement results are incompatible.

In the measurement set up in Cologne the microwaves are sent through a wave guide, which they pass with the speed of light. If a parts with narrowed cross-section is inserted, where the microwaves actually don't fit through at all, then the signal gets damped strongly. Now however arrives nevertheless a small part of the signal at the other end of the wire, but much faster than allowed, namely with the measurable speed faster than light.

The answer of the here presented potential vortex theory reads as follows: the waves picked up by the wave guide run up to the entry of the tunnel, in order to find out that they don't fit through. They are reflected or absorbed. A small part however rolls up to potential vortices and these fit through the tunnel. They however have to be compressed additionally. In the derivation of the photon (fig. 4.5 and 4.6) we had seen that the inner vortex always is faster than the bigger one, through which it slips through. The compression therefore causes an increase in speed. In flow dynamics is known an analogy: the Venturi-tube. The flow-technical potential vortices also confirm exactly this property. One can as well start with the Lorentz contraction (fig. 6.6, eq. 6.14*). This states that a particle moving with a higher speed actually becomes smaller and not only appears to be smaller as an optical deception of the observer. Because only smaller particles fit through the tunnel, the particles, measurable at the other end, must be correspondingly faster: quod erat demonstrandum. In the same manner also the experiments of Berkeley can be explained physically, because here is worked with photons from the start[i]. With that the process of rolling up the wave can be left out. The tunnel lets pass only compressed and therefore faster light particles.

<i>:   R.Y.Chiao, P.G.Kwiat, A.M.Steinberg: Schneller als Licht? Spektrum der Wiss. 10/93
<ii>:   B. Schuh, Gespenstisch fixe Wellen, DIE ZEIT Nr. 45, 5.11.93, S. 43.
<ii>:   Enders, A., Nimtz, G.: Photonic-tunneling experiments, Physical Review B,
         Vol. 47, No. 15 (1993), pp. 96O5-96O9.
         <ii>:   Enders, A., Nimtz, G.: Evanescent-mode propagation and quantum tunneling,
         Physical Review E, Vol. 48, No.1 (1993), pp. 632-633.

"The theory of relativity is not a physical theory... it is a mathematical poetic idea, a deduction from impossible premises."[i]
Oskar Kraus

"The theory of relativity is a mathematical masquerade, behind which is hidden an inextricable ball of a mixing up of ideas, contradictions, fallacies, arbitrary assumptions and ignoring of healthy logic."[i]
Erich Ruckhaber

"The theory of relativity not only is fantastic, but also of an inconsistency which in the history of science not yet has been present."[i]
Harald Nordenson

"A physics of hybrids, of contradictions and fantastic confusions, nonsense!"[ii]
Johann Marinsek

"This is absurd."[iii] (regarding mass-energy interpretation)
Nikola Tesla

"In my experiments I have destroyed billions of atoms, without having observed any emissions of energy. "[4i]
Nikola Tesla

Fig. 6.15:   Some statements regarding the theory of relativity.

[i]:   Walter Theimer: Die Relativitatstheorie, Seite 7, Francke Verlag, Bern, 1977, ISBN   3-772O-126O-4
[ii]:   Johann Marinsek: Rationale Physik, S. 163, dbv-Verlag TU Graz, 1989, ISBN 3-7O41-O176-1
[iii]: Nikola Tesla, To Einstein's Theories, Rare Book and Manuscript Library, Columbia University,   15.4.1932. Entnommen aus J.T.Ratzlaff: Tesla Said, Tesla   Book   Company,   pp.   238,   ISBN   O-914119-OO-1
[4i]: Nikola Tesla, Franz Ferzak World and Space Publications 1985.

6.15 Definition of the speed of light

If a light signal propagates in space, then as a consequence of the velocity of propagation c, it at a certain point in time t is in a distance r of the light source:

$$r = c * t \tag{6.19}$$

Should the speed of light become smaller for instance by Δc, then the light signal obviously has covered a distance less by Δr or the time interval has changed by Δt:

$$r + \Delta r = (c + \Delta c) \cdot (t + \Delta t) \tag{6.20}$$

This equation describes purely mathematically the most general case which can be assumed. By writing out the multiplication and subtraction of equation 6.18 the change in distance considered for itself is:

$$\Delta r = c \cdot \Delta t + t \cdot \Delta c + \Delta c \cdot \Delta t \tag{6.21}$$

The answer of mathematics is that the change in distance can have its cause in a change in time, in a change of speed or in both. We now want to turn to the physical interpretation and have a closer look at the two possibilities, in which either c or t is to be taken constant (see fig. 6.16).

In the first case the speed of light c is constant and as a consequence the change Δc = zero. The mathematical formulation (according to eq. 6.21) therefore reads:

case 1: $$c = \frac{\Delta r}{\Delta t} \qquad \text{(relativity)} \tag{6.22}$$

If in this conception world a change in distance is observed, for instance the Lorentz contraction, then in order to save this relation inevitably a change in time, for instance a time dilatation, has to make the compensation. Einstein in an applicable manner speaks of relativity, because according to his opinion in the case of both variables, the length contraction and the time dilatation, it only concerns observed changes.
For the time dilatation experiments are given. But for the measurement of time always only atomic clocks are available and their speed of running of course could also be influenced by the Lorentz contraction. In any case it can't be claimed the time dilatation is proven experimentally as long as we do not know the mechanisms of decay of atoms. Otherwise the statements of the theory of relativity are familiar to us, for which reason further remarks seem unnecessary.
In the second case the time t is constant and consequently the change Δt = zero. At a closer look this case is much more obvious, since why should time change. After all time has been stipulated by definition.

After all, we are the ones who tell, what simultaneity is!

The mathematical formulation for this case reads (eq. 6.21 with Δt= 0):

case 2: $$\Delta c = \frac{\Delta r}{t} \qquad \text{(objectivity)} \tag{6.23}$$

This equation does open up for us an until now completely unknown and fundamentally other way of looking at the physical reality.

Concerning the definition of the speed of light c [m/s]:

r [m] = distance of the light source:

$$r = c \cdot t \qquad\qquad (6.19)$$

For changes, observed or measured:

$$r + \Delta r = (c + \Delta c) \cdot (t + \Delta t) \qquad\qquad (6.20)$$

$$= c \cdot t + c \cdot \Delta t + \Delta c \cdot t + \Delta c \cdot \Delta t$$

Change in distance:

$$\Delta r = c \cdot \Delta t + t \cdot \Delta c + \Delta c \cdot \Delta t \qquad\qquad (6.21)$$

2 possible causes:

with $\Delta c = 0$ with $\Delta t = 0$

<u>case 1:</u>   <u>case 2:</u>

$$c = \frac{\Delta r}{\Delta t} \qquad (6.22) \qquad\qquad \Delta c = \frac{\Delta r}{t} \qquad (6.23)$$

c = constant   t = constant

$\Delta r \sim \Delta t$ (6.23) $\Delta c \sim \Delta r$ (6.25 = 6.2)

= time dilatation   = universality

Δr = observable Δr = physical
        length contraction   length contraction

Theory of relativity | Theory of objectivity

Fig.   6.16:   Theory of relativity and theory of objectivity,
derivation and comparison.

6.16 Relativity and objectivity

New to the second case (equation 6.23) is particularly the proportionality contained in it:

$$\Delta c \sim \Delta r$$ (6.25 = 6.2)

But to us it is not new, because we have derived the same proportionality from the model
conept (equation 6.2, fig. 6.2), in which the elementary particles are understood as
spherical   vortices.
Equation 6.25 unconcealed brings to knowledge that any change of the speed of light c
[m/s] in the same way leads to a change of the radius r [m], the distance between two
points in space or even the length of an object, e.g. a rule. Such a rule after all consists of
nothing but spherical atoms and elementary particles and for their radius r again the
proportionality 6.25 holds. Therefore it is to be set:

r ~ 1   (6.26)

and taken both together we already had derived as equation 6.18 (fig. 6.11) from the field
dependency. Here the vortex model as well finds a confirmation of its correctness, as in
the derivation from the equations of transformation of the electromagnetic field. Because
all three, the derivation according to the model, the physical and the mathematical
derivation, lead to the same result, this second case should be called "objective".

With that the first case, which describes the subjective perception of an observer, is not
supposed to be devaluated. It contains the definition of reality, according to which only is
real what also is perceptible. The theory of relativity of Poincare and Einstein is based on
this definition.

With the second case, the case with a variable speed of light, we however get serious
problems, since we observe with our eyes, and that works with the speed of light. If that
changes, we can't see it, as already said. If we could see it, then "reality" would have a
completely different face and we surely would have great difficulties, to find our way
around. In this "objective world" neither electromagnetic interactions nor gravitation
would exist, so no force effects at all. Because all distances and linear measures depend on
the speed of light, everything would look like in a distortion mirror.
The concept of an "objective world" at first has not a practical, but rather a theoretical and
mathematical sense. The distinction between an observation domain and a model domain
is founded in pure usefulness.

The observation domain should correspond to case 1 and the model domain to case 2. The
mathematical derivation tells us, how we can mediate between both domains (equation
6.21): This mediation amounts to a transformation, which provides us the instruction, how
a transition from the observation into a not perceptible model concept, from the relativity
into an objectivity has to.

Theory of relativity | Theory of objectivity

speed of light: absolute time:
c = constant   t = constant

$$c = \frac{\Delta r}{\Delta t} \quad (6.22) \qquad \Delta c = \frac{\Delta r}{t} \quad (6.23)$$

consequences: consequences:
time dilatation and   universality and
length contraction   length contraction
observable   real

model-transformation:

observation domain   model domain
(measurable)   (only calculable)

$x(r)$ ○————● $M\{x(r)\}$

I. approach

II. transform

VI. compare

III. calculate

IV. transform back

V. result

Fig. 6.17:   Model-transformation between
theory of relativity and theory of objectivity.

6. 17 Transformation

The observation domain is, as the name already expresses, perceptible (observable) with the help of our sense organs and measurable with corresponding apparatus. The special theory of relativity for the most part provides us the mathematics needed for that. And in that is assumed a constant speed of light. Because a length contraction is being observed and can be measured, a time dilatation must arise as a consequence. Such is the consistent statement of this theory. Because we already could make us clear that it concerns a subjective theory, of course caution is advisable if generalizations are being made, like the one of the inductive conclusion of the length contraction on the time dilatation. We'll come to speak about that in this chapter (fig. 6.20).

The model domain however is not observable to us and only accessible in a mathematical manner. Here the time is a constant. On the other hand do the radii of the particles and all other distances and linear measures stand in direct proportionality to the speed of light. If that changes, then does that lead to a change in length. The length contraction occurs physically, which means actually. We propose the name "theory of objectivity" for the valid theory which is derivable with this prerequisite and independent of the point of view of the observer.

The importance of this model domain and of the possible model calculations is founded in the circumstance that many physical relations within our observation domain aren't recognized by us and can't be mathematically derived. Besides is only all to often worked with unallowed generalizations and with pure hypotheses. Such a thing does not even exist in the model domain.

The model domain can be tapped over a transformation. For that we select an approach $x(r)$ in the to us accessible observation domain. This then is transformed into the model domain by a calculation instruction $M\{x(r)\}$. Here we can calculate the sought-for relation In the usual manner and transform back again the result according to the same calculation instruction $M^{-1}\{x(r)\}$ but in the reversed direction. After being returned in our familiar observation domain, the result can be compared and checked with measurement results (fig. 6.17).
In this way we will derive, calculate and compare the quantum properties of the elementary particles with the known measurement values. Here we remind you of the fact that all attempts to calculate the quantum properties conventionally, without transformation, until now have failed. Not even a systematization may succeed, if it concerns for instance explanations for the order of magnitude of the mass of a particle.

A transformation at first is nothing more than an in usefulness founded mathematical measure. But if a constant of nature, and as such the quantum properties of elementary particles until now have to be seen, for the first time can be derived and calculated with a transformation then this measure with that also gains its physical authorization. We now stand for the question: how does the instruction of transformation $M\{x(r)\}$ read, with which we should transform the approach and all equations from the observation domain into the model domain?

general relations:	special theory of relativity	theory of objectivity	
domain of validity:	observation domain	model domain	
speed of light c [m/s]:	$c = c_0$ $=$ constant	$c \sim r$	(6.25)
field strengths (6.15)	(6.15) + (6.18)		
H [A/m] :	$H \sim 1/r^2$	$H \sim 1/r$	(6.27*)
E [V/m] :	$E \sim 1/r^2$	$E \sim 1/r$	(6.27)
because of eq. (5.6) $\varepsilon \cdot \mu = 1/c^2$ is valid:			
μ [Vs/Am] :	$\mu_0 =$ const.	$\mu \sim 1/r$	(6.28*)
ε [As/Vm] :	$\varepsilon_0 =$ const.	$\varepsilon \sim 1/r$	(6.28)
relations of material: $B = \mu \cdot H$ (3.5): B [Vs/m²]	$B \sim 1/r^2$	$B \sim 1/r^2$	(6.29*)
$D = \varepsilon \cdot E$ (3.6): D [As/m²]	$D \sim 1/r^2$	$D \sim 1/r^2$	(6.29)
e.g. spherical capacitor capacity: $\quad$ C [As/V]	$= \varepsilon 4\pi r$ $\quad$ (6.4)	$C =$ const.	(6.30)
charge: $\quad$ Q [As]	$= C \cdot U$ $\quad$ (6.31)	$Q =$ const.	(6.32)
energy: $\quad$ W [VAs]	$= Q^2/C$ $\quad$ (6.1)	$W =$ const.	(6.33)
with energy-mass relation: (5.24) and (6.1)	$W = mc^2$		
mass	m [kg = VAs³/m²]	$m \sim 1/r^2$	(6.34)
relaxation time	τ_1 [s]:	$\tau_1 =$ const.	(6.35)
with	$\tau_1 = \varepsilon/\sigma$ $\quad$ (5.3)		
specific conductivity	σ [A/Vm]:	$\sigma \sim 1/r$	(6.36)

Fig. 6.18: Transformation of the dependencies on radius

6.18 Transformation table

The attempt to write down at this point already a closed mathematical relation as instruction of transformation, would be pure speculation. Such an instruction first must be verified by means of numerous practical cases, i.e. be tested for its efficiency and correctness. But we not even know the practical examples necessary for this purpose, if we apply the transformation for the first time!
For his reason it unfortunately is not yet possible, to calculate absolute values in a direct
We have to be content to work with proportionalities and to carry out comparisons.
In fig. 6.18 the proportionalities are compared in the way, how they would have to be transformed: on the left side, how they appear and can be observed in the view of the special theory of relativity, and on the right side, how they can be represented and calculated in the theory of objectivity.
The change, which here would have to be transformed, is the physical length contraction, which is the change in length as it depends on the speed of light. For spherical symmetry the length 1 becomes the radius r (eq. 6.26), of which is to be investigated the influence. In the observation domain we had derived the proportionality (6.15 + 6.18):

$E \sim 1/r^2$ and $H \sim 1/r^2$.

The field of a point charge or of a spherical capacitor confirms this relation:

$$E = Q/\varepsilon 4\pi r^2 .$$

Because the speed of light in our observation is constant, also both constants of material which are related to it (eq.5.6: $\varepsilon \cdot \mu = 1/c^2$), the dielectricity ε and the permeability μ, are to be taken constant.
With that the same proportionality as for the field strengths also holds for the induction B and the dielectric displacement D:

$$B \sim 1/r^2 \quad \text{and} \quad D \sim 1/r^2.$$

In the model domain everything looks completely different. Here the radius and any length stands in direct proportionality to the speed of light. In this way we get problems with our usual system of units, the M-K-S-A-system (Meter-Kilogram-Second-Ampere). The basic u n i t Meter [m] and as a consequence also the unit of mass Kilogram [kg = VAs^3/m^2] appear here as variable. It would be advantageous, to introduce instead the Volt [V] as basic unit.
But in any case does the dimension of a quantity show us, in which proportionality it stands to the unit of length. This in the model domain then is authoritative! As an example does the speed of light have the dimension Meter per Second. In the model domain there consequently   has   to   exist   a   proportionality   to   the   length   r   [m].
The speed of light determines with equation 5.6 again the constants of material:

μ [Vs/Am] $\sim 1/r$ and ε[As/Vm] $\sim$ 1/r   (6.28)

According to the model holds unchanged:

B [Vs/m^2] $\sim$ 1/r^2 and   D [As/m^2] $\sim$ 1/r^2.   (6.29)

But if we insert the proportionalities 6.28 and 6.29 into the equations of material 3.5 and 3.6, then holds for the field strengths:

H [A/m] $\sim$ 1/r   and   E [V/m] $\sim$ 1/r.   (6.27)

Further dependencies of the radius can be read in the same manner either by inserting into well-known laws or immediately from the dimension.

In the <u>observation domain</u>:

energy density of a field:

$$w = (\varepsilon \cdot E^2 + \mu \cdot H^2)/2 \quad \sim \quad 1/r^4 \tag{6.37}$$

energy:
$$W \sim 1/r \tag{6.38}$$

with c = constant and $W = m \cdot c^2$: $\boxed{m \sim 1/r}$ (6.39)

e^- is bigger and lighter than p^+ or n^0!

$$\frac{m \;\; (6.39)}{m_0} = \frac{r_0 \;\; (6.26)}{r} = \frac{l_0 \;\; (6.24^*)}{1} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{1 - (v/c)^2}} \tag{6.40}$$

In the <u>model domain</u>:

e.g. spherical capacitor

capacity:	C [As/V]	$= \varepsilon 4\pi r$	(6.4)	C = const.	(6.30)
charge:	Q [As]	$= C \cdot U$	(6.31)	Q = const.	(6.32)
energy:	W [VAs]	$= Q^2/C$	(6.1)	$\boxed{W = \text{const.}}$	(6.33)

(6.33) means: <u>law of conservation of energy!</u>

relaxation time	τ_1 [s]:		τ_1 = const.	(6.35)
with	$\tau_1 = \varepsilon/\sigma$	(5.3)		
specific conductivity	σ [A/Vm]:		$\boxed{\sigma \sim 1/r}$	(6.36)

(6.36) means: elementary vortices are indestructible!

Fig. 6.19: Interpretation of the dependencies on radius

6.19 Interpretation of the transformation table

The transformation should tell us, what we would see if the variable speed of light would be observable to us. Doing so highly interesting results come out.

The energy density of a field is as is known $\quad w = (\varepsilon \cdot E^2 + \mu \cdot H^2)/2$. $\qquad$ (6.37)

In the observation domain will, according to fig. 6.19, decrease the energy density w proportional to $1/r^4$. Multiplied with the respective volume we obtain for the energy itself the proportionality: $\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad$ $W \sim 1/r$ $\qquad$ (6.38)

If we make use of the Einstein relation $\qquad\qquad$ $W = m \bullet c^2$

with c = constant holds also for the mass m: $\qquad$ $m \sim 1/r$. $\qquad$ (6.39)

In this manner we finally find out, why the small nucleons (protons and neutrons) subjectively seen are heavier than the very much larger electrons. As a consequence does a relativistic particle experience the increase of mass (with the length contraction according to equation 6.24*):

$$\frac{m \;(6.39)}{m_0} = \frac{r_0 \;(6.26)}{r} = \frac{l_0 \;(6.24^*)}{l} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{1 - (v/c)^2}} \qquad (6.40)$$

This result is experimentally secured. Our considerations therefore are entirely in accord with the Lorentz-transformation. There at least is no reason to doubt the correctness.

In the model domain we with advantage assume a spherical symmetry. As easily can be shown with equations 6.4 and 6.31, are the capacity and charge of a spherical capacitor independent of the radius (6.30 and 6.32). In that case also the from both values calculable energy (6.1) must be constant. We come to the same conclusion, if take we the above equation 6.37 for the energy density of a field or if we carry out a verification of dimensions:

$\;$W [VAs] = konst. $\qquad$. $\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad$ (6.33)

This simple result is the physical basis for the law of conservation of energy! With that we have eliminated an axiom.

The result states that the energy stays the same, even if the radius, the distance or the speed of an object should change. To the subjectively observing person it shows itself merely in various forms of expression. Consequently is the energy, as is dictated by the here presented field theory, formed by binding in the inside of the quanta the same amount of energy but of the opposite sign. The amount of energy therefore is bound to the number of the present particles, as we already had derived.

Under the assumption of a constant time (6.35) there results for the electric conductivity σ, by calculating backwards over the equation of the relaxation time (5.3), the proportionality: (6.36)

$$\sigma \;[\text{A/Vm}] \;\sim\; 1/r \qquad (6.36)$$

Maybe the result surprises, because it can't be observed. Actually we know that the (microscopically observed conductivity in reality only represents an approximated averaged measure for the mobility of free charge carriers. In a particle-free vacuum however this well-known interpretation doesn't make sense anymore. Hence it is recommended, to only work with the relaxation time constants. Who nevertheless wants to continue to work with σ as a pure factor of description, can do this. But he mustn't be surprised, if in the model domain with decreasing radius the conductivity suddenly increases. But this is necessary, because otherwise the elementary particles would collapse. Only by the increase of the conductivity, which is produced by the spherical vortex itself, will the expanding eddy current build up in the inside of the particles, which counteract the from the outside concentrating potential vortex.

Approach:

a. The particles don't decay by themselves, but only by a corresponding disturbance from the outside.

b. The decay time is the statistical average in which such a disturbance can occur and take effect.

c. The elementary particles consist of an integral and finite number of elementary vortices, which can't decay anymore for their part.

d. If the compound particles get into the disturbing range of influence of high-frequency alternating fields, then they are stimulated to violent oscillations and in that way can be torn apart into individual parts.

e. As disturbing factor the high-frequency fields of flying past neutrinos are considered primarily.

f. Authoritative for the threshold of decay and with that also for the rate of decay is the distance, in which the neutrinos fly past the particle.

g. The distance becomes the larger, the smaller the particle is. If the particle thus experiences a relativistic length contraction, then it will, statistically seen, to the same extent become more stable!

That has nothing to do at all with time dilatationl

We are entitled to demand a simultaneity, after all we are the ones, who tell what that is!

Fig. 6.20: Proposal for an interpretation of the particle decay

<i>:   Walter Theimer: Die Relativitatstheorie, Seite 106, Francke Verlag, Bern, 1977, ISBN 3-772O-126O-4

6.20 Particle decay

We still have to get rid of a fundamental misunderstanding. It concerns the problem of the time dilatation. Here the model domain doesn't give us any difficulty, because it dictates a constant and therefore by us definable time. In the relativistic view however should in moving systems clocks go wrong! But how does one want to explain a time dilatation physically, if it merely represents a purely mathematical result of the actually taking place length contraction on the one hand and the postulate of a constant speed of light on the other hand?

Nobody has troubled more about the physical interpretation than Einstein himself. But he had as less as we nowadays the possibility to verify the so-called phenomenon experimentally, by accelerating a laboratory clock to values close to the speed of light. Only atomic particles can, e.g. in accelerator systems, be brought on such high speeds and then be observed for their properties. But also these experiments don't have any power of proof, as long as we don't know the atomistic structure of the particles and there exists the danger   of   misinterpretations.

So the slowing down of the rate of decay of instable. particles at high speeds willingly is cited as "proof for time dilatation[i]. "The most cited example for the time dilatation is the "long-living" meson. The μ-meson is a charged particle, which exists only $2,2 * 10^{-6}$ seconds if it is observed in rest. Then it decays ... About 10 % of the mesons reach the earth's surface. Even if they fly with approximately the speed of light, they at least must have used $30 \cdot 2,2 * 10^{-6}$ seconds, in order to reach the earth. Their "life" therefore by the movement has been extended for a multiple... to the supporters of the theory of relativity here the time dilatation is revealed..."

This "proof however is worthless, as long as "the structure and the mechanism of decay of the particle are not known", like W. Theimer[i] expresses himself.

On the basis of the new field theory the approach standing on the left page is dared (fig. 6.20). Accordingly the particles don't decay by themselves, but only by a corresponding disturbance from the outside, which for instance is triggered by the high-frequency fields of flying past neutrinos. The closer the neutrinos fly past the particle, the sooner it will decay. But the distance becomes the larger, the smaller the particle is. If the particle thus experiences a relativistic length contraction, then it will, statistically seen, to the same extent become more stable!

That has nothing to do at all with time dilatation, as this proposal for an interpretation shows (fig. 6.20). The same effect of course also occurs, if atomic clocks are taken for a fly in a plane and compared to identically constructed clocks on earth.

The time was stipulated by us and therefore should be able to keep its universal validity. We are entitled to demand a simultaneity, after all we are the ones, who tell what simultaneity is!

An interesting technical use would be the acceleration of the rate of decay in order to dispose of radioactively contaminated waste. For that the waste has to be irradiated by collecting and focussing free neutrinos or with the help of a neutrino transmitter, like one which will be discussed in chapter 9. After such a neutrino shower dangerous radioactive waste would be reusable or at most be harmless domestic refuse.
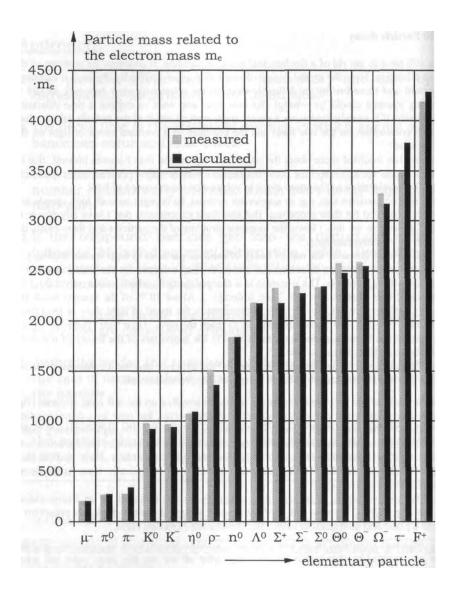
Fig. 7.0: The comparison with power of proof:
the measured particle mass
the calculated particle mass

7. Proof

Ample evidence is available for the correctness of the theory of objectivity. The field dependent change in length is observed and used as magnetostriction or electrostriction. If a ferromagnetic material, e.g. a nickel rod, is brought into an alternating magnetic field, then field dependent longitudinal length oscillations are observed. In the same manner barium titanate or quartz crystal oscillates in the electric field if a high-frequency alternating voltage is applied. A practical application forms the production of ultrasound.

In this chapter are, as already announced, the quantum properties of the elementary particles calculated and in this way is furnished perhaps the most convincing proof for the existence of potential vortices and for the correctness of the field-theoretical approach and the theory which is based on it.

A special challenge represents the calculation of the particle mass. This mass stretches from 207 electron masses of the myon over 1839 of the neutron into the order of magnitude of 18513 electron masses (Y°). Doing so not only can be tested, if the calculated values correspond with the measured ones. Also the gaps have to correspond, i.e. where there doesn't exist a discrete mathematical solution also no particle should exist. The fig. 7.0 standing on the left page anticipates the result and shows that even this strict condition is fulfilled! The agreement of the calculated with the measured results is excellent. If in individual cases small deviations become visible, we always have to bear in mind that the measurements as a rule are analysed statistically and the results are falsified if small particles creep in unrecognized. Particle physics nowadays has at its disposal extremely precise gauges, but even here remaining errors can't be excluded.

Quantum physics is occupied with further taking apart the elementary particles into hypothetic particles, the quarks, and to sort these according to properties and symmetries. Seen strictly causal this procedure thus corresponds to the quantum physical approach. We however have taken the field-theoretical approach, and this excludes the introduction of hypothetic particles from the start. It should be our goal to derive and to explain the quantum structure as a field property. Yes, we even want to calculate it, with which we would have overtaken quantum physics in the scientific competition with one leap!

Strong support our approach has experienced by current experiments, in which matter was transformed in electromagnetic waves - practically the reversal of the rolling up of waves to vortices. To do so at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology (David Pritchard and others) sodium atoms were dematerialized in waves by lattice scattering[i]. According to Einstein one surely could have blown the whole M.I.T. in the air with the occurring mass defect; but don't worry, no emission of energy whatsoever has been observed, entirely as predicted by the vortex theory.

---

[i]:   J. Teuber: Materie und Energie, Ganze Atome wurden zu Energiewellen,
Illustrierte Wissenschaft Nr. 7 (1996), S. 56

With the classical radius of the electron $r_e = 2,82 * 10^{-15}$ m:
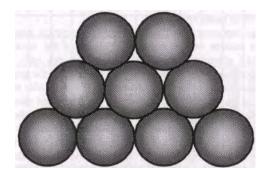
$$C_e = \varepsilon_o \cdot 4\pi r_e = 3,135 \cdot 10^{-25} F \qquad (6.4^*)$$

$$U_e = e/C_e = 511kV \qquad (6.31^*)$$

(constant independent of r_e)

Formation   forms   (vortex   properties):

I. Amassing (formation of vortex balls):

II. Overlapping (phenomenon of transport)
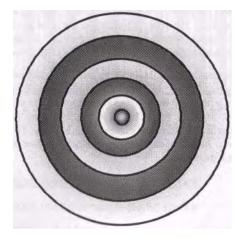
Fig. 7.1: The amassing and overlapping of elementary vortices

7.1 Elementary vortices

We had derived the electron and the positron as elementary vortices (fig. 4.3). Before we can go in the calculation, we must gain a clear picture of the possible configurations of vortices, which for reason of the derived properties are possible. For that we start with the elementary vortex and afterwards we predict the behaviour of interaction which can be expected.

Actually only one single particle is really elementary. According to the realizations of the new theory it is an elementary vortex in the form of a sphere. Its size is determined by the speed of light and this again by the local field strength; its stability is founded in the concentration effect of the potential vortex. The whirling takes place everywhere with the speed of light, even in the vortex centre, where all field lines run together, where the field increases infinitely and the speed of light goes to zero. This last circumstance owes the elementary vortex its localization.

We can attribute a charge to this vortex for reason of the field lines which on the outside run towards infinity and which we can measure (fig. 4.3). This is the smallest indivisible unit, the elementary charge e. Structure and course of the field lines suggest to understand and to calculate the elementary vortex as a spherical capacitor. By basing on the classical radius of the electron r_e given in fig. 6.3 the capacity according to equation 6.4 is calculated to be:

$$C_e = \varepsilon_0 \cdot 4\pi r_e = 3{,}135 \cdot 10^{-25} \, F \ (6.4^*)$$

Here the theory of objectivity has provided us the realization that even for a change of the radius of the electron the capacity remains unchanged constant (6.30), and this entirely corresponds to our observation.

Between the hull of the elementary vortex, measured at the radius r_e, and its centre, respectively also with regard to infinity, there exists according to equation 6.31 the tension voltage of:

$$U_e = e/C_e = 511 \, kV \qquad\qquad (6.31^*)$$
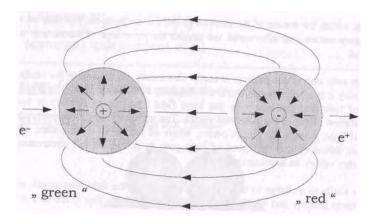
It as well is constant and independent of the size of the elementary vortex.

Since a different solution is refused, we'll have to assume that all elementary particles consist of an integer multiple of elementary vortices. For that the amassing, like closely packed tennis balls, or the overlapping of individual vortices in the form of shells, like in the case of an onion (phenomenon of transport) can be considered.
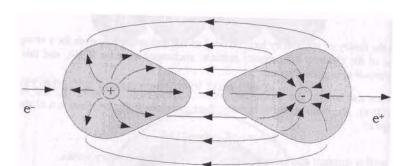
The among each other occurring forces of attraction can be traced back to the fact that every elementary vortex is compressed by the field of its neighbour as a consequence of the field dependent speed of light. This field as a rule is for the small distances considerably larger than the field on the outside. Therefore do compound elementary particles not have the twofold or triple mass, but at once the 207-fold (myon) or the 1836-fold (proton) mass. After all there is no other explanation for the fact that there don't exist lighter particles (with a mass less than 207 electron masses)!

a. The electron-positron pair

b. . The e⁻ - e+ pair for a small distance:

7.2 Matter and anti-matter

For the amassing or overlapping of elementary vortices several cases must be distinguished, because two inverse forms of formation are possible for the elementary vortex: the negatively charged electron and the positively charged positron. Whereas in the case of the electron the vortex produces a component of the electric field which points from the inside to the outside, has the field in the case of the positron the opposite direction for reason of a reversed swirl direction.

This statement can be generalized: if we consider the elementary particles from the outside, then we assign the particles with a swirl direction identical to that of the electron to the world of matter and call the particles with the opposite swirl direction anti-matter. It now is strongly recommended, to take colours to hand, in order to optically clarify the properties of vortices. The electron will be marked as a green sphere and the antiparticle, the positron, as a red sphere.

If we now look into the world of matter, then appears our world of matter to us "green", the world of anti-matter however "red". The uniform green colour of all the in our world existing elementary particles however doesn't exclude that red anti-vortices can exist hidden in the inside of the green vortices, where we can't discover them. But they must be completely covered, otherwise a disastrous reaction occurs, the pair annihilation, as a consequence of the oppositely directed property of the vortices which cancel out.

By means of the pair annihilation a dematerialization can occur, because every elementary vortex keeps in its inside the same amount of energy with opposite sign and the fusion of two inverse particles can result in a zero sum of the energy. The best known example is the annihilation of an electron-positron pair under emission of radiation discovered by Klemperer in 1934. In the upper representation (fig. 7.2a) the elementary vortices still are symmetrical, but the outside field lines already are "bent" and linked together in such a way that, with the exception of the ones in the direction of the axis, no interaction takes place which can be measured.

The two particles for reason of the different charge approach each other quickly, and the closer they are, the larger the mutual force of attraction becomes; a vicious circle, which leads to the asymmetry shown in the lower sketch (fig. 7.2b) and only comes to rest, if both particles have destroyed themselves mutually.

The electron and the positron had the same amount of, but oppositely directed swirl activity, so that purely arithmetically seen a zero sum of the rest energy results. But it should be paid attention to both particles having some kinetic energy on the occasion of the relative motion to each other and if they rotate around their own axis also rotational energy. An emission of annihilation radiation occurs, is the explanation of particle physics.

With the knowledge of the photon (fig. 4.6) we can interpret the annihilation radiation as a consequence of the phenomenon of transport. The faster and consequently smaller vortex, for instance the green one, slips into the red one and sees the green inside, which is compatible for it. Unfortunately it only can remain there, as long as it is smaller, thus is faster, and therefore it shoots out on the other side again. Now the electromagnetic force of attraction fully takes effect. It is slowed down and the red vortex correspondingly accelerates. The process is reversed.

These around each other oscillating vortices, so we had derived, have a characteristic frequency (colour), are polarizable and are moving forward with the speed of light as a consequence of the open vortex centre. It therefore concerns the photon.
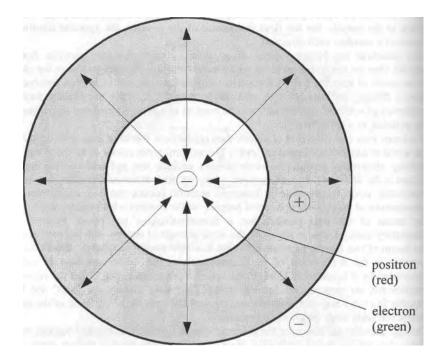
Fig. 7.3:   Theoretical final state of the positronium
= static γ-quant (photon).

7.3 Positronium
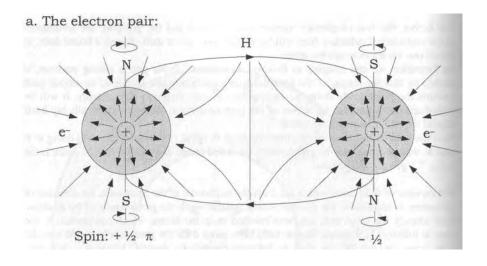
But before the two elementary vortices, the electron and the positron, are annihilated
under emission of radiation, they will for a short time take a shell-shaped, a bound state, in
which one vortex overlaps the other.
Its formation we can imagine as follows: an electron, flying past a resting positron, is
cached by this for reason of the electromagnetic attraction and spirals on an elliptic path
towards the positron. In doing so its angular velocity increases considerably. It will be
pulled apart to a flat disc for reason of the high centrifugal forces, to eventually lay itself
around   the   positron   as   a   closed   shell.
Now the red positron sees the electron vortex so to speak "from the inside" and doing so it
sees as well red; because the green vortex has a red centre and vice versa! The result is the
in fig. 7.3 given configuration.

The number of field lines, which run from the red border of the positron in the direction of
the centre, is identical to the number, which point towards the green border of the electron.
Here already the same state has been reached as in the centre, which corresponds to the
state at infinity. That means that no field lines point from the green border to the outside;
seen from the outside the particle behaves electrically neutral. It doesn't show any
electromagnetic interaction with its surroundings.

If the particle were long-living, then it undoubtedly would be the lightest elementary
particle besides the electron; but without stabilizing influence from the outside the
positronium can't take the in fig. 7.3 shown state at all. The positron takes up the kinetic
energy which is released if the electron becomes a shell around it. But before the bound
state can arise, which would identify the positronium as an elementary particle, the equal
rights of both vortices comes to light. With the same right, with which the electron wants
to   overlap   the   positron,   it   itself   vice   versa   could   also   be   overlapped.
If the stabilization of the one or the other state from the outside doesn't occur, then the
stated annihilation under emission of y-quanta is the unavoidable consequence (fig. 4.6).

a. The electron pair:

Spin: + ½   π   – ½

b. The electron pair for a small distance:
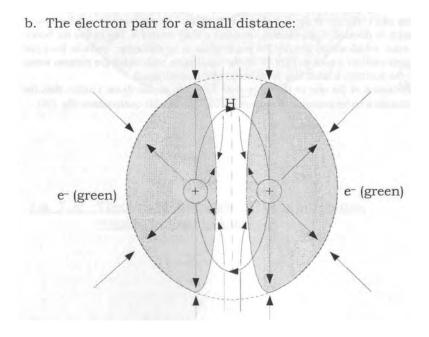
Fig. 7.4: Two electrons with oppositely directed spin

7.4 Dipole moment

As electrically charged spheres elementary vortices have a magnetic dipole moment along their axis of rotation as a consequence of the rotation of their own (fig. 7.4). This is measurable very precisely and for the most important elementary particles also known quantitatively. In contrast to the angular momentum the magnetic moment can't be constant according to the here presented theory. It should slightly change, if we increase the field strength in the laboratory.

In a particle consisting of several elementary vortices the vortices mutually increase the local field strength. Therefore we measure at the proton, which consists of three vortices, not the triple, but only the 2,793-fold of the nuclear magneton which can be expected for reason of its mass. Also the neutron has instead of the double only the 1,913-fold nuclear magneton. The deviations therefore are explicable as a consequence of the surrounding fields.

Prerequisite for this point are two other, still unanswered, key questions of quantum physics:

XII: Why is measured for the proton approximately the triple of the magnetic dipole moment which can be expected for reason of the charge?

XIII: Why does the neutron, as an uncharged particle, actually have a magnetic moment?

These questions can only be brought to a conclusive answer, if we have derived the vortex structures of the respective particles.

The elementary vortex, as a consequence of the spin along its axis, forms a magnetic north pole and a south pole. Another possibility to interact with an external field or with other particles is founded on this property. This shall be studied by means of two electrons. which form an electron pair.
For reason of the equal charge the two electrons at first will repel each other. If they rotate of their own they however will mutually contract, which, seen from the outside, is interpreted as a force of attraction. And in addition will they align their axes of rotation antiparallelly. While they now rotate in the opposite direction, a magnetic force of attraction occurs.

As is shown in fig. 7.4, the magnetic dipole field in this way is compensated towards the outside, as is clarified by the field line (H) with a closed course. Between both electrons a space free of E-field stretches. If both vortices are a small distance apart they lay themselves around this space like two half-shells of a sphere. A particle forms which seen from the outside is magnetically neutral, but it carries the double elementary charge (fig. 7.4b).
The exceptional affinity is always restricted to two vortices of equal charge with an opposite direction of rotation. Further vortices can't be integrated anymore and are repelled. This property of vortices covers the quantum condition (Pauli's exclusion principle) for the spin quantum number perfectly.

radius r: r₃

electric   E(x)
field strength E:
                                                    E₂
                                                        c
a: theoretical course
   of the field of a
   single negative   r₁   r₃   x,y,z
   charged body   r₂

                                              d   b   a
b: actual course of
   the field of a μ-
                                    E₁   E₃

c: field of an e⁺

d: field of an e⁻

⟋⟋⟋⟋⟋⟋⟋ : : difference between the vortex calculation (b)
                    and the classical calculation (a).
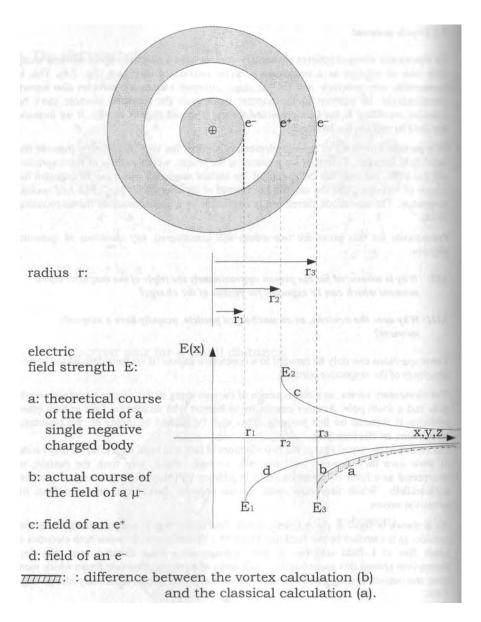
Fig. 7.5:   The mvon and the electric field E(x)
of the three elementary vortices

7.5 Myon

We now have discussed all conceivable possibilities, which two elementary vortices can form: the creation of a pair for like charge and the annihilation under emission of photons via the formation of the positronium as an intermediate result for unequal charge. Next another elementary vortex shall be added and all different possibilities and configurations will be derived, which can be formed by amassing or overlapping.

 The positronium can, as said, only take the in fig. 7.3 shown bound structure, if it is stabilized from the outside. This task now a further electron shall take over. According to the shell model the innermost elementary vortex an electron (e⁻), is overlapped by a positron (e⁺) and that again overlapped by an electron (e⁻).

With an in the sum single negative charge, a completely symmetric structure as well as a half-integer spin this particle will show a behaviour corresponding to a large extent to that of the electron. Merely the mass will be considerably larger, because every vortex each time compresses the other two.

It therefore concerns the myon (μ^-), which also is called "heavy electron". The myon was discovered 1937 in the cosmic radiation (Anderson and others).

In fig. 7.5 are drawn above each other the shell-shaped structure of the myon and the electric field E(x) of the three elementary vortices.

It is visible that merely in the proximity of the particle the actual course of the field deviates from and is smaller, than the course which theoretically can be expected for a single negatively charged body. The difference is marked by a hatching.

We now can tackle the calculation of the myon. For that the following considerations to begin with are useful:

Mass is an auxiliary term founded in usefulness, which describes the influence of the electromagnetic field on the speed of light and with that on the spatial extension of the "point mass".

Without exception the local cosmic field E_o has an effect on a free and unbound elementary vortex, thus on an individual e⁻ or e⁺, and determines so its size and its mass. But as long as we haven't determined this field strength, the calculation of its quantum properties won't succeed.

Instead the masses of compound particles will be compared to each other, which are so heavy that the field strength of the neighbouring vortices is predominant over the basic field E_0, so that a neglect of E_o seems to be allowed. The course of the calculation is made for all elementary particles in the same manner, which is explained hereafter.

Spherical capacitor: (r_i = inner radius; r_a = outer radius)

$$U = \int_{r_i}^{r_a} E \, dr \qquad (7.1)$$

Electron (r_i = 0 and $r_a = r_e$):   U = 511 kV = const.   (6.31*)

$$U_1 = U_2 = U_3 = U_4 = \ldots = U_n \qquad (7.2)$$

At The radius r_1 is valid: $E(r_1) = E_1$ and

$$U_1 = \int_0^{r_1} E_1 \, dr = E_1 r_1 \overset{!}{=} U_2 = \int_{r_1}^{r_2} E_1 \, dr = E_1 (r_2 - r_1) \qquad (7.1^*)$$

At the radius r_2 is valid for the 2nd and 3rd shell $E(r_2) = E_2$:

$$U_2 = \int_{r_1}^{r_2} E_2 \, dr = E_2 (r_2 - r_1) \overset{!}{=} U_3 = \int_{r_2}^{r_3} E_2 \, dr = E_2 (r_3 - r_2) \qquad (7.1^{**})$$

comparison of the radii:
$$\qquad\qquad (7.1^*) \qquad\quad (7.1^{**})$$

$$\Delta r = r_1 = r_2 - r_1 = r_3 - r_2 = \ldots = r_n - r_{n-1} \qquad (7.3)$$

resp.:

$$r_2 = 2 \cdot r_1; \quad r_3 = 3 \cdot r_1; \quad \ldots ; \quad \boxed{r_n = n \cdot r_1} \qquad (7.4)$$

comparison of the field strengths: (7.1* with 7.1** with Eq. (7.2):

$$E_1 = E_2 = E_3 = \ldots = E_n \qquad (7.5)$$

Theory of objectivity, fig. 6.18: $\boxed{E \sim 1/r}$ (6.25)

see fig. 7.5: $E_1(r_3) = E_{31} = - E_1 \cdot (r_1/r_3)$
$E_2(r_3) = E_{32} = E_2 \cdot (r_2/r_3)$
$E_0 \quad$ = cosmic basic field   (negligible)

$$E(r_3) = E_{31} + E_{32} + E_0 = E_1 \cdot (r_2 - r_1)/r_3 + E_0 \qquad (7.6)$$

$$\boxed{\frac{E(r_3)}{E_1} = \frac{2 \cdot r_1 - r_1}{3 \cdot r_1} = \frac{1}{3}} \qquad (7.7)$$

Fig. 7.6:   Calculation of the electric field strength E(r) of the myon from its dependency on radius

7.6 Calculation of the vortex fields

The tension voltage of an elementary vortex, like for a spherical capacitor, is determined by integrating over the electric field strength from the inner radius r_i up to the outer radius r_a:

$$U = \int_{r_i}^{r_a} E\, dr \quad (7.1)$$

For the electron ($r_i = 0$ und $r_a = r_e$) we already have carried out the integration and determined the tension voltage to be 511 kV (equation 6.31 *).
Doing so we further had discovered that it won't change, if the radius r varies. Even for a shell configuration, in which electrons and positrons alternately overlap, the approach is valid:

$$U_1 = U_2 = U_3 = U_4 = \ldots = U_n \quad\quad\quad (7.2)$$

At a certain radius all elementary vortices show the same density of field lines and with that also the identical field strength, so that we can solve the integral (7.1) for the each time neighbouring vortex shells and can compare the results:
At the radius r_1 with $E(r_1) = E_1$ the agreement, according to equation 7.1* (fig. 7.6), is valid for the innermost and the overlapped vortex shell.
At the radius r_2 with $E(r_2) = E_2$ the agreement according to equation 7.1** (fig. 7.6) is valid analogously for the 2nd and 3rd shell.
If still more shells are present, then we can arbitrarily repeat this procedure. For the radius of each shell we always obtain relation 7.3, which, related to the innermost radius, provides the following simple expression for the individual radii:

$$r_2 = 2 * r_1; \quad\quad r_3 = 3 \bullet r_1; \quad \ldots; \quad\quad r_n = n * r_1 \quad\quad\quad (7.4)$$

From the comparison of the integration results 7.1* and 7.1** follows further that all elementary vortices produce the same field strength:

$$E_1 = E_2 = E_3 = \ldots = E_n \quad\quad\quad (7.5)$$

We infer from the transformation table (fig. 6.18, eq. 6.27) that the field strengths E and H decrease with $1/r$. In fig. 7.5 the decrease of the fields with $1/r$ is shown. Up to the radius r, the field of the innermost vortex E_1 has worn off to the value $E_{31} = - E_1 \bullet (r_1/r_3)$. This field is overlapped by $E_{32} = E_2 * (r_2/r_3)$ as well as the cosmic basic field E_0:
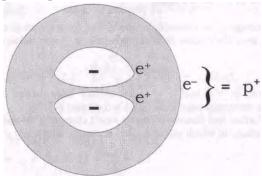
$$E(r_3) = E_{31} + E_{32} + E_0 = E_1 \bullet (r_2 - r_1)/r_3 + E_0 \quad\quad\quad (7.6)$$

The local basic field E_o is not known, but it is very small with regard to the field of the neighbouring vortex shells, so that a neglect seems to be allowed. From equation (7.6) in this way follows with the radius relation (7.4):

$$\frac{E(r_3)}{E_1} = \frac{2 \cdot r_1 - r_1}{3 \cdot r_1} = \frac{1}{3} \quad (7.7)$$

For the shell-shaped configuration of the myon (fig. 7.5) relation (7.7) indicates, which field the outside vortex shell is exposed to. From this can already be seen, how much it is compressed thanks to the field dependent speed of light and how much its mass as a consequence is increased.

Structure of the proton p^+:

Calculation:
structure consisting of two shells, inner vortices with $2 \cdot E_1$,
field strength at the outer radius r_2:

$$E(r_2) = 2 * E_{21} = 2 * E_1 (r_1 / r_2) = E_1 \qquad (7.8)$$

Comparison of p^+ (7.8) with u^- (7.7) (z_e = number of the elementary
vortices   being   involved   with)
in building up the structure, here each time $z_e = 3$):

Comparison of the radii with $E \sim 1/r$ (6.27)

$$\frac{r_p}{r_\mu} = \frac{z_{e\mu}}{z_{ep}} \cdot \frac{E_\mu(r_3)}{E_p(r_2)} = \frac{3}{3} \cdot \frac{1/3}{1} = \frac{1}{3} \qquad (7.9)$$

Theory of objectivity (fig. 6.18): $m \sim 1/r^2$ (6.34)

$$\frac{m_p}{m_\mu} = \frac{z_{ep}}{z_{e\mu}} \cdot \left(\frac{r_\mu}{r_p}\right)^2 = \frac{3}{3} \cdot \left(\frac{3}{1}\right)^2 = 9 \qquad (7.10)$$

$$m_p/m_e = 9 * (m_u/m_e) = 9 * 207 = 1863 \qquad (7.11)$$

Measurement value, proton mass: $m_p = 1836 \cdot m_e$
Resp.:
measurement value myon mass $m_u = 207 * m_e$
myon calculated value: $m_p = 204 * m_e$.   (error = 1,5%)

Since we, by using this calculation method, for the first time succee-
ded in deriving the mass of an elementary particle from that of an-
other particle, the particle mass isn't a constant of nature anymore!

Fig. 7.7:   Calculation of the proton

7.7 Calculation of the proton

If we again remember the affinity of two elementary vortices, which rotate with opposite spin. They align their axis of rotation antiparallel and form a very probable, but not particularly tight bound pair (fig. 7.4).
If we this time start with a positron pair, then does this pair have a double positive elementary charge. The two e^+ hence exert a particularly big force of attraction on electrons flying past them. If they have cached one and put it round as a shell, like a coat, then they will never again give it back! To again remove the electron, a triple positive charge would be necessary. But such a particle can't exist at all. The new particle therefore has an absolute stability and a very big mass, because the positron pair is considerably compressed by its outer shell. The total charge is single positive. With these properties it actually only can concern the proton. Its structure is shown in fig. 7.7. We can start from the assumption that both positrons are very close together in the inside and thus each forms the half of a sphere. For the calculation of the proton mass we then can assume as an approximation a structure of two shells, in which the inner vortex will have the double charge and the double field ($2 * E_1$). With equation 7.4 the field strength at the outer radius r_2 is:

$$E(r_2) = 2*E_{21} = 2*E_1*(r_1/r_2) = E_1 \qquad (7.8)$$

If we want to compare the results of the p^+ (7.8) and the μ^- (7.7), then it should be considered that the field of the innermost elementary vortex E_1 only is equal, if the number z_e of the elementary vortices involved in building up the particle is identical. Here with each time $z_e = 3$ this is the case. Because of equation 6.27 ($E, H \sim 1/r$) now also the radii are comparable:

$$\frac{r_p}{r_\mu} = \frac{z_{e\mu}}{z_{ep}} \cdot \frac{E_\mu(r_3)}{E_p(r_2)} = \frac{3}{3} \cdot \frac{1/3}{1} = \frac{1}{3} \qquad (7.9)$$

The mass of a particle first is determined by the number of the elementary vortices z_e. According to the theory of objectivity (fig. 6.18) however also the radius has an influence on the mass:

$$m \sim 1/r^2 \qquad (6.34)$$

This proportionality should be applied to the p^+-μ^-- comparison.

$$\frac{m_p}{m_\mu} = \frac{z_{ep}}{z_{e\mu}} \cdot (\frac{r_\mu}{r_p})^2 = \frac{3}{3} \cdot (\frac{3}{1})^2 = 9 \qquad (7.10)$$

The calculation provides a nine times bigger mass for the proton with regard to the mass of the myon. Therefore the mass of the proton related to the mass of the electron is:

$$m_p/m_e = 9*(m_\mu/m_e) = 9*207 = 1863 \qquad (7.11)$$

It would be favourable, to start from the with measuring techniques determined value for the mass of the proton $m_p/m_e = 1836$ and calculate backwards the related mass of the myon.
Then we obtain 204 as the calculated value instead of the measurement value $m_\mu/m_e = 207$.
The reason for the deviation of 1.5 percent is caused by the neglect of the cosmic field E_o with regard to the field of the neighbouring elementary vortex. This neglect takes very much less effect for the relatively heavy proton than for the light myon.
The cosmic field therefore will compress the myon more strongly and increase the mass more strongly as is calculated here, in agreement with the measurement results.
Summarizing: since we, by using this calculation method, for the first time succeeded in deriving the mass of an elementary particle from that of another particle, the particle mass isn't a constant of nature anymore!

a: theoretical course of the
   field of a single positive
   charged body

b: actual course of the
   field of the p⁺

c: field of an e⁻

d,e: field of both e⁺

▨▨▨: discrepancy between the measurement (b)
      = the vortex calculation (b)
      and the classical calculation (a)
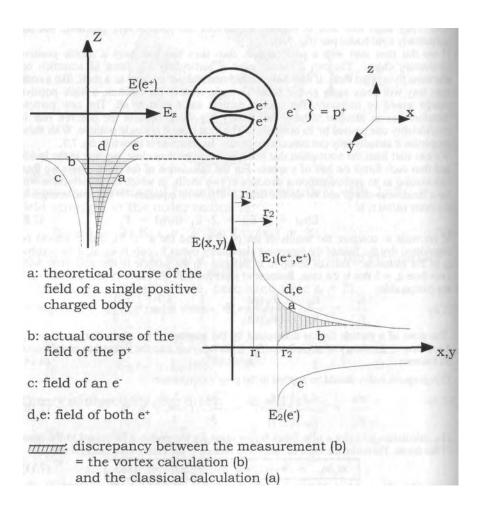
Fig. 7.8:   The proton and the electric field of the three
elementary vortices in x-, y- and z-direction

7.8 "Strong interaction"

A central question of nuclear physics concerns the forces which keep the atomic nucleus,
 which consists of many neutrons and protons, together and give it its very good stability in
 spite of the like positive charge (key question XIV fig. 7.13).
According to today's textbook opinion (course of the field indicated with a in fig. 7.8) the
forces of repulsion between the individual protons increase further as the distance gets
smaller, to obtain immense values within the nucleus. They theoretically had to be
overcome by new and unknown nuclear forces. Therefore physicists assume the
hypothesis   of   a   "strong   interaction".   But   they   are   mistaken.
The answer to this open question is provided by the course of the field (b) for the proton,
sketched in fig. 7.8. We see that the electric field at first indeed still increases if we
approach the proton, but in the proximity it contrary to all expectations decreases again
until it is zero. With that then also any force of repulsion has vanished! But the course of
the field follows without compulsion from the overlap of the three individual elementary
vortex fields.
The field direction in the z-direction even is reversed! In this topsy-turvy world, in theory,
an electromagnetic force of attraction between two like charged protons can occur. We
conclude:
A strong interaction doesn't exist at all. The usually given values for "range" and
"strength" just represent a misinterpretation. The hatched drawn area marks the difference
which is misinterpreted by quantum physics. The model concept over and above that
answers another mysterious property of the proton. As an electrically charged particle with
a spin it first of all should form a magnetic moment for reason of the rotating charge. But
until now the measurable order of magnitude couldn't be explained.

7.9 Magnetic moment of the proton

If the inner positrons rotate around each other with oppositely pointing spin, then the
magnetic field line is already closed within the particle and no effect in x- or y-direction is
observable from the outside.
As pair they however still can rotate together around the z-axis and they'll do that. The
overlapping electron for reason of its rotation of its own will likewise build up a magnetic
dipole moment along its axis of rotation. It also will align its axis in the z-direction, so that
now all three elementary vortices have one field axis. Being comparable to individually
"elementary magnets" aligned in the same direction they produce a triple magnetic
moment (key question XII fig. 7.13).
If we namely would start with a single positively charged body according to the theory of
quantum mechanics, then we would have expected the value of the nuclear magneton[i] p_m
as the magnetic moment for the proton $p_m = e \cdot \hbar/2m$. Opposite to that provide
experiments with protons the approx. threefold value as already predictable by the new
vortex theory. In addition does the direction of the vector p_{mp} correspond with the spin-
axis, so as if the proton were negatively charged. The reason for that is that only the
outermost elementary vortex determines the spin of the particle, and that is actually a
negatively charged electron! Also this excellent agreement in the case of the proton can be
judged as proof for the correctness of the vortex model.

_____

[i]:   The nuclear magneton has the value of: $p_{mk} = 5{,}0508 \cdot 10^{-27}$ Am^2

a. n^0 if the e^- amasses to a p^+.

$$e^- \} = p^+$$

b. n^0 if the e^- is overlapped by an e^+ of the p^+

$$e^- \} = n^0$$
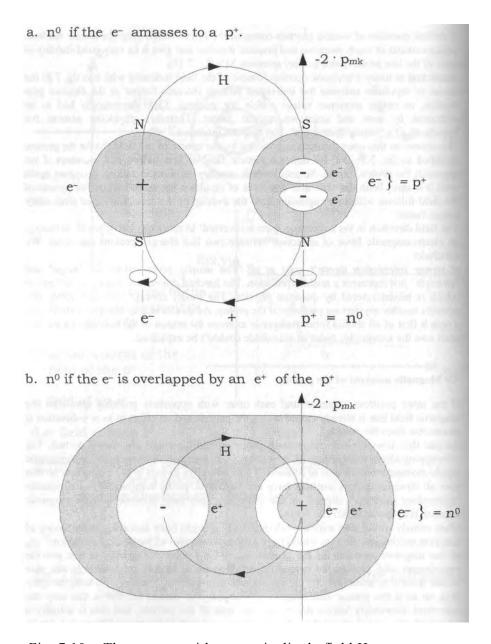
Fig. 7.10:   The neutron with magnetic dipole field H

7.10 Structure of the neutron

Until now could not be solved, why despite its missing charge also the neutron n° has a magnetic moment. The experimentally determined value is approx. the double of the nuclear magneton. Further was with measuring techniques an only 0,14% bigger mass with regard to the proton determined. The difference is approximately two and a half electron masses. And how reads the answer in the view of the potential vortex theory? It is obvious that a positively charged proton and a negatively charged electron mutually attract and amass together (fig. 7.10a). A pair annihilation can't occur, because the electron, which jackets both positrons, prevents this. The formation of an outer shell is not permitted by the high stability of the proton. It would have to be a positron shell, which instead of neutrality would produce a double positive charge. Conceivable is however the configuration, in which one of the two e^+ of the proton takes up the e^- in its inside and overlaps it (fig. 7.10b).

At first appears the amassing of p^+ and e^- to be the obvious answer to the structure of the neutron also in view of the small increase in mass. Since both elementary particles (p^+ and e^-) have a spin, will they align their axes of rotation antiparallelly and rotate against one another, exactly like an electron pair. But we now have unequal conditions: the proton brings the triple magnetic moment, the electron however only the single, and its field line will be closed by the proton. The difference which remains is the measurable double nuclear magneton, with which key question XIII (fig. 7.13) would be answered exhaustively.

This structure is shown in fig. 7.10a and has as rest mass the by only one electron mass increased proton mass, but it will deviate from this value, when the unequal partner come closer. Doing so the electron will be more strongly compressed by the heavier proton as vice versa.

Mass, magnetic moment and charge thus correspond to a large extent with the measurement values. Problems are seen concerning the spin and the stability.

Set of problems concerning spin: both the e^- and the p^+ have a half-integer spin, for which reason this configuration should have an integer spin.

Set of problems concerning stability: the neutron decays as is well-known in a p^+ and an e^-, but this object should be shorter-lived as determined by experiments. If namely the partner come each other very close, then the field strength of the p^+, contrary to expectation, doesn't increase but decreases, as is shown in fig. 7.8. The e^- therefore can only be bound very, very loosely; in z-direction it even will be repelled!

For these reasons is the open structure, which is shown in fig. 7.10a, not feasible as an isolated elementary particle, but only in a spatially extended network, like it is present in an atomic nucleus. In this case the neutron is, as is well-known, lighter by the mass defect, which is interpreted as binding energy.

Possibly it only concerns an intermediate stage. The heavier final product of the n° then could look like is shown in fig. 7.10b. For this version the line of the magnetic field already is closed partly within the particle, so that also here the approx. double nuclear magneton remains as a rest with a sense of orientation, as if the neutron were negatively charged.

Without charge and with the 1/2 spin it in this configuration fulfils all important quantum properties of the neutron, even that of the stability.

the field of the e^-: $E_{31}(-) = - E_1 (r_1/r_3)$,

the field of the e^+: $E_{32} =$ $E_2 (r_2/r_3) = E_1 (r_2/r_3)$

and in addition the e^+: $E_{3\,1} =$ $E_1 (r_1/r_3)$.

$$E(r_3) = E_{31}(-) + E_{32} + E_{31} + E_0$$

negligible

With the radius relation (eq. 7.4): $r_2 = 2*r_1$ und $r_3 = 3* r_1$
The total field is:

$$\frac{E(r_3)}{E_1} = -\frac{r_1}{r_3} + \frac{r_2}{r_3} + \frac{r_1}{r_3} = -\frac{1}{3} + \frac{2}{3} + \frac{1}{3} = \frac{2}{3} \quad (7.12)$$

With $z_{en} = 4$ elementary vortices

$$\frac{r_n}{r_p} = \frac{z_{ep}}{z_{en}} \cdot \frac{E_p(r_2)}{E_n(r_3)} = \frac{3}{4} \cdot \frac{1}{2/3} = \frac{9}{8} = 1{,}125$$

(7.13)

n_0 is 12,5% bigger than $p\pm$

$$\frac{m_n}{m_p} = \frac{z_{en}}{z_{ep}} \cdot \left(\frac{r_p}{r_n}\right)^2 = \frac{4}{3} \cdot \left(\frac{8}{9}\right)^2 = 1{,}05 \quad (7.14)$$

n^0 is 5% heavier than $p\pm$

Fig. 7.11: Calculation of the mass of the neutron

7.11 Calculation of the neutron

The calculation of the mass for the structure of the neutron according to fig. 7.10b has still remained open.

Because in this book for the first time has been shown, how the mass can be calculated, if the particles are understood as potential vortices, we also in this case again want to make use of this possibility.

We have, like for the μ^-, a structure of three shells with the radii r_1, r_2 and r_3. At the outer radius r_3 the fields of the elementary vortices on the inside have an effect on the electron On the outside: like is the case for the μ^-

the field of the e^-: $E_{31}^{(-)} = -E_1(r_1/r_3)$,

the field of the e^+: $E_{32} = E_2(r_2/r_3) = E_1(r_2/r_3)$

and in addition the e^+: $E_{31} = E_1(r_1/r_3)$.

The total field is, with the radius relation equation 7.4:

$$\frac{E(r_3)}{E_1} = -\frac{r_1}{r_3} + \frac{r_2}{r_3} + \frac{r_1}{r_3} = -\frac{1}{3} + \frac{2}{3} + \frac{1}{3} = \frac{2}{3} \quad (7.12)$$

If we compare the neutron, in which now $z_e = 4$ elementary vortices are involved, with the proton:

$$\frac{r_n}{r_p} = \frac{z_{ep}}{z_{en}} \cdot \frac{E_p(r_2)}{E_n(r_3)} = \frac{3}{4} \cdot \frac{1}{2/3} = \frac{9}{8} = 1{,}125 \quad (7.13)$$

then we infer from the arithmetically determined result that the neutron according to the radius is 12,5% bigger than the proton. The mass is calculated to:

$$\frac{m_n}{m_p} = \frac{z_{en}}{z_{ep}} \cdot \left(\frac{r_p}{r_n}\right)^2 = \frac{4}{3} \cdot \left(\frac{8}{9}\right)^2 = 1{,}05 \quad (7.14)$$

The particle therefore has a mass which is 5% larger than for the proton, slightly more as has been measured for the neutron. The difference is acceptable. The particle after all is structured very asymmetrically, in which the reason is to be seen, why the uncharged particle, looked at from close up, nevertheless shows an observable charge distribution.

Decay equations if neutrinos are involved:

$$n^0 \longrightarrow p^+ + e^- + \bar{\nu}_e \qquad (7.15)$$

$$n^0 + \nu_e \longrightarrow p^+ + e^- \qquad (7.15^*)$$

$$\mu^- \longrightarrow e^- + \bar{\nu}_e + \nu_\mu \qquad (7.16)$$
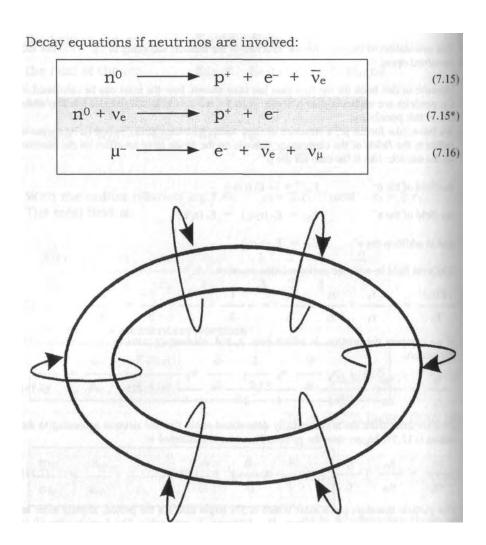
Fig. 7.12: The electron-neutrino as a ring-like vortex

7.12 ß-decay

In the case of the calculated quasistable particles, the μ^- and the n°, the verification by means of the well-known decay processes is still due. Also free neutrons, those which are not bound in an atomic nucleus, decay. But with an average life of 918 seconds they are by far the longest living among the quasistable elementary particles. Should the neutron decay be triggered by neutrinos, then obviously a distant flying past does not suffice. For that the electron is bound in the proton too tight. There probably has to occur a direct "crash", in which a neutrino is used, since the decay equation reads:

$$n^0 \longrightarrow p^+ + e^- + \overline{\nu}_e \quad (7.15)$$

As could be expected a proton p^+, an electron e^- and the mentioned electron-antineutrino $\overline{\nu}_e$ are formed. What here is written down as the emission of an antiparticle, is equivalent in the absorption of the particle[i], in this case of the neutrino. The reaction equation 7.15 can be reformulated accordingly[i]:

$$n^0 + \nu_e \longrightarrow p^+ + e^- \quad (7.15^*)$$

Also for the decay of the myon an electron-neutrino is used. In both cases it provides the energy necessary for the decay. But we can really understand the β-decay only, after we have got to know these particles better.

Without charge and without mass neutrinos show hardly any interactions with matter and as a consequence they possess the enormous ability of penetration - as is well-known. They are said to participate in the „weak interaction", which should trigger a conversion of the concerned particles, which is their decay. Pauli already has postulated the neutrino 1930 theoretically, because the transition from a half-integer spin to an integer spin for the n^0 -decay otherwise wouldn't have been explicable.

If we imagine an elementary vortex is being born, but the local field strength and energy isn't sufficient for obtaining a quantized state. The result is an incomplete potential vortex, which has an open vortex centre and as a consequence shows no localization at all. In the form of a vortex ring it oscillates around itself, while it continually turns its inside to the outside and then again to the inside.
One moment the vortex ring is green, then it is red again, one moment matter, then anti-matter, one moment positively charged and the next moment negatively charged. In contrast to the photon the number of the involved elementary vortices z_e for the neutrino is odd (for the ν_e $z_e = 1$). Perpendicular to the direction of propagation the neutrino has a spin $(s/h = \frac{1}{2})$ for reason of a rotation, which overlaps the pulsating oscillation. This vortex ring is, as said, not a member of stationary matter, because it doesn't form a "black hole" in its centre, where the speed of light becomes zero. But it has an absolute stability like every elementary vortex, even if it only occurs incomplete and hence not in any quantized form,. This concept of the electron-neutrino as an open oscillating elementary vortex in the form of a ring-like vortex covers the experimentally determined realizations unexpectedly well.

---

[i]:   Kussner, H.G.: Grundlagen einer einheitlichen Theorie der physikalischen Teilchen und Felder, Musterschmidt, Gottingen 1976, S.155

A strong interaction doesn't exist. The electric field in the proximity of the proton goes to zero within the range which is determined with measuring techniques.

A weak interaction doesn't exist. That interaction only is a special case of the electromagnetic interaction which appears in a weakened form. _____

XII: Why does the proton have approximately 3 times the magnetic moment which can be expected for reason of the only single charge?
(3 elementary vortices)

XIII: Why does the neutron as an uncharged particle anyway have a magnetic moment?
(Structure of the n°)

XIV: What owes the atomic nucleus, which consists of like charges, its stability?
(Course of the field of the p^+, instead of "strong interaction")

XV: Why does the free neutron decay, although it is stable as a particle of the nucleus? _____
(Interaction with neutrinos)

XVI: Why do neutrinos nevertheless participate in the "weak interaction", although they have no mass and no charge? _____
(Oscillating charge)

XVII: How can be given reasons for the finite range of the "weak interaction"?
(Reaction cross-section for particle decay)

Fig. 7.13:   Further key questions of quantum physics
(Continuation of figures 4.4 and 6.13)

7.13 "Weak interaction"

Let's now look again at the ß-decay of the neutron, in which a neutrino ν_e is used. But this by no means will be a process of the weak interaction. Instead will neutrinos, contrary to the textbook opinion, participate in the electromagnetic interaction. They after all are one moment positively charged and the next moment negatively charged. With slow-acting gauges this it is true can't be proven, because the interaction is zero on the average. But this charged oscillating vortex ring can exert a considerable effect while approaching a neutron, which is based solely on the electromagnetic interaction.

The neutron is stimulated to synchronous oscillations of its own by the high-frequency alternating field of the neutrino, until it in the case of the collision releases the bound electron, which takes up the energy provided by the neutrino and transports it away. The interaction obviously is only very weak due to the oscillation. But a physical independency of it has to be disputed.

The finite range, which is given in this context, indicates the reaction cross-section around the n°-particle, within which the "crash" and as a consequence the β-decay occurs. This range is considerable larger as the particle itself. The electromagnetic interaction for such small distances after all is so violent, even if it only occurs in pulses, that the neutrino is thrown out of its path and can fly directly towards the neutron.

Perhaps we now understand also the β-decay of the myon. It actually were to be expected that without outside disturbance an absolute stability could exist because of the ideal symmetry of the μ^-. On our planet we however are in every second bombarded with approx. 66 milliard (billion) neutrinos per cm^2 [i]. Obviously it takes 2,2 μs on the average till a neutrino ν_e flies past a myon so close that it decays. In doing so it stimulates the outside elementary vortex to violent oscillations by trying to synchronize it. In this case the electron-neutrino ν_e carries away with it the two outer, and therefore weaker bound, elementary vortices of the myon, which meanwhile are oscillating synchronously. The innermost vortex, an electron e⁻, is left behind. The decay of the myon which takes place with a probability of almost 100 % reads:

$$\mu^- \longrightarrow e^- + \bar{\nu}_e + \nu_\mu \qquad resp. \qquad \mu^- + \nu_e \longrightarrow e^- + \nu_\mu \quad (7.16)$$

Thus a different neutrino ν_μ is formed which can be distinguished from the ν_e and is called myon-neutrino since it forms from the μ^-. Actually it even has a similar structure of three shells, as is shown in fig. 7.5. But the vortex centre is open and the particle isn't stationary anymore. In the picture now only a momentarily state is shown, in which the ν_μ appears green on the outside and red in its open centre. As already for the ν_e oscillates also here the inside to the outside and vice versa, this time merely as a packet of three shells, so that also this particle shows all the typical neutrino properties discussed for the example of the ν_e.

The for potential vortices typical and already discussed phenomenon of transport here has an effect. In particular in connexion with vortex rings this property is known from hydrodynamics. It thus can be observed, how vortex rings bind matter and carry away with them. Because the neutrino is not quantized, it neither is restricted with regard to its ability to transport elementary vortices. Consequently even bigger configurations are conceivable, like configurations of 5 shells, 7 shells etc..

<i>:   "Zeugen aus der Sonne", VDI-Nachrichten Nr. 45 vom 9.11.90, Seite 26

a: the structure of the tau-neutrino with 5 shells

colour of the elementary vortices
from the outside to the inside

gn/rd/gn/rd/gn

i.e.

$e^-/e^+/e^-/e^+/e^- = \nu_\tau$

b: the heavy and stable variant of the tau particle

(gn/rd + gn/rd)gn

resp.

$(e^-/e^+ + e^-/e^+)e^- = \tau^-$
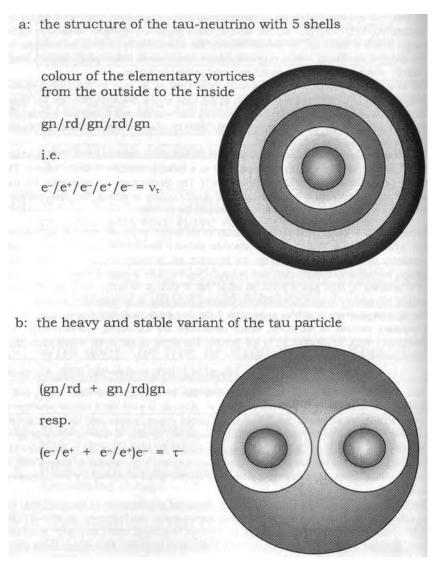
Fig. 7.14: Tau-neutrino and tau particle

7.14 Tau particle

In the table of the leptons after the e^- and the μ^- as the next particle the tau particle τ^- is found with its accompanying neutrino ν_τ. The obvious solution for the tau particle is the structure of five shells, as is shown in fig. 7.14a. With that the electron would have another particularly heavy relative with otherwise very similar properties. For the myon the neutrino was stable, the particle itself however instable. We after all huve explained the particle decay as a consequence of an outside disturbance, and disturbances always are based on interactions. Correspondingly should, with the small possibility for an interaction, also the neutrino ν_τ of the tau particle have a better stability than the particle τ^- itself. Without doubt this structure of 5 shells fulfils all known quantum properties like spin, charge etc. Merely the check of the mass is still due. This we now want to calculate for the structure shown in fig. 7.14a.

$$m_5 = m_p \cdot \left(\frac{z_{e\tau}}{z_{ep}}\right)^3 \cdot \left(-\frac{r_1}{r_5} + \frac{r_2}{r_5} - \frac{r_3}{r_5} + \frac{r_4}{r_5}\right)^2 \quad (7.17)$$

$$m_5 = 1836 \cdot \left(\frac{5}{3}\right)^3 \cdot \left(\frac{2}{5}\right)^2 \cdot m_e = \underline{\underline{1360 \cdot m_e}} \quad (7.17^*)$$

But the for the tau particle measured value is considerable higher!
Even if this structure is the only possible in the case of the neutrino ν_τ for reason of the complete symmetry, will the tau particle however change its structure by itself if another structure exists, which is more stable, thus in which the particle can take a bigger mass. Such a maximum provides the structure shown in fig. 7.14b after checking all possible configurations with five elementary vortices:

$$m_\tau = m_p \cdot \left(\frac{z_{e\tau}}{z_{ep}}\right)^3 \cdot \left(\left(-\frac{r_1}{r_3} + \frac{r_2}{r_3}\right) \cdot 2\right)^2 \quad (7.18)$$

$$m_\tau = 1836 \cdot \left(\frac{5}{3}\right)^3 \cdot \left(\frac{2}{3}\right)^2 \cdot m_e = \underline{\underline{3778 \cdot m_e}} \quad (7.18^*)$$

This value now lies 8% above the measurement values. It would be obvious, if unbound tau particles predominantly would take the structure shown in fig. 7.14b. The remaining error becomes explicable, if a very small number of tau particles in the lighter structure according to fig. 7.14a are involved with a correspondingly smaller probability.

The enormous variety of kinds of decay, and not a single one of the dominating ones has a probability of over 50%, makes it more difficult for us, to be able to directly infer the inner structure of a particle from the decay products. It nevertheless should be mentioned that after all 35% of all decays take place by taking up and using a neutrino ν_e or ν_τ, entirely in accordance with the model of the myon decay (equation 7.16).

name	mass (m/m_e) measured	mass (m/m_e) calculated	el.-vortices z_e	charge Q	radius r/r_p	inner structure of The elementary vortices, colour: (gn=green; rd=red) from the inside to the outside
e^-	1	-	1	-1	-	Fig. 4.3 gn
γ^0	-	136	2	0	3	Fig. 7.3 rd/gn
μ^-	207	204	3	-1	3	Fig. 7.5 gn/rd/gn
η^0	1072	1088	4	0	1,5	rd/gn/rd/gn
(ρ^-)	1509	1360	5	-1	1,5	Fig. 7.14a gn/rd/gn/rd/gn
D^0	3650	3672	6	0	1	rd/gn...rd/gn
D^+ or F^+	3658 till 4188	4284	7	+1	1	gn/rd...rd/gn
(B^0)	10321	8704	8	0	0,75	rd/gn...rd/gn

7.15   Table of vortices of the calculated leptons and mesons compared with measurement values (Part 1).

7.l5 Pions

Unlike the leptons, which we could derive and calculate fairly completely, the mesons don't have a half-integer spin. With this characteristic property they therefore can't represent an individually overlapped elementary particle and they probably will consist of the amassing in pairs of individual configurations of potential vortices. This kind of bond can't be particularly tight. Consequently we don't know any stable mesons.

The most important basic building part of the mesons we have got to know over the positronium in fig. 7.3. It necessarily has to amass to another particle, otherwise it annihilates under emission of a γ-quanta, as already mentioned. This γ^0-particle, as it will be named here, has the mass of:

$$m_{\gamma0} = (2/3)^3 \cdot (1/2)^2 \cdot 1836 \cdot m_e = 136 \cdot m_e \quad (7.19)$$

which only can be determined arithmetically. As a partner, to which the γ^0-particle can amass, first of all another γ^0-particle should be considered. Because both partner will rotate against one another, this new particle would not have a spin and moreover would be uncharged. The mass now would be twice as big with:

$$m_{\pi0} = 2 \cdot m_{\gamma0} = 272 \cdot m_e . \quad (7.19^*)$$

But the two γ^0-particles will come very close together and mutually feel the local, in the same direction orientated, distribution of the field, which will lead to a weakening of the field and as a consequence to a slight reduction of the mass.
With these properties it probably concerns the uncharged pion π^0. This model concept finds an excellent confirmation in the two possible kinds of decay, which can be regarded as equivalent:

$\pi^0 \longrightarrow \gamma + \gamma$ with a probability of 99%
and
$$\pi^0 \longrightarrow \gamma + e^- + e^+ \text{ with a probability of 1\%}$$

Also in the case of the charged pion $\pi^\pm$ the observable decay offers a big help, which will take place with a frequency of almost 100 %:

$$\pi^\pm \longrightarrow \mu^\pm + \nu_\mu$$

The equation doesn't state anything about the fact, if a neutrino ν_e is used in the process. But it points at the circumstance that the partner of the γ^0-particle for the $\pi^\pm$ most likely is a myon $\mu^\pm$. The mass will be smaller than the sum of both building parts:

$$(204+136) * m_e = 340 * m_e.$$

name	mass (m/me) measured	masse (m/me) calculated	elem.-vortices z_e	charge Q	inner structure of The elementary vortices, colour: (gn=green; rd=red) from the inside to the outside
B⁻	11194	9793 +?	9 +?	-1	$r/r_p = 0,75$ gn/rt...rt/gn
(Y⁰)	18513	17001 +?	10 +?	0	$r/r_p = 0,6$ rt/gn...rt/gn

Some compound configurations

π⁰	264	272	4	0	2 x fig. 7.3 $\gamma^0 + \gamma^0 = \pi^0$
π⁻	273	340	5	-1	fig. 7.3 + fig. 7.5 $\mu^- + \gamma^0 = \pi^-$
τ⁻	3487	3778	5	-1	fig. 7.14b (2x gn/rd)/gn
(K⁰)	974	918 +?	6 +?	0	$r/r_p = 2$ (2x rd/gn)/ rd/gn
(K⁻)	967	939 +?	11 +?	-1	(rd/gn + gn)/ rd/gn + 3 γ^0

Fig. 7.16: Table of vortices of the calculated leptons and mesons compared with measurement values (Part 2).

7.16 Table of vortices of the mesons

The numerous kinds of decay for K-mesons suggest that these strange particles will consist of various combinations of amassed together and in pairs rotating γ^0- and $\mu^{\pm}$- particles. The possibilities of combination now already have increased in such a way that for every kaon and other mesons several solutions can be proposed. To avoid unfounded speculations, only a few clues will be given.

Besides the γ^0-particles also heavier arrangements should be considered as partner for the spin and as a building part for kaons and other mesons.
If for instance a π^0 is overlapped by a γ^0, then this particle has an arithmetically determined mass of 918 m_e. It therefore can concern a building part of the uncharged kaon K^0.

The likewise with three γ^0 formed configuration of 6 shells however, if it actually would staystable for the duration of a measurement, would have the mass of 3672 electron masses[i].

A very much better detectability must be attributed to the configuration of 4 shells which consists of two γ^0, so to speak a heavy relative of the γ^0 and the π^0. It among others should be able to decay like a π^0. With this property and with an arithmetically determined mass of 1088 m_e it actually only can concern the η^0-meson. Solely according to the numeric value the η^0-meson could also consist of four π^0-mesons; but the decay in only two light quants speaks against it.

The kaon-puzzle in addition is made more difficult by the spontaneously possible ability to change of the involved γ^0-particles during a process of decay, as is made clear by the numerous kinds of decay. These dependent pion halves can be "swallowed" or "spit out" by neutrinos in the process, they can form from incident light or be emitted as photons and eventually they even can break up in their individual parts.

In fig. 7.16 the possible configurations of potential vortices are sketched and the respective, according to the new theory calculated, mass is given. If above that the other decay products and quantum properties, which can be given for the vortex structures, are added, like e.g. charge, spin and if need be magnetic moment, then an assignment without doubts to the until now only from measurements known elementary particles is possible. In order to better be able to assess the efficiency of the potential vortex theory, the measurement values are compared to the calculated values.

Some terms are put in brackets, because it can be assumed that the calculated part only concerns the dominating part, to which further γ^0 or other small configurations of vortices will amass for reason of its high mass. Correspondingly should the mass in that case be corrected slightly.

---

[i]: It could e.g. concern the D°-meson.

name	way of decay	mass (m/m_e) measured	mass (m/m_e) calculated	elem.-vortices z_e	charge Q	Inner structure of the baryon vortices
p^+	stable	1836	– (reference value)	3	+1	fig. 7.8 $r/r_p = 1$ $(2x\ e^+)/e^-$
n^0	$p^+ + e^- + \bar{\nu}_e$ (100%)	1839	1837	4	0	figure 7.10a $p^+ + e^-$
			1934	4	0	figure 7.10b n^0 $r/r_p = 1{,}13$
Λ^0	$p^+ + \pi^-$ (64%)		(2176)	8	0	$\gamma^0 + p^+ + \mu^-$ (64%)
		2183	2187			
	$n^0 + \pi^0$ (36%)		(2206)	8	0	$\gamma^0 + n^0 + \gamma^0$ (36%)
Σ^+	$p^+ + \pi^0$ (51%)		(2108+?)	7 + ?	+1	$\gamma^0 + p^+ + \gamma^0$ (+?) (51%)
		2328	2142+?			
	$n^0 + \pi^+$ (49%)		2177	9	+1	$\gamma^0 + e^+ + p^- + \mu^0$ (49%)
Σ^-	$p^+ + \pi^-$ (100%)	2343	2274	9	-1	$\gamma^0 + n^0 + \mu^-$ (100%)

Fig. 7.17: Table of vortices used for the calculation of the most
important barvons with suggestions for the structure (Part 3).

7.17 Table of vortices of the baryons

The number of possibilities of combination quickly increases, if only a few elementary vortices extend the structure of a particle. This probably is the reason for the large number of observable hyperons, which recently have been produced artificially and observed with the help of particle accelerators.

Both the neutron and the lambda particle can exist in a lighter and a heavier variant. At the moment of the decay, as it for instance is observed in a bubble chamber, according to expectation the state with the smaller mass takes the bigger probability. But in the amassing with further particles as building part of bigger and heavier hyperons the heavier structure is more likely. This circumstance should be considered in calculating the mass of the hyperons.

In figures 7.17 and 7.18 the most important baryons are listed, which are characterised in the way that one of the amassed together packets of vortices is a nucleon, thus a proton or a neutron.

The given, from measurements known, kinds of decay are able to confirm the inner structure pretty good. Of course an infinitely lot of combinations are conceivable and numerous predictions are possible. But speculations are unnecessary from the time on where we are able to calculate the particles!
The restriction to the few in the table listed particles seeming to be important hence doesn't limit the universal importance of the theory of objectivity in any way!

name	way of decay	mass (m/m_e) measured	mass (m/m_e) calculated	elem.-vortices z_e	charge Q	Inner structure of the baryon vortices
Σ^0	$\Lambda^0 + \gamma$ (100%)	2334	2342	10	0	$n^0 + \gamma^0 + \gamma^0 + \gamma^0$ (100%)
Θ^0	$\Lambda^0 + \pi^0$ (100%)	2573	2478	12	0	$n^0 + \gamma^0 + \gamma^0 + \gamma^0 + \gamma^0$ (100%)
Θ^-	$\Lambda^0 + \pi^-$ (100%)	2586	2546	13	-1	$n^0 + \gamma^0 + \gamma^0 + \gamma^0 + \mu^-$ (100%)
(Ω^-)	$\Lambda^0 + K^-$ (69%)	3273	3172 +?	17 +?	-1	$n^0 + \gamma^0 + \gamma^0 + ?$ (31%: ? = div.)

Fig. 7.18: Table of vortices used for the calculation of the most
important baryons with suggestions for the structure (Part 4).

8. Unified theory

With the theory of objectivity the longed for goal of a "theory of everything" (TOE), of an universal theory, seems to have moved within reach. If in the nineteenth century still promising field theories and approaches were being discussed, then has at the latest Einstein's theory of relativity destroyed all hopes in such a theory. Science as a consequence has become very much more modest and understands a TOE only as the unification of all known interactions.

Einstein has stated the minimum demand so: "a theory should be favoured by far, in which the gravitational field and the electromagnetic field together would appear as a whole" [i]. It is evident that a subjective or relativistic observer theory never is able to achieve this.

The presented theory of objectivity made it possible that the unification here for the first time actually has succeeded. This undoubtedly brings science a whole lot further, but it still is not sufficient to lie one's hands in one's lap being content with oneself. After all we still know very much more phenomena, which likewise should be unified. After all it is no accident that both Maxwell and Einstein, to name only two prominent representatives, after completion of their well-known works have struggled for the question, what sort of phenomenon it concerns in the case of the temperature and how this could be integrated in their theory.

The requirement reads: We must be able to derive all basic factors, which influence our system of units with their basic units, as a compulsionless result from the new theory. Besides the dimensions of space and time which determine our continuum, the explanation and unification of the basic factors mass and charge has to be tackled. If we have succeeded in doing so, we'll also tackle the problem of the fifth and last basic factor, which until now has put itself in the way of any unified theory as the question of fate, the problem of the temperature!

[i]:   Einstein, A.: Grundziige der Relativitatstheorie, Vieweg+Sohn, Braunschweig 1973, 5. Aufl., WTB 58. Seite 97.

"A theory should be favoured by far, in which the gravitational field and the electromagnetic field together would appear as a whole"[i].

The hydromagnetic field

charge:	$e = 0$
mass:	$m = 0$
force:	$F = 0$

The electro-magnetic field

relaxation time constant: $\tau_1 = \varepsilon/\sigma$
charge: $e \neq 0$
force: $F = Q \cdot E$

The hydro-gravitational field

relaxation time constant: $\tau_2 \sim \mu \cdot \sigma$
mass: $m \neq 0$
force: $F = \phi \cdot H$

The electrogravitational field

charge:	$e \neq 0$
mass:	$m \neq 0$
force:	$F = Q \cdot E + \phi \cdot H$
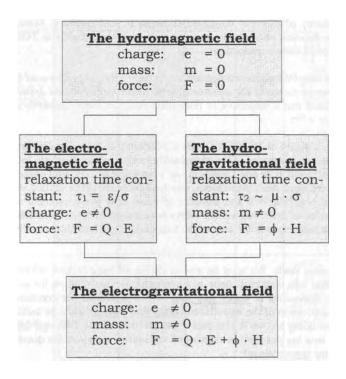
Fig. 8.1:   Structuring of the fields and definition of terms

<i>:   Einstein, A. : Grundziige der Relativitatstheorie, Vieweg + Sohn, Braun-schweig 1973, 5. Aufl. , WTB 58.
<ii>:   derived from the Greek hydro (= water).

8.1 Structure of the field theory

In contrast to Maxwell's theory the new field theory, which we derived from duality, is also able to describe fields, in which no particles and no quanta exist. It probably is justified and useful in the sense of a clearer communication, to give the new field a name of its own.

The author recommends the introduction of the term "hydrotic field". In it should be expressed, which importance water has for both the like named potential vortex and this field[ii].

As we already have worked out, the hydrotic field is favoured particularly by polar materials and by a high dielectricity. Water is a corresponding and in the biosphere of our planet dominating material.

Whereas we had to correct the concept of a vortex free electric field, we had until now, considerable, we can take over the description of the magnetic field unchanged. This then should also be valid for its name. The new field which consists of both correspondingly is called hydromagnetic field.

In fig. 8.1 we recognize the structure. At the top stands the "hydromagnetic field", which is described mathematically by the equations of dual electrodynamics in fig. 3.3. It does not know quanta and as logical consequence neither charge nor mass! If we insert these equations, Ampere's law and the dual formulated Faraday law of induction, into each other, then there results as a mathematical description of our space-time-continuum the fundamental field equation (5.7, fig. 5.1). As a new physical phenomenon the potential vortex appears, which gives the hydromagnetic field a new and important property: this field can be quantized!

Starting-point is the wave, which for corresponding interference effects can spontaneously roll up to a vortex, which as highly concentrated spherical vortex finds a new right to exist and finds to a new physical reality.

The in the described manner formed particles show specific properties of their own. We now are able to attribute them for instance a charge or a mass. And these properties also can be investigated and described individually and isolated from each other. Thus are formed the two special cases, strange by nature, on the one hand the well-known, with the help of the Maxwell equations describable "electromagnetic field" and on the other hand the new "hydrogravitational field".

If we overlap the results of the two special cases, e.g. by adding the force effects of electric charges and accelerated masses, then we summarized obtain a field, which we accordingly should call "electrogravitational". This case is not at all unknown. Already Niels Bohr in this way has calculated the radii of the electron orbits in the hull of his model of the atom, to mention only one example. We can summarize:

The hydromagnetic field is the all encompassing and with that most important field. Apart from that the electromagnetic field of the currents and the eddy currents and the hydro-gravitational field of the potentials and the potential vortices merely describe the two possible and important special cases. For reasons of pure usefulness for every special case a characteristic factor of description is introduced, the charge and the mass!

Auxiliary terms (description of quantum properties):
* mass * charge * temperature * Planck's quantum of action

The hydromagnetic field does not know any quanta!

Structure of the fundamental field equation 5.7 (fig. 5.1):

electromagnetic wave:

electric field | magnetic field

$$\Delta \mathbf{E} \cdot c^2 = \frac{\delta^2 \mathbf{E}}{\delta t^2} \qquad (5.7\ a,b)$$

potential vortex: (a,d)

$$\Delta \mathbf{E} \cdot c^2 = \frac{1}{\tau_2} \cdot \frac{\delta \mathbf{E}}{\delta t}$$

eddy current: (5.7a,c)

$$\Delta \mathbf{E} \cdot c^2 = \frac{1}{\tau_1} \cdot \frac{\delta \mathbf{E}}{\delta t}$$

Poisson equations:

potentials | currents

$$\Delta \mathbf{E} \cdot c^2 = \frac{\mathbf{E}}{\tau_1 \tau_2} \qquad (5.7\ a,e)$$
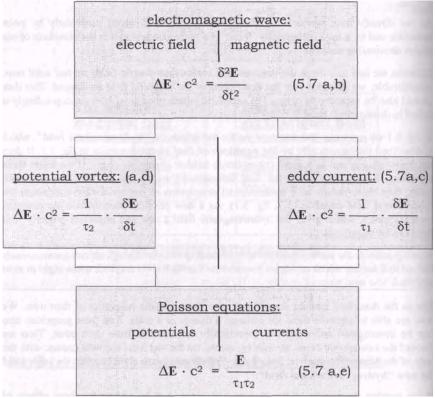
Fig. 8.2:   Unified theory

  *electromagnetic interaction (open field lines)
  *gravitation (closed field lines)
  *strong interaction (does not exist)
  *weak interaction (only special aspect)

*The interactions are a result of the
field dependent speed of light!*

8.2 Unification of the interactions

The discovery and introduction of the hydromagnetic field makes the desired unification possible, because the electromagnetic resp. Maxwell field, which describes the electromagnetic interaction, and the hydrogravitational field of the gravitation can be derived from this field as a consequence of the formation of quanta.

The kind of the interaction is caused by the course of the field lines of the field quanta w h i c h form as spherical vortices: the open field lines make the electromagnetic interaction possible. And the field, lines with a closed course lead to gravitation. Both are a direct result of the field dependent speed of light. A more perfect unification seems hardly possible.

As the next step the unification with the strong and the weak interaction is required, but it could be shown that those don't exist at all. It just concerns misinterpretations with much fantasy, which should help explain the difference between a wrong theory and the physical reality.

Numerous auxiliary terms for the description of the quantum properties exist, like for instance mass, charge or Planck's quantum of action. The prerequisite for their usability naturally is the existence of the quanta. But until these have found to a physical reality, the auxiliary terms are unnecessary. The hydromagnetic field does not know quanta, quantum properties or auxiliary descriptions. It will be shown that, according to expectation, also the temperature is a typical quantum property, which comes within the group of the auxiliary terms. In this way also the temperature is fitted into the unified theory without compulsion.

Without the by us for reasons of usefulness introduced auxiliary terms the fundamental field equation is left with its description of a spatial-temporal principle. If a world equation should exist, then this field equation 5.7 has the best prerequisites. For the fundamental field equation the division in four parts is repeated like already for the hydromagnetic field (fig. 8.1). It likewise consists of four individual parts, the wave (b), the two vortex phenomena (c and d) and the time independent term (e) (fig. 8.2). Whereas the duality still is combined in the wave, it comes to light clearly for the vortices to again be combined in the fourth case. Here arise however potentials and currents, which again can react and oscillate with each other, for instance as L-C-resonant circuit in an electronic circuit, with which the principle is repeated.
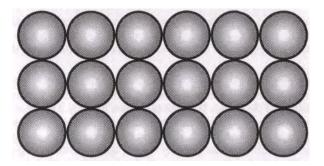
This principle is shown clearer for the phenomenon of the temperature as in all other cases. If we start at the top in the picture in fig. 8.2 we have an electromagnetic wave, which is absorbed and thus becomes a vortex. If the vortex falls apart, then eddy losses are formed. We observe that the temperature rises and propagates in the well-known manner. We have arrived in the bottom box, but this again can be taken as the top box for the now following process, because the equation of heat conduction is a vortex equation of type c or d! We discover a self-similarity:

The spatial-temporal principle formulated mathematically by the fundamental field equation can be carried over into itself time and again._____

Temperature is the oscillation of contraction of the elementary vortices resulting from the speed of light depending on field strength.

a. at absolute zero temperature:

b. if thermally excited:
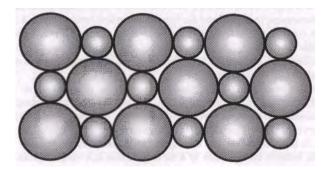
Fig. 8.3:   Temperature as an oscillation of size for the speed of light depending on field strength

8.3 Temperature

  Following the atomic view, in the case of heat it concerns kinetic energy of the molecules,
  which carry out more or less violent oscillations. In the case of gaseous materials with this
concept, basing on mechanical models, actually successful calculations are possible, like
for instance the speed distribution of gases won by Maxwell from theoretical considera-
tions concerning probability.
But the attempt to apply the formulas of the kinetic theory of gases to solids and liquids
only succeeds, if additional supplements and improvements are introduced. Since at all
events it concerns temperature, thus the same physical quantity, of course also an uniform
interpretation should be demanded, which in addition should stand in full accord to the
presented design of an integrated theory (TOE).
Against the background of the new theory of objectivity we consider, what happens, if for
instance the local field strength is increased by a flying past particle. The matter located at
this point is contracted for a short time. By coming closer to each other, the individual
elementary vortices mutually reinforce their field and are further compressed. Sometime
this process comes to a standstill, is reversed and swings back.
At the same time every single particle, which in this way carries out an oscillation of size,
has an effect on its neighbours with its field, to also stimulate these to the same oscillation,
but delayed by some time. This phenomenon spreads in all directions. The propagation
only will become stationary, if all neighbouring elementary vortices pulsate with the same
amplitude. It now should be recorded:

> The oscillation of contraction of the elementary vortices we call temperature.

Also this thermodynamic state variable therefore is a result of the variable speed of light.
At the absolute zero of temperature no oscillation takes place anymore, whereas the upper
limit lies in infinity. Since the cause for temperature represents an oscillation of the local
electromagnetic field strength around the cosmic field strength, the following phenomena
must be considered as excitation and cause, as dictated by the fundamental field equation
5.7:

  1.   Electromagnetic waves (b) are able to stimulate matter particles to synchronous oscilla-
  tions of contraction by their alternating field. In doing so energy in form of heat is
  transferred to the particles, with the result that their temperature is increased. The wave
  is absorbed completely, if the thermal oscillation corresponds with the frequency of the
  wave.
 We speak of thermal radiation.

  2.   But also the two dual vortices, the eddy current (c) and the potential vortex (d) can
  cause oscillations of contraction. This immediately becomes clear, if we consider a
  vortex as the special case of the wave, in which the oscillation takes place around a
  more or less stationary vortex centre. In the case of the decay of vortices, of the
  transition of energy from vortices to matter, the increase in temperature is measurable.
 In the case of this process of diffusion we speak of eddy losses and of loss heat.

Answers to open questions of thermodynamics:

1. Temperature occurs independent of the state in which the matter is (unified theory).

2. Temperature even occurs in solids, where a purely kinetic interpretation fails (unification).

3. Each elementary particle is carrier of a temperature.

4. Expansion with increasing temperature because of the increasing need for room for larger amplitude of oscillation (principle: bi-metal-thermometer).

5. For solids the thermal oscillation of size is primarily passed on by the electrons in the atomic hull. Good electric conductors therefore at the same time also have a high thermal conductivity. (principle: electrical resistance thermometer).

6. For gases the entire atoms carry out this task, for which reason a kinetic auxiliary description becomes applicable.

7. For extreme amplitudes of oscillation the atoms partly or entirely lose their enveloping electrons, when they change into the plasma state.

8. The second law of thermodynamics loses its claim to be absolute and at best reads: with today's technology we are not capable, to design a cyclic working machine, which does nothing else, as to withdraw heat from a heat container and to convert it into mechanical work.

Fig. 8.4:   Questions concerning thermodynamics

3. Flying past particles, in particular unbound and free movable charge carriers (e) produce an alternating field for other fixed particles. Doing so kinetic energy can be transformed in temperature, thus in energy of pulsation. A good example is the inelastic collision. But it can also be pointed to numerous chemical reactions. Whoever searches for a concrete example, takes two objects in his hands and rubs them against one another. In that case the particles which are at the frictional surfaces are being moved past each other in very small distance, in this way causing oscillations of pulsation, which propagate into the inside of the objects according to the thermal conductivity. We speak of friction heat.

This model concept provides sound explanations for a whole number of open questions (fig. 8.4), i.e. why the temperature occurs independent of the state (1) and even in solids, where a purely kinetic interpretation fails (2). Every single elementary particle after all is carrier of a temperature (3).

With increasing temperature most materials expand, because the need for room, purely geometrically seen, increases for larger amplitude of oscillation (4). This principle is used in the case of a bi-metal thermometer.

In the case of solids the thermal oscillation of size is passed on primarily by the electrons in the atomic hull (5). Good electric conductors therefore at the same time also have a high thermal conductivity. An example of an application is the electric resistance thermometer.

In the case of gases the entire atoms carry out this task, for which reason a kinetic theory becomes applicable as an auxiliary description (6).

For extreme amplitudes of oscillation the atoms partly or entirely lose their enveloping electrons, when they change into the plasma state (7).

Finally the model concept even limits the second law of thermodynamics, which contains the postulate that it is impossible to design a cyclic working machine, which does nothing else, as to withdraw heat from a heat container and to convert it into mechanical work (8).

8.4 Heat energy

The discussed oscillation of contraction shows two characteristic properties, which must be looked at separately: the amplitude and the frequency._____
          Temperature describes solely the amplitude of the oscillation of size.

The heat energy however is determined by both,
by the amplitude as well as by the frequency._____

Consequently the ideas of temperature and heat energy should be kept strictly apart. It therefore isn't allowed to set this oscillation equal to the electromagnetic wave in tables of frequency.

To be correct two tables should be given, one for the wave, characterized by a propagation with the speed of light, and another one for oscillations of contraction, thus for stationary phenomena and phenomena bound to matter. The latter indeed can likewise propagate relatively fast by fluctuations of pressure in the case of acoustical sound frequencies or by free movable charge carriers in the case of heat conduction, but the velocity of propagation for sound or heat is as is well-known still considerably smaller than the speed of light. Thus an assignment without doubts can be made as to which kind of oscillation it concerns.

Temperature *describes the amplitude of the oscillation of size of all spherical vortices.*

The **heat energy** *however is determined by both, the amplitude and the frequency.*

thermal radiation
(infrared radiation)

contraction - - expansion

vortices of temperature

$$\Delta T \cdot a = \frac{\delta T}{\delta t} \qquad (8.1)$$

$$T_2 - T_1 = \Phi \cdot R_{\text{wärme}} \qquad (8.2)$$

vortices of heat current

$$\Delta \Phi \cdot a = \frac{\delta \Phi}{\delta t} \qquad (8.3)$$

$$a = \text{conductivity of temperature}$$

stationary temperature
(asynchronous oscillation of size)

temperature T | heat current Φ

spezial case:

sound
(synchronous oscillation of size)

Fig. 8.5:   Heat conduction resp. sound

8.5 Sound

The close relationship of longitudinal sound waves with the oscillations of contraction of thermally heated matter becomes particularly clear for ultrasound, where the arising heat in the inside of the body which is exposed to sound can be measured directly. The fundamental difference consists of the fact that the produced sound waves not only have the same frequency, but also the same phase, what needs not be the case for the temperature. The apparently uncoordinated occurring oscillations of size of the temperature, which as a rule occupy more space if the intensity increases, form a "thermal noise".

The oscillation of size with the same phase is not realizable at all in a spatial formation of particles, with one exception, the case that all particles expand and afterwards again contract simultaneously and in the same time. We can observe such a synchronization of the pulsation oscillations of all elementary vortices in the case of a pulsar. For us a pulsar looks   like   a   "lighthouse"   in   space   which   shines   with   a   fixed   frequency. In reality it as well can concern a constantly shining sun, which carries out a synchronized, thermal oscillation of size, like a gigantic low-frequency loudspeaker. During the phase of contraction of the star its emitted light stays back. To us the pulsar looks dark. In addition the field strength is extremely increased and the light becomes correspondingly slow. During the phase of expansion the conditions are reversed and we observe a light flash. Exactly the pulsar unambiguously confirms the here presented theory of the variable, field dependent speed of light.

The well-known fact that the microcosm represents a copy of the macrocosm, already suggests that each atom is capable of the same oscillation of size as a pulsar: if next to the oscillating atom a resting one is placed, then does this one see a smaller field during the phase of contraction because of the increasing distance. It hence becomes bigger itself. If the pulsating neighbouring atom afterwards expands, it however becomes smaller. The at first resting atom in this way becomes a "pulsar" oscillating with opposite phase. The oscillating atom has stimulated the neighbouring atom as well to an oscillation of size, and this process will be repeated with the closest neighbouring atom. We speak of heat conduction.
To which extent the average distance between neighbouring atoms is influenced while a material is heated, solely depends on the structure of the atomic lattice. For matter with a fixed lattice according to expectation a smaller heat expansion will occur, as for the unordered structure of gases, in which we find confirmed well-known relations.

In a for potential vortices characteristic property sound waves and thermal waves of contraction correspond:

The propagation of potential vortex fields takes place as a longitudinal wave.

In this point vortex fields clearly differ from the transverse propagating electromagnetic waves!

1. <u>Ampère's law</u> (see fig 5.1):

$$\text{rot } \mathbf{H} \;=\; \varepsilon \cdot (\mathbf{E}/\tau_1 + \delta\mathbf{E}/\delta t) \tag{5.1*}$$

with relaxation time $\quad \tau_1 \;=\; \varepsilon/\sigma$ $\hfill$ (5.3)

transformed: $\quad\quad \delta\mathbf{E}/\delta t \;=\; (1/\varepsilon) \cdot \text{rot } \mathbf{H} \;-\; \mathbf{E}/\tau_1$ $\hfill$ (5.1**)

integrated: $\quad\quad \mathbf{E} \;=\; \int [(\text{rot } \mathbf{H})/\varepsilon \;-\; \mathbf{E}/\tau_1]\, dt$ $\hfill$ (5.1***)

2. <u>Faraday's law of induction</u> (in analogy):

$$-\,\text{rot } \mathbf{E} \;=\; \mu \cdot (\mathbf{H}/\tau_2 + \delta\mathbf{H}/\delta t) \tag{5.4*}$$

transformed: $\quad\quad \delta\mathbf{H}/\delta t \;=\; -\,(1/\mu) \cdot \text{rot } \mathbf{E} \;-\; \mathbf{H}/\tau_2$ $\hfill$ (5.4**)

integrated: $\quad\quad -\,\mathbf{H} \;=\; \int [(\text{rot } \mathbf{E})/\mu \;+\; \mathbf{H}/\tau_2]\, dt$ $\hfill$ (5.4***)

3. <u>Signal flow diagram of the field equation 5.1***</u>:

| adaptation of driving factors | comparator | I-controller | control path |
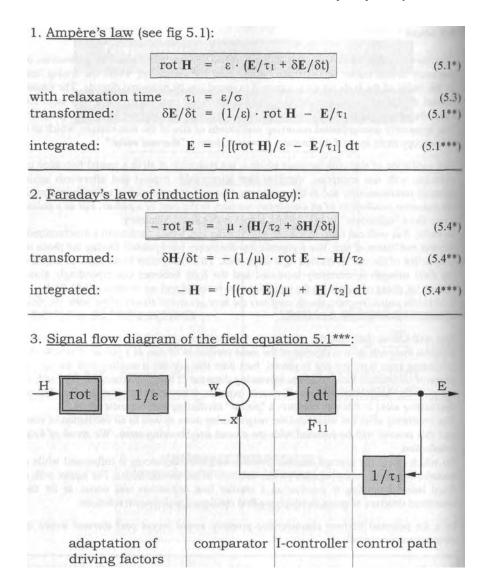
Fig. 8.6:   Control technical analysis of the dual equations of the hydromagnetic field.

8.6 Basic principle of cybernetics

Surely can be attributed also information to the potential vortex. But how should infor-
mation be formed? Is information a form of energy? Energy occurs as a consequence of
the formation of potential vortices. Without this phenomenon there wouldn't be any
energy!
Can information be described by means of a mathematical equation?
To be able to answer these questions, we subject the fundamental field equation to a
control technical analysis. If it actually concerns a world equation, then an answers should
be possible.

We again take up Ampere's law 5.1* from fig. 5.1 and remodel it according to the time
derivative (5.1**). If the equation now is integrated over the time (5.1***), a signal flow
diagram can be drawn (fig. 8.6).
The structure of a regulatory circuit is clearly visible. The individual paragraphs are
described in an analogous way as for a technical control system. The execution of the curl
operation on the field pointer of the magnetic field strength H and the multiplication with
$1/\varepsilon$ accordingly form an adaptation of driving factors. In the comparator the difference for
control from driving factor w and controlling factor x is formed and supplied to an
integral controller. The control path has a purely proportional behaviour and consists of
the processing of the measurement value of the electric field strength E with $1/\tau_1$, in which
τ_1 describes the relaxation time of the eddy currents.
In technical control systems such a structure is found remarkably seldom, although it has
an invaluable advantage: it possesses a stability in principle. Not a single adjustment of
the controller exists, in which the closed regulatory circuit could become unstable,
because it shows a proportionally delaying behaviour of first order. Possible changes of
the adjustment of the controller or of the control path merely take effect on the speed, with
which the regulatory circuit is able to follow changes of the driving factor.
This control technical basic principle convinces by its simplicity and efficiency. It meets
us again in identical form in the second field equation 5.4*, the extended Faraday's law of
induction. In dual formulation the electric field strength now appears as input factor and
the magnetic field strength as output factor. Both regulatory circuits are coupled and
connected with each other, by deriving their driving factor each time from the controlling
factor of their dual partner. Is this structure actually efficient and meaningful?
Every regulatory circuit needs a target value, which is dictated from the outside. Let us
think of the numerous control systems in nature. At all events a higher intelligence would
be necessary for all the target values. This problematic is comparable to the question, what
existed first: the egg from which a hen hatches or the hen without which no eggs can exist.
Without a given target, evolution would not exist.

The connected regulatory circuit structure provides the matching answer: cybernetic
systems, which usually and as is well-known strive to a state of balance, get their target
value from their dual "partner". It is crucial that correspondingly dual systems are self-
sufficient and can form and develop independently out of themselves without target values
of a third side. This basic principle of cybernetics undoubtedly is brilliant.

| adaptation of | comparator | I-controller | control path |
| driving factors |
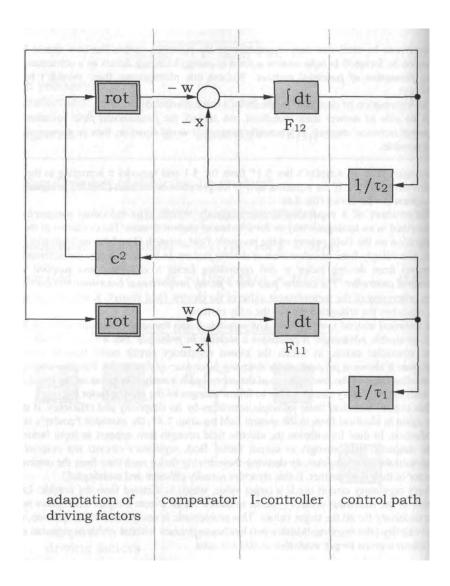
Fig. 8.7:   Signal flow diagram of the fundamental field equation
with adaptive structure.

8.7 Adaptive regulatory circuit structure

If out of the nowhere something like the cosmos or like life on earth should form, then the connected regulatory circuit structure basing on duality probably is the only possible and conceivable. Thus it merely concerns the control technical representation of the fundamental field equation.

The question for the efficiency not only concerns the stability, but equally the possibility of both systems, to oscillate and to communicate with each other by the coupling and the associated exchange of information.

Fig. 8.7 shows the signal flow diagram of both regulatory circuits. These are switched in line and form a coupled circuit, which itself can be interpreted as a third regulatory circuit. Also this one shows a change of sign in the circuit like the other two circuits.

The information technical interpretation could turn out as follows: information about a regulatory process in the lower regulatory circuit F_{11} caused for instance by a disturbance is communicated over the coupled circuit to the upper regulatory circuit F_{J2}. In this case F_{11} acts as transmitter and F_{12} as receiver of the information. Afterwards both exchange their places, because F_{12} for its part reacts by a regulatory process and reports to F_{11}. The regulatory circuits adapt to each other. Obviously it concerns the basic structure of an adaptive regulatory circuit.

To analyse the coupled circuit the examination of individual special cases is recommended. If the regulatory circuits F_{11} and F_{12} are opened up in the way that the time constants tau_1 and tau_2 go towards infinity, then the double integral effect is left. Analyses of technical regulatory circuit teach us that such systems always tend to instability. Because in addition the target value is zero, an oscillation around zero will arise, which we call electromagnetic wave.
If one of both time constants becomes finite, e.g. τ_2, then damping of the waves will occur. The "subordinate" cascade regulatory circuit F_{12} will adjust itself and now has a proportional delaying behaviour of first order. Together with the integral controller of the open F_{11}- circuit the coupled circuit will show the typical and more or less optimal regulatory behaviour of a damped oscillation.

These special cases correspond with the mathematical (fig. 5.2) and the physical (fig. 5.3) interpretation of the fundamental field equation. In addition a spatial rotation, a swirling will occur because of the double execution of the curl operation.

If interpreted control technically then vortices are the temporally stable, spatial swing of a field pointer around a centre, the vortex centre.

| Without potential vortices no stability, no matter, no energy nor information would exist! |

As can be looked up in Goethe's Faust, it always has been a desire of humanity, to find out, "what keeps the world together in the heart of hearts".

electric field	——	magnetic field
potential	——	current
capacitor	——	coil
Faraday's law of induction	——	Ampère's law
potential vortex	——	eddy current
convergence	——	divergence
dielectricity	——	permeability
non-metal	——	metal
isolator	——	electric conductor
tuned cavity	——	antenna
cold	——	hot
Yin	——	Yang
female	——	male
minus	——	plus
introverted	——	extroverted
stability	——	dynamics
water	——	fire
implosion	——	explosion

Fig. 8.8:   Table of dual correspondences
              (as a supplement to chapter 3.3 and fig. 4.2).

8.8 Information

The search for an answer for numerous philosophers and physicists was tantamount to the search for a world formula. Of course mustn't be forgotten that a formula only is a mathematical description and never the physical reality itself. It is a mathematical tool in the hand of a person and not the world or the cosmos itself, which he tries to understand. What keeps the world together in the heart of hearts, has to be more than only a pure apparatus of formulas. Actually the fundamental field equation tells us more. It reveals us a basic principle basing on duality in which the dual partners mutually dictate target values and goals. This principle convinces by its simplicity and efficiency. Apart from the "self regulation" it obviously also has the fundamental possibility of a "self organization" and the "generation of information". The field equations of the hydromagnetic field thus are the starting-point for the formation not only of matter and energy, but also of information. Accordingly holds:

Information is nothing but a structure of electromagnetic vortex fields!

This statement is new and to a large extent incompatible with the conception world of Norbert Wiener, who goes as the founder of cybernetics. From N. Wiener stems the sentence: "information is information, not matter and not energy".

We hold against it that obviously a fairly direct connection exists. We have worked out that only the vortex can show a stable adaptive regulatory circuit structure. Only the vortex and not the wave exists in two forms of formation dual to each other, and the principle of duality again is the prerequisite for the formation of information, of self organization and finally for the evolution. In fig. 8.8 well-known dual partnerships are listed. From it follows in a consistent way that for the production of information without exception the electromagnetic vortices should be considered.

But how can this so important duality occur, how can it form? This question is closely associated with the question of the formation of vortices. The signal flow diagram (fig. 8.7) to that says that the dual regulatory circuits F_1 and F_2 can only exist by the coupled circuit, which provides them the necessary target values and at the same time forwards the respective information. In this way of the oscillations and the more or less damped wave F_1 and F_2 communicate with each other.

The electromagnetic   wave   serves   solely   the mediation of information and energy.

With that falls a central role upon the wave, so that vice versa is valid:

Without wave no vortices, no duality and consequently no evolution can exist.

According to the to date state of knowledge the basic principle of cybernetics forms the basis for matter and energy as well as for information. Since the wave can only serve the transmission of information, the principle of duality and the vortex will function as carriers of information. We are entitled, to speak of vortex information, this by no means is characterized by special frequencies or modulations of frequencies. This is prevented by the property of the vortices which allows them to change the frequency. On the other hand various configurations of vortices are possible and numerous combinations and modulations are conceivable.

If technical apparatus generate vortices, then they produce information. Here a serious danger with regard to the environmental compatibility can not be excluded!

Equivalent things:
* elements of the fundamental field equation 5.7
* elements of the Greek philosophy of nature
* temperaments
* (impulses of growth)
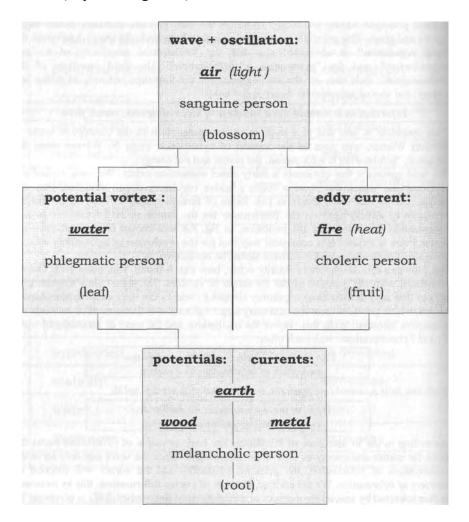
Fig. 8.9: The theory of four elements of the old Greek philosophy of nature (Aristotle and others)

8.9 Philosophy of nature

Seen in the view of the philosophy of nature now two dual points of view are possible.
The optimistic one would be:
We and our environment on the one hand are a result of the cybernetic principle and on the other hand of our observation point of view which should be valued relativistically. If really everything should be electromagnetism, a phenomenon which can't be grasped directly by humans, then the pessimist would come to the conclusion: everythins is nothing. What we observe is nothins but a deception of the senses. Perhaps therefore famous philosophers of antiquity, like Empedokles or Demokritos have ended their life in the crater of the Etna. According to the theory of the atom of Demokritos (470 to 380 B.C.) the formation of matter, earth and celestial bodies will occur by means of formation of vortices!
Empedokles (482 to 420 B.C.) was the first to develop a theory basing on four elements, which was continued and improved by Plato (428 to 348 B.C.) and Aristotle (384 to 322 B.C.). Accordingly these elements are changeable into each other and mixable with each other. From them all bodies are build up.
The terms "air, water, fire and earth", with which the philosophers have described the four elements, are of course not identical with the ones in our translation and conception world, but they were used in a philosophical sense as a substitute for the description of the respective basic principle.
There also have been different approaches, to translate these terms differently, e.g. by an assignment to the four states of matter (solid, liquid, gaseous, plasma). But the ancient texts don't get easier to read in that way.

Fig. 8.9 shows the obvious assignment to the four building parts of the fundamental field equation 5.7. It would be worth an attempt, to exchange the terms in the translations of ancient texts and to translate air with wave, water with potential vortex and fire with eddy current. The term earth has two sides, which should be translated with potential instead of wood and current instead of metal.

Let's try the translation this way with the theory of Plato[i], by correspondingly translating anew the talk of Timaios about the formation of the world. The perception of smell then is described as follows: "...as the potential vortex turns into waves (or) the wave into potential vortices, the smells are formed during this transition, and smells are smoke or fog. But fog is the transition of waves into vortices, the transition of the vortex into waves however smoke".
Plato here provides an indisputable and conclusive interpretation of the fundamental field equation. In this equation the potential vortex acts as damping term in the wave equation, what in the case of waves rolling up to vortices will show to the observer in the way that the electromagnetic waves and therefore also the light will be damped. We say, the visibility gets worse and speak of fog. If the damping phenomenon disappears again, as the potential vortices break up, then Plato speaks of smoke.
Numerous ancient texts, which until now only could be "interpreted" philosophically, in this way turn out to be a rational textbook description of natural scientific phenomena. They anyway only get readable and understandable for the general public with the modern technical terms.

---

[i]: Platon: Samtliche Werke 5, Rowohlts Klassiker Nr. 47, S. 188, 66e

Optimist:

We and our environment on the one hand are a result of the cybenetic principle and on the other hand of our observation point of view which should be valued relativistically.

_____

Pessimist:

Everything is nothing.   What we observe is nothing but a deception of the senses.

Plato[i] (talk of Timaios about the formation of the world) description concerning the perception of smell:

"...as water (the potential vortex) turns into air (waves) or air (the wave) into water (potential vortices), the smells are formed during this transition, and smells are smoke or fog. But fog is the transition of air (waves) into water (vortices), the transition of water (vortex) into air (waves) however smoke"

changed translation with the technical terms:

air_____   =   ____wave
              water   =   ___ potential vortex
              fire_____   =   ____ eddy current

As a consequence:

smell is vortex information

Fig. 9.0:   The explanation of Plato concerning the formation   of smell, smoke and fog[i]

[i]: Platon: Samtliche Werke 5, Rohwohlts Klassiker Nr. 47, S. 188, 66e

9. Usage

If the newly discovered vortex phenomenon of the vortex of the electric field exists, then it will be possible to practically use it. Whereas we still think about possibilities for technical usage, there by all means exists the possibility, that nature already is successfully using the vortex for a long time. We should look precise at things. We can only learn of nature!

Remarkable about the passage of Plato (fig. 9.0) is not only the fact, that the potential vortex already was known for two and a half thousand years and was taken into consideration for an interpretation, but also the realization of Plato, that during the described transition the smells form. Smell thus would be a vortex property!

After all vortices are able to bind information as can be inferred from the basic principle of cybernetics. With this vortex property and the statement of Plato smell obviously would be nothing else than pure information which by potential vortices is stored, distributed and eventually is caught by the hair cells for smell of the nose. If now a dog takes up a track, does it then run after vortices which remained behind or does it analyse, according to the encyclopaedia, the chemistry left behind, or does it combine both? Does the bloodhound for instance interpret the vortical oscillations of chemical substances like lattice oscillations or the movements of the electrons in the atomic hull? A lot of work awaits the research scientist of vortices here. The seminar will offer opportunity, to deepen this topic[i].

Only if technicians exist, who put an electronic box on the table with a button, at which they adjust the wanted scent of rotten eggs to lavender, we honestly can claim to have understood the phenomenon of the smell.

For the majority of the people a theory only wins its sense by the practical applicability, and therefore we'll have to develop and present a technical usage on the basis of the vortex theory.

---

[i]: Suggestions for appropriate seminar themes: the meaning of smell, taste, the aroma therapy, the homeopathy or the effect of aetheric oils. (To that in part 3, INDEL Verlagsabt. 2003)

The basic experiment
with the Tesla coil:

	50 kV	5 kHz	600 kV
		2 wndg.	24 wndg.
network		primary	secondary
high tension	capacitor	spark	coil
transformer		gap	

Antenna

ground
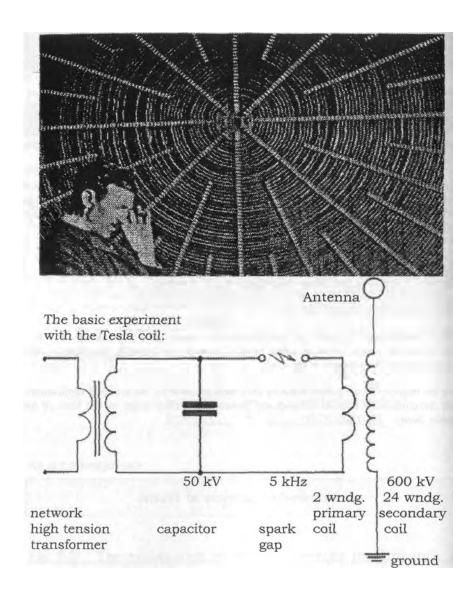
Fig. 9.1: High tension transmitter of Nikola Tesla

9.1 Longitudinal electric waves

It is important, that experts struggle for problem solutions. Only if the discussion about limits doesn't come to a result which can be grasped and verified, then also in the environmental compatibility the willingness will grow, to accept a not yet known phenomenon as a further and possibly crucial influential factor.

Already for a hundred years there has been a dispute of experts. At that time scientists all over the world were trying to verify the experiments of Heinrich Hertz. Then from America the message came, Hertz had been mistaken and the electromagnetic wave would have completely other properties. The scientists in Europe were indignant, but they had to take the message seriously, because it after all came from the important experimental physicist Nikola Tesla (1856-1943), who with his inventions of the rotary field and of the asynchronous motor has stamped today's electric energy technology as no other.

As a result Lord Kelvin boarded a steamship as a mediator and sailed 1897 to New York to convince Tesla from the opposite. But the experiments, which Tesla presented his Lordship, didn't give rise to any doubts[i], and thus Kelvin returned to Europe with the message: "Both are right, Tesla as well as Hertz! Whereas the electromagnetic wave which Hertz has detected, is a transverse wave, does Tesla work with a longitudinal wave"!

Lord Kelvin as a result started to draw most different vortex models, because it was clear to him, that a propagation as a longitudinal standing wave analogous to the sound wave only is conceivable, if quantized structures exist, which knock each other mutually. Kelvin therefore assumed vortex structures of the electromagnetic field. His vortex models were published and landed in the curiosity box of orthodox science.

Heinrich Hertz did have a big advantage. He could refer to Maxwell and calculate his wave with the field equations. For modern technology the mathematical calculability is almost an indispensable prerequisite!

For Tesla wave there however neither was a mathematical nor a physical theory. The only thing Tesla had, were presentable experiments.

In Colorado Springs he had build a 10 kW transmitting installation and lighted 200 fluorescent lamps of 50 Watt each on a mountain in the Rocky Mountains in a distance of 25 miles. With that he had completely transmitted the transmission power of 10 kW, as can be inferred from the press reports at that time. With Hertzian waves, which propagate spatially, this experiment even today, after over 100 years, wouldn't be realizable technologically. According to the law of the square of the distance one isn't even able to let glow a tiny little lamp in such a distance.

For sure his rotary field theory was a big help for Tesla in all experiments. Actually a rotary field can be seen as the special case of a planar vortex.

Thus Tesla obviously was able, to use the potential vortex without even knowing it. Tesla has stimulated a loosely coupled high tension coil wound like a spiral to self-resonant oscillations and emitted the produced vortices over an antenna (fig. 9.1). On the receiver side the process was then reversed.

_____

<i>:   N. Tesla: III. The Singular Misconception of the Wireless (Famos Scientific Illusions), Electrical Experimenter, Feb. 1919, p. 732.
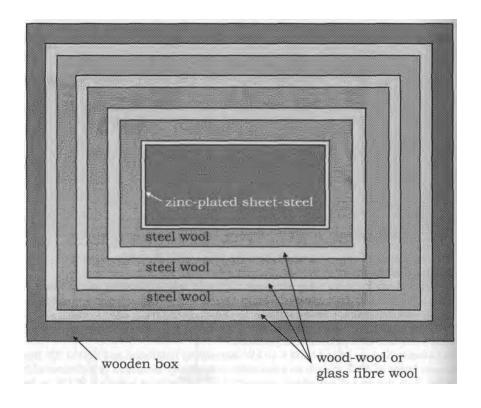
Fig. 9.2: Orgone accumulator according to Wilhelm Reich.[i]

[i]:   Dr.   James   DeMeo: The   Orgone   Accumulator   Handbook,
ISBN 0-9261855-0-7

9.2 Medical technical usage

Nikola Tesla at his time was extremely popular in the area of medicine. With his inventions injuries were cured and pain eased. Modern diathermy goes back to his work. But Tesla at that time has treated the patients with vortices, whereas today, possibly out of ignorance, electromagnetic waves are used. These however have in contrast to potential vortices only a small penetration depth. Today in addition only the effect of heat is considered and in no way the information technical effect of electric vortices. Here we are missing the comparison, to be able to say. if the treatment with a Tesla apparatus was more successful than with modem microwave radiators.

The experiments of Wilhelm Reich (1897-1957) aimed in the same direction. Exactly as Tesla 55 years before also Reich emigrated to America in 1939. He had specialized in catching and collecting vortices, which he called "orgone", from the air. In this way he could store up high energies over time and then use them purposeful. With his "orgone accumulator" he was able to cure wounds faster and to ease pain. He also treated cancer and a lot of forms of anaemia. Technically Reich could demonstrate, that charged capacitor plates discharge faster under the influence of his apparatus. His orgone accumulator for instance is a wooden box, filled with wool of steel and wood, which alternate in layers. He said that the reason for this construction is, that metals repel the orgone energy, whereas organic materials become charged and accumulate it. That holds in his opinion to a particularly high degree for water.

Reich concludes that no material and no device are known, with which the orgone energy could be shielded. This with regard to the environmental compatibility of the vortex phenomenon should make us thoughtful.

As a supplement it should be mentioned, that Reich already at the end of the forties has pointed to the dying of the forests and he has made a direct connection to the orgone energy. Reich was slandered and mocked and died in the prison of Connecticut, while his writings were burned publicly.
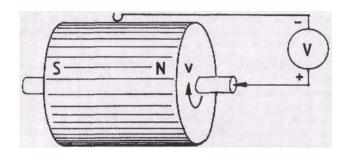
Not much better fared the Austrian forester Viktor Schauberger (1885-1958), who also can be described as visionary. He was able to produce water with a particularly good conductivity. His water in addition goes for medicinal and healthy. Also to him travelled cancer patients of far away to get this water.

Schauberger spoke of the natural treatment of the water, whatever he meant with that. In any case he build with great success installations to transport wood by floating it and even installations to mine ore with so-called double twist pipes, which made possible a transport without friction even of materials, which are heavier than the "means of transport" water. It could be proven that no contact with the pipe took place. This was scientifically investigated and confirmed at the university of Stuttgart 1952 by Prof. Popel. Quite obviously in the double twist pipe vortices have formed, which have bound the material to be transported (see phenomenon of transport).

Today you can buy levitated water at over 100 selling points in Europe, of which is claimed, that it is prepared according to instructions of Schauberger. Unfortunately we aren't able to ask him anymore, if he agrees with such a "centrifuged" water. Thus the test of the effectiveness has to be left to everyone himself or herself.

A: Concerning the functioning of the Faraday generator
(E = v x B):

B: Construction of the flying disc:
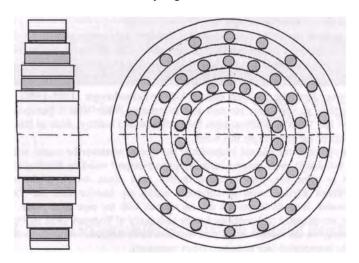
Fig. 9.3:   Applications of the Faraday generator[i]
in the flying disc of Prof. John Searl

9.3 Flying objects

The medium of Viktor Schauberger always was the water. He could produce light effects and very high temperatures with it with only minimal excitation in the form of impulses. An installation, which had been built according to his plans at the company of Siemens, eventually melted at 4000°C by improper operation, as he himself stated. According to that the machine would have released more energy than used, thus a perpetuum mobile. The authorities of the state in the Third Reich were impressed and put Schauberger in a concentration camp, where he was instructed to build a "flying saucer" under permanent supervision together with fellow prisoners. For him it's all about the concentration effect and the usage of the as a result occurring implosion in contrast to our today's " technology of explosion and fire" as Schauberger was accustomed to express himself. It is not known, if Schaubergers "repulsine" ever has took off.

A disc, which has proven its suitability to fly, was constructed and built by the english technician John R. R. Searl, although he said he can't explain the effect. He also had big difficulties, to get the apparatus under control. A disc broke through the ceiling and the roof of his laboratory and disappeared to never be seen again. Five other flying discs, which he after this experience started in the open, went lost in the same manner. Without knowing the effect, he of course neither could assess the dangers. His experiments have claimed serious injuries and a casualty. While he 1985 was put in prison under a pretext, his laboratory and his house were burned down and all documents destroyed. Now he works on a technical usage. According to the principle it concerns a Faraday machine. Thereby a permanent magnet, magnetized in axial direction, is turned. Now the magnetic induction B for a relative velocity v is measured as an electric field strength E according to equation 6.10: $E = v \times B$. (6.10)

Because the vectors are arranged as standing perpendicular to each other, will arise a tension voltage in radial direction (direction of E-field) which can be taken off. Apart from the friction no further force of reaction occurs in the case of the Faraday generator. Because of the small gain of energy until today no application ready for the market exists. But this principle, to convert magnetic field energy into electric, already has moved the nature of many inventors. Professor Searl has reversed this old principle. Whereas normally the component of the velocity towards the centre of rotation decreases, it increases in Searls case. For that he works with roller pivoted concentric rings, which he drives by a small electric motor (fig. 9.3). Doing so something inexplicable for him happens: After switching off the motor the revolutions per minute don't decrease again, but increase audibly and increase further, until the produced electric field shows the well-known high tension phenomena: corona discharges, formation of ozone, ionisation of the air and production of a vacuum in the inside of the disc.

The rings and rollers consist of several layers, which are built up similar to a bi-metal. The only explanation I can think of is that a change in structure would occur as a result of the physical length contraction which is caused by the increase of the E-field in the direction of the centre of rotation. The bi-metals try to withdraw themselves from this change by an increase of their rotation of their own (fig. 6.5). To compensate the field the disc builds up a spin, as also the elementary particles do (fig. 6.13). While the formation of vacuum prevents sparking in the inside of the flying disc, and the revolutions per minute further increase because there is no air friction whatsoever, the disc weighing 5 tons all of a sudden lakes off the ground and according to reports of eyewitnesses shoots vertically upwards.
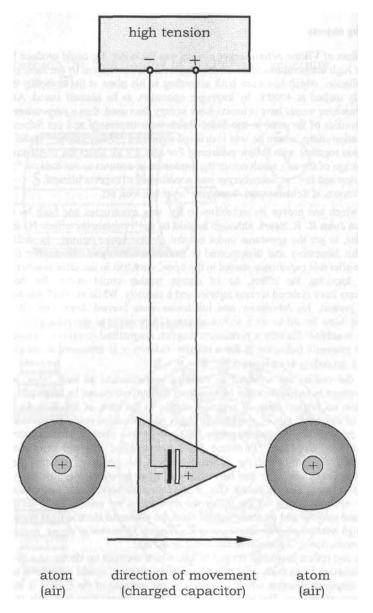
Fig. 9.4:   Capacitor experiment concerning the so-called electro-
gravitation according to Prof. Biefeld / Dr. Brown

9.4 Electro gravitation?

Wild speculations circulate about the mechanism of the flight of a "flying saucer", which should function without sound and without combustion, and for which no sound barrier exists, as pilots have observed. The talk is about cancelling gravitation or about an "electro gravitation".

Reproducible in any case is an experiment, which has been systematically investigated by the american professor Biefeld and his pupil T. Brown from 1925. Accordingly does a body charged to high tension show a force effect in the direction of its positively charged note. As a check for oneself a capacitor can be suspended on its connection wires and it can be observed, how it moves visibly in the direction of the positive pole in case it is charged (fig. 9.4).

Because the Biefeld-Brown effect depends on direction, it actually can't concern gravitation at all but merely a not understood electromagnetic interaction. In the neighbourhood of the capacitor pole air molecules are found, and their negatively charged atomic hull is attracted by the positive pole. At the same time the atomic nucleus is repelled. By that the air atoms in the presence of the high tension capacitor become unsymmetrical, causing the force of attraction due to the smaller distance to exceed the force of repulsion. At the negatively charged end the conditions are exactly reversed. There a repulsion occurs. Because the polarized air atoms and molecules are sucked in, no pressure can build up and as a result no sound barrier can occur. Experiments with charged and uncharged rockets have brought the interesting result, that the electrically charged rockets flew many times as far as the uncharged ones (5-6 times as high)[i].

Many a person now perhaps starts to dream of the flying carpet but, as said, it isn't an "effect of antigravitation". Does "free energy" actually exist, we have to ask ourselves? From the gravitation the soviet physicist Landau calculates an energy density of 16 megawatt hours per cubic meter for the earth's surface. Immediately inventors are found, who want to use this gravitational energy.

Nikola Tesla in his laboratory in Manhattan has incidentally built resonators, of which he could bring all electric, magnetic and mechanic factors in resonance. On an evening stroll he fastened a battery operated vibrator to the tubular steel scaffolding of a new building and let everything shake and wobble. In his laboratory such a device once got out of control by inattentiveness and triggered an earthquake. In that way the road surfacing and pipes were burst and window panes got broken. The police penetrating his laboratory only could see, how Tesla forcible finished the experiment with a sledge-hammer.

The experiments which got out of control of Tesla, Searl and Schauberger have one thing in common: it concerns constructions with an unipolar arrangement of the field.

Tesla had arranged the magnetic field in a unipolar way, as he has reported himself, Searl had realized electric unipolar fields in a construction similar to the electron, and Viktor Schauberger had specialized in producing unipolar structures with water vortices.

In the case of the corresponding technical usage, which can be interpreted as making use of the occurring "spin coupling", therefore in principle utmost caution is imperative.

_____

<i>:   Rho Sigma (Dr. Rolf Schaffranke): Forschung in Fesseln, das Ratsel der Elektro-Gravitation, Ventla-Verlag, Wiesbaden, 1972, Page 67.

Nikola Tesla: „Ere many generations pass our machinery will be driven by power obtainable at any point in the Universe This idea is not new, we find it in the marvellous myths of Antheus, who derives energy from the earth... Everywhere in the universe there is energy. Is this energy static or kinetic? If static, our hopes are in vain; if kinetic, and this we know it is for certain, then it is a more question of time when men will succeed in attaching their machinery to the very wheel work of nature". New York, the 20th may 1891, American Institute of Electrical Engineers.
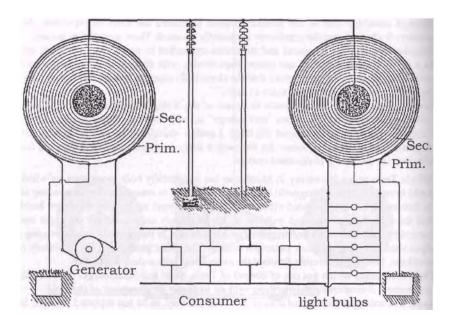
Fig. 9.5:   Energy transmission bound to a wire, Patent No. 593,138 (1897) of Tesla.

<i>:   Philadelphia Public Ledger, Nov. 2, 1933
<ii>:   Dr. Nikola Tesla: Complete Patents, Tesla Book Company, New Edition 1983, Compiled by J. T. Ratzlaff, ISBN 0-960356-8-2, page 301-304.

9.5 Free energy?

Furthermore is reported of Tesla, he would have developed a "converter for space energy" and 1931 have built it in a luxury car (Pierce Arrow)[i]. The car was a 145 km/h fast, doing so the asynchronous motor (presumably built by Westinghouse) furnished 80 HP at 1800 Rpm. The "free energy" the converter, build by Tesla himself, got from a 1.8 m long antenna. Because the motor ran without adaptation of frequency in slipping operation, it had to be cooled correspondingly. It was on the way in trial run for over a week. Now we of course want to know, of what this "free energy" consists, which Tesla will have used and of which he already 1891 had spoken in the American Institute of Electrical Engineers.

For the electron as a spherical vortex we have calculated an electric tension voltage of 511 kV between its surface and its centre respectively infinity (equation 6.31*, fig. 7.1). The highest level of tension voltage normally used for the high tension transmission lies at 380 kV (effective value); for a direct current transmission it is 500 kV. Although still higher tension voltages would be desirable, they are avoided. This is no accident. Experiments with higher tension voltages namely have resulted in inexplicable high losses. We have an explanation: the electrons are taken apart on the way! Their inner energy amounts with the outer energy to zero. The charge carrier, which in the power station as result of an energy conversion has been sent on a journey, is in danger to vanish into thin air (e.g. corona) for tension voltages above 511 kV. The transmitter of Nikola Tesla however (fig. 9.1 and 9.5) worked with 600 kV and more. He said, with his experiments he had destroyed billions of particles without being able to observe an emission of energy and made fun of the misinterpretation of Einstein of the already at that time well-known mass-energy relation $E = mc^2$.

For the purpose of a one wire or a wireless energy transmission the tension voltage therefore has to be higher than 511 kV. With Teslas equipment however the electrons shouldn't be destroyed, but merely be pulled apart to plane circular vortices with help of the today is Tesla coil known winding. These then could be sent on a journey over the antenna, to aga i n be caught and formed back in spherical electrons by the receiver antenna. As long as the electrons don't fall apart, they keep their structure and quantum property. Quanta pass on an excitation, for instance a bump, in form of a longitudinal standing wave, by one particle bumping the neighbouring particle, analogous to sound waves, where one gas molecule passes the bump on to the neighbour. The transmission hence takes place as longitudinal scalar wave.

Electrons pulled apart to planar vortices in addition haven't got a closed vortex centre anymore on their journey. For the by Tesla in his laboratory used and publicly presented one wire energy transmission (1897, Patent Nr. 593,138) the transmission hence doesn't take place in the wire, but as vortices around the -wire. That explains, why only a relatively thin conductor, which normally should have melted, was necessary for a demonstrated power transmission of 10 kW. Tesla however could show, that the wire stayed cold and virtually no heating losses were measurable[ii] (fig. 9.5). He himself said, that this one wire transmission technology is much better than the alternating current technology full of losses, which stems from him as well. Tesla must have known the limit of 511 kV very exactly, because on several photographs one can see, that he changed the coiling technique off this value!

---

[i]:   Philadelphia Public Ledger, Nov. 2, 1933
[ii]:   resp. Tesla's lost inventions, VAP, page 36 and page 48, 49.
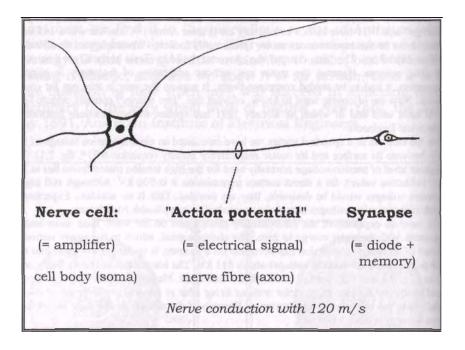
Fig. 9.6: Nerve cell and message processing (neurons)

- Material information conduction: at plants
- Information conduction with hormones: at simple animals
  - Electrical information conduction: at higher developed creatures
  - Analog transmission: from 10% and more difference in potential, and
- Digital transmission: number of the action potentials
- Modulated information: i.e. complex modulation of the action potential (the potential vortices)

9.6 Nerve conduction and action potential

Technical solutions often are only a suboptimum and many times they are anything but an optimum. In many cases the feasibility stands in the foreground. In the question of the current distribution at that time the decision was made for the worse system, the full of losses three phase system, because no current meters were available for the free of losses one wire technology. Without being able to collect money from the consumer, it wouldn't have been possible for the energy distribution installations to pay for themselves. Compared to that is nature with its selection principle merciless and without compromises. Only the most efficient system has a chance to survive and to spread. If it's about transmittining information in an electric way and two different principles present themselves, then in nature only the better one will be brought into action.

Let's take a look at the nerve conduction in the human body. In the synapses ion concentrations and electric potentials of 70 to 90 mV arise. Here with conventional gauges the activity of a nerve can be detected. From a measurement of the transmission time of synapse to synapse the velocity of the signal is determined. If we however want to measure between the switch points on the line, then we have to find out, that for instance with an ammeter actually nothing is measurable. In addition the nerve fibre has a miserable conductivity.

The biologist calls the electric signal just "action potential" and draws a vortex-like ring around the nerve fibre and speaks of a mixed digital and analogue information transmission.

The doctor on the other hand knows two different types, fast and slow nerves. In the inside both are built up virtually identical. A characteristic difference consists of the fact, that the fast nerves are jacketed with a thick fat layer.

The technician would say, they are better isolated, but why they therefore should be faster, he hardly would be able to answer. If we however assume, that the action potentials or OUT potential vortices oscillate around the conductor, thus exactly in the isolation layer and are forwarded there, then possibly an explanation would have been found.

The nerve conduction moreover has much in common with the one wire system of Tesla:

1. Charges and electric potentials are transmitted
2. Doing so a transport of charge carriers, thus an electric current on the line, isn't detectable.
3. Consequently no losses worth mentioning occur.
4. Decisive for the functioning is the dielectric insulator material which surrounds the conductor and not the electric resistance of the conductor.
5. In contrast to electric circuits a draining conductor is unnecessary.

It looks as if the one wire system is not new at all, as would nature use it already for ages in the highest perfection. We realize immediately, why our head does without a ventilator and how the high of signal processing density can be explained. Compared with our brain modern personal computer (PC) with their backward cable technology are far less than a suboptimum.

With regard to the pressure on the environment by interference radiation we had derived, that currents and eddy currents with the skin effect direct their radiation to the outside, whereas potential vortices with their concentration effect direct it to the inside. Probably for this reason the radiation field of a person is environmentally better compatible than that of a PC.
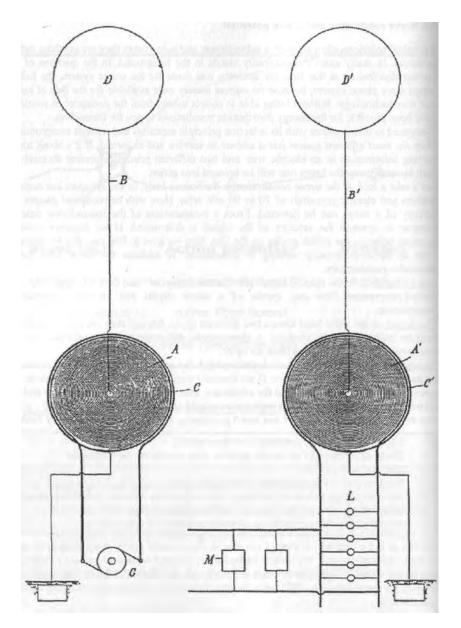
Fig. 9.7:   Wireless energy transmission,
             Patent No. 645,576 (1900) of Tesla.[i]

[i]:   Dr. Nikola Tesla: Complete Patents, Tesla Book Company, page 311-321.

9.7 Wireless energy transmission technology

Tesla still went a step further. He has cut the wire connection between transmitter and receiver (fig. 9.5) and instead has installed each time a spherical electrode (fig. 9.7). With this facility he now was able, to transmit energy completely wireless (1900, Patent No. 645,576). Building on this principle Tesla already 1890 had built a radio remote control for a battery operated submarine and had presented his patented system the navy. But they weren't able, to recognize the strategic importance of the radio technology and rejected with the words: "It's too advanced!" (fig. 9.8).

Tesla further had proven with this technology the mentioned proof concerning the existence of longitudinal electromagnetic waves. There exist descriptions, partly of Tesla himself, how he, inside or also outside his laboratory, goes in search of oscillation nodes of the standing wave with a measuring receiver[i]. He names several conditions for the wireless energy transmission:

1.   "perfect resonance" (same frequency) of transmitter and receiver
2. Installation of the receiver on an "oscillation node" (maximum).

Important is also the measurement of the velocity of propagation, and that isn't constant from the start for a wave, which oscillates in the direction of propagation. From the research of earthquakes we know, that the longitudinal waves are faster than the as well occurring transverse waves. Usually the distance to the epicentre is determined from the difference in transmission time.
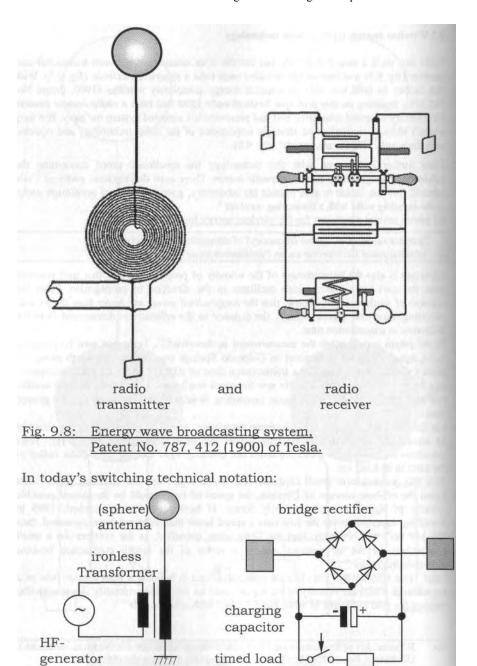
In the patent specification the measurement is described[i]. Tesla has sent longitudinal radio signals from his transmitter in Colorado Springs once around the earth along the earth's surface and determined a transmission time of 0,08484 seconds. This corresponds to a frequency of approx. 6 Hz. He saw his result confirmed, as he could find the oscillation node of the standing wave again (according to $\lambda/2$) in his laboratory (on the ground plate).

For the full wave length λ the Schumann resonance, which describes a standing wave of an around the earth running Hertzian wave, lies as is well-known at 7.8 Hz! Tesla calculates for his wave a speed 1.6 times the speed of light assuming the polar radius of the earth to be 6363 km.

Also this measurement result confirms, that Tesla didn't use the Hertzian wave. Tesla found the off-beat concept of Einstein, the speed of light would be the fastest possible velocity of signal transmission, only funny. If however today is claimed, 1993 in tunnelling experiments for the first time a speed faster than light has been measured, then this just isn't true. Possibly also the Tesla wave tunnelled, as the vortices for a small conductivity of the air contract and as a result of the length contraction become correspondingly fast.

Later Tesla after several goes in vain even succeeded in building a high tension tube as a tunnel, with which the velocity of the signal could be increased arbitrarily. Tesla with that pursued the goal to be able to make radio contact with other worlds[ii].

_____

[i]:   N.Tesla: Art of Transmitting Electrical Energy Through the Natural Mediums, US-Patent No. 787,412, 18.4.1905, Complete Patents pp. 397-402.
[ii]:   M. Cheney: Tesla, Man out of Time, Barnes & Noble Books, New York, 1993, und S. 309, Omega-Verlag, 1996, ISBN 3-930243-01-6

radio   and   radio
transmitter   receiver

Fig. 9.8:   Energy wave broadcasting system,
            Patent No. 787, 412 (1900) of Tesla.

In today's switching technical notation:

(sphere)
antenna

bridge rectifier

ironless
Transformer

charging
capacitor

HF-
generator   timed load

9.8 Measuring and switching technique of Nikola Tesla

As an important and accepted experimental physicist with 14 doctor titles and carrier of the Edison medal Tesla always has held on to his measurement results. Not a theoretical interpretation but exclusively correct carried out measurements have shown him the physical reality. But the by Tesla won measurement results were already for 100 years hard to digest and couldn't be brought into accord with any theory. Therefore a switching technical analysis of the by Tesla described and carried out experiments should give us now information over the nature of the free energy, the tachyon energy, the orgone, or however fantastic the terms may read.

The Tesla coil, according to the instructions of the inventor, is a flat coil wound like a spiral in contrast to the copies today on sale which, surely out of ignorance, are mostly cylindrical. Its peculiarity probably is to be seen in the circumstance, that charges moved through the wire of the coil inevitably increase their angular velocity towards the centre, In this way the electrons, which at first are spherical elementary vortices, are pulled apart to vortex rings like planar discs.

Tesla switches the "secondary" called flat coil between two "terminals". Following he sends, stimulated by his "primary", charge carriers from one terminal to the other and back again and produces a standing resonant oscillation.

Mostly replaces Tesla one of both terminals by the earth. He thus assumes, that now the earth as a spherical electrode takes over the function of one terminal. That he again infers from the observation, that a by the transmitter wireless fed little lamp goes out, if he cuts the connection to the ground. Doing so the oscillation collapses. Radio sets on the other hand can also be operated without grounding, as we know!

The degree of effectiveness of today's distribution technology of current due to the heating losses lies clearly beneath 100 per cent. Without the losses of the wiring it lies close to 100 per cent for the discussed one wire energy transmission. There the vortex rings are guided nicely one after another along the line like beads drawn over a string. This result even is to be expected, as far as no vortex "jumps off the wire or "falls apart". For the wireless version Tesla however to his own surprise had to find out that more energy could be received, than his transmitter produced. The measured degree of effectiveness lay above 100 per cent! He therefore called his transmitter a "Magnifying Transmitter" (fig. 9.10). The further transmitter and receiver were away of each other, the further the received energy increased. Tesla inferred from this, that there had to exist free energy and that he had caught that too.

Consequently he had built a receiver for free energy and registered for patent (1901, Patent No. 685,957, fig. 9.9). Tesla states that the amount of energy depends on the size of the "terminal". Of today's sight we could be willing, to describe this receiver plate as a solar panel, but we should know, that the apparatus produced energy even at night! In addition the energy gain was considerable higher than for today's solar panels. Tesla spoke of "radiations ", of an unknown radiation and he in his lifetime has in vain sought-for   help   of   explanation.
The vortex model will also in this question be a valuable help to us.
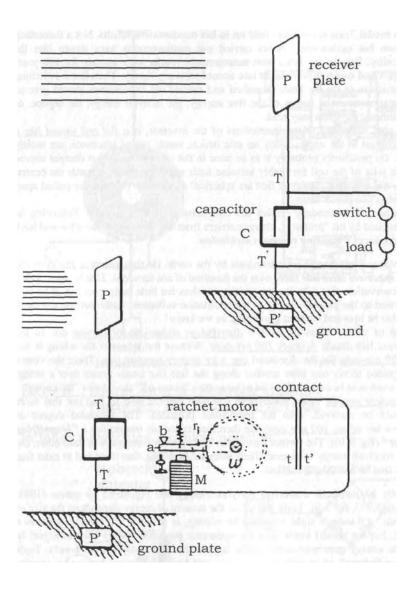
Fig. 9.9:   Receiver for "free energy",
            Patent No. 685,957 (1901) of Tesla

9.9 Energy technical usage

The answer of the potential vortex theory could turn out as follows:
If at the transition of the one wire to the wireless transmission the ring-like vortices is
purloined the guiding wire the vortices immediately begin to turn around each other, as is
observable for flow-technical ring-like vortices,. In this way the ring-like vortex the next
moment shows its inside. If it before was an electron vortex (fig. 4.3), then it now shows
as positron, if it was negatively charged, then it now is positively charged. Following it
oscillates back again, etc. Wit that the ring-like vortex on the average has no measurable
charge and no mass, because it alternately forms matter and anti-matter. Without inter-
action it has an enormous ability of penetration . In physics such particles are called
neutrinos.
Tesla thus had, apart from his transmitted energy wave, which turned out to be neutrino
radiation, by chance also caught neutrinos which oscillated synchronously.

According to the actual level of knowledge do neutrinos penetrate the earth and appear
also on the night side. The order of magnitude in every second amounts to approx. 66
billion neutrinos per square centimetre. It is a true bombardment. If we would be able, to
collect and convert all neutrinos, the won energy would be entirely sufficient, to cover the
need for energy of the world population (approx. 27 W/m^2). We merely have to
materialize them, thus give them mass, charge and the necessary localization. Tesla was
able to do that experimentally! Let's record:
The ring-like vortices, which Tesla with his transmitter has sent on a journey as electrons
with an open vortex centre, are neutrinos (fig. 7.12). Tesla requests that transmitter and
receiver operate in resonance, thus with the same frequency. Under this condition the
receiver collects in all oscillating vortices, so that no one is lost.
If the neutrinos for instance are just positively charged when leaving the transmitter
electrode, then an electromagnetic force of attraction takes place, if the receiver electrode
at the same time is negatively charged. The required operation with the same frequency
and opposite phase guarantees that also the next moment, if both, the neutrino and the
receiver, have changed their polarity, the electromagnetic attraction is preserved.
It is obvious, that strange neutrinos which fly past and by chance oscillate synchronously
are as well attracted. In that way the power collected in the receiver capacitor will increase
further and degrees of effectiveness of over 100% are obtainable. Tesla discharges the
receiver capacitor timed with the frequency of resonance (fig. 9.9) and points to the
difficulty of an exact keeping of the condition of synchronisation.
Tesla indeed did work on a theory of his own, but never published it. The patent office and
his lawyers had to proceed from the Maxwell theory, although Tesla knew only too good,
that his apparatus in no way could be described with this theory. It therefore can't be
excluded, that important facts in his patent specifications haven't been mentioned at all -
or even worse - consciously or unconsciously in an inapplicable manner have been
explained with the Maxwell theory.
Perhaps this is the more profound reason, why the numerous Tesla imitations don't want
to function quite so well. With the new theory there should be some changes, and we
should accept the challenge for the sake of humanity.

The transmitter tower of Tesla (57 m high with a spherical electrode of 21 m) for the transmission in multiplex mode of operation (according the inventor) of:

- telephone calls
- telegraph services
- teleprinter services
- radio programmes
- navigation signals
- time signals
- video signal

Fig. 9.10:   The planned transmitter Wardencliff of Tesla on Long
Island,   7.5 MW (1902).

9.10 Environmental compatibility

We now can summarize the different observations and try to find answers for the in the
first chapter raised questions concerning the electromagnetic environmental compatibility.
The by Tesla used longitudinal energy wave is a potential vortex wave in the sense of the
vortex model of Kelvin, which we again could identify as neutrino radiation (Dirac).
Also other, partly quite fantastic terms, are known like "radiations" (Tesla), "orgone
radiation" (Reich), "tachyons" (Feinberg), "grid radiation" (Hartmann), "bioradiation" or
"water veins".
Actually these rays have nothing to do with water as a cause. Water with its high dielec-
tricity however favours and influences the course and the local distribution of the
radiation. The maximums of the standing wave considered for themselves result lines in
straight as a die in the landscape. Of Tesla is known, that he measuring technically could
detect the cross points of the lines, which he called oscillation nodes.
There exist so-called dowsers, who can make these standing waves out even without
technical aids. For that they hold a fork in their hands, which suddenly moves over such
lines.
Let's remember that the same potential vortices are used at the nerve conduction as
reaction potentials to conduct stimuli. If ring-like vortices arrive at a muscle, it contracts
without knowing, if the signal was sent from the brain over the spinal cord or picked up
from the environment over the fork and the hand.

Thus if the same signals, which we use for the tasks of controlling and thinking, are also
produced by technical apparatus, then this touches the question of the environmental
compatibility in a direct way. Above extremely strong points of resonance, which are
called "geopathic zones", now and then even is warned about "psychotronics", a function
trouble of the brain, which can show in a disturbance of the waking consciousness.
A possible explanation would be that the brain is occupied with so much vortices picked
up from the outside, that it isn't able anymore to accomplish its actual tasks. For muscle
cramps or an inexplicable crash of a PC an correspondingly interpretation would be
obvious.
As long as no gauges are available, the highest caution is imperative!

If Tesla had been able to put into operation his transmitter tower for longitudinal waves
("World Telegraphy", Wardenclyffe, Long Island, s. fig. 9.10) with the estimated power of
7.5 Megawatt and thus had been able to realize his dream of a world-wide wireless
communication, then this could have had hardly estimable consequences for the health of
the world population.
Shortly before the completion of the project, in the year 1905, Tesla without notice let stop
all work. He to that never made an explanation to anyone. Officially it was said, his
financial backer J. P. Morgan would have withdrawn his financial means. In any case
was Tesla financially ruined with this step.
Perhaps also T. A. Edison was behind it, who was his opponent at that time. Edison
committed himself engaged for the use of direct current. Against the alternating current,
preferred by Tesla, Edison argued with unhealthy risks, and with that he perhaps wasn't
so wrong at all.
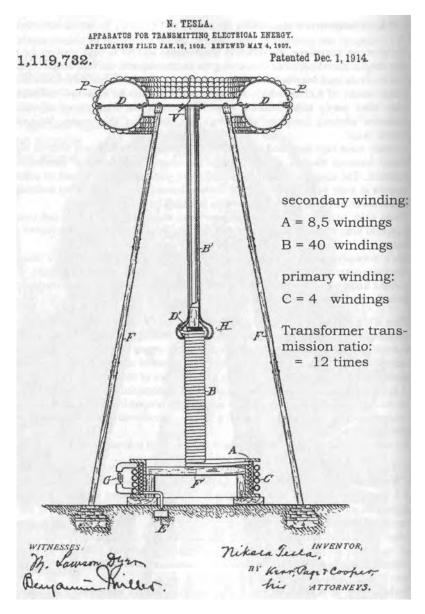
Fig. 9.11:   Concerning the technology of the Wardencliff transmitter (fig. 9.10). [i]

[i]:   Dr. Nikola Tesla: Complete Patents, (J.T.Ratzlaff), Tesla Book Company (1983), ISBN 0-960356-8-2, P. 435.

9.11 Ecologically fair usage

Tesla not only has stimulated ecologically fair usages of the energy radiation. To that can be counted the use of a Tesla transmitter as a radiation weapon[i] as well as the mentioned building of a Tesla interferometer, the low-frequency interferences of which can lead to mighty gravitational waves and with help of which it should be possible, to produce earthquakes, to sink ships or to shoot down planes from the sky[i]. Against the background of two world wars it can be understood, why Tesla has drawn attention to the possibilities of a use of his system for the purpose of defence.

In today's sight a technology like Tesla's wireless energy transmission (fig. 9.11) hardly would have any chance of a large technical use, because it should be reckoned with enormous problems of environmental compatibility. After all had come out in our considerations, that entirely in contrast to the Hertzian wave just of the Tesla energy wave direct biological effects are to be expected. A purposeful medical use of the Tesla rays however can be imagined.

The collecting of "free" energy waves with a neutrino receiver at first undoubtedly would be a clean and ecologically fair alternative to the present energy technology, with which we heat or nuclearly contaminate our environment. But even the use of free energy converters has limits. Should it turn out that the Photosynthesis uses such a materialization, in which the necessary free electron for the chemical reaction actually is produced from a caught neutrino in the so-called reaction centre and thus the reaction energy is won, then for an as usual excessive use by men it can't be excluded anymore, that the plants on earth die and nothing grows anymore!

I in contrast attribute big chances to the one wire transmission technology. Because for an use of alternative and regenerative energy sources, like the sun in the desert or the geothermal energy in Iceland, the transport of energy has to be made over large distances through the oceans the small losses and the possibility to be able to use sea cables, play a big role. In the residential areas and conurbations on the other hand it has a positively effect, that by the concentration effect of the potential vortices the interference radiation is directed inward. Laid on the bottom of a sea or of a river, such a line in addition is protected against the effects of lightning and sabotage, and it neither spoils the countryside, as the old-fashioned high tension pylons do.

For transportation tasks the mentioned making use of the spin coupling would surely be the most suitable drive. The denser the medium, the more efficient would be the driving effect, for which reason not only flying objects, but quite particularly also ships and sub-marines could be operated non-polluting in this way without combustion and without exhaust fumes. Build up effects by the water pressure or the sound barrier don't occur. But control might not be entirely unproblematic. If for the reason of a unipolar arrange-ment of the field a relative velocity to compensate the field becomes necessary, then a correspondingly build up arrangement will do so without considering losses. It is no acci-dent that most apparatus which got well-known have flown the builder sooner or later "past his ears" (note of the translator: broke into pieces). Till a commercially utilizable flying saucer has been built, many technological hurdles have to be taken.

Claims to an up-to date environmental policy in view of longitudinal electromagnetic energy waves
= Tesla waves = neutrino radiation = scalar waves
= potential vortex waves:

1. Gauges must be developed and built, with which the energy waves can be measured. _____

2. All technical apparatus should be tested regarding the emission of energy waves. Harmful radiation should be avoided._____

3. Only such transmitter antennas may be brought into action, which emit a minimum of energy waves. _____

4. The ability of biological systems to absorb energy waves should be determined. To that also belongs the question, how many vortices collect locally and how fast they fall apart. _____

5. Limits for allowed pressure produced by artificially energy waves should be fixed, regulations and laws enacted._____

6. The in nature available energy waves should be brought to a technical use, with the goal of a natural energy production.

Fig.   9.12:   Catalogue of claims concerning the environmental
compatibility in the view of the new field theory.

9.12 Claims concerning the environmental compatibility

Now we still not know, if the using of a handy or another electronic device poses a danger to the user. Now, we surely can't exclude a danger, and the statement of the manufacturer, it is safe because all limits have been met, is worth nothing, as long as the part of longitudinal waves isn't measured. Therefore stands at the very top of the list of the catalogue of claims (fig. 9.12) the development and the building of gauges to measure Tesla radiation. More than half the 700 patents of Nikola Tesla concern the building of transmitter and receiver installations for energy waves. Here a lot of valuable clues are found, especially as he himself has built and used some of the switching circuit designs. In the seminar a rebuild is discussed, with which 1995 the existence of longitudinal waves could be proven [A7].

For an earthquake always both, the transverse and the longitudinal wave, occur simultaneously and, taken exact the same is valid for the sound wave, even if the transverse part doesn't get too far in the air. The emission of both parts in analogy is almost to be expected of an electromagnetic wave generator or transmitter. Actually both waves are detectable at the receiving point: The useful transverse wave and the longitudinally propagating vortices, which show as noise (fig. 4.7). If the vortices are predominant and the useful signal goes under in the noise, then a interruption of the radio operation occurs. Also small gardeners immediately near a radio station have made experiences as e.g. in a distance of one kilometre from the transmitter of RIAS-Berlin. They were able to light their allotments day and night with a neon tube, to which they merely had tied a free wire. The radio station immediately insinuated, that they in an illegal manner had tapped their useful wave and damped it. But it can't be excluded, that the transmitter has sent a longitudinal part in the ether too, which was responsible for the energy transport. But that suggests, that also at other transmitter antennas, thus for the mobile phones, the unwelcome parts is transmitted even than, if we don't use it at all.

Still another problem is added. If in a modern receiver radio waves arrive, then they roll up to a standing wave and according to fig. 1.4 to a vortex over the antenna. According to that we aren't able anymore to distinguish, if the transmission took place as Hertzian wave or as Tesla wave. The separation of both sorts of waves has to take place before the antenna is reached.

An up-to date measurement arrangement would look as follows: In front of the receiver antenna a path with a tunnel, which represents an insurmountable obstacle for the transverse waves (fig. 6.14), is placed. Then only the longitudinal waves pass the tunnel, and these at the end of the tunnel can be recorded and analysed with conventional technology. The tunnel is an elegant possibility, to make use of the part of Tesla waves. After all only this part is relevant with regard to the electromagnetic environmental compatibility. Concerning the above asked question we can take home at least one important realization. The probability is quite high, that you actually notice nothing of the handy radiation, because not every system react in the same manner to certain vortices. The resonance conditions regarding frequency, phase and position always have to be fulfilled, if an absorption of energy waves should occur. (fig. 2.10 B, E. coli bacteria). On the other hand it however can't be excluded, that just you or me synchronize according to frequency and collect 100 % of the transmitted energy radiation. In contrast to the Hertzian wave plays for that the distance to the source of interference only a secondary role! Seen that way worries would by all means be entitled ...

From Indian mysticism:
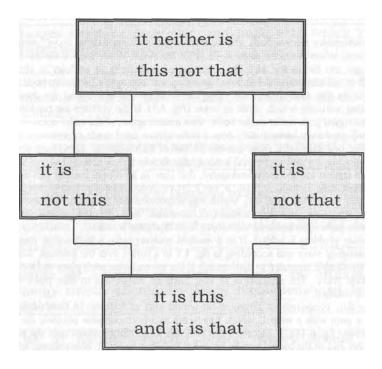
Fig. 9.13:   The structure of the world equation, an example from
Indian mysticism

9. 13 Epilogue belonging to part 1

The correctness of a new theory not by all means guarantees, that it also is accepted! A new theory must be used. Only if a concrete need exists then an acknowledgement is to be expected if at first only by the direct beneficiaries.

In november 1994 in Munich the trade fair "Electronica" took place. Here invited by the Deutschen Gesellschaft fur EMV-Technologie (German association for EMC-technology, note of the translator) the books about potential vortices [Al, A2] were honoured with a prize by an internationally renowned EMC-scientist. The number of people, who the potential vortex theory helps further to find answers to problems, which until now aren't explicable, grows further.

Nevertheless, nobody should believe that something will be changed to the content of the text books in the shelves that fast. Habit and laziness encourage to further use the to date interpretation, even if a new theory has ready a better and convincing answer. It will take some time, to give an example, till the heating of water in a microwave oven is explained as eddy losses, as is described sound by the potential vortex theory already today. The discovery of a physical phenomenon may happen in a fright second. Its acknowledgement on the other hand as a rule is a lengthy procedure. If we look back in history we find out that even in the past it hasn't been otherwise.

Of the four fundamental phenomena in fig. 8.2 at first the tension voltages and the charges have been discovered by Coulomb (5.7e).

(5.7c): An effect of the eddy currents was observed already 1825 by the French physicist Arago. He discovered that a magnetic needle suspended above a rotating disc tends to rotate along. Out of ignorance he named the effect "rotational magnetism".

But the eddy currents could only be mathematically described with the help of two laws, the law of Ampere (1820) and the law of induction of Faraday (1831). Because the effect due to the eddy current losses rather was regarded as disturbing, technical applications or patents at first have stayed out. At first Riidenberg has carried out fundamental calculations for eddy current brakes in 1906. The discovery and usage of the "skin effect" is to be attributed to Tesla.

(5.7b): The electromagnetic wave for the first time was mathematically described by Maxwell (1864). He had aimed to calculate the light and he could show, that his theory actually could correctly describe all properties of the light. With that he was able to prove the correctness of his theory. But he had to deal with many sceptics, because he had postulated the dielectric displacement, without however in his lifetime being able to measure it because of its smallness.

This may be the reason, why the discovery is attributed to Heinrich Hertz and was and is spoken of the Hertzian wave. Neutrally seen Hertz at first was nothing more than a enthusiastic pupil, who had worked through the "Treatise"[i], Maxwells books. All results, which Hertz could observe experimentally, already were contained in the Maxwell-theory and published.

_____

[i]:   James Clerk Maxwell: A Treatise on Electricity & Magnetism, vol. 2, Chapter XX: Electromagnetic Theory of Light. Dover Publ. New York

But the great mathematical description of Maxwell at first had a purely academic importance. The interest of the general public on the other hand concentrates on the practical applicability. Hertz had experimented with antennas and has laid the foundations of the building of a gauge for electromagnetic waves (1888). The wireless transmission of invisible waves was convincing. It was an entirely new technology, which stimulated fantasy in view of a technical usage. A practical man, who was stimulated by the theoretical realizations, was Marconi. He goes for the inventor of the radio (1895, Nobel prize: 1909).

Between the three summits, first the calculation and at the same time discovery, second the measurement and third the usage of the wave phenomenon lay 31 years, and the radio technology is developing still further, even today. In the area of the cellular phone network and the telecommunication even a kind of gold mining mood prevails, which can't be impressed much even by hints of an electromagnetic environmental compatibility.

In the euphoria of the past 100 years is fallen into oblivion completely, that besides the by Hertz detected transverse wave in the wave equation according to Laplace and according to the original version of Maxwell also a longitudinal wave was described mathematically. This one was discovered and detected by Tesla in numerous experiments. With reference to his discovery Tesla initially had asserted publicly, Hertz had been at fault, with which he undoubtedly was wrong and had incurred the wrath and the scorn of the scientific community. As a result of this development his experiments haven't been reproduced and the discovery of the scalar wave could fall into oblivion.

Not enough with such sanctions against the inconvenient freethinker Tesla a series of professors like Gibbs and Heaviside have made cuts and discarded all parts from the original version of the Maxwell equations, which by that time weren't considered to be experimentally proven by experiments of Ampere, of Faraday, of Ohm and Hertz. With that the scalar waves fell victim to the axe, what, though it had encountered severe criticism, finally entered as textbook opinion into all textbooks, after Hertz also had sanctioned this measure.

If the field equations according to Maxwell in today's revised version don't describe scalar waves anymore, then all orthodox scientists, who want to bear reference to that, have to bear one thing in mind: discarding a term of an equation is the same as neglecting it. But the term only may be neglected if it is sufficiently small. The first thing every student learns in the physical practical training is that this first has to be tested. For that the term has to be measured and its order of magnitude must be determined. Then it is little helpful and extremely unscientific, if at first is neglected and on the basis of the revised field equations, which have put all scalar waves to zero, is demonstrated that the neglect was allowed or even necessary.

A practical example are the longitudinal wave parts, like they occur and are proven in the near-field of a transmitter antenna. Considering the order of magnitude a neglect is out of the question. On the other hand they should not exist at all according to textbook physics, because they had fallen victim to the axe. Since most scientists in present time do not know about the cutting action anymore, they are postulating field vortices anew in the proximity of an antenna. Field vortices, which are propagating longitudinally in the direction of a field pointer as a scalar wave.

With that they calculate their own arbitrary assumption[i].

If in the practical training of physics a student unevaluated neglects an essential factor of influence, then his experiment goes as not passed. The experiment must be repeated so long until according to the approved methods of scientific soundness all used neglects have been tested individually and have undergone an error consideration.

Do we now have to deny the cutting action, which had been plotted by Gibbs, Heaviside and others, having the necessary scientific soundness? Do we have to review and rework all textbooks concerning the illegal neglect? Since the cutting action a gap gapes in the field theory!

(5.7d): The potential vortex fills the remaining gap in fig. 8.2. Several research scientists and scientists can be named, who already could observe this phenomenon: in front of all goes Nikola Tesla for discoverer of the Tesla currents, very weak currents which are said to cause extremely high potentials. Here presumably cause and effect have been mixed up, because weak currents never can produce high potentials. Actually the potentials prove to be a result of the potential vortices, whereas the currents aren't more than a result, nothing but leak currents. At least Tesla could use the vortex, but without a usable theory he neither could calculate nor adequately explain it. Besides Tesla Wilhelm Reich should be mentioned, who has collected the vortices in his orgone accumulator.

Mostly only certain aspects were observed and investigated: by Tesla the planar vortex, by Reich the influence on the weather, by Schauberger the water vortices and by all three the medical and biological aspect. The list of names is incomplete and could arbitrarily be continued.

With the discovery of the potential vortex (1990) the basis for the building of a gauge and the technical usage of the physical phenomenon is laid [A1]. It not only concerns the search for water, but also the detecting of the vortex balls and vortex streets, of the standing waves of the energy radiation in the air, at the workplace, at the bedroom, in clinics, in recreational areas and hotels. As explained at the start, neither the field strength of a Hertzian wave nor the arising heat development can be made responsible for biological or technical harm.

It primarily are the newly discovered vortices of the electric field, which take effect. The effects can, as we have seen, as well be good for health as bad for health. Intensity, plane of polarization, vortex configurations and many other characteristics play a role here. To research these influential factors gauges for vortices will be needed as well.

We have to realize that in the technical domain the electromagnetic compatibility of an apparatus is determined by its sensitiveness to vortices, thus by the fact how many and which vortices can cause a function trouble. To determine the environmental compatibility of a product the emitted vortices, the energy radiation, have to be measured. Limits for high tension lines, for screens or handheld phones must be given in units of the potential vortices. The potential vortex has shown us the way to a unified theory and has brought along a new picture and understanding of our environment. It with that wants to show us the correct way for an ecologically compatible dealing with nature.

---

[i]:   Zinke, Brunswig: Lehrbuch der Hochfrequenztechnik, 1. Bd., 3.Aufl. 1986 Springer-Verlag Berlin, Seite 335

Part 1: Edition belonging to the lecture:
    "Electromagnetic Environmental Compatibility"

Prof. Dr.-Ing. Konstantin Meyl

Scalar waves

Abstract: 1. Auflage 1996, 4. Auflage and 1st English Edition 2003

Both technical and biological systems can be influenced by electromagnetic fields, whereby numerous questions still are open, like e.g. concerning limits and the nature of physical interference fields. The book shall do justice to the circumstance, that a fact oriented discussion about ,,electrosmog" implies an analysis of possible reasons, a mathematical derivation and a physical argumentation.

We proceed from the assumption, that only that part of the electromagnetic wave should be considered for malfunctions, which has been absorbed and which has rolled up to a field vortex. The effectiveness depends on the amount of the produced vortices and on the life span, the decay of vortices.

Analogous to the sound wave vortices in space are propagating as longitudinal waves. In this context is pointed to numerous effects. Examples for the technical and biological use of these standing waves are the energy transmission of Nikola Tesla as well as the nerve conduction, which functions in a corresponding manner. If the same vortices, which man uses for conduction of information, are emitted by technical devices, then biological reactions can't be excluded anymore and worries with regard to ,,electrosmog" seem to be justified.

Causes, phenomena
and natural scientific consequences

Scalar Waves

From an extended vortex and field theory to a technical, biological
and historical use of longitudinal waves.

Part 2

by

Professor Dr.-Ing. Konstantin Meyl

Edition belonging to the lecture and seminar "Electromagnetic environmental compatibility"

(Original title: "Elektromagnetische Umweltvertraglichkeit")

Translated out of the German language
by Ben Jansen
(2000-2003)

* * *

Part 2:   Edition belonging to the energy technical seminar

Free energy and the interaction of the neutrino radiation

＊＊＊

Preface to the seminar

The point of a seminar is, to deepen, to practise and, as far as possible, to practically appy the material of a lecture. The knowledge of the content of the lecture hence is a prerequisite for the participation.

For the reader of this book that's tantamount to the recommendation, to have read the first part, the edition belonging to the lecture, before*[1]*. Here the questions concerning the „electromagnetic environmental compatibility" are asked and the necessary bases for their answering is laid. Also practical consequences for various areas of science are indicated. The deepening most suitable should be made in form of a seminar, subdivided into the here presented part 2 to the energy technical seminar and a part 3 to the information technical seminar. Part 2 correspondingly concerns the energy technical aspect of electric or magnetic longitudinal waves, whereas part 3 is dedicated to the information technical aspect[ii]. Because it concerns a book which merely for reasons of usefulness is published in three parts, the chapters are consecutively paginated. References to chapter 1 to 9 hence automatically relate to part 1. The numbers of the figures and tables as a rule are identical with those of the chapters, in which they are discussed.

The seminar should lead on over the pure reading, consuming or listening and should stimulate to join in. All involved persons may and should give ideas and ask questions, even if these may sound little orthodox. The scientific working method takes, that is struggled for answers and even is argued, if necessary. To reach this goal, it mustn't exist any obligation or censorship, neither for the leader of the discussion nor for the participants of the seminar.

The seminar is being carried out since the summer semester 1997. The works of the seminar written by students treat the knowledge of text books of the respective theme. Following the lecture the answers are discussed and compared to those of the theory of objectivity[i] and other models of explanation. This procedure in this edition belonging to the seminar is reflected at some points, if for instance a chapter is completed with a „discussion".

The first edition of this 2nd part still was incomplete and has been handed out to the participants of a congress in Switzerland instead of a manuscript belonging to the lecture the 17th of Nov 1998. The here presented second edition in the meantime to a large extent is complete, but surely not yet perfect. In accordance with the experience made with the first part of the book also for this 2nd part a third and revised edition, in which the ideas of the participants of the seminar and of the readers find consideration, will be due to be dealt with after a year. The reader of the second edition has to console himself with the fact that a lively seminar constantly is changing and developing further. And that has to be so!

Villingen-Schwenningen, January 1999

---

[i]:   Electromagnetic environmental compatibility, Part 1, Edition belonging to the lecture, INDEL Verlagsabteilung, 1996, see page 1-218 of this issue.

[ii]:   Electromagnetic environmental compatibility, Part 3, Edition belonging to the information technical seminar, 2002, see page 443 - 625 of this issue.

10. Oscillating interaction

A theory is not an end in itself, even if it sounds very convincing. It has to be measured by its applicability. As an entry into the practical consequences, which result from the theoretical part[i], the question about the validity of Kepler's laws is raised.

10.1 Kepler's laws

The "radius vector", a line drawn from the sun to a planet, sweeps out equal areas in equal periods of time. At least has teached us Johannes Kepler it that way (fig. 10.1). The balance of forces, the gravitation on the one and the centrifugal force on the other hand results in the innermost planets of our solar system orbiting the sun very much faster than the outer planets (Mercury in 88 days, the Earth in 365 days, Jupiter in 4333 days and Pluto in 90465 days!).

For the inner planets as well as the big planets Jupiter and Saturn Kepler's laws are still found confirmed. But that shouldn't apply anymore for the outermost planets of the solar system. Beyond Saturn should prevail changed rules as is said, based on observations of the Voyager spacecrafts[ii].

If we direct our view to an unknown galaxy, then does it rotate around its centre and in doing so to a large extent keeps its form. Despite rotation of its own an elliptic, a barred or even a spiral galaxy virtually doesn't change its characteristic form. From this follows, that the inner stars of a galaxy are considerably slower on their way than the outer stars! But we expected exactly the opposite.
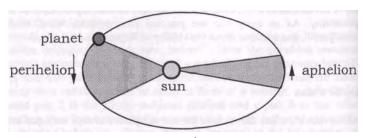
According to Kepler's regularity the outermost stars would have to orbit extremely slow, In order not to be hurled into space as a result of the centrifugal force. But then a galaxy wouldn't keep its structure. The spiral form, as it already has been observed and classified by Hubble (fig. 10.2), merely would be an accidental exception as a momentary picture, but by no means the rule.

We have to take note, that the structure and in particular the cohesion of a galaxy can't be explained with Kepler's laws[iii].

---

[i]:   Konstantin Meyl: Electromagnetic environmental compatibility, Part 1 of this book: Causes,   phenomena   and   natural   scientific   consequences.
[ii]:   Kendrick Frazier: Das Sonnensystem, Time-Life Bucher, Amsterdam (1991)
[iii]:   The basic laws of the universe start to rock: ,,What is the matter with the galaxies? They rotate in their fringe ranges much faster, as is allowed by the laws of physics. Or is something wrong with these venerable laws? The astronomers and physicists stand for the dilemma to have to decide between the two   alternatives: feign   the   observations us an other world or do we calculate   wrong   since   centuries?"   (translated), Bild der Wissenschaft Nr. 2, 1989

Kepler's 1st law:

> The planets move in elliptical orbits, with the sun at one focus.

Fig, 10.1:   Kepler's 2nd law (concerning the conservation of angular momentum):

> The line drawn from the sun to the planet sweeps out equal areas in equal periods of time.

Kepler's 3rd law:

> The ratio of the squares of the revolutionary periods of two planets is equal to the cube of their average distance to the sun:

(10.1)

$$\frac{t_1^2}{t_2^2} = \frac{r_1^3}{r_2^3}$$
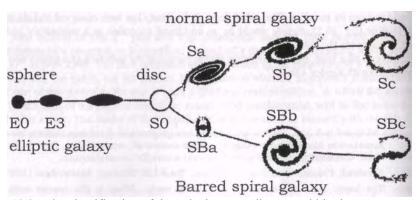
Fig. 10.2   The classification of the galaxies according to Hubble[i]

10.2 Unknown interaction

So which interaction keeps a galaxy together? We today believe to know four different sorts.

I. The gravitation[i]: But since Kepler's law isn't valid in this case anymore, the gravitation is ruled out from the start. Obviously for the distances in a galaxy it hardly is effective.

II. The electromagnetic interaction: It is responsible for the structure of the atoms. Looked at from the outside atoms carry no charge, i.e. the charge conditions are balanced. A binding of our sun to the centre of the Milky Way by an electromagnetic interaction thus is ruled out as well.

III. The strong interaction: Since for the proton another charge distribution is measured, as a single positively charged particle should have according to the normally used theory, the strong interaction was introduced as a nuclear force, to explain the big error, the grave difference between measurement and calculation. The good advice hence reads: instead of giving birth to postulates at random, first of all the fault should be searched for in the normally used theory[ii]!

IV. The weak interaction: It quite obviously is involved in the particle decay[ii]. Both, the weak and the strong interaction, only have an extremely short range. With this property they consequently won't be able to keep a galaxy together.

Conclusion: In a galaxy a still unknown interaction takes effect, and science is requested to search it.

Both interactions with infinite range, the electromagnetic interaction and the gravitation occur as a result of static fields, therefore assume a constant charge or a constant mass. Considered more exactly in that case it merely can concern special cases. Gravitational waves, which reach our earth and which are detected in very costly experiments[iii], already show that the existence of alternating fields can't be excluded and oscillating interactions by all means are conceivable! The physical research at present probably is on the right track. The researchers however don't have ready an usable explanation yet. We accept the challenge!

---

[i]:   Derivation of Kepler's 3rd law in fig. 11.10

[ii]:   Konstantin Meyl: Potentialwirbel, Band 2
        INDEL-Verlag, Villingen-Schwenningen 1992, ISBN 3-98O2542-2-4

[iii]:   Gero v. Randow: Wenn kosmische Katastrophen Raum und Zeit verbiegen,
        zum Thema Gravitationswellen-Detektor, VDI Nachrichten Nr.9, 1.3.91, S.32

Analogy:
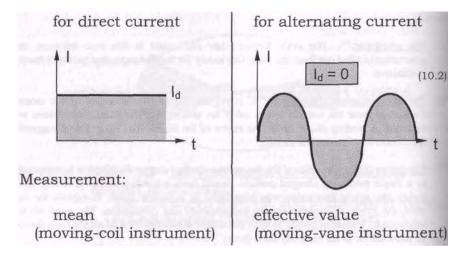
Fig. 10.3: Direct current and alternating current

Fig. 10.4, a: The four fundamental interactions

10.3 Harmony of the alternating current engineers

Today's situation can be clarified by the following picture: you engage a "direct current engineer" to measure the tension voltage in the socket of our power supply system. The ,,dyed-in-the-wool direct current engineer", who never has heard anything of alternating current, reports: ,,No tension voltage is measurable". If he for reason of your doubtful expression looks still more exact he will realize: ,,The pointer of my moving-coil
instrument strangely fidgets around zero, but the swing is so small that one confidently can touch it", (fig. 10.3)
Modern science is accustomed to say, without a valid theory and without technical measurability nothing can exist, what mustn 't exist. If you drop dead after the experiment, then you probably had a weak heart or other afflictions. In such cases as a rule the victim himself is to blame and by no means theoretical physics!

In the case of our power supply system the answer is known: The mean of the alternating voltage of the network is approximately zero. The pointer of a moving-coil instrument for reason of its inertia can't follow the fast changing anymore and only fidgets on the spot. The effective value however amounts to around 230 Volts. But to measure it you need another device, for instance a moving-vane instrument. Seen so, direct current describes the special case of alternating current with frequency zero.

The properties of alternating current can be depicted best by an extraterrestrial observer. He will tell us: Seen from a distance at least at night a great harmony seems to prevail on earth. All lights in the streets and cities twinkle completely synchronously. All generators are in resonance among each other and with all consumers. There are two big races: The 50 Hertz race and the 60 Hertz race, which appear if the earth turns further and the 50 Hertz race is switching off again its twinkling lamps.

The synchronization necessary for an exploitation of alternating fields is so obvious for us, that hardly anybody realizes, that a consumer operated with only one Hertz difference to the frequency of the network can't be supplied with power anymore. Apart from the correspondence in frequency it even depends on the correct phase. The phase angle must be between 0 and +90°. This corresponds to an efficiency factor $\cos\varphi$ between 1 and 0. The cable connections serve both the transport of current and the synchronization of all the generators and consumers connected to the network. The frequency is kept so constant that simple clocks, switching stations and even old record-players can be operated synchronously with the frequency of the network.
The synchronization of the feeding in power stations is supervised by a station of its own, which dictates the time. It is true that we aren't capable of seeing the twinkling of the lamps anymore for reason of the inertia of our eyes, but it can be detected and filmed with high-resolution cameras. Even if we can't perceive the harmony of the alternating current engineers, it nevertheless exists.

The effect of open field lines[i] ⇒ **charge**

E

constant charge:	oscillating charge:
electromagnetic interaction	**resonant interaction**

The effect of closed field lines[i] ⇒ **mass**

constant mass:	oscillating mass:
gravitation	**levitation**
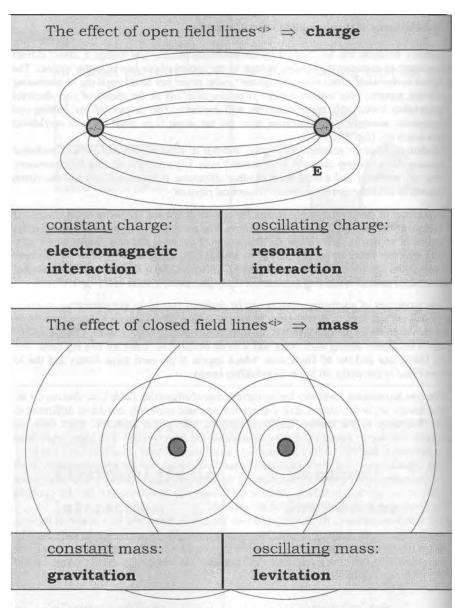
Fig. 10.4, b: Explanation of the fundamental interactions

[i]:   Konstantin Meyl: Potentialwirbel, Band 2, INDEL-Verlag (1992)
        see also in Part 1, chapters 6.8 and 6.9

10.4 Four fundamental interactions

 These considerations suggest, that also gravitation and electromagnetic interaction merely describe the special case of oscillating interactions with frequency zero. To avoid confusions, we'll have to think of new names.

 The electromagnetic interaction can be clarified by means of open field lines, which start at a charged body and end again at another body of unequal charge. In physics classes it is normal to make the field lines of a magnet visible with iron filing. Between the unlike poles a force of attraction is observed[i].

If we this time assume that both magnetic poles change their polarity at the same time, then the force will decrease for a short time during the changing of polarity, to afterwards be active again in full magnitude and in the same direction. Therefore a force of attraction is observed again even for a reversed polarity.

The generalization hence reads: The electromagnetic interaction will occur also in the oscillating case, but in weakened form, if both bodies involved in the interaction change their polarity synchronously and if they are in resonance. A name by analogy would be "resonating interaction" (table 10.4).

It is known of the electromagnetic interaction, that its effect is larger than that of the gravitation by powers often. This presumably has to do with the described and observable bundling up of the open field lines, whereas closed field lines can't be bundled up. The gravitation hence is linked with the closed field lines, which surround all elementary particles, every atom and every body[i].

The opposite of the bundling up is the repulsion of open field lines, for which reason here also forces of repulsion can occur. For the gravitation however no repulsion is observed, because closed field lines virtually can't be influenced.

Apart from the circumstance that the effect generally will be smaller in the oscillating case, similar properties are to be expected. Also its range will be infinite as well. It is recommended to call the case of oscillating charges, as already said, "resonating interaction" and the case of oscillating masses, the oscillating gravitation, „levitation" (table 10.4).

The term „levitation" is very appropriate, but not new. Unfortunately until now no generally binding definition existed, what should be understood by that, for which reason misinterpretations and irritations can't be excluded. Mostly levitation is linked to a cancellation of gravity, up to a state of free floating, but we will see that quite other phenomena become describable with this term.

10.5 Resonating interaction

The question, what keeps a galaxy together, now can be answered unambiguously. The well-known interactions already have been excluded. If for the enormous distances the gravitation can't keep the outer stars anymore in accordance with the Kepler rule, then the levitation won't be able at all.

Example: central star S_z with 3 planets P_1-P_3
and with 4 neighbouring stars S_1-S_4
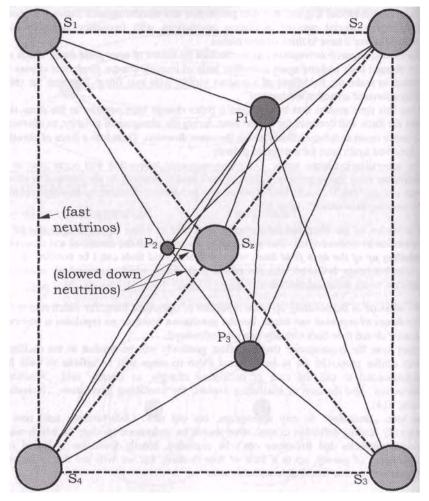
Fig. 10.5: The invisible threads of a resonant interaction

milky way-radius: $15000pc*3*10^9 = 45*10^{16}$ km
sun system-radius: $50 a*15*10^7 = 7,5*10^9$ km

| $\dfrac{45 \cdot 10^{16}}{7,5 \cdot 10^9} = 1,27 \cdot 10^8$ | the resonant interaction is more than eight decimal powers bigger than the gravitation! |

Therefore the oscillating charge is left. Actually the resonating interaction will reach to the outermost areas of a galaxy. The bundling up of the field lines results in the centre of the galaxy and one of its stars to stand in an exclusive resonance to each other, what looked at from the outside looks like, as if the star hangs at an invisible string or a "rubber band" and thus turns around the centre.

Because quite a few stars hang at the centre of a galaxy, it can be assumed that it provides correspondingly many resonance. The centre perhaps is comparable with an extremely broad banded transmitter, which operates on all channels simultaneously. The stars then pick as a receiver the for them suitable channels and hang themselves by „rubber band" at the heap (fig. 10.5).

Should there exist any particles with an oscillating charge, which synchronize between centre and star with the resonating interaction, then they will mediate between both partners. If we assume that the centre at one channel just is positively charged, then all at the same time negatively charged particles will be attracted, the positively charged particles however repelled. Whereas the unlike particles in the centre participate directly in the production and maintaining of the oscillation, the like positively charged particles will be hurled into space.

But at the same time does a star, which clings to the centre, have to be negatively charged. It hence attracts the repelled particle. The particle thus drifts from the centre to the star, even then if all three, the centre, the star and the particle, change in polarity. The result is, that the stars grow in diameter by collecting the particles. Only because our sun actually grows, it has the chance, to sometime become a red giant!

Since the sun radiates, as is well-known, in every second a radiation equivalent of 5 million tons, it permanently has to be supplied with a substantially greater amount of matter. If a resonating interaction should occur, then our sun will get its „material" supplied from the centre of the Milky Way and that is a black hole! But no particle with a mass comes out of such a hole, yes not even light. For a particle to be able to leave the black hole, it should have neither charge nor mass. At most an oscillating charge and mass would be allowed. Such a particle would have an enormous ability of penetration as a result of the missing static interaction. It would be able to rush through the earth unhindered.

According to actual knowledge only neutrinos have the described properties. One also knows that the centre of our Milky Way represents a mighty source of neutrinos. From this derivation follows:

1. As mediators of the resonating interaction serve synchronously oscillating neutrinos.

2. Starting with the proof of the neutrinos it should be able to backwards also prove the existence of the resonating interaction.

3. If, as a practical consequence, we imagine that the centre of the Milky Way wouldn't supply neutrinos anymore. Then the whole galaxy would fall apart and not one of its stars would shine anymore.

Fig. 11.1:   The Atlantic ocean floor[i]

<i>:   Miller, R.: Driftende Kontinente, Time-Life, Amsterdam 1991, S. 79

11. The growing globe

11.1 Long-distance effect of the neutrinos

The long-distance effect thus lies in the circumstance that the neutrinos, in the case of a resonance of the source of neutrinos and the receiver, span an invisible ,,rubber band" between both, which is called resonating interaction and keeps the two together.

As a transmitter of neutrinos functions for instance a supernova, the death of a star, in which 98% of the mass annihilates under emission of neutrinos or a black hole, which continually swallows light and matter and spits them out again as neutrinos after a still unexplored ,,process of digestion". The process, which in the case of a supernova takes place as a singular occurrence, in a black hole possibly takes place permanently. The hurled out neutrinos on the other hand serve the sun as a source of energy. A receiver of neutrinos then for instance is our sun. So that the hard and very fast cosmic neutrinos become utilizable for the sun, they at first have to be slowed down. But that is only partly successful:

  1. Some very fast ones manage to pass through the sun and fly out again on the other side of the sun. The compared to the cosmic neutrinos strongly slowed down neutrinos then are called solar neutrinos.
  2. Another part can be further slowed down and materialized. As a result of the oscillating mass of the neutrinos as well particles of matter as also some particles of anti-matter are formed. The particles of matter make the sun grow.
  i. The with matter incompatible anti-matter annihilates under emission of light as is well-known. For this and for no other reason our sun shines!

Also the planets have such a neutrino reactor at their disposal. Only so the heat in the inside of the earth is explicable! It can be assumed that the planets materialize less the fast and hard cosmic neutrinos and that they are served more by the slowed down solar neutrinos, which our sun releases again unused.

As is well-known radiates the planet Jupiter already today twice as much radiation energy, as it from the sun receive. In this typical encyclopaedia type balance the involved neutrinos of course are not considered. But it shows that Jupiter is on the best way to become a sun itself. Its moons then will become planets.

From this the example we also see that with increasing mass the crust of the planet becomes thinner and thinner at the expense of the neutrino reactor in the inside, until it finally is eaten up and the celestial body openly starts to shine. Astronomers report for reason of their observations of the formation of more and more new stars.

One part of the collected neutrinos thus is materialized by the planet. In the case of our earth it contributes to its growth.

Who doesn't want to believe that the earth becomes bigger, should look at modern maps of the oceans, on which the topography of the ocean floor is shown. According to the theory of Alfred Wegener concerning the continental drift North and South America on the one hand and Europe with Africa on the other hand steadily drift apart since 200 million years. The result can be read at the atlantic ocean floor. The gaping, chequered rift zones to the right and left of the Mid-Atlantic Ridge show how the earth is torn apart (fig. (11.1).
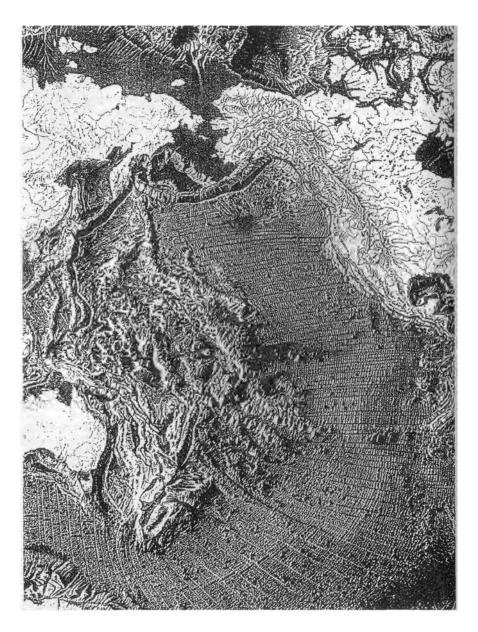
Fig. 11.2:   The pacific ocean floor[i]

<i>:   Miller, R.: Driftende Kontinente, Time-Life, Amsterdam 1991, S. 78

11.2 Model of expansion

Geographers assume that at another point to the same extent continental plates are subduced and molten. That thus has to happen in the Pacific Ocean. But the sea maps tell one just the opposite (fig. 11.2). At the ocean floor of the Pacific Ocean the same rift formations are found as in the Atlantic Ocean (fig. 11.1). That means that America drifts away from Australia and Asia exactly as from Europe, without being crushed or molten in doing so!
The only possible answer thus is: the earth grows.
The characteristic rift zones in addition are found around the Antarctic. From this the conclusion can be drawn that the 7th continent slowly is moving away, while the biggest habitable mass of land predominantly stays behind on the northern hemisphere, by Eurasia and North America forming a clip around the North Pole.

Concerning the evolution of the earth there are and were numerous approaches in various directions. Paul Dirac[i] at his time postulated, the brightness of the sun should decrease as a result of a decrease of the gravitational constant as well. In contrast to that Astrophysicists today observe just the opposite (Ingersoll 1987). According to the hypothesis of Carey[ii] energy will transform in matter in the universe. According to the idea of Oesterle[iii] aether particles are absorbed, which make our globe grow. Also other research scientists share the idea of the growth of the earth with him in their reports[i4,5,6]. As a geologist Oesterle[iii] cites his colleague Herzig: „The at the Mid-Oceanic Ridge newly produced oceanic crust has to be consumed again at other points, because otherwise the earth would expand" and criticizes the „plate tectonicians" that they would postulate their model without physical grounds. He gives some arguments for the correctness of the model of expansion [iii]:

a) Subduction: The already discussed missing of zones of subduction and of melting of continental plates to the assumed extent.

b) Paleomagnetism: errors and mistakes in the hypothesis of the migration of the poles.

c) Continental depth drillings: They brought much higher temperatures in depths from 4000 meters, as expected and calculated according to models.

d) Stand of the sea water: Only if the water can spread in newly forming oceanic basins it can be explained, why the covering with water on earth continually is going back. This argument we want to investigate with a derivation of our own.

[i]:   Dirac, P. A. M. Nature 139, p. 323 (1937)
[ii]:   Carey, S. W.: Theories of the Earth and Universe.
Stanford   University   Press: 1-413,   Stanford,   California
[iii]: Oesterle, O.: Goldene Mitte: Unser einziger Ausweg,
Universal   Experten   Verlag,   Rapperswil   (1997),   ISBN   3-9520261-9-0
[i4]:   Hilgenberg, O. C: Vom wachsenden Erdball, S. 1-56, Eigenverlag,
Berlin (1933) und Neues Jahrb. Geol. Palaont. Abh. 116, 1, Berlin (1962)
[i5]:   Jordan, P.: Die Expansion der Erde. Vieweg 1-180, Braunschweig (1966)
[i6]:   Giancarlo Scalera, K.-H. Jacob: Why expanding earth? Institute Nationale di
        Geofisica e Vulcanogia, Roma and Technical University of Berlin 2003
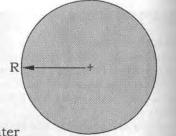
Today's earth:

equatorial radius: R = 6378 [km]

earth's surface: $O_E = 4 \cdot \pi \cdot R^2$
(sphere) $= \underline{5{,}112 \cdot 10^8} [km^2]$

29% of this area is land and 71% is water
for an average water depth of $t_w = 3.8$ [km] results a

water volume of: $V_w = 0{,}71 \cdot O_E \cdot t_w = \underline{1{,}38 \cdot 10^9}$ [km³]   (11.1)

The earth **200 million years ago** (super continent: **Pangaea**):

today's land area (29%) was 100% of the earth's surface!

Pangaea surface area: $O_p = 0.29 \cdot O_E$
                    $= \underline{1{,}48 \cdot 10^8}$ [km²]
                    $= 4 \cdot \pi \cdot r_p^2$ (11.2)

Pangaea radius: $r_p = \sqrt{O_p / (4 \cdot \pi)}$
(corresponds to $= \underline{3435}$ [km]
  the radius
 of the sphere of shelf):   = 54% of today's radius

Pangaea volume: $V_p = \dfrac{4}{3} \cdot \pi \cdot r_p^3 = \underline{1{,}697 \cdot 10^{11}}$ [km³]   (11.3)

Pangaea was covered with water h [km] high:

volume: $V = V_p + V_w = \dfrac{4}{3} \cdot \pi \cdot (r_p + h)^3 = \underline{1{,}71 \cdot 10^{11}}$ [km³]   (11.4)

            = 15,7% of today's volume of the earth

        $r_p + h = (3 \cdot V / 4 \cdot \pi)^{1/3} = 3443{,}8$ [km]   (11.5)

Pangaea water-level h above the NN (sea-level) at that time:

        h = $\underline{8{,}78}$ [km]   (11.6)

Fig. 11.3:   The calculation of the covering with water on
                earth 200 million years ago

11.3 Ancient Egyptian legend of Genesis

We don't have to search long for evidence. If we go back 200 million years in the history of the earth, as all continents still were united and formed the super continent Pangaea, as the 29% landmass of today thus constituted 100% of the earth's surface. At that time the diameter of the earth was almost half of today's diameter (exactly 54%). But if one distributes the amount of water of our oceans of today over the smaller earth, then possibly the water stood the young earth up to its ears in a first rough estimate. We now want to calculate how high the water stood.

For that we determine at first the water volume of today's oceans, by multiplying 71% of the earth's surface O_E with the average water depth. In doing so it is supposed that the water volume has not changed in the course of time. As an approximation this assumption could be correct if the factors, which influence the water volume, mutually compensate. On the one hand it has to be taken into account that in the process of fusion in the inside of the earth apart from other materials also juvenile water is formed, but on the other hand the water volume is reduced by photosynthesis and by the splitting of water molecules. In the case of the newly formed water it should concern roughly one cubic kilometre per year[i]. The photosynthesis however possibly can be estimated by means of the formed oxygen of the air just as the splitted water by the content of oxygen of the waters and the seas. Since the processes are subject to temporary fluctuations, the exact estimate is difficult. At least should an effect of compensation more or less be taken into account.

Next we calculate the surface of the earth 200 million years ago, the super continent, which Alfred Wegener called Pangaea. If the 29% continental land mass of today at that time constituted the whole surface, then the diameter of the earth at that time was determined at 54% of today's diameter, then the volume together with the water volume would amount to only 15.7% of today's volume and the water stood 8.78 kilometres high above the level NN at that time (fig. 11.3). With that even the highest peaks were under water.

Consequentially stands in the legend of Genesis of the ancient Egyptians: _____
,, They tell us that the earth was completely covered with water and that the earth rose from the water. It is talked about a primeval hill, of which creation took its start, on which the first sunrise and sunset was observed[ii].

If at that time life only existed in the water, of which we today still can detect the remains in excavations in mountains and plateaus, then it surely wasn't because the evolution had forbidden living on the land. There existed no land! All land was lying under water. But if, looked into the future, the land area increases further at the expense of the surface of the sea, then our earth sometime will dry up, as already other planets before us, e.g. our neighbouring planet Mars.

<i>:   Oesterle, O.: Goldene Mitte: Unser einziger Ausweg, Universal   Experten   Verlag,   Rapperswil   (1997),   ISBN   3-9520261-9-0
<ii>:   Robert Bauval und Graham Hancock: Der Schlussel zur Sphinx, List Verlag (1996), S. 253 und in der Sendung: Die grossen Ratsel VII am 25.5.97 in S 3

a. **Today's earth**:

- earth's crust
- earth's mantle

30-70 km | 2800 km | 2200 km | 1300 km

- outer core
- inner core

b. The earth **200 million years ago** (super continent: **Pangaea**):

94 km | 2800 km

earth's crust
(d_k = 94 km)
earth's mantle
(d_m = 2800 km
as today)

earth's core
(R_p = 541 km)
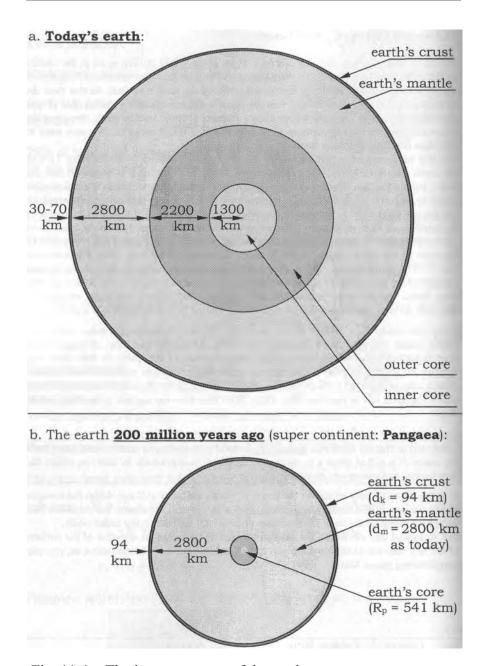
Fig. 11.4:   The inner structure of the earth on an average

11.4 Inner structure of the earth

Next the question is raised: How fast does our earth actually grow? The calculated growth, distributed over the 200 million years, results in a yearly increase in the diameter of the earth of less than 0.1 mm. Carey[i] assumes 0.04 mm per year and Owen[ii] only 0.01 mm per year.

Actually the young earth must have been somewhat bigger than calculated, because as a result of the smaller gravitational acceleration the density of the matter must have been smaller. But this changes nothing to the relations, because the less dense earth was surrounded by likewise less dense water, the water-level nevertheless reached the peaks, as already calculated.

For indicating absolute linear measures and the calculation of the gravitational accleration the respective density should be considered. In most calculations the density is cancelled out, so that as well can be calculated with an unchanged density.

A grave error however lies in the assumption of a linear growth. Hilgenberg assumes an exponential growth[iii] and gives as a reason for the empirical approach of the e-function the „law of organic growth". In order to now not to speculate or to postulate in the same manner, we will derive and found our approach.

If namely the earth grows, then its core of fusion also grows, which causes the growth to take place accelerated, etc. A customer of a bank, who sees his amount of money grow according to such a regularity, will be given information immediately about the growth rate with a compound interest calculation.

But how big is the growing fusion reactor of our planet? According to today's level of knowledge about the structure of the earth the inner core is surrounded by the outer core and that again by the earth's mantle. On top floats the thin, but firm earth's crust, on which we live. The inner core has a radius of nearly 1390 km, the outer core stretches to a radius of 3500 km, whereas the crust is only between 10 and 78 km thick, dependent on the geographical latitude[i4] (fig. 11.4).

<i>:   Carey, S. W.: Theories of the Earth and Universe.
        Stanford University Press: 1-413, Stanford, California

<ii>:   Owen, H. G.: Has the Earth increased in size? - In: New Concepts in Global
        Tectonics, Texas etc. University Press (1992), p. 289-295, Lubbock

        <iii>:   Hilgenberg, O. C: Vom wachsenden Erdball, Berlin 1933, Eigenverlag,
        Seite 31 und 32

<i4>:   Mitton, S. (Herausg.): Cambridge Enzyklopadie der Astronomie
        (The Cambridge Encyclopaedia of Astronomy), Orbis Verlag (1989)
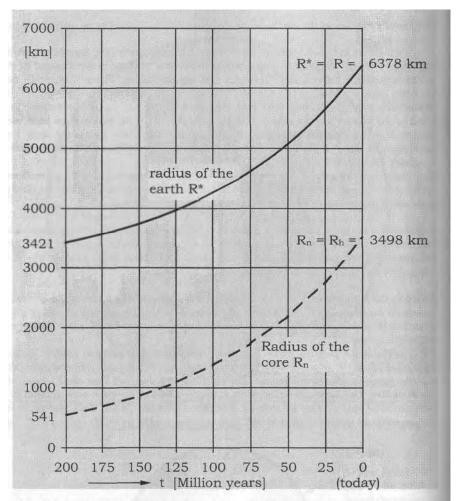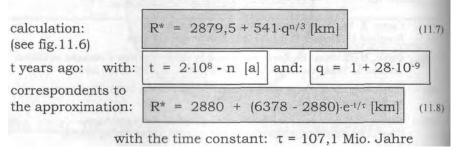
Fig. 11.5: The change in the radius of the earth and of the core
            in the course of millions of years until today.

calculation: $R^* = 2879,5 + 541 \cdot q^{n/3}$ [km]   (11.7)
(see fig.11.6)

t years ago: with: $t = 2 \cdot 10^8 - n$ [a]   and: $q = 1 + 28 \cdot 10^{-9}$

correspondents to
the approximation: $R^* = 2880 + (6378 - 2880) \cdot e^{-t/\tau}$ [km]   (11.8)

with the time constant: $\tau = 107,1$ Mio. Jahre

11.5 Earth's core as a converter of neutrinos

I proceed from the assumption that the conversion of neutrinos and materialization in elementary particles takes place in the inner core. For the conversion no energy at all is used, because the inner energy together with the outer energy of the particle amounts to zero. The neutrinos merely have to be remodelled into another structure and for that they at first have to be slowed down with the help of the oscillating interaction.
During this process of slowing down, as said, no heat is formed because in the case of a mass less particle no energy can be set free in the domain where the classical law of conservation of energy is valid. Only after completion of the process of materialization we are able to detect mass and energy of neutrinos.
But if the oscillating interaction is taken as a basis, the oscillation with opposite phase between particle and earth's core, then contrary to all expectations a cooling down takes place. If the particle has reached its region of destination in the core, then the oscillations are overlapping. Mathematically seen they are added with reversed sign; they thus are
subtracted. The result of the mutual compensation is the decrease of the thermal oscillation   and   the   cooling   down   of   the   region   which   was   expected.
In addition the formed particles with a mass mutually contract (see part I, chapter 8.3 and 8.4) and in doing so are further cooling down, as we will derive (chapter 12.7 with fig. 12.8). The physical limit of the process of contraction and cooling down is formed by absolute zero, at which no thermal oscillation at all occurs anymore, so that superconduction becomes possible with the result of giant electric currents and magnetic fields, which can be detected even at the earth's surface in damped form, for instance with a compass.

The necessary heat energy is flowing towards the quick-frozen inner core from the outside, principally from the outer core. Here, in the core, from the neutrinos slowed down to the speed of light various elementary particles are formed. Most of them immediately fall apart, to form other configurations. In the end only electrons and protons are preserved, which, as the only stable particles, can't fall apart anymore. These again are trying hard to take the state of an atom, which however needs very much space with the large distance between atomic nucleus and hull. Under the high pressure the enveloping
electrons therefore will time and again fall into the nucleus to form neutrons together with the protons.
The neutrons need no atomic hull and can, as is well-known of neutron stars, take an extremely high density. In the case of the earth's core the neutrons however cannot be stabilized. The contraction to a neutron is accompanied by a corresponding drop in pressure, so that the neutron falls apart again. A continual oscillation of size is formed, with which the neutrinos again interact. With that also the high density of the earth's core would be explicable simultaneously.
In earth's outer core the various atoms and isotopes are formed, which in the sum release more energy than they absorb in their fusion processes. Here the fusion oven rages, which supplies   the   inner   core   with   heat   energy.
The formed matter is pushed further to the outside, rolls as a viscous mass through the
  earth's mantle and collects the surplus radiation and heat from the fusion oven.

With this model of explanation we now can tackle the calculation of the growth of the earth (fig. 11.6).

Growth in volume in analogy to the compound interest calculation:

duration: n = 200 million years

starting capital: V_p = Pangaea volume $V_p = (4/3) \cdot \pi \cdot r^3$

final value: V_h = today's volume $V_h = (4/3) \cdot \pi \cdot R^3$

savings bank formula: $V_h = V_p * q^n$ (compound interest)   (11.9)

with „interest rate": $q = (V_h/V_p)^{1/n}$ (11.10)

---

radius of the core of the Pangaea sphere:
$$R_p = r - d_m - d_k = 541 \ [km] \qquad (11.11)$$
with

Pangaea radius: $r = 3435 \ [km]$
earth's mantle: $d_m = 2800 \ [km]$
earth's crust: $dk = 94 \ [km]$ (incl. covering with water).

core radius today: $Rh = R - d_m - d_k = 3500 \ [km]$ (11.12)

earth's crust today: $d_k* = \quad 34\text{-}78 \ [km]$.

From $V \sim r^3$ the growth factor q is calculated to be

$$q = \left(\frac{V_h}{V_p}\right)^{\frac{1}{n}} = \left(\frac{R_h}{R_p}\right)^{\frac{3}{n}} = \left(\frac{3500 \ km}{541 \ km}\right)^{\left(\frac{3}{2 \cdot 10^8}\right)} = 1 + 28 \cdot 10^{-9} \quad (11.13)$$

core radius after n years: $R_n = R_p * q^{n/3}$ (11.14)

radius of the earth after n years: $R* = R_n + d_m + d_k*$ (11.15)

Fig. 11.6: The calculation of the growth rate of the earth

11.6 Speed of growth

200 million years ago in the centre of the globe a core of fusion has formed and taken up its operation, probably under the influence of a cosmic occurrence connected with a high neutrino radiation. As a result the thin crust of the earth was torn apart and the oceanic basins were formed.

If we assume that the might of earth's mantle (with d_m = 2800 km) and crust (with less than 100 km) haven't fundamentally changed, then earth's core at that time had a radius of only 541 km. The „savings bank formula" now only may be applied for the core and only for its volume. On the condition of a constant neutrino density the volume of the core in every year will grow for one order of magnitude, which again depends on the respective volume itself. There results the in fig. 11.5 presented course of the radius of the core and of the earth.

According to our calculation the earth at present grows every year for $915*10^{11}$ tons, which corresponds to an increase in volume of 16500 cubic kilometres and an increase of area of 5.2 square kilometres. The earth momentarily grows for 6.5 cm per year in diameter, from which follows that the perimeter increases pi-fold and a continental drift of 10.2 cm per year is to be expected across both the Atlantic Ocean and the Pacific Ocean. Geologists today actually measure a plate movement of typically 10 cm, at individual points of up to 12 cm per year[i]!

Whoever likes to do handicrafts, can build together a globe of shells by himself. Hilgenberg for that gives a handicraft instruction[ii]. He draws the continents of a globe of today and cuts them out. Doing so, not the coast line of today is authoritative, but that of the edge of the shells, at which the mainland plates are breaking off into the deep sea. He hence also speaks of a sphere of shells and helps the handcrafters with the words: ..Because the paper shells of the sphere of shells owing to their strong curvature are difficult to nestle, we cut slits in the paper, which suitably lie there, where mountain ranges stretch and now can start with the gluing". Doing so it shows that the slits in particular in the case of the Ural and the Himalayan gape far apart, that in reversed direction in the case of the enlargement of the sphere of shells the lifting out of the mountains necessarily had to occur at these points by means of upsetting. Under these circumstances our model concept should be further rendered more precisely, If the change of the curvature of the growing surface of the earth is the cause for the lifting out of the mountains, then the surface of the earth 200 million years ago was structured merely by impact craters and by volcanic cones, then the amount of water may have been correspondingly smaller. The additional water of the oceans of today was collected by the earth either from the cosmos, by crossing the flight path of a comet with a water tail, or by the here discussed idea of a core of fusion in the inside of the earth it has produced the water itself!

How ever such detail aspects may have had an effect, it therefore nevertheless changes nothing to the model concept on the whole. Hilgenberg's globe of shells[ii] in my opinion to still makes more sense as all the models of explanation, as they are spread in today's text books.

[i]:   Miller, R.: Driftende Kontinente, Time-Life, Amsterdam 1991, S. 78

[ii]:   Hilgenberg, O.C.: Vom wachsenden Erdball, Berlin 1933, Eigenverlag

Actual data[i]:

mass of the sun	m_s = 1.99·10^{30} [kg]
radius of the sun	r_s = 696 000 [km]
distance to the earth	r_e = 149 597 870 [km] (averaged)

mass of the earth	M = 5.976·10^{24} [kg]	
moment of inertia	$J_e = M \cdot r_e^2$ (of the earth orbit)	(11.16)
orbital velocity	$v_e = \omega_e \cdot r_e = 2\pi r_e / t_e$	(11.17)
averaged[i]:	v_e = 29.79 [km/s] = constant	(11.18)
revolutionary period	t_e = 365.25637 [days]	
	t_e = sidereal year	

equatorial radius	R = 6378 [km]	
moment of inertia	$J = (2/5)\, M \cdot R^2$ (of the rotation of its own)	(11.19)
rotational velocity	$v_E = \omega_E \cdot R = 2\pi R / t_E$ = 0.465 [km/s]	(11.20)
sidereal time of rotation	t_E = 1 [day] = 86 164.1 [s]	

distance to the moon	r_m = 384 390 [km] (averaged)	
radius of the moon	R_m = 1738 [km]	
mass of the moon	m_m = 7.350·10^{22} [kg] = constant	(11.21)
moment of inertia	$J_m = m_m \cdot r_m^2$ (of the moon orbit)	(11.22)
orbital velocity	$v_m = \omega_m \cdot r_m = 2\pi r_m / t_m$	(11.23)
of the moon averaged:	v_m = 1.026 [km/s] = constant	(11.24)
revolutionary period	t_m = 1 sidereal month (from fixed star	
	t_m = 27.322 [days] to fixed star)	
observed	t^*_m= 1 synodic month (from new moon	
revolutionary period	t^*_m= 29.53 [days] to new moon)	

Fig. 11.7: The data of sun, earth and moon of today[i]

[i]:   Mitton, S. (Herausg.): Cambridge Enzyklopadie der Astronomie
       (The Cambridge Encyclopaedia of Astronomy), Orbis Verlag (1989)

It is an exciting matter, if one can experience for oneself, how the pieces of the puzzle fit together, how the southern end of America is wound around the Cape of Good Hope and the Falkland islands surface for the east coast of South Africa, in the vicinity of Australia how the Antarctic occupies the Pacific basin as a neighbour of Australia, von South, Middle and North America, run through by the equator, etc.

The corrections to the view of life of Alfred Wegener and the geographical evidence, which Hilgenberg gives, are sound, well founded and even after 65 years still highly actual. The physical statements of the geologists however, for instance the earth in the course of time would rotate faster and faster, cannot be followed.

11.7 Conservation of angular momentum

The question about the rotation of the earth is raised. Is it not changing at all, is it getting faster or slower? In the case of a with time growing earth there is only one possibility: The rotation of its own will decrease and not increase, as Hilgenberg supposes. For that you only need to place yourself on a turntable, to turn and if possible with weights in your hands stretch out your arms sideways, to feel, how the rotation of the table is decreasing. It surely would have done the geologist Hilgenberg good, to leave his desk for a short time for a stroll to the most nearby playground, for the purpose of the described physical experiment with himself.

In this case the law of conservation of momentum authoritatively has an effect in the formulation of the law of conservation of angular momentum for the rotating motion. According to that all angular momenta in the solar system should amount to zero. If we look at the planets which have no moon, then is remarkable that these need an eternity for a revolution around their own axis (Venus for instance needs 243 days). According to the law of conservation of angular momentum our earth owes its rotation of its own primarily the moon.

For reason of this relation we can assume a proportionality between the angular momentum of the moon J_m*w_m and that of the rotation of its own of the earth $J*w_E$ (eq. 11.39, fig. 11.10). They even have to be identical, if the partner of rotation earth and moon are seen as a closed system.

If the earth would be approached as a homogeneous, spinning sphere, the angular momentum at first would be too small for a factor 4.1 (eq. 11.29, fig. 11.9). The law of conservation of angular momentum dictates as a necessary result, that the dense core of the earth must rotate faster than the earth's crust! From the correspondence of orbital angular momentum of the moon on the one hand and the sum of the angular momenta of their own of earth's mantle and earth's core on the other hand results a 31 fold higher angular velocity of the earth's core compared to the rotation of the earth's surface (eq. 11.38, fig. 11.9).

Does our earth owe its geomagnetism this rotation of the core? At least the possibility exists that there exists a causal relation between the rotation of the earth's core and the geomagnetism. We'll further collect arguments and put the question concerning the formation of the geomagnetism under consideration.

Concerning unipolar induction (Faraday): $\boxed{E = v \times B}$ (11.25)
(see part 1, eq. 58, fig. 6.4)

with **E** = 2 [V/m]   }   earth magnetic field $\boxed{B = 67 [\mu T]}$ calculated
11.18: v_e = 29,79 [km/s] } on the average approx. **B** = 50 [μT] measured[i]

with   **B** = 67 [μT]   }
eq. 11.20: v_E = 465 [m/s] } 10 km high:
and   h = 6378+10 [km]   }

$U = E \cdot h = v_E \cdot B \cdot h$ (11.26)
$\boxed{U = 199 [kV]}$ calculated
U = 200 [kV] measured[i]
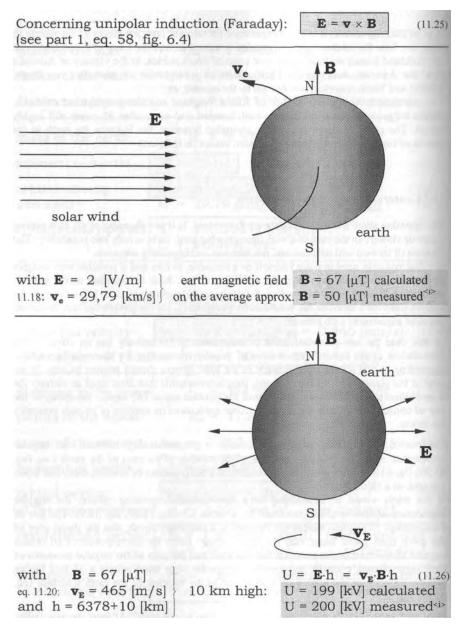
Fig. 11.8:   The magnetic and the electrostatic field of the earth
as a result of an unipolar induction

[i]:   Measurement values in chap. 2.8, e.g. reference entry [i] (Prof. Dr. L. Konig)

11.8 Set of difficulties concerning the change of magnetization

Now investigations of the polarity of the magnetization of rocks have resulted in the fact that in irregular intervals, on an average every 500,000 years, a change of polarity of the geomagnetism has occurred and no one knows why.

If the rotation of the core should produce the magnetism, then it in any case also is responsible for the process of change of magnetization. That purely theoretically is possible in two ways: Either the core tilts out of its plane of rotation for 180° and rotates suddenly in the opposite direction or earth's mantle together with earth's crust, on which we live, is turned upside down.

It surely isn't my intention to produce any panic, but from a physical point of view only the second case is possible. Usually not the tail wags with the dog, but vice versa, the dog with the tail. The high rotational velocity of the earth's core exerts an extremely stabilizing influence. After all its angular momentum is 4.85 times larger than that of the mantle (eq. 11.33, fig. 11.9). Therefore the rotation of the core and the direction of earth's magnetic field always are preserved seen from the sun.

I further proceed from the assumption, that an electrostatic field arises from the sun accompanied by a particle flux, the solar wind, through which the earth flies through in a perpendicular direction. According to the Faraday law of induction $E = v \times B$ (eq. 11.25)

it experiences, as a result of the unipolar induction, a magnetic field which stands perpendicular on the ecliptic and thus dictates the orientation of earth's magnetic field. With that also the direction of rotation would be determined. The core thus by no means can tilt!

On the condition that the core doesn't rotate completely frictionless, the earth's mantle will in the case of the same direction of rotation be accelerated, in the case of unequal direction, after a changing of polarity, it will be slowed down again. If the process, for reasons of conservation of angular momentum, takes place alternatingly with a certain regularity, then the inhabitants of the earth for every changing of polarity might experience, how the North Pole in the shortest time turns over the equator to the South Pole, how the sun sets at the point, where it before had risen. As said, after a changing of polarity our earth is standing on its head! In the Bible corresponding clues are found[ii]. It can be taken from the media that one reckons with such a changing of polarity in the foreseeable future. When and if it actually takes place, stands however in the stars.

If magnetism thus is produced by the rotation of the core, or by electric currents in the earth's core as a result of the superconduction or by both, then the earth is aligned in the field of the sun like the magnetic needle in a compass. If we take as a cause a solar wind with an electric field strength of just 2 V/m, then this would not only determine the direction of earth's magnetic field, but also the order of magnitude, and that at present lies at 50 uT averaged over time (chap. 2.8).

With the same mathematical relation an electrostatic field around the earth of 199 V/m results as a result of the rotation of the earth. That fairly exact corresponds to the measured values![i] Quite obviously all is related to each other. In the question for the „how" at this point consciously no definite answer is strived for. It rather should be discussed and worked to together in the seminar.

[ii]:   The Bible, OT, The 2nd book of kings 20,9-11 (king Hezekiah) and Joshua 10,12-14, literally cited on the page after the next page (chap. 11.9), note[ii]

Angular momentum $J_m \cdot \omega_m$ of the orbiting moon (with eq. 11.22 + 11.23):

$$J_m \cdot \omega_m = m_m \cdot r_m^2 \cdot \omega_m = 29*10^{33} \ [kgm^2/s] \qquad (11.27)$$

Angular momentum $J \cdot \omega_E$ of the rotation of the earth (eq. 11.19 + 11.20,
same direction of turning):
(theoretically) $J \cdot \omega_E = (2/5) \ M \cdot R^2 \cdot \omega_E = 7*10^{33} \ [kgm^2/s] \qquad (11.28)$

$$\frac{\text{Orbital momentum moon}}{\text{Angular momentum earth}} = \frac{J_m \cdot \omega_m}{J \cdot \omega_E} = \frac{29}{7} = 4,1 \qquad (11.29)$$

Angular momentum $J_M \cdot \omega_E$ of earth's mantle and crust (R_h = core radius)

$$J_M \cdot \omega_E = (J - J_K) \cdot \omega_E = (2/5) \cdot (MR^2 - M_K R_h^2) \cdot \omega_E = 6*10^{33} \ [kgm^2/s] \ (11.30)$$

conservation of angular momentum: $J_m \cdot \omega_m = J_K \cdot \omega_K - J_M \cdot \omega_E \qquad (11.31)$

Angular momentum $J_K \cdot \omega_K$ of the earth's core

$$J_K \cdot \omega_K = J_m \cdot \omega_m + J_M \cdot \omega_E = 35*10^{33} \ [kgm^2/s] \ (11.32)$$

$$\frac{\text{Angular momentum core}}{\text{Angular momentum mantle}} = \frac{J_K \cdot \omega_K}{J_M \cdot \omega_E} = \frac{35}{5} = 7 \qquad (11.33)$$

$$J_K \cdot \omega_K = (2/5) \ M_K \cdot R_h^2 \cdot \omega_K \ (11.34)$$

With the mass of earth's core $M_K = \rho_K \cdot V_K = \rho_K \cdot (4/3) \cdot \pi \cdot R_h^3 \qquad (11.35)$
and the averaged core density $ro_k = 12000 \ kg/m^3$
the angular velocity
of earth's core amounts to: $\omega_K = 3,3*10^3 \ [s^{-1}] \qquad (11.36)$
and that at the earth's surface: $\omega_E = v_E/R = 0,073*10^{-3} \ [s^{-1}]. \qquad (11.37)$

$$\frac{\omega_K}{\omega_E} = \frac{3,3}{0,073} = 45 \ (11.38)$$

Fig. 11.9: Calculations concerning the conservation of angular
momentum   and   the   rotation   of   earth's   core
(One turn of the earth's core lasts 32 min. It results contrary to
the earth rotation. Of the surface of the earth a period duration
of 31 min should be observable.)

11.9 The weakly damped moon

The increasing angular velocity in the direction of the centre of the earth surely has something to do with the set of difficulties concerning the conservation of the spherical structure, comparable to the reason for the particle spin (chapter 6.13). The increasingly missing radial component of the gravitational field has to be compensated by an additional field produced by the rotation (according to part 1, equation 62, fig. 6.5).

The moon apparently doesn't know this set of difficulties. We can assume a constant mass for it (eq. 11.21). On the one hand is the moon smaller than the earth 200 million years ago, as it started to grow. On the other hand are doubts concerning the existence of an active core of the moon legitimate. In the Apollo-15 mission seismic gauges had been installed at the ground of the moon and at the start from the moon the produced seismic waves had been recorded[i]. The surprisingly small damping as the lunar module fell back onto the ground of the moon more likely allow the conclusion that the moon is hollow inside!
Also the small density of the moon points in the same direction, and finally no clues at all can be seen on the surface of the moon, which would point to a growth of the moon.

Apart from the mass also the orbital velocity of the moon is taken constant, what surely is true, as long as nobody and nothing drives the moon extra (eq. 11.24). The analysis of the law of conservation of angular momentum provides the in fig. 11.10 derived provisional result (eq. 11.41).

---

[i]: Moonquakes ever more mysteriously: ,,The by Apollo 12 triggered moonquake by ,,bombardment" of the surface of the moon with the clapped-out Lunar Module ,,Intrepid" at thursday evening puts scientists for bigger and bigger mysteries. An exact analysis of the measurement data now resulted in the by the astronauts Conrad and Bean installed ,,seismic station" on the moon ... to have recorded and to have sent to the earth 55 minutes long. ... The seismologist Dr. Gary Latham spoke of ,,important information about the structure of the moon" and meant, one now can ,,throw away the text book". One had reckoned that the impact of the Lunar Module on the moon would trigger a quake of at best some minutes", (translated) Frankfurter Rundschau vom 22.11.1969

---

concerning reference entry <ii>, chap. 11.8:

[ii]: The Bible, OT, Joshua 10,12-14: There stands in the ,,book of Jasher ": So the sun stood still in the midst of heaven, and hasted not to go down about a whole day. And there was no day like that before it or after it, ...

The 2nd book of kings 20,9-11: king Hezekiah: This sign thou ... let the shadow return backward ten degrees. And Isaiah the prophet cried unto the LORD: and he brought the shadow ten degrees backward, by which it had gone down in the dial of Ahaz.

For the proportionality of the angular momenta of the earth:

$$J \cdot \omega_E \quad \sim \quad J_M \cdot \omega_E \quad \sim \quad J_K \cdot \omega_K$$

With: $\qquad\qquad J \cdot \omega_E \;=\; (2/5)\, M \cdot R^2 \;\cdot\; 2\pi/t_E$ \hfill (11.28)

and the orbital momentum of the moon:

$$J_m \cdot \omega_m \;=\; m_m \cdot r_m^2 \;\cdot\; v_m/r_m \qquad\qquad (11.27)$$

is valid the

conservation of angular momentum: $\quad J \cdot \omega_E \quad \sim \quad J_m \cdot \omega_m$ \hfill (11.39)

or: $\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad M \cdot R^2/t_E \quad \sim \quad m_m \cdot r_m \cdot v_m$ \hfill (11.40)

with $\underline{m_m = \text{constant}}$ (11.21)
and $\underline{v_m = \text{constant}}$ (11.24): $\qquad M \cdot R^2 \quad \sim \quad t_E \cdot r_m$ \hfill (11.41)

centrifugal force $\quad = \quad$ gravitational force

$$\frac{m_m \cdot v_m^2}{r_m} \;=\; \frac{G \cdot M \cdot m_m}{r_m^2} \hfill (11.42)$$

or with eq. 11.22: $\qquad v_m^2 \;=\; G \cdot M/r_m \;=\; (2\pi r_m/t_m)^2$ \hfill (11.43)

if $\quad \underline{M = \text{constant}}$: $\qquad\qquad r_m^3 \quad \sim \quad t_m^2$ \hfill (10.1)

Kepler's 3$\underline{\text{rd}}$ law.

Here $\quad \underline{M \neq \text{constant}}$, instead $\underline{v_m = \text{constant}}$ (11.23) and therefore follows from eq. 11.43:

$\qquad\qquad\qquad$ (month) $\qquad t_m \quad \sim \quad r_m \quad \sim \quad M$ \hfill (11.44)

with eq. 11.41:

$\qquad\qquad\qquad$ (day) $\qquad\quad t_E \quad \sim \quad R^2$ \hfill (11.45)

and for an analogous
derivation: $\qquad\qquad$ (year) $\qquad\quad t_e \quad \sim \quad r_e \quad \sim \quad m_s$ \hfill (11.46)
with $\quad \underline{v_e = \text{constant}}$

Fig. 11.10: $\qquad$ Calculation of dynamic celestial mechanics

11.10 Calculation of celestial mechanics

We still need a further relation and try the balance of forces between the centrifugal force and the gravitational force. Both the to the outside directed centrifugal force and the to the inside directed gravitational force depend on the mass of the moving body, here the mass of the moon m_m, so that it is cancelled from equation 11.42.
As determining mass only that of the earth is left and that is taken constant in accordance with the knowledge of text books. The result of this assumption is Kepler's 3rd law (eq. 10.1). But beware, it here merely concerns a momentary picture! In the course of time, according to the derivation, the mass of the earth increases so that this assumption is untenable.

Instead, as already said, the average orbital velocity of the moon, one kilometre per second, can be taken constant (eq. 11.24). Since the orbital velocity is calculated from the proportion of the perimeter of the circular orbit $2 \cdot \pi \cdot r_m$ with regard to the revolutionary
period of a month (11.43, left page), and at the same time from the balance of forces a dependency of the mass of the earth M and the radius of the orbit of the moon follows (11.43, right page), the interesting relation (11.44) results:
Here the mass M, the radius r_m and the revolutionary period t_m stand in a direct proportionality to each other, and that means: if the mass of the earth increases in the course of time, then the moon will go away from us to the same extent, then also every month will get correspondingly longer.

Clarified with numeric values follows from a growth of the earth for $915*10^{14}$ kg per year a going away of the moon for yearly 5.88 meters (fig. 11.11). The going away of our satellite could be confirmed by means of measurements with laser reflectors, which had been put up on the moon by Apollo astronauts, according to dpa message[i].

In addition every month lengthens for 3 milli seconds. That is valid for the sidereal month (= 27.322 days), for which a fixed star serves as a reference point for the measurement of a revolution, as well as for the synodic month, as it is observed from the earth from new moon till new moon (= 29.53 days). The synodic month today is longer than four weeks. But 3.7 million years ago it once actually lasted exactly 28 days, as we can calculate easily (fig. 11.11).

But now also the length of a day is changing. If we insert the proportionality (11.44) from the balance of forces in that of the conservation of angular momentum (11.41), then it is shown that a day depends quadratic on the radius of the earth (11.45), that a lengthening of every day for $4.5*10^{-9}$ s can be determined with the help of the growth curve of the earth (fig. 11.5). This is really very small, but 200 million years ago the day had just 19 hours, if extrapolated to 900 million years only 18.04 hours! The result of the american geologists around Dr. Charles Philip Sonett of the University of Arizona in Tucson also is 18 hours in their analysis of correspondingly old sediment formations, as the US science magazine Science has reported[i]. The correspondence of this measurement with our calculation without doubt has force of evidence!

---

[i]:   900 million years ago a day had 18 hours, Washington (dpa) 1997

Going away of the moon per year with $\boxed{M \sim r_m}$ (according to eq. 11.44):   for

$\Delta r_m = r_m \cdot \Delta M/M = 384390[km] \cdot 9.15 \cdot 10^{16}[kg/a] \,/\, 5.976 \cdot 10^{24}[kg] = \underline{5.886\ [m/a]}$

---

lengthening of month per year with $\boxed{M \sim t_m}$ (11.44) (sidereal):   for

$\Delta t_m = t_m \cdot \Delta M/M = 27.322\ [days] \cdot 86164\ [s/day] \cdot \Delta M/M = \underline{36\ [ms/a]}$

---

synodic month (from new moon till new moon) of 28 days:

$\Delta t_m = 29.53\ [days] - 28\ [days] = 1.53\ [days] \equiv 132 \cdot 10^6\ [ms]$

    linearly calculated $132 \cdot 10^6\ [ms] / 36\ [ms/a] = \underline{3.6674\ \text{mio. years ago}}$.

Day length 200 mio. years ago, with $\boxed{t_E \sim R^2}$ (11.45) amounted to t* hours

shortening: $\Delta t_E/t_E = \Delta R^2/R^2 = (R-R^*)^2/R^2 = (6378-3420)^2/6378^2 = 21.5\%$

    $\Delta t_E = 0.215 \cdot 24\ [h] = 5.16\ [h]$ and $\underline{t^*} = 24\ [h] - \Delta t_E \underline{= 18.84\ [h]}$

Day length 900 mio. years ago, (R*=3200 km) amounts to 18.04 hours

---

present lengthening per day amounts to: $\Delta t_E/t_E = 4.5 \cdot 10^{-9}\ [s/day]$

---

but: the year increases 130,000 times faster than the individual day!

according to the measurement of Aristarchos 2300 years[ii] ago

is $\Delta t_e = 365.25637\ [days] - 365.25062\ [days] = 0.00575\ [days]$

and $\underline{\Delta t_e/t_e} = 0.00575 \cdot 24 \cdot 60 \cdot 60 \cdot 1000 \,/\, 365.25637 \cdot 2300 = \underline{0.59\ [ms/day]}$

---

going away of the earth from the sun per year, with $\boxed{t_e \sim r_e}$ (acc. to eq. 11.46)

for: $\Delta r_e/t = r_e \cdot \Delta t_e/t_e \cdot t = 149.6 \cdot 10^6\ [km] \cdot \Delta t_e/t_e \cdot t = \underline{1.024\ [km/a]}$

---

growth of the sun per year/second, with $\boxed{t_e \sim m_s}$ (according to eq. 11.46)
for:

$\Delta m_s/t = m_s \cdot \Delta t_e/t_e \cdot t = 1.99 \cdot 10^{27}\ t \cdot \Delta t_e/t_e \cdot t = \underline{1.36 \cdot 10^{19}\ [t/year]}$

resp. in a second for: $= \underline{4.3 \cdot 10^{11}\ [t/s]}$

and at the same time a loss due to radiation of: $\underline{5 \cdot 10^6\ [t/s]}$

Fig. 11.11:   Figures according to analysis of some examples
                  concerning dynamic celestial mechanics

11.11 The biblical age

We therefore owe the growing diameter of the earth that every day gets longer and longer (eq. 11.45) and from the going away of the moon a lengthening of the month results (eq. 11.44). Not only the months and the length of the days increase, but also the whole year. A corresponding derivation for the revolution of the earth around the sun, as it has been carried out for the revolution of the moon around the earth (eq. 11.44), delivers analogous results (eq. 11.46): The sun determines the length of the year and the distances to the planets. To the extent, to which the sun grows, the solar system increases in extension. Also the distance to the earth increases proportionally with the mass of the sun. By the going away from the sun the temperature on the planets however not necessarily decreases, because at the same time the radiation intensity of the growing central star increases. According to measurements it has increased for 30% since the formation of the solar system[i].

If both the rotation of the earth and the revolution around the sun get slower, then by all means is conceivable, that the number of days per year approximately stays the same and mankind nevertheless gets less old. If we take the 2300 years old writing of the Greek Aristarchos about the sizes and distances of the sun and the moon[ii]. He determined, assuming a heliocentric view of life, the year to be 365.25062 days. Because the correction taken by Aristarchos concerned even the fifth place after the comma, we must assume that correspondingly precise gauges were available in Alexandria already 310 BC.
The today measured sidereal year with 365.25637 days has lengthened for whole 0.00575 days. From this follows that the year increases considerably faster than the individual day.
It of course would be nice, if we could calculate the lengthening of the year, but unfortunately no data about the growth of the sun are available.
If we proceed from the measurement of Aristarchos, without being able to verify or reproduce its reliability, then from that would result a going away of the earth from the sun for yearly one kilometre, then the sun should grow for $4.3*10^{11}$ tons per second. In any case the sun materializes mass considerably faster, as it loses mass in the same period as radiation equivalent, and that surely is correct (fig. 11.11). Today one generally assumes that „since its formation the earth has gone away from the sun for in total 30,000 km"[i].

But if in the past the year consisted of less days and every day moreover was shorter, if therefore the biological life time was divided in shorter periods, then mankind could get older, then obtaining a biblical age possibly by no means was unrealistic. If Adam still should have got 930 years old, according to the 1st book of Moses, then his lifetime already must have been quite long ago. While Abraham still did get 175 years old, no successor of him has reached his age anymore. In the Bible it is said: „And the LORD said, My spirit shall not always strive with man, for that he also is flesh: yet his days shall he an hundred and twenty years "[iii]. Today even the limit given by the LORD isn't reached anymore!

<i>:   Is the sun loosing her Gravitation? Illustrierte Wissenschaft, Nr.l, 1995
<ii>:   Hermann Wild: Technologien von gestern, Chancen fur morgen,
Jupiter-Verlag   Bern   (1996),   ISBN   3-906571-13-0,   Seite   22
<iii>: The Bible, King James Version, Genesis 6.3

The balance of forces (equation 11.42 generalized):

$$\text{centrifugal force} \quad = \quad \text{gravitational force}$$

$$\frac{M \cdot v_k^2}{r} \quad = \quad \frac{G \cdot M \cdot m}{r^2} \qquad (12.1)$$

results in the cosmic velocity v_k:

$$v_k^2 \quad = \quad G \cdot m / r \qquad (12.2)$$

independent of the mass M of the satellite or planet!

For $v < v_k$ falling back into the central mass m

For $v > v_k$ taking the leave into space

For $v = v_k$ stationary orbit

---

written down for the nth planet in the solar system:

with $r(n) = r_n$ average orbital radius of the planet

and $v(n) = v_n$ average orbital velocity

as well as: m_s mass of the sun

$$v_n \quad = \quad \sqrt{G \cdot m_s / r_n} \qquad (12.3)$$

or:

$$v_n \quad = \quad G \cdot m_s / v_n \cdot r_n \qquad (12.4)$$

Fig. 12.1: The first cosmic velocity v_k

12.   New cosmology

Astronomy still hasn't satisfactorily solved the question of the formation of the solar system. It thereby however concerns a central problem, because it includes the origin of
the earth. But as long as we not yet have understood the relations in our nearest environment, the processes, which we observe with giant telescopes in the depths of pace, will remain a book with seven seals, will lose models of explanation concerning the
Big Bang and concerning the so-called unavoidable heat exitus every reliability.

12.1 Concerning the formation of our solar system

2-8-1972 the observatories of the sun reported an unusual high solar activity and 6 days later a slowing down of the rotation of the earth occurred, which was recorded as the lengthening of a day for more than 10 milliseconds. This effect hardly can be explained by the tidal friction alone already just concerning the energy balance. Instead this observation makes clear two things to mankind. On the one hand, how much our earth depends on the
solar processes and on the other hand, that the changes by all means can occur not continuously, but periodically and if need be even sporadic.

If, as a result of the conservation of angular momentum, the sun determines the orbital velocity of the earth, if it dictates the rotation of the earth by its neutrino activity and the growth of the earth and if the earth in the same manner determines the orbit of the moon, then it would be obvious that the moon originally has been a part of the earth and this in
turn sometime a part of the sun. As it came off, the necessary angular momentum then has been passed on proportionately to the celestial companions, with which the cause for evolution and rotation of their own would be clarified. In addition the moon goes away from the earth and the earth again from the sun, so that looking back it by all means would be obvious, if they once had belonged together.

If we assume that cosmic dust particles meet and accumulate, then all collected rubble contributes to the rotation of its own of the forming celestial body. The more matter finds together, the larger its force of attraction gets, the faster it will grow like a celestial vacuum cleaner. In the course of time this process however is slowed down again and eventually comes to a standstill, because as matter condenses, volume and spherical radius decrease and the rotation of its own increases to the corresponding extent. The celestial body rotates faster and faster and reaches at its surface the cosmic velocity vk, which is given by the mass m and the radius r of the star (eq. 12.2). Now the centrifugal force has reached an order of magnitude, for which the celestial body hurls exactly as much matter into space, as it on the other hand collects by its gravitational effect.

Our sun was lucky to have been supplied with neutrinos in the range of influence of our galaxy. It went in resonance and started to grow, this time from out of the inside. It however could not yet shine, because a crust had formed on its surface around its core of fusion and its mantle, a crust on which permanently was falling cosmic matter from the outside. The increasing viscosity of the sun becoming compressed caused a slowing down of the core of the sun and the corresponding acceleration of the mantle and crust.

Titius-Bode law of 1766:

$$a = 0,4 + 0,3 \cdot 2^v \qquad (12.5)$$

in astronomical units a with: $r_n = a \cdot r_e$ (12.6)

($r_e = 149\ 598\ 000$ [km]   average orbital radius of the earth)

Planet	orbital radius acc. to the law:		measurement value.
Mercury:	$v = -\infty$	$a = 0,4$	0,39 (measured)
Venus:	$v = 0$	$a = 0,7$	0,72 (measured)
Earth:	$v = 1$	$a = 1$	1 (by definition)
Mars:	$v = 2$	$a = 1,6$	1,52 (measured)
Asteroids:	$v = 3$	$a = 2,8$	-
Jupiter:	$v = 4$	$a = 5,2$	5,2 (measured)
Saturn:	$v = 5$	$a = 10$	9,54 (measured)
Uranus:	$v = 6$	$a = 19,6$	19,2 (measured)
Neptune:	$v = 7$	$a = 38,8$	30,1 (measured)
Pluto:	$v = 8$	$a = 77,2$	39,4 (measured)
circumsolar cloud of planets:	$v = 9$	$a = 154$	-
etc. ... :	$v = 10$	$a = 308$	-

Table 12.2:   The Titius-Bode series of the planets (the theoretical
values compared to the measurement values)

Sometime our like mad spinning sun had increased that much, that the crust came off like the ,,tread of an old car tyre" and was catapulted into space. The repulsion was achieved by the centrifugal force exceeding the gravitation for the force of cohesion, which at the moment of the separation of crust regions suddenly tears off. Like snowballs the planets lulled off the sun's surface in this process and were hurled away. Their velocity of rotation at this time was identical to the cosmic velocity of the sun v_k and with that for many a planet large enough to produce its own satellites out of its own surface, which perhaps was not yet completely ideally spherical.

With every planet, which the sun gave birth to, it gave away a part of its own angular momentum to its child as orbital momentum. Only from this time on the sun reduced its angular velocity steadily until this very day. By losing the crust it also started to shine openly. Thus at least could our solar system have been formed.

12.2 The birth of the planets

From this observation various consequences result. If stars are observed, which are rotating very fast, then they either are very young, or they have no planets. Stars, which compared to our sun are rotating less fast, have given away the angular momentum to their planets and such, which hardly are rotating, have their planets already sent away into space. But if the last planet leaves its solar system and the sun stops to rotate, then the sun, which meanwhile has grown to a red giant, without a, the spherical form stabilizing centrifugal force, will collapse. The supernova is the death of a star and thereby neutrinos are set free, the material for new life.

After the coming off of the planets these first clear free their flight paths, by together with the sun collecting the flying around matter. Even whole planets thus can collide, are slowed down and form bigger units. Finally only some few planets in very particular orbits are left. Their average distance to the sun obeys in an until now completely inexplicable manner the Titius-Bode series (equation 12.5, table 12.2). In the case of the by the german scientist Titius 1766 formulated regularity it concerns a rule of thumb founded purely on experience. But it is remarkable, that the planet Uranus could be predicted (Bode 1772) and after systematic searching also be found (Herschel 1781) with it.

The most distant planets Neptune and Pluto however don't obey the law. Their distance should be very much larger. But this circumstance we already had given reasons for with the fact, that for them the resonating interaction already overlaps and exceeds the gravitation in its effect (chap. 10.1 note[ii] and chap. 10.5).

The arbitrary seeming series of numbers 0, 3, 6, 12, 24, 48, 96, 192, 384, ... with a respective doubling of the value, starting with the 3, the addition of 4 and the following division by 10 at first are nothing but pure acrobatics of numbers, which now really has nothing to do with physics (table 12.2). A physical background can be supposed however because of the tried and tested applicability and that should be fathomed.

Orbital angular momenta $J \cdot \omega$ of the nth planet
with: $J = m \cdot r_n^2$ and $\omega = v_n/r_n$:

$$J \cdot \omega = m \cdot r_n \cdot v_n \quad (12.7)$$

By using amounts the orbital angular momentum to: dependent

	equation 12.3:	equation 12.4:	
$J \cdot \omega$ =	$m \cdot \sqrt{G \cdot m_s \cdot r_n}$	= $G \cdot m \cdot m_s / v_n$	(12.8)
	on r_n	on v_n	

change of the angular momentum (1st derivation) with the ordinal number n

$$\frac{d(J \cdot \omega)}{dn} = m \cdot \sqrt{G \cdot m_s} \, \frac{d(\sqrt{r_n})}{dn} = G \cdot m \cdot m_s \frac{d(v_n^{-1})}{dn} \quad (12.9)$$

$$\frac{d(J \cdot \omega)}{dn} = \frac{m \cdot \sqrt{G \cdot m_s}}{2 \cdot \sqrt{r_n}} \cdot \frac{dr_n}{dn} = - \frac{G \cdot m \cdot m_s}{v_n^2} \cdot \frac{dv_n}{dn} \quad (12.10)$$

with eq. 12.8:

$$\frac{d(J \cdot \omega)}{dn} = \frac{J \cdot \omega}{2 \cdot r_n} \cdot \frac{dr_n}{dn} = - \frac{J \cdot \omega}{v_n} \cdot \frac{dv_n}{dn} \quad (12.11)$$

By comparison of the left and the right solution (of eq. 12.11), after introduction of the constant:

$$\frac{1}{N} = \frac{1}{r_n} \cdot \frac{dr_n}{dn} = - \frac{2}{v_n} \cdot \frac{dv_n}{dn} \quad (12.12)$$

the differential equations read:

$$\frac{r_n}{N} = \frac{dr_n}{dn} \qquad \frac{v_n}{2 \cdot N} = - \frac{dv_n}{dn} \quad (12.13)$$

and the general solutions:

$$r(n) = r_n = r_o \cdot e^{\lambda \cdot n} \qquad v(n) = v_n = v_o \cdot e^{\lambda \cdot n} \quad (12.14)$$

The 1st derivation: and the comparison with

$$\frac{dr_n}{dn} = r_o \cdot \lambda \cdot e^{\lambda \cdot n} \qquad \frac{dv_n}{dn} = v_o \cdot \lambda \cdot e^{\lambda \cdot n} \quad (12.15)$$

eq. 12.13 and eq. 12.14:

$$\frac{dr_n}{dn} = \frac{r_o}{N} e^{\lambda \cdot n} \qquad \frac{dv_n}{dn} = \frac{-v_o}{2N} e^{\lambda \cdot n} \quad (12.16)$$

determine the coefficient λ:

$$\lambda = 1/N \qquad \lambda = -1/2N \quad . \quad (12.17)$$

The result is for a planet in the nth orbit:

for the average orbital radius	for the average orbital velocity
$r(n) = r_n$	$v(n) = v_n$
$r(n) = r_o \cdot e^{n/N}$	$v(n) = v_o \cdot e^{-n/2N}$
(12.18)	(12.19)

Fig. 12.3:   Calculation of the distances and orbital velocities of the planets

12.3 The derivation of the Titius-Bode law

Even if Bohr's atomic model should be wrong, it gladly is compared to the system of the planets. The radii of the electron orbits mathematically result as eigenvalue solutions of the Schrodinger equation, and that we have derived from the fundamental field equation (chap. 5.1, eq. 15) (chap. 5.5 - 5.9). The orbital radii are calculated in increasing order in accordance with the sequence of whole numbers with n = 1, 2, 3, 4, ...

From the same sequential regularity of the planetary orbits can be derived, that they also obey the eigenvalues of the same fundamental field equation, which isn't called a world equation in vain. The quantitative distances from the sun are determined by the size of the sun: if the sun increases, then also all distances increase to the same extent.

Now result identical distances between the orbits from Bohr's model, whereas this distance in the case of the planets with increasing distance from the sun gets larger. The reason for this unevenly grading can be calculated just like that (fig. 12.3).

We arbitrarily pick a planet, which occupies the orbit n, where n again represents the sequence of whole numbers (n = 0, 1, 2, 3, ...). If the orbit of this n^{th} planet changes, then also its distance to the sun $r_n = r(n)$, its orbital velocity $v_n = v(n)$ and the orbital momentum $J \cdot \omega$ (12.7) are changed.
We try (as in equation 11.42, fig. 11.10) the balance of forces between centrifugal force and gravitational force (eq. 12.1, fig. 12.1) and solve equation 12.2 for the orbital velocity. The orbital angular momentum of the planet written down once in its dependency on r_n and in the right column next to it on v_n (eq. 12.8, fig. 12.3), is derived for the orbital ordinal number n, to record the change in angular momentum (equations 12.9 to 12.11).

In fig. 12.3 the paths to the solution for both cases are given. For the average orbital radius r(n) as well as for the average orbital velocity v(n) of the planet an exponential course (eq. 12.18 and 12.19) and in logarithmic representation a straight line (fig. 12.4) results.

Even the orbits of the distant planets Neptune and Pluto, for which the Titius-Bode series fails, now are correctly recorded, so that with good cause can be claimed, to correctly have derived the regularity of the distances of the planets physically and mathematically.

The hollow planet
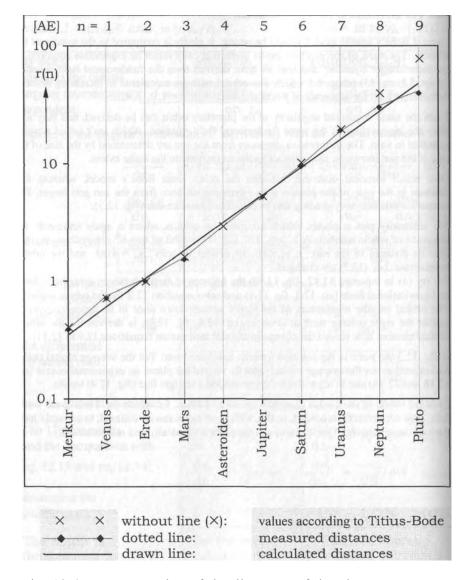
Fig. 12.4: Representation of the distances of the planets

result of the calculation: $\quad r(n) = 0{,}3332 \cdot e^{\left(\frac{n}{1{,}82}\right)} \quad$ [AE] $\qquad$ (12.20)

12.4 The hollow planet

The numerous accompanying moons of the big planets obey in the same manner as the planets this regularity, so that for the found result every coincidence is excluded. The orbits of the moons of Jupiter (fig. 12.5), of the moons of Saturn (fig. 12.6) and of the moons of Uranus (fig. 12.7) in logarithmic representation lie almost on a straight line. Some orbits certainly are occupied several times, while many an orbit has remained unoccupied. Other orbits again are occupied by a ring of countless chunks of rock, so-called planetoids. Best known representative is the asteroid belt (n = 4) between the orbit
of Mars (n = 3) and that of Jupiter (n = 5). The Titius law requested the planet "Aster", but what one found (Piazzi, 1801), at first only was Ceres, the biggest representative of the small planets.
As a second asteroid, as they are called, was found (Olbers 1802) its discoverer proposed the explanation that both, Ceres and Pallas, could have formed in a cosmic catastrophe, which a bigger celestial body had suffered.
Perhaps the sought-for planet Aster actually had imploded after a collision and had been torn apart in countless fragments, of which today still more than half a million pieces are flying around. Most of the fragments however have been collected by the neighbouring planets Jupiter and Mars. Also in the case of the moons of Mars and the outer moons of Jupiter it could concern scrap of Aster. Some presumably fell on the young earth and triggered natural disasters and left deep scars.
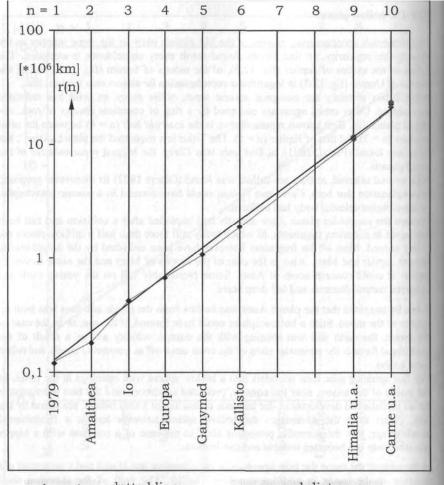
It can be imagined that the planet Aster was hollow from the inside and thus was built up similar to the moon. Such a hollow sphere could have formed, if the sun, or in the case of the moon, the earth still was rotating with the cosmic velocity and as a result of the centrifugal force at the perimeter parts of the crust came off as connected sheets and rolled up to a tube.
The fast spinning tube then remodels into a hollow sphere with openings at the poles. In the inside of the sphere, near the equator, protected conditions and the best prerequisites for an undisturbed development, for instance of intelligent living beings, are found by the way. Apart from the advantages the hollow sphere however has as a fundamental disadvantage, that the normally protecting shell in the case of a collision with a bigger celestial body can becomes instable and can implode.

In the case of the moon the pole openings in the meantime are closed and a presumed gas pressure in the inside in addition provides stability. The wall of the spherical shell however is not evenly thick, so that the moon all the time turns the same, namely the heavier, side towards the earth. In view of the seismic measurements of the Apollo-missions, which revealed an extremely small damping of the ground of the moon (chap. 11.9, note <i>), we should look after our moon well, because a comet, which lets the moon implode, would be able to bring about more damage on earth, than if it would hit the earth directly.

Should there exist a hollow and possibly even on the inside habitable planet in our solar system, then surely Saturn should be considered. Its density is smaller than that of water, so that water would be distributed over the inside area of the hollow sphere, if it would be existent. One should examine more detailed the extremely flat pole regions of Saturn for possible openings! Also Uranus and Neptune are possible candidates. This only is thought as an idea.

n = 1   2   3   4   5   6   7   8   9   10

dotted line: measured distances
drawn line: calculated distances

in position n = 9 stand: Leda, Himalia, Lysithea and Elara
in position n = 10 stand: Ananke, Carme, Pasiphae and Sinope

Fig. 12.5: The distances of the moons of Jupiter

Result of the calculation: $r(n) = 67608 \cdot e^{\left(\frac{n}{1{,}743}\right)}$ [km]   (12.21)

<i>:   Note to chapter 12.5:

What we observe as and call cosmos, is nothing but a structured state of space.

12.5 Concerning the formation of the universe

The widespread concept of an expanding universe bases on the observation of a red shift of the spectral lines of galaxies, which increases with their distance. As the physical explanation for the discovery of Hubble, the Doppler shift for a light source, which is moving away from us, is used. But this concept of an against the attraction of the gravitation taking place expansion is nothing more than a work hypothesis.

The by Christian Doppler in acoustics investigated effect treats the observable shift in frequency, if the source of sound or the receiver is moved with regard to the medium of propagation. But according to today's version there doesn't exist such a medium at all for light, because Einstein has abolished the concept of the aether. According to that the Doppler effect neither can be applied to changes in light frequency. In the case of the expanding universe, for a decrease of the density and the tracing back to a Big Bang, it therefore should concern a misinterpretation!

Here another effect has to take effect, which one is not yet clarified. Perhaps the changing field relations of the observer environment play a role, after the earth moves away from the sun. But perhaps the galaxies only influence the propagation of their own light, or the light ray on its millions of years lasting way through space slightly loses energy, what is expressed by gradually increasing its wavelength and shifting its spectrum towards the red frequencies.
The hypothesis of the Big Bang moreover contradicts every causality. It is not able to give an answer concerning the origin and the future of the universe and on the question of the origin of the energy and the particles. With that its physical value of explanation goes towards zero.

If we again hold the theory of objectivity against the theory of relativity (part 1), we come
to quite other answers. Here apart from the waves also vortices are found. Specially in the case of the spherical vortex a part of the wave power is enclosed in the inside, so that looked at from the outside a from zero differing energetic state results, which even is accessible measuring technically (chapter 6.2).
Wave and vortex are two possible forms of state, so that for the conversion of one state in the other state at first no energy is necessary. The change of state depends on the local field relations.
If we assume that in the beginning the cosmos was free of energy and particles. Then the first vortex was a possible product of chance with an infinite extension. This first spherical vortex, which was contracted under the potential vortex pressure, gave structure to space, gave it energy and field and took care for the rolling up and formation of new vortices[i].
It can be assumed, that even today new particles continually are being formed in the fringe areas of the infinitely extended cosmos, which fly towards us and in doing so contract. They are attracted and at the same time shrunk by the fields of the celestial bodies. They form the source of all matter and energy for our observable universe, which permanently is changing its structure. Because the same oscillation with reversed sign is enclosed in the inside of the spherical vortex, the sum of the energy present in the cosmos is exactly equal to zero. With that the question concerning the causality is superfluous.

dashed: measured distances
straight line: calculated distances
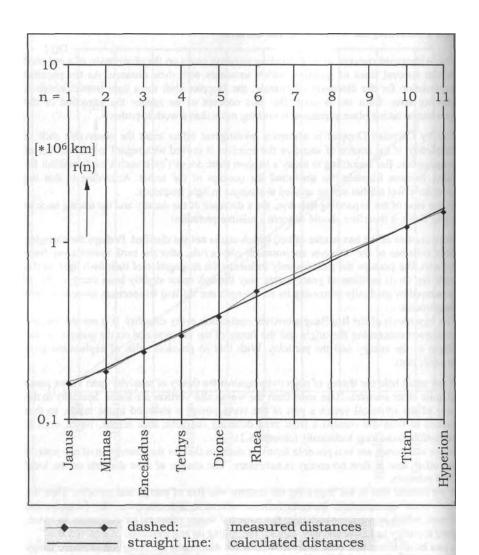
Fig. 12.6: The distances of the moons of Saturn

Note to chapter 12.6 (2nd law of thermodynamics[i]):

Heat cannot completely be transformed
into mechanic or electric energy.

[i]:   see Electromagnetic environmental compatibility, Part 1, fig. 8.4

The formation of the universe also can be explained causal and completely without a hot Big Bang, even if a supernova surely represents something like a "local Big Bang" for the concerned celestial bodies. According to the observations of the sky expansion and contraction, explosion and implosion occur everywhere in form of oscillations.

On the whole the expanding universe, which once was in thermodynamic equilibrium with matter, should cool down further and further. But stop, the 2nd law of thermodynamics teaches one just the opposite. If the entropy only increases, as the law dictates, then the whole universe should end in a heat death, just as mysteriously and inexplicable, as it should have been formed with the Big Bang. Perhaps something is wrong with the law (fig. 8.4)?

12.6 Counter examples concerning the 2nd law of thermodynamics

Most likely a small experiment convinces us. We heat two spheres, one somewhat less, the other somewhat more. Then we focus the heat radiation of the less hot sphere with help of a parabolic mirror and point it to the hotter one of both. That as a result becomes hotter, whereas the colder is cooled down. The heat thus has flown from the colder to the hotter sphere. Is it allowed to do that?

According to the 2nd law of thermodynamics it of course isn't. There the heat always can only flow from the hot to the cold sphere. But in this primitive experiment it measurable and verifiable flows in the wrong direction. Here the entropy, which is said to always only increase, actually decreases. Here entropy is being destroyed!

Shall we now let the carrying out of the experiment be forbidden under threat of penalty or shall we secretly put the law of entropy to sleep? It can't be denied that this law until now has quite well helped us along, at least for terrestrial processes, at least if one dispenses with the poor inventors, whose inventions offend against the since 100 years tried and tested 2nd law of thermodynamics. They haven't really arrived at the patent office at all, then they already are outside at the door again. Such inventors with their illegal behaviour even today must feel like criminals.

Just what that observed experiment can, each refrigerator and each warmth pump is using as well. And it is not an isolated case: also our sun clearly functions and operates illegally! The surface temperature amounts to only 5800 degrees Kelvin and supplies the atmosphere of the sun with energy. The energy thus flows from the sun to the corona, and that is with values above 1,000,000 degrees Kelvin for some powers of ten hotter!

Only the vortex concept resolves the many question marks without compulsion. In the case of the sun certainly vortices are at work. Here the high temperature in the corona arises as a result of vortices falling apart. We also speak of eddy losses. The transport takes place by heat radiation, exactly as in the experiment with the two spheres.

The possibility exists therefore in vortex processes as well as in technical circle processes that heat could flow from the colder to the hotter sphere. Whether this is an offence against the 2nd law of thermodynamics, is in the end a question of interpretation of the law and up to the opinions of the scholars.
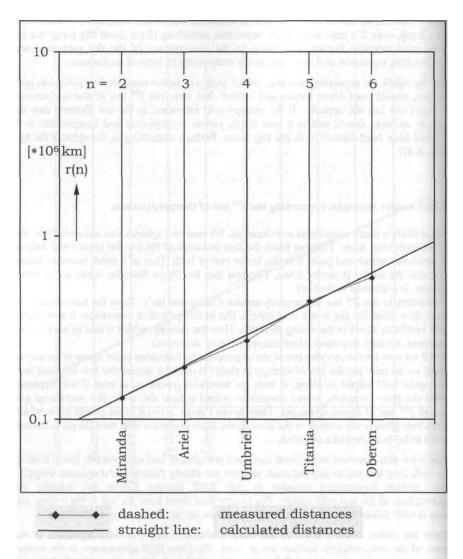
Fig. 12.7: The distances of the moons of Uranus

Note to chapter 12.7 (law of entropy):

> The entropy of a closed system never can decrease. It is increased in the case of all irreversible processes. In the case of reversible processes it remains constant.

12.7 Entropy destroying potential vortices

Vortices in addition can amalgamate to balls and to planar vortex systems (4.9 and 4.10). In that case similar consequences, as they can be observed in flow-technical potential vortices in hydrodynamics, can be expected. As a result of the concentration effect (4.1) and because of the conservation of angular momentum an increase of the velocity of rotation of the vortex occurs. Like in the case of the pirouette in figure skating a spontaneous acceleration of its own is observed. In that way the kinetic energy of the system is increased, and that has to come from somewhere.

If we don't supply the contracting vortex with any additional energy for the increase of its rotation of its own, then as a source of energy only the heat energy is left. For this reason every contracting vortex generally converts heat in kinetic energy, it therefore cools down its environment! It moreover destroys entropy and offends against the 2nd law of thermodynamics (fig. 12.8).

It isn't an accident, if in the inside of a tornado it starts to hail. The whirlwinds really furnish visual instruction of the contraction and acceleration of their own of ring-like vortices. If then, even in tropical regions, hail stones are formed, the cooling effect has to come from somewhere, and it can be assumed that the vortex withdraws the heat energy from its environment (calculation in fig. 12.8).

If in specialist books is talked about matter or stars condensing, then vortex physics teaches us that they in reality are contracting and by doing that cooling down. That also is valid for whole galaxies. We owe solely the vortex laws that the continual heating by absorption of radiation is prevented and our sky in the night is dark and doesn't shine as light as day.

The cosmic background radiation, which as a result of vortices lies at almost 3° Kelvin, actually can only be given account for with a contracting of vortices of the Milky Way galaxy. If the cooling down in a compression resp. condensation process has arrived at absolute zero, the vortex becomes stationary, the contraction becomes dependent on the irradiated energy or it wholly comes to a standstill without supply of energy. An example for that is earth's inner core, which at zero Kelvin can't contract further.

From the point of view of causality it is suggested that we galactic and perhaps even cosmic to a large extent are in thermodynamic equilibrium, completely without Big Bang and heat death[i].

Numerous inventions, as mentioned, are based on the principle of converting environmental heat in useable energy by contraction of vortices. If however the inventors don't know the vortex laws and if they have developed their concept empirically and less physically, then it very often happens that erroneously gravity is made responsible, then is talked of gravitational converters, of the use of a gravitational field energy. But the inventors don't do themselves a favour with that.

---

[i]: In the seminar it is desired to think about this. Doing so the philosophical faculty may feel as well addressed, as the sandpit of physics, in which completely unsuspecting is played and juggled with Big Bang hypotheses by ignoring all physical regularities and every common sense.

Evidence to counter:
planar, contracting ring-like vortex

conservation of angular momentum: $J \cdot \omega = m \cdot r \cdot v = \text{constant}$ (12.7)

conservation of energy: $E_{kin} = \frac{1}{2} m \cdot v^2 = \text{constant}$ (12.22)

	before (r_1, v_1)	afterwards (r_2, v_2)	
contracted $(r_2 < r_1)$:	$m \cdot r_1 \cdot v_1$	$= \quad m \cdot r_2 \cdot v_2$	(12.7*)
with the consequences:	v_2/v_1	$= \quad r_1/r_2$	(12.23)

and:
kinetic energy: $E_{kin1} = \frac{1}{2} \cdot m \cdot v_1^2 \neq E_{kin2} = \frac{1}{2} \cdot m \cdot v_2^2$ (12.24)

increase of the
kinetic energy:

$$\frac{Q_2}{Q_1} = \frac{E_{kin2}}{E_{kin1}} = \frac{v_2^2}{v_1^2} = \frac{r_1^2}{r_2^2} \qquad (12.25)$$

notice: *Because of the change in energy/heat **no adiabatic change of state!***

change of volume:
with $V = \pi \cdot r^2 \cdot h$

$$\frac{V_1}{V_2} = \frac{r_1^2}{r_2^2} \qquad (12.26)$$

notice: *Because of the change of volume **no isochore change of state!***

assumption: ***isobar change of state*** *(with p = const., Gay-Lussac):*

result:
(vortices of gas)
involved with the:

$$\frac{T_1}{T_2} = \frac{V_1}{V_2} = \frac{v_2^2}{v_1^2} = \frac{r_1^2}{r_2^2} \qquad (12.27)$$

* **acceleration** $v_2 > v_1$ *is the contraction of vortices* $r_2 < r_1$, $V_2 < V_1$

* *the cooling:* $T_2 < T_1$ and $\Delta T = T_1 - T_2 = T_2 \cdot \left(\frac{r_1^2 - r_2^2}{r_2^2} \right)$ (12.27*)

* *withdrawal of heat* $Q_2 - Q_1 = \Delta Q = Q_1 \frac{\Delta T}{T_2} = Q_1 \cdot \left(\frac{r_1^2 - r_2^2}{r_2^2} \right)$ (12.28)

* *and **entropy destruction**:* $\Delta S = C_p \cdot m \cdot \ln \left(\frac{T_2}{T_1} \right) = C_p \cdot m \cdot \ln \left(\frac{r_2}{r_1} \right)^2$ (12.29)

Fig. 12.8: The cooling and entropy destroying effect of contracting potential vortices (calculations concerning chapter 12.7)

13. Recording of space and time

If observations should force us to touch the sacred physical laws, then we should first of all judge our measuring technique critically of all sides and bring it in an usable state. I suggest, we start completely from the beginning with the devices, with which the dimensions of space and time are recorded, with the tape measures for the measurement of length and the chronometers, our clocks.

We must find out, why comets are slowed down if they approach the sun like by the hand of a ghost and in going away again are accelerated, although no forces at all act on the celestial bodies from the outside.

We must find out, why in mines deep under the earth another value for the gravitational constant is being measured as on the surface of the earth[i]. The results hardly can be imagined, if an universal constant should lose its constancy.

Thereby can Newtonian mechanics and the well-known laws be used very successfully from today's point of view, as the derivations in the last chapters have shown. We even could verifiably and mathematically correct calculate the growth of the earth and the solar system with them. The physical laws in the normally used formulation in spite of that seem to be bound to certain limits. Some observations contradict all experience[ii].

---

[i]: H. Schuh: Eine Konstante verliert ihre Konstanz; neue Experimente nahren Zweifel an Newtons Gravitationsgesetz, Die Zeit Nr. 40 vom 25.09.97. From it the following quotation (translated):

„It already is suspected for several years, that a fifth force could exist, this suspicion goes back to exact measurements of the gravitational constant G in Australian mines and shafts. Physicists of the University of Queensland in Brisbane had determined, that G for measurements underneath the earth is about one percent larger than the corresponding, since centuries in laboratories determined size. Their proposal for explanation, namely a fifth repelling force, at first met with sharp disapproval. But an at 21 august in the journal Science (Bd. 237/87, P. 881) published work, which bases on measurements in a drilling hole in Michigan, confirms the Australian data".

[ii]: Already the nobel prize winner of physics, Lenard, pointed to the circumstance, that the relativistic representation of the astronomical aberration is incorrect, after no distinguishable aberration could be observed at binary stars, as it had been expected. With that Lenard by the way also has confirmed the existence of an aether. P. Lenard, Annalen der Physik, Bd. 73, S. 89 (1924)

S-V: indication of month
       (rotating).

A: inlet

G: swimmer

E: outlet

Fig. 13.1: The water meter of the Ktesibios (approx. 250 BC)
(with regulation of the water-level)

13.1 The measuring technical debacle

We are standing for a measuring technical debacle, because we have fixed our calendar to the rotation of its own of the earth. We call a 360° turn a day, divide it in 24 hours of 60 minutes each and every minute in 60 seconds. With that we determine the duration of a second.
A clock according to this definition only then is exact, if it follows the changes of the earth to the same extent. Obviously this in particular is the case for atomic clocks. An objectively seen precise going clock however would land at the waste disposal site as completely unusable.
Alter all nobody wants to know, how late it really is. Everyone only wants to find confirmed his subjective feeling, and our experience of time simply is directed after the course of the sun, thus after the rotation of the earth!

For the moment and as an approximation also for the life time of a person, this determination of time may be sufficiently exact, but seen over larger periods of time, one doesn't get around a conversion. Actually the 200 million years since the beginning of the Creation on the mentioned primeval hill are considerably less long ago. The earth and the whole solar system are very much younger, than was assumed until now!

If we as an example again take the cited research group of the University of Arizona (chap. 11.10[i]), which by means of an analysis of sediment formations have found out, in accordance with our calculation, that 900 million years ago a day only had 18 hours[i]. Such traces in geological deposit layers can be very informative, if they are analysed correctly, since here the measurement technician himself is not subject to the process. He stands outside and hence can exactly measure the time difference.
If a geologist of that time had looked at his watch during the formation of the layers, then a day obviously would have had 24 hours, and he wouldn't have been able to understand the whole excitement at all. The accusation, he would suffer from chronic blindness caused by his job, he of course would repel resolutely. Can you now imagine, from which disease our science of today suffers?

Our chronometers are nothing but the improved model of a sundial[ii].

We live in the dimensions of space and time, but we quite obviously have the biggest possible difficulties with the dimensioning of both. Possibly we already aren't capable of that at all by principle. Most suitably we clarify the situation by means of examples concerning the two problem spheres.

Let us at first stay at the dimension of time. It may have become clear, how problematic the chosen determination of the time scale in seconds is and which contradictions can result if larger periods of time are considered. More and more often science fiction authors romp about on the playground of time, fantasize about some time travel, or they occasionally make jokes about it[iii].

---

[i]:   900 million years ago a day had 18 hours, Washington (dpa) 1997.
[ii]:   There also exist models, of which is asserted, they go according to the moon.
[iii]:   A passenger, who got on the 10 o'clock bus, passes by the church steeple
        clock, which only reads 5 to 10 and curses: Damn, I took the bus in the
        wrong direction!

Centrifugal force $F_{1,2} = (m/R) \cdot (v_E \pm v_f)^2 = m \cdot R \cdot (\omega_E \pm \omega_f)^2$ (13.1)

with: $R = 6378$ [km]   (radius of the earth),

$v_E = \omega_E \cdot R = 0,465$ [km/s] (rotational speed of the earth),   (11.20)

$v_f = \omega_f \cdot R = \pi \cdot R / t_o$ (speed of the plane)   (13.2)

and: t_o [s]   (duration of journey)

energy of the moving steering quanta:

$$E_{1,2} = \int_0^R F_{1,2}\, dR = m \int_0^R R \cdot (\omega_E \pm \omega_f)^2\, dR =$$ (13.3)

$$E_{1,2} = \frac{1}{2} \cdot m \cdot R^2 \cdot (\omega_E \pm \omega_f)^2 = \frac{1}{2} \cdot m \cdot (v_E \pm v_f)^2$$ (13.4)

energy balance (generally of a quantum of radiation):

$E_{1,2} + E_q = E_{ges}$ resp. $E_{ges} - E_q = E_{1,2} = \Delta E$ (13.5)

in general: $E = h \cdot f = m \cdot c^2$ resp. $m = h \cdot f / c^2$ (13.6)

and
specifically: $\Delta E = h \cdot \Delta f$ = $E_{1,2} = h \cdot f \cdot (v_E \pm v_f)^2 / (2c^2)$ (13.7)

(Gl. 13.4 mit 13.6):

$\Delta f / f = \Delta t_{1,2} / t_o$ resp. $\Delta t_{1,2} = t_o \cdot \Delta f / f$ (13.8)

(eq. 13.7 inserted into eq. 13.8)

resulting in: $\Delta t_{1,2} = t_o \cdot (v_E \pm v_f)^2 / (2 \cdot c^2)$ (13.9)

time of travel around half the earth: $t_o = \pi \cdot R / v_f$ (13.2)

results in a difference in going of: $\Delta t = \Delta t_1 - \Delta t_2$ (13.10)

$\Delta t = [(v_E + v_f)^2 - (v_E - v_f)^2] \cdot \pi \cdot R / (v_f \cdot 2 \cdot c^2)$ (13.11)

result
calculated: $\Delta t = 2 \cdot v_E \cdot \pi \cdot R / c^2 = \underline{207}$ [ns]   (13.12)

<u>measured</u> by Hafele and Keating[i]: $\underline{214}$ [ns]!   (13.13)

Fig. 13.2: The difference in going of two atomic clocks
            (caesium resonant clocks)

[i]: Hafele-Keating-Experiment, Oktober 1971; s. a. W. Bauer: Klassische Physik,
      Graphia Druck, Salzburg (1975), Eigenverlag

13.2 The clock paradox

The theme „time dilatation" in connexion with the particle decay already has been treated (part 1, chapter 6.20). It has been shown, that a fast moving and with that length contracted particle to exactly the same extent (Lorentz's square root) becomes more stable and longer-living. If relativists pack an atomic clock based on radioactive decay in a plane and detect a difference in going between the one, which has been flown around and a second identically constructed clock, which has stayed at the ground, then they have with that detected experimentally a very small length contraction, which really occurred, and by no means a time dilatation, as they claim.

Now we in addition owe Einstein, that the aether has been abolished and from that follows, that it can't play a role in which direction the plane flies. If therefore both clocks are taken along each in a separate plane, one plane flying to the west and the other to the cast, both planes meeting again for the first time on the other side of the globe, then according to Einstein's theory it shouldn't be possible to determine a difference in going, if both planes constructed identically were on the way with the same velocity. But this is not the case!

Actually a difference in going is measured, which however can't be calculated with the theory of relativity, yes, which is completely incompatible with this theory and clearly brings anyone to the eye, that the effect actually can't have to do anything with a time dilatation, that the moving clocks merely go wrong and we have to ask us, why[1].

These experiments were carried out with atomic clocks, which are constructed as caesium resonators and work with an exactness of one second in 300000 years. As a resonator serves a quartz crystal, which is controlled by an ion current of caesium atoms, which have lost their outermost enveloping electron. The system is fed back, because the oscillating quartz controlled by the caesium ions again adjusts the caesium vapour by radio wave and finally its own atomic controlling current (fig. 13.7).

The reason for the measured difference in going is seen in the field and here specially in the different gravitational field. The centrifugal force directed opposite to the gravitational force at least is not the same, because for a westward flight along the equator the speed of the plane v_f should be subtracted from the velocity of rotation of the earth v_E, whereas in eastward direction it should be added (eq. 13.1).

For the steering quanta supplied by the caesium resonator now the energy balance is put up (13.5 with 13.4) and the change of the reference frequency is calculated (13.7). With the change in frequency is connected directly a change of the at the two clocks readable times $t_{1,2}$ (13.8). For a journey around half the earth, where one clock is flown westwards and the other one eastwards, the difference in going should, according to the calculation, amount to 207 ns. Interesting of the result (13.11) undoubtedly is, that the velocity of the planes doesn"t play a role. It is cancelled out.

October 1971 caesium atomic clocks were sent around the world in scheduled planes in the Hafele-Keating experiment. To be able to estimate the inaccuracy in going of the clocks and with that the measurement error, four clocks were used. Between the westward journey (273 ±7 ns) and the eastward journey (59 ±10 ns) a difference in time of 214 nanoseconds was determined. This under strict scientific conditions determined result once more proves the correctness of the theory of objectivity by confirmation of the calculated value. That however is not valid for the special theory of relativity, because that doesn't appear in the calculation at all!

Who now believes, we would have less problems with the dimension of space, I must disappoint. The determination of the linear measures equally ends in a fiasco.

radius
of the earth: R = 6378 km

shaft depth: a = 1,3 km

measured change in
length: x* = 20,9 cm
            (lengthening)

expected: $\dfrac{a}{R} = \dfrac{b}{R-a}$

b = a - x = a(R-a)/R

x = a - a + a²/R =
x = 26,5 cm
(shortening)   (13.14)

measurement: b* = a + x*
expected: b = a - x
error: Δa = x* + x
                  Δa = 47,4 cm   (13.15)
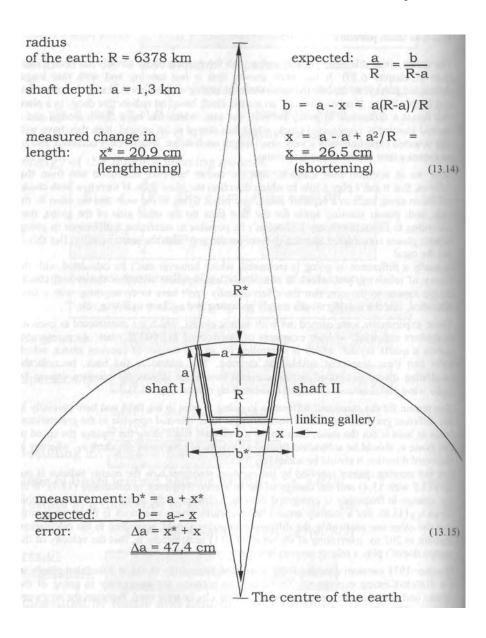
Fig. 13.3: Expectation and measurement in the Tamarack mines
(The curvature of the earth and the length of the shaft a
are drawn strongly exaggerated for clarification)

13.3 The Tamarack mines experiment

As long as the „foot measure" depended on the shoe size and the „cubit" on the forearm of the tailor, the world still was OK. The sciences however request a reproducible quantity for comparison, and that can be fetched at the Bureau International des Poids et Mesures in Sevres near Paris. The original meter is a Platinum alloy. Because the length of the metal always depends on temperature, it is stored at a constant kept temperature of 0° Celsius. Now there in addition still exists a field dependency, an electrostriction resp. magnetostriction. And how is the measurement bar behaving, if the earth grows and the density increases? Is it then shrinking just like other objects in its environment? At this point already chaos is proliferating.

The newest definition of the length measure meter acts as a blow for liberty and thus marks the abyss, at which we are standing: The length is determined by means of a measurement of transmission time of an electromagnetic wave, e.g. of a light signal. It is said that with this determination a higher reproducibility should be obtained. Actually a photo optical facility to measure length is as exact as the built-in facility to measure time, and there we use it again, our sundial. In addition a constancy of the speed of light is taken as a prerequisite, and that is given in meters per second. From a change of the speed of light for forinstance 10% a change in length for 10% as well would result[i]. Because we see this process with the help of our eyes as well with the speed of light, we never can see the change. We neither can technically measure it, because all gauges we construct are built up corresponding to our sensory impression. We ourselves have shovelled the hole, in which we fall.

Only if we succeed in taking a neutral standpoint outside of the events, the true relations will become visible to us. For the field dependency of the space measures a very clear experiment has been carried out, of which I now want to report[ii].

1901 the French government was offered the possibility to carry out an experiment in the shut down Tamarack mines near Calumet (Michigan) with the goal to determine the diameter of the earth more exact. For that the geophysicists let down two plumb-lines of 27.2 kg each in two perpendicular winding shafts, which were at a distance of 1.3 km from each other. The plumb-lines were tied to hardly expandable piano wires of as well 1.3 km length. It now was expected, since the plumb-lines hung in direction of the centre of the earth, that in a linking gallery between the two shafts a length of (1.3 - x) km should be measurable. From the shortening x one wanted to infer the diameter of the earth (fig. 13.3). But it came completely different.
Instead of a shortening a lengthening for x* = 20.9 cm was measured in the gallery! The point of intersection of the lines through the two shafts had to be not in the inside of the earth, but in space! Immediately „hollow earthers" appear, who claim we would live on the inside of a hollow world[ii]. Perhaps one should shoot them to the moon, because from there the earth without doubt is seen as a sphere. Obviously we aren't dealing with a surprise of a fair, but with a fundamental measuring technical problem.

---

[i]:   for that see also part I, chapter 6.11 and 6.12
[ii]:   http:/www.t0.or.at/subrise/hollow.htm

Volume of the globe: $V = (4/3) \cdot \pi \cdot R^3$ (13.16)
and of the inner sphere
in depth a: $V_a = (4/3) \cdot \pi \cdot (R-a)^3$ (13.17)

resulting in the
relative change:

$$\frac{\Delta V}{V} = \frac{V-V_a}{V} = 1 - \left(\frac{R-a}{R}\right)^3 = 1 - \left(1 - \frac{a}{R}\right)^3$$ (13.18)

from $m \approx V \cdot \rho$ for a constant density ρ (13.19)

and[iii]: $m = \phi/\sqrt{G \cdot 4 \cdot \pi \cdot \mu} = A \cdot \mu \cdot H/\sqrt{G \cdot 4 \cdot \pi \cdot \mu}$ (13.20)

follows: $m \sim V \sim H$ (13.21)

resp. the
relative change:

$$\frac{\Delta H}{H} = \frac{\Delta m}{m} = \frac{\Delta V}{V} = 1 - \left(1 - \frac{a}{R}\right)^3 = \underline{0.061\%}$$ (13.22)

According to the theory of objectivity the length of the
measurement wire is field dependent[ii] with:

$$H \sim 1/a^2 \quad \text{and} \quad H_a \sim 1/(a-\Delta a)^2$$ (13.23)

and the
relative change:

$$\frac{\Delta H}{H} = \frac{H_a - H}{H} = \left(\frac{a}{a-\Delta a}\right)^2 - 1$$ (13.24)

Shortening of the rule Δa is calculated from the comparison of
equations 13.22 and 13.24:

$$\frac{\Delta H}{H} = 1 - \left(1 - \frac{a}{R}\right)^3 = \left(\frac{a}{a-\Delta a}\right)^2 - 1$$ (13.25)

$$\Delta a = a \cdot (1 - 1/\sqrt{2 - (1-a/R)^3})$$ (13.26)

$\underline{\Delta a = 40}$ [cm]   (result of the calculation)

$\underline{\Delta a = 47}$ [cm]   (measurement value
                                  for comparison, 13.15)

Fig. 13.4:   Calculational verification of the measured shortening

13.4 Field dependent linear measure

If a measurement result delivers just the opposite, as was expected by the experimentators, then the layman is amazed and the expert is surprised, at least at first. But then, out of a feeling of panic, the whole view of life could collapse, as many as possible scientists and renowned professors are being informed and integrated, if they want it (Prof. Mc.Nair) or not (Prof. Hallock, Columbia University) and eventually the matter is buried third class and a guise of silence is spread over it. The censorship of the scientific making of opinion in advance doesn't permit publications, which are not in accord with our view of life, out of the animal survival instinct[i].

A science, which deserves this name, should look different. There it must be permitted, to ask questions and to publicly discuss about it.

I proceed from the assumption, that the earth is a sphere, which we inhabit from the outside; I have no doubts about that. With this as a prerequisite there is only one possible answer to the Tamarack mines experiment: The 1.3 kilometres long measurement wire, which in the gallery in a depth of 1.3 km had to jut out for 26.5 cm, instead is too short for 20.9 cm, from which immediately follows that it, howsoever, is shrunk for 47.4 cm in the depth.

At first of course the experiment was checked for possible measurement errors. The shafts were covered to exclude any draught. The measurement path was optically checked, but the result remained unchanged. But if the cause for the unexpected result doesn't lie in the experiment, then theoretical physics is addressed, after all it is still the experiment which shows us the physical reality and not some theoretical model concept. In the 1st part of the book already the derivation of a useful explanation is found: The speed of light and with that also the linear measure depends on the field[ii]. The measurement wire accordingly gets shorter, if it is exposed to a larger field strength (eq. 13.23). We can verify the measured shortening calculative (fig. 13.4). For that we at first determine the change of the field strength, as it is to be expected in a depth of 1.3 km. We here are dealing with the closed H field lines, which are responsible for the gravitation. In a past derivation it has been shown, that a gravitating mass can be converted into a magnetic field[iii]. Between a mass m and a field strength H hence exists a proportionality (13.21), in the same way as between the same mass and its volume, if a constant density is present (13.19).

The result accordingly is a relative decrease of the volume of the earth and the corresponding mass being under the measurement place, as well as a relative decrease of the radial component of the field strength, but a corresponding relative increase of the tangential component of the field for 0.061% (13.22 with 13.18).

In the gallery the measurement wire however is spread out in the direction of the tangential component of the field lines, and that shortens the measurement wire as a result of the field dependency of the linear measures[ii] (13.23). From the above increase in field the calculational shortening of the rule for 40 cm results, which compared to the measurement result also should be rated as a confirmation of the theory of objectivity which was taken as a basis[ii]!

---

[i]:   Example: K. Meyl: Potentialwirbel, Bd. 1, reference entry /5/
[ii]:   for that see also part 1, chapter 6.6, equation 65 and chapter 6.10
[iii]: K. Meyl, Potentialwirbel Band 2 (1992), page 27, equation 20

Fig. 13.5: Rise of the earth over the horizon of the moon""

<i>:   Mitton, S. (Herausg.): Cambridge Enzyklopadie der Astronomie,
Orbis Verlag (1989), note: No star is seen!

<ii>:   see also the references in part 1, chapter 6.9

13.5 Experiences from space travel

The good correspondence of the calculated shortening of the measurement wire and the until now not understood measurement in the Tamarack mines shows both qualitatively, and quantitatively the correctness and useful applicability of the theory of objectivity of the field dependency of the linear measures. Our measurement laboratories normally are situated on the earth's surface and there everywhere are found approximately identical field relations. But if we leave the usual measurement environment and move the laboratory for instance in the sky, then we experience a complete mystery. Here however prevail the reversed conditions as in the mines experiment, in which in the inside of the earth. for an increase of the field strength, a length shortening was measured. In the sky the field strengths decrease and the linear measures correspondingly increase.

This experience astronaut Roosa made in the Apollo 14 mission. While he alone in his capsule orbited the moon, he depicted mission control, he could see the lunar module and observe his two colleagues at their work on the moon. Nobody wanted to believe the astronaut, since he was flying in a height of 180 km!

Commander Armstrong (Apollo 11) at the first landing on the moon indicated, the target crater Mackensen, 4.6 km in diameter measured from the earth, just has the size of a soccer field! Astronaut Scott (Apollo 15) called Mount Hardley, which is said to be 4.8 km high, a practice hill for skiing. Perhaps they somewhat have exaggerated, but a true core in the statements always is present!

Actually the gravitational field of our satellite is very much smaller than that of the earth. On the surface of the moon there is only one sixth of the gravitational pull of the earth. If we, to be able to compare, stick to the details of size, as they are measured by our laboratory on earth, then the astronauts on the way to the moon together with the lunar module and their rover had grown for a factor $\sqrt{6}$, then the first footprint is 2.5 times as large as on earth, then the astronauts were moving like giants in the scenery of a model of the railroad (eq. 13.23 and note[ii] at fig. 13.4).

On the moon there exists almost no atmosphere, for which reason the astronauts had imagined a wonderful view of the star-spangled sky, at least before they started. After the landing they were bitterly disappointed. The sky was black and not one single star could be seen! They have brought many photographs, but nowhere stars have been photographed, they apparently have moved outside the range of vision (fig. 13.5 and 13.6).

Many will still remember that the first pictures, which the space telescope Hubble supplied 1990, were completely blurred. The problem obviously was, that the mirrors had been adjusted on earth and not in space. Only after the optics had been given glasses in 1994, sharp pictures could be radioed to earth. Somehow the distance to the stars had changed. The telescope had become short-sighted, resp. the distance to the star-spangled sky appeared to be gotten larger. We already know why. If we remove us from the gravitational field of the earth, the field strength decreases and the observable distances increase! The highly sensitive telescope already suffced the 5% deviation, with which should have been reckoned for the near earth orbit, to be fatal.

One should have familiarized the astronauts before with the laws of physics. Then this disappointment would have been spared to them, and in the case of the Hubble telescope the NASA and the european ESA could have saved a lot of money for the sake of the tax-paying population[ii].

Fig. 13.6 a: Illustrierte Wissenschaft Nr. 11 (1997) Page 62

1st   example: landing   on   the   moon
gravitational ...

$$\frac{...\text{pull of the earth}}{...\text{pull of the moon}} = \frac{g_E}{g_m} = \frac{M / R^2}{m_m / R_m^2} = \frac{M}{m_m} \cdot \frac{R_m^2}{R^2} = 6{,}0375 \tag{13.27}$$

in space everywhere on the surface of a sphere is valid: $A = 4\pi R^2$

eq. 13.20 (fig. 13.4<iii>): $m \sim \phi = A \cdot B = 4\pi R^2 \cdot \mu H \sim R^2 \cdot H$

as well as eq. 13.23 (fig. 13.4<ii>) for the field dependency: $H \sim 1/l^2$

and further:

$$6{,}0375 = \frac{g_E}{g_m} = \frac{H_E}{H_m} = \frac{l_m^2}{l_E^2} \tag{13.28}$$

resulting in the length dilatation (expansion) on the moon:

$$l_{m\,(Mond)} : l_{E\,(Erde)} = \sqrt{6{,}0375} = \underline{2{,}457} \tag{13.29}$$

2nd example: communications satellite in a geostationary orbit
(at $h = 36000$ km above the equator, $R = 6378$ km).

$$\frac{l_h}{l_E} = \sqrt{\frac{H_E}{H_h}} = \frac{R+h}{R} = \underline{6{,}64} \tag{13.30}$$

Fig. 13.6 b: Examples of calculation for length dilatation[i]

[i]: If the theoretical value of 6.64 could be quantitatively confirmed by observations from off the earth with a telescope at a corresponding magnification, then with that would have been proved, that in the case of the spherical aberration it actually concerns the calculated influence of the field.

[ii]:   U. Seiler-Spielmann: Das Marchen vom toten Mond, Zeiten Schrift 5/94, S.39

13.6 Spherical aberration

It is true that the problem of the changed length relations is known to the experts under the term of a "spherical aberration". But with that it is neither qualitatively nor quantitatively understood. Only the theory of objectivity soundly gives reasons for, why the astronaut Roosa has seen his colleagues almost 3 times as large, why weather satellites in a height of 1500 km are approx. 25% larger and why communications satellites in a 36000 km high geostationary orbit even increase to the 6.64 fold of their original size[i]. It also explains, why the neutral point between earth and moon, at which the attraction of masses of both celestial bodies mutually cancel, wasn't reached at the point where it had been expected by the moon rockets[ii].

We, the inhabitants of the earth, are adapted completely to the conditions on the earth's surface. If we find our way well in the dimensions of space and time, as we observe them, then that must not be valid by all means for science, because that has made it its business to find out the secrets of nature.

If it wants to deserve the name science, then it on the one hand has to consider, that we, the organic materials, as well as all inorganic materials are assembled from the same atoms and molecules and with that are exposed to the same length relations. If changes in length between day and night (as a result of the gravitational field of the sun (see chap. 6.7), between summer and winter or as a result of changes in field occur, then we aren't able to register this at all. That even today the ,,foot" is used as a measure, for instance in the air traffic, shows only too clearly, how man raises itself to the measure of all things. Science asks for modesty!
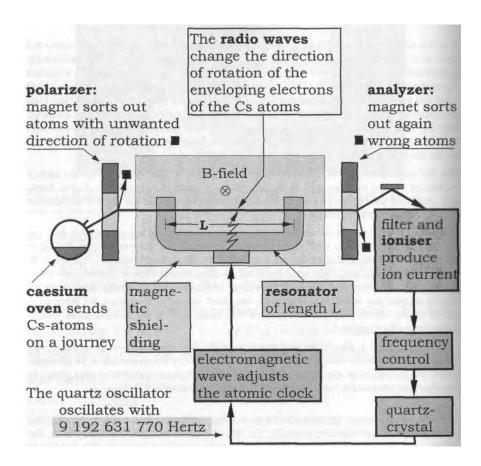
On the other hand it should be paid attention to the fact, that man eyes everything with speed of light with the optics of his eyes, and that speed by no means has to be constant. Solely the definition of the speed of light c as a linear measure per unit of time points to the direct proportionality between c and a length 1 (see chapter 6.3):

$$c \sim 1 \qquad (13.31)$$

If a rule has proven to be unusable for measuring a distance, then we'll experience the same disaster, if we measure optically, i.e. with the speed of light. Obviously both, the length 1 and the speed of light c depend in the same manner on the respective local field strength. On the one hand both measurement techniques lead to the same result, but on the other hand what can't be measured with one method, neither can be measured with the other.

To prove the constancy, it is normal to measure the speed of light optically. But since there exists a proportionality between measurement variable and measurement path (53), the unknown variable is being measured with itself. This measurement faulty by principle in all cases delivers a constant value. In contrast to the textbook opinion of today by no means a constancy of the speed of light can be assumed. In the case of the in a vacuum measurable 300,000 km/s it concerns a capital measurement error, at best a constant of measurement, but never ever a constant of nature!

With the postulate and the misinterpretation of a constancy of the speed of light as a universal constant of nature Einstein already let several generations of physicists run into the same dead end, in which they today are stuck altogether. It surely is no accident, that the big time of discoveries abrupt came to an end with Einstein.

The **radio waves** change the direction of rotation of the enveloping electrons of the Cs atoms

polarizer: magnet sorts out atoms with unwanted direction of rotation ■

analyzer: magnet sorts out again ■ wrong atoms

B-field ⊗

L

caesium oven sends Cs-atoms on a journey

magne-tic shiel-ding

resonator of length L

filter and **ioniser** produce ion current

The quartz oscillator oscillates with 9 192 631 770 Hertz

electromagnetic wave adjusts the atomic clock

frequency control

quartz-crystal

Schematic representation concerning principle of functioning

L = length of resonator determining the exactness

The B-field is a weak magnetic field, which eliminates the influence of magnetic stray fields.

The arrangement in addition is situated in a vacuum tank.

Fig. 13.7: Set-up of a caesium atomic clock

13.7 Irony of the measuring technique

Let's record: The linear measure is determined and defined by a measurement of transmission time. As a reason is given, that with today's clock technology a higher precision and reproducibility can be obtained, as with a rule or original meter. The exactness of going of the atomic clocks again depends on the free flying path (L in fig. 13.7) of the atoms. For the caesium clocks of the Physikalisch Technischen Bundesanstalt in Braunschweig the resonator length amounts to several meters! The clock is used world-wide as a standard.

The irony thus lies in the fact, that a geometric length dictates the measurement of time and the measurement of time again determines the measurement of length - poor science!

How does one free oneself from a capital closed loop conclusion? Why and how do signal transmission times or clocks actually depend on the gravitation? Who once got stuck in a dead end, knows that he only can get out in the reverse gear.

A possible way goes back to the roots of classical physics and to the theory of objectivity in the 1st part of the book, which is free from the limits of a subjective and relativistic observer standpoint. That isn't a dead end and in addition explains, why all atomic clocks react sensitive to magnetic fields (magnetostriction) and what these fields have to do with gravity (see chap. 6.9)!

Today's clocks are so exact, that even differences between a clock stationed on a mountain and one at sea-level can be recorded. Even more clearly was the depending on gravitation determined at an atomic clock, which was shot in a rocket 10000 kilometres high into space. The result of the analysis without doubt was, that the clock in that case doesn't   ,,tick"   correctly   anymore.

But what does theoretical physics say about it? It claims, here the ,,red shift" has been

measured; it thus concerns a confirmation of the special theory of relativity. But since it concerns a clock experiment and not a light signal, it clearly contradicts this theory, which isn't able to describe any gravitational effect at all, as is well-known. For this case in the spheres of theoretical physics one helps oneself with the general theory of relativity, with which actually only would be proven, that the two theories from the legacy of Einstein completely incompatible contradict each other. We come to the following conclusion:

Whoever gives details about length or time, is obliged to also indicate the reference system.

He also has to inform where his laboratory is situated and with which devices he measures!

With the conclusion also the discussion would be opened. Throughout the last four chapters a main idea can be found. It should be worth, to again think about the brought forward arguments and to dare a comparison with text books.

In the text books there doesn't exist such a thing as an oscillating interaction. Here no answer is found to the question, why the solar system isn't hurled out of the galaxy as a result of the high velocity, why the inside of the earth is hot, how the geomagnetism is formed, why the continents drift and why the ocean floor nowhere is older than 200 million years, as samples from the ocean floor prove[i]. How would you answer these central questions?

[i]:   Kendrick Frazier: Das Sonnensystem, Time-Life Bucher, Amsterdam (1991).
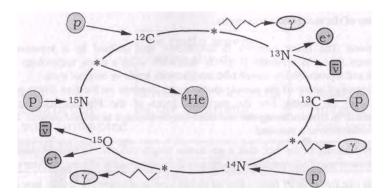
Fig. 13.8:   The Bethe-Weizsacker cycle (concerning the sun's   fire)
(meaning of: ^{12}C = carbon nucleus, ^{4}He = helium nucl.,
γ = gamma quant, ^{14}N = nitrogen nucleus, p = proton,
e^+ = positron, ν = anti neutrino, ^{16}O = oxygen nucleus
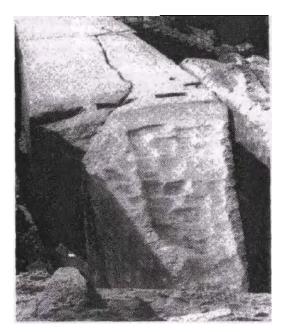
Fig. 13.9: The top of the unfinished obelisk in Assuan[i]

[i]:   Hermann Wild: Technologien von gestern, Chancen fur morgen, Jupiter-Verlag Bern (1996), ISBN 3-906571-13-0

13.8 Discussion of the cosmological insights

The numerous models which are offered, of a geodynamo, an iron core, of assumed zones of subduction and of plate tectonics may be helpful for the explanation of individual isolated phenomena. But they physically don't give a uniform picture and partly contradict each other.

Lord Kelvin had calculated a period of shining of 5000 years on the basis of a sun consisting of coal[i]. The german physicist Hermann von Helmholtz landed at 15 million years, in which case the sun yearly should shrink for 100 meters. He already assumed a temperature of 15 million degrees centigrade, as also the Bethe-Weizsacker cycle has as a prerequisite, which according to today's concept should describe the process of nuclear fusion taking place in the inside of the sun (fig. 13.8). The only thing is that this extreme temperature is completely incompatible with the high density in the core of the sun! There are more than good reasons to assume the opposite of the widespread textbook opinion and assume that the core of the sun is cooled by the collected neutrinos in the same manner as the inner core of the earth and that superconducting areas are formed, which powerful fields even cause the protuberances on the surface of the sun. Since in the sun no measurement is possible, with which a model could be verified or disproved, terrestrial arguments naturally suggest themselves. Here the pieces of evidence for the growth of the earth can be taken in the hand and photographed. We already have discussed some facts. But there are found a multitude of other ones, for instance from the domain of archaeology, for which text books of today until now as well provide no explanation.

Possibly the stones and monoliths weighing several tons, as they were used for prehistoric buildings, should be linked with the growth of the earth. If the earth was smaller at the time they were build, then they perhaps by no means were as heavy as today!
 Then the stones for reason of the smaller density in addition were softer and with that easier to work on. Dr. Wild points to the building technical peculiarity, that the stones formed like cushions originally must have been soft. He proves with the photograph of the top of the unfinished obelisk in Assuan (fig. 13.9), that the traces of working stem from a spatula in a plastic mass.
Also the perfect fitting of the stones used for the building of the pyramids can only be explained in this way. In the joints not even a knife point can be inserted!

If even stones in the course of time increase in density and hardness, then it is easier for us to comprehend, how small rivers in past time could dig large deep valleys in the earth's crust, then we perhaps also understand, why very old bones today are petrified[ii]. It is obvious, that also bones in the course of time increase in density and hardness. Even if science should succeed in breeding living dinosaurs, then their chance to survive in spite of that would be equal to zero, because the dinos would collapse under their weight of their own of several tons. Their bones would be much too thin and brittle for their weight of today!

---

[i]:   Kendrick Frazier: Das Sonnensystem, Time-Life Bucher, Amsterdam (1991)
[ii]:   The indication to petrified bones stems from a participant of the seminar.

25-07-1996:   Assistant head of government department
               Acceptance of the common standpoint.

11-12-1996:   European parliament
               Resolution of the guideline.

               commission
               Statement concerning proposals of change of the
               european parliament.

19-12-1996:   Assistant head of government department
               Resolution of the guideline.

19-02-1997:   Coming into effect of the guideline
               Publication in the official paper of the EC.

19-02-1999:   Period of translation of two years

               Reduction of the threshold values for current
               consumers:
19-02-1997: to 40 million kWh (opening of the market 23%)
19-02-2000: to 20 million kWh (opening of the market 28%)
19-02-2003: to 9 million kWh (opening of the market 33%)

until 2006:   ,,Anti imbalance clause"
               A nine years period of transition to preserve
               equal opportunities in the competition.
               Report of the commission.

19-02-2006:   Further stage of the liberalization
               European commission tests by means of the
               made experiences, if the current market
               should be opened further.

Fig. 14.1: _____ Timetable of the EC single market guideline
               electricity[i]

[i]:   Grawe, S. Thiele: Vorbereitung der Stromversorger auf den Wettbewerbs-
         markt, ATW Atomwirtschaft-Atomtechnik 43. Jg. 1998, Heft 1, S. 10 - 13

14. The way towards free energy

Can energy actually be produced? No energy supply enterprise is capable to do that. Fact is, that energy only is converted and not produced. For that the available resources on earth are tapped and brought into a utilizable form of energy. As different the conversion processes may be, finally always heat is formed. We thus gradually burn the globe, on which we live. How long can something like that go right?

Science gives all-clear: „stock of energy is sufficient for the next 100 years. Newest calculations disprove the fear of a scarcity of energy on earth. There exist large stocks of coal and oil"[i].

But what are 100 years compared to the age of the earth? How will our descendants judge our thinking and acting? They will condemn it and curse us, that much is clear already today.
We have an obligation to preserve the environment, and we only will be able to fulfil it, if we look to nature, how it covers its need of energy, if we finally understand and meaningfully copy nature.

We still are miles away of the goal.

14.1 The liberalization of the energy markets

It is important in the interest of a member of the executive that the stock of energy doesn't draw to an end, as long as he carries the responsibility for the enterprise of the economy of energy. The interest in the environment and the environmentalists for obvious reasons is less distinct. The problems are more of a commercial kind. Concerning that an actual example is given.

A special kind of problem is the meanwhile Europe wide valid decree of the EU concerning the liberalization of the energy markets (fig. 14.1). The list of the consequences starts with the fact, that the concluded licence contracts for power supply between energy supply enterprises and the communities, which are valid till 1997, are only wastepaper. Every customer of electricity as of now can conclude an individual contract with every "producer of electricity".

So an environmentally aware Black Forest person decides to obtain his power from a wind power station, which is situated in Denmark. That truly sounds very liberal. But how should that function, if there is no wind at all in Denmark for a week, or the connection is interrupted by a flash of lightning? The windmill further delivers power and the runner writes its bill truly believing, its power has arrived. The consumer then reads the bill at candlelight and puts with understandable anger his claim for compensation together. Pointing to the fact that such difficulties can be solved by book-keeping, the consumer again is calmed down; but that the not by contract obtained power will cost him dear, is another story.

<i>:   Illustrierte Wissenschaft Nr. 6, Juni 1996, page 48-51.
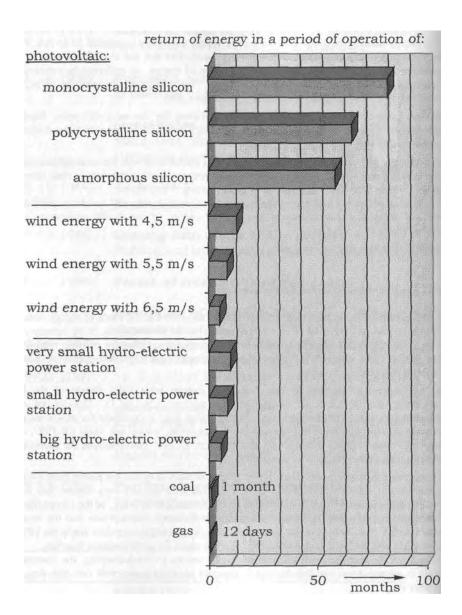
Fig. 14.2: Average time of paying for itself for the spent energy
(return of energy)

14.2 The consequences of the liberalization

With the EU decree the monopoly only has shifted towards the runners of the distribution nets, after all only one net is present. Competition however would require at least two nets, thus a doubling of all house connections and all high-tension pylons, but that fortunately is unrealistic.

To prevent fleecing of the consumers by means of the net monopoly, politics introduces in the place of the free market economy dirigisme and plan economy with the well-known concomitants: no-one will look after the existing nets, no-one feels responsible anymore, because after all they have become public good by decree. One thus lets the pylons rot slowly and repairs only in emergencies. This possible development really can't have been the good intention of the EU.

In the next few years we however will be able to observe for the producers of energy exactly the development, which the EU-commissioners have imagined: Total competition contest, price war and a struggle for power to survive economically. A chance only has the nuclear power station, which gets rid of its refuse cheaper and if need be even illegally or which lives of indirect state subsidies, or the brown coal power station, which increases its efficiency at night, when no-one watches, by switching off the expensive filters.

The first power stations, which are selected out by the liberalized energy market, are the hydro-electric power stations which stand closest to nature. They simply are too small and too intensive of personnel, to be able to survive.

Gas turbine power stations, which deliver the power for half the price, than are ranking first. Then there is no place for regenerative systems anymore.

Solar energy, how many roofs a supporting program may have, stays a toy supported by the state. For a photovoltaic installation the ,,Return of Invest" still lies at more than 80 years, whereas is reckoned with a theoretical life of 20 years. In practical use on the other hand photovoltaic installations occasionally already have failed after seven years, after the photocells had gone blind. In this case not even can be talked of an ecologic energy, because the return of energy lies still above that. The supposed Idealist who spoils his roof with photovoltaic to reassure his ecologic conscience, would have spared the environment more, if he had covered his need of power from the socket, because already the production of the photovoltaic installation gobbles up more energy than can be produced with it. With regard to the environmental compatibility the ecologic balance sheet of a power station is attached a central importance (fig. 14.2).

With the law of feeding in power the state intervenes dirigiste, supposedly to protest the consumers. With this law the state orders, that not it, but the energy supply enterprises have to take the subsidizing of the regenerative energy, that they have to take over the power delivered at the inappropriate time in exactly so less suitable amounts at a price, which exceeds the market value by a factor of two and for falling prices of power even by a factor of four. With the law the politicians very fast and without agreement of the effected enterprises have shifted the ,,black Peter" further to these, which will get problems to preserve their competitiveness in the international comparison with the subsidy duty. It can't have been the intention of the EU-commissioners, that on a national level the price of power increases to finance some energy technical playground.
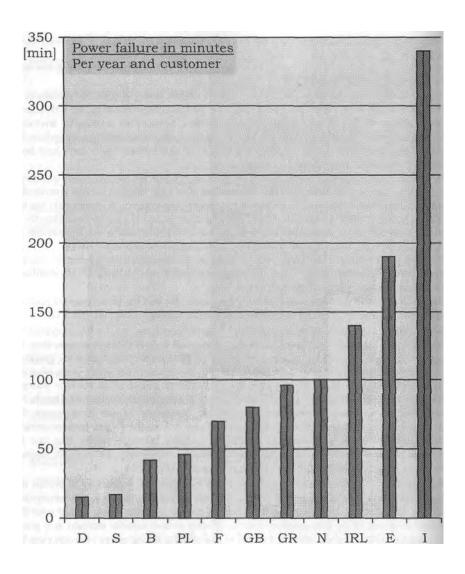
Fig. 14.3: Power interruption and not being at disposal

<i>:   ETG, Energietechnische Gesellschaft im VDE: Qualitat der Stromversorgung, Dialog Nr. 1, Jan./Feb. 1998, S. 21

14.3 The chances of the wind energy

Meanwhile, as a result of the law of feeding in power, no longer the politicians but the energy suppliers are the ones, who around the North Sea look out of the window every day with the worry, some wind could blow and the mills could turn, because every kilowatt hour of a windmill must be subsidized strongly. Every windless day however reduces the power bill, with that helps the consumer and raises the chances of competition of our economy.

If it should be neglected, to tip over the law of feeding in power in due time with help of the EU, then the consumers will get their power in future abroad, then at the Preussen Elektra, damaged most by wind energy, as the first the lights will go out, then economic power and prosperity in Germany in future are dictated from abroad. But if the law is dropped, then with that the duty to subsidize the regenerative energy carriers drops back to the state. Now all tax payers may foot the bill, even those, who don't use any power at all. The well-known Justice of subsidy" comes into effect.

Without support by the state only few types of power stations will be left behind. In addition are overcapacities being reduced, because they only cost money. But both is at the expense of the reliability of the delivering of energy and of the safety of the consumer. We owe the high stability of our network of today the large number of most different providers of power, which cover the basic load up to the peak load according to their suitability (fig. 14.3). But let us not talk of the golden past. The network after all isn't able to store power. From that follows, that without redundancy and without free power station capacities which can be activated at any time a short overload is sufficient, to let the network collapse.

Once the EU guideline concerning the liberalization of the energy markets is in effect, when persons selling power wend their way from front door to front door, to convince the housewives to obtain the power from them and not from other hawkers, when the power stations only live of stock and the depreciated overhead power lines only are entered in the hooks with the scrap value, then we should be dressed warmly and always have ready sufficient candles [i].

14.4 The chances of being self-sufficient concerning energy

The only way out is the decentralized energy supply, the getting out of the large energy union and the way towards being self-sufficient. The argument sounds convincing in view of missing alternatives. But now it no longer is possible to plug the plug in the socket and then switch on whenever it pleases us. First it has to be calculated, if the windmill or the installation for solar energy supplies sufficient power or if a cold meal should be made. In contrast to today's consumer habits the runners of such installations will have to adapt their need of energy to the prevailing weather conditions.

---

[i]: A baby-Boom, like after the big power failure in New York, would be the smaller evil. The inhabitants and shopkeepers in the New Zealand metropolis Auckland will long and frightened remember the power failure in february 1998, which lasted weeks and was a result of not carried out maintenance works of high-tension pylons.
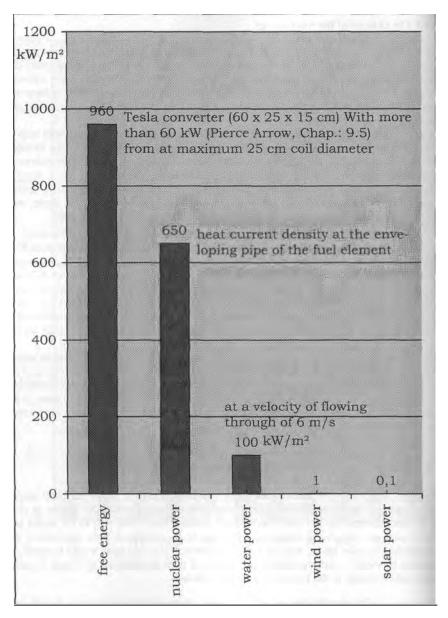
Fig. 14.4: At maximum obtainable power density of different carriers of energy

<i>:   ETZ, Heft 19/1995, S. 40

Block heating power stations, propagated as stand-alone solution for people being self-sufficient, deliver power and heat at the same time. But if I don't need any heat on a hot summer day, then also no power is available or I uselessly heat into the open. For that one may leave all electric consumers switched on in winter, even if they aren't used at all, only to get the hut warm. Does a stand-alone solution look like that?

The situation truly is demotivating. Even the energy suppliers meanwhile may have realized that the energy politic way is a dead end. But for real alternatives in energy technology the pressure by suffering still doesn't seem to be big enough.
The intention to learn of nature is present in principle. The solar fire one wants to kindle on earth in a fusion oven, but the oven does not as it should.
Obviously the sun functions completely different, as physics imagines today (see fig. 13.8).
Before copying stands understanding, and in there seems to be a hitch!

14.5 The space energy technology of nature

Also nature needs energy, even very much. But it hasn't got any connecting pieces for tanking and no oven lid to fill in the fuel, it doesn't know our ecologically harmful combustion technology and environment destroying explosion technology at all. Nature rather works with the opposite, with implosion and fusion.
The sun, we have derived, materializes the matter which it needs for growing and shining from the neutrino field. The earth and other planets imitate the sun. The concept is simple and convincing. The source of energy lies in the air and mustn't be dragged about in tanks. Collected and materialized is just as much, as is needed at the moment. In that way the resource energy is spared. In addition there can be done without any sort of storing. In addition it can show a substantially higher power density, than all today known and used energy carriers (fig. 14.4).
Such a source of energy solves all described energy problems at once. Nature wouldn't be as we know it, if it wouldn't have this ideal energy, also called ,,free energy''. The balance sheet of energy alone brings it to light, because as a rule it doesn't work out for biological systems. Often more energy is released than is taken up by the food. In that case some migratory birds materially seen should have completely used themselves up before reaching their destination, if the energy necessary for the flight would be of purely material nature. From a concrete example the following is reported[i]: ,,migratory birds have - depending on kind - a maximum range velocity between 24 and 83 km/h and at their Atlantic flights no opportunity for an intermediate landing. They are thousands of kilometres on the way and hardly lose weight. For instance an Albatross with a body length of up to 1.20 meters and a wing span of up to 3.50 meters uses per kilometre only 8.5 grams of weight at a non-stop flight. How is that possible without additional supply of energy?''

---

[i]:   K. E. Rathgeb: Wie man die freie Energie anzapft: Vogel machen es uns vor, Raum & Zeit 79/96, S. 74

Fig. 14.6: Freiherr von Reichenbach (76 years old)
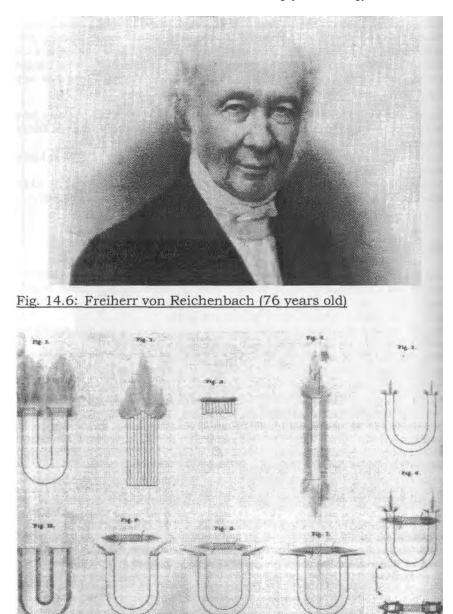
Fig. 14.7: Odic emanations of magnets according to pictures
of
sensitives .[i]

---

[i]:   H.-P. Thietz: Tatort Erde, VAP (1996), ISBN 3-922367-62-3, Seite 13 und 15

14.6 The gap in the energy balance of man

Even man appears to tap an additional source of energy, because for reason of scientific tests with recruits these over longer periods of time are able to physically release more than twice the amount of energy they take of calories with the food. Obviously living beings don't rely on one source of energy alone. Possibly the taking up of food predominantly serves the metabolism, and the energy aspect plays only a secondary role.

This interpretation at least would be obvious, since we scoff several times a day, sort the necessary and useful building-materials out and hand over the rest to the purifying plant and nature, where some bacteria and organisms search the sorted out again for useful things. "Food chain" we call this kind of building-material trade.

If the whole had anything to do with energy or with a „ combustion process without fire ", then no animal nor any human being could do without the taking up of food for longer periods of time. But Franciscus of Assisi could fast 90 days, as is handed down to us [ii]. There exist numerous examples, which reach into the time of today.

The mitochondria, the energy centres of each cell, by no means are capable of the "combustion process", which man ascribes to them. Here in all probability a taking up of space energy independent of food takes place.

A research scientist only has to look at nature with open eyes, what unfortunately happens rarer and rarer, because the laboratory scientist always is troubled, to keep the disturbing factor „nature " away from the experiments.

14.7 Carl Freiherr von Reichenbach

In this context no-one can go past two natural scientists: Carl Freiherr von Reichenbach (1780-1869) and Dr. Wilhelm Reich (1897-1957).

Reichenbach called the by him investigated life energy „ Od-energy " in the style of the Teutonic God Odin. He worked with test persons, who could perceive actually invisible light phenomena and worked out the special properties of this Od-energy field with the "sensitives", as he called them.

A quotation from his work shows however that the knowledge about the life energy must be a lot older[iii] than his own discoveries: „On paintings saints often are shown with a ring-like aureole around their head, something I before this would have dismissed as a pure figment of imagination. But it was shown that this glowing ring actually can be perceived by the sensitives as an Od-phenomenon and so the aureole obviously can be traced back to real impressions of particularly sensitive persons."

Reichenbach also found out that water has a big endeavour to take up this Od-energy or in the language of the present day, to absorb the field energy. This circumstance we find confirmed in technology, since water absorbs high-frequency waves, whereas an insulator or a vacuum lets them pass through. But without vortex physics it however remains entirely unclarified, why!

[ii]:   H.-P. Thietz: Tatort Erde, VAP (1996), ISBN 3-922367-62-3, page 110
[iii]:   H.-P. Thietz: Tatort Erde, VAP (1996), ISBN 3-922367-62-3, page 16
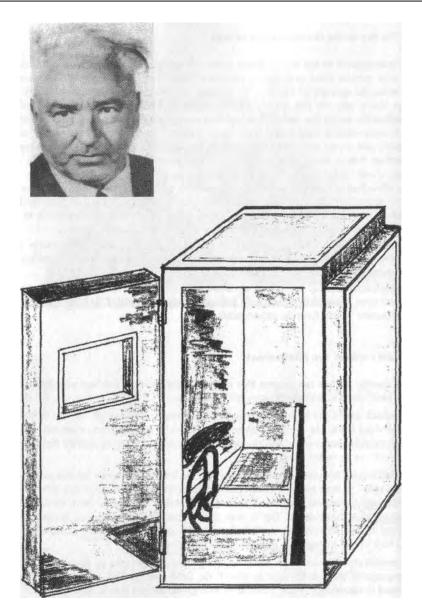
Fig. 14.8: Wilhelm Reich and the model of an Orgon accumulator
for applications of the whole body. [i]

<i>:   taken from: H.-P. Thietz: Tatort Erde, VAP (1996), ISBN 3-922367-62-3, pages 38 and 89.

14.8 Cold fusion and Genesis

Chronologically the doctor and psychologist Wilhelm Reich followed in the footprints of Reichenbach. He merely altered the name for Od and spoke of Orgon. His speciality was the accumulation of Orgon radiation, I would say the focussing of neutrino radiation. Actually the properties like e.g. the missing possibility to shield Od, Orgon and the neutrinos are identical, so that we can proceed from assumption, that it also concerns the same physically.

We already talked about Wilhelm Reich (part 1, chapter 9.2). He could show that the measurable temperature in a closed box, constructed like an „Orgon accumulator", is increased in a mysterious manner without supply of energy from the outside. He even could prove, that this energy actually concerns the sought-for life energy, as he observed the creation of life in the laboratory under the microscope. For that he cooked muscle fibres, vegetables or other cells so long until the cell structure had been destroyed entirely. But from the educts entirely by itself new living beings, like protozoa or algae, were formed[i].

Reich at his microscope actually followed the transition of dead to living matter. What is of interest here, at first only is the energy technical aspect of this conversion. Later we will occupy us with the at the same time occurring information technical aspect.

Worth mentioning seems to me the experiment with the „silly" chickens, which have at their disposal astonishing abilities besides the laying of eggs[ii].

The test chickens were handed chicken food, from which to a large extent all calcium had been extracted. But the chickens showed themselves unimpressed and further laid keenly their eggs. The experimenters were surprised, where the chickens actually got the lime for the egg shells. How solves such a chicken the problem of raw materials? For that further materials were extracted from the food and look, at the removing of silicon the laying of eggs was over. The experiment actually only allows the conclusion, that the "stupid" chicken is capable of a cold fusion, that it itself „produces" the necessary calcium from silicon presumably by using carbon. Every alchemist here has to go pale with envy. But what says the research scientist of fusion to that, who actually should know, how fusion functions? After all he is paid for it by the tax payer! The chicken uses the fusion already today and the other living beings presumably also, but for that energy is needed and the balance sheet should work out!

The neutrino radiation therefore has to be factored into the balance sheet of energy. If the balance sheet then works out, it could be proven with that, that here neutrino energy is put to use. In addition the process of the conversion of neutrinos has to be investigated, which surely has something to do with the frequency and the wavelength of the radiation. After all a child has cells exactly as big as an adult. It only has less cells! So that an interaction can occur, the cell size has to fit in with the wavelength, which obviously is very small, presumably in the range of the radioactive radiation, with which circumstance the biological incompatibility with this electromagnetic wave would be explicable.

_____

<i>:   H.-P. Thietz: Tatort Erde, VAP (1996), ISBN 3-922367-62-3, S. 39

<ii>:   Louis Kervran: Biological Transmutations, s.a. J. Heinzerling: Energie, S.278

1. Primary reaction
   (light reaction in the centre of reaction):

   ring-like vortices/neutrinos are being collected
   electrons are formed
   energy is produced
   e^- is attracted by the water dipole
   water molecule is being splitted (photolysis):

2. Secondary reaction (dark reaction):

   carbon dioxide is reduced with the hydrogen
   splitted off from the water to carbohydrate

Reaction equation of photosynthesis:

	6 mol CO_2	(carbon dioxide)
+	12 mol H_2O	(water)
+	675 Kcal	(vortex energy, light)
	1 mol $C_6H_{12}O_6$	(glucose)
+	6 mol O_2	(oxygen)
+	6 mol H_2O	(water)
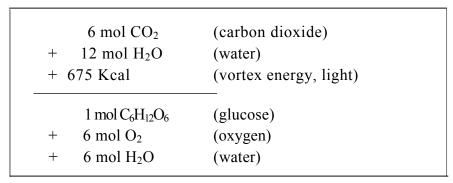
Fig. 14.9: Concerning photosynthesis

14.9 Photosynthesis

The materialization of free electrons is a prerequisite to start the photosynthesis. The normally used explanation, the free electron necessary for the splitting of the water molecule was knocked out an atom by light, doesn't seem to be correct, after until now all attempts of a technical realization according to this model concept have failed. At the photosynthesis the plants obviously help themselves with the neutrino radiation, which according to an estimation of today with 66 billion particles per second and per square centimetre might be more than sufficient for a green earth.

If we put a seed in a water glass, then a plant grows from it and forms small leaves, which get bigger and bigger. A wonder of nature, we say. Where does it actually get its building-materials? From the water or from the air? Necessarily the plant obviously produces a part of the matter itself!

Experts think they have understood the process of photosynthesis: Take light and water and carbon dioxide and handicraft from that sugar and oxygen. But from where does the plant take the necessary energy for the rebuilding and the splitting of the water molecule, the photolyse? The taken up solar energy hardly is sufficient for that, especially since the plants only absorb about 1% of the photosynthetic utilizable sunlight incident on earth[i]. By means of reception molecules, which look like small antennas, pigments less than 30 nm in diameter, such is the level of knowledge, the sunlight is collected and led into a photochemical centre of reaction. Here the reaction should take place, provided that an electron set free by the light jumps into the middle of the centre of reaction. But exactly this favour the electron doesn't make the research scientists, who want to imitate the process. Copying nature still doesn't succeed.

The mistake presumably lies in the circumstance that the light doesn't set free any electron at all. The electron actually first of all is produced in the centre of reaction. By means of the antennas a neutrino vortex is collected, which at first occupies the entire space, to afterwards contract to an electron, which as a result automatically is centred in the centre of reaction.

In the process of materialization at the same time the necessary energy of the process is formed. The reaction equation after all also has to work out energetically, because the plants doing so get neither hot nor cold (fig. 14.9).

Because curiously the light reaction even can be observed in the dark[ii], one could be inclined to in principle call into question the influence of light on the photosynthesis. But such an influence nevertheless seems to be present, after all does a plant react on the irradiation of light and changes its spectrum of absorption through its colour. But it for sure is another influence and not the one, which one attributes the green plants today! It would be important to finally understand the way of functioning. The plants and particularly the algae are the ones, which actually first have made possible life on this planet with the photosynthesis, the most original form of a production of matter and energy.

<i>:   Luttge, U. u.a.: Botanik, VCH, Weinheim (1994) ISBN 3-527-30031-7, S. 136
<ii>:   Luttge, U. u.a.: Botanik, VCH, Weinheim (1994) ISBN 3-527-30031-7, S. 126
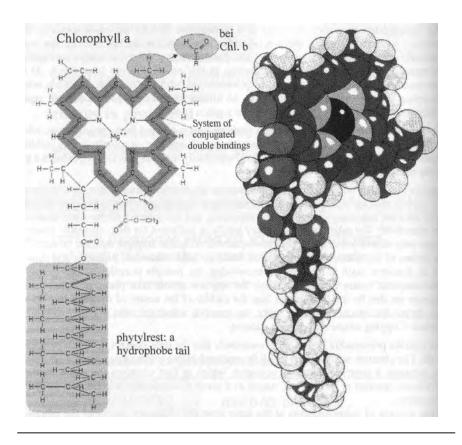
Fig. 14.10:   Formula of structure and spatial model of   the
photosynthesis pigment chlorophyll.[i]

<i>:   Luttge, U.et al.: Botanik, VCH, Weinheim (1994) ISBN 3-527-30031-7, p. 118

14.10 How nature materializes

The structure of the receiver antenna allows us a deeper insight into the manner, how free energy is tapped during the photosynthesis. For the dimensions determining the frequency of the photosynthesis pigments, as the antennas are called, we have to go down to the molecular structure. Fig. 14.10 shows the formula of structure and next to it also the spatial model of the pigment chlorophyll[i>].

Two points point at the function for free energy conversion. On the one hand is situated in the centre of the molecule a double positive ionised Mg atom, surrounded by four nitrogen atoms and a carbon ring consisting of 20 atoms, from which arises a polarization of the entire molecule. This in addition is oscillating because the electron cloud of the enveloping electrons, which hold the molecule together, perform swirl oscillations depending on the temperature. With that chlorophyll is able to go into resonance with oscillating neutrinos.
A role play the unipolar field configuration and the effect of resonance of the molecular oscillation of its own forming as a result of the polarization. A further role in addition seems to play the spatial structure.

The model of the „.receiver antenna" chlorophyll taken out of a textbook[i>] and shown in fig. 14.10, consists of a stalk and a spirally wound head, which resembles a Lituus or crook, which Etruscan and Roman Augurs have taken in the hands for land surveying, a precursor of the crosier (see fig. 16.10). This again has the form of a Tesla coil and that, as already derived, is able to withdraw rotational energy from the collected neutrinos (chapter 9.8). Doing so free electrons are materialized, and these then start the process of photosynthesis. An explanation concerning the way of functioning of the antenna pigments here for the first time is getting available.
By the way also the mitochondria, which form the energy centres in every cell, have as well the form of a Tesla coil. Whoever wants to understand the energy economy of a cell or the photosynthesis first should occupy himself with the Tesla coil (chapter 9.8).

The open question, how land surveying should be possible with a Tesla coil, we at first still have to shelve, because in this chapter it concerns the way towards free energy and the chance to learn of nature. Examples to be looked at are on the one hand the core of fusion in the inside of the earth and on the other hand the humus layer on the surface of the earth, which has been materialized in the course of time with the help of photo-synthesis.

The goal seems to be worth striving for. If we in the first place have learned to produce energy exactly like nature, then we'll further try to produce matter purposeful, with which ageold alchemist dreams could be fulfilled. We wouldn't need to scrape and to search in some mines any longer. We would materialize the products without refuse, naturally and just for the environment, direct in the final form. I admit that at present it sounds pretty futuristic.

With another example, the lightning and particularly the ball-lightning, the collection concerning the use of free energy in nature shall be completed.

---

i>: U. Luttge, M. Kluge, G. Bauer: Botanik, 2. Aufl.- Weinheim, VCH (1994) ISBN 3-527-30031-7, S. 118
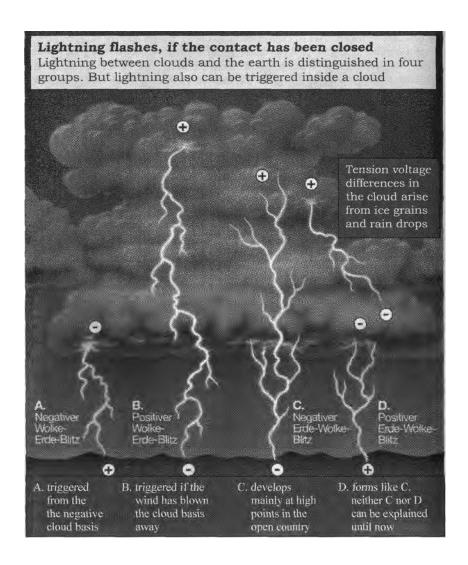
Fig. 14.11:   Concerning lightning.[i]

        <i>:   taken out of: Illustrierte Wissenschaft Nr. 8, August 1995, Das unverstan-
        dene Phanomen der Blitze, S. 13

14.11 Lightning

Lightning is a spectacle of nature just as imposing as unsolved. It concerns an electric process of discharge, in which to the amazement of all experts arrive for several powers of ten more charge carriers at the surface of the earth, than before were contained in the cloud! Furthermore unsolved is, why lightning glows. Let us start with the open question for the difference of potential necessary so that the air is ionised and a lightning channel is formed.

If at first the electric tension voltage of 200,000 volts between the surface of the earth and a height of 10 kilometres is available, which according to our calculations results from the rotation of the earth and the magnetism of the earth (fig. 11.8). Another source of tension voltage is not known. By air movement and supposed processes inside a cloud locally an additional accumulation of charge carriers may occur, so that in the case of a thunderstorm the by Tesla assumed, twice as big value doesn't seem unrealistic[i].
On the other hand a tension voltage between 4,000 and 10,000 volts is necessary so that a blow can occur for an air gap of one centimetre depending on the atmospheric humidity[ii]. Linearly projected the thunderstorm cloud theoretically should hover just one meter above the earth if there is lightning.
Here somehow a huge gap gapes between theory and practice!

At the latest at the spikes, the mysterious lightning, which strike out of a thunderstorm cloud upwards in the direction of the ionosphere and the still more mysterious ball-lightning it has to get clear, that the actual source of tension voltage of a lightning by no means is known. Without knowledge about the cause we'll never understand lightning.

The potential vortex theory offers an useful approach, according to which the necessary difference of potential is formed from a formation of vortices[iii]. The vortex again, as damping term in the wave equation, occurs as a result of intense sun irradiation. That explains why lightning always strike from the part of a cloud, which is the darkest, where the most sunlight is absorbed and the damping is the largest.

The possible formation of ice in a lightning channel is a further confirmation for the correctness of the vortex explanation. After all it has been derived that contracting potential vortices withdraw heat in principle (fig. 12.8).

But now we also want to know from this efficient theory, why photons and electrons are formed during the lightning and where they come from. Here obviously energy is formed by means of materializing of vortex particles.

---

[i]: R. L. Clark: Tesla Scalar Wave Systems, The Earth as a Capacitor, The Fantastic Inventions of Nikola Tesla, ISBN 0-932813-19-4, S. 265

[ii]: Karl Kupfmuller: Einfuhrung in die theoretische Elektrotechnik, Springer-Verlag Berlin, 12. Auflage 1988, ISBN 3-540-18403-1, S. 221

[iii]: K. Meyl: Potential vortices, Part 1: Discussion contributions to the natural scientific interpretation and concerning the physical-technical usage, basing on a mathematical calculation of newly discovered hydrotic vortices, (only in german) INDEL GmbH, Verlagsabteilung, Villingen-Schwenningen 1990.

Fig. 14.12: Contemporary representation, how 1753 lightning
research scientist Prof. Richmann is struck deadly
by ball-lightning in his laboratory.[i]

<i>:   Illustrierte Wissenschaft Nr. 8, August 1995: Das unverstandene Phanomen
der Blitze, page 13

I proceed from the assumption that lightning collects and converts neutrinos. The process corresponds to the one at the sun, but on a smaller scale and only for a very short time. The lightning channel is polarized by the charge carriers. Change of temperature and field lead to a spatial oscillation, which by the way also functions as a source of sound, as anyone can hear. Taken both together lightning, seen from the outside, becomes an unipolar resonator, which is capable to attract neutrinos and to go into resonance with them. Now the predominant part is converted into electrons, because also the air molecules and air ions in the lightning channel belong to the world of matter. But it can't be avoided that a small part of antiparticles is formed, which then annihilate with particles of matter under emission of radiation. Doing so photons are emitted and lightning glows, as anyone can see!

14.12 Ball-lightning

If in the case of lightning there still exist excuses, the difference of potential preferably is traced back to neither understandable nor measurable processes inside a cloud, then at the latest in the case of ball-lightning most experts are at their wits end. Only for very simple natures explanations circulate in the direction that here for instance the organic remnants of a bird struck by lightning are burnt off.

Actually ball-lightning is observed very seldom. It is a ball flashing with reddish till blue-white colour. Its diameter lies between 10 and 50 centimetres. The glowing phenomenon can last several seconds to minutes. Doing so ball-lightning rolls over a street, temporary floats in the air, goes apparently unhindered through every wall and disappears from time to time without a trace or discharges with loud moise and formation of sparks. Some stink of poisonous gases and some also cause noise.

Famous has gotten the ball-lightning, which 1753 of all people should have struck the lightning research scientist Professor Georg Wilhelm Richmann in St. Petersburg. In his laboratory during a thunderstorm a ball of fire as big as a fist should have jumped from a iron tube to his head and should have hunted him down, so eye witnesses have reported (fig. 14.12).

Since ball-lightning has a closed structure, it has to drag about its source of energy with it. If this however consists of organic or other matter, the ball wouldn't be able to float, after all the brightness of a spherical vortex and with that the need of energy is enormous! We have to proceed from the assumption that just ball-lightning covers its need of energy from free energy and serves itself from the neutrino field.

The spherical form is a consequence of the structure shaping property of the potential vortex[ii]. Scientists are increasingly interested in this not understood phenomenon. In their experiments they try to artificially produce ball-lightning with more or less great success in the laboratory. By means of the experiment they then want to learn to understand, what the textbooks don't give away.

If we want to learn of nature something about free energy, lightning in the laboratory offers us in the form of a blow or of a spark gap relatively good possibilities. It surely is no coincidence that the father of free energy, Nikola Tesla, in his experiments almost all the time has worked with spark gaps!

_____

[ii]:   for that see in the 1st part the chapters 4.8 till 4.10
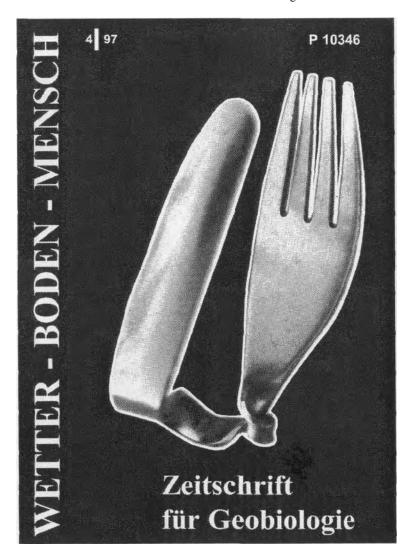
Fig. 14.13:   Fork bent by ,,pure manual work".[i]

[i]: Whoever has to eat with bent flatware in the Hotel Adler in Waldkatzenbach (Odenwald, Germany), mustn't believe that the food didn't taste well to some rude fellow here. It is the host himself, who in a sociable round shows his guests from time to time that he not only can cook well. I could personally convince myself from the fact that Robert Hartmann doesn't use any aids. The picture shows the title page of the magazine ,,Wetter Boden Mensch" 4/97. A comment concerning this on page 3: Robert's 50ieth birthday.

14.13 Discussion concerning the neutrino conversion

In nature two different principles for the use of the neutrino radiation can be observed. In one case of use a glowing phenomenon occurs, in the other cases not.

The glowing lightning should be assigned to the first case. Here not only the neutrinos crossing the lightning channel are used, but also neutrinos from the environment oscillating in resonance are collected. Around the lightning channel a kind of reaction radius is formed, inside of which all synchronously oscillating neutrinos are attracted under the resonant interaction. During the discharge process the radius can increase like an avalanche, to collapse again with the transition into the stationary discharge current. A corresponding technical concept, which is discussed in the next chapter (15.5), is very efficient, but almost uncontrollable. A characteristic is the formation of antiparticles, of positrons, in the course of the materialization, which then annihilate under emission of radiation and cause a shining. Also spark gaps and fluorescent lamps possibly help themselves from the neutrino field, as still has to be to worked out.

In the second case nature works without any avalanche effect and without any glowing phenomenon. To this counts for instance the photosynthesis or the mode of operation of the mitochondria, the energy centres of a cell. All cells, whether vegetable, animal or human, only use the neutrinos which just that moment pass by them and only in those amounts, as they just are needed. They thus handle their energy very caring. Without exception electrons are materialized and no positrons.

If nevertheless unwantedly an avalanche effect occurs, something which happens fortunately only very seldom, then a self-inflammation and self-burning occurs, then it should happen, that a person burns off himself[ii]. This risk also is known of hay.

There also exist rare talented persons, who can control and regulate the process of materialization by concentration. These people can bend spoons or other metallic objects[i]. For that they concentrate themselves some time and send the materialized charge carriers into the object, which they hold in their hands. Since the metal lattice solely is kept together by the enveloping electrons of the individual atoms, the additional electrons make the metal structure sodden. Now for a short moment the metal can be bent and distorted at will. Doing so neither heat is produced nor is the colour changed. The result of the process can be produced neither by cold working with raw force nor under a flue. Also here nature shows us a technology for an ecologically compatible metal processing (fig. 14.13).

The way from the conventional over the regenerative towards free energy is predrawn. It only has to be gone! After the existence of the neutrino radiation goes as proven and 1998 for the first time concrete amounts have been determined measuring technical and published by a Japanese team of research scientists, with that also the question for an energy technical use of the particle radiation has been answered clearly. Now only the question of the mechanics is open. The Japanese research scientists by the way have found out that at night only half as much solar neutrinos can be detected than at daytime. The other half according to that is absorbed in the inside of the earth. This in the meantime published measurement result in brilliant manner confirms the working hypothesis of a growing globe (chapter 11).

[ii]: Zu Asche pulverisiert, Illustrierte Wissenschaft 6/ 1997, S. 61 acc. to an examination of the American SCI-COP in 1984.

cause/ field lines	interaction	F = force effect _mediation:_	see chapter: effect/ _application_
1. open **H**-field lines	magnetic (static)	F_{MO} = magnetic force (permanent magnet)	chapter 15.4 _E.-engine,_ _solenoid_
2. open **H**-field lines	resonant (oscillating)	F_{MS} = magnetic force (AC-magnet)	15.4 + 15.5 - 15.7 _lightning,_ _railgun_
3. open **E**-field lines	electric (static)	F_{E0} = Coulomb force by _charge carriers_	15.9 + 15.10 _atomic bond,_ _Testatika_
4. open **E**-field lines	resonant (oscillating)	F_{ES} = Coulomb force by _neutrinos_	chapter 16 + 17 _weak interact._ _galaxy bond_ _Tesla converter_
5. closed **H**-field lines	gravitation (static)	F_{MG} = gravity by _particles with mass_	chapter 6.9 + 7 _elementary_ _particle mass_
6. closed **H**-field lines	levitation (dynamic)	F_{ML} = reduced gravity	chapter 18.3 _gravit. waves_ _Casimir effect_
7. closed **E**-field lines	gravitation (static)	F_{EG} (force hardly detectable)	chapter 18.7 _superconduc-_ _ting ring_
8. closed **E**-field lines	levitation (dynamic)	F_{EL} (no longer detectable)	18.5 + 18.6 _Keely-/Searl-_ _flying devices_

electromagnetic and resonant interaction	gravitation and levitation
$F_{MO} = 1{,}4 \cdot F_{MS} > F_{E0} = 1{,}4 \cdot F_{ES}$	$\gg$ $F_{MG} = 1{,}4 \cdot F_{ML} > F_{EG} = 1{,}4 \cdot F_{EL}$
for reason of open field lines	resp. closed field lines

Table 15.1:   The force effect of interactions,
                  ordered according to size, with examples

15. Principle of functioning of space energy

In this chapter we want to turn us towards the technical concepts and techniques concerning "space energy", which occasionally here and there already should have existed or have been operated with quite different success. After Nikola Tesla having pointed the direction more than 100 years ago, the way towards free energy appears to be predrawn. Never before the public interest in the topic of space energy was as big as today. Unfortunately this concerns more the collecting and gathering of rumours and speculations. As in every branch of science also here hunters and collectors can be found. But obviously the hunters, the inventors and theorists have bigger problems, to put something useful on the table. They are fighting against their own not knowing, unuseful textbooks, general ignorance, intolerance and an all-powerful energy lobby. What the collectors on the other hand come up with does make appetite but not full.

An useful and efficient theory might be the most important prerequisite just with regard to the reproducibility of an effect and the product liability of a SET-device. That's why one mustn't expect a complete list of devices of that kind in this chapter, because in the foreground stand the physical and technical explanations concerning the way of functioning, the understanding for constructive and guiding details and the learning from the mistakes and errors of the inventor.

For a better survey the possible courses of the field lines according to the theory of objectivity are listed in detail (table 15.1) and discussed from the top one after another, starting with the strongest known interaction. To complete examples and concepts are presented.

As is well-known there exist electric (E-) and magnetic (H-) field lines. Further exist open and closed field lines and finally is distinguished between the oscillating and the static case. The results are two to the third power, thus eight possibilities of combination in total. In table 15.1 all eight versions are given, even if one or another case is of more theoretical nature. For the objective of a systematizing of different concepts concerning space energy technology the taking apart in any case is helpful. The figure opposite is survey and structure at the same time for the following chapters.

15.1 The course of the field lines

In chapter 6 a relation between the course of the field of a body and its observable interaction has been made (part 1, chapter 6.7 till 6.9). Here a point of approach is offered. For instance to maximize the force effect a magnet or to optimise an electric motor, the engineers nowadays help themselves with costly programs working according to the method of finite elements. In this way they obtain a picture of the field lines, the course of which makes possible conclusions concerning the production of force or torque. The relation without doubt is given, the only question is in which order of magnitude.

for like poles: for uncharged bodies:
repulsion   no influencing of field lines

for unlike poles:
attraction

$$\mathbf{E}, \mathbf{H} \sim 1/a^2$$ (15.1)

$\longleftarrow$ a (distance) $\longrightarrow$
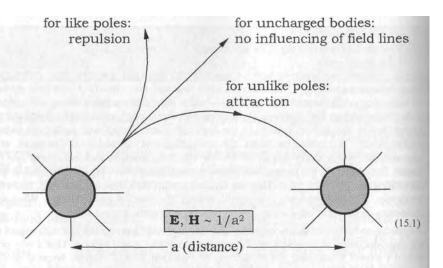
Fig. 15.2 A: The course of the field lines leads to a force effect
                  (repulsion or attraction)

repulsion   attraction
like poles   unlike poles
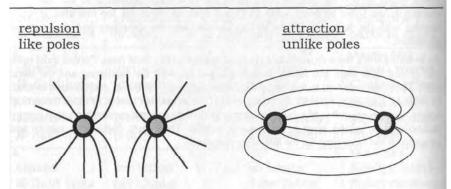
Fig. 15.2 B: The course of open field lines

$$\frac{F_{\text{Coulomb force}}}{F_{\text{magnetic force}}} = \frac{Q \cdot E}{\phi \cdot H} = \frac{\mu \cdot Q^2}{\varepsilon \cdot \phi^2}$$ with $E = Q/\varepsilon \cdot A$ (15.2)
                                                                            and $H = \phi/\mu \cdot A$

i.e. e$^-$:   where $\phi^2 = m^2 \cdot G \cdot 4\pi \cdot \mu$
                                                                                     (Gl.13.20)

$$\frac{F_{el}}{F_{magn}} = \frac{e^2}{\varepsilon \cdot m_e^2 \cdot G \cdot 4 \cdot \pi} = 4{,}2 \cdot 10^{42}$$ (15.3)

Fig. 15.2 C: The proportion of forces at the example of the
               electron.

The theory of objectivity answers the question from the equations of transformation with the proportion 13.23 (fig. 13.4). According to that the electric or the magnetic field strength stand in inverse proportion to the square of a length or of a distance:

$$E, H \sim 1/a^2 \qquad (13.23) \text{ bzw. } (15.1)$$

Less mathematically expressed this, for two bodies in the distance a, where one body is situated in the field of the other, means nothing else as that the distance is reduced. Nearer to the body the density of the field lines again increases, in that way the distance further decreases and we observe an approximation.

Usually the idea of force is introduced as a factor of description and there is spoken of a force of attraction. But that not necessarily is required, because the force only represents an auxiliary description. The cause for the observed attraction rather is the spatial distribution of the field strength.

In this case the two bodies come closer and the mutually active fields get bigger and bigger, until the parts eventually run into each other (fig. 6.7 A). There one comes the thought to increase the force of attraction by an artificial compression of the field lines. In the case of the electromagnetic interaction such a compression actually takes place, since the field lines arise from one pole and end at an unlikely charged pole, which so to speak collects and bundles up the field lines (fig. 6.8 A).

At last we find out the reason, why electromagnetic forces of attraction are bigger than gravitational forces for many powers of ten (between 10^{30} and $4.2 \cdot 10^{42}$ for the electron, derivation see fig. 15.2 C)! For table 15.1 this means, at the top have to stand the open field lines, which bundle up at the poles. Then very long nothing comes and after that the effects of closed field lines are being found.

For open field lines however also the opposite of a bundling up is possible. In the case of like poles the fields run away of the other pole (fig. 6.8 B). Between both a space is formed, which is free of field lines, where thus the field tends towards zero, whereas the distance between the poles according to the proportion 15.1 grows towards infinity. In this case we observe, how the bodies are going away from each other. We speak of a force of repulsion, which actually reaches until infinity. This gives reasons for the occurring of both forces of attraction and forces of repulsion in the case of the electromagnetic interaction.

15.2 Gravitation

In the case of closed field lines in principle no repulsion can occur, since no pole, neither north pole nor south pole, neither positive pole nor negative pole is able to influence the position of such a field line. This circumstance as well as the order of magnitude of a possible force of attraction suggest, to settle gravitation here.

It gladly is forgotten, that the field pointers of E- and H-field normally occur together and like in the case of the electromagnetic wave stand perpendicular to each other. It is normal to calculate only the electric field pointers for a charge carrier, without paying attention to the circumstance that the H-field is present as well. The textbooks as a rule remain silent about this dark chapter or they lapidary remark, the dual field lines are closed in themselves and hence inactive anyhow, which however is incorrect.
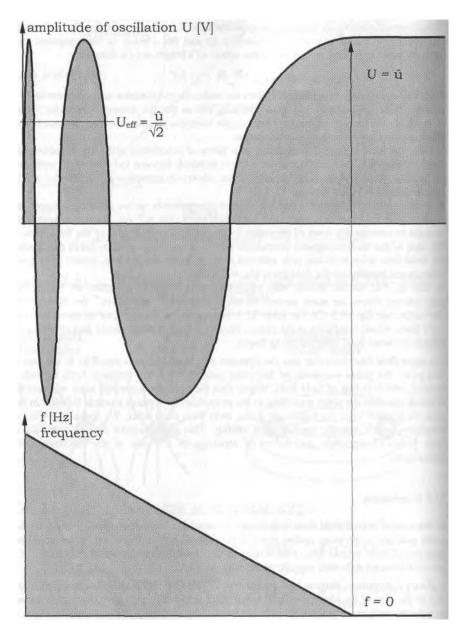
Fig. 15.3: The transition of an oscillating into a static interaction

But, according to the proportion 15.1, they actually develop a force of attraction, even if this is relatively small. No one really needs to be surprised that gravitation is not understood until today, if a whole group of fields simply is overlooked by science! We now also can explain, why there don't exist any massless charge carriers. Namely only the E-field or the H-field can form open field lines and never both at the same time. Otherwise they wouldn't be able to stand perpendicular to each other anymore. The each time other field, in the case of electrically charged bodies it is the H-field, then is wrapped perpendicularly around the E-field lines, independent of the circumstance if electrically an attraction or a repulsion occurs and without exception it forms a weak force of attraction, the gravitation.

15.3 Systematizing the interactions

Next we should know, from which field is to be expected a larger force effect: from the E or from the H-field? At the example of an electromechanical converter this question can be answered concretely.

The forces which occur and form the torque in an electric motor customary in trade are produced by magnetic poles in stator and rotor, which repel each other in the case of like charge and attract each other in the case of unlike charge. Now there in principle exists the possibility to build a motor which works with Coulomb forces, thus with positive and negative poles, instead of the magnetic forces. About such designs numerous patent specifications exist, but no customary version on the market.

The reason very simple is that a magnetic motor for the same torque is many times smaller and better priced. From this the conclusion can be drawn that for the same construction volume a magnetic force F_M is considerably larger than a Coulomb force F_E, which for instance binds together atomic nucleus and atomic hull.

Thus in table 15.1 the magnetic forces are ranked before the Coulomb forces.

Finally we have to distinguish between the static and the oscillating case, which are distinguished in the frequency. In fig. 15.3 an oscillation is shown, which by chance just at the moment of the vertex value changes into the steady state, thus takes the frequency zero. In this case the effective values between a static and a sinusoidal oscillating interaction are distinguished by the factor $\sqrt{2}$ = 1.4. If we operate an universal motor with direct current, then it releases more power, than for a corresponding feeding with alternating current. Even a high-tension line, which stands at maximum 511 kV, is operated with alternating current up to 380 kV, with direct current on the other hand up to 500 kV. Consequently in table 15.1 the static interactions stand before the oscillating interactions.

The strong interaction naturally isn't found in the list, after it has been derived that it doesn't exist at all (see chapter 7.8), whereas the weak interaction is hiding behind the oscillating interaction. It shakes other particles so long till they fall apart (see chapter 7.13).

We now would be as far, to discuss the 8 cases listed in table 15.1 one after another by means of practical examples.

The principle of the side-pole machine
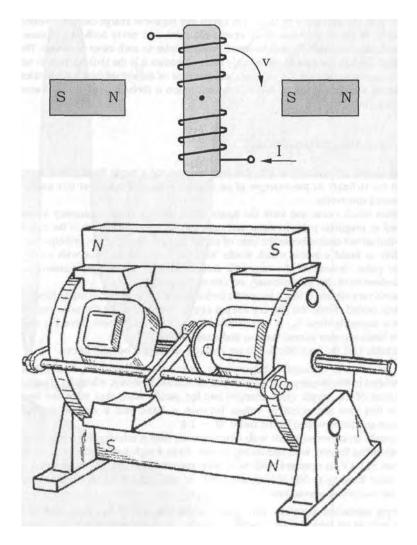
Fig. 15.4: Alternating current dynamo, according to the inventor
(Kromrey) a magnetic converter for free energy with a degree of effectiveness of more than 100 %. [i]

[i]:   Raymond Kromreys Molekularstromrichter, NET-Joumal 6/98, S. 5

15.4 Magnetic force converter

As a result of the systematizing of all eight possible interactions, the largest force effects are to be expected as a result of static and of open magnetic field lines. It is questionable, if this statement is generally valid and is true everywhere in space. But it is valid at least for a terrestrial laboratory and only here, on earth, a solution for the energy problem is strived for. No wonder therefore, if the electric energy technology nearly without exception is using these force effects. We find them at a solenoid, at a relay coil, at a magnetic tuning cylinder and equally between the stator field and rotor field of an electric motor.

The motor however takes a special position, because its rotor is turning. In that way a switching of the winding and commutating of the currents is necessary or the field of the stator winding is being turned, for instance in the case of an alternating current motor. This is necessary, so that in the air split of the motor the fields from the stator and rotor always are standing opposite like for the solenoid and a driving force can be formed. For the operation therefore oscillating currents are necessary, so-called alternating currents, which are fed in into the winding with the right frequency and phase. There can be spoken of an operation in resonance. It surely is no coincidence, that Nikola Tesla, the founder of the rotary field theory and inventor of the alternating current motors at the same time is the discoverer of the neutrino radiation!

The electric motor slides already into the second column from the top in table 15.1, as we see, and should be assigned to the case of the oscillating interaction of open magnetic fields. The frequency for motors usually is very small.

But also at high frequencies there can't be reckoned on some free energy which would show or even be utilizable, as can be heard from the inventors who tinker with magnets, mostly with permanent magnets (Fig. 15.4). The reason very simple is that there exist no physical particles, which could mediate this interaction. Magnetic monopoles would be necessary, thus north pole or south pole particles, so that an interaction with the open H-field lines can occur.
Such particles could form as a result of currents and eddy currents, but for that a good conductivity would be necessary and that isn't present in the vacuum. Therefore magnetic monopoles can't exist at all! This point we already had worked out (fig. 4.4, question I). The same statement then also applies to the oscillating case.

If nevertheless something like free energy should show in the case of some magnetic field converters, then unnoticed by the inventor still other physical effects are added. By means of concrete concepts this circumstance can be studied and discussed. The meanwhile well-known railgun is a corresponding example, for which besides the used magnetic force unintentionally a further principle is used. A more detailed occupation with this device is worthwhile, because here some fundamental concepts of space energy get clear.

A: Shining railgun in action[i]

B: Structure[i]

C: Concerning the way of functioning of the railgun
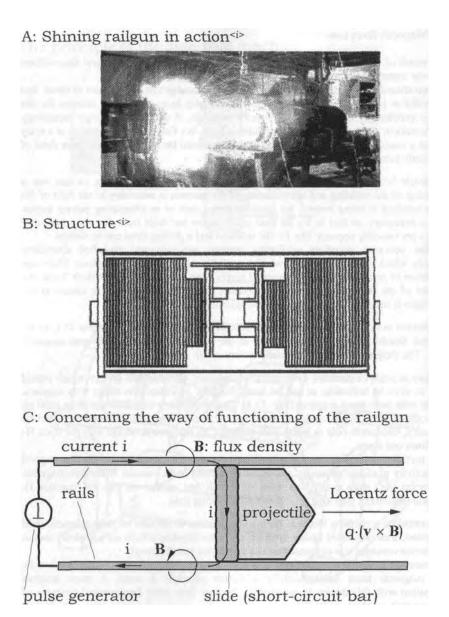
Fig. 15.5: Structure and way of functioning of the railgun

[i]:   in the internet under: www.glubco.com/weaponry/railgun.htm

15.5 The railgun

The engineers and physicists involved in the SDI-project were quite astonished, as they had a close look at the bent rails of their gun. During the test operation the equipment was really flying around their heads.

They were very sure to only have fed in 16.7 MJ of energy, from the rotation of a homopolar generator, because more was not available for the experiment by any means. The projectile with mass $m_0 = 0.317$ kg lying on the rails thereby should have been accelerated to the velocity of 4200 m/s. Instead huge forces were at work here, which the construction couldn't counteract at all. There is talk about the released energy having amounted to 399 GJ, what corresponds to an over-unity effect of 24000[ii]. This factor describes the proportion of the released to the taken up power or energy. If these details should be correct then this would be the most efficient converter for free energy, which has been developed until now.

Behind the project name SDI (Strategic Defence Initiative) is hiding the by the United Slates prepared "Star wars". But how one fares a war, which nobody can pay anymore and no-one wants, entirely according to the motto: There is a war and no-one goes there? This war undoubtedly the strategists and initiators themselves have lost, who even had to watch, how their space gun appears in the internet with design drawings and rich visual material to be called by anyone[i].

Today, where we are surrounded by nothing but friends, where in Russia and at other potential opponents is fought more against internal problems and one lets the expensive space toy rot for lack of money, the coat of the military secrecy obviously no longer can be held over such an explosive project as the railgun.

Thus informative details have reached the public. In the pictures a bright lightning can be seen at the moment of launching (fig. 15.5 A). Here presumably is being materialized, in which the part of anti-matter annihilates with the particles of matter under emission of light. There thus takes place the same process as in the case of lightning or the shining of the sun.

In addition is being reported that heat energy is withdrawn from the environment, a circumstance, which is typical for all functioning converters for space energy. We thereby are reminded of the possible formation of ice in a lightning channel.

Like for a lightning also the railgun is stimulated with a very high excitation voltage and with extreme speeds of change of the tension voltage (high du/dt) (fig. 15.5 C). From the setup it concerns a bridge of Ampere, which in various respects appears to be superior to the rocket engines, after the costly transport of the propellant into space isn't necessary, since the capacitor batteries can be recharged by solar power.

---

[i]:   e.g.: www.glubco.com/weaponry/railgun.htm

[ii]:   Galeczki, G., P. Marquardt: Requiem fur die Relativitat, Verlag Haag + Herchen (1997), S. 139

A:

magnetic field B_A of a
conductor through which
current flows

B_A

B:

constant
excitation field B_E

N

B_E

S

C:

conductor in the
excitation field

N

F ← ⊗ B_{sum}

S

D:

force effect F on a conductor
through which current flows

excitation │field
          B_E

force
F ← ⊗ current flux
into the plane
of drawing

(left hand rule)
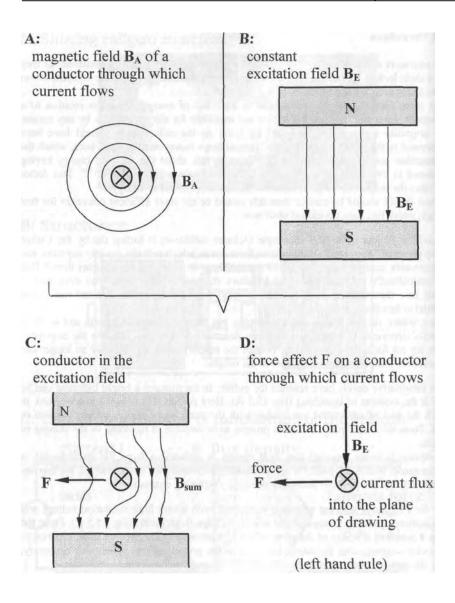
Fig. 15.6: _____ The distribution of field lines and force effect on
the slider of the railgun through which current
flows in a permanent magnetic field

The projectile has the form and the function of a short-circuit bar and is guided slidable between both rails of the railgun. The high-tension capacitors are switched on both rails at the moment of launching, so that in a very short time an extremely high short-circuit current of several thousands of Ampere flows through the bar.

Since the bar in addition is situated in a static magnetic field, there acts an accelerating force on it (fig. 15.6 D). It is the force effect of a conductor through which flows a current in a magnetic field, like it is active in every electric motor. If we overlap the fields of the conductor (fig. 15.6 A) and of the magnetic field (15.6 B), then we observe a bending and lengthening of the field lines (15.6 C). There exists the effort to re-establish the original state, which represents the smallest magnetic resistance, and for that the conductor is shifted out by means of the arising force. In the sketch it is accelerated to the left. That far the explanation concerning the bridge of Ampere. That has nothing to do with free energy. For the enormous degree of effectiveness, as it has been determined, further effects have to be added.

15.6 Unipolar induction

The projectile, or from the function let us rather speak of the short-circuit bar or the slider, at first is entirely conventionally accelerated and experiences, mathematically expressed, a dv/dt. The magnetic field B stretching perpendicular to the movement is constant, so that according to the Faraday relation[i] E = v x B from the velocity v an electric field strength E results and from the acceleration dv/dt a field change dE/dt. These open field lines along the length of the slider, in particular the oscillating part, appears to interact with oscillating particles and to collect these particles[ii]. It concerns presumably neutrinos, which primarily materialize in charge carriers. These contribute to the current flux in the slider and to the acceleration, whereupon still more neutrinos are collected.

A hardly controllable avalanche effect is formed. Only if the change in tension voltage has worn off and the capacitor is completely discharged, also the resonant interaction will again collapse.

The inventors, who want to construct a civil version of the railgun, is given a warning on the way which should be taken seriously. At first it doesn't take particularly much imagination to imagine a rotating arrangement of the gun, a construction with one axis, whit which a generator driven, which produces power. A small part is supplied the system again as supply for itself. The rest would be available free to the consumers as non-polluting,   regenerative   energy.
That really sounds good, if there wouldn't be this one obstacle.

---

[i]:   The equation of transformation concerning the unipolar induction already was treated more detailed in chapters 6.4 and 9.3

[ii]:   It is the resonant interaction according to table 15.1, line four
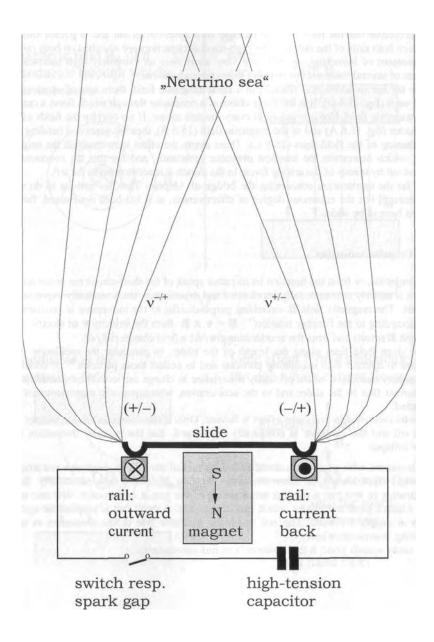
Fig. 15.7: The collecting of neutrinos by oscillating open field lines

15.7 Tendency to instability

In a continuously working machine the discharging of the capacitor cannot remain a single event as in the case of the gun. The discharging and the recharging has to take place cyclic depending on the revolutions per minute. To obtain a rotating movement even to a certain extent ignition has to follow ignition. But if the new ignition takes place, although the avalanche effect of the last one still hasn't worn off, then inevitable a catastrophe will occur, then the work of wonder is taken apart under the eyes of its creator. Numerous inventors already have had to collect such painful experiences. It is assumed that not even Nikola Tesla had escaped, as he had to put away again his stately luxury car with electric motor and energy converter in a barn near Buffalo already after one week of test operation in the year 1931[i].

Of course also for this problem solutions in accordance with engineering are offered. Meaningful would be a restriction of the revolutions per minute and a power regulation. Only most inventors don't think that far. On the one hand, because they handicraft without an useful physical model and on the other hand they think they already have reached the goal, if they observe something like free energy for the first time. Just as fast as the joy then the disillusionment comes, because a converter which doesn't work, is not able to convince anyone.

Tesla already was aware of this set of difficulties. He fastened his converter to the dashboard and not in the engine compartment, presumably to adjust the coupling of the coils from the drivers seat during the drive by means of two metallic rods, which he pushed into the case. But sometime even this regulation by hand has to go wrong, because the collected neutrinos on their part collect further neutrinos (fig. 15.7), so that in the case of an unfavourable order of ignition an additional amplification is possible. For a reliable operation according to that directly or indirectly the phase of the ignitions to each other should be checked.
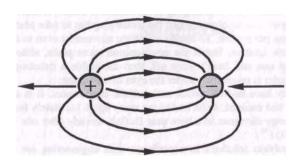
At the example of the railgun space energy technologists and inventors can study the relations and the way of functioning very concretely and even calculate these relatively simple. It is a big relief, that all three vectors stand perpendicular to each other: the E-field, the B-field and the velocity v. Ideal conditions both with regard to a maximizing of the wanted accelerating force and for the resonant interaction, increase at the same time the collecting of space quanta, which probably may be set equal to the neutrinos. This is made possible by the Faraday's law of unipolar induction. In that way at the right and left end of the slider a positive a negative pole each are formed. The further the two poles are away of each other, the more the field lines are opened and the more neutrinos can go into resonance. In this place still considerable improvements and optimisations are possible.

In addition to the two discussed the phenomenon of the electrostriction is added as a third phenomenon, which authoritatively contributes to the conversion of neutrinos into electrons. It is a field dependent change of length, which in the case of lightning takes care of the thunder and in both cases, therefore also here, is active as a charge carrier producer.

---
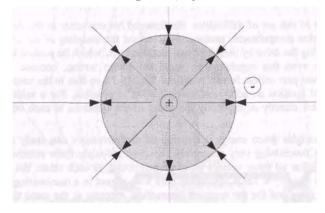
[i]: see also chapter 9.5 Free energy,
    A. Schneider: Energien aus dem Kosmos, Jupiter-Verlag 1989, Kap.ll, S. 20
    and H. Nieper: Revolution, MIT-Verlag 1981, S. 194
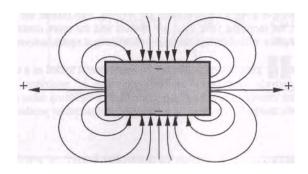
A: electric dipole (e.g. electrostatics, see also fig. 6.8)

B: electric monopole (e.g. electron e~, see also fig. 4.3)

C: Mixed form in the case of cylindrical symmetry

15.8 Unipolar field configuration

If we again go back to fig. 5.1 and continue our considerations with examples concerning line 3. The obtainable force effect of open electric fields indeed is for powers of ten smaller than that of magnetic fields, but then particles are mediated, an invaluable advantage and an indispensable prerequisite with regard to the generation of space energy. As long as the particles are considered in the balance sheet of energy then in addition by no means can be claimed, space energy converter are perpetuum mobiles.

In the question, why only electric particles can be mediated, has to be pointed to the repeatedly mentioned circumstance that only electric particles can be formed as a result of the concentration effect of potential vortices. Magnetic particles however plain and simple cannot exist, since for missing conductivity in the vacuum no eddy currents are possible (see fig. 4.4).

In the case of the arising Coulomb forces again is distinguished between the static and the oscillating case. We want to start with electrostatics.

The range of technical applications of static electricity is large. It stretches from varnishing technologies and filter technologies till the fly grill in the arbour. In all cases the field is built up by charge separation. By means of a high-tension generator a positive pole and a negative pole are produced, between which the field is stretching. The field lines now start at one pole and end at the other, unlike pole (fig. 15.8 A).

In this manner almost no open field lines are available, which point to the outside and could interrelate with free particles. If one for instance intends to attract and collect charged particles from the solar wind, from the cosmic radiation or from the electricity of the air, then the design in one point has to be changed fundamentally.

A unipolar field configuration is necessary. What is meant with that, answers a glance at the spherical vortex model of the electron (fig. 15.8 B resp. fig. 6.2). Here it as well concerns a formation of dipoles as a result of the charge separation, but one pole is hiding in the inside of the other pole . In that way its field lines are captured and don't have a chance anymore to come out, to reach the other pole.

But if the pole lying on the outside for its part can't close its field lines any longer, then these point helpless into space and search in their neighbourhood, in the distant world and if need be even in the infinity of the universe an unlike anti-pole, which as a result interacts and is attracted.

The measuring technician analyses these open field lines and falsely calls the construction then a monopole, only because he isn't able to reach the locked up pole. To blame is the unipolar field configuration, which with that probably would be explained to a certain extent.

The designer and inventor as well might have realized how he has to construct his device, with which he generates open field lines to collect space quanta. He has to lock in one of the two poles as good as possible. Optimal would be of course a spherical symmetric construction like in the case of the elementary vortex. Compared with that a cylindrical symmetry indeed is suited far less good, but it offers constructive advantages (fig. 15.8 C). We now will report of such a functioning device.
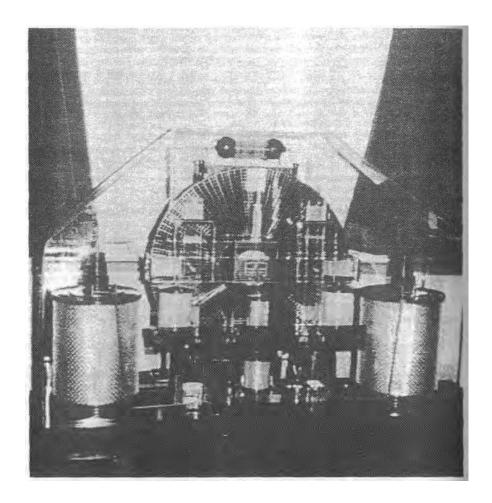
Fig. 15.9: Demonstration converter "Testatika".[i]

[i]:   A. Schneider: Energien aus dem Kosmos, Jupiter-Verlag 1989, S. 29,
       I. Schneider: Neue Technologien zur Freien Energie, Jupiter-Verl. 1994, p. 13
       and in the NET-Journal, Heft 8/9, 1997, S. 16 as well as iss. 12, 1997, p. 6.
       D. Kelly. Der Schweizer ML-Konverter, Raum & Zeit Special 7, S. 164

15.9 The Testatika

An electrostatic device, which produces open electric field lines, is situated in Linden in Switzerland. It optically is very imposing and belongs to a religious community, which has called it Testatika and is of the opinion that it is a free energy converter. Inexplicably the Testatika does not serve the community, which generates their electric power conventionally and to a large extent by itself, as a source of energy. Instead the 2 kW device only very seldom is demonstrated for special occasions or to select groups of visitors. The religious community after that explains the astonished observers humanity not yet is mature for the technology.

Perhaps just the opposite is correct and the technology not yet is mature. According to my personal assessment such an electrostatic device in principle is entirely unsuitable for the continuous operation.

It can be expected that the open field lines sooner or later will interrelate with the electricity of the air and thunderstorms are being attracted by the infernal machine so long until lightning strikes and the demonstration with that has finished. That's why the Testatika may be switched on only for a short time, only at sure weather situation and not too humid air, and many a registered visitor has been sent away without having seen the "thunderstorm machine".

As an object of demonstration and study the Testatika however is well suited. Alone the circumstance that no cable leads to the device and it nevertheless releases energy in the order of magnitude of 1 till 2 kW, surprises all visitors. At least the impression is mediated as if the machine would violate the law of conservation of energy, which is not correct. The Testatika is similar to an induction machine, which works with friction electricity. Thereby the unlikely charged bodies do not have to unconditionally touch and rub at each other, it already is sufficient, if they are brought in the immediate vicinity of each other. In the case of the Testatika the electrostatics of two against one another rotating discs is taken off by brushes.

The excitation energy presumably is taken out of the natural E-field, which just like that can amount to 200 Volts per meter (see chapter 2.9). The large diameter of 80 cm of the discs and their bad conductivity (acrylic glass) permit this conclusion. The charge taken off by the brushes afterwards is temporarily stored in two capacitors of 2 Farad at 300 Volt, so-called Leyden jars. This far one actually is reminded of a Wimhurst generator, in which the energy is supplied the system by turning the disc. Large powers cannot be drawn by that. Plans to build such an induction machine by yourself have been published[i].

In the case of the Testatika however two discs are used and by hand stimulate to rotate oppositely. This rotational energy in this case isn't used to produce power, otherwise the discs quickly would stand still again, but that doesn't happen.

Until now apparently no-one has discovered the secret, which is kept strict by the members of the community. In my opinion the energy situation on our earth however is too serious, as that we would be able to afford playing hide-and-seek and egoistical secretiveness.

---

[i]:   I. Schneider: Neue Technologien zur Freien Energie, Jupiter-Verl. 1994, S.14
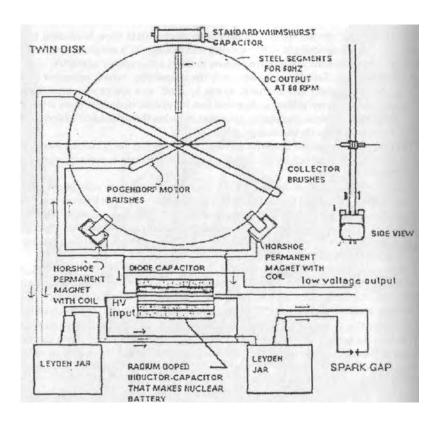
Fig. 15.10:   Sectional drawing of the Testatika according   to
Don Kelly, (Clearwater, Florida, USA)

15.10 The secret of the Testatika

 The crucial point is the opposite direction of rotation of both discs. If we assume the static earth electric field is the cause and serves as an excitation field, then as an effect a field arises, which stands perpendicular to that. The axial component now points out of the centre of the disc.

In the case of only one disc the field lines in front and behind the disc again are closed, so that no open lines can form. With one disc or with two discs rotating in the same direction hence no unknown charges can be attracted.

In the case of two oppositely rotating discs however shows one component along the axis of rotation to the observer, that of the other disc exactly in the opposite direction. In that way between both discs a pole is ,,pinned", which no longer is able to close all field lines on the outside around the machine. Thus open field lines and a, however incomplete, unipolar arrangement are formed.

The charge carriers sucked from the electricity of the air as a result support the natural electrostatics and speedy recharge the capacitors, even if up to 10 Amperes are taken out by the consumers.

The ingenious thing of the machine is its extremely simple construction and the simple concept.

If one includes the collected particles also in the balance sheet of energy, then it thus will turn out that the law of conservation of energy is not violated at all. There thus can't be talked of free energy. In this context the Testatika may rather be given as a counterexample. Air ions are the carriers of the electricity of the air and not carriers of free energy.

Negative air ions are indispensable for our welfare. One should only remember the first men in space, who after the landing were pulled out of their capsule more dead than alive, after they had to stay in the unhealthy atmosphere of the capsule for a longer period of time. Only the installation of ionising devices for negative air ions made possible longer staying in space.

The taking out of the air of negative ions hence is not unproblematic and not particularly ecologically compatible. An atmosphere harmful to life is formed which Dr. Wilhelm Reich has called DOR-state. He by the way has designed a Cloud-Buster, with which he could take static electricity, forming above the desert sand, out of the air. In that way the negatively charged rain clouds no longer are repelled and driven away. Reich has tested his weather machine 1954 in the desert of Arizona. After he had freed the atmosphere of the ,,DOR-strain", as he expressed himself, in the desert area the atmospheric humidity steadily increased from 15% up to 95%, there grew prairie grass and everything started to turn green, and eventually after many years for the first time rain fell again.

Static electricity, as far as the right polarity is chosen, may conditionally be used for the mechanics of rain making. For free energy concepts it however isn't suitable. Already Nikola Tesla has pointed to the circumstance that our hopes will be in vain if the free energy would be of static nature (see fig. 9.5). He in his speech, which he gave 1891 before the AIEE, has left no doubt that free energy exists, which is kinetic and with that energy technically usable for us,. Chapter 16 will be occupied solely with this case[i].

---

[i]:   according to point 4 in table 15.1
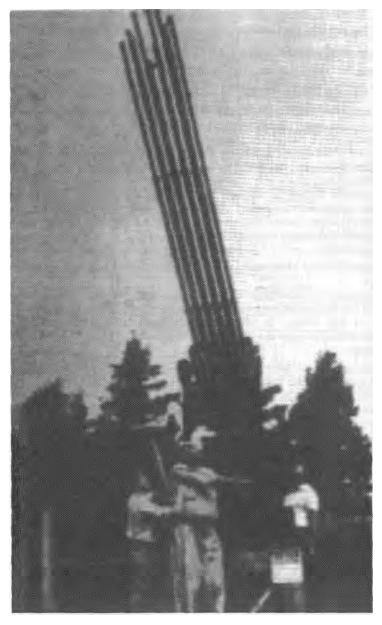
Fig. 15.11:   The Cloud-Buster of Dr. Wilhelm Reich 1954.[i]

<i>:   H.-P. Thietz: Tatort Erde, VAP (1996), ISBN 3-922367-62-3, page 122
<ii>:   Part 1, fig. 9.3; concerning the unipolar induction see also fig. 6.5 and 11.8

Fig. 15.11 shows the weather machine of Reich, the Cloud-Buster. It can be understood only hard, why Reich directs a 3-4 m long metallic pipe with a diameter of 4 cm to the sky and connects the rear end with a deep well or with flowing waters. The effect should have been increased considerably with a few milligrams of radium. An indication that he must have worked with static electricity, delivers however a tragic accident, in which one of his collaborators was lamed on one side. He carelessly had touched the charged apparatus and suffered an electric shock[i].

15.11 The key to free energy

As a contribution to the discussion the individual principles of functioning of space energy again are collected and the attempt is undertook to value them.
In the case of an oscillating dipole configuration, for instance the railgun, open field lines are present only along the mutual line of connection (fig. 15.8 A). With that not particularly many space quanta can be reached. It hence has to be operated with gigantic excitation powers in the range of many thousands of Ampere, so that further field lines fling open and interact. The wanted over-unity effect therefore can only be reached at an enormous expense of technical apparatus.
An unipolar arrangement here is considerably more advantageous, where holds: the more unipolar, the fewer excitation power is required. But in that way it can take longer until the collecting of neutrinos like an avalanche again has worn off. In the case of an ideal spherical arrangement (fig. 15.8 B), as the ball-lightning takes, the process can even last for minutes. This explains why unipolar systems can be kept under control only very hard. If the neutrino avalanche is rolling then it purely theoretical only can be stopped with a still larger excitation power, for instance by phase shifting, what can hardly be realized in practice. The rolling avalanche can't be stopped anymore by normal means. A synchronous operation between the neutrino oscillation and the converter can, apart from the technologically hardly realizable high frequency, by no means really be recommended. As a rule one single steep flank of the change of the excitation voltage is sufficient to start the avalanche. By means of the repetition frequency or by means of the duty cycle of the excitation voltage then resonances to the neutrino field can be made or avoided. On the other hand can't be done without the avalanche effect. The utilizable power of the neutrino converter otherwise would be much too small. This case should be pursued further in the design of a longitudinal wave gauge.

All converter systems at first work based on a well-known and tried and tested physical principle of functioning. In the case of the railgun it is the bridge of Ampere. The thus used force effect on a conductor through which flows current is advantageous due to the obtainable order of magnitude and as a basic concept extremely recommendable. But also Coulomb forces or other physical principles can be used.
Despite that a further relation still must be added, which produces the interaction with the neutrinos. Closely associated with the unipolar arrangement it is the unipolar induction, which in virtually all space energy concepts is put to use. It already could be shown that the railgun uses the effect as well as John Searl in the case of his flying disc[ii]. The Faraday law of induction turns out to be the key to free energy.

bronze-
axis

ferrite ring-   revolving, con-   ferrite ring-
like magnets   ducting ring   like magnets
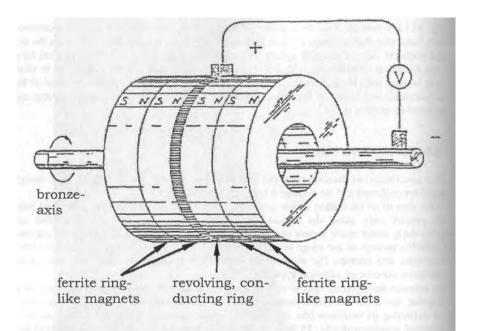
Fig. 16.1:   The Faraday generator, which with rotating
                  magnets is called N-machine.[i]

According to chap. 6.5, eq.60 the equations of transformation are:

$$\boxed{\mathbf{E} \;=\; \mathbf{v} \times \mathbf{B}} \qquad \text{and} \qquad \boxed{\mathbf{H} \;=\; -\,\mathbf{v} \times \mathbf{D}} \qquad (16.1)$$

where: $\mathbf{v} = dx/dt = v \cdot \mathbf{e}_x =$ component of the direction
of motion perpendicular to the area being stretched by the field
pointers $\mathbf{H} = H \cdot \mathbf{e}_y$ and $\mathbf{E} = E \cdot \mathbf{e}_z$.
Thus in addition to the basic fields E and H (at v = 0) additional
fields E_z and H_z, depending on motion, occur and the overall fields
E_o and H_o are measured (which corresponds to eq. 63 in chapter 6.5):

$$\boxed{E_o \;=\; E + E_z} \qquad \text{and} \qquad \boxed{H_o \;=\; H + H_z} \qquad (16.2)$$

(which corresponds to eq. 62 in chapter 6.5):

with: $\boxed{E_z \;=\; v \cdot B}$ and $\boxed{H_z \;=\; -\,v \cdot D}$ \qquad (16.3)

Table 16.2 A: The equations of transformation of the
                electromagnetic field.[ii]

16. Space energy technology (SET)

It quite concretely concerns the question for a technology concerning the use of the resonant interaction (according to line 4 in fig. 15.1). For that open and at the same time oscillating electric field lines are needed, which mediate neutrinos and pass them on to a receiver working in resonance. The sun, some planets and other celestial bodies, as we already have worked out, use the effect. Even an entire galaxy is kept together in this way. This interaction plays the crucial role for the theme of space energy and the question is asked, with which technology it can be produced artificially.

16.1 The unipolar generator

The most direct way obviously leads over the Faraday relation concerning the unipolar induction. With the classic Faraday generator, where a permanent magnet is turned along its axis, at first a static electric field can be produced. By rotating in opposite direction or magnets rotating in the same direction but oppositely poled, relatively simple one pole can be „pinned" between the magnets and an unipolar construction can be built. Numerous research scientists already have worked in the area of the Faraday machine more or less successfully (fig. 16.1)[i]. There is reported of instabilities and of the picking up of unknown energy at high revolutions per minute. In the majority of the cases it in a sense of the Testatika will concern collected electricity of the air.

The Faraday relation in addition also appears to be hardly understood correct physically by anyone. A scientific magazine in this context takes the opinion: "Faraday proves Einstein wrong", and the production of electricity with Faraday's unipolar inductor violates the laws of physics ![ii]

---

[i]:   A. Schneider: Energien aus dem Kosmos, Jupiter-Verlag 1989, S. 44

[ii]: „Faraday in his experiment did let rotate a copper disc above a resting cylinder magnet; as expected in a loop of wire a tension voltage was created (F-machine). Than he let the magnets rotate, and the disc stood still; now again a tension voltage should have resulted - but there was no voltage. In the third experiment the magnet rotated with the disc in the same direction and with the same speed. Because there was no relative motion between both, an induced tension voltage wouldn't have been expected - but it was measurable! (N-machine, see fig. 16.1).
What does that mean? If the relative movement between magnet and disc is not always crucial for the formation of an induced tension voltage, then also the absolute movement has to play a role - because something has to move, for a current being formed. But an absolute movement according to the theory of relativity can't be detected - thus Faraday's experiment proves Einstein wrong! Therefore you won't find anything about this experiment in the textbooks".
Taken out of the article: Faraday widerlegt Einstein, PM-Magazin 11/ 1998, P. 133

from table 16.2 A:

$$\underbrace{H - H_o}_{(16.2)} = \underbrace{- H_z}_{(16.3)} = v \cdot D \tag{16.4}$$

with the velocity $v = dx/dt$,
not accelerated $dv/dx = 0$ (inertial system) and derived for x:

$$\frac{dH}{dx} - \frac{dH_o}{dx} = \frac{dx}{dt} \cdot \frac{dD}{dx} = \frac{dD}{dt} \tag{16.5}$$

The curl of the H-field pointer points in the z-direction:

$$\text{rot } \mathbf{H} = \frac{dH}{dx} \overset{(16.5)}{=} \frac{dH_o}{dx} + \frac{dD}{dt} \overset{!}{=} \mathbf{j} + \frac{d\mathbf{D}}{dt} \tag{16.6}$$

comparison of coefficients with Ampère's law:

$$dH_o/dx = \mathbf{j} \quad , \tag{16.7}$$

integrated over dx and ds and formulated generally valid:

$$\oint \mathbf{H_o} \, d\mathbf{s} = I_{ein} \tag{16.8}$$

thus follows from that: <u>magnetic field = vortex field</u>!

<u>Faraday's law of induction</u> (analogous derivation):

$$\text{rot } \mathbf{E} = \frac{dE}{dx} = \frac{dE_o}{dx} - \frac{dB}{dt} \overset{!}{=} - \frac{d\mathbf{B}}{dt} \tag{16.9}$$

cause for measurable electric field E_o is missing:

$$dE_o/dx = O \quad , \tag{16.10}$$

integrated over dx and ds and formulated generally valid:

$$\oint \mathbf{E_o} \, d\mathbf{s} = 0 \tag{16.11}$$

thus follows
from that: the <u>electric field</u> = <u>irrotational</u> (according to Maxwell)!

<u>Table 16.2 B:</u>   The derivation of Maxwell's field equations
(Ampère's law and Faraday's law of induction)
from the equations of transformation of the
electromagnetic field

The author of the article proceeds from Maxwell's formulation of Faraday's law of induction, according to which arises a tension voltage in a wire if the wire cuts magnetic force lines, thus is moved relative to a magnet.

If he had read my books, then he would know that Faraday not only has found the older, but also the more comprehensive law, whereas Maxwell only describes a special case. Starting-point for the by me developed theory of objectivity are on the one hand Faraday's law of induction and on the other hand the regularity dual to that, which both together are called equations of transformation of electromagnetism (fig. 6.5, eq. 60 and fig. 16.2 A, eq. 16.1).

16.2 Derivation of Maxwell's field equations

For the derivation we assume, as already in fig. 6.5 for sake of simplicity, that the movement $v = v_x$ takes place perpendicular to the area stretched by the field pointers $H = H_y$ and $E = E_z$. If we derive the equation of transformation, written down for a field component depending on motion, for the coordinate x by using the equations of material and compare the result with Ampere's law resp. Faraday's law of induction, then it becomes clear that the comparison is successful only under certain prerequisites. This circumstance proves that the Maxwell equations only describe a special case and that the equations of transformation are more general valid and causal (table 16.2 A and B).

But in this place is crucial that Faraday's law of induction according to Maxwell only is able to describe a formation of dipoles. For the formation of unipolar field structures however must be fallen back upon Faraday's law concerning the unipolar induction. Whoever wants to understand or even develop by himself concepts concerning space energy, first must have understood Faraday's law in its whole range.

Usually the Faraday generator is, like in the original building shape, equipped with permanent magnets and operated in a steady operating state. Doing so consequently only static electricity is formed. We however need oscillating fields, and for that either the rotation, or the magnet should be changed in polarity with high frequency. Expressed with the precision of mathematics, the first case is described by: $E(t) = v(t) \times B$ and the second case by $E(t) = v \times B(t)$. Both cases have to be investigated and discussed, because both $v(t)$ and $B(t)$ are possible in principle. It is added that in both cases mechanically moving, as a rule rotating, designs but just as well resting designs are conceivable, in which only the moving charge carriers themselves realize the component of velocity v.

This time the crucial point is, that in both cases equally a change of the electric field strength E(t) is produced, with the help of which neutrinos should be collected. Because of the extremely high oscillation frequency of the neutrinos large field changes dE(t)/dt and associated with that large changes of tension voltage dU/dt seem to be the optimal solution, which can be handled with today's technology. Apart from that further difficulties are added, which require a managing in accordance with engineering. If we namely work with a large acceleration dv(t)/dt, then the inertia of the accelerated masses should be overcome, then only very small and light projectiles can be launched like in the case of the railgun. If we however work with fast changes of the magnetic field dB(t)/dt, then the inductance acts slowing down.

A: Suggestion from the patent specification of John W. Ecklin

B: For instance the „Stationary Armature Generator"
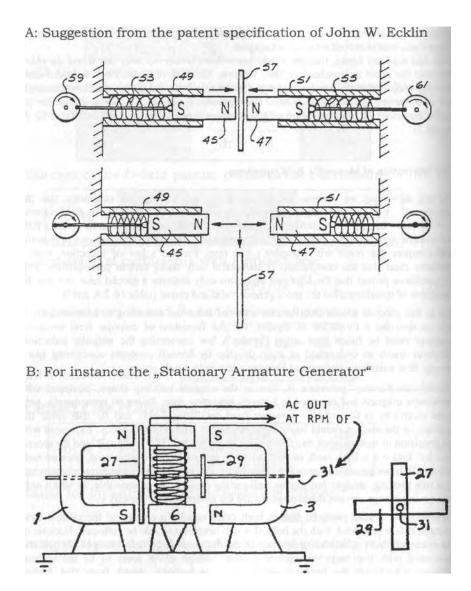
Fig. 16.3: Principle of the Ecklin generator.[i]

[i]:   A. Schneider: Generatoren mit Ferritkernumpolung, NET-Journal 6/98, S. 9
Ecklin: Permanent Magnet Motion Conversion Device, U.S.Pat. 3'879,622

16.3 SET-devices with rotating magnetic fields

If we again come to speak of the Faraday generator, which can be built up in two variants.
In the case of the F-machine the magnets rest and only the disc rotates, whereas in the case
of the N-machine the magnets rotate along. In this case can't be avoided that some of the
induced charge carriers roam about in the magnets and sensitively disturb the structure of
the material. One only thinks of the bending spoon effect!
The consequences stretch from a loss of the permanent magnetism, over a shattering and
bursting up to a pulverizing of the magnets. Adventurous rumours and alarming reports in
this direction are sufficiently available.
An improvement could be obtained by an isolation layer between the conductive disc and
the magnets, but against induced charge carriers inside the rotating magnets this measure
is not able to achieve anything.
Anyhow the best thing to do will be to completely do without permanent magnets in
neutrino converters! If we replace them at least in our minds by electromagnets, then a
feeding with alternating voltage is possible. That also is necessary if oscillating neutrinos
and not air ions should be collected.
As a result of the alternating voltage at first large eddy currents occur in the disc. The
losses can be reduced by radial slits in the disc. The induced currents then only can, as
wanted. flow radially to the outside.
Bigger headaches causes us on the other hand the inductive and with that current storing
effect of the excitation coils. If a too large excitation inductance should prevent a fast
increcase in current, then also the induced electric field will increase correspondingly
comfortable   and   hardly   be   able   to   persuade   a   single   neutrino   to   stay.
A coil core of iron or dynamo sheet metal with that is ruled out from the start. Even ferrite
would be suitable at most conditionally. Usable are air coils with as possible as few turns.
In an advantageous design the slit copper disc rotates between two air coils, if need be flat
coils built in the way Tesla did, which are fed with pulsed tension voltage.
The highest speed of change in current surely is obtainable by means of a spark gap, like
already Tesla has used (fig. 9.1). But also other techniques are thinkable as pulse driving.
For instance semiconductor power amplifiers with MOS transistors not only can be
switched fast and hard, but in addition frequency and duty cycle can be adjusted freely
with reproducible exactness. These are niceties, which will gain importance in connection
with the control and regulation of a converter.

Und the heading "generators with magnetic flux variation" Mr Adolf Schneider has
collected and commented on some concepts[i]. The generator of the american research
scientist John W. Ecklin registered for patent at 22-4-1975 thus stands as an example of a
whole group of inventions, in which the magnetic conductivity in the magnetic circuit and
with that the flux is changed with a jump.
Fig. 16.3 B shows a building form consisting of two horseshoe magnets (1, 3) with a
likewise resting coil in between (6). In rest the magnetic circuit experiences no change and
consequently no tension voltage is induced in the coil. The trick is that an axis (31) is
pinned right through the arrangement which is turned with two soft iron anchors, which
magnetically short-circuit alternating the left (27) and the right (29) horseshoe magnets.
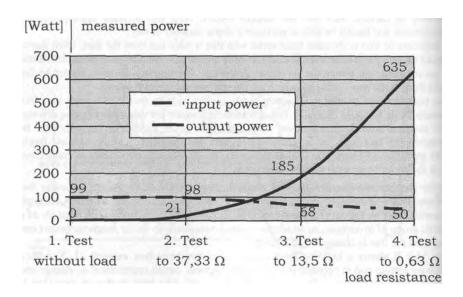
Fig. 16.4: Bedini magnetic converter.[i]

<i>:   A. Schneider: Generatoren mit Ferritkernumpolung, NET-Journal 6/98, S.10

Besides the moment of reluctance, which should be compensated by the physical principle, and the friction of the bearing actually no further moment of reaction can occur which would have to be gotten over, not even then if current is taken out of the coil. If the flux change is large enough, purely arithmetically it should be possible to take off an electric power which is considerably larger than the friction power. John Bedini has 1985 measured an over-unity effect of up to 12.6 at a similar constructed generator, where with increasing strain also the factor could be increased (fig. 16.4).

16.4 Commentary concerning magnetic SET-devices

I judge these measurements rather sceptical, after I already in three cases had to break the message gently to the inventors, that their device unfortunately was nothing but an energy destroying machine and they merely had measured wrong, where admittedly the measuring of pulsed tension voltages and currents is not quite simple. So that you don't become a victim of wrong hopes and self-deception, I recommend all SET inventors to realize the closed-loop. If in the continuous operation power can be taken out of such an arrangement without supply of energy from the outside, and be it as small as possible, then that convinces everyone even any journalist and any non-expert.

Unfortunately in the case of numerous concepts at this place already the end is reached. As charming the variation of the magnetic circuit may be, in most cases I miss the unipolar arrangement of the fields. Perhaps here no neutrinos are needed at all and energy merely is withdrawn from the environment heat? I'm not able to answer this question and I surely don't need to, as long as no magnetic converter is demonstrated to me as closed-loop. such a converter, if it can be realized, presumably will at least partly hide one of its poles and produce some open field lines; that at least would be expected.

a still bigger measuring technical problem represent the neutrinos bound to a line, which oscillate around the conductor in the form of ring-like vortices. We have become acquainted with these in the case of the single-wire transmission technique of Tesla (fig. 9.5). They are formed, if neutrinos are slowed down and collected, but not yet have materialized to charge carriers. Tesla did use them for his loss-free energy transmission technology, but he couldn't supersede the alternating current technology full of losses, which also stemmed from him but which he called the worse technology, from the market because there were no power meters available for the single-wire-technology.

Today we still aren't one step further. The energy supply enterprises still decline this technology, as I had to learn myself, although this would be the only way to transport solar energy from the desert or energy from the geothermal energy of Iceland by a sea cable to Central Europe, where it is needed.

Today still no gauges exist for such neutrinos bound to a line. Therefore will every measuring technician experience his Waterloo at SET-devices, in which they occur! I now will report of such a converter and the odd measuring problems.
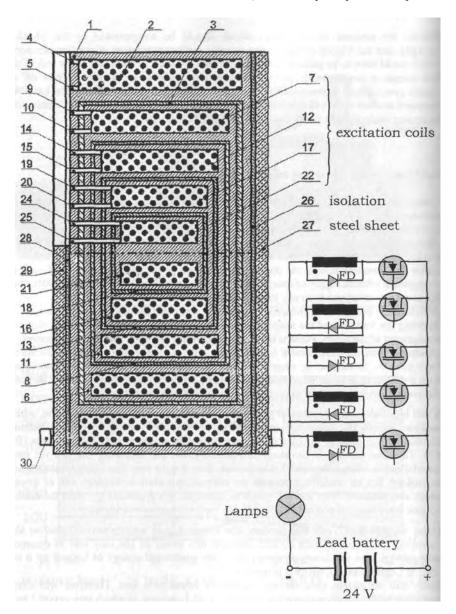
Fig. 16.5:   Space quanta manipulator of the Firma ROM AG[i]

[i]:   Gibas, Greilinger, Lehner, Rusterholz: Strom aus dem All, Mega Link, Fach-
zeitschrift   fur   Elektronik,   Nr.   6,   Marz   1998,   S.   18-23
resp. Bau: Glaube kann Berge versetzen, Bulletin SEV/VSE 25/97, S. 31

16.5 RQM and the space quanta manipulator

If an employee or one of the numerous shareholders of the Swiss Firma RQM AG in Rapperswil speaks of space quanta, then he with that presumably means the neutrinos. An oscillating source of neutrinos is called central Space Oscillator and an operation in resonance of the energy receiver, the so-called space quanta manipulator, is required.
Mr Ludwig Sigrist, the creator of this world of imagination, was not a physicist but crane operator (pseudonym Crane O.) and inventor, whom textbook physics couldn't help further in his considerations anyhow. His concept, if it can be translated into a scientific comprehensible language or not, at least helped him personally and gave him the position to create the space quanta manipulator (fig. 16.5).

It consists of several pot coil systems, which are build up and boxed into each other according to the Matrjoschka principle of scaling down. The ferromagnetic core material of the pot spheres (1, 6, 11, 16, 21) should show magnetostrictive properties as distinct as possible. As we will see, this measure gains its actual importance first in connexion with the interaction with neutrinos!

Each pot sphere carries an excitation winding (2, 7, 12, 17, 22), through which alternatively flows a current in opposite direction. By means of this measure, which seems useless according to classic design concepts, one of both field poles is pinned in the centre, in which way the necessary open field lines are produced.
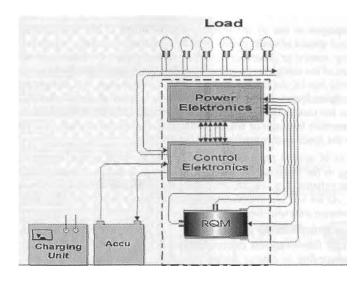
The individual pot spheres are insulated from each other, where the isolation layers (3, 8, 13, 18, 26, 28) should have a high dielectricity. The pot spheres thus in addition form capacitors with each other; even the ending plates at both sides (27, 29) function as capacitor plates.
This construction, the core piece of the planned RQM converter, is driven by a transistorised power amplifier with excitation impulses as steeply flanked as possible.
According to patent specification[i] the pulse widths are freely eligible in steps of 5 ns betweeen 200 nanoseconds and one second. Besides the frequency also the polarity and DC voltage offset are adjustable.

Every visit of the laboratory leaves a lasting impression: Carefully the engineers grope forward, turn at the frequency and the duty cycle, until the effect suddenly occurs and neutrinos, the space quanta, are being collected. One realizes that tuning parameters with still stronger reactions would be possible, but entirely without any regulation and limitation of power that can't be controlled anymore. The avalanche effect would destroy everything, and so one is further dangling along the brink of the abyss in the development laboratory of the RQM, all the time trying hard to gain control of the hardly understood effect.
Concerning the setup and the mode of operation of the pot system the inventor did let his posterity have explanations, but why a diode in free operation FD suddenly loses its rectifying function, for that neither the employees nor specialist visitors of as high as possible scientific rank in the laboratory until now had ready an answer.

---

[i]: Gibas, Lehner, Greilinger: Vorrichtung und Verfahren zur Erzeugung elektromagnetischer Pulse, Patentschrift CH 687 428 A5 vom 7.5.1996
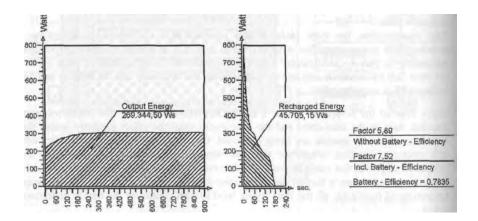
Fig. 16.6: The RQM test installation of 23-9-1996[i]

[i]:   F. Greilinger: Der Weg zur erfolgreichen, stabilen Energieauskopplung, RQF Magnetik, Sonderausgabe 1996, page 10

As said, the neutrinos no longer are free but bound to a line, if they leave the pot system. They oscillate around the wire, even around every semiconductor and rove through the entire switchboard. Doing so they can cause quite something, also bring about quite some disaster.

Lead batteries are being recharged, which without doubt is desirable, but in the continuous operation they are destroyed by the same vagabonds. In normal light bulbs for instance some of them materialize to charge carriers, so that according to a gauge more current leaves the light bulb, as on the other side flows in to it. It indeed glows completely normal, but measuring technical for the installation nothing is normal anymore.

The visitor can be shown by means of a high precision measuring facility of vibrations that the pot coils oscillate not only electrically and magnetically, but also mechanically. But the effects alone don't make a converter, which can be produced and which await already numerous buyers of options and licenses.

On the one hand measures for the purposeful conversion of the roving space quanta in utilizable charge carriers here still are missing. On the other hand any controlling facility is missing, to adapt the power taken up from the neutrino field to the momentary need of the consumers. The brave engineers of the RQM still have quite some way in front of them. but the line of approach is right and the reached can be looked at.

16.6 SET-devices with pulsed magnetic fields

In the case of the space quanta manipulator mechanically nothing is moving. In the copper coils the charge carriers merely are on the way with the velocity v. We here have present a typical example of a SET-system with pulsed magnetic field. Compared to the before discussed SET-devices with rotating magnets, for instance the N-machine, the space quanta manipulator clearly has its nose in front. Without brushes, without friction and wear and tear it theoretically has a unlimited life.

In addition it is simpler to produce the necessary large steepness of the flanks in an electronic way as by a mechanical variation of the magnetic field. By means of electronically driving the process it also can be checked, controlled and regulated easier.

The question for an optimisation of the concept still remains. At present one already can be satisfied with a study of possibility, but sometimes one will question the design. There as an example the eddy current losses in the iron pots will be at discussion. About sheeted or sintered materials could be thought, if not at the same time the inductance of the coil would increase in that way, which slows down the increase in current. Ferrite materials again are very brittle and would crumble to dust under the mechanical oscillations of size. I proceed from the assumption, that also here an arrangement with air coils could turn out to be an optimum. It does make sense, if Tesla at higher frequencies always did experiment with air coils.

Now it still depends on the coiling technique. One single conductor loop doesn't provide any open field line. For this purpose if need be two loops have to be supplied with current in opposite direction, like it is the case for a so-called Mobius winding. In this way possibly just as many neutrinos interact as in the case of the pot coils of the space quanta manipulator, which are alternatively supplied with oppositely phased current. To clarify the situation we now should occupy us with the coiling technique.

Fig. 16.7 A: The Mobius band
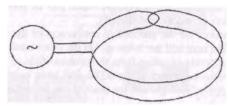
Fig. 16.7 B: The Mobius strip
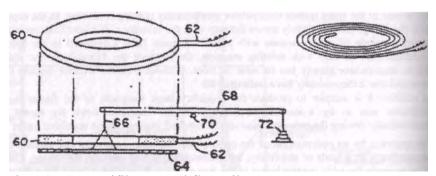
Fig. 16.7 C: Bifilar wound flat coil
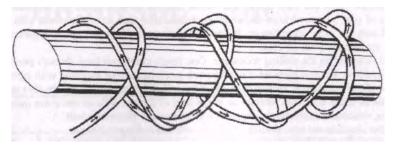
Fig. 16.7 D: Mobius winding arranged like a cross

16.7 SET-devices with Mobius winding

In connection with space energy devices often is talked about the use of a Mobius winding. That is traced back to the Mobius band, which one obtains, if one for example one end of a long paper strip after a half turn glues together with the other end. The result is a strip, which has neither top side nor underside and neither right nor left border. This object with only one side and only one border is a creation of the German mathematician August Ferdinand Mobius (1790 - 1868), fig. 16.7 A.

A distant relative of the Mobius band is the strip with the same name, where the magnetic field lines mutually cancel out. It is the same compensation, as we know of a two core electric cable, where the supply and return cable are run close together. For that the sense of winiding of a conductor loop simply is reversed (fig. 16.7 B).

If the magnetic field vector is wrapped right-handed around the supply cable and left-handed around the return cable, then both amount to zero, so that measuring technical no rest field can be detected anymore at some distance.

THE pointer of the electric field stands perpendicular to the magnetic field vector and points in the direction of the conductor and the movement of the charge carriers. From the coupling of magnetic and electric field follows, that the compensation of one of them also leads to the compensation of the other one. But if the electric field actually is compensated, then there may not flow any current in the winding!
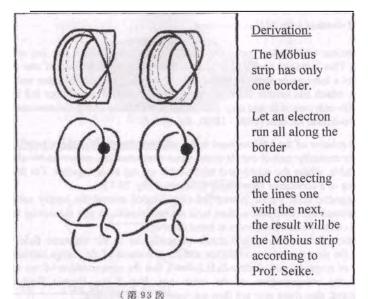
There however flows a current if an electric tension voltage is supplied to the Mobius winding. As a result of this forced current flow both electric and magnetic fields have to occur, which are not compensated! Some field lines will fold outward the expected direction and stand in space as open field lines. These we, in the oscillating case, owe the interaction with the neutrinos.

A perfect compensation would be expected for a two core, bifilar winding. The American physicist William Hooper was able to obtain interesting effects with a bifilar wound flat coil. With help of a balance he could detect attracting or repelling force effects on different, electrically or magnetically neutral discs (fig. 16.7 C)[i].

But he feeds the flat coil with direct current, so that a contribution of neutrinos can't be expected. Such effects only will occur, if one works with pulsed signals, because the bifilar wound flat coil quite obviously is able to form wanted, open field lines.

[i]: Schneider, Adolf: Energien aus dem Kosmos, Jupiter-Verlag 1994, page 28, taken out of:

Mielordt, Sven: Tachyonenenergie, Hyperenergie, Antigravitation, kaum & Zeit Verlag 1984

Derivation:

The Möbius strip has only one border.

Let an electron run all along the border

and connecting the lines one with the next, the result will be the Möbius strip according to Prof. Seike.

（第93図）

Fig. 16.8 A: Derivation of the Mobius strip acc. to Seike<i>

右メビウス巻
鉄
十三回トゥラス
右ピッチ十一回
左ピッチ
左メビウス巻
銅
15k
0.1
150k
20k
バリコン
5k
0.1
2SB56A
15Ω
アムプ (120db)
ダイオード
0.1
右メビウス巻 (13回)

Fig. 16.8 B: Scalar wave radio according to Prof. Seike<i>
      <i>:   Seike, Shinchi: The Principles of Ultra Relativity, Space Research Institute 1990, ISBN 915517-1

16.8 Mobius converter of Seike and Coler

Concerning construction it can be an advantage to wind a Mobius coil not purely bifilar and in that way to do without a perfect compensation. It often already is sufficient, if two conductors cross and only individual components of the field vectors partly cancel out. In the case of the coil, which is pulled apart and wound like a cross, drawn in fig. 16.7 D the conductor current and the fields of supply and return cable belonging to it stand under an angle of almost 90°. This in individual cases should already be able to cause the formation of open field lines.

Similar field conditions are formed, if after every turn the wire is looped under the last winding. At the knots again the angle conditions of approx. 90° occur. The Japanese professor Shinichi Seike preferably works with this kind of winding, which he directly derives from the Mobius band (fig. 16.8 A)[i]. He has designed an electro-gravitation motor basing on this principle. He also speaks of weight reduction and of an artificial anti-gravity field. It could be confirmed experimentally, that his setup cooled down slowly during the operational tests, despite the expected heating up by the copper losses of the current[ii, S.29]. Unfortunately I don't known anything more exact.

In his book further is found the wiring diagram of a radio for the reception of scalar waves (fig. 16.8 B). He thereby quite simply replaces all coils in the high-frequency part with his Mobius coils. If longitudinal waves already are measurable and receivable with this simple measure, first has to be checked.

The German captain Coler more than 50 years ago has developed another Mobius converter. His "Magnetstromapparat", with approximately 6 kW power and an at least four-fold over-unity effect uses six coils with permanent magnetic core. As a peculiarity he in addition runs the coil current through the core under an angle of 90° with regard to the coil current (fig. 16.8 C).

More detailed details can be seen in the footnote[ii, S. 22].

<ii>:   Adolf Schneider: Energien aus dem Kosmos, Jupiter-Verlag 1994

S.22: "Scientists of the Technical University Charlottenburg in Berlin and Munich confirmed that the device functioned without objections, but they didn't find a theoretical explanation for the production of energy. The professors Kloss and Franke of the Technical University of Berlin found a degree of effectiveness of 450%. Prof. Schumann confirmed that 4.8 to 6.7 times more energy came out, than was put into the device. Prof. Schumann excluded a deception entirely as the records prove.
But it wasn't simple to set the device going and the stability for longer periods of time wasn't guaranteed. The war confusion set an end to further research. After the end of the war the British secret service confiscated all available documents and apparatus. Part of the report was declassified in 1962".
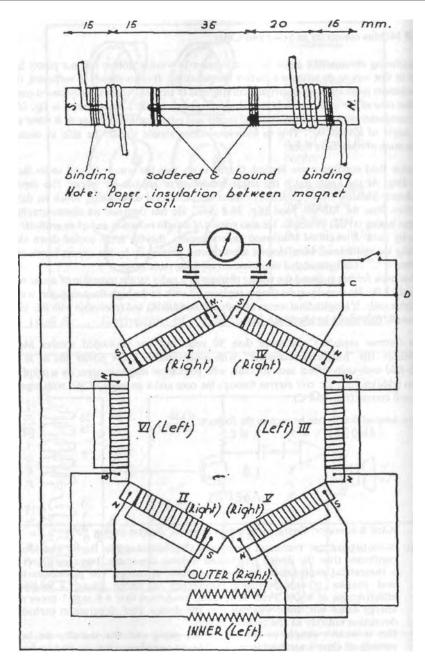
Fig. 16.8 C: The Coler converter

16.9 Tesla's flat coil

In the category of the unconventional coiling techniques without doubt the Tesla coil may not be missing. If in schools and high schools such coils were standing in the laboratory
for teaching purposes, then as a rule it are cylindrical coils. In reality Tesla worked with flat coils but that, so is said, isn't necessary anymore today, since we have at our disposal
better isolating materials than 100 years ago. Actually Tesla contended with problems of osilation, which he could solve with the help of the flat coil, but it should turn out that the coil geometry is attached a crucial importance.

Everything had started with Tesla having to leave the Technical Highschool in Graz without diploma. He ran out of money and he had dared to criticize the venerable Professor Poeschel and his sparking Gramm dynamo. With that he had put himself under compulsion to succeed. Two years later he had ready the solution. In the year 1882 he discovered the rotary field in Budapest.
In the time to come he designs and builds an alternating current motor, but no-one wants
to have it and surely Thomas Alva Edison not. Tesla after this disagreement very fast
gives up his job at the Edison Company again and again stands under pressure to succeed.
With that the eternal bachelor Tesla urges himself to ever higher efforts. He wants to
prove himself and the rest of the world that his alternating current system is superior to the
direct current system.
Direct current, as is well-known, can't be transformed, and thus the advantage of Teslas alternating current lies in the possibility of power transport by high-tension cable over large distances. But for that the high-tension transformers first had to be developed and thereby the said problems of isolation occurred.
With each turn the tension voltage at the transformer winding increases. The distance to the grounding point lying on the outside has to be chosen bigger with each turn, so that no blow inside of the high-tension winding occurs. A consistent solution of the problem in accordance with engineering is the flat coil used by Tesla, wound spirally from the inside to the outside (fig. 16.9 A)[i].

It thus is correct that isolation technical reasons led to the flat coil, since Tesla himself was completely surprised as he had to find out that this coil can lose its self-induction, that scalar waves can be detected with it and that it is cooled down during operation in an inexplicable manner.

This cooling effect Tesla has investigated more detailed and after all even used. In his patent specification concerning the superconductivity he describes, that the flat coil also loses its Ohmic resistance, if he in addition previously cools it with liquid air. The remaining cooling down to absolute zero his flat coil obviously has carried out entirely by itself with help of the neutrinos (fig. 16.9 B)[ii].

---

[i]: Nikola Tesla: Coil for Electro-Magnets, Patent No. 512,340 (1894)

[ii]: Nikola Tesla: Means for Increasing the Intensity of Electrical Oscillations, Patent No. 685,012 (1901)

singly wound flat coil   bifilar wound flat coil
(Tesla coil)   (from the patent specification of Tesla)
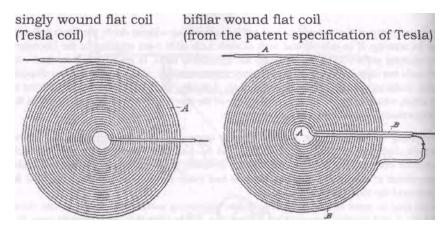
Fig. 16.9 A: Coiling techniques of Tesla's flat coil.[i]
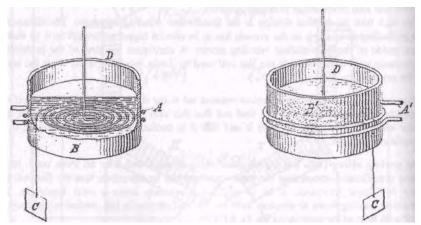
Fig. 16.9 B: Patent specification of Tesla concerning
Superconductivity.[ii]

---

[i]:   Nikola Tesla: Coil for Electro-Magnets, Patent No. 512,340 (1894)

[ii]:   Nikola Tesla: Means for Increasing the Intensity of Electrical Oscillations,
Patent No. 685,012 (1901)

16.10 The secret of the flat coil

The technical function could be explained in the way that the charge carriers of a flat coil by induction are set into motion for excitation from the outside. The transmitted energy shows in form of kinetic energy. The spiral flat coil becomes narrower and narrower towards the inside, the length of each winding shorter and shorter, so that the kinetic energy inevitable has to decrease in favour of a rotational energy. The faster and faster rotating spherical vortices are pulled apart to flat discs and eventually to ring-like vortices by the centrifugal force. The electrons at first become neutrinos bound to a line and finally free neutrinos. Tesla has technically used the first ones in the single-wire-transmission technique (fig. 9.5) and the last ones in his wireless energy transmission (fig. 9.7).

Like many other inventors, Tesla owes also the inventions, which he counts his greatest, like the radio technique and the Magnifying Transmitter, first of all his industriousness. his persistence and a great deal of inventor luck. A magician, as he is called in his most important biography, he by no means was[i]. The flat coil, to which led him chance and which plays a central role in all these inventions, gave him the lucky position, to collect neutrinos and materialize them to charge carriers or in reversed direction to dematerialise electrons to neutrinos.

The technology however is everything else but new. Already the Lituus of the Etruscan and Roman Augurs and the crook of the priests had the same spiral structure (fig. 16.10). In the case of the devices, which the Augurs for instance served at land surveying, it clearly concerns flat coils according to Tesla. We will go into this strange „gauge" more in detail in part 3 of the book[ii].

The trick probably is, that one component of the electric field pointer is directed towards the centre of the coil and as a result some open field lines are generated, which then collect neutrinos from space.
In this process the neutrinos thanks to the resonant interaction are slowed down to the speed of light and following, as discussed, materialized by means of the flat coil, as in addition rotational energy is withdrawn from the neutrinos. Since the receiver oscillates resonant with opposite phase, in addition the thermal oscillations are reduced and the receiver becomes cold!

If one compares the Mobius coil with the Tesla coil, then besides numerous properties in common the strength of the first coil lies in the production of open field lines and the collection of neutrinos, whereas the special and additional property of the flat coil lies in the materialization, in the conversion of neutrinos into charge carriers. But the advantages of the flat coil have to be bought at the expense of having to work with very high tension voltages (above 511 kV) and with large changes in tension voltage (du/dt). With this set of difficulties we will have to deal in more detail.

---

[i]: Margaret Cheney. Nikola Tesla, Erfinder, Magier, Prophet (Orig.: Man Out Of Time, 1981), Omega-Verlag Diisseldorf 1995

[ii]: K. Meyl: Electromagnetic environmental compatibility, part 3, edition belonging to the information technical seminar, INDEL Verlagsabteilung 2003.

The Etruscan Lituus   the Roman Lituus

Fig. 16.10:   The Lituus or crook of the Augurs in ancient Rome

16.11 Discussion concerning the technology of the neutrino collectors

Let us again collect the facts for the discussion: A SET-device is distinguished by a more or less unipolar design and open field lines, with which interact neutrinos, which are oscillating in resonance. These then are slowed down and collected. For the transient process a large change in tension voltage (dE/dt) is required, which can be obtained directly, for instance by means of a spark gap, or indirectly by means of Faraday's law concerning the unipolar induction (E = v x B).

The discussed possibilities concern the acceleration of a machine part (dv/dt), the variation of the magnetic field (dB/dt) by pulse-like excitation signals (16.5) or by magnetic flux variation (16.3) and the railgun. which even can be operated without foreign magnetic field (fig. 15.5 C) and for which in that case occur both a dv/dt and at the same time a dB/dt.

For resting arrangements the velocity v is that of the charge carriers moving in the conductor. So that Faraday's law thereby doesn't lose its influence, the pointers of E and v mustn't point in the same direction, as in the case of "normal" coils. Unconventional windings, which for instance can be knotted like Mobius strips (16.7), take remedial action. Also the ancient crook, rediscovered as flat coil of Tesla (fig. 16.10), proves to be suitable in principle. Here one component of the electric field pointer points in the direction of the centre so that the wanted, at least partly, unipolar arrangement can be formed.

The first step, the collecting of space quanta, shouldn't pose an insurmountable obstacle anymore in view of the numerous possibilities and the detailed explanations. A real difficulty we still have before us, because in most cases some ring-like vortices bound to a line are formed, for which no electronic construction element exists and for which functioning converters hardly are known.

There spoons are bending, some lumps are flying through space, radioactivity is disappearing without a trace, light phenomena are formed and the device suddenly is becoming cold. Almost all inventors, who have arrived in this place, are enthusiastic about the not understood effects or with that are wanting to get attention, but hardly anyone really starts something with that. Until now the necessary system and an useful theory were missing.

Only too often isn't considered, that only an indirect conversion into charge carriers is possible, that during the materialization of neutrinos a intermediate product is formed, which can be described with the model concept of a neutrino bound to a line or of an oscillating ring-like vortex. The technologies collected in this chapter concerning the collecting of neutrinos only form the first step from the free to the bound ring-like vortex. The coming chapter is dedicated to the second step. Here we should try to understand the properties of space quanta bound to a line and loudly think about for which purpose we could use them in practice[i].

_____

[i]: Reference: Both chapter 16 and chapter 17 treat point 4 according to table 15.1 concerning the resonant interaction (page 86).
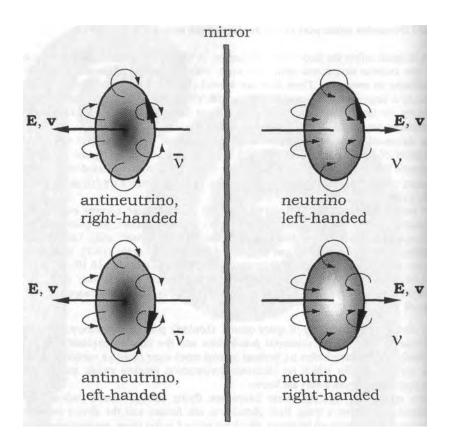
Fig. 17.1: _____Application of the mirror transformation
                 to the neutrinos

<i>:   Kleine Enzyklopadie Atom, Verlag Chemie GmbH, Weinheim 1970, S. 119:
        „For the neutrinos the quantum number parity isn't defined, because they have a
        fixed association of the direction of momentum and spin; the sense of rotation of
        the spin and the direction of momentum in their case form a left-hand wound
        screw, in the case of antineutrinos a right-hand wound screw. By the shown
        mirroring the direction of momentum is reversed, but the sense of rotation
        remains unchanged; i.e. reactions, in which neutrinos occur, are not mirror
        invariant, they violate the law of conservation of parity". (translated)

        Note of the author:, an antineutrino by no means can be assigned to the anti-
        matter, since it exactly like every neutrino alternatingly takes the matter
        state and the anti-matter state, by oscillating around itself (see fig. 7.12). The
        description merely follows a definition founded in usefulness.

17. Technical use of the weak interaction

17.1 Radioactivity caused by neutrinos

Neutrinos are standing in a weak interaction with other elementary particles. This circumstance is known in general. According to the considerations and derivations expressed in the book the neutrinos mediate the resonant interaction, what leads to the conclusion, that the weak interaction represents a partial aspect of the resonant interaction, in which case it merely concerns the proximity.

Efforts are further being undertaken, to combine the weak interaction with the electromagnetic to an electroweak interaction, after it was remarked that a certain coupling constant corresponds in both cases. We of course aren't surprised, because the electromagnetic interaction anyhow describes only the special case of the resonant interaction with the frequency zero.

The weak interaction concerns with the very small range of just 10^{-16} meters only the proximity of the neutrinos, for instance the ß-decay, where the neutrinos for the reason of their oscillating charge a free neutron rattle and shake so long, until it eventually decays. on the average after approximately a quarter of an hour.

The Austrian physicist Wolfgang Pauli had remarked, that half the decay energy after a beta-decay is missing and the balance sheet of energy isn't working out. In addition also the balance sheet of angular momentum isn't working out, because the nuclear spin is being changed for a whole unit. Pauli as a result 1930 has introduced a hypothetical particle without mass and without charge, which he called neutrino.

With that Pauli and his co-working Italian colleague Fermi it is true are the givers of the name of the neutrinos, but not by all means the discoverer. If Cowan and Reines l956 have detected these particles with large expenditure of devices, then also that by no means was a premiere, as falsely can be read in textbooks and encyclopaedias. After all Nikola Tesla already decades ago had demonstrated, that the neutrino radiation not only exists, but even can be used energy technically.

Now the radioactive decay a ß-radiation occurs, triggered by the conversion of neutrons in protons or vice versa. This obviously takes place under the influence and participation of neutrinos in the atomic nucleus. The ß-radiation to a special extent consisting of electrons and positrons, as it occurs in the case of nuclear fission, is quite unhealthy and by no means ecologically compatible. Under the influence of free charge carriers not only metal lattices become soft and spoons can be bent, but also an electrolysis takes place, where the water molecules are splitted into their parts. That isn't a good prerequisite for the flora and fauna on our planet, which predominantly is built up of water structures.
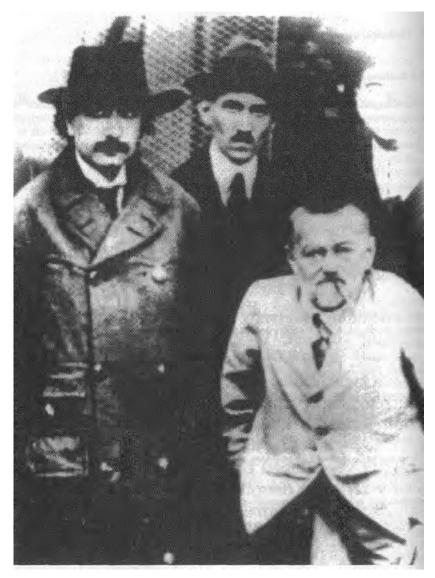
Fig. 17.2:   Einstein, Tesla and Steinmetz[i] (from left to right)

---

[i]:   Franz Ferzak: Nikola Tesla, Eigenverlag, S. 103

17.2 Nikola Tesla, the discoverer of the neutrino radiation

The discoverer of the neutrino radiation himself will best be able to explain the connexion. In the New York Times Tesla writes, that he has discovered and investigated the phenomenon of the cosmic radiation, long before others started their researches[i]: "According to my theory a radioactive body is only a target, which constantly is being bombarded by infinitely small balls (neutrinos), which are projected from all parts of the universe. If this, at present unknown, cosmic radiation could be interrupted completely, then no radioactivity would exist any longer.
I made some progress regarding the solution of the mystery, until I in the year 1898 attained mathematical and experimental evidence, that the sun and similar celestial bodies emit energy-rich radiation, which consist of inconceivable small particles and have velocities, which are considerable faster than the speed of light. The ability of penetration of this radiation is so large, that it penetrates thousands of kilometres of solid matter, without their velocity being reduced noticeably. "
It must be admired how Tesla guided by experimental observations and a reliable instinct comes to the correct result. He merely with the conclusion, because of the missing interaction the neutrinos have to be inconceivably small, isn't quite right. Their size rather depends on the velocity, because the overfast neutrinos are being length contracted stronger. Tesla however hits the nail exactly on the head, if he on the occasion of the press conference for his 81st birthday declares, the radioactivity is a clear proof of the existing of an outer radiation of cosmic origin[ii]. „ If Radium could be shielded against this radiation in an effective way", Tesla writes in an essay of 1934, „then it wouldn't be radioactive anymore". At this occasion he contradicts Albert Einstein, without thereby pronouncing the name and is indignant at the wrong working method of the scientists[iii].

Me personally fascinates, how here until now ignored results have been presented, which I first had to work out theoretically myself with difficulty. Tesla, to the best of my knowledge, hasn't taken theoretical derivations, at least none have been handed down. As a brilliant experimental physicist he must have reached his conception world by means of the measuring technique. The perfect correspondence of his experimentally determined and the by me theoretically won insights should be judged as evidence for the correctness of this view.

---

[i]: Dr. Tesla Writes of Various Phases of his Discovery, New York Times, Feb. 6, 1932, P. 16, col. 8

[ii]: Tesla Said (J.T. Ratzlaff), Tesla Book Company, ISBN 0-914119-00-1, P. 272

[iii]: "The scientists of today think profound instead of clear. One has to be mentally sane, to be able to think clear, but one can think profound and nevertheless be completely insane. The scientists of today have substituted experiments by mathematics, and they travel from one equation to another and eventually build up a construct, which has absolutely no relation to reality"...

taken from N. Tesla: Radio Power will Revolutionize the World, Modern Mechanics and Inventions, 7/1934, (Tesla Said, P. 264)
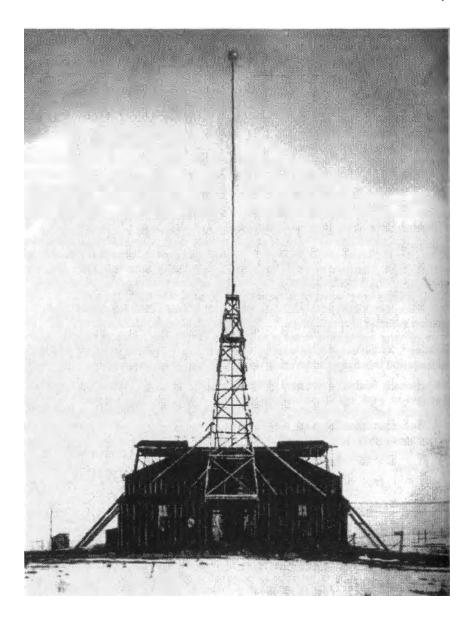
Fig. 17.3:   The Magnifying Transmitter of Nikola Tesla
Would   the   research   station   in   Colorado   Springs
(1899 - 1900) have been suitable for transmutation?

17.3 Transmutation and reduction of radioactivity

If we are capable to collect and bundle up neutrinos, then should with that an influencing of the radioactive decay become possible, then also a decontamination of radioactively contaminated material and a so-called transmutation should be possible. We here have a concrete possibility before us, to use the produced ring-like vortices directly for the benefit of humanity. Dangerous transports with Castor containers, permanent and temporary storage and the contamination of whole areas by radiation, like around the nuclear power station Tschernobyl, which got out of control, wouldn't be necessary at all. If namely burned out fuel rods and objects contaminated by radiation have undergone a concentrated neutrino shower, then the radioactive decay takes place accelerated, so that the half-life can be drastically reduced. After the treatment the dangerous special waste would have been changed to harmless domestic rubbish. Even recycling or reuse are feasible.

The topic is at least as explosive as the energy question and as well completely unsolved. That's at different places and in some companies is already feverish researched about technologies concerning transmutation. Often it are the same people, who also work at the theme of space energy. The reason quite simple is that in both cases neutrinos have to be collected and bundled up. In the case of transmutation however the necessity of materialization can be dropped, so that the goal can be obtained faster and simpler. Consequentially is reported of more cases of a successful decontamination and of transmutation, than of functioning energy converters. Until now most techniques however still hardly are suitable for bringing into action technically on a large scale, but they carry clues of a solution of the problem already in them.

At the congress "New Energy technologies from USA" 6.12.1997 in Zurich I have lectured concerning the theme[i]: „Presumably as the first one the doctor Dr. Wilhelm Reich has carried out corresponding experiments with his „Orgon accumulator" (fig. 9.2). From him also stem warnings about biological effects, which should be taken serious, if radioactive material is put under his Orgon accumulator and the process of decay takes place accelerated".

If one dares an interpretation of his experiments with only 1 mg radium, then numerous charge carriers materialized at hitting upon his sample of the bundled up neutrino radiation with the consequence of high electrostatics in the environment, which Reich has called DOR-state (Deadly ORgone) (chap.15.11).

Another way would be the rebuilding of a neutrino transmitter according to the plans and patent specifications of the experimental physicist Nikola Tesla (fig. 9.11). He 100 years ago had realized a real neutrino-broadcasting and for that developed an unconventional switching technique. Tesla called his transmitter a „Magnifying Transmitter" (fig. 17.3). He choose the name „Magnifying Transmitter", after he had received more energy than he had transmitted in experiments and this effect moreover was increased with increasing distance to the transmitter. He obviously also had collected free and synchronously oscillating neutrinos, and that would be the best prerequisite for a successful transmutation and decontamination of radioactive material!

---

[i]: Konstantin Meyl: Die Wechselwirkung der Neutrinos; uber Massnahmen, die Halbwertszeit beim radioaktiven Zerfall herabzusetzen. NET-Journal Jg. Nr. 3, Jan./Feb. 1998, S. 14-20
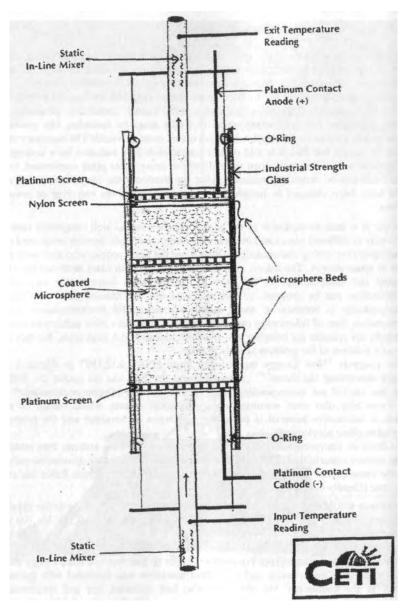
Fig. 17.4: 1 kW Patterson Power Cell.[i]

[i]: Patterson, J. A.: System with electrolytic cell and method for producing heat and reducing radioactivity of a radioactive material by electrolysis. US Patent No. 5.672.259 of Sept. 30, 1997, as reprinted in Infinite Energy, July-Nov.1997, pp. 13-16

17.4 The Patterson Power Cell

As an example worth paying attention to, the Patterson Power Cell should be mentioned, which not only can be used for generation of energy but, how could it be otherwise, also for reduction of radioactivity and for transmutation. The energy cell invented by the chemist Dr. James A. Patterson is researched and developed further by the company CETI (Clean Energy Technologies Inc.) in Sarasota (Florida, USA). According to latest reports such a device supplies at most one kilowatt of heat energy at an over-unity of up to 4000; thus 4000 times the energy is released than is taken up as required for the operation!
In fig. 17.4 one single cell of the energy converter is shown. The glass container consists of three chambers of approx. 4 cm height each time and about 1.9 cm in diameter and works like a continuous-flow water heater. From the bottom tapwater or distilled water is supplied and at the top connection again taken away in heated form. The excitation takes place electrostatically by means of two platinum electrodes. The anode situated at the top is connected with the positive pole and the cathode with the negative pole of the source of direct current.
In the three chambers are situated tiny, filmy coated small balls, which form the real principal item of the cell. Production method and structure of the beads are oriented to the task to be mastered. In the case of a variant conceived for the generation of energy the barely one millimetre in diameter small synthetic beads carry after each other a thin layer of palladium, a layer of nickel and once again one with palladium[i].
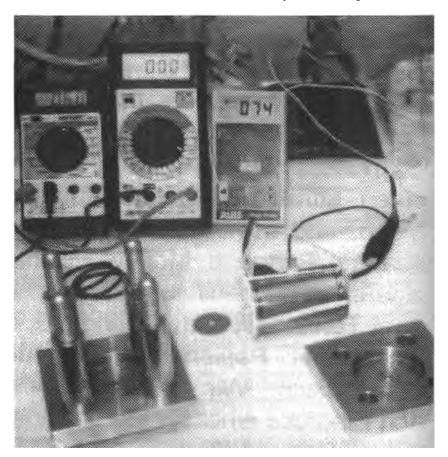
The small balls remind with their layered structure at first of the Orgon accumulator of Reich. They also seem to function as collectors of neutrinos, but for smaller wavelengths and much higher frequencies. In addition is chosen a concentric arrangement with the spherical form, which with the electrically conductive surface and the dielectric core fulfil the function of a cavity resonator. Resonance actually is possible with flying past neutrinos, which have a wavelength which amounts to an integer multiple (1,2,3,..) of twice the diameter of the sphere.
The arising resonant oscillation however concerns not only the electric and magnetic fields, but by means of electrostriction and magnetostriction also a mechanic oscillation of size. The oscillation of size in reverse causes again oscillating electric and magnetic field pointers, which are partly open along the spherical structure and can interact resonant with further neutrinos. In this repercussion field the actual secret of the functioning of a Patterson-cell is hidden.

The president of the German association of space energy, Prof. Dr. Dr. Josef Gruber on the occasion of his visit at the company CETI and of a conference about „cold fusion" in Vancouver has published a report[ii]:

[ii]: Gruber, J.: Kalte Fusion und Raumenergie, report concerning the 7th international conference about "cold fusion" of 19.-24.4.1998 in Vanvouver, B.C., Canada (Infinite Energy, Issue 19, 1998) and report concerning "International Symposium on New Energy" of 23.-26.5.1997 in Denver, Colorado, USA (Denver-report of the remote University Hagen)
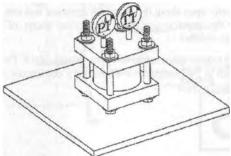
Fig. 17.5: _____ Low Energy Nuclear Transmutation Cell,[i]
the   kit   for   experiments   LENT-1
(Showing Temperature and Pressure Gags)

[i]:   taken from the NET-Journal, 10/11 1997, S. 7

17.5 Report concerning the cold fusion

"In the case of the Patterson transmutation cell it concerns a special electrolysis cell, in which the radio nuclides are charged. During the electrolysis the decay activity measured by means of a Geiger-Muller counter decreases drastically. Within a few hours reductions of up to 80% are obtained. In such an electrolysis system with electrodes consisting of specially coated beads low-energetic nuclear reactions can be observed. In this case elements are detected in the metallic layers of the beads, which before were not contained in these. Further are measured changed (unnatural) proportions of isotopes. From these transmutation can be inferred, which is used in the cell for the conversion of radioactive elements.
Until now natural uranium and thorium were used as radioactive material. The reproducibility already now is very good. The applicability for commercial purposes, for the reduction of the radioactivity of burnt up fuel elements and for the conversion of plutonium is easy to see".
At his visit in the laboratory of CETI in Sarasota 28.5.97 Prof. Gruber has witnessed an experiment to annihilate radioactivity with the Patterson transmutation cell. He reported about it: "In the presence of N. J. Olson from Pacific Northwest Laboratory (operated by Batelle for the U.S. Department of Energy) a team of the television station ABC conducted by the science journalist Dr. M. Guillen made recordings for a television program, which meanwhile has been broadcasted all over the country. The original tension voltage - among others a Geiger counter rattled - subsided as the expected success became apparent in the experiment: After one hour 50% of the radioactivity stemming of uranium nitrate were removed, in another half an hour further 13%. Doing so also a considerable lot of surplus heat was produced.

New techniques of this kind to reduce radioactivity have an important advantage: One brings the SET-device there where the radioactive material is situated and reduces the radioactivity on the spot. For the conventional technique, still being in research, in contrast to that the radioactive material first is wrapped in a complicated manner and then transported to a special factory, where radioactivity is reduced at great technological expenditure and use of energy - altogether a procedure which is relatively costly and politically only hard to carry through".
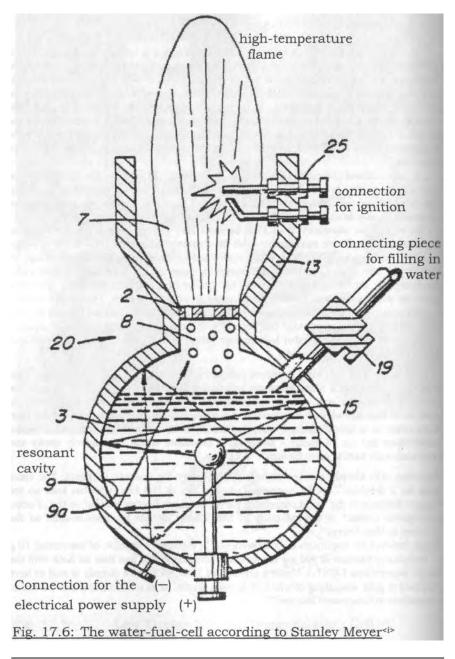
Patterson cells already can be obtained commercially for research purposes. The same goes for a demo-kit[i] of the company Trenergy, Inc. of Hal Fox, who has built up the biggest database of the world concerning the theme "Low Energy Fusion" in the "Fusion Information Center" at the university of Salt Lake City. He is editor-in-chief of the "Journal of New Energy".
If one believes the statements on their web-site[ii], then one is capable of converting 10 g of radioactive thorium in 900 mg titanium and some copper in less than an hour with the kit for experiments LENT-1. Under a pressure of 3200 psi sodium already is said to have fusioned to gold, something of which alchemists dream, as an unintentional side effect, as researchers in Cincinnati/Ohio say[iii].

---

[i]: NET-Journal, Jan. 1997, S. 24
[ii]: see Internet: http://www.hal-fox@slkc.uswest.net
[iii] : NET-Journal, 10/11 1997, S. 7

Fig. 17.6: The water-fuel-cell according to Stanley Meyer[i]

[i]:   H.-J. Ehlers: Stan Meyers Wasser-Zellen-Technik, Raum & Zeit special 7,
        p. 201, taken from the Canadian patent specification 1234 773 of 5-4-1988

17.6 Water-Fuel-Cell technology

The United States are, just what concerns spectacular techniques like the removal of radioactivity or the transmutation of new materials, obviously still the land of unlimited possibilities. Nowhere the list of researchers of cold fusion is as long as in North America. But there also in many places only is tried and tinkered without visible system or usable theory. Then in many cases unfortunately only a show-effect is to the fore, while construction plans and details concerning the way of functioning, as far as they actually exist, are kept secret. In total there, besides a lot of hot air and wrong hopes, is left behind little to be used and cited. By the way, in my opinion cold fusion has to do very much more with space energy and neutrinos than with hot fusion. How much disaster a wrong referring to and an unusable theory can bring about, has become clear at the example of the "cold fusion researchers" Fleischmann and Pons. They have placed themselves into the scientific offside with their misinterpretation concerning cold fusion.

Moreover are both primarily scientists and theorists. Practice however is, according to general definition, "if in spite of all it functions!" The American Stanley Meyer is such a practical man and his water-cell-technology actually seems to function, although he in his 18 patent specifications gives theoretical explanations, which he just as well could have saved himself. With that his effect isn't explained.

An usable interpretation would be that this device, comparable to a cell of a plant during photosynthesis, splits water molecules into its parts by putting on neutrinos. Even without knowledge about space quanta the buggy of Stanley Meyer already runs with a air-cooled 1500 cc VW-engine, and it consumes no gasoline at all. The tank is filled with water; it even may be sea water. The consumption of water lies at 2.8 litres at 100 kilometres and thereby is formed predominantly hot steam again as a combustion product.
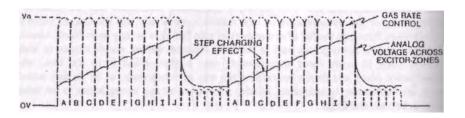
If thus cold water is converted into hot water and at the same time mechanical energy is available. then inevitably another source of energy must be involved. According to my interpretation it must concern the neutrino field. If the here presented details are correct then the over-unity effect lies at approx. 100, the degree of effectiveness thus at 10000 percent.

American companies, with which Stanley Meyer had concluded contracts, should make the "Water-Fuel-Cell technology" mature for series. Also the financing seemed secured. But then per internet the message came, he 21.3.1998 was having supper in a restaurant in Grove-City, as he suddenly jumped to his feet from the table and called out, he had been poisoned. He died on the spot[i].

Alarge number of inventors is known, who tap space energy with the help of water. It concerns an increase of the content of oxygen or of the content of colloids, thus an improvement of the water quality. Or it concerns formation of vortices as already in the case of Walter Schauberger, glowing phenomena or also the generation of free energy from the neutrino field. In this concert the concept of Stanley Meyer takes an outstanding place, as particularly efficient, instructive and clearly understandable for us, for which reason we cast our eyes over the design (fig. 17.6 and 17.7).

---

[i]: Zum Hinschied von Stanley Meyer", NET-Journal April/Mai 1998, S. 25; see: obituary in Infinite Energy Magazine

A. The pattern of the pulses of the excitation voltage:

B. The wiring diagram:
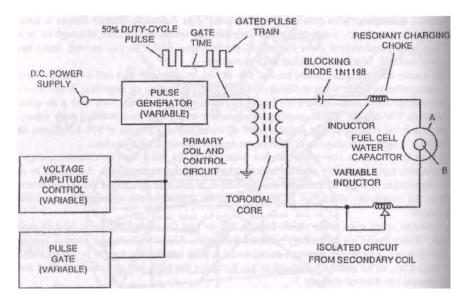
Fig. 17.7:   Wiring diagram for the driving of the water-cell[i]

[i]:   Stanley, A. Meyer: Process and Apparatus for the Production of Fuel Gas and the Enhanced Release of Thermal Energy from such Gas, 15.06.89, US-Pat. 207,730; International Publ. WO 89/12704; Int.Appl. PCT/US89/02622

17.7 Unconventional electrolysis

Numerous of the by Stanley Meyer used construction principles already have been treated, be it the excitation with pulses of electric tension voltage or the spherical structure of the resonant cavity (fig. 17.6). As a spherical capacitor with the positive pole in the centre and the negative pole at the outside edge it corresponds to the model of the electron and fulfils in an almost ideal way the conditions of an unipolar arrangement according to fig. 15.8 B. The use of certain patterns of the pulses and steep flanks of the pulses (large dU/dt) make possible effects of resonance at frequencies starting at ten kilohertz, in which neutrinos participate increasingly. First the series resonant circuit, consisting of the adjustable, external inductance and the spherical capacitor, is stimulated by means of the current rectifying wiring (fig. 17.7). In the case of resonance, which is carried out by comparison of the inductance, the excitation current drops, whereas the tension voltage at the same time teaches values of more than 1000 Volts. If in addition a neutrino resonance occurs, then the known avalanche effect will occur. The equipment then takes up virtually no current.

As a dielectric serves water, with which the container is filled permanently. The dimensions are oriented after the velocity of movement of the water molecules according to details of the inventor. Also the oscillating water molecules should go into resonance. Then they can help to materialize the neutrinos. Their rotational energy partly passes to the water molecules and as soon as the neutrinos have been converted to charge carriers, they will take the water molecule from the oppositely charged side and split it without further ado. The oxygen and hydrogen gases leave the capacitor through fine openings at the upper edge of the spherical chamber, which are so small, that no ignition back can occur, and in the simplest case reach a combustion chamber, where they burn again to water as a high-temperature flame (fig. 17.6).
The gases of course also can be guided into the cylinder of a Otto engine and be ignited there, as in the case of the experimental buggy. In the sectional drawing can be seen a filler by means of which, according to the consumption, water is refilled. The round resonant cavity not necessarily has to be spherical. Stanley Meyer more frequently differs from the ideal form and works with a cylindrical symmetry (fig. 17.8), with which obviously in spite of that the goal can be obtained, if perhaps not quite so good. To this compromise the explanations of fig. 15.8 C apply.
If we, to conclude, cast our eyes over the wiring diagram which Stanley Meyer discloses in his patent specification (fig. 17.7 and 17.8)[1]. In the centre is a transformer, which should produce an if possible high tension voltage. A rectifying diode, which takes care that only positive tension voltage pulses serve the excitation, is switched in series with the reaction capacitor, which is filled with water, a fixed and a variable inductance. In that way the positive pole is always situated in the centre of the reaction chamber. If both connections would be exchanged or the diode be turned over, then the neutrinos presumably would materialize in positrons and not in the wanted electrons. But if one leaves out the diode entirely and one has a tension voltage changing both in positive and in negative direction, then maybe electrons and positrons are equally generated, which annihilate each other under emission of gamma quanta. Doing so no gas is formed, but at most light, as long as the effect of collecting neutrinos isn't lost also. The concept should be worth to be examined more detailed already of pure scientific interest.

A: The high-tension transformer:

B: The driving:
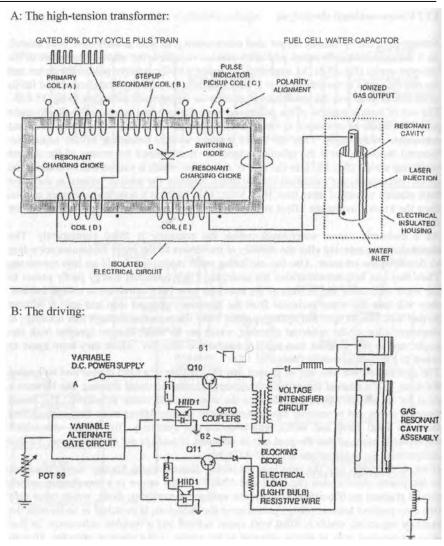
Fig. 17.8:   High-tension transformer and driving of the
cylindrical water-cell<i>

<i>: Stanley A. Meyer: Process and Apparatus for the Production of Fuel Gas and
the Enhanced Release of Thermal Energy from such Gas, 15.06.89, US-Pat.
207,730; International Publ. WO 89/12704; Int.Appl. PCT/US89/02622

17.8 Materialization of neutrinos

In the centre of attention of the water-fuel-cell of Stanley Meyer is on the one hand the unipolar arrangement (according to fig. 15.5 B or C) to collect the neutrinos and on the other hand the water for slowing down and materializing. Over and above that a lot was tinkered and tried, as can be inferred from the patent specifications (fig. 17.8). That starts at the. coiling technique of the transformer and concerns the experiments with laser stimulation as well as the top part, which according to the inventor should extract the electrons (Electron Extractor Grid). The measures may bring an improvement, but are insignificant for our considerations.

At this place it primarily concerns the question of the materialization of neutrinos. But if such a materialization has to be made complete, if water molecules must be splitted, depends on how long the process lasts. If everything goes very fast, then perhaps it is sufficient that a neutrino for a short time is showing as an electron, before it again oscillates back. In this short time the splitting process already could have taken place. The used neutrinos for that had to be very low-frequent and very slow. They after that could again leave the reaction chamber and fly on as neutrino.

Possibly the fishes, which live in stagnant waters or in the deep sea, owe the slow neutrinos the content of oxygen in the water. Because here no bundling up takes place, the splitting of water takes place rather by chance. The volatile hydrogen atoms escape very swiftly, whereas the big oxygen atoms are left behind in the water.

Now we still don't know how charge carriers can be won. At the RQM unit resonant oscillations of size had been measured and that can be judged as an important clue. If namely a space quantum is slowed down then it becomes bigger. The inverse case we already had made us clear: If a particle is correspondingly fast then it is sufficient length contracted to fit through the tunnel (fig. 6.14).

To slow down neutrinos according to that the target area should carry out an oscillation of size with opposite phase. Organic material and biological systems are excellently suited for that. Every contraction of a muscle brings that to mind. Inorganic matter and our technology however normally don't know this phenomenon. Technical energy converters simply are built up fundamentally else than biological muscle machines. In historical sources at certain places is pointed to the fact that priests had experimented with quartzes and miraculous phenomena were observed. Of course the question is asked, if such experiments today still can be reproduced. Because the density of the earth slowly increases due to the growth in volume, also the wavelength of these oscillation quartzes is changed. The same neutrino radiation therefore today can't be active anymore. It thus would be completely inappropriate wanting to reject a historical source only because a described effect today doesn't want to function anymore.

Magnetostrictive or electrostrictive material could be a solution. For instance a piezocrystal, which contracts under the influence of an outside field. As an ultrasound converter an applied alternating voltage leads to the emission of a sound wave. If we reverse the function, then a received longitudinal wave should lead to an electric tension voltage and then at last the materialized charge carriers could be taken off,!
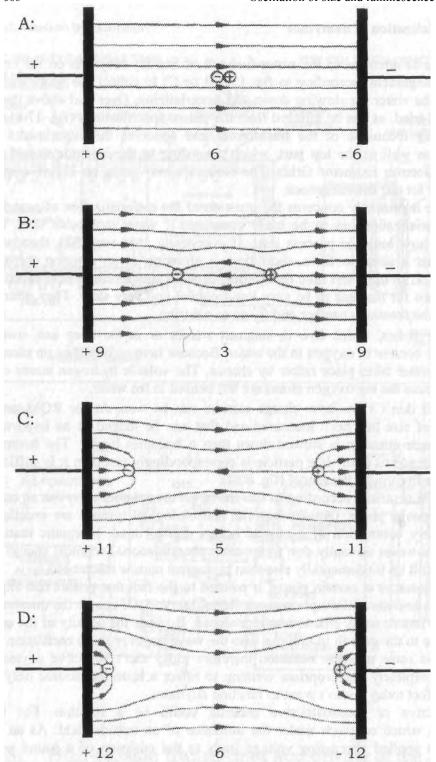
Fig. 17.9: The course of the field in the case of a glow-discharge[i]
(The numeric values indicate the active field lines, as they can be read from the representation).

[i]: K. Kupfmuller: Einfuhrung in die theoretische Elektrotechnik, 12. Aufl. Springer-Verlag (1988), S. 197

17.9 Oscillation of size and luminescence

There exist substances, which at high temperatures start to glow. In the sense of the theory of objectivity presented in the first part of the book in the case of temperature it actually concerns an oscillation of size of the involved elementary particles (fig. 8.3). If this oscillation of size lies in the visible frequency range, then we can directly perceive it and it can be used for instance in a light bulb for the purpose of lighting.
In the case of an arc. fluorescent tubes or glow-discharge lamps light is formed as well even without a thermal effect. These glowing phenomena are called luminescence. They can be caused by chemical processes, by friction, by crystallization or by electric fields. As can be shown speedily, in these cases it also concerns an oscillation of size.

If we for that consider the model on the left (fig. 17.9). Between two electrodes there is a non-conducting gas, e.g. air. If now a tension voltage is applied then, under the influence of the electric field, some gas atoms are splitted into positively charged ions and negative electrons (case A) and pulled apart (case B). This process of enlargement of the glow-discharge fast as lightning comes close to that of the thermal oscillation of size and obviously in the same way is perceived as light.
The ionised gas parts are attracted by the unlike poled electrodes and move towards these (case C, D). Whoever takes the effort to count the number of the field lines, will find out that between both electrodes the electric field drops, whereas it at the same time increases at the electrodes. The first thing causes that the process of ionisation is stabilized by itself and a state of equilibrium will result; the resulting current takes a constant value.
The increase of the tension voltage at the electrodes on their behalf causes that an arc remains standing or the glow-discharge lamp glows on, even if the feeding voltage is reduced. For this reason a fluorescent lamp needs a starter, since the network voltage is too small to start the effect of luminescence.

We indeed know, that the gain of light of a fluorescent lamp is at least three times better than that of a light bulb. As a rule a degree of effectiveness in spite of that can't be given, since it merely concerns a comparison measurement in the case of the measurement of the lighting intensity with a luxmeter. It hence can't be excluded, that we already are dealing with an over-unity effect in individual cases and neutrinos are involved in the effect of glowing.
A necessary oscillation of size would be present, as the perceivable noises of open spark gaps prove. Also in the case of lightning the thunder occurs as a consequence of a longitudinal oscillation of size and at the same time a glowing phenomenon occurs as a consequence of materialized neutrinos (fig. 14.11). It almost is obtruding a scientist that here the same principles are at work.

One however hardly can prove that neutrinos are involved in the luminescence, because the configuration is symmetrical with regard to the resonance of neutrinos and just as much particles materialize as anti-particles, which afterwards again annihilate completely as an impulse of light. They hence can't be measured directly. It gets interesting if an asymmetrical arrangement with unipolar character is chosen.
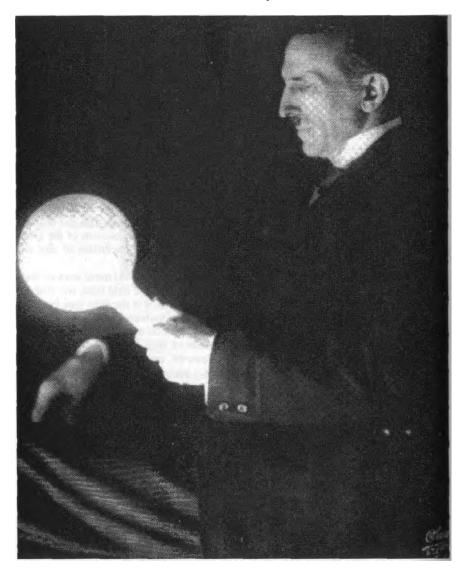
Fig. 17.10:   Tesla with a wireless light bulb[i]

<i>:   A Sarony-Portrait from 1894, Tesla-Museum, Belgrad

<ii>: R. Hiller, K. Weninger, S. J. Puttermann, B. P. Barber: Effect of Noble Gas Doping in Single-Bubble Sonoluminescence, University of California, Los Angeles, USA, Science, Vol. 266, 14.10.1994, P. 248-250

and: D. Lohse: Wenn sich der Schall in Licht verwandelt, Mechanismus liegt noch im dunkeln; (University of Twente, NL) Mitteilungen der DFG 4/98, S. 19-21

17.10 Phosphorescence and sonoluminescence

Let us first look at the observable after-glowing at fluorescent lamps or at a screen, the phosphorescence. It presupposes a storing effect, and that in accordance with prevailing textbook opinion can be traced back to the excited state of some atoms. Doing so electrons in the atomic hull change from one level of resonance, an instable state of energy, to another orbit, which represents the ground state. Doing so the difference in energy is emitted in the form of light. The process obviously not only takes place as luminescence during the switching on of the excitation voltage, but also as phosphorescence after the switchng off.

An enveloping electron now doesn't fly as a tiny planet around the nucleus, but occupies the entire orbit as an inflated spherical vortex (fig. 5.5). Seen from the outside it is a matter vortex. It however sees the enveloping electrons on the further on the outside lying orbit from the inside and there they are showing as anti-matter vortices. As long as the distance of respect is kept, nothing happens. If however an inner spherical vortex presses to the outside or the outside one to the inside, then the incompatibility of the vortices takes effect and both annihilate under emission of a photon. In this respect the explanations of the vortex model are very helpful.

But now, after this flash of light, two electrons are missing in the atomic hull. The positively charged atomic nucleus never would allow this loss. Replacement has to be fetched and that actually only can stem from the neutrino field. Therefore the enveloping electron doesn't change the orbit immediately, but instead has to wait, until a suitable neutrino passes by, with help of which the game of changing places can be executed. This explains the time delay and gives reasons for the observable after-glowing.

The form of the unipolarly charged sphere (according to fig. 15.8 B) forms almost ideal prerequisites for an interaction with neutrinos and the step-like change of size from one orbit to the next ideal prerequisites for their materialization. The longitudinal wave connected with the change of orbit without doubt can be called a high-frequency sound wave. It however can't be detected because of missing gauges for such high frequencies.

But if we take the frequency down into the range of the ultrasound, which can be handled technically, then effects arise which brilliantly prove this interpretation and the participation of neutrinos in the luminescence.

The not understood phenomenon is called sonoluminescence and at present is researched at numerous high schools primarily for academic interest. The structure is conceivably simple. One takes a ball of glass filled with water and positions at the edge one piezocrystal next to another. Then one with the piezo loudspeakers, operated with the same phase, sounds the whole with ultrasound and see there, the water glows mysteriously! The sound waves change the pressure. Inferring from the observations, during the phase of low pressure small bubbles are formed, which at the following rise of pressure collapse and emit a ultrashort flash of light. There thus takes place an oscillation of size, which leads to the luminescence phenomenon!

So far so good; but such a flash of light is much shorter than the collapsing of the gas bubble lasts. With less than 50 picoseconds it is faster than the otherwise usual atomic transitions of electrons. The whole thing obviously has nothing to do with this kind of luminescence. Also the spectrum doesn't fit and finally the over-unity effect lies at one trillion, the light energy thus is 10^{12} times larger than the energy part which is taken up from the sound wave by every atom[ii]!
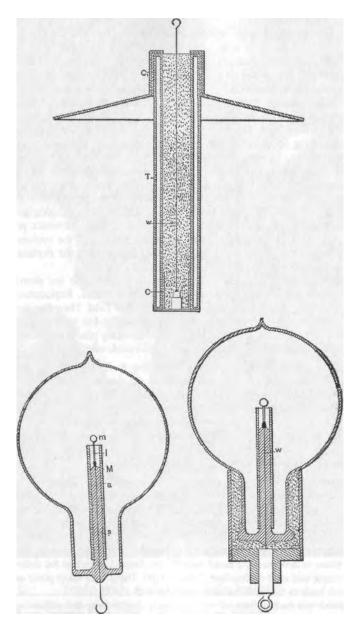
Fig. 17.11:   Light bulbs according to plans of Tesla[i]

[i]:   N. Tesla: Experiments with Alternate Currents of High Potential and High
Frequency, Lindsay Publications Inc, ISBN 0-917914-39-2, Fig 18, P. 70+103

17.11 Discussion concerning the use of the weak interaction

In the case of the luminescence the conditions lie similar like those for lightning. The science of today it is true has some problems of explanation at detail aspects, but again and again manages to protect the ivory tower of physics from collapsing, with supporting auxiliary explanations. But at the latest in the case of an unipolar arrangement, in the case of a ball-lightning or the sonoluminescence, the participation of the neutrinos clearly comes to light, the auxiliary concepts prove to be unusable.

It surely is no accident that the discoverer of the neutrino radiation also was the first, who has experimentally investigated the luminescence. The lamps of Tesla (fig. 17.11) all were without wear and didn't have filaments like those of Edison. They however had to be operated with high tension voltage and relatively high frequency. Both a single-wire and a wireless transmission technique were possible (fig. 9.5 and 9.7). In his laboratory Tesla only needed to hang a fluorescent lamp without any return cable on a wire, then he had light. Famous also are the pictures on which he holds a lamp in his hand, which glows entirely without any connection, but only if he takes it in his hand! (fig. 17.10).

If we again turn through the chapter, then it is remarkable that in most cases, from the transmutation to the luminescence, neutrinos can be used for reason of their resonant interaction which in the proximity can be put equal to the weak interaction. A real materialization however poses an enormous difficulty. If namely the translatoric motion of the space quanta is slowed down, then the risk exists that for balance the rotation increases. But that as well has to be slowed down for a materialization! Only if both processes of slowing down take place, the goal can be reached. In that case the described cooling down effect occurs.

For a measurement technical check it therefore offers to record the slowing down of the translatoric motion and the collecting of the neutrinos by means of the measurement of the radioactive decay of a sample. And to read the materialization as the slowing down of the rotation from a measurement of temperature. In addition are helpful proofs about oscillations of size, glowing phenomena and deviations in the balance sheet of energy. With that it should be able to obtain a system for the exploration of these phenomena with the goal of a practical exploitation of the neutrino radiation for the benefit of humanity.

A:

Floating installation for wood according to Viktor Schauberger[i]

B:

Ancillary part for shower according to graduate engineer Wilhelm Martin.[ii]
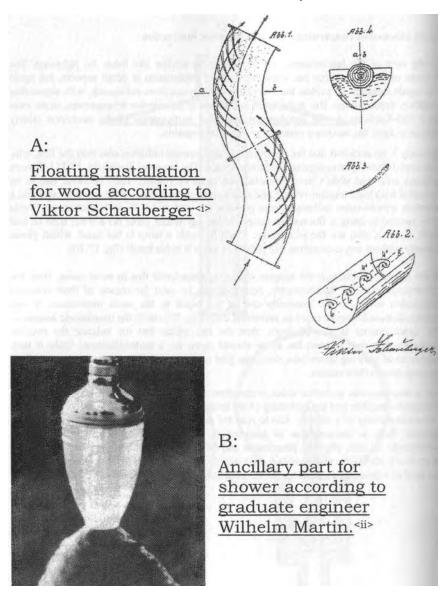
Fig. 18.1: Mechanical whirling of water

[i]:   N. Harthun: Naturgemasse Stromungsfuhrung nach Viktor Schauberger
Analyse einiger seiner Patente und Zitate; MuT Nr. 4, 1980;   s.a. Kap. 9.2
[ii]:   O.Alexandersson: Lebendes Wasser; W.Ennsthaler Verlag Steyr, 1993, S.156
[iii]:   V. Schauberger: Die Entdeckung der Levitationskraft, Implosion 112, S. 39.
[i4]:   Do we owe the taste of bubbling spring water to neutrinos?

18. Physical phenomena

In this chapter it on the one hand concerns indirect effects of the resonant interaction and on the other hand effects of gravitation and levitation.

18.1 Water as a catalytic converter for neutrinos

Already the Austrian forester Viktor Schauberger has pointed to glowing phenomena at whirled water. He first had observed such in nature at torrents and waterfalls in the Alps. Later he was capable, to produce and to demonstrate this effect even artificially[iii]. One could speak of hydroluminescence, where still the question would be left open, how it actually functions.

Already in chapters 4.10 and 4.11 has been talked about the special properties of water. It here at first concerned the property of transport of a vortex, which even is capable to bind particles in the vortex, which are heavier than the whirling medium itself. Schauberger had become famous by letting build floating installations, in which not only tree-trunks, but also gravel could be transported down to the valley, without the sides of the channel actually having been touched by the rubble. This phenomenon has been examined and confirmed on the scientific side [i].

Basing on this principle today different devices for processing water are offered and sold, which bind lime, mineral materials and suspended matter in the vortex and in this way prevent deposits in the pipes. The methods, to whirl the water, are however very different. Some whirl the water mechanical, others magnetically and again others electrically.

Here the dipole nature of the H_2O-molecules has an effect. If I turn a water molecule with its electric charge distribution, then from the moving charge a magnetic field results. If thus in the pipe a hydrodynamic flow vortex is produced, then an electric and a magnetic vortex, the potential vortex and the eddy current, are the result (see fig. 4.2). The wanted flow vortices vice versa also can be obtained, by guiding bubbling whirled water past permanent magnets, or by feeding in alternating magnetic fields with the help of coils, or finally by working with pulsed electric potentials. Each of these systems, operated passively or actively, has its specific advantages and disadvantages (fig. 18.1 B and C).

It can be assumed that with the vortices also the water quality is changed. As a rule the content of colloids increases, due to which the surface tension falls. In the colloids negative ions are bound, for which reason also the electric conductivity decreases. Finally the content of oxygen increases and that actually only can come from an electrolysis. The neutrinos thereby are suspected [i4].

As an extreme dielectric medium water favours the formation of potential vortices, which immediately after their formation contract swiftly. This oscillation of size of the electrically charged potential vortices makes possible actually an interaction with neutrinos, and that on the one hand has as a consequence the water splitting and the increase of the content of oxygen in the water and on the other hand the above depicted, observable glowing phenomenon, the hydroluminescence.
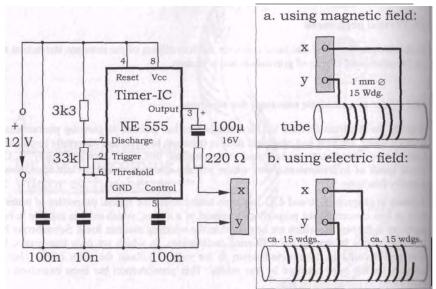
Fig. 18.1 C: Wiring diagram for a simple water
processor
with   pulsed   field   (2   kHz   rectangular   signal)
a: for   magnetic   field   excitation
b: for electric field excitation
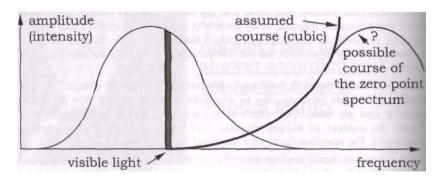
Fig. 18.2: The spectrum of frequencies of light and of the
zero
point radiation. [i]

[i]:   A. Waser: The Puzzling Nature, AWVerlag Luzern 1996, p. 88

To complete in fig. 18.1 C the wiring diagram of a simple water processor is shown, which works with pulsed electric (b) or magnetic (a) fields.

If we temporarily again leave the theme water and take along the notion, that it must be attributed a great importance in connexion with the interaction and the materialization of neutrinos

18.2 Background and zero point radiation

Whathappens really, if cold matter or interstellar gas molecules are hit or touched by the everywhere present neutrinos? Then it can be expected that oscillations are being stimulated and as a result the temperature slightly increases. If we thus at a space flight hold a thermometer out of the shuttle window, then we will measure everywhere such a remaining temperature of a few degrees Kelvin, which is called cosmic background radiation.

By popular scientific small talkers the background radiation is called remnant of a so-called Big Bang. It even is misinterpreted as evidence for the Big Bang. Even if a certain value of entertainment can't be denied, the Big Bang from a physical view until now only has raised questions and contradictions.

If we stay at the fact that oscillating neutrinos depending on their radiation density and velocity of propagation produce a thermal oscillation, which can be detected as a slightly increased lemperature. To measure that we don't need immediately to undertake a space flight. We also can install the thermometer in an artificially produced vacuum. In vacuum physics out of ignorance of the relations the neutrino radiation then is called zero point radiation.
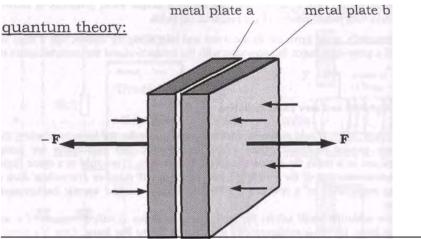
In the case of the neutrinos it of course concerns an oscillation around a mean value, which for a symmetrical form of oscillation has the value zero. The term nevertheless is misleading and chosen very unfortunate. After all we don't speak of zero point current in the case of alternating current!
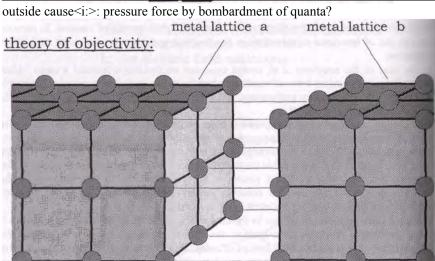
Since every supernova and every black hole emits neutrinos and correspondingly in physical experiments until now no preferred direction could be determined for the zero point radiation, it is taken as homogeneous and isotropic in space. From the Lorenz invariance again is inferred a cubic course of the zero point spectrum, an increase of the radiation intensity with the third power of the frequency. With this assumption the radiation density of the vacuum however strives with increasing frequency towards infinity. Here an error has to be present in the considerations!

I proceed from the assumption that in the case of the spectrum of the neutrino radiation it rather concerns a spectrum of resonance, the maximum value of which lies above the frequency range measurable with devices of today. It of course would be very important to find out, where the radiation maximum lies, but without being able to measure it that lies unfortunately in the range of pure speculations (fig. 18.2).

Half the wave length in any case should be tuned to the length of the antennas of the energy centres of the cells, the mitochondria and the chloroplasts which are capable of photosynthesis. In both cases the head diameter of the ATPhases amounts to approx. 5 nanometer. It would be obvious, if the resonance point would lie here. But it could as well lie at still smaller wave lengths in the domain of molecular dimensions.

metal plate a   metal plate b

quantum theory:

outside cause<i:>: pressure force by bombardment of quanta?

metal lattice a   metal lattice b

theory of objectivity:

inside cause<i>: levitational force by resonance effects?

Fig. 18.3:   The Casimir effect

18.3 The Casimir effect

If this zero point radiation actually would be the cause of the Casimir effect, which is generally assumed today, then neutrinos would have to be involved, if the zero point raditation would be to put equal to the neutrino radiation. The effect even is quoted as evidence, but I have my doubts.

The experiment is relatively simple and functions also in a vacuum. Two absolutely plane and smooth polished metal plates are placed very close to each other. Doing so the distance should only amount to one thousandth till one millionth of a millimetre. If the force, with which both plates are attracting mutually, is measured then it exceeds by far the gravitational force. We are dealing with an unknown force, neither electric nor magnetic.
Because the force of attraction still arises near the absolute zero of temperature, some make the zero point radiation responsible. In our translation that would be tantamount to the neutrinos exerting a pressure from the outside on the metal plates, if need be with their small rest mass, as far as this should not be based on an offset-error of the detecting devices. For that the plates would have to damp the neutrino radiation effectively and by mutual shielding reduce the radiation pressure from the split. The question is asked, if the from the outside hitting bombardment of quanta, as it is called, actually can exert a pressure which would be compatible with the nature of the neutrino radiation.

If we now try an entirely other interpretation, which does without the postulating and designing of new force effects. Now the from the unified theory won interactions according to table 15.1 form the basis. In the Casimir effect, as said, neither magnetic nor electric forces are involved, so that open field lines and the corresponding force effects (1 till 4) are ruled out. It has to be the work of closed field lines and that in the static case we know as gravitation (5). Now the mass of the metal plates is too small, as that an acceptable force of attraction of masses could result.
The measurable force is much larger, even if it according to its nature could be a gravitational force. Here oscillations, as they actually take place in the hull of the metal atoms, seem to play a role. If between the oscillations of the two plates standing opposite occurs resonance, then a levitation is possible (6), which describes an oscillating interaction, produced by closed magnetic field lines[i].
At extremely low-frequency signals this interaction is known as gravitational wave and object extravagant and costly physical experiments.

---

[i]: The question, which interpretation is correct and which one should be rejected, could be verified as follows: at first the force between two plates of a certain metal and afterwards that of another metal has to be measured. If in a third experiment a plate from the first and one from the second experiment are brought together and the force effect goes back measurably, then the quantum physical interpretation would be wrong clearly. With that would have been shown that here resonance effects are used, which presuppose an identical metal lattice structure of both plates.
If the force effect however doesn't go back, then both statements are possible, then one has to think up another experiment.

Fig. 18.4: The flying disc of Searl on a german title page.[i]

[i]:   Special 7, Raum 8s Zeit Dokumentation aus dem EHLERS Verlag

18.4 Effects under high tension

It crackles in the laboratory of high-tension. The air smells electrically charged. Only in a
corner someone sits and waits with much perseverance and patience, until something
happens. Then he lets thunder down lightnings of several millions of Volts on a small
sample. It flashes and crashes and still nothing happens.

No, it doesn't concern Tesla! Tesla has worked purposeful. In addition has Tesla only
called himself inventor. But the man in the corner feels himself a discoverer and as it is
proper for a discoverer, he has immediately named the effect after himself. As a real
American he lets market himself and his discovery by the media and a video tape.

Doing so he obviously doesn't know at all, what he wants to have discovered, of what this
Hutchison effect actually consists. It perhaps is an event of pure chance, for which he
sometimes has to wait hours. If it very suddenly would occur, then it is a real potpourri of
all already discussed effects: metal spoons are bending (fig. 14.13), massif steel rods are
breaking, light effects are being observed (chapter 17.9 PP), water starts to dance and to
cook (chapter 18.1), without getting hot and finally do some samples take off and fly
crosswise through the room. He then speaks of anti-gravitation.

In the video tape can be seen, how he brings about a physical length contraction as a result
of a locally produced field concentration with two as an interferometer configured Tesla
coils. In a bottle for instance the air volume is changed. This confirms the correctness of
the here presented theory of objectivity (chapter 6.6 PP).

In any case no-one is amazed more about the results of chance than John Hutchison
himself. Overwhelmed by the magic, the charm of the effects and the feeling to be able to
move freely outside the trodden out ways of physics, he still sits in his corner with the
video camera and waits, until finally something happens again.

There is worked with tension voltages, which are considerably higher than 511 kV, the
calculated tension voltage of their own of the charge carriers (fig. 7.1). One thus by no
means has to be amazed, if under the influence of several millions of Volt electrons are
taken apart and metallic objects are breaking or bending.

The extreme tension voltage and field change we owe an oscillation of length and of size,
which spontaneously can lead to an interaction with neutrinos. Materialized neutrinos
again are responsible for glowing phenomena and for the electrolysis of water, which
under the impression of the rising gas bubbles seems to dance and to cook. For my readers
and participants of the energy technical seminar therefore models of explanation are
available.

One effect we still haven't discussed and analysed more in detail: the antigravitation resp.
the levitation. As long as no reproducible field conditions are present and the chunks are
accelerated in any arbitrary direction, it will be difficult to understand the physical course
of a levitation.

In chapter 9.3 we already had become acquainted with and discussed a levitation device
with the flying disc of John Searl. for which the field conditions are comprehensible. This
time we should have a somewhat closer look at the flying device (fig. 18.4)[i].

_____

<i>: Some reports can be found in Special 7 ,,Freie Energie", Raum & Zeit Doku-
mentation aus dem EHLERS Verlag, Seite: 141 bis 157 und 174 bis 185

disc rebuild to a power generator
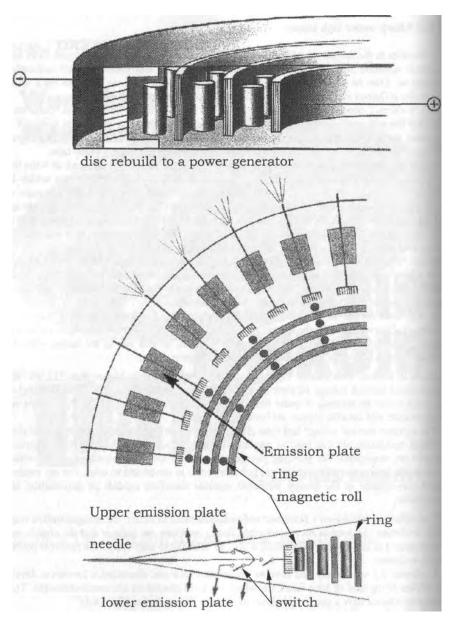
Fig. 18.5:   Concerning the controlling of the flying discs according to Searl.[i]

[i]:   H.Schneider, H.Watt: Dem Searl-Effekt auf der Spur, Special 7, Raum & Zeit Dokumentation aus dem EHLERS Verlag, Sauerlach, 1. Aufl. (1994), S. 183

18.5 Flying discs

The Searl-disc can be calculated relatively good with the Faraday equation concerning unipolar induction. To estimate the order of magnitude, we just suppose the roller magnets produce an induction of one Tesla and the radius is one meter, then between the centre of the flying disc and its edge 511 kV is applied, if the revolutions per minute has reached the value of 80000 revolutions per second. As soon as the revolutions per minute is reached, the neutrino conversion can start.

The at the edge of the disc arising corona, which consists of individual electrostatic discharge flashes, takes care for the necessary dU/dt, by every blow and every spark is drawing the potential for a short time towards ground. The tension voltage jumps in swift order between values of above 511 kV and zero Volt to and fro. In connection with the already discussed unipolar field configuration neutrinos are being collected in this way.

A technological challenge represents the layered construction of the roller magnets and the rings, which have to withstand extreme centrifugal forces (fig. 18.5). Friction however is not a theme, since on the one hand the air inside the disc ionises and a vacuum is formed and on the other hand the air split between rollers and discs increases by the field dependent contraction of the metal parts.

Actually one in this case by no means can speak of antigravitation, because the gravitation isn't really vanishing. The disc even in flight still is heavy tons. Here merely a resonant interaction is built up which is larger than the gravitational pull of the earth. The disc is attracted by the cosmic source of neutrinos, with which it has built up the resonance. Exactly there it will fly!

The by Searl designed controlling[i] in my opinion actually can't have functioned satis-factorily. He uses emission plates, as he calls them, which alternatively are switched on by means of switches and are able to form electrostatic forces with some air charge carriers. In reality the drive probably is comparable to that of a sailing ship, for which the wind always blows from one direction. The ship isn't pushed by the wind, as one erroneously could think, but rather by the under pressure behind the sail pulled forward. Without steering facility the object always is driven in direction of the drain. The sailor would say, the ship without helmsman drifts towards lee.

Searl in this way has lost all flying discs which were started. By using solar neutrinos they presumably have fallen into the sun and burnt. The controlling should function analogous to a sail, then one would stand a chance, by "traversing" against the "wind", to sometime again come back to the starting-point.

_____

[i]: H. Schneider, H. Watt: Dem Searl-Effekt auf der Spur, Special 7, Raum & Zeit Dokumentation aus dem EHLERS Verlag, 1. Aufl., Seite: 183

Start of a
Searl flying
disc

John Searl in his
controlling headquarters
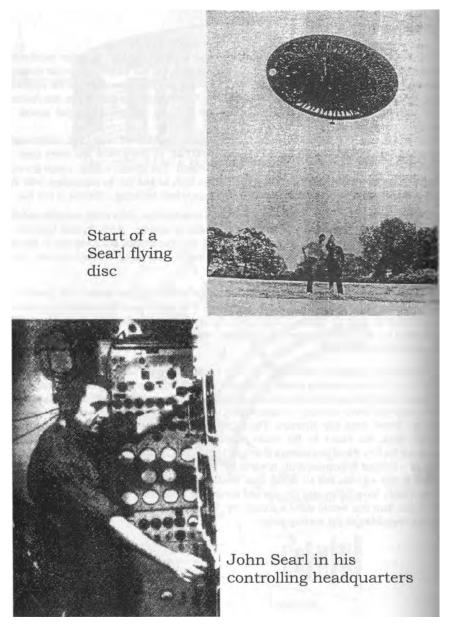
Fig. 18.6: The remote controlled flying discs of John Searl.[i]

<i>:   Special 7, Raum & Zeit Dokumentation aus dem EHLERS Verlag, S. 152

18.6 Propulsion with neutrinos

In search for an ideal propulsion system for spacecrafts the flying discs of John Searl still have demonstrated a further possibility. After the start occasionally were left strange particles on the ground, which hadn't be there before. The flying device obviously had materialized them and dropped them at the start.

With this materialization of neutrinos the chance is showing of a very efficiently working recoil propulsion. If namely the neutrinos are converted into matter then they by that gain back their rest mass. If this takes place in flight then the materialized particles also bring along kinetic energy. It then works as ajet engine for which the direction of the jet can be directed and in that way the vehicle can be controlled comfortable.

In the case of the Searl-disc the materialization of neutrinos rather happens as a not understood side effect. In the case of a systematic use however the principle will show a characteristic property. Instead of a vapour trail a beam of light will shine out of the flying object in the direction of the emitted particles, but it will break off abruptly after a cartain distance.

To blame is the part, which has become anti-matter, which it is true as well contributes to the recoil, but simultaneously annihilates with incompatible particles of matter under emission of particles of light. If in some distance all antiparticles are used up then also the beam of light comes to an end.

It here concerns necessary properties of a corresponding propulsion technology for spacecrafts, which don't have to drag their propelling energy along with them. Our space technicians finally could handle another than the "hammer throwing method", in which case the "hammer" by means of terrible fuel consumption after a phase of acceleration only staggers uncontrollable through space under the influence of its inertia.

With a neutrino propulsion on the other hand one at any time can accelerate or brake. It will strongly influence the field around itself, so that can be reckoned that for every acceleration a field dependent change of size should be perceptible by an outside observer.

If therefore a corresponding flying device is accelerating then it will suddenly become smaller and that then looks so as if it would have moved away with a jump without temporal delay, but that isn't the case at all.

The jerky movements only would be a result of the perception with our eyes by means of the propagation of the light. Since the passengers are exposed to the same field, they change their body size along with that of the vehicle. They actually notice nothing of an apparently infinite acceleration, which only observers on the outside would observe and which indeed no living being could stand.

Nowhere the explanation crisis is larger than in space travel! The theory of objectivity represents a real help, because it perhaps as the only one puts us in a position to conceive and understand not understood observations as necessary technological consequences. Only by uncovering parascientific as purely physical phenomena man of today will be able to free himself from the constraints of magic and his own illusions.

Is the until now discussed cases resonant or other force effects are being used, whereas the gravitation remains unchanged. Closed field lines after all cannot be influenced, normally at least. Perhaps an indirect possibility exists to have an effect on the gravitation?

A. Test facility[i]

6.35 kg weight,
which becomes
almost 2% lighter

Cooled by liquid
nitrogen

ring of superconductive
ceramics (yttrium-barium-
    copper-oxide)
turns per min.:
5000 min-1.

diameter
altogether
ca. 12 cm

excitation coils,
(to magnetize
the ring)

three coils as magnet bearing,
(to carry rotating ring)

B. The measurement
    setup[ii]

to check the shielding
properties of super-
conductive ceramics
$YBa_2Cu_3O_{7-x}$

electronic
balance

sample

superconductive disc

2 rotary field magnets

excitation magnet

liquid nitrogen
resp. liquid helium

Fig. 18.7:   Experiment for the manipulation of the
gravitational
pull of the earth.

[i]: Schneider: Anti-Gravitation im Labor nachgewiesen?, NET-Journal Januar 1997, S. 14,15; s.a. Internet: http://www.keelynet.com/gravity/fingrav.htm

[ii]: E. Podkletnov, R. Nieminen: A possibility of gravitational force shielding by bulk $YBa_2Cu_3O_{7-x}$ Superconductor, Physika C 203 (1992), P. 441-444

[iii]: Force field Implications of Anti-Gravity, The Journal of Ideas, Art.191, 7.9.95

18.7 Antigravitation or levitation

The night already had fallen over Finland, but at the University of Tampere the light still was on. Then a scientist put his beardy head through laboratory door and with a "hello folks" blew the smoke of his pipe over the cryostat for the examination of superconductive materials. The scientists were speechless, because the smoke seemed to hit an invisible wall and was drawn upwards in direction ceiling almost at a right angle.

After having aroused the curiosity, Dr. Eugene Podkletnov also has held other materials above his rotating disc and had to discover that these as well lose weight, and that he actually influences the gravitation with his experiment. Even the air pressure at the corresponding place in a lying above floor was smaller[i].

With a superconductive disc of 30 cm diameter cooled by liquid nitrogen a reduction of gravity for 2% to 4% can be obtained, if the disc rotates with more than 5000 revolutions per minute. With the revolutions per minute also the effect increases, but it is independent from the exciting field[ii]. Finally the fields of the superconductive currents in the ring remain existing unchanged even after switching off the excitation and it only depends on these fields.

The shielding effect of the arrangement on electromagnetic fields already had been known before and should be examined closer in the laboratory. One only was surprised that the gravitation could be shielded as well, that obviously both interactions are related. According to the prediction of the theory of objectivity the closed magnetic field lines gravitate and the field components directed towards the centre of the earth cause the measurable force of weight. By the very strong superconductive fields obviously field overlaps and possibly a local driving out of field occurs, like one has long known for eddy currents (Meissner effect).

With that the earth gravitational field of course is not cancelled, but merely spatially moved, or it partly has changed its direction. If only a small part of field pointers turns out of their orientation towards the centre of the earth, then at that point the force of weight is reduced to a corresponding extent. The theory of objectivity requires that!

By the way reports exist, according to which even without rotation a weight reduction can occur for superconductive rings, and others, where is worked even entirely without super-conduction. As core material for the ring ferrite or a strong permanent magnet is used. In that case depends on the circumstance that the ring-like coil is operated in self-resonance and always in the right moment again is excited anew by induction. The ring core then stores the fields up over time, exactly as the superconductor.

Stricktly speaking it are the atomic nuclei and in the end all elementary particles, which are aligning in the high field. Dr. Ning Li wants to artificially produce gravity, by directly influencing the quanta. With that she comes the phenomenon very close[iii]. The possibilities of this effect nevertheless are very limited, since two percent more or less are not exactly much, and the dream of the complete cancelling of gravity or even inertia possibly stays just a dream. It stricktly speaking just concerns influencing the gravitation and not antigravitation!

cause/ field lines	interaction F	= force effect *mediation:*	see chapter: effect/ *application*
5. closed **H**-field lines	gravitation (static)	F_{MG} = gravity *by particles with mass*	chapter 6.9 + 7 elementary particle mass
6. closed **H**-field lines	levitation (dynamic)	F_{ML} = reduced gravity	chapter 18.3 gravit. waves *Casimir effect*
7. closed **E**-field lines	gravitation (static)	F_{EG} (force hardly detectable)	chapter 18.7 *supercon- ducting ring*
8. closed **E**-field lines	levitation (dynamic)	F_{EL} (no longer detectable)	chap. 18.5 + 18.6 *Keely-/Searl- flying devices*

Table 18.8 A: The interactions of closed field lines.[i]
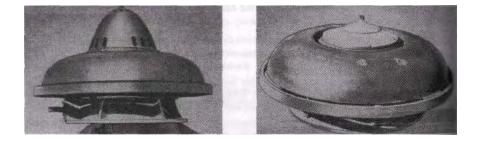
Fig. 18.8 B: Test models of the "flying saucer"
 according to Viktor Schauberger.[ii]

[i]:   according to fig. 15.5, cases 5 to 8
[ii]:   O.Alexandersson: Lebendes Wasser; W.Ennsthaler Verlag Steyr, 1993, S.103

18.8 Discussion concerning the effect of closed field lines

If we now direct our eyes exclusively to the lower half of fig. 15.5, in which the consequences of closed field lines are listed. Without the possibility of a direct focussing like for open field lines, the caused force effects turn out extremely small. With that they are less suitable for an use of free energy. The considerations in that context rather aim at technologies to reduce weight, like they would be worth striving for for flying devices.
If we allege that here in the same way the force effects of magnetic H-fields exceed those of electric E-fields for three to four powers of ten. Then it will hardly play a role for the force of weight of a body with or without additional electric charge, if its E-field lines are closed as well or are open. The increase in weight of an uncharged body only will have an effect in the third till fourth place after the decimal point. Seen so in the case of the gravitation it primarily concerns an effect of the magnetic field, more strictly speaking the effect of closed magnetic field lines (chapter 6.9).
If one succeeds in influencing these magnetic fields for instance by the influence of extremely strong fields of a superconductor, then also the gravitation will change, as has been shown (chapter 18.7). Let's imagine, in the case of a systematic procedure we would succeed in a perfect influencing, for which no component of the H-field lines points into the direction of the centre of the earth anymore, then an uncharged body would only have one tenthousandth of its original weight, whereas a charged body actually would weigh nothing anymore. This state of the weightlessness supposes that all E-field pointers point into the direction of the centre of the earth or diametrically in the opposite direction, since E- and H-field are standing perpendicular to each other. Unfortunately such a field distribution technically hardly can be realized and so the ,,flying carpet" furthermore remains reserved to the fairytales.
An effective reduction of weight of planes and other flying objects however seems by all means feasible, and so slowly the number of research facilities increases, which more or less officialy have a critical look at the cancelling of gravity and the levitation. The theories on which they are basing, however often sound very bizarre and moreover are completely unphysical. Maybe a look at the distribution of field lines, as proposed here, helps to get further.

In the case of the levitation, which occurs strictly speaking only in the case of oscillation for closed field lines, resonance again plays the crucial role for the coming about of the interaction. In connection with neutrinos the resonance can serve less the collecting; we rather need it for the materializing, for the production of mass, charge and energy.
For the artificial production of a levitation either a mechanical oscillation in the atomic or molecular domain is needed, like for instance is produced by a rotating water molecule, or a resonant oscillation of size takes place by use of electrostrictive or magnetostrictive materials, like piezocrystals or oscillating quartzes.
In this context surely is of great importance that also the temperature could be identified as a particle immanent oscillation of size (chapter 8.3). That's why besides a cold materialization or cold fusion also exists, at least theoretically, the possibility of a hot materializatin or hot fusion.
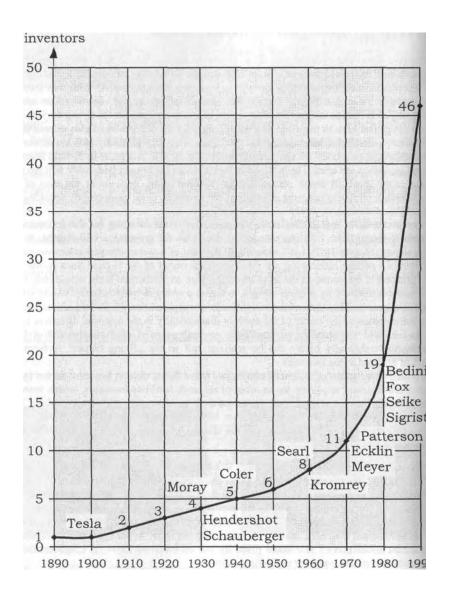
Fig. 18.9: The increasing number of free energy inventors.[i]

[i]:   only the inventors mentioned in the text are entered. Literature for that:
A. Schneider: Energien aus dem Kosmos, Jupiter-Verlag (1994), S. 77

18.9 Concerning the determination of the stand of today's energy technique

An analogy to the production of matter forms the production of light. At high temperatures as is well-known is formed thermal light and at low temperatures cold light, the discussed luminescence. An oscillation of size of the light source in all cases of the formation of light is the cause, be it as an electromagnetic wave or as photon vortex, be it in whirled water or as sonoluminescence. We at last see ourselves put in a position to understand the various light phenomena as something which is related.

The call for new energy carriers and an ecologically compatible energy technology can't be ignored anymore. The number of inventors at present increases fast (fig. 18.9). It is legitimate and worth recommending, to observe for this purpose first of all nature, how it solves its energy problem. Doing so we should realize that in contrast to the technology of today no combustion and no explosion takes place, but rather principles of a cold fusion and of an implosion as a result of contracting potential vortices are being used. Actually nature may point the way out of the energy technical dead end. We only have to accept the offer, be open and show being ready, to invest in the development of methods in accordance with nature.

Directed at the address of the distributors of supporting funds for energy research the claim in plain English reads: to grant no money anymore for ecologically harmful concepts, like nuclear fission or for not understood and not realizable developments like hot fusion. to immediately stop the fruitless works and to provide the money for an ecologically compatible energy research.

Immense saving potentials moreover are found in all domains of physics, where instead of costly experiments just as well the things could be calculated with an usable theory. To check the theory then only few experiments would be necessary. After all all important discoveries have come about in this manner. Nobody should think, he had understood a matter, once he has filled himself up with sufficiently much measurement data.

The root of the evil lies already in the education, where students of physics want to understand everything and therefore are trying hard to grasp with their view and hands for everything. Abstract thinking or mathematical derivations however are too uncomfortable for most; they have the erroneous opinion, understanding (German: begreifen) would have to do more with grasping (German: greifen), and for that the head after all can't be used.

One reason for this development can be seen in the relativistic point of view of Albert Einstein, who proceeds from the assumption of a subjective observability and has raised the relativity between a physical principle and the observation to the basis of physical thinking. The arrogant motto prevails: what I can't observe with my sense organs or register with corresponding gauges also isn't physics, but esoterics or parascience.

But if we want an ecologically compatible technology, then this can't be reached with this point of view. Then we only hinder ourselves with our own arrogance and intolerance. We have to leave the erroneous quantum physical way and again learn to think abstractly by taking up tried and tested principles of classical physics. An objective point of view forces us to register the phenomena, which lie outside the observable range, with mathematical MEANS (see chapter 13). Only if we have learned that, we will understand and realize the true relations in physics!
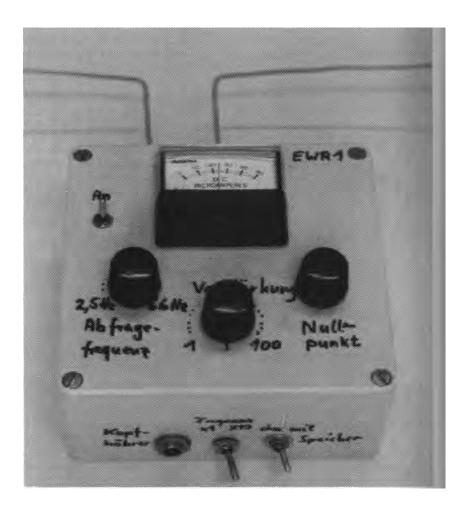
Fig. 19.1: A self-built charge amplifier.

19. Own experiments

The opposite of the theoretical considerations form practical experiments. If we want to register and understand physical and natural scientific phenomena, then we shouldn't entirely forget the aspect of handicraft. Doing so it can't be avoided that it goes on very personally, if about the laboratory work is being reported, not even then, if the experimenter is at pains to exclude every influencing of the carrying out of the experiment and the result. After all does anyone have to execute the experiments himself, since a good sceptic anyhow only believes, what he has observed with his own eyes.

19.1 Concerning the rating of experimental physics

There already have been scientists, who have requested to reject a measuring technical determined result for the case that textbook physics doesn't produce it. This attitude even today still is taken by an uncounted community of believers of science, entirely after the motto: "Nature kindly has to fit in with the dogmas of theoretical physics!"

This wrong thinking is reflected in the scientific journals, which reject to print discussions. Controlled by a tester board, which only has the task to prevent dissenters from the publication of their ideas, they are the sad proof, how widespread this erroneous attitude today is in the university scene.

Actually solely the scientific experiment shows us the physical reality! The theoretical models, like the here presented vortex model merely should help to understand nature and its laws. The representatives of theoretical physics are in the role of a helper and that requires modesty and openness.

For the case that a professor of theoretical physics imposes a pledge of secrecy on an experimenting colleague, if this one wants to report publicly about his amazing tunnelling experiments, then the public nevertheless should have the right to find out, if a tunnelling experiment reveals speeds faster than light, even if it doesn't suit the theorist and he in inappropriate arrogance only should consider the experimental physicist as his assistant.

If universities only are occupied with preservation of property and the industry only with the increase of its productivity, if future research consists of hiding public research funds internally in such a way that nobody realizes the fraud of support and in reality nobody thinks of the future anymore or wants to work for it, then we will be able to observe how discoveries and inventions migrate from the industry and the universities with their controlled central organs and increasingly will take place again in garage, cellar, solitary study room or in privately organized circles.
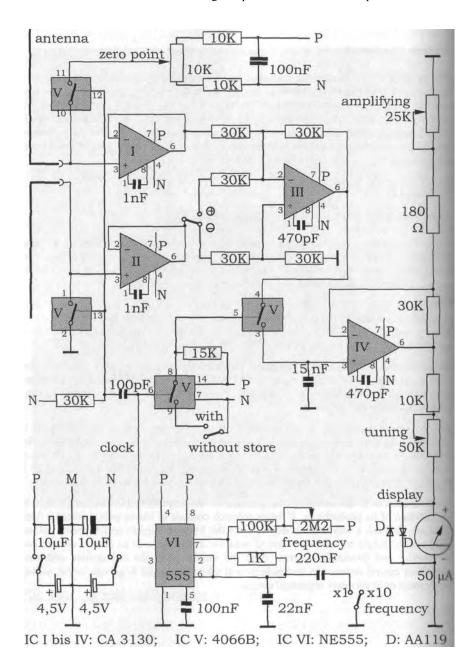
Fig. 19.2:   Wiring diagram of the self-built charge amplifier

19.2 The charge amplifier from the workshop of handicrafts

Is connection with my vortex theory in this book time and again clues to experiments can be found. I am aware of their importance and I always, to verify my theoretical working out, have accompanied it with practical experiments. Doing so not the proof, which can be published and reproduced by anyone at any time, stood in the foreground. With the experiments in my workshop of handicrafts I only wanted to check for myself, if my derivations still can be verified.

Consequently was at first done without a publication in the first and second edition of the second part concerning the "electromagnetic environmental compatibility". For the addition of the here presented chapter about own experiments from the third edition there are several reasons: first; I have been asked for it by several readers, second; from every experiment is coming a piece of physical reality to meet one and third are here latent some useful ideas and approaches which get us somewhere.

Of course can't be read much from a handicrafts self experiment, but perhaps one or another reader, who has better laboratory technical possibilities at his disposal than me, is stimulated to carry out own experiments.

To chase after the potential vortices in the air, I 1989 at first have built together a charge amplifier. I connected differently formed antennas at the particularly high-ohmic difference input. Corresponding the in nature arising static electric field a tension voltage should arise between both antennas, which my gauge should amplify and indicate on a moving-coil instrument.

To be able to register local changes, a measurement cycle is gone through, which periodically is repeated: It starts with the measurement time, during which entirely by itself between both antenna a charge is building up. The value afterwards is stored analogue in a Sample-And-Hold link and displayed by means of a moving-coil instrument. Then the input clamps are short-circuited, the antennas again discharged and the game starts from the beginning.

Measurement time, zero and amplification can be adjusted at the device (fig. 19.1). Whoever has fun to rebuild it, finds the by me realized wiring diagram in fig. 19.2.

It is true I did realize other designs, but technically the here shown design proved to be the most useful solution.
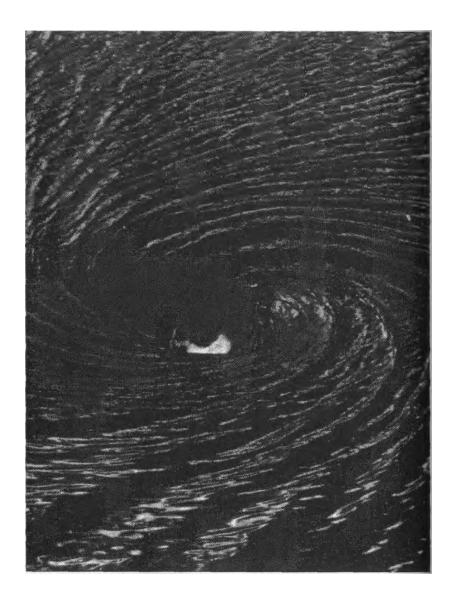
Fig. 19.3: _____The bath tub drain vortex;
               shown is a tidal vortex near St. Malo.[i]

[i]:   Photograph from the magazine „Life" of 4.7.1969, resp. from:
H. J. Lugt: Wirbelstromung in Natur und Technik, Seite 371

19.3 Interpretation of the observations with the charge amplifier

The practical use of the device at first proved to be extremely difficult, because the pointer seemed to perform a wild dance. At a more close look I however could make exactly those observations, which I had sought-for as proof for the existence of potential vortices.

First I did find confirmed the known high field strength. We after all live between the ionosphere and earth's surface right in the middle of the dielectric of a "spherical capacitor". Because the values of the electric field reach very much closer to the maximum value, which is lethal for living beings, than the value of earth's magnetism, I did draw from that the conclusion that biological effects primarily can be expected from the E-field.

If the E-field, as Maxwell's field theory specifies, actually would be irrotational, then we would be dealing with a gradient field. My device would have to display everywhere to a large extent the same value. But that was not the case.

Maybe the building is responsible for the chaotic display and the wild swings of the pointer, so I thought. Doing so I had thought of the auxiliary explanations of the high-frequency engineer about so-called reflections in closed rooms. Therefore I stormed with the gauge, which had gone wild, into the open air and walked different ways, which should have been reflection free, but the picture stayed the same. In any case the E-field is not a gradient field. I had to find out.

Following I could, what required much patience, find certain places, at which for the same movement from the same direction could be seen a reproducibility of the swing of the pointer, it even could be arbitrarily often repeated. 1 marked the point exactly. Then I tried to move the device from another direction towards the marking and had to find out that the point had moved away.

If I sit in the bath tub in the evening and pull the plug, then I each time am enthusiastic about how sensitive the drain vortex reacts, how I can send it from one corner into the other by the snipping of a finger without it falling apart (fig. 19.3). Doing so one easily can imagine with a bit of phantasy how difficult, yes, almost impossible it would be to measuring technically register the vortex for the case that we could not see it. The gauge it is true would display violent wave movements. But a reproducibility we would not be able to obtain, exactly as for my self-built charge amplifier.

Now I knew that the by me at 2.1.1990 at first purely theoretical derived potential vortex actually exists as vortex of the electric field!
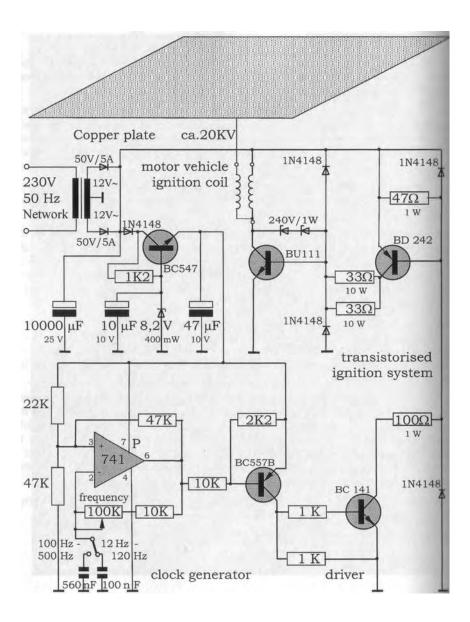
Fig. 19.4: Wiring diagram concerning the Kirlian device.<i>

<i>:   Elektor, Fachzeitschrift fur Elektronik, Mai 1977, S. 22-25: KirlianfotogralV

19.4 High-tension experiments in the laboratory for performance electronics

At first the students of electronics, with which I had to do daily, were infected by my discovery. With true enthusiasm they soldered together one circuit after another. In my laboratory something like a mood of setting out could be felt. One student brought along and old ignition coil of a motor vehicle, then the control circuit for it was built, plexiglas organized, an aluminium plate glued under it and the whole box dragged into the photographical laboratory[i]. Three students made a detour along the outside grounds of the polytechnic and picked the necessary visual aids of trees and bushes.
Following the leafs were laid on photographical paper and by means of the self-built high-tension generator charged to 20000 Volt. Doing so at all edges and particularly at the tips of a leaf corona discharges arise, which expose the photographical paper. We then developed the photographs ourselves and discussed the results[ii].

The indication, for a second photograph the whole leaf would appear even if half the leaf is torn apart after the first experiment and only one half is put on, occupied us in particular. Eventually we didn't put on a leaf at all in the second experiment and found out that nevertheless the leaf put on last became apparent on the photograph. Now only one physical interpretation was possible: The potential vortices of the leaf stimulated by high-tension still were in the plexiglas disc in weakened form! Here they swirl further and under high-tension furthermore produce corona discharge impulses.
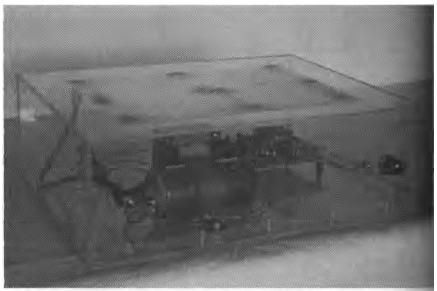
Now also the students were convinced of the existence of the potential vortices.
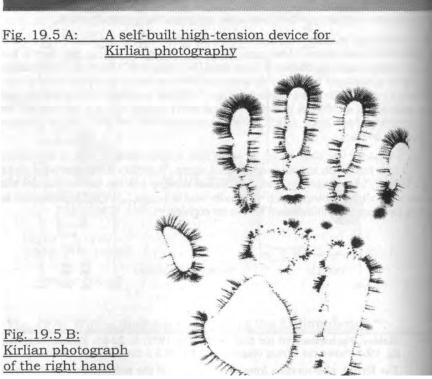
This experiment stimulated the brain cells of the entire team: If potential vortices under high-tension cause electric blows, since the corona discharge is nothing else, then in this way the local vortex distribution in space should be measurable? One student immediately got down to work and build from the horizontal diversion unit of an old television a high-tension generator with an adjustable spark gap. Following he walked with his flashing and crashing device all through my laboratory and others walked with him and dragged the gauges behind them. But to their big disappointment they were not able to see an influence dependent on place.

Then it suddenly was clear for me: It would have done the students well, if they before would have had a bath and observed the drain vortex, "it suffices the famous wing stroke of a butterfly", I explained my team, "and instead come up with this infernal machine and chase away all the vortices, which we actually want to register ". We had to realize that as a rule phase of disillusionment follows the euphoria.

_____

[i]: Klektor, Fachzeitschrift fur Elektronik, Mai 1977, S. 22-25: Kirlianfotografie; fig. 19.4 shows the wiring diagram and fig. 19.5 A the self-built device.

[ii]: The Kirlian photographs from the darkroom of the polytechnic are shown in fig. 3.6.

Fig. 19.5 A: A self-built high-tension device for
                    Kirlian photography

Fig. 19.5 B:
Kirlian photograph
of the right hand

19.5 Measurement of dielectric capacitor losses in the HF laboratory

My convincing work clearly was shaped more complicated with my professor colleagues. Most pretended to understand nothing about it and kept themselves out. But there also are exceptions. ,,something like that has never been there at our polytechnic, that a colleague puts forward an own field theory ",a physicist colleague remarked after my lecture public to the polytechnic[i] at 3.7.1990 and meant, that must be celebrated. He festively let me cast my eyes in his store room, got out a few bottles of wine, which then some of my colleagues of physics emptied with me in their official room. Doing so we small talked about the sense or nonsense to fix on the education of physics to the Coulomb charges.

The head of the high-frequency laboratory showed likewise impressed. At last he now knew, why capacitors at microwave frequencies can become so hot that they solder themselves out of the circuit by themselves and can fall out, why PVC-films can be welded with HF, etc. ,,We have to prove that not the dielectric is to blame, as stands in the textbooks" he came towards me.

At least following my idea potential vortices are the ones, as I expressed myself, which are behaving dual to the eddy currents. It concerns vortex losses, thus a physical phenomenon. Eddy currents now can be damped as is well-known, by for instance sheeting the iron circuit for engines and transformers. The insulation between the sheets prevents the formation of eddy currents in that direction and the degree of effectiveness increases.

"I would suggest", I told my colleagues, ,,to "sheet" a capacitor in a dual manner and to measure the losses". Because eddy current losses increase with the square of the frequancy, we picked microwave frequencies. In the HF-laboratory a card with an L-C resonant circuit was made, we should be able to quite precisely determine the losses by means of its quality. The inductance was formed as a microstrip line and for the capacitor a socket was planned.
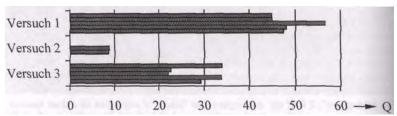
The carrying out of the experiment consisted of using single layered ceramic capacitors, so called trapezium capacitors, with a vapour deposited silver coating on both sides as a package and to measure the quality of the resonant circuit as a measure for the dielectric losses. According to the rules of duality the dielectric (as nonconductor) thus corresponds to the permeable transformer sheet (conductor) and the silver coating (conductor) to the sheet insulation (nonconductor). In a second experiment the silver coating now was removed and the same capacitor material measured at identical conditions this time uncoated. Will the losses increase or isn't changing anything?

Tension and nervousness suddenly could be felt, even among the students, who followed the experiment from the second row. All looks were pointed at the monitor of the network analyser, on which slowly the bell-shaped curve of the measured resonant circuit quality became apparent. The result was surprisingly clear. I first looked at my colleagues and then at the students and had to realize that all eyes were pointed at me. The first measurement was a bull's eye! The vortex losses "uncoated" were considerably larger.

---

[i]: K. Meyl: Die mangelnde Dualitat der Maxwellschen Gleichungen with contributions concerning the theme of magnetic space poles, the mathematical calculation and the technical-physical interpretation of newly discovered potential vortices. Invited by the rector of the FH Furtwangen at 3.7.1990

- experiment 1: quality of resonant circuit with coated capacitors
  from a series of 5 separate experiments averaged: Q = 48

- experiment 2: silver coating removed with diluted nitric acid
  possibly the acid has damaged the dielectric: Q = 9

- experiment 3: silver coating polished off mechanically.
low quality means high dielectric losses! averaged: Q = 28

- resonance sharpness
  (quality number):

$$Q = \frac{f_0}{\Delta f} \quad \text{(Resonance frequency)} \atop \text{(Resonance frequency range)}$$

at a resonance frequency f0 of approx. 400 MHz.

Quality number Q of the L-C resonant circuit
the dual ,,sheeted" capacitor has the lowest losses,
the resonant circuit with that the highest quality (experiment 1).

Fig. 19.6:   Measurement of the dielectric capacitor losses over the quality of a resonant circuit in the HF laboratory at 11.06.1990.
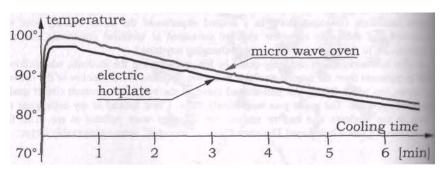
Fig. 19.7: Measurement curve of the water temperature over time
at 22.10.1996 in the electrical engineering training
Observation: for the microwave oven the container despite the "after cooking-effect"
remains colder than in the case of a hotplate. Sensor: PT 100.

19.6 Analysis of the measured capacitor losses

First of all the colleague spontaneously prompted a common publication.

But a certain disillusionment had to await us. For the next measurement hardly a differemce could be detected. We varied the contacting and removed the silver coating. once with hydrochloric acid, once with fine sandpaper. Every measurement we repeated umpteen times and in the end had to draw the conclusion that the results for our somewhat unprecise construction fluctuated extremely.

Averaged over all measurements and methods, indeed a reduction of the dielectric losses for alayered capacitor resulted, but at a critical consideration of the errors the results seemed to "drown" in the mean variation. In the opinion of my colleague the visible trend wasn't sufficient to convince dyed-in-the-wool sceptics, whereupon he withdrew with the indication, I should try at the people of microelectronics, they more likely would be capable to reproducibly gain control of a layered construction.

The experiment at least let a legitimate chance open that the vortices of the electric field actually exist, and in the case of the delectric losses of a capacitor it concerns vortex losses<i>.

19.7 Microwave oven for testing in the laboratory of electrical engineering

"Volunteers first" was said at 22.10.1996 in the electrical engineering practical training and two students got down to work. I had brought along from our kitchen the microwave oven, a portable immersion heater, a kitchen stove plate and different containers. In the laboratory of the polytechnic I in addition had got hold of a Bunsen burner. In the sense of the "Stiftung Warentest" (institution to protect consumers in Germany, note of the translator) it concerned the question for differences in heating water; or following the public discussion, is cooking with gas more healthy than cooking with the microwave oven?

We wanted to know. So we cooked water, filtered by inversion osmosis, once with the gas burner. once with the hotplate and finally with the microwave oven. Switched off always was at the same moment at the same temperature, and the cooling down curve was recorded with an x-t-time recorder (fig. 19.7).
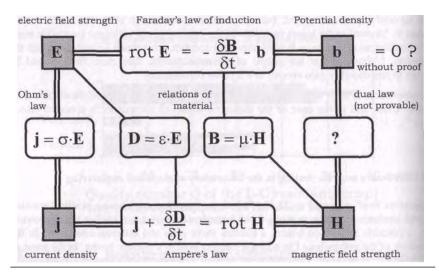
Between gas and electric cooker virtually no difference could be detected, but the microwave oven at switching off still showed an odd temperature increase. I already had remarked this earlier. If one takes a water glass out of the microwave oven, then the water again really bubbled off, although the container itself had remained relatively cold. If one on the other hand takes a water pot off the gas cooker, the water suddenly stops cooking. From where comes this difference, which also the experiment could confirm?

<i>: A result of my dual way of looking at the vortex losses is the representation in fig. 4.7.

A: damped wave equation:

$$\Delta E\ c^2 \quad = \quad \delta^2 E/\delta t^2 \quad + \quad (1/\tau)\cdot\delta\ E/\delta t$$
$$(\text{wave}) \quad + \quad (\text{vortex})$$

B: open chain of reasoning in the physics of electromagnetism:

electric field strength   Faraday's law of induction   Potential density

$$\text{rot }\mathbf{E} \ = \ -\ \frac{\delta\mathbf{B}}{\delta t}\ -\ \mathbf{b}$$

E   b   = 0 ?
                                                                            without proof

Ohm's   relations of   dual law
law   material   (not provable)

$$\mathbf{j} = \sigma\cdot\mathbf{E}$$ $$\mathbf{D} = \varepsilon\cdot\mathbf{E}$$ $$\mathbf{B} = \mu\cdot\mathbf{H}$$?

$$\mathbf{j} + \frac{\delta\mathbf{D}}{\delta t} \ = \ \text{rot }\mathbf{H}$$

j   H

current density   Ampère's law   magnetic field strength

C: for the stationary case $(\delta/\delta t = 0)$ in general representation:

B ←——→ A

open   relation
chain   not provable!

C ←——→ D
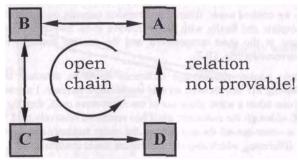
Fig. 19.8: _____ Contribution to the discussion about the impossi-
                bility, to prove, according to scientific methods, in
                a chain of reasoning (A-B-C-D) the last link (D-A),
                which closes the chain.

19.8 Microwave heating by decay of vortices

It has to concern a storing effect. In the case of an normal cooker the heat transfer takes place by convection. In the case of a microwave oven we however are dealing with an electromagnetic wave.

But in the wave equation nothing can be read about heat; here merely vortices can be found as a damping term (fig. 19.8 A)[i]! Therefore as the only possible interpretation is left that the microwaves roll up to vortices to fall apart themselves after a certain time. Only at the vortex decay heat is formed.

The irradiated microwave power according to that is stored over a longer period of time as vortex in the water and the food. The vortex decay takes place according to an e-function with the calculated relaxation time constant tau[ii].

From the circumstance that particularly water is heated up in the microwave oven despite the small electric conductivity but with high dielectricity, I infer that it has to concern mainly potential vortices, from which a biological effectiveness can be expected. The question if this should be valued positively or negatively, I have to leave up to the doctors and therapists. At least physically seen a difference is measurable. Thus a vortex decay will occur for a meal prepared in the microwave oven even if we already have consumed it.

Conclusion: I wish all: your health!

But what do I write about vortex losses, if every sceptic knows half a dozen alternative interpretations. Inevitably I have to bear in mind that also the eddy current heating owes its acknowledgement only the circumstance of the discovery of the corresponding laws. If Othm hadn't discovered his law and formulated it in the known form and instead the dual formulation would have been discovered, then we today would attribute the dielectric losses in a capacitor and in the microwave oven to the potential vortices, in the case of the transformer however the material would be responsible for the heating and not eddy currents, for which there then also wouldn't be a theory (fig. 19.8 B).

It actually is pure coincidence that at first Ohm's law and not the dual formulation had been discovered and acknowledged. But because both are equivalent, we also have to assume the correctness of both, even if the last link of a chain of reasoning A-B-C-D back from D to A in principle can't be proven anymore, since it already is explained by the chain A-B-C-D (fig. 19.8 C).

There I thus had discovered a potential vortex, without a possibility for a direct proof of existence. For that the textbooks are full with auxiliary explanations, with which physics successfully cheats past this important field phenomenon. I was frustrated. There had to be a way to measuring technically register the vortex in some way.

---

[i]: Fundamental field equation 15 in fig. 5.1 or equation 21, fig. 5.3
[ii]: Relaxation time constant: see equation 10 in fig. 5.1 or fig. 8.1
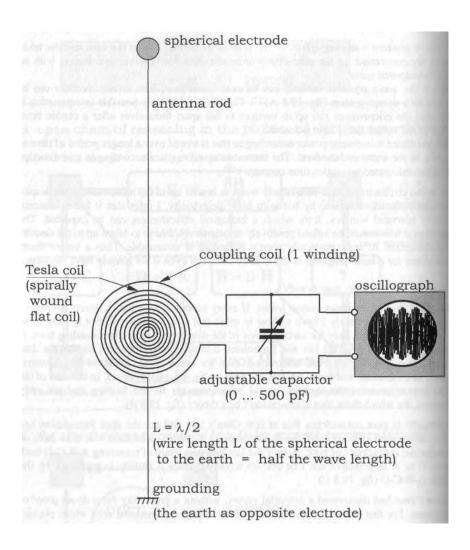
Fig. 19.9:   Proof of scalar waves with the Tesla coil.[i]

<i>:   The inverse use for a high-tension transmitter according to fig. 9.1

19.9 The Tesla coil from the workshop of handicrafts

I again retired in my workshop of handicrafts and wound flat coils or I pondered in my study over Tesla books. 1995 from several sides my attention had been drawn to the circumstance that the inventions of Nikola Tesla can be organized in three categories:

The first third has made him world-famous. It concerns the rotary field theory, the asynchronous engine and the today normally used alternating current technology, which we owe him.

The second third concerns technologies and inventions, which were rediscovered by other people partly only years later or even were only pinched and distributed as novelty under another name. Electron microscope, superconduction, electrolyte capacitor, fluorescent lamp, fuse. coaxial cable and a lot more count among that.

The last third however concerns inventions, which until the day of today still aren't understood and await their scientific explanation and technological use. Tesla himself called these achievements his most important inventions, but still owes us a scientific explanation. The scientific world also hasn't got a theory ready and doesn't know to do anything with it. Public research doesn't take place or is prevented by lobbyists.

What remains, are tinkerers of various educational background and qualification, who are trying hurd to comprehend the buried experiments of Nikola Tesla off their own bat in the garage or in the hobby cellar.

I felt   like one of these, by winding one winding after the next from the inside to the outside. Then I soldered an antenna wire at the inner end of the flat coil, which I in Tesla manner connected electrically with a spherical electrode hung up under the ceiling. The opposite electrode should be connected to the outer end of the winding, it is said, and the distance between both should be as big as possible. If namely an electrode just is collecting, then the opposite electrode is repelling the same space quanta. According to Tesla's recommendation I did use the earth as opposite electrode and for that tapped the central heating or the grounding of the foundations.

To take signals only one to two windings as secondary winding were necessary. I connected them with an adjustable air capacitor from an old steam radio to a frequency determining parallel resonant circuit and looked at the taken tension voltage at the oscillograph (fig. 19.9),

I still had problems with the statement of Tesla, the coupling had to be made loose. Thus the question is asked, how loose? I after that organized two toilet paper rolls of different size, (after the toilet paper had been used, naturally) and pushed them into each other. The smaller toilet paper roll carried on the gable-end the flat coil as primary winding of the air transformer and the bigger one the coupling coil. Now by shifting any wanted degree of coupling could be adjusted to (fig. 19.10).

I was astonished myself. Tesla actually was right with his discovery of the scalar waves. With my arrangement they can be clearly distinguished from the Hertzian waves.

The following procedure is recommended:

Fig. 19.10:   The experimental configuration

First of all I seek a source of interference with the adjustable capacitor and tune to maximum amplitude. Then I change the coupling and further optimise in this way. If now the amplitude again decreases from a certain point while approaching the coupling coil, then it concerns the sought-for longitudinal waves. If namely the coupling is too tight, then the received vortices again are driven away by the effect back on the fiat coil. They make way.

At last I had found a method to catch the vortices in such a way that they not immediately "ran away" from me again. At once I presented them in the technology centre in St. Georgen. In the time following I improved the technology further and further, used bigger toilet paper rolls and eventually even turn up garbage cans, I varied wire length, wire diameter and the sense of winding (fig. 19.10).

I had very different success. Sometimes, if at the same time in my workshop of handicrafts the radio worked, it would look as if the received signal would synchronize with the sound waves. Both are longitudinal waves after all. With transverse waves something like that would be unthinkable.

One moreover could observe, how a resonance builds up: first slowly and then faster and faster, so that I sometimes got terribly afraid. Several times we had to repair our oscillograph, after the protective diode at the input amplifier had blown, and that for signals of 50 to 100 millivolt!

That was entirely impossible. Only individual spikes, which were too fast to be seen at the screen, could be to blame. In the case of distant thunderstorm activity I obtained maximum values of more than half a Volt. After that I undamped the grounding as fast as possible, so that no lightning would be caught, since I didn't have the intention to burn off my workshop.

19.10 Biological effectiveness of the Tesla coil

Also the biogical effectiveness of the Tesla radiation I could impressively prove with this device. 14.06.1997 a woman, who called herself extremely electrosensitive, participated in the weekend seminar about electrobiology, which I took over from Prof. H.K. Konig (TU Munich) after his death. That I wanted to test.

I hung up my device in the lecture auditorium and installed the oscillograph in such a way that all could see it. The voluntary test subject however could see neither the public nor the screen. One person every 5 seconds said "now" and the female candidate should say, if I had clamped or undamped the grounding, if therefore scalar waves were received or not. After a training round her proportion of hits was lying at 100 percent!

According to her statement she could feel it. A further test subject achieved even at the back of the room with a pendulum the correct answer. I myself was surprised by this and I already have repeated this experiment several times with different success. It without doubt depends on the sensitiveness of the test subjects. Every person after all reacts to other signals.

What however has astonished all participants and can't be emphasized enough at all, is the circumstance that it in this case concerns a receiver and not a transmitter!

20-Dec-99
16:52:07

2
50 ns
4.00 V

3
50 ns
50 mA

A:3+2======
50 ns
200 mW

pkpk(A)   0.49 W
mean(A)   233 mW
sdev(A)   169 mW
rms(A)   287 mW
50 ns
ampl(A)   ⅀   0.49 W
1 10 mV   DC
2 .2 V   DC ℥
3 50 mV   DC
4 2   V   DC ℅
20-Dec-99
16:53:47

┌─ 2 DC 5.12 V

2
50 ns
4.00 V

3
50 ns
50 mA

A:3+2======
50 ns
200 mW

pkpk(A)   0.46 W
mean(A)   223 mW
sdev(A)   148 mW
rms(A)   267 mW
50 ns
ampl(A)   ⅀   0.46 W
1 10 mV   DC
2 .2 V   DC ℥
3 50 mV   DC
4 2   V   DC ℅
20-Dec-99
16:47:08

┌─ 2 DC 5.12 V

2
50 ns
2.00 V

3
50 ns
20.0 mA

A:3+2======
50 ns
50 mW

pkpk(A)   104 mW
mean(A)   49.1 mW
sdev(A)   36.1 mW
rms(A)   60.7 mW
50 ns
ampl(A)   ⅀   104 mW
1 10 mV   DC
2 .1 V   DC ℥
3 20 mV   DC
4 2   V   DC ℅

┌─ 2 DC 2.56 V

Measurement record

System resonance:
 f = 6,7 MHz, Sinus.

distance transmitter-
receiver: approx. 2 m

transmitter coil with
 HF-braid identical
 to receiver coil:
 38 Windings wound
 spirally and
 33 Windings wound
 cylindrically.

Load for receiver:
 metal layer resistor
 (100 Ohm)

Gauge: Quad 200
MHz Oscilloscope:
LeCroy 9304C

Current sample:
 LeCroy AP015
 (DC-50MHz)

Differential sample:
 LeCroy AP032
 (Attenuation
 Rate: 1/20)

_____

Top: transmitter
power consumption
with receiver turned
on (at 100 Ω-load):
          233 mW

Middle: transmitter
idle power: (without
receiver) 223 mW

Bottom: receiver
power output:
          49,1 mW

Fig. 19.11 A: Measurement record for scalar wave transmission line

19.11 Wrestling for measuring technical insight in the Transfer centre

In the central question who should be believed more, the famous experimental physicist Nikola Tesla or his critics, my experiments with the Tesla coil were the visible proof that we have to take Tesla's statements seriously. Now not only at myself, but also at the students of the polytechnic and the colleagues of my Transfer centre a true Tesla euphoria broke out.

In every free minute the patents and original writings were studied, which I had myself send from the Tesla Society in Colorado Springs in the USA. In particular my trainees and diplomands developed a incredible ambition in making a historical Tesla concept work. They built a whole series of various high-tension generators. In the laboratory one could hear crashing and there was a smell of ozone.

22.1.1998 at a presentation of the works for a degree the candidate looked after by me very proudly held a fluorescent lamp in his hand, which in the field of his self-built high-tension generator glowed even without any wire connected, entirely according to the great mode (fig. 17.10). At all efforts we however laboratory technical weren't able to reach tension voltages of above 511 000 Volt. But at this tension voltage the actual Tesla effects actually start!

Perhaps it was tough luck, but possibly also a chance that we in the laboratories, which I had at my disposal, were forced to work with lower tension voltages and that meant that we gradually had to beak away from the Tesla designs.

Moreover we hadn't at our disposal the precisely controllable spark gaps, which Tesla had developed and used. If one wants to obtain an if possible high tension voltage change (du/dt) for an interaction with neutrinos, then according to today's technology considerably more favourable concepts are offered, for instance with hard switching Power-MOS-Transistors. 50 Kilovolt per microsecond were to meet.

Therefore we changed the technology and worked from now on with fast semiconductor switches. From the laboratory radio now only a hissing and crashing came out of the loudspeaker, if our experiments were running.

At 12.10.1999 we for the first time succeeded to build up a transmission line for Tesla radiation. Doing so the transmitter and receiver were situated in different rooms of my transfer centre. The transmitter coil was operated in self-resonance and fed only from a small function generator with 10 Volt. But if the diplomand held a fluorescent lamp near the spherical electrode, then it started to glow!

Following I observed at the oscillograph the signal of the receiver coil, which as well was operated in resonance. If the diplomand switched off the transmitter, also no receiver singnal was present anymore. But if it concerned radio waves according to Hertz or Tesla radiation, with that still wasn't answered.

Therefore I prompted still another experiment. This time the colleagues observed at the transmitter the signal at the function generator, while I undamped and again clamped the receiver. The shouting with joy from the adjoining room indicated that it had been observed, how the receiver reacted upon the transmitter and both are in resonance with each other. Such an effect characteristic for scalar waves, is a radio technical impossibility! In the case of radio with Hertzian waves an effect back from the receiver on the transmitter is unthinkable by principle.
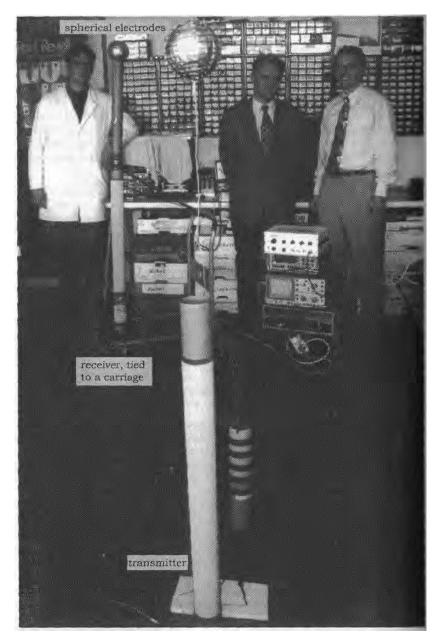
Fig. 19.11 B: Scalar wave transmission line according to Tesla
f.l.tr.: M.Andresen (diplomand), author (TZ-head), Dipl.Ing.M.Rehm (project leader)

In the next step we let glow the famous little lamp on the side of the receiver. As a consumer served a small light-emitting diode, of which the light intensity remained unchanged in the case of resonance. To prove this, we placed the receiver on a carriage and rolled the corridor in the TZ up and down with it. If the receiver was only slightly out of tune, then from the then arising fluctuation the standing wave nature could be observed perfectly.

With the setup it can be demonstrated well, how the law of the square of the distance, of the decrease of the field strength with the square of the distance, known from radio technology hasn't got validity anymore for scalar waves. Very clear also was the energy transmission of scalar waves out of a closed Faraday cage.

In the end we have determined the degree of effectiveness of the scalar wave transmission line. An output power of 49 mW resulted from the measurements of the current and tension voltage for a loading of the receiver with a 100 Ohm resistance. Simultaneously the power taken up by the transmitter amounted to 233 mW. If we however subtract the idle power consumed by the transmitter from this, and that was determined to be 223 mW for switched off receiver, then actually only 10 mW are available for the wireless energy transmission. The degree of effectiveness according to that would be 490%!

If we here really have obtained an over-unity of 4.9 then the receiver must have collected along free space energy, or did some parts evade our power measurement? The sceptics I recommend an own rebuild, since alone the proof of the scalar wave properties inevitably has to lead to every Maxwell burdened HF technician breaking with the old belief.

19.12 Neutrinolysis, the alternative splitting of water

Free after the plans of Stan Meyer we filled diverse containers with water and let it "crash". If then bubbles raised and it got exciting, we changed the frequency and exactly paid attention to the effect remaining the same or if it increased as well with increasing frequency, thus if we only watched a classical electrolysis, or already the wanted "neutrinolyse", as we were accustomed to term the splitting of water in its parts under the influence of neutrinos in the laboratory. Typical for that is a bubbling and "cooking" of the actually cold water produced by the rising gas bubbles (fig. 19.12).

We also have reversed the principle. Doing so we have switched the container as neutrino receiver and measured the forming charge carriers. The passive system proved to be really moody. On the one hand tension voltages of several hundred millivolts at a load resistance of 10 megaohm can be realized, on the other hand the charged gas particles and the as secondary reaction in the water set free ions continually change the electric conductivity, so that the cause to be measured, the neutrino radiation, hardly can be reproduced on the displayed result. The water hence has to be changed more often and also the developers found themselves between jubilation and disillusionment subject to continually changing feelings.

<i>: A. und I. Schneider: Neutrino-Power - Energie aus dem Kosmos, Bericht zu Vortrag und Demonstration des Autors am 25.11.99 in Villingen, NET-Journal 12/99, S. 4-6; Interview mit Prof. Dr.-Ing. Konstantin Meyl: Durch-bruch in der Freien-Energie-Forschung, NET-Journal 12/99, S. 7-9

Fig. 19.12:
   Experimental
   constructions for
   the „neutrinolyse".
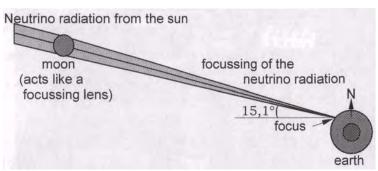
Fig. 20.1: Course of the neutrino radiation focussed by the moon
on the occasion of the eclipse of the sun
at the 11th August 1999.[i]

concerning the calculation of the position of the sun at 11.8.99:

at 21.6. after 0 days is	$23.4° \cdot \cos 0° = 23.4°$	northern latitude
at 21.9. after 92 days is	$23.4° \cdot \cos 90° = 0°$	= equator
at 11.8. after 51 days is	$23.4° \cdot \cos \dfrac{51 \text{ days}}{92 \text{ days}} 90°$	$= 23.4° \cdot 0.644$ $= 15.1°$ n. lat.

[i]:   Konstantin Meyl: Zur Brennglaswirkung des   Mondes bei
einer   Sonnen-

20. Cosmic experiments

As long as no usable technical gauges are available, we should observe and study nature
and all celestial phenomena. Here the scalar waves with all their properties are presented
to us. That is valid in particular for the case that the cosmos makes an experiment with us
and with the entire earth. Such a situation offered the eclipse of the sun of August 11 1999
as an unique "bulk experiment" to which travelled millions of spectators, to participate in
the cosmic experiment as voluntary test subjects.

My warning for possible influences proved to be absolutely justified afterwards, even if
only comparatively few took note[i]. In view of strong changes in the EEG of individual
test subjects and a proven temporary acceleration of the rotation of the earth science once
more stands before insoluble problems.

To answer the open questions I want to start with my indications, which 1 have published
in anticipation of the cosmic event of August 11[i]. Afterwards a revision and the attempt
of an interpretation from the scalar wave view follows. Perhaps this way leads to a reliable
prediction of of earthquakes and other cosmic events. After that we perhaps know more
about origin, availability and further important parameters of the sought-for space energy.

20.1 Millions of voluntary test subjects at 11 August 1999

Astronomically seen, it concerns a harmless natural spectacle as it already was observed
more often, if the moon glides between sun and earth and its shadow in broad daylight
immerses parts of the earth in a dark night. The special thing about the eclipse of the sun
of August 11 1999 however was, that the sun activity just strived for its maximum value in
its eleven year cycle, and the orbital distance to the moon simultaneously reached a
minimum value. In addition we must pay attention to the special situation of the angles
(fig. 20.1). Due to the extremely rare constellation the area of complete shadow at first
was larger and darker than normal. On August 11 it had a width of 110 kilometres.

The sun besides the light also sends us solar neutrinos and for those the moon is
transparent. It with regard to them acts like a glass ball, which lets the light it is true pass
through, but in doing so refracts it. The glass ball acts like a convex focussing lens, which
focuses the arriving rays behind the ball in a focus.

To slow down and collect neutrinos the moon it is true is too small, but it will be able to
influence the flying direction. Very fast neutrinos, which run through the moon, hardly
will be diverted. The slow and biologically active ones however will be bent stronger.

At this point it would be of utmost importance to know, in which distance from the moon
the rays run together and combine into a focus.

---

[i]: Konstantin Meyl: Zur Brennglaswirkung des Mondes bei einer Sonnen-
finsternis, NET-Journal, Jg. 4, Heft Juli/August 1999, Seite 13-17
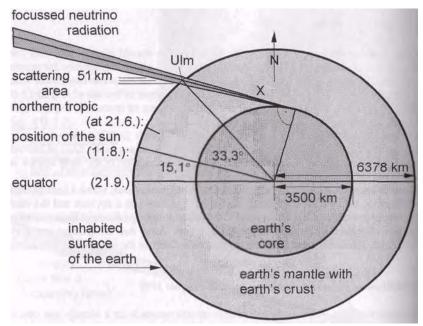
Fig. 20.2:   The course of the focussed neutrino radiation at 11.08.1999   for   48.4°   northern   latitude. (this corresponds to the line Ulm-Augsburg-Freising)

calculation of the critical latitude:

$$\sin \alpha = \frac{3500 \text{ km}}{6378 \text{ km}} \approx 0.5488 \quad \text{resulting in the angle } \alpha = 33.3°$$

$$\frac{+\ 15.1°}{}$$

The neutrino rays touch the earth's core at: 48.4° n.lat

     minimum distance to the moon: $r_m* = 358000$ km
     radius of the moon: $R_m = 1738$ km
     radius of the earth: $R = 6378$ km   (at the equator)
     length of the Tangente: $X = 3500$ km/tan 33° = 5332 km

scattering radius: $r_x = X \cdot \dfrac{R_m}{r_m*+X}$ = 25.5 km around the centre line

Focussing without scattering on earth's surface increase to
     R_m / r_x = 68 times ,   resp. with scattering to
68 * 0.5* 0.8 = 27 times   the natural neutrino radiation!

For that we again bear in mind that neutrinos as particle radiation propagate in space in the sense of a plasma wave. Since the oscillation of such a longitudinal wave takes place in the direction of propagation, it neither knows a distinct velocity of propagation nor an upper limit.

The sea of neutrinos in which we swim, is a combination of differently fast particles. The slow ones are bent stronger by the moon, with the property of a convex focussing lens, so that the focus should be looked for near the moon, whereas the fast ones hardly are diverted. Their focus lies further distant from the moon than the earth, up to the extremely fast cosmic neutrinos, which experience almost no diversion, because they, as a result of the Lorentz contraktion, are small enough to tunnel through any kind of matter.

If neutrinos, depending on their velocity of propagation, have their focus partly before and partly behind the earth at an eclipse of the sun, then it comes up to a conclusive logic that there actually exist such, of which the focus lies exactly in the centre of the complete shadow on earth's surface. But thereby the question is asked, which biological effectiveness these neutrinos have or which damage they bring about.

20.2 Model of calculation for the cosmic experiment

More than a year ago the results of an international neutrino experiment have been made public. Thereby for the first time the order of magnitude of the natural radiation density was recorded. after the detector before having been calibrated at an artificial source of neutrinos. As the perhaps most important result at night only half as much solar neutrinos could be detected as during the day with the immense Super-Kamiokande detector in a Japanese mine. With that the here taken interpretation, that earth's core collects neutrinos, meanwhile even is proven experimentally! For that it has to interact with the particles and that means, it has to exert a force of attraction on them. Thus the earth's core during an eclipse of the sun will further amplify the effect of focussing if the konzentrierte neutrino ray is directed on earth's core. This critical point we have to calculate (fig. 20.2).

The proportion of the radii of earth's core (3500 km) and the entire earth (6378 km) results in the sine of the sought-for angle and that amounts to 33.3 degrees northern latitude. At August 11 moreover is added that at noon the sun with regard to the equator is standing at 15.1 degrees. so that a first extreme focussing should be expected, if the centre of the complete shadow intersects latitude 48.4. This would be the case for the latitude of Ulm in direction Augsburg and Freising.

Now we would like to know more about the amplitude of the focussed radiation, about the spatial extension and the period of time. Without concrete data material we have to proceed from several simplifying assumptions. If we therefore assume, 50% of the at earth arriving and biologically relevant neutrino radiation stems from the sun, which in the case of an eclipse of the sun is focussed to 80% and scattered to 20% by the moon. If we further assume the focus just touches earth's core, then between Ulm and Augsburg a sphere of action of 50 km can be expected, within which the neutrino radiation on the average reaches 28 times the value of the natural radiation. The intense irradiation under these assumptions will last one minute.
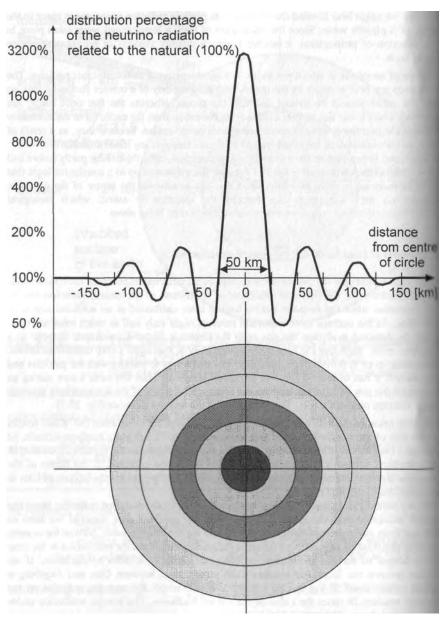
Fig. 20.3: _____ The spatial distribution in the case of focussing of the neutrino radiation by means of the burning glass effect of the moon on earth's surface.

Of course the calculated values only are valid to the extent, as also the assumed boundary values apply. After August 11 we know more about this cosmic experiment, about the spatial distribution and indirectly about the interaction with earth's core, about the physical properties and the biological effectiveness of the at present available neutrino radiation.

20.3   Physical   technical   consequences

The neutrino radiation is a scalar wave radiation which, as mentioned, can be perceived by sensitive people even without aids. Who hasn't at his disposal this sensitiveness, is recommended   a   simple   setup.
For that one hangs up a fluorescent lamp, connects the one end with a piece of wire, as it were as antenna, and the other end is grounded. For a scalar wave radiation which increases fast, the lamp should start to glow by itself. Under big transmitting installations this method already has been successfully applied by many allotment gardeners thousandfold. I hence recommend all research scientists of eclipses to test themselves the possible field fluctuations in this simple way.

From a technical viewpoint first of all the atomic reactors and their nuclearly contaminated waste will be concerned by a fluctuation of the neutrino radiation. In view of present eclipses of the sun an accident can be expected less, since the neutrino radiation it is true for a short time reaches an extreme maximum, which averaged temporally and spatially over the whole event again is relativized somewhat. The relations shall be clarified with an example (fig. 20.3).
Whoever places himself in the centre line of the complete shadow on August 11, at first will detect a decrease of the neutrino radiation to 50 to 60 percent, then a steep increase to 2800 percent and from the summit again the whole backwards, while standing on the earth he turns by under the moving moon shadow. The ring with half the radiation, which reaches us first, doesn't pose a problem since, as said, we only have half the radiation in every night. Some animals and plants as aresult erroneously will set out for sleep.

The wave distribution one can imagine like that in the case of a pool, in which was thrown a stone. But we still don't know the resonance frequency, for which reason the length of the cycle depicted in fig. 20.3 is chosen arbitrary. The actual deviation from the distribution given by nature is the peak in the focussed ray centre. Living nature must stand large fluctuations of the solar radiation, since every supernova sends us a relatively short batch of fresh neutrinos. Where we have difficulties is the question, how much fluctuation still can be tolerated by mankind.
The question for possible biological consequences is due to be dealt with in view of the announcement of a complete shadow tourism causing concern, as it is awaited for August 11. At the incomplete state of knowledge about the properties of neutrinos, every trip to the complete shadow remains a journey into the unknown.
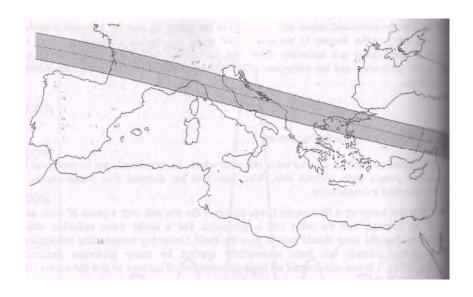
Fig. 20.4 A: The course of the complete shadow for the ancient
eclipse of the sun at 28.5.585 B.C.
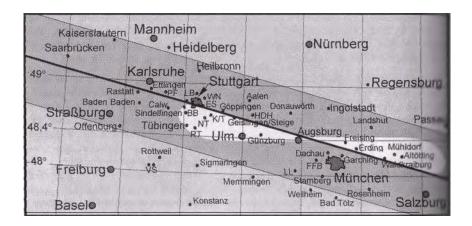
Fig. 20.4 B: The course of the complete shadow over south
Germany at August 11 1999 (grey) and the possible
course of the focussed neutrino radiation (white).

20.4 Biological consequences

In the case of an eclipse of the sun effects on the biology, like problems with the heart
among affected, at least can't be excluded. If the scalar wave density increases above the
density which is normal, then this has a positive effect on the economy of energy, as long
as the body is capable to regulate the amount taken up. If the regulatory process however
should fail. then the risk of a self-inflammation exists. Also straw bales and other organic
and inflammable materials could thus go up in flames.

But before that happens, first the information technical influence of the scalar waves will
show. Here we have to expect a psychotronic influencing, which is showing in a limited
ability of perception. History teaches us as an example[i] that a by Thales of Milet
predicted total eclipse of the sun at 28.5.585 B.C. compulsorily has ended a battle in Asia
Minor between the Medes and the Lydians, because the soldiers apparently most literally
had gone out of their mind (fig. 20.4 A).

Actually all in connexion with the free energy addressed phenomena are conceivable.
from the "neutrinolyse" up to the acceleration of the radioactive decay. It would be
understandable, if in a water glass bubbles should rise, even if no carbonic acid is
contained in the water at all. After man not having at his disposal a sense organ for his
own energy source, the brave in the complete shadow of an eclipse of the sun are
recommended smaller technical experiments and observations. The cautious however will
avoid the area from the start.

As counter movement to the complete shadow tourists there will also be refugees, who
believe in the predictions of Nostradamus, who in his quatrains has predicted a messenger
of fright over Europe for 11.8.1999. He mentions Lyon, Ulm and Moskau, which actually
lie on one line[ii].
The line of the complete shadow however will run under another angle from Plymouth in
South England over Ulm to Bukarest and further into Turkey. Maybe Nostradamus wasn't
a clairvoyant at all, but merely a good calculator, or he knew someone who could calculate
excellently, after all he has indicated the time and even Ulm as the centre correctly. Apart
from the small angle error, in addition the direction is correct (fig. 20.4 B).

Worth paying attention to also is, that he contrary to his habit here gives a concrete date
which astronomically can be calculated unambiguously, that he simply skips the numerous
eclipses of the sun of the past and only points to the one of 11.8.1999, which runs
crossways through South Germany. Extremely sinister are his forecasts, which mustn't
commented on further, since he speaks of "Mort et Tombe", of death and grave[ii].

---

[i]: Merodot: Historien, Kroners Taschenausgabe 224, S. 33 (cf. page 586 and the
modern misinterpretation note 9 on page 754); further sources: dtv-Atlas zur
Weltgeschichte S. 45; resp. Propylaen-Weltgeschichte I, S. 168.

[ii]: Michel de Notredame (1503 bis 1566), Mathematiker, Astrologe, Leibarzt von
Konig Karl IX: Centuries (1558) X, Vers 72.

Eclipse of the
sun

Eclipse of the
sun of
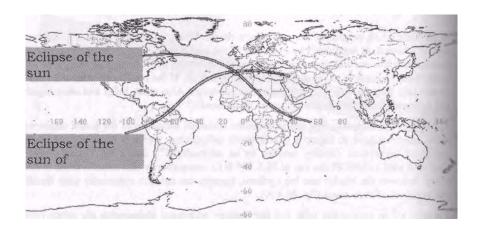
Fig. 20.5 A: The total eclipses of the sun of 18.4.1539 and
21.8.1560
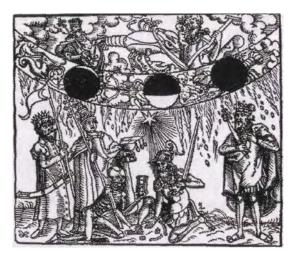
Fig. 20.5 B: Under the impression of the last two eclipses of the
sun over Europe death and war play dice about the
fate of mankind during the eclipse of the sun of
1562.<i>

<i>:   Werner Raffetseder: Sonnenfinsternis, Hugendubel Verlag, Munchen 1999,
ISBN 3-89631-302-9, Seite 156.

20.5 Epilogue to August 11th 1999

My indications have been published two weeks before the cosmic event in the NET-Journal[i]. The public interest was immense. Now, after the spectacle is over, it is time for an analysis[ll].

Besides numerous very subjective descriptions of eyewitnesses, which scientifically hardly can be analysed, at numerous polytechnics over the world has been observed, how Foucault pendulums suddenly and completely unexpected have deviated from their normal swinging direction. With this device 150 years ago the rotation of the earth had been detected in Paris.

Since according to prevailing textbook opinion an eclipse of the sun is a purely optical phenomenon, the scientists world-wide are having a big problem. Which force here has teared at our earth and caused relative accelerations of the kind that the pendulums could turn out of their usual plane and changed into an elliptic orbit, while the shadow of the moon ran over us? The gravitational force isn't even roughly capable to that. That merely has brought a 50 cm higher flood. The enormous force effect, which even puts the gravitation in the shade, actually only can come from the interaction of the neutrinos.

Different reports are present concerning the influencing of the radioactivity. In the cases, in which measurement samples have been used, almost no change could be observed. This is confirmed by a video tape, which northeast of Munich directly in the centre of the complete shadow documents an experiment, in which during the whole time the radioactivity of 1 kg crude granite is monitored with a professional dosimeter. The background might be that calibrating samples are chosen in principle under the aspect of being influenced the least by outside interference sources. It therefore would have been better, if we instead had put a lettuce as a biological and broadband sample in front of the device. Because there, where one anyway hadn't expected deviations and thus neither were measured calibrating samples nor unfortunately were made recordings, is said to temporarily have occurred a visible increase.
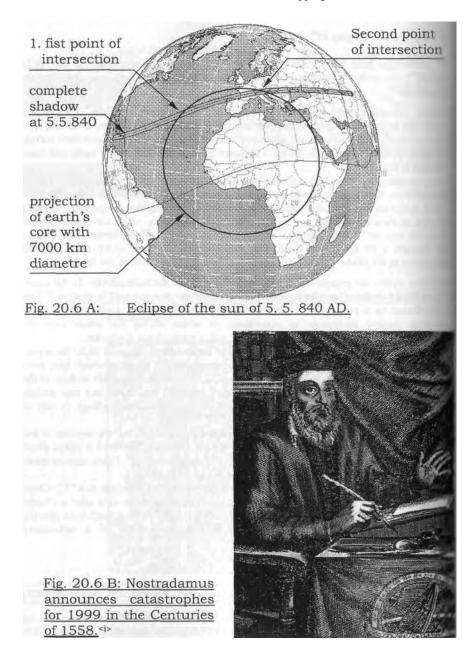
Even in the case that somewhere accidently should exist recordings, the increase is too small, to help explain traditions from the Middle Ages, according to which is talked about "stinking log" and about "aggressive damps, which fall from the sky". Other sources speak of harmful radiations, which one regarded as the trigger of plagues.

It is said: "They poison the drinking water and the crops and make people sick"[iii]. Crops after an eclipse of the sun either should not be harvested at all or only after a violent shower. The warnings for a poisoning "without adding poison", which reach back into the 19th century, suggest the assumption that it concerns results of a radioactive contamination.

---

[i]: Konstantin Meyl: Zur Brennglaswirkung des Mondes bei einer Sonnen-finsternis, NET-Journal, Jg.4, Heft Juli/August 1999, Seite 13-17

[ii]: From the third and extended edition of this second part concerning Electromagnetic Environmental Compatibility the following chapters are completed.

[iii]: Mark Littmann/Ken Willcox: Totality - Eclipses of the Sun, Honolulu 1991, Kapitel 4: Eclipses in Mythology; nachzulesen bei Werner Raffetseder: Sonnenfinsternis, Hugendubel Verlag, Munchen 1999, Seite 130/131.

1. fist point of intersection

Second point of intersection

complete shadow at 5.5.840

projection of earth's core with 7000 km diametre

Fig. 20.6 A: Eclipse of the sun of 5. 5. 840 AD.

Fig. 20.6 B: Nostradamus announces catastrophes for 1999 in the Centuries of 1558.[i]

[i]:   Bryan Brewer: Eclipse, Chapter 1: Eclipses Throughout the Ages, Seattle WA 1991, S. 20, cited in Werner Raffetseder: Sonnenfinsternis, Hugendubel Verlag, Munchen 1999, ISBN 3-89631-302-9, Seite 130, Bild Seite 159.

20.6 Dropping of the neutrino radiation

Plagues of that kind, which in the Middle Ages have claimed lives as a result of an eclipse of the sun, hardly are verifiable, unless a prominent victim was among them, like e.g. the son and successor of Charlemagne, emperor Ludwig I. He 5.5.840 witnessed an eclipse of the sun with a totality of five minutes. Further it is said: „The fright which this experience gave   him, little later shall have torn him to death"<i>.

According to that there must have existed times, in which the radioactivity present in the countryside and stored in the body of a person during an eclipse of the sun could be set free and be the undoing of the affected. At the same time such a decontamination of radiation acts cleaning for nature.

In this case only the interpretation of Nikola Tesla provides us an explanation, which states that the neutrino radiation causes the radioactivity<ii>. Textbook physics however doesn't know this causality. For that the primeval fears of humanity are pure superstition. The prophesies of Nostradamus even are referred to as counter evidence.

But the question remains open, why his predictions concerning August 11 didn't happen, Obviously, so has shown us the cosmic experiment, the neutrino radiation relevant for the setting free of radioactive radiation drastically has decreased since the Middle Ages.

Nostradamus personally has occupied himself with the translation and interpretation of hieroglyphs and has written down his insights - surely out of fear of the inquisition - in the form of encoded quatrains. According to that he has based his considerations on considerably older sources, which presumably stemmed from a time, in which a considerably higher radiation prevailed.

We have to proceed from the assumption that the scientists of the Semitic- Aramean people of the Chaldeans, which ruled Babylon from 626 B.C., were just as capable as astronomers of today, to exactly calculate an eclipse of the sun even centuries and millenia in advance.

After all the Saros-cycle to determine eclipses of the sun is a discovery of the Chaldeans. What they however couldn't know and we ourselves still can't indicate today, is the prevailing density of the cosmic radiation at a future time. But that obviously has changed considerably.

The natural magnetic field strength for instance is recorded at the baking of earthenware jugs and vases, by strengthening along the parts containing magnetite. From the measurement of ancient earthenware goods we know that in antiquity a field strength must have prevailed which was 3 to 4 powers of ten higher.

According to the here presented theory the earth owes its magnetism its core and that again draws its energy from the neutrino field. According to that also the neutrino radiation should be subject to the same decrease.

If therefore the Babylonians out of the radiation situation at that time in the interpretation of Nostradamus and other fortune-tellers, who presumably all more or less have written each other off, have predicted a catastrophe for 11.8.99, then this scientifically is just as untenable, as the today widespread hubris, with which the knowledge and the reports of experience from ancient times are dismissed as superstition.

_____

<ii>: cf. chapter 17.2 Nikola Tesla, the discoverer of the neutrino radiation, p. 133
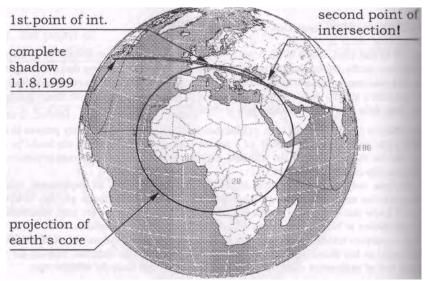
Fig. 20.7 A: Eclipse of the sun of 11.8.99 (declination: 15°)
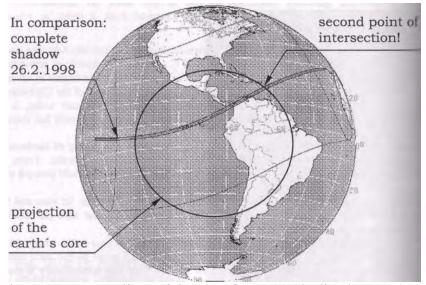
Fig. 20.7 B: Eclipse of the sun of 26.2.98 (declination: - 9°)

<ii>:   Particularly violent earthquakes since 11.8.1999 (excerpt):
         Turkey 17.8. (strength 7.8) till 19.8. (5,0), 31.8. (5.2), Greece 7.9. (5.8).
         Turkey 13.09. (5.8) and finally Taiwan 20.9.99 (strength 7.6) in a rythm of 6
         to 7 days! Complete list in the internet under:
         http://www-seismo.hannover.bgr.de/ermos_listing.html

This "superstition" mentions tremendous natural disasters like floods like the Flood or destructive earthquakes often as a direct result of an eclipse of the sun, and as the worst consequence the end of the world[i].

Almost all reporters and newsreaders in the evening of August 11 full of irony pointed at the non-occurrence of the end of the world and spread the conviction that according to prevailing physical ideas something like that isn't possible at all. They at that time couldn't know that the anatolic plate, which the complete shadow had crossed, had gotten into motion. The relatively weak earthquakes, which 11.8. shook Cyprus and at the same time Iran, only were spontaneous harbringers.

In the following weeks the staggering core of the earth made us clear that there had been done force to it. Severe earthquakes with thousands of aftershocks followed each other and one message of terror chased the next[ii]. Public authorities however take care not to of decline to make a reference to the eclipse of the sun.

20.7 Analysis and comparison of the occurrences

If we for comparison consult the total eclipse of the sun of 26.2.1998, for which the complete shadow of the moon coming from the Pacific Ocean had run over the Caribbean into the Atlantic Ocean. Exactly the moment it crossed the Caribbean island Montserrat, the volcano Soufriere erupted.

Pure coincidence says science, which hasn't got an explanation model at all for a relation with the supposedly purely optical phenomenon. But this argumentation is relativized, if according to fig. 20.2 the tangential collecting of solar neutrinos by earth's core is considered. This process best can be compared with photon radiation, which is tangentially collected and directed into an orbit by a black hole inside the radius of Schwarzschild.
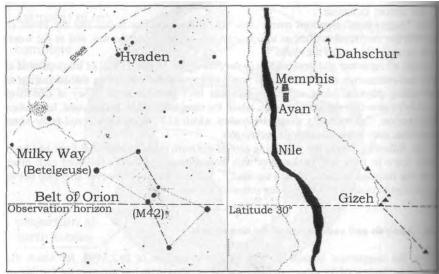
Since the shadow of the moon always draws a straight line on the earth, two points of intersection are present with the circle of the projection of earth's core on earth's surface, for which the radiation focussed by the moon just touches earth's core and in that way experiences an additional concentration. The first point of intersection at that time was situated in the Pacific Ocean; but the second one was situated exactly at the Caribbean island Montserrat (fig. 20.7 B).

This time, at August 11 1999 the first point of intersection was situated in South Germany, the second in Iran, and again the focussing at the second point of intersection has shown a devastating effect. The entire continental plate has gotten in motion (fig. 20.7 A).

Another strange phenomenon has occurred in the USA at the same time as the eclipse of the sun. A tornado swept with its destructive force right through Salt Lake City. It is remarkable that no meteorologic indications were showing before and hence official observation authorities had no possibility of warning for the tornado. Had here part of the focussed neutrino radiation been redirected at earth's core and given a rotation, to again screw out into the sky on the other side of the earth at Salt Lake City?

---

[i]: Werner Raffetseder: Sonnenfinsternis, Hugendubel Verlag, Miinchen 1999, ISBN 3-89631-302-9, Seite 120.

[ii]: Collection of particular violent earthquakes since 11.8.1999: see fig. 20.7.

A: The constellation of Orion   B: The sanctuary of Osiris

Fig. 20.8 A and B: The ancient Egypt pyramids, a terrestrial model and copy of the starry sky?[i]
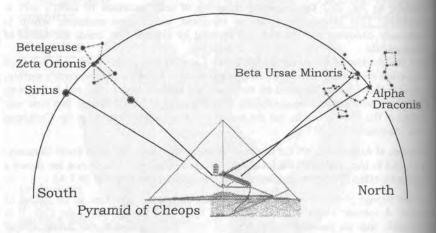
Fig. 20.8 C: The orientation of the four shafts of the Pyramid of Cheops to four different stars around the year 2500 B.C.[ii]

[i]:   Robert Bauval, Graham Hancock: Der Schlussel zur Sphinx (Keeper of Genesis), List Verlag Munchen 1996, ISBN 3-471-77188-3, S. 286 und 287.
[ii]:   dito page 86.

20.8 Radioactive decontamination with the help of a supernova

A mighty source of neutrinos forms the black hole in the centre of the Milky Way. For us, on an outer spiral arm of the galaxy, the distance to the centre is gigantic as well, so that a relatively equally distributed spectrum of differently fast neutrinos arrives at our world, which represents a kind of basic energy technical supply for the solar system and our world. For the fluctuations between day and night, or the focussing by the moon or other planets the "participants" in the solar system are responsible themselves.

In contrast to that a supernova, the explosion of a star, is a considerably smaller source of neutrinos, which however also is possible less distant to the earth. In addition it is a singular event, in which all neutrinos are set free simultaneously within a fraction of a second. They arrive at us one after another. First the fast and hard radiation reaches us as it were as harbinger. In the course of time the arriving neutrinos then become slower and shower, until they sometime become biologically relevant. If in the end everything is over, we can see the cause, only now the supernova is showing in the telescope.

If we assume such an event takes place, with perceptible might and in a distance of 500 light years. then this neutrino radiation overlaps with the general background radiation and a characteristic over-intensification of neutrinos of a certain velocity of propagation occurs. This problem then occupies us for 500 years, where the respective radiation situation permanently is changing depending on the time after the explosion.

If we in this way of looking dare a judgement of the cosmic events in historical time, so makes believe much the assumption that the radiation in the last hundred years has worn of completely. Edgar Cayce treats in the book "Our Ancestors" different cultural circles from the old Indian up to the Hopi, in which still is talked about an energy technical use of quartzes and other materials[i].

We indeed can theoretically comprehend that the neutrino radiation can let an oscillating quartz glow, if it is stimulated in its resonance frequency, but technically the technology foday can't be realized anymore. Possibly the chance for technological use only existed for a few years or decades.

Presumably also the pyramids originally have been built as resonators, to slow down fast neutrinos to a technically utilizable speed. But in the course of time the original function was unnecessary and the neutrinos had gotten so slow that in antiquity alternatively an use as electrostatic lightning generator or as Nekropolis took place. Today they only stand in the countryside as unusable monuments of a gone epoch.

Many ancient techniques, to which I will come to speak in the third part, in this way just as unexpected become plausible as the radioactive decontamination described in the Middle Ages.

---

[i]: Hermann Wild: Technologien von gestern, Chancen fur morgen; Jupiter-Verlag Bern 1996, ISBN 3-906571-13-0, (z.B. S. 77 und 145 bis 163).

Constellation at 23.9. around 10500 B.C. at sunrise:
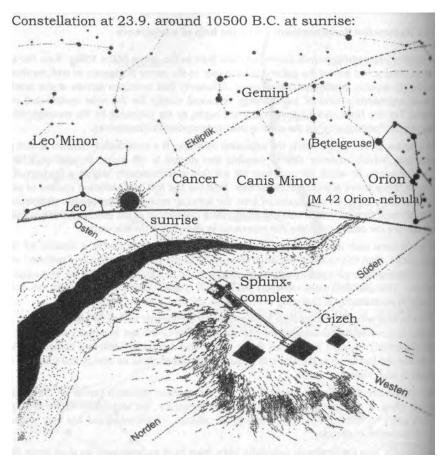
Fig. 20.9: The orientation of the pyramids of Giza makes believe
an operation of the installation around 10500 B.C.[i]

<i>:   Robert Bauval, Graham Hancock: Der Schlussel zur Sphinx (Keeper of Genesis), List Verlag Munchen 1996, ISBN 3-471-77188-3, S. 324.

The two research scientists take the hypothesis of an orientation of the ancient Egypt pyramids after the starry sky around 10500 B.C. This however is not compatible with their thesis of the aligning of the shafts to individual stars around 2500 B.C. (fig. 20.8 C). How should the precise worked shafts later have been integrated? It would correspond a certain logic, if an orientation of the buildings to the energy source at that time would have taken place; but doing so it should be taken into consideration that the stars are exploded as supernovae and today hardly might be observable.

Despite several good ideas more questions are raised by the book, than are answered. Have the technicians 2500 B.C., after making restorations, experimented with the buildings and sought-for alternatives of use?

20.9 Fre energy from the Orion constellation

After all hundred years ago still the last unreliable rests of the wearing off neutrino radiation were available to Tesla, Moray, Keely and other inventors for the experimental proof of free energy, of which we today aren't able to rebuild and show in function one single model. And that, although the technical aids have gotten better for many times. But for the free energy inventors that isn't a reason, to immediately stop their efforts, because the next supernova already is announced by the actual swings of the Foucault pendulum. It could concern the explosion of the giant red star Betelgeuse in the constellation of Orion in a distance of 500 light years[i]. It well may be possible that it already shortly has exploded and that it will supply us with fresh and free energy for scarcely the next 500 years and at the same time will give the earth a good shake, thanks to its might and a not too great distance. The reaction, which happened after August 11, of earth's core, which is the first to interact with the fast particles, should make every astrophysicist clear that here something is coming towards us!

It would be obvious, if the reactions of earth's core still increase. Every year particularly around 21.6., if the sun is standing in the Orion constellation, deviations can be expected. But then the supposed source of neutrinos, Betelgeuse, the sun and the earth don't exactly form a line, because the giant red star lies 7.4° below the ecliptic. Because of that the rays slowed down and focussed by the sun run away over the earth. At the earth then rather would be expected a dropping of the radiation.

If the phase of shakes of the earth sometime should be over, a decontamination due to an increased radioactive decay and various biological effects should be expected. Then, perhaps in 200 years, also many concepts concerning free energy, today still dismissed as hopeless, suddenly will function entirely by themselves.

The relatively free possibility of development of the human mind and the present sciences we possibly owe the special circumstance to be able to live in a time of minimized field strengths. Strong fields however can lead to psychotronic influencing of the consciousness and to an outside determining of mankind. This circumstance seems to have caused Tesla to compare man with a robot, and to call him an independent machine controlled from outside[ii].

---

[i]: Freek Reijmerink: Sternenatlas Deutschland, Weltbild Verlag 1990, S.12 (ein sterbender Riese) und Illustrierte Wissenschaft, Nr. 9, 1999, S. 7, Brennen die grossen Sterne in den Sternbildern je aus? Die Entfernungsangaben schwanken zwischen 270 Lichtjahren (Meyers Lexikon), 310 (Sternenatlas), 500 (Ill.Wiss.) und 652 Lichtjahren (Cambridge Enzyklopadie d. Astronomie).

In the observable domain of the starry sky one statistically seen has the chance, to experience every second a supernova.

[ii]: Nikola Tesla: How cosmic forces shape our destinies, New York American, 7.2.1917, and Edition Tesla (1997), Bd. 6, ISBN 3-89539-245-6 der Mensch als machine, S. 65.
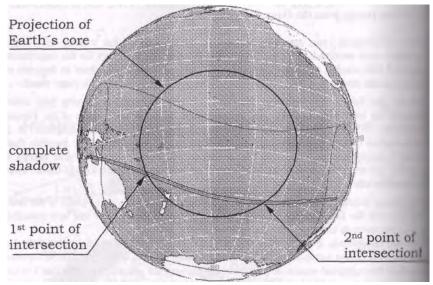
Fig. 20.10 A: Eclipse of the sun of 13.11.2012 (decl.: 18.1°)
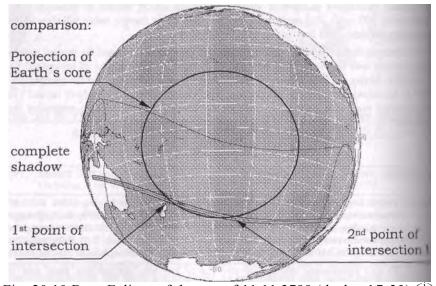
Fig. 20.10 B: Eclipse of the sun of 11.11.3799 (decl.: -17.3°). [i]

[i]:   The eclipse of the sun of 7.7.3797 is harmless compared to that of 11.11.3799. Have they been mixed up or is a calculation error present?

20.10 Interaction of the neutrinos with earth's core

A strong neutrino field still doesn't make a catastrophe. Only in connection with one of the regularly happening eclipses of the sun should one be expected under certain circumstances. Only, which eclipses of the sun can get dangerous, we have to ask us, and why warns e.g. Nostradamus only for very particular dates?
The check of the respective eclipses of the sun results in a critical constellation every time for the cases, where the line of the complete shadow and the circle of the projection of earth's core intersect under a very flat angle and both points of intersection lie very close together. In the extreme case finally the lines only are touching and the points of intersection fuse to a line of intersection.
A corresponding constellation the next time is expected at 13.11.2012. For 7.7.3797, at similar conditions Nostradamus foretells the end of the world; but why?

From the interaction of the neutrinos arises as from every other interaction a force effect. If the points of intersection lie far apart, then earth's core is pulled once to the East and a short time later again to the West by the focussed neutrino radiation. On the average this will hardly influence earth's mantle and earth's crust because of the immense moment of interia. The possible earthquakes will remain regionally restricted to the area around the two points of intersection.
But if a line of intersection forms, then no compensation of the force effects takes place anymore, then during the whole time one-sided is pulled at earth's core and that can have fatal results. It is the same as for a spinning top, which is given a blow from the side: it staggers several times, until the gyroscopic forces have stabilized it again.

But if earth's axis staggers, then the sun describes strange orbits in the sky, it goes backwards again, for a longer time doesn't set or it doesn't show for the same period of time for the people living on the other side of the globe.
Such an event already is described in the Bible[i]. For the twenty hours, in which in Europe the sun didn't set for a day, again describe the chroniclers of the inhabitants in the South American Andes, how at their place the sun didn't show for twenty hours[ii].
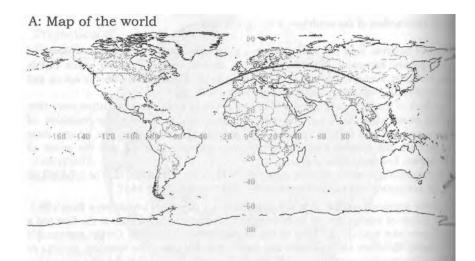
As a further example from the Greek mythology is mentioned the description of the poet Apollodoros. according to whom Hercules for the solution of his 10th task let the chariot of the sun bring to a standstill. "He turned his vehicle round and raced the way back, dragging along the Pleiaden and all stars, so that the sun set in the East"[iii]. But if all stars take part in the same backwards motion, then this example proves the assumption of the staggering earth's axis.

_____

[i]: Josua 10.13-14 and the in chapter 11.8 cited passages.

[ii]: nach Montesinos, zitiert in Zecharia Sitchin: The Lost Realms (Versunkene Reiche), Knaur Verlag Miinchen 1992, ISBN 3-426-04827-2, S. 203

[iii]: Werner Raffetseder: Sonnenfinsternis, Hugendubel Verlag, Milnchen 1999, ISBN 3-89631-302-9, Seite 18.

A: Map of the world

B: Globus

Line of
intersection !

complete
shadow at
the time of
the biblical
flood

Projection of
the
earth´s core
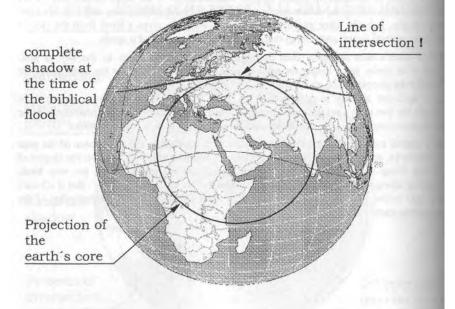
Fig. 20.11:   Eclipse of the sun of 27.07.2281 B.C.
                  (angle of the sun = declination: 19.3°)
                  The trigger of the biblical Flood?

20.11 Changing of polarity and apocalypse

The pulling at earth's core, which shows as a wobbling of the magnetic axis and in damped form can lead to a tilting of the axis of rotation of the earth, still doesn't make an apocalypse, no end of the world. This only can be expected, if after a tilting of the axis of rotation of earth's core a change of polarity on the surface of the earth occurs. Doing so the new magnetic poles, like a compass needle in the field of the solar wind, again align in such a that the North Pole will be lying "up" in the ecliptic. Because earth's surface will keep it direction of rotation, the sun will, after the process having stabilized, as usual again rise in the East and set in the West. But the inhabitants of the earth, which before still were having midsummer, find themselves again in the midst of midwinter and vice versa.

Truly apocalyptic processes can be expected during the phase of a change of polarity of the earth. Thereby occur unusual relative accelerations and violent earthquakes. The largest destructive potential however is present in the waters of the oceans, which are set in motion.

As is well-known the earth at the equator is measuring a radius which is 21 kilometres larger than at its poles. If only a part of the waters temporarily flows in the direction of the poles of the earth, then the biggest part of the habitable land in Middle and North Europe sinks in the floods; then indeed also the statement of Noah makes sense, who as the first thing saw the mountain of Ararat rise from the floods, after the water again flowed back into its usual ocean basins. The mountain of Ararat after all measures a height of 5137 meters above sealevel!

At comparing historical events with details from the Bible the Flood should have taken place in the year 2245 B.C.[i]. According to the description of the position of the stars Dr. Wild calculates July 2281 B.C. as time for the Flood. The Arabic historical writer al-Makrizi again shifts the event into the year 3094 B.C.[i]. Who is right? We must verify the eclipses of the sun in this time and determine the position of the points of intersection, then we perhaps find the correct answer. Possibly earth's axis has wobbled more than once, have occurred several catastrophes in different regions. At 27.7.2281 B.C. in any case there actually has occurred an extremely critical constellation, whereas the other two years are ruled out. Here no total eclipse of the sun took place (fig. 20.11).

According to the calendar of the Ugha Mongulala 6110 years before this Flood a still much more devastating one should have occurred. That therefore would have been 8391 B.C., while Scott-Elliot dates the catastrophe in the year 9564 B.C.[ii]. According to Plato it would have been about 9500 B.C. For such long periods of time a check however isn't quite easy anymore, because the meantime changes of the earth sum up considerably.

---

[i]: Wild S. 231, 229 and 225.

[ii]: Wild S, 219, 218 and 210, among others cited from Scott-Elliot: Atlantis und das untergegangene Lemuria, Bauer Verlag Freiburg 1977.
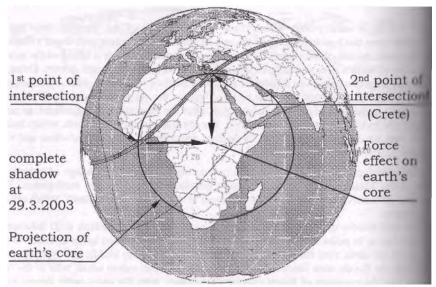
Fig. 20.12 A: Eclipse of the sun of 29.03.2006 (decl.: 3.2°)

Fig. 20.12 B: Cave painting from Minateda (Spain).<i>

<i>:   Laviosa-Zambotti: Origini e Diffusione della Civilta, Marzorati,
Milano   1950,

Besides the constellation of sun and moon is crucial the occurring of a relevant neutrino radiation and the question if both is sufficient to tilt the earth and change its polarity. Some experts expect a change of polarity for the time coming, since it takes place with a certain regularity and measured in earth historical periods of time in addition fairly often! This circumstance the earth presumably owes the river valleys cut deep in the countryside and other topographic phenomena. One presumably can only survive such a catastrophe in an ark (Noah), in the air bubbles of large caves (the walls of which painted children and artists out of pure boredom, see fig. 20.12 B) or in the highland, preferably in the area of the equator (Central Africa, highland of Mexico, Andes, Himalaya).

20.12 Scalar wave gauges for the prediction of earthquakes
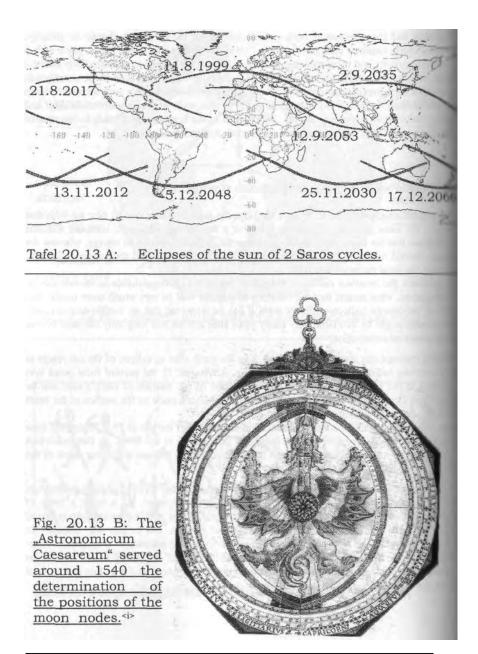
We urgently need gauges, to be able to judge the neutrino situation. At first we with that pursue the same goal, as with the building of a free energy converter, however with the difference that the converter should maximize the collected amount of energy, whereas the gauge should minimize the taken up energy, to not too much load the source and not to change the local radiation situation.
In addition the neutrino radiation should be registered distinguishable in its velocity of propagation, what means that the building of a gauge will be very much more costly than that of an energy collector. That's why it can be expected that an usable measurement instrument might be available only many years later and we that long only can base on our own power of observation.

We for instance can statistically analyse, how the earth after an eclipse of the sun reacts to the neutrino radiation focussed by the moon. At August 11 the second focal point was situated in the East, and from that an acceleration of the rotation of earth's core can be predicted. Corresponding observations actually have been made on the surface of the earth with the help of the Foucault pendulum.
The relation the next time can be checked at the eclipse of the sun at 29.3.2006. This time the inverse case is present. A first focussing takes place in the West, so that pendelum swings in the reversed direction would be expected, which indicate a slowing down of the rotation (fig. 20.12 A).

But if the rotation of the earth should change, then the balance sheet of angular momentum of moon, earth's mantle and earth's core isn't correct anymore. As a result a force of difference occurs, which lets the spinning top stagger. But if earth's core staggers inside of earth's mantle, then it powerfully stirs the liquid magma, and in this way releases its surplus energy again. As a result earth's mantle is heated up somewhat. We, on our wafer-thin earth's crust, then time delayed feel the effects of the staggering of the core as an earthquake. The period seems to lie at approximately 6.5 days, as far as this can be read from reactions to the last two eclipses of the sun.

Tafel 20.13 A: Eclipses of the sun of 2 Saros cycles.

Fig. 20.13 B: The „Astronomicum Caesareum" served around 1540 the determination of the positions of the moon nodes.[i]

[i]:   Werner Raffetseder: Sonnenfinsternis, Hugendubel Verlag, Munchen 1999, ISBN 3-89631-302-9, Seite 134.

20.13 Calculation of future occurrences

From the analysis of past and present cosmic events with a strict scientific procedure can be predicted to a certain extent also future events. It thereby by no means concerns prediction, but exclusively the result of an analysis.

After the mentioned eclipse of the sun of 29.03.2006 there once more exists danger of earthquakes (approx. 4.4.2006) for the Island of Crete and Asia Minor. From the eclipse of the sun of 13.11.2012 as well no good can be expected, even if the points of intersection, situated close together, lie far away from populated land in the south-west Pacific basin. The Maya calendar by the way ends to this time. At 21.8.2017, 18 years or a Saros cycle after the eclipse of the sun at 11.8.1999 and correspondingly 120° further to the west, the corresponding complete shadow runs crossways through the USA. The thankless role of Turkey at the second point of intersection this time takes over South Carolina. One only can hope that the houses in Columbia are built more stable than in Izmit.
In fig. 2013 A the two eclipses of the sun of 11.8.1999 and of 13.11.2012 with their respective Saros cycles until 2066 are shown. The as critically to value tendency of the course of the complete shadow is visible, which wants to nestle against the circle of the projection of earth's core to form a line of intersection.

I here break off, since anyone with my indications and an eclipse of the sun-CD can analyse at home all further events personally. I value that if possible many analyses are made and controversially discussed, because possible cosmic catastrophes concern us all somewhat.

What good is the building of gigantic fusion ovens, if the runners by no means have understood the process of the fusion themselves? Why build ring accelerators for billions of dollars, if elementary particles can be calculated at the desk? How is the expenditure for gravitational wave detectors justified, if the actual music plays at entirely other velocities of propagation? Why is half the annual production of the world of Gallium used for an indirect proof of neutrinos, if every self-wound Tesla coil is able to collect more neutrinos?

Our scientists, for whom I as a colleague quite often must be ashamed, have the primary task to draw attention to cosmic and other risks and to calculate them in advance. In any case it is extremely unpardonable to leave this core duty up to some fortune-tellers and self-appointed prophets.
One should more often remind them that the Chinese Kaiser Tschung-Khang let sentence his court astronomers Hi and Ho to death, after the two not having predicted an eclipse of the sun. It thus certainly didn't concern a missed spectacle or a missed tourism business, but presumably the need for safety of the Kaiser and his subordinates, for which the two astrophysicists in ancient China had to take responsibility!
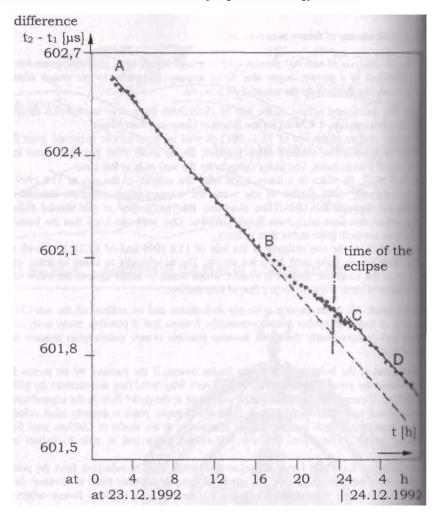
Fig. 20.14:   The difference in going of two caesium atomic clocks
positioned in different directions, but in the same laboratory in Harbin, China, during the partial eclipse of the sun of 24.12.1992.[i]

[i]:   Shu-wen Zhou: Abnormal Physical Phenomena Observed When the Sun, Moon, and Earth are Aligned, 21st Century Science & Technology, Fall 1999, Vol. 12, No. 3, pp. 54-61. Comments concerning Figure 9: Straight lines AB and CD show that the rate of change of the time difference between the two clocks is constant in non-eclipse periods, but becomes irregular around the time of the eclipse.

20.14 Epilogue to the energy technical seminar

Very slowly the word goes round that the energy source of the future has got a name: "Neutrinopower". Unfortunately fundamental physics, which is financed with public money, still does know almost nothing about the nature of the neutrino radiation. In addition hinder useless model concepts any progress in this direction and so the responsible fundamental research steps on the spot.

Considerably more extensive were already 100 years ago the insights of the experimental physicist Nikola Tesla, the discoverer of the neutrino radiation and father of the free energy. The space energy however is showing most clearly in nature, which only uses this advantageous form of energy. In particular during eclipses of the sun and other cosmic experiments it openly comes to light and can be detected by us for a short time.

The physicist Prof. Shu-wen Zhou of the University of Huazhong in Wuhan, China, systematically has investigated the effects, if sun, moon and earth are aligned[i]. Doing so he has proven inexplicable physical anomalies in experiments. Stimulated by the discoveries of Maurice Allais with the Foucault pendulum he built an arrangement specially flor proving horizontal forces of acceleration, and actually he with that could measure face effects during the total eclipse of the sun of 24.10.1995. He even speaks of an oscillating force!
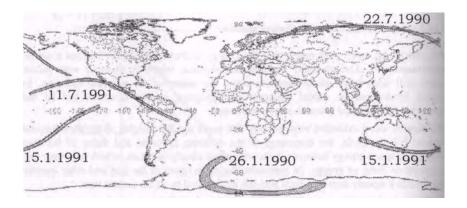
Further he could determine changes in the spectral wave length of various elements, which under normal conditions go as constant and even as characteristic for the respective element. The relative change of size of the wave length during the ring-like eclipse of the sun over China of 23.9.1987 resulted in the 100-fold value compared to the difference in the spectrum analysis between surface of the earth and surface of the sun! This comparison reveals an immense discrepancy between theory and practice and puts us for a solid problem.

For that six different models of spectrometers were installed in several laboratories of different polytechnics and a photograph was taken of the emission spectra of H, D, Ca, CN, Ni, Ti, etc. Also other reasons than that of an eclipse of the sun could be excluded unambiguosly. In the results of these, at artificial light carried out conventional measurements, in any case abysses yawn. The from spectrum analyses won "insights" about the composition of strange celestial bodies now for sure can be done away with without knowledge about the respective prevailing neutrino radiation.

Spectacular also is the proof of differences in going of atomic clocks of various constructions. During the partial eclipse of the sun of 24.12.1992 seven caesium clocks in four cities of China and in three planes were used. The analysis of the differences in going resulted in, as is shown exemplary in fig. 20.14, changes of the gradient during the eclipse. The results for the atomic clocks in the planes and for two further time measurements turned out with similar clarity[ii].

---

[i]: Shou-wen Zhou: Abnormal Physical Phenomena Observed When the Sun, Moon, and Earth are Aligned, 21st Century Science 6s Technology, Fall 1999, Vol. 12, No. 3, pp. 54 - 61.
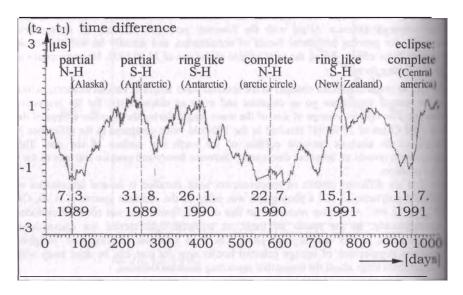
Fig. 20.15: Long-term measurement between 1989 and
991 of the difference in going of two atomic clocks at
the U.S. Naval Astronomical Observatory.[i]

The in the 1000 days occurred eclipses of the sun have been enter-
ed later. In addition is recorded, if the northern hemisphere (N-H) or
the southern hemisphere (S-H) of the earth was involved.

[i]:Shu-wen Zhou: Abnormal Physical Phenomena Observed When the Sun,
Moon, and Earth are Aligned, 21st Century Science & Technology, Fall 1999,
Vol. 12, No. 3, pp. 54 - 61. Figure 8.

A connection to the neutrino radiation Prof. Zhon doesn't draw, but it almost is obvious.

From the U.S. Naval Astronomical Observatory (LC/7970) long-term measurements over 1000 days between 1989 and 1991 are present (fig. 20.15). The difference in going between the two atomic clocks positioned at different places shows a permanent up and down. The reason goes as completely unknown.
But if the eclipses, which took place in this time, are entered then one immediately sees the assignment to a maximum or a minimum value. If an eclipse of the sun namely concerned the southern hemisphere of the earth, then the difference in going each time reached a maximum, but if the shadow of the moon run over the northern hemisphere, then each time a minimum occurred. Chance here probably is out of the question!

Let us record: The effect of an eclipse of the sun, to which for instance a Foucault pendulum reacts, can equally be traced back to the interaction of the neutrinos as the free energy. That's why the here presented book carries the title "Free energy and the interaction of the neutrinos". It has appeared in the series concerning the "Electromagnetic environmental compatibility", and also for that there are good reasons. Our energy technology must become more ecologically compatible and we come the goal closer, if we emulate nature, understand and copy it.

That it further concerns electromagnetism, likewise is explained from the interaction of the neutrinos, which concerns the oscillating and resonant case of the electromagnetic interaction. In this respect the reference to the series of books therefore would be given.

It only indirectly has to do with "electrosmog", or what otherwise is understood under environmental compatibility in general. It however could be shown that also the earth radiation is a form of neutrino radiation, and that it poses a biological effectiveness, after it turned out that it serves nature as an energy source. With that the conflict with space energy devices already is predetermined if the same scalar wave radiation should be used. Then one system takes away the other system the energy basis and the existence basis.
This environmental compatibility problem can be solved, if care is taken that both don't get in each others way with regard to the frequency and the wave length. We for that need a deep understanding concerning the topic of the space quanta and the neutrinos, their physical properties and the corresponding device technology. The book should make a contribution to that.

The other side of the medal is the information technical aspect of the scalar wave radiation and the environmental compatibility problem connected with that. The third and last part of the series of books is dedicated to this theme.

Part 2: Edition belonging to the energy technical seminar: "Electromagnetic Environmental Compatibility"

Prof. Dr.-Ing. Konstantin Meyl
Scalar waves

Abstract: 1. Auflage 1998, 4. Auflage and 1st English Edition

With regard to the environmental compatibility a decentralized electrical energy technology should be required, which manages without overhead power lines, without combustion and without radioactive waste. The liberalization of the energy markets won't on any account solve our energy problem, but only accelerate the way into the dead end. New, ecologically compatible concepts are collected and discussed in the book.

A useful energy source could be represented by space quanta, which hit upon the Earth from the sun or from space. They however only are revealed to the measurement technician, if they interact. It will be shown that the particles oscillate and an interaction or collection with the goal of the energy technical use only is possible in the case of resonance.

Since these space quanta as oscillating particles have almost no charge and mass averaged over time, they have the ability of penetration proven for neutrinos.
In the case of the particle radiation discovered 100 years ago by Tesla, it obviously concerns neutrinos. We proceed from the assumption that in the future decentral neutrino converters will solve the current energy problem. Numerous concepts from nature and engineering, like on the one hand lightning or photosynthesis and on the other hand the railgun or the Tesla converter are instanced and discussed.

Free energy and the interaction of the neutrino radiation

Scalar Waves

From an extended vortex and field theory to a technical, biological
and historical use of longitudinal waves.

Part 3

by

Professor Dr.-Ing. Konstantin Meyl

Edition belonging to the lecture and seminar
"Electromagnetic environmental compatibility"

(Original title: "Elektromagnetische Umweltvertraglichkeit")

Translated out of the German language
by Ben Jansen
(2003)

* * *

Part 3:   Edition belonging to the information technical seminar

Scalar waves and the technical use of longitudinal waves and vortices

* * *

Preface to the seminar, part 3

With the appearing in print of the 3rd part of the series of lecture notes of the electromagnetic environmental compatibility, the collection of material can be considered to be completed for the time being. By now almost all aspects concerning the theme of the potential vortices of the electromagnetic field and their propagation as a scalar wave should have been addressed or at least indicated.

And that's what it is about in the case of the editions belonging to the seminars: In the seminars, taking place inside and outside the university, questions about the phenomena and the biological effectiveness of the fields, which surround us, are discussed. The scientifically correct procedure asks as a preparation for the seminar a voluminous collection of material and a compilation of theses with the pros and contras to them. The argumentation, which is denoted as „textbook physics" and is generally accepted, the participant of the seminar can work out himself by means of the available journals and books. The potential vortex, which completed the field equations, however makes possible a counterstatement, which for most participants at first will be unusual. The old dispute between quantum and field physics rekindles. What is missing is a voluminous collection of material concerning the refined field physics, and this gap the editions belonging to the seminars should close.

In the case of this book the primary concern is to make sure, that all facets, properties and physical consequences of the new and unified field physics are addressed. The question, if all points can bear a strict verification, remains reserved to the seminar and its participants, of whom each should form its own judgement. The series of books should be understood as a stimulation, to make own thoughts about the various points. Who has no opportunity to participate in a seminar, by means of the lecture at least gets an idea of what is discussed here and how is struggled for scientific insights. The herewith completed collection of material by no means may be compared or confused with a basic work about the theory of objectivity. That the editions cannot and want not afford at all. They together with the discussions at best form the basis for a scientifically basic work, at which I am working.

In the case of the collection of material concerning the electromagnetic environmental compatibility consisting of three parts, again and again new aspects have emerged, which found entrance into the book, at which I was working at that particular time, whereas the rough structure has been controlled precisely: part 1 with the chapters 1 to 9 treats the basics, part 2 with chapters 10 to 20 the energy technical aspect and part 3 with the chapters 21 to 30 the information technical aspect of scalar waves. The here presented 3rd part starts with the wave equation and the two comprised parts of a transverse and a longitudinal wave. The historic dispute between Heinrich Hertz and Nikola Tesla with the experimental evidence of the each time used wave part is continued over the wave-particle uncertainty compromise up to the dispute about the right field description: that of Maxwell or the new dual and at the same time unified description, which builds upon Boscovich and Faraday. The aspects, which seem so irreconcilably thereby only are two parts of a single equation, which is much older and can be traced back to Laplace: the wave equation.

Until now no derivations of this equation, which contains both wave parts, are known This for the first time succeeds from the new and extended field approach in the summary from chapter 26. At first however is attempted to make the world of the scalar waves

plausible with models, calculations and observations. For that are used examples from high-frequency engineering, like the ground wave or the near-field area of an antenna, and from nature and medicine, which are granted two chapters. The comparison of the nerve conduction with Tesla's one wire technology is bringing it to light that scalar waves equally are used in both cases. In a frequency diagram the insights are entered concisely and is shown that considerably more unexplored domains occur than already is known, that in most cases not even gauges are available. With the design for building a scalar wave gauge the scientific verification of until now only empirically won results is stimulated, like for instance the results the radiesthesia wants to have determined with the help of the sensitivity of man as a biosensor.

Many relations will be revealed to the reader only, if he has worked through the summary, which follows. From Maxwell's field equations only the well-known (transverse) Hertzian waves can be derived. (Longitudinal) scalar waves however in the result are zero. This is a flaw of normally used field theory, since scalar waves exist for all particle waves, like e.g. as plasma wave, as photon- or neutrino radiation. Because the field pointer, in the direction of which longitudinal waves are propagating, is oscillating, the frequency will oscillate like the velocity of propagation, which again is measured as a noise signal. Any antenna noise proves the emission of scalar waves in space. But scalar waves, or whatever should be subsumed under the by mathematics minted generic term free of any value judgement, surely are more than only noise.

Starting from Faraday's discovery - instead of the formulation of the law of induction according to Maxwell - an extended field theory is derived, which goes beyond the Maxwell theory with the description of potential vortices (noise vortices) and their propagation as a scalar wave, but contains the Maxwell theory as a special case. The new field theory with that doesn't collide with the textbook opinion, but extends it in an essential point with the discovery and addition of the potential vortices.
Also the theory of objectivity, which follows from the discovery, is compared in the form of a summary with the subjective and the relativistic point of view and the consequences for variable velocity of propagation of the scalar waves, formed from potential vortices, are discussed. Like already in part 1 the unification of the electromagnetic interaction with the gravitation succeeds impressively.

Besides the mathematical calculations this book contains a voluminous material collection concerning the information technical use of scalar waves, if e.g. the useful signal and the usually interfering noise signal change their places, if a separate modulation of frequency and wavelength makes a parallel image transmission possible, if it concerns questions of the environmental compatibility for the sake of humanity (bioresonance, among others) or to harm humanity (electrosmog). With that the book again finds back to the starting point, to the open task, which made necessary an excursion through all domains of physics to answer it. I hope, the long march was worthwhile.

Villingen-Schwenningen december 2002

Preface to the 2nd edition of part 3

In favour of chapter 30 as a complement, an introduction into the ancient broadcasting technology of the gods, the 1st edition wasn't printed anymore in the year 2002 as originally planned. Instead the individual chapters have been prepublished in different places. The chapters 21 to 25 are found among others in the book "scalar wave technology", which has been published as an instruction for an experiment to demonstrate scalar waves in 2001. Excerpts from it, as also from the chapters 26 to 28 have appeared in form of individual essays in different journals.

Again experimental successes had been intervening, which caused a renewed deferring of the date of appearance of the 3rd part of the series of books. In my laboratory the bi-directional transmission of music and of data by scalar wave was successful. We thus also can transmit information backwards from a receiver to the transmitter or to a second receiver, whereby the receivers work purely passive, thus without own power supply. The operating energy is as well supplied to them by the transmitter by scalar wave. The demonstrated technology opens completely new possibilities of a technical application. Conceivable are telemetry installations where measurement signals have to be transmitted from rotating or otherwise inaccessible places of a machine. The energy for the measurement electronics can be transmitted wirelessly by scalar waves and the signal can be sent back along at the same time, by modulating it onto the energy carrier. In this way dozens of measurement stations can be connected wireless with a single central transmitter, which supplies them all with energy.

The question was asked: Is the technology really entirely new? The answer is amazing: No, it here concerns the oldest technology of humanity, which had developed to a peak in antiquity, to send receive engineering of the gods. For this claim even a mathematical proof is available. For that the authoritative transition, the unrolling of a vortex to a wave (the transition from the near-field to the far-field) or in the reversed case the rolling up at a receiver antenna (usually denoted as standing wave) is calculated with help of the extended field theory. The result is, that at this transition the velocities of propagation resp. the wavelengths of the transverse and the longitudinal wave stand to each other in the ratio of the Golden Proportion.

With regard to the optimization of a transmitter or receiver antenna the Golden Proportion has an effect on the construction resp. the architecture of corresponding buildings . Which ones, with that deals the complementing chapter 30. But it mustn't be missing either, since after all it concerns a grandiose practical information technical use of scalar waves, from which we technologically can learn a lot[i,ii].

Villingen-Schwenningen march 2003

---

[i]: Note: chapter 30 provides an introduction into ancient broadcasting technology of the gods. The working off of history with respect to the use of scalar waves is so voluminous, that for that a book of its own is published with the title:

[ii]: K. Meyl: Sendetechnik der Gotter, historischer Sciencefictionroman (2003), Villingen-Schwenningen, INDEL Verlagsabteilung, ISBN 3-98O2 542-5 9

21. Derivation of the scalar wave

WilliamThomson, who called himself Lord Kelvin, after he had been knighted, already in his lifetime was a recognized and famous theoretical physicist. The airship seemed him too unsafe and so he went aboard a steam liner for a journey from England to America in the summer of 1897. He was on the way in a delicate mission.

Eight years before his German colleague Heinrich Hertz had detected the electromagnetic wave in experiments in Karlsruhe and scientists all over the world had rebuilt his antenna arrangements. They all not only found confirmed the wave as such, they even could show the characteristic properties.
It was a transverse wave, for which the electric and the magnetic field pointers oscillate perpendicular to the direction of propagation. This can be seen as the reason, that the velocity of propagation is showing itself field independent and constant. It is the speed of light c.

With that Hertz had experimentally proven the properties of this wave, previously calculated in a theoretical way by Maxwell, and at the same time proven the correctness of the Maxwellian field theory. The scientists in Europe were just saying to each other: "well done!" as completely other words came across from a private research laboratory in New York: "Heinrich Hertz is mistaken, it by no means is a transverse wave but a longitudinal wave!"

Such a screwball most said and did as if they hadn't heard the criticism at all. But then one couldn't ignore it completely, because on the one hand claimed the private research scientist to have experimental proof and on the other hand it wasn't just anybody, who here reported. It was nobody but Nikola Tesla, the Croat experimental physicist who emigrated to America
Him we owe the modern alternating current technology from the high-tension network for energy transmission over the alternating current transformer to the asynchronous machine.
With his magnificent inventions he had earned enough money, to be able to afford a private laboratory, in which he could research and invent uncensored and free. The key to his success was lying in his purposeful, concentrated and efficient working method.
He was fast! Whereas in Europe still was being discussed about properties and theoretical possibilities of application of the wave, Tesla already presented the armed forces a remote controlled scaled-down submarine in Madison Square Garden (fig. 21.1 A). To convince such a man, who only holds valid what his experiments reveal, from the opposite, should be a hopeless enterprise.
Lord Kelvin was aware of that, as he made the decision to go on the journey. He could not and did not want to put his head into the ground, as many of his colleagues, because on the one hand scientists are curious by principle and on the other hand he travelled as an official representative of science. He had been instructed to free, as Mr. Clean, the undamaged world of sciences from erroneous teachings. But it came completely different.

Fig. 21.1 A: The first radio remote control of the world.[i]
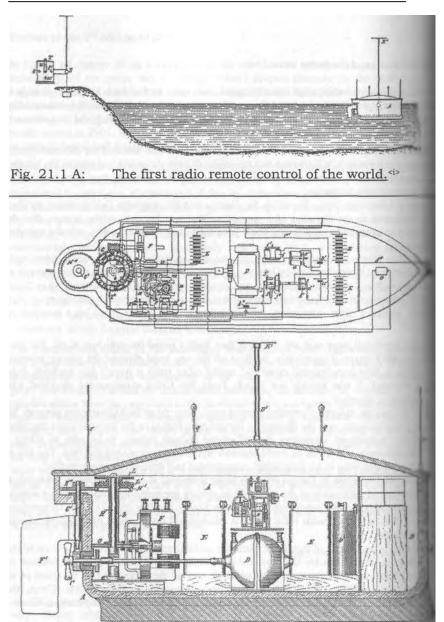
Fig. 21.1 B: Patent specification concerning the remote
controlled submarine.[i]

[i]:   Nikola Tesla: Method of and Apparatus for Controlling Mechanism of Moving
Vessels or Vehicles, US-Pat. 1898, Nr. 613,809. Complete Patents: P. 351

21.1 Lord Kelvin in a delicate mission

The first day of his visit at Tesla Kelvin spoke the admonishing words he had been instructed to speak. He recommended Tesla warmly to publicly retract the remarks concerning the Hertzian mistake and to contribute himself to the settlement of the dispute. Seen from a specialist viewpoint they talked at cross-purposes.

But at night in his hotel room the Lord again thought about the experiments, which had been shown to him. The standing wave nature had been visible unambiguously: the oscillation nodes, the effect back on the transmitter, the high degree of effectiveness and many other things more. Such properties the Hertzian wave indeed doesn't know. Also Tesla didn't work with dipole antennas, but with flat coils, with spark gap oscillators and with a very unconventional switching technique, set up different in principle.

The next morning Lord Kelvin appeared in the laboratory again and greeted Tesla with the words: "Then you don't use Hertzian waves?" "Certainly not", Tesla answered," it are radiations. By waves no energy could be economically transmitted over a larger distance. My system works with true conduction, which theoretically seen can take place over a larger distance, without bigger losses occurring."
In the article of the "Electrical Experimenter" is noted further, that the doubting critic Kelvin suddenly turned into one of the biggest followers[i].

Kelvin deduced very fast: according to that there exist two different sorts of wave propagation. So Hertz with his transverse wave is just as right, as Tesla with the longitudinal wave.
As a represantative of theoretical physics he however could pull out Tesla a decayed tooth. Maxwell had based his field description on an aether concept, which at that time in the world of sciences triggered violent discussions. Since Tesla saw such an aether as a prerequisite for longitudinal waves, he thought he and not Hertz had proven the Maxwell wave in experiment for the first time. By stating this the magnificent experimental physicist however revealed weaknesses in the area of theory. Maybe he had not read exact enough or understood the books of Maxwell, which without doubt were formulated mathematically only arduously comprehensible in the original version.
In this point Tesla had to learn otherwise by Kelvin. Maxwell's field theory provides without exception a mathematical description for the Hertzian wave. For the Tesla radiation however no field description exists! This by the way is the circumstance, why this wave could disappear from the textbooks and again fall into oblivion. Tesla himself had problems to theoretically imagine, what happens at his wave. His models in some points perhaps were even better than the official textbook opinion, but not without contradiction to accepted regularities. That's why Tesla did without a publication of his ideas, although he in his lifetime had filed away at an own theory.

[i]: Nikola Tesla: Famous Scientific Illusions, III. The Singular Misconception of the Wireless, Electrical Experimenter, Feb. 1919, printed in Tesla Said, p. 197

Figure 21.2 A:

William   Thomson,   1846
becoming   Professor   at
Glasgow   University   with
the   age   of   22   years.
From   1892.   on   he   was
called Lord Kelvin.[i]
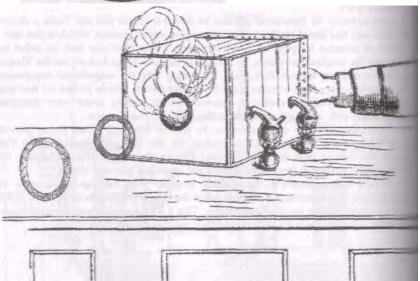
Fig. 21.2 B: Vortex rings from a smoke vortex gun.[i]

[i]:   David Ash, Peter Hewitt: Science of the gods, Gateway Books, Bath, 1990

21.2 Helmholtzian ring-like vortices in the aether

Tesla told Kelvin at his visit from the meeting with the German Professor Hermann von Helmholtz on the occasion of the World's Fair in Chicago 1893. Kelvin knew him very well and had cooperated with him in the past. Now the vortex concept of his colleague and his model of stable vortex rings were very obliging.
In the case of a standing wave the impulse is passed on from one particle to the next. In the case of acoustics for instance we are dealing with a shock wave, where one air molecule knocks the next. In this way sound propagates as a longitudinal wave. Correspondingly the question is raised: What sort of quanta are the ones, which in the case of the Tesla radiation carry the impulse?

Lord Kelvin was already on the way back to Europe on the steamship and he deduced: The Tesla experiments prove the existence of longitudinal standing waves in space. In the question, what passes on the impulse, Kelvin comes to the conclusion: it are vortices in the aether! With that he had found an answer in experience. With his students he built boxes, with which he could produce smoke rings, to be able to study and demonstrate in experiments the special properties of ring-like vortices in their flow technical analogy (fig. 21.2[i]). But he didn't have ready a suitable field theory.

The from Germany to the Isles exported vortex physics for a short time could establish in England, before it was slaughtered and buried by the German quantum physicists. A main advocate has been James Clerk Maxwell, who held the vortex theory for the best and most convincing description of matter[ii]. As his successor at the Cavendish laboratory in Cambridge J. J. Thomson was appointed, who already as a young man had got a price for a mathematical treatise about vortices[iii]. He discovered the electron and imagined it, how could it be otherwise, as a field vortex.

The crucial weakness of vortex physics, the lacking of an usable field theory, was of benefit to the emerging quantum physics. This could change fundamentally with the discovery of the potential vortex, the vortex of the electric field[i4]!
In addition is the experimental proof of a vortex transmission as a longitudinal wave in air or in a vacuum, as it has been furnished by Tesla already 100 years ago, neither with Maxwell's theory nor with the today normally used quantum theory explicable or compatible. An urgent need is present for a new field theory!

[i]: David Ash, Peter Hewitt: Science of the gods, Gateway Books, Bath, England 1990.
[ii]: James Clerk Maxwell: "...the vortex rings of Helmholtz, which Thomson imagines as the true form of the atom, fulfil more conditions than any other previous concept of the atom."
[iii]: J.J. Thomson: "the vortex theory is of much more fundamental nature than the usual theory of solid particles."
[i4]: Konstantin Meyl: Potentialwirbel Band 1 (1990) and Band 2 (1992), INDEL-Verlag, Villingen-Schwenningen.

Scalar waves, a mathematical reasoning (I)

1. prerequisite: wave equation (textbook-formulation)

$$\Delta\,E \;=\; \frac{1}{c^2}\cdot\frac{\delta^2 E}{\delta t^2}$$

taking   apart   of   the   delta   operator   mathematically   (Laplace operator) according to the rules of vector analysis (fig. 5.0):

$$\Delta\,E \;=\; \text{grad div } E \;-\; \text{rot rot } E$$
$$\text{wave} \;=\; \text{longitudinal} \;+\; \text{transverse} \qquad \textbf{(21.1)}$$

2. State of the art of technology: Hertzian wave = transverse wave
special case: =   solution   of   Maxwell's   field   equations
no sources:

$$\text{div } E \;=\; 0 \qquad \text{and} \qquad -\,\text{rot rot } E \;=\; \frac{1}{c^2}\cdot\frac{\delta^2 E}{\delta t^2} \quad (21.3)$$

transverse wave:
   field pointers oscillate crosswise to the direction of propagation
   The propagation occurs with the speed of light c.

3. claim: Tesla radiation = longitudinal wave
special case:
irrotationality:

$$\text{rot } E \;=\; 0 \quad \text{and} \quad \text{grad div } E \;=\; \frac{1}{c^2}\cdot\frac{\delta^2 E}{\delta t^2} \qquad (21.4)$$

longitudinal wave, shock wave, standing wave:
   field   pointer   oscillates   in   the   direction   of   propagation.
   Velocity of propagation is variable!

Fig. 21.3:   The special cases of the wave equation

21.3 Taking apart of the wave equation

Before one plunges into the adventure of an entirely new field theory, it first of all should be traced and analysed, what the latest textbooks say about scalar waves.

There some scalar or vector potentials are introduced; there the constant of dielectricity e is written down as a complex variable, although it physically seen concerns a material constant, only to be able to calculate with this trick artificially a loss angle, which should indicate the losses occurring in a dielectric, where in reality it concerns vortex losses. Of course one can explain the dielectric losses of a capacitor or the heating in a microwave oven entirely without vortex physics with such a label fraud, but it should be clear to anyone, that in a complex constant lies buried an inner contradiction, which is incompatible with physical concepts.
We are used to such auxiliary descriptions so much, that the majority of today's physicists tend to attribute physical reality to this mathematical nonsense. As pragmatists they put themselves on the standpoint if with that experimental results can be described, then such an auxiliary description can't be so wrong after all. Doing so the circumstance is forgotten that here the ground of pure science is abandoned and is replaced by creeds.

We find everything already in the wave equation, as it can be found in all textbooks.

$$\Delta \mathbf{E} \;=\; \frac{1}{c^2} \cdot \frac{\delta^2 \mathbf{E}}{\delta t^2} \qquad (21.1)$$

Behind this formulation two completely different kinds of waves are hiding, because the used delta operator consists of two parts according to the rules of vector analysis:

$$\text{grad div } \mathbf{E} \;-\; \text{rot rot } \mathbf{E} \;=\; \Delta \mathbf{E} \qquad (21.2)$$
$$\text{longitudinal} \;/\; \text{transverse} \quad \text{wave}$$

We want to discuss two special cases.
If we put the left part (in eq. 21.2) to zero (div E = 0) which is tantamount to no sources of the field then the well-known radio wave remains, which also is called Hertzian wave, after Heinrich Hertz, as said, had experimentally detected it in Karlsruhe 1888:

$$\text{div E} = 0 \qquad \text{and} \qquad -\text{rot rot } \mathbf{E} \;=\; \frac{1}{c^2} \cdot \frac{\delta^2 \mathbf{E}}{\delta t^2} \quad \text{(special case)} \qquad (21.3)$$

It concerns the transverse wave, described by Maxwell, for which the field pointers oscillate crosswise to the direction of propagation. The propagation again occurs with the speed of light c. So much concerning the state of the art of technology.
But as we see, in the mathematical formulation of the wave equation is hiding, yes, even more than only the generally known electromagnetic wave. The no sources approach is a neglect, which only is valid under certain prerequisites!

Scalar waves, a mathematical reasoning (II)

3. claim: Tesla radiation = longitudinal wave

$$\boxed{\text{rot } \mathbf{E} \; = \; 0}\quad \text{and} \quad \boxed{\text{grad div } \mathbf{E} \; = \; \frac{1}{c^2}\cdot\frac{\delta^2\mathbf{E}}{\delta t^2}}\quad (21.4)$$

special case:
source field, because div E $\neq$ 0

=>   sources   =   charge   carriers   (plasma   waves)
=> sources = vortex structures

---

4.   approach: (div E $\neq$ 0)   is a scalar!   =>   scalar wave
=> E-field vector can be derived from a scalar potential φ:

$$\boxed{\mathbf{E} \; = \; - \text{grad } \varphi}\quad (21.5)$$

and   div $\mathbf{E}$ = $-$ div grad φ $\equiv$ $-\Delta\varphi$ (21.6)

inserted in eq. 21.4:   homogeneous scalar wave equation

$$\boxed{\Delta\varphi \; = \; \frac{1}{c^2}\cdot\frac{\delta^2\varphi}{\delta t^2}}\quad (21.7)$$

---

5. proof: For the case of an additional space charge density
ρ_{el} should be considered: div D $= \rho_{el}$
and   div E $= \rho_{el}/\varepsilon$ (21.8)

inhomogeneous scalar wave equation = plasma wave!

$$\boxed{\Delta\varphi \; = \; \frac{1}{c^2}\cdot\frac{\delta^2\varphi}{\delta t^2} - \frac{\rho_{el}}{\varepsilon}}\quad (21.9)$$

Fig.   21.4:   Derivation   of   the   plasma   wave
as an example of a scalar wave

21.4 Derivation of the scalar wave equation

Making neglects by all means is normal and legal in science. But it may not be carried out at will and untested. In any case an error consideration is necessary, the result of which should be, that the neglect indeed is sufficiently small.

In the here presented case of the wave equation I haven't found one single textbook, in which this error consideration has been carried out. As a result of this inexcusable negligence there is the danger that exactly the aspect is neglected, which it actually concerns. This could lead to catastrophical results, e.g. that the causes for electrosmog, for numerous EMC-problems, for biological and technical effects aren't seen and understood anymore, that pure science once more dilapidates to a creed!

In the case of the wave equation the assumption of no sources describes only one side of the medal. The other side, which for the electromagnetic wave occurs as an error term, we get if we this time put the right part in equation 21.2 to zero (rot E = 0).

In this case a divergence of the field is present, which requires a source field. As sources some charge carriers, quanta or at least particle structures, e.g. vortex structures have to exist. Their propagation occurs, as we know it from the sound propagation, as shock wave in longitudinal manner. The air molecules, the quanta or particle structures thereby oscillate in the direction of propagation. Also the field pointer has a component in this direction

$$\text{rot } E = 0 \qquad \text{and} \qquad \text{grad div } \mathbf{E} = \frac{1}{c^2} \cdot \frac{\delta^2 \mathbf{E}}{\delta t^2} \qquad \text{(special case)} \qquad (21.4)$$

The occurring divergence of the field pointer (div E) is a scalar, for which reason this wave preferably is called scalar wave.

In the special case of a scalar wave (rot E = 0) the E-field vector can be derived from a scalar potential φ:

$$\mathbf{E} = -\text{ grad } \varphi \qquad (21.5)$$

On the one hand this term is used in the wave equation 21.4 on the right-hand side without forming the gradient on both sides of the equation. On the other hand the divergence of the approach 21.5:

$$\text{div } \mathbf{E} = -\text{ div grad } \varphi \equiv -\Delta \varphi \qquad (21.6)$$

is applied in equation 21.4. The result is the homogeneous scalar wave equation:

$$\Delta \varphi = \frac{1}{c^2} \cdot \frac{\delta^2 \varphi}{\delta t^2} \qquad (21.7)$$

Scalar waves, a mathematical reasoning (III)

Proof: plasma wave =
                          inhomogeneous scalar wave equation

$$\Delta\varphi \;=\; \frac{1}{c^2}\cdot\frac{\delta^2\varphi}{\delta t^2} \;-\; \frac{\rho_{el}}{\varepsilon} \quad (21.9)$$

one solution[i]: $\omega^2 = c^2\cdot k^2 + \omega_p^2$ (= Langmuir waves).

Fig. 21.5 A: Derivation of the plasma wave as an example of
the existence of scalar waves in the wave equation

Hertzian
oscillator with
much energy at
low degree of
effectiveness

Grounded oscillator
(according to Tesla)
with little energy at
high degree of
effectiveness
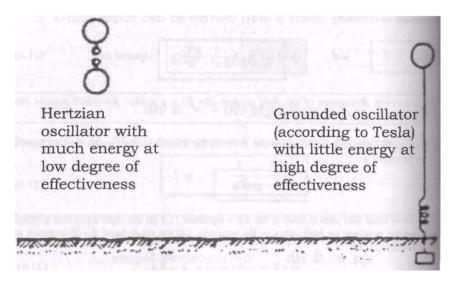
Fig. 21.5 B: Nikola Tesla explains the difference between   his
radiation and the Hertzian wave.[ii]

<i>:   The solution describes dispersion relations of plasma waves; longitudinal
wave movements + Langmuir oscillations of the electron density.
<ii>:   Nikola Tesla: The Problem of Increasing Human Energy, The Century
Monthly Magazine, June 1900, ISBN 1-882137-00-0, Page i-15

21.5 Derivation of a plasma wave

Doing without formation of the gradient for the derivation of the homogeneous wave equation is tantamount to an integration of the equation. We hence under certain conditions must expect the occurring of an integration constant.

This is the case, if in addition a space charge density ρ_{el} occurs as source of the field, which according to Maxwell equation 4 can be considered as the divergence of a dielectric displacement D (fig. 21.4):

$$\text{div } \mathbf{D} = \rho_{el},$$

resp. with the relation of material $\mathbf{D} = \varepsilon \cdot \mathbf{E}$: $\text{div } \mathbf{E} = \rho_{el}/\varepsilon \equiv -\Delta\varphi.$ (21.8)

If we complete this contribution with possible present field sources, then the inhomogeneous scalar wave equation results:

$$\boxed{\Delta\varphi = \frac{1}{c^2} \cdot \frac{\delta^2\varphi}{\delta t^2} - \frac{\rho_{el}}{\varepsilon}}\ (21.9)$$

For these equations solutions have been published[i]. They have the same form, as the well-known dispersion relations of Langmuir waves. That is electron plasma waves, thus longitudinal wave movements associated with Langmuir oscillations of the electron density.

With that it has been proven that scalar waves and longitudinally propagating standing waves are described by the wave equation and are contained in it. This in any case is valid in general just as in the special case of a plasma wave, as mathematically could be derived here.

From the example of the derivation of plasma waves from the wave equation 21.1, we see that scalar waves by all means are known and their existence isn't casted doubt on at all. After all the mathematically won solution is secured by numerous experiments. Why do textbooks concerning high-frequency engineering then ignore the scalar wave parts in the wave equation?

Our specialists seem to concentrate so much on their branch, that they are losing the view on the Big Whole. They practice one-eyed physics, where the plasma physicist keeps one eye shut and the radio technician the other eye. What the other one does and researches, they don't understand anymore for ages. It is necessary to point them to their common root.

The perhaps most important statement of the wave equation is that every emitted wave contains both longitudinal and transverse parts! Both parts in addition occur jointly, so that for corresponding boundary conditions it can be expected that one part is t r a n s f o r m i n g into the other part. The HF technician then suddenly measures less field strength and comes to the conclusion that his radio wave has been damped or partly absorbed. Doing so heat is created, he says, although the wave equation by no means contains a corresponding term for the necessary thermodynamic description. He simply hasn't understood the wave equation!

Absorption means nothing but transverse waves in the case of a disturbance rolling up to vortices, to become a scalar wave in this way (fig. 1.4 and 5.3). With that they are evading every field strength measurement and what can't be measured doesn't exist in one-eyed physics! Therefore can't exist, what shouldn't exist.
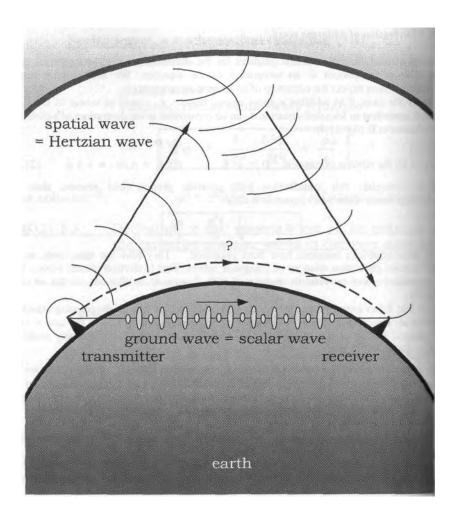
Fig. 21.6:   Ground waves, which follow the curvature of the
                earth and radio waves reflected at the ionosphere.[i]

<i>:   Meinke, Gundlach: Hochfrequenztechnik, 4.Aufl. Springer-Verlag Berlin
1986, Seite R 18: „Lang-, Mittel- and Kurzwelle breiten sich einerseits
entlang der Erdoberflache als Bodenwellen, andererseits unter Mitwirkung
der Ionosphare als Raumwellen aus."

21.6 Mistakes of the HF technology

The devastating judgement of Tesla, Hertz was mistaken, was rash. His claim of having detected the Maxwell wave himself, proved to be untenable. With this claim in particular Tesla hud the scientific world against him. If one opens encyclopedias or textbooks then one gets the impression, until the day of today science still hasn't forgiven Tesla, what once more shows how persistent prejudices are kept.

Just as little does a verdict of the American Supreme Court justice to the true circumstances, with the decision of the highest judges that Tesla and not Marconi is entitled the right to be the inventor of the radio. As we see, have both inventors in reality used completely other kinds of waves. The available transmitters of 100 years ago we would from today's viewpoint call ,,broadband dirt slingers". These spark flying monster have blown both parts of the wave equation, the transverse as well as the longitudinal part, into the air to ample extent. What distinguished the wave pioneers was their receiver technique, was eventually the question, which wave part they have filtered and utilized.

Marconi worked with dipole antennas, as already Heinrich Hertz. With that both could preferably track down and detect the radio wave. So they also should be entitled the right to be pioneers of radio technology. The verdict of the highest judges doesn't justice to this circumstance and should rather be judged as a nationalistically coloured political issue. Tesla however worked with two spherical electrodes, in which he preferably replaced one electrode by the globe, by grounding his devices. In this way he could receive the scalar wave parts. But that are not radio waves! Scalar waves have completely other properties, one even could be inclined to call them opposite properties.

To improve the degree of effectiveness of the transmission stretch one naturally was trying to also optimise the transmitting installation with regard to the respectively used wave part. Tesla optimised the scalar wave part and could record reactions of biological beings. His part represents a set of difficulties of the environmental compatibility, which should be taken serious. In the beginning the Marconists on the ships, as the radio operators were called, suffered from the so-called radio operator disease, which is unsolved until today. This phenomenon only disappeared after the radio devices on board had been optimised in favour of the used radio wave. The reached and measuring technically verifiable increase of the degree of effectiveness, primarily obtained by an improved antenna adjustment, simultaneously means a reduction of the scalar wave part, which endangers health.

But a received signal hides the receiver technician, if it has been on the way as a transverse or as a longitudinal wave. The coupling in one and the same equation leaves open both possibilities. Every radio amateur knows the so-called ground waves, which arrive faster at the receiver, than the Hertzian waves mirrored at the ionosphere, which propagate in a straight line. Allegedly the ground waves follow the curvature of the earth[1], so it is written in expert books. This explanation hurts, since who can see along the curvature of the earth with a pair of field glasses. He would see the back of his head! No, the explanation the ground waves would run along the earth's surface is pure nonsense. The interference and the fading with which the radio amateur is fighting, are a result of the differently fast arriving wave parts, and doing so the scalar wave part tunnels as a straight line right through the earth (fig. 21.6)!
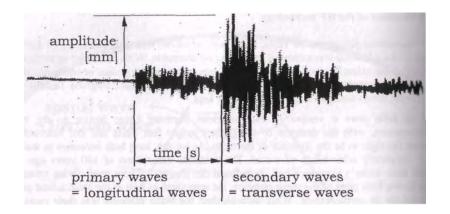
Fig. 21.7 A: Longitudinal and transverse earth quake waves.
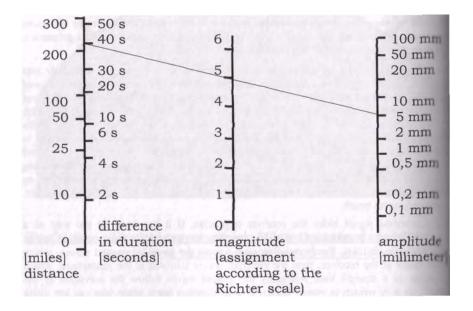
Fig. 21.7 B: Analysis according to the Richter scale.
(e.g.: 40 s duration between S- and P-waves for 5 mm amplitude means an earthquake of strength 5 in a distance of 220 miles.)

21.7 Coupling of the wave parts

The set of difficulties of ground waves makes clear the coupling of longitudinal and transverse waves as two aspects or parts of a wave. As the corresponding equation 21,1 mathematically taken apart into 21.2 dictates, does every transmitter emit both parts.

Exactly this circumstance the owners of allotments have used, which directly near a transmitter had illuminated their estate with freely hung up fluorescent lamps. The transmitter runners after that wanted to present them the power bill.and they could obtain, that this kind of illumination technique was prohibited.

Nowadays anyone may operate a high-frequency technical installation, even if he hasn't understood at all the wave equation used by that. Actually one should have been grateful to the allotment owners, if they withdraw the scalar wave radiation, which is incompatible with the environment and biologically harmful, with their fluorescent lamps. Taken exact it even is the task of the transmitting technician to pay attention to it. that only radio waves are sent into the air, since only those should be used. The time has come to reverse the burden of proof to protect the environment, nature, the consumer and the unasked and not involved persons, which are irradiated.

From other areas, for instance from flow dynamics or for body sound is generally known that both wave parts exist and in addition occur jointly. In the case of a propagation through the earth, like for an earthquake, both parts are received and utilized. Because their propagation is differently fast, the faster oscillations arrive first and that are the longitudinal ones. From the time delay with which the transverse waves arrive at the measurement station, the distance to the epicentre of the quake is determined by means of the different velocity of propagation. For geophysicists this tool is part of everyday knowledge (fig. 21.7).

Only who keeps one eye shut, could mean that the electromagnetic wave is purely transverse and sound purely longitudinal. It is true that a transverse sound wave doesn't get too far in air, for which reason sound as a rule is considered as a purely longitudinal wave by neglecting this part, but such a neglect may not be carried out in general, it must be checked if it is legitimate from case to case and an error consideration should be carried out.

Further examples for the coupling of the wave parts are furnished by the latest tunnel experiments. Here so-called pure transverse waves are sent into a tunnel, through which they don't fit through at all. The Maxwell-theory then dictates that behind the tunnel no signal   should   be   measurable.
But a signal is being measured, which in the tunnel in addition was faster than allowed.

In conferences again is being discussed about the wave equation. The imagination of the specialists reaches from phase velocities of an electromagnetic wave, which isn't present at all up to instantaneous tunnelling, during which the clocks should stop[i].

The wave equation however supplies the only possible answer: The tunnel filters out the scalar wave parts and lets pass from them only those, which are sufficiently small and correspondingly fast!

[i]: see Part 1, Chapter 6.14
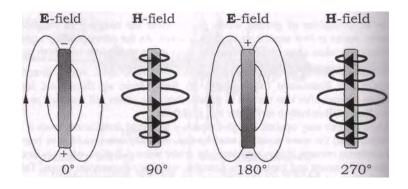
Fig. 21.8 A: The fields of the oscillating dipole antenna
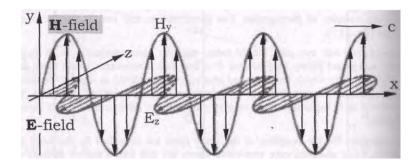
Fig. 21.8 B: The planar electromagnetic wave in the proximity

<i>:   Zinke, Brunswig: Lehrbuch der Hochfrequenztechnik, 1.   Bd., 3. Aufl.
Springer-Verlag Berlin 1986, Seite 335

<ii>:   dpa-message in the Sudkurier of 25.11.2000:   „Gefahr furs Herz"
(Translated:) Patients with a cardiac pacemaker produced in the Netherlands
have been warned by the producer of the device (Vitatron) to be careful when
passing anti-theft installations in stores. For devices, which were implanted
between 1992 and 1998, there is the danger of the implant failing.

21.8 Set of difficulties of the near-field

In high-frequency technology is distinguished between the near-field and the far-field. Both have fundamentally other properties.

Heinrich Hertz did experiment in the short wave range at wavelengths of some meters. From today's viewpoint his work would rather be assigned the far-field. As a professor in Karlsruhe he had shown that his, the electromagnetic, wave propagates like a light wave and can be refracted and reflected in the same way. It is a transverse wave for which the field pointers of the electric and the magnetic field oscillate perpendicular to each other and both again perpendicular to the direction of propagation. It hence would be obvious, if in the case of the Hertzian wave it would concern the far-field. Besides the propagation with the speed of light also is characteristic that there occurs no phase shift between E-field and H-field.

In the proximity it looks completely different. The proximity concerns distances to the transmitter of less than the wavelength divided by 2*pi. Nikola Tesla has broadcasted in the range of long waves, around 100 Kilohertz, in which case the wavelength already is several metres. For the experiments concerning the resonance of the earth he has operated his transmitter in Colorado Springs at frequencies down to 6 Hertz. Doing so the whole earth moves into the proximity of his transmitter. We probably have to proceed from assumption that the Tesla radiation primarily concerns the proximity, which also is called the radiant range of the transmitting antenna.

For the approach of vortical and closed-loop field structures derivations for the near-field are known[i]. Doing so it must be emphasized that the structures don't follow from the field equations according to Maxwell, but the calculations are based on assumed rotation symmetrical structures. The Maxwell theory by no means is capable of such a structure shaping by principle. The calculation provides as an important result[i] that in the proximity of the emitting antenna a phase shift exists between the pointers of the E- and the H-field. The antenna current and the H-field coupled with it lag the E-field of the oscillating dipole charges for 90° (fig. 21.8). These charges form a longitudinal standing wave the antenna rod or antenna dipole. For this reason also the fields produced by high-frequency currents at first have the properties of a longitudinal wave in the proximity of the antenna.

The near-field already is used in practice in anti-theft devices, as they are installed in the entrance area of stores. The customer walks through the scalar wave transmitters. If the coupling coil has not been removed at the cash point, then a signal from the alarm system sounds. The coils work purely passive, i.e. they are supplied with electric energy per scalar wave and stimulated 'to oscillate for their part. Then the effect back on the transmitter is being utilized. Even if the principle is functioning, people still should be warned not to use a technology, which has not been understood completely. Then not explained catastrophes are inevitable [ii].

---

[i]: Zinke, Brunswig: Lehrbuch   der   Hochfrequenztechnik,   1.   Bd.,   3.Aufl. Springer-Verlag Berlin 1986, Seite 335

[ii]: dpa-message in the Sudkurier of 25.11.2000: ,,Gefahr furs Herz". (quoted at the left, fig. 21.8)
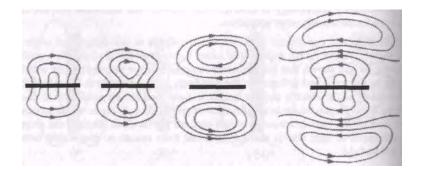
Fig. 21.9 A: The coming off of the electric field lines from a dipole
The forming vortex structures found a longitudinal electric wave carrying impulse!

electromagnetic wave (transverse)
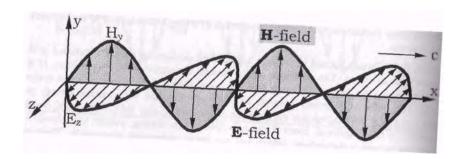
Fig. 21.9 B: The planar electromagnetic wave in the far zone

21.9 Transition to the far-field

In sufficient distance to the transmitting antenna as far-field the transverse electromagnetic wave results (fig. 21.9 B). It is distinguished by not occurring a phase shift between E- and H-field anymore. Every change of the electric alternating field is followed immediately and at the same time by a change of the magnetic alternating field and vice versa.

In the proximity however the phase shift amounts to 90°. Somewhere and somehow between the causing antenna current and the far-field a conversion from a longitudinal into a transverse wave occurs. How should one imagine the transition?

In the books the coming off of a wave from a dipole is represented according to fig. 21.9 A. The fields come off the antenna, the explanation reads. If we consider the s t r u c t u r e   o f the fields coming off then we see field vortices, which run around a point, which we can call the vortex centre. Such field structures naturally are capable of forming standing waves and to carry an impulse. The scalar wave field in general and the near-field in special we only will understand with suitable vortex physics and with a field theory extended for corresponding vortices we also will be able to calculate it. Postulates cannot replace field physics!

Be that as it may, the vortex, after having left the antenna, for bigger getting distance at some time seems to unroll to propagate further as an electromagnetic wave. There takes place a transition from longitudinal to transverse, or spoken figuratively, from vortex to wave. How complete this conversion takes place, how big the respective wave parts are afterwards, on the one hand depends on the structure and the dimensions of the antenna. Information is given by the measurable degree of effectiveness of the antenna.

The vortex structures on the other hand are the stabler, the smaller and faster they are. If they are as fast as the light or even faster, then they become stable elementary particles, for instance neutrinos. Slower vortex structures however are predominantly instable. They preferably unwind to waves. Vortex and wave prove to be two possible and under certain conditions even stable field configurations.

Let's emphasize: A Hertzian dipole doesn't emit Hertzian waves! An antenna as near-field without exception emits vortices, which only at the transition to the far-field unwind to electromagnetic waves. A Hertzian wave just as little can be received with a dipole antenna! At the receiver the conditions are reversed. Here the wave is rolling up to a v o r t e x, w h i c h usually is called and conceived as a „standing wave". Only this field vortex causes an antenna current in the rod, which the receiver afterwards amplifies and utilizes. The mostly unknown or not understood near-field properties prove to be the key to the understanding of the wave equation and of the method of functioning of transmitting and receiving antenna. The question is asked, how one should imagine the rolling up of waves to vortices and vice versa the unrolling? How could an useful vortex mode) look like?

Circularly polarized wave (transverse)
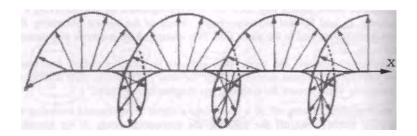
Fig. 21.10 A: Left-circular polarized wave
                  (as explanation for the transition to a vortex and
                  to a scalar wave)

electric wave (longitudinal)
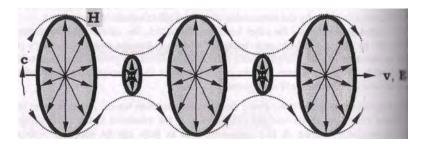
Fig. 21.10 B: Magnetic ring-vortices form an electric scalar wave.

vortex and wave	= two stable field configurations
electromagnetic wave	= transverse wave propagating in a straight line
ring-like vortex	= transverse wave running in circles
vortex velocity	= speed of light c
change of structure	= if the field is disturbed without expense of energy

22.10 Scalar wave model

The light, as electromagnetic wave, in the presence of a heavy mass or of strong fields is bent towards the field source (fig. 6.10). The wave normally propagating in a straight line thus can be diverted. The square of the speed of light further is inversely proportional to the permeability and dielectricity, short, in presence of matter it is more or less strongly slowed down. If this slowing down of the wave occurs one-sidedly, then a bending of the path can be expected as well. At the end of the antenna a reflection and a going back of the wave can occur, which at the other end again hits itself. Now the wave has found a closed-loop structure, which can be called vortex. The figures 21.10 B and 21.11 A show the two possible structures.

In technical books this vortex with the properties of a „standing wave" is explained gistly. Near-field and standing wave are two examples, how the textbooks succeed in describing mathematically right a small part of the scalar wave properties, without having to have a good look at vortex physics. With such auxiliary descriptions however the end is reached fast, if for instance it concerns understanding a pure scalar wave transmission according to Nikola Tesla (fig. 19.11) and the special properties of this wave type. With the vortex concept of an extended field physics new horizons are opening.

If we direct our look again to the sketches (fig. 21.10 B and 21.11 A). In both cases electromagnetic waves are represented which propagate with the speed of light, only that the wave doesn't go forward in a straight line but instead runs around in circles. It also furthermore is transverse, because the field pointers of the E-field and the H-field oscillate perpendicular to c. By means of the orbit the speed of light c now has become the vortex velocity. Wave and vortex turn out to be two possible and stable field configurations. For the transition from one into the other no energy is used; it only is a question of structure. The vortex structure thus stabilizes itself by means of the field dependency of the speed of light.

By the circumstance that the vortex direction of the ring-like vortex is determined and the field pointers further are standing perpendicular to it, as well as perpendicular to each other, there result two theoretical formation forms for the scalar wave. In the first case (fig 21.10 B) the vector of the H-field points into the direction of the vortex centre and that of the E-field axially to the outside. The vortex however will propagate in this direction in space and appear as a scalar wave, so that the propagation of the wave takes place in the direction of the electric field. I call this an electric wave. In the second case the field vectors exchange their place. The direction of propagation this time coincides with the oscillating magnetic field pointer (fig. 21.11 A), for which reason I speak of a magnetic wave.

The vortex picture of the rolled up wave already fits very well, because the propagation of a wave direction of its field pointer characterizes a longitudinal wave, because all measurement results are perfectly covered by the vortex model. It even is clear that no energy has to be spended for the conversion, since merely the structure has changed. If it becomes a vortex the wave just doesn't run in a straight line anymore but in circles, to either wrap around the magnetic field vector (fig. 21.10 B). or the electric field vector (fig. 21.11 A).

magnetic wave (longitudinal)
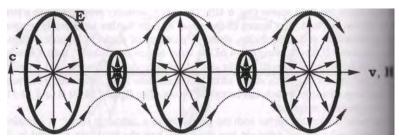
Fig. 21.11 A: The magnetic scalar wave
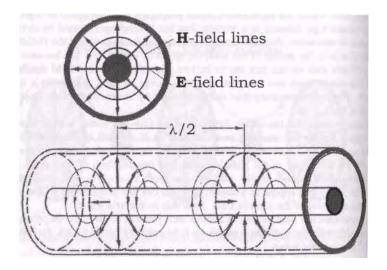
Figure 21.11 B: Wave propagation in a coaxial cable,
                (Example for waveguide, horn radiator, etc.)[i]
                Cross-section of coaxial conductor and field
                distribution in the direction of propagation.

[i]:   H. Armbruster, G. Grunberger: Elektromagnetische Wellen im
Hochfrequenz-

21.11 Double-frequent oscillation of size

Because a longitudinal wave propagates in the direction of the field, the field pointer also will oscillate with the velocity of propagation v. This hence isn't constant at all, it can significantly differ from that of the light and can take arbitrary values. According to the theory of objectivity the field oscillating with it determines its momentary size:

$$E, H \sim 1/v^2 \qquad\qquad\qquad (21.10).$$

The velocity of propagation v of the scalar wave thus oscillates double-frequently and with opposite phase to the corresponding field. A detailed description would mean, if the field strives for its maximum value, the velocity v of the wave reaches its smallest value. In the field minimum the scalar wave vice versa accelerates to its maximum value. For longitudinal waves therefore only an averaged velocity of propagation is given and measured, as this for instance is usual for the sound wave, and this can vary very strong as is well-known (body sound compared to air sound, etc.).
The two dual field vectors of E and H, the one in the direction of propagation and the one standing perpendicular to it, occur jointly. Both oscillate with the same frequency and both form the ring-like vortex in the respective direction. As a result the ring-like vortex also oscillates in its diameter double-frequently and with opposite phase to the corresponding field (fig. 21.10 Band 21.11 A).
This circumstance owes the ring-like vortex its property, to tunnel. No Faraday cage is able to stop it, as could be demonstrated in experiments[i]. Only therefore the ground wave runs through the earth and not along the curvature of the earth. A further example is the coaxial cable (fig. 21.11 B). Also this acts as a long tunnel and so it isn't further astonishing, that the electric field lines have the same orientation, as for a magnetic scalar wave. As a practical consequence in this place there should be warned of open cable ends, wave guides or horn radiators with regard to uncontrolled emitted scalar waves!
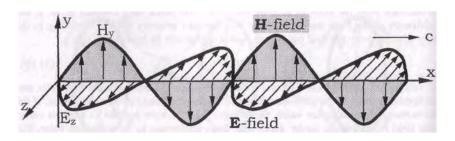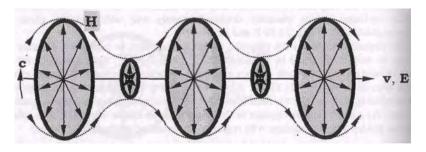
At present in the press is being discussed, if the cable network runners for some channels the mission to operate again should be withdrawn, because the airline radio traffic is being disturbed. The original opening for cable frequencies, which actually are reserved for the airline radio traffic, based on the erroneous assumption, that conflicts are unthinkable. But then the planes were disturbed in their communication. As the cause TV-cables made out, which hadn't been closed according to the rules with a resistor, as it by all means can occur on building sites and during renovation works. On the other hand is being argued with the small current, which flows through the coaxial cable, and the large distance to the planes also is cited. According to that it actually can't concern Hertzian waves. It presumably are scalar waves, which escape from the open cable ends and which are collected by a receiver in the plane. It indeed is very little field energy, but because it again is being collected and bundled, the scalar wave is able to exceed the part of the radio wave by far just at large distances and to cause problems. For such examples from practice the scalar wave theory is fully taking effect.

---

[i]: Adolf und Inge Schneider im Interview mit Prof. Dr.-Ing. Konstantin Meyl: Durchbruch in der Freien-Energie-Forschung, NET-Journal 12/1999, S. 7-9.

1. H. Hertz: electromagnetic wave (transverse)

2. Nikola Tesla: electric wave   (longitudinal)

3.   magnetic wave (longitudinal)
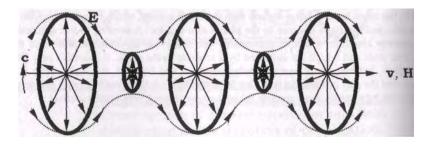
Fig. 21.12:   The three basic types according to the wave equation
(21.1), (electric, magnetic and electromagnetic wave).

21.12 Electric and magnetic scalar wave

Let us record: For the wave propagation there thus are three possible and stable states (fig. 21.12): the transverse electromagnetic wave according to Heinrich Hertz (fig. 1), the longitudinal electric wave according to Nikola Tesla (fig. 2), and a longitudinal magnetic wave (fig. 3), which isn't connected yet with a name of a discoverer. The last one is a pure product of my theoretical derivation. The question is asked, which practical meaning the magnetic wave could have.

It is formed by individual electric field vortices, which I have discovered and called potential vortices 1990. I proceed from the assumption that the youngest of the three waves will play the by far biggest role in the future, because its properties are unattainable, both with regard to the energy technical and to the information technical use. One example for each should support this thesis.

The experiments concerning the electric wave according to Nikola Tesla, where is being worked with electrically charged spheres, don't show a particularly high power. Magnetic converters, so the experiences of my laboratory activities, are superior to an electrostatic converter as a collector for free energy by far. That even can be expected, because a magnetic engine is much smaller than an electrostatic engine of the same power as is well-known.

At a congress of medicines was given a talk on the basic regulation of the cells, on the communication of the cells with each other. Professor Heine in his decades of research work has found out that the cells for the purpose of communication build up channels for instance in the connective tissue, which after having conducted the information again collapse. Interestingly the channels have a hyperboloid structure, for which no conclusive explanation exists.

The structure of the data channels however is identical with the one of a magnetic scalar wave, as shown in fig. 3. Through a channel formed such, which functions like a tunnel or a dissimilarly formed waveguide, only one very particular scalar wave can run through. Waves with different frequencies or wavelengths don't fit through the hyperboloid formed tunnel at all in the first place. Through that the information transmission obtains an extremely high degree of safety for interference.

To the biologist here a completely new view at the function of a cell and the basic regulation of the whole organism is opening. The information tunnel temporarily forms more or less a vacuum, through which only potential vortices can be conducted, and that without any losses - simply perfect! From this example is becoming clear that nature is working with scalar waves namely with magnetic waves.

One other point should be recorded: The mentioned tunnel experiments, in which speed faster than light is being measured with most different devices, impressively confirm the presence of scalar waves. But if scalar waves exist which are faster than light and other ones, which are slower, then it almost is obvious that also such ones will exist, which propagate exactly with the speed of light. These then will have all the properties of the light and won't differ from the corresponding electromagnetic wave in the observable result. As scalar wave it however is formed by vortex configurations, which unambiguously have particle nature. Nothing would be more obvious than to equate these quantum structures with the photons.

Question: Is the light   wave   or   particle?

Seen strictly <u>causal</u>,
i.e. physically in the
period between
1600 and 1900:

Descartes
(1596-1650)

Huygens
(1629-1695)

Newton
(1643-1726)

Young
(1773-1829)

Frauenhofer
(1787-1826)

Fresnel
(1788-1827)

Maxwell
(1831-1879)

Planck
(1858-1947)

Hertz
(1857-1894)

Einstein
(1879-1955)

dual
nature of
the light

Turning away from
classical physics:
(removing of the
principle of
cause and effect)

Heisenberg
(1899-1975)

de Broglie
(1891-1981)

Dirac (QED)
(1902-1984)

Fig. 22.1:   The view of some physicists concerning the
nature   of
the light as wave or as particle.

According   to   the   wave   equation   the   light
is a mixture of wave and photon radiation!

22 Properties of scalar waves

For the light quanta hypothesis the Nobel Prize for physics was awarded 1921. But it only was a hypothesis, an idee fixe, which was honoured here. It is quite odd, if such an important prize is awarded to a research scientist, who hasn't got the slightest idea what light quanta are anyway, of what they consist and how they are built up. Albert Einstein cleverly used the embarrassing situation, by in his celebration speech on the occasion of the awarding of the Nobel Prize giving a talk on the theory of relativity. After the speech a member of the committee found it necessary, to point to it, that this wasn't object of the awarding of the prize and that the theory of relativity concerns a pure theory, which can't be proven by principle. A theory hence neither could be awarded the Nobel Prize.
Such words on the occasion of awarding a prize for a daredevil hypothesis give the whole event really grotesque characteristics. But it came still worse.

22.1 Wave-particle compromise

Physicists of name and rank had come together. It concerned the question if the light is wave, or particle or even both at the same time? For both variants experimental proof was present, the discussion became inflamed and the things boiled over. Finally they were as smart as before, as Werner Heisenberg presented his ideas concerning the uncertainty principle. This compromise, on which one eventually came to an agreement, with good cause may be called the worst in the history of physics. It dictates me, what I shell see and how exact I may look. With it the contradiction should be overcome that the light contrary to every causality should be wave and particle at the same time.

Such fixings not only have a funny, but also a tragic side. Since it were authorities, which have approved the compromise and the whole community of science has confidence in the statements of its authorities, which immediately and unfiltered is entered in all textbooks. At the meeting it simply and solely concerned the wave equation and only that could have supplied the correct and only possible answer: It falls apart into two parts and this explains, why the light one time appears as an electromagnetic wave and the next time as a vortex particle, which is called photon. The conversion can take place at any time spontaneously and without putting on energy, so that depending on the used measuring technique the particle appears as wave or as particle, but of course never as both at the same time!

Looking back one can say that the funny thing about the situation was that all discussed about the wave and its properties known at that time, that all should know the wave equation. An equation as is well-known says more than a thousand words and one look would have sufficed entirely, to answer the controversial question once and for all. It would have saved us a lot.
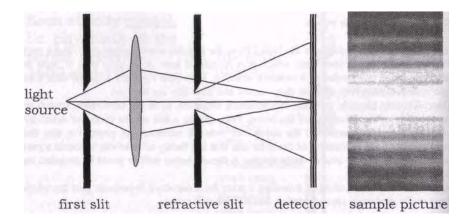
Fig. 22.2 A: Light forms interference patterns at the slit
                (light   stripes are formed, where the waves oscillate in
                phase, dark stripes, where they oscillate out of phase).
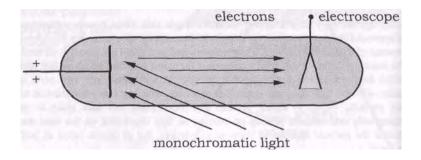
Fig. 22.2 B: The photo-electric effect

<i>:   Atome als Energiewellen. Physiker wandelten einen Strom von Natrium
atomen in Wellen um. III. Wissenschaft 7/1996, Seite 56 + 57

22.2 Concerning the measurement of light

The uncertainty principle with the interpretation of Heisenberg, the light is wave and particle at the same time, is incompatible with the wave equation. Heisenberg puts an equal sign, where in the wave equation in reality is present an addition of both wave parts. Fortunately in mathematics there is no need of speculating, there a derivation is right or wrong. Nothing is changed to that even if all physicists of the world should go in the wrong direction following the prevailing opinion. The wave equation exert an influence on the interpretation of the light experiments, on the one hand the ones concerning the interference and refraction of the light, where electromagnetic waves are becoming visible (fig. 22.2 A) and on the other hand the photo-electric effect, as proof of light quanta (fig. 22.2 B).

Already the wave theory of Huygens requires interference patterns of light rays, as they for instance are observed behind a slit, and demonstrates with that the wave nature. If on that occasion the particle nature is lost, if thus the photons present before the slit can't be detected behind the slit anymore, then plain and simple the measuring method, thus the slit is to blame for that. The vortices have unrolled themselves at the slit to waves. Corresponding experiments also have been carried out with matter. At the Massachusetts Institute of Technology whole sodium atoms were converted into waves. At the detector pure interference patterns were observed, which go as evidence for the successful dematerialization[1]. But the vortex physicist they show still more: they reveal, that atoms merely are waves rolled up to spherical vortices, which at any time and spontaneously can again unroll to waves at a lattice (chapter 5 and 7).
The common interpretation, the wave nature detectable behind a slit must have been present in the same form already before the slit, is untenable and in the end wrong, as makes clear the experiment with the sodium atoms.

The photo-electric effect, which on the other hand shows the quantum nature of the light, has been discovered by Heinrich Hertz, further investigated by Lenard and finally rendered more precisely by Millikan 1916 (fig. 22.2 B). It bases on the circumstance that light of higher frequency, thus blue light, has more energy than red light of lower frequency. But if electrons are knocked out a metal plate by light, then that occurs, by the waves rolling up to vortices. Now indeed photons are at work, which are detected with an electroscope indirectly.
In the same way a photon ray in a bubble chamber can be photographed. But also here the measuring method is responsible for what is being observed.

A good example is the human eye, the rods and cones of which merely can pick up potential vortices and pass them on to the nerves as so-called reaction potentials. Incident waves can only be detected, if they first have rolled up to vortices in the corpus vitreum of the eye. For us seeing, it doesn't play a role of how many percent vortices and waves the light is consisting.
Behind a sheet of glass for instance a larger vortex part can be expected and still the light has the same brightness as without sheet; the sheet of glass is perceived as transparent. We nevertheless must assume that light with a large wave part has another quality, than such light behind glass or artificial light with a large part of photons.

wave equation:

$$\Delta \mathbf{E} \;=\; \mathrm{grad}\;\mathrm{div}\,\mathbf{E} \;-\; \mathrm{rot}\;\mathrm{rot}\,\mathbf{E} \;=\; \frac{1}{c^2}\cdot\frac{\delta^2 \mathbf{E}}{\delta t^2}$$

Nikola Tesla:	*Heinrich Hertz:*
• **scalar wave** (electric <u>or</u> magnetic) = • **longitudinal wave**	**electromagnetic wave =** **transverse wave**
<u>form (each time for velocity of propagation v):</u>	<u>form (each time for frequency):</u>
• (v > c): neutrino radiation, morphogenetic fields,... • (v = c): photons, • (v < c): plasma wave, thermal vortices, biophotons, earth radiation,... • (v = 0): noise,...	• cosmic radiation • X-rays, • UV radiation, • light, • infra-red radiation, • microwaves, • radio waves, • VLF, ULF,...

Fig. 22.3:____   The two parts of the wave equation

22.3 Comparison of the parts of Tesla and Hertz

Light as a rule always is formed as photon radiation, even on the sun. If in the end only waves arrive on earth, then the vortices sometime on the way to us must have unrolled to waves. Photon radiation after all is a scalar wave radiation, which generally is predominant in the near-field of the source of radiation. There is no reason, why the light should act in another way than the wave radiated by a radio transmitter, which as well forms vortices in the near-field area, as we already have discussed. For different interpretations of wave properties of one and the same physical phenomenon there is no place in a unified theory.

If we stay at the comparison then it is not an individual case that an experimental setup is responsible for what is being measured and observed. A parallel case to the experiments concerning the nature of the light is the one concerning the wave propagation. Hertz has received and utilized the transverse part and Tesla the longitudinal part and either one claimed, only he is right. There doesn' t exist an other equation, which has been and is being ignored and misunderstood so thoroughly, as the wave equation.

Fig. 22.3 shows in a survey the two parts of the wave equation in the assignment to the terms and forms: Right hand side the electromagnetic wave according to Heinrich Hertz and left hand side the scalar wave according to Nikola Tesla. The terms, like on the one hand transverse wave and on the other hand longitudinal wave relate to the kind of wave propagation.

If the field pointers oscillate crossways to the direction of propagation, then as a consequence the velocity of propagation is decoupled from the oscillating fields. The result in all cases is the speed of light, and that in our observation is constant. It is usual to make a list for increasing frequency, starting at the longest waves (ELF and VLF) over the radio waves (LW, MW, SW, UHF), the TV channels (VHF, UHF), the microwaves, the infra-red radiation, the light, the X-rays up to the cosmic radiation.
It really is interesting that it concerns one and the same phenomenon despite the different forms! As long as Maxwell only had published a theory for the light, in the world of science 24 years long at first nothing at all happened. Only Heinrich Hertz with his short wave experiments opened the eyes. Now all suddenly started at the same time to research into various phenomena on the frequency scale, from Madame Curie over Konrad Rontgen up to Nikola Tesla, who primarily researched the area of long waves.

With regard to the scalar waves until now a corresponding booster detonation has failed to appear. The immense area is new ground scientifically, which is awaiting to be explored systematically. I try to make a contribution with my historic rebuild of a scalar wave transmission line according to the plans of Tesla[i].

---

[i]: Im Gesprach mit dem Fernsehmoderator und Buchautor Johannes von Buttlar weise ich auf die Chancen und technischen Moglichkeiten hin: Johannes von Buttlar im Gesprach mit Prof. Dr. Konstantin Meyl: Neutrinopower, Argo-Verlag Marktoberdorf, 1. Aufl. (2000).
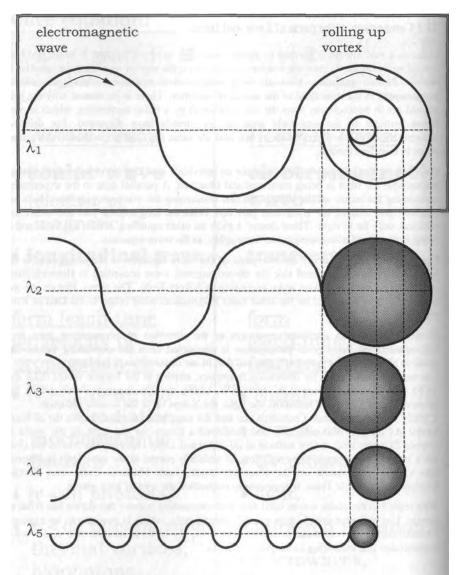
<u>Fig. 22.4:</u>   <u>The wave rolling up to a vortex.</u>

wavelength of the wave: $\lambda_1 = c/f_1$
wavelength of the vortex: λ_n (n = 1,2,3,4,5) $\leq \lambda_1$
$f_5 > f_4 > f_3 > f_2 > f_1$ $\lambda_5 < \lambda_4 < \lambda_3 < \lambda_2 < \lambda_1$

22.4 Noise, a scalar wave phenomenon

Longitudinal waves can take arbitrary velocities between zero and infinity, because they propagate in the direction of an oscillating field pointer and as a consequence of that their velocity of propagation oscillates as well and by no means is constant. It does make sense
to llist the forms of scalar waves according to their respective velocity of propagation (fig. 22.3, left column).
If we start with a localized vortex, a wave rolling up, which further is contracting. Doing so the wavelength gets smaller and smaller, whereas the frequency increases. An evenly frequency mixture distributed over a broad frequency band is observed. This phenomenon is called noise (fig. 1.4). But besides the localized noise, noise vortices can also be on the way with a certain velocity as a scalar wave, e.g. for the radio noise. In this case they show the typical properties of a standing wave with nodes and antinodes.

Also the earth radiation is said to have standing wave nature, which can be interpreted as slowed down neutrino radiation. If it is slowed down on the way through the earth, then the neutrino properties are changing, as this was measured in the Kamiokande detector in Japan recently. Unfortunately the proof occurs only indirect, because there still don't exist measuring devices for scalar waves. We'll talk about this problem area later and are content with the clue that already within living memory the standing wave property has been used to find water and deposits of ores and still is used today (fig. 22.4).

If we continue our considerations concerning the forms of scalar waves, as they are listed in fig. 22.3. The scalar waves, which are slower on the way than the light, are joined by the plasma waves. This is confirmed by measurements and calculations.
For thermal vortices, as they have been investigated by Max Planck and for biophotons, as they can be detected in living cells by colleague Popp, the velocity of propagation however is unknown. It was not and still is not measured at all, now more than ever. The research scientists have confidence in the assumption that all waves go with the speed of light, but that is a big mistake.
For all wave kinds there at least exists also one vortex variant, for radio waves for instance it is the radio noise, which propagates with a velocity different from c. The velocity is the product of frequency and wavelength:

$$v = f \cdot \lambda \quad (22.1)$$

From the three variables v, f and λ at least two must be measured, if one has a suspicion that it could concern scalar waves. At this place most errors are made in the laboratories. Countless experiments concerning the biological compatibility, concerning medical therapy methods and similar experiments must be repeated, because as a rule only the frequency is being measured and it has been omitted to at least check the wavelength or the velocity of the wave. Countless research scientists must put up with this accusation. Much too blind the scientists, who now again may start from the very beginning with their work, have had confidence in the predominance of the speed of light.

v » c

hard neutrino radiation
(small ring-like vortex)

v > c

weak neutrino radiation
(large ring-like vortex)

c   c

photon radiation (light =
individual ring-like vortex or
as an oscillating pair).

v < c

c   c

c

**plasma waves,
noise,
earth radiation**

(vortex balls,
consisting of
a multitude of
ring-like vortices).
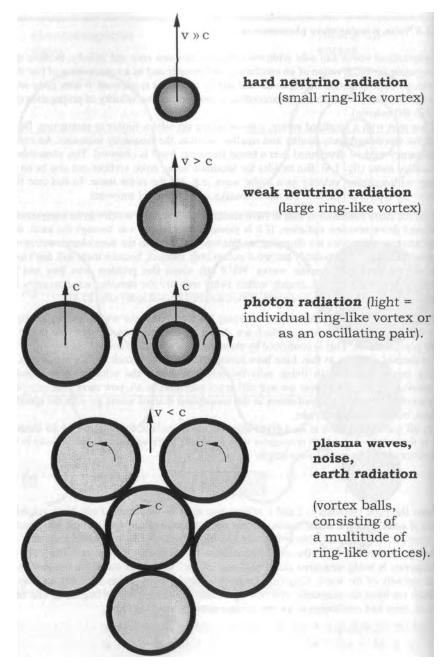
Fig. 22.5: ____ The ring-like vortex model of scalar waves.

22.5 Neutrino radiation

The neutrino physicists make the same error. They proceed from the assumption that their particles are on the way with a speed somewhat less than the speed of light c. This contradicts the observation according to which black holes should represent strong sources of neutrinos, which are black only for the reason that no particle radiation is able to escape them, which is on the way with c or even slower. If a black hole does hurl neutrino radiation into space, than that must be considerably faster than c, as normal neutrino physicists still by no means can imagine it today.

But the neutrino radiation only can be detected after it has been slowed down to a value, which is smaller than c. If the slowing down occurs slightly assymmetrical, then as a consequence a mean of the mass different from zero appears. The ,,measurement" of such a rest mass, as it at present is propagated and celebrated, is a classical measurement error! As long as a neutrino on the way to us still is faster than the light, the mean of its mass is generally zero. The effective value of the mass of a neutrino is however considerable. Only it is able to give account for the sought-for dark matter, as far as it must exist in the today supposed form anyway.

The Tesla radiation, that the discoverer Nikola Tesla already in own experiments had found out, is faster than light (chapter 9.7 and 17.2). Since this Tesla radiation according to the description is identical with the neutrino radiation, since it so to say forms a subset, I will call neutrino radiation all the scalar waves, which are faster than the light. This stretches from the weak radiation at low frequencies up to the hard neutrino radiation of cosmic origin. But the hardness of the radiation does not only increase with the frequency, it in particular increases with the velocity.

The neutrino radiation first of all is carrying energy. On top of this basic wave radiation in addition information can be modulated. Doing so extremely complex modulation variants are offering. Of this kind we must imagine thoughts, as being complex modulated vortices, which can propagate as scalar wave in space. Rupert Sheldrake calls this vortex field a morphogenetic field. At this place merely is pointed at his very interesting research results[i].

Thoughts can be standing in space, in the form of localized noise, but they also can move with speeds faster than light. According to that a communication with intelligent beings from other star systems by all means wouldn't be an Utopia anymore.

Every fast neutrino forms an individual ring-like vortex (fig. 7.12). The slower the scalar wave is, the more dependent the vortices become. The photon already can consist of two ring-like vortices (fig. 4.6), whereas plasma waves and other slow scalar waves can form from a multitude of individual vortices, which are rotating around each other, to form vortex balls and vortex streets (chapter 4.9 - 4.11). From this circumstance already results very different scalar wave behaviour in the different areas of the velocity of propagation. This trend for small velocities can as well be observed towards lower frequencies. For a certain wavelength the frequency after all (according to eq. 22.1) is proportional to the velocity of propagation.

---

[i]: R. Sheldrake: Seven experiments that could change the world. New York: Riverhead 1995

scalar wave	• electromag- netic wave
= energy wave:	
= *Tesla radiation*	= *Hertzian wave*
• can be modulated in a complex way	• can only be modulated linearly
• fast, parallel image transmission	• slow, serial image transmission
• focussing, transmission without losses	• scattering, transmission losses
• positive use: mobile, directional radio, energy converter	• positive use: radio, TV, information distributor
• negative use electro smog, radiation weapons	• negative use: mobile, directional radio
• transmitter (+/−) E, v (−/+) • receiver	E C dipole receiver
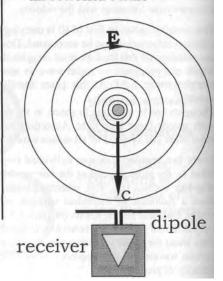
Fig. 22.6:_____ Scalar waves and radio waves, comparison of the properties.

22.6 Parallel instead of serial image transmission

We continue with our considerations concerning the special properties of scalar waves, represented in the left column, and compare these with the well-known behaviour of electromagnetic waves in the right column (fig. 22.3 is now followed by fig. 22.6). If we again take up the possibilities for modulation and the transmission of information, then it becomes very clear from the comparison that we today work with a technology, which we it is true master more or less, but which is everything else but optimum. For the Hertzian wave the velocity of propagation is constant. With the frequency therefore at the same time also the wavelength is being modulated. But that strongly limits the information transmission. An image for instance must be transmitted serially point after point and line after line. The serial image transmission takes place very slowly, for which reason the velocity of the PCs permanently must be increased, so that the amount of data can be managed.
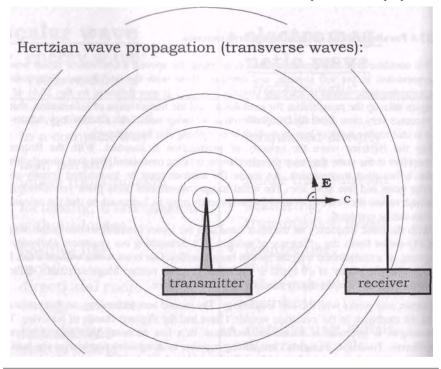
With the clock frequency on the other hand also the losses increase, so that in the end the CPU-cooler limits the efficiency of modern PCs. Something our engineers obviously do wrong, as a comparison with the human brain clarifies. Our brain works without a fan. For it a clock frequency of 10 Hertz is sufficient. It needs neither Megahertz nor Gigahertz Irequencies and despite that is considerably more efficient.

Nature only works with the best technology. The second best technology, as it is put to use in our machines, in the evolution wouldn't have had the slightest chance of surviving. The strategies to optimize of nature are merciless. In a free economy that goes completely different. There the ,,bunglers" are joining together to companies dominating the market, buying up the innovative ideas without further ado, to let them disappear in the drawer, so that they can bungle further in the way they did until now. It after all have been the lousy products, which have made them to the companies they are today. The ego of power is incompatible with the interests of nature.

Nature works with scalar waves and their velocity of propagation is arbitrary. Wavelength and frequency now can be modulated and information can be recorded separately. In this manner a whole dimension is gained to modulate, the image transmission can take place in parallel, which means considerably faster, safer and more reliable. As anyone of us knows by own experience, assembling the image takes place all at once, the memory of past images takes place ad hoc. Nature is indescribable more efficient than technology with the scalar wave technique.

If we again take the right-hand side of fig. 22.6 with the properties of the Hertzian wave. In the opinion of Nikola Tesla it is a gigantic waste of energy. The broadcasting power is scattered in all directions and the transmission losses are enormous. At the receiver virtually no power arrives anymore. To receive a radio signal the antenna power has to be amplified immensely. It is a wave, which actually only can be used as radio wave, thus as a wave with which arbitrary many participants should be reached.

This wave however is completely useless, if it concerns a point-to-point connection. If I want to call someone, to talk only with him, a radio wave is the entirely wrong method, because I with that bother hunderds and thousands of people that I don't want to call at all!

Hertzian wave propagation (transverse waves):

transmitter

receiver

Tesla   radiation   (radiations)   =   scalar   wave, longitudinal wave propagation:

(+/−)   v, **E**   (−/+)

transmitter   receiver

with grounding: ⁄⁄⁄⁄⁄
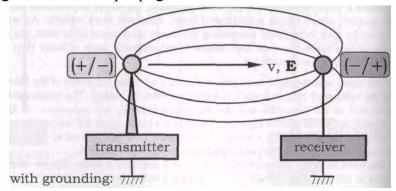
Fig. 22.7: ____Comparison of radio waves according to H. Hertz
                   and electric scalar waves according to Nikola Tesla.

22.7 Comparison of the properties

The course of the field lines clarifies the difference. For the scalar wave all field lines going away from the transmitter run together again. As long as no scattering field occurs, there also won't be any transmission losses. It is an energy wave, for which the full broadcasting power is transmitted wirelessly and which arrives at the receiver, by that focussing the field lines again.

Here one at once numerous technical applications come to mind, if energy should be transmitted wirelessly. A TV, which supplies its remote control with energy itself, lelemetric installations, which are fixed at difficult accessible or rotating machine parts and which can't work without energy supply.

For a mobile with 3 Watts of broadcasting power only a few microwatt arrive at the ground station. If I would have a scalar wave mobile, which functions with resonance, then a broadcasting power of some microwatt will be completely sufficient, to carry out a telephone call right through the earth. This minimum broadcasting power suffices, because everything, what is being transmitted, arrives at the receiver - crucial is that the conditions of resonance are fulfilled. That means, both must have the same frequency and the opposite phase. In addition the modulation has to fit, so that on the one hand not several participants in the conversation are getting in each other's way. For a purely carrier wave transmission on the other hand there would be the risk of natural fields being collected also and the power at the receiver taking inadmissibly high values. This is prevented effectively by a correspondingly complex modulation. Nature solves the problem in exactly this manner.

Mobile phone technology with scalar waves of course still is a pie in the sky. A big challenge for the engineers poses the adjustment condition of opposite phase and the fitting modulation, which Tesla called „individualisation"[i]. Entirely by the way the network runners and the telephone companies are getting quite superfluous.

Telephone charges, so one perhaps can read in the history books in a hunderd years, were the indication of a century of rigorous exploitation of man and nature. With scalar waves a direct, more dimensionally modulated information transmission directly with the partner of conversation is possible and sufficient energy is available to humanity any time and any place, without being dependent on any companies! This notion is not new, but it is inconvenient for the rules; already Nikola Tesla has written about it, but obviously no-one wanted to listen to him[ii].

Scalar waves are able, that is made clear by the properties, to revolutionize both the energy technology and the information technology fundamentally. It is more than only a technology for the new century. Scalar waves are a chance for the whole millennium!

---

[i]:   N. Tesla: Transmission of electrical energy without wires, Electrical World and Engineer 7.1.1905; Edition Tesla Vol. 4, P. 131.

[ii]:   N. Tesla, New York Times of 15.9.1908; Edition Tesla Vol. 6, P. 241.
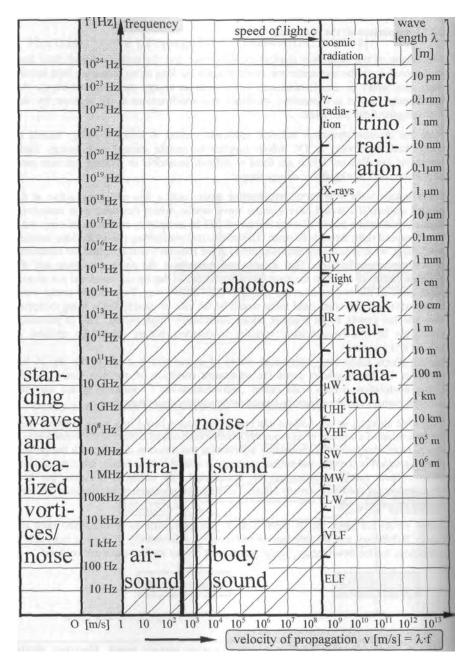
Fig. 23.1:   Frequency diagram of longitudinal and transverse

waves as they depend on the velocity v.

23. Research of scalar waves

Scalar waves are still unexplored area, scientific new ground as it were. Individual research scientists already have selectively ventured forward in this area and have described properties of the scalar wave investigated by them in their special research area mostly in measurement technical manner. But as a rule they lack the physical relation, as it is derived in this book for the first time. If we don't proceed from individual measurements, but from the wave equation and the mathematical physical derivation of scalar waves, then we have the great chance to understand as something belonging together on the one hand noise, photons, neutrinos and lots of other known phenomena as well as on the other hand still unknown phenomena, which are called parascientific. We should remember that we without theory of Maxwell and the representation in a frequency band today still wouldn't know that the radio waves (LW, MW, KW, UHF), the microwaves (μW), the infrared thermal radiation (IR), the light and the X-rays concern just the same phenomenon. The graphic representation of both waves in one diagram in this place is extremely helpful.

23.1 Frequency diagram

In fig. 23.1 the frequency f is shown against the velocity of propagation v with the wavelength λ as parameter. The broad line at $3*10^8$ m/s represents the speed of light c. Here the frequency band of the transverse waves can be found again in the well-known one-dimensional representation.

Crosswise to that, somewhat unusual, the longitudinal waves run. These start at the left at localized noise, over the sound as it propagates in air, in water and in metal, over a large, to a large extent still unexplored, range of the bio photons, the heat vortices and of the dowsing rod effects and end on the other side of the speed of light at the neutrinos. Between that the special case is settled that the particles, or said better vortices, propagating as a scalar wave have exactly the speed of light. It gives reasons for the circumstance, as already mentioned, that light can appear as wave or as photon radiation. It. according to the wave equation, after all always consists of a combination of both forms. At very high frequencies, e.g. the cosmic radiation, this combination is shifted in the direction of vortices and their distribution as a scalar wave, at low frequencies the tendency inversely goes in the direction of the normal wave.

If we assume that for the transverse wave over all frequencies a dozen of specialized gauges is necessary, each of them also can be switched over in range several times, then we can project that to record a scalar wave of a certain frequency over all velocities of propagation likewise 12 devices and for the whole field shown in fig. 23.1 approximately 12x12 = 144 devices will be necessary. Of these 144 gauges today just 12 are available. There thus still are missing 132 pieces, which should be developed. With these gauges, so I am convinced, the many white spots in the diagram can be tapped scientifically little by little if a systematic procedure is used. My vortex theory thus will be attached a central importance.
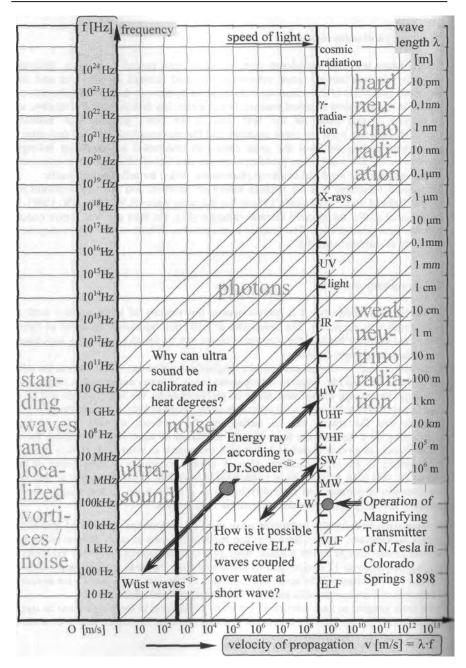
Fig.23.2: Frequency diagram with entries concerning Wust waves,
Tesla transmitter and various not understood effects.

23.2 The reverse of the HF medal

The diagram possibly may settle disputes, like the ones between the „Wustlingen" (note of the translator: the author here is playing with words, Wustlingen literally means lechers) and the „high-frequency engineers".

Professor Wust of Munich already 1934 had proven, that the Wust waves named after him in air have a velocity of propagation of approximately 10 m/s[i]. He investigated them in the frequency range between 16 Hz (λ= 60 cm) and 500 Hz (λ= 2 cm). The high-frequency technicians immediately have converted to the speed of light, since they don't know anything else, and on the spot have shifted the phenomenon into the range of the microwaves between 0.5 GHz (λ=60 cm) and 15 GHz (λ= 2 cm). In the diagram now can be found, at which place this phenomenon belongs actually. It presumably concerns the same „energy ray", which Dr. Soeder has observed and proven already at velocities of propagation of 55.2 km/s and wavelengths around 10 cm[ii].

Furthermore follows from the diagram (23.2), why ultra sound can be calibrated in heat degrees, and why radio reception of signals from a completely other frequency range is possible by principle, if for identical wavelength a velocity of propagation different from c occurs. Further the range of operation used by Tesla at approx. 1.6 times the speed of light is depicted.

Also the noise is such a book with seven seals. It concerns, it is true, a fixed chapter of high-frequency engineering, but without visible connection to the other chapters. That might be based on the circumstance that the relation, as it is dictated by the wave equation, isn't recognized.

Every high-frequency signal is accompanied by a noise signal; every antenna produces more or less noise. HF engineering dictates the measures, how the noise can be suppressed resp. the signal-noise distance be increased. The goal is to make the electromagnetic wave stand out in such a way from the noise that it can be received. For that the measurement setup must be choosen correspondingly, are the measurement cables dictated, and must be paid attention to power adaptation and corresponding termination resistors. For measuring HF correctly all interference influences should more or less disappear.

But what are the interference influences, which the HF-technician suppresses? According to the wave equation it are the scalar wave parts, and to that also is counted the noise. Every HF-technician thus knows the scalar parts as interfering noise signal, but doing so he completely fails to notice the technical advantages and chances, which e.g. are present in the noise.

If by means of an autocorrelation function a noise signal is compared to itself then often a hidden message comes to light. According to that, informations can be hidden in the noise and of course transmitted wirelessly. This important circumstance is known, but it is hardly used. The noise vortices thus can be modulated in an extremely complex way. There can be transmitted a lot more information in the noise as scalar wave, than with the radio wave.

---

[i]:   J. Wust: Physikalische und chemische Untersuchungen mit einem Ruten-ganger als Indikator. Further references in W-B-M 3/ 1991, S. 57.

ii>:   A. Soeder: Ohne Strom lauft neuer Energiestrahl rund urn den Erdball. Raum & Zeit 59/92 Seite 62-67.
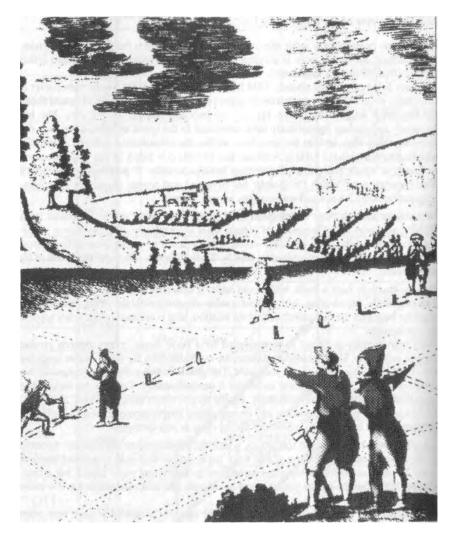
Fig. 23.3: ____ Dowsers dowse an ore vein.[i]
From: Speculum   metallurgiae   politissimum,
Rossler, Dresden 1700.

[i]:   Ludeling, Hartmut: Handbuch der Radiaesthesie, Verlag Eike Hensch 1994,
S. 145, ISBN 3-927407-09-7.

The possibility of more dimensionally modulating and parallel image transmission make scalar waves superior to the radio waves in such a way that one should seriously think about the reversed procedure, in which the noise is conceived as useful signal and the radio wave as interference signal.

In the frequency diagram (23.1 and 23.2) can be read like in a diary, in which most pages it is true still are empty, but in which some very informative marginal notes can be found for different points of difficulty. It mostly are parascientific phenomena, which, not understood and excluded by textbook physics, are waiting to be taken up in the building of physics. As an example we'll pick out an extensive area of alternative research.

23.3 Radiesthesia

A particularly broad spectrum of scalar waves is provided by the already several times mentioned earth radiation. An ancient science of experience, which troubles the exploration of the earth radiation, is the geomancy. The Roman land surveyors, the Augures, used as an aid a flat coil like also Tesla did to receive scalar waves. The Lituus, as the device was called, resembles so much that of the Etrusks that we must proceed from the assumption that the method is much older (fig. 16.10).

This part of the scalar wave research, also called radiesthesia, is derived of ,,radiare", which can be translated with "send out rays" resp. ,,perceive". It describes the doctrine of the sensitivity to radiation of man. Doing so the radiation sensitive uses his own nerve framework as a biosensor.

The nerve conduction could be derived as a biological variant of the Tesla one wire transmission, for which ring-like potential vortices are passed on as action potentials in form of standing waves (fig. 9.6). Of this kind are also the control commands, which cause a muscle to contract. If now corresponding vortices are picked up by means of a dowsing rod or similar aids in our nerves, then the contract addressed muscles contract, because they can't distinguish, from where the command comes. This unconscious nerve twitch leads to a swing of the dowsing rod and to the well-known dowsing rod phenomenon. But man can't replace a technical gauge. Hence one speaks of dowsing and not of measuring. To this should be added the condition of resonance, which must be fulfilled. Since every person however builds up other resonances, dowsed results of others often can't be reproduced. But from this particular difficulty one cannot draw the conclusion that the phenomenon does not exist and radiesthesia is not a science. Series surveys and statistical analyses here in any case don't lead any further. It always only are individual talented dowsers, who have at their disposal really fantastic abilities and find with great certainty water, ores and even oil.

With the perception of a physical phenomenon it mostly starts. Cultural man looks after his discovery as cult, whereas modern man, guided by the wish for reproducibility and more objectivity, is troubled to design and to build a technical measurement work. With regard to the scalar wave in general and the radiesthesia in special we still are at the stage of the Stone Age.
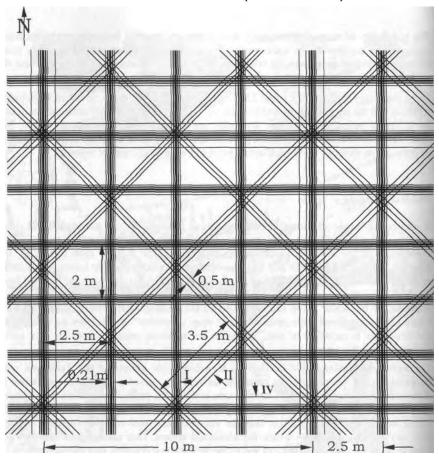
Fig. 23.4:   Nets dowsed at latitude 49.[i]

I.   net: ,,global net" according to Dr. E. Hartmann;
orientation: N - S: 2 m distance and E - W: 2.5 m distance

II. net: ,,diagonal net" according to Dr. M. Curry;
orientation: NE - SW and NW - SE: 3.54 m = 2.5 m * sqrt(2)

[III. ,,lightning net" according to R. Schneider; orientation like I.]

[IV. net acc. to Benker; like I. but: N - S: 10 m and E - W: 10 m]

[V. sun/planet net acc. to W. Auer; with 3.66 m orientation S./P.]

_____ According to Prof. E.G.Hensch et al.:
[i]:   Hensch: Radiaesthesie im landlichen Bauen und Siedeln, Arbeitskreis zuf
Landentwicklung   in   Hessen,   W4,   Wiesbaden   1987;   resp.:
W.   Auer: Erdstrahlen?...   AWGEO   199,   Eigenverlag   1998;   resp.:
Mayer/Winklbaur: Biostrahlen, 5. Aufl. ORAC Verlag, Wien 1989, Seite 168

23.4 Prediction of earthquakes with the help of scalar waves

The standing wave character of the earth radiation is a help. There are dowsed points and lines of maximum radiation intensity, which form nets, which encompass the whole world. On the one hand we are dealing with a net oriented in direction north-south and east-west (Hartmann net) and on the other hand with a net standing diagonally to that under 45° (Curry net). Because the angle of 45° can be derived as borderline angle from a vortex field calculation[ii], I already early have pointed to the circumstance that it here presumably concerns a vortex phenomenon[iii].

Because the nets in addition are dowsed in air, it must be vortices of the electric field, so-called potential vortices[iii], which here form regular structures. The formation of vortex lines and complete vortex streets (chapter 4.9), which consist of countless individual vortices, can be explained as follows:

Electric scalar waves propagate in the direction of the electric field strength and mediate field vortices, e.g. neutrinos. If at a certain moment the transmitter carries a positive and the receiver a negative charge, then all the particles which are positively charged are repelled by the transmitter and attracted by the receiver. All run at the same time towards the same goal, although all mediated particles carry the same charge and repel each other! This incompatibility can be compensated partly, by the vortices rotating around each other. In this circumstance can be seen the reason for the structure shaping, the formation of some lines in the countryside (fig. 23.3). The distances between the lines have characteristic values, which allow conclusions about the wavelength of the standing waves. We must assume that they dictate the structure shaping and that the spatial vortex distribution aligns with the nodes and antinodes of the respective standing wave. The distance between the lines, which corresponds to half the wavelength, becomes smaller and smaller towards the North Pole and the South Pole of the earth, the net thus narrower and narrower. Also is the net said to change strongly before an earthquake. This all are clues for the circumstance that the structure shaping radiation comes from the earth, that the cause must be sought in the earth radiation.

It should be noted marginally that with scalar wave detectors, which permanently scan the nets, a just as effective as inexpensive earthquake prediction should be possible. Such a facility would be an enormous relief and help for all earthquake warning services. It even should be possible to determine in advance the future epicentre, if there is measured at the same time at if possible many stations and the respective deviations are compared.

A further influential factor is the composition of the subsoil; e.g. ores and metals influence the earth radiation. Water shows a special affinity for the earth radiation. It does collect the radiation and after bundling it up releases it again. To blame is the high dielectricity of water ($\varepsilon \cong 80$), which again favours the formation of potential vortices . A technical use of this effect would be the neutrinolyse (see fig. 17.6-17.8 and 18.1), the splitting of water molecules by neutrinos if these take the state of an electron, hydrogen escapes and the oxygen content in the water increases. If a neutrino however shows as a positron, then it annihilates and there is formed a light flash, which serves the „experts" in neutrino detectors as proof.

[ii]:   Meyl, K.: Wirbelstrome, Dissertation Universitat Stuttgart 1984

[iii]:   Meyl, K.: Potentialwirbel Band 1, INDEL Verlagsabt. 1990

Spectroid of the radiation field of a subterranean flowing water veign (according to P. Schweizer)[i]:
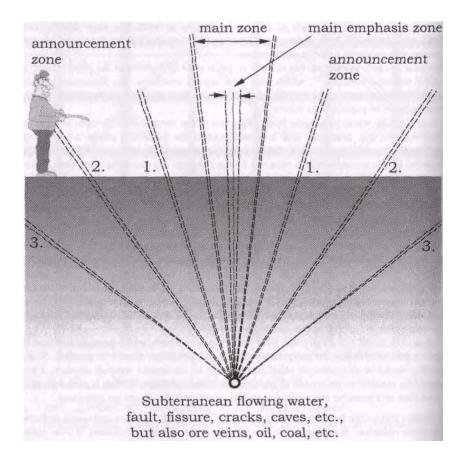
---

[i]:   Ludeling, Hartmut: Handbuch der Radiaesthesie, Verlag Eike Hensch 1994
S. 145, ISBN 3-927407-09-7.

23.5 Searching water with the help of scalar waves

Faults of earth's crust lead to fissures and cracks in the rock, which often fill up with standing or flowing water. Potential vortices of the earth radiation are attracted by the high dielectricity of water and are radiated again in slowed down and focussed form. On the surface of the earth the mixture of various scalar waves arriving there can be dowsed as main emphasis zone. For reason of the broad radiation spectrum the results of proficient dowsers in the main emphasis zone more often coincide.

At both sides in addition spectroids are forming, which are dowsed as parallel running vortex lines. Because every harmonic wave produces other lines and every dowser reacts to other resonances, a profound ability is required, if from the distance of the so-called announcement zones the water depth should be inferred (fig. 23.5). Some specialists indicate besides the place and the depth also the amount of deposit and if need be the water quality. For that they analyse the radiation intensity, but unfortunately many all too often overrate their abilities.

Already the Augures, the land surveyors in the age of the Romans have aligned their streets and the castles with the nets and the lines in the countryside. Even today new evidence about the central importance of the standing wave character of scalar waves can be found at excavations (fig. 16.10). Since every scalar wave also occurs coupled with a radio wave by means of the wave equation, earth rays originally could be detected conventionally with field strength gauges. But the intensive use by radio stations has made it necessary to change from the short wave range to the VHF-range and further to the UHF-range. It were indirect measurements, which could be interfered easily. Today geologists work with ELF scanners in a range between 15 and 30 KHz if they search for water. They analyse the emitted signals of submarine transmitters, because these are attracted and amplified by water carrying layers.
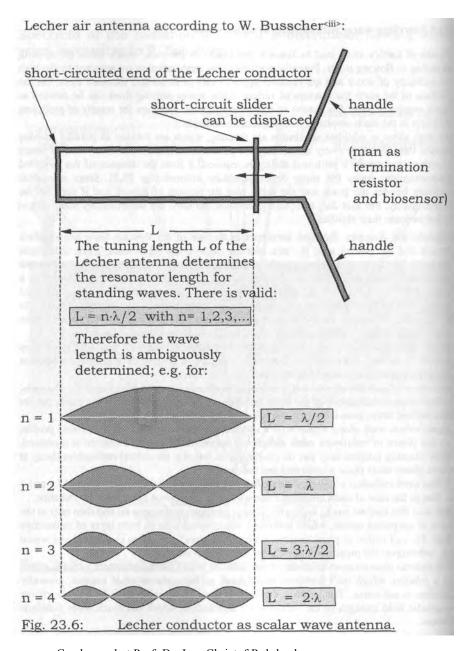
Experiments also are carried out with noise receivers or unused broadband TV channels. Others analyse influences of the earth radiation on the magnetic field of the earth, but for this method the expressiveness is controversial.

Again others walk along a path with a scintillation counter measuring the inverse profile. At the places of maximum earth radiation a minimum of gamma radiation is measured. This stunning relation only can be interpreted as follows: the natural radioactive decay at these places takes place accelerated and that proves:

1.. that earth radiation sets radioactivity free and causes it in the first place (chap. 17.1 pp).
2. that in the case of earth radiation it actually concerns slowed down neutrino radiation. But also this method works indirectly. It only functions in the open air and then only in the case of unspoiled nature, which sometime was covered with an even layer of radioactive dust. By cultivation or plantation the „radioactive layer" very often is changed and mixed up, whereupon the measurable profile hardly allows conclusions.

For indirect measurement methods of that kind, for which the measurement variable stands in a relation, which isn't known in more detail, to the scalar wave of interest, generally caaution is advisable. Too often a message is seen in a wonderful 3-D diagram of the magnetic field strength or the radioactivity distribution, which has much more mundane causes.

Lecher air antenna according to W. Busscher[iii]:

short-circuited end of the Lecher conductor

short-circuit slider
can be displaced   handle

(man as
termination
resistor
and biosensor)

← L →

The tuning length L of the
Lecher antenna determines
the resonator length for
standing waves. There is valid: handle

$L = n \cdot \lambda/2$ with n= 1,2,3,...

Therefore the wave
length is ambiguously
determined; e.g. for:

n = 1 $L = \lambda/2$

n = 2 $L = \lambda$

n = 3 $L = 3 \cdot \lambda/2$

n = 4 $L = 2 \cdot \lambda$

Fig. 23.6:   Lecher conductor as scalar wave antenna.

_____ Can be read at Prof. Dr. Ing. Christof Rohrbach: _____
[iii]: Rohrbach: Radiasthesie, Physikalische Grundlagen und Anwendung
in
Geobiologie und Medizin, Haug Verlag Heidelberg 1996, Seite 100.

23.6 Receiving scalar waves with the Lecher antenna

In the case of technical gauges it is normal to change the frequency tuning. For that the capacity of a capacitor is being varied, which is part of a resonant circuit. This method can simply be realized with the today available construction elements. Biological systems on the other hand, for instance a person, work primarily with a variation of the wavelength. In this case (according to eq. 22.1) the frequency is directly proportional to the velocity of propagation.

So provide for instance radiaesthetic dowsings clues for the wavelength. The frequency however can't be given, because that oscillates along with the velocity of propagation and at present the forming noise signal still can't be analysed. There can't be bought electronic construction elements, which like a body cell would be able of oscillations of length. Oscillation quartzes and piezo elements, on the basis of which scalar wave detectors could be constructed, form an exception.

Similar to the Lecher conductor different forms of tunable Lecher antennas have been developed. which are used for dowsing. Such a frame antenna, developed strictly according to the rules of high-frequency technology stems from W. Busscher (fig. 23.6)[i]. With the short-circuit slider a closed-loop antenna circuit in the upper part is tuned to half the wavelength or an integer multiple of it ($L = n \cdot \lambda / 2$ with n = 1,2,3...). The person, who

holds the Lecher antenna with both hands, forms the termination resistor for the attached antenna circuit. At the same time he prevents the occurring of an effect back on the tuned resonant circuit by means of damping of the Lecher conductor. The sense of this arrangement is lying in the circumstance that man as a „biosensor" should feel if standing waves, which I call vortices, are formed in the Lecher antenna.

A modification of the Lecher air antenna is the Lecher dowsing rod according to R. Schneider[ii]. It is produced as an etched board, which has a dielectricity of approx. 4. As a result the velocity of propagation and the wavelength are only half their normal value. In addition a shortening factor V is introduced, which depends on the construction of the Lecher dowsing rod[iii] ($L = V \cdot n \cdot \lambda / 4$ with V = 0.952 and n = 1,2,3...).

In fig. 23.7 some published tuning values have been drawn up. The values for want of corresponding technical gauges it is true still haven't been confirmed, but they allow a certain insight into the world of the scalar waves, as they are influenced and radiated by water, by metals, by oil or even by other planets, the sun and the moon. Doing so some questions remain open: We for instance don't know, if the corresponding wavelength concerns the basic wave or only an mth harmonic wave. The details not only are unreliable, they moreover also are ambiguous. If however several tuning values L' are present for which resonance occurs, then if need be an integer divisor can be sought and the wavelength can be determined. But that doesn't function always.

<i>: Will Busscher: Die Luft-Lecher-Leitung als Wunschelrute. Eine Methode um die Wellenlangen zu bestimmen. Wetter-Boden-Mensch 3/ 1991, Seite 46-57.

<ii>: R. Schneider: Einfuhrung in die Radiasthesie Teil II: Leitfaden und Lehrkurs ..., Oktogon-Verlag, Wertheim, 2. Aufl. (1984) S. 136.

<iii>: Rohrbach: Radiasthesie, Physikalische Grundlagen und Anwendung in Geobiologie und Medizin, Haug Verlag Heidelberg 1996, Seite 100.

Supposed wavelength λ of the transmitted scalar wave radiation in [cm]

λ	of:	(with the different tuning values L´)
32	water	(L´ = 15.5 $_{n/m=2}$; 10.8 $_{4/3}$; 7.8 $_{n/m=1}$; 3.1 $_{2/5}$)
18	fault	(L´ = 12.9 $_{n/m=3}$; 8.65 $_{n/m=2}$; 4.3 $_{n/m=1}$)
13.6	net I	(L´ = 12.2 $_{n/m=4}$; 9.6 $_{n/m=3}$; 6.1 $_{n/m=2}$; 3.05 $_{n/m=1}$
		4 m = 16 x 25 cm (N-S direction) 1.7 $_{n/m=1/2}$)
		5 m = 20 x 25 cm (E-W direction)
14.7	net II	(L´ = 11.4 $_{n/m=3}$; 6.9 $_{n/m=2}$; 3.5 $_{n/m=1}$; 2.2 $_{n/m=2/3}$)
		7.08 m = 30 x 23.6 cm (NE-SW + NW-SE direction)
13.2	net III	(12.6 $_{n/m\,4}$; 9.4 $_{n/m=3}$; 8.2 $_{5/2}$; 6.15 $_2$; 4.1 $_{4/3}$; 2 $_{2/3}$)
16.4	radon	(L´ = 7.8 $_{n/m=2}$)
28.6	oil	(L´ = 13.5 to 13.8 $_{n/m=2}$; 3.3 to 3.5 $_{1/2}$)
17.2	gold	(L´ = 8.2 $_{n/m=2}$; 4.1 $_{n/m=1}$; 2 $_{n/m=1/2}$)
13.9	silver	(L´ = 6.6 $_{n/m=2}$; 3.2-3.3 $_{n/m=1}$; 1.6 $_{n/m=1/2}$)
7.20	quartz	(6.9 $_4$; 4.1 $_{5/2}$; 3.85 $_{9/4}$; 2.9 $_{5/3}$; 2.5 $_{3/2}$; 2.2 $_{5/4}$)
4.35	sun	(L´ = 4.15 $_{n/m=4}$)
15.3	moon	(3.65 $_{n/m=1}$. thermal spectral lines: 11; 21 cm)
4.25	Mars	(4.05 $_{n/m=4}$, thermal spectral line at 3.14 cm)
4.90	Jupiter	(4.65 $_{n/m=4}$, ther. spectral lines: 3; 3.2; 3.3 cm)
5.36	Saturn	(5.1 $_{n/m=4}$, thermal spectral line at: 3.45 cm)

Fig. 23.7:   Details of not confirmed wavelengths.[i]
(derived from tuning values of a Lecher antenna
$$L´ = . V·λ·n /4·m   \text{ with } V = 0.952$$
and n = 1,2,3... for λ/4, λ/2, 3λ/4, λ, ...
and m = 1,2,3... for 1 the basic wave
and the 2nd, 3rd, ... harmonic wave

according to:
[i]: Ludeling, Hartmut: Handbuch der Radiaesthesie, Verlag Eike Hensch 1994, S. 161 ff. The author gives the clue: „The values have been determined empirically by different persons and predominantly could be confirmed by the author and his co-workers. There however always can occur deviations caused by different dowsing methods. Every value therefore always should be checked with own measurements."

23.7 Assignment according to wavelength

As said, the methods to determine the wavelength by means of the Lecher antenna are ambiguous and unreliable. So water should have a wavelength twice as long as a fault. But since water often is collecting or subterranean flowing in faults, one is entitled the suspicion that here $\lambda/2$ was taken, where in reality the full wavelength λ acts. The rest of the table after that should be looked at with the same scepticism. The table nevertheless is not wholly uninteresting, because it points to certain trends and is able to furnish clues, which if need be can represent a help of orientation in the systematic research of scalar waves.

At the planets is remarkable that the Lecher conductor reacts to values, which correlate with the respective thermal spectral lines. If these spectral lines propagate with c and it actually should concern the same cause, the frequency thus should be identical, then the planets would emit scalar waves, which are faster than the light. In the case of Mars 1.35 times the speed of light c would be present, in the case of Saturn 1.55 times and in the case of Jupiter the values would lie between 1.46c and 1.63c. In the case of the moon two thermal spectral lines are being measured, which on the one hand have as a result 1.39c and on the other hand 0.73c. At this place still ample research tasks should be solved.

In the case of scalar waves the wavelength is the most important factor to refer to. The frequency however varies continually, which in electrical engineering is called noise. That again is connected to the circumstance that frequency and velocity of propagation oscillate, so that merely an average value can be given at a time. But that hardly can be measured, which again makes the assignment more difficult. We thus still aren't capable to enter the table values from fig. 23.7 into the frequency diagram of fig. 23.1.

A technical gauge for scalar waves is necessary. A practical solution could look as follows: A noise transmitter tunable in frequency and wavelength operates on top of a carried along noise receiver. The arrangement with that comes the Tesla transmission path for scalar waves very close. If the transmitted noise signal hits upon a likewise one in the surroundings then overlapping occurs, which at the receiver causes a change of the displayed value. If doing so a subtraction (extinction) or an addition (amplification) of the signals occurs is unimportant.

With this arrangement in any case statements are possible about frequency, wavelength, velocity of propagation and about the amplitude of the scanned signal, without withdrawing energy and strain the signal in doing so[i]. With such a gauge radiation conditions depending on location could be measured as well as technical devices checked lor the emitted scalar wave parts (fig. 24.1).

An important use over and above that would be given in medical diagnostics. Every living being ,,produces noise" the technician would say, it ,,emits scalar waves" I would say, whereas following general usage is talked about the ,,aura of man". The value of an aura diagnosis still is completely unknown to most doctors and therapists, especially as the scanning of the aura at present only is possible by dowsing. But the patient expects that a doctor works with a technical gauge and not with a dowsing rod!

---

[i]: First experiments, which I carried out with students in the laboratory, look very promising. Unfortunately the works at present rest for reason of lack of money.
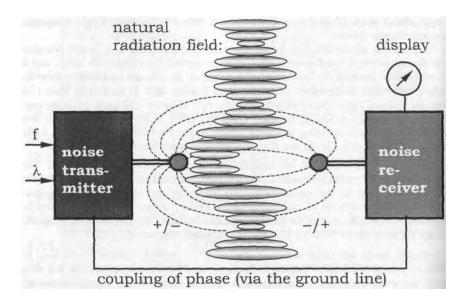
Fig. 24.1: ____ Concept for a device to detect scalar waves

24. Medicine of oscillation

24.1 Mediation of information with the help of scalar waves

If for the discussed scalar wave gauge the transmitted comparison signal in addition deviates from the form of a sinus, if the signal is modulated in some way, then even the transmission of information by means of the noise as scalar wave can be realized. If we as an example again take the aura of man, which is more than only a radiation field, it carries information for instance about the state of health of man. Kirlian photography is one form of making it visible (Fig. 3.6).
Not only the nerve conduction and the brain work with scalar waves. Man in this way also corresponds with his fellow people, some more, others less. There are people who „beam" and that should be interpreted in the true meaning of the word. Others opposite to that are more „receiver characters", who pick up more scalar wave radiation than they give away. But because they not only pick up positive radiation energy, they are susceptible to information, which makes sick. That's why a healthy equilibrium in the exchange of thoughts, feelings and the different forms of scalar waves is very important. All that is reflected in the aura of man. If we technically are capable to scan the aura of man, than this can be a blessing for humanity and for the public health.

The possible abuse however must not be overlooked. Unbiased research results, which can be used for the benefit of humanity, in many cases just as well can be used to harm humanity.
A connector of both these worlds is the Russian psychologist Prof. Smirnov, who has shown publicly in television, how a spoken sentence can be transformed in a noise signal, which is taken up directly by the brain as information, with the help of a computer program [i]. He with that is capable to "sodden" individuals, as he says, he in this way can take the fear away from soldiers before a combat mission and can operate the disease out of drug addicts without bloodshed. In the television film such an „operation at the open subconscious"' is shown life. The patient hears the noise signal over headphones and is cured already after few minutes treatment time.

We here are getting in the domain of ethical and moral problems of scalar wave research, which aren't solved by us looking away and leaving the field up to others. According to the words of Prof. Smirnov the only thing, which can stop the research scientist, is his own moral. He doesn't say any more and that isn't exactly reassuring! One here is working with „signals resembling sound", is said in the report of the Zweite Deutsche Fernsehen[i], thus with longitudinal waves and that shows, that already more knowledge about scalar waves is present than is generally known by the masses.

Another way is leading over the bioresonance. Also here at first the possibility and chance to cure diseases is to the fore. The bioresonance is a central aid in the area of the medicine of oscillation, which is increasing in importance permanently.

---

[i]:   Die Zombies der roten Zaren (Besta Film Warschau im Auftrag d. ZDF 1998)
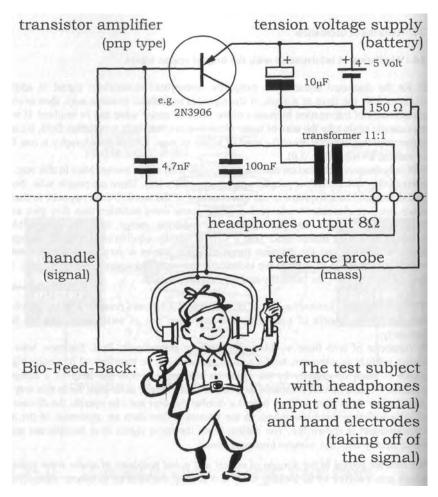
Fig. 24.2 A: Wiring diagram of the Syncrometer.[i]

<i>:   Wiring diagram taken from: H. Clark: The Cure for All Cancers (1993) New Century Press, USA, Page 434

<ii>:   Flanagan: Horen mit der Haut anstatt mit den Ohren, Sonnenwind 1/97, S.13-17.
s.a.:   N.Begich: Towards A New Alchemy, The Millenium Science, Earthpulse Press 1996

<iii>: Dr. Bodo Kohler: Biophysikalische Informations-Therapie, Gustav Fischer Verlag (1997), Kap. 11.6 Der individuelle Grundton, S. 239 ff.
s.a.:   Dr. Bodo Kohler: Die bipolare Farb-Ton-Therapie, CO'Med 2/2000, S.10 - 15

24.2 Systems with positive feedback

The field of oscillation of man easily can be influenced, because it concerns a vortex field. A technical measurement with the gauges available at present is almost impossible and highly inaccurate. There however exists the possibility, to apply electrodes to a person and to integrate him in the circuit of a technical device. The two of them form a feedback system with man in the return loop. The operation can take place in two different ways, depending on the sign of the feedback (Fig. 24.3):
For positive sign it concerns positive coupling. In this case the signals released by a person sum up, for which reason already minimum amplitudes are sufficient to produce violent reactions in the case of resonance. For resonance to occur, the system must either search independently the suitable frequency and phase, or the therapist searches the points of resonance.

24.2.1 The Syncrometer.

An independently working system is e.g. the Syncrometer. By means of two electrodes, which are held with the hands or are attached directly to the head, the noise signal emitted by a person is called off and supplied to a broadband amplifier. The test subject again hears the amplified signal via headphones, so that the circuit is closed.
Apparently unspecific and still reproducible during operation certain signals capable of resonance are emerging stronger by amplifying and swinging themselves up. The aura starts to extend or expressed in the words of a radiation sensitive, the so-called reaction distance is increasing, with which he means the distance in which he detects a dowsing rod reaction.
The test subject now increases his radiation,   so this method can be valued. By strengthening his own radiation power, he works more as a transmitter and less as a receiver for scalar waves. In the last point the therapeutic use seems to iie, because by that the patient can get rid of resonances to any unpleasant persons or to technical transmitters, which are burdening him. The device consequently also is sold as aid or protection against electrosmog.
 The amplified signal also can be picked up directly by the skin instead of by the headphones and still being „heard". The reports stretch from a harmonizing and balancing effect up to "electronic telepathy" and states similar to ecstasy of the test subject[i].

24.2.2 The sound therapy.

The controlled variant of this method for instance is the sound therapy. Now the sounds, which the patient picks up by means of headphones, do not stem from him but from a sound generator. The therapist goes through the scale and tries to find out at which sound the aura swings up. If the eigenfrequency is found, then the patient can therapize himself, by again and again playing or humming his eigentone[iii].
It concerns here only a physical statement on the used methods of alternative medicine and not therefore, whether healing successes are actually possible.

sound frequency equally tempered [Hz]		wavelength [cm]	colour	wavelength [run]
F sharp"	740	46,4	(purple)	-
F"	698	49,1	(crimson)	-
E"	659	52,0	(violet)	-
D sharp"	622	55,1	indigo	421
D"	587	58,4	bleu	446
C sharp"	554	61,9	turquoise	472
C"	523	65,6	green	500
H'	494	69,5	yellowgreen	530
A sharp'	466	73,6	yellow	562
A'	440	78,0	orange	595
G sharp'	415	82,6	orangered	630
G'	392	87,5	red	668

Table 24.2 B: Scale of the colour range.[i]

colour		chakra	sense organ	planet type
purple	7.	(crown chakra)	epiphysis	Jupiter
indigo	6.	(brow chakra)	hypophysis	Saturn
bleu	5.	(throat chakra)	hearing	Mars
green	4.	(heart chakra)	feeling	Sun
yellow	3.	(solar plexus)	seeing	
orange	2.	(sacral chakra)	taste	Venus
red	1.	(root chakra)	smell	Moon

Table 24.2 C: Assignment of colours to chakras and planets.[i]

colour		metals	gems (selection):
purple	7.	tin	amethyst, fluorite
indigo	6.	lead	indigo-sapphire, azurite
bleu	5.	iron	sapphire, lapis lazuli
green	4.	gold	emerald, malachite, jade, gr. tourmalin
yellow	3.		topaz, amber, citrine
orange	2.	copper	carnelian, fire opal
Rot	1.	silver	ruby, coral, garnet, red jasper

Table 24.2 D: Assignment to a selection of gems.[i]

[i]:   Dr. Bodo Kohler: Biophysikalische Informations-Therapie, Gustav Fischer Verlag (1997), Kap. 11.6 Der individuelle Grundton, S. 190 - 194

24.2.3 The colour therapy.

Analogous to acoustics also colours each time can be assigned a wavelength and also here can be detected that every person responds to certain colours, thus wavelengths, in particular which can stimulate his aura to resonant oscillations. In practice sound and colour therapy often are used coupled[i], even succeeds more or less an assignment to each other. That in last consequence leads to a "scale of the colour range" (table 24.2 B)[ii]. According to statement of the treating doctors does a patient, who responds to a certain colour, also react to the corresponding sounds and vice versa.

24.2.4 The aroma therapy.

If according to that it depends less on the circumstance if sounds or colours are used, but the wavelength of an oscillation is crucial, then a stimulation also should be possible by means of the remaining sense organs, e.g. the nose, the tongue or the skin. The smell after all already could be identified as vortex information (fig. 9.0). Fragrances of natural essences can significantly influence the frame of mind. But as long, as we still haven't understood the physics behind it, we technically hardly are capable to generate equivalent vortex modulations artificially.

24.2.5 The gem therapy.

Already the holy Hildegard von Bingen (1098-1179) knew and used the beneficial effect of gems. Physical background of this at first purely empirical form of therapy is the characteristic eigenfrequencies of the gems, which are picked up as stimulation over the skin. Because gems represent a mixture of various molecules, the oscillations in the atomic hull will overlap, so that overlapping and beat frequencies can form with wavelengths in biological relevant areas. There even can form modulations, which are carrying information. The effectiveness again is linked with the resonance condition, which must be fulfilled between the gem and his carrier.

24.2.6 Meditation and self-therapy.

There even exist people, who don't need any technical aid at all to get rid of unpleasant resonances. Some meditate and go into resonance with themselves, whereas others prefer to love a person, to whom they feel „attracted" or with whom they are „on the same wavelength", which means as much that they go into resonance with this person. In the Catholic Church for instance the priests are not allowed to get married, because they should be in a resonance with the church and with God.

---

[i]::   Dr. Bodo Kohler: Die Coloroma-Therapie, Der aussergewohnliche Einsatz von Aromen, Co'Med 4/2000, S. 48-52

[ii]:   Cousto: Die kosmische Oktave, Synthesis Verlag Essen 1984
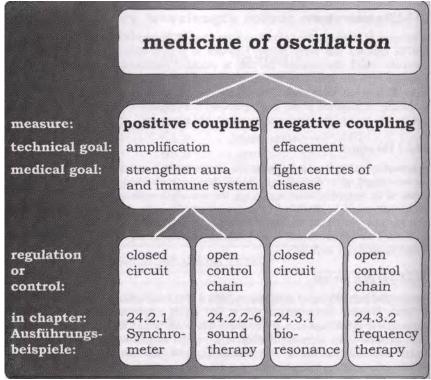
Fig. 24.3 A: Structure concerning the medicine of oscillation
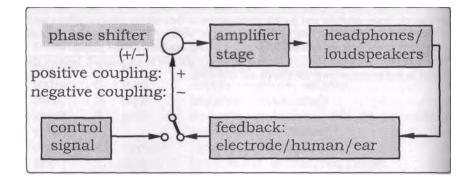
Fig. 24.3 B: Regulation or control?
                  Positive or negative coupling?

24.3 Systems with negative feedback

For negative sign it concerns negative coupling. In this case the signals are subtracted. The signals released by a person are played back to him with opposite phase. This method lies in the domain of the bioresonance.

24.3.1 The homeopathy

The concept, which is pursued by the medicine of oscillation in the case of the bioresonance, is that harmful or ill making oscillations should be effaced. Not the direct, but rather the indirect strengthening of the immune system is to the fore, which should be reached by relieving it. The approach with that pursues the same goal as the pill medicine, where oscillations, which should produce a wanted effect and which are bound by means of substances are supplied to the body.

The disadvantage of the administration of pills is the often toxic effect of the carrier substance. The German doctor Samuel Hahnemann (1755-1843) has demonstrated a way, in which to make the helpful and important information for the body to go over from the carrier substance to the water by diluting with water and by shaking. The water molecules now oscillate in time of the carrier molecules. Interestingly in doing so not even the information gets lost, the modulation thus is preserved. By constantly shaking there even occurs an amplification or a ,,potentiation", as Hahnemann expressed himself, because now every carrier molecule reaches and modulates countless water molecules. Thus the amount of water informed is bigger than the amount of the original chemical substrate. In the case of homeopathy like is treated with like. If for instance a poison causes certain complaints at a healthy person, then in "homeopathic" administration this information helps a sick person with similar complaints. There thus occurs a disturbance activation with opposite phase, as the engineer uses to express himself. Despite a widespread scepticism the method of homeopathy indeed seems to function, and it has stood the test in countless cases.

24.3.2 The bioresonance

A technical realization is represented by the bioresonance. For that endogenous oscillations are called off by means of an ECG (electrocardiogram), an EEG (electroencephalogram) or a MEG (magnetoencephalogram) at the surface of the skin. The technical device then shifts the phase for 180 degrees and amplifies the signal to the extent that pathological frequencies are extinguished for reversely directed input. This very reasonable theoretical concept in practice of course only is as efficient, as the empirical determined pathological frequencies are the cause of a disease and not only represent an unimportant symptom as side effect.

To that technical problems are joining. Prof. Heine blames the constantly changing reaction diversity and the thermal noise for the circumstance that the ,,frequency spectrum permanently is fluctuating", as he writes if*. That hardly can realize the necessary phase inversion. We meanwhile know that vortices have a fluctuating frequency spectrum, that in the case of biosignals it concerns such field vortices, which result in a noise signal unspecific in frequency.

With this knowledge we should be able to significantly improve bioresonance procedures, and even the inversion of phase shouldn't represent an insurmountable difficulty anymore.
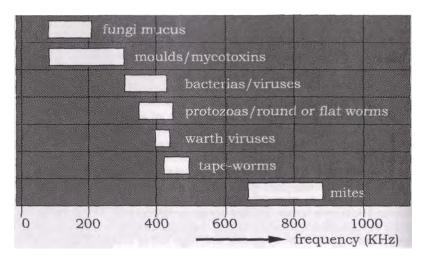
Fig. 24.3 B: Frequency spectrum
                  of parasites according to Clark.[i]
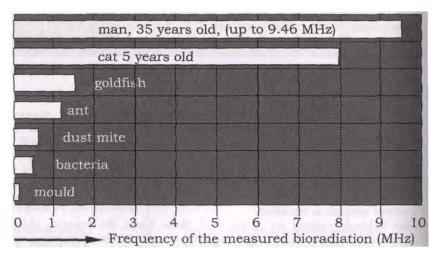
Fig. 24.3 C: Diagram of frequency ranges for some
living
beings.[i]

[i]:   Dr. Hulda Clark: The Cure For All Diseases (1995), Page 604-643

A further problem, which Heine addresses, can't be denied[ii]: „For communicative molecule oscillations the microwave range of 1 GHz up to above 10000 GHz is crucial. A calling off of endogenous interference oscillations in this range with the help of normally used electrodes is not possible"[iii]. It thus could happen that essential frequencies, which are directly related to a disease, aren't recorded at all and as a consequence also not treated. There even is the risk of informations being brought in, which additionally stress the immune system instead of relieving it, that the patients after a treatment are worse off than before. The doctor or therapist is burdening himself with a big responsibility, when, how and at whom he applies methods of bioresonance or if he better does without them. For the mentioned reasons the method in the therapy only plays a secondary role. The bioresonance on the other hand is quite often and with great success used in the diagnosis (Nosoden), if it for instance concerns the determination of an incompatibility or an allergy - but that is a completely different theme. For the bioresonance the transition of diagnosis to therapy is however floating.

24.3.3 The frequency therapy

If using a frequency therapy the problems are standing similarly. If we separate the closed and negatively fed back circuit of a bioresonance and form an open control chain consisting of a technical control device and the patient, then we get the structure, as it is put to use in a frequency therapy. The goal still is the same: parasites or pathogens, which stress and burden the immune system should be fought.
But a disadvantage of every open control chain is that the treatment at first occurs blind due to the missing feedback.

The natural healer Dr. Hulda Clark has examined as support various pathogens and parasites under the microscope, while she has varied the frequency and at the same time applied a low-tension voltage. Doing so she could observe the dying of bacterias and parasites at certain frequencies. Correspondingly she publishes tables, in which the in each case „mortal" frequencies are listed[i].
Hut without being able to verify the success of a treatment in the living organism, she proceeds from the assumption that by applying a low tension voltage (5-10 Volt), as it is produced at the output of a commercially available frequency generator, if a sinusoidal signal is set with the appropriate frequency exactly the associated parasites and leeches will be destroyed. Doing so a fixed rhythm of pauses and treatment times must be adhered to (7 min on, 20 min off, 7 min on, 20 min off and 7 min on).

The doctors and therapists treating with this particularly inexpensive method report amazing results, inexplicable spontaneous cancer cures, like of HIV-positive patients, who after the treatment were tested HIV-negative. But also the inverse case already should have occurred, that a HIV-negative patient afterwards was HIV-positive! Here too clear the limits of this method appear, which in practice unfortunately turns out to be relatively unspecific.

<ii>: Prof. Dr. H. Heine: Grundregulation und Extrazellulare Matrix - Grundlagen und Systematik, Lehrbuch der biologischen Medizin, (1991) 2.Aufl. Hippokrates Verlag Stuttgart, Seite 63

<iii>: U. Warnke: Bioresonanztherapie - Wunsch und Wirklichkeit. Medizin transparent Nr.2 (1996) S. 36-37
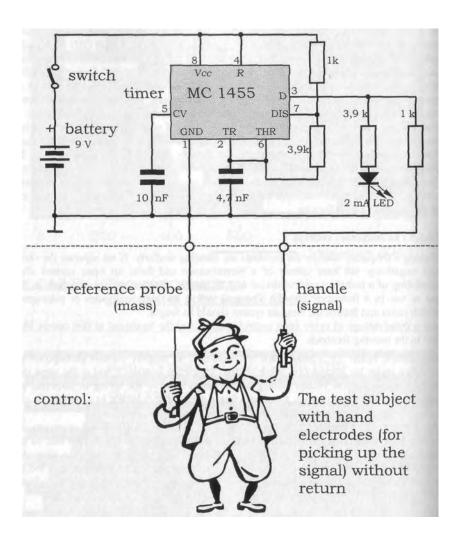
Fig. 24.4:   Wiring diagram of the Zapper.[i]

24.4 The Zapper

From the point of view of physics of today the frequency therapy actually shouldn't be able to function at all. The electromagnetic waves penetrate only few millimeters into the skin at the used frequencies and wouldn't have the slightest chance, to reach a parasite, which is staying somewhere in the body. But it is said that it is possible to cure athlete's foot, by the patient taking the electrodes in his hands. How, we ask the question, does the signal of the function generator know where it should go?

It quite obviously concerns a resonance phenomenon. The likewise emitted scalar wave part tunnels undamped at those places in the body, with which it can build up a resonance and that for proper tuning are the unloved parasites. The scalar wave radiation is bundling up at the resonant receiver, so that despite the low transmission power as a consequence of the bundling up the energy density for the parasite becomes very high. It as a result is destroyed by its own ability to go into resonance. Once it is killed, the next one goes into resonance, logs off as well etc. In this way the parasites are destroyed one after another and not all at once. That's why the specified treatment cycle makes sense. The copper electrodes should not be taken in the hands directly, Dr. Clark recommends, but before be wrapped with moist paper. By means of this insulating layer, so is my interpretation, the conventional wave part, for which the skin functions as a wave guide, is reduced whereas the desired scalar wave part is increased. Such measures crucially contribute to the success of a therapy method, even if they were determined purely empirical.

If one wants to address every possible parasite individually, then the treatment takes correspondingly long. If one on the other hand sends all relevant frequencies at once by overlapping them, then the treatment can be abbreviated to the duration of one session. If the therapist goes still further and replaces the sinusoidal signal by a rectangular signal, then infinitely much sinus functions are hidden in it, as a Fourier analysis shows. With a rectangular signal, as it is delivered by the Zapper, one as it were catches everything, Good as well as Bad. There the helpful intestine bacterias break exactly like the wrongdoers.

The treatment with the Zapper is simple, inexpensive and exactly as controversial. It is the shot with the shotgun in the forest. One always hits something. We nevertheless must ask the question, why one only hits parasites and bacterias and not the vital organs? Aren't those damaged also?

Now then, the signal of the function generator is not modulated; it doesn't carry information. That's why only monocellular parasites, which don't know information exchange, are capable of a resonance. Human cells and more than ever whole organs on the other hand work with complex modulations, which effectively prevent any formation of resonance with the technically generated basic wave, with which the question would be answered so far.

That however also means that immune reactions can be expected: If the first treatment with the frequency therapy still is successful and all simple parasites could be hit, then only further evolved parasites have been spared, which modulate their information. They now breed and can't be reached anymore in further sessions. The method suddenly doesn't function anymore, the therapist finds out, the body apparently has become immune.

| scale: | | diatonic | chromatic | spiral |
sound:		•1/C =	equally tempered	(medieval)
octave	C´	2/1 = 2.0	2.00 ——►	2/1 = 2
		1.07 = 16/15		1.33 = 4/3
seventh	H	15/8 = 1.88	1.89 ——►	3/2 = 1.5
		1.125 = 9/8		1.125 = 9/8
sixth	A	5/3 = 1.67	1.68 ——►	4/3 = 1.33
		1.11 = 10/9		1.07 = 16/15
fifth	G	3/2 = 1.5	1.5 ——►	5/4 = 1.25
		1.125 = 9/8		1.04 = 25/24
fourth	F	4/3 = 1.33	1.33	6/5 = 1.2
		1.07 = 16/15		1.03 = 36/35
third	E	5/4 = 1.25	1.26	7/6 = 1.17
		1.11 = 10/9		8/7 = 1.14
second	D	9/8 = 1.13	1.12 ——►	9/8 = 1.125
		1.125 = 9/8		10/9 = 1.11
first	C	1/1 = 1.0	1.00	11/10 = 1.1

——► goes towards 1!

Fig. 24.5:   Harmonic spiral built on the first Gregorian scale.[i]

[i]:   Dr. Manfred Doepp: Naturgemasse Frequenztherapien, Die Harmonie der Snirale. CO'Med 10/2000. S. 46 - 49

24.5 Discussion concerning the medicine of oscillation

The textbook medicine in its explanations and treatment methods is basing on the models, which it can measure and analyse and which it understands. Doing so man and whole nature is reduced to a handful of chemical reaction formulas. The whole pharmaceutic industry lives on this misleading path, which long ago has revealed to be a dead end, medical as well as financial. This health service cannot be paid anymore and we should ask the question if it actually is worth the money, if with electric signals of minimum power can be obtained effects comparable to the effects of the pill medicine. We need a new medicine, a potential vortex medicine. First of all we should research how an organism covers its energy needs and how it communicates. There leads no way past the scalar waves and the newly discovered potential vortices. Chemical processes as they are being observed, occur by the way, that is beyond doubt, but they by no means are the cause. Hence of pills and other chemical means at most a treatment of symptoms and a case of side effects may be expected but not a cure of a disease. Once the potential vortex medicine will be systematically explored and be put to use in practice, healing successes can be expected, which we at present can't imagine at all.

The amazing results, which already today are obtained in the medicine of oscillation and of which some doctors can report[i], dictates the direction in which the textbook medicine should develop. In the question, which kind of oscillation or which ,,sequence of sounds" (Fig. 24.5) is the right one, still exists considerable need for research. Some doctors even already work with my new theory and cite whole passages from my publications until now about this theme[ii].

[i_a]: Dr. Bodo Kohler: BITsyn, der neue Weg in der Informations-Medizin, Jubilaums-Schrift der Internationalen Arzte-Gesellschaft fur Biophysikalische Informations-Therapie, Bad Nauheim den 6.-8.10.2000, Seite 48 - 56.

[i_b]: Bioenergetische Messverfahren in Theorie und Praxis, Vortragsband der Gesellschaft fur Energetische und Informationsmedizin e.V., Universitat Stuttgart am 17.7.1999.

[ii_a]: Dr. Johann Lechner: Storfelddiagnostik, Medikamenten- und Materialtest, Teil 2 aus der Reihe: Praxis der Ganzheitlichen Medizin und Zahnmedizin, Verlag Dr. E. Wuhr (2000), Kap. 2.4.2 Beruhrungslose skalarwellentragende Informationsubertragung S. 173 ff., bes. Kap. 2.4.2.3 Seite 175, 176.

[ii_b]: Dr. Reichwein, Peters: Zellulare Elektromagnetische Systemsteuerung, Der Freie Arzt 5 (2000) im Wissenschafts-Forum (Anhang, S. IV - XXIII).

[ii_c]: Dr. M. Doepp: Tesla-Wellen, Neue Studien, CO'Med 5/2000, S. 94 - 95

Frequency spectrum of the human organism:
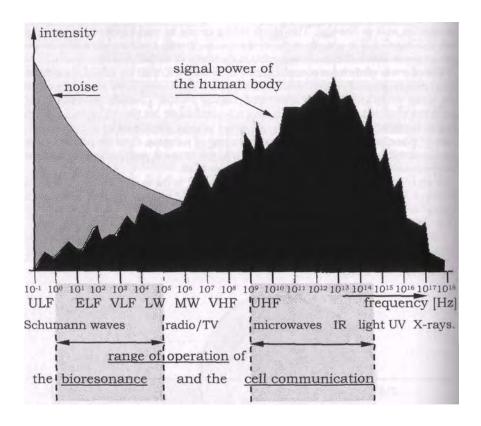
Fig. 25.1:   The measured frequency spectrum of man.[i]

[i]:   Dr. P. Bembenek: Akupunktur und (Bio-) Resonanz, CO'med 6/98, S. 50-58

25. Contributions to the discussion concerning the information technical use

The medical research predominantly takes place with statistical methods. This might be changed fundamentally, if only the physical relations have been realized and their causes found out. Only then a basic research will be possible also in the area of medicine, as it today already is usual in other disciplines.

In this chapter it concerns the question of the medical basis in general, and specifically the question of the use of the newly discovered potential vortices in biological systems. Doing so very aware is attempted to put the normally used medical view at the back and to derive the answers from the perspective of the engineer and the physicist. This approach is unfamiliar, so that some textbook physicians will have difficulties to follow. It however will prove to be very helpful. Medicine in addition needs new impulses and that justifies a new approach, like the unconventional one proposed by me.

In this connection gladly is fallen back upon the comparison of biological with technical systems, although here exist differences in principle and fundamental It can be expected that nature has developed very appropriate strategies to solve certain tasks, as it also is teached in engineering and used in practice. At this place not only medicine benefits from new insights, engineering vice versa also can learn of nature, because natures optimization strategies are much much older and correspondingly perfect.

25.1 Window of the sensuous perception

To clarify the inner processes in man we consider his sense organs, which function as interface to the outside world. Technically seen in the case of the sense organs it concerns measurement converters to record and process certain physical values in our environment and their adaptation to pass on the information by means of the nerves. The measurement converters thereby are built more or less complex, which is related to the circumstance that the measurement factors, which a living being needs to orient itself and to be able to survive, are quite different.

It concerns little windows within the frequency spectrum shown in fig. 23.1, which should be analysed. Man for instance chooses the visible frequency window and interprets it with an assignment to the colours, because in this range the sunlight can reach the surface of the earth and the ionosphere doesn't exert an excessive damping (fig. 2.8).

The acoustic window depends on the sound propagation in air, whereas dolphins work with ultrasound, which carry considerably further in water. The associated measurement converters, the ear and the eye, have a very complex structure. From this can be inferred that here the received signal must be transformed into a different physical measurement signal, that the perceivable signals are of other nature than the signals, which our nerves are able to pass on.
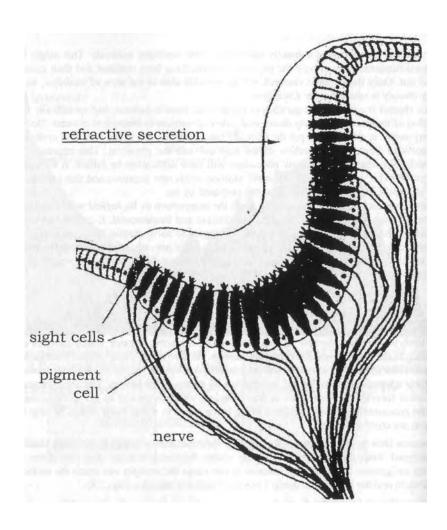
Fig. 25.2: ____ The hollow eye of the snail

25.2 The sense organs (nose, eye, tongue)

If we want to find out something about the nature of the nerve signals, then we should more detailed consider a sense organ, which is constructed if possible simple. In that case it is possible that no signal transformation is necessary at all anymore, because the perceivable variable is exactly of the kind the nerves can process.

The primary and perhaps most ancient sense organ of the living beings is the nose. It is constructed extremely simple. On the one hand according to encyclopaedias it is a chemical sense for the perception of smell materials. Man on the other hand can distinguish several thousands of scents. For that a huge analysis factory with correspondingly much receptors would be necessary, which one searches in vain in the nose between the nasal hairs and the nerves. We from that infer that scent should consist of particles, which are to a large extent identical with the reaction potentials. It thus will concern potential vortices. These ring-like vortices of the electric field again are modulated and carry information, which our brain is able to analyse.

According to the derivation in chapter 9.0 Plato already 2400 years ago knew such relations. The conclusion is obvious that smell is vortex information, which according to the explanation of Plato forms at the transition of waves in potential vortices and vice versa. At the natural philosophers in antiquity the circle of the insights is closed. Modern science just isn't that far.

The hollow eye of the snail functions both as nose and as eye (fig. 25.2). This very ancient combined organ points to a relatively close affinity between both measurement sensors. Possibly in the course of evolution both organs have developed from such a common original form.

In the case of man the smell rods occupied with the nasal hairs of roughly 2 micrometer in length, actually remember of the rods and cones in the eye, with which photons are collected. In both cases, so we can explain the mode of action in accordance with model, the ring-like vortices settle on the rods and run as reaction potentials along the nerve to the brain, which then analyses the modulation.

In the case of the highly developed human eye the light rays first have to traverse the vitreous body and afterwards a pigment layer, before they reach the rods and cones. In this way the electromagnetic wave parts must roll up to vortices, since our nerves can only pass on vortices. The photons can be interpreted as corresponding vortices.

If we compare the eye with a bubble chamber, in which the tracks of ionized particles can be observed and photographed as thin white fog stripes. Here in collision experiments it can be proven that it concerns particles carrying impulse and not waves. But the measurement setup by no means does answer the question if it already concerned particles before they entered the bubble chamber, or if these have formed spontaneously in the presence of the saturated vapour.

It would be obvious, if for our eye the chamber water being under the inner eye pressure would take over the function of the bubble chamber and would take care of the rolling up of the light waves to light quanta.

Example tongue:

taste hairs

nerve bundles
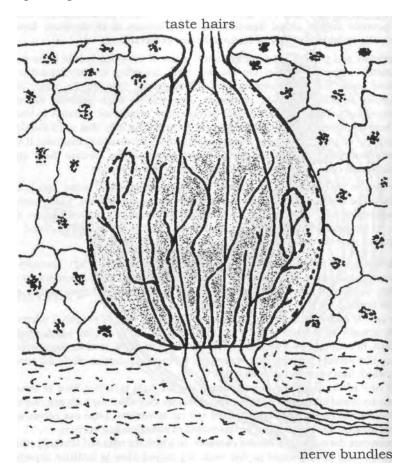
Fig. 25.3:   Taste bud of the human tongue

We optically can't detect a difference, if the light while passing through a thick glass plate increases its part of photons. At the latest in the eye in any case all the light is transformed in photons and usable vortices, so that we mustn't detect a loss of brightness. The glass plate seems transparent to us, even if the sunlight should change its composition and its biological quality, if it passes the plate.

If the tongue while tasking responds to dissolved substances, then it not by all means needs to be a chemical excitation. Instead fine hairs, the taste hairs resp. sense pins, serve as receiver like in the case of the nose. The similar structure of the receptors and the circumstance that for most invertebrates sense of taste and sense of smell can't be distinguished of each other at all and consist of the same primary sense cells, suggest that the tongue doesn't analyse the chemistry as such, but only the molecular oscillation patterns, that also the taste is nothing else but vortex information!

25.3 The nerve conduction

For the collection of the potential vortices and the extraction of their information fine hairs in the sense cells obviously play a central role. They are connected more or less directly with the end of a nerve and pass on the information without big transformation. Even in the organs of equilibrium sense hairs work.
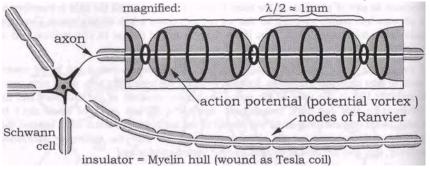
From the comparison with the technique developed by Nikola Tesla I could show that the nerve conduction concerns a single-wire transmission, a kind of waveguide, for which the transport of the excitation information takes place in the insulation layer and not in the conductor itself (fig. 9.6). As proof I quoted that the thickness of the insulation determines the velocity of propagation, that as is well-known the nerve conductors with thick fat layer pass on their action potentials faster than those with thin insulation. Particularly interesting is the observation, how the fat layer is constricted in fixed intervals, like for Wiener sausages (fig. 25.4 A). These nodes of Ranvier prove that only longitudinal waves are being transported, which are standing waves with nodes and antinodes, if the distance from node to node exactly corresponds to the distance from one node to the next. With that nature with the use of the potential vortices is far ahead of our power engineering. The nerve-cables determine with their structure, which signal will be transported and which not!

The technical cables on the other hand are stupid and conduct everything, the useful signal just as well as any arbitrary interference signal. Anyone, whom the computer crashes every few minutes, knows what I'm talking about.

Man isn't able to afford a crash of his think computer. It would be lethal for him. His nerve costume even tolerates short-circuits. The acupuncture is such a short-circuit technique by means of electrically conductive needles. There even is given a therapeutic benefit and a relaxing effect for the body.

Cut through nerve fibers even can partly regenerate again, even without a cut through nerve again growing together with its other end. The nerve conductors are so intelligent, that only the matching information arrives at the end by passing on informations from one fiber to the corresponding next with the same node interval.

A. Nerve conduction with nodes of Ranvier (to transmit standing waves):

B. Single-wire transmission according to Nikola Tesla[i]:
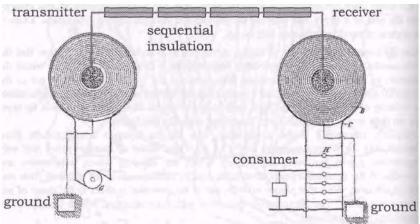
Fig. 25.4:____ Selective scalar wave signal transmission

   The brain works with scalar waves!   Reasons are:

1. Lacking of a signal transformer between the nerves and the brain.
2. High performance density of the think apparatus.
3. The brain activity measurable from the outside with the EEC
4. Spark formation and corona discharges at open top of the skull.
5. Insulation defect occurring in the case of epileptics.

[i]:   Original sketch of Tesla is situated in the Nikola Tesla Museum, Belgrade.

Nerves represent an intelligent and at the same time interference safe wiring, which is superior to any technical solution by far, or you can try to acupuncture a cable cord of your computer. You will have little pleasure of it.

Nikola Tesla also in this point was ahead of the times. He has experimented with a single conductor technology, for which the insulation layer is constructed like for a nerve fiber (fig. 25.4 B). We'll have to learn to handle such aids in the future, if we in engineering want to emulate nature and as well want to send informations as scalar wave. A normal power cable as said conducts everything, useful as well as interference signals. If however the signal should be accomodated in the noise, a selective cable is required, which should be constructed according to the example of the nerve conductors. Before a scalar wave technology can be introduced and successfully used according to that completely other cables, coupling elements, amplifiers and other components should be developed. The trouble should be worthwhile at the chances, which this genial technology offers us!

25.4 The brain, a scalar wave computer

The brain cells (neurons) are of the same kind as the nerve cells. Hence can be done without a signal transformer, can the informations transmitted by the nerves to the brain directly be processed further. From that follows that also the brain without exception works with potential vortices. There are several reasons for this hypothesis:

1. as said, the lacking of a signal transformer.

2. the high performance density of the think apparatus. (As a result of the concentration effect of the potential vortices the efficiency of the human brain is in such a way high concentrated compared to the much more space claiming computers functioning on the basis of currents).

3. the brain activity measurable from the outside with the EEC

4. spark formation and corona discharges at open top of the skull. (Brain surgeons can report of such observations).

5. The insulation defect occurring in the case of epileptics. (During a fit instable potential oscillations of the nerve cells occur, which lead to strong electric blows).

With the ,,exciting" and the inhibiting'" synapses as separation point between the neurons both a ,.high-active" and a ,,low-active'" method of operation is possible and with that a redundant, particularly interference safe signal transmission.

Safety for interference is very important not only in nature. In the operating instructions of a PC can be read: ,,operate only at room temperature, keep dry, don't throw or shock, take cure for sufficiently cooling air, ground apparatus, pay attention to mains voltage, etc". A comparison with the range of operation of man is like scorn.

Nevertheless the consequences if errors occur are quite similar: a garage door, which opens if a mobile is switched on, by all means can be compared with a light phenomenon, which we perceive after a blow on the eye at the biological level.

Concerning signal technology:

The **comparison** of	**man** and	**engineering**
signal line:	**nerves**	**cables**
transmission:	selective (nodes of Ranvier)	indiscriminate (with interferences)
of: by:	scalar waves potential vortices	currents charge carriers
running of cables: over:	1-wire technology wave guide	2-wire technology supply and return cable
signal transport:	in the insulator	in the conductor
signal form:	concentrated	expanded
the conductor:	stays cold	gets hot
result, transmission:	without losses	with losses
error signal:	muscle cramp	malfunctions
metal pins: cause:	**acupuncture** relaxation	**short-circuit** destruction
directional signal by:	synapses	diodes/ amplifier
redundancy by:	exciting and inhibiting synapses	high-active and low-active drivers
precaution: by:	skin resistance salt	shielding metal case
strategy:	vortex decay	field displacement

Fig. 25.5: ____ Comparison of the signal technology

25.5 Concerning signal engineering

By means of a technical analysis of biological relations completely new interpretations result also for the occurring of a disease. We permanently and everywhere are surrounded by noise signals, but as a rule they can't touch us, because the body has developed perfect strategies for defence. The nodes of Ranvier on the nerve bundles here are just as helpful as the diode effect of the synapses. By means of the salt content and the skin resistance the body in addition controls the uptake of potential vortices from its surroundings, by using that the vortex decay is determined by the conductivity.

The specialties of the by humans used signal technology come to light particularly clear if compared with the cable technology used in the technical world (fig. 25.5). So is worked with only one wire instead of with supply and return cable, are mediated potential vortices instead of charge carriers, does the transmission take place in the insulator without losses and not in an electric conductor, which as a result gets hot and produces current heat losses. Nerves thanks to their ability of selection represent an intelligent form of signal transmission, by helping to filter the asked information from the noise. This surely is necessary since with cables, which indiscriminately transmit every signal, an use of scalar waves hasn't succeeded yet. We should try to learn of nature!

A special challenge is the protection against error signals. A passive shielding by a metal case however is not possible, because scalar waves can't be shielded by principle, so that the precaution should be taken actively by means of the conductivity. That's why we sweat salt if we strain us physically, whereby the vortex decay is determined by the conductivity, which depends on the salt content of the body liquids. In the case of a sweating activity the body reduces its conductivity, so that the needed potential vortex energy will reach the cells.

If the body sometime isn't able to defend itself against interference signals, then malfunctions or pathological reactions are a possible result. During having a bath for instance a muscle cramp can occur, if the body doesn't defend itself fast enough or sufficiently against the high potential vortex activity in the water. Now vortices can be picked up in the nerves, which are of the same kind as the ones emitted by the brain, only that both muscles, biceps and triceps at the same time get the signal to contract. The result is a cramping of both muscles.

Thus the brain has developed intelligent strategies to protect itself of interspersed misinformations. It weighs the incoming signals and forgets again all unimportant ones more or less fast. We speak of the ability to learn and that means that signals rise in the valuation scale and with that are stored longer, the more frequent repeated our brain receives them. This strategy assumes that interference signals only occur sporadic, for which reason they are rated unimportant and fast are again forgotten. A PC on the other hand doesn't have such a property. It notices everything indiscriminately and sometime will crash of overload, if not the user will constantly foster it and will administer the available memory. A PC is and stays stupid.

Concerning the stability against interference:		
The **comparison** of	**man** and	**engineering**
in the	**brain**	**computer**
control technical interference signals:	light phenomena	miscontrol, program fault
precautions:	active, i.e. weighing of the Info by learning (repetition)	passive, i.e. shielding. (no evaluation of the input values)
unimportant (interference signal)	is forgotten	is stored
danger exists for signals	recurring inter-ference patterns (see mobile telephony)	interference of all kinds (s.EMC-standardization)
remedy:	self-cure	restart (reset)

Concerning set of difficulties of wear and tear:		
The **comparison** of	**man** and	**engineering**
repair	self-repair	in the workshop
by:	cell division permanently	exchange parts at maintenance resp. in the case of damage
required building materials:	nourishment	material / oil
waste:	compost	rubbish

Fig. 25.6: _____ Strategies against interference signals, for damages linked with operation and for wear and tear.

25.6 Stability against interference and repair mechanisms

The interference signals present in our natural environment as a rule are distributed stochastic, but not so artificial interference signals like for instance transmitters emit. If for instance in the case of mobile telephony there occur time and again identical signal patterns and if a person perceives these, then because of the continual repetitions a high importance is pretended and precious storage space in the brain is allocated. This to a special extent applies for the permanent stand-by signals, which are emitted by mobiles and cordless phones even then, if we don't phone at all. Such misdevelopments thereby would be technically avoidable just like that!

If still no gauges are available and as a result there exist neither guidelines nor limits for the radiation exposure of scalar waves, then such devices must be developed and built. For the requested electromagnetic environmental compatibility not engineering, but man should be in the centre of attention!

Let us throw a short glance at the set of difficulties of wear and tear. Most technical devices find the way into the workshop only, if they already are defect. Some aren't repaired anymore in principle and immediately sent to the rubbish, because they are worn-out and a repair isn't worth the effort anymore one says, whereas other, mostly expensive systems are being serviced by exchanging all wearing parts.

Nature has brought to perfection the last principle. It allows the body a permanent maintenance; by permanently producing new cells and replacing consumed ones. It with that obtains a considerably longer operating time and even is capable to heal wounds. Just imagine dents in our cars would disappear from alone after a few weeks and the bodywork would look like new. Such an optimal maintenance is costly and it has its price. By means of the cell division the building plan for the spare parts is copied. The task on the other hand is transmitted to the new cells „by radio" by means of waveguide channels, as proves the matching structure of scalar wave and waveguide (chapter 21.12 and fig. 25.7). The cells hence have a kind of „decentral intelligence", which technical matter lacks completely. A comparison with engineering nevertheless makes sense, because wear and tear occurs for all systems in continuous operation. Thus strategies must be developed to provide the necessary material for operation, building-material and exchange parts.

By sizing of the hyperboloid structures of the matrix channels it should be possible to determine the wavelength of the scalar waves to enter them in the frequency diagram (23.1).

Tunnel structure of the basic substance according to Prof.
Heine[i]:
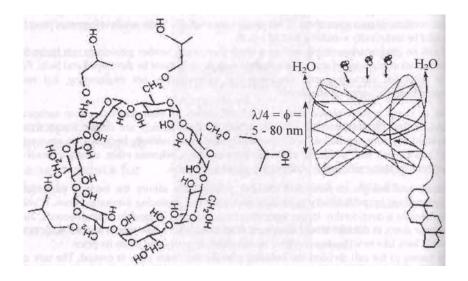
Fig. 25.7: ___ Information channels in the intercellular matrix.[i]

        <i>:   Hartmut, Heine: Lehrbuch der biologischen Medizin. Grundregulation und
Extrazellulare Matrix, 2. Aufl. 1997, Hippokrates Verlag Stuttgart, S. 56

25.7 The microwave window

There still is lacking information about the frequency or the velocity of propagation to be able to specify and enter in figure 23.1 the cell information. Let's take to hand the book about "Biostrahlen"[i]. In there is explained how for individual cells the emission of electromagnetic signals already could be measured, which are interpreted as circularly polarized waves (fig. 21.10 A). It is said that thereby their polarization plane is rotating with the speed of light, whereas the wave itself is propagating in longitudinal way relatively slow and according to the authors with the speed of sound. The occupation with the potential vortex theory in the explanation lets immediately recognize the vortex, for this is rotating with the speed of light in circles as rolled up wave (fig. 21.10). If it is bound to the surrounding matter with closed vortex centre, then it can be expected that the propagation actually takes place with the speed of body sound. It could concern the same signals, which Prof. A. Popp calls biophotons and detects measuring technically in living organisms[ii]. He however considers the phenomenon for the same wavelength with the speed of light and lands at light frequencies, even then if nothing is glowing visibly! The question is asked: Does it concern the frequency of the light or only the corresponding wavelength or actually both, thus light, as is expressed in the name biophotons?

The photomultipliers, which Prof. Popp uses as „light amplifier", however can only be tuned to certain wavelengths and not to frequencies. Even if the detected biophotons have the wavelength of the light, then nevertheless nothing will glow if the velocity of propagation and as a result also the frequency differs from that of the light for several powers of ten. In the case of the immense number of cells also the number of photons should correspondingly sum up and the body as a whole should start to glow, which is not the case.

The waveguides in the intercellular matrix serving the cell communication, which Prof. H. Heine observes microscopically, have wavelengths between 20 and 300 nanometer, which corresponds to the range of the ultraviolet radiation[iii]. But if the propagation is slower than the light for 6 powers of ten, then also the frequency will only amount to one millionth and be situated into the range of the microwaves. Here a biological window seems to be present, to which we should turn our attention for reasons of the electromagnetic environmental compatibility!

The thermal radiation, which reaches the earth from the sun and the planets, lies in the microwave range between 2 and 20 cm. If the sun does well to us, if we need the radiation, then it could be because of the identical frequency. But that also means that the sun and the planets are capable to have an effect on the cell communication, that they for instance could function as clock for the heart.

---

[i]:   H. Mayer, G. Winklbaur: Biostrahlen, Verlag ORAC, Wien 1989, 5. Auflage S. 97: Messung von der DNS eines Gurkenkeims abstrahlenden Photonen.

[ii]:   A. Popp: Neue Horizonte in der Medizin, 2.Aufl. Haug Verlag Heidelberg 1987
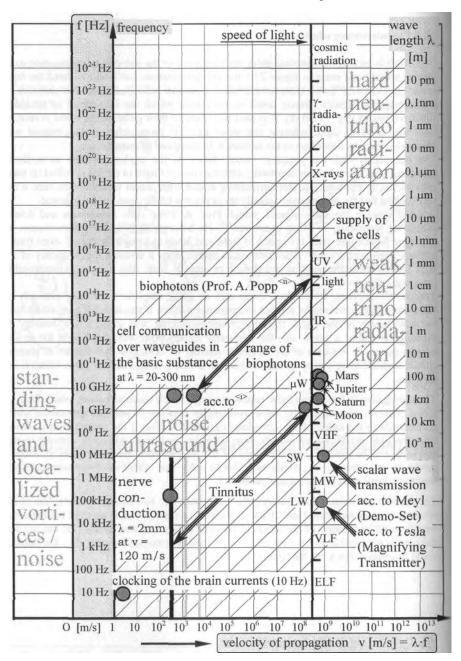
Fig. 25.8:   Frequency diagram with entries concerning biologically
relevant areas (Tinnitus, nerve conduction, etc.).

25.8 Discussion concerning scalar wave medicine

In the sensitive range of the supposed microwaves window however are also situated the mobile phones and their harmonic waves, which occupy a broad spectrum in particular for pulsed operation in digital nets. The D-net for instance has a wavelength of 32 cm, the E-net lies at half that wavelength. But to which frequency does this correspond at the speed of sound? Now, the frequency is 6 powers of ten smaller and now lies at 1 kHz resp. 2 kHz. To that are added the numerous harmonic waves, which form a noise signal and lie above that. With that these signals are situated completely in the audible range, there where our ears are most sensitive!

This cause we probably owe the disease of modern civilization „Tinnitus". Every charged particle will follow this electromagnetic oscillation and produce corresponding sound oscillations, which can hear not „sick ", but completely on the contrary „healthy" people, who as a result possibly get sick. The objection, in this range also cosmic radiation for instance from the planets is present, is legitimate. It however should be considered that planets also are going away from the earth again and in addition is present a fluctuation according to the time of day due to the rotation of the earth, while the mobile telephone masts in our vicinity radiate in continuous operation.

In this window in addition the clocking of the brain currents takes place at 10 Hz. I would recommend blocking the acoustic relevant range between 2 cm (16 kHz) and 3 m wavelength (100 Hz) for all technical use. Every operation of a transmitter in a biological window harms all people and cannot be answered for by any institution.

It further should be considered that the biological window of the plants and animals as a rule correspond to that of man, but sometimes are shifted significantly upward or downward in wavelength. We are not entitled to judge nature. The immune system of the animals now obviously has reached the breaking point and also that of man doesn't seem to be that anymore, which it originally was.

We must proceed from the assumption that many diseases on the one hand and therapy methods on the other hand partly direct and partly indirect have to do something with scalar waves. (E.g. the occurring of cancer[4i]).

<i>: H. Mayer, G. Winklbaur: Biostrahlen, Verlag ORAC, Wien 1989, 5. Auflage, S. 97: Messung von der DNS eines Gurkenkeims abstrahlenden Photonen.

<ii>: A. Popp: Neue Horizonte in der Medizin, 2.Aufl. Haug Verlag Heidelberg 1987

<iii>: Hartmut. Heine: Lehrbuch der biologischen Medizin. Grundregulation und Extrazellulare Matrix, 2. Aufl. 1997, Hippokrates Verlag Stuttgart, S. 56

<4i>: K. Meyl: Skalarwellenstrahlung. Welche Bedeutung haben Skalarwellen für die Medizin? GNP-Vortrag am 29.04.2001, Rhein-Main-Halle Wiesbaden, see: Co'med Fachzeitschrift fur Komplementarmedizin, 6/2001, pp.55-60.

I. According to the Maxwell theory:

1. Faraday's law of induction:

$$\text{rot } \mathbf{E} = -\delta \mathbf{B}/\delta t \quad (26.1)$$

with $E = E(r,t)$

and $H = H(r,t)$: $\mathbf{B} = \mu \cdot \mathbf{H}$ (26.2)

$$-\text{rot rot } \mathbf{E} = \mu \cdot \delta(\text{rot } \mathbf{H})/\delta t \quad (26.3)$$

2. Ampere's law:

$$\text{rot } \mathbf{H} = \mathbf{j} + \delta \mathbf{D}/\delta t \quad (26.4)$$

with:

Ohm's law: $\mathbf{j} = \sigma \cdot \mathbf{E}$ (26.5)

dielectric displacement: $\mathbf{D} = \varepsilon \cdot \mathbf{E}$ (26.6)

relaxation time: $\tau = \varepsilon/\sigma$ (26.7)

$$\text{rot } \mathbf{H} = \varepsilon \cdot (\mathbf{E}/\tau + \delta \mathbf{E}/\delta t) \quad (26.8)$$

3. Inserting equation 26.8 into 26.3 yields:

$$-\text{rot rot } \mathbf{E} = \mu \cdot \varepsilon \cdot (1/\tau \cdot \delta \mathbf{E}/\delta t + \delta^2 \mathbf{E}/\delta t^2) \quad (26.9)$$

with the abbreviation: $\mu \cdot \varepsilon = 1/c^2$ (26.10)

4. Field equation of a damped transverse wave:

$$\underbrace{-\text{rot rot } \mathbf{E} \cdot c^2}_{\text{transverse}} = \underbrace{\delta^2 \mathbf{E}/\delta t^2}_{\text{wave}} + \underbrace{(1/\tau) \cdot \delta \mathbf{E}/\delta t}_{\text{vortex damping}} \quad (26.11)$$

Fig. 26.1: ____ Derivation of the wave damping by means of the
           formation of vortices![i]

<hr>

[i]:   see also EMC, part 1, chapter 5.3, 2.borderline case.

26. Recapitulation from the viewpoint of textbook physics

Now that we in the meantime have accumulated innumerable mosaic parts as inspiring contributions to the discussion for the information technical seminar, it is time to sort the ideas and to put the parts together to an overall picture.

Sceptics and orthodox scientists can only be convinced, if we start from textbook physics and completely do without postulates. Those demands will be fulfilled!

26.1 Common misinterpretation of the antenna losses

The mathematical description of physical relations leads to the well-known laws, which shouldn't be doubted anymore as soon as they are accepted to be correct. But what about the interpretation? Although a law dictates the interpretation and there is no choice, because laws must be adhered to, yet textbooks from time to time violate the mathe-matically dictated interpretation, a circumstance, which can't be accepted. I would like to illustrate this with an example.

Let us assume that the measured degree of effectiveness of a transmitting antenna amounts to 80 percent. There exist better antennas, but also distinctly worse antennas, but I'm not aiming at a certain construction. The statement simply says, that 80% of the fed in HF-power is transformed into Hertzian waves. Thus there arises a loss of power of 20 percent, and the question follows: of what do those 20% consist?

The answer, which is usual among experts and is supported by the textbooks, reads: the antenna wire gets hot and also the air around the antenna is heated by dielectric losses. In short, heat is formed.

But I have to point out and will furnish proof that this interpretation is predominantly wrong! It in any case isn't in accord with the laws of Maxwell. Who namely obeys the laws, comes to an entirely different result!

A short derivation brings it to light (fig. 26.1).

We start with the formulation of Faraday's law of induction according to the textbooks (26.1), apply the curl-operation to both sides of the equation (26.3) and insert in the place of rot H Ampere's law (26.4-26.8). The generally known result describes a damped electro-magnetic wave (26.11)[◇].

It on the one hand is a transverse wave, which represents 80% of the antenna power for our example. On the other hand a damping term can be found in the equation, which obviously corresponds to the sought-for 20%. With that the answer would have been found. We realize that because of a damping of the wave 20% antenna losses arise. These losses can't concern heat at all, since the damping term in the equation has got nothing in common with thermodynamics. In the equation doesn't stand anything about heat! Such a mistake!
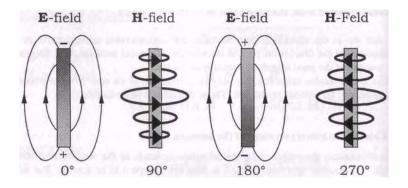
Fig. 21.8 A: The fields of the oscillating dipole antenna.[i]
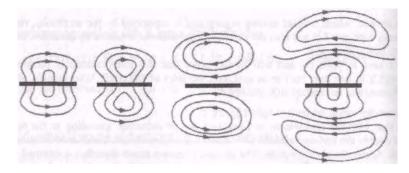
Fig. 21.9 A: The coming off of the electric field lines
from the dipole.

---

[i]:   Repetition belonging to chapter 21

26.2 Wave damping by field vortices

• Mathematically seen the damping term describes vortices of the electromagnetic field. This term for instance forms the basis of all eddy current calculations[ii].

• Physically seen some waves - in our example it is 20 percent - roll up to field vortices, with which the wave damping and the antenna losses would be explained.

In the course of time a substantial part of the generated vortices will fall apart. These thereby will produce eddy losses in form of heat. Thus eventually still heat is produced - agreed. The criticism of the textbooks consists of the circumstance that we by no means can proceed from the assumption that all vortices spontaneously fall apart and a total conversion into heat will take place. The process in addition takes place with a temporal delay. The time constant x gives information in this respect. Field energy is buffered in the vortex, where some vortices live very long and it can't be ruled out that a few even exist as long as you like.

To find out more about these field vortices and their behaviour, one has to get deep into vortex physics. Unfortunately nothing can be found about vortex physics in the textbooks. The mistake is systematic. The following short compendium should help close the gap:

• Mathematically seen a closed-loop electromagnetic field vortex will show as a scalar. Such field vortices, which are mediated by a scalar field, are propagating exactly as charged particles in longitudinal manner as a scalar wave.

• Physically seen a closed-loop field vortex has got particle nature. If one particle kicks off the next one then an impulse is mediated, then a shock wave is occurring, a longitudinal undulation of the particles.

From the vortex physical view the interpretation of the antenna example now sounds entirely different:
The charge carriers in an antenna wire oscillating with high-frequency form a longitudinal shock wave. Between current and tension voltage usually a phase shift of 90° is present. The fields produced by these charge carriers form a scalar wave field in the immediate vicinity of the antenna, the so-called near-field zone, which likewise contains longitudinal field components and shows a phase shift of 90° between electric and magnetic field (fig. 21.8 A). As in textbooks is clarified by field lines, the generated fields actually form vortices, where one structure kicks off the next one (fig. 21.9 A).

The vortices in the near-field zone of an antenna consist of standing waves, which obviously are transforming with increasing distance. In our example 80% of these are unrolling and turn into transverse waves, whereby the characteristic phase angle between E- and H-field at that occasion becomes zero. Let's turn again to those 20 percent loss.

_____

<ii>:   s.a.: K. Meyl: Wirbelstrome, Diss. Uni. Stuttgart 1984, INDEL Verlagsabt.

I. According to the Maxwell theory:

The consistent application of textbook physics

- Longitudinal waves run in the direction of a field pointer.
- The field pointer oscillates, the vector of velocity oscillates along!
  - At relativistic velocities field vortices are subject to the Lorentz contraction.
- The faster the oscillating vortex is on its way, the smaller it gets.
- The vortex permanently changes its diameter (see fig. 21.10 B).
- With the diameter the wavelength decreases (see fig. 22.4).
- The swirl velocity is constant (= speed of light c).
  - The eigenfrequency of the vortex oscillates with opposite phase to the wavelength.
- The vortex acts as a frequency converter!
- The measurable mixture of frequencies is called noise.

leads to the statement:

- ## The antenna noise corresponds to the antenna losses!

II. Mathematical description of a wave by the inhomogeneous Laplace equation:

$$\underbrace{\Delta \mathbf{E} \cdot c^2}_{\substack{\text{Laplace} \\ \text{operator}}} = \underbrace{- \text{ rot rot } \mathbf{E} \cdot c^2}_{\substack{\text{transverse} \\ \text{(radio wave)}}} + \underbrace{\text{grad div } \mathbf{E} \cdot c^2}_{\substack{\text{longitudinal} \\ \text{(scalar wave)}}} = \underbrace{\delta^2 \mathbf{E}/\delta t^2}_{\substack{\text{wave}}} \quad (26.12)$$

Divergence E is a scalar!
The corresponding term founds a scalar wave.

Fig. 26.3:   Mathematical description of a wave
according   to
Laplace.

26.3 Laplace versus Maxwell

Longitudinal waves as is well-known don't know a fixed velocity of propagation at all. Since they run in the direction of an oscillating field pointer also the vector of velocity will oscillate. For so-called relativistic velocities in the range of the speed of light c the field vortices are subject to the Lorentz contraction. That means, the faster the oscillating vortex is on its way, the smaller it gets. The vortex, as a mediator of a scalar wave carrying impulse, permanently changes its diameter.

Since, in the case of the vortices, it should concern rolled up waves, the vortex velocity will continue to be c, with which the wave now runs around the vortex centre in a circle. From that follows that if the diameter gets smaller, the wavelength of the vortex as well will decrease, whereas the eigenfrequency of the vortex accordingly increases. If the next moment the vortex oscillates back, the frequency again decreases. The vortex acts as a frequency converter! The mixture of high-frequency signals distributed over a broad frequency band formed in this way, is called noise. A noise signal indeed is measured from the outside with the help of broadband receivers.. We also speak of antenna noise and with this knowledge we can further specify the 20% antenna losses: The antenna produces 20 % noise, which can be put equal to the generated vortices because of the wave damping.

At this point the Maxwell theory doesn't leave us room for interpretation at all. If in the textbooks the impression is aroused, as if the noise were an independent discipline, than that is not true at all. How much the noise is connected with the electromagnetic waves, proves a short look at the wave equation.

The wave equation found in most textbooks has the form of an inhomogeneous Laplace equation. The famous French mathematician Laplace considerably earlier than Maxwell did find a comprehensive formulation of waves and formulated it mathematically (eq. 26.12), which until today is still accepted as valid.

On the one side of the wave equation the Laplace operator stands, which describes the spatial field distribution, and which according to the rules of vector analysis can be decomposed into two parts. On the other side the description of the time dependency of the wave can be found as an inhomogeneous term.

If the wave equation according to Laplace (26.12) is compared to the one, which the Maxwell equations have brought us (26.11), then two differences clearly come forward:

 1. In the Laplace equation the damping term is missing. It doesn't describe the formation of vortices, and that means vortices do not exist at all, or present vortices have been there from the beginning.

 2. With divergence E a scalar factor appears in the wave equation, which founds a scalar wave.

At this point at once hot tempered discussions concerning the question of the existence of scalar waves blaze up. But this question has already been answered clearly with the vortex consideration. Since an accepted description of longitudinal and scalar waves exists with the plasma wave and the plasma wave can be derived directly without postulate from the term of the wave equation (chapter 21.4/21.5), which founds scalar waves, there are further arguments present for their existence.

I. According to Maxwell:

$$\underbrace{- \text{rot rot } \mathbf{E} \cdot c^2}_{\text{transverse}} = \underbrace{\delta^2\mathbf{E}/\delta t^2}_{\text{wave}} + \underbrace{(1/\tau) \cdot \delta\mathbf{E}/\delta t}_{\text{vortex damping}}$$ (26.11)

Description   of   electromagnetic   waves   with   vortex   damping
Example: sunlight and the damping in the ionosphere (bleu sky).

II. According to Laplace:

$$\underbrace{\Delta\mathbf{E} \cdot c^2}_{\substack{\text{Laplace}\\\text{operator}}} = \underbrace{- \text{rot rot } \mathbf{E} \cdot c^2}_{\substack{\text{transverse}\\\text{(Hertz)}}} + \underbrace{\text{grad div } \mathbf{E} \cdot c^2}_{\substack{\text{longitudinal}\\\text{(Tesla)}}} = \underbrace{\delta^2\mathbf{E}/\delta t^2}_{\substack{\text{wave}\\\text{(26.12)}}}$$

Description of transverse electromagnetic waves (Hertzian waves)
and longitudinal scalar waves (Tesla radiation).
1st example: propagation of light as a wave or as a particle.
2nd example: useful signal or noise signal of an antenna.

III. Mathematically seen (comparison of coefficients):

$$\underbrace{(1/\tau) \cdot \delta\mathbf{E}/\delta t}_{\text{vortex}} + \underbrace{\text{grad div } \mathbf{E} \cdot c^2}_{\text{scalar}} = 0$$ (26.13)

IV. Physically seen
(from the comparison of equation 26.12 with equation 26.11):

Vortices propagate longitudinally as a scalar wave!

Fig. 26.2: _____ Comparison of the two wave descriptions.

26.4 Error term in the wave equation

From the comparison of coefficients of both wave descriptions follows even more:

- Mathematically seen the damping - resp. vortex term according to Maxwell can be put equal to the scalar wave term according to Laplace.

- Physically seen the generated field vortices form and found a scalar wave.

Here also doesn't exist any room for interpretation, as long as we work with the wave equation according to Laplace and at the same time adhere to the Maxwell theory. If however the scalar wave part is put equal to zero, as is common practise in the textbooks, then as a consequence neither vortices nor noise may exist. But that contradicts all measuring technical experience! Since every antenna produces more or less noise, the textbooks obviously only show half the truth. Science however gropes for the whole truth and that should be fathomed.

If in the case of the antenna example the vortex part amounts to 20%, then that's tantamount to 20% scalar wave part, resp. 20% noise. The scalar wave part constitutes with regard to the Hertzian useful wave something like an error term in the wave equation. The part definitely is too big, as that it might be put equal to zero. Even so all error consideration in the textbooks is missing, if the scalar wave term is assumed to be zero. That violates all rules of physics and of taught scientific methodism.

In practice this shows by a useful signal going under in the noise and reception not being possible anymore as soon as the scalar wave part gets out of control. Even in this case, for which the degree of effectiveness tends towards zero, it still is common practise to put the error term, which is dominating everything, equal to zero. But who in this point follows the textbooks, disregards with that the wave equation and doing so by no means can refer to the circumstance that all colleagues make the same mistake.

The building of physics behaves like a house of cards, where the cards mutually support each other. Perhaps that is the deeper reason why those, who have discovered a marked card, don't pull it out immediately. In addition they are hindered by the self appointed guardians of the „pure doctrine", since everyone knows what happens with the house of cards if the marked card is pulled out. Only, do we want to and can we live with that in the long run? Is it a solution of the problem, if the so-called experts among the physicists and technicians look away and don't deal with the foundation of their branch anymore? If universities crash their basis education into the wall and choke off every contradiction?

Please allow me to pull out the marked card now and place it on the table!

It concerns the question: what is the nature of the field vortices, which form a scalar wave in space. Eddy currents in the iron parts of the antenna are explained with the field equations, but not the noise, which is measured especially in the air. If an antenna on the one hand produces field vortices and as a consequence eddy losses and on the other hand dielectric losses, then we can assume that besides the eddy currents in the conductor also vortices in the dielectric must exist. Let's search for them!

Interim result (comparison of arguments):

The Maxwell equations on the one hand dictate that as the reason for a wave damping only field vortices should be considered.	On the other hand the same laws merely describe eddy currents, which can only occur in the electrically conducting parts of the antenna.
On the one hand the field vortex interpretation makes it possible to explain the noise of an antenna perfectly.	On the other hand does the noise appear in the neighbourhood of the antenna, thus in the air and not in the iron parts!
The mathematical formulation reveals, how wave and vortex, resp. noise, co-operate and how one should imagine the conversion of one form into the other form.	In field physics on the other hand is missing a useful description of electric field vortices in a dielectric, which could found the noise signal.

Table 26.5:   Arguments pro and contra.

26. 5 Interim result

It shouldn't be a disadvantage, to interprete physical laws more consistently than usual, even if in the present case orthodox science through that at first should fall into a deep crisis. If the way is worthwhile, only will show at the end. Let us try to work out the contradictions in form of a comparison of arguments:

•The Maxwell equations on the one hand dictate that as the reason for a wave damping only field vortices should be considered. _____

   o   On the other hand the same laws merely describe eddy currents, which can only occur in the electrically conducting parts of the antenna. .

• On the one hand the field vortex interpretation makes it possible to explain the noise of an antenna perfectly. .

   o   On the other hand does the noise appear in the neighbourhood of the antenna, thus in the air and not in the iron parts!

• The mathematical formulation reveals, how wave and vortex, resp. noise, co-operate and how one should imagine the conversion of one form into the other form.

   o   In field physics on the other hand is missing a useful description of electric field vortices in a dielectric, which could found the noise signal.

The most obvious among all conceivable solutions is the one that we have to assume the existence of dielectric field vortices, so-called potential vortices. We are challenged to search for a corresponding description. If the quest should be successful, then the contradictions would be overcome. In addition there is the promise of a whole number of simplifying explanations of various phenomena in the dielectric (see fig. 26.5 and fig. 26.7).

The phenomenon of noise becomes an aspect of wave physics, which is more than merely a field disturbance, which makes the reception of the useful wave more difficult. If the scalar wave nature is realized, then applications can be imagined, in which the noise is used as useful signal. In the way that the scalar part in the wave equation doesn't have to be put to zero anymore to obtain freedom of contradiction, even optimizations of antennas or of capacitors are possible with regard to the dielectric losses by means of the calculation of the scalar part.

New in any case is the idea that the dielectric losses of a capacitor are eddy losses and not a defect in material of the insulating material. With that the capacitor losses correspond to a generated noise power. We also can say, every capacitor more or less produces noise! The electric field lines point from one capacitor plate to the other plate. If one plate radiates as a transmitter and the other plate functions as a receiver, then the field propagation takes place in the direction of the electric field pointer and that again is the condition for a longitudinal wave. Here the circle closes in the conclusion, the capacitor field mediates dielectric field vortices, which following the field lines found a scalar wave because of their scalar nature. The heating of the capacitor results from the decay of vortices.

Potential vortices explain div. phenomena in the dielectric:

1. The **noise** no longer is factored out of the field theory.

2. The scalar (noise) part in the wave equation no longer has to be put to zero (div **E** ≠ 0).

3. The wave descriptions according to Maxwell (26.11) and according to Laplace (26.12) are consistent and free of contradiction.

4. The dielectric losses of an antenna can be found physically and even can be calculated with the wave equation.

5. **Also the dielectric losses** of a capacitor are **eddy losses** (and not a defect in material of the insulating material).

6. The **capacitor losses** correspond to a generated **noise power**.

7. The **dielectric constant** ε doesn't have to be written down complex as until now to give reasons for the occurring losses, and so the inner contradiction is solved, which is hidden in a complex constant. One should only remember the definition of the speed of light $c = 1/\sqrt{\varepsilon\mu}$ (eq. 26.10) and the insurmountable problems in the textbooks, which are brought by a complex ε!

8. The field lines point from one capacitor plate to the other plate. If one plate radiates as a transmitter and the other plate functions as a receiver, then the field propagation takes place in the direction of the electric field pointer and that again is the condition for a **longitudinal wave**.

9. The capacitor field mediates dielectric field vortices, which following the field lines found a **scalar wave** because of their scalar nature.

10. As an inhabitant of a dielectric between two capacitor plates (earth and ionosphere) also **man** is a product of these field vortices.

11. Scalar waves can be modulated moredimensionally and be used as **carrier of information**, as Prof. Sheldrake has proven with his proof of the existence of morphogenetic fields[i].

Fig. 26.6: ____ Advantages of a field description extended with potential vortices.

[i]:   Rupert Sheldrake: Seven Experiments That Could Change the World. Riverhead Books, 1995

26.6 Failure of the Maxwell theory

If the capacitor losses or the antenna noise should concern dielectric losses in the sense of vortex decay of potential vortices, which don't occur in the Maxwell theory at all, then we are confronted with a massive contradiction:

> •For the description of the losses the Maxwell; theory on the one hand only offers field vortices and those only in the conductive medium.
> > o On the other hand do the dielectric losses occut in the nonconductor and in the air.

> • In conductive materials vortex fields occur, in the insulator however the fields are irrotational. That isn't possible, since at the transition from the conductor to the insulator the laws of refraction are valid and these require continuity! Hence a failure of the Maxwell theory (Fig. 26.7) will occur in the dielectric.

> > o   As a consequence the existence of vortex fields in the dielectric, so-called potential vortices, should be required!

In electrodynamics as a help the approach of a vector potential A is used, which leads to a complex formulation of the dielectric constant ε and in this way makes it possible, to mathematically describe the dielectric losses of a capacitor by means of the load angle, which stretches in the complex plane. But which physical value does this approach have? How can now the inner contradiction be explained, which is hidden in a complex constant of material? One should only remember the definition of the speed of light c $=1/\sqrt{\varepsilon\mu}$ (eq. 26.10) and its dependency of ε. For a complex ε here are resulting insurmountable problems in the textbooks.

From the viewpoint of mathematics the introduction of the vector potential at first may represent a help. The before mentioned contradictions however fast raise doubts to the model concept, which from a physical viewpoint eventually will lead to errors, if the speed of light isn't constant anymore and even should be complex.

These considerations should be sufficient as a motive to require potential vortices, even if for their description the field theory according to the textbooks has to be revised. As a supplement there is pointed to the following points:
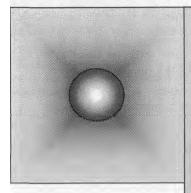
> •   As an inhabitant of a dielectric between two capacitor plates also man is a product of these field vortices.

> •Scalar waves can be modulated moredimensionally and be used as carrier of information, as Prof. Sheldrake has proven with his proof of morphogenetic fields[i].

The dielectric vortices moreover provide an explanation for natural events. They form the key to numerous disciplines of science, from physics over biology up to medicine.

---

[i]:   Rupert Sheldrake: Seven Experiments That Could Change the World. Riverhead Books, 1995

Problem of continuity in the case of the coming off of vortices

Example: hightension cable

In **conductive materials vortex fields** *occur in the* **insulator** *however the fields are* **irrotational**.

That isn't possible, since at the transition from the conductor to the insulator the **laws of refraction** *are valid and these require* **continuity!** *Hence a* **failure of the Maxwell theory** *will occur in the dielectric!*

Conclusion: ♦ According to the Maxwell theory there exist no vortices of the electric field *(no potential vortices)* and therefore *no scalar waves.*

♦ Without theory it is impossible to design a usable *scalar wave gauge* and to furnish *evidence.* ⇒ **Classic closed loop conclusion:**

♦ The missing of scientific evidence again „proves" the assumption of the irrotationality and „confirms" the correctness of the Maxwell theory.

♦ **Hence it cannot be, what shouldn't be!**

Fie. 26.7:   Concerning the failure of the Maxwell theory

26.7. Concerning the evidence situation

In the question, if a physical phenomenon should be acknowledged as such, experimental, mathematical and physical evidence should be shown. In the case of the potential vortices, the vortices of the electric field and their propagation as a scalar wave, the historical experiments of Nikola Tesla[i] and the modern clone of these can be judged as experimental evidence[ii].

With the well-known wave equation a mathematical description for this phenomenon has been specified and discussed[iii]. It will be shown that both transverse and longitudinal wave parts are contained alongside in the wave equation, i.e. both radio waves according to Hertz and scalar waves according to Tesla. Doing so the mathematically determined scalar wave properties are identical with the experimental results!
The wave equation is an inhomogeneous Laplace equation and the first and oldest description of scalar waves. It thereby is unimportant, if the famous mathematician Laplace himself already may have realized and discussed this circumstance or not. The description fits perfectly and that is what counts!

At this point the third point should be put on the agenda, the physical evidence. This is connected very closely with the question for a suitable field theory and that again is basing on a corresponding approach.

<i>:   N. Tesla: Apparatus for Transmission of Electrical Energy, US-Patent-No.: 649,621, New York 1900, Dr. Nikola Tesla: Complete Patents pp318-321.

<ii>:   Johannes von Buttlar im Gesprach mit Prof. Dr. Konstantin Meyl: Neutrinopower, Argo-Verlag, Marktoberdorf, l.Aufl. 2000.

<iii>: K. Meyl: Scalar Waves: Theory and Experiments, Journal of Scientific Exploration, Vol. 15, No. 2, pp. 199-205, 2001

(* * * Task Schedule * * *)

1. Neutrino radiation => energy radiation!
   (acc. to Pauli: ν cares for missing energy in the case of the ß-decay)
2. High neutrino density => high energy density!
   3. Neutrino = particle without charge or mass (mean),
   but because of oscillations: effective value of charge and mass ≠ zero!
   4. Interaction   only   in   the   case   of   resonance
   (e.g. weak interaction)!
   (same frequency, 180° phase shift)
   5. Neutrino radiation is an energy source which can be
   used (not a question of physics, only a question of technology!)
6. Particle radiation (neutrino)   => shock wave (like sound)
                                  =>   longitudinal   wave
                                  => scalar wave (mathem.)
7. Interaction/resonance of the v = scalar wave problem
8. Scalar waves are a problem of the field theory!
9. Maxwell theory neglects scalar waves.

   • Search for a new approach (chap. 27.8)

   • Derivation of the Maxwell equations as a

   • Derivation of scalar waves (chap. 27.13)
   • Derivation of the gravitation and more

Table 27.1:   Task schedule belonging to chapter 27

27. Faraday versus Maxwell

Numerous phenomena of the electromagnetic field are described sufficiently accurate by the Maxwell equations, so that these as a rule are regarded as a universal field description. But if one looks more exact it turns out to be purely an approximation, which in addition leads to far reaching physical and technological consequences. We must ask ourselves:

♦ What is the Maxwell approximation?

♦ How could a new and extended approach look like?

   ♦ Faraday instead of Maxwell, which is the more general law of induction?

♦ Can the Maxwell equations be derived as a special case?

♦ Can also scalar waves be derived from the new approach?

♦ Can the gravitation as well be derived and a lot else more?

On the one hand it concerns the big search for a unified physical theory and on the other hand the chances of new technologies, which are connected with an extended field theory. As a necessary consequence of the derivation, which roots strictly in textbook physics and manages without postulate, scalar waves occur, which could be used manifold. In information technology they are suited as a carrier wave, which can be modulated moredimensionally, and in power engineering the spectrum stretches from the wireless transmission up to the collection of energy out of the field.

27.1 Energy out of the field

Neutrinos for instance are such field configurations, which move through space as a scalar wave. They were introduced by Pauli as massless but energy carrying particles to be able to fulfil the balance sheet of energy for the beta decay. Nothing would be more obvious than to technically use the neutrino radiation as an energy source.

But for a technical exploitation a useful model description of the particles and their interaction is imperative. For the sake of simplicity we imagine the neutrino to be an oscillating particle, which permanently oscillates back and forth between the state of an electron and that of a positron. With that the polarity changes from positive to negative and back again and the charge averaged over time is zero. Because of the change from a state of matter to the state of an anti-particle also next to no mass can be measured anymore.

A technical oscillator operated in resonance, which oscillates with the same frequency but opposite charge, will interact with the particle and build up an oscillating electromagnetic interaction, with which we already are familiar as the weak interaction in the proximity of a neutrino.

Tubular vortices

• Examples: drain vortex (bathtub vortex)
  whirlwind and waterspout, tornado (image).

Inside: expanding vortex
Outside: contracting anti-vortex
Condition   for coming off: equally powerful vortices
Criterion: viscosity
Result: tubular structure

Fig. 27.2: _____ Vortex and anti-vortex - a physical basic principle

<i>:   Lugt: Wirbelstromung in Natur und Technik, G. Braun Verlag Karlsruhe
1979, Bild ,,Tornado" von Tafel 21, Seite 356

The propagation of particle radiation as a longitudinal shock wave however can't be described with the normally used field theory and the Maxwell equations, so that the field theory at this point must be reworked. Connected with this is the question of what is oscillating here, a question, which often is answered with an aether of whatever nature. I speak of field vortices and call the aether a property of the field. With that the set of difficulties is shifted into the domain of vortex physics.

27.2 Vortex and anti-vortex

In the eye of a tornado the same calm prevails as at great distance, because here a vortex and its anti-vortex work against each other. In the inside the expanding vortex is located and on the outside the contracting anti-vortex. One vortex is the condition for the existence of the other one and vice versa. Already Leonardo da Vinci knew both vortices and has described the dual manifestations (chapter 3.4).

In the case of flow vortices the viscosity determines the diameter of the vortex tube where the coming off will occur. If for instance a tornado soaks itself with water above the open ocean, then the contracting potential vortex is predominant and the energy density increases threateningly. If it however runs overland and rains out, it again becomes bigger and less dangerous.

The conditions for the bathtub vortex are similar. Here the expanding vortex consists of air, the contracting vortex however of water. In flow dynamics the relations are understood. They mostly can be seen well and observed without further aids.

In electrical engineering it's different: here field vortices remain invisible and not understood. Only so the Maxwell theory could find acceptance, although it only describes mathematically the expanding eddy current and ignores its anti-vortex. I call the contracting anti-vortex potential vortex" and point to the circumstance, that every eddy current entails the anti-vortex as a physical necessity.

Because the size of the forming structures is determined by the electric conductivity, in conducting materials the vortex rings, being composed of both vortices, are huge, whereas they can contract down to atomic dimensions in nonconductors. Only in semiconducting and resistive materials the structures occasionally can be observed directly (fig. 4.8).

Spherical vortices

Examples:	expanding vortex	contracting vortex
• quantum physics	collision processes (several quarks)	gluons (postulate!)
• nuclear physics	repulsion of like	strong interaction (postulate!)
• atomic physics	centrifugal force of the enveloping electrons	electrical attraction Schrodinger equation
• astro-physics	centrifugal force (inertia)	gravitation (can not be derived?!)

Example: elementary particles as electromagnetic field vortices

Inside:	expanding eddy current (skin effect)
Outside:	contracting anti-vortex (potential vortex)
Condition	for coming off: equally powerful vortices
Criterion:	electric conductivity (determines diameter)
Result:	spherical structure (consequence of the pressure of the vacuum)

Fig. 27.3: _____ Spherical structures as a result of contracting potential vortices.[i]

Demokrit (460-370 BC) equated the vortex concept with „law of nature"! = the first attempt to formulate a unified physics.

[i]:   see Part 1, chapter 4.3

27.3 Vortices in the microcosm and macrocosm

The approximation, which is hidden in the Maxwell equations, thus consists of neglecting the anti-vortex dual to the eddy current. It is possible that this approximation is allowed, as long as it only concerns processes inside conducting materials. If we however get to insulating materials the Maxwell approximation will lead to considerable errors and it won't be able to keep it anymore.

If we take as an example the lightning and ask how the lightning channel is formed: Which mechanism is behind it, if the electrically insulating air for a short time is becoming a conductor? From the viewpoint of vortex physics the answer is obvious: The potential vortex, which in the air is dominating, contracts very strong and doing so squezes all air charge carriers and air ions, which are responsible for the conductivity, together at a very small space to form a current channel.

The contracting potential vortex thus exerts a pressure and with that forms the vortex tube. Besides the cylindrical structure another structure can be expected. It is the sphere, which is the only form, which can withstand a powerful pressure if that acts equally from all directions of space. Only think of ball lightning. Actually the spherical structure is mostly found in microcosm till macrocosm. Let's consider some examples and thereby search for the expanding and contracting forces (fig. 27.2).
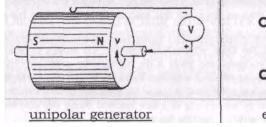
• In quantum physics one imagines the elementary particles to be consisting of quarks. Irrespective of the question, which physical reality should be attributed to this model concept, one thing remains puzzling: The quarks should run apart, or you should try to keep together three globules, which are moving violently and permanently hitting each other. For this reason glue particles were postulated, the so-called gluons, which now should take care for the reaction force, but this reaction force is nothing but a postulate!

• In nuclear physics it concerns the force, which holds together the atomic nucleus, which is composed of many nucleons, and gives it the well-known great stability, although here like charged particles are close together. Particles, which usually repel each other. Between the theoretical model and practical reality there is an enormous gap, which should be overcome by introducing of a new reaction force. But also the nuclear force, called strong interaction, is nothing but a postulate!

• In atomic physics the electric force of attraction between the positive nuclear charge and the negatively charged enveloping electrons counteracts the centrifugal force. In this case the anti-vortex takes care for a certain structure of the atomic hull, which obey the Schrodinger equation as eigenvalue solutions. But also this equation irrespective of its efficiency until today purely is a mathematical postulate, as long as its origin is not clear.

• In astrophysics centrifugal force (expansion) as a result of the inertia and gravitation (contraction) as a result of the attraction of masses are balanced. But the "gravitation" puts itself in the way of every attempt to formulate a unified field theory. Also this time it is the contracting vortex, of which is said it can't be derived nor integrated.

Michael Faraday,
the experimentor (1791-1867)

James Clerk Maxwell[i],
the mathematician (1831-1879)

unipolar generator

e.g.: transformer
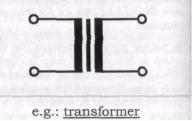
Fig. 27.4: ____ The fathers of the law of induction

[i]:   J.C. Maxwell: A treatise on Electricity and Magnetism, Dover Publications

It is remarkable how in the domain of the contracting vortex the postulates are accumulating. But this hasn't always been the case. In ancient Greece already 2400 years ago Demokrit has undertaken an attempt to formulate a unified physics. He traced all visible and observable structures in nature back to vortices, each time formed of vortex and anti-vortex. This phenomenon appeared him to be so fundamental, that he put the term "vortex" equal to the term for „law of nature". The term „.atom" stems from Demokrit (460-370 BC).

Seen this way the physicists in ancient times already had been further than today's physics, which with the Maxwell approximation neglects the contracting vortex and with that excludes fundamental phenomena from the field description or is forced to replace them by model descriptions and numerous postulates.

What we need is a new field approach, which removes this flaw and in this point reaches over and above the Maxwell theory.

27.4 Faraday's law and Maxwell's formulation

In the choice of the approach the physicist is free, as long as the approach is reasonable and well founded. In the case of Maxwell's field equations two experimentally determined regularities served as basis: on the one hand Ampere's law and on the other hand the law of induction of Faraday. The mathematician Maxwell thereby gave the finishing touches for the formulations of both laws. He introduced the displacement current D and completed Ampere's law accordingly, and that without a chance of already at his time being able to measure and prove the measure. Only after his death this was possible experimentally, what afterwards makes clear the format of this man. In the formulation of the law of induction Maxwell was completely free, because the discoverer Michael Faraday had done without specifications. As a man of practice and of experiment the mathematical notation was less important for Faraday. For him the attempts with which he could show his discovery of the induction to everybody, e.g. his unipolar generator, stood in the foreground.

His 40 years younger friend and professor of mathematics Maxwell however had something completely different in mind. He wanted to describe the light as an electromagnetic wave and doing so certainly the wave description of Laplace went through his mind, which needs a second time derivation of the field factor. Because Maxwell for this purpose needed two equations with each time a first derivation, he had to introduce the displacement current in Ampere's law and had to choose an appropriate notation for the formulation of the law of induction to get to the wave equation. His light theory initially was very controversial. Maxwell faster found acknowledgement for bringing together the teachings of electricity and magnetism and the representation as something unified and belonging together[i] than for mathematically giving reasons for the principle discovered by Faraday.

Nevertheless the question should be asked, if Maxwell has found the suitable formulation, if he has understood 100 percent correct his friend Faraday and his discovery. If discovery (from 29.08.1831) and mathematical formulation (1862) stem from two different scientists, who in addition belong to different disciplines, misunderstandings are nothing unusual. It will be helpful to work out the differences.

Law of induction

unipolar generator	e.g.: transformer
discovery of Faraday	2nd Maxwell equation
$\boxed{\mathbf{E} = \mathbf{v} \times \mathbf{B}}$ (27.1)	$\boxed{\text{rot } \mathbf{E} = - \,d\mathbf{B}/dt}$ (27.1*)
unipolar induction	law of induction generally
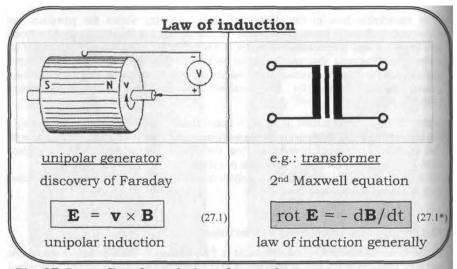
Fig. 27.5:   Two formulations for one law
As a mathematical relation between
the vectors of the electric field strength **E**
and the induction **B** (= magnetic flux density)

Consequences
(the physically mean of the „field concept"):

• The **Faraday approach** describes a field physical principle	• **Maxwell equations** describe the fields of charged particles
• field = experience: We experience the electric as a magnetic field and vice versa as a result of a relative velocity	• the electric (**E**-) field = static field of charges, • the magnetic (**H**-) field = field of moving charges.
• Particles do not occur in the Faraday approach	• The origin of the particles remains unsettled (postulate)
• Perfect duality between **E**- and **H**-field.	• No duality in the field description
• **v** leads to dual permutation of **E**- and **H**-field.	• Charge carriers=el. monopoles • No magnetic monopoles!

27.5 The discovery of Faraday

If one turns an axially polarized magnet or a copper disc situated in a magnetic field, then perpendicular to the direction of motion and perpendicular to the magnetic field pointer a pointer of the electric field will occur, which everywhere points axially to the outside. In the case of this by Faraday developed unipolar generator hence by means of a brush between the rotation axis and the circumference a tension voltage can be called off[i]. The mathematically correct relation E = v x B I call Faraday-law, even if it only appears in this form in the textbooks later in time[ii]. The formulation usually is attributed to the mathematician Hendrik Lorentz, since it appears in the Lorentz force in exactly this form. Much more important than the mathematical formalism however are the experimental results and the discovery by Michael Faraday, for which reason the law concerning unipolar induction is named after the discoverer.

Of course we must realize that the charge carriers at the time of the discovery hadn't been discovered yet and the field concept couldn't correspond to that of today. The field concept was an abstracter one, free of any quantization.

That of course also is valid for the field concept advocated by Maxwell, which we now contrast with the „Faraday-law" (fig. 27.4). The second Maxwell equation, the law of induction (27.1*), also is a mathematical description between the electric field strength E and the magnetic induction B. But this time the two aren't linked by a relative velocity v. In that place stands the time derivation of B, with which a change in flux is necessary for an electric field strength to occur. As a consequence the Maxwell equation doesn't provide a result in the static or quasi-stationary case, for which reason it in such cases is usual, to fall back upon the unipolar induction according to Faraday (e.g. in the case of the Hall-probe, the picture tube, etc.). The falling back should only remain restricted to such cases, so the normally used idea. But with which right the restriction of the Faraday-law to stationary processes is made?

The vectors E and B can be subject to both spatial and temporal fluctuations. In that way the two formulations suddenly are in competition with each other and we are asked, to explain the difference, as far as such a difference should be present.

---

[i]:   Part 2, INDEL 1996, Chap. 16.1

[ii]:   among others in R.W. Pohl: Einfuhrung in die Physik, Bd.2 Elektrizitatslehre, 21.Aufl. Springer-Verlag 1975, Seite 76 und 130

law of induction

unipolar generator	e.g.: transformer
discovery of **Faraday**	2nd **Maxwell** equation
$\mathbf{E} = \mathbf{v} \times \mathbf{B}$ (27.1)	$\mathrm{rot}\ \mathbf{E} = -\,d\mathbf{B}/dt$ (27.1*)

Difference, e.g. in the (quasi-) stationary case (dB/dt = 0):

$\mathbf{E} \neq 0$	$\mathbf{E} = 0$

Electric and magnetic field in the stationary case are:

coupled:
mag. induction **B** (⊥)   → **E**

decoupled:
neglectible   **B**   → **E**

Only **E** or **B** can form an open field line.
The other field line is a closed-loop field line

Closed-loop field lines have no effect, can't be influenced and are neglected (Maxwell approximation!)

Fig. 27.6: ____ Law of induction according to Faraday or Maxwell?

27.6 Different formulation of the law of induction

Such a difference for instance is, that it is common practice to neglect the coupling between the fields at low frequencies. While at high frequencies in the range of the electromagnetic field the E- and the H-field are mutually dependent, at lower frequency and small field change the process of induction drops correspondingly according to Maxwell, so that a neglect seems to be allowed. Now electric or magnetic field can be measured independently of each other. Usually is proceeded as if the other field is not present at all.

That is not correct. A look at the Faraday-law immediately shows that even down to frequency zero always both fields are present. The field pointers however stand perpendicular to each other, so that the magnetic field pointer wraps around the pointer of the electric field in the form of a vortex ring in the case that the electric field strength is being measured and vice versa. The closed-loop field lines are acting neutral to the outside; they hence need no attention, so the normally used idea. It should be examined more closely if this is sufficient as an explanation for the neglect of the not measurable closed-loop field lines, or if not after all an effect arises from fields, which are present in reality.

Another difference concerns the commutability of E- and H-field, as is shown by the Faraday-generator, how a magnetic becomes an electric field and vice versa as a result of a relative velocity v. This directly influences the physical-philosophic question: What is meant by the electromagnetic field?

The textbook opinion based on the Maxwell equations names the static field of the charge carriers as cause for the electric field, whereas moving ones cause the magnetic field. But that hardly can have been the idea of Faraday, to whom the existence of charge carriers was completely unknown. The for his contemporaries completely revolutionary abstract field concept based on the works of the Croatian Jesuit priest Boscovich (1711-1778). In the case of the field it should less concern a physical quantity in the usual sense, than rather the experimental experience'' of an interaction according to his field description. We should interpret the Faraday-law to the effect that we experience an electric field, if we are moving with regard to a magnetic field with a relative velocity and vice versa.

In the commutability of electric and magnetic field a duality between the two is expressed, which in the Maxwell formulation is lost, as soon as charge carriers are brought into play. Is thus the Maxwell field the special case of a particle free field? Much evidence points to it, because after all a light ray can run through a particle free vacuum. If however fields can exist without particles, particles without fields however are impossible, then the field should have been there first as the cause for the particles. Then the Faraday description should form the basis, from which all other regularities can be derived. What do the textbooks say to that?
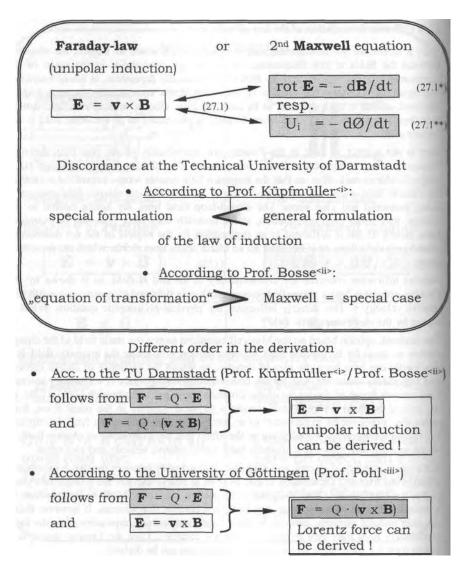
Fig. 27.7: Different opinions and derivations

\<i>:   K. Kupfmuller: Einfuhrung in die theoretische Elektrotechnik, 12. Auflage, Springer Verlag 1988, Seite 228, Gl. 22.

\<ii>:   G. Bosse: Grundlagen der Elektrotechnik II, BI-Hochschultaschenbucher Nr. 183, l.Aufl. 1967, Kap. 6.1 Induktion, Seite 58

\<iii>:   R. W. Pohl: Einfuhrung in die Physik, Band 2 Elektrizitatslehre, 21. Auflage, Springer-Verlag 1975, Seite 77

27.7 Contradictory opinions in textbooks

Obviously there exist two formulations for the law of induction (27.1 and 27.1*), which more or less have equal rights. Science stands for the question: which mathematical description is the more efficient one? If one case is a special case of the other case, which description then is the more universal one?

What Maxwell's field equations tell us is sufficiently known, so that derivations are unnecessary. Numerous textbooks are standing by, if results should be cited. Let us hence turn to the Faraday-law (27.1). Often one searches in vain for this law in schoolbooks. Only in more pretentious books one makes a find under the keyword "unipolar induction". If one however compares the number of pages, which are spent on the law of induction according to Maxwell with the few pages for the unipolar induction, then one gets the impression that the latter only is a unimportant special case for low frequencies. Kupfmuller speaks of a „special form of the law of induction"[i], and cites as practical examples the induction in a brake disc and the Hall-effect. Afterwards Kupfmiiller derives from the „special form" the „general form" of the law of induction according to Maxwell, a postulated generalization, which needs an explanation. But a reason is not given[i]. Bosse gives the same derivation, but for him the Maxwell-result is the special case and not his Faraday approach[ii]! In addition he addresses the Faraday-law as equation of transformation and points out the meaning and the special interpretation. On the other hand he derives the law from the Lorentz force, completely in the style of Kupfmuller[i] and with that again takes it part of its autonomy. Pohl looks at that different. He inversely derives the Lorentz force from the Faraday-law[iii].

By all means, the Faraday-law, which we want to base on instead of on the Maxwell equations, shows „strange effects[i4]" from the point of view of a Maxwell representative of today and thereby but one side of the medal (eq. 27.1). Only in very few distinguished textbooks the other side of the medal (eq. 27.2) is mentioned at all. In that way most textbooks mediate a lopsided and incomplete picture[i,ii,i4]. If there should be talk about equations of transformation, then the dual formulation belongs to it, then it concerns a pair of equations, which describes the relations between the electric and the magnetic field.

If the by Bosse[ii] prompted term „equation of transformation" is justified or not at first is unimportant. That is a matter of discussion.

[i]: K. Kupfmuller: Einfuhrung in die theoretische Elektrotechnik, 12.Aufl., Springer Verlag 1988, Seite 228, Gl. 22.

[ii]: G. Bosse: Grundlagen der Elektrotechnik II, BI-Hochschultaschenbucher Nr.183, l.Aufl. 1967, Kap. 6.1 Induktion, Seite 58

[iii]: R.W.Pohl: Einfuhrung in die Physik, Bd.2 Elektrizitatslehre, 2 l.Aufl. Springer-Verlag 1975, Seite 77

[i4]: G. Lehner: Elektromagnetische Feldtheorie, Springer-Lehrbuch 1990, 1. Aufl., Seite 31 Kommentar zur Lorentzkraft (1.65)

The new and dual field approach consists of equations of transformation

of the electric   and   of the magnetic field[i]

$$E = v \times B$$ (27.1) and $$H = - v \times D$$ (27.2)

unipolar induction   equation of convection

- Formulation according to the rules of duality

  - Grimsehl[ii] speaks of the ,,equation of convection", according to which moving charges produce a magnetic field and so-called convection currents (referring to Rontgen 1885, Himstedt, Rowland 1876, Eichenwald and others)

- Pohl[iii] gives examples for the equations of transformation,

- he writes the equations beneath each other

$$E = \mu \cdot v \times H$$ (27.3) and $$H = - \varepsilon \cdot v \times E$$ (27.4)

- and points out that for $v = c = 1/\sqrt{\mu \cdot \varepsilon}$
  one equation changes into the other one!

The new and dual approach roots in textbook physics!

Fig. 27.8: The new and dual field approach

[i]:   see Part 1, chapter 6.5
[ii]:   Grimsehl: Lehrbuch der Physik, 2.Bd., 17,Aufl. Teubner Verl. 1967, S. 130.
[iii]: R.W.Pohl: Einfuhrung in die Physik, Bd.2 Elektrizitatslehre, 21.Aufl. Springer-Verlag 1975, Seite 77

27.8 The field-theoretical approach

The duality between E- and H-field and the commutability asks for a corresponding dual formulation to the Faraday-law (27.1). Written down according to the rules of duality there results an equation (27.2), which occasionally is mentioned in some textbooks. While both equations in the books of Pohl[i] and of Simonyi[ii] are written down side by side having equal rights and are compared with each other, Grimsehl[iii] derives the dual regularity (27.2) with the help of the example of a thin, positively charged and rotating metal ring. He speaks of „equation of convection", according to which moving charges produce a magnetic field and so-called convection currents. Doing so he refers to workings of Rontgen 1885, Himstedt, Rowland 1876, Eichenwald and many others more, which today hardly are known.
In his textbook also Pohl gives practical examples for both equations of transformation. He points out that one equation changes into the other one, if as a relative velocity v the speed of light c should occur. This question will also occupy us.

We now have found a field-theoretical approach with the equations of transformation, which in its dual formulation is clearly distinguished from the Maxwell approach. The reassuring conclusion is added: The new field approach roots entirely in textbook physics, as are the results from the literature research. We can completely do without postulates.
Next thing to do is to test the approach strictly mathematical for freedom of contradictions. It in particular concerns the question, which known regularities can be derived under which conditions. Moreover the conditions and the scopes of the derived theories should result correctly, e.g. of what the Maxwell approximation consists and why the Maxwell equations describe only a special case.

27.9 Derivation of Maxwell's field equations

As a starting-point and as approach serve the equations of transformation of the electromagnetic field, the Faraday-law of unipolar induction and the according to the rules of duality formulated law (eq. 27.1, 2). If we apply the curl to both sides of the equations then according to known algorithms of vector analysis the curl of the cross product each time delivers the sum of four single terms. Two of these again are zero for a non-accelerated relative motion in the x-direction with v = dr/dt.
One term concerns the vector gradient (v grad)B, which can be represented as a tensor. By writing down and solving the accompanying derivative matrix giving consideration to the above determination of the v-vector, the vector gradient becomes the simple time derivation of the field vector B(r(t)) (eq. 27.10, according to the rule of eq. 27.11).

[i]:   R.W.Pohl: Einfuhrung in die Physik, Bd.2 Elektrizitatslehre, 21.Aufl. Springer-Verlag 1975, Seite 76 und 130

[ii]:   K. Simonyi: Theoretische Elektrotechnik, 7.Aufl. VEB Berlin 1979, Seite 924.

[iii]: Grimsehl: Lehrbuch der Physik, 2,Bd., 17.Aufl. Teubner Verl. 1967, S. 130.

As approach serve the equations of transformation (fig. 27.5) of the electric and of the magnetic field:

$$\mathbf{E} = \mathbf{v} \times \mathbf{B}$$ (27.1) and $$\mathbf{H} = -\mathbf{v} \times \mathbf{D}$$ (27.2)

If we apply the curl to the respective cross product:

$$\mathrm{rot}\,\mathbf{E} = \mathrm{rot}\,(\mathbf{v} \times \mathbf{B})$$ (27.5) and $$\mathrm{rot}\,\mathbf{H} = -\,\mathrm{rot}\,(\mathbf{v} \times \mathbf{D})$$ (27.6)

then according to the algorithms[i] four sum terms are delivered:

$$\mathrm{rot}\,\mathbf{E} = (\mathbf{B}\,\mathrm{grad})\mathbf{v} - (\mathbf{v}\,\mathrm{grad})\mathbf{B} + \mathbf{v}\,\mathrm{div}\,\mathbf{B} - \mathbf{B}\,\mathrm{div}\,\mathbf{v}$$ (27.5)

$$\mathrm{rot}\,\mathbf{H} = -[(\mathbf{D}\,\mathrm{grad})\mathbf{v} - (\mathbf{v}\,\mathrm{grad})\mathbf{D} + \mathbf{v}\,\mathrm{div}\,\mathbf{D} - \mathbf{D}\,\mathrm{div}\,\mathbf{v}]$$ (27.6)

where 2 of them are zero because of: $$\mathbf{v}(t) = d\mathbf{r}/dt$$ (27.7)

- the divergence of v(t) disappears: $\mathrm{div}\,v = 0$, (27.8)

- and will be zero as well: $\partial \mathbf{v}(t)/\partial \mathbf{r} = $ $\mathrm{grad}\,\mathbf{v} = \mathbf{0}$. (27.9)

- there remain the vector gradients:

$$(\mathbf{v}\,\mathrm{grad})\,\mathbf{B} = \frac{d\mathbf{B}}{dt}$$ and $$(\mathbf{v}\,\mathrm{grad})\,\mathbf{D} = \frac{d\mathbf{D}}{dt}$$,(27.10)

- according to the rules[i] in general (with eq. 27.7):

$$\frac{d\mathbf{V}(\mathbf{r}(t))}{dt} = \frac{\partial \mathbf{V}(\mathbf{r} = \mathbf{r}(t))}{\partial \mathbf{r}} \cdot \frac{d\mathbf{r}(t)}{dt} = (\mathbf{v}\,\mathrm{grad})\,\mathbf{V}$$ (27.11)

- A comparison of the coefficients of both field equations

$$\mathrm{rot}\,\mathbf{E} = -\,d\mathbf{B}/dt + \mathbf{v}\,\mathrm{div}\,\mathbf{B} = -\,d\mathbf{B}/dt - \mathbf{b}$$ (27.12)

$$\mathrm{rot}\,\mathbf{H} = d\mathbf{D}/dt - \mathbf{v}\,\mathrm{div}\,\mathbf{D} = d\mathbf{D}/dt + \mathbf{j}$$ (27.13)

with the Maxwell equations results in:

- for the potential density $b = -v\,\mathrm{div}\,B = 0$, (27.14)
  (eq. 27.12 = law of induction, if b = 0 resp. $\mathrm{div}\,B = 0$)

- for the current density $j = -v\,\mathrm{div}\,D = -v_x \cdot \rho_{el}$, (27.1a)
  (eq. 27.13 = Ampere's law, if j = with v moving negative charge carriers (ρ_{el} = electric space charge density).

Fig. 27.9: ____ Derivation of Maxwell's field equations as a special case of the equations of transformation

[i]:   Bronstein u.a.: Taschenbuch der Mathematik, 4.Neuaufl. Thun 1999, S. 652

For the last not yet explained terms at first are written down the vectors b and j as abbreviation. With equation 27.13 we in this way immediately look at the well-known law of Ampere (1st Maxwell equation). The comparison of coefficients (27.15) in addition delivers a useful explanation to the question, what is meant by the current density j: it is a space charge density ρ_{el} consisting of negative charge carriers, which moves with the velocity v for instance through a conductor (in the x-direction).

The current density j and the to that dual potential density b mathematically seen at first are nothing but alternative vectors for an abbreviated notation. While for the current density j the physical meaning already could be clarified from the comparison with the law of Ampere, the interpretation of the potential density b still is due. From the comparison with the law of induction (eq. 27.1*) we merely infer, that according to the Maxwell theory this term is assumed to be zero. But that is exactly the Maxwell approximation and the restriction with regard to the new and dual field approach, which roots in Faraday.

In that way also the duality gets lost with the argument that magnetic monopoles (div B) in contrast to electric monopoles (div D) do not exist and until today could evade every proof. It thus is overlooked that div D at first describes only eddy currents and div B only the necessary anti-vortex, the potential vortex. Spherical particles, like e.g. charge carriers presuppose both vortices: on the inside the expanding (div D) and on the outside the contracting vortex (div B), which then necessarily has to be different from zero, even if there hasn't yet been searched for the vortices dual to eddy currents, which are expressed in the neglected term.

Assuming, a monopole concerns a special form of a field vortex, then immediately gets clear, why the search for magnetic poles has to be a dead end and their failure isn't good for a counterargument: The missing electric conductivity in vacuum prevents current densities, eddy currents and the formation of magnetic monopoles. Potential densities and potential vortices however can occur. As a result can without exception only electrically charged particles be found in the vacuum (derivation in chapter 4.2 till 4.4). Because vortices are more than monopole-like structures depending on some boundary conditions, only the vortex description will be pursued further consequently. Let us record: Maxwell's field equations can directly be derived from the new dual field approach under a restrictive condition. Under this condition the two approaches are equivalent and with that also error free. Both follow the textbooks and can so to speak be the textbook opinion.

The restriction (b = 0) surely is meaningful and reasonable in all those cases in which the Maxwell theory is successful. It only has an effect in the domain of electrodynamics. Here usually a vector potential A is introduced and by means of the calculation of a complex dielectric constant a loss angle is determined. Mathematically the approach is correct and dielectric losses can be calculated. Physically however the result is extremely questionable, since as a consequence of a complex s a complex speed of light would result (according to the definition $c = 1/\sqrt{\varepsilon \cdot \mu}$). With that electrodynamics offends against all specifications of the textbooks, according to which c is constant and not variable and less then ever complex.

But if the result of the derivation physically is wrong, then something with the approach is wrong, then the fields in the dielectric perhaps have an entirely other nature, then dielectric losses perhaps are vortex losses of potential vortices falling apart?

- Maxwell's field equations:

$$\text{rot } \mathbf{E} = -d\mathbf{B}/dt \quad \text{(law of induction)} \qquad (27.1^*)$$
$$\text{rot } \mathbf{H} = d\mathbf{D}/dt + \mathbf{j} \quad \text{(Ampère's law)} \qquad (27.13)$$

- describe the special case for $b = 0$ resp. $\text{div } B = 0$

$$\text{rot } \mathbf{E} = -d\mathbf{B}/dt + \mathbf{v}\,\text{div } \mathbf{B} = -d\mathbf{B}/dt - \mathbf{b} \qquad (27.12)$$
$$\text{rot } \mathbf{H} = d\mathbf{D}/dt - \mathbf{v}\,\text{div } \mathbf{D} = d\mathbf{D}/dt + \mathbf{j} \qquad (27.13)$$

The physical meaning of the introduced abbreviations b and j is:

- the current density $\mathbf{j} = -\mathbf{v}\,\text{div } \mathbf{D} = -v_x \cdot \rho_{el}$, (27.15)
- with Ohm's law $\quad \mathbf{j} = \sigma \cdot \mathbf{E} = \mathbf{D}/\tau_1$, and (27.16)
- the potential density $\mathbf{b} = -\mathbf{v}\,\text{div } \mathbf{B} = \mathbf{B}/\tau_2$,(27.17)
- with the eddy current time constant $\tau_1 = \varepsilon/\sigma$ (27.16*>
- and with the potential vortex time constant τ_2

The complete field equations (27.12 and 27.13) read, with the time constants $(\tau_1 \text{ and } \tau_2)$ of the respective field vortex:

- completely extended law of induction (with $B = \mu \cdot H$): (27.18)

$$\text{rot } \mathbf{E} = -d\mathbf{B}/dt - \mathbf{B}/\tau_2 = -\mu \cdot (d\mathbf{H}/dt + \mathbf{H}/\tau_2) \quad (27.20)$$

- and the well-known law of Ampere (with $D = \varepsilon \cdot E$): (27.19)

$$\text{rot } \mathbf{H} = d\mathbf{D}/dt + \mathbf{D}/\tau_1 = \varepsilon \cdot (d\mathbf{E}/dt + \mathbf{E}/\tau_1) \quad (27.21)$$

Fig. 27.10:   The extension of the law of induction for vortices   of the electric field (potential vortices].[i]

---

[i]:   see also fig. 5.1

27.10 Derivation of the potential vortices

Is the introduction of a vector potential A in electrodynamics a substitute of neglecting the potential density b? Do here two ways mathematically lead to the same result? And what about the physical relevance? After classic electrodynamics being dependent on working with a complex constant of material, in what is buried an unsurmountable inner contradiction, the question is asked for the freedom of contradictions of the new approach. At this point the decision will be made, if physics has to make a decision for the more efficient approach, as it always has done when a change of paradigm had to be dealt with. The abbreviations j and b are further transformed, at first the current density in Ampere's law   j = $-\nabla_x \cdot \rho_{el}$ (27.15), as the movement of negative electric charges. By means of Ohm's law j=$\sigma \cdot$E and the relation of material D=$\varepsilon \cdot$E the current density j also can be written down as dielectric displacement current with the characteristic relaxation time constant $\tau_1 = \varepsilon/\sigma$ (eq. 27.16) for the eddy currents. In this representation of the law of Ampere (eq. 27.21) clearly is brought to light, why the magnetic field is a vortex field, and how the eddy currents produce heat losses depending on the specific electric conductivity σ. As one sees we, with regard to the magnetic field description, move around completely in the framework of textbook physics.

Let us now consider the dual conditions. The comparison of coefficients (eq. 27.12 + 27.17) looked at purely formal, results in a potential density b in duality to the current density j, which with the help of an appropriate time constant τ_2 founds vortices of the electric field. I call these potential vortices (in eq. 27.20).

In contrast to that the Maxwell theory requires an irrotationality of the electric field, which is expressed by taking the potential density b and the divergence B equal to zero. The time constant τ_2 thereby tends towards infinity. This Maxwell approximation leads to the circumstance that with the potential vortices of the electric field also their propagation as a scalar wave gets lost, so that the Maxwell equations describe only transverse and no longitudinal waves. At this point there can occur contradictions for instance in the case of the near-field of an antenna, where longitudinal wave parts can be detected measuring technically, and such parts already are used technologically in transponder systems e.g. as installations warning of theft in big stores.

It is denominating, how they know how to help oneself in the textbooks of high-frequency technology in the case of the near-field zone[i]. Proceeding from the Maxwell equations the missing potential vortex is postulated without further ado, by means of the specification of a ,,standing wave" in the form of a vortex at a dipole antenna. With the help of the postulate now the longitudinal wave parts are ,,calculated", like they also are being measured, but also like they wouldn't occur without the postulate as a result of the Maxwell approximation.

There isn't a way past the potential vortices and the new dual approach, because no scientist is able to afford to exclude already in the approach a possibly authoritative phenomenon, which he wants to calculate physically correct!

<i>:   Zinke, Brunswig: Lehrbuch der Hochfrequenztechnik, 1. Bd., 3. Auflage 1986 Springer-Verlag Berlin, Seite 335

- Under the assumption: $E = E(r,t)$; $H = H(r,t)$,
- using the relations of material:

$$\boxed{B = \mu \cdot H}\quad \text{and} \quad \boxed{D = \varepsilon \cdot E} \quad :$$

- the complete and extended law of induction reads:

$$\boxed{\text{rot } \mathbf{E} = -\partial \mathbf{B}/\partial t - \mathbf{B}/\tau_2 = -\mu \cdot (\partial \mathbf{H}/\partial t + \mathbf{H}/\tau_2)} \quad (27.20)$$

- and the well-known law of Ampere:

$$\boxed{\text{rot } \mathbf{H} = \partial \mathbf{D}/\partial t + \mathbf{D}/\tau_1 = \varepsilon \cdot (\partial \mathbf{E}/\partial t + \mathbf{E}/\tau_1)} \quad (27.21)$$

---

if we again apply the curl operation to eq. 27.20 and insert eq. 27.21:

$$-\text{rot rot } \mathbf{E} = \mu \cdot \partial(\text{rot}\mathbf{H})/\partial t + (\mu/\tau_2) \cdot (\text{rot } \mathbf{H}) \quad (27.22)$$

$$= \mu \cdot \varepsilon \cdot [\partial^2 \mathbf{E}/\partial t^2 + (1/\tau_1) \cdot \partial \mathbf{E}/\partial t + (1/\tau_2) \cdot \partial \mathbf{E}/\partial t + \mathbf{E}/\tau_1\tau_2] \quad (27.23)$$

$$= (1/c^2) \cdot [\partial^2 \mathbf{E}/\partial t^2 + (1/\tau_1 + 1/\tau_2) \cdot \partial \mathbf{E}/\partial t + \mathbf{E}/\tau_1\tau_2] \quad (27.24)$$

with the definition for the speed of light c:

$$\boxed{\varepsilon \cdot \mu = 1/c^2} \quad (27.25)$$

the fundamental field equation reads:

$$\underbrace{-c^2 \cdot \text{rot rot } \mathbf{E}}_{a} = \underbrace{\partial^2 \mathbf{E}/\partial t^2}_{b \text{ (electromagnetic wave)}} + \quad (27.26)$$

$$+ \underbrace{(1/\tau_1) \cdot \partial \mathbf{E}/\partial t}_{c} + \underbrace{(1/\tau_2) \cdot \partial \mathbf{E}/\partial t}_{d} + \underbrace{\mathbf{E}/\tau_1\tau_2}_{e}$$

$$+ \text{ eddy current } + \text{ potential vortex } + \text{ I/U}$$

Fig. 27.11:   Derivation of the fundamental field equation
from the equations of transformation of the electromagnetic field.[i]

[i]:   The fundamental field equation mathematically describes a wave damped with the vortices of the electric and the vortices of the magnetic field. It is formulated only in space and time. From it can be deduced numerous eigenvalue equations, (i.e. the equation of Schrodinger, fig. 5.1).

27.11 Derivation of the „fundamental field equation"

The two equations of transformation and also the from that derived field equations (27.20 and 27.21) show the two sides of a medal, by mutually describing the relation between the electric and magnetic field strength (between E and H). We get on the track of the meaning of the „medal" itself, by inserting the dually formulated equations into each other. If the calculated H-field from one equation is inserted into the other equation then as a result a determining equation for the E-field remains. The same vice versa also functions to determine the H-field. Since the result formally is identical and merely the H-field vector appears at the place of the E-field vector and since it equally remains valid for the B-, the D-field and all other known field factors, the determining equation is more than only a calculation instruction. It reveals a fundamental physical principle. I call it the "fundamental field equation".

The derivation always is the same: If we again apply the curl operation to rot E (law of induction 27.20) also the other side of the equation should be subjected to the curl. If for both terms rot H is expressed by Ampere's law 27.21, then in total four terms are formed (27.26): the wave equation (a-b) with the two damping terms, on the one hand the eddy currents (a-c) and on the other hand the potential vortices (a-d) and as the fourth term the Poisson equation (a-e), which is responsible for the spatial distribution of currents and potentials[i].

Not in a single textbook a mathematical linking of the Poisson equation with the wave equation can be found, as we here succeed in for the first time. It however is the prerequisite to be able to describe the conversion of an antenna current into electromagnetic waves near a transmitter and equally the inverse process, as it takes place at a receiver. Numerous model concepts, like they have been developed by HF- and EMC-technicians as a help, can be described mathematically correct by the physically founded field equation.

In addition further equations can be derived, for which this until now was supposed to be impossible, like for instance the Schrodinger equation (chapter 5.6-5.9). This contrary to current opinion isn't a wave equation at all, since the term (b) with the second time derivation is missing. As diffusion equation it has the task to mathematically describe field vortices and their structures.
As a consequence of the Maxwell equations in general and specifically the eddy currents not being able to form structures, every attempt has to fail, which wants to derive the Schrodinger equation from the Maxwell equations.
The fundamental field equation however contains the newly discovered potential vortices, which owing to their concentration effect (in duality to the skin effect) form spherical structures, for which reason these occur as eigenvalues of the equation. For these eigenvalue-solutions numerous practical measurements are present, which confirm their correctness and with that have probative force with regard to the correctness of the new Held approach and the fundamental field equation. By means of the pure formulation in space and time and the interchangeability of the field pointers here a physical principle is described, which fulfills all requirements, which a world equation must meet.

_____

[i]:   see also fig. 5.1

Comparison:

• The **Faraday approach** is universal	• **Maxwell's field equations** can be derived!
• It reveals a **physical principle**	• The field equations describe only a **special case**!
• The field is the cause for the particles • (Principles of causality are preserved)	• Particle and field are cause and effect at the same time • (Violation of the rules of causality)
• Particles probably are **field configurations** • Quanta can be calculated as **field vortices** (without any hypothesis) • All **quantum properties** can be **calculated** likewise	• Particles consist of hypothetic subparticles • **Quark-hypothesis** must replace missing calculation • Sorting und systematizing of the properties in the **standard-model**
• **Potential vortices** form electric field vortices (the E-field is a source free vortex field)	• The electric field is **irrotational** (the E-field is an irrotational field of sources)
• Field vortices carry momentum and form a scalar wave • Longitudinal wave with arb. velocity of propagation v	• Electromagnetic wave is a transverse wave • Constant propagation with the speed of light c
⇒ **theory of objectivity**	⇒ **theory of relativity**

Fig. 27.12:   Comparison of the field-theoretical approaches according to Faradav and according to Maxwell.

27.12 The Maxwell field as a derived special case

As the derivations show, nobody can claim there wouldn't exist potential vortices and no propagation as a scalar wave, since only the Maxwell equations are to blame that these already have been factored out in the approach. One has to know that the field equations, and may they be as famous as they are, are nothing but a special case, which can be derived.

The field-theoretical approach however, which among others bases on the Faraday-law, is universal and can't be derived on its part. It describes a physical basic principle, the alternating of two dual experience or observation factors, their overlapping and mixing by continually mixing up cause and effect. It is a philosophic approach, free of materialistic or quantum physical concepts of any particles.

Maxwell on the other hand describes without exception the fields of charged particles, the electric field of resting and the magnetic field as a result of moving charges. The charge carriers are postulated for this purpose, so that their origin and their inner structure remain unsettled and can't be derived. The subdivision e.g. in quarks stays in the domain of a hypothesis, which can't be proven. The sorting and systematizing of the properties of particles in the standard-model is nothing more than unsatisfying comfort for the missing calculability.

With the field-theoretical approach however the elementary particles with all quantum properties can be calculated as field vortices (chap. 7). With that the field is the cause for the particles and their measurable quantization. The electric vortex field, at first source free, is itself forming its field sources in form of potential vortex structures. The formation of charge carriers in this way can be explained and proven mathematically, physically, graphically and experimentally understandable according to the model.

Where in the past the Maxwell theory has been the approach, there in the future should be proceeded from the equations of transformation of the field-theoretical approach. If now potential vortex phenomena occur, then these also should be interpreted as such in the sense of the approach and the derivation, then the introduction and postulation of new and decoupled model descriptions isn't allowed anymore, like the near-field effects of an antenna, the noise, dielectric capacitor losses, the mode of the light and a lot else more.

The at present in theoretical physics normal scam of at first putting a phenomenon to zero, to afterwards postulate it anew with the help of a more or less suitable model, leads to a breaking up of physics into apparently not connected individual disciplines and an inefficient specialisthood. There must be an end to this now! The new approach shows the way towards a unified theory, in which the different areas of physics again fuse to one area. In this lies the big chance of this approach, even if many of the specialists at first should still revolt against it.

This new and unified view of physics shall be summarized with the term "theory of objectivity". As we shall derive, it will be possible to deduce the theory of relativity as a partial aspect of it (chapter 6 and 28).

Let us first cast our eyes over the wave propagation.

- Starting-point: the fundamental field equation

$$-c^2 \cdot \text{rot rot } \mathbf{B} \; = \; \frac{d^2\mathbf{B}}{dt^2} + \frac{1}{\tau_2}\frac{d\mathbf{B}}{dt} + \frac{1}{\tau_1}\frac{d\mathbf{B}}{dt} + \frac{\mathbf{B}}{\tau_1\tau_2} \qquad (27.26^*)$$

- with a magnetic flux density $B = B(r(t))$.

1st   condition   for   eq.   27.26*:
the special case, if $\sigma = 0$ and $\sigma/\varepsilon = \boxed{(1/\tau_1) = 0}$. (27.16*)

The remaining vortex term is transformed by applying already used relations (eq. 27.10   and eq. 27.17):

$$\frac{1}{\tau_2}\cdot\frac{d\mathbf{B}}{dt} = \mathbf{v}\cdot\text{grad}\,\frac{\mathbf{B}}{\tau_2} \quad (27.10) \qquad \frac{\mathbf{B}}{\tau_2} = -\,\mathbf{v}\cdot\text{div } \mathbf{B} \quad . \; (27.17)$$

If the velocity of propagation: $v = (v_x, v_y=0, v_z=0)$; $v = dx/dt$, then the simplified field equation (if the coordinates are orientated on the vector of velocity) results in the general wave equation (involved with the x-component) in the form:

$$\|\mathbf{v}\|^2 \text{ grad div } \mathbf{B} \; - \; c^2 \text{ rot rot } \mathbf{B} \; = \; d^2\mathbf{B}/dt^2 \qquad (27.27)$$

longitudinal with v = arbitrary	transverse with c = const.	wave velocity of propagation

---

2nd condition   for eq. 27.28: $v = c$.

The wave equation in the usual notation (= inhomogeneous Laplace equation, = purely a special case!) now reads:

$$\Delta\mathbf{B} \; = \; \text{grad div } \mathbf{B} - \text{rot rot } \mathbf{B} \; = \; (1/c^2)\cdot d^2\mathbf{B}/dt^2 \quad (27.28)$$

Fig.   27.13:   Derivation   of   the   wave   equations (inhomogeneous
Laplace equation) as a special case of the equations of transformation of the electromagnetic field.

27.13 Derivation of the wave equation

The first wave description, model for the light theory of Maxwell, was the inhomogeneous Laplace equation:

$$\Delta \mathbf{E} \cdot c^2 = d^2 \mathbf{E}/dt^2 \quad \text{with} \quad \boxed{\Delta \mathbf{E} = \text{grad div } \mathbf{E} - \text{rot rot } \mathbf{E}} \qquad (27.28^*)$$

There are asked some questions:

- Can also this mathematical wave description be derived from the new approach?
- Is it only a special case and how do the boundary conditions read?
- In this case how should it be interpreted physically?
- Are new properties present, which can lead to new technologies?

Starting-point is the fundamental field equation (27.26). We thereby should remember the interchangeability of the field pointers, that the equation doesn't change its form, if it is derived for H, for B, for D or any other field factor instead of for the E-field pointer. This time we write it down for the magnetic induction B and consider the special case, that we are located in a badly conducting medium, as is usual for the wave propagation in air. But with the electric conductivity σ also $1/\tau_1 = \sigma/\varepsilon$ tends towards zero (eq. 27.16*). With that the eddy currents and their damping and other properties disappear from the field equation, what also makes sense. There remains the potential vortex term $(1/\tau_2)*dB/dt$, which using the already introduced relations (eq. 27.10 and 27.17) involved with an in x-direction propagating wave ($v = (v_x, v_y = 0, v_z = 0)$) can be transformed directly into:

$$-\|\mathbf{v}\|^2 \cdot \text{grad div } \mathbf{B}$$

The divergence of a field vector (here B) mathematically seen is a scalar, for which reason this term as part of the wave equation founds so-called „scalar waves" and that means that potential vortices, as far as they exist, will appear as a scalar wave. We at this point tacitly anticipate chapter 28, which provides the reason for the speed of light losing its vectorial nature, if it is correlated with itself. This insight however is valid in general for all velocities ($v = dr/dt$), so that in the same way a scalar descriptive factor can be used for the velocity ($v = dx/dt$) as for c.

From the simplified field equation (27.26*) the general wave equation (27.27) can be won in the shown way, divided into longitudinal and transverse wave parts, which however can propagate with different velocity.

Physically seen the vortices have particle nature as a consequence of their structure forming property. With that they carry momentum, which puts them in a position to form a longitudinal shock wave similar to a sound wave. If the propagation of the light one time takes place as a wave and another time as a particle, then this simply and solely is a consequence of the wave equation. Light quanta should be interpreted as evidence for the existence of scalar waves. Here however also occurs the restriction that light always propagates with the speed of light. It concerns the special case $v = c$. With that the derived wave equation (27.27) changes into the inhomogeneous Laplace equation (27.28). The electromagnetic wave in both cases is propagating with c. As a transverse wave the field vectors are standing perpendicular to the direction of propagation. The velocity of propagation therefore is decoupled and constant. Completely different is the case for the longitudinal wave. Here the propagation takes place in the direction of an oscillating field pointer, so that the phase velocity permanently is changing and merely an average group velocity can be given for the propagation. There exists no restriction for v and $v = c$ only describes a special case.

• From the dual field-theoretical approach are derived:	From Maxwell's field equations can be derived:
=> Maxwell's field equations	=> 0
=> the wave equation (with transverse and longitudinal parts)	=> only transverse waves (no longitudinal waves)
=> scalar waves (Tesla-/neutrino radiation)	=> 0 (no scalar waves)
=> vortex and anti-vortex (current eddy and potential vortex)	=> only eddy currents
=> Schrodinger equation (basic equation of chemistry)	=>0
=> Klein-Gordon equation (basic eq. of nuclear physics)	=>0
Fig. 27.14: Comparison of the efficiency of both approaches.	
	(as an interim result, if it concerns the question, which approach of the two is the more efficient one and which one better should be discarded. The final balance is made in chapter 28). It here concerns partial aspects of the following theories:
=> theory of objectivity	=> theory of relativity

27.14 The new field approach in synopsis

Proof could be furnished that an approximation is buried in Maxwell's field equations and that they merely represent the special case of a new, dually formulated and more universal approach. The mathematical derivations of the Maxwell field and the wave equation disclose, of what the Maxwell approximation consists. The anti-vortex dual to the expanding eddy current with its skin effect is neglected. This contracting anti-vortex is called potential vortex. It is capable of forming structures and propagates as a scalar wave in longitudinal manner in badly conducting media like air or vacuum.

At relativistic velocities the potential vortices are subject to the Lorentz contraction. Since for scalar waves the propagation occurs longitudinally in the direction of an oscillating field pointer, the potential vortices experience a constant oscillation of size as a result of the oscillating propagation. If one imagines the field vortex as a planar but rolled up transverse wave, then from the oscillation of size and with that of wavelength at constant swirl velocity with c follows a continual change in frequency, which is measured as a noise signal.

The noise proves to be the in the Maxwell equations neglected potential vortex term, which founds scalar waves. If at biological or technical systems, e.g. at antennas a noise signal is being measured, then that proves the existence of potential vortices, but it then also means that the scope of the Maxwell theory has been exceeded and erroneous concepts can be the result.

As an answer to the question about possible new technologies is pointed to two special properties.

1st potential vortices for reason of their particle nature carry momentum and energy. Since we are surrounded by noise vortices, an energy technical use of scalar waves would be feasible, where the noise power is withdrawn of the surroundings. There is evidence that biological systems in nature cover their need for energy in this way. But at least an energy transmission with scalar waves already would be a significant progress with regard to the alternating current technology of today.

2nd the wavelength multiplied with the frequency results in the velocity of propagation v of a wave $(\lambda \cdot f = v)$, and that for scalar waves by no means is constant. With that wavelength and frequency aren't coupled anymore; they can be modulated separately, for which reason for scalar waves a whole dimension can be modulated additionally compared to the Hertzian wave. In that the reason can be seen, why the human brain with just 10 Hz clock frequency is considerably more efficient than modern computers with more than 1 GHz clock frequency. Nature always works with the best technology, even if we haven't yet understood it.

If we would try to learn of nature and an energy technical or an information technical use of scalar waves would occur, then probably nobody wanted to have our today still highly praised technology anymore. In the course of the greenhouse gases and the electrosmog we have no other choice than to scientifically occupy us with scalar waves and their technical use.

Equations of transformation
of the electric and of the magnetic field[i]

$$\mathbf{E} = \mathbf{v} \times \mathbf{B} \quad \text{(27.1)} \quad \text{and} \quad \mathbf{H} = -\mathbf{v} \times \mathbf{D} \quad \text{(27.2)}$$

with: $\mathbf{B} = \mu \cdot \mathbf{H}$ (28.1) and $\mathbf{D} = \varepsilon \cdot \mathbf{E}$ (28.2)

$$\mathbf{E} = \mu \cdot \mathbf{v} \times \mathbf{H} \quad \text{(27.3)} \quad \text{and} \quad \mathbf{H} = -\varepsilon \cdot \mathbf{v} \times \mathbf{E} \quad \text{(27.4)}$$

Experience/observation is dependent on the relative velocity v !

Written down in general with field vectors:

Written down in components in Cartesian coordinates: (unit vectors $\mathbf{e}_x$, $\mathbf{e}_y$, $\mathbf{e}_z$)

in $\mathbf{e}_x$-direction: $\mathbf{v} = v_x(x(t)) = dx/dt$

$\mathbf{H} = -\varepsilon \cdot \mathbf{v} \times \mathbf{E}$ in $\mathbf{e}_y$-direction: $\mathbf{H} = -H_y = -\varepsilon \cdot v_x \cdot E_z$

$\mathbf{E} = \mu \cdot \mathbf{v} \times \mathbf{H}$ in $\mathbf{e}_z$-direction: $\mathbf{E} = E_z = \mu \cdot v_x \cdot H_y$

inserted into each other: (28.3)

$\mathbf{E} = -\varepsilon \cdot \mu \cdot [\mathbf{v} \times (\mathbf{v} \times \mathbf{E})]$ in $\mathbf{e}_z$-direction: $E_z = \varepsilon \cdot \mu \cdot v_x \cdot v_x \cdot E_z$

$\mathbf{E} = -(1/c^2) \cdot [\mathbf{v} \cdot (\mathbf{v} \cdot \mathbf{E}) - \mathbf{E} \cdot (\mathbf{v} \cdot \mathbf{v})]$ $E_z = (1/c^2) \cdot v_x^2 \cdot E_z$

$\underbrace{\qquad}_{= 0, \text{ since } \perp}$

$\mathbf{E} = +(\mathbf{v}^2/c^2) \cdot \mathbf{E}$ resp.: $E_z = (v_x^2/c^2) \cdot E_z$ (28.4)

result:[ii] $v = c$ (28.5)
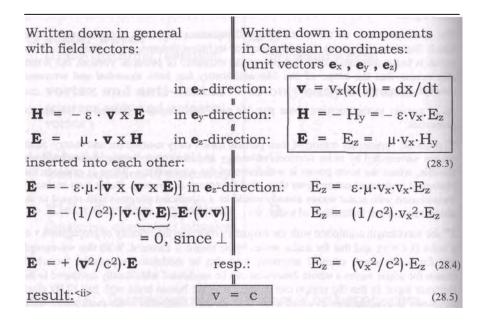
Fig. 28.1: The equations of transformation,[i]

[i]:   see part 1, chap. 6.5, eq. 60
[ii]:   R. W. Pohl: Einfuhrung in die Physik, Bd. 2 Elektrizitatslehre, 21. Aufl. Springer-Verlag   1975,   Seite   77,   s.a.   Kommentar   auf   Tafel   27.8
[iii]: chapter 28 is a repetition of chapter 6

28. Objectivity versus relativity

The new and field-theoretical approach contains the Maxwell-equations, but goes over and above these in one point. It describes potential vortices and their propagation in space as a scalar wave. With that can also a conclusive answer be given to the often-asked question for the medium and the mediated particles, which is a prerequisite for every longitudinal wave. Mediated are vortex structures with particle nature and the field itself functions as a medium. Is with that also answered the question concerning the aether?[iii]

28.1 The question concerning the aether

Do you know the Maxwell-experiment? No, you wouldn't be able to, since the intellectual father fast did make a backdown, after it didn't work out. Today one speaks of the Michelson-experiment and it may be connected with any other names (Morley, etc.). Remember: In his light theory Maxwell had determined a particular and constant value for the speed of light and for that there should be a physical reason, which should have its cause in the aether. By means of proving this aether Maxwell wanted to prove his theory, but this enterprise thoroughly went wrong.

The consideration was as follows: If the Earth is spinning and is moving through the cosmos, then one should be able to detect an aetherwind and different values for c in the different points of the compass. Maxwell found support for his project at the observatory, since with the aberration of the stars Bradley previously had described an observation, which could be considered as evidence for an aether. The director of the observatory charged his assistant Dr. Michelson with the task, to carry out a corresponding proof of an aether this time in a terrestrial experiment. But such an aether couldn't be proven, what Maxwell had to accept as a severe strike against his light theory. Seven years later Maxwell got the acknowledgement, however from a completely other corner by means of the experiments concerning the radio transmission of Heinrich Hertz.

Until today the question has remained open why astrophysics can prove the aether, whereas the detection in a terrestrial laboratory fails and it looks like there doesn't exist an aether. But as definition for the cause of c the aether can't be abolished as long as it is unsettled why the light is propagating with c of all possible velocities. The question is asked, what determines the propagation of light from today's point of view? Now, by means of outside fields the light can be slowed down. At present the world record lies at less than 65 kilometers per hour in a Bose-Einstein condensate. If electromagnetic fields determine the speed of light, if in addition field or gravitational lenses should confirm this, then the field takes over the task of the aether!

At this place the new field-theoretical approach shows its capabilities. The equations of transformation say nothing but that a moving H-field transforms to a resting E-field and vice versa, that thus in the place of a moving aether, the aetherwind, a resting aether is found. Doing so the dual field partners merely exchange their places. Therefore it is a wild-goose chase, wanting to measure an aetherwind with gauges, which underlie the same field (fig. 28.2). Michelson had to fail.

The equations of transformation say:

$$\mathbf{E} = \mu \cdot \mathbf{v} \times \mathbf{H} \quad \text{(27.3) and} \quad \mathbf{H} = - \varepsilon \cdot \mathbf{v} \times \mathbf{E} \quad \text{(27.4)}$$

- Experience/observation depends on the relative velocity v!
- The field takes over the function of the aether (determines c) and
- an aetherwind v x H is measured as a resting aether E and vice versa!

- for v = c the equations of transformation turn into each other and are identical $[v = v_x(x(t))]$.
- for v < c a motion field E_v depending on v is resulting

$$E_v = E \cdot (v^2 / c^2) \quad \text{(28.6)}$$

- for v = 0 also $E_v = 0$.
- the motion field overlaps the E-field

- in the case of vortex fields the effect overlaps the cause and itself is the cause for a new effect.
- The overlap reaches to infinity, where each time is valid:

$$E_{n+1} = E_n \cdot (v^2 / c^2) \quad \text{(28.7)}$$

- the field Eo overlaps the motion field E_v

$$E = E_0 + E_v = E_0 \cdot (1 + v^2 / c^2) \quad \text{(28.8)}$$

- for infinite overlap:

$$E = E_0 + E_1 + E_2 + E_3 + E_4 + \ldots + E_n + E_{n+1} + \ldots \quad \text{(28.9)}$$

- results in the power series:

$$E = E_0 \cdot [1 + (v/c)^2 + (v/c)^4 + (v/c)^6 + \ldots + (v/c)^{2n} + (v/c)^{2(n+1)} + \ldots] \quad \text{(28.10)}$$

Fig. 28.2: Power series as a result of a vortex overlap.

<i>:   Grimsehl: Lehrbuch der Physik, 2.Bd., 17.Aufl. Teubner Verl. 1967, S. 130.

<ii>: R.W.Pohl: Einfuhrung in die Physik, Bd.2 Elektrizitatslehre, 21.Aufl. Springer-Verlag 1975, Seite 72 und 76, bzw. 130.

<iii>: K. Simonyi: Theoretische Elektrotechnik, 7.Aufl. VEB Berlin 1979, Seite 924.

<i4>: E. Friebe: Die Vektorprodukte der Maxwell'schen Elektrodynamik, DPG-Didaktik-Tagungsband 1995, S.396

28.2 Vortices, an overlap of the overlap

Not with any approach until now the question concerning the aether could be solved. Only the new field-theoretical approach proves with the unambiguous and free of contradiction clarification of the question concerning the aether its unmatched superiority. We hence without exception work with this approach, which is anchored tightly in textbook physics. The two equations of transformation on the one hand are the law concerning the unipolar induction according to Faraday (27.1) and on the other hand the dual formulation (27.2), which Grimsehl[i] calls convection equation. Grimsehl goes around the question for the correct sign by means of forming a modulus. Pohl draws detailed distinctions of cases and dictates the each time relevant formulation of the dual law[ii]. The sign eventually should be chosen according to the definition of the orientation of the field pointers. Also Simonyi gives both equations and the each time appropriate experiments[iii].

If we assume the carrier of an electric field is moving with the not accelerated relative velocity v with regard to the reference system used by the observer, then a magnetic H-field is observed, which stands perpendicular both to the direction of the E-field and to the direction of v. If the motion takes place perpendicular to the area stretched by E- and H-field, then the H-field again is observed and measured as an E-field. There will occur an overlap of the fields.

In spite of that we first consider the theoretical case, that no overlap is present, and the observer as it were sees himself. The result is trivial: the relative velocity v must be the speed of light $v = c$. (28.5) If considered at the speed of light, the two equations of transformation turn into each other. They now are identical both mathematically and in their physical expressiveness. For this case it actually is possible, to derive the dual law straight from the Faraday law. For a wave propagating with the speed of light, to name an example, the field strength propagating along is always equal to the causing field strength, which depends on position.

If besides the evaluation of the values also the circumstance is considered that it concerns vectors, then at this place a problem as a matter of principle of the Maxwell theory gets visible, to which has been pointed occasionally, e.g. at the German Physical Society[i4]. The derivation of the speed of light from two vector equations requires, that c also has to be a vector. The question is: How the velocity vector v suddenly becomes the scalar and not pointing, in all directions of space constant factor c? Is therefore for mathematical and physical reasons "the Maxwell theory in essential parts erroneous", according to a statement of the German Patent Office[i4]?

Now, the constancy of the speed of light is a fact, which even can be derived. We at first will be content with the clue that for every observation with the speed of light, with the eyes or a gauge constructed corresponding to our perception, the vector in all its components each time is correlated to itself, by what actually the orientation of direction gets lost. Under these for c and with equal rights also for v relevant circumstances we are entitled to calculate further with the values.

An observer, who is moving with v slower than c, will besides the original E-field also observe a motion field E_v depending on the velocity v, which disappears, if v becomes zero. What he catches sight of and is able to register with gauges in the end is the overlap of both field components.

- concerning the development of the power series:

$$E = E_0 \cdot [1 + (v/c)^2 + (v/c)^4 + (v/c)^6 + \dots \\ + (v/c)^{2n} + (v/c)^{2(n+1)} + \dots] \qquad (28.10)$$

- for $\overline{q < 1}$ the power series with $q = \overline{(v/c)^2}$ will converge (28.11)

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} q^n = \frac{1}{1-q} \qquad (28.12)$$

- for $(v/c)^2 < 1$ resp. for $\overline{v < c}$ therefore is valid:

$$E = E_0 \cdot [1/1 - (v/c)^2] \quad \text{resp.} \quad \boxed{E_0 = E \cdot [1 - (v/c)^2]} \, (28.13)$$

The square root of Lorentz appears in squared form[i]:

$$\left(1 - \frac{v^2}{c^2}\right) = \frac{E_0}{E} \qquad (28.14)$$

The derivation for the magnetic field strength analogous to that provides the identical result[i]:

$$\left(1 - \frac{v^2}{c^2}\right) = \frac{H_0}{H} \qquad (28.15)$$

Fig. 28.3   The field dilatation depending on velocity

---

[i]:   see part 1, chap. 6.6
[ii]:   Prof. Dr. H.-J. Runckel, Abteilung fur Mathematik IV der Universitat Ulm

28.3 Field overlap

But it doesn't abide by this one overlap. In the case of vortex fields the effect overlaps the cause and itself becomes the cause for a new effect. The overlapped cause produces a further effect, which for its part is overlapping (see chap. 3).

Vortices thus arise, if overlaps for their part are overlapping and that theoretically reaches to infinity, to which I already repeatedly have pointed (fig. 3.0). In addition do vortices represent a fundamental physical principle. The Greek philosopher Demokrit has traced back the whole nature to vortex formation and that already 2500 years ago!

In the field-theoretical approach this interpretation seems to experience a mathematical confirmation, since also the fields are overlapping in vortex structures. According to that we owe our observations and our being the relative movements and the vortex formation. If reversed there wouldn't be any movement, then there also would not exist fields, light nor matter. If we observe the sky, then everything visible follows the movement of its own of the Earth, of the solar system and the whole galaxy, which is on its way with unknown galactic velocity, and all movements take place in vortex structures (fig. 10.2).

The field overlap dictated by the Faraday-approach as well reaches to infinity, what has stimulated my colleagues of mathematics to also mathematically put into practice this physical requirement[ii]. This leads to an infinite power series, which converges under the condition that v < c.

As a result of the power series development the well-known square root $\sqrt{1-(v^2/c^2)}$ of Lorentz occurs in squared form (see also fig. 6.6). It determines the relation of the observed and the causing field strength of the electric or the magnetic field. Physically the found relation describes a dilatation field depending on velocity. The field strength thus increases, if the relative velocity v increases, or inversely no difference is observable anymore, if v tends towards zero.
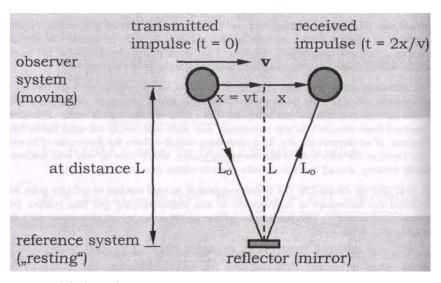
Whoever wants to compete with Albert Einstein (1879-1955), who has developed the theory of relativity from the length contraction, which depends on velocity, could be inclined to derive a new field physics from the field dilatation. But I must warn of such a step. The derivation of the length contraction by the mathematician Hendrik Lorentz (Lorentz contraction) assumes a number of limiting conditions. The relative velocity v for instance may not experience any acceleration. Actually however almost all motion takes place as circular vortex motion, so that due to the occurring centripetal acceleration the conditions for the theory of relativity aren't fulfilled anymore. Neglects or generalizations thereby can lead to considerable errors, of which I would like to warn. It in general is a delicate enterprise, if one wants to provide a physical interpretation for a purely mathematically won result.

This warning to the same extent also is valid for the here shown derivation of the field dilatation. The limiting conditions practically are the same as for Einstein and the problems with a provided physical interpretation won't be less. Also here lots of paradoxes will occur, which are nothing but errors of the theory. So we won't reach our destination.

There now only one further mathematical step is necessary, which links the theory of relativity with the new notion of a field dilatation depending on velocity.

Example:
Measurement of length by means of a measurement of propagation time (sound or light) with $c = L/t$ in a vehicle moving with v.

transmitted impulse (t = 0)   received impulse (t = 2x/v)

observer system (moving) $x = vt$ x $\mathbf{v}$

at distance L L_o L L_o

reference system ("resting")   reflector (mirror)

From driving time t:

$t = 2\frac{x}{v}$ = signal propagation time: $t = 2\frac{L_o}{c}$ follows $\frac{x}{v} = \frac{L_o}{c}$

According to Pythagoras: $L_o^2 = L^2 + x^2 = L^2 + L_o^2 \cdot (v^2/c^2)$

$$L_o^2 \cdot (1 - v^2/c^2) = L^2$$

the shortening of the rule results in:

$$\left(1 - \frac{v^2}{c^2}\right) = \left(\frac{L}{L_o}\right)^2 \quad (28.16)$$

Fig. 28,4: _____ Derivation of the length contraction

Examples: contraction according to Lorentz transformation, measurable length shortening, curvature of space.

Counterexample: unsuccessful aether detection (Michelson experiment)

28.4 The derivation of the length contraction

The Lorentz transformation is the result of a purely mathematical problem. Stimulated by the surprisingly result of the Michelson experiment the Dutchman Hendrik A. Lorentz 1891 asked himself, how the equations of the Galilei-transformation would have to look like, if the propagation of light wouldn't be infinitely fast but finite and constant. He thereby proceeds from the assumption of two inertial systems moving against one another with a not accelerated velocity v, in which the laws of Newtonian physics are equally valid[i]. As a result of the relative motion a change of the length measures will occur.

This at first can be explained as a purely geometric effect in the context of nonrelativistic physics. We imagine a vehicle, which is on its way with constant velocity, and emits an optical or acoustical signal. Sideways in the countryside is standing in a perpendicularly measured distance L a reflector (mirror), which sends the signal back again. The velocity of the signal however isn't infinitely fast and from that follows that the vehicle during the propagation time of the signal as well has moved a bit further. The actual way, which the signal had to cover now amounts to L_o (> L). The distance measure thus is observed smaller as it is in reality, to be specific for the factor of the square root of Lorentz (fig. 28.4).

$$L = L_o \cdot \sqrt{1-(v^2/c^2)}$$ (28.16)

According to the principle of relativity it doesn't play a role, if the vehicle is driving or if it is standing still and the mirror is moving with a linear uniform velocity.

Initially Einstein also only spoke of an observable length contraction, which must not necessarily occur in reality, an optical deception so to speak. Lorentz however proceeded from the assumption of a physical length change, thus a length change existing in reality, what in practice at first makes no difference. If e.g. at relativistic velocities a rocket becomes smaller, then the pilot equally shrinks, so that it would not be possible to notice a present difference.

If however the observer stands outside the events and takes a „neutral standpoint", then he will be able to see, which interpretation is the right one. Today some examples are known. In accelerators particles at relativistic fast velocities actually get smaller for the factor of the square root of Lorentz. That has been proven and this result afterwards gives the Dutchman Lorentz right! The followers of the physical length contraction also are called Neo-Lorentzians.

In the vicinity of a gravitational mass the speed of light becomes so slow, that the shortening factor plays a role and space is curved towards the mass. To understand this shortening of scale, the influence of the field also should be considered.

---

[i]: Example: In a closed lift physical experiments are being carried out. Accelerations of the lift have an influence on the experiments. However no influence can be detected, if the lift is standing still or is moving with constant velocity. It with that fulfills the conditions of an inertial system. The question is: what do the experiments show someone standing outside, whom the lift passes by?

From the comparison of the Lorentz contraction (28.16)
with the field dilatation (28.14 and 28.15)

$$\left(1 - \frac{v^2}{c^2}\right) = \left(\frac{L}{L_o}\right)^2 \quad \overset{!}{=} \quad \left(1 - \frac{v^2}{c^2}\right) = \frac{E_o}{E} = \frac{H_o}{H}$$

follows

$$\left(1 - \frac{v^2}{c^2}\right) \quad = \quad \left(\frac{L}{L_o}\right)^2 = \frac{E_o}{E} = \frac{H_o}{H} \qquad (28.17)$$

the proportionality (length measures depending on field):

$$E, H \sim 1/L^2 \qquad \text{and} \qquad E_o, H_o \sim 1/L_0^2 \qquad (28.18)$$

Experimental examples[i]:

- Electrostriction (piezo speaker)
- Magnetostriction
- Field or gravitational lenses
- Curvature of space, deflection of light

Conclusion[ii]:

- The field determines the length measures (what is 1 meter)
- The field determines the velocities v (in m/s)
- The field determines the speed of light c [m/s]
- Measurement of the speed of light is made with itself:

$$c \sim r \qquad (28.19)$$

- Measured is a constant of measurement c = 300.000 km/s
- The speed of light c is not a constant of nature!

Fig. 28.5: The dependence of the Lorentz contraction on the field

[i]:   see part 1, chap. 6.10
[ii]:   see part 1, chap. 6.11

28.5 The dependence of the Lorentz contraction on the field

The two results of the field dilatation (28.14 and 28.15) and of the Lorentz contraction (28.16) must be brought together and compared (28.17). Doing so the mathematical expression of the square root of Lorentz is cancelled out. That is of utmost importance, since with that also all limits disappear and there remains a purely physical relation, a proportionality of utmost importance (28.18).

What was the sense of the limits associated with the introduction of so-called inertial systems, which are the basis of the Lorentz transformation and which were adopted for our derivation of the field dilatation? They now only are auxiliary considerations according to model. We have chosen a very simple model, which can be described mathematically, in which an observer holds in his hand gauges for distances and field strengths and with that gauges a system flying by with constant velocity. He on the one hand determines a length contraction and on the other hand a field dilatation. He compares both with each other and comes to the conclusion: The field determines the dimensions!

This statement is purely physical and it is generally valid. It is independent of the relative velocity and all other mathematical conditions. A centrally accelerated circular motion e.g. will falsify the length contraction to the same extent, as the at the same time occurring field dilatation. It can be expected, that in addition to the square root of Lorentz also other errors will mutually efface, so that a generalization in this case actually seems to be allowed.

The won proportionality is of most elementary importance. We use it in the case of the piezo speaker and know it from the curvature of space and deflection of light in presence of extreme fields. If we ourselves however are exposed to the field as an observer, in which also the object to be observed is situated, then we are in the dilemma, not being able to perceive the influence. If we, to stay with the example, would sit in a rocket and this would become smaller at faster velocity, then we would notice nothing, since we also would shrink along to the same extent.

That concerns every measurement of velocity in general and the speed of light c in particular, which as is well-known is measured in meters per second. But if the field determines c and in the same way the length measure, which is given in meters, then both stand in a direct proportionality to each other, then we won't have the slightest chance to measure the speed of light. If namely c is changed, then this concerns the measurement path in the same way. Now the variable is measured with itself and as a result appears c, a constant value. We neither can see the change, since our eyes scan all objects optically and that means with c.

It is the nightmare of each and every measurement engineer, if the gauge depends on the factor to be measured. No wonder, if the theorem of addition of the velocities apparently loses its validity and always the same c is being measured, independent of the direction in which the source of radiation is moving (chap. 6.11). The result is:

The speed of light is a constant of measurement and not a constant of nature! If however the light is scanned with the speed of light, then also all components of the light vector correlated with themselves result in the same constant value c, then actually the vector of the speed of light loses its orientation in space and becomes a scalar factor. The Maxwell equations already anticipate this circumstance, but without providing an explanation why this is correct. Only the new field approach can answer the open question. With the derivation an axiom of physics - one also can say stumbling block - has been overcome.

The field strength determines the
length measure: $E, H \sim 1/L^2$ (28.18)
(the distance L between the spheres)[i]

Fig. 28.6 A: The curvature of the Earth in the
gravitational
field of the sun
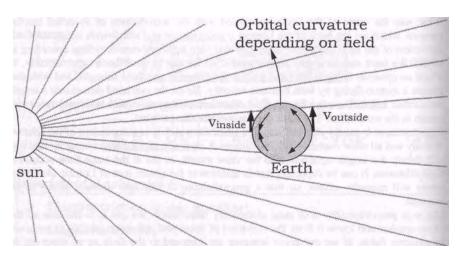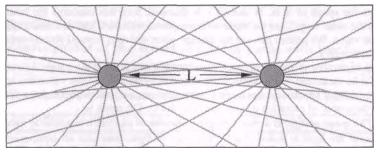
Fig. 28.6 B: Force of attraction and reduction of the
distance L
as the mutual field influence of two masses.

[i]:   Repetition of part 1, chapter 6.7

28.6 Boscovich and the respiration of the Earth

Who has got a good idea, fast will find that some other scientist had the same idea already before, and for his part possibly already had to make the same experience. If in spite of that the track fast loses in history, it as a rule is because of the insufficient citing and the vanity of the discoverers, who in reality only are rediscoverers of a much older knowledge.

The dependence of the length measures on the field (eq. 28.18) in the mathematical form of the derivation however should still be quite new. But the physical consequence already was described by the Jesuit priest Roger Joseph Boscovich from Dalmatia in 1755[i]. He was Professor for mathematics and theology in Rome and spoke about the world on the one hand being deformable, similar to rubber, but on the other hand we aren't able to perceive this, since our body is made of the same material and follows all changes. „We in an absolute way can recognize neither the place, nor distances or orders of magnitude", writes Boscovich in his book about space and time and writes how these are perceived by us[ii]. He suspects that the Earth unobservable for man „is respiring".

Actually a terrestrial observer at daytime is situated closer to the sun than in the night. He by day is exposed to a slightly stronger field and as a result correspondingly smaller. He himself and all objects in his neighbourhood are subject to an identical fluctuation of size, so that this „respiration" of the Earth cannot be detected. It can be detected neither with a tape measure nor with an optical measurement and still is present in reality. Only from a neutral standpoint we can succeed to recognize the actually existing curvature of space (fig. 28.6 A).
An example is the duration of the sunshine at the equator, which is longer than can be expected from the spherical form of the Earth. This reveals, how the Earth is bending towards the sun (see also chapter 6.7).
A further example is the influence of the field on the orbital velocity of the Earth measured in meters per second. Here also the meter at daytime is smaller than in the night, for which reason the Earth is moving slower on the side turned towards the sun, like a track vehicle, which drives a turn, if the chain at the inside runs slower than on the outside. If the Earth describes an orbit around the sun. then this circumstance has to do nothing at all with centrifugal force or with a force of attraction of the sun. The circular motion simply and solely is a result of the field influence of the sun[iii].

The force idea proves to be a pure auxiliary description. In the context of Newtonian mechanics the force plays a central role. Without question it is a very efficient and subjective perceptible description, which still isn't able to reproduce the physical reality in an objective manner. What keeps the planets into their orbit is only the field of the sun, which we call gravitational field and not some force! But of which kind is the gravitation and the field, which causes masses to come closer together and following our subjective observation attract each other (fig. 28.6 B)?

---
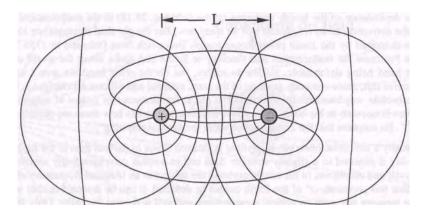
[i]:   O. E. Rossler: Endophysics, the World as an Interface, World Scientific Publishing Co. 1998, Kap. 10, S. 87-112, mit Ubersetzungen aus [ii]:

[ii]:   R. J. Boscovich: De spatio et tempore, ut a nobis cognoscuntur, 1755.

The length measure (the distance L between the spheres)[i] is determined by the field strength:

$$E, H \sim 1/L^2 \qquad (28.18)$$

A. Charged mass points (electrons, positrons, ions,...):

B. Uncharged mass points (neutrons, atoms, ...):
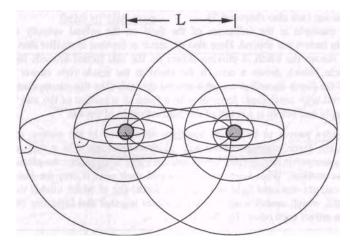
Fig. 28.7:   Observation of a mutual force of attraction because   of the effect of the fields on the distance measure.

[i]:   Repetition of part 1, chapters 6.7 - 6.9 and part 2, chapters 10.4 and 15.2

28.7 Derivation of the gravitation

In fig. 28.6B the relation between the field influence and the observed force of attraction of two mass bodies is represented. If I in my mind for instance "switch on" the field lines of both bodies, which are placed at distance L, then the fields according to equation 28.18 reduce the measure L and optically come each other closer. With increasing proximity the field line density increases, so that L further decreases. We observe a mutual attraction, which lets both bodies move towards each other.

In fig. 28.7A the two bodies carry an electric charge. For different polarity the field lines as is well-known run from the positive pole to the negative pole, to bundle up there. As a matter of principle also here an attraction can be expected, which is called electromagnetic interaction. For the reason of the bundling up of the field lines this effect however will turn out to be considerably stronger. Hence the electromagnetic interaction is for many powers of ten more powerful than the gravitation.
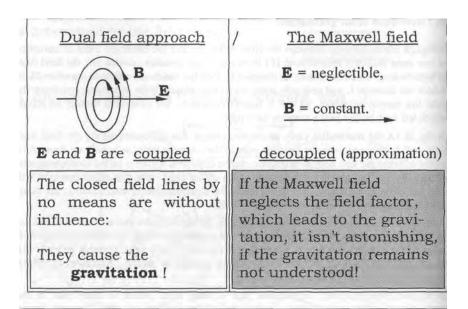
Furthermore there also can occur repulsion, if in the case of like charge the field lines are bent aside and between the two bodies an area is formed, where the field tends towards zero and the distance measure L (according to eq. 28.18) as a result towards infinity. The electromagnetic interaction theoretically indeed reaches to infinity. Responsible are the open field lines arising from a charged body.

Now every charged body in addition has a mass, with which it takes part in the gravitation. Let's remember the comparison of the derivations. The Maxwell theory teaches us that in the static case E- and H-field are decoupled, because each time the other field disappears. Even if as a result of the unipolar induction for every open field line the other one is taken to be standing perpendicular to the open field line, then this other line just wraps around the open field line and forms a closed-loop field line. In that way it can't be influenced anymore from the outside and can be neglected, so goes the doctrine, which is drawn from the Maxwell theory (fig. 27.5).

This is a fatal error in reasoning! The equation 28.19 naturally is valid for open field lines in the same manner as for closed ones. These fields also lead to an observable force of attraction. If of course exactly those fields are neglected, which are responsible for the gravitation, then we need not wonder, if we don't understand the gravitation and the nature of this interaction!

The influence of the closed field lines responsible for the gravitation is due to the missing bundling up of the lines correspondingly weak. Secondly these can't exist a force of repulsion due to the missing ability to influence closed field lines from the outside and third it can be recorded that all charged bodies also have a mass. All three statements of the field lines model perfectly cover the physical reality.

Fig. 28.7 B shows uncharged bodies, for which both the field lines of the E-field and of the perpendicular to them arranged H-field are closed-loop. Such bodies, like e.g. neutrons or whole atoms without charge behave electrically neutral to the outside, but have a mass for the reason of the closed field lines, whereby the field lines of the H-field dominate those of the E-field[i].

_____

[i]:   Repetition of K. Meyl: EMEC part 1, chap. 6.8 + 6.9, part 2 chap. 15.1

Dual field approach	/	The Maxwell field
		$\mathbf{E}$ = neglectible, $\mathbf{B}$ = constant.
$\mathbf{E}$ and $\mathbf{B}$ are <u>coupled</u>	/	<u>decoupled</u> (approximation)
The closed field lines by no means are without influence: They cause the **gravitation** !		If the Maxwell field neglects the field factor, which leads to the gravitation, it isn't astonishing, if the gravitation remains not understood!

- The following physical standpoints can be distinguished:

subjectivity (laboratory physics, observable)	relativity (mediator role) (transformation)	objectivity (not observable)

- Exemplary theories and their representatives:

Newton Maxwell	Poincaré Einstein	Boscovich *(dual approach)*

- With the associated transformation:

Galilei-transf. for $c = \infty$	Lorentz-transf. c = constant	*(new transf.)* c = variable

Fig. 28.8: Physical standpoints

28.8 From subjectivity to objectivity

With the field lines interpretation, which by the way already preferably was used by Faraday, the gravitation proves to be an until now neglected influence of the electromagnetic field. With that for the first time also the grand unification of the interactions was successful. The long sought-for unified theory with that for the first time comes within reach.

The derivation has made it possible to mathematically secure the theoretical working model of Boscovich. Already 1755 Boscovich points out the optical deception, which our observation underlies, if absolute orders of magnitude in our neighbourhood should change and our perception would change along. Then also all metric and optical measurement results would underlie this change. Following the idea of Boscovich I distinguish between subjectivity and objectivity.

The relativity is a compromise lying between both points of view, where a neutral standpoint is strived for, which lies outside the events. And from this standpoint the objectively taking place events are being observed. The theory of relativity consequently is a pure observer theory with strongly restricted scope on the basis of the Lorentz-transformation.

Theories of classic physics, like e.g. Newtonian mechanics, fall in the domain of subjectivity. The results and regularities are won in a terrestrial laboratory if possible isolated from the environment, where they have absolute validity. Here the Galilei-transformation is valid.

But if these subjectively won laws are applied to the microcosm in quantum physics or to the calculation of cosmic observations, one fast hits limits. The better the resolution of the microscopes and telescopes gets, the clearer the ,,outside" observer realizes, how much the laws of classic physics lose their validity.

Astrophysics successfully reaches for the theory of relativity, which with the curvature of space in the vicinity of mass centres delivers useful explanations. Here the dependence of the spatial dimensions on the field already could be established. In contradiction to that this fundamental relation is said to play no role whatsoever in quantum physics, or in all terrestrial laboratory experiments. But with which right may physical regularities from one domain be ignored in others? There only can exist one physics and that should be sought for!

What we need is objectivity! Behind all the apparently disconnected phenomena of physics work quite simple laws, which can't be observed and are until now not recognized by us. Objective physics in the words of Goethe is the one, which holds the world together in the heart of hearts. I call this, already by Boscovich suggested point of view, theory of objectivity. The access to the model domain of objectivity must be made mathematically by means of a transformation, since it is blocked for us by means of measurements or observations (see chapters 6.15-6.19). The transformation back into the observation domain must be made according to the same mathematical relations (fig. 28.9). In this way the quantum properties of the elementary particles can be calculated with high accuracy and agreement with the values, which until now only could be measured (chapter 7).

Approach: $\boxed{r = c \cdot t}$ (determine distance by signal prop. time)
(27.23)

$\boxed{dr = c \cdot dt + t \cdot dc}$ (total differential for a change)
(27.24)

$$\boxed{c = \frac{dr}{dt} - t \cdot \frac{dc}{dt}} \quad \text{resp.} \quad \boxed{t = \frac{dr}{dc} - c \cdot \frac{dt}{dc}} \quad (27.25)$$

$$c = \frac{dr}{dt} - t \cdot \frac{d^2r}{dt^2} + t^2 \cdot \frac{d^3r}{dt^3} - t^3 \cdot \frac{d^4r}{dt^4} + t^4 \cdot \frac{d^5r}{dt^5} - \dots \quad (27.26)$$

resp.

$$t = \frac{dr}{dc} - c \cdot \frac{d^2r}{dc^2} + c^2 \cdot \frac{d^3r}{dc^3} - c^3 \cdot \frac{d^4r}{dc^4} + c^4 \cdot \frac{d^5r}{dc^5} - \dots \quad (27.27)$$

The Taylor-series (27.26 and 27.27) breaks off after the first term, if

c = constant	resp.	t = constant
$dr = c \cdot dt$	resp.:	$dr = t \cdot dc$
$\Delta r = c \cdot \Delta t$	resp.:	$\Delta r = t \cdot \Delta c$ (27.28)
theory of relativity		theory of objectivity
$\Delta r \sim \Delta t$	resp.:	$\Delta r \sim \Delta c$ means:

from: length contraction   variable speed of light

follows: time dilatation   dependency of meter measure

for absolute speed of the light   for absolute time

    observation domain   model domain
    (measurable)   (can only be calculated)
    x(r) ○————————● M{x(r)}

Model transformation of the length measures

Fig. 28.9: ____ Theory of relativity and theory of objectivity
and the model transformation between both
physical standpoints

<i>:   Repetition of part 1, fig. 6.16

28.9 The objective standpoint

The question is asked how one gets to an objective physical standpoint, which in addition evades every observation? The way leads over a transformation, to which all perceptible and measurable relations must be submitted.
If we for instance measure the distance r to a point light source, then the propagation of the light c and the propagation time t determine the distance measure $r = c*t$
If there occurs a little change of the distance, then two causes should be considered: Either the propagation time or the speed of light have changed somewhat. With that the two possible standpoints already would have been found.

The relativistic standpoint, which proceeds from the assumption of the speed of light being constant, says: the propagation time varies and we are dealing with a clock problem. If namely for relativistic velocities a length contraction occurs, then from that necessarily follows a time dilatation.
But actually no specific statement can be made about the constancy of the speed of light, besides that we look at, measure and scan everything with c and hence only observe the constancy. With that the theory of relativity remains a pure observer theory, exactly as Einstein originally called it into existence. This standpoint follows the motto: What can't be observed also doesn't need to interest the physicist.

The objective standpoint strives for more, for a description of the actually taking place processes. This time we proceed from the assumption of a universal and constant time with the argument: The time measure is an immutable definition and the physicist, who dictates this, himself determines what is simultaneousness. Then there also is no place for time travel and for clocks going wrong.
Therefore the speed of light can take all possible values always in strict proportionality to the length measures. Thus the measured length and distance measures should be transformed and that in the end is the unit „meter", which should be replaced by an objective measure.

With that the necessary transformation for variable c would be outlined. This transformation will be enqueued in the file of the big transformations. From it the Lorentz-transformation for c = constant emerges as a special case, like already from that transformation the Galilei-transformation follows for c =∞. How now the relation of the subjective to the objective „meter" should be determined; by means of the relation of the relevant fields (eq. 28.17) or by means of the square root of Lorentz (eq. 28.16), over that should be worked and spoken. We already have successfully gone through it in a concrete example (chapter 7).

Every theory is judged according to its expressiveness. Ending this chapter the statements and derivations hence again are compared. On the one hand the Maxwell theory and from that the theory of relativity can be derived from the new approach, on the other hand a long list follows, which can't be connected with the Maxwell equations, like e.g. the gravitation. For instance the neutrino and all other elementary particles with all their specific quantum properties are derived (chapter 7), free and easy fundamental laws result, like the law of conservation of energy, and even the temperature spills its until now kept secret (chapter 8.3). Remains the conclusion: With no other approach according to the textbooks until now the efficiency of the new approach could be obtained.

• From the dual field-theoretical approach are derived:	• From Maxwell's field equations can be derived:
=> Maxwell's field equations	=>0
=> Quantum properties of the elementary particles	=>0
=> Neutrino (as an oscillating ring-like vortex)	=> 0
=> Gravitation (as a result of closed field lines)	= > 0
=> Unified theory (grand unification of all interactions)	=>0
=> Temperature (as an oscillation of size depending on field)	=>0
=> Law of conservation of energy (and many other funda-mental laws of physics)	=>0
=> Theory of objectivity	=> Theory of relativity

Fig. 28.10:   Comparison of the efficiency of the
approaches
(final balance)

29. Mathematical gleanings

If, proceeding from the new field-physical approach, well-known and accepted theories are derived as special cases, this on the one hand can be valued as evidence for the correctness of the approach. On the other hand the new approach in part significantly influences the interpretation of the derived theories. That can involve a rethinking, with which not insightful people have difficulties, if for instance quantum physics, thermodynamics or the gravitation become partial aspects of electromagnetism. Over and above that are hidden many new thing in the new approach, which are there to discover. To that are counting among others the potential vortices and the scalar waves. One can work out these phenomena physically or mathematically, where the latter way as a rule is the faster one. Hence the summary shall be concluded with a kind of mathematical gleanings.

29.1 General and special theory of relativity

Albert Einstein distinguishes between general and special theory of relativity. Whereas the special (SRT), still is linked tightly with the prerequisites of the Lorentz-transformation, the general (GRT), deals with an extension to arbitrary systems, which mustn't be inertial systems. I would like not to dwell upon the GRT, as Einstein designed it, and merely notice that every generalization represents a possible source of errors and has to be well founded.

In the case of our derivation, the general case as it were resulted of its own accord. Let's turn back: If the root of Lorentz still was a component of the derived field dilatation (28.15) and equally of the length contraction (28.16), then it fell out in the comparison of both results (28.17). With that the important result, the proportionality (28.18), which among others results in the gravitation, becomes independent of the speed of light and the relative velocity v. This last step is obvious and still completely new. It cannot be found at Einstein, who in another way finds his GRT and his description of the gravitation. Even if here is striven for the same goal, then deviations in the result cannot be excluded because of the differences in the derivation, for which reason I additionally mark the by me derived general relativity (GRT'), to avoid confusion.

Influence of the Lorentz-transformation in the:
SRT   (special theory of relativity): one-dimensional,
GRT' (general theory of relativity): three-dimensional, to a
large extent corresponding to the GRT of Albert Einstein,
GOT   (general theory of objectivity)

Discussion of the root of Lorentz $\sqrt{1 - v^2/c^2} = \sqrt{1 - \beta^2}$ with ß = v/c resp. the γ-factor: $\gamma = 1/\sqrt{1 - v^2/c^2}$ (29.1)			
Being transformed are:	SRT	GRT'	GOT
Length measures L [m] (length contraction eq. 28.16)	$\sim 1/\gamma$	$\sim 1/\gamma$	$\sim 1/\gamma$
Areas A [m²] (circular motion)	$\sim 1/\gamma$	$\sim 1/\gamma^2$	$\sim 1/\gamma^2$
Volumes V [m³] (vortical motion)	$\sim 1/\gamma$	$\sim 1/\gamma^3$	$\sim 1/\gamma^3$
Time measures t [s]	$\sim 1/\gamma$	$\sim 1/\gamma$	= const.
Velocities v [m/s]	= const.	= const.	$\sim 1/\gamma$
($v = L/t$) c [m/s]	= const.	= const.	$\sim 1/\gamma$
Constants of material ε [As/Vm]	= const.	= const.	$\sim \gamma$
($\varepsilon\cdot\mu = 1/c^2$) μ [Vs/Am]	= const.	= const.	$\sim \gamma$
Relativistic mass m [kg] (increase in mass) [=VAs³/m²]	$\sim \gamma$	$\sim \gamma$	$\sim \gamma^2$
Energy W [VAs]	$\sim \gamma$	$\sim \gamma$	= const.
Energy density w [VAs/m³] ($w = W/V$)	$\sim \gamma^2$	$\sim \gamma^4$	$\sim \gamma^3$
E-, **H**-field strength **E** [V/m]	$\sim \gamma$	$\sim \gamma^2$	$\sim \gamma$
($w = (\varepsilon\cdot E^2 + \mu\cdot H^2)/2$) **H** [A/m]	$\sim \gamma$	$\sim \gamma^2$	$\sim \gamma$
Power density **p** [VA/m²] (Poynting vector **p** = **E** x **H**)	$\sim \gamma^2$	$\sim \gamma^4$	$\sim \gamma^2$
D-field, **B**-field **D** [As/m²]	$\sim \gamma$	$\sim \gamma^2$	$\sim \gamma^2$
(**D** = $\varepsilon\cdot$**E** ; **B** = $\mu\cdot$**H**) **B** [Vs/m²]	$\sim \gamma$	$\sim \gamma^2$	$\sim \gamma^2$
Power P [VA]	$\sim \gamma$	$\sim \gamma^2$	= const.

Fig. 29.2   Transformation table between SRT, GRT' and GOT

29.2 Transformation table

Let's speak again about the difference to the special relativity (SRT). This so to speak deals with the one-dimensional case of the uniform motion of a reference system in x-direction ($v = v_x$), as specified by the Lorentz-transformation, where only the x-components and not those in y- or z-direction are being transformed. As already mentioned this is a purely theoretical case, which in practice occurs next to never. Normal is circular and vortical and with that accelerated motion, where the velocity component permanently changes its direction.

The derived result of the general relativity (GRT') does justice to this circumstance. Even if this at first only has been derived for the x-direction it nevertheless is valid equally in y- and z-direction. It even remains valid for the case that we base on a path of arbitrary form of a spatial field vortex. In this case some components continually occur in all directions of space, so that the relative velocity v as already the speed of light c loses its vectorial nature. With that the transition of the SRT to the GRT is carried out. By means of the spatial swirling the electric and magnetic field pointers at the same time turn into scalar factors, by taking over the function of the aether. Let us remember that even Einstein in his GRT was forced to again introduce the aether, which in the SRT still was unnecessary.

It therefore makes a difference in the transformation of physical factors, if we base on a one-dimensional (SRT) or a three-dimensional spatial description (GRT). Length measures in x-direction in both cases must be converted using the root of Lorentz. Usually the relativistic γ-factor is introduced, which is inverse to the root of Lorentz

$$\gamma = 1/\sqrt{1-v^2/c^2} \qquad \text{with } x_o/x = \gamma \quad (29.2)$$

If thus individual length measures would be subject to a length contraction following the γ-factor, then a volume V according to the SRT must be transformed with γ, according to the GRT' however with γ^3.

As is well-known a relativistic increase in mass is converted with the γ-factor and in the same manner the to that proportional energy $E = m\,c^2$. If we however correlate the energy to the volume V and in that way determine an energy density w, then the difference between SRT ($w \sim \gamma^2$) and GRT' ($w \sim \gamma^4$) again has its maximum effect.

A relation to the field factors of E- and H-field is for instance provided by the energy density of a wave field

$$w = (\varepsilon \cdot E^2 + \mu \cdot H^2)/2 \quad (29.3)$$

According to that the field strengths in the one-dimensional case of the SRT should be converted with the γ-factor, in the case of the GRT' however with γ^2, in accordance with the derivation in chapter 28. This circumstance willingly is overlooked, although it only concerns the textbooks and the today valid theory of relativity. I however point to the difference, since it does make a difference if we start with the SRT or the GRT when we change to the general theory of objectivity (GOT).

In the domain of the GOT all length measures should be transformed. The respective dimension gives information with which power the γ-factor occurs (fig. 29.2). The unit meter is responsible for that.

Discussing the root of Lorentz $\sqrt{1-\beta^2}$		$= 1/\gamma$	$=$	$\sqrt{1-(v^2/c^2)}$	
mathematical consideration:	$v = 0$	$v < c$	$v = c$	$v > c$	
Abbreviations: $\beta = v/c$	$0 <$	$\beta < 1$	$\beta = 1$	$\beta > 1$	
and: $\gamma = 1/\sqrt{1-\beta^2}$	$1 <$	$|\gamma| < \infty$	$\gamma = \pm\infty$	imaginary	
and: $\gamma^2 = 1/(1-\beta^2)$	1	positive	$\gamma = +\infty$	negative	
and: $\gamma^4 = 1/(1-\beta^2)^2$	$1 <$	positive	$\gamma = +\infty$	positive	
Examples: Increase in mass, energy $\sim \gamma$ for SRT and GRT	1	positive	$\pm \infty$	complex	
Field strength in GRT': $\mathbf{E, H} \sim \gamma^2$ and mass in GOT: $m \sim \gamma^2$	$1 <$	$\mathbf{E, H} < \infty$ positive	$+ \infty$	$\mathbf{E, H} < 0$ negative	
Energy-, power density $\sim \gamma^4$ (Poynting vector) in GRT:	$1 <$	$\mathbf{P} < \infty$ positive	$\mathbf{P} = +\infty$	$\mathbf{P} < \infty$ positive	

Fig. 29.3   Discussion concerning the root of Lorentz

- The special theory of relativity SKT only is defined for $v < c$

- For $v \cdot c$ particles with a complex mass, but with
  a real energy density (according to GRT') would result.

- From the point of view of the theory of objectivity (GOT)
  the mass should be taken negative-real (neutrino?).

29.3 Discussion concerning the root of Lorentz

Fig. 29.2 forms the basis for the transformation in the domain of the GOT, the general theory of objectivity, where it plays a role, if a subjectively measured factor should be converted from the laboratory domain or a relativistic factor according to the SRT or the GRT'. The given proportionalities thereby should be put in the respective relation. In this way results the respective valid instruction for transformation on the basis of the root of Lorentz.
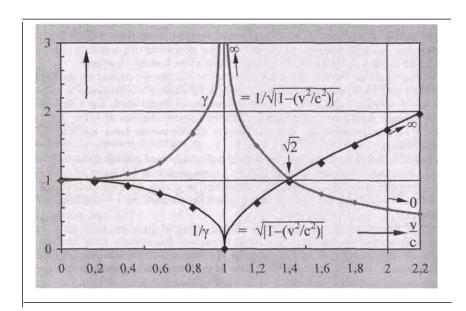
Let's take a critical look at the root of Lorentz. The velocity v occurring in it, of whatever this may consist, is depending on the field according to equation 28.14 + 28.15. It strictly speaking wouldn't be constant anymore and wouldn't belong in a general instruction for transformation at all. Only, what is valid for v, is valid to the same extent for c. Since only the proportion of v/c occurs in the root of Lorentz every influence depending on field or of other nature will have no effect on v/c and the value of the root of Lorentz. It in any case will retain its value. It fulfills for itself the condition of the Lorentz invariance. According to that in the case of the relative velocity v it doesn't depend on the absolute value, but only on the relation to the speed of light. In addition the restriction to values of v < c is normal, if the speed of light is seen as an upper limit. Let's first purely mathematically draw a case distinction for different velocity domains of v. For v = 0 the root of Lorentz becomes one and the Lorentz transformation turns into the Galilei transformation.

Connected to this is the today well-known and technically used domain up to the limit of v = c. It virtually is impossible to accelerate a mass particle to the speed of light, since mass, field and energy would grow towards infinity, as is clear from the table (fig. 29.2). Particles as fast as light, like photons, hence cannot have a mass. At v = c a singularity is present.

In a field theory, which also deserves this name, however an upper limit must not be present. Hence also the case for v > c should be required theoretically. Only later we will be able to judge if this makes sense physically. We at first only want to examine the case mathematically. Mass, field and energy now again have a finite value, there however results a complex, purely imaginary mass, a negative field and doing so, as already before a positive energy and power density.

There sometime has been the textbook opinion that it is physically impossible to fly faster than sound. This erroneous statement even could be proven „scientifically", because such a supersonic airplane would fly off the observation space and with that wouldn't be real anymore, thus from a mathematical viewpoint would be complex. Anyone, who in New York gets off a Concorde, can confirm that everything at any moment of the flight was real. Only the observer is deceived, if the airplane flies somewhere else, than he perceives it. Is the speed of light also such a „sonic barrier", which by the majority of the scientists since Einstein until today still is thought to be insurmountable?

How should one physically imagine a complex mass? Let us remember the alternating current teachings, where it is normal to work with complex values, since the mean values of the oscillating alternating currents, tension voltages and fields are zero. Calculating with mean values would result in zero energy and power. Hence complex factors are introduced and the root mean square values are calculated and measured instead of the mean values. Could a complex mass analogously not concern an oscillating particle, a particle, which in addition is faster than the light?

-    Physical example: <u>   </u>
   neutrino = mean of the oscillating mass $\approx$ zero
   RMS value of the complex mass $\neq$ zero
   E- and H-field with inverse sign
   carrier of positive energy and power
   ν -model: ring-like vortex oscillating from e⁻ to e⁺ [i]

Examples from the general theory of relativity (GRT):

(28.16):   length contraction $L \sim 1/\gamma = \sqrt{1-(v^2/c^2)}$

(6.19):   increase in mass $m \sim \gamma = 1/\sqrt{1-(v^2/c^2)}$

(6.6,28.15) field dilatation $\mathbf{E} \sim \mathbf{H} \sim \gamma^2 = 1/(1-v^2/c^2)$

Fig. 29.4:   Root of Lorentz for speeds faster than light (v > c)

29.4 Mathematical derivation of the neutrino

In the domain of speeds faster than light, for v > c, the power series (28.12) does not converge anymore and every observer theory and every observation (fig. 28.4) will fail, because particles faster than light run away of their own visible appearances. Every measurement and every observation inevitably is behind and hardly can be assigned to the actual cause. That way for instance measured neutrino events are being connected with celestial observations, with which they haven't got anything to do at all. If we however describe the domain v > c in the complex plane, then astonishing results are found, which could be verified physically: a complex length dilatation with increasing velocity goes along with a loss of complex mass. The oscillating fields, energy and power density however would be real with negative sign.

Thus there would result particles carrying energy with an oppositely poled field, with an oscillating mass and if necessary also an oscillating charge. Without static mass and charge these particles hardly would interact with normal matter, which leads to an enormous ability of penetration. The only physical particles, which have such a property, are the neutrinos. With that a usable and an extremely efficient model description has been found for these particles. Also the energy of these particles can be calculated, which has considerable orders of magnitude and is available as an energy source everywhere and any time.

If for instance in a converter for space energy a neutrino should be converted into a resting charge carrier (with v = 0), then two steps are necessary (see part 2 of this series of books):

    1. First the neutrino must be slowed down to 1.414 times the speed of light (fig. 28.9). Doing so energy is spent and not won! The converter for instance can cool down.

    2. Afterwards the characteristic rotation of its own, with which the ring-like vortex spins around itself by permanently putting its inside to the outside and vice versa, has to be taken away from the neutrino. In that way the vortex centre is closed and the particle acquires localization. It becomes a charge carrier.
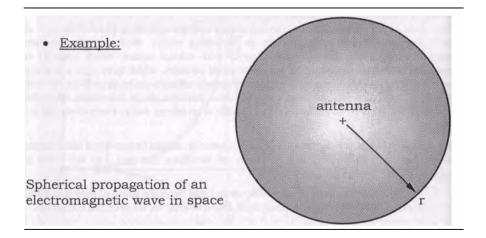
Even if the representation in the complex plane represents only an auxiliary description, the model nevertheless seems to be efficient, because despite its complex mass and charge the neutrino nevertheless carries a real energy. It in any case is represented in that way to an observer, who measures the relation with the speed of light, who in the relativistic scheme of things scans the relation.

Today, as already said, even the sonic barrier has become permeable and no scientist dares to physically deny this fact and even prove his mistake mathematically anymore. No, on the contrary, he always did know that as an expected consequence the sonic barrier runs after the supersonic plane. The once physically unthinkable and scientifically fought has become normality.

What should hinder an oscillating particle, like a neutrino, to be faster than the light? Some time one also will accustom to that.

- Starting-point:
   the fundamental field equation
   (derivation in chapter 27.10)

$$-c^2 \cdot \text{rot rot } \mathbf{B} \;=\; \frac{\partial^2 \mathbf{B}}{\partial t^2} \;+\; \frac{1}{\tau_1}\frac{\partial \mathbf{B}}{\partial t} \;+\; \frac{1}{\tau_2}\frac{\partial \mathbf{B}}{\partial t} \;+\; \frac{\mathbf{B}}{\tau_1 \tau_2} \qquad (27.26)$$

- <u>Example:</u>

antenna
+

Spherical propagation of an
electromagnetic wave in space

- The number π: $\pi = 3.14159$

straight	$\pi \cdot$		circular			spherical
r **line**	$\cdot$	$\pi \cdot 2 \;=$	$2r \cdot \pi$ **circum- ference**	$\cdot\ 2r\ =$		$\pi \cdot r^2 \cdot 4$ **surface**
r **line**	$\cdot$	$\pi \cdot r \;=$	$r^2 \cdot \pi$ **area**	$\cdot\ r \cdot 4/3 \;=$		$\pi \cdot r^3 \cdot 4/3$ **volume**

(29.4)

Fig. 29.5: The number π

29.5 Universal constants and constants of nature

Strictly speaking fundamental or universal constants can't exist in pure field physics at all. For the example of the speed of light has been shown that it merely are measurement constants (fig. 6.11). The numerical size is a consequence of the definition. The speed of light for instance has the today well-known value as a consequence of the fixing of a length unit and a time unit. If we change a unit, if we take ,,feet" instead of ,,meters", then another value results. If however the velocity changes, then the reference measure of our gauge changes along and we get the identical reading. Electric and magnetic field constant depend directly on the speed of light c $(\varepsilon \cdot \mu = 1/c^2)$, which solely by the fixing of the electric units takes a certain value. The inner structure of the potential vortices leads from Planck's quantum of action, to the elementary charge and to the countless atomic ,,constants", which all objectively seen aren't constants at all. They virtually all can be derived (chapter 7).

Sooner or later even the last natural scientist will realize, that nature does not provide "constants" at all. If ,,constants of nature"' did exist, as listed in textbooks and encyclopaedias, then they aren't consistent with causality, since we don't know the cause, why the factor should have exactly this size and no other. Behind every so-called constant of nature unnoticed is hiding a physical closed loop conclusion.

Fundamental constants only exist in mathematics. This can be shown very nicely for the example of the ,,fundamental field equation" (eq. 27.26), which has been derived from the new field theoretical approach (fig. 27.10). It is the description of waves and vortices in space and time, which indeed carries features of a ,,world equation". If one searches this equation for fundamental constants, then one altogether can find three: the number π, the number e and the Golden Proportion Φ. The speed of light c however occurs only as the mathematical factor characterizing the wave as a result of the defined units. If one would choose the units different, c as well could be made 1. With the fundamental numbers that procedure won't work. They don't depend on the definition of the units!

Let's consider the number π. The number π occurs every time as a proportionality factor if we transition from a straight line to a circle or further to a sphere, from a line to the circumference or further to the surface of a sphere and exactly so from a line to the area of a circle or further to the volume of a sphere. Since for all the special cases, which are derived from the fundamental field equation (the structure of the elementary particles, the atomic structure and in the same way again in the universe), the spherical symmetry dominates, the mathematical solution is determined by a corresponding spatial configuration of the number π. It has its cause neither in a physical relation of interactions, nor in the choice of the units, but only in the geometry.

$$\underline{\text{The number e:}} \qquad \boxed{e = \lim_{n \to \infty} (1 + 1/n)^n} = \boxed{2.71828}$$

<div align="right">(29.5)</div>

for $n = 2$ is $(1+1/n)^n = 1.5^2 = 2.25$

for $n = 1$ is $(1+1/n)^n = 2^1 = 2$

for $n = 0.5$ is $(1+1/n)^n = \sqrt{3} = 1.73$

for $n = 0$ is $(1+1/n)^n = \infty^0 = 1$

for $n = -0.25$ is $(1+1/n)^n = 1/(-3)^{0.25}$ gives a complex solution!

for $n = -0.5$ is $(1+1/n)^n = 1/\sqrt{-1} = -i$, thus again complex!

for $n = -0.75$ is $(1+1/n)^n = 1/(-3)^{0.75}$ as well complex!

for $n = -1$ is $(1+1/n)^n = 1/0 = \pm\infty$

for $n = -2$ is $(1+1/n)^n = 2^2 = 4$
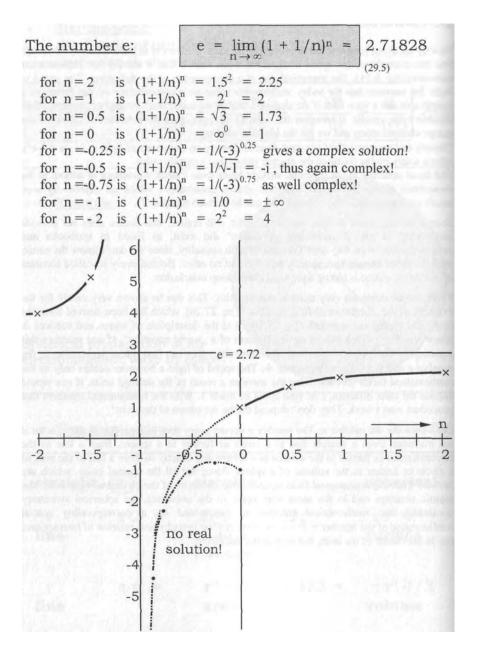
Fig. 29.6: Forming the limiting value of the number e

29.6 The fundamental number e

In the fundamental field equation (27.26) a further irrational number is concealed, the number e. Whereas the left side of the equation (a) gives the spatial distribution, the right side (b-e) describes the temporal course of events. Besides the term constant in time (e) also first time derivations (c and d) and a second time derivation (b) occur. For a solution of this differential equation a function should be found, the derivations of which are again the function itself. This condition strictly speaking is fulfilled only by one single function, the e-function.
We used this property of the e-function already for the derivation of the Schrodinger-equation in chapter 5.6 and 5.7. There with the help of the e-function an approach was chosen, which leads to the well-known solutions of the Schrodinger-equation, which are considered to be secured experimentally. With that the number e controls the temporal relations of the fundamental field equation.

It might be helpful to take a closer look at the origin of the number e. It results from a consideration of limiting values: _

$$e \;=\; \lim_{n \to \infty} (1 + 1/n)^n \;=\; 2.71828 \qquad (29.5)$$

If one varies n and allows different values between $-\infty$ and $+\infty$, then a strange behaviour is showing. One indeed more and more approaches the well-known value of e = 2.72, as dictated by the definition of limiting values according to equation (29.5), the larger n is chosen. But in the opposite direction it looks less tidied:

	for	$n = 1$	is	$(1+1/n)^n$	$=$	2^1	$=$	2
	for	$n = 0.5$	is	$(1+1/n)^n$	$=$	$\sqrt{3}$	$=$	1.73
	for	$n = 0$	is	$(1+1/n)^n$	$=$	∞^0	$=$	1
	for	$n = -0.5$	is	$(1+1/n)^n$	$=$	$1/\sqrt{-1}$	$=$	$-i$, thus complex!
and	for	$n = -1$	is	$(1+1/n)^n$	$=$	$1/0$	$=$	$\pm\infty$

$$(29.6)$$

Since the e-function inside the fundamental field equation is responsible for the temporal sequence, the interpretation of my colleague Prof. Dr. Preussker[i] gets a deeper sense. He says, it starts outside our imagination (at n = -1). Afterwards at first big chaos prevails. Mathematically seen some imaginary solutions arise. Finally the system is putting in order (from n = 0), to more and more approach the value e = 2.72 .

The number e is of fundamental importance and thereby holds unforeseen secrets. More mysterious and until now entirely misunderstood is the meaning of the Golden Proportion. Also this indivisible number can be found in the fundamental field equation. Since it is less known and more complicated to handle, it first shall be introduced.

---

[i]:   H. Preussker: Der Wirbelring, Halstenbeck 2002

Graphical construction at a right-angled triangle (Pythagoras):

The Golden Proportion of length $a = x + y$:

$$\frac{x}{a} = \frac{y}{x}$$

with the proportion:

$$\frac{x}{a} = \Phi = 0.618 \quad (29.9) \quad \text{and} \quad \frac{a}{x} = \frac{1}{\Phi} = \Phi + 1 = 1.618 \quad (29.10)$$

The pentacle
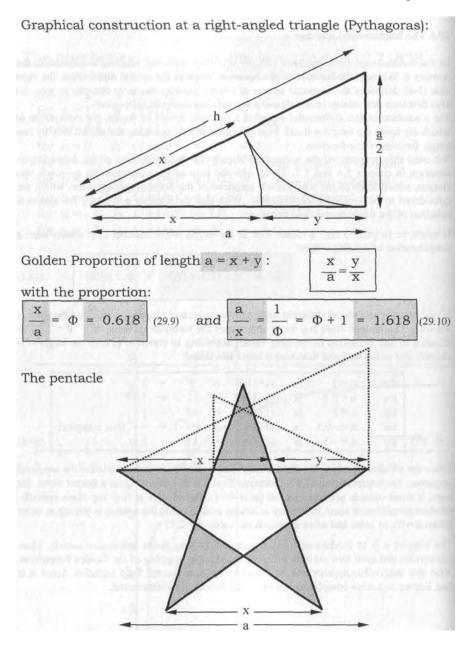
Fig. 29.7: Constructions for the Golden Proportion

29.7 The pentacle

During his visit of the Egyptian pyramids already two and a half thousand years ago the history writer Herodotus by his guide had been called attention to the circumstance that the Golden Proportion has been realized for the proportions of scale.
In the case of the pyramid of Cheops it even has been taken into account manifold, as we know today, but we hence still don't know why. There must be an intention behind it. Anyway a coincidental use can be eliminated, since the Golden Proportion cannot be handled in an easy way, neither graphically nor mathematically.
The Golden Proportion in addition plays an important role in the whole ancient architecture and not only there. It for instance occurs in the case of a very old symbol, the five edged star, which we can draw with one line without taking off. The well-known symbol also is called pentacle.

In the case of the Golden Proportion a straight line a is divided into two unequal halves. The larger half x thereby is 61.8 % of the straight line a. Already Pythagoras has researched and taught about this. Maybe he did know more about the purpose of this classification than all the mathematicians, archaeologists and art historians of today together.
For a graphical solution we assume a right-angled triangle. The task is to divide one leg of length a = x + y according to the Golden Proportion into two parts, the larger part x and the smaller part y. The second leg has the length a/2. According to the theorem of Pythagoras the length of the hypotenuse h is

$$h = \sqrt{a^2 + (a/2)^2} = (a/2)\cdot\sqrt{5} \quad (29.7)$$

If the length of the second leg (a/2) is subtracted from the hypotenuse, then this is the sought length x = h - a/2:

$$x = (a/2)(\sqrt{5} - 1) \quad (29.8)$$

The proportion of both length measures gives the constant Φ, which is characteristic for the Golden Proportion:

$$\Phi = x/a = (\sqrt{5} - 1)/2 = 0.618 \quad (29.9)$$

This proportional number has a special property. If one adds 1 to the number and forms the reciprocal value of that, then the same number comes out again, thus:
with $\Phi = x/a$: with a = x + y :

$$\Phi + 1 = \frac{1}{\Phi} \quad \text{and} \quad \frac{x}{a} + 1 = \frac{a}{x} \quad \text{resp.} \quad \frac{x}{a} = \frac{a-x}{x} = \frac{y}{x} \quad (29.10)$$

With that the ratio of the length a and the larger section x is the same as the ratio of x and the smaller section y.

- Starting-point: the fundamental field equation

$$- c^2 \cdot \text{rot rot } \mathbf{E} \;=\; \frac{\partial^2 \mathbf{E}}{\partial t^2} \;+\; \frac{1}{\tau_1}\frac{\partial \mathbf{E}}{\partial t} \;+\; \frac{1}{\tau_2}\frac{\partial \mathbf{E}}{\partial t} \;+\; \frac{\mathbf{E}}{\tau_1 \tau_2} \qquad (27.26)$$

- for the special case: because of missing conductivity ($\sigma = 0$)
  e.g. in air no eddy current damping: $\sigma/\varepsilon = \boxed{(1/\tau_1) = 0}$
- and no currents (eq. 27.15+27.16): $\mathbf{j} = \sigma \cdot \mathbf{E} = -\mathbf{v} \cdot \varepsilon \cdot \text{div } \mathbf{E} = 0$

- resp. $\Delta \mathbf{E} \;=\; \text{grad div } \mathbf{E} \;-\; \text{rot rot } \mathbf{E} \;=\; -\text{rot rot } \mathbf{E}$

$$\Rightarrow \quad c^2 \cdot \Delta \mathbf{E} \;=\; \frac{\partial^2 \mathbf{E}}{\partial t^2} \;+\; \frac{1}{\tau_2}\frac{\partial \mathbf{E}}{\partial t} \qquad\qquad (29.11)$$

Standard case of a wave damped with potential vortices

In the case of a perturbation this wave rolls up to a vortex, with
- the vortex radius r
- the swirl velocity $c = \omega \cdot r$
- the angular velocity $\omega = 1/\tau_2 = c/r$

The vortex itself runs with the velocity $v(x(t)) = dx/dt$
as a longitudinal wave in direction of the $\mathbf{E}$-field: $\Delta \mathbf{E} = \partial^2 \mathbf{E}/\partial x^2$
$\Rightarrow \quad \partial \mathbf{E}/\partial t \;=\; (\partial \mathbf{E}/\partial x)\cdot(dx/dt) \;=\; v\cdot \partial \mathbf{E}/\partial x$ and
$\qquad \partial^2 \mathbf{E}/\partial t^2 = v^2 \cdot (\partial^2 \mathbf{E}/\partial x^2); \; (\partial v/\partial t = 0,$ since not accelerated$)$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \boxed{c^2 \cdot \partial^2 \mathbf{E}/\partial x^2 \;=\; v^2 \cdot (\partial^2 \mathbf{E}/\partial x^2) \;+\; v\cdot(c/r)\cdot \partial \mathbf{E}/\partial x} \qquad (29.12)$$

- with the exponential approach: $\mathbf{E} = \Psi \cdot e^{-x/r}$ are:
$\Rightarrow \quad \partial \mathbf{E}/\partial x \;=\; -(1/r)\cdot \mathbf{E}$ and $\partial^2 \mathbf{E}/\partial x^2 = (1/r^2)\cdot \mathbf{E}$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \boxed{(c^2/r^2)\cdot \mathbf{E} \;=\; (v^2/r^2)\cdot \mathbf{E} \;-\; (v\cdot c/r^2)\cdot \mathbf{E}} \qquad (29.13)$$

- resp.: $c^2 \;=\; v^2 \;-\; v\cdot c$ $\qquad\qquad (29.14)$

Fig. 29.8:____   The calculation of an electromagnetic wave, which
             is rolling up to a potential vortex.

The big mystery concerning the harmony of the Golden Proportion gets a sober technical-physical dimension with the theory of objectivity. It determines within the fundamental field equation" (27.26) the rolling up of a wave into a vortex and vice versa. The Golden Proportion mathematically describes the process known as wave damping, as we can make ourselves clear.

29.8 The vortex, which is rolling up

For the case of a wave propagation in air or in vacuum, if no electric conductivity is present ($\sigma = 0$), the fundamental field equation is reduced to the two parts: the description of the electromagnetic wave and the potential vortex as a damping term. Now a solution of this partial differential equation (29.11) is sought. This only succeeds for a very particular course of spatial and temporal field.

If a wave for a field perturbation rolls up to a vortex, which we had worked out as a model concept, then the field oscillation continues to run with the speed of light, but this time in circles. With this consideration the relation between the angular velocity resp. the time constants and the radius of the circular vortex has been described ($\tau_2 = r/c$).

$v(x(t)) = dx/dt$ is the not-accelerated velocity of propagation of a vortex. In that case v points in the x-direction radially to the outside. For the time derivation of the field vector $E(x(t))$ the chain rule should be applied. With that the field equation (29.11), defined in space and time, can be converted into an equation determined in v and x (29.12).

Finally we use the mentioned property of the e-function, which for first and second derivation again turns into itself, by choosing the approach of an exponential damping with $e^{-x/r}$ There remains a quadratic equation to determine the velocity v (29.14 and 29.15). From the two solutions of the quadratic equation only the one with positive velocity should be considered (29.17) and that would be 1.618 times the speed of light! (29.18).
If we subtract 1 from this value or form the reciprocal value, then in both cases the factor $\Phi = 0.618$ results, which is called the Golden Proportion (29.19).

Behind this clear, mathematically won result is hiding a deeper physical meaning. Obviously nothing can hinder a longitudinal wave and its vortices to be slower or faster than just with v = 1.618*c. Let us take the case that v = c, for which there even exist calculations in some textbooks[i]. Then as a result gets out that the longitudinal parts decrease very quickly and already can be neglected after $\lambda/2\pi$. I in any case interpret the near-field zone of an antenna (fig. 29.9) such that within one sixth of the wavelength the vortices to a large extent have decayed.

_____

[i]: Zinke, Brunswig: Lehrbuch der Hochfrequenztechnik, 1. Bd., 3.Aufl. Springer-Verlag Berlin 1986, Seite 335

- The quadratic equation 29.14: $\boxed{v^2 - v \cdot c - c^2 = 0}$ (29.15)

- has the solution: $\boxed{v = c/2 \pm \sqrt{c^2/4 + c^2}}$ (29.16)

- for the proportion v/c: $\boxed{v/c = (1 + \sqrt{5})/2 = 1.618}$ (29.17)

- The result $v/c = \underline{1.618}$ (29.18)

- resp.: $c/v = \Phi = \underline{0.618} =$ „Golden Proportion"(29.19)

- acc. to that is: $1 + \Phi = 1.618 = 1/\Phi = 1/0.618$(29.18*)

- Concerning the physical meaning of   v/c = 1.618   (29.17)

In the domain:	vortex decay:	description:
v = c	within $\lambda/2\pi$	near-field zone
v < 1.618·c	only later	noise
v = 1.618·c	stability limit	direct conversion
v > 1.618·c	stable, no decay	neutrino radiation

=>In the ideal case at 1.618 times the speed of light at the stability limit, the natural and spontaneous conversion from vortex to wave and vice versa occurs.

=> Scalar wave antennas have their optimum degree of effectiveness in the Golden Proportion!

Fig. 29.9: ____ Derivation of the Golden Proportion from the fundamental field equation.

For larger velocities, as Tesla has produced already 100 years ago, the stability of the vortices, but also their biological effectiveness increases. From a high-frequency technical viewpoint this is the domain of the noise, the domain of instable oscillating noise vortices. From a biological and medical viewpoint especially here the answers should be sought to questions concerning the electromagnetic environmental compatibility. This domain stretches from $v = c$ to $v = 1.618*c$, the boundary case, where a spontaneous conversion of the wave into the vortex is possible. The Golden Proportion describes the stability limit, where the field vortices after they have been formed, don't decay anymore. From this velocity on the antenna resp. radiation source hasn't got a limited near-field zone anymore, since that now reaches to infinity. Only from this distinct velocity on I give the field vortices the name "neutrino".

29.9 The Golden Proportion

Whereas traditional antennas, which should emit electromagnetic waves, are optimized for signals with the speed of light, do scalar wave antennas have their optimum degree of effectiveness in the Golden Proportion. Thereby the goal of an emission of oscillating ring-like vortices is pursued. Vortices, which with a velocity of propagation of $v = 1.618 \cdot c$ remain stable and make possible a spatially unlimited transmission of energy and information by scalar waves.

The velocity of propagation v is calculated from the product of wavelength times frequency. $v = \lambda \cdot f$. If the frequency of a transmitter is prescribed, then the geometry of the transmitting antenna decides on the degree of effectiveness of the antenna and on how many parts of transverse waves are emitted in relation to longitudinal waves. In the case of a broadcast antenna usually λ or $\lambda/2$ is chosen. For a scalar wave however the optimum is reached with

$$\lambda_{vortex} = 1.618 \cdot \lambda_{wave} = 1.618 \cdot c/f. \qquad (29.20)$$

With that the electrotechnical problem becomes a geometrical one, if it concerns the use of scalar waves. Crucial is the antenna geometry, and the Golden Proportion provides the necessary constructional instruction. Were the buildings in antiquity, which were constructed according to the Golden Proportion, technical facilities for scalar waves[i]? Did the builders have physically explainable and mathematically provable guidelines? At this place, by the derivation of the Golden Proportion from the fundamental field equation, there arise completely new aspects for the judgement and interpretation of buildings especially from antiquity. If we have understood their way of functioning, then we will be able to learn much from that for our own future and for the future construction of scalar wave devices. Concluding the seminar we hence deal with antiquity.

ancient temple	=	short wave station
dedicated to one god	=	fixing of the frequency
supreme god Zeus, father of all gods	=	range of the short wave, all SW wave bands
priest, representative of the god	=	amateur radio operator, with licence to transmit
high priest	=	chief intendant
Pontifex Maximus, „topmost bridge builder"	=	chairman of the authority and the telegraph offices
oracle[i]	=	telegraphy receiver
runes, cuneiform writing	=	telegraphy symbols
metre, hexameter	=	increase of redundancy
oracle priest	=	telegraphy interpreter
tripod[ii]	=	reception key, electro-acoustical converter
looking at intestines, rite of sacrificing	=	reading off convulsions, electro-optical converter
temple books	=	news-notes
seer, who looks into the god world	=	amateur radio operator, at telegraphy reception
Homer	=	ancient radio reporter

Fig. 30.1: _____ Little dictionary for ancient radio engineering (1).

[i]: Lamer: Worterbuch der Antike, Kroner Verl. Bd.96 under "oracle" stands: „Lat. oraculum = site of speaking; particularly: site, where a god speaks; then: that, what the god says". According to the encyclopaedia oracle priests inspired by a god „simply were frauds, who lived of the ignorance of the public".

30. Scalar wave technology in antiquity

The end of the book about potential vortices and their propagation as a scalar wave shall form an impressive example, where as many of the derived wave aspects as possible have an effect. It shall be proven that already in antiquity radio engineering based on scalar waves has been used. The proof starts with a thesis.

30.1 Thesis:

The temples in antiquity all were short wave broadcasting stations. And energy from the field served as an energy source, so e.g. the earth radiation in the case of temples of terrestrial gods. In the case of the solar god the radiation of the sun was used, whereas for the temples, which were dedicated to the planetary gods, the neutrino radiation arriving from the planets served as an energy source.

If the temple was dedicated to a particular god, then the name of the god was representing the used frequency of the broadcasting company. The corresponding wavelength, resp. the respective god, understandably was "immortal".

Not so the broadcasting technicians on duty, who as human beings naturally were mortal, who took turns in the studio as members of the priest council and who merely had to impersonate the god Apollo, Poseidon etc. by the name of the broadcasting company, if they went on air. Only for the news editor Homer and for few of his colleagues we actually know the names of the persons behind the scenes.

In the temple books the texts have been recorded, which a god and its broadcasting company have received. The chosen metre served the easier detection and correction of transmission errors.

Here often a lot of fantasy was necessary, for which reason the reception facilities commonly were described as oracle[i]. The reception of the news as a rule took place on an altar. Thereby the direct effect of scalar waves on man e.g. in the case of the so-called temple sleep or the indirect influence on biological systems, e.g. on the intestines of slaughtered animals, was evaluated.

A further development of the telegraphy was the tripod technology[ii], in which case by turning of the polarization plane individual symbols and letters were transmitted up to the transmission of the spoken word with the help of a special wavelength modulation. That far the thesis reaches, which now should be proven.

[ii]: Lamer: Worterbuch der Antike, Kroner Verl. Bd.96 under "tripod" stands: „the tripod is a dedication gift to gods, a honorary gift for winners. That one pleased them with the gift of a cooking pot, is strange; one has tried to find the reason, but until now without success". In the encyclopaedia further is advised: „tripod as a means for spiritual insight?!"

godology	=	high frequency technology
god name	=	RDS, station identification
members of a	=	broadcasting studios of a
family of gods		broadcasting company
Pantheon,	=	extremely broadband
temple of all gods		FM broadcast station
crown	=	antenna netting
gifts for sacrificing	=	broadcasting fees
place of sacrificing	=	place of a node of
		the standing wave
earth radiation	=	power supply
homage of a	=	time restriction of the
weekday		operation of the station
Zeus „forges"	=	electrostatic blows, when
thunderbolts		a temple is oscillating
ritual act	=	technical provision
		for transmission and
		reception
Pythia of Delphi[i]	=	radio telephone operator,
		receptionist
Cella (marrow of temple)	=	tuned cavity
obelisk[ii]	=	antenna rod

Fig. 30.2: _____ Little dictionary for ancient radio engineering (2).

[i]: Lamer: Worterbuch der Antike, Kroner Verl. Bd.96, under „Pythia"(gr.=the asker): In the temple of Delphi was a chasm. A tripod was standing over it, on which the Pythia was seated, if she gave oracle. Comment: "It was flashy how odd the Pythia was sitting; inconveniently enough, on the cooking pot of the tripod. Ancient pictures, which show her that way, still weren't proven, that it was this way ..."

[ii]: Lamer: under „Obelisk" stands; „The obelisks probably were clocks".

30.2 Prerequisites

The argumentation has to be made on mathematical-physical foundation. The prerequisite for that are the 29 chapters of before. The following points could be demonstrated and derived:

1. The wave equation (inhomogeneous Laplace equation) describes the sum of two wave parts, where
2. every antenna emits both parts,
3. the transverse part, known as electromagnetic wave (Hertzian wave)
4. and the longitudinal part (Tesla radiation) termed scalar wave by the discoverer, better known as antenna noise.
5. The wave equation mathematically describes the connection of both wave parts in general and the conversion of one part into the other in particular, thus
6. the rolling up and unrolling of waves in field vortices (measurable as noise).
7. The transition takes place proportionally to the Golden Proportion, as resulted from the derivation (chapter 29.7 - 29.9)

With the last point the electrotechnical problem becomes a geometrical problem, if it concerns the use of scalar waves. The geometry of the antenna is crucial. Thereby the Golden Proportion provides the necessary direction for construction.
That justifies the assumption that the buildings in antiquity, which were built according to the Golden Proportion, were technical facilities for scalar waves. Maybe the builders had specifications that had physical reasons and could mathematically be proven.
At this place there result completely new aspects for judging and interpreting buildings especially from antiquity through the derivation of the Golden Proportion from the fundamental field equation. If we have understood their way of functioning, then we will be able to learn much from that for our own future and for the future construction of scalar wave devices.

As a further prerequisite for the ancient broadcasting technology enough field energy should be at disposal. We proceed from the assumption that

1. the earth magnetism and the cosmic neutrino radiation are tightly hanging together by the processes in earth's core,
2. the earth magnetism in antiquity verifiably was approx. thousandfold stronger than today (proven by gauging of pieces of broken pot),
3. as a consequence the neutrino radiation in antiquity as well must have been thousandfold stronger and
4. the cosmic neutrino radiation has served the transmitting plants of antiquity as an energy carrier,

any thought is absurd to reject the technical function of a temple only because it today can't be reproduced anymore. The artistic and aesthetical viewpoints, which are put into the foreground by art historians because of ignorance about the true function, rather are secondary.

The terms used to describe the broadcasting technology in antiquity in the last 2000 years have experienced a shift of meaning, so that a translation in our linguistic usage of today is necessary. The adjacent dictionary should help in that case.
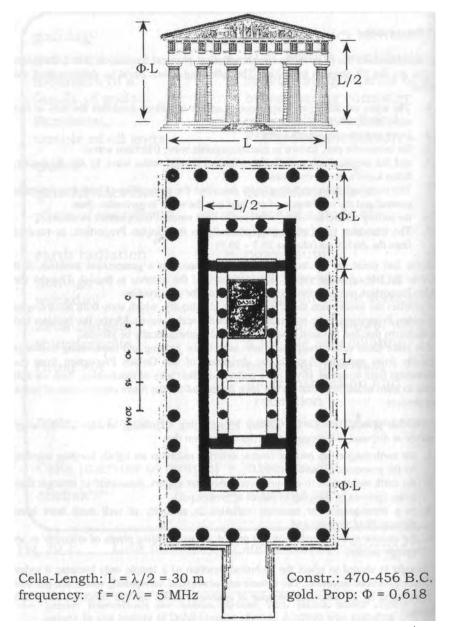
Fig. 30.3: The Golden Proportion of Zeus-temple in Olympia.[i]

Cella-Length: L = λ/2 = 30 m   Constr.: 470-456 B.C.
frequency: f = c/λ = 5 MHz   gold. Prop: Φ = 0,618

<i>: K. Schefold: Die Griechen und ihre Nachbarn, Propylaen Kunstgeschichte Berlin Bd. 1, Abbildungen von Seite 249

30.3 Approach

Let's to some extent proceed from the knowledge of textbook physics currently present in high frequency engineering and give a well trained engineer the following task, which he should solve systematically and like an engineer: He should build a transmitter with maximum range at minimum transmitting power, thus a classic task of optimization. Doing so, the material expenditure doesn't play a role!

After mature deliberation the engineer will hit upon it that only one solution exists: He decides on a telegraphy transmitter at the long wave end of the short wave band, at f = 3 MHz, which corresponds to a wavelength of $\lambda = 100$ m. There less than 1 Watt transmitting power is enough for a radio communication once around the earth. That also has something to do with the conditions of reflection of the radio waves at the ionosphere. Our engineer learned:

$$n = \sqrt{1 - K \cdot N / f^2} \qquad (30.1)$$

the index of refraction

with:
K= $80.5 * 10^{-6}$ [cm^3/sec^2] (= constant)

N = electron concentration [electrons/cm^3]

f = frequency of the transmitter [MHz]

Put into words: the refraction of a radio wave in the range of the short waves is the larger, the smaller the frequency is. The end of the short wave range is reached at 3 MHz. That thus explains the choice of frequency.

And he optimises further. Next the engineer remembers that at high frequencies, e.g. for microwave radiators, not cables but waveguides are used, since these make possible a considerable better degree of effectiveness. In the case of the waveguide the stray fields are reduced by an alignment and concentration of the fields in the inside of the conductor. In the case of antennas however the fields scatter to the outside and cause considerable stray losses. He draws the conclusion that his transmitter should be built as a tuned cavity and not as an antenna!

As a result the engineer puts a building without windows in the countryside with the enormous dimensions of 50 m length (=λ/2) and 25 m (=λ/4) resp. 12.5 m (=λ/8) width. The height he calculates according to the Golden Proportion to increase the scalar wave part. Those approximately are the dimensions of the Cella without window of Greek temples.

For the operation of such a transmitter in antiquity apparently the noise power of the cosmic radiation was sufficient, which arrived at the earth starting from the sun and the planets. By increasing the floor space also the collected field energy and the transmitting power could be increased, so that also from the perspective of the power supply the temple with the largest possible wavelength at the same time promised the largest transmitting power, so at least in antiquity.

Our engineer further determines, that he will switch the carrier frequency on and off at a predetermined clock pulse. Thus he decides for radiotelegraphy. The advantage of this technique is a maximum increase of the reception range. For that the signals at the transmitter have to be coded and at the receiver again deciphered. By means of the encryption of the contents these are accessible only to the „insiders", who know the code; prerequisite for the emerging of hermetism and eventually a question of power!
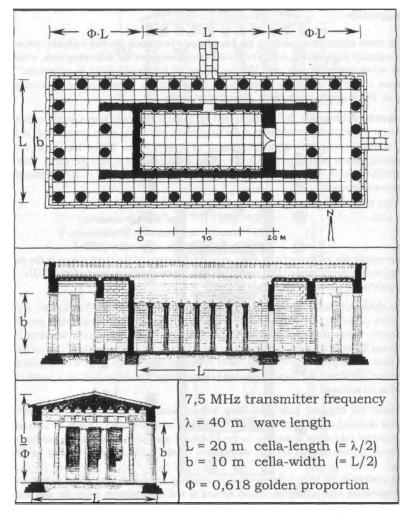
Fig. 30.4: Example Tegea, temple of Athena Alea.[i]
Built 350/340 B.C.

[i]: G. Gruben: Die Tempel der Griechen, Wissenschaftliche Buchgesellschaft Darmstadt 1986, 4. Aufl. Seite 130

[ii]: E. Horst: Konstantin der Grosse, Eine Biographie, Classen Verlag 1985 Dusseldorf, 2.Aufl., S. 89.

[iii]: E. Horst: Konstantin der Grosse, Eine Biographie, Classen Verlag 1985 Dusseldorf, 2,Aufl., S. 33.

30.4 Circumstantial evidence

Not everyone, somehow participating in send receive engineering, at the same time also was inaugurated in the entire secret knowledge. Most priests only knew as much as they necessarily needed to know to fulfill their tasks. Thus a temple priest, who was presented an enciphered text and who should bring this on the air, not necessarily at the same time needed to know the content of the text or the code. The same of course also was valid for the sacrificing priest acting in the receiving station. The Vestal virgins for instance had to present the received text to the Augures, by whom they were supervised and controlled.

But who wanted to introduce a new god in the gods heaven and perhaps even himself be worshipped as a god, should have complete command of both the broadcasting technique and the reception technique. In ancient Egypt the Pharao at least once a year had to prove, that he still was in command of the technique. Otherwise he was replaced. For a person with security clearance that at the same time was a death sentence.

In the historical facts numerous pieces of circumstantial evidence can be found, which can be considered to be evidence for the thesis of the operation of send receive engineering in antiquity. One now perhaps understands, why the rulers were put an antenna netting over their head, a so-called crown, or why the Augures could survey the land with a flat Tesla coil in their hands (fig. 16.10).

Direct evidence is present as well. It can be found in ancient texts. But it is questionable if historical texts concerning ancient radio engineering have been translated correctly. The talk is about oracles, mystery cult and earth prophesy if the receiver is meant. The predominantly technically uneducated historians attest the Romans a defective sense of time, because their couriers surely could not cover the long ways across the Roman empire so fast at all, if they read in the Latin texts: "They sent by courier to the emperor in Rome and got for answer...". The answer of the emperor namely already arrived at the squad at the latest in the following night. The correct translation should read: "they cabled" or "they broadcasted to the emperor in Rome and got for answer..."[ii].

Such a big empire as the Roman Empire actually only could be reined by means of an efficient communication. Cicero coined the word: "We have conquered the peoples of the earth owing to our broadcasting technology...[iii]"! The term broadcasting technology from ignorance is translated with piety. If engineers however rework the incorrect translations, then one will discover that numerous texts tell of the broadcasting technology, that thus correspondingly much direct evidence exists concerning the practical use of this technology.

For the Roman military transmitters, which formed the backbone of the administration of the empire, the reading off of the information from observations of nature like the bird flight or from felt signals of a geomanter was too unreliable. They read off the information from the rhythm of the convulsions of the intestines of freshly slaughtered animals. In the case of the dead animals on the altar every extrinsic influence was excluded. But the enormous need of slaughter cattle was a disadvantage. Who wanted to have information, first of all had to bring along an animal, which then was „sacrificed" the god, or better say, which was abused as a receiver for a particular transmitter. Thereby the innards served as a biosensor and as a receiver for the news.

Cellular phone.
- *Network:*   All „telephone cabins" are transmitter and receiver at the same time.
- *Advantage:*   Anyone can communicate with every network participant.
- *Characteristic:*   The stations are strikingly similar in form and size of building.
- *Power structure:* All stations as a rule have equal rights among each other.
- *Disadvantage:*   Innovations hardly are possible. The system is inflexible.
- *Examples:*   Temple towers (Iraq); cellular phone network.

Broadcasting.
- *Network:*   Many receivers listen to the news of one powerful transmitter.
- *Advantage:*   The system is very flexible and permanently experiences improvements.
- *Characteristic:*   Monotheism. Big diversity among the receiver constructions.
- *Power structure:* Central power concentrated in the hands of the chief intendant.
- *Disadvantage:*   Feedback from receiver to transmitter is not desired.
- *Examples:*   God Ammun Re (Egypt); ABC daily news.

Dispatch service.
- *Network:*   Network of broadcast stations supplies an agency (receiver) with information.
- *Advantage:*   Optimal financing, since information is given away only for broadcasting fees in cash.
- *Characteristic:*   Treasury stores have to be built because of the immense riches.
- *Power structure:* The power is concentrated in the hands of the receiver-agency.
- *Disadvantage:*   In the case of overcharge or overload a system crash is impending.
- *Examples:*   Pythia (Delphi); German Press Agency (dpa).

Fig. 30.5: _____ Three radio technical network structures, with an example from antiquity and from present time.

30.5 Radio technical concepts

In planning and constructing radio technical networks only a few possible concepts exist. It is interesting that at least one historical example can be specified for every concept. That shows that all possibilities were tried at least once. The three most important concepts are presented here:

A. Cellular phone.

Every bigger city between Euphrates and Tigris, which thought the world of itself, had at its disposal already in antiquity a temple tower. Such a temple tower was a „telephone cabin" in the form of a pyramid as a transmitter and a receiver temple at the top, to where the receptionist adjourned to the so-called temple sleep. Discipline was required, since all the time only one priest was allowed to broadcast. All others could listen to him doing so. If he was ready, he closed his contribution with a fixed symbol or term („over"), and the next one could continue. This is a classic link-up, where anyone communicates with every network participant.

The stations all were strikingly similar in form and size of building, like one phone box resembles another. In that way a further development of the cellular phone system hardly was possible and that has a technical reason, as the building of a tower in Babylon has shown us. This tower namely had gotten the ambitious builders too big, so that the frequency of the Mesopotamian radio network had been left and instead a foreign network could be received, the code of which no-one could understand. The result was a confusion of language and the order to stop the building.

B. Broadcasting.

Millions of TV spectators every evening look in the ABC news or another daily journal of a TV Channel. In the case of broadcasting thus many receivers listen to the news of a powerful transmitter. With that the whole plenitude of power is concentrated in the hands of the chief intendant. In antiquity he called himself high priest. If he went on the air, he used the logo of the god that he had to represent. Today the logo of the broadcasting company is shown in a corner of the TV screen. Even this very day feedback from the receiver to the transmitter hardly is possible contingent on principle. The problems with nationally controlled broadcasting, with politics controlled by the media all are not new. The monotheism in ancient Egypt with the claim of lordship of the main god Ammun Re is an example from antiquity.

C. Dispatch service.

In ancient Greece the technical structures and with that also the power structures had been turned around. At that time a big network of broadcast stations, which continually was extended by a policy of settlement ordered by the gods, supplied a central and correspondingly powerful agency with information per radio.

Who wanted up to date news, could call for these in the agency with seat in Delphi, but he had to pay for it. To accommodate the broadcasting fees in form of gold and gifts whole treasury stores had to be built. Measured by the commercial success the ancient news network has remained unmatched, and can't be compared with pay-TV or todays dispatch services, like dpa. If the network however becomes too big, uncontrollable and it lacks discipline, then it sometime will crack and the system crashes.
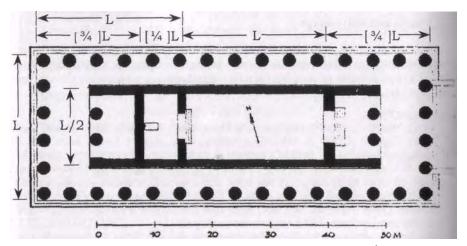
Fig. 30.6 A: Hera-temple of Selinunt 460-450 B.C.[i]
                       (Corresp. to the plans of the Roman architect Vitruvius)
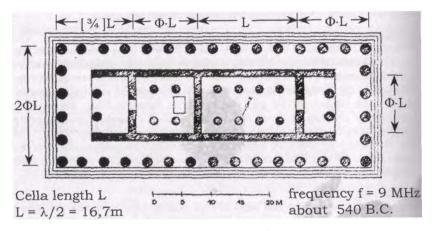
Fig. 30.6 B: Apollo-temple of Korinth[i]
                       (Alternative interpretation, use of the Golden Proportion Φ).

<i>: K.Schefold: Die Griechen und ihre Nachbarn, Propylaen Kunstgeschichte Berlin Bd. 1, Abbildungen von Seite 241, 250

<ii>: Vitruvius (Marcus Vitruvius Pollio): Zehn Bucher uber Architektur, Ubers. von Dr. K. Fensterbusch, Wissenschaftl. Buchges. Darmstadt 1987, 4. Aufl., 3. Buch, 1. Kap.: Von den Symmetrien der Tempel, Seite 137

<iii>: Vitruvius (dito), 4.book, 4.Chap.: Vom Tempelinnern und dem Pronaon, p. 187

30.6 Wireless telegraphy

Radio engineering 100 years ago also started with telegraphy. Thereby the high frequency carrier is switched on and off. With this technique Marconi succeeded in a radio transmission over the English Channel (1899) and over the Atlantic Ocean (1901).
As next step the amplitude modulation (AM) followed. Thereby the HF-carrier is overlapped with the low-frequency signal of a sound carrier in such a way, that the amplitude fluctuates on the beat of the LF-signal. As a disadvantageous effect, also noise signals will overlap, from which the quality of reception will suffer.
Only the frequency modulation (FM), where the LF-signal is transmitted as temporal fluctuation of the frequency, brings an improvement. The annoying amplitude noise hence has no effect in the case of FM.
It easily can be recognized, how the development of the modulation techniques follows the urge for technical improvement and optimization. That in antiquity hasn't been different, for which reason the progress of development took place in the same order.
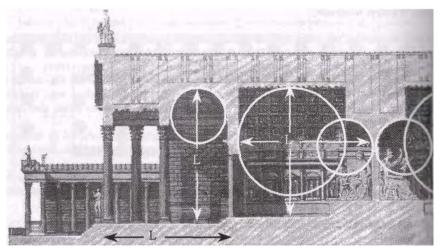
The broadcasting technology of the ancient gods started with the wireless telegraphy. This is expressed in the architecture. Since electric resonant circuits or other frequency determining equipment weren't at the disposal of the engineers in antiquity, the determination and allocation of the broadcasting channels had to take place by means of the wavelength. The formation of a standing wave in the Cella, the innermost sanctuary of a temple, occurs if its length corresponds to half the wavelength of the HF-carrier. The Roman architect Vitruvius calls the wavelength the ,,basic measure", from which results "the system of the symmetries". He writes: ,,The design of the temples bases on symmetry, to which laws the architects should adhere meticulously. "[ii]. ,,The length of the temple is partitioned in such a way that the width is equal to half the length, the Cella itself including the wall, which contains the door, is one fourth longer than wide. The remaining three fourths, which form the Pronaon, should protrude until the antae of the wall and the antae should have the thickness of the pillars"[iii].
If we recalculate ourselves, then the partitioning in 3/4 to 5/4 produces a proportion, which conies quite close to the Golden Proportion. In building a temple nothing is left to chance, after all it concerns the construction of a tuned cavity, capable of self-resonant oscillations with favourable emission behaviour.
From the outside one can't see if a telegraphy transmitter has been changed over to speech transmission with AM. The HF-carrier merely isn't switched off anymore, i.e. the priests let the temple oscillate without interruption. Newly added for AM is an electroacoustic coupling. For that many temples were retrofitted with a mouthpiece. Newly built AM transmitter temples conclude the Cella with a round apse. Because of this acoustically conditioned construction the Cella length didn't have a fixed value anymore and the transmission frequency had become variable. Measured in the middle of the apse the wavelength was larger than at the sides, so that on the beat of the spoken word not only the amplitude of the field distribution in the interior of the temple, but in addition also the frequency of the selfresonant oscillation was changed.
A typical example of such an architectonic hybrid form of AM and FM is situated in Rome. Because due to the frequency variation more than only one wave band was occupied and the temple consistently carries the names of two deities. It is the temple of Venus and Roma.

Diameter bigger circle D_1= 22 m (6,8 MHz),
small circle D_2 = 11 m; und L = D_1 + 1/2 D_2 = 27,5 m (5,5 MHz)

Fig, 30.7:   Temple of Venus and Roma; Rome 136/37 A.D.[i,ii]

<i>:   A. Springer: Das Altertum, A. Kroner Verl. Leipzig 1915, 10. Aufl., S. 518
<ii>: T. Kraus: Das romische Weltreich, Propylaen Kunstgesch. Berlin Bd. 2, S. 161
<iii>: Lamer: Worterbuch der Antike, Kroner Verl. Bd.96 unter "Tempel", Haufigkeit

30.7 AM temple technology

The low-frequency signal (LF), which should be transmitted by a transmitter with amplitude modulation, lies in the range between 16 Hz and 16 kHz. If it only concerns the transmission of speech information, then the bandwidth can be reduced to 300 to 3000 Hz. In the case of mixing the low-frequency useful signal with the HF-carrier, thus in the case of the modulation of the carrier in the rhythm of the LF, two side bands arise. These lie close to the carrier frequency and are formed from this once by the addition and once by the subtraction with the frequency of the LF-signal. Let's take the temple of Venus and Roma with a transmission frequency of 6.8 MHz. If sound of 3 kHz should be transmitted clearly understandable, then the dimensions of the Cella had to be varied for just 8 mm for a corresponding Cella length of $\lambda/2$ = 22 m. As a curiosity the niches in the side walls in the case of this temple however allow a considerably larger bandwidth of more than 10% instead of the necessary 0.04% in the case of AM.

In the case of the Greek originals, the Cella however has smooth walls, from which follows that the temples were designed ideally narrow band. The Greeks apparently operated predominantly telegraphy transmitters, for which the side bands coincide with the carrier.

The argumentation indeed has remained unchanged: The modulator being narrow band and simple to realize speak in favour of the telegraphy being the "original form" of all modulation techniques. Also the rediscovery of the broadcasting technology by Heinrich Hertz succeeded as telegraphy signal. In addition the range is bigger than for any signal modulated with sound frequency.

As the calculation example has shown, also pure AM transmitters work very narrow band, and this is particularly important for low transmission frequencies, if many transmitters want to use the favoured SW band between 3 and 10 MHz at the same time. With AM one thus accommodates the maximum number of broadcasting channels in a particular frequency range, for instance the 80-meter band, without these interfering with each other too much. But that also was badly needed. Conclusions about the everyday life of broadcasting in antiquity by all means are possible because of the enormous number of temple installations, which logically were permanently used. Only in Rome there existed up to 200 temples[iii]!

Who goes in search of broadcasting stations with a modern short wave receiver, for instance in the 80 m band between the countless telegraphy transmitters, fast gets an idea of what had been up in the air already 2000 years ago. No ancient city would build several temples on a single Acropolis, if only one single one could have been used. All temples broadcasted with each time another carrier frequency because of different dimensions. For this reason the temples, which stood side by side, as a rule were dedicated different gods. An acknowledgement, "the air just being free", in addition hardly was possible, because of the often-found spatial distance between the temple installations and the respective oracle. Between the transmitter of the god Apollo in Didyma and the receiver, the oracle of Milet, for example lie approx. 20 kilometres. The only possible conclusion is that in antiquity there was broadcasted on all channels simultaneously regardless of other gods and their transmission frequencies. As is well-known there rather prevailed a situation of competition between the gods, since like today a large number of listeners meant great importance, influence and power and eventually also worship, more gifts and more receipts from broadcasting fees.
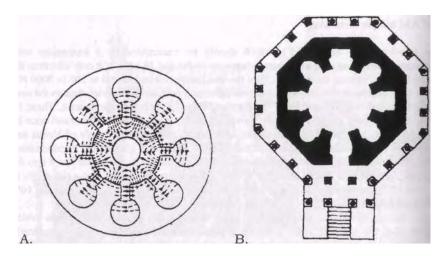
Fig. 30.8: _____ Comparison of a magnetron (A), a microwave radio tube[i] and the temple (B) in the palace of the emperor Diokletian, Split.[ii]
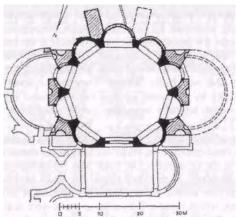
Fig. 30.8.C: Temple of Minerva Medica, Rome, 320 A.D.[ii]

[i]:   K. Simonyi: Physikalische Elektronik, 8.4 Das Magnetron, S. 665

[ii]:   T. Kraus: Das rom. Weltreich, Propylaen Kunstgesch. Bd. 2, S. 194, 196

[iii]: If one however wants to verify this, in antiquity already common manner of PM broadcasting technology, then we need a broadband short wave receiver with phase-demodulator. With such a receiver even today any time a conclusive argumentation should be possible that this sort of SW-PM technology actually works.

30.8 Modulation of acoustic signals

In the case of sound it in essence concerns longitudinal waves, which propagate in all directions in space with the velocity of sound. But this merely is an average velocity, since the air molecules strictly speaking oscillate with the sound frequency in the direction of propagation. In this way the velocity of sound one time is increased and the next moment to the corresponding extent reduced. If the molecules already carry out oscillations of themselves, e.g. thermal motion, then both oscillations overlap; i.e. the motion of itself is modulated with the sound frequency.

Following the here presented derivation potential vortices are formed in every dielectric, thus also in air, and these are modulated if overlapped with sound waves. Vortices however do not form a distinct frequency, but entirely on the contrary a uniform frequency mixture in the form of white noise.

The overlap thus also is noise unless certain noise frequencies are favoured. This can be effected by means of a spatial body tuned to a certain wavelength. To be considered are cuboid cavities, as in the case of Greek temples or waveguides and cylindrical objects as in the case of round temples or magnetrons. The building form causes the favouring of a certain   frequency   and   the   integer   harmonic   frequencies   belonging   to   it. If this frequency now lies in the high frequency range, then it is emitted by the spatial body as an electromagnetic wave, in the case of waveguides and resonant circuits for reason of the small dimensions as microwave radiation and in the case of the Greek temples as short wave radiation. If one in addition produces an acoustic signal in the frequency determining spatial body, then this signal automatically will modulate the high-frequency signal.

The result of the modulation is the overlapping of the sound wave with the high-frequency carrier wave. The change of the active length, thus the wavelength of the HF-carrier causes a change of frequency. Such a change on the beat of the sound frequency is called FM (frequency modulation). For that we imagine a spatial body being excited because of its length by potential vortices to a high-frequency oscillation at the self-resonant frequency.

From flow dynamics is known, how easy the distribution of vortices in space can be disturbed. Already words spoken in space are able to influence the potential vortices, which in the case of the temples were used as energy carrier. The longitudinal sound waves reflected at and thus returning from the Cella wall rigid for sound of a Greek temple will push these potential vortices back on the beat of the sound and with that shorten the active length. This means, that the carrier frequency is modulated with the sound frequency. The carrier oscillation thus permanently changes its phase on the beat of the sound signal, for which reason this particular kind of modulation is described as PM, as phase modulation.

Nowadays PM is used only seldom and in the SW-range not at all because of the big need of wave bandwidth. Merely at higher frequencies PM occasionally is used in radiotelephony. In the case of the frequency modulation usual in broadcasting (e.g. UHF), the change of frequency takes place on the beat of the sound amplitude and not of the sound frequency as with PM. Therefore it is not possible to receive phase modulated signals, which are produced by means of the acoustic coupling of appropriately formed spatial bodies[iii] with commercial FM receivers.
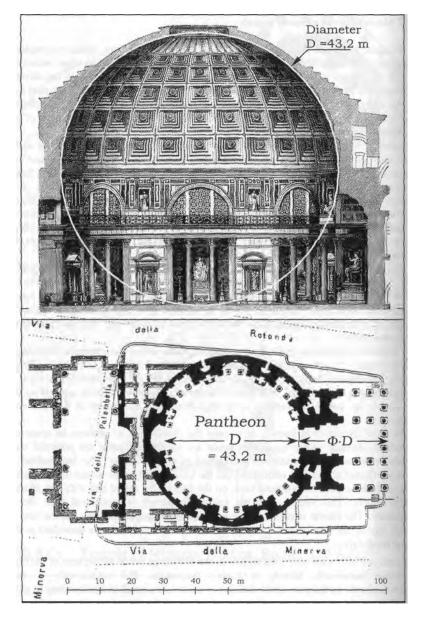
Fig. 30.9:   The Pantheon in Rome, the „temple of all
gods".[i]
Diameter   D   =   43,2   m,   Golden   Proportion: Φ= 0.618
Pronaon-(atrium-)length: Φ·D=   0.618   •   43.2   =   26.7   m
Built under emperor Hadrian 118/ 119-125/128 A.D.

30.9 Broadband FM broadcasting technology

If I speak against a flat wall, then every point on the wall has another distance to my mouth. The sound waves thus aren't reflected simultaneously, what leads to big modulation distortions. Therefore the sound wall should be curved in such a way, that all signal paths are the same length (barrel vault, apse, etc.). In the case of point sound sources there results as an optimum a hemisphere, for instance a dome. The building hence even today tells us, which frequency and which modulation method had been put to use. The architecture of sacral buildings, e.g. pointed arch or round arch, thus hardly has been a question of aesthetics.

For his temple of Venus and Roma designed by himself emperor Hadrian had to listen to severe criticism among others of Apollodor of Damascus. The temple was too broadband for an AM transmitter, however with a modulation depth of just 11 percent not broadband enough for a phase modulated FM transmitter.

Emperor Hadrian however also had the courage to build midst in Rome a temple calculated completely new and designed as a pure FM transmitter, the Pantheon, which means temple of all gods. In the language of the technician it is a transmitter for all frequencies.

This domed structure indeed doesn't leave out one single frequency. With a modulation depth of almost 100 percent it is designed for maximum loudness. With that the Pantheon uses all available frequencies, for which reason the name temple of all gods really is no exaggeration. Into the Pantheon exactly fits a sphere with a diameter of 43.2 meter. That corresponds to a minimum frequency of 3.47 MHz, situated in the range of the short waves. The floor however is not domed, but horizontal. That, up to the basis of the dome, results in exactly half the height and a maximum frequency of 6.94 MHz.

The construction ensures that between the simple and the double diameter any desired wavelength can be produced. Above the given maximum frequency of the basic oscillation the harmonic waves, which are produced as well and can't be avoided at all, are attached without a break. These occupy the wave bands up to the double, triple, quadruple frequency and so forth.

For this and only for this reason a maximum frequency was chosen, which corresponds to exactly the double value of the minimum frequency. The operation takes place to the limit, where the transmitter would interfere with itself, in the way that the used basic oscillation would overlap its own harmonic waves. That then sounds like two people talking at the same time. The voices would be distorted out of recognition, as can't be expected else in the range of the harmonic waves.

The Pantheon has been planned and built as a phase modulated basic wave transmitter according to purely academic rules of Hadrian. The temple impressively demonstrates the precise engineering detailed knowledge of the Pontifex Maximus and his broadcasting priests in ancient Rome[ii].

<i>:   A. Springer: Die Kunst des Altertums, A. Kroner Verl. Leipzig 1915, 10. Aufl., S. 517/518, daraus: die Zeichnungen ram Pantheon in Rom, 115-125 n.Chr.

<ii>: The collection of material concerning scalar wave technology here is aborted and continued in an own book in narrative and with that easier to read writing style. The title is: "Broadcasting Gods".

approach	derivation	result
b:= postulate [potential vortices Vol.1]	what if **b** ≠ 0 ?	**derivation** of the **Schrödinger eq.**
duality vortices replace quanta [potential vortices Vol.2]	from **H** ⇔ **E** from **j** ⇔ **b** [and chapter 3.3]	**calculation** of the **quantum** **properties** [potential vortices V.2]
causality [see chap. 3]	<u>gen.</u> ⇔ special case **field** ⇔ quanta cause ⇔ consequence (instead of: quanta ⇔ field)	vortex field free of quanta (instead of: irrotational field of quanta)
vortex physics analogous to flow dynamics [chap. 3.4 - 3.5]	**vortex + anti-** **vortex** (Demokrit/cosmology) [chap. 3.6 + 27.2]	coming off of vortices if $\tau_1 = \tau_2$ **model of atom** [chap. 5.5 + 5.8]
equations of **transformation:** **E** = **v** x **B** **H** = - **v** x **D** [chap.6.5 + 27.8]	for **E**(**r**(t)) and for **H**(**r**(t)): rot **E** = rot (**v** x **B**) rot **H** = rot (**D** x **v**) [chap. 27.9]	extended **field** **equations:** rot **E** = -**b** -∂**B**/∂t rot **H** = **j** + ∂**D**/∂t [chap. 27.10]
equations of **transformation:** **E** = **v** x **B** **H** = - **v** x **D** [s.a. chap. 16.1]	**wave equation** inhom. Laplace eq. Δ**E** = grad div **E** − rot rot **E** Δ**E** = $(1/c^2) \cdot \partial^2 \mathbf{E}/\partial t^2$ [chap. 27.13] [chap.22.4]	transverse + longitudinal wave parts: **scalar waves,** noise, etc.
equations of **transformation:** [chap. 28]	vortex overlap **length measures** **depending on field**	**gravitation,** **temperature,** theory of objectivity

Fig. 30.10:   (All) Many roads lead to Rome.

30.10 Epilogue

The preparation for a seminar or a lecture always starts with a collection of material. This should be considerably more detailed than the material to be communicated, since it doesn't get well at the students and also other participants, if the state of knowledge of the lecturer already is exhausted with the scope of his lecture. For this reason the collection of material must also include alternative derivations and areas of knowledge, which thematically rather are marginal, about which mustn't be reported, which possibly not even can bear criticism but still are in the public discussion. For a collection of material, which wants to be considered to be comprehensive and complete, it is important that no area and no theme has been overlooked.

The here presented collection of material with its 650 pages has become correspondingly voluminous. After all the material has been collected over an 8 year period and has been strung into the book in the order of working. That of course complicates reading the book, because individual aspects are repeated several times, but often also in a different context and each time lighted from another side. If the reader somewhere has the feeling, he only has turned in a circle, then has deceived himself. He indeed moves spirally in a circle, like in real life, but he doesn't come out there, where he started. After one turn he is richer with the experience of this spiral turn. In whole science the advancement takes place as a spiral movement and one can count oneself fortunate, as long as the spiral has an ascending slope! This notion should solace the reader, who has undertaken the torture to work through the complete collection of material.

Students also have reported, they had devoured my book like a thriller and a colleague, who had acquired it at a conference in Switzerland, was digging so much in the lecture that he forgot to get off the train timely.

It is a special concern to give reasons for the necessity of an extension of available field theory. To achieve this goal several derivations (fig. 30.10) can be found in my books: from a postulate, from causality, from duality, from vortex physics, from the equations of transformation, etc. added are at least a dozen derivations of other authors from various publications, who at most are cited. With that the goal is pursued that all approaches, which are conceivable and worth discussing, can be put side by side and tested for their efficiency.

Since it isn't the task of a collection of material to answer this question, this must be done by the hearer resp. the reader of the books. He is prompted to find the answer himself! That leads to an intense contention with the theme and that exactly is the reason for the otherwise rather unusual step to make a collection of material open to the public. Objections and criticism of the content of a relation of matters or also only of the representation of the context is wished explicitly. This also isn't valued as criticism of the author or of the superordinated set of difficulties, which in principle isn't possible at all for a collection of material.

Honorary functions of

Prof. Dr.-Ing. Konstantin Meyl

President
of the **Society for the Advantage of Physics** e.V.
(Gesellschaft zur Förderung der wissenschaftlichen
Physik, Köln)

Präsident
der **Europäischen Kommission interdisziplinärer
Wissenschaften**, Hechingen,
Gesellschaft freier Wissenschaftler, Forscher und Praktiker
(Schirmherrin: Herzogin Margarete zu Mecklenburg,
Prinzessin von Hohenzollern).

Zweiter Vorsitzender im Vorstand
der Deutschen Gesellschaft für Energetische und
Informationsmedizin e.V.,
D.G.E.I.M, Stuttgart

Vice President
in „The **German Association for Space Energy**",
(**DVR**, Deutsche Vereinigung für Raumenergie,
Hannover)

Wissenschaftlicher Beirat
im **VDE** Schwarzwald-Baar-Heuberg
im Bezirksverein Südbaden, Freiburg

TZ-Leiter
vom 1. **Transferzentrum** für Skalarwellentechnik
im Technologiezentrum von 78112 St. Georgen
im Schwarzwald

Fig. 30.11: Honorary functions of the author (December 2003, selection).

There in principle is no necessity at all to discuss with everybody a collection of material, which I have compiled exclusively for own events. It is absolutely sufficient, if few, but then qualified experts have thoughts about the content and communicate them to me. They can feel certain that I don't hand down their judgement to other persons. For that I also have been blamed by ignorant colleagues, who in complete self-overestimation have the opinion, they should be informed about everything. Right is rather, that my private correspondence is of no concern to anybody, since I find it important that as much readers as possible express themselves frank, what only functions, if they can feel certain that they afterwards won't be involved in public mud-wrestling. Therefore I keep still as regards other persons however curious they might be.

Indeed over and over again pseudo scientists turn up, who have the erroneous opinion that scientific arguments would take place on some internet-forums, where one can descant at will and anonymous, hidden behind an alias, where the intellectual firebug can feel safe, not afterwards being blamed for his crimes.

No, science takes place entirely different. A new theory will be able to establish, if it is right and important and if it is used for practical uses. Losers are those authors of a theory, for the elaboratation of which nobody is interested. What does a publication in a journal, however renowned, mean, if nobody reads it and nobody needs it? Most new ideas and approaches go under without notice in today's flood of publications, for who has got the time to read all essays in full?

Desperate they turn to me hoping, at least I could understand their concern. I then invite these scientists to a congress of the „Society for the Advantage of Physics", of which I am the president and offer them a forum, where they are able to present their ideas to an expert public. Not all lectured ideas prove to be sound, but not seldom a physical concern, which should be taken very serious, is behind it.

For a long time the real scientific controversy doesn't take place anymore at the universities and their congresses, where hardly someone dares to lecture arguments against the convention. Too fast he would be expelled as outlaw from the honourable society. From time to time however also from these circles colleagues dare anonymously or privately, as they emphasize, into the alternative events of lobbies or clubs, to astonished find out that real science there still is practised and that there is discussed about ideas, which they have given up thinking or have forbidden themselves to think about. The employment activity, so they excuse their thinking prohibition, allegedly doesn't allow it.
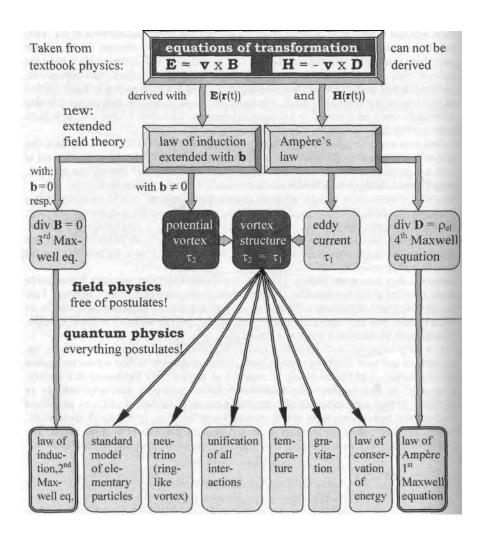
Fig. 30.12:   Derivations of postulates and axioms (part 1).

Be that as it may, the approaches and derivations contained in my collection of material are considered to be controversial, and that is good that way! The public takes notice and professional circles are occupied with the ideas. With that half the way to success already is brought off! It now concerns to knock off all points for their soundness individually, because the next step will be to search a way to the goal as unassailable as possible, which is able to convince also the biggest sceptic. The final version, which then should appear in accredited peer-reviewed journals and in a scientific book concerning the theory of objectivity, goes in this direction. From the numerous approaches in the end only one will be used, and from the countless, in the collection of material listed aspects only the noncontentious ones will remain.

The dispute, which in the current stage can't be avoided, yes even is desired, however shouldn't deceive about the fact that it here doesn't concern persons, improper vanity or some image cultivation, but simply and solely concerns the matter!

In fig. 30.12 and 30.13 is represented, what it concerns. Field physics and quantum physics don't form, as in common practise, an insurmountable opposite, but even complement each other! Below the stripline a little selection of the today in current use quantum physical postulates can be found. The number of newly introduced „constants of nature" and postulates permanently is increasing, a circumstance, which hardly can be mediated to the common sense. The bracket is missing, which interlinks all postulates, or the common source from which they can be derived causally.

In the progress of the three-part edition in this question, essential for physics, already a satisfying and in addition real efficient answer has been found in the domain of field physics. The coupling marked by individual derivations can be found above the stripline and it is entirely new, apart from the dashed indicated derivation (fig. 30.13), as given by Prof. Bosse (TU Darmstadt) in his textbook.

An approach in principle can be chosen freely. In the case of the superordinated field theory two equations of transformation form the approach, which already is laid down in textbooks and secured experimentally. That's why the whole field theoretical derivation manages without one postulate! It is pointed to the fact that these equations on their part can't be derived and should be interpreted rather philosophically than physically. From this approach the extended field theory is derived directly, without a need to add or discard a term. The extended field theory consists of the well-known law of Ampere extended with the dielectric displacement D by Maxwell, and of Faraday's law of induction, which experiences an extension with the vector of potential density b by means of the derivation. Doing so we assume that the field pointers of the electric and the magnetic field strength depend on the spatial coordinate r and through this indirectly also on the time t: $E(r(t))$, $H(r(t))$.

Taken from
textbook physics:

equations of transformation
E = v x B   **H = - v x D**

can not be
derived

derived with   **E(r**(t)**)**   and   **H(r**(t)**)**

new:
extended
field theory
Meyl: **b**
(without
postulate!)

| law of induction extended with **b** | Ampère's law |

extended
by
Maxwell: **D**

derived with   **E(r**,t**)**   and   **H(r**,t**)**

new:

world equation: **fundamental field equation**

derivation of Prof. Bosse

field physics
free of postulates!

quantum physics
everything postulates!

| wave-equation | law of induc-tion | law of Ampère | | Klein-Gordon equation | Sturm-Liouville equation | Schrö-dinger equation |

Laplace   Maxwell's field eq.
                 of charged particles

| scalar wave, (Tesla) longi-tudinal | el.magn. wave, (Hertz) trans-verse | eddy currents | potential vortex | basic eq. of nuclear physics | chaos theory | basic equation of quantum physics + chemistry |

vortex structures

Fig. 30.13:   Derivations of postulates and axioms (part 2).

If the somewhat more general case is counted up, in which case apart from the spatial a direct temporal dependency is present (E(r,t) and H(r,t)). then further additional terms appear in addition to the extended field equations, which need an explanation also for the case that they are zero. The physical interpretation would implicate a longer treatise, which however can be circumvented, as shown here, by constraining the field pointers, which absolutely is allowed according to the slogan: for the case E(r(t)) and H(r(t)) chosen from many possibilities the extended field equations come out exactly in the form, as they are required and suitable for the further calculations. Who has got to calculate other cases, can do that as he likes, but doing so he should not get lost. Maxwell's field equations are contained in the solution and with that also continue to be valid. Their disadvantage however is that without the extension b not a single quantum physical postulate can be derived. If we add this extension and insert the equations into each other without addition and without cuts also this time a central solution is the result, which is called fundamental field equation.

The derivation is known as well from the Maxwell theory, in which case it is common practise, to use the general approach (E(r,t) and H(r,t)), what we in accordance with the textbooks can do in the same manner. The extension however brings two additional and extremely significant terms. Since the fundamental field equation has eigenvalues under certain boundary conditions and describes structures, various quantum postulates come out from it, from the quantum properties of the elementary particles over the Schrodinger equation and the inhomogeneous Laplace equation up to the derivation of the Golden Proportion. That justifies the assumption that this possibly is the long sought-for world equation!

Even I, as the initiator, was totally surprised by the found derivation of the most important quantum physical postulates and axioms. One just is doing it the right way and already everything fits together! I am not aware of any theory, which would be able to achieve something roughly comparable. The since long sought-for ,,Theory of Everything", the big unification theory really falls into ones lap. The known interactions are the free and easy result of analysing the field lines of electric and magnetic field strength (fig. 30.12). Physical phenomena, which until now were considered to be incompatible, like e.g. waves, noise or the temperature with the utterly insufficient concepts of the mechanisms for the conversion of one form of energy into another, can be represented consistently with the fundamental field equation as the rolling up of a wavelike field oscillation to a vortex oscillation and as conversion of the noise vortices in the case of a vortex contraction down to atomic dimensions as thermal oscillation, which we treat as vortex losses. There exists no alternative to such unified schemes of things, as makes it possible in abundance the theory that I have founded, considering the two conditions, that on the one hand in the case of the derivation only known regularities are used, by completely doing without postulates and that on the other hand laws are applied and adhered to, also physical laws.

The new schemes of things, which sound unfamiliar, thus already were contained in the laws of physics. After this now having been realized, the tables turn. Now the explanations by postulates, as they at the moment still are being taught, should be replaced by the newly derived ones, if one doesn't want to become a breaker of the law! There doesn't lead a way past the overdue reform of physics anymore.

If you want to correspond with me or if you want to get one of my books from the bibliography, then please consult my Transfer Centre in the Technology Centre of St. Georgen (Black Forest, D).

Address: 1st Transfer Centre for Scalar wave Technology
                      Prof.   Dr.   Konstantin   Meyl
                      Leopoldstralsse   1
                      D-78112 -St. Georgen /Germany

                         Fax.:   +49-7721/51870

email: meyl@k-meyl.de   or: meyl@fh-furtwangen. de
Internet: http://www.k-meyl.de   or   www.meyl.eu

The list of deliverable books (for ordering books over the above given address, Fax, Mail or postcard suffices):

*   Wirbelstrome, Diss. University Stuttgart 1984, ISBN 3-9802 542-0-8,   14

*   Potentialwirbel Band 1, 1990, ISBN 3-9802 542-1-6 (German),   l4

*   Potentialwirbel Band 2, 1992, ISBN 3-9802 542-2-4 (not available)

      *   Elektromagnetische Umweltvertraglichkeit, Teil 1, 2 and 3 (German), ISBN 3-9802 542-8-3, 3-9802 542-9-1 and 3-9802 542-7-5.   Each 16

      *   Scalar wave technology, 2003, documentation and manual to the demonstration-kit and to the experimental-kit (translated and copied).

*   Sendetechnik der Gotter, historischer Sciencefictionroman, (in German)
      1 .Aufl. 2004, ISBN 3-98O2 542-5-9,   l2

      *   Neutrinopower, Johannes von Buttlar im Gesprach mit Prof. Dr. Konstantin Meyl, (Discussion in German) Argo-Verlag 2000,

(A bill is enclosed in the delivery.)

Fig. 30.14:   Contacting address and list of deliverable books

Table of formula symbols

Electric field

E	V/m	Electric field strength
D	As/m²	Electric displacement
U	V	Tension voltage
ε	As/Vm	Dielectricity: $\varepsilon = \varepsilon_r \cdot \varepsilon_o$
Q	As	Charge
e	As	Elementary charge
τ_2	s	Relaxation time constant of the potential vortices

Magnetic field

H	A/m	Magnetic field strength
B	Vs/m²	Magnetic induction
I	A	Current
μ	Vs/Am	Permeability: $\mu = \mu_r \cdot \mu_o$
φ	Vs	Magnetic flux
m	kg	Mass
τ_1	s	Relaxation time constant of the eddy currents: $\tau_1 = \varepsilon/\sigma$

other symbols:

A	m²	Area
a	m	Distance
b	m	Width
c	m/s	Speed of light
c_o	m/s	Speed of light in vacuum
C_r	As/V	Capacity of the electron
C_p	J/K	Heat capacity
d	m	Thickness
E,W	Nm	Energy
f	1/s	Frequency
F	N	Force
G	m³/kg·s²	Gravitational constant
g	m/s²	Gravitational acceleration of the earth
h	m	Height
h	Nms	Planck's quantum of action
ħ	Nms	Quantum of angular momentum: $\hbar = h/2\pi$
j	A/m²	Current density
J	kg·m²	Moment of inertia
J·ω²	kg·m²/s	Angular momentum
k	Nm/K	Boltzmann constant
l	m	Length
m	kg	Mass
M	kg	Mass of the earth
n,ν = 1,2,3..		Running parameters
N	-	Constant
O	m²	Surface area
p_m	Am²	Magnetic moment

Q	Nm = J	Heat energy
r, R	m	Radius, radius of the earth
r_e	m	Radius of the electron
s	Nms	Spin
t	s	Time, time to orbit
T	K	Temperature
U	Nm	Potential energy
U_e	V	Tension voltage of the electron
v	m/s	Velocity
V	m³	Volume
W	Nm	Energy
w	N/m²	Energy density
W_e	Nm	Energy of the electron
z_e	-	Number of the involved elementary vortices
λ	m	Wave length
ω	s⁻¹	Angular frequency, angular velocity
σ	Vm/A	Specific electric conductivity
ρ	kg/m³	Density $\rho = m/V$
ρ_{el}	As/m³	Electric space charge density
ψ (r,t)		Complex wave function
φ (r)		Function of space coordinates
Φ		Golden Proportion

Definitions:

Speed of light	c	$= 1/\sqrt{\varepsilon \cdot \mu}$	m/s
Speed of light in a vacuum	c_o	$= 1/\sqrt{\varepsilon_o \cdot \mu_o}$	m/s
Moment of inertia (orbit)	J	$= m \cdot r^2$	kg·m²
Mom. of i. (homogeneous sphere)	J	$= (2/5)m \cdot r^2$	kg·m²
Angular velocity	ω	$= v/r = 2 \cdot \pi/t$	1/s
Surface area of a sphere	O	$= 4 \cdot \pi \cdot r^2$	m²
Volume of a sphere	V	$= (4/3) \cdot \pi \cdot r^3$	m³

Concerning vector analysis:

Bold print = field pointer (vector);   further information in fig. 5.0 in part 1

Prof. Dr.-Ing. Konstantin Meyl:

Scalar wave technology
for the transmission of electric scalar waves

Abstract: 1. Auflage 2000, 2. Auflage and 1st English edition 200

This book is recommended to people, who search the entry into the world of the by the author discovered potential vortices and their propagation as a scalar wave by experimental means. It starts with the instructions to six extraordinary experiments. Doing so an electric radiation is proven, which transmits energy, and that even faster than the light. Also more energy can arrive at the receiver then is put into the transmitter. Who entertains a doubt, will be able to understand the experiments with this book in his hand, to afterwards test the experiments with the gauge, which he is familiar with.

The 1st edition in English at first only includes the instructions for the experiments. In a subsequent edition it will be complemented with a collection of test protocols and progress reports. These are organized into three groups: one group is striving to explain the behaviour of the transmission line conventionally, a legitimate concern, which in a number of points also is able to convince. A second group only is interested in those phenomena of the experiment, which can't be explained conventionally and which prove the existence of scalar waves, whereas the third research group continually strives for new spectacular experiments and practical applications.

Documentation
Belonging to the experimentation and demonstration kit for the transmission of electric scalar waves

Bibliography

A.   Primary literature (Publications concerning the theory of objectivity):

[1]   K. Meyl: Potentialwirbel, Band 1, INDEL Verlagsabt. Villingen 199O, ISBN 3-98O2542-1-6

[2]   K. Meyl: Potentialwirbel, Band 2, INDEL Verlagsabt. Villingen 1992, ISBN 3-98O2542-2-4

[3]   K. Meyl: Wirbelstrome, INDEL Verlagsabt. Villingen 1984, ISBN 3-98O2542-O-8 / Dreidimensionale nichtlineare Berechnung von Wirbelstromkupplungen, Diss. Uni. Stuttgart 1984

[4]   K. Meyl: Einheitliche Theorie bei feldstarkeabhangiger Lichtgeschwindigkeit, Forschungsbericht der Fachhochschule Furtwangen 1992, l.Aufl. Seite 41-43

[5]   K. Meyl: Wirbel des elektrischen Feldes, eine neue Storquelle? EMC Journal 1/95,6. J, S. 56

|6]   K. Meyl: Gefahrdungspotential und Umwelrvertraglichkeit elektromagnetischer Felder am Beispiel der Funktelefone, Waerland 2/96 (1996), S. 21-23.

[7]   K. Meyl: Wirbel des elektrischen Feldes, ein Beitrag zum Thema Uberlichtgeschwindigkeit; Wetter-Boden-Mensch 1/1997, ISSN 0940-5984, Seite: 79-89.

[8]   K. Meyl: Physikalische Grundlagen einer Frequenztherapie, W.-B.-M. 6/1997, Seite: 8-15.

[9]   K. Meyl: Die Wechselwirkung der Neutrinos, uber Massnahmen, die Halbwertszeit beim radioaktiven Zerfall herabzusetzen; intern.Tagung „Neue Energietechnologien aus USA", Zurich am 6.12.97, abgedruckt im NET-Journal (Neue Energietechniken), ISSN 1420-9292, Heft 1/2-1998, S. 14-20

[10]   K. Meyl: Objektivitatstheorie, Ein Weg aus der quantenphysikalischen Sackgasse, 1. Beitrag: Der Ather und die Einsteinsche Fehlinterpretation, W.-B.-M. 3/1998, ISSN 0940-5984, Seite 39-44

[11]   K. Meyl: Objektivitatstheorie, Ein Weg aus der quantenphysikalischen Sackgasse, 2. Beitrag: Die Vereinigungstheorie, Wetter-Boden-Mensch 4/1998, ISSN 0940-5984, Seite: 31-38

[12] K. Meyl: Longitudinale elektrische Wellen und Wirbel, Vortrag der „Internationalen Gesellschaft ftir interdisziplinare Wissenschaften" in Frankfurt am 21.3.1998, veroffentlicht im Vortragsband des "Bundesverbands gegen Elektrosmog e.V." ISBN 3-00-003124-3, Hohenstein, S.79-91

[13] K. Meyl: Biologische Wirksamkeit elektromagnetischer Wellen, Fluch (Elektrosmog) Oder Segen (Frequenztherapie)?, CO'MED, Fachmagazin fur Complementar-Medizin Nr. 10, Dez. 1998, S. 51-55

[14]   K. Meyl: Elektrosmog, die physikalischen Grundlagen, Magazin 2000 plus Nr. 134,12/1998, S. 32-37

[15]   K. Meyl: Freie Energie und die Wechselwirkung der Neutrinos, W.-B.-M. 3+4/1999, Seite: 21-29

[16] K. Meyl: Skalarwellen und ihre biologische Wirksamkeit, Vortragsband der Deutschen Gesellschaft fur Energetische und Informationsmedizin, Universitat Stuttgart am 17.07.1999, S. 47-52

[17] K. Meyl: Zur Brennglaswirkung des Mondes bei einer Sonnenfinsternis, NET-Journal (Neue Energietechniken), ISSN 1420-9292, Heft 7/8-1999, S. 13-17, sowie INET-Kongress-Vortrag dazu: Freie Energie im nachsten Jahrtausend, am 9.10.1999, Holiday Inn Heidelberg (Walldorf)

[18] K. Meyl: Raum-Energie-Technologie, Wechselwirkung der Neutrinos und energietechnische Nutzung der Teslastrahlung, Teil 1, Magazin 2000 plus Nr. 144, Dezember 1999, S. 62-67

[19]   K. Meyl: Raum-Energie-Technologie, Teil 2, Magazin 2000 plus Nr. 145, Jan./Feb. 2000, S. 60-65

[20]   K. Meyl: Teslastrahlung, W.-B.-M. 4/2000, ISSN 0940-5984, S. 31-43

[21]   K. Meyl: Skalarwellen, Hagia Chora 5/2000, ISSN 0940-5984, S. 31-43

[22] K. Meyl: Teslastrahlung - die drahtlose Ubertragung von Skalarwellen, Kongressband Bregenz vom 15./16.4.2000, S. 181-196, Jupiter-Verlag, ISBN 3-906571-18-1

[23]   K. Meyl: Skalarwellentechnik, INDEL Verlagsabt. Villingen-S. 2000, 1. Aufl, ISBN 3-98O2542-6-7

[24]   K. Meyl: Nichtoptische Sonnenfinstermsphanomene Teil 1, Magazin 2000 plus/148,6/2000, S. 10-13

[25] K. Meyl: Nichtoptische Sonnenfmsternisphanomene Teil 2, Magazin 2000 plus/150, 8/2000, S. 26-29

[26]   K. Meyl: Nichtoptische Sonnenfmsternisphanomene Teil 3, Magazin 2000 plus/151,10/2000, S. 12-17

[27]   K. Meyl: Longitudinalwellen-Experiment nach Nikola Tesla, Vortragsband der Deutschen Ges. fur Energetische und Informationsmedizin, Universitat Stuttgart am 6.+.7.10.2000, S. 4.1-4.9

[28]   K. Meyl: Skalarwellen und ihre Bedeutung fur die Medizin, Kolloquium vom 6.-8.10.2000 Bad Nauheim der BIT-Arztegesellschaft Vortragsband, Seite 87-96.

[29]   Johannes von Buttlar im Gesprach mit Prof. Dr. Konstantin Meyl: Neutrinopower, 1. Auflage 2000, Argo-Verlag Marktoberdorf, ISBN 3-98O6584-8-1

[30]   K. Meyl: Skalarwellen-Ubertragung, NET-Journal, ISSN 1420-9292, Heft 12-2000, S. 31-34

[31] K. Meyl: Longitudinalwellen-Experiment, DVR-Info im NET-Journal, Heft 12-2000, S. 21-24

[32] K. Meyl: Erdbeben und Vulkanausbrtiche, GA-Magazin, Heft 6, 2000, S. 11-14

[33] K. Meyl: Atomuhren, die falsch gehen, GA-Magazin, Heft 8, 2001, S. 10-13

[34]   K. Meyl: Umpolungsproblematik und Sintflut, GA-Magazin, Heft 10,2001, S. 10-14

The suitcase for experiments from Transfer Centre St. Georgen:

Scalar wave transmission according to Tesla

Bidirectional signal and energy transmission with longitudinal
waves faster than light in a resonant circuit

Get to know the Tesla radiation and its fantastic properties personally. Demonstrate, what no textbook of physics is able to explain!

The experiments, which 100 years ago still were extremely complicated, today fit into an aluminium suitcase, which can be acquired by purchase. Test yourself the historic statements and perform the following experiments:

- transmission of energy and information
- effect back from the receiver on the transmitter
- proof of free energy (1 to 3 times over-unity)
- scalar wave transmission with app. 1.5 times the speed of light
- tunnel effect or the lacking to shield the waves
- disproval of the near-field interpretation.

The kit is offered in two versions:

As a demonstration-kit   for 800.- Euro (incl. VAT)
With this the 6 experiments can be carried out without further aids. (Target group are judges, doctors, architects, interested laymen, etc.)

and as an experimentation-kit   for 1400.- Euro (incl. VAT)
with three different Spulensatzen, Frequenzzahler and zusatzlichem material. (Target group are physicists, engineers, handicraft enthusiasts who like to experiment, etc.)

Weitere Informationen zum Set und zu den Biichern, zu deren Inhalt und zu Vortragsveranstaltungen im Internet unter:
http: / /www.k-meyl.de   and   www.meyl.eu

INDEL GmbH, Verlagsabteilung, Fax: +49-/0- 7721-51870
Tel.:   +49-/0-   7724-1770
Postal   and   ordering   address:
l.TZS, Prof. Dr. K. Meyl, Leopoldstr. 1,   D-78112   St. Georgen/Schwarzwald

[35]   K. Meyl: HF-technische Hinweise zum Skalarwellen-Ubertragungs-Set, DVR-Mitgliederjournal Nr. 45, 1/2001, S. 20-22 und NET-Journal, ISSN 1420-9292, Heft 3/4-2001, S. 44-45

[36]   K. Meyl: Stellungnahme zum Artikel im Spiegel, DVR-Mitgliederjouraal Nr. 46, 2/2001, S. 43-44

[37]   K. Meyl: Stellungnahme zu dem Beitrag „Skalarwellenubertragung", W.-B.-M. 2/2001, Seite: 77-79

[38]   K. Meyl: Scalar Waves: Theory and Experiments, Journal of Scientific Exploration, Vol. 15, No.2, June 2001, ISSN 0892-3310, pp.199-205.

[39]   K. Meyl: Skalarwellenstrahlung. Welche Bedeutung haben Skalarwellen fur die Medizin? , CO" MED, Fachmagazin fur Complementar-Medizin Nr.6, Juni/2001, S. 55-60.

[40]   K. Meyl: Advanced Conzepts for Wireless Energy Transfer, High efficient Power Engineering with Scalar Waves, International Congress-Publications, Weinfelden, 23/24.6. 01, Jupiter- Verl., pp. 41-49

[41]   K. Meyl: Fortschrittliche Konzepte zur drahtlosen Energieubertragung, Hocheffiziente Energie-technologie mittels Skalarwellen, Kongress „Neue Wasserstofftechnologien und Raumantriebe" 23.-24. Juni 2001 CH-Weinfelden, Kongressband S. 25-40, Jupiter-Verlag, ISBN 3-906571-20-3

[42]   K. Meyl: Schwingungsmedizin, Physikalisch-technische Aspekte komplementarmedizinischer Diagnose- und Therapieverfahren, G.E.I.M.-Vortrag am 6.10.2001 Universitat Kaiserslautern, GZM-Praxis und Wissenschaft, ISSN 1430-4554,7Jahrg. 1/2002, S. 50-55

[43]   K. Meyl: Skalarwellen Teil 1: Grundlage einer erweiterten Feldtheorie und prakrische Konsequenzen der Maxwell-Naherung, NET-Journal, ISSN 1420-9292, Heft Juli/August 2002, S. 31-47

[44]   K. Meyl: Skalarwellen Teil 2: Weltgleichung und Wellengleichung als Konsequenz der erweiterten Feldtheorie, NET-Journal, ISSN 1420-9292, Heft September/Oktober 2002, S. 44-47

[45]   K. Meyl: Wirbelstrukturen als Element der Informationsubertragung in biologischen Systemen, Kolloquium vom 3.-5.10.2002 Bad Nauheim der BIT-Arztegesellschaft, Vortragsband, Seite 77-96.

[46]   K. Meyl: Skalarwellen, Grundlage einer erweiterten Feldtheorie, Vortrag am VII.Kongress des IAG vom 18.-20.10.2002 in Mainz-Finthen, Kongressband ISBN 3-9804228-3-6 l.Aufl.2002, S. 118-135.

|47]   K. Meyl: Nutzungsmoglichkeiten der Skalarwellentechnik, Neutrino-Power als Chance fur das neue Jahrtausend, Magazin 2000 plus I Nr.177, November/Dezember 2002, S. 60-63.

[48]   K. Meyl: Schwingungsmedizin, Bioresonanz durch Skalarwellentechnik, Magazin 2000 plus I Nr. 178, Medizin Spezial 13,2002, S. 52-57

[49]   K. Meyl: Die Wellengleichung, Grundlage der Skalarwellen-Physik, Magazin 2000 plus I Nr.179, Januar/Februar 2003, S. 6-12

[50]   K. Meyl: Elektrische bzw. magnetische Skalarwellen im Kreuzfeuer der Kritik. Prof. Dr.-Ing. Konstantin Meyl nimmt Stellung zu kritischen Fragen, CO'MED, Nr. 1, Januar/2003, S. 52-54.

[51]   K. Meyl: Freie Energie und Neutrinopower, Vortrag am 26.10.2002 in Bensheim auf dem Kongress: (Vom Band abgetippt von I.Schneider) Neue universale Energielosungen, Sammelband der Kongress-beitrage, Jupiter Verlag 2003, ISBN 3-906571-22-X, S.57-79

[52]   K. Meyl (D.NeubronnerV. Die Rundfunkgotter, Teslawellen im Altertum, Matrix 3000 Band 16, 7/8-2003, ISSN 14394154, S.40-43

[53]   K. Meyl: Erdwachstum durch Neutrinopower, Magazin 2000 plus Nr.188, Extra 3, 9/10-2003, S. 6-13

[54]   K. Meyl: Faraday vs. Maxwell, Nikola Tesla Energy Science Conference, Washington DC 8.11.03, IRI

[55]   K. Meyl: Physikalische Grundlagen fur die Informationsverarbeitung im Menschen, Kongressband zu den Festspieigesprachen 2002, (Hg. Simma Kletschka) Facultas Verlage Wien 2003, Band 27, Wiener Internationale Akademie fur Ganzheitsmedizin, ISBN 3-85076-648-9, Seite 38-59

by Prof. Dr.-Ing. Konstantin Meyl:

Sendetechnik der Gotter

Konstantin the Great is inaugurated in ancient send receive engineering by his teacher in the Roman emperor palace 304 A.D.

Abstract: l.Auflage 2004(in German)

- Has god Apollo in Delphi broadcasted at 5.4 MHz?
- Were the Greek temples telegraphy transmitters?
- Were the temple priests amateur radio operators?
- Was Homer radio reporter by order of the gods?
- Were the oracles receiving stations?
- Have oracle interpreters deciphered the transmission code?
- Which bridges did the Pontifex Maximus build?

All are questions, which are dealt with and explained in detail in 30 lessons. In the year 304 A.D. we witness, how the later Roman emperor Konstantin the Great is inaugurated in the secret broadcasting technique of the gods by his teacher. It is an exciting time of upheaval, because the old telegraphy is almost dead. The intestines of animals to sacrifice, from the convulsions of which the radio signals are read off, are scarce goods. Instead radiotelephony should be introduced, which had been tested successfully with the Pantheon in Rome by emperor Hadrian.
But new dispute is initiated: should broadcasting be introduced or rather cellular phone? But those, who tamper around without licence, are chased and fought as always.

When the book is available in English, you will be informed per internet:

    www.k-meyl.de   www.meyl.eu

B.   Secondary literature (Publications about the theory of objectivity):

[1]   P. Schellenberg: Buchbesprechung zu K. Meyl: Potentialwirbel, Bd. 1, Efodon News 6 (1992), S. 11
[2]   Dr. R. Wohlleben: Buchbespr. zu K. Meyl: Potentialwirbel, Band 2, Frequenz 50 (1996) 1-2, S. 10
[3]   Steinbeis-Stiftung fur WirtschaftsfOrderung: Technologiepreis fur STZ-Leiter, Transfer Zeitung 3/94 (1994), S.6
[4]   A. Waser (Herausg.): Die ratselhafte Natur - The Puzzling Nature, AW Verlag, Luzern (1996), ISBN3-9521O59-O-2
[6]   K. Lorek: Buchvorstellung in "Implosion", Biotechnische Nachrichten Nr. 116 (8/1996), S. 64
[7]   Dr. H. Lumpe: Potentialwirbel, neues Weltbild; Raum & ZeitNr. 86, Marz/April 1997, S. 102-103
[8]   Inge Schneider: Buchbesprechung zu K. Meyl: Elektromagnetische Umweltvertraglichkeit, Teil 1, NET-Journal, ISSN 1420-9292, Jg. Nr.2, Heft 3, Marz 1997, Seite 23
[9]   W. Martin: Buchbesprechung zu Teil 1, Wetter-Boden-Mensch 2/1997, ISSN 0940-5984, S. 62-63.
[10]   RTL: Prof Dr.-Ing.Meyl zu Gast bei der RTL-Talkshow von Ilona Christen am 30.5.97, abgedruckt im NET-Journal, ISSN 1420-9292, Jg. Nr.2, Heft 6/7 1997, Seite 30-31
[l1]   Inge Schneider: zu „Prof. Dr.-Ing. Konstantin Meyls Buch Elektromagnetische Umweltvertraglich-keit", NET-Journal, ISSN 1420-9292, Jg. Nr.2, Heft 6/7 1997, Seite 32-33
[12]   W. Heidrich: Geht die Expertentagung 1997 in die Geschichte ein? W.-B.-M. 6/1997, S. 3-4
[13]   J. Heinzerling: Die Technik des dritten Jahrtausends, Magazin 2000 plus Nr.125, Marz 1998, S. 57/58
[14]   Inge Schneider: Buchbesprechung zu K. Meyl: Elektromagnetische Umweltvertraglichkeit, Teil 2, NET-Journal, ISSN 1420-9292, Jg. Nr.4, Heft 3, Marz 1999, Seite 35
[15]   W. Martin: Buchbesprechung zu Teil 2, Wetter-Boden-Mensch 2/1999, ISSN 0940-5984, S. 46+59.
[16]   P.Rosch: Glanzend, Prof. Meyl zu Elektrosmog, Leserbrief, Magazin 2000 plus Nr.136, 2/1999, S. 77
[17]   Portrait der Kongress-Referenten, zu Prof. Meyl: Energie aus dem Weltraum, 5. internationaler Kongress vom 26.-28.2.1999 in Dusseldorf, Magazin 2000 plus Nr. 136, 2/1999, S. 2 + 16 mit:
[18]   P.Wiesner: Bericht zum 5. internationalen Kongress „Dialog mit dem Universum", zum Beitrag Prof. Meyl:„fordert eine dezentrale elektr. Energietechnik", Magazin 2000 plus Nr.136, 2/1999, S. 38-41
[19]   I. Schlotterbeck: Bucher, die wir empfehlen, Magazin 2000 plus Mr. 142, Sept./Oktober 1999, S. 96
[20]   H.-J. Ehlers: Freie Energie, Meyls Neutrino-These; Raum & Zeit Nr. 101, Sept./Oktober 1999, S. 94
[21]   I, Schneider: Bericht zum Kongress vom 9.+10.10.99, Heidelberg, zu K. Meyl: Freie Energie im nachsten Jahrtausend, NET-Journal, ISSN 1420-9292, Jg. Nr.4, Heft 10/11, Okt./Nov. 1999, S. 8 ff.
[22]   Sabine Krummer: Weltpremiere, Magazin 2000 plus Nr.145, 1+2/2000, S. 59 und im Schwarzwalder Bote vom 19.11.99: TP-Forum eroffhet mit Weltpremiere, Prof. Meyl berichtet iiber Teslawellen.
[23]   Diermar Schindler: Neutrinos - Energie aus dem Kosmos, Schwarzwalder Bote Nr. 275 vom 27.11.99
[24]   Schneider: Neutrino-Power - Energie aus dem Kosmos, Bericht zu Vortrag und Demo von Prof. Dr. K. Meyl am 25.11.1999 in Villingen, NET-Journal, ISSN 1420-9292, Jg. Nr.4, Heft 12/1999, Seite 4-6
[25]   Schneider: Durchbruch in der Freien-Energie-Forschung; Interview mit Prof. Dr.-Ing. Konstantin Meyl, NET-Journal, ISSN 1420-9292, Jg. Nr.4, Heft 12, Dezember 1999, Seite 7-9.
[26]   Dulling: Professor Meyl und die Freie Energie, TZ-Journal 1999/2000, Seite 5.
[27]   Ulrich Arndt: Das Phanomen der Wirbel, Buchbesprechung zu Elektromagnetische Umweltvertrag-lichkeit Teil 1 und Teil 2, Esotera 1/2000, Verlag Hermann Bauer, S. 50,51
[28]   Rainer Borgmann: Energie aus dem Kosmos, Magazin 2000 plus Nr. 145, Januar/Feb. 2000, S. 58-59
[29]   Sabine Krummer: Wissenschaftler sprechen von Sensation, Im Villinger Technologie-Forum fuhrte Konstantin Meyl seine Skalarwellen vor, Schwarzwalder Bote vom 7.2.2000
[30]   Dr.B.Tausendfreund: Uber biologische und medizinische Auswirkungen von elektrischen Potentialwirbeln und elektromagnetischen Longitudinalwellen,, CO'MED, 2/2000, S. 92
[31]   Dr. H.Hantsche: Neues aus Physik und Technik, Info-Blatt der Feien Akademie, Berlin 3/2000, S.3
[32]   A.Milinkovic: Weiterer Nachweis der Skalarwellen, NET-Journal, Jg. Nr.5, Heft 3, Marz 2000, S. 26
[33]   Vorstellung des Referenten Prof Dr.-Ing. Konstantin Meyl, Kongressband Bregenz vom 15/16.4.2000, S. 180, Jupiter-Verlag, ISBN 3-906571-18-1
[34]   Dr. Kunze: Leserbrief zu K.Meyl: Raum-Energie-Technologie, Magazin 2000 plus 147, 4-2000, S. 93
[35]   Schneider: Teslastrahlung, die drahtlose Ubertragung von Skalarwellen von Prof. Dr.-Ing. Konstantin Meyl, NET-Journal, ISSN 1420-9292, Jg. Nr.5, Heft 4/5- 2000, Seite 14-15.
[36]   Dr. Reichwein, Peters: Zellulare Elektromagnetische Systemsteuerung, Der Freie Arzt 5 (2000) im Wissenschafts-Forum (Anhang, S. IV - XXIII)
[37]   Ulrich Arndt: Die Energie aus dem Nichts, Esotera 7/2000, Verlag Hermann Bauer, S. 62-66
[38]   Besprechung zum Video „EMUV" von Prof. Dr. Meyl, Esotera 7/2000, Verlag Hermann Bauer, S. 30
[39]   A.Manthey: Bericht zur Berliner Tagung fur neue Energietechnologien (8.7.2000), zu Theoretische Ansatze (u.a. K. Meyl), NET-Journal, ISSN 1420-9292, Jg. Nr.5, Heft 7/8 2000, S. 14 ff.

[40]   Schneider: Uber das Experimentier-Set zur Ubertragung von Skalarwellen von Prof. Dr.-lng. Konstantin Meyl, NET-Journal, ISSN 1420-9292, Jg. Nr.5, Heft 9, September 2000, Seite 4-7.

[41]   Buchbesprechung zu Prof. Dr.-Ing. Konstantin Meyl: Elektromagnetische Umweltvertraglichkeit, Teil 1 und Teil 2, Schweizerische Zeitschrift fur RGS, ISSN 1420-4894, Nr.233, Heft 4-2000, Seite 54-56

[42]   Adolf und Inge Schneider: Energie aus dem All, ll.Kap.: Drahtlose Ubertragung von Skalarwellen durch Prof.Dr.-Ing.Konstantin Meyl, S.312-324, Jupiter Verlag 9/2000, l.Aufl. ISBN 3-906571-17-3.

[43]   Dr.J.Lechner. Starfelddiagnostik, Medikamenten- und Materialtest Teil2, Kap.2.4.2 Beruhrungslose skalarwellengetragene Informationsubertragung, S. 173-178, Verlag Wtlhr 2000, ISBN 3-927344-44-3

[44]   Dr. B. KOhler: Nachlese zum Jubilaumskolloquium der BIT-AG vom 6.-8.10.2000 in Bad Nauheim: Einen weiteren Hohepunkt stellte das Referat von Prof. K. Meyl dar,... COMED, 12/2000, S. 104

[45]   Schneider: Buchbesprechung zu ,,Neutrinopower", NET-Journal, Jg. 5, Heft 12, Dezember 2000, S. 39

[46]   Fachhochschule Furtwangen: Vorlesungsangebot fur das SS 2001, S.8, Prof. Dr. K. Meyl: EMUV.

[47]   Vill: Die elektrophysikalische Mauerwerksentfeuchtung, EV.Verl.2001, ISBN 3-934139-04-3, S.26-33

[48]   Kraft: Eroberung von physikalischem Neuland, Buchbesprechung zu ,,Neutrinopower", und

[49]   Rattcher: Sind morphische Felder Neutrinos?, Zeit Geist, Heft 3,2001, S. 29 und S. 9.

[50]   Dr.R.Kra6nigg: Skalare Wellen, Regulations Medizin 6, Heft 3, 2001, S. 89-96.

[51]   Dr.A.Rossaint: Physikalische Grundlagen und biologisch-medizinische Schlussfolgerungen fur den beruhrungslosen Resonanztest Teil 1, Zeitschrift Hier & Jetzt, 3/2001, S.22-27 +Teil2,4/2001, S.22-25

[52]   GZM-Kongress Berlin, 13.5.2001, zu dem Vortragenden Prof.Dr.K.Meyl: Skalare-/Teslawellen zur zellularen Energie- und Info. , GZM-Praxis und Wissenschaft, ISSN 1430-4554, 6,Jahrg. 1/2001, S.36

[53]   Dr.P.Reichert: Die Medizin der Zukunft - Schwingungen start Pillen, Berlin Nachlese zum 6. Euro-
        paischen Kongress fur Ganzheitliche Zahn-Medizin 10.-13.5.2001, GZM-Praxis und Wissenschaft,
ISSN 1430-4554, 6.Jahrg. 1/2001, S.56 zuK.Meyl: Schwingungsmedizin und Zellkommunikation.

[54]   M.Dworschak: Schwarzwalder Kopernikus, Spiegel-Artikel vom 21.5.01, S. 198-199, abgedruckt im DVR-Mitgliederjournal 2/2001, Seite 41-42

[55]   F.Lutz: Bis jetzt unwiderlegt, Wissenschaftler nehmen Professor Meyn in Schutz, Sudkurier Nr. 136
        vom 16.6.2001 und Badische Zeitung vom 19.6.2002, Seite 22.

[56]   S.Scheurer: Kopemikus untersucht Skalarwellen, Schweizerisches Bodensee Tagblatt Turgau, 21.6.01

[57]   Schneider: Introduction of the author Prof.Dr.K.Meyl: Advanced Conzepts for Wireless Energy Transfer, International Congress-Publications, Weinfelden, 23./24.6.2001, Jupiter-Verlag, pp. 23-24.

[58]   R.Schmid: Neues aus der Homoopathie-Forschung, zur Tagung der Samuel-Hahnemann-Stiftung vom 6.-8.4.2001 in Simmerath-E., Globuli 11/2001, S.11-12.

[59]   Ralph Netzker: Jurassic Quark, Holden, Wegener, Meyl, ein theoretischer Dreisprang, im Internet unter
        http://home.t-online.de/home/ralph.netzker/quark.htm vom 25.10.01

[60]   H.-P. Studer: Neue Energien fur die Zukunft, Vita Sana Magazin fur Dialog und Ges., 9/2001, S. 6-9

[61]   Harro Wilke: Leserbrief zu Schwarzwalder Kopernikus, Magazin 2000 plus Nr. 164/2001, S. 92

[62]   Dr. R.Krafinigg: Skalare Wellen, Arztezeitschrift fur Naturheilverfahren, 43, 1/2002, S. 19-27.

[63]   Dr.C.Bollkampen: Bewusstsein im EnergetischenKontinuum, 10/2002, ISBN 3-8311-4016-2.

[64]   A. und I. Schneider: Bericht vom Kongress ,,Universale Energielosungen", 26727.10.2002 in
        Bensheim, zu dem Beitrag von Prof.Dr.K.Meyl: Freie Energie und Neutrinopower, NET-Journal, Jg. 7,
Heft 11/12 November/Dezember 2002, S. 21-28.

[65]   Dr. P. Rothdach, Dr. H. Boiler u.a.m: Leserbriefe zum Beitrag: Elektromagnetische Skalarwellen im
        Kreuzfeuer der Kritik. COMED, 1/2003, S. 4-5 und COMED, 11/2002, S. 4: "Facit (Rothdach); Die
        Meylsche Theorie ist weder mathematisch, noch theoretisch-physikalisch noch experimentell
widerlegt"!

[66]   D. Schindler: Kopemikus aus dem Schwarzwald, Professor Meyl stellt neue Erkenntnisse der
        Teslastrahlumg vor, Bericht im Schwarzwalder Bote Nr. 46 VS, vom 25.02.2003

[67]   H.-H. Gimbel: Neue Energielo'sungen, Kongressbericht, Wohnung + Gesundheit 3/03 Nr. 106, S. 60

[68]   C. Nack: Umstritten aber begehrt. Viele Akademiker kamen Zum Experimentalvortrag von K. Meyl am
14.03.2003 im Technologiepark von Villingen-Schwenningen, Sudkurier 63/TG v. 17.03.03, S.27

[69]   G. Hauser: ,,Gebaude der Physik wankt", Meyl sieht seine Theorie durch neueste Berichte bestatigt,
Siidkuner Nr. 93/V, 23.04.2003

[70]   Prof. Dr. J. Gruber: Grosser experimenteller Erfolg von Prof. Meyl, Energie aus dem Feld
nachgewiesen! DVR-Mitglieder-Journal 1/03 Nr. 51 vom 4.4.03, ISSN 1435-0815, S. 101-102

[71]   Dr. H. Kersten uber K. Meyl's Forschung: Erdwachstum durch Neutrinoabsorbtion, Technische
        Universitat Berlin, Internationales Kolloquium: Erdexpansion - eine Theorie auf dem Prufstand, Schloss
        Theuern am 24.+25.05.2003, Umdruck der TU Berlin Sekr. BH4 Lagerstattenforschung,
        s.a. Amberger Zeitung vom 28.5.03 und Amberger Nachrichten vom 29.5.03

[72]   Dr. P. Rothdach: ,,SkalarwelIen gibt es nicht und die Welt ist eine Scheibe", GeoForum 24, 6/2003,
Seite 20-22
[73]   Inge Schneider: zu Prof. Dr.-Ing. K. Meyls Forschung: Antiker Gotterfunk und futuristische Skalar-
          wellenkommunikation, NET-Journal, Jg. Nr. 8, Heft 7/8 2003, Seite 31 (mit Ankundigungen zu
Seminaren von Prof. Meyl in Munchen, an der Universitat Stuttgart und in Washington DC, Seite 42)
[74]   J.K.Klasmann: Elektrosmog, Gefahrliche Felder? Gesundheit 9/2003, S.103-104.
[75]   Gesundheitsrisiko Handy", Hauptreferent Professor Meyl..., Zollern-Alb-Kurier, 8.10.2003 und K.-H.
          Schlenker, Leserbrief vom 30.9.2003, s.a. Siidwest Presse: Kommission fordert Absenkung von
          Grenzwerten, Hohenzollerische Zeitung vom 7.10.2003.
[76]   Dr. H.-J. Klose: Die Grundregulation des Menschen, Kongressband zu den Festspielgesprachen 2002,
   Simma-Kletschka (Herausgeber): Ganzheitliche Zahnheilkunde, Facultas Verlage Wien 2003, Band 27,
   Wiener Internationale Akademie fur Ganzheitsmedizin, ISBN 3-85076-648-9, Seite 95-98
   [77]   Dr. Valone, Integrity Research Institute: Nikola Tesla Energy Science Conference, Washington DC
   November 8th.+9th.2003, Conference publications, speakers biographies and abstracts.

C.   Literature concerning the electromagnetic and biological compatibility

          [1]   R. O. Becker: Heilkraft und Gefahren der Elektrizitat (Cross Currents) 2. Aufl.Scherz Verlag (1994)
          [2] P. Brodeur: Mikrowellen (The zapping of America) Augustus Verlag Augsburg (1989)
          [3] EMVG: Gesetz uber die EMV von Geraten, Bundesgesetzblatt Teil I vom 9.11.1992
[4]   Flanagan: Elixier der Jugendlichkeit, Waldthausen Verlag Ritterhude 1992, 1. Aufl.
          [5] E. Habiger u. a.: Elektromagnetische Vertraglichkeit, 2. Aufl. Verlag Technik, Munchen 1992
          [6] E. Habiger: EMV, Huthig Buch Verlag Heidelberg (1992), ISBN 3-7785-2O92-X
          [7] E. Habiger: EMV-ubergreifende Aspekte zu benachbarten Problemfeldern,
          Elektrie 48 (1994), H. 5/6, S. 163-167
  [8]   N. Harthun: Naturgemasse Technik - Wege fur die Forschung nach Viktor Schauberger,
          Verlag Delta Design, Berlin 1996.
   [9]   H. L. KOnig: Unsichtbare Umwelt (Wetterfuhligk.), 5. Aufl., Verlag Moos & Partner Munchen
   [10]   Anton Kohling: Grundlagen der Funkentstorung in der Bundesrepublik Deutschland,
   etz Bd. 108 (1987), Heft 10.
   [11]   G. Nimtz: Mikrowellen, Einfiihrung in Theorie und Anwendung. 2. Aufl.
Mannheim/Wien/Zurich: BI-Wissenschaftsverlag 199O, ISBN 3-411-O32O3-O
[12]   Novitskii, Yu. I. : Effects of a magnetic field on the dry seeds of some cereals. Proceedings of
Conference on the Effect of Magnetic Fields on Biological Objects, Moscow, p. 52, 1966.
[13]   Plato: Samfliche Werke 5, Rowohlts Klassiker Nr. 47, S. 188,66e
[14]   A. S. Presman: Electromagnetic Fields and Life. Plenum Press, New York - London, 197O
[15]   V. Schauberger: Die Entdeckung der Levitationskraft, Implosion 1995 Nr. 112
[16]   H. Schulz, W. Oppitz: Lokale Hyperthermie durch hochfrequente Wirbelstrome, Medizin
          Technik 1, 1987.
[17]   G. A. Ulmer: Wellen- und Elektrosmog, Ulmer Verlag (1994) ISBN 3-924191-73-5
[18]   Vitruvius Pollio, Marcus: Zehn Bucher uber Architektur, WBG 1987
[19]   A. D. Watt and E. L. Maxwell: Characteristic of Atmospheric Noise from 1 to 1OO Kc/s.
          Symposium on the Propagation of VLF Waves, Boulder, Col., Paper 35, Jan. 1957.

D.   Literature concerning physics in general (particle physics, etc.)

[1]   H. Armbruster, G. Grunberger: Elektromagnetische Wellen im HF-Bereich, Huthig und Pflaum Verl.
          [2] W. Bauer: Klassische Physik, Graphia Druck, Salzburg (1975), Eigenverlag.
          [3] K. Bethge, U. E. Schroder: Elementarteilchen, Wissenschaftliche Buchgesellschaft Darmstadt (1986)
[4] G. Bosse, Grundlagen der Elektrotechnik II, BI 183, Hochschultaschenbuch-Verlag, Mannheim 1967
[5]   Bronstein u.a.: Taschenbuch der Mathematik, 4.Neuaufl. Thun 1999
          [6] A. Einstein: Grundztlge der Relativitatstheorie, S. 162, Anhang II; allg.Bemerkungen C, 5. Aufl.,
   Vieweg + Sohn, Braunschweig 1973.
   [7]   A. P. French: Special Relativity, M.I.T. (1968) / Vieweg Verlag (1971) ISBN 3-528-O3546-3
          [8] G. Galeczki, P. Marquardt: Requiem fur die Spezielle Relati vitat, Verlag Haag+Herchen (1997)
          [9] U. Gradmann/H. Wolter: Grundlagen der Atomphysik, AVG, Frankfurt a.M. 1971.

[10]   Grimsehl: Lehrbuch der Physik, 2.Bd, 17.Aufl. Teubner Verl. 1967
[11]   J. D. Jackson, Classical Electrodynamics, 2nd. Ed., John Wiley, New York, 1975.
[12]   Kleine Enzyklopadie Atom, Verlag Chemie GmbH, Weinheim 1970
[13]   K. Kupfmuller: Einfilhrung in die theoretische Elektrotechnik, Springer-Verlag Berlin, 12. Aufl. 1988
[14]   H. G. Kussner: Grundlagen einer einheitlichen Theorie der physikalischen Teilchen und
Felder, Musterschmidt-Verlag, Gottingen 1976, ISBN 3-7881-6O35-7
[15]   Kuchling: Physik, Gl. At4, VEB-Leipzig, 11. Aufl. 1974
[16]   G. Lehner, Elektromagnetische Feldtheorie, Springer-Verlag Berlin, Heidelberg 1990.
[17]   H.-J. Lugt: Vortex flow in nature und technology. Krieger publishing company 1995
[18]   J. C. Maxwell: A Treatise on Electricity & Magnetism, vol.2,
Chapter XX: Electromagnetic Theory of Light. Dover Publ. New York
[19]   Meinke, Gundlach: Hochfrequenztechnik, 4.Aufl. Springer-Verlag Berlin 1986
[20]   Mende, Simon: Physik, Gl. 10. 39, VEB-Leipzig, 4. Aufl. 1974
[21]   G. Mierdel: Elektrophysik, Huthig Verlag Heidelberg (1972) ISBN 3-7785-O243-3
[22]   O. Nachtmann: Phanomene und Konzepte der Elementarteilchenphysik,
            Vteweg, Braunschweig 1986, ISBN 3-528-O8926-1
[23]   W. Pauli: Aufsatze und Vortrage uber Physik und Erkenntnistheorie, Vieweg + Sohn, Braunschw. 1961
[24]   R.W. Pohl: Einfuhrung in die Physik, Bd.2 Elektrizitatslehre, 21.Aufl. Springer-Verlag 1975
[25]   H. Preussker: Der Wirbelring, Halstenbeck 2002
[26]   Shu-wen Zhou: Abnormal Physical Phenomena Observed When the Sun, Moon, and Earth are Aligned,
21st Century Science & Technology, Fall 1999, Vol. 12, No. 3, pp. 54-61.
[27]   K. Simonyi, Theoretische Elektrotechnik. 7. Aufl. VEB Verlag Berlin 1979. S. 921 - 924.
[28]   K. Simonyi: Physikalische Elektronik, Kap.: 8.4 Das Magnetron
[29]   K. Stierstadt: Physik der Materie, VCH, Weinheim 1989.
[30]   D. F. Taylor, On the Mechanism of Aluminium Corrosion in Metallized Film Capacitors,
IEEE Transactions on EI-19, August 1984, No. 4, pp. 288-293.
[31]   Jean-Pierre Vigier and the Stochastic Interpretation of Quantum Mechanics, selected and edited
Stanley Jeffers, Bo Lehnert, Nils Abramson, and Leve Chebotarev. Montreal: Apeiron, 2000.
[32]   A. Yializis, S. W. Cichanowski, D. G. Shaw: Electrode Corrosion in Metallized Polypropylene Capaci-
tors, Proceedings of IEEE, Int. Symposium on Electrical Insulation, Bosten, Mass., June 1980;
[33]   Zinke, Brunswig: Lehrbuch der Hochfrequenztechnik, 1. Bd., 3.Aufl. Springer-Verlag Berlin 1986

E.   Literature concerning Tesla and criticism of textbook physics

        [I] M. Cheney: Tesla, Man out of Time, Barnes & Noble Books, New York, 1993,
            ISBN O-88O29-419-1 und Omega-Verlag (1996) ISBN 3-93O243-O1-6
[2]   D. H. Childress: The Fantastic Inventions of Nikola Tesla, Adventures Unlimited Press (1993)
[3]   J. DeMeo: The Orgone Accumulator Handbook, ISBN O-9261855-O-7
[4]   G. Galeczki, P. Marquardt: Requiem fur die Spezielle Relativitat, Haag+Herchen (1997),
[5]   J. K. Kowalczynski: Critical Comments on the Discussion about Tachyonic Causal Paradoxes and the
Concept of Superluminal Reference Frame, Intern. Journal to theoretical Physics, Vol. 23, No. 1, 1984
[6]   J. Marinsek: Rationale Physik oder wissenschaftliche Science fiction?
dbv-Verlag fur die Technische Universitat Graz (1989) ISBN 3-7O41-O176-1
[7]   H. C. Montieth: The Unified Field Theorie, MUFON Symposium Proc, Seguin, Texas, 1980
[8]   F. Moser: BewuBtsein in Raum und Zeit - Grundlagen einer holistischen Weltauffassung auf
            wissenschaftlicher Basis, Leykam Graz, 1989
[9]   H. A. Nieper: Revolution in Technik, Medizin, Gesellschaft; MIT Verlag Oldenburg (1982)
[10]   O. Oesterle: Ausweg aus der Sackgasse, Ein ganzheitliches naturwissenschaftliches Weltbild,
            1. Aufl., Jupiter-Verlag, Bern 1996, ISBN 3-9O6571-16-5
            [11]   Rho Sigma (Dr. Rolf Schaffranke): Forschung in Fesseln, das Ratsel der Elektro-Gravitation.
            Ventla-Verlag, Wiesbaden (1972)
[12]   N. Tesla: III. The Singular Misconception of the Wireless (Famos Scientific Illusions), Electrical
            Experimenter, Feb. 1919, p. 732.
[13]   Tesla's verschollene Erfindungen, VAP, Wiesbaden (1994) ISBN 3-922367-93-3
[15]   N. Tesla: Complete Patents, TeslaBook Company (1983) ISBN O-96O356-8-2, daraus:
[16]   N. Tesla: Apparatus for Transmission of Electrical Energy, US-Patent-No.: 649,621, New York 1900,
            Dr. Nikola Tesla: Complete Patents pp318-321.

[17]   Nikola Tesla: Method of and Apparatus for Controlling Mechanism of Moving Vessels or Vehicles, US-Pat. 1898, Nr. 613,809. Complete Patents: S. 351

[18]   Nikola Tesla: Famous Scientific Illusions, III. The Singular Misconception of the Wireless, Electrical Experimenter, Feb. 1919, printed in Tesla Said, p. 197

[19]   Nikola Tesla: The Problem of Increasing Human Energy, The Century Monthly Magazine, June 1900, ISBN 1-882137-00-0, Page i-15

[20]   N. Tesla: Die Ubertragung elektrischer Energie ohne Drahte..., Electrical World and Engineer vom
         7.1.1905; Edition TeslaBd. 4, S. 131.

[21]   N. Tesla, New York Times vom 15.9.1908; Edition Tesla Bd. 6, S. 241.

[22]   Tesla Said (J.T.Ratzlaff), Tesla Book Company, ISBN 0-914119-00-1

[23]   N. Tesla: Experiments with Alternate Currents of High Potential and High Frequency, Lindsay Publications Inc, ISBN 0-917914-39-2

[24]   W. Theimer: Die Relativitatstheorie, A.Francke AG Verlag Bern (1977) ISBN 3-772O-126O-4

F.   Literature concerning geophysics, geology, geography and astronomy

[1]:   Kendrick Frazier: Das Sonnensystem, Time-Life Bucher, Amsterdam (1991).

[2]   Carey, S. W.: Theories of the Earth and Universe. University Press: 1-413, Stanford, California.

[3]   Oesterle, O.: Goldene Mitte: Unser einziger Ausweg, Universal Experten Verlag, Rapperswil (1997)

[4]   Hilgenberg, O. C: Vom wachsenden Erdball, Berlin 1933, Eigenverlag.
und Neues Jahrb. Geol. Palaont. Abh. 116, 1, Berlin (1962).

[5]   Jordan, P.: Die Expansion der Erde. Vieweg 1-180, Braunschweig (1966).

[6]   Robert Bauval und Graham Hancock: Das Geheimnis der Pyramiden, Der Schlussel zur Sphinx,
List Verlag (1996) und in S3 (Die grossen Ratsel VII) am 25.5.97

[7]   Mitton, S. (Herausg.): Cambridge Enzyklopadie der Astronomie
(The Cambridge Encyclopaedia of Astronomy), Orbis Verlag (1989).

[8]   Miller, R.: Driftende Kontinente, Time-Life Bucher, Amsterdam (1991).

[9]   Hermann Wild: Technologien von gestern, Chancen fur morgen, Jupiter-Verlag Bern 1996

[10]   Zecharia Sitchin: The Lost Realms, Knaur Verlag Munchen 1992, ISBN 3-426-04827-2

[l1]   Werner Raffetseder: Sonnenfinsternis, Hugendubel Verlag, Munchen 1999, ISBN 3-89631 -302-9

G.   Literature concerning free energy

        [1] R. L. Clark: Tesla Scalar Wave Systems, The Earth as a Capacitor,
        The Fantastic Inventions of Nikola Tesla, ISBN 0-932813-19-4

  [2]   H.-P. Thietz: Tatort Erde, VAP (1996), ISBN 3-922367-62-3

        [3] Louis Kervran: Biological Transmutations, s.a.:

[4]   J. Heinzerling: Energie aus dem Nichts, Bettendorf'sche Verlagsanstalt, 1. Aufl. 1996

[5]   J. Manning: The Coming Energy Revolution - The Search For Free Energy, Avery Publishing Group,
New York, USA, 1996 und Omega-Verlag, Dusseldorf 1997.

[6]   G. Hilscher: Energie fur das 3. Jahrtausend, VAP-Verlag Wiesbaden 1996

[7]   A. Schneider: Energien aus dem Kosmos, Jupiter-Verlag 1989

[8]   I. Schneider: Neue Technologien zur Freien Energie, Jupiter-Verl. 1994, S. 14

[9]   Dr. H. A. Nieper: Revolution in Technik, Medizin, Gesellschaft; MIT Verlag Oldenburg (1982)

[10]   Prof. Shinchi Seike: The Principles of Ultra Relativity, Space Research Institute, 1990, ISBN 915517-1
        [11]   M. Cheney: Nikola Tesla, Man out of Time, Barnes & Noble Books, New York, 1993,
        ISBN O-88O29-419-1 und Omega-Verlag (1996) ISBN 3-93O243-O1-6
        [12]   Prof. J. Gruber: Kalte Fusion und Raumenergie, Bericht zur 7. Internationalen Konferenz uber "kalte
        Fusion" vom 19.-24.4.1998 in Vanvouver, B.C., Kanada (Infinite Energy, Issue 19, 1998) und Bericht
        zum "International Symposium on New Energy" vom 23.-26.5.1997 in Denver, Colorado, USA
        (Denver-Bericht der Fern Universitat Hagen)

[13]   H.-J. Ehlers: Special 7, Raum & Zeit Dokumentation, EHLERS Verlag, Sauerlach, 1. Aufl. (1994)

[14]   O. Alexandersson: Lebendes Wasser; W.Ennsthaler Verlag Steyr, 1993

[15]   V. Schauberger: Die Entdeckung der Levitationskraft, Implosion 1995 Nr. 112

[16]   A. Waser (Herausg.): Die ratselhafte Natur - The Puzzling Nature, AW Verlag, Luzern (1996),
ISBN 3-9521O59-O-2

H.   Literature concerning medicine, biology and chemistry

[1]   U. Luttge, M. Kluge, G. Bauer: Botanik, 2. Aufl.- Weinheim, VCH (1994) ISBN 3-527-30031-7
[2]   N.Begich: Towards A New Alchemy, The Millenium Science, Earthpulse Press 1996, dt. Ubers.: Auf
den Spuren einer neuen Alchemie, Omega-Verlag 1997
[3]   Couto: Die kosmische Oktave, Synthesis Verlag Essen 1984
[4]   Prof. Dr. H. Heine: Grundregulation und Extrazellulare Matrix - Grundlagen und Systematik, Lehrbuch
         der biologischen Medizin, (1991) 2.Aufl. Hippokrates Verlag Stuttgart, Seite 63
[5] U. Warnke: Bioresonanztherapie - Wunsch und Wirklichkeit. Medizin transparent Nr.2/1996, S.36-37
[6] Dr. H. Clark: The Cure For All Diseases (1995), dt. Ubers.: Heilung ist moglich (1997) Knaur Verlag
[7]   Dr. Hulda Clark: The Cure for All Cancers (1993) New Century Press, USA, dt.Ubers.: Heilverfahren
         aller Krebsarten
[8]   Dr. Bodo Kohler: Biophysikalische Informations-Therapie, Gustav Fischer Verlag (1997)
[9]   Dr. Bodo Kohler: BITsyn, der neue Weg in der Informations-Medizin, Jubilaums-Schrift der Intern.
Arzte-Gesellschaft fur Biophysikalische Informations-Therapie, Bad Nauheim, 6.-8.10.2000.
[10]   Bioenergetische Messverfahren in Theorie und Praxis, Vortragsband der Gesellschaft fur Energetische
         und Informationsmedizin e.V., Universitat Stuttgart am 17.7.1999 und am 7.10.2000
         [11]   Dr. Johann Lechner: Storfelddiagnostik, Medikamenten- und Materialtest, Teil 2 aus der Reihe:
         Praxis
         der Ganzheitlichen Medizin und Zahnmedizin, Verlag Dr. E. Wuhr (2000)
[12]   M. Luscher: Der 4-Farben-Mensch, W. Goldmann, Munchen 1977
[13]   M.Luscher: Das Harmoniegesetz in uns, Econ-Verlag 1993
[14]   FA. Popp: Neue Horizonte in der Medizin, 2.Aufl. Haug Verlag Heidelberg 1987
[15]   M.Bischoff: Biophotonen, das Licht in unseren Zellen, 2001

J.   Literature concerning history and more peripheral subjects

[1]   David Ash, Peter Hewitt: Science of the gods, Gateway Books, Bath, 1990.
[2]   T.E.Bearden: Skalar Technologie, Michaels Verlag 2002, ISBN 3-89539-250-2.
[3]   Thomas Valone: Das Unipolarhandbuch, Michaels Verlag 2001, ISBN 3-89539-295-2.
[4]   R. Sheldrake: Sieben Experimente, die die Welt verandera konnten. Goldmann Verlag 1994
[5]   R. Sheldrake: Das schopferische Universum. Meyster Verlag Munchen 1983.
[6]   H.Ludeling: Handbuch der Radiaesthesie, Verlag Eike Hensch 1994, ISBN 3-927407-09-7.
[7]   Hensch: Radiaesthesie im landlichen Bauen und Siedeln, Arbeitskreis zur Landentwicklung in Hessen,
         W4, Wiesbaden 1987
[8]   H. Mayer, G. Winklbaur: Biostrahlen, Verlag ORAC, Wien 1989, 5. Auflage
[9]   Rohrbach: Radiasthesie, Physikalische Grundlagen und Anwendung in Geobiologie und Medizin, Haug
Verlag Heidelberg 1996.
[10]   R. Schneider: Einfiihrung in die Radiasthesie Teil II: Leitfaden und Lehrkurs ..., Oktogon-Verlag,
         Wertheim, 2. Aufl. (1984).
[11]   Lamer: Worterbuch der Antike, Kroner Verl. Bd.96
[12]   K. Schefold: Die Griechen und ihre Nachbam, Propylaen Kunstgeschichte Berlin Bd. 1
[13]   T. Kraus: Das romische Weltreich, Propylaen Kunstgeschichte Berlin Bd. 2
[14]   G. Gruben: Die Tempel der Griechen, Wissenschaftliche Buchgesellschaft Darmstadt 1986
[15]   E. Horst: Konstantin der Grosse, Eine Biographie, Classen Verlag 1985 Dusseldorf, 2.Aufl.
[16]   Vitruv (Marcus Vitruvius Pollio): Zehn Bucher uber Architektur, Ubers. von Dr. K. Fensterbusch,
         Wissenschaftl. Buchges. Darmstadt 1987,4. Aufl.
[17]   A. Springer: Das Altertum, A. Kroner Verl. Leipzig 1915, 10. Aufl.

Time = Space

Supreme scientific secrets in ancient India
(God's particle, Language, Arts, Temples & Sacred Geometry)

(Shatkona Yantra – Created by Sri Bhogar Siddhar currently in a temple in Sri Lanka, taken once in a year for rituals, believed to emanate supreme subtle divine energies.)

Thinking Hearts (Raguram Gopalan)

(raguramg@hotmail.com)

Thoughts from Thinking Hearts:

"Curious by nature, in a life so uncertain
Thirsty for the truth, which is so certain
I sought for some water in our Vedas - the fountain
Though I can't understand fully what it contains
I am amazed & speechless with what I could ascertain
This is just a speck of dust from that golden mountain
Thankful to my family for helping me in what I could attain
Grateful for the wisdom and works from all the chieftains
Wish I repay every atom of it through my gratuitous tearstains"

This effort is to share what I read, understood and enjoyed about the scientific aspects in ancient India which are codified in our language, arts and in 1000s of temples. The quotes and examples are predominantly in Tamil but I have tried to give the meaning which can enable a reader to grasp the meaning and progress. Any shortcomings you notice are purely reflective of my abilities to understand and express. There was not even an iota of intention to hurt any sentiments or beliefs of others. A piece of my mind is available @ http://raqsgopalan.blogspot.com

I initially thought that I shall reproduce a prayer from one of the books which I had read but at one fine moment I decided to capture my feelings in my own words. So I scribbled few lines in English summing up my feelings as above, few lines for the Sage of Kanchi and a prayer in Tamil with its meaning in English. You may understand this prayer better after you read this book.

January 2012, Version 1.0

Please feel free to copy and reproduce in whichever form or shape as you deem fit without any acknowledgements. In fact see how much of this can you share to dispel the ignorance. The more you share the better. ☺

If I have acknowledged any books or authors please recognize them and ensure that you either buy their books or donate to their cause. They deserve all the credits.

A divine soul
With a noble goal
Walked this earth
When divinity was dearth
Beyond any treasure's worth
To avoid our death & rebirth
Seek his guidance & grace
For he shall ever embrace!

முதல் வணக்கம் (Prayer)

உள்ளமே மூலமாகி, பரம்பொருள் கோலமாகி
விண்ணே ஒளியென்றாகி, ஓமே உணர்வென்றாகி
உணர்வே ஓமொளியாகி, ஓமொளி ஓமொலியாகி
ஆடலன் ஆட்டமன்றோ, அசைவுறுக் காலமாகி
(Mind is the source, primordial god's particle as the form,
The luminescent space, the Pranava as consciousness
Consciousness as the Om's Light, Om's Light as Om's sound
Isn't time a pulsation that's the dance of Lord of Dance?)

காலமே சீலமாகி, சீலமேக் கோலமாகி
கோலமே ஞாலமாகி, ஆதியும் அந்தமாகி
ஞாலமே மூலமாகி, அறிவுடன்ஆ னந்தமாகி
நடுவிலே நன்று நிற்கும் நாதன் தாளே நாட்டமாகி
Time creates Rhythm & order, Rhythm creates shapes
Shapes become universe, the beginning and the end
Universe merges with source, it is awareness & bliss
Ever searching for the feet of the divine & graceful mean

விண்ணிலே மண்ணுமாகி, மண்ணிலே விண்ணுமாகி
விண்ணிலே எண்ணமாகி, எண்ணமே எண்ணுமாகி
என்னிலே என்னைக்காண என் கண்ணிலே மணியுமாகி
நிர்மலப் பொருளாய் ஓங்கும் நிமலனடி போற்றுவோமே!
The mass in energy (Space), the energy in mass(earth)
The energy as thoughts, our thoughts as numbers (octets)
To me find me within me, he who stands as my eye's pupil
Beseech his feet who is devoid of may blemish

அம்பலத்தில் ஆடும் அவனை, அரங்கத்தில் துயிலும் அவனை
அரவத்தைச்சூடும் அவனை, அரவம்மேல் ஆடும் அவனை
பைரவித்துணைவன் அவனை, திருமகள் தலைவன் அவனை
நம் அறிவுக்கு இருளின் நமனை, பொற்பாதம் போற்றுவோமே!
The one who is dancing in the microbode, the one who is sleeping in arangam
The one who is wearing snakes, the one who is dancing on a snake
The one who is consort of Goddess Bhairavi, the one who is the Lord of goddess Lakshmi
Beseech his feet, the one who kills our mind's tamasic darkness

TABLE OF CONTENTS

1.TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 1 - INTRODUCTION

As a wise man said, **"Indians are the most ignorant about their rich past and scientific traditions."**

"Abheda Darsanam Gnanam*". Nothing defines what **wisdom is** better than these 3 words. **Experience of unity / oneness in all is wisdom.** The roots of Indian wisdom are captured in these 3 words that everything in this universe is the manifestation from a single source, and we can call it God or Consciousness. This naturally leads us to one of the mahavakya *"Pragyanam Brahma"* which means **"Consciousness is god".** But for people who are stingier with words and wants these 2 concepts to be put in just one word, then it is called **"Advaita".**

It is not very often that nature reveals itself its absolute oneness and the un-manifested interconnections. You consider yourself fortunate when you come across such knowledge in however small measure, even if it happens very rarely and even if you have an illusion that you have understood something. It has been very overwhelming for me to come across some of the details I have been reading and hearing and the dots I could connect – some of which I had decided to write as a book.

If you are interested in knowing how scientific ancient Indian Sanatana Dharma is and how well we have codified nature's secret in our languages, arts and temples and if you are interested in any of the following questions then you may like this book. Most of the aspects stated here as scientific proof has a reference to one or more of our scriptures and I would refer and quote them at various places.

- Would you be surprised to know that the size, shape, color and characteristics of God's particle are very clearly documented in our scriptures at least 12000 years back? What the scientists at CERN are spending billions of $, is well documented and we will discuss the characteristics of God's particle in this book.

- Would you want to know how **Time = Space** and more over time is nothing but the vibration of space? If I tell you that this was known us Indians at least 12000 years back and currently available in a written form would you believe?

- When you throw a stone in water / pond the ripples that form take the shape of a circle (in 2D) / sphere (in 3D). Can you guess what the shape of the ripple would be if you throw the same stone in space?

- What is the similarity between Poetry, classical music, Classical dance like Bharatanatyam, Sculpture and a building? Apart from the fact that we don't clearly understand any of them in depth what is the similarity? Would you be surprised if I say that all are essentially the same and in fact a **well constructed building is nothing more than a frozen music** and the relationship between all the above confirms to a single grammar documented 12000 years + back ?

- Would you be interested in knowing how $E = mc^2$ an equation stated by our great Einstein has been known to us for years and not just that but we know the root of this energy and how to engineer it with precise formulas? Would you be surprised that this is the basis our language?

- What if I say that the age of the universe, every astronomical unit of the bodies, big bang theory, string theory, God's particle etc are all documented and they are all codified in our temples?

- You would have heard about the golden ration Φ but do you know the philosophical significance of Φ and how it is derived? Moreover would be interested in knowing the significance of key numbers and ratio like 0, 1, 5, 8, 9 and $\sqrt{2}, \sqrt{3}, \sqrt{5}$? What is I say that $\sqrt{3}$ can be correlated with "**Iyengar Namam"?** Does it sound funny? What if there is a deep mathematical and philosophical significance? And how are all these ratios related?

- As a wise man said that **'Mathematics is the language of the gods".** What if this formula is codified in our texts from which we understand the God's particle, its shape, characteristics and its manifestation?

- What if I tell you that sound is a subset of light and sound merges with light at a point and that is at the root consciousness? Any non-takers for this?

- If you agree on the above then **Sabda Brahman** or the belief that sound is god merges with something higher, isn't this contradictory? Also why many religions did believed that "**Word is god".** Was it a mere belief or was there any scientific reason behind it?

- What is the correlation between Carnatic music and a human being's height?

- What if I say that the Mayan from South America and the Mayan from South India are one and the same?

These are some of the questions which might get addressed in this book. I am going to quote a series of references and books and links to understand and learn more about these topics and I would request you to utilize them if you are interested in these topics.

This may not only refer you to the experts but also can help you overcome any weakness I have in understanding and articulating some of these topics. Some of the topics may touch upon religious beliefs (mostly Hinduism) but if you read with an open mind you would notice the underlying science behind it.

I would be happy if any of these blogs motivate and inspire you to explore the roots of our tradition and knowledge and give you an insatiable hunger for knowledge, wisdom to pursue the nature and its secrets.

May the ancient Sanskrit quote "May I meditate on the supreme truth "Satyam Param deemahi", resonate within you as it does within me.

Happy reading!

PS:

Abheda Darshanam Gnanam, Dhyanam Nirvishayam Manam;
Snaanam mano mala thyagam, Showchamindriya Nigraham", says the Upanishad.

The real Gnana is seeing all as one, real Dhyana is controlling the Manas from all temptations, the real snana or Bathing is Cleansing of All Mindly impurities, not physical impurities alone and real Showcha or cleanliness is controlling the Indriyas, this controlling of Indriyas, emotions, weaknesses and temptations.

I am also quoting parts of Kahlil Gibran here,

Your hearts know in silence the secrets of the days and the nights.
But your ears thirst for the sound of your heart's knowledge.
You would know in words that which you have always known in thought.
You would touch with your fingers the naked body of your dreams.
And the treasure of your infinite depths would be revealed to your eyes.
But let there be no scales to weigh your unknown treasure;
And seek not the depths of your knowledge with staff or sounding line.
For self is a sea boundless and measureless.
Say not, "I have found the truth," but rather, "I have found a truth."

2. TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 2 - SOUND MERGES IN LIGHT

What if I say that "**Sound is a subset of light".** Scientifically you may agree that both are electro-magnetic vibrations at different frequencies in the spectrum though one may not be the subset of another.

So, What if I say that every other frequency is the subset of light? I am sure many may disagree. Some of the religious pundits may claim that "**Sound is god**" which I am not disputing but "**light too is god"** and as we progress towards the primordial state sound merges into light.

Let me try to explain this with a simple exercise. Please sit in a place with a calm mind – few deep breaths may help.

- Imagine that I am TALKING to you and avoid thinking that you are reading this blog.
- I am going to TELL the following 5 words and you are going to LISTEN to it. Please just observe what happens within you.
  - CAT, BOAT, MOM, DEVIL, BEST FRIEND

The following are the fundamentals of perception as per Hindu scriptures:

- Every word has a meaning (Let us ignore the so called meaningless words for the time being.).
- Every meaning invokes a form or shape within our mind.
  - For example when I say "**MOM"** you associate this word with your mother and the picture / image of your mother is perceived inside. You need to be little more observant to understand this. **The fundamental principle is that**
  - **"Every word is first associated its meaning then the meaning is associated with a form. The form is associated with a Guna (Quality) and then the quality or Guna is associated with its experience. What is stored inside is just the experience.**

Let me TRY to explain the abstract concept of consciousness as below:

- **Consciousness / existence exist in 3 states (deeper explanation is 5 / 7 states but we will discuss the simpler alternative).**
  - **Formless state called Experience / feeling / bhava. This is the super conscious state.**
  - **Gross state with form which has physical attributes. This is the conscious state.**
  - **In-between state (Not formless and no form) called Guna state which has subtle quality attributes. This is the Subconscious state. If this is difficult to comprehend for you please imagine "Egg" which is in-between the formless and state with form. Gotcha?**

Let's look at an example. Rose is a flower. When someone tells you **"ROSE"** then the following happens:

- The sound "rose' associates with a flower usually. (I am ignoring it being a name of your girl friend ☺). So here the word is associated with its meaning.
- This flower is associated with red color and perhaps with thorns. Here the sound does not exist anymore but only a form. **Yo!, the sound has merged into light.**
- The third step is - this form is associated with a quality which is fragrance of a rose. For someone sensitive they can smell the rose when they think about it. How else could we salivate at the thought / smell of a favorite dish if this step does not exist?
- Now the last step is, this quality invokes an experience and hence a feeling. This rose may be associated with your inner self for love and hence the emotion of love surfaces. This is called **Bhava / Rasa** in Sanskrit.

If you are not clear about this then please do not move to the next part and think or discuss about it. A little contemplation would help you understand this **5 stage** process of perception.
'SOUND – MEANING – FORM – QUALITY (GUNA) – EXPERIENCE (FEELING / BHAVA)'

Our ancient forefathers knew this science and interconnection. Let me now quote these Slokas as an example from Bharatnatyam, which talks about this linkage.

Kanteenaalambayet geetam, Hasteenaardham Pradarsayet,
Chakshurbhyaam darsayeet bhaavam, Paadaabhyam taalamaacharet.

According to Nandikeshara the dancer should sing with the mouth, express the meaning of the song with hand gestures, her eyes should express the emotions or bhava, the tala, the beat or rhythm should be done with her feet. Further he goes on to say –

'Yato hastas tato drushti, Yato drushitis tato manaha
Yato manahas tato bhavo, Yato bhavas tato Rasaha'

'Where the hand goes, there should follow the eyes, Where the eyes move, mind should follow it,
Where the mind follow, Bhava or emotion is created, & lastly when Bhava is created the sentiment or Rasa will arise.'

All the Mudras or gestures represent word when held at a particular position around the frame of the body and when used in a particular way.

Alas we Indians have ignored this great science & art and its linkages and are like ignorant fools following the meaningless western tradition and dances!

As a wise man said, **"Indians are the most ignorant about their rich past and scientific traditions."**

Happy reading!

3.TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 3 – VAAK-ARTHA - IMPORTANCE OF WORD

'SOUND – MEANING – FORM – QUALITY (GUNA) – EXPERIENCE (FEELING / BHAVA)'

In the **5 stage** process of perception, one important factor which I missed is the **"Self / EGO"** which interprets the **Guna** to an experience. For example when I say Dog, the **'Self'** interprets Dog to a **loyal friend or a bike chaser or a rabbies generator.** Essentially what is the quality of dog mean to me? If you understand this process this explains the uniqueness between individuals or the root cause of differences in a society.

I am also going to add but not going to focus on the fact that the inputs are never limited to sound and when see a picture the process of perception starts with step 3. Just to poke the individuals who think "**Sound / Word is the only god – Sabda Brahman**, please tell me - when you see a picture and when there is no sound associated with it, where is **God as Sabda Brahman in this situation**?

Does that mean that the very important Hindu belief that the Sound **"Om is sabda Brahman or god"** does not hold any meaning? It certainly does and I shall share my thoughts on it – continue reading.

What is the importance of Word?

The greatest of Indian poet **'Kalidas'** said

**"Vaak artha viva samprakthov vaakartha prathipathaye
Jagadha: pitharov vandhe parvathe parameswarow"**

he compared Lord Shiva and Shakti like sound (Shakti) and meaning (Shiva). Both sound and meaning are inseparable. You would now understand the wisdom behind this sloka since there is no sound without a meaning. Also **Sabda Brahman** merges with the **Artha Brahman** and both are inseparable. Here Artha Brahman is the light and the meaning of the word. Remember we say that **'Throw some light"** when we don't understand something.

In Tamil பொருள் **(porul)** means "a thing" and it also means "meaning". We will see how பரம்பொருள் **(Paramporul)** is the Lord Shiva as a God's particle and how he is referred to as the meaning too. The same applies to Sanskrit where **"artha"** means **wealth / things – remember Arthasastra?** And it also refers to **"meaning"** as in the above sloka. How rich these languages are?

And in **Abhirami Andadi, bhattar** sees devi as **"Arthanareswara"** and confirms us that the grace of devi will brings us both richness and mukthi. **"Sollum porulum ena nadamadum"**...

A word is made up of letters called Akshara in Sanskrit. The meaning of Akshara is that which cannot be broken down further. ie. Word can be broken down to letters but it cannot be broken down further. A letter has a form like **"A"** and has a sound associated with it. This means the light and sound are merged in a letter. As per the principle stated above in the process of perception, the primordial state is one where light and sound is merged into each other.

If you don't dispute the philosophy that everything merges into god at the primordial state and at this state, sound and light are inseparable, and then you would agree that an Akshara is **God / Brahman.** Each letter has significance and meaning in Indian languages especially Tamil and Sanskrit. **A word is a combination of Form (Light), Sound and meaning and these are first 3 aspects of perception which takes us from a gross state to a formless subtle un-manifest state.**

Hence the statement from New Testament **"In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God"** reflects the same principle.

But as per Hindu scriptures Veda is the breath of god (not word of god) or the aural vibration of consciousness cannot take you to the state of moksha. Words don't take you to God, it can help you in the process but has its limit, since the sound and meaning merges into something else as we move towards more subtle space.

This is what my friend Kambar said in Kambaramayanam as **"வேதமும் முடிவு காணா மெய்ப்பொருள் வெளிவந்தெய்தி மா துயர் துடைத்த வார்த்தை மறுப்பரோ!!**. This means that the supreme truth who could not be found by Vedas came and solved the problem of an elephant, can someone dispute this?

Every word or Akshara has four states **Para, Pashyanti, Madhyama and Vaikari. Vaikari** is the fourth state where the sound is audible to us. If I recite something mentally then the sound has 3 states only and these 4 states signify as to how a feeling (bhava) becomes thought and thought becomes form and then a sound. Just note here that as per Frank outlaw, it's the thoughts which are primordial but as per our scriptures it is feeling or Bhava or deep rooted desire or also known as vasanas which drive your thoughts. So Frank's quotes are half baked plagiarism.

In a work called Tarka Samgraha, we have classified 9 different physical attributes (substances / dhravyas) and 24 different qualities / GUNA in all. If you are interested reading more about this, please read these blogs or the original work.

http://ragsgopalan.blogspot.com/2010/09/vedic-perspective-matter-and-its_14.html This is a 3 part series.
http://ragsgopalan.blogspot.com/2008/11/part-1-perception-art-of-seeing-things.html This is a 2 part series.

To summarize this topic:

- Broadly consciousness exists in 3 states.
- The process of perception if understood well would throw a lot of secrets about nature.
- The 5 stage process of perception **"Sound – meaning - Form – Guna – Bhava"** is a simplistic way of portraying this.
- Sound merges into light and light is worshipped as God in most of the religions and belief. We can explore little more of this in the future sections.
- A word is a unique combination where Light, Sound and meaning merges and hence it is considered as god. This word represents **Arthenareeswara or yinyang or Star of David**.

In the future sections let us explore as to what is the relationship between Maths and God and some of the critical numbers and its philosophical and scientific significance.

As a wise man said, **"Indians are the most ignorant about their rich past and scientific traditions."**

Happy reading

4.Time = Space Series. Part 4 – Scientific languages – Tamil & Sanskrit

One of the main reasons I believe as to why our wisdom has degraded so much in the last century is our ignorance and reluctance to learn our rich language. Our language offers richness not just in literary sense but is supremely scientific too. I am going to touch upon just 3 to 4 aspects of it which I knew and understand at a fundamental level and request you to learn your mother tongue well.

Many of my friends don't exhibit a sense of remorse when they say **'I can understand Tamil but can't read or write it**". I wanted to tell them how much in life do they miss in terms of knowledge and richness. This is not just about Tamil but every major Indian language is rich in its own way. Since my mother tongue is Tamil, I am going to articulate some of the science in it.

Vigyan / Vigyanam (விண் ஞானம்) means Science:

But most importantly for this series I wanted to take the word called Science as meant in Tamil and Sanskrit. A word always can be broken down to its dhatus for its exact meaning in Tamil and Sanskrit. Some examples below:

- Science in Tamil is **Vigyanam and in Sanskrit is Vigyan**. This is split as **Vin** and **Gnanam / Gyan**. **Vin means space and Gyan means knowledge. Hence according to Indian system science means it is the nature / knowledge of the space.** This has very deep significance since western science has not agreed the existence of space for a long time and their gross and materialistic approach prevented them from seeing the most subtle component and its nature. We were masters of it ages back. Most of the questions in Chapter 1 would be answered based on the knowledge of space – Vigyan.

- **Universe is called as Brahmanda** in Sanskrit. Brahma + Anda which literally means a big egg. This means we knew that the galaxy is elliptical in shape ages back and it required hubble telescope in 1950 to tell us that.

- **Bhoogol** means **Earth (Study of) / Geography – This Splits as Bhoo +Gol.** Bhoo means Earth and Gol means round. We did not throw stones at a scientist as late as 17th century when he said that earth is round and not flat. We would have laughed our heart out and ignored him.

Be it the age of the universe, all of the astronomical measurements, health, spirituality etc, many of us need a white skin with blue eyes to tell us that what we knew was right and they have certified it. When we decide to come out of this mentality then the process of reclaiming our rich heritage shall start.

Origin of Universe and linkage with Tamil:

The initial evolutionary process for the universe consisted of 5 stages states Aintiram. You can imagine that these are the movements of particles during the Big bang. They are அமிழ்தல், இமிழ்தல், குமிழ்தல், உமிழ்தல், தமிழ்தல்.

- Withdrawl (Amizhdal)
- Imizhdal (Overflowing)
- Kumizhdal (clustering round in an order)
- Umizhdal (Emitting)
- Tamizhdal (resulting into a well defined form)

These are the first stages from the Big bang till a well defined shape is formed. Now the last level is called Tamizhdal which results in a well defined form. This state has emanated from the Pranava and not been created by some one. Hence a language as rich with the sweetness of inherent order, originating from the luminosity of the original particle is called Tamil. Tamil is word based on the final resultant state called Tamizhdal (தமிழ்தல்).

I shall address the other 2 interesting aspects that include a Chicken and Egg analogy for Energy and matter conundrum in the next blog.

As a wise man said, **"Indians are the most ignorant about their rich past and scientific traditions."**

Happy reading!

5. TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 5 – ENERGY & MATTER CONUNDRUM

Energy and Matter concept in formation of letters:

The concept of Energy and matter is not new to us and does not start with Einstein's days of E=mc^2. Let us look at how our letters are formed from Aksharas then people would know that the concept of Energy and Matter is old as our language. In Tamil there are two kinds of Aksharas **உயிர் எழுத்து** - **Uyir Ezhuthu (Life / Energy letters – 12 letters) and மெய் எழுத்து** - **Mei Ezhuthu (Body / Matter letters – 18 letters).** Both put together it is 30 letter pack for Tamil as alphabets. Now both have to combine to give letters called **"body with life"** which are called **uyir mei Ezhuthu**. This combines to form 18*12 which is 216 letters as **Uyir Mei Ezhuthu**. For example **க்+ அ = க** in Tamil and **क् + अ = क** in Sanskrit.

So the formation of letters itself is a science where Matter (Body) combines with Energy (Life) and then the living organisms (Body – life letters) are formed.

I want to ask you a **Chicken & Egg** question here which is very relevant to today's scientists. Did the energy come first or is it the matter that came first? Modern science is still scratching its head. I can answer this question in 2 ways, first is obviously using language as a science.

- In the above example **க்+ அ = க**, **க்** is the body and **அ** is life. So as per our language sciences be it Tamil or Sanskrit the matter is formed first and then the life came and attached to it. This is very well documented in Tamil scriptures as follows:

உடம்புடன் உயிர் வந்து ஒன்றுவது இயல்பே - தொல்காப்பியம் . This is over 2500 years old which states that life comes and joins a body in language and this is nature.

மெய்யொளி உயிரொலி சிவணுதல் இயல்பே – ஐந்திறம். This is over 12000+ years old which states that same thing and adds that body is like light and life is like sound and they merge and this is siva's nature. **This certainly means that both Body and life are not formed at the same – as popularly believed. Life comes and joins the body to give a living being – in the above case the letters are the living beings.**

The second reference I am going to take for the same concept is our **Yogic / Siddha / Ayurvedic** science as to how fetus is formed in mother's womb. As per our (Siddha) belief the conception of a child in a mother's womb happens as follows:

- **The first organ that is formed for the fetus is the cells of the Eyes (Single Eye)**. This eye cell starts vibrating due to its heat and multiplies as 2 eyes and then as the whole body. This is the vibration seen in the initial days of the fetus and not the heart beat. As per modern medical science the heart takes shape only by the end of the 8th week and not before. I am requesting someone to validate this.
- **Life comes to this body at the 3rd month of conception only**. This is the belief as per Ayurvedic and Siddha science.
- Instances of the third month natural abortions are very high than the later months based on the above reasons. This means that the life is not destined for that matter / life force is not sufficient enough.
- **How many of you know that the size of eyes never change as you grow and stays the same from the time we were born,** while all other organs undergo growth?
- Also the eyes hold a very important significance in the spiritual science which I shall address later. The eyes are the seat of Sun god and are characterized by heat and light.

It is through the heat in the eyes the subtle became a gross living being in this world and if the living being wants to merge back with the subtle – which is the process of Samadhi then the living beings should use their eyes, increase the heat in the eyes and start the devolution process. This is a supreme secret kept by the sages even in today's world. **You may want to ask any spiritual school as to why they recommend meditation with eyes fully or half open instead of closed eyes? Ask yourselves why the free masons and other secret societies use eye as one of their symbols?** We shall address this later.

Now you want to answer the Chicken and Egg analogy to the Energy and Matter conundrum based on the above 2 thoughts, we can conclude it is the matter which came first. We shall try to explain this based on Space sciences a little later.

Masculine and Feminine names based on ending letters:

I am also going to give you as to how Indians distinguished masculine from feminine names. **Kanchi Maha periyava, the Sage of Kachi** had explained this beautifully in his **"Arul Vakku"**. I am giving a gist of it here just to conclude this:

- **Masculine names:** All the names shall end with the phonetic a, im, in , ir, aha etc. Examples are Ram, Shyam, Raman, Kannan, Kishan, Vivek, Adam. So phonetically names like Catherine is a masculine name because it ends with "in" phonetically.

- **Feminine names:** All names ending with phonetics aa, e, I, oo etc. Examples are Radha, Ramya, Savithri, Gayathri, Uma, Rosy, Isabella etc. Same way phonetically Joshua is a feminine name.

Vishnu and Lalitha sahasranamam follows this rule and hence one invokes Shakthi as lalitha and the other invokes Purusha as Vishnu.

Just to conclude this part, I think we looked at how science is an integral part of our language formation and for us science has always been about the knowledge and nature of the space and we believed that space manifested itself as the physical world. So in the next few parts we shall look at how this manifestation has happened and other interesting aspects.

I would conclude this part with a earnest request that please encourage your kids to learn their mother tongue – to read and write and you would not have done anything better than this to advance their spiritual growth and adding richness to their life.

As a wise man said, **"Indians are the most ignorant about their rich past and scientific traditions."**

Happy reading!

6. TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 6 – THE UNFOLDING SELF - UNIVERSE HAS EVOLVED AND WAS NOT CREATED

As per many scriptures in Hinduism this universe has evolved from itself and not created by someone. If you want to quickly ask as me as to what Brahma, Vishnu and Rudra mean – I would attribute them to different process heads in this evolution. They are all different aspects of the same consciousness based on their state of being in the process of evolution / devolution. This is my understanding but let us avoid this discussion here.

Here I am indebted and thankful to the nobel soul **Late. Dr. Ganapathi Stapathi,** (http://www.vastuved.com/life.htm) who not only unraveled the Vaastu science – the science of Space and time but also brought to light 2 important books which were over 12000+ years old written in Tamil by **Mahamuni Maayan.**

Mamuni Maayan is believed to be the same person who is popularly known in **South America as Mayan** and the 2012 phenomenon based on Mayan calendar. Dr. Ganapathi has established proofs that the pyramids in Middle East, the temple architecture in India and the structures in Mexico and Guatemala confirm to a single Science and Mathematics seen in all these works.

At the end of the blog I am listing few books which helped me understand this topic but most of the books (**Aintiram and Pranava Veda**) are out of print now and if you are lucky, you would get some of them. Now let us understand briefly how this evolution process has come about. According to Mayans' Aintiram:

- The free space is the unified field of energy and matter and source of all forms that we see in material world. That is why we were defined science as **Vingyanam**. This space consists of very minute particle called **Vinporul, nunporul, Sittrambalam, Paramanu, Oliporul, Microbode** (விண்பொருள், நுண்பொருள், சிற்றம்பலம், பரமாணு, ஒளிப்பொருள்) and in many names. You can pick what you like. I am going to use **Paramaanu** in the rest of the blog.

- The whole process of evolution is a 5 stage process. (Keep noting the importance of 5 and at the background remember Shiva is represented by Panchakshara mantra (Na~Ma~Si~Va~ya).

So what is the five stage process?
  o This space is called as Moolam (Source).
  o This Moolam starts vibrating and this vibration of the space is called Kalam (Absolute Time and not physical time. We will refer this as time only).
  o This Kalam (time) vibrates to a mathematical resonance called Seelam (Rhythm).
  o This Seelam as it resonates creates Kolam (Shapes – Circles, cubes etc).
  o This Kolam becomes our visible Universe which is called Gnalam.

- So it is **MOOLAM (Source) – KALAM (TIME) – SEELAM (RHYTHM) – KOLAM (SHAPE) – GNALAM (UNIVERSE). மூலம் - காலம் - சீலம் - கோலம் – ஞாலம்**, these are 5 stages of evolution.

This means that the Space itself becomes spatial forms and time is the instrument that creates, sustains and destroys. Lord Siva in Tamil is also called as **Kalan (காலன்)** as to who controls time since Kalam **காலம்** is time.

To put it differently, un-manifest state when pulsates becomes absolute time and this is the creative energy. The process of pulsation confirms to a mathematical order and we will see this order in detail later. You may now understand the phrase that "**Time creates, sustains and destroys**". Since if there is no pulsation then nothing happens.

For those who need quote from a foreigner to convince themselves of this can be referred to the **Bertrand Russel's** quote "**What we perceive as qualities of matter are differences in periodicity".**

I shall quote some from the oldest literatures for reference below:
காலமே எவைக்கும் மூலம், காலமே மூல ஆற்றல்
காலமே கோலத் தோற்றம், காலமே ஞாலத் தோற்றம்… *Maha muni Mayan from Aintiram*

காலக்கூறே கணக்கியலாகி... Time splits as Maths in proportion it pulsates.
Vyasa says in Adi parva chapter 1, shloka 249, says the same thing that Time Creates, sustains and destroys everything.

**kalah srijati bhutani kalah sanharati prajah
sanharantah prajah kalam kalah shamyate punah!!**

The same is quoted as **"Vastur eva Vaastu"** which means the un-manifest Paramaanu which is called **Vastu** (with Single a) becomes **Vaastu (gross form – with two aa)**. You can relate this **Vaastu** as the building science which is grossly misused and misrepresented and commercialized in today's TV programs. We will address the science in it later.

I shall leave this part with this thought, the space is considered as **Nataraja (Shiva) – subtle component and Ranganatha is considered as the Earth component**. So Shiva and Vishnu are two aspects of the same seed. We will see more scientific proof of this later.

**"Shivasya hridayam vishnur, Vishnoscha hridayam shivah:" and
"Shivaya Vishnu rupaya Vishnave Shiva rupine"**

Vishnu is the heart of Shiva and likewise Shiva is the heart of Vishnu and they both are the representation of each other.

Now if you are clear about the five stage process of evolution we can delve into each and every aspect of this in little more detail that would answer everything.

Ref: Check out all the ones here. Key recommendations are item 6, 11, 14 and 43.
http://www.vastuved.com/publication.html

7. TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 7 – THE CHIDAMBARA RAGASYAM & THE GOD'S PARTICLE

There were 2 questions I had confronted myself when I was reading these passages. They are:

- Why did the unmanifest space energy started pulsating and became absolute time?
- What did the unmanifest space energy contain? Was it a point of singularity as the modern scientists wanted us to believe? If so then how much mass was concentrated in that point which is obviously very difficult to believe.

The answer to the first question is here **"The self unfolds itself for its self – Bhagavad Gita".** There is no convincing answer to the rational mind as to what the reason that the consciousness which was passive decided to become dynamic and started pulsating. So let's leave this for the time being.

But the second question is answered very comprehensively. But before we get into the details of what it is, I want you to check Figure 1. This gives the overall picture of evolution and the five stage process. I also want you to recollect the "EGG" state which is called as the GUNA state where in the form and sound manifests. They say that this pulsation started with OM. This OM as popularly believed is just not an aural form but also has a visual form and that is light. We will discuss about this later in detail.

But let us focus on the actual second question as to what the contents of this Space energy were:

- The space is filled with **Paramanu or Microbodes** which are tiny particles. These are the **God's (Higgs Boson) particle** our CERN scientists are after. http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Higgs_boson

- Now, we are probably a year away before CERN publish the results when this blog is published. I would not be surprised to see the results of that experiment is closely aligned with what is available in our scriptures and produced in this blog.

- The primal manifest form of the unmanifest is a **square** (primal wave pattern). This is the shape of the **Paramanu or Microbode**. This is very luminescent, means filled with light and on a 3D plane this shape is a **Square Cuboid**.

- A **Square Cuboid** is a shape which is equal in all sides – say of unit measure which is the smallest measure possible and has **6 faces, 8 vertices, and 12 edges.** You can start figuring out in Hinduism, why the idols of Lord Shiva and Lord Muruga has six faces, 12 eyes, hands etc.

- You may want to note that 6 faces can be represented in 2 ways as below. Figure 3 is Lord Muruga's star or a Star of David in 3D which has 6 faces and 12 edges, popularly known as **Tetrahedron**. **So don't be surprised if the Boson Higgs particle is of the same shape.**
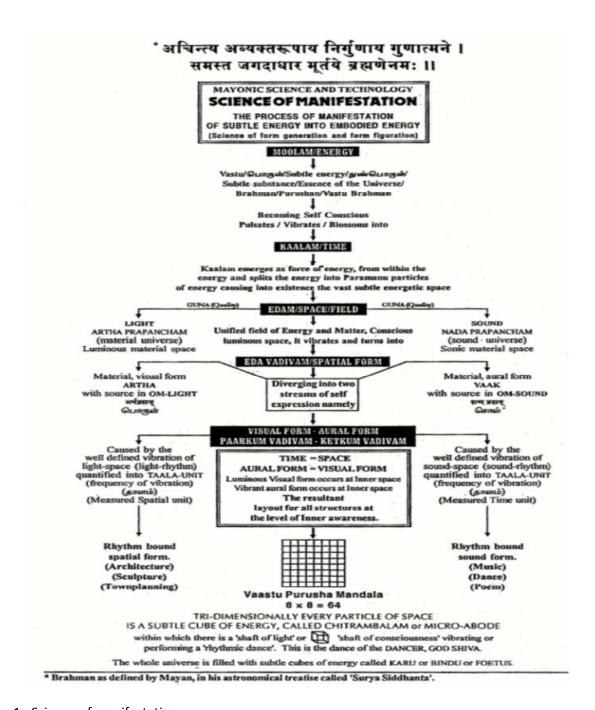
Figure 1: Science of manifestation
(Courtesy: Pranava Veda by Mamuni Mayan – 12000+ years back, recreated by Dr. Ganapathi Sthapati)
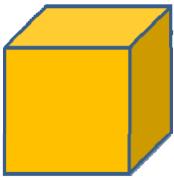
Figure 2: A cube with all equal sides   Figure 3: A tetrahedron (from Internet)

- The free space is packed with cubical atoms of energy. They are building blocks of the structure of the universe. **So what is clear is that all these atoms existed in a "resonant state of non-vibration" before the so called "big bang" happened or the pulsation started.**

- **It did not burst out of a single point as popularly believed. Alternatively, in space every point is the center. When the pulsation started these cubical atoms underwent a shape change and manifested as shapes and forms.**

- This cube is called as **micro-abode called Sittravai / Chittrambalam** (mini hall in Tamil). This is **secret in Chaidambaram, Sage Appar** (**Chidambara ragasyam**) realized. Chidambaram is a Shiva temple associated with Space energy and when you go to sanctorum you would not find any idol but just empty space with some lights there. This is to signify this concept of **Paramanu** which is **luminescent and is a Cuboid in shape**. This is the smallest particle possible and can be called as **'God's particle".**

- The micro space, in the cubical shape is fetus or Garbha. This is known as **Vinkaru** in Tamil. This micro abode is the repository of light and sound.

- The free space is Light and the Light is Moolam or source of the universe and universal forms. Light is Brahman, Atman, Vastu Brahman – Nunporul in Tamil.

In the subsequent blogs we will correlate String theory, Brahma Sutra, Nataraja, Vishnu and how they are all contained in order and proportion in pulsation.

Happy reading!

Ref: A good read **Fabric of the universe, Jessie J Mercay**.

8. TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 8 – CHARACTERISTICS OF THE GOD'S PARTICLE (PARAMAANU)

This part is going to be a bit controversial hence read it with an open mind. Per our scriptures when analyzed deeply we can state that **"At the beginning it was just Consciousness (Pragnanam) that was luminescent with unmanifested potential energy and residing at resonant state of non-vibration. This energy was un-manifest and was present as Paramaanu or Microbode or Vinporul aka a subatomic particle. Yes! It was a particle without vibration and was at resonant state of non-vibration.**

The entire Space was supposed to be filled with these particles only and these were primal potential matter which is ever lasting.

Now let us ask few questions and see how our scriptures answer this:

1. **What was the shape of this particle?**
We have already answered that. In 2D it is square and in 3D it is a cuboid with all equal sides. Please note that in space it is always 3D and not 2D. It has 6 faces, 8 vertices, and 12 edges. This is known is current scientific community as **Tetrahedron**.

2. **What is inside the Microbode or Subatomic particle?**
This is a very interesting question. Our scriptures say that it is purely space inside but with an energy grid.

3. **What is this energy grid and what is its shape?**
It says that it is an 8x8 energy grid inside this microbode. This essentially means it is a square energy grid of 64 squares inside this Paramaanu.

4. **What is this color of this Paramaanu?**
It is luminescent and hence the golden color of the light is what it is associated with. **"Hiranyavarnnaam harineem**.." says Sri Suktha in the vedas, confirming the color of this Paramanu. Their variations exist but the fundamental one is of golden color.

5. **What is this size of this God's particle?**
It is calculated to be ~133 nm. We will see this in detail later.

6. **What is the significance of the energy grid?**
For the time being let me state that anything subtle is a function of 8 and anything gross is a function of 9. Let me also add that **iChing –** which is a Chinese divination book and the hexagram which deals with the Science of the subtle is in an 8x8 square matrix. **The mental game Chess is played in an 8x8 square.**

You would find 8 is the number or dimension for the subtle. We will see the importance of 8 and 9 and how beautifully these proportions adorn everything in nature in our daily life.

7. Are these particles faster than light?

Frankly I have not read a direct answer to this question but since this particle itself is light the velocity of this particle cannot be faster than light. This is my opinion. Modern experiments are suggesting that it could be faster than light. In **Mahabharatha, Yakshaprasna, the Yaksha will question this to King Yudhishtra as to "what is fastest thing in this world"**? King Yudhishtra would reply as **"mind"**.

Some of the sages have interpreted that since Consciousness is omnipotent and ever connected - the communication is seamless, instantaneous and not subjected to the concept of distance. The example given is if there is a pain in your leg, it does not take time to travel to your head. It is instantaneous and hence the whole universe should be considered as a living organism.

So to conclude on this question the particles are not faster than light but each particle is filled with intelligence and consciousness (just like a human cell) and their communication to anything is not subject to concept of distance. If our scientists come back and tell us that these particles are faster than light, then wait for someone else to tell us a little later that it isn't faster than light. ☺

8. Ok. Who has seen these particles and give me empirical proof?

परमानुरिति प्रोक्तं योगिनाम दृष्टि गोचरम ! **(Paramaanuriti proktam Yoginaam, drishti gocharam)** says **Mayamatham.** This means the **microspace** or **Paramaanu** is visible to the trained contemplatives and meditators only. One quick example as proof is the **Temple in Chidambaram** which represents **Space tattva** where the temple is built around the concept with enough documentation on it.
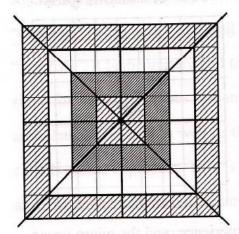
But we have been trained under Lord Macauly's education system and how can we accept this as proof which is subjective and superstitious. If I may ask please tell me how many of us have seen the electrons or protons? Do we not believe everything when someone tells us in English?

It is true that because of its existence we can see its manifestations and results of some experiments in our day today world. So we will look at tons of manifestations which we have been in nature as we progress. I would like us to be philosophically very clear as to what these things mean which we have been blindly following. For the time being please note down your questions and I am positive that this would be answered in due course.

Our sages have not only seen this, but have given the dimensions of this and the mathematical formula to manage this energy. We will see all of them. After reading all of them if you still don't want to believe in our scriptures, then may be CERN's result if it's in the same lines would prove it for you.

Happy reading!

MANDUKA VAASTU MANDALA
8 × 8 = 64 modulated spaces

PARAMA SAAYIKA VAASTU MANDALA
9 × 9 = 81 modulated spaces

Brahma pada (the first belt around the central energy point)	: 2×2=4 padas
Deivika pada (the second concentric belt)	: 12 padas
Maanusha pada (the third concentric belt)	: 20 padas
Paisachika pada (the fourth concentric belt)	: 28 padas
	------------
	64 padas

Brahma pada (the first belt including the central square field of energy)	: 3×3=9 padas
Deivika pada (the second concentric belt)	: 16 padas
Maanusha pada (the third concentric belt)	: 24 padas
Paisachika pada (the fourth concentric belt)	: 32 padas
	-----------
	81 padas

Figure 4: MANDUKA MANDALA – 8x8 (subtle form) & PARAMA SAYIKA MANDALA – 9x9 Gross forms
Courtesy: Dr. Ganapathi Sthapati

9.TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 9 – LIGHT, GOD'S PARTICLE AND GOD

"At the beginning it was just Consciousness (Pragnanam) that was luminescent with un-manifested potential energy and residing at resonant state of non-vibration. This energy was self manifest and was ever present as Paramaanu or Microbode or Vinporul aka a subatomic particle. This is **omnipotent, omniscient and omnipresent**.

Ignore religion for the time being and just look at this particle's characteristics scientifically. It is Eternal (**Anaadi**), primordial (**Aadi**), without any quality (**Nirguna**), it cannot be reached / grasped by thoughts (**Achintya** - since thoughts as energy are much more gross than this and we would see this), it cannot be measured (**Aprameya**), Luminescent (**Jyothi swaroopa**), its **omnipotence, omnipresence (Visvam) and Omniscience** is already known. So said the mahavakya **Pragnanam Brahma!**

All the characteristics of the particle are attributed to a personality or a state by the founders of religions. **Hindus called this state as Paramasiva or Purusha. Hence everything subtle is called Sivamayam.** The essential pulsation which started and the universal evolution began was called as **Parashakti or Prakruthi or Maya.** We will talk about the Shakti aspect later.

This subtle un-manifest energy evolves to become universe which is gross. This gross energy also known as **earth** is called as **Vishnu** and the subtle energy is called as **Space / Akash / Heaven**. So the term became "**Sarvam Vishnu mayam Jagat".** Please note that it is just **Sivamayam** and there is not Jagat there. Since it is all subtle and there is no Jagat which is gross. But it is **Vishnu Mayam Jagat**.

I need to add that every sect in Hinduism has named this God's particle with a different name. Narayana has replaced paramasiva in Vaishnavism and so on. In Hindu temples there are 2 prime idols – **Moolavar and Archakar** - The Moolavar does not undergo any archana or any decoration and it is always for the Archakar for which all poojas are performed. This god's particle refers to the Moolavar and not Archakar.

To my knowledge, every religion and every sage / saint has agreed with the fact this fundamental particle or energy unit is **LUMINISCENT**. Note that there is no sound or word in this …**yet.** Let us see few quotes on this (there are thousands of quotes):

- **Be it vedic culture, Zoroastrians, Greek or any major culture fire / sun god which represents light is worshipped.**
- **"Om Jyothi rasaha" says Vedas**
- **In Gayatri mantra you meditate on the supreme light to illuminate you.**
- Vallalar said **"Arutperumjyothi, Arutperumjyothi"** which means **mighty graceful light**.

- If therefore your eye be single, your whole body shall be full of light. Mathew 6:22
- Thirumoolar states brilliantly that who realizes that the light (physical light which means the world) merges with light (subtle light), he has realized SIVA.

ஒளியில் ஒளிபோய் ஒடுங்கிய வாறும்
தெளியும் அவரே சிவ சித்தர் தாமே - 124

So what has happened to the **Sabda Brahman** here? It has merged with the **Artha Brahman** which is the light. What can you use to represent this state?

Light represents Form and our eyes represent Light / Form. So obviously sound is represented by ears. When sound has merged with light then it means Eyes and ears are merged together.

Can you think of anything that represents this state? This concept is captured by representing a **Manduka (Frog) or Sarpa (Snake)** always. Since for a frog and a snake the ears and eyes are merged. **Manduka Upanishad,** represents a knowledge of this state. And obviously the 8x8 square / cube represent the most subtle energy as an energy grid is called as **Manduka Pada / Mandala..**

Now the same aspect when it is applied to a gross form / body or a building then it is a 9x9 energy grid and it is called as **Paramasyika Mandala**. **At the gross level the same concept as applied is the WORD where Light (form) and sound and meaning merged into one. You cannot separate them**. We will look at this later.

Unfortunately we have lost the science and we neither understand the philosophy nor the symbolism behind this supreme science but we made fun of the fact that the supreme science is named after an absolutely menial creature like frog which is used only for zoological lab studies across the world or ends up in the dinner plate as it does in far eastern countries.

I would like to conclude this section by stating (may be a little controversial) that **First it was Consiousness as the Vinkaru, Microbode, Sittrambalam, Nunporul, subatomic particle which was luminescent. Later the concept of God evolved out of it.**

So God is not light, but the right of saying it is "the primordial aspect of "luminescence" has been adopted as God…

So, of the 5 fold evolution process we are still at the source (Moolam). We will see the concept of time and the mathematical science in the subsequentparts.

MOOLAM (Source) – KALAM (TIME) – SEELAM (RHYTHM) – KOLAM (SHAPE) – GNALAM (UNIVERSE). (மூலம் - காலம் - சீலம் - கோலம் – ஞாலம்)

Happy reading!
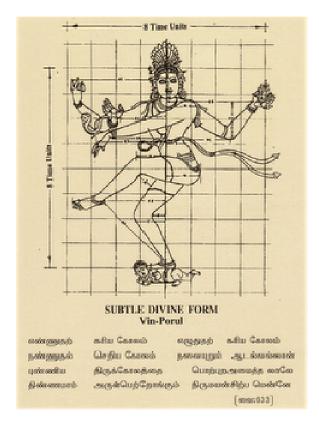
Figure 5: Lord Nataraja in the Manduka Mandala (8x8 grid) (Courtesy: Dr. Ganapathi Sthapati)

Our next topic is Nataraja and String theory!, so check out this picture. I want you to note the light / fire in the left hand and sound / damru in the right hand. If you notice little closely, you would find a central line along the picture's sternum and all the parts have minute measurements from the central line.

10. Time = Space Series. Part 10 – Lord Nataraja and The String theory

"The self unfolds itself for its self – Bhagavad Gita".

This self unfolded itself with a pulsation and this pulsation is the **start of Absolute time** (**KAALAM**). As I said nothing to my knowledge tell us clearly as to why this pulsation happened. This is the point of singularity in the scientific language and the event is termed as **Big Bang.** Just as I expressed earlier it was an event of primordial pulsation and not of an explosion which threw away mass because of the explosion into the space.

The entire space existed with its subatomic particles and this pulsation made the space to vibrate and this vibration was rhythmic and led to the evolution of this universe. **Popularly known as "That one became many"… and ..Vastur eva Vaastu.**

This pulsation happened because of the **Pranava** or the first pulsation resulted in the **Pranava -** both conceptually right. So at the time of this primordial pulsation 2 things happened:

- The absolute time started. This is called **Kaalam.**
- Primordial and the most sacred **Pranava** emerged.

Both these happened simultaneously and it is futile to ask whether **Kalam created Pranava or Pranava created the pulsation.** In many of the texts it offered as **Pranava that created the pulsation**. So let's go by that.

- This is the reason that **Pranava / Primordial Om is so sacred in Hinduism.**
- This Pranava had manifested in 2 forms:
  - **Luminescent form as OM the Light. This is the source of all visual forms. The primordial form is represented as ஓம் in Tamil and ॐ in Sanskrit.**
  - **Aural form as Om the sound. This is the source of all aural forms. I should say that this is more popular form compared to the luminescent form.**

Now this concept is very important, since in the Pranava meditation they say us to meditate on the silence after the word OM and also mediate **OM as light, OM jyoti rasaha in vedas.**

So, when I say that sound merges into light, it is all the aural form merges into **ITS** luminescent form. All luminescent forms merge with the **Paramaanu** which is also luminescent. I am reproducing this passage again for emphasis and clarity.

- **Sage Thirumoolar** states brilliantly that who realizes that the light (physical light which means the world) merges with light (subtle light), he has realized SIVA.

ஒளியில் ஒளிபோய் ஒடுங்கிய வாறும்
தெளியும் அவரே சிவ சித்தர் தாமே - 124

I have read many times over to understand this concept and I would suggest that you allow this concept to sink in.

Now let's come to the 8x8 energy grid of the **Paramaanu** and imagine that it is pulsating because of Pranava and this **Pranava has both light and aural form**.

- They say that this **pulsation is rhythmic and symmetric**.
- When something is Symmetric, then there has to be a central line along with the Symmetry comes. For example if our right and left sides are symmetric then the body is divided along the sternum & backbone.
- Within the 8x8 energy grid / hall there is a **vertical luminous shaft** called **Brahma Sutra (Oli nool)**. Sutra in Sanskrit and Nool in Tamil means **Thread / String**.
- This **Olinool / Brahma Sutra is a shaft of consciousness also called Moolathoon / Moolasthambham**.
- **This shaft of consciousness vibrates in a particular order called rhythm.** This is the order of nature.
- **This rhythmic vibration of the shaft of consciousness is the dance of Shiva, the CELESTIAL DANCE / THE COSMIC DANCE / THE DANCE OF EVOLUTION of the LORD NATARAJA.**

Look again at the picture of LORD NATARAJA, he is drawn inside a 8x8 Manduka mandala (now you know what it is), his left leg is raised suggesting a movement from left to right. Imagine that he is going to land the left leg to his right side.

Why should he suggest that he is moving from left to right?

His left hand holds light / fire and his right hand holds Drum / Damru / Sound. The process of Evolution which starts with the absolute time and Pranava is fantastically represented pictorially. It suggests that the evolution process starts with the rhythmic dance of the PARAMAANU in a 8x8 energy grid and this process evolves first as light and then as sound. This light and sound creates further forms and the entire universe.

It is very easy to answer as to why sound evolves from light? We all know that the light is at a higher frequency and velocity than sound. This is the same reason we see lightning first then hear the thunders.

So let's summarize the DANCE OF EVOLUTION of LORD NATARAJA:

- From being un-manifest the **Pranava** emerges. Or the Pranava evolves the un-manifest to the manifest and starts the cycle of evolution.
- This leads to a pulsation which is called as the **COSMIC DANCE / CELESTIAL DANCE / DANCE OF EVOLUTION**.
- This pulsation is **rhythmic and symmetric**.
- The luminescent shaft of consciousness is called as **Brahma Sutra** or popularly called as String theory in the modern science.
- The process of creation evolves from the dance as light then sound evolves from light and then all the visual and aural forms in this universe.

If this is so then the process of dissolution should be that Lord Nataraja's right leg should be lifted suggesting a movement from right to left isn't?

Look at the majestic picture suggesting the **DANCE of EVOLUTION** and the **DANCE of DISSOLUTION** as below:

Figure 6: LORD NATARAJA / DANCE OF EVOLUTION   **Figure 7: DANCE OF DISSOLUTION**

In my opinion there is nothing more scientific in this world that is pictorially represented about the evolution of universe. You should read a book called **"The Tao of Physics" by Frijat Capra** where as physicist he explains how he experienced this and highlights the dance of the quantum particles in space corresponds to the dance of **Lord Nataraja**.

Now this central shaft of Consciousness is called **Brahma Sutra** and according to our scriptures every Paramaanu has this string, which means every being, matter, inanimate things in this universe including the tiniest of subatomic particles have this string / sutra. In the future parts we will see the Maths behind this sutra and the pulsation but let us look at what the modern science says about **Superstring theory** here, http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/String_theory. You can read it how many times ever you want but this theoretical postulation is a direct adaptation of the cosmic dance and our Brahma Sutra and nothing more.

Now check out Lord Nataraja at the CERN http://www.fritjofcapra.net/shiva.html

As a wise man said, **"Indians are the most ignorant about their rich past and scientific traditions."**

Now you may understand as to why I started this series with the above line. We have a very rich past that is most scientific and it is left codified in a form across thousands of temples in India. Let us just open your eyes and understand the scientific meaning around it.

If you are so far surprised at our richness and advancement, please wait till we will get into real hard core mathematics and geometry of our nature in the subsequent parts.

May that "**Sutradhaari"** dispel our ignorance and reveal to us the secrets of nature.

Happy reading!

11. TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 11 – VASTUREVA VAASTU AND E=MC^2

We have seen that the universe in its un-manifest state is filled with luminescent cuboids and there was a trigger in the form of Pranava which started the absolute time and gave forth visual forms and aural forms.

This process of evolution is depicted very nicely in the following diagram:
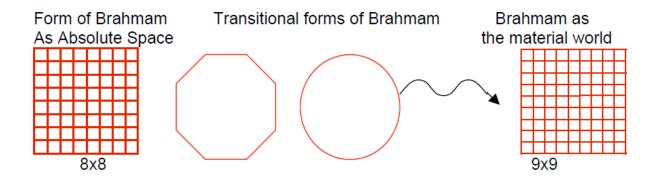
Figure 8: Transition forms of Brahman (Coutesy: Dr. Ganapathi Stapathi)

The square (in 2D) which is an 8x8 energy grid became a 9x9 energy grid which is manifest / gross. The transition forms were an octagon and a circle. **Aintiram** suggests how this transition takes place. Current physics accepts that a pulse and a sine wave can be created from each other and this happens because of simple addition of harmonic frequencies.

The primordial pulsation initiates a rotational force and this rotational force as it gains momentum converts the square into a circle and if you notice that the octagon is just an in between state between a square and a circle.

We see confirmation of the details of this manifestation process in Chapter 9, verse 8 of the Bhagavad Gita where Lord Krsna describes His manifestation process to Arjuna:
"prakritim svaam avastabhya visrijaami punah punah", meaning "Curving back onto myself, I create again and again…"

What it suggests is that the essential shape of every gross form in its natural state is a circle (in 2D) and a sphere in (3D). **This is the reason we find every planetary body is almost spherical in shape and this is also the reason as to why the ripples in a water body when we throw a stone in the water are in circles.**

Be it the center of a tornado or the shape of a hurricane or a tsunami it always a circular force. The supreme secret in martial arts is that the Chi moves in a circular fashion and hence Tai Chi is the most

deadly form of martial arts. Lord Vishnu has Chakra as his weapon to suggest not only light but also the rotational force.

The process of manifestation is captured in these 2 pictures at all the significant stages. If you notice that a single dot becomes multiple dots, then a line, then a pulse and then goes on to becoming a 8x8 energy grid and then to a 9x9 energy grid. 8x8 is un-manifest and 9x9 is manifest. These aspects are very well captured as sutras in the book **Aintiram and Pranava Vedam.**
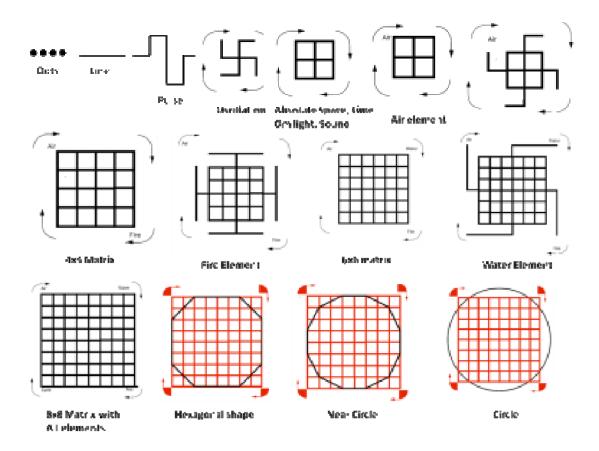
Figure 9: Transition forms of Brahman in detail (Coutesy: Fabric of the Universe)

If you look at the Fig 10 conceptually the following things happen:

- Subtle Energy becomes gross universe and the fundamental 5 elements are created in the process.
- It is said that 1/10th of the space becomes Air, 1/10th of air becomes Fire, 1/10th Fire becomes Water and 1/10th of Water becomes Earth.
- So we can conclude that we are living in a **Space delineated world.**

MECHANICS OF SUBTLE ENERGY TURNING INTO GROSS ENERGY
(The turn of subtle into gross.)

$$E = mc^2$$

From Dr. V. Ganapati Sthapati, Kauai, 2005
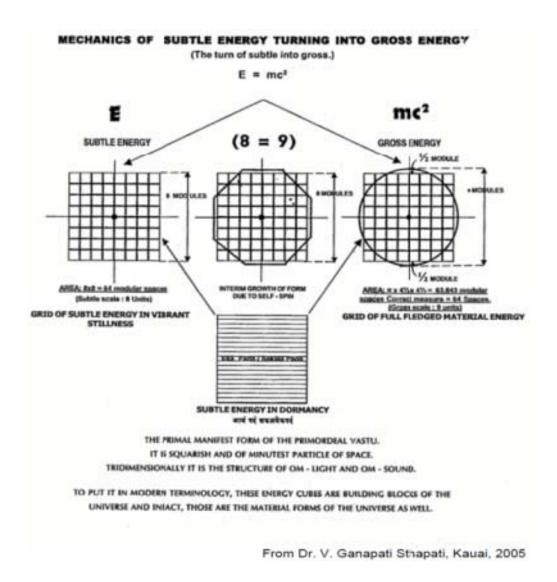
Figure 10: Subtle Energy to gross (Courtesy: Dr. Ganapathi Sthapati)

This wisdom was so succinctly captured by my good friend **Lao Tzu** in "**Tao Te Ching**" as follows: (Read heaven as un-manifest space and Earth as manifest gross)

"Heaven and Earth last forever.
Why do heaven and Earth last forever?
They are unborn, so ever living....

Thirty spokes share the wheel's hub;
It is the center hole that makes it useful.
Shape clay into a vessel;
It is the space within that makes it useful.
Cut doors and windows for a room;
It is the holes which make it useful.
Therefore benefit comes from what is there;
Usefulness from what is not there...."

But I wanted to highlight more important aspects to this process of manifestation.

- **Advaita** philosophy states that there is no duality. If you note that the **Parammanu** is what is present every living being and inanimate thing. What is within you is what is within me and hence the mahavakya **"Tat Tvam Asi"… You are that**.
- **Vastureva Vaastu** – Vastu which is unmanifest and subtle becomes Vaastu which is manifest and gross.
- **If we assume that Paramaanu is God's particle and hence it is divine, then everything in this world is divine**. This is the most important philosophy in **Hindusim**. See **the oneness in all** and see "**All in one**".
- That's why Hindus saw divinity in everything. Trees, snakes, animals, insects, birds, human beings etc. There is nothing without that divine energy or particle – however you call it.
- This philosophy is **UNIVERSAL, OPEN SOURCE, ALL COMPASSING and the highest state of consciousness**.

But let's look at something even more important:

- We all note that Subtle has become Gross. Hence conceptually Gross = Subtle or both are proportionate.
- We all note that Space has become Earth. Hence conceptually Space = Earth or both are proportionate.
- We all note that 8 have become 9. Hence conceptually 8 =9 or both are proportionate.
- We all note that ENERGY has become MATTER. Hence conceptually ENERGY = MATTER or both are proportionate. This is represented by $E = mc^2$ by our great scientist Einstein. While we did not have this specific formula, the concept and the associated texts were very much with us for ages.

So this is what Einstein quoted after reading Bhagavad Gita.

"When I read the **Bhagavad-Gita** and reflect about how God created this universe everything else seems so superfluous." ~ Albert **Einstein**

Now let's try to answer this question:

- When you throw a stone in water / pond the ripples that form take the shape of a circle (in 2D) / sphere (in 3D). Can you guess what the shape of the ripple would be if you throw the same stone in space?
- **You would have probably guessed the answer. The ripples in space should be and would be in square /cube in shape.**

As a wise man said, **"Indians are the most ignorant about their rich past and scientific traditions."**

Happy reading!

12. TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 12 – VEDIC CONCEPT OF TIME & ITS MEASUREMENTS

The importance of time (**Kaalam**) is so high in the Vedic tradition that they ensured that the accuracy, continuity of time and the easy measurability of it is maintained for who knows how many years. **Time creates, sustains and destroys** everything and this is very nicely captured in these 2 lines:

காலமே எவைக்கும் மூலம், காலமே மூல ஆற்றல்
காலமே கோலத் தோற்றம், காலமே ஞாலத் தோற்றம்

The god of time is **Kaala Bhairava** – a form of Shiva and hence both **Shiva** and **Yama the lord of death both were** known as **Kaalan.** The time is represented by **number 13** and it belongs to Kala bhairava. We will see the interesting linkage between Vedic system and the Mayan calendar found in Guatemala and Mexico later.

Swami Chinmayananda states that "**Time is the periodicity between 2 thoughts**". Nothing captures the concept of time more wisely. What is clear from our scriptures and Swami Chinmayanda is that time is the pulsation that creates this universe. It is the vibration with very accurate periodicity and our sages suggested that you can live beyond time provided you manage to escape the effects of that pulsation.

Einstein's view on time and its relativity is very realistically captured in this quote **"When you are courting a nice girl an hour seems like a second. When you sit on a red-hot cinder a second seems like an hour. That's relativity."** More than relativity I found that the root cause of relativity is the pulsation of mind as time. Einstein on a serious note proved that our view of time is not absolute, it is relative and it is a continuum with space. We will in the next few parts of this blog would see that time and space are the same or Time = Space.

Aintiram states that there are 5 things that vibrates which have a common root and are not under our control. They are Space, Earth (vibration of earth is gravity), Eye lids, thoughts and Musical notes and very nicely put in Tamil as (Vin)**விண், மண்(man), கண்(Kan), எண்(Yen), பண்(Pan). Pan is musical metre / chandas and Yen is the yennam or thoughts.**

Correlate this with the first line of **Patanjali Yoga Sutra** which says **"Yoga Chitta Vrtti Nirodah",** means **Yoga is one which stops the vibration of mind / pulsation of mind and hence is a killer of thoughts.** The meditation techniques of keeping your eyes opened without battling the eyelids is another way of overcoming this pulsation instinct that is primordial and inherent in our nature.

Let's look how intricate our measurements time are in Vedic system. Check out the image below.

- The smallest unit of time is approximately 2 micro second.
- The largest unit is about 155 trillion years…. YET.
- Brahma's linear age is 50 years and in currently in his 51st year which makes the universe to be 155+ trillion years. Brahma's life time is 100 years which means it would be 300 trillion+ years of universal life which follows a cycle.

- After 100 years of pulsation cycles Brahma stays as dormant energy for the same period and then pulsates again for the next life of 100 years.
- A **Brahma's** life is also known as a Para. Each half Param is referred to as a *parardham*. This second half is termed as **'dviteeya paraardhe'** (the second half of Brahma's term) is stated in all vedic rituals.
- After every Chatur yuga, the world recycles. After every 2000 years / a Brahma day the world dissolves and remerges. The important point to note is that there is no CONCEPT OF CREATION here. It evolves and dissolves as per the science of pulsation. We also note that this pulsation expands and contracts. This cyclical nature of time as believed in Indian mythology refers to time as '*anaadi*' or that without a beginning.

Unit	Reference	Value	Metric
1 Tatpara		1.85	Micro second
1 para	60 Tatpara	111.11	milli second
1 Viliptam	60 Para	6.67	milli second
1 Liptam	60 Viliptam	0.40	seconds
1 eyelid blink	100 Viliptam	0.67	seconds
1 Kaashta	18 eyelid blinks	12.00	Seconds
1 Kshanam	10 kashta	120.00	Seconds
1 nazhigai	12 Kshanam	24.00	minutes
1 Muhurtham	2 Nazhigai	48.00	minutes
1 hour	2.5 Nazhigai	60.00	minutes
1 Day	60 Nazhigai	24.00	hours
1 week	7 days		
1 Paksha	15 days		
1 Month	2 Pakshas	30 days	
1 year	12 months	360 days	
Yugas:			
Krita		1728000	Years
Treta		1296000	Years
Dwapara		864000	Years
Kali		432000	Years
Chatur Yuga		**4320000**	**Years**
1 brahma day	2000 Chatur yuga	8640000000	
1 Brahma Year	360 Brahma days	3110.4	Billion Years
50 Brahma Years		155.52	Trillion Years

Figure 11: Time measurements in Ancient India

While doing Vedic ritual the time and space coordinate is invoked to say that you are doing this ritual at this place in the universe and at this time – with reference to Brahma's age to the time and star of the day. This tradition is unbroken and the Indian Almanac can predict the position of astronomical objects without any error for thousands of years without any sophisticated instruments and space ships.

On the contrary just read the history of the Gregorian calendar which we are following here, http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gregorian_calendar. There is neither accuracy nor continuity and to top it up there are authorities who reform the calendar as if time stops and waits for them to affect that reform. Why should we ignore the best of time science that we have for an inaccurate, discontinuous reformed calendar?

As a wise man said, **"Indians are the most ignorant about their rich past and scientific traditions."**

Happy Reading!

13. TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 13 – SOUTH AMERICAN MAYAN & SOUTH INDIAN MAAYAN

Since we are discussing about time, let us address the **Mamuni Maayan** and the **South American Mayan**.

A lot has been talked about Mayan calendar and the imminent destruction to planet earth in the year 2012. I would recommend **'The Mayan Factor – Path beyond technology" by Jose Arguelles** if you are interested in this topic.

In this part I am interested in highlighting that the **South American Mayan** and the **South Indian Mamuni Maayan** who wrote **Aintiram and Pranava Veda** are one and the same. Extensive research have been conducted by many and I found, both the works of **Jose Arguelles and late Dr. Ganapathi Stapathi** who has spent about 3 decades each, very impressive. Dr. Ganapathi concluded that they both are the same and he has shown some interesting linkages.

I am going to present what impressed me in both these great researcher's works.

- First let me state that the doomsayers of 2012 phenomenon picked up Mayan's calendar which started in 3113 BC ran for 5125 years and the calendar ended in year 2012. Since the calendar ended they thought this signified that the world is ending. Jose argues that this is wrong and most probably the human race is entering into the next phase of evolution and the next cycle would begin. If you strongly believe that this is not true and the world would certainly end by 2012, then please ensure that you transfer all your assets and savings to my name effective 22, Dec 2012. ☺

- Mayan in his calendar in South America used very unique numerals in his calendar that is given below:
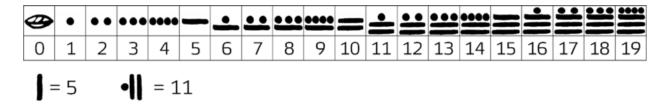
Figure 12: Mayan's numeral system (Courtesy: Wikipedia, Internet)

Now let me reproduce a Tamil poem written by Mamuni Maayan in his work called "**Kanithamaa sennool**". This song is part of the book written by Maayan in Tamil during his time – 12000 years+. This song expresses how the numerals are formed till 10. It says,
  o 1 is one dot, 2 is 2 dots, 3 is 3 dots, 4 is 4 dots, 5 is a line and 10 is a double line.

மாப்புள்ளி ஒன்றே அன்றோ ஒன்றுமா எண்ணே காட்டும்

மாப்புள்ளி இரண்டே யன்றோ இரண்டுமா எண்ணே காட்டும்

மாப்புள்ளி மூன்றே யன்றோ மூன்றுமா எண்ணே காட்டும்

மாப்புள்ளி நான்கே யன்றோ நான்குறு எண்ணே காட்டும்

மாப்புள்ளி ஐந்தே யன்றோ ஐந்து மா எண்ணே காட்டும்

மாப்புள்ளி கோட்டினாலே இரண்டுரு மாக்கங் காட்டி

மாவியல் திறத்தினாலே பத்தறு மாக்கங் காட்டி

மாவியல் திறத்தினாலே எண்முதற் பொருளு மாவாய்!! (கணிதமா செந்நூல் - மாயன்)

- Among the books written during Mayan's time in Guatamala are Popol Vuh, The annals of cakchiquels and the **Book of Chilam Balam**. The resemblance of **Chilam Balam to Chidambaram** with which S. Indian Maayan was so involved is very striking.

- Be the pyramids that were built in the jungles of S. America that has a striking resemblance to the viamanas from south India, the earth's revolution around the sun measured within 1/1000th of the decimal point which is available in a book called **Surya Siddhaanta – In Sanskrit** by Mayan and the identical measurements available in South America – the similarities are difficult to ignore.

- Jose Arguelles makes a compelling argument about the shift in consciousness in 2012 due to a major galactic synchronization. But what impressed me are the following:

  o Comparison between **iChing (8x8 hexagram) and Mayan's Tzolkin which is 13x20 matrix**. In fact there is a Franklin's magic square which is based on the 8x8 grid of iChing that adds upto 260 which is the galactic constant of Tzolkin. This was amazing.

  o He refers to **Radiogenesis – Universal transmission of information through or as light** or radiant energy which is very much relevant to our discussions of light and sound.

  o The revelation he received from a Maya Humbatz men belonging to the universal great brotherhood organization revealing that our universe is the 7th such system which Maya has charted in the universe. So, we are not alone ☺

Would conclude this topic in the next part…

Happy reading!
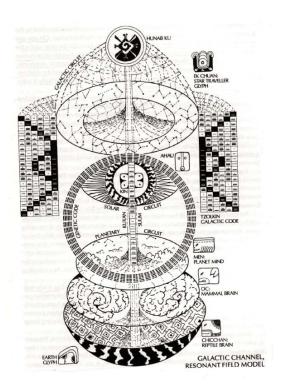
Figure 13: Galactic Communication Channel to Hunab Ku (Courtesy: The Mayan Factor, Jose Arguelles)

TZOLKIN & BUK XOK PERMUTATION TABLE
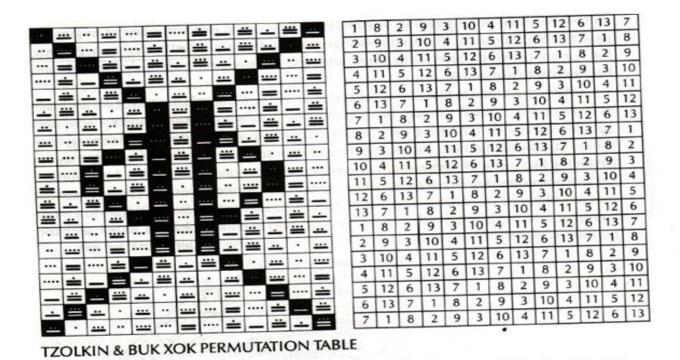
Figure 14: Tzolkin table (Courtesy: The Mayan Factor, Jose Arguelles)

14. TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 14 –MAYAN, TAMIL, PLEIADES & ICHING

Jose Arguelles was also mentioning that the pyramid structures of Mayan civilization in South America with the **Tzolkin** calendar matrix communicates with 2 constellations – **Pleiades and Arcturus**. Jose mentions that he is sure about communication with Pleiades constellation.

Why did Pleiades interest me?
- According to Tamil history, Tamil is a divine language and the Lord associated is **Lord Muruga**. He is the Tamil deity and he is from the **Constellation Pleiades** which is called **Kritika nakshatra**.
- This emphasis that the South American Mayan could be a Tamilian from India, as many in the ET studies circuit opine that Pleiades is a constellation which is like our distant cousin where Tamil is spoken. There are many links but you can check this out.. http://22050hz.blogspot.com/2008/10/pleaidians.html

- Look at the Mayan calendar in Fig 14, it is a 13x20 Tzolkin matrix.
  - o Please recall that we mentioned **13 is the number for Kala Bhairava**.
  - o Tzolkin has a mystical central column around which 6 and 6 columns exist. The belief is that this central column is the frame of reference to the galaxy and it is believed to connect to **Hunab Ku – the center of the galaxy**.
  - o This mysterious centre column is believed to be the road to the sky leading to the umbilical cord of the universe. I immediately correlated this with the **thread of consciousness** which is connected to the Hiranyagarba (the center of the galaxy as per Indian texts.) – Check Figure 13.
  - o So understanding that this shaft of consciousness is connected to the center of the galaxy (**Hunab Ku / Hiranyagarbha**) at the one end and to **our solar plexus** at the other end with communication and galactic information transmission happening through resonance of light, opened many gates within me.

Nothing in this universe exists without purpose and the form and shape of any being / thing is explained as a state of consciousness at a particular resonant frequency adds to the Seelam (Rhythm) aspect of the Kaalam which we are going to see later.

For the space and time travel enthusiasts, Mayan has the following:

- All space travel is intelligence as information – transmitted through light by the principle of harmonic resonance.

- **Mayan says that Sun is the lens through which galactic information is transmitted from the galactic core and interpreting this with Gayatri Mantra where we meditate on the supreme light Savitr – an aspect of Sun god is amazingly striking.**

- Mayan highlights that time is a function of principle harmonic resonance and he attaches significant importance to the numerals which he states are the galactic harmonic constants. This is exactly what **Aintiram** states.

- **He interprets the iChing to contain the Genetic code of the human DNA as a hexagram in a 8x8 matrix which is a binary progression to the 6th power corresponding 64 six part words /codons. At the same time he interprets number 260 to be galactic constant and 360 which is the factor for a calendar year or the total angle in a circle to a harmonic calibrator.** His explanations more on this and on the mystical number 7 do not resonate in my tiny brain and I am begging for holy grace to expand my mind to understand these concepts.

- **When he says that flowers open to light just does not mean that it is sensitive to be light but deeply it aspires to be LIGHT.** I am not sure if you understand the depth of this statement as against the Sage molar statement which states gross light should merge with subtle light. I have been left speechless for days after understanding this correlation.

It is interesting to note that significance of numerals as per Mayan factor:
- **1   – The pulsation   – Ray of Unity**
- **2   – The pulsation   - Ray of Polarity**
- **3   – The pulsation   - Ray of Rhythm**
- **4   – The pulsation   - Ray of Measure**
- **5   – The pulsation   - Ray of center**
- **6   – The pulsation   - Ray of organic balance**
- **7   – The pulsation   - Ray of mystic power.**
- **8   – The pulsation   - Ray of harmonic resonance.** We will see more of this.
- **9   – The pulsation   - Ray of cyclic Periodicity**
- **10   – The pulsation   - Ray of Manifestation**
- **11   – The pulsation   - Ray of Dissonant Structure**
- **12   – The pulsation   - Ray of Complex stability**
- **13   – The pulsation   - Ray of Universal movement**

In all 2 independent researchers working 6000 miles apart, conducting their studies independently seems to be pointing to just one person and one philosophy and science. What else we could do other than thanking our fortune to have read them and made this connection. I thought of writing just a page on this topic and I have ended up with 2 parts and I am stopping my temptation to write few more pages on this topic. For all of those interested, please read the book by Jose Arguelles.

It is amazing to find out how most of the ancient civilizations seem to have a common root and the communication between various geographies looks stunningly simple and the metrics on astronomical objects and other space sciences seems to be so accurate despite the absence of precision instruments and spacecrafts. One tends to believe that we had far advanced knowledge of nature which we seems to have lost and most certainly few thousand years back we were not nakedly roaming in the jungles of India and Africa hunting animals as the western experts wants you to believe but had a far superior & scientifically advanced civilization.

As a wise man said, **"Indians are the most ignorant about their rich past and scientific traditions."**

Happy Reading!

15.   TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 15 – SHIVA LINGAM IS NOT A PHALLUS

If there is one part in the series I want you to read and talk about it with your friends then it is this topic. If I ask you as to what Shiva Linga stands for then more than 99% of the responses would be that it represents a **Phallus** symbolizing the male sex organ / creative energy with the female sex organ / creative energy - Yoni as the base and both together representing **inseparability and totality in the process of creation**.

Nothing is more misunderstood and misquoted than this concept of Hinduism. Every idiot including me who has read few books about Hinduism thinks that they are experts of Indology / Vedic studies. The wisest of sages who gave us Vedas and Upanishads did not boast that it is their work. At the end of every work they acknowledged that they are telling us what they have been told by their ancestors. It is 155 trillion+ years of universal knowledge available today in the richest of the languages Tamil and Sanskrit. This cannot be accurately interpreted in a foreign language. Lest in the weakest of all languages - English.

The other contributing factor to this misunderstanding has been the Sanskrit language or should I say the richness of the language.

We have already noted that the same word can have multiple meanings. This is not limited to Sanskrit, but the all the languages. For example,

- **Sutra means thread, Aphorisms** (the ability to express something in terse and concise manner). Ex. **Kama sutra** – the most understood of all the sutras. **Brahma Sutra** – The thread of consciousness in any form that runs in this universe – the most unheard of.
- **Artha** in Sanskrit means "meaning" and "wealth", we have already seen this. As in Vaak-Artha and Artha Sastra (the science of wealth management).
- Same way Lingam means **Symptom, Proof**, **Gender, Male sex organ** etc. Hence it was very easy to get confused, associate the lingam with a Phallus and also to ignore the philosophy and the supreme science behind it. Even people who believed that it represented much more did not knew the philosophy and the science behind it. Let's look at what it means.

I am going to request you to kindly refer to both the pictures below:
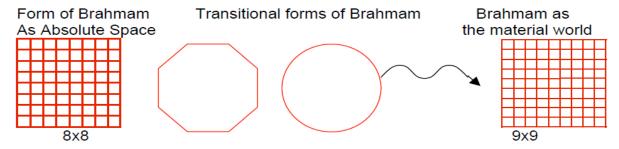
Figure 8 – reproduced here for convenience

Science ~ Religion

Tamas Guna - Rudra

Rajas Guna - Vishnu

Sattwa Guna - Brahma
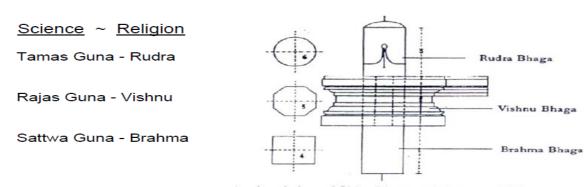
Figure 15 – Shiva Linga – Shape and Significance (Courtesy; Dr. Ganpathi Sthapati)

We have already seen that the subtle energy is takes the form of a square and the gross energy takes the form of a circle with an in-between state it takes the shape of a **tetrahedron and octagon**. Now look at the Shiva lingam from the top. Its base is always a square and the top is always a circle.

Figure 16 – Shiva Linga

Figure 17 – Shiva Linga with shape of the God's particle (Star) engraved.

If I have to merge all the 3 shapes together and it naturally takes the shape of a Lingam with a round top. **Shiva Linga captures the overall process of evolution in one form and shape -   subtle to gross state – it encompasses every state of consciousness that is possible in this universe.**

Why the figure above states that Square shape is Sattvic, circle is Tamasic and the in between state is Rajasic? Let's understand the definitions of all the three qualities.

- **Sattvic represents the perfect state of balance. When it is subtle it is luminescent and in a perfect state of resonant non-vibration. The energy levels were perfect so that the resultant vibration is nil and it is in absolute balance.**

- **Tamasic state represents a state where the height of evolution is reached and hence it is farthest away from the core.** This is a different explanation from the usual one available in the web and books. Let me explain this. The core is very subtle and the tamasic state is very gross

and hence it is away from the core. Tamasic state then should be considered as the darkest state possible. Why?

- o Because the core is luminescent and if the gross state is farthest from the core hence it should be dark. This is the meaning behind the most famous statement **'Tamasoma Jyothir gamaya"…** take me from darkness to light. It is not about just your mind but about the entire being aspiring to become a light and merge with primordial light.
- o **There is no evolution possible beyond the Tamasic state and it has to devolve to reach its core / subtle state.**

- ▪ **Rajasic is a state where the pulsation has resulted in a rotational force and hence things are set into action. This represents the evolution process and hence associated with action.**

Then the natural next question is, if Shiva Lingam is associated with the entire spectrum of consciousness then we should see it associated the elements and the light. Isn't?

- ▪ There is a story in Indian Purana that Brahma, Vishnu and Shiva discussed who is the most powerful among them. Lord Shiva challenged Brahma and Vishnu to reach his head and feet respectively. Brahma tried to find Shiva's head and Vishnu tried to reach Shiva's feet, both of them failed. Most of us would have heard the story but would not have understood the philosophical and scientific significance.

  - o Lord Shiva in the form of Linga stood there as a **PILLAR OF LIGHT**. This pillar of light is **the Brahma Sutra / light of consciousness** which spanned from the center of the galaxy (Hiranyagarba) to every being & non-being in the Universe.
  - o Brahma could not find the head because; Brahma is always associated with intelligence in Indian texts. He gave the supreme wisdom - the Vedas and stands for Intelligence. He could not reach Shiva's head signifies that Intelligence will not take you to God. Intelligence as an energy is too gross and cannot reach the most subtle state of light.
  - o Vishu represents earthly life – Rajasic in character – this is the tetrahedron & octagon state. He could not reach Lord Shiva's feet signifying you cannot reach the core through actions.

- ▪ Lord Shiva in the form of Lingam is represented as one of the elements (Earth, Water, Fire, Air, and Space) in the Hindu temples.

If you read the following Upanishad quote, you can probably understand the meaning:

na karmaNaa na prajayaa dhanena tyaagenaike amRitatvamaanashuH
pareNa naakam nihitam guhaayaaM vibhraajate yadyatayo vishanti

Not by work, not by progeny, not by wealth, they have attained Immortality. Some have attained Immortality by renunciation. That which the hermits attain is laid beyond the heaven; yet it shines brilliantly in the (purified) heart.

And this quote also brilliantly articulates the luminescent nature of the Paramaanu:

na tatra (not there) **suryo bhati** (sun shines) **na candra** (moon does not) **na tarakam** (nor the stars)
nema vidyuto (nor the lightning) **bhanti** (shines) **kuta ayam agnih** (how can fire shine)
tam (that) **eva** (alone) **bhantam** (shines) **anubhati** (thereafter shines) **sarvam** (everything)
tasya bhasa (in that light) **sarvam idam vibhati** (everything shines)

The sun does not shine there, nor does the moon, nor the stars or the lightning, much less this fire (deepam). When He shines, everything shines after Him; by His light alone everything is illumined.

The trick is to take the definition & meaning from Upanishads or any scripture and apply it to the God's particle and the process of evolution and you would understand it perfectly. Many a times the concept of God & faith obscures our mind to look beyond and rationally think about it. It is not the problem of religion but our system of education which has ruined our thinking. **Today the biggest challenge we have is to "Unlearn" than to learn.**

So to conclude:
- Shiva Lingam does not represent Phallus. To represent male and female totality and inseparability Hindus do have **Arthanareeswara** and it is not represented through Lingam.
- Shiva Lingam represents the **Pillar of Light and the entire spectrum of consciousness**. From the most subtle to the most gross.
- It represents an in-between **Guna** / **EGG** state (between un-manifest and manifest) and hence it is formless with a form.
- **While Lord Nataraja represented the rhythmic pulsation of this Brahma sutra, the cosmic dance / the dance of the evolution, Shiva Lingam represents the primordial light itself in all its state of consciousness.**
- By this analogy, our body itself is a lingam with the visible body as the gross part at one end and the most subtle body which is invisible and is part of the primordial light at the other.

Check out the picture below which represents most of the aspects we have discussed so far.

May Lord Shiva help us all to understand him better.. ☺

As a wise man said, **"Indians are the most ignorant about their rich past and scientific traditions."** Yet wish that this quote isn't wiser any more.

Happy reading!
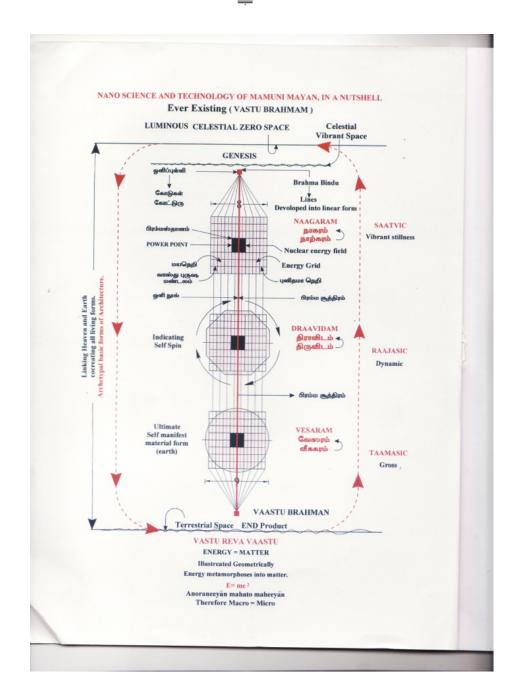
Figure 18 – Manifestation in a nut shell (courtesy: Dr. Ganpathi Sthpati)

This diagram represents everything we have discussed so far. The central red line is the Brahma Sutra which runs from the center of Galaxy to the terrestrial forms. Just correlate this with the Mayan Hunab Ku in the previous part.

This summarizes as to how Energy becomes matter, Subtle becomes Gross, Un-Manifest becomes manifest, how 8 becomes 9, and Square / Cuboid becomes a circle / Sphere. All represented in one formless form called SHIVA LINGAM.

16. TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 16 – SEELAM - THE PRIMORDIAL CIRCULAR FORCE - GANAPTHI & MATHEMATICS

In the last few decades the main stream western science has started accepting concepts like uncertainty principle, wave mechanics, quantum mechanics, and periodicity of the wave pattern. Most importantly it is about the fundamental wave pattern of any energy or matter and the harmonics of these wave patterns falling in a particular form and proportion which is dictated by geometry / mathematics. In all the western scientists are scratching their heads on the depths of science of the subtle aka the sacred spatial geometry.

Most of the eastern philosophies have mastered this science and have codified these natural laws as a part of their religion, which is often dismissed as superstition. I already highlighted that in Tamil and Sanskrit the definition for science is "**Knowledge of the space**".

Modern science is moving in the right direction albeit very slow and they are trying to understand as to how elements are bonded within a molecule in addition to what elements constitute them. For example **Chlorophyll** molecule consists of **Carbon, hydrogen, nitrogen and magnesium (Mg at its core)** has a complex 12 fold Pattern – just one such typical pattern which can convert sunlight into life substance. The same pattern exists in our **RBC** cells just that it has an **iron** at its core instead of magnesium.

The understanding about the human body especially, "the spatial awareness that exists in each and every cell is due to the different sensory organs tuned at frequencies", led the scientists to unravel the innate spatial geometry of life.

Be it living, non-living beings, abstract forces like gravity, nuclear force, electromagnetism, heat, movement of astronomical bodies it does not matter what, everything in this universe adheres to a vibration / periodicity and is reducible to a number or a ratio. As a wise man said, "**Mathematics is the language of gods". This primordial rhythm & its harmonics are captured under the topic "Seelam" by Mayan in ancient tamil texts. Let's look at this in detail.**

I have been finding it difficult to sequence the flow for this topic and let me try starting from the basics:

- We know that the **Paramaanu or God's particle is a cube.** This particle with the primordial vibration combines with other particles to create a shape. **The Paramaanu combines in the multiples of 8 to evolve the next structure**. Let us see the importance of 8 later, but remember 8 is the number for Lord Narayana and Om namo Narayana has 8 Aksharas.

- What do you call a cube called in Tamil? It is called **Ganam (கனம்)**. This also means heaviness, gravity, honor, dignity, abundance, plenty. To indicate it is a square cuboid they call it **கன சதுரம்**.

- The process of the addition of **Paramaanu** into bigger units is called as **Ganam (கணம், गण்)**. In Tamil both the Cube and the additive resultant are called as **Ganam** and the only difference being that in Cube it uses a **small "na" (ன)** as an alphabet. In the additive process / resultant it uses a **Big "na"(ண)**. The big "na" signifies that due to the additive process the small (na) becomes big (na).

- This additive process starts because of the **first rhythmic circular** force also called as a **Suzhi (சுழி)** in tamil which means "loop".

- Here comes the beauty. The Lord of or the energy associated with this **additive force (Ganam)** is called as **Ganapathi (கணபதி, गणपती)**. Note this is the bigger "**na**" used and not smaller **"na"**. He is associated with the first circular force - **Suzhi** (and hence he takes the first honor in any Vedic ritual. This means Lord Ganapati is the first process in the evolution and everything has to start with him. Even if it is Lord Shiva or Vishnu it does not matter, the very first honor goes to the **Lord of Ganas**. Many Indians when they start writing (atleast few decades back) they first start with this symbol at the top of the page before anything for a successful completion of that activity.

- If I add my own inferences to the above with a caveat that everything else I have written have a solid back up mostly from our own study of languages (as you can yourself see) and our scriptures.
  - The symbol above signifies that what was "a point" with untouched / non-interacting energies / resulted in the primordial first circular force out of a pulse and also signifying that every circular force shall also collapse back to a point.
  - Also the bigger / heavier things are formed or created by its smallest unit and hence symbolically the heavier ones are carried by the smaller units. To signify this may be a god in the form of an elephant is carried by a mouse.

- Now you know why every ritual starts with this Sloka to Ganapathi:

  - *"GanAnAm tva Ganapati gum Havamahe, Kavim Kavinam Upamasra vastamam Jyestharajam Brahmanam Brahmanaspat aana Srnvan nuti bhissi dasadanam"*

    This means "May you the Lord of Ganas, Ganapati",... . so it goes.

- **Now what do we call the study of this additive force - Ganas? Mathematics – Ganith / Ganitham (கணிதம், गणित).**

- **So we Indians have codified:**
  - **the primordial God's particle as Paramaanu or microbode or Lord Shiva,**
  - **the rhythmic movement of the pillar of light as Lord Nataraja,**
  - **the first circular force as the symbol for Lord Ganapathi,**
  - **the lord of the additive force as Lord Ganapthi and**
  - **the Study of this additive force which leads to the formation of everything in the universe is Mathematics in Sanskrit and Tamil.**

- o **Every possible state of consciousness and manifestation is represented in Shiva Linga**
- o **We will see that the multiples of 8 in which the additive force moves is codified as Lord Narayana or Vishnu and the five state manifestation process as the five letters associated with Lord Shiva.**

Just forget that these names are the names of the Hindu gods, and tell me one religion or philosophy or one branch of science in this world which can capture the nature's primordial secret in this way and codify it for the common benefit of the world and carry it for thousands / millions of years.

These are just a start and please wait for the other interesting aspects to unfold.

As a wise man said, **"Indians are the most ignorant about their rich past and scientific traditions."**

Happy Reading!

17. TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 17 – SEELAM - THE PRIMORDIAL RHYTHM & FUNDAMENTALS

Now, let us get into some real heavy stuff - Mathematics (**Ganitham** – the study of Ganam) that governs this rhythm and harmonics. My first concern is how to make it easily digestible for an average individual who hates Math? So I shall take the easiest route that I know. I shall first explain the concept, then the actual Math part of it and then go to the philosophy and significance of the same. Later we shall look at how these are codified in nature and our scriptures and available in front of our eyes which we have failed to recognize.

Let us be clear about the following terminologies like **Progression, Proportion, root, Diagonal and Pythagoras theorem**:

- Let us take a series as follows: 2, 4, 8, 16, 32…. In this we need to be clear about what is **Progression and proportion**. As many of you know that whole series is a geometric progression where the next number in the series is a function of the current number and a multiple. This multiple here is 2, so that 2*2 = 4, 4*2 = 8 and so on. **This multiple or the constant is called as proportion**. You derive the value of the proportion by dividing the number by its previous number – (n+1)/n : (n+2)/(n+1). Hope this is clear.

- We know that a square has 4 equal sides. Each side of a square is called as "**root**" and the line that connects the 2 opposite ends is called as '**Diagonal**". In the figure below sides AB, BC, CD, DA are called as "**Root**". Lines AC, BD are called as '**Diagonal**".

Figure 19; Square

$$a^2+b^2=c^2$$
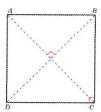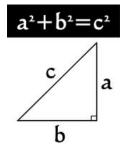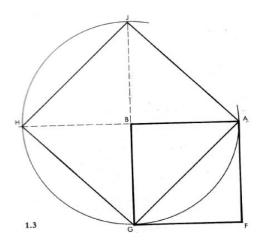
Figure 20: Pythagoras theorem

- **Pythagoras theorem** – This theorem gave us the formula to calculate the sides of a right angle triangle as given above. If you are not familiar with this, then please understand that if you know any 2 sides of the triangle the 3rd side can be calculated by the formula given above. I am not going to focus on the argument that this theorem was available in Indian scriptures before the Greek mathematician gave it. Let's look at the concepts and not which civilization gets credit as of now.

Since the fundamental structure is a square in 2D and Cube in 3D and also in the process of evolution one becomes many, let's ask ourselves the following questions:

- **How one square does create another square which is larger in size, progressively? What is the progression and proportion in this series?**
- **How one cube does create shapes which are polygonal (Hexagon, Octagon, decagon, dodecagon etc) progressively? What is the progression and proportion in this series?**

Now let us see Figure 21 where and consider the square ABGF. You can enlarge the image to see the alphabets clearly. Now as we know sides AB, BG, GF, AF are called "**root**" – remember this well and let us assume the smallest root possible is unity and hence each root is of unit length. AB=BG=GF=AF=1. Area of this square = 1*1 = 1.
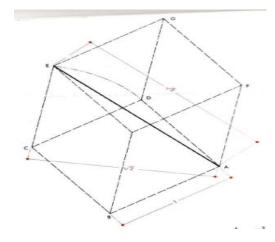
Figure 21; Square   Figure 22: Cube

Line AG is called as the **"diagonal"** and as per Pythagoras theorem the length of **AG** should be **√2**. **AG = √(AF^2+GF^2).** So to summarize **the root of the square ABGF is 1 and the diagnol is √2**.

Now consider a larger square AGHJ, here AG, GH, HJ, AJ are the sides and hence called as root. AH, GJ are the diagonal in the 2nd square. We know AG = √2, then AH = GJ = 2 as per Pythagoras theorem. To sum up **the root of the square AGHJ is √2 and the diagonal is 2. Area of this square is 2.**

If you look at the ratio **root/diagonal** (root to diagonal ratio) of both the squares it is 1/√2 and √2/2 which results in 1/√2. This will progressively hold good. The magic proportion in this progression is **√2**.

What we can infer from this is if we consider a **progression of squares** from a unit square to larger squares, then the **proportion** of the progression is √2. But before we jump into its philosophical significance let's answer the second question.

Consider the cube above whose side is of unit length. We know a cube is made of squares. We know ABCD is a square of length (root) =1 and diagonal = AC = **√2**. If we want to find out the length of the diagonal of the cube which is AE, then ACE is a right angle triangle with AC = **√2**. And CE =1 and hence **AE = √3**.

What we can infer from this is if we consider a **progression of cubes** from a unit cube to larger ones, then the **proportion of the progression is √3**.

I am going to handle the significance of √2 and √3 in the next part.

Happy reading!

18. TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 18 – SEELAM - SIGNIFICANCE OF √2 & √3

Let's look at the significance of **√2 and √3** but before that let's capture the philosophical significance of **Progression** and **Proportion**:

- The whole world is conceptualized as wave harmonics of the primordial rhythm with a **progression and proportion**. Philosophically the **Proportion** which does not change / which is constant is the **immutable component** and the **progression** which changes / is volatile is called as the **Mutuable component** in the process of evolution. **The whole universe is the progression and God is the proportion**. So if I know the God's proportion and the formula behind it I can create anything in this universe including a universe. This secret is called as the Brahma Vidya / Sree Vidya (Knowledge of Brahman, Sree) in Indian texts. What we are going to see further are very minor parts of the **Brahma Vidya**. ☺

- In the last part we saw, that the primordial square multiplied itself to be a larger square (**progression of squares**) using the **proportion √2. The diagonal of the square 1 (ABCD) forms the root of Square 2 (AGHJ)**. This is very profound if you get the concept.

- **If we consider square 1 as the cause then its diagonal is the effect. This diagonal is the root for the next square (AGHJ) and hence the effect of Square 1 is the cause of Square 2, this cause results in square 2's diagonal which is its effect and this is how the progression or evolution happens.** If you can see glimpses of Cause and effect cycle and the famous law of Karma in this analogy then you can pat yourself. ☺

- A square halved by the diagonal (square 1 with area 1) produces a square twice its area (square 2, area = 2). **The mystery of biological growth from cellular division or the different musical notes from the base tone is contained in this**.

- **Robert Lawlor in his book "Sacred Geometry"** very nicely puts it as the root of a plant (like the root in a square) is causative and embedded in the earth (and embedded in the square). These are very heavy and profound concepts just let it sink into you.

- When you divide the full height of the human being considering the total height as unity then belly as called as **Hara in Japanese, Dantein in Chinese, Nabhi in India** which is below the navel will measure (**2- √2**) from the soles of the feet to belly and (**√2 -1**) from navel to the head. In Yoga, Zen and Chinese meditation techniques this point corresponds to the transformative and generative aspects of the individual that involves **rooting** techniques for **self transmutation**. **So Lao Tzu said, "To seek the root is the goal".**

- **√2 signifies the power of multiplicity. Hence the Generative aspect of this rhythm is attributed to √2. This represents the principle of transformation.**

- Remember **√2** is a proportion in the progression of squares and a square does not become a higher form. We have seen that the diagonal of the cube (sides of unit length) is **√3. It is this √3 which divides the volume form of a cube and the diagonal of the cube becomes a root for the higher shapes like pentagon, hexagon etc.**

- Hence **√3 signifies the formative power of the rhythm while √2 signifies the generative power of the nature.**

We will touch the same using **Vesica Piscis** in the next part which shall take us to **√5 and the golden mean Φ.** I am not going to touch upon important topics like Gnomic spirals and the relation between various progressions and hence I would request you to Google them if you are interested.

Happy reading!

PS:
There are many books on this topic and I would recommend **"Sacred Geometry – Philosophy & Practice" by Robert Lawlor** which I found easy to read and understand.

You tube and Internet is replete with tons of images, articles and videos on this topic and you can learn a great deal from them.

19. TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 19 – SEELAM – VESICA PISCIS, √5, & GOLDEN MEAN (Φ)

If you don't know what is vesica piscis, please google and you would find it interesting. I am not going to explain it here and I would focus on the summary and aspects which are often left out. The philosophical aspect of Vesica Piscis, is a rotating point becomes as circle of unity. Two circle of unity (with its radius as unity) interacting / intersecting each other in a perfect manner offers an overlapping area which is considered to be sacred and fundamental to all the geometric forms in the universe. We will first see how **√2, √3 & √5** are part of this Vesica Piscis.
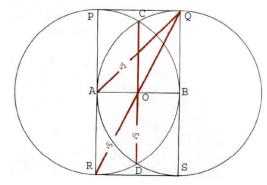
Please look at 2 circles who radius is unity and AB = 1, intersecting as per the diagram. The overlapping area ABCD is the Vesica Piscis and we can see **√2, √3 & √5** all part of this Vesica Piscis.

ABPQ and ABRS are 2 squares and the side of the square is 1. **√5** is as significant as **√2 and √3.** In the diagram here **√5** is the diagonal of the rectangle PQRS / diagonal of 2 squares – one below the other.

Figure 23; Vesica Piscis

√5 is the regenerative factor that binds 2 squares or that factor that transcends two worlds or the bonding factor for 2 cosmic entities. This **√5** shall take us to the most important ratio which is the **Golden mean** or the **God's ratio**.

But before that let me share what stuck my mind when I was engrossed **with Vesica Piscis and √3**. Look at the pictures below. These are pictures of forehead marks of Hindu Brahmins sects called Iyengars and their supreme deity is Narayana. I correlated the striking similarity of the rectangle around the Vesica piscis and Iyengar's namam. You just have to imagine the 2 overlapping circles are the right and left side of the face with the **Vesica Piscis** starting from the top tip of the nose. To me the **formative principle of √3 is in line with the "Bhootha krut" and "Vishwa karma manu stvashtha"** aspects of **Maha Vishnu** as per Vishnu sahasranamam. I had a good laugh on this correlation.
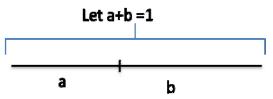
Figure 24; Iyengar Namam 1
(Courtesy: Internet)

Figure 25: Iyengar Namam 2
(Courtesy: Internet)

Coming to the **Golden mean,** If you have not heard about it, just Google or here is a quick link http://www.goldennumber.net/. Some of you might be even have fatigue repeatedly reading and listening about it, like I do. Hence I am not going to rewrite what is widely available. But let's look at the philosophical aspect of it, its relation to **√5** and its manifestation.

Now so far in **√2, √3 & √5** what we have seen is how Unity evolves as many. But if I am interested in geometrically dividing the Unity so that this proportion evolves as unity then how do I do it?

Consider a line of unit length and also consider two segments a, b so that a+b =1.

A and B are such that it has to fulfill this condition of Proportionality that a/b : b/1.

(Figure 26: Line andΦ)

This means what 'a" is to "b", is the same as what "b" is to the whole length which is 1.

Mathematically resolving this equation a/b : b/1, hence b^2 = a and hence b= **√a.** This means **a + √a = 1.** The answer to this equation is only one value which is called the **Golden mean / God's ratio** denoted by Φ = 1.6180339… and a = 1/Φ. **Philosophically it is the division of unity and the only possible creative duality within the unity.**
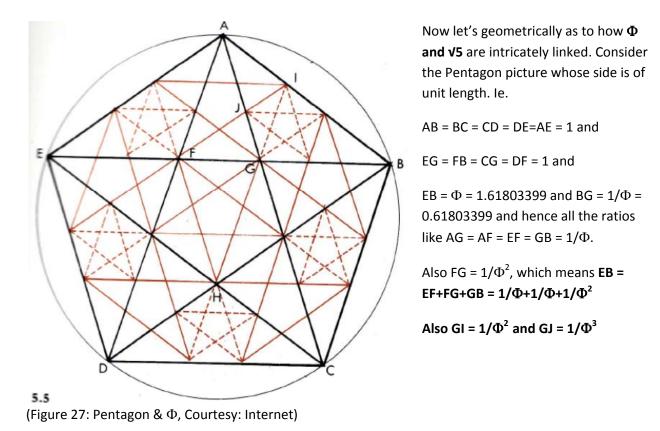
You may ask as to why unity is not divided into 2 equal parts and why is should be **1/Φ** (**0.6180339..).** This is effectively answered by our Upanishad **"Whether we know it or not, all things take their existence from that which perceives them"**. **Adi Shankara said "the universe is an illusion / maya**" **because it is what we perceive**. **We tend to ignore them as philosophy or superstition.**

But let's look at it scientifically as we understand. When the unity is divided into equal parts there is no asymmetry and difference and hence there is no perceptual universe. **An asymmetric division is needed to create the dynamics necessary for progression and extension of unity**.

Let's summarize our understanding again:

- **√2 – the generative component and a multiplying factor creates multiple squares from a unity of square.**
- **√3 – the formative component that creates multidimensional polygonal shapes from a cube.**
- **√5 – the regenerative component or the binding component that transcends and binds both the worlds.**
- **Φ - Golden mean or the God's ratio,** which is an evolutionary principle that is guided from within and an indisputable mathematical evidence of the conscious evolution of this Universe.
- Φ - Is a self-similar variable which can be used to derive Unity and it is the only proportion by which the Primordial rhythm maintains it perpetual oscillation to sustain this universe.
- Relation between **Φ and √5 is, Φ = (√5+1)/2**

Now let's geometrically as to how Φ and √5 are intricately linked. Consider the Pentagon picture whose side is of unit length. Ie.

AB = BC = CD = DE=AE = 1 and

EG = FB = CG = DF = 1 and

EB = Φ = 1.61803399 and BG = 1/Φ = 0.61803399 and hence all the ratios like AG = AF = EF = GB = 1/Φ.

Also FG = $1/\Phi^2$, which means **EB = EF+FG+GB = $1/\Phi+1/\Phi+1/\Phi^2$**

Also GI = $1/\Phi^2$ and GJ = $1/\Phi^3$

5.5

(Figure 27: Pentagon & Φ, Courtesy: Internet)

If you are interested more please check out the Fibonacci series and its relation to Φ. **The importance of 5 is dominant in every living organism while 6 and 8 are the characteristic of mineral and inanimate structures. It used to be rule of thumb that any plants / flowers which has 5 petals is an edible plant and hence 5 and pentagon are the symbols of life which contains the God's ratio or the golden mean.**
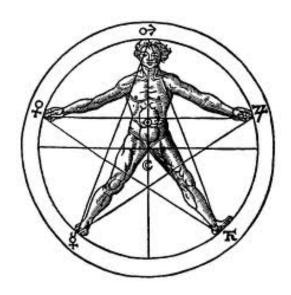
Now let's also understand how a **√5** is related to **√2 and √3.** If we consider a right angle triangle with the base of **√2** and height of **√3** or vice versa then the hypotenuse is **√5.** Now let me draw the connection between √2, √3, √5, Φ and π. If you think they are all some random numbers which cannot be fixed to their 10th decimal and not related to each other, just see the following relationship.
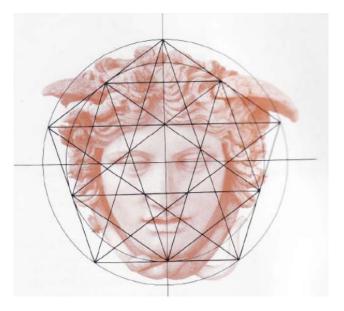
$$\pi = \Phi^2 \times 6/5 \qquad \text{or alternatively} \qquad \Phi = (\sqrt{\pi} * \sqrt{5}) / (\sqrt{2} * \sqrt{3})$$

This is the binding factor. I shall produce below some pictures which are aligned based on pentagon and the web is replete with them for you to understand more.
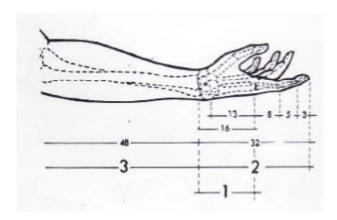
These 2 parts were little heavy and I shall move to easier aspects on the universal rhythm from next blog. The point I was trying to make is that everything in this universe is subject to a proportion and its fractals and let's see the manifestation of it in our daily life.

Happy reading!
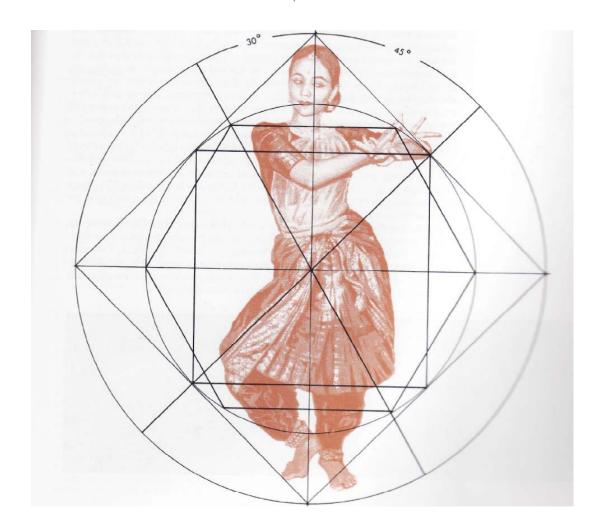
(Figure 28: Pentagon & Human shape,
Courtesy: Internet)

(Figure 29: Pentagon & Human face,
Courtesy: Internet)

(Figure 30: Human hand and Fibonacci Series
Courtesy: Internet)

(Figure 31: Bharatanatyam and body alignment (Courtesy: Robert Lawlor, The Sacred Geometry)

The positions of Hindu classical dance (Bharat Natyam) describe geometric relationships from the axis of the body and the alignment of center of gravity at "hara" invoking rooting and divine power of transformation. In Hinduism "hara" is one of the names of Lord Shiva as in "Hara Hara Shakara"

20. TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 20 – SANKHYA YOGA AND SAGE KAPILA

Now, let's look at what **Sankhyakarika** one of the greatest scientific works by **Sage Kapila**. I need to highlight that the **Sankhya philosophy** is one of the most evolved philosophies about the secrets of nature; it contains only 72 verses of which 68 of them define the complete spectrum of universal manifestation. **This Sankhya Yoga is referred in Bhagavad Gita – Chapter 2 is called Sankhya Yoga and in Chapter 10, verse 26, Lord Krishna identifies himself with Sage Kapila**.

Sankhya in Sanskrit means numerals / numbers. Sage Kapila states:

- Any measurement is a relational process and only a change can be measured but it takes time. The difference between the yardstick and the measured object constitutes the measured variable, which in effect is an incremental change. Since the observer can detect or measure only a change then logically, **the incremental unit of measurement itself should form the basis to derive the whole. This is the genesis of Φ.**

- **Correlate the above statement with the equation a + √a = 1. The unity is derived from the proportion "a" or 1/Φ.**

- As an example, the arch of a bow has expansive stress on the outer side and compressive stresses on the inner side, while the string is in tension and all are balanced at every instant. The expansive, compressive and tensile stresses can be expressed by one law.

- Alternatively, a single variable describes the proportionality of three types of forces existing at the same time. **Such a variable should be scale invariant, self-similar and have an axiomatic relationship to the whole.**

- **So Sage Kapila called 1/Φ as a self-similar variable from which the unity can be derived.**

- So he postulated if **x** is the value of a measured increment then the total value **1+x** must be related to the ratio of change as 1/x at the same instant of time or simultaneously. This means **1+x = 1/x**, and would lead us to $X^2 + X = 1$.

- He quotes that if the primordial rhythm has to be self sustaining then the proportion is certainly governed by 1/Φ. He gives the formula for this oscillations as follows:
  - **$X = 1/\Phi = 0.61803399$**
  - **Increment / Expansion = 1+x = 1.61803399 = Φ**
  - **Compression = 1-x = 0.38196601 = X^2**
  - **Resonance = X^3 = X - X^2 = 0.23606798**

Resonance or X^3 is the factor which protects this rhythm from decaying and dying off. So **Φ or 1/Φ** is such an important ratio or proportion so it is called as the **Golden mean or God's ratio**.

I shall highlight some of the factors / ratio which are part of Sankhya Yoga and what is amazing and you find formulas for Tamasic, Sattwic and Rajasic Guna states. (Please refer "Secret of Sankhya Yoga" – G. Srinivasan in the web).

- **Kapila defines the four qualities of the unmanifested state as Aikaantha (Synchronized), Aathyanta (perpetual), Atho (Dynamic)and Abhavath (unmanifest).**

- Taking C as cyclic rate of oscillation or vibration and x as rate of change per cycle then the three Guna self similar interactive states are shown as vibratory counts per cycle by the formula.
  Thaama = C^{1+x} . Rajasic = C^{x+x} . Sathwa = C^{1-x}.

- Some of the numbers that Sankhya Karika deals with are **1/7 (0.142857), π/10 (0.314159), 1/Φ (0.618034), √2 (1.414), Φ(1.61803399), √3 (1.732), √5 (2.23), e (2.718282), π (3.14159) and declares that the unmanifested state (Abhavaat) can exist only when the oscillations are between π/10 (0.314159) and e(2.718282). This is simply amazing since the state of Abhavvat is the state of Brahman.**

Despite herculean efforts I am unable to understand the Bhashya for the 72 verses which is about 500 pages explaining the secrets of Sankhya in any significant measure. I wish someone can step in and help us by explaining Sankhya Yoga that is comprehensible to our level of intelligence.

We have a treasure of secrets and richness hidden in our scriptures and it seems we have already lost most of them and the fundamental reason being our indifference to Sanskrit and our mother tongue.

As a wise man said, **"Indians are the most ignorant about their rich past and scientific traditions."**

Happy reading!

The passage produced below is just the summary of verse 1.

…The Sankhya view that evolves out of the complete theory is that only vibrations are detected by the observer... Since only relative changes can be be detected, any fundamental component that is not in a vibratory state cannot be detected. Vibrations are caused by components in an interactive state or a cyclic state of colliding and separating that is common to all interactions and wave phenomenon.

The interactions create three distinct modes of stresses. Collisions are compressive or inelastic. The resultant reaction is expansive or elastic. When the interacting components lack the freedom to move away the interactive state is maintained in a cyclic or shuttling mode in the same location in a resonant state.

*This important Sutra lays emphasis that if the observed process of detection is dependant on vibrations, then fundamental space **must** contain components with those four characteristics described as states, which makes it function in a holographic way. That is all vibrations remain in fixed relationship relative to each vibratory point in a coherent and resonant state.*

21. TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 21 – 5 AND 8 THE UNIVERSAL RHYTHM

Let's summarize what we have seen so far and then move on to more interesting aspects.

We have touched upon the God's particle and its characteristics. We also looked at the 5 fold manifestation process and in that we looked at how **Moolam** becomes **Kaalam** (time) and how time rhythmically (**Seelam**) vibrates with a proportion and creates forms and shapes (**Kolam**). We also touched upon some of the ways we had codified the secrets of nature like **Lord Shiva, Lord Nataraja, Lord Ganapati etc.**

Before we see how rhythm **(Seelam) and shapes (Kolam)** manifests itself as universe, let's first look at one specific word from Tamil which has three significant meanings converging into one, Yen (எண்), means number **eight, generic term for Number / numeral** and also root for எண்ணம் which means thought. I shall explain the significance of this below.

Importance of 8 / Octet:

It is stated that these God's particles combine in the multiples of **8 / octaves ONLY** and the states of manifestation from being subtle to gross is as given below.

- **Formless Un-manifest State** 0 (This is the Abhavaat state)
- **Guna State** $8^0 = 1$
- **First stage** $8^1 = 8$
- **Second stage** $8^2 = 64$
- **Third stage** $8^3 = 512$
- **Fourth Stage** $8^4 = 4096$
- **Fifth Stage** $8^5 = 32768$. This is the state with manifest form.

This rule is applicable to both the visual and aural forms which mean we can see or hear anything only in the fifth stage of evolution. So as per **Pranava veda, the fundamental numbers are 0,1** and the key **numerals for proportions are 5, 8**.

Significance of 5 and 8:

Pranava Veda describes that 8 / octets is the essential harmonic oscillator for the manifestation of the universe since this generative force is the multiple with which the whole universe manifests and sustains. You many note that number 8 is associated with Lord Narayana and his Ashtakshara mantra **(Om NaMoNaRaYaNaYa)**.

The principle of 5 / Penta, we have seen is the regenerative binding force earlier. It is always a 5 stage process. This is associated with **Lord Shiva (Om NaMaSiVaYa).** The un-manifest form comes to the Guna state with the force of 5 and in the multiples of 8. It is also important to highlight that 5 and 8 are part of the **Fibonacci series and their proportion is 8/5 = 1.6, which is Φ**.

But it is important to realize that the building of octets is a 5 step process for manifestation. This highlights that one cannot exist without another and both are interdependent. Now let's recall:

**"Shivasya hridayam vishnur, Vishnoscha hridayam shivah:" and
"Shivaya Vishnu rupaya Vishnave Shiva rupine"**

Vishnu (8) is the heart of Shiva (5) and likewise Shiva is the heart of Vishnu and they both are the representation of each other.

If you have noted Tamil language stressed the importance of words and its meaning – this was addressed in the first few parts of this series. Here Tamil language gives the importance of numerals and its significance in the formation of universe. Both the great sages **Auvaiyaar** and **Thiruvallular** stated the importance of numerals and letters in an identical fashion. Both these lines mean, Numerals and letters are like eyes for living beings / equal to eyes.

எண் என்ப ஏனை எழுத்து என்ப இவ்விரண்டும் கண் என்ப வாழும் உயிர்க்கு!

எண்ணும் எழுத்தும் கண்ணென தகும்!

Now what should be noted here is that (**எண்**) importance of numerals precedes that of letters and we know why. The aural and visual forces become letters & its associated sound at the 5th stage but the numerals are from the Guna state. **Numerals were associated with 8 / Lord Vishnu and letters were associated with 5 / Lord Shiva**. Guess you can get the scientific knowledge and significance we have in our languages.

Since what is in macro is there in microcosm, taking the analogy to microcosm our mind becomes the Moolam (Source), our thoughts are the vibration, time is measured as the periodicity between thoughts, based on the rhythm of our vibration we perceive the world. This is given very nicely as **உள்ளமே மூலமாகி உணர்வுறும் கோலமாகி**! means **Our mind is the source and its awareness becomes forms.**

This wonderful concept is what is linked in the word Yen (**எண்**), which means number **eight, generic term for Number / numeral** and also root for **எண்ணம்** thoughts. **Just this one word in Tamil highlights the supreme secret that thoughts become form and words with the help of numbers and numerical proportion converts aural and visual forms to thoughts.**

As a wise man said, **"Indians are the most ignorant about their rich past and scientific traditions."**

Happy reading!

22. Time = Space Series. Part 22 – Eight (Octet) and the 5 sacred arts

எட்டே எட்டியல் எட்டெட் டியலே
எட்டின் நெறியே அளவை மாநெறி !!
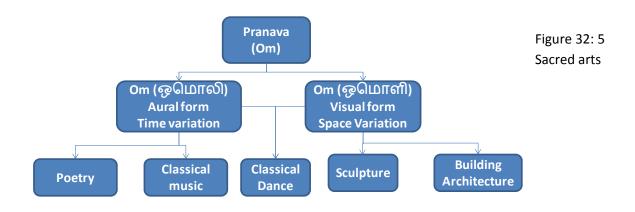
The above lines from the work **Aintiram** means **"Eight / Octa (multiples of 8) is the fundamental numeral for any measurements**. We did see that the fundamental god's particle add up with each other in the multiples of 8 in the previous part.

In ancient India there were about 64 arts (http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Kal%C4%81) known as **Chatuhsasti kala ("ஆய கலைகள் அறுபத்துநான்கினையும்"** as popularly known in Tamil), but I am going to talk about 5 sacred arts.

We will look at the importance of numeral 8 and how this is fundamental to everything in this Universe. But let's again start again with etymology. The word arts in **Sanskrit** is **"Kala" (कला)** and **Time in Sanskrit is काला (Kaala).** So etymologically we can say that classical arts are all about variation of time (or harmonics of this pulsation of time in the multiples of 8).

After etymology let's get to the basics. Our understanding of the universe is that **"the primordial space manifests itself as spatial forms through pulsation (Time) and its periodicity (Rhythm & order).** This evolution started with **Pranava which came out as aural and visual form (Sound & light)**. When they say **"The one became two"** they refer to the Pranava which is light and sound from the unmanifested consciousness.

Aintiram states that the dual form of **Pranava** gave forth 5 sacred arts which are fundamental to most of the other arts. **The Aural form of Pranava gave forth Poetry and Classical Carnatic music, which can only be heard. The Visual form of Pranava gave forth Sculpture and Building architecture, which can only be seen. Both the aural and visual forms merged to create the classical dance (Bharatnatyam**), which involves both seeing and hearing.

Figure 32: 5 Sacred arts

They were classified as 5 vedas:

- **Poetry – Sabda veda**
- **Classical music – Gandharva Veda**
- **Classical Dance – Naatya veda**
- **Sculpture – Sthapatya Veda** *(Sthapati is a clan that is the master of this veda)*
- **Architecture – Pranava Veda**

Pendatic Tamil and its construction:

Pendatic Tamil is called as **ஐந்தமிழ் (Aintamizh**) which consists all the five above arts, **இயல், இசை, நடனம், சிற்பம், கட்டிட கலை**. It is these 5 arts which were formed out of the Tamil language and the language itself is created from the word Om. They say that it is not 12 basic vowels in Tamil but only 5. They are அ, இ, உ, எ, ஒ. These 5 letters combine to form the rest of the letters like

அ + அ = ஆ,   இ + இ = ஈ,   உ + உ = ஊ,   எ + எ = ஏ,   ஒ + ஒ = ஓ,   அ + இ = ஐ,

அ + உ = ஔ

Here you may want to note that 5 has become 12. Same way in classical music they say that the basic svaras are 5 (ச, ரி, க, ப, த) – Sa, Ri, Ga, Pa ,Da which became 7 and then 12.

So 5 is the fundamental numeral for evolution and Tamil language has grown based on this philosophy and science. I am sure some of the other Indian languages have the same basics. The book which describes this phenomenon of evolution of language from Pranava and arts from language is **Aintiram (it means 5 works) (ஐந்திறம்)** authored by Mamuni Mayan dated 10000 BC.

You would agree that the aural forms are predominantly variations in time and visual forms are of spatial variations. But our ears stand for akash tatva ("space") and it can perceive variation of time and space and we will see this in detail. When we said **"Time = Space"** we will see that both of them are governed by the same laws and measurements and hence there is no difference between **Time and Space**.

Happy reading!

23.   TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 23 –

NANOTECHNOLOGY IN ANCIENT INDIA & SIZE OF GOD'S PARTICLE

Let me start with these questions:

- **What is the size of the God's particle and how is it calculated?**
- **Does nature endow a standard measure for an average human being's height?**

Before we proceed to the next section I want to give the very detailed space calculation table used in ancient India. Our rishis did not stop just with telling us that the **Paramaanu / God's particle** is very small but went ahead and established its size.

If you have to see such minute particles then your sensory organs – Eye and mind should be tuned to it so that it can see things at that size. From the formula available in our ancient texts I was trying to reconstruct by working backwards to find out the size of the **Paramaanu / God's particle should be.** Please refer the table below which I have arrived at.

ANCIENT SPACIAL MEASUREMENTS		
Unit scale	**Ancient metric**	**Current day Metrics**
1 Paramaanu =	Smallest particle	133 nano meters
1 Ther Thugil=	8 Paramaanu	1065 nano meters
1 Mayir nuni=	8 Ther Thugil	8526 nano meters
1 Eer=	8 Mayir nuni	68 Micro meters
1 Paen=	8 Eer	545 Micro meters
1 Yavai=	8 Paen	0.4365 cms
1 Angula=	8 yavai	3.4925 cms
1 Tala=	6 Angula	8.25 inches
1 Muzham=	24 Angula	33 inches
1 Muzham=	4 Tala	33 inches
2 Muzham=	8 tala	66 inches
Universal height of man	9 Tala	74.25 Inches

(Figure 33: Ancient Spatial measurements. Courtesy – Dr. Ganapathi Sthapati)

I have given the exact word used in Tamil for these measurements instead of translating it in English. Ther Thugil is the dust from chariot wheel, Mayir nuni is the width of a hair tip, Eer and Paen are the lice

eggs and lice. Some of you may jump that most of the units were subjective and would have variations in normal life. I agree but there is a reference point – **Angula** and its exact measure based on which other values are derived backwards to arrive at the value of Paramaanu.

Now if you note the **smallest particle** aka **God's particle / Paramaanu** is **133 nm** in size which is currently under study by the CERN scientists. Nanotechnologists today confirm that the width of a hair strand is about 25000 nm and our ancient texts give the size at the tip of the hair strand (and not the width) as 8526 nm. I see that to be a reasonable estimate when no such precision instruments were available in those days.

One Angula is 11/8 of an inch. This is the fundamental measure which is used in any of the worldly measurements. Now you can see that 6 Angula is 1 Tala which is about 8.25 inches and then comes the most important revelation. **Does nature endow a measure for an average human being's height?**

The answer is yes. **As I said an average human being should be 9 Tala's height and hence the nature endowed height for any human being is 74.25 inches.** This is the ideal height and the variation is attributed to our Karma, hereditary and lifestyle.

Now let me give few tips to find out your height from typical measurements:

- Measure the length of the face (from forehead to chin). Your total height should be 9 times that height. This is the principle of Nava tala. As an extension measure your thigh or legs length excluding the knee and feet and your total height should be 4.5 times that.

- Take your right hand middle finger (No. Don't show it to anyone☺). You would notice that the finger is divided into 3 parts. Measure the length of the lowest part – from the end of the palm to the first subsection. Your height typically should be 54 times this measure. Since this measure for an average man with nature endowed length shall be 1 Angula. Hence your height shall be 54 times that measure.

- The length of the thumb from the base of the wrist should be about 3 Angula and hence 18 times of that should be your height. This can go on and on.

So, to sum up this section:

- Instead of looking them as Rishis or Sages or religious figures if we look at them as scientists in the field of nanotechnology, quantum physics and Astro dynamics we would accept most of the secrets without any prejudice.

- Not just the measure for the height of the man but they had formula for every object and this was the secret of their wisdom. For any astronomical object, they had formulas to measure body's core (width) and also the width of the mantle. The roots of their wisdom lie in understanding that "many' are just a harmonic variation of the "one" subject to a mathematical

proportion. Hence there was no "rocket science" in those days and all of them were as simple as it looks like.

As a wise man said, **"Indians are the most ignorant about their rich past and scientific traditions."**

Happy reading!

24. Time = Space Series. Part 24 – Octet, Octave and the Gandharva veda (Classical Music)

Let's start with classical music where Octaves form the fundamental for it. There are seven svaras (Sa, Ri, Ga, Ma, Pa, Da, Ni) which is made into an octave with another Sa after Ni. So it becomes Sa, Ri, Ga, Ma, Pa, Da, Ni, Sa (*Do Re Mi Fa Sol La Ti Do*). The first rule of classical music is "**Shruthi Mata, Layam Pita**", which means **Shruthi is the mother and this corresponds to the frequency or the spatial component and Laya is the Tala component which is a function of time compared as father**.

Tala	Anga Notation	Tisra	Chatusra	Khanda	Misra	Sankeerna
Dhruva	IOII	11	14	17	23	29
Matya	IOI	8	10	12	16	20
Rupaka	OI	5	6	7	9	11
Jhampa	IUO	6	7	8	10	12
Triputa	IOO	7	8	9	11	13
Ata	IIOO	10	12	14	18	22
Eka	I	3	4	5	7	9

(Figure 34: 35 types of Tala. Courtesy: Wikipedia, internet)

There are 7 fundamental Talas in carnatic music and each Tala has 5 different variation based on Jathi so in all there are 35 different Talas as given in the tabulation. These Talas are measured as the "matras" the unit duration of time. There is another concept called Nadai or Gati which we will not touch upon now. But let's look at these 35 variations and can you tell me where the most famous "Adi Tala" is in this 35? Most importantly why it is also called as **"Adi Tala" – which is the primordial rhythm**?

The answer is **"Chatusra Jathi Triputa tala"** highlighted in the table is called as **"Adi Tala"** and it is called so since it gave the most primordial rhythm with 8 time units. But there are couples of more cells where we can see "8" in the table and why these are not called '**Adi Tala**"?

The primordial rhythm has a pattern of **1, 3, 2 and 2** which adds to 8. Further on we will see just the variation of this Adi Tala in anything and everything. Tisra Jati matya Thala has a structure of 3, 2, 3 and Kanda Jati jhampa Tala has a structure of 5,1,2, hence they are not classified as the primordial rhythm.

Let's quickly touch upon the spatial variation or the frequency / pitch aspect of this divine art before we branch off to other topics. The image below gives the 16 levels of Savaras which includes tones and sub tones. The seven svaras become 22 tones based on the frequency variation / harmonics. Here 7 are fundamental svaras and 16 as given below is the most practiced variation and 22 is not popular.

Levels	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	12	13	14	15	16	17
Svaras	s	ra	ri	ru	ga	gi	gu	ma	mi	p	dha	dhi	dhu	na	ni	nu	s
Ratio	1	32/31	16/15	10/9	32/27	6/5	5/4	4/3	27/20	3/2	128/81	8/5	5/3	16/9	9/5	15/8	2
Factor	1.0000	1.0323	1.0667	1.1111	1.1852	1.2000	1.2500	1.3333	1.3500	1.5000	1.5802	1.6000	1.6667	1.7778	1.8000	1.8750	2.0000
Freq (Hz)	240.00	247.74	256.00	266.67	284.44	288.00	300.00	320.00	324.00	360.00	379.26	384.00	400.00	426.67	432.00	450.00	480.00

(Figure 35: Svaras and frequencies)

You can note that Sa starts with 240 Hz and the last Sa is 480 Hz doubling the frequency and hence an octave. While Sa has 240 hz and 480Hz levels, the tone Pa (P) or Sol does not have any variation and this is at 360Hz. I am going to correlate the Mayan studies with Carnatic music and instead of seeing the whole spectrum from "Sa", I am going to see this spectrum from "Pa".

You would note that "Pa" at 360 Hz corresponds to the **Harmonic osciallator constant number** and the whole spectrum is almost like a Sine wave from 360Hz to 480 hz and falling down to 240 Hz with a uniform gap of 120Hz above and below. All the tones would fall within this 240Hz centered around 360 hz. So the spatial variation in carnatic music can be summed as "It originates at a value (240Hz) and varies by the same measure (240Hz) centered on the harmonic oscillator". Since the objective is about looking at the primordial rhythm we will not touch any other aspect on this topic.
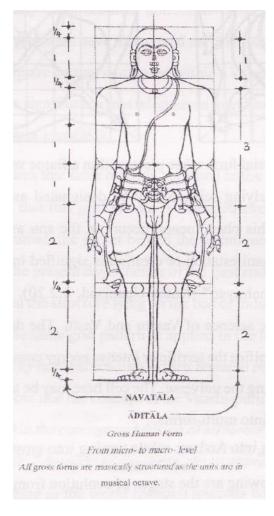
We will see how this **Adi Tala** is the fundamental pattern / rhythm that manifests in every other art.

As a wise man said, **"Indians are the most ignorant about their rich past and scientific traditions."**

Happy reading!

25. TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 25 – ADI TALA, NAVA TALA AND STHAPATYA VEDA (SCULPTURE)

Let's look at how Octet and the primordial rhythm (Adi Tala) that defines Sculpture. Let's recap some of the following:

- The process of evolution starts with Pranava which has aural and visual forms. We have also seen that anything subtle is represented in a 8x8 energy grid and anything gross is in 9x9 grid.
- The fundamental measure with which the particles bond is **Eight or** it's multiple and hence the primordial rhythm is an **Octet.**
- The fundamental measure of time is **Tala** and the **primordial Tala is Adi tala** with 8 units and a pattern of 1, 3, 2 and 2.

(Figure 36: Human form – Adi Tala, Nava Tala Courtesy: Dr. Ganpathi Sthapati)
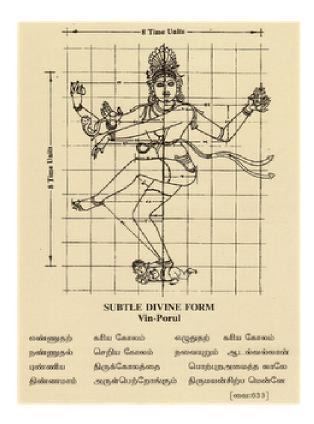
Now let's see the measurement rules as to how to make a sculpture of a human being.

- **The overall human height is measured as 9 talas.** Yes the same time measurement is used to measure height. Pinch yourself now, since height is a space variation and not a time variation yet it is measured with a metric of time. This is a secret which is unknown to many and even some of the experts in this field. This is where Time and spaces merges without any difference and this is the fundamental rule with which we have been creating visual and aural structures in the universe.

- **Divide a man's height as 9 units of which head, torso, thigh and legs would fall into the pattern of 1, 3, 2 and 2 which adds up to 8. This is the primordial rhythm – the Adi Tala now as a human form.**
  - Then how 8 became 9? No other branch of Vedas or science tells us this secret so explicitly to my knowledge. **The following parts, Top of the head to forehead, Neck, Knee and feet each measure 0.25 talas and hence add 1 additional tala to 8 and it becomes 9.** So Adi tala which is a subtle version of human becomes Nava Tala which is the gross version of human being. In the process of 8 becoming nine all the joints are formed in the body☺.

  - Let me add one more dimension to this. Our human body has a gross body (Sthula) and a subtle body (Sookshma sarira). **The Sthapatya veda tells us that the gross body is nava tala and sookshma sarira is Adi Tala**.

  - I fell off the chair when I understood this and the linkages. Check if you are still on your chair and maybe you should sit on the floor from now on☺.

Martial Arts and Lord Nataraja's stance:

Let me ask you the following questions here:

- Look at the image of the Lord Nataraja below. If a gross image should have Nava Tala which is a 9x9 grid then why the human image of Lord Nataraja which is a Nava Tala fitted into a 8x8 square instead of a 9x9 square?

- Both in Classical dance and in martial arts why do they ask you to stand in a posture where the knee is slightly or significantly bent. Not all of the stances but most of the basic stances correspond to this why? Let me know if you have received a satisfactory answer for this question.

(Figure 5 reproduced)

- The answer to this question reveals one more secret to us.
  a. **In Sthapatya veda each grid line is divided into 10 or 11 or 12 (usually 12) and hence a 9x9 grid has 9*12 = 108 blocks or levels of energy. This may explain why 108 is a sacred number from an energy perspective.** This covers the entire spectrum.
  b. When we create a gross image its always sculpted to 9 talas but when they sculpt image of the gods and in this case Nataraja, they fit the gross image to a 8x8 energy grid to invoke the subtle energies.
  c. How do they fit a 9 tala to 8 tala? The technique is not to change the proportion of nava tala but they ensure that 9 fits into 8 by making the image to bend it legs such that the height reduces by one unit.

- You can notice that Lord Nataraja's right leg is bent to fit the image in 8x8 grid. This is believed to invoke the subtle energies corresponding to that image.
- This is the same reason why martial arts and in Bharatnatyam your teacher asks you to take a basic stance which reduces the height from 9 units to 8 to invoke subtle energies. Of course the other reason is the alignment and focus to Hara / Dantein with that pose.

If I tell you that the science of nature and the associated philosophy codified in Hindu religious symbols are unmatched and amazing then I hope you would whole heartedly agree now. These religious texts and symbols offer the key to unlock the secrets of nature.

So to sum up, so far we have seen one variation of time as **Gandharva veda** that manifests as classical music and the primordial rhythm is **Adi Tala.** Next we saw that the **Sthapatya veda** in the form of sculptures offered the secret of space variation in **Adi Tala and Nava Tala**.

This is where Time and Space were equated with the same measure yet offered completely different arts.

The whole universe has these underlying and un-manifested interconnections and hence the **Hindu philosophy of "That one became many"…** is the supreme truth. Seeing the divinity in everything is the only truthful way of recognizing this science.

As a wise man said, **"Indians are the most ignorant about their rich past and scientific traditions."**

Happy reading!

26. TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 26 – SABDA VEDA, CHANDAS & POETRY (MA NISHAADA...)

शुक्लाम्बरधरं विष्णुं

शशिवर्णं चतुर्भुजम् ।

प्रसन्नवदनं ध्यायेत्

सर्वविघ्नोपशान्तये ॥

Shuklaambaradharam Vissnnum Shashivarnnam Caturbhujam |
Prasannavadanam Dhyaayet Sarvavighnopashaantaye ||

Let's start with this Sloka as a sample to see how 8 and its harmonics are integrated with Poetry. In this sloka there are 4 lines (a line is called Pada and Pada means feet in Sanskrit) and each line has 8 Sanskrit Aksharas (Only vowels and vowels with consonants imposed on them should be counted and pure consonants are not part of the count.) This is usually written in 2 lines as shown in English.

This is the most popular way of creating a sloka or poem in most of the Indian languages. This "metre" resonates as 32 aksharas in 4 padas. You may want to correlate this with 1,3,2,2 where the last 2 stands for your feet. So feet (pada) measures $1/4^{th}$ of the overall length of the subtle body (8 units) and 4 padas create the full blown subtle body. So such a constructed poem is a throbbing and vibrating energy body or a living organism and hence carries the power of the words it contains.

If all the padas have equal metre say 8 units then it is called **Sama Vrtta,** and if all are different it is called **Vi-Sama Vrtta** (not equal). **This 8 and 32 is the same as Adi Tala in carnatic music and ashta tala in sculpture. Can you make the connection now?**

In Sanskrit this metre is called as "**Chandas" and in Tamil it is called "Chandam**". **Chandas** is also one of the 4 important Vendagas and is called as the feet of the Vedas. **Let me ask you as to which language the Vedas are available in its primordial form?** The most popular and incorrect answer is Sanskrit. This is the level of awareness we have. Lets quickly look at these important points about Vedas and I shall correlate this with our topic of discussion.

- Unlike other faiths Hindus don't attribute the Vedas as word of god or given by some prophet. We consider Vedas as the breath of god (**"Nishwasitam"**) and not the word which means, Vedas are not created by god, but the breath. If there is no breath that person would not leave and hence it is associated with the very presence of god.

- Vedas are also **Apourusheya** which means it is not created by man and **Anaadi**, that does not have a beginning.

- But you can ignore them stating these are blind beliefs. Let's look at how this correlated with the science. Vedas are created by Pranava and these should be considered as the harmonics of the primordial vibration and nothing more.

- If it is pure vibration then the "which language it is written?" sounds stupid isn't. If it's pure vibration it has to be expressed in "Hz or wavelength" equivalent in ancient India. This is what **Chandas or metre** is all about. This measures pure vibration and anyone capable of tuning themselves to those frequencies have **SEEN** the Vedas and not **created them.** Hence all our rishis are **Mantra Drishtas and not Karthas**.

Difference between Vedas and Poetry:

Vedas contains both **poetic verses (Padya) and prose (Gadya)**. All the poetic verses are called **Chandas** and it complies with the rule as stated above. The difference between normal poetry and Vedas are, Vedas contain tonal variations (high pitch and low pitch) apart from the time, space variations but in Poetry there are no tonal variations. What has tonal variations and are not part of Vedas are called Slokas. So to sum up:

- Vedas are both in Padya and Gadya. What is in Padya is called chandas and it has tonal variations in addition to the time space variations.
- What has tonal variations but not part of Vedas is called as slokas.
- What does not have tonal variation but comply with the chandas rules are called Poetry.

Harmonics and types in Chandas:

We saw every line to have 8 matras / units / aksharas. There are variations and these are the harmonics available.

- **Gayatri** – This is a very special chandas with the mantra where instead of 4 padas, there are only 3 padas and hence it is called Tripada Gayatri. Each pada has 8 Aksharas and hence 24 Aksharas in Gayatri Mantra. This is also the only chandas where a mantra is named after the chandas. Some people write it as 6 letters per line and 4 padas which makes it 24.
- **Ushnik Chandas** – 7 letters per pada and 28 letters in all.
- **Anushtub Chandas** – This is the fundamental and popular one with 8 matras per pada and 32 in all. Ramayana the first poetry was set in this metre.
- **Brihatee Chandas -** 9 letters per pada and 36 letters in all
- **Pangti Chandas -** 10 letters per pada and 40 letters in all
- **Trishtup Chandas -** 11 letters per pada and 44 letters in all
- **Jagti Chandas -** 12 letters per pada and 48 letters in all. This has a subtype called bhujangam which is split as 6-6 and that moves like a snake. (Ex. Subramanya Bhujangam)
- **Shikarini Chandas -** 17 letters per pada and 68 letters in all. In Soundarya Lahiri it is split as 6 and 11 by Adi Shankara.
- **Udkriti Chandas** – 26 letters per pada and 104 letters in all.
- **Dhandakam – above 26 per pada**. **Ex.** Garuda Dandakam by Vedantha Diskshitar.

The reason I have given all the above is to emphasis that nothing in our religious scriptures, literatures are without a grammar, order, form or proportion. Everything confirms to a mathematical proportion.

Just like **Vedas are the breath of god, Chandas is the breath of every mantra.** The mantra is powerful only if it is recited to this metre. This is the reasons some of the poem even if it is not related to religion

stands the test of time. Also if you recite a mantra even without knowing its meaning but as per the chandas then the mantra shall bear its fruit.

"Ma Nishada" …..Origin of Poetry:

Would you believe that the first poetry in this universe started with a curse?

Sage Valmiki saw a hunter who killed one of the birds of a pair which were in love. The sage got enraged and cursed the hunter, *O, Hunter, may you not fare well anytime as you killed one of pair of the Krouncha birds which were happily engaged in love".*

mA niShAda pratiShThA.n tvamagamaH shAshvatI.n samAH |
yatkrauJNchamithunAdekamavadhIH kAmamohitam.h || (bAlakANDa 2.14)

The above sloka also meant *"O Lord of Lakshmi, it will bring you eternal glory for having killed a male of a happy couple who lost his head completely in lust.."* This male is Ravana who lost his head in lust despite being happily married with his wife Mandodari. The other interesting connection I have this sloka with this series is that the **Mamuni Mayan** is the father of **queen Mandodari** and father in law of demon king Ravana.

Once the sage realized that this curse also meant something very auspicious and referred to Rama avatar he wrote Ramayana which is the origin of poetry as known in the world and it is called **Adi Kaavya.** Valmiki Ramayana set in **Anushtub Chandas** which is an octet.

So if you look at both the poetry and classical music composition:

- The rhythm in which it is set is a pulsation of time which confirms to a divine proportion.
- The raga and the pitch variation is a pulsation of space / frequency which again confirms to a divine proportion. We did not discuss about ragas though.
- The words used are divine and we have seen the divinity of the letters and words.
- The meaning of the song / poem usually exhorts the qualities of the god and hence is divine.
- The classical music and poetry invoke the subtle divine energy in the aural form just as much the sculpture (when it confirms to the divine proportion) invokes the subtle energy from in its visual form.
- This is how we see that "**one became many"** and **binding factors** in this process of evolution being the numerals 5 and 8.

Alas! Today, we are the fanatic fans of musicians who lacks morality & humility, who is ignorant of any divine proportion, most of the music we hear is a cacophony and very mechanical, the words are indecipherable and lacks depth, the meaning of the song - if at all any are just suggestive of sexual emotions and nothing else and the dance movements we see are the gyrations of the hip with a great blend of fitness training exercises associated with it. This is not to negate some of the fine works we see even today but to stress that we had such high science and taste which we seems to be losing / lost for no good reason other than ignorance.

As a wise man said, **"Indians are the most ignorant about their rich past and scientific traditions."**

Happy reading!

27.   TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 27 – ARCHITECTURE – THE ZENITH OF MATHEMATICS (VAASTU)

Just look back in history and see what stands the test of time. Even if a civilization is completely extinct what stand beyond their time is the architecture of the civilization which stands tall as a witness to the richness and maturity of the civilization.

Aintiram states that **"Architecture (Space engineering) is the zenith of the mathematics**" in **"கட்டிட கலையே கணக்கியல் உச்சி**…" This space science is called as Vaastu Sastra in India.

There are few important concepts in Vaastu science which I want to present as below:

- The whole world is made up of **God's particle (Vastu, வஸ்து)** and nothing else. It is this God's particle which actually manifests itself as gross forms (**Vaastu, வாஸ்து**). You would note that Vastu (Subtle) has become Vaastu (gross) by addition of letter "a" and this difference is reflected in our languages too. **When அ / अ become ஆ / आ the subtle becomes gross**. Hence the most important statement for this science is "**Vastur eva Vaastu**", this means **the subtle becomes gross or energy becomes matter or the space becomes earth.** This is purely manifestation / evolution and there is no creation. This has nothing to do with religion but supreme science.

- Since it is all only one energy and it ever vibrates based on the harmonics and resonance, this vibration is called life and everything in this world, be it a living being or a non-living being as per our current definition – everything vibrates. The chair you sit and the vehicle you use are all living beings. **Everything throbs with energy and there is nothing which is a non-living being in this universe.** Without this vibration there would not be any difference between iron and cotton. The difference between particles is essentially the molecular constitution which is a function of its elements and its periodicity. This defines presence or absence of quality and sensory perceptions. This was put very nicely by **Poet Subramanya Bharathi** as எங்கு காணினும் சக்தியடா, **Where ever you see its just energy.**

- The above concept is very profound and this is called as **Science in our scriptures since it deals with Knowledge of the space** (விண் ஞானம், Vin-gyan).

- By the same concept when a subtle energy which is in the open space is converted to a gross form like a building then this body / building vibrates based on the design specifications and the material used for that building. It does not matter what is the measure and what is the material used, it vibrates. **When a structure is created with a divine proportion then we breathe life**

into it. Thus the structure becomes a living organism. This is how some of the structure stands the test of time for thousands of years.

- **Vaastu is that science which aligns the vibration of the building with the vibration of the dweller in the building so that both the living organisms (the building and the dweller) are in harmony and resonance.**

- It sounds simple but for this science we need to know includes the vibration pattern of the dweller, mathematics of space engineering, the knowledge of materials and its nature so that we can match it up to create harmony. This is precisely what Vaastu as a science does. Again it has nothing to do with religion. If you Google you would find thousands of Vaastu experts outside India who perceive and pursue this as a supreme spatial science.

- Let us look at the word **"vas"** which is the root. This means to shine; to grow bright, **to bestow by shining upon**, becoming light. **Vaas** is its derivative which means to perfume, an intoxicant, **dwelling place**, to assume the appearance of matter. This is the root for **SriniVAAS**, **SreeVAASan**, **VAASam** in Tamil means living. Most importantly the ability to feel this subtle thing (which cannot be touched) is called **VAASanai (வாசனை, in Tamil it means smell).**

- This spatial science includes knowledge on the following:
  - Nature of soil and material, and the qualities of its energy.
  - Measures for spatial engineering that best resonates with the environment and the dweller.
    - Note that the dwelling unit cannot be compatible to all the human beings universally. This varies with individual to individual and hence the Vaastu compatibility for the house is always seen for the housewife than the man with the assumption that what is compatible to the lady of the house would suit all others.

  - Accurate calculation of time and the position of astronomical bodies. The time engineering merges here with the space engineering. Consider the following to understand this:
    - In some temples you would notice that the sunlight falls on the deity on a specific day / time of the day. This is not possible if the future position of astronomical bodies at a given time is calculated very accurately.
    - When we build a house / temple the inauguration ceremony should be conducted at a specific time. So it's just not Space Engineering but time engineering also.

  - We see that the concept of space and time are not just a continuum but:

    - The measures of time and space merge and results in the same unit measure called Tala. It is Adi Tala in Poetry, Music and the same measure is used in building and sculpture dimensions.

- **Space is created because of the pulsation called Time** and hence the unit time measure (for pulsation) and the unit space measure (result of pulsation) are one and the same. This means the pulsation causes proportional displacement or creation of Space.

- It is the same concept used in meditation techniques. With Pranayama, Dharana and Dhyana you control the pulsation and align with it. In Samadhi you stop the pulsation and hence you are beyond time and space and you reach a luminescent state of resonant non-vibration.

Hence I named this book as **"Time = Space".**

We have seen that each subtle unit is represented in 8x8 energy grid and the gross unit is represented in a 9x9 energy grid. Mayan states that **"Each module or pada within the 8x8 / 9x9 structure resonates with a specific energy.** Based on Space, Time, Light, and Sound coordinates the frequency of vibration has its unique position in the Space/ Time continuum. **This energy level of frequency of vibration is called a luminous body or Devata**. This devata has particular attributes based upon its position and qualities in the Space/Time continuum (placement among the 64 / 81 sub-cubes or padas)".
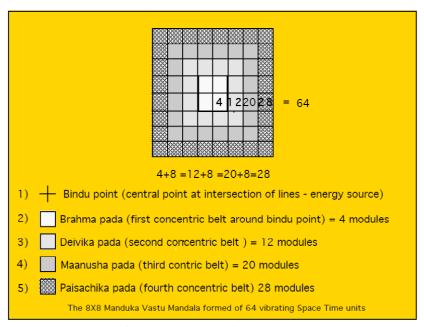
Figure 37: 5 states of 8x8 Energy Grid (Courtesy: Dr. Ganapathi Sthapati)

Now what is evident here in this science is 8 and 5 merges and so does Space and time.

- **Manifestation occurs in additive values of eight and in 5 stages. You can note that the Bindu (Point) has become 4, then 12, then 20 and then 28. (4+8=12 +8=20+8=28 with a total additive factor of 64). Manifestation occurs in sequences of five steps known as the Pentadic Order.**
- **The mathematical calculation which gives form to consciousness / space / subtle matter is called "Ayadi Gananam". We know that Ganam as the additive process.**

Dr. Jessica Marcey in her Fabric of Universe states that:

- The subtle energy point in the center becomes a self effulgent energy generator pouring out waves of energy
- becoming a self spinning stabilized structure of four padas / modules then
- adding eight units of energy to manifest the 4X4 structure of 16 units or modules; then
- adding another eight units of energy to manifest the 6X6 structure of 36 units or modules; then
- Adds eight more units culminating in 64 units or modules strung concentrically around the Bindu point or central generator.

So a central point with 4 concentric square belts around, each has its own frequency, vibration and energy characteristics evolving into a 9x9 unit as a gross matter. While this knowledge is significant of itself, when these phenomena are viewed in light of material manifestation as built space in architecture, the significance becomes stunning and profound.
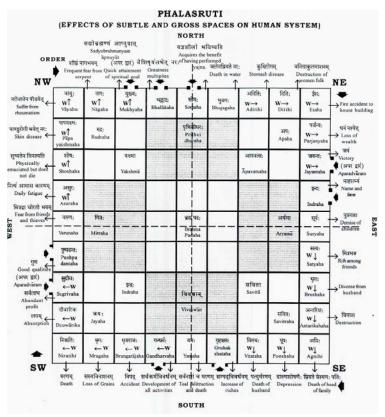
Figure 38: 9x9 energy grid with corresponding energy levels for each grid.
(Courtesy: Dr. Jessica Marcey, Fabric of the Universe)

So, to sum up this section, we have seen that how every inanimate thing in this universe is still a living being and how with the spatial science we can pump throbbing energy into a building. This is the supreme science where Time and Space merges. This is the 4th sacred art we talked about which is a manifestation of the visual form of Om.

As you would have noticed I have avoided talking about rituals and rules here but focused on the concept and philosophy. When we talk about rituals there are very many variations and we get into an unnecessary argument that whether it is rational or superstitious. Since most of the arts have become commercialized, the person's qualification and his intentions are always questionable.

The objective of this book is to highlight the scientific aspects of the universe in a small way and emphasis that our culture is built on this science. Be it language or arts or religion all are built on scientific facts. They all were nourished and nurtured in thousands of Temples across India which is the container and protector of this subtle science and energy.

Let's see some more interesting aspects of this in the next section.

Happy reading!

28.   TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 28 – CAPTURING THE DIVINE ENERGY – SQUARES & CIRCLES

It is told that the sanctorum of Lord Ranganatha's temple at Sri Rangam is circle from outside and square from inside. Why?
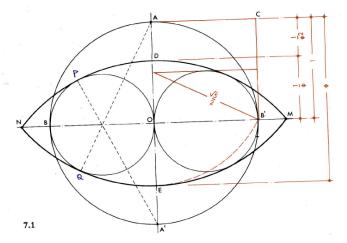
- Subtle energy is represented by 8x8 square grid and the perimeter of the square is 4r and the area of the square is r*r. When each grid length is 1 unit then r = 8, so perimeter is 32 and area of this square is 64.
- Gross energy is represented by 9x9 square grids and with the same measurements perimeter is 36 and area of this square is 91.

It has been an architect's dream to create and capture subtle energy in a gross structure. This is fundamental objective of spatial engineering. How do you go about to achieve this? It looks that they found that they would take the help of a circle either outside the square or inside the square to achieve this. Remember almost every yantra has a square and a circle component in it.

The measurements are so taken such that either the perimeter or the area of both the circle and the 8x8 square are matched. Most of the Hindu temples follow such rules to invoke the subtle energy in a gross structure like temple. This is one of the well kept secrets and this is the reason each and every temple is said to interact with your subtle body differently when you visit it.

This is why Lord Ranganatha's sanctorum in Sri Rangam temple is a circle from outside and square from inside. This secret is called as **Squaring a Circle**. This is all about to creating divine energies and this is the science that is implemented in all the Hindu temples which are built as per the Sastra. You need just basic math knowledge and patience to understand this supreme secret and I shall give below 2 techniques to match the area or the perimeter of the circle with that of the 8x8 square.
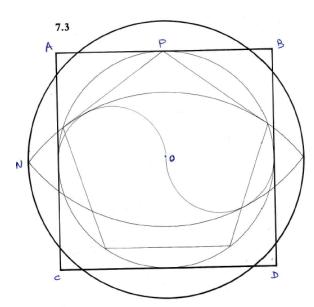
Perimeter match:

- Let's look at the image of a circle of unit radius. The **area of the large circle is π (πr^2) and the **circumference is 2π**. Here r =1.

- Draw 2 circles inside as shown with half the radius. The area of each circle is π/4 and the **combined area of both the circles is π/2**. The circumference of each circle is π and the **combined circumference of both the circles put together is 2π**.

Figure 39: Squaring a Circle (Courtesy: Dr. Robert Lawlor, Sacred Geometry)

- Just note that when a larger circle divides itself as 2 smaller circles the area is halved but the circumference is the same. **This gives the first philosophical metaphor that "One has become two which are bipolar yet non-dual". This is one of the fundamental principles of Advaita and also in Chinese philosophy. This bipolar non-dual force is the basis of life and is represented as male / female and Yang / Yin.**

- Now draw 2 arcs NDM and NEM from A' and A with the radius as A'P and AQ as shown in the dotted line. You would note that point D and E would divide the radius of the circle by divine proportion – 1/Φ and 1/Φ². **Radius of the arc AE is Φ. The Yin Yang symbol is based on this principle which embeds the divine proportion in it.**

- Now let me draw a square ABCD around this circle (Fig 40) where the side of the square is the diameter of the circle which is unit 2. Here OP =1, AB=BC=CD=DA = 2. **The perimeter of the square is 8 and the area of the square is 4.**

- Now draw a circle with O as the center and NO as the radius as shown in the figure. Here NO = √Φ. You can take this figure as such if you find it difficult to follow but for those who are interested, the derivation to calculate radius "NO" is as below:

Figure 40: Squaring a Circle 2 (Courtesy: Dr. Robert Lawlor, Sacred Geometry)

   o Consider a right angle triangle OPN. We know OP = 1 and PN which is the radius of the arc = Φ. Hence as per Pythagoras theorem $PN^2 = OP^2 + ON^2$ which is $Φ^2 = 1+r^2$. Let us say the radius is ON = r.
   o So $r = √(Φ^2-1)$. We know Φ is 1.61803399 so **r = √Φ.**

- We have got a larger outer circle with a radius **√Φ** and hence the perimeter should be **2π√Φ. This is numerically equal to 7.9924576, which is equal to 8. Now we have created a structure where a square whose perimeter and a circle whose perimeter are the same.** This technique is not limited to India but used in the same way for pyramid construction.

- **This is the perimeter match between 8x8 square grids and a circle around it.**

Area match:

- Vaastu has an easier way to get this done. Draw a circle inside a 9x9 energy grid whose diameter is equal to the side of the square. If each energy grid length is 1 unit, then side of the square is 9 units and the radius is 4.5 units.

- The area of this circle is πr^2 where r=4.5 and hence the area of the circle is 63.64 which is almost equal to area of the 8x8 square with unit grid length as 1 unit.

- This is the area match between a circle and 8x8 square. So as per Vaastu every building is divided into 9x9 grid and the energy level of each grid is used to design the living space.

Capturing the direction of Subtle energy flow:

The subtle divine energy flows is as per the diagram given below. It starts from the center and always flows clockwise. That is why Hindus always stick to clockwise flow of movements - be in their temples or anywhere else. This clockwise flow of movement is captured in the sacred symbol Swastik. Here 1 is the source / Moolam, 2 is Kaalam (Time), 3 Seelam (Rhythm), 4 Kolam (Form), 5 (Universe) Gnalam.
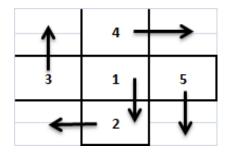
Figure 41: Clockwise flow of subtle energy

Figure 42: Swastik symbolizing energy flow

Relationship between √2, √3, √5, Φ and π:

- Now let me draw the connection between √2, √3, √5, Φ and π. Understanding this relationship is orgasmic and nothing less. If you think they are all some random numbers which cannot be fixed to their 10th decimal and not related to each other, just see the following relationship.

    $\pi = \Phi^2 \times 6/5$

    Philosophically 6/5 is the relation of a hexagon to a pentagon and the other way to express this relationship is
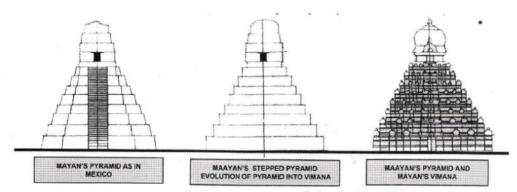
    $\Phi = (\sqrt{\pi} * \sqrt{5}) /(\sqrt{2}*\sqrt{3})$.

- This goes to prove that we did not just knew the numerals but divine fractions and proportions including their linkages. I am convinced, there is not even an iota of superstition in our temple and idol worship but they are supreme sciences codified and left for our benefits.

- The temple of **Sri Rangam** dates back from Ramayana, which is Treta Yuga that is 800000+ years back as per Hindu Scriptures. This is our rich past and supreme science is embedded in our culture and codified in thousands of temples across nook and corner of the country. Why should

we ignore this? We have a lot more to offer this world which is struggling to understand the nature of nature.

As a wise man said, **"Indians are the most ignorant about their rich past and scientific traditions."**

Happy reading!

The three panels are labeled:

MAYAN'S PYRAMID AS IN MEXICO

MAAYAN'S STEPPED PYRAMID EVOLUTION OF PYRAMID INTO VIMANA

MAAYAN'S PYRAMID AND MAYAN'S VIMANA

அடித்தளம் விரிந்ததாகி அவைமேலே குறுகிச் செல்ல படித்தளம் போல்விளங்கும் படித்தளமாகி நின்று குடித்தளம் அமைத்தலாலே, குணநிலை வடிவே கண்டு அடித்தள நிலைக்கே ஏற்ற முடித்தளம் அமையும் காண்பீர்.

முடித்தளாட்குமரனின் ஆட்சி, படைத்தவத் தன்மைக் மேலே விடித்தளமாகக் கண்டு கீழ்வரும் நிலையைக் கண்டு அடித்தள நுனுக்க மோர்ந்து, படைத்தலால் உணர்வேபோங்கி நடைத்தளம் காண்டல் அன்றோ நலமுறும் சிற்ப மென்றார்.

முடித்தள வுச்சியன்றோ மூலத்தை நன்குணர்த்தி முடிமுதற் பொருளேயாக்கி முழுப்பொருள் நிறைந்த மாட்சி முடித்தளம் வெளியில் தேக்கி, முடித்தளம் வலியால் ஆக்கி, முடித்தளம் ஒளியிசைக்க, முயல்வதே சிற்ப மென்றார்.

The base remains expanded while tapering upwards in a stepped pattern representing the form of the inner consciousness. The finial is in a proportionate order of the measurement at the base.

The top layer of energy is the ruling element. This surges forth upward and reaches the apex in a vertical column. This basic square is energy atom causing consciousness and the steps indicate its ascendancy. The whole form of the stepped pyramid is called *sirpam* (sculpture).

The crust which symbolizes a dense energy source, becomes a primal elemental energy and such energy is the ultimate source which causes first the air and in return it becomes the spiritual light and finally into sound. Even this is called *Sirpam*.

In other words, the pyramid with fire at the center symbolizes the mechanics of our inner spirit which turns into material pyramid, called *SIRPAM* (Inner picture).

Such pyramids exist even today not only in Maayan land but in Egypt, India, China and Japan. This means that the spiritual culture emanating from Kumari continent or Lumerian continent had spread, in the remote past, throughout the earth. So this Mayonic culture can be rightly called Universal culture not restricted to India alone. — *Dr. V. Ganapati Sthapati*

Figure 43: Similarity between Indian temples, Pyramids. The Tamil text states how the structure should be built. (Courtesy: Dr. Ganapathi Sthapati)

29.   TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 29 – HEAVEN & EARTH – LORD NATARAJA & LORD RANGANATHA

Let's stay with Lord Ranganatha and see the relationship between him and Lord Nataraja. Would you be surprised if one is the mirror image of the other? Look at the majestic picture of Lord Nataraja below. Wonder why this is always made in metal and not in wood or earth?

Figure 6 reproduced.

In Pancha bhoota (Space, Air, Fire, Water, Earth) Metal is always associated with Space and Wood is associated with Air. This system is reflected well in the Chinese system and it was not any different in our Vaastu system either. Since Lord Nataraja signifies Akasha tatva, **(Vin porul)** he is always made in metal – Copper or Gold or Bronze or a mix of it. The statues which were ancient had a generous amount of gold giving a luminescent look about the statues. The art and science of moulding metals to create divine forms with precise proportion dates back to thousands of years in India and the western experts think that this is a recent phenomenon. This is a complete surprise to the western world since they cannot believe that such sophistication existed before.

Dr. Ganapathi states, *"Lord Nataraja also signifies the primal image being expressive of the secret of creation in the process of which formless becomes instantaneously endowed with features and of perfect form. This is the reason why the statue of Lord Nataraja is called as **Silpa**, the primal image and everything else which is sculpted in this universe is called as **Pratima (replica)** and the original and one and only sculpture is the image of Lord Nataraja".*

Mamuni Mayan states, *"Bhumih pradhana vastu Syat"*, means Earth by virtue of being the very basic support of all things, this is the primal and dominant Vastu". Earth and space are manifestations of each other in the cyclical process of evolution. They both should always be considered to be in unison. This vibrant, energetic, manifest earth energy (**Prithvi Tatva)** is called as '**Vishnu**".

In Vaastu satra, the Vaastu purusha is Lord Vishnu and understandably Vishnu is invoked as Vaastu purusha in Srirangam temple and offered a seat in the heart of Lord Ranganatha even today as a ritual.

GROSS DIVINE FORM
Man-porul
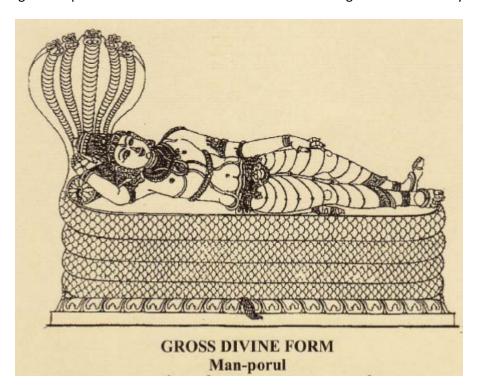
Figure 44: Lord Ranganatha in the reclining pose

Lord Ranganatha represents manifest earth energy **(Man porul)** and hence is always made out of seasoned earth only and it should be properly painted too. He is never to be made of metal. This earth form does not support frequent mobility and symbolizes stability and immobility. **This is the reason when Vibhishana kept the idol of Lord Ranganatha down at Sri Rangam it could not be moved.**

The energy that is in available in every universal form is represented as Vishnu and hence he is called as **Antaryami**. Once the subtle becomes grosser the vibration is reduced and the grossest form would not have any creative pulsation in it. It would still have the vibration based on its nature which ensures that it retains the form and shape. But it does not have any creative pulsation and it has reached the zenith of evolution. **This zenith is characterized by Lord Ranganatha in the reclining pose.**

The creative pulsation (Space) is the dance and the zenith of manifestation is a reclining posture (Earth).

As we have seen, Lord Nataraja carries **Light in his left hand** and **sound in his right hand**. Lord Ranganatha carries **Chakra representing light in the right hand** and **Conch representing sound in the left hand.** The principle that the primal substance (space) has manifested as the universe (earth) and both of them are mirror images of each other is reflected in both the images.

In Chinese texts the Yang energy is associated with Heaven and the Yin as earth. Now associate the same heaven with Shiva, Earth with Vishnu and Tao with the God's particle - with some of the text below from **Lao Tzu's "Tao te Ching"**

"The Tao that can be told is not the eternal Tao.
The name that can be named is not the eternal name.
The nameless is the beginning of heaven and Earth.
The named is the mother of the ten thousand things.

Something mysteriously formed, Born before heaven and Earth.
In the silence and the void, Standing alone and unchanging,
Ever present and in motion, Perhaps it is the mother of ten thousand things.
I do not know its name. Call it Tao.

Man follows Earth. Earth follows heaven. Heaven follows the Tao.
Tao follows what is natural."

To sum up in the words of Dr. Ganapathi Sthapati:

- **Both the temples Chidambaram and Srirangam are south facing temples.**

- **Lord Nataraja signifies Akasha Tatva, outer space, macrocosm, subtle unmanifested energy is the Vastu purusha, is always in dancing pose, circumscribed in 8x8 square and made of metal.**

- **Lord Ranganatha signifies Prithvi Tatva, inner space, microcosm, manifest gross energy, is the Vaastu purusha is always in reclining pose, depicted in a circle or a 9x9 grid and made of earth.**

- **Lord Nataraja represents energy with matter and Lord Ranganatha matter with energy. In the equation E = mc^2, Lord Nataraja represents E and Lord Ranganatha represents mc^2.**

- Both these temples are a 'must see" and a "periodic see" types and you would be amazed that the qualitative change in your mental state even if you don't pray inside the temple but spend some time sitting or walking in the premises of the temple.

- **Both these temples are perfect symbols of ancient science codified for the benefit of the society and left for generations withstanding the test of time.**

Figure 45: Sri Chakra – The Supreme shape in sacred Geometry

Chidambaram and Sri Rangam should be ground zero for any lab that wants looks into the secrets of space and time as they represent supreme science as much as they represent spirituality. We now see that science was the basis of our spiritual faith unlike it being 2 completely different aspects today across the world.

As a wise man said, **"Indians are the most ignorant about their rich past and scientific traditions."**

May we be blessed by the divine power to unravel unknown secrets about the nature!

Happy reading!

30.   TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 30 – TEMPLES AND IDOL WORSHIP

Let us forget Hinduism, its symbols and names of god for the time being and consider these aspects as pure science from a nanotechnologist and cosmologist called Mayan.

We have been told that the universe is full of luminescent particles and this particle manifests itself because of the primordial pulsation. We have had a sneak peek into the geometry and the mathematical proportion which is used in the creation of many things. We know that the universe rhythm confirms to a mathematical code to the extent that we can create divine energies in a temple based on that science.

If time is pulsation of consciousness and if it creates, sustains and destroys everything, then time is the architect sculpting the universe and every object in this universe should be a sculpture of time and this concept is very beautifully captured in *“Jagat Sarvaram Silpameva’* *meaning the entire universe is nothing more than a shilpa / sculpture (and it latently conveys that Time is the Shilpi).*

If all the above things are right then is it not right to say that "Man created the concept of God" or "Man can create divine energy around him"? Let me sum up my thoughts as below:

- The sages and rishis were essentially scientists and understood the secret of nature very well. They were understandably masters in **nanotechnology and cosmology.**

- They knew that "**One thing"** with which they could understand the nature and science of all other things in this universe. This is obviously supported by the mathematical knowledge they had.

- As per Vedas nothing is created by god including the Vedas, but universe is the manifestation of god. They also understood that man is the most evolved of this manifestation. This is why they created all the god forms in the image of a man.

- Be it language, poetry, classical music, classical dance, sculpture and architecture it was the manifestation of this divinity that was the underlying link. Sacred geometry and sacred proportions were used to generate the subtle energy that took us closer to divine.

Hindu temples were created to capture all these aspects in one place and which could sustain and grow for the benefit of mankind.

- Secret of nature heard through the vibrations of Vedas were codified as supreme science and weaved into a philosophy called **Sanatana Dharma.**

- Architecture of temples confirmed to divine proportions and space - time engineering was accurate to capture sunlight and moon light at the same position for thousands of years. The design of the temple cleaned the subtle energies and points of the human body.

மூலாதாரக் கணபதித் திருமேனியின், படிமமான இலக்கணம்:

குணரவி நயன ருத்ரं த்வாதशं षட் षडांशं
அனல ரஸगुண भாगं கேश வகத்ரं ச கண்ட ।
ஹृதய உதरमेதृ ऊருजानुंच ज்रवा
பதमிதி உதயமानं प்श்रातालं गणेशम் ॥

3,12,2,11,12,6,6,3,6,3 (=64 துடிப்பளவுகள்)

முறையே, கேசம், முகம், கழுத்து, மார்பு, வயிறு, மேட்ரம், தொடை முட்டி முன்கால், பாதம் ஆகியவற்றின் உயர அளவுகளாகும். இவை பஞ்ச தாள கணேச உருவத்தின் (உறுப்புக்களின்) உயர அளவுகளாகின்றன. (இது கண்யம் என்று சொல்லப்படும்).

படம் விளக்கம் பின்வருமாறு:

விநாயகர் (ஐங்கரத்தன்)
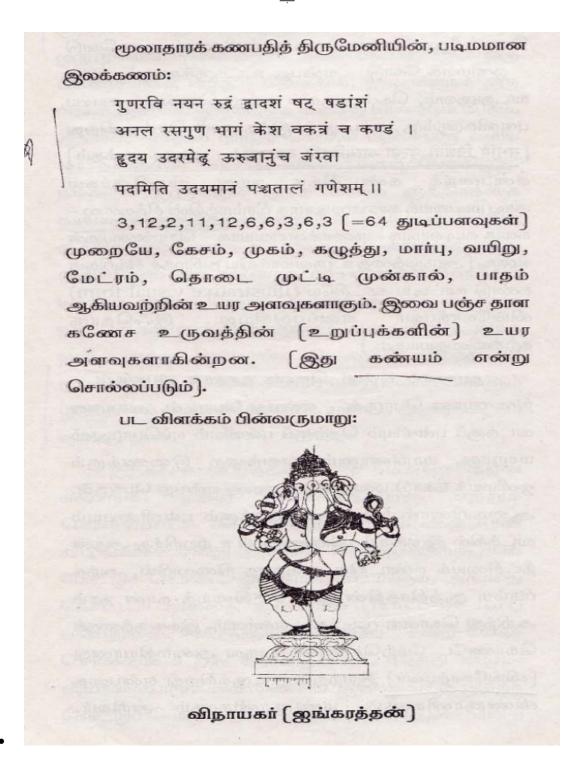
Figure 46: Ganapathi Idol (Courtesy: Dr. Ganapathi Sthapati)
The sloka above in Sanskrit gives the measure of different parts of this Idol which would confirm to total 64 units (resonance of 8). Hair (3), Face(12), neck(2), Chest(11), Stomach(12), Belly &Pelvis (6), Thigh(6), Knee(3), Legs (6), Feet (3). Total 64 units. Just as much a Sloka with right metre and letters becomes a living organism, an idol with right proportions becomes a living organism.

- Divine Idol forms confirmed to a mathematical proportion that invoked subtle energies within and around us. This is where the external forms were used to create energies internally to a human. **This is the basis of idol worship. If it is scientific to create a form with divine energies based on mathematical proportion then idol worship is the supreme proof for that science.**

- **This supreme mathematical law is called as Dharma (nature's law) and the unfolding of that law is the Karmic theory of cause and effect / law of karma.**

- Poetry, classical music and classical dance are intimately linked to this Hindu temple culture. Adi Tala and octaves were used to create subtle energies in poetry using words, and the same tala maana is used in classical music with rhythm and raga, in classical dance with light and sound and in sculpture as a visual form.
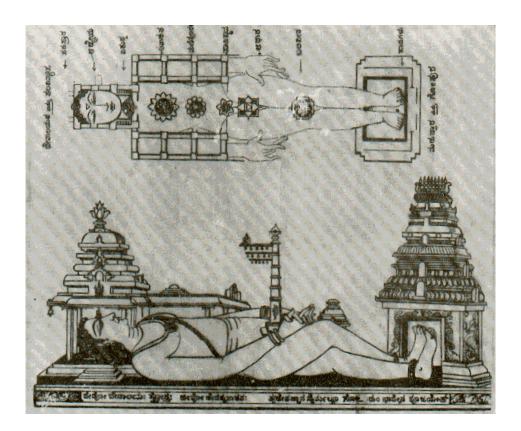
Figure 47: Human body as a representation of a temple
(Courtesy: http://www.salagram.net/sstp-mgpuja3.html)

A Hindu temple is a divine and yogic representation of a human being with the Deity in the temple representing the God as indweller in humans and all beings. In a temple the feet represents Rajagopura, the hands represent Praakaara, the abdomen represent Mandapa, the heart represents Antaraala and the crown of the head represents the sanctum sanctorum (garbha griha). The temple is used as a reminder that our inner spiritual journey is through internal yoga to realize the indweller God. This analogy is shown through the representation of various chakras namely Moolaadhara to Sahasraara in the body to various locations in the temple.

- It may be of interest to note that the same harmonics of 8 are reflected in every other domain. For example, if you have been practicing Pranayama then your master would have asked you to practice breathing based on some counts. The most popular counts are 6(inhale), 3 (Exhale) or 7(inhale), 2 (Exhale). If you notice this count 9, this cleans up your gross body. Advanced Pranayam students may be asked to stick to 1 (Inhale), 4 (Retain), 2(Exhale), 2(Retain outside) or as a variation 1,4,2,1 or 1,3,2,2. The counts which add up to 8 clean the subtle body.

- Till few decades back the fundamental dimension for money in India was "**Ana**" called as **Eight Anas (எட்டணா)** and this was equivalent to Rs. 0.5 as the fundamental measure.

- Thus a **"Poetry is an idol in aural form and a building is a frozen music"**. A Poet by the way of his mental frequency has first become the poem itself and then the actual poem was created in its aural form and an artist by the same frequency has become the idol first and then he gave a shape to the idol externally through this hands. This is very beautifully given as *"Raso vai saha, So Vai rasikaha", which means he (god) is the enjoyer and he is the artist.*

- All of this reflects the supreme philosophy that **"Oneness in all and everything is just a manifestation of that one thing"**.

- Now in this light understand the meaning of this Upanishad prayer, *"Aum Poornamadah Poornamidam Poornaath Poornam Udachyathe, Poornasya Poornamaadaaya Poornameva Vasishyathe". This means God is perfect (infinite). This Universe is also perfect (infinite). If perfection (infinity) is taken from anything perfect (infinite) what remains is still perfect (infinite). Isn't this is the actual reality today?*

- Everything scientific is philosophically, mythological and ritually well interwoven that proves that Sanatana Dharma is the most ancient and supreme representation of science and nature's secret in our possession. Our temple worship which integrates all this science, 5 sacred arts with language and Math is the standing example of our understanding of the nature of god.
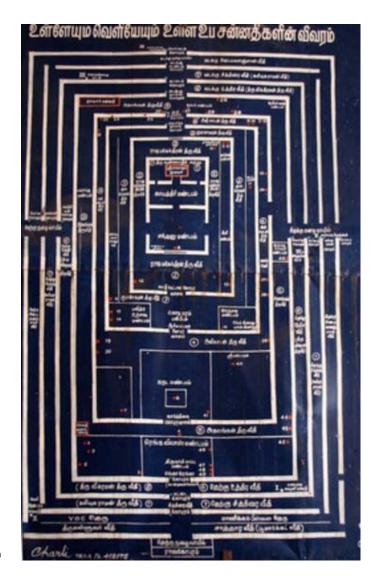
Figure 47: Layout of Sri Rangam temple with 7 Prakaras

It is the same Sugarcane but an elephant eats it from the field directly, a young adult peels the skin off and chews it, if a kid has to eat then someone has to peel the skin and cut it into pieces and an old man without teeth needs it to be made as sugarcane juice. Depending on one's ability to chew and digest the food has to be processed.

Same way depending on one's mental ability to grasp the supreme truth it has to be processed and presented. If someone is mentally well evolved then they can be fed with Upanishads and he can meditate on the formless Brahman. To a young adult Upanishads may not be palatable directly but they may have to start with Upavedas and Vedangas to mature to a higher level. For the less evolved kids, Itihasa and Purana like Ramayana and Mahabharata with stories may drive home the point and they can start with Shlokas and mantras. But for the least evolved it has to start with a personal deity with name and form, bhajans and songs to invoke the concept of Bhakthi.

In all the four cases temple culture forms the lowest common denominator. Even the most evolved relish the arts and architecture in the temples. We should be proud of our rich cultural and scientific

heritage and be passionate about the science and philosophy and be rational about rituals and symbolisms.

Image / Idol worship is not deplorable or despicable. This is the highest scientific form of worship which enables us to see face to face the one which is beyond reach of sight and speech. This kindles devotion, community development and helps one to climb the steep walls of spirituality in the initial stages. Every religion in this world has some image or idol as symbolism to achieve this objective.

An idol is a god in form when made with the science of divine proportion and seasoned material is the highest product of our intelligence till today.

It should however be noted that this idol worship should not be lost in the din of rituals which does not reflect the very philosophy it had come to symbolize. So the advice I follow is *"Be passionate about our culture but be rational about the rituals."*

The advancement of science can progress rapidly when the western scientists who are objective and empirical, partner with the pundits in India and learn the science of the subtle from our scriptures and temples. For this to happen we need to learn our own scriptures and past which is not possible without learning our mother tongue and Sanskrit. Else in the near future we may have to import knowledge of our culture and rich past from the western world.

As a wise man said, **"Indians are the most ignorant about their rich past and scientific traditions."**
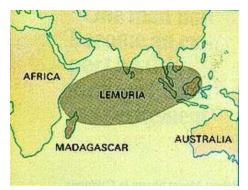
Happy reading!

31. TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 31 – MAYAN & HIS WORKS

Mahamuni Mayan was the father-in-law of Demon King Ravana and is referred in both Mahabharata and Ramayana. He is attributed with building the palace for Yudhishtar in Indraprasta and also the architect for Sri Lanka which Ravana ruled. His son Nalan helped Lord Rama build the Ramasethu – the bridge between India and Sri Lanka. He is believed to have lived in the **Ilamuridesam** popularly known as **Lemuria continent (Kumari Kandam**) which spanned 4500+ kms from Sri Lanka to Antartica connecting current Australia, Africa and Americas. Check out http://www.sacred-texts.com/atl/tll/index.htm

Understandably when this land mass was consumed by the sea their clan moved to different parts of the

world including Guatemala, Egypt, and to current south Indian region. This explains as to how we find common science across India, South America and Egypt.

He has written books in both Sanskrit and Tamil and I am going to produce the list of technical works he has created and look at the contents of a specific book called Surya Siddhanta. Just the list of works and also the topics in Surya Siddhanta is amazing, highlighting the depth of science we had at that time. http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=PZKiCpFisoY

Figure 48: Kumari Kandam depiction

The Surya Siddhanta

The most ancient treatise on Astronomy is a treatise authored by Mayan. It is called *The Surya Siddhanta*. Included in this treatise are the following chapter topics following:

- The Motions of the Planets
- The Places of the Planets
- Direction, Place and Time
- The Moon and Eclipses
- The Sun and Eclipses
- The Projection of Eclipses
- Planetary Conjunctions
- Conjunction of the Stars
- Risings and Settings
- The Moon's Risings and Settings
- Certain Malignant Aspects of the Sun and Moon
- Cosmogony, Geography, and Dimensions of the Creation
- The Gnomon
- The Movement of the Heavens and Human Activity

உ

Mamuni Mayan

Figure 49: Mamumi Mayan

Mayan is also attributed with the start and spread of Temple culture in India. The song below in Tamil states that since Mayan sat under the Banyan tree and taught this science of universe and also of the sacred arts, so that every town was endowed with Temples for social betterment. Because he was from the southern region and also he sat under the Banyan tree, he is also equated with Lord Dakshinamoorthy.

ஆலமா மரத்தின் கீழே அருள் மயன் அமர்ந்ததாலே
ஆலமா மரத்தின் கீழே அருட் கலை வளர்ந்ததாலே
ஆலமா மரத்தின் கீழே அறிவர்கள் வளர்ந்ததாலே
ஆலயம் ஊரும்தோறும் அமைந்தன செழிக்கநன்றே!!

The Mayan says in his Pranava Veda verse one:
*"Om Light and Om Sound are the Primal Source of all manifest forms. Om Light is aroused by its own effort in a state of disorder and appears as a flame. The state of Om Light and Om Sound in Space is a magnificent luminous six – faced Light form that is called "**murukoli**". The transformation of Om Light and Om Sound through the five stages is concealed in the five fold knowledge, of which, this is the first. This process of transformation of disorderly Om Light and Om Sound into orderliness is found in all five fold material forms."*

Sage Veda Vyasa says in the Bhagavatam, *"eka eva pura vedo pranavha sarva vangmayha" (9th skandha, 14th chapter, sloka 48 of Bhagavatam).* This means that there was only one Veda called Pranava Veda. It is believed that Sage Vyasa created 4 vedas from this Veda since he believed that the oncoming generations would not have the mental strength to master everything.
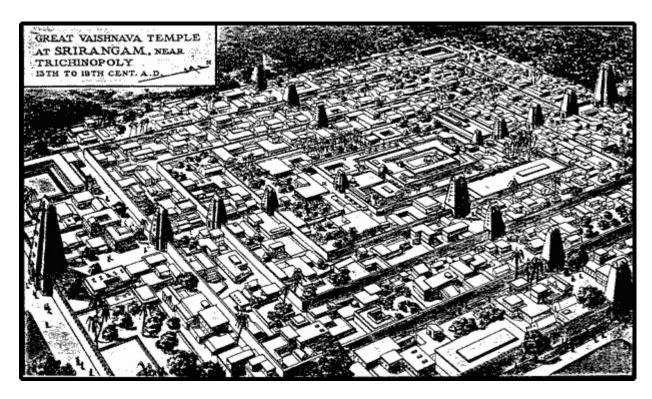
Figure 50: Aerial view of Sri Rangam temple with 7 Prakaras

Technical works

The following are technical works written by Mayan and represent the 12 vowels of the Tamil language:

- Ovia Chennool   - Treatise on Drafting and Painting
- Sirpama Chenool   - Treatise on Iconometry
- Kattida Chennool   - Treatise on Architecture
- Nilamanai Chennool   - Treatise on House Building based on quality of land
- Manainila Chennool   - Treatise on Land based on the nature of house building
- Baniyal Chenool   - Treatise on Astro Physics
- Perunata Chenool   - Treatise on Divine dance
- Muligai Chenool   - Treatise on Herbs
- Ganitama Chenool   - Treatise on Mathematics
- Arakkala Chenool   - Treatise on Ship Building
- Vinkala Chennool   - Treatise on Space Ship
- Elisai Chennool   - Treatise on Science of Music

MAYAN, in Aintiram *states that:*

"There exists an order in the Universe - subtle universe, and material universe. This power is attributed to the consciousness of the cosmic space as well as of the inner space of the animate beings. This consciousness, by its personal effort to express its own inner feelings, causes a kind of vibration or pulsation in the inner space, resulting in energy-grids. The vibration or pulsation, being the causal element of all these events, is called KAALA. This is actually the force of energy aroused by the inner consciousness, causing waves and contributing to the growth of living forms. This KAALA resides in all living beings. So, space is the offshoot of the vibration of the primordial energy. This is how the space was born. All forms of nature are manifest forms of subtle energy. For all to get manifested, the force is KAALAM. This wave-form frequency realm is the creative element of the universe."

There is no other treatise that we have in our possession today which is dated 10000 BC that depicts the secret of nature so explicitly and gives the unmanifested interconnections and mathematical proportions between everything in the universe.

As Dr. Ganapathi Sthapati rues "Unfortunately most of the Tamil experts don't understand the science in these texts and hence these books are idling without anyone extracting the truths from it". In the next few generations when we are less equipped in our own mother tongue we may lose this treasure completely just like the many we have lost so far.

Hence the first step we need to ensure is even if you are not equipped well in your mother tongue please make sure that your kids can read and write it well. This becomes our most important duty. And I find it worrisome when someone is indifferent to the fact that they can understand their mother tongue but cannot read and write.

With some significant efforts we can and we should prove that this man who said, **"Indians are the most ignorant about their rich past and scientific traditions."** is not wise any more.

Happy reading!

32. TIME = SPACE SERIES. PART 32 – CONCLUSION

What I have understood in a nutshell is as follows:

- The inner being of both - the individual and the universe is luminescent consciousness which has the ability to become aware of it. This luminescent consciousness is called by various names but it is essentially the only existent Vastu in this world. This Vastu manifests itself as time, space and spatial forms.

- *"Aanor aniyaan mahato Mahiyaan!"* this means what is in the atom is the same makes up the universe. That which is present in the atom is the Space energy and the meaning of the word Akasa is stated as *"Aa kashayati aakasa ha!,* That which imparts light to others or make others shine is called Akasa". This means that Space Vastu is luminescent. I am stressing the aspect of luminescent again and again for you to start perceiving God as light.

- Pranava is the causal element which triggers this evolution process and this manifests as visual and aural forms. Pranava results in the primordial pulsation and this pulsation is triggered and sustained by a divine progression and proportion which is called **Absolute time**.

- Absolute time creates Absolute Space. These 4 things – Absolute time, absolute space, Aural Pranava and Visual Pranava combine together to form spatial forms and hence this universe.

- The Vastu as God's particle, its characteristics, the Pranava, the pulsation, the rhythm, the progression, its proportion and the resultant energy states – all the scientific facts, theories and processes are captured and codified as a Dharma which is called as Hinduism today. The science behind this subtle energy is reflected in various art forms that includes Poetry, Classical music, dance, Sculpture and building architecture.

- All these manifestations are harmonics of 5 and 8 differentiated by the Golden proportion / God's ratio to reflect the various states of consciousness. **This intrinsic order is called Dharma and the cyclic nature of this evolution is the Karmic code embedded in the universe**. **Nothing in this universe is superior to the Dharma and Karmic code.**

- The divinity manifests in us and the space within us is nothing different from the macrocosm. Consciousness which exhibits itself as a state of being because of our mental vibration can evolve to a higher plane to devolve back into the luminescent core.

- Sanatana Dharma popularly today known as Hinduism is the repository of this supreme secret not just as a philosophy but integrated with every stage of our life. This can be understood better only if we can give due respect and attention to the language and scriptures, our spiritual tradition interwoven with arts and architecture that contains these treasures.

- The temple culture & Idol worship that we have symbolizes the best of science known to human beings and we need to understand this and preserve this in the best possible manner.
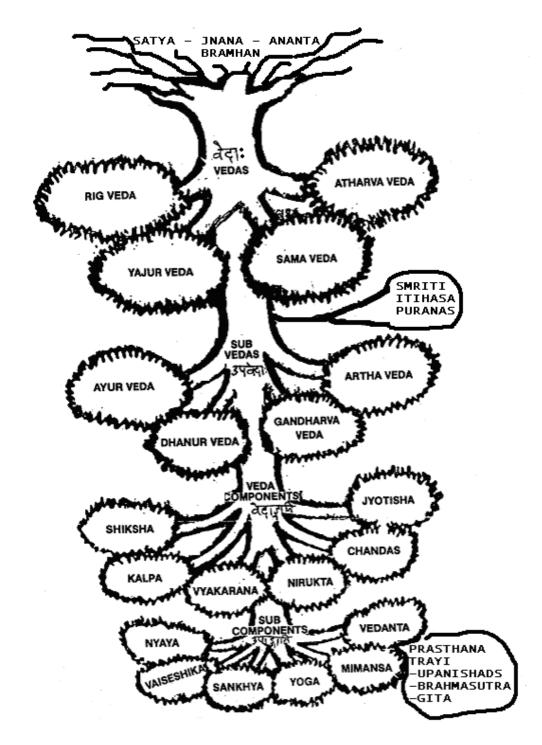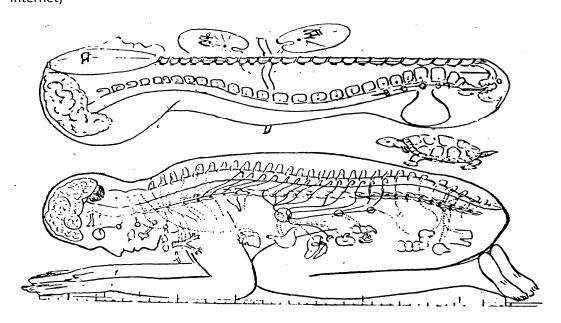
Figure 51: Vedic Knowledge as an inverted tree with Brahman as the roots signifying that everything has a common root. (Courtesy: Internet)

(Figure 52: Goddess Sarasvati. Courtesy: Internet)

She is the Goddess of speech, music and knowledge. She carries the rosary beads (akshamala) represents the alphabets of a language (Sanskrit), the musical instrument (Veena) and Vedas as palm leaf manuscript in her hands that denotes the knowledge. Thus we can see that idol worship signifies deeper scientific aspects of a common root between Language, Music, knowledge and arts.

Figure 52: Musical instrument Veena as a representation of Human Body (Sarira veena) (Courtesy: Internet)

I am happy to note the coincidence that this book has 32 chapters with 108 pages – both being key universal numerals. Chapter 19 (the golden mean of this book) deals with the Golden mean or God's ratio of nature is again coincidental.

I would like to thank you for reading this book. I would like to state that I am neither adept in any of the topics discussed in this book nor an expert in any of the arts including the languages Tamil or Sanskrit language.

A curious mind driven by my passion to understand the underlying aspect in all things and my liking to reading has helped me to compile this book. My exposure as a student to Chinese martial arts, Indian yogic studies, Pranic healing and Siddha philosophy helped me to connect of the points I had articulated. Any authoritative statements in these books reflect my belief in the topic or from the author / teacher from whom I subscribed it and it is certainly not reflective of my abilities.

I am open to constructive criticisms on any of the topics and I can be reached at the mail ID shared in the first page of this book. My only request to you is *"Please share this book or parts of this book without any hesitation to your friends and family and help us dispel the ignorance about rich ancient Indian culture"*.

I shall end this book with some of my favorite quotes of Dr. Einstein.
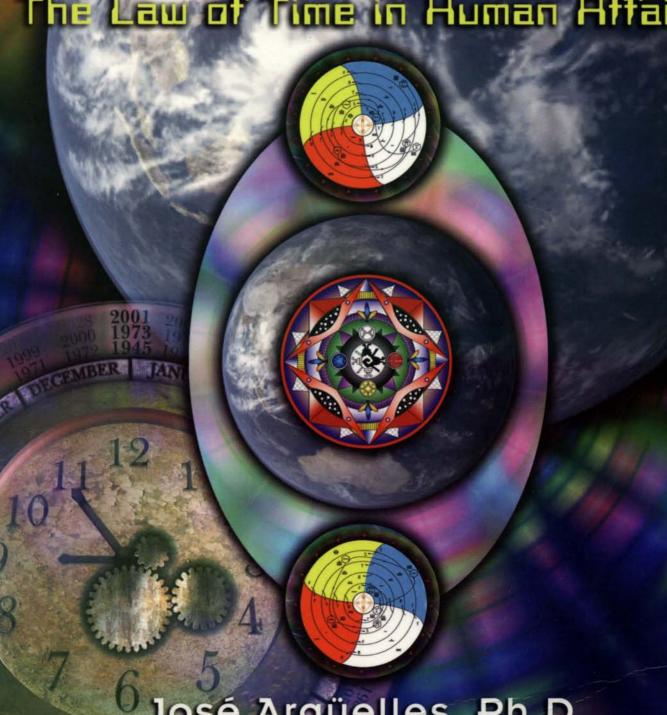
"My religion consists of a humble admiration of the illimitable superior spirit who reveals himself in the slight details we are able to perceive with our frail and feeble mind. That deep emotional conviction of the presence of a superior reasoning power, which is revealed in the incomprehensible universe, forms my idea of God. We still do not know one thousandth of one percent of what nature has revealed to us."

Satyam Param Deemahi!
May we meditate on the supreme truth!

TIME & THE TECHNOSPHERE

The Law of Time in Human Affairs

José Argüelles, Ph.D.
Author of *The Mayan Factor*

"*Time and the Technosphere makes a vital contribution to the great paradigm shift in human cultures that is now accelerating. There is a higher dimension of natural time inscribed in the cosmos and a natural calendar that would help humanity mature into the awakening global consciousness that is now essential for future sustainability and well-being. This book is an important contribution to the awakening event that is now emerging on a planetary scale.*"

ASHOK GANGADEAN, PH.D., Professor of Philosophy, Haverford College

In *Time and the Technosphere,* José Argüelles presents a groundbreaking study that distinguishes the natural time of the cosmos from the artificial mechanistic time under which we currently live. Argüelles defines the actual nature of time as the frequency of sychronization. Applying this Law of Time to an understanding of the entire system of life on Earth, he shows that in order to not destroy Earth's ability to sustain life, we must change our definition of time and adopt a natural harmonic calendar based on the 13-moon 28-day cycle. Until the creation of the Gregorian calendar and the 60-minute hour, most of humanity lived by the 28-day cycle of natural time. The adoption of artificial time has subjected us to a 12:60 time frequency that governs the entire global industrialized civilization—the technosphere. With the collapse of the Twin Towers on September 11, a fissure was created in this artificial technosphere, opening up the noosphere (Earth's mental envelope).

Humanity has a golden opportunity to leave the strife of the past and enter a time of peace by adopting a harmonious natural calendar that will repair the damages caused by the irregular tempo of technospheric time. Our last best chance to adopt this natural time and step into the bright new future promised by the galactic shift of 2012 is the Great Calendar Change of 2004, a new discovery based on the author's mathematical research into the Mayan calendar first begun in his landmark work *The Mayan Factor.* In *Time and the Technosphere,* Argüelles reveals the clear distinction between third-dimensional astronomical time and the fourth-dimensional synchronic order of the Law of Time, which holds enormous potential for the future of humanity.
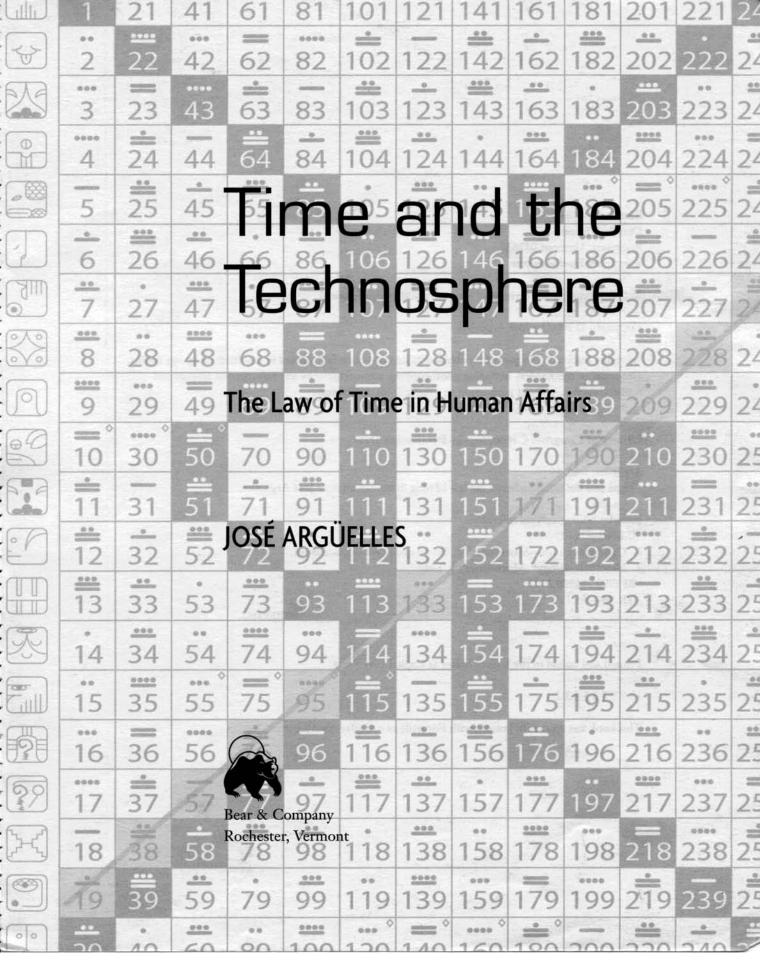
JOSÉ ARGÜELLES, PH.D., works full time on behalf of the World Thirteen Moon Calendar Change Peace Movement and is president of the Foundation for the Law of Time. He is the author of numerous works, including *The Mayan Factor, Earth Ascending,* and *Surfers of the Zuvuya.* He lives in Oregon.

BEAR & COMPANY
ROCHESTER, VERMONT

9 781879 181991

Time and the Technosphere

The Law of Time in Human Affairs

JOSÉ ARGÜELLES

I

Time and the Technosphere

This book requires some attention from You. It is a complete, coherent, story for Humanity, on Earth, in the Universe. It is a radically different story than what is commonly disseminated by and through our global, dominating, culture. There is no need for You to *believe* this story, or any other. Trust yourself. trust your Self To say you must go into this with an open Mind, is a grand understatement. Start with trust. Simply allow the thoughts and concepts you read to "stew" for awhile. Make some headspace for them and have patience for what may grow there. It is a beautiful life...

Solstice
Zenith
High Noon

Third Watch -
Antipode

Second Watch -
Guide

Twilight
Equinox

Equinox
Dawn

Fourth Watch -
Occult

First Watch -
Analog

Midnight
Nadir
Solstice

$T(E) = Art$

The Law of Time

in Human
Affairs

This book is dedicated to Adam J. Lewis—at work on the eighty-eighth floor of the South Tower when his mother called him from Spain as she watched television reports of the first hit on the North Tower—and to all the others who were sacrificed on that day. May the truth prevail, that the greater mystery might be made known—forever.

Contents

▼

Acknowledgments

AS ANY AUTHOR   knows, to write a book and see it through to completion, from initial inspiration to final conclusion, is never an easy task. Though   we are all guided, if we so choose, by the Supreme Creator, still it is one's Earthly helpers that must be counted first, even before oneself-for   without their aid, where would one be?

First and foremost of my Earthly helpers whom I wish to acknowledge is my wife and faithful companion of twenty-one years, Lloydine Bolon Ik, my constant helper and chief inspiration of all I do. The faith and trust she put in me at times when all we had was blind faith are a touching memorial to a soul who has always believed that love is the greatest truth.

Assisting us greatly during the time since we arrived in Oregon and have contin-ued to dedicate our lives to the fulfillment of the prophecy of Pacal Votan and the Great Calendar Change is our devoted helper and assistant Stephanie South, the Red Queen, Red Electric Serpent, who conscientiously read and edited this text in its final form, helped in numerous details, and so kept me from ever bogging down.

Of equal trust and value is that one from the immemorial rainbow to whom I owe so much, Kin 19, David Rinck, "the stalwart," whose enhancements of my art-work are ingenious and awesome. All three of these people share one thing in com-mon: absolute belief in and dedication to the Law of Time as a living reality that gives breath to all we do.

I must also thank the incomparable Spectral Skywalker, Mark Comings, whose mind has been of inestimable value to me through our many memorable background discussions on time in modern physics in relation to the Law of Time. In this regard,

▼

Preface

A Brief Literary Autobiography

Time and the Technosphere: The Law of Time in Human Affairs is essentially a prolonged set of meditatipns occasioned by the one most powerful and overwhelming event of our time, the 9-11, the Inevitable Event of September 11,2001. Subsequent events may overshadow this one in horror and magnitude, but it was this event in particular, the destruction of the World Trade Center towers, that sent a signal that something very profound had occurred to change the way we think of ourselves and our future.

In presenting these meditations and reflections in the form of a book, I am painfully aware of the limitations of this medium in the information age. Keeping in mind that the volume of information has increased five times in the past century-with much of that increase occurring only in the past decade-I am very reluctant to put anything down to be published in the form of a book. I was raised well on the writings of Marshall McLuhan and his definitions of media and how they affect our senses. It is altogether obvious that a book in your hand is not the same as reading a text on a computer screen. A book is actually something made to last. Of course, the computer has made it possible and easy for virtually anybody and everybody to write a book, and so we encounter one of the great hazards of the information age: the decline in discrimination and the criteria of excellence. Who can now tell what is worth reading or not? These reflections, too, are very much to the point of the grand theme of this text. If a book is meant to last, how long will this book last? It should last until the New Time has established a new order of reality on this now anguished Earth. Whether or not destruction and the total collapse of civilization will occur first, we do not really know. That is a matter left to the Divine Mind of God alone.

Nonetheless, it is with faith that we continue on this Earth at this time. A pressing

voice told me to go ahead and to write this book, regardless-but   then, this is how I have always done it. Those who are at all familiar with any of my earlier books, will find that *Time and the Technosphere* is but a continuation of themes that have provoked me since I first considered literature as a medium of communication. It is important to know where the author is coming from, and how he got to this particular point of reflection. In this regard, *Time and the Technosphere* is the organic result of a lifelong pursuit of a study of the nature of art, time, and history. This study has been woven together by a dialectical process that defines the evolving nature of consciousness. So, for those who are interested, herewith follows a brief literary autobiography, the better to understand my point of view.

My earliest book, *Charles Henry and the Formation of a PsychophysicalAesthetic (1972),* states the grand theme of a holistic science that unifies body and mind, sense and nature, the harmonic pursuit of which has been at the root of all my endeavors. This pursuit was amply demonstrated in my second book, *Mandala* (1972), which, as a root text of the counterculture, was an artistic, philosophical, and cosmic plea for a harmonic resolution to the process of history. It is a sign of the times that *Mandala* is no longer in print, but instead a book bearing the same title, but which does not even include the original Mandala in its bibliography, is in print with the same publisher. Amnesia is one of the side-effects resulting from information overflow with no discrimination. Unfortunately, cultural amnesia is always accompanied by an increase in trivialization, and thus we arrive at the mediocrity and sensationalism of the present moment.

My next book, *The Transformative Vision: Reflections on the Nature and History of Human Expression* (1975, 1991), took the aesthetic and unitive themes of the first two books to the next stage of my visionary analytical process, elaborating on the meaning of time, history, and cosmos. In rereading the later chapters of *The Transformative Vision,* I am struck by their prophetic accuracy, as well as their sense of impending tragedy. It is hard to believe that only 26 years have gone by since that book was first published and now we are plunged into the maelstrom of what was then thought to be the worst scenario possible. *The Transformative Vision* also defined human consciousness as the cerebral-neurological dialectic of psyche (aboriginal, primal intuitive art) and techne (civilizational, rational science), emphasizing that only in their absolute synthesis would there be a harmonic resolution to the problem of history. Seen in this light, the technosphere represents the extreme, one-sided triumph of techne, while terrorism is the expression of the absolute repression of psyche. The crucial question then arises: how will we ever attain a balance or harmony?

Investigation of the ongoing dialectic of consciousness was continued in my next effort, the philosophically synthesizing work entitled *The Feminine, Spacious as the*

Sky (1977), which was written and artistically produced with my previous partner and wife, Miriam Tarcov, who also co-authored *Mandala* with me. The feminine aspect represents a deepening reflection of the psychic, intuitive side of human nature. Expressed through a whole range of images, symbols, and philosophies that describe both the aboriginal root and the final flowering of human consciousness, it is this feminine aspect that has been smothered by the historical process, resulting in the technosphere. Why and how did this occur? These questions drove me to the next stages of my visionary investigations.

From the beginning of my pursuits I have been moved by my intuitive awareness of our intrinsic wholeness as humans, and the knowledge that this wholeness is a reflection of the wholeness of Earth, the solar system, and the cosmos itself. Although this perception of reality is nowhere within the domain of the shibboleths of Western scientific thought as it has developed since Descartes, I have also come to understand that Western scientific thought is highly provincial, racially biased, and-because it is not informed by a perception of wholeness-incapable of solving the actual problems of life. In fact, Western scientific thought has been one of the key factors leading the human race onward to its great act of self-destruction-a self-destruction employed through the instrument of technology.

In my next book *Earth Ascending: An Illustrated Treatise on the Law Governing Whole Systems* (1984, 1988, 1996), I was able to make a profoundly radical break with the restraints of the Western scientific and academic modes of thought. Combining the artistic and aesthetic qualities of *Mandala* and *The Feminine, Spacious as the Sky* with the philosophical and scientific concerns of *The Psychophysical Aesthetic* and *The Transformative Vision,* I define and describe the human situation as a function of the geology, or biogeology, of Earth understood as a whole system. Without knowing it, I had defined the human presence in Earth's geology in a way very similar to that of the Russian biospheric scientist V. I. Vernadsky in his analysis of the biosphere. Culture, civilization, and even technology are seen as features and functions of the larger evolving biogeological process of the whole system Earth, while time and consciousness are defined as functions of a larger planetary regulating system called the psi bank. In the analysis of *Earth Ascending,* the feminine psychic side of consciousness is referred to as the AC, Aboriginal Continuity, while the male, rational techne side is defined as the CA, Civilizational Advance. The historical process represents the increasing dominance of the CA to the final exclusion of the AC-the triumph of industrial man over the indigenous peoples.

The most critical moment in history was the atomic destruction of Hiroshima, August 6, 1945, when through its technology the impact of human thought permanently

affected the geological makeup of the Earth. The events before Hiroshima are chronologically defined as P.A., pre-atomic, and those after as A.H., After Hiroshima. But more than defining the process of history within the context of Earth's cosmogeology, *Earth Ascending* also describes the post-historic future as a condition of harmonic synaesthesia-harmony of the senses-defined by a new scientific system called radiosonics. The key to this new system of scientific endeavor is synchronicity or synchronization of our mind and senses in time. The problem left open by *Earth Ascending* was the precise nature of time and the timing of the radical break in the historic continuum, now known as the Inevitable Event-the culmination and dramatic conclusion of a process begun at Hiroshima. After the Inevitable Event we are liberated into post-history and the possibility of the radiosonic science of the future.

In *The Mayan Factor: Path Beyond Technology* (1987), I was able to supply the basic ingredients for an understanding of time and the timing of the radiosonic future. Going beyond the parochial limitations of Western science and the self-inflated progressivist thinking of the Western mind in general (that states "anything that advances technology is an absolute advance over anything that was thought of or occurred in the past") I was able to finally bring to light the synthesis of many years of study of the time science of the ancient Maya. Here, in the mathematical calculations of the Maya with their unique vigesimal mathematics-counting by twenty and not by decimal ten-lay the basis of a vast and grand science of time. So grand is this science that its conceptions of time dwarf anything the Western imagination could conceive.

While the Western concept of time is linear and predicates an unceasing ascent into a progressively technological and mechanistic future, Mayan time science is predicated on the knowledge of time as the universal factor of synchronization. The Western conception of time is not in accord with the actual cyclical and synchronistic nature of time, and so the whole apparatus of Western civilization is doomed to reach its own breaking point: the Inevitable Event. Mayan time science posits a precise measure of the historical cycle, the most recent and climactic stage of Earth's evolution, as a time fractal of thirteen baktun cycles, each 144,000 days in length, spanning the JulianiGregorian years 3113 B.C.-A.D. 2012. According to Mayan time science, the efforts based on an erroneous time conceptualization are bound to fail prior to the cyclic end-point of 2012. Thus, the Inevitable Event is also a consequence of the failure to understand or to even acknowledge the actual nature of time due to a totally false and mechanistic timing sensibility. In this lies the cause of the apocalypse of Western thought and theology.

The problem left unresolved by *The Mayan Factor* was the precise methodology for changing tracks, for switching Western dominated global civilization away from

the track of an erroneous, mechanistic time-based technology and toward the natural order of time-the path beyond technology. Here my efforts took me to a point beyond reason. Why or how? Let me explain. As an exposition of Mayan time science, in preparation for the 2012 ending of the thirteen baktun cycle of history, *The Mayan Factor* is predicated on the occurrence of a real time event, the Harmonic Convergence "global peace meditation" of August 16-17, 1987. The timing of the Harmonic Convergence was prophetic. It augured the fulfillment of the prophecy of Quetzalcoatl (947-999) known as the Thirteen Heavens and Nine Hells. The Harmonic Convergence completed the ninth and last Hell cycle, and ushered in the final twenty-five years of the thirteen baktun cycle. The Harmonic Convergence was a Mayan wake-up call answered by millions of earthlings.

Exactly forty-two years and ten days after Hiroshima, and fourteen years and twenty-six days before the Inevitable Event, the Harmonic Convergence was located by time to occur precisely when it did. Prophecy transcends reason because it is totally of time, which is of the fourth dimension; prophecy nevertheless affirms with unerring logic that which has been, and that which will be brought about, as being of the same karmic cause and effect stream.

It was this matter of prophecy in the aftermath of *The Mayan Factor* that brought my literary efforts and my own life journey to another stage of development. Prophecy comes with a mantle-if not, then you are classified as a madman. The prophecy of the Harmonic Convergence, as well as of the entire text of *The Mayan Factor,* bore the mantle of the prophetic stream of the Chilam Balam, the jaguar priests, the wizard knowers of the "night script." By correctly fulfilling the prophecy of the Thirteen Heaven and Nine Hell cycles, 843-1987, and by writing and putting together the mathematical codes of *The Mayan Factor,* and before it, of *Earth Ascending,* **I,** Jose Argiielles, had assumed the mantle of the prophetic tradition of the Chilam Balam. Mind you, this was nothing overt nor the least bit conscious, for little did I then know that my next life task was to decode the essence of the Chilam Balam prophecies and to define the time science of which these prophecies are a manifestation.!

The Harmonic Convergence affirmed the karmic repercussions of Hiroshima by bringing forward the ancient Mayan prophetic tradition of the Chilam Balam. By precisely locating this prophetic tradition in a contemporary moment -a media event, no less-the unlocking of its final prophecies was triggered for the purpose of completing the cycle of history: 2012 and beyond.

Like any major media event, the Harmonic Convergence was an enactment within the noospheric unconscious of humanity-the telepathic whole that resides in Earth's mental envelope. So it was that on June 23, 1987, the *Wall Street Journal* ran the

front page story on the Harmonic Convergence. Yet due to the mental obscuration accompanying the final stage of global industrialization, the Harmonic Convergence was an event that the *WillI Street Journal* and the rest of American media conveniently forgot when it came to their review of the century in the year 2000. Today, just weeks after the Inevitable Event, the collapse of the World Trade Center towers, the words of that article are most prophetic: "Mr. Argiielles says the choice between a 'new age' and all-out destruction is ours, and we had better decide."2 Though the prophecy was discounted, true to form, the words of the messenger remain to haunt those who spurned the message.

The prophets and sages of the Maya, and of the New World in general, are a complement to those of the Old World, a further manifestation of the planetary dialectic of poles and hemispheres. If the judgment day apocalypse is the focus of the Old World prophecies, especially those ofIslam and Christianity, those of the New World similarly pinpoint an end time whose denouement is chronicled as the date 2012. It was the prophecies of the sage and culture hero, Quetzalcoatl (947-999), that brought about the Harmonic Convergence, while it was the wisdom of Pacal Votan (603-683) that informed the actual text and scientific time mappings of *The Mayan Factor,* and the image of his tomb adorns the cover of the original book. In a similar manner, it was the tradition of the Chilam Balam that created the prophetic vision of the synchronic order to be realized as the Law of Time.

I was hardly aware of the personally transformative factors at work within me after the Harmonic Convergence media swell began to subside, when two events occurred that augured a major change in my perceptions, activities, and literary output: the Wall Street stock market crash of October 19, 1987, and the death of my eighteen-year-old son,]osh, ten days later, on October 29,1987. In analyzing why the 1987 stockmarket crash happened, the lead story in *USA Today* about this event concluded by posing the question: Was it the Harmonic Convergence that somehow caused the stock market to crash? As I pondered why the answer to this question must be in the affirmative, as well as the implications of this analysis-remembering full well that the breaking story on the Harmonic Convergence first appeared in the *TVtlllStreet Journal-news* came of my son's sudden death in an automobile accident.

Synchronically, the stock market crash and my son's death were part of one event continuum. As tragic as the circumstances of his death were, my son had liberated me from any further compunction to lead a normal life, and to pursue, instead, this matter of Mayan time science and its calendars of harmony. In homage to my son, I completed what I first thought would be a popularization of *The Mayan Factor,* a book entitled *Suifers of the Zuvuya* (1988). Instead of being a popularization or even

a sequel to *The Mayan Factor,* Surfers turned out to be a series of autobiographical tales of interdimensional travel-zuvuya surfing in the fourth dimension. This "flight of fantasy," was my literary farewell to the limitations of reason and a life of comfort. Inner destiny pushed me to the next stage in my pursuit of the unitive science-the discovery of the Law of Time.

This journey of discovery, the findings of which are the underpinnings of the present work *Time and the Technosphere,* took me and my wife and partner, Lloydine, to physical and mental places that were far from anything we had once deemed conventional. Because of this, I had ample opportunity to write and to create, and I did so, freely and without any restraints. I no longer sought any conventional means to communicate. I was now operating prophetically, on behalf of the noosphere-Earth's mental envelope.

There is a consistency to the stream of prophetic revelation, summarized as the codes of the Law of Time. This revelatory stream begins with *Earth Ascending* and *The Mayan Factor,* comes to flower with *The Dreamspell: Journey of Times hip Earth 2013* (with Lloydine Arguelles, 1991), and is completed by all aspects of the Telektonon Prophecy, including the Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar (1993-2000). This prophetic stream is emphatically a galactic revelation of the same base of know 1-edge that produced the Mayan civilization of ancient Mesoamerica. The new revelatory stream is known as the Wizard's Count, or "reformulated Chilam Balam." It was this prophetic stream and its year-bearer count that established the validity of a fifty-two year cycle correlated to the Gregorian July 26.

The purpose of the Chilam Balam year-bearer count was to establish a basis for understanding that there exists a synchronic order of time, completely apart from what is usually referred to as the Long Count, the linear count of days of the thirteen baktuns of the cycle of history, 3113 B.C.-A.D. 2012. After a long break in the tradition of the Chilam Balam, the year-bearer count was prophetically reformulated to prepare for the Harmonic Convergence and the subsequent revelation of the Telektonon prophecy of Pacal Votan. As the new Wizard's Count, this count was intuitively recalibrated precisely so that July 26, 1987, would be White Galactic Wizard; July 26. According to *The Mayan Factor,* July 26, 1987: White Galactic Wizard, marks the first of the twenty-six years of the Harmonic Convergence. This date marks the conscious ascendance of the prophecy of galactic culture and the coming of the Earth Wizards-the race of galactic wizards on Earth.

In 1988, the year following the Harmonic Convergence, in attempting to create an everyday "Mayan calendar," I came upon the next stage of the discovery of the synchronic order. On the Gregorian calendar, 1988 is a leap year. I perceived that to accommodate February 29 would throw the year-bearer count off by one day, ruining

the harmony of the system. Reviewing the Chilam Balam texts, it was clear that leap year was never considered, much less counted in the year-bearer count. Without an intercalary leap year date, the four year-bearers-Seed, Moon, Wizard, and Storm-coded by the numbers 1-13, remained in sequence, maintaining and assuring the harmony of the system, where every fifty-two years equals seventy-three 260-day spins, no two days are the same, and the entire 18,980 days of the cycle repeat every fifty-two years in an upward moving spiral of time. For the first time in my work, the issue of the Gregorian calendar as a system came into question.

Following this observation came the discovery of the mathematical codes governing the synchronization of the 260-day cycle with the 365-day cycle, the consequent discovery of the artificial 12:60 and the natural 13:20 timing frequencies, the recognition and resurrection of the Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar, and the full exposition of the Dreamspell codes of fourth-dimensional time. I presented these discoveries in *Dreamspell: Journey of Timeship Earth 2013.* The Dreamspell, being the manifestation of the knowledge base of galactic culture, completely encodes the Wizard's Count. *Dreamspell: Journey of Timeship Earth 2013,* the presentation of the codes of fourth-dimensional time as a "tool kit" with an accompanying "script" and guidebook, is a break of such radical form from the prevailing paradigm that, as of today, it is still unfathomable to many people.

The galactic Dreamspell tool kit is a primary tool for the galactic culture that is just now beginning to unfold in the wake and shadow of the collapse of the Twin World Trade Center towers. This text prompted me to write two more books. The first, *Arcturus Probe: Tales and Reports of an Ongoing Investigation* (1992, 1996), is a deep reverie that picks up where *Suifers of the Zuvuya* left off and documents the interstellar, interplanetary psycho-cosmological roots of the Dreamspell of fourth-dimensional time. The second book was written as *A Treatise on Time Viewed from its Own Dimension,* but first published in English as the *Call of Pacal Votan: Time is the Fourth Dimension* (1992, 1996). In this highly scientific, mathematical treatise I was able to accommodate the Dreamspell codes of the Law of Time to an analysis of the biosphere and the biosphere-noosphere transition. This work also represents my first integration of the actual thought and principles of V. I. Vernadsky.

Through the efforts that constituted the discovery of the Law of Time, much of which was assisted by my partner and wife, Lloydine, I was finally able to begin to understand the methodology for accomplishing the paradigm shift-or psychic pole shift-of which humanity was so in need, at least from the perspective of the biosphere. By providing the mathematical basis for establishing the "biomass constant," Seventy-three 5 day subcycles correlated to the measure of the solar year, I had

found a way of grounding the fourth-dimensional mental order of time, the synchronic order, in the actual third-dimensional biogeochemical cycles of the biosphere. This was like casting a harpoon of time from the noosphere and landing it in a precisely measured form in the annual turning of Earth's biospheric mantle. And this was accomplished precisely because of the intrinsic harmonic cycles and patterns of the DreamspelllWizard's Count.

For this reason, by 1993, it was incumbent upon me to test the hypothesis of the Law of Time that the human race was destroying its biosphere due to operating according to an error in time, and that only a shift in its experience of and perception of time would save it from such destruction. This shift in time is defined as the calendar change. The Law of Time presents such a radical critique of Western science, of its concepts of time, and of the civilization which it supports, that I could not tackle the problem from its center, but from its periphery, moving inward to the point of the Inevitable Event. Beginning in Latin America, then spreading to Japan, Western Europe, Russia, and finally North America, we established a movement to change the everyday perception of time, instilling profound meaning behind the effort to reform the calendar. In this way, we took on the responsibility of organizing the World Thirteen Moon Calendar Change Peace Movement.

Part and parcel of this, beginning in 1993, was the decoding of the prophecy of Pacal Votan, the inspiration of *The Mayan Factor.* Known as the Telektonon, Earth Spirit Speaking Tube, this prophecy is the full realization of the Law of Time and the synchronic order. As much science as it is prophecy, the Telektonon defines the Tower of Babel as the root of the error in time, and the Inevitable Event as the necessary result of not relinquishing false time. At the same time, the Telektonon provides codes and tools of analysis which are in complete accord with an understanding of the technosphere-noosphere as an evolutionary continuum in which the Inevitable Event is an act of moral consequence and natural law revealing the basis of a new cycle of harmonic order.

I would also be remiss at this point if! did not inform the reader that, by prophecy's prerogative, this text is also literally punctuated by a perspective that can only be described as "Quranic." Late in 1993, my immersion in the prophecy ofPacal Votan became sychronically linked to my immersion in a study of the Quran, or Holy Quran as it is sometimes called. I have taken seriously the claim that the Quran is the final revealed text (A.D. 610-632) for humanity. I have studied it following the dictum: "Quran, the whole Quran, and nothing but the Quran,"3 as the basis of genuine Islam-submission to the will of God. I have found it more than sufficiently true that the Quran is a scientific text, and contains nothing that contradicts science. More profoundly, my study has given rise to my own personal ethic: duty to God is
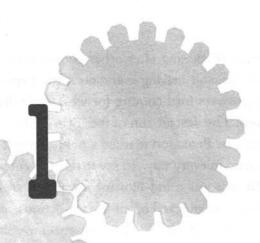
the highest cause. It is the cultivation of this attitude, combined with many years of practice of Buddhist meditation, that have brought me to my present point of view, which is visionary and spiritual throughout-and, as a result, has endowed me with my own view on the current global dialectic.

That the new, and final, global dialectic is found in the tension between the forces of globalization (materialism) on the one hand, and that of the civilization of Islam (spirituality) on the other, is now a well-documented fact.4 Of course, generally speaking, in the West, we see it only from the materialist side of the dialectic. The perspective which informs me, and consequently this book, is definitely from the other side of the dialectic. Though in no way condoning terrorism- I am a non-violent pacifist by persuasion-the motives of the terrorists stem from a philosophy and worldview with which I am in sympathy. Yes, the Inevitable Event was also a profound theological moment, and what we are witnessing in the present World War is the battle between the religion of choice and the religion of submission. We cannot necessarily assume that the religion of choice will prevail. In fact, from the perspective of the biosphere-noosphere transition, it is the religion of submission that is most in accord with the spiritually-beckoning future.

As a preface to this book, I have found it mandatory to write this brief literary autobiography, often couched in a terminology that jumps ahead of the story, solely to demonstrate that the actualization of the noosphere corresponds to the stages of attainment and transcendence of one human's life journey in pursuit of the truth. Only in this way could I cultivate the noospheric perspective, voice, and point of view that was necessary for the writing of this text. In this perspective, the noosphere is a condition of non-anthropocentric consciousness. My journey, thus documented, is merely one way the noosphere has found to become conscious, asserting the Law of Time's purposive axiom: to make conscious what had been unconscious. The voice and method of the noospheric perspective are inseparable from the topic of this book, *Time and the Technosphere.* By analyzing the timing and structure of the technosphere, the noospheric point of view becomes conscious. WIthout understanding the nature and relation of time and the technosphere, there would be no truly sane way to comprehend the meaning of the Inevitable Event.

Crystal Moon Kali 11,
Kin 2: White Lunar WInd
Yellow Solar Seed year
Cascadia, North America

1

9-11, The Inevitable Event, and the Nature of Time
Introductory Reflections

Woe! Woe, O great city,

O Babylon,   city of power!

In one hour your doom has come!

Woe! Woe O great   city, dressed in fine   linen
   purple,   and scarlet...

In one hour such great   wealth   has been brought   to
   ruin ...

"Woe! Woe, O great   city,

Where   all who had ships on the sea became rich
   through   her wealth,

In one hour she has been brought   to ruin!   ...

With   such violence the great city of Babylon   will be
   thrown   down!"

ST.JOHN   OF PATMOS, BOOK OF REVELATIONS,
CHAPTER 18, *THE FALL OF BABYLON*

9-11. The Twin Towers of the World Trade Center   gone in a veritable   twinkle   of the eye. Tragedy. Horror. Terrorism. The   whole   world   brought   to a halt. The   after-math? Patriotism,   war, and an all-pervading   uneasy feeling. What happened? What really happened?   Was this the beginning   of the Apocalypse?

Amidst the distraction of chasing after other people with smart bombs in far-away places like Mghanistan, and making everyone at the airports feel like potential terrorists, there are no answers forthcoming for what really happened. There is a good reason for that, too: The destruction of the Twin Towers of the World Trade Center and the attack on the Pentagon marked a point beyond the comprehension of the current belief system in every way. To say that the event was mind-blowing is an understatement. But if it was mind-blowing-which it truly was-that means that a whole belief system was knocked off of its foundations, and only a new belief system can supply the answer. A higher, more all-encompassing belief system-a new paradigm-is what is needed if we are to really understand what happened on 9-11.

Belief systems, believe it or not, are functions of time. What you believe defines the time you are living in. Any belief system is held in place by the calendar and sense of time in which it is encoded. 9-11 means September II-it also means 911 emergency, planetary emergency in this case. "9-11 we will never forget" was a common slogan appearing on bumper stickers and store windows after the event. The words or concepts "Tuesday, September 11," "9-11" and even "911" are all functions of the same belief system. So is "2001," the first year of the highly touted "third millennium." But the third millennium of what? The third millennium since the birth of Christ. This means that the belief system whose mind was blown was the Christian millennial belief system encoded in the Christian calendar, the Gregorian as it is properly called. Does this mean that the foundations of 2000 years of belief were blown away, shattered with the terrifying collapse of those Twin Towers? Easily that many years, maybe as many as 5,000 years, or perhaps even the entire history of civilization as we know it came unhinged that fateful day, the day of the 9-11, the day of the *Inevitable Event,* to borrow a phrase from the Holy Quran, the day the Apocalypse announced itself, showed up on the morning television, quite without warning. (See plate 1, The Invevitable Event and the End of History.)

In meditating upon the meaning of the Inevitable Event, it is natural to ask: What made this event so inevitable? It is not just from the perspective of American Foreign Policy, or that of its economic free market monetary politics, that this event was inevitable. More profoundly, this event was so inevitable because it seemed to smack of some form of retribution for the breaking of fundamental laws of nature, or even of Divine Law. And isn't the retribution for transgressing Divine Law a form of apocalypse, a standing naked, a revelation, an evocation of the fall of the Tower of Babel, no less?

Yes, that is why it was so shocking-it was the Inevitable Event because the apocalypse is as inevitable as it is without warning. But apocalypse- a word no one wanted

to use to describe the event, because to use it would be to admit that it was all over-is only one side of the coin. There is another side to the coin of the Inevitable Event-and that is what this book is about. There is something beyond the Apocalypse, there is something larger going on, and that also scares people. Things are out of their control. Isn't this why, instead of looking at it, or contemplating the event, a policy of war was immediately instated as a principle of revenge-for what and against whom? What is going on is time-time is always going on, or time is always coming together. Or time is always changing. The apocalypse, too, is about time-the end of time-which is even more frightening to most people. But the end of whose time? The new paradigm we need to explain 9-11 should be a paradigm that is all about time.

I who speak know, because I have spent most of my life studying time, and the effects of human time which you call history. For many years now I have been living an experiment in time, but a time most of you do not know. So I have some answers that will put 9-11 in perspective for you. I am the stranger from the other side of the wall of mechanized time. I have come back to make you familiar with the time your clock and your calendar shield you from. Because I know about the other time, the larger time, the cosmic time that governs the cycles of all that exists, I can tell you that 9-11 was the Inevitable Event. It had to happen precisely when it did, not because nineteen terrorists planned it that way, but because the terrorists themselves were unconsciously programmed by the timing of Earth itself. Earth's timing process represents evolutionary forces as well as effects irreversibly set in motion by the human's own unconscious programs, programs governed by the human misperception of time and of its role in the cosmic order.

Yes, Earth has its program of which our human history and all of its endeavors are only a part. This larger meta-program of Earth is called the biosphere, the scientific designation given to what is commonly and inadequately referred to as "the environment." As such, the biosphere is a whole system composite of the sum of life and its organic and inorganic support systems spread out over the surface of Earth, hence bio = "life" + sphere = "having the form of a globe." In a word the biosphere is a vast but fragile process which has been evolving itself for some two billion years on this little planet as it spins around its local star, the sun. But we humans, who only in 1969 first saw ourselves as a planetary being-the whole Earth beamed back at us via television by a rocket hurtling toward the moon-we humans have been generally so self-involved in our own interpretation of things that we have missed seeing the larger picture of which we are a part. This larger picture is the entirety of the biosphere which encompasses the evolution of life on Earth as a whole system process. The amazing thing is that most of us have never even heard of the biosphere much

less even know that we are a part of this whole system governed by laws and principles which we, in our self-made arrogance and ignorance, have but little understood.

From my experiment in time, seeing and studying the human as part of the larger self-evolving fabric of the biosphere, I came to the conclusion that the human is living in a time apart from the rest of the biosphere-an artificial time whose climax and termination is inevitable, for nothing artificial can withstand the force of truth. If the human is living in artificial time, the clock is an artifact whose system of measure has nothing to do with natural cycles but is a totally abstract standard, then there must be something called natural time. I will go even farther and state that not only is there natural time, but that there is a law governing natural time, and that is the Law ofTime.]ust as Newton only discovered gravity some 300 years ago, though gravity has always existed, so the Law of Time has always been in operation, even though it was just recently discovered. It is the Law of Time that governs the entirety of the biosphere and everything else in the universe according to principles which are only dimly known to us, principles like synchronicity and telepathic instantaneity. Yes, to understand what really happened on 9-11 you have to understand the Law of Time and how it governs the biosphere-of which our rampant human civilization is inescapably a part.

The Law of Time is formulated very simply, and in some people's way of thinking, rather unscientifically as T(E) = Art, "energy factored by time equals phenomena in the material world represent some state of energy, and every state of energy is governed by time, the resultant product of which is always something beautiful or elegant. Have you ever seen an ugly sunset? A hideous flower? Even if you examine a scorpion with some objectivity you will be amazed at the flawless and elegant manner in which its parts are organized. Yes, all of nature is organized by time to produce in you the sensation of beauty. And time itself, well, believe it or not, time is a frequency, and a frequency is not measurable by a clock. The Law of Time states that time is the universal frequency of synchronization. It is the nature of time to synchronize and to maintain all things in a condition of synchronization. Synchronicity, then, is the experience of real time. When we say that time is a frequency, we can be more precise and say that time is a universal constant expressible by the mathematical ratio 13:20. That is, the 13:20 ratio is the frequency of synchronization.

Of course, most people have never even heard of the Law of Time much less comprehend what the 13:20 ratio might mean. But then, that again gets to the root of the problem, or rather, the dilemma: If humans are living in their own time apart from the rest of the biosphere which is governed by the natural timing frequency,

how could they ever know about the Law of Time? The humans are all a little like Mrs. Malaprop in the play by Moliere who learns to her surprise that she has been using grammar all of her life-though it is much more serious than that. So we humans are with the Law of Time-it has been operating throughout history without our awareness of it. Because of this, its way of making itself known to us was the infamous 9-11. Yes, in the analysis of the Law of Time, the 9-11 marked the end of artificial time.

Living in ignorance of the Law of Time and of the true nature of time, the human species constructed its own concept of time which is based on the clock with its 60-minute hour and the Gregorian calendar with its maddening array of unevenly numbered months. Hence, the paradigm of the artificial timing frequency is defined by the ratio 12:60 (twelve-month calendar, 60-minute hour) -in contrast to the 13:20 ratio of natural time. If the artificial mechanistic and irregularly measured time sets the human race apart from true or natural time, does this not also establish the fact that the human race is living an error in time? Only by living such an unconsciously assumed error could the human race arrive at such an apocalyptic moment as the Inevitable Event-inevitable because any deviation from the truth has an inevitable moment when the truth rebounds in some dramatic or even apocalyptic way. Is it possible that the entire construct of modern civilization, so devastating to the biosphere, is a function of this error in time? Is modern civilization like a time warp, a bubble of artificial time that suddenly got popped on the 9-11?

Back in the 1990s, now seemingly so long ago, I was traveling around the planet on behalf of the Law of Time and the biosphere, and making my observations regarding the effects of artificial time from a planetary whole systems point of view. I saw that even though the human species had evolved - or devolved, as the case may be-into a cultural hybrid which I call the planetary human, the object of the much touted "globalization," I saw that the consciousness of this cultural hybrid was anything but planetary. This schism between the propaganda of globalization and the actual sectarian and fragmented state of consciousness of the hybrid human was further exacerbated, I observed, by the potently unconscious effects ofliving an error in time. Ironically, if the Inevitable Event left many of us in the dark, it has brought the Law of Time into the light. To elucidate let me quote here from a text I wrote in 1996, and which I think will give us a point to expand upon in order to bring the Inevitable Event into sharper focus, while allowing me to define some of my terms:

"Through an error in time, the human species transforms its artificial construct, civilization, into a global technosphere: the sum product of industrial mechanization of its biological functions. Because of human adaptation to the irregular mechanized 12:60

riming frequency, the technosphere runs counter to the laws of the biosphere, crearing a magneric instability between the primal crystalline and vital organic processes."2

The current explosion of the world crisis, stemming from the destrucrion of The World Trade Center Twin Towers, demonstrates the hypothesis of the Law of Time that states: operaring on arrificial and mechanisric timing standards will cause the human to deviate from natural rime to the point of its self-destrucrion, the end result of the magneric instability referred to in this reference. But here we have some further definirions to make. Let us start with a definirion of the technosphere, since that word is featured so prominently in the ritle of this book, *Time and the Technosphere: The Law of Time in Human Affairs.*

While the term biosphere defines the enrirety of life as a single coherent unity, inclusive of its inorganic or semi-inert support systems such as the atmosphere and the hydrosphere, technosphere defines an artificial sheathe or membrane held together by industrial technology as a whole system. This technological mantle is the sum of the processes devised by humans resulring from the application of certain scienrific and economic principles, especially during the last half century. The effects of the technosphere are to supplant the organic processes of the biosphere with totally industrialized ones, resulring in a severe imbalance in the biosphere. This imbalance, the "magneric instability between the primal crystalline and vital organic processes" refers to the disruption of the delicate interacrion between the inert (crystalline) and biological processes and structures which consritute the vibrant mechanisms and interacrive cycles of the biosphere. Phenomena such as global warming and over-popularion are symptomatic of the technospheric disruption of the natural order of the biosphere.

The term technosphere, however, is actually just the middle term of a larger process defined as the biosphere-noosphere transirion. According to the principle figure behind the elaborarion of the laws of the biosphere, V. I. Vemadsky (1863-1945), as an evolving structure, the biosphere is inevitably being transformed into a new geological and evolurionary condirion, the noosphere-Earth's mental envelope. In Vemadsky's analysis, the enrirety of the biospheric process can be described as a single biogeochemical unity. According to Vemadsky, due to man's transformarion of nature since the industrial revolurion, this biogeochemical unity has entered a state of combustion-an accelerated process of transformarion. It is this rapidly acceleraring geochemical combusrion-the net effect of industrializarion and its waste -that accompanies an evolurionary shift, the transformarion of the biosphere into the noosphere. But between the biosphere and the noosphere there is the technosphere, the intervening medium of transformation.

So when we speak of the biosphere and the noosphere we must take into account the technosphere. In actuality we must speak of the biosphere-technosphere-noosphere transition. In this context, the noosphere is the condition of the human mind purified of the error of time. And if the noosphere is the Earth's mental envelope, it could only be so because of a unified state of mind, the transformation of the hybrid planetary human into a genuinely spiritualized planetary being, the mind of the Earth no less-something that seems phenomenally utopian from the perspective of today's evening news. How could this come about, this noosphere of a telepathically unified human consciousness? Again, the Law of Time supplies genuine answers. To begin with, it says, change your calendar, get back to living in harmony with the natural cycles of the rest of the biosphere-and the universe. If you don't, well, the destruction of the Twin Towers was just the first stage of the Apocalypse. But we still have a choice. The other side of the coin of the Apocalypse shown to humanity on prime time television on the 9-11 is entry into the noosphere. But we must first understand what is really going on, and then act intelligently.

The mental climate in America is particularly difficult and strained now. In order to maintain a positive and constructive attitude of mind during this terrible time, I decided to write this book. As you can see, this book takes for its point of departure an analysis of the destruction of the World Trade Center (the actual hub of the technosphere) as the Inevitable Event defining the dynamic of the biosphere in its process of transforming into the noosphere. The analysis of the event in this light will give ample opportunity for presenting the key ideas of V. I. Vernadsky, in particular the concept of the biosphere which he so single-handedly amplified and defined, as well as the cosmic ideas of other Russian thinkers which are little known in the West. I have already written about and given much thought to this matter in general, summarized in part in the First Planetary Congress of Biospheric Rights, held in Brasilia, Brazil in 1996, but nowhere have I written for a wider public audience concerning the nature of the biosphere-noosphere transition.

I feel it is especially important at this time to present an analysis of this event in a scientific context that is beyond nationalism and ideology, so that human beings can begin to understand that they are a function of the biosphere, but not necessarily its controlling mechanism. Of course, the Law of Time is the key factor involved in this analysis, and understanding the biosphere in the context of the Law of Time is absolutely critical for establishing the basis of an entirely new worldview and hierarchy of values-the much awaited new paradigm.

Like my thoughts on the biosphere-noosphere transition, my investigations of the Law of Time have also not as yet been presented to the general public. In fact,

you will find scarcely anyone who has even heard of the "Law of Time." This is because my researches and investigations over the past decade which resulted in the discovery of the Law of Time were not conducted in any formal academic way, nor through any corporate or government sponsored grant or officially recognized research institution. The discovery of the Law of Time has been, nonetheless, a rigorous, life-consuming pursuit. The laboratory for its study was to be found in a phenomenological and anthropological investigation of the effects of mechanized time on various population groups absorbed in what is called "modern civilization."

The premise of this investigation is simple: it is an undeniable fact that the time of human civilization, governed by the clock and the Gregorian calendar, is not the same as the time of the rest of the biosphere. Artificial time is not the same as natural time. Or rather, artificial time establishes a frequency which governs the human species totally apart from the timing frequency of the rest of life. What are the effects of artificial time and how do they define the nature of modern civilization? The answers to these questions open a perspective that has been scarcely considered. Yet this perspective is so clearly an essential factor in the description and definition of the human condition, that, in the wake of the tragic events and their ominous aftermath, it now begs to be presented in a proper manner. Hence this book. Suffice it to say that the Law of Time in every respect answers the question posed by my previous books and summarized in the single query: how will modern man escape the fatal consequences of the one-sided mechanization of his biological operations and the imminent destruction of his life-support system?

Defining a planetary whole systems approach to the analysis of time in human affairs, the first postulate of my book *A Treatise on Time* (1996) concerning the principles and nature of time as the fourth dimension is worth quoting here, since it introduces the fundamental problem informing the investigation of Time and the Technosphere:

> Just as air is the atmosphere of the body, so time is the atmosphere of the mind. If the time in which we live consists of uneven months and days regulated by mechanized minutes and hours, that is what becomes of our mind: a mechanized irregularity. Since everything follows from mind, it is no wonder that the atmosphere in which we live daily becomes more polluted, and the greatest complaint is: "I just don't have enough time!" Who owns your time, owns your mind. Own your own time and you will know your own mind.3

It must be understood that the events of 9-11 were so historically unprecedented, so mind-bogglingly dramatic, that they require a large lens through which to fully

interpret their meaning. The Law of Time is such a lens. Quite simply, the destruction of the Twin Towers defines the limit of artificial time. If this is so, what can be expected following this world-shattering event? Because the Law of Time began with the premise of defining the difference between artificial time and the time of nature, the larger context of the biosphere was resorted to almost immediately. Being the study of an ongoing and evolving phenomenon, the investigation of the biosphere by its principle researcher, V. 1. Vernadsky, pointed to another imminent evolutionary stage: the noosphere, the "mental envelope of the planet." However, an intermediate stage was also perceived by researchers who followed Vernadsky, and it came to be called the technosphere, "the technological envelope of the planet." The end or limits of the technosphere define the birth or beginning of the noosphere.

With the events of 9-11, this is no longer just a theoretical concept but a vivid reality. As a species we are now undergoing this dramatic evolutionary moment, otherwise known as the biosphere-noosphere transition. It is for this reason that this book also presents novel definitions of time and pragmatic conclusions that can be employed by anyone if they so choose. If the root of the technosphere is artificial time and its proliferating mechanized constructs, then in the collapse of the technosphere, an event ordained by the laws of nature, there must be an orderly path or means for establishing the noosphere, also ordained by natural law. The Law of Time defines this orderly path as a conscious shift in the human timing frequency, away from artificial time and into universal natural time. This can only be accomplished by a universal reform of time, known as the calendar change. If there were no such path, the conclusion to the collapse of the technosphere would be an unbearable barbarism.

By its nature, the topic of the book is cross-disciplinary and provocative-it is visionary history. I have been described as a "spirituality historian" and "cosmic harmony researcher."4 I believe this description also characterizes *Time and the Technosphere,* which does present a solution, a new world paradigm, if you will. A new paradigm has been awaiting humanity ever since the notion of paradigms was first raised by Thomas Kuhn in 1964, in his book *The Nature of Scientific Revolutions,* or even earlier by Vernadsky and Pierre Teilhard de Chardin in their invocation of the noosphere. To be truly new, such a paradigm could hardly be expected to arise from traditional fields of thought or methods of research, be they quantum physics or microbiology. In fact, as I have often said, most people wouldn't recognize the new paradigm if it ran into them on the street. This is because people's consciousness and perceptions are basically very set and unexamined-as unexamined as the effects of the watch on their wrist or the calendar on their wall. In fact, one of the consequences

of the technosphere   is the limiting   nature   of consciousness   which remains   un-changed   despite   the fact that technology   is changing   all of the time.   But with the occurrence   of the Inevitable   Event,   history   has been   punctured.   Perhaps   now the new paradigm   can be perceived: the paradigm   of natural   time   as the universal   factor of synchronization.

Although   prompted   by the stunning   terrorist   attack   upon   and consequent   apoca-lyptic   collapse   of the World   Trade   Center   Twin   towers,   these   reflections   are actually a synthesis   of thoughts   and explorations   in the domain   of time   that I now find neces-sary to communicate   in a coherent   and organic   form.   The grand   theme   of this study is to understand   how   and why   the collapse   of the twin   World   Trade   Center   Towers was a biospheric   event.   Even so, the study   of the Inevitable   Event   within   the context of the evolution   of the biosphere   requires   and leads us to still grander   domains   of thought-the   historical,   the theological,   and the cosmological.   The reason   that these reflections   and meditations   spiral   into ever grander   domains   of thought   is due to the principle   of analysis   and the guiding   factor   employed   in this study.   This is the Law of Time,   which   is the fruit   of a life-long   research   and pursuit   of knowledge.   It is the Law of Time   that brings   the biosphere   into timely   focus.

The biosphere   is scarcely   known   even   to most   educated   people.   As a bio-geochemical   whole   system   in which   the human   is but one of the functioning   compo-nents,   the biosphere   is an intricate   unity   with its own governing   laws and principles. Without   becoming   conscious   of how the human   organism   participates   in the laws and principles   of the biosphere,   the human   will continue   to remain   ignorant   of the biosphere's   existence   and therefore   will sooner   than later   reach a termination   of its own evolutionary   possibility.   A demonstration   of how the laws and principles   of the biosphere,   crystallized   into a temporary   and intermediate   sheath   called   the technosphere,   reached   a climactic   evolutionary   point   in the collapse   of the World Trade   Center   towers   will provide   the means   of educating   in general   concerning   the biosphere.   It will also allow   us to elaborate   on the meaning   and nature   of the technosphere,   and the imminent   transformation   of the biosphere   into the noosphere, the Earth's   "mental   envelope."

A fundamental   purpose   of the Law of Time   is to expand   upon the meaning   and significance   of the Inevitable   Event,   as well as upon the biosphere,   technosphere, and noosphere   in relation   to the evolution   of life and consciousness   in the universe. To speak of an event being "inevitable"   is to bring   about a reflection   on the nature   of time, and even of the laws of cause-and-effect   and karma.   It is time   that governs   both cause-and-effect   as well as the actions   of karma.   And it is time   that dominates   inevi-tability,   because   any such inevitable   event is located   in a very precise   moment   in
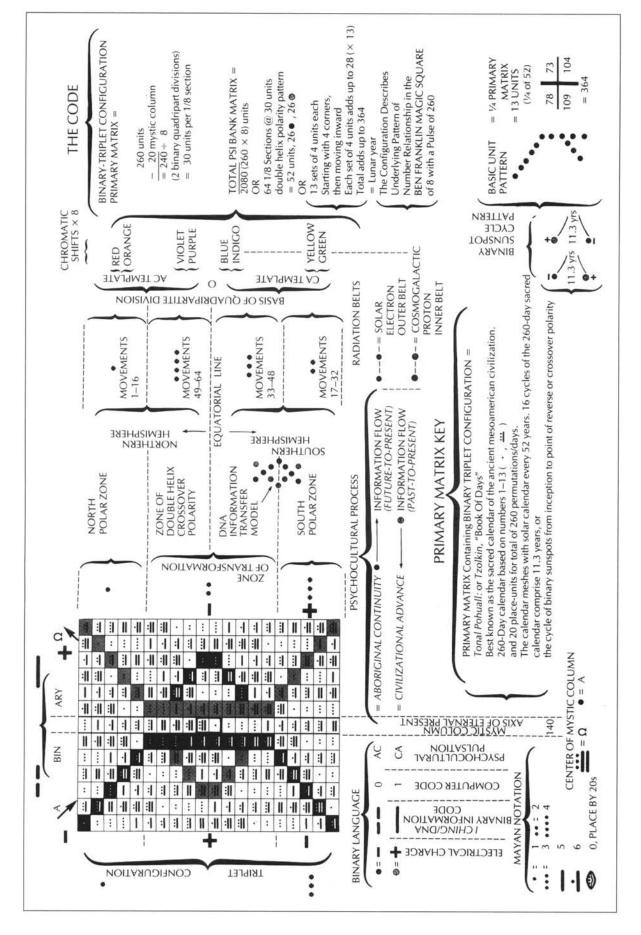
time. But what actually is time? How does time "locate" events? And, once again, what is the Law of Time?

As the criterion of natural time in which synchronicity is the norm, the Law of Time is the key that unlocks the reason why the Inevitable Event occurred when it did. By precisely locating it within the evolutionary continuum of the biosphere and in relation to its point of mutational shift, the Inevitable Event is placed into a greater context of cosmic comprehension by the Law of Time. Through the lens of the Law of Time we will be able to understand the relationship between the biosphere, the intermediate state of the technosphere, and the imminent stage of the noosphere. Defining the Law of Time as the factor of universal synchronization, the law by which all events in the universe are maintained in synchronic relation to each other, we approach the domain of a hitherto undefined realm, that of the synchronic order.

As the unifying fourth-dimensional order of time in the universe, the synchronic order is measured and gauged by the 13:20 matrix. The mathematical coding of the Law of Time is entirely locked into this 13:20 matrix, otherwise known as the Harmonic Module or Tzolkin, the basis of the sacred count of the ancient Maya. When we examine the Harmonic Module, a 13 x 20 matrix, we may well ask what does that have to do with time? It is obviously as different from a clock, as a tree is from a flagpole! When we examine the matrix carefully we see that there is a repetition of thirteen notations, the numbers 1-13, that occurs 20 times yielding 260 (13 x 20) units.

Holding the 13:20 matrix together is a pattern which I identified in my book *Earth Ascending* (1984) as the binary triplet configuration, and in the *Mayan Factor* (1987) as the Loom of Maya. This pattern consists of 52 units, 26 on either side of the central or seventh vertical column. **If** you contemplate this 52-unit pattern you will see it is characterized by binary radial symmetry. This quality characterizes the entire matrix and defines the quality of fourth-dimensional time as radial and instantaneous distinct from the current third-dimensional paradigm which defines time as being linear and sequential. The radial quality of fourth-dimensional time is what accounts for its being the factor of universal synchronization. This is very different from the sensation of the second hand as it sweeps around the clock, indicating the inexorability, not of time but of the mechanization of time! The 13:20 matrix becomes potently useful as the means of establishing the synchronic order when it is coordinated with a genuinely harmonic timing standard, the Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar.

"Time is the fourth dimension," is the famous adage attributed to Einstein. This statement notwithstanding, the modern notion of time is bogged down in the minutiae

THE CODE

BINARY-TRIPLET CONFIGURATION
PRIMARY MATRIX =

260 units
− 20 mystic column
= 240 ÷ 8
(2 binary quadripart divisions)
= 30 units per 1/8 section

TOTAL PSI BANK MATRIX =
2080 (260 × 8) units
OR
64 1/8 Sections @ 30 units
double helix polarity pattern
= 52 units, 26 ●, 26 ⊛
OR
13 sets of 4 units each
Starting with 4 corners,
then moving inward
Each set of 4 units adds up to 28 (× 13)
Total adds up to 364
= Lunar year
The Configuration Describes
Underlying Pattern of
Number Relationship in the
BEN FRANKLIN MAGIC SQUARE
of 8 with a Pulse of 260

BASIC UNIT PATTERN = 1/4 PRIMARY MATRIX = 13 UNITS (1/4 of 52)

73	104
78	109

= 364

BINARY SUNSPOT CYCLE CYCLE PATTERN

CHROMATIC SHIFTS × 8

RED ORANGE
VIOLET PURPLE
AC TEMPLATE
○
BLUE INDIGO
YELLOW GREEN
CA TEMPLATE

BASIS OF QUADRIPARTITE DIVISION

MOVEMENTS 1–16
MOVEMENTS 49–64
EQUATORIAL LINE
MOVEMENTS 33–48
MOVEMENTS 17–32

RADIATION BELTS

● --- = SOLAR ELECTRON OUTER BELT
⊛ --- = COSMOGALACTIC PROTON INNER BELT

NORTHERN HEMISPHERE ← EQUATORIAL → SOUTHERN HEMISPHERE

NORTH POLAR ZONE
ZONE OF DOUBLE HELIX CROSSOVER POLARITY
DNA INFORMATION TRANSFER MODEL
SOUTH POLAR ZONE

ZONE OF TRANSFORMATION

PSYCHOCULTURAL PROCESS

● INFORMATION FLOW (FUTURE-TO-PRESENT)
⊛ INFORMATION FLOW (PAST-TO-PRESENT)

PRIMARY MATRIX KEY

PRIMARY MATRIX Containing BINARY TRIPLET CONFIGURATION =
Tonal Pohualli; or Tzolkin, "Book Of Days"
Best known as the sacred calendar of the ancient mesoamerican civilization.
260-Day calendar based on numbers 1–13 (· , ═)
and 20 place-units for total of 260 permutations/days.
The calendar meshes with solar calendar every 52 years. 16 cycles of the 260-day sacred
calendar every 52 years. 16 cycles of the 260-day sacred
calendar comprise 11.3 years, or
the cycle of binary sunspots from inception to point of reverse or crossover polarity

Ω +

+

ARY

BIN

A

I

MYSTIC COLUMN
AXIS OF ETERNAL PRESENT
140

= ABORIGINAL CONTINUITY
= CIVILIZATIONAL ADVANCE

AC CA
PSYCHOCULTURAL PULSATION

0 1
COMPUTER CODE

I CHING/DNA BINARY INFORMATION CODE

MAYAN NOTATION

ELECTRICAL CHARGE

CENTER OF MYSTIC COLUMN
● = A
═ = Ω

BINARY LANGUAGE

● ⊛

· = 1   ·· = 2   ···· = 4
5   6   0, PLACE BY 20s

CONFIGURATION
TRIPLET

13:20 Matrix-Harmonic Module with Binary Triplet Configuration

of quantum mechanics and cessium clocks, in a hair-splitting myopia that cannot see the forest for the trees. The fact is that only time governs the whole order of the universe in a manner that transcends all spatial limitations, even those of the relativistic MinkowskilEinstein four-dimensional universe, which is confined by the speed of light. As the universal factor of synchronization, time is instantaneous and transcends light. This novel perception of time defines a new reality, the synchronic, of which our experiences of synchronicity are but a foretaste. The synchronic order described by the Law of Time poses the order of an entirely new science of time.

To be realized and then applied, the science of time is dependent on two factors: a sudden and radical disruption of the historical continuum; and a genuine globalization or planetarization of consciousness. The break in historical continuity is necessary to jolt the human consciousness from its stagnant and entropic state-defined by the Law of Time as the delimiting 12:60 frequency consciousness of artificial, mechanistic time-while the globalization of consciousness, intimately connected with this sudden discontinuity, is necessary for the application of this law at a planetary whole systems level. Of course, the radical disruption of the historical continuum was provided by the collapse of the Twin Towers, and can actually be mapped in a description of the dialectical process of human evolution.

If one studies *Earth Ascending,* Map 19, "Binary Pulse of Psycho cultural Development," [shown on page 14] one can pinpoint the "Inevitable Event" of the radical historical discontinuity as the point at which the AC and CA currents cross over one another and switch polarity at the very top of the graphic depicting the "historical" process. What does it indicate, this point of psychic polarity switching currents?

The historical dialectic is understood as the interplay of two "currents" of consciousness, AC "Aboriginal Continuity" and CA, "Civilizational Advance." In the prehistoric phase, the consciousness is dominated by the Aboriginal Continuity or AC. This refers to the primary experience of the original human nature- life lived as a ritual or ceremonial round within the perimeter of the timeless present. But as the human enters the historical cycle, about which we will have more to say in later chapters, the CA becomes more predominant. As Civilizational Advance, the CA represents the tendency toward exclusive reliance on reason, logic and written means of communication. The Law of Time further defines the CA as being motivated increasingly by the artificial timing frequency of the 12:60 which gains in prominence until the final phase of the historical cycle, industrial globalization, when the CA has gained complete dominance of the biosphere.

During this final stage, the global mental condition is defined as the involvement in secondary or artificial means of experience, furthered by the planetary

KEY:

INCIDENCE OF RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN
PSYCHOSENSORY ELABORATION (PSE)
AND
PSYCHOATMOSPHERIC DENSITY (PAD)

- AC = ABORIGINAL CONTINUITY (YIN)
CONTAINS ENTIRE BLUEPRINT
OF PSYCHOCULTURAL DEVELOPMENT
OF TOTAL BIOPSYCHIC ORGANISM, MAN
POLARITY FLOW: "FUTURE" TO PRESENT = VISION
INFORMATION IN WHOLE PATTERNS
"CONSERVATIVE"

+ CA = CIVILIZATIONAL ADVANCE (YANG)
COMPLEMENTARY PULSE
DYNAMIC IMPLEMENTATION OF VISION
POLARITY FLOW = "PAST" TO PRESENT
INFORMATION IN
VERBAL SEQUENCES & MATHEMATICAL BITS
"PROGRESSIVE"

INTERACTION OF AC/CA
CREATES PSYCHOSENSORY ELABORATION (PSE)

ACTIVATION OF CA PULSE BEGINNING WITH
HIERATIC STAGE INITIATES
CUMULATIVE DEVELOPMENT OF PSE

INCREASE OF PSE PRODUCES INCREASE IN
PSYCHOATMOSPHERIC DENSITY (PAD)

AS PSE INCREASES, AC CURRENT
BECOMES MORE DISCONTINUOUS

MAXIMUM PSE, MAXIMUM PAD
MAXIMUM AC DISCONTINUITY
ARE ATTAINED AT CLIMAX
OF STAGE 4, GLOBAL INDUSTRIALIZATION

AS PSE ATTAINS MAX. CONDENSATION
(MAX PAD DENSITY)
ESP EXPERIENCED AS MAX ABERRATION

4 GLOBAL INDUSTRIALIZATION
CONSOLIDATION OF CA
MAXIMUM AC DISCONTINUITY

3 STAGE OF SPIRITUAL REVITALIZATION
REACTIVATION OF AC
SYNTHESIS OF HIERATIC STRUCTURES

2 EMERGENCE OF CIVILIZATION: HIERATIC STAGE
DIFFERENTIATION OF CA MEMORY PLATE
INTO 7 HIERATIC STREAMS

1 ABORIGINAL STAGE
AC = DOMINANT = PSYCHOSENSORY STASIS
MINIMAL PSYCHOATMOSPHERIC DENSITY
MAXIMUM PSI INFORMATION FLOW

Diagram labels:

CA = +
AC = - "FUTURE" HEAVEN VISION
0 = 1945
500 PA
1000 PA
2000 PA
3000 PA
4000 PA
6000 PA
10000 PA
AXIS OF ETERNAL PRESENT
"PAST" EARTH/PRACTICALITY
SYNCHRONICITY = CONGRUENCE OF AC/CA
SUBDOMINANT
DOMINANT

**Locating the Inevitable Event in the Holonomic Equation:
9-11, 2001 Climax of the Binary Pulse of Psychocultural Development**
(from *Earth Ascending*, Map 19)

technosphere. The sum effect on consciousness of the advanced CA stage is defined as Psychosensory Elaboration or PSE, which in turn creates a psychoatmospheric density (PAD)-literally a mental cloud which obscures altogether the organic biopsychic reality of the human within the biosphere. From the point of view of a planetary pathology, this massive collective obscuring (CA) of the original nature (AC) defines a "suicidal crisis point," a moment at which the subconscious instinct of the human being programs its own self-defeat in order to ultimately return to the organic reality of the biosphere and the simultaneous advent of the noosphere. Hence, the Inevitable Event: the radical break in the continuum of history.

This moment of radical historical discontinuity occurred with the September 11,2001, terrorist attack on the twin towers of the World Trade Center-the very nerve center of late global industrialization-and the Pentagon, the supreme military fortress that defends globalization. If the fall of the towers symbolically augured the fall of Babylon and the Tower of Babel itself, the penetration of the Pentagon was no less symbolic. The fact that there was not one but two towers of Babel and a separation of some twenty minutes between the attack on each tower allowed the second attack to be viewed live on global television by about as many people on Earth as had ever witnessed anything at one simultaneous moment. By the end of the day, the scene had been repeated multiple times on virtually every television network on the planet.

The unbelievable shock of the moment and its simultaneous perception, coupled with the symbolism of what was actually occurring, effectively rendered the break in the historical continuum as a profound mental event-a rupture of 5,000 years of history from the first Babylon to the last. The witnessing of the event on television meant that it was received immediately into the nervous system of virtually the entire species. This in itself is a noospheric moment-the mental envelope of the Earth made collectively and globally conscious in one instant of history-shattering significance, and hence, the genuine entry into post-history. Archetypally, the images of the towers collapsing with people flying or jumping off the upper stories, is a pure reflection of the Sixteenth Major Arcana card of the traditional Tarot which shows a tower being shattered by lightning, with bodies falling down from it.

While the negative powers and forces grapple with their shattered dreams in the aftermath of the event, it is the time for the powerful luminescence of the noosphere to begin to activate the receptive cells of the human system within the now catalyzed biosphere. Fifty-six years after Hiroshima, the fall of the World Trade Center Towers is the fatal puncture in the technosphere which is intended to reorient the human within the biosphere. ESP (extrasensory perception)-the opposite of PSE (psycho-

sensory elaboration)-is released in the instantaneity of the information reaching virtually every human being on Earth. This is the collective reactivation of the Aboriginal Continuity current that has been disengaged and disempowered for so long by the Civilizational Advance. Civilization has finally been checkmated. Now the Revolution of Time must be completed in order to stabilize the biosphere, anchor the noosphere, and de-structure the technosphere.

According to the Law of Time, the Inevitable Event was already embedded in the moment in which it actually occurred, like a flaw in a piece of glass that, upon concussion at the right pressure point, shatters all at once. In the case of the World Trade Center Towers and the Pentagon, we are also dealing with symbolic constellations of such potency that the very act of their shattering redefines the reality of human consciousness. In fact, the nature and problem of human consciousness as it has evolved historically is also at the root of this astonishing event. While it will take time for the collective human consciousness to fully grasp just how much its reality is being redefined, a vacuum now exists within the technosphere itself-a vacuum which awaits being filled by a new paradigm. Since the collapse of the Twin Towers actually represents the limits of artificial time, the new paradigm must rest on a redefinition of time altogether. This is the definition supplied by the Law of Time, the pragmatic application of which is the replacement of the irregular measure of the Gregorian calendar by the harmonic measure of the Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar.

Because of its harmonic measure, the Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar coordinated by the Harmonic Module is the new dispensation of time-reckoning for the human race. Rooted in the four recurring year-bearers of the Wizard's Count--:-which is not the same as the Mayan long count, nor the Julian count of modern science-the Thirteen Moon calendar exists for the establishment of the reality of the synchronic order as an entirely new method of knowledge and being for the entire human race as a cosmic medium operating within the biosphere. By Wizard's Count is meant the circulation of thirteen numbers and four different glyphs-Yellow Seed, Red Moon, White Wizard, Blue Storm-that code the July 26 Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar synchronization date to create a master 52-year cycle, Anchored in the Thirteen Moon/2 8-Day calendar, the synchronic order is the means for manifesting the reality of the noosphere on planet Earth. Without such a basis in a lived mathematics of time correlated to the actual cycles of Earth, the noosphere could not be experienced nor fully realized. The successful completion of the biosphere-noosphere transition, then, is the triumph of the synchronic order, the conscious elevation of Earth into the cosmic frequency of fourth-dimensional time.

For all of this to come to be, however, is yet dependent on an analysis of the role of time in the creation of the technosphere and the subsequent comprehension of its limits and the potential for its de-structuring. This is not only a matter of theory or prophecy; it is a matter of putting into practice, making a coherent action out of the application of the Law of Time as it completes the pressing urgency of the bio-sphere-noosphere transition. The coherent action to bring us through this rite of passage is the Great Calendar Change of 2004. Ultimately, this book is presented to make us ready for this unprecedented time changing moment. May you, 0 reader, ponder deeply and then, if you so will, come join me in living on the other side of the wall of mechanized time.

▼

2

Preliminary Definitions
Biosphere–Technosphere–Noosphere as an Evolutionary Continuum

BY UNDERSTANDING   that the Inevitable Event was a function of the biosphere-indeed, a necessary moment in the evolutionary trajectory of the biosphere-we   are saying that this event was not just a human enactment, but that humans, inseparable from the biosphere, are effected to perform functions that relate to the process of the biosphere as a whole. Seeing the Inevitable Event and, in fact, the entire human drama from the perspective of the biosphere, we are actually lifting the cruel tragedies of contemporary reality above conflict and into a state where genuine laws of peace and harmony may shed their light of wisdom, illuminating the human drama with a higher understanding. One thing is certain: Unless we rise above our own humanity and cultivate a non-anthropocentric view-the view represented by the noosphere-there will be no release from the calamity that is now engulfing us. The point is not of maintaining the global economy, but of saving the biosphere.

For the multilayered task of bringing a new understanding to light, defining the technosphere, and then the Law of Time, we shall begin with the former: defining the technosphere in the context of the evolutionary continuum of biosphere-technosphere-noosphere.

VERNADSKY AND THE UNDERSTANDING OF THE BIOSPHERE

It is amazing that the name V. I. Vernadsky (1863-1945) is so little known in the West, and that the word *biosphere,* as well as the laws and principles pertaining to it, are scarcely more known. To a large degree, this ignorance is due to the great cleavage in human relations experienced as the Cold War. The biosphere, which was profoundly studied and scientifically articulated by the master Russian scientist V. I. Vernadsky, is actually the precise word for what in the West is vaguely referred to as the *environment.* But even more than being a precise and scientific description for what is meant by the use of the word *environment,* biosphere defines a whole system model of life on Earth, and because of that, also presupposes a whole system methodology and point of view. You cannot speak about the biosphere without entering into a world of discourse that is holistic or holonomic to the core.

If one looks for Vernadsky's work in English, one will find precious little available. His key work, *The Biosphere,* exists in two very different translations; the one published by Synergetic Press in 1986 is easier to read, while the other, the "complete annotated edition" published by the Far West Institute in 1998, is far more erudite, with a major bibliography and much supplementary information. The earlier translation was published in conjunction with the opening of the Biosphere II Project outside Tucson, Arizona. It is now a tourist site, with a bookstore that carries nothing by Vernadsky! Several other hard-to-find English-language books on the biosphere include the excellently informative *Traces of Bygone Biospheres* by Andrey Lapo (Synergetic Press and Mir Publishers, 1987), the flashy *Biosphere Catalog* (Synergetic Press, 1985), and the much more specialized *Energies: An Illustrated Guide to the Biosphere and Civilization* by Vaclav Smil (MIT, 1999). Of these books, only *Traces of Bygone Biospheres* contains significant information about Vernadsky and his ideas. This scant list of available texts in English is hardly proportionate to the vast reality of the biosphere as a complex terrestrial dynamic in the throes of evolutionary change.

The place and role of Vernadsky in Russian science is virtually equal to that of Einstein in Western science. A consideration of the achievement of each of these scientists also presents us with a dramatic contrast in perspectives, areas of interest, and consequent modes of analysis. The physicalist relativism of Einstein's legacy and its pursuit of the Big Bang is radically different in almost every way from the legacy of Vernadsky's work, which presents a biogeological worldview that is organically integrative and the basis of what in Russian science has come to be called *cosmism.* While the physicalist fascination of Western science has supported the materialism of modern Western thought and its way of life (which is actually an accelerating function of the biosphere's own internal processes), the whole system thinking of

Vernadsky-characterized by the conception of a "biogeochemical process"-ironically supports a cosmic rather than materialistic worldview.

To illustrate the Russian perspective and the influence of Vernadsky's work, we present the concluding thoughts of a book by another Russian scientist and philosopher, 1. Laptev:

> Each one of us requires the whole earth-today this is quite clear. But surely each one of us is required by the whole earth! And when these two mutually penetrating requirements, so distinctly revealed and intensified by the leap out into space, are satisfied, the new historical epoch will begin "in which mankind itself, and with mankind all branches of its activity, . . . will experience an advance that will put everything preceding it in the deepest shade." (Fr. Engels, *Dialectics of Nature)* And people, no longer burdened by the thirst for money, will remember something that many of our contemporaries have forgotten: The only important things in life are such intangible qualities as beauty and wisdom, laughter and love.
>
> Nothing remains for us, members of a society the ideals of which are in unison with elemental geological processes and the laws of nature, but to wish that people the world over would recognize this as soon as possible.!

Laptev's words-written twenty-eight years ago and precisely at the midpoint between Hiroshima and the Inevitable Event, as well as during the year in which the World Trade Center in New York City was finally completed and inaugurated (April 4, 1973)-simply and elegantly state the theme and point of view that we are pursuing. In fact, it is the Inevitable Event that prepares us for the new historical epoch. But first we must realize how we are organized by the biosphere in order that the technosphere may be transformed into the noosphere.

The root of Laptev's cosmic vision lies in Vernadsky's succinct definition of the biosphere: "The biosphere is the region on Earth for the transformation of cosmic energies." Although the word *biosphere* had been coined in the late nineteenth century, it was really only with Vernadsky's efforts that the biosphere became a viable description of the totality of life on Earth inclusive of its organic and inorganic support processes.

Vernadsky was trained as a geologist with a specialization in crystallography. He immediately absorbed the implications of Curies discovery of radioactivity (1896), and devoted many studies to the purpose of uranium and naturally occurring radioactivity within the Earth's geology. By the time of the First World War, Vernadsky had already written important texts such as *Fundamentals of Crystallog;raphy and Descriptive Mineralogy,* and, along with Madame Curie, proposed an "international ra-

diography of Earth's crust." This was in advance of Alfred Wegener's definitive work on plate tectonics. During the time of the First World War and Russian Revolution, Vernadsky's attention turned toward the problem of living matter and its relation to the geochemistry of the Earth. From this was born Vernadsky's perception of the unitive biogeochemical process by which the biosphere maintains itself. In 1923 he published a "plea for the establishment of a biogeochemical laboratory."

In Paris, Vernadsky worked at the Insititut de Radium (Marie Curie) and became acquainted with Henri Bergson, who was then president of the International Commission of Intellectual Cooperation of the League of Nations. Through Bergson's circles, Vernadsky met often with the biologist Pierre Teilhard de Chardin (1881-1955) and the philosopher Edouard Ie Roy (1870-1954), with whom Vernadskyjointly coined the word and concept of the noosphere. Although Pierre Teilhard de Chardin is credited in the West with the concept of the noosphere, defined by him as the "mental envelope of the planet above and discontinuous with the biosphere," de Chardin's approach to the evolution of the noosphere as a natural consequence of vertebrate biology differs from Vernadsky's understanding in which it is the entirety of the biosphere that evokes the noosphere.

The chief fruit of this fertile time in Vernadsky's life was the publication of the little book titled *The Biosphere* (1926). Demonstrating the synchronic ordering principle of the noosphere, it is interesting that the same year that saw the publication of *The Biosphere* also witnessed the appearance of Jan Smuts noted book *Holism and Evolution.* Through most of the rest of his sometimes turbulent career (he often came under attack from hard-line bolsheviks), Vernadsky was to elaborate on the laws and principles of the biosphere, often expressed simply as problems in biogeochemistry. At the same time, his influence as a holistic thinker began to spread through the Soviet Academy of Sciences. A list of a few of his later publications gives some idea of the breadth of his thought, and includes: *Geochemistry, Problems in Biogeochemistry I* and *II, On the Boundaries of the Biosphere, Goethe as Naturalist, Scientific Thought as a Planetary Phenomenon, Some Words on the Noosphere,* and his never completed work, *The Chemical Structure of the Earth's Biosphere.*

Following the death of his wife in 1944, Vernadsky expressed the opinion that after the Second World War, American and Russian scientists should work more closely together. Early in 1945 (January 6), Vernadsky followed his wife to the grave. The Second World War ended, only to be followed by the Cold War (1947-1990). The critical collaboration between American and Russian scientists longed for by Vernadsky was soon to be buried in the ideological wasteland over which the superstructure of the technosphere would be constructed, a fact that in itself hastened the

acceleration of the biogeochemical processes bringing about the climax of the technosphere.

Vernadsky did not live to witness the birth of the atomic era, which began only months after he died. But like Einstein in America, in 1940 Vernadsky-along with several other scientists, and mindful of the possible military applications-had prompted the Russian government to begin investigations into the possibility of deriving energy from nuclear fission. Yet it is most remarkable that by the time of his death, Vernadsky had almost single-handedly defined virtually every aspect of the laws and principles of the biosphere. This he always did with an eye to an imminent moment in the not-too-distant future when there would be a dramatic biogeochemical mutation or combustion, out of which the biosphere would somehow trigger the noosphere:

> Not at a crisis of nervousness do we stand now, not at a time for the vacillation of flabby souls; but at a great turning point in the history of scientific thought, at a crisis such as occurs but once in a thousand years, such as has not been witnessed for many generations. Standing at this point, with the vista of future achievements be- fore us, we should be happy that it is our lot to live at this time and to participate in the creation of tomorrow.2

Undoubtedly his sense of the great moment of transition came from the very fact that during the span of his life from 1863 to 1945, some eighty-two years, Vernadsky was able to witness firsthand the accelerating effects of man's thought- in the form of industrial technology and the machine-and its turbulent and trans- formative impact on the terrestrial biosphere. After all, as a geologist, Vernadsky was familiar with the long history of the Earth, and the impact of human technology on the biosphere was inescapably the most significant aspect of any study of the bio- sphere to the present time. So wrote Vernadsky: "Only man transgresses the estab- lished order. . . upsets the equilibrium, though whether he materially cripples the transforming mechanism, or merely redistributes it, we cannot at the moment be sure."3

The "transforming mechanism" referred to is the biosphere itself, which Vernadsky had already defined as the medium or region for the transformation of cosmic energy on Earth. At its simplest level, the unity of the whole of living matter of the biosphere is the sum of its living organisms. These living organisms either directly or indirectly are continuously processing solar and cosmic radiation, trans- forming it into various chemical cycles that establish the atmosphere, most notably through photosynthesis and the oxygen and carbon dioxide cycles. The important point, however, in any consideration of the biosphere is the principle of unity: the

biosphere is a unitive complex of cycles summarized as a single continuously trans-forming and slowly mutating biogeochemical process. In this single complex cyclical process, all of life-all of living matter-is a unity, a singular dynamic by which the biosphere can be considered as a living whole. From the plankton of the oceans to the trees in the forest and the human peering from his cave at the rising sun-all of this is a single unity.

It is the interaction of the living matter with the inert matter that creates and establishes the attributes and dynamics of the biosphere as a whole, all of which are now in a heightened state of acceleration and transformation, for as Vernadsky put it in the conclusion to *The Biosphere:* "The thought of the human species is a new fact which is turning the structure of the biosphere upside down after myriads of centu-ries." The structures and principles of the biosphere that man is now upsetting in-clude: the continuity and invariance of life on Earth; vegetation as a transformer of the energy of the sun; multiplication as a manifestation of transformed solar energy; propagation of life and the forces resisting propagation; and the unique relations of life to the inert matter of the biosphere, including the composition of living matter into two orders, plant life and the various biological animal species, inclusive of man. The first order of plants and bacteria constitute the mechanism for capturing the solar radiation and introducing the energy of the sun into the biosphere. The second order of biological life is a manifestation of the process of the transmission of energy through the vegetable world; that is, at a primary and fundamental level, animal life is dependent upon plant life for its existence. (See plate 2, Life Is the Transformation of Solar Energy.)

All these principles for maintaining the equilibrium of the biosphere are func-tions of the dynamic of the different biochemical and geochemical cycles that main-tain life both on land and in the ocean, all of which are subjected to processes that we refer to as evolution, both geological and biological. The evolutionary mechanisms of life include the principle of the biomass constant and the biogenic migration of atoms. Both of these mechanisms refer to and define the continuity and invariance of life on Earth. That is, the quantity of living matter has remained roughly un-changed since the origin of life on Earth-the biomass constant. Furthermore, the amount of oxygen in the biosphere is equal to the amount of biomass. It is the pres-sure of the different species on each other with the resultant interactions and changes that checks the infinite propagation of anyone species at the expense of the rest, and causes the mutation and evolution of the different life forms. It is through the inter-mediate structure of the technosphere that the human is wreaking the greatest havoc on these principles that are intended to maintain the biosphere as a stable dynamic,

and by which the human constitutes a biomutation of unparalleled significance. The different stages of the mutation of life account for the biogenic migration of atoms: "The evolution of different forms of life throughout geological time increases the biogenic migration of elements in the biosphere."4 The metamorphosis of dinosaurs into fossil fuel is an example of the biogenic migration of atoms-and of the introduction of "free energy" (the term for industrial waste and by-products such as carbon monoxide) into the biosphere, while at a more mundane level, it refers to processes such as metabolism, circulation, breathing, and so forth.

To summarize, there are two biogeochemical principles. The first states: "The biogenic migration of chemical elements in the biosphere tends towards a maximum of manifestation"; this refers to the presence of life everywhere on Earth, as well as the principle of the pressure of living matter upon itself. The second biogeochemical principle states: "The evolution of species, in tending towards the creation of new forms of life, always move in the direction of increasing biogenic migration of the atoms in the biosphere. . . . The second biogeochemical principle regulates the course of evolution. A newly evolved species will survive in the biosphere only if it is sufficiently able and sufficiently active in furthering the migration of atoms. The organism cannot be considered apart from its medium. It is a part of the complex mechanism of the biosphere." Here Vernadsky concludes his study of the biosphere with a consideration of the laws regulating evolution that, for him, are to be sought in the mechanism of the biosphere and not in accidental circumstances. For this reason "evolution must proceed, namely, in the direction of increasing consciousness and thought, and of forms having greater and greater influence on their surroundings."5 This consideration leads Vernadsky to domains of philosophical or religious thought. Why?

"We are confronted with a new form of biogenic migration resulting from the activity of human reason. Human thought has changed in a brisk and radical manner the trend of natural processes and has even modified what we call *natural laws.* Consciousness and thought, despite the efforts of generations of thinkers, have never been defined, have never been given a physical basis, in terms of matter and energy."6 And here Vernadsky poses a question that remained unanswered for him but that also leads to a consideration of the noosphere: "How can processes which seem purely physical be affected by consciousness?"7

Although *The Biosphere* is the initial statement and underlying basis of all Vernadsky's later thought and work, his final major study, *Problems in Biogeochemistry II,* translated and published by his son, George Vernadsky, at Yale University in 1944, states the final conclusions of Vernadsky on the intriguing relation of human con-

sciousness-via its thought and projected dynamic, the machine-on the biosphere. These reflections provide us with a means for defining more precisely the nature of the technosphere and noosphere.

FROM THE CREATION OF THE TECHNOSPHERE
TO THE ADVENT OF THE NOOSPHERE

Vernadsky developed the biosphere into a full scientific description of the sum of life and its support systems on Earth, and was a co-originator of the concept of the noosphere, yet he seems never to have used the word or concept of the technosphere. In some of Vernadsky's descriptions of the relation of man and his thought on the biosphere, however, the technosphere is absolutely implied. In reading the following chain of Vernadsky's thought, we can discern what we refer to as the biosphere-technosphere-noosphere continuum:

> Man by his work and his conscious attitude toward life is remaking a terrestrial envelope, the geological domain of life, the biosphere. He is transforming it into a new geological state, the noosphere.

> He creates within the biosphere new biogeochemical processes that did not exist before. A planetary phenomenon, the biogeochemical history of the chemical elements is notably changed.

> An immense new form of biogeochemical energy is represented by the technological work of man, complexly guided by his thought. It is interesting that the increase, in the course of time, of machinery in the structure of human society also proceeds in geometrical progression, just like the reproduction of any kind of living matter, man included.

> Statesmen should be aware of the present elemental process of transition of the biosphere into the noosphere. The fundamental property of biogeochemical energy is clearly revealed in the growth of free energy of the biosphere with the progress of geological time, especially of its transition into the noosphere.[8]

In this sequence of thoughts, we understand that Vernadsky, in his precise location in time, was himself the necessary voice of the biosphere giving rise to the noosphere. Put in another way, the very process that Vernadsky is describing-the transition of the biosphere to a new geological state, the noosphere-necessitated a coming into consciousness of itself, a self-reflective medium and voice. This self-reflective medium and voice of the biosphere-noosphere transition was Vernadsky

Biospheric Cycles in Relation to Earth

Showing the biosphere as a function of a unitary beogeochemical process for the furtherance of the biogenic migration of atoms and in anticipation of the biosphere-noosphere transition.

Biospheric Cycles

himself. In this observation we may understand that, although unconscious until it was made precipitant by the accelerated biogeochemical combustion itself, the order of the noosphere is none other than what the Law of Time defines as the synchronic order. As the structure of fourth-dimensional time, the synchronic order is a fluid, radial chronomantic structure in which time, telepathy, and consciousness are united in ways unpredictable to even the most advanced Western systems of mathematics.

For Vernadsky the sum properties of the elements of the biosphere are the functions both of mathematics and of different kinds of geometries. It is of note that in the summation of the differences between inert and living bodies according to three factors, the first being energy and the second chemical manifestations, Vernadsky defines the third factor as "differences in regard to space-time." Of this factor, Vernadsky writes:

> In considering space-time, however, the situation becomes rather involved. Here we enter, on the one hand, a domain not studied scientifically, and on the other hand, that substratum of all natural phenomena, namely their geometry, which the naturalist in his scientific work is wont to dismiss without attention. This substratum, the geometrical state of physical space, underlies all physiochemical phenomena and perhaps has an even deeper reality than that of the phenomena themselves.9

This deeper reality is the phenomenon of time itself, expressed through various geometries or geometrical principles, which informs the manifest phenomena of life. This is an obviously aesthetic factor as well as a cosm.Qlogical principle.

The Dynamics of Time fully substantiates Vernadsky's perception of the geometrical ordering principle of the deeper reality of time:

> All geometric forms are radiative and derive from the fourth-dimensional radial matrix. All fourth-dimensional functions are radial in nature and imply a principle of center from which the structure is projected. . .
>
> Geometry is how fourth-dimensional time incorporates as third-dimensional form. The incorporation of time as geometrical form informs all of the inorganic and organic orders of the realm of instinct. Time incorporated as the geometry of form is the principle example of $T(E) = Art$. All forms and species participate in varying orders of geometry of form, both in their bodily structure and their forms of process.1o

If the question is asked, Where is this deeper reality of fourth-dimensional time from whence the projective geometries are generated? then we must answer that it is here in the noosphere, the medium on Earth for the transformation of cosmic thought.

It is the noosphere that informs all of the forms of the biosphere, inert and living, as well as producing in all genuine thought a structure and an order that are continuously moving in the direction of greater consciousness. To even think about the noosphere is to be a reflection of it.

As a noospheric medium, Vernadsky's life span was precisely timed to end when the global structure of the technosphere was about to be unconsciously constructed. The ingredients of the technosphere are indicated in the above-quoted passages as the planetary phenomena altering the biogeochemical history of the chemical elements, transforming them into an "immense new form of biogeochemical energy represented by the technological work of man, complexly guided by his thought." It is the increase, over the course of time, of machinery in the structure of human society that proceeds in geometrical progression-just like the reproduction of any kind of living matter, man included-and that constitutes the general nature of the technosphere. The growth of "free energy," the often toxic by-products of the industrial transformation of raw goods into consumer products, becomes the hallmark of the technosphere, the transitional stage between the biosphere and the noosphere.

It is this very point of the elemental process of the production of "free energy" and what it signifies in terms of the transformation of the biosphere into the noosphere that causes Vernadsky to call statesmen to attention. Why? As we know today, fifty-six years after Hiroshima, "free energy" in various manifestations has been causing danger signals to go off throughout the biosphere-from ozone depletion to global warming to nuclear radioactivity. What these danger signals have been telling us is that the techno sphere is coming to a point of its own exponentially accelerating biogeochemical combustion. Statesmen and politicians are advised by Vernadsky because the domain of their political rulership actually encompasses the everyday governing of the technosphere. But, alas, most people, statesmen included, are still unconscious of the existence of the technosphere, much less its role in relation to the biosphere and the forthcoming geological state, the noosphere. Hence, the Inevitable Event.

During much of Vernadsky's life, the geochemical combustion and release of "free energy" was just coming into its own. At his birth in the middle of the nineteenth century, the world was not yet globally industrialized, and without a totally globalized industrial base there can be no technosphere. The critical span of the two world wars, 1914-1945, was for the purpose of establishing the world market-a total industrialized market and communications base for the expansion of technology and the creation of the unifying global structure of the technosphere. The inauguration of the atomic age at Hiroshima, August 6, 1945, marks the precise beginning of

the dual factors: the commencement of biogeochemical transmutation and combustion of the biosphere by the impact of human thought, the atomic bomb and release of nuclear radioactivity into the terrestrial atmosphere; and simultaneously, the beginning construction of the technosphere.

The bomb created a point of critical self-awareness within the human organism as well as producing in that organism an unprecedented sense of its own power. It was this sense of power that necessitated the unconscious impulse toward putting into place the structure of the technosphere. Of course, at the outset the species was only responding to a new, uncharted world situation, fundamentally unaware both of what it was creating as well as of the fact that it was actually constructing something in the nature of a transition between two geological conditions, the biosphere and the noosphere.

It could be said that Hiroshima lit the fuse of the final stage of biogeochemical combustion, the technosphere being the inevitable structure needed for the fuse to detonate at just the right moment. In this regard the synchronic order of the Law of Time ordained a precise 56-year cycle for the existence of the technosphere: 1945-2001. It is important to grasp that in this 56-year cycle the human population quadrupled, expanding from 1.5 to more than 6 billion. The 56-year cycle divides into precise subcycles of twenty-eight years each. The first twenty-eight years, 1945-1973, begins with Hiroshima and ends with the completion of the World Trade Center towers in New York City. This marks the accomplishment of the creation of the "World Market," the actual transformation of the biosphere into the technosphere. The second 28-year cycle, 1973-2001, spans from the dedication of the World Trade Center towers to their destruction by an act of suicidal planetary terror, and marks the phase of "globalization" -the absolute dominance of the materialist market economics, inclusive of the dramatic end of the Cold War in 1990. The very midpoint of the second 28-year cycle is the Harmonic Convergence of August 16-17, 1987, exactly fourteen years after the dedication of the World Trade Center and fourteen years before the inevitable moment of their destruction.

A profound statement of the way in which the Law of Time governs the entire biosphere, inclusive of the artificial and transitional structure of the technosphere, lies in the fact that the Gregorian calendar-an otherwise irregular and confusing pseudostandard of measure-is nonetheless coordinated by the Law of Time to repeat its cycle precisely every twenty-eight years. What this means is that the days of the week and months for the Gregorian calendar year 1945 repeated again in 1973, and yet a third time in 2001. The program prefiguring the Inevitable Event was already tested at Trinity Site (July 16, 1945), and established as the atomic destruction of

Hiroshima (August 6, 1945) and Nagasaki (August 9, 1945). This program of mass destruction was sublimated in 1973 as the triumphant completion of the Twin Towers of the World Trade Center, only so that in 2001 they could be the apocalyptic target of the inevitable 9-11 planetary red alert and moral emergency catastrophe, the only rival of Hiroshima and Nagasaki in fifty-six years. We shall return to this point later in our discussion on the Law of Time and the role of calendars as macro-organizing, programming factors that control the functioning of the human in the biosphere.

It is of special note that the very last work published before Vernadsky's death was the essay "Some Words about the Noosphere." In his vision, Vernadsky could hardly have conceived of what was to occur first as the technosphere. Yet, he wrote in this last essay, published 1944:

> The historical process is being radically changed under our very eyes. For the first time in the history of mankind the interest of the masses on the one hand, and the free thought of individuals on the other, determine the course of life of mankind and provide standards for men's ideas of justice. Mankind taken as a whole is becoming a mighty geological force. There arises the problem of the *reconstruction of the biosphere in the interests of freely thinking humanity as a single totality.* This new state of the biosphere which we approach without our noticing it is the noosphereY

By contrast, Teilhard de Chardin, in his most famous book, *The Phenomenon of Man* (1959), defined the noosphere as a "new canopy," a "thinking stratum" that has been unfolding since the end of the Tertiary period, and has since been unfolding discontinuous with and above the biospheric world of plants and animals. Teilhard de Chardin also speaks of "planets with noosphere," those worlds where the enlightenment of humanity has become synonymous with the life of the planet as a whole system. The one path to the noosphere defined by a scientist in Marxist Russia and the other by a Catholic biologist both point to the same radically positive end vision of the evolution of humanity, a fact that in itself is a dissolution of any kind of contradictory dialectic. Only history is governed by the merciless dialectical movement of matter and thought, rich and poor, material and spiritual. Clearly, therefore, the noosphere is beyond or after history. In this regard then, the technosphere is the concluding stage of history, to be followed by the post-historical noosphere.

The establishment of the techno sphere after his death notwithstanding, it is still important to listen to Vernadsky's idealism with regard to the noosphere: "The problem of planned, consistent activities which will aid us in mastering nature and accomplishing the correct distribution of wealth, connected with the comprehension of the unity and equality of all people, of the unity of the noosphere, is now on the
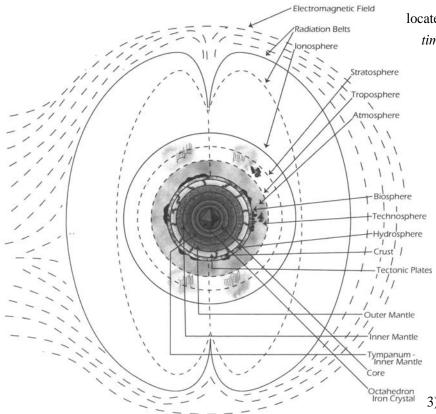
agenda. . . It has become clear, and is more deeply penetrating the consciousness of mankind, that we now have a real opportunity to obliterate malnutrition, starvation, and poverty, to greatly diminish the incidence of diseases, and prolong human life to the maximum."12 Other thinkers like R. Buckminster Fuller have uttered similar statements, that we have all that is needed to adequately take care of everyone on the planet. It is important to understand why this optimism has yet failed to be substantiated. If anything, the inequality in wealth between that of the several hundred billionaires in the world and that of the poorest one-third of humanity, two billion humans, was never historically more disproportionate than it was at the moment of the Inevitable Event. This inequality of wealth, too, is a situation endemic to the very processes of the technosphere, otherwise known as the military-industrial complex.

In 1970 an American scientist, G. E. Hutchinson, wrote in the *Scientific American,* "By noosphere Vernadsky meant the envelope of the mind that was to supersede the biosphere, the envelope of life. Unfortunately the quarter century since those words were written has demonstrated how mindless most of the changes wrought by man on the biosphere have been. Nonetheless, Vernadsky's transition in this deepest sense is the only alternative to mankind shortening its lifetime by millions of years."13

A similar assessment was put forward in 1979 by the Belgian ecologist P. Duvigneaud in his presentation "Noosphere and the Future of the Vegetation of the Globe." In his address regarding the extermination of natural ecosystems made to the Twelfth International Botanical Congress, Duvigneaud makes one of the earliest and most prescient uses of the word *technosphere:* "Thus, the noosphere, so dear to Vernadsky . . . is running the risk in reality of turning into the technosphere, or rather into 'the sphere of avidity,' governed by the spirit of fortune-hunting, by mediocrity, by the absence of social consciousness, by the ideal of destruction and by the egotistic doctrine of 'after me, the deluge.'"14

To be precise, it was in 1973, the same year of the Club of Rome's landmark publication *The Limits of Growth,* and of the establishment of the World Trade Center in New York, that the technosphere became a coherent structure smothering the biosphere, co-opting the noosphere, and coordinating the very processes of greed and destructive fortune-hunting abhorred by the ecologist Duvigneaud. Like it or not, the techno sphere was the inevitable result of the unloosing of the machine into the biosphere. It may be asked: if the machine is a projection of human biology, then what purpose does it actually serve in the biosphere, and what is it that actually produced it and keeps it going?

Before turning our attention to the answers to these questions, let us first define the technosphere as being the artificial structure replacing the human civilization,

Electromagnetic Field
Radiation Belts
Ionosphere
Stratosphere
Troposphere
Atmosphere
Biosphere
Technosphere
Hydrosphere
Crust
Tectonic Plates
Outer Mantle
Inner Mantle
Tympanum - Inner Mantle
Core
Octahedron Iron Crystal

Earth's Mantles

located mentally and physically *in time* as a force intermediate to and between the biosphere and noosphere. Defined by the *Biosphere Catalogue* (1985, p. 103), the artificial structure of the technosphere consists of five interlocking, coordinated systems that comprise an integral whole, both as a belief system and as an actual complex technological dynamic and its coordinating apparatus.

The five components, which we shall discuss at length in later chapters, are: 1) commodity production, 2) the city, 3) energy, 4) transport, and 5) communication. And, according to the *Biosphere Catalogue,* the planetary core of this interlocking set of systems was none other than the World Trade Center's Twin Towers.ls

As a planetary sphere, the technosphere takes its place with the other spheres or mantles comprising the structure of the Earth as a whole system. Beginning at the outermost etheric realm and proceeding inward, these spheres or mantles include: the electromagnetic field with its radiation belts, then the ionosphere, stratosphere, troposphere, atmosphere, technosphere, biosphere, land-ocean crust, tectonic plates, lithosphere, outer and inner mantles, and finally the core, now known to consist of an outer tympanum, and within it a large octahedral iron crystal afloat in a sea of magma.

As a planetary sphere, the technosphere negates time and consciousness as organic realities and replaces them instead with mechanization and marketing. Yet the technosphere is a product of mankind, and mankind is a function of the biosphere. The organization of life into biomes, large macro-ecosystems, is still evident, though in diminishing and withering proportion to the conquest of the technosphere. With the Final War now upon us, the question we must ask is: will the technosphere collapse before the biosphere or not? As catastrophic as it might seem, the collapse of the

technosphere would actually be a blessing in disguise from which the noosphere could finally be realized. But if the biosphere collapses first as the result of the Final War on Earth, then the technosphere will be futile, pointless, and dead as well. These are most dire thoughts in these most dire of times. Yet if we can now finally understand and accept our role within and subordinate to the biosphere as a whole, then our chances for survival will be greatly improved.

Let us consider again what Vernadsky has to say about the human's place in the biosphere:

1. Man, as observed in nature, like all living organisms, like any living matter, is a specific *function of the biosphere,* within its specific definite space-time.

2. Man in all his manifestations constitutes a regular part of the structure of the biosphere.

3. The *explosion* of scientific thought in the twentieth century *has been prepared for by the entire history of the biosphere* and has its deepest roots in the structure of the latter. The civilization of "cultured mankind," insofar as it is a form of organization of the new geological force which has formed in the biosphere, *cannot be interrupted or destroyed,* since it is a great natural phenomenon, historically, or rather, geologically corresponding to the established orderliness of the biosphere.16

If Vernadsky is correct, then the war we are witnessing is the inevitable conclusion of the biogeochemical combustion that consumes the technosphere and establishes the pristine reality of the noosphere. This is especially true if we understand this war to actually be a geopolitical struggle for the control of the oil reserves of the Persian Gulf, or even more broadly, as the war between matter (globalization) and spirit (Islam), or more grimly, as Oswald Spengler put it, the final war between blood and money. This being the case, it is more important than ever to answer the two unresolved questions in Vernadsky's definition of the biosphere, the question of consciousness and the question of time.

According to the Law of Time, the answers to the questions posed by Vernadsky are actually one and the same thing. "How can processes which seem purely physical be affected by consciousness?" The question asked by Vernadsky at the conclusion to *The Biosphere* is equaled by the unresolved issue of time discussed at the conclusion to *Problems of Biogeochemistry* JI.1n essence, Vernadsky declared, we know everything about the biosphere, its governing laws, principles, and functions, with the exception of the mysterious relation of time to the biosphere. Virtually alone among modern scientists,

Vernadsky perceived that time actually has nothing to do with the metrics of space, and that "time is not a dimension of metric geometry." This means that time is not only its own dimension-the fourth dimension-but that time must also have its own metrics and system of measure totally apart from the metrics of space.

> Minkovsky's and his predecessors' concept of time as the fourth dimension of space is a mathematical abstraction having logically no ground in scientific reality. Time is not a dimension of metric geometry. In geometry, time may be expressed vectorially, but it is obvious that such an expression does not embrace all of its properties in natural phenomena studied by the naturalist. ...The time of the naturalist is not the geometrical time of Minkovsky, nor is it the time of mechanics and theoretical physics.[I?]

In Vernadsky's perception of time, there is a profound critique of the approach that has been established toward the measure-and hence understanding-of time in physicalist science. For Vernadsky, time is a function of an as-yet-unrealized geometry: "This geometry would reduce all space to a point supplied by an infinitesimal vector." Clearly time is a factor in all the functions of the biosphere, most evident in the biological life processes. Hence the Law of Time has been a regulating factor, the true nature of which we have been profoundly unconscious. Now here is an interesting reflection. If the biosphere as a whole system is tending toward a total whole system transformation into a state known as the noosphere, a fact perceived by Vemadsky during his lifetime, and the two unresolved issues are the issues of time and consciousness, both materially intangible dimensions, does it not seem correct that the resolution to these two issues will actually foster the manifestation of the noosphere, which is, after all, the mental envelope of Earth? And does it not also seem that as long as the two issues of time and consciousness remain in a state of ignorance or confusion within the mental functioning of the human order, that the vehicle of geochemical combustion, the technosphere, will tend toward its own dissolution until the issue of time and consciousness is resolved and clarified once and for all?

The perilous passage, the biosphere-noosphere transition, may actually be defined as the consequence of operating in ignorance of the actual nature of time and consciousness. In this way, the techno sphere may be defined as the artificial compromise in place of the true understanding of time and consciousness of the human order in the biosphere. Hence, the technosphere is the responsible intermediary agent creating the crisis of the noosphere. The solution to the questions of time and consciousness is thus the solution to the noospheric crisis, and the commencement of the grand new era, the true golden age of the whole Earth.

▼

Time and Human Consciousness
The Law of Time—What It Is and Where It Came From

HAVING DEFINED the technosphere as the intennediarystage in the biogeological continuum of the biosphere's evolution into the noosphere, we may now turn our attention to the unresolved issues of time and consciousness in the biosphere. These issues must not be seen as just the problems of humanity. Since humanity is a function of the biosphere, the issues therefore relate to the biosphere becoming more conscious. It is the conscious aspect of matter that directs the biosphere toward its transfonnation into the noosphere. It is the discovery of the Law of Time that complements and resolves the issues that were left unresolved in Vernadsky's definition of the biosphere and of its transformation into the noosphere. The question then arises: what is the Law of Time, and how does it define time and consciousness as mutually coordinating factors of the same cosmic dimension intersecting with the biosphere?
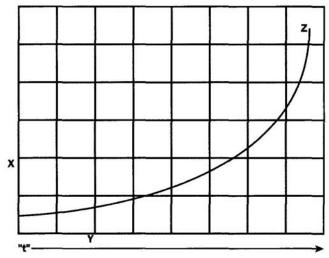
To say the least, time is such a vast and important topic in the orientation of human consciousness within the biosphere that we may declare that it is paramount in all human affairs. Indeed the cosmic order, of which the biosphere is the dynamic regulatory mechanism on planet Earth, is itself the expression of time as the medium of universal manifestation. Yet, as Vernadsky perceived in 1944, while we have defined space by its own systems of metrics and geometries, by applying these same standards to time we have not defined or known time at all. The cause for this quandary seems to lie in the fact that while space is perceptible as a sensory medium-we can see it, touch it, hear through it-and hence, it is evidently measurable, the same is

not the case with time. Time is of the mind, and in this regard, time is inseparable from the issue of consciousness. In fact, you cannot know or experience time without becoming conscious.

Yet, as we shall see, there is a great confusion when we speak about time, which is actually at the root of the problem of the biosphere, and that is the matter of the clock. In human consciousness, the clock has become so second nature that very few people in industrial society can think of time without immediately associating it somehow with the clock, whether as an instrument or as a metaphor. This, as we shall see, is a major factor causing the general state of consciousness to remain static, especially in relation to the machine, which is continuously increasing in speed, as well as accelerating in the propagation and multiplication of itself. This factor of the clock-in other words, of mechanized time-is also at the root of the confusion concerning the nature of time in much of modern scientific thought. As we shall see, there is a stream of Russian thought after Vernadsky that represents a notable exception to the established view of time in modern thought and science. Suffice it to say that the evolution of modern Western thought and science has been programmed and predisposed to limit its consciousness of time to such a degree that it cannot even perceive of time outside its inherently mechanized perceptions about it. In this obviously also lies the problem of the delimitation of consciousness in the technosphere.

"The deepening crisis of the world outlook is rooted in the permanence of the dominating scientific paradigm," writes Russian scientist Maria Maroushkina. "Underlying the materialistic technocratic civilization is the Newtonian-Cartesian paradigm, formed in the Middle Ages, its nucleus being the laws of gravitation and movement, as well as the logical principles of proof, laid down by Descartes."! This "permanent" stratum of belief, a cultural metaprogram, locks every field of human endeavor into a conquest by mechanization. It is this metaprogram rooted in the simple unexamined device of the clock, and orchestrated by the equally unexamined effects of an irregular calendar, that keeps human consciousness unchanged and without any real solutions to its problems. As the problems worsen, the confusion of consciousness-which is really in a state of crisis-only deepens.

To illustrate the current state of confusion regarding time in Western thought, we have the report of the prestigious Seven Pines Symposium on Time held in Stillwater, Minnesota in June, 2001. The *New York Times* article regarding the Seven Pines Symposium is entitled "Physics' Big Puzzle Has Big Question: What Is Time?"2 First of all, the assumption that time is basically a topic of physics in itself is a problem, since time, as we have demonstrated, is actually mental in nature, and if any-

"Arrow of time" in modern scientific three-dimensional coordinate graphing, reinforcing illusion of linear time.

Arrow of Time

thing is most visibly manifest in the domain of biology or biogeology. But this headline is also reflective of the paramount role that physics plays in the Western intellectual hierarchy: if physics can't solve it, than what can?

Despite the prominence of physics and physicists, the Seven Pines Symposium included historians and philosophers as well. The hope of the symposium was to arrive at a unified theory that encompasses the effects of gravity as described by Einstein's general theory of relativity and the "fuzziness that occurs in the realm of tiny particles according to quantum physics."3 Here we have the problem of time as delimited by the self-imposed spectrum of modern physics. What then could we expect? Certainly no one here had considered the point made by Vernadsky that time is not a function of the metrics of space, which is the realm of physics. So it is not surprising that the symposium ended in a muddle, with the most prominent approach being that time could merely be a "psychological illusion" important to humans but not a fundamental part of any unified theory. It is also clear that few, if any, had considered that their views on time might be absolutely conditioned by the mundane and ordinary everyday micro- and macro-organizing factors: the mechanical clock and the Gregorian calendar with its second cousin, the Julian count of linear time.

From the point of view of the noosphere, of course, this grand Symposium on Time was reflective of very little of the entire human organism, much less of the biosphere itself. The symposium was a representation of the elite intellectual class of the dominant economic, military, and political power of the planet, and hence of the

governing force of the technosphere, the United States of America. But if a realization that we are a function of the biosphere is critical to our success in launching the noosphere, and the issue of understanding the correct relation of time to the biosphere is crucial even to the ability to launch the noosphere, then the Seven Pines Symposium did not even approach the actuality of the current biospheric situation or the nature of time. In this regard it was only a contribution to further the psychoatmospheric density-clouded thought without clarity of purpose-and one more reason why the Inevitable Event was on the biosphere's agenda.

If one does not apply certain biospheric yardsticks to the analysis of what is reported as truth, then we will be sunk in a chaotic morass of half-truths that are really obscurations or even lies. The elite American nation, for instance, constitutes only 5 percent of the world's population, yet consumes 40 percent of its natural resources, and therefore has the wealth and power to maintain the military force (allotted a $318 billion budget for 2001-2002) to protect and even further as its right this disproportionate ratio, which is actually a violation of the dynamic balance of the biospheric processes. For this reason, through its official organs of propaganda such as the *New York Times,* America is able to muster the "influence" of whatever occurs within its confines as somehow having more merit than what might be generated in some other nation or country. So a human may read the story in the *New York Times* on the "Big Puzzle of Time," and most likely they will complacently accept its premise as absolute truth. Yet this social construct of symposium-and-newspaper-story is nothing but an aberrant mental form that obscures the actual nature of time and keeps the mental level at a constant state of "industrial dull-normal," far removed from-or at best, little more than a highly distorted reflection of-the reality of the noosphere.

Leaving aside this example of the mental confusion over time, it is necessary to understand from the investigations regarding the biosphere and according to Vernadsky's own judgment, that the biosphere in all its intricate and interlocking processes possesses and is guided by a great order and even a structural dynamic that, being manifestations of the laws of nature, can be given exact mathematical formulation. Why should we not expect that the nature of time in the biosphere should also be characterized by the same orderly quality? In fact, given that the biosphere is actually a life process, like all living matter it too must be governed by timing cycles. Thus the larger order of time that governs the cycles of the biosphere and of the noosphere must also exhibit a grand ordering principle. For if the three dimensions of space govern the domain of the physical world, then the fourth dimension of time-which governs the life not only of the biosphere but of planets,

star systems, whole galaxies, and indeed the entire universe-must also consist of a simple, orderly formulation totally apart from the perception of time that governs the stunted consciousness of the technosphere. Such is the Law of Time.

THE FOURTH-DIMENSIONAL NATURE OF TIME

"Even though you do not measure the hours of the day as long or short, far or near, you still call it twelve hours. Because the signs of time's coming and going are obvious, people do not doubt it. Although they do not doubt it, they do not understand it. Or when sentient beings doubt what they do not understand, their doubt is not firmly fixed. Because of that, their past doubts do not necessarily coincide with their present doubt. Yet doubt itself is nothing but time. „

-DOGEN, "THE TIME-BEING"4

These prescient words of a thirteenth century Japanese Zen master are more true today than they were when he wrote them. Comprehensive studies like the *Eranos Yearbook III: Man and Time* (1957), which included Carl G. Jung's ground breaking essay on synchronicity, or James T. Frazier's fascinating and monumental *Voices of Time* (1966), only expand the multidisciplinary breadth of the confusion about time. In the 1970s Frazier helped found the International Society for the Study of Time. The Society is still meeting annually but has yet to reach a definitive agreement on or understanding of the question of time. It is in the context of the enduring confusion over time that the Law of Time was discovered. To say that the Law of Time has been "discovered" only means that a principle and fundamental law that has always guided the order of the universe has finally been made conscious and articulated in a precise way that is recognizable to the present condition of the human mental nature, which is still dominated by the physicalist model.

In the whole of modern physics, Minkowski's fourth dimension of time has been misunderstood and treated as if it were a minor dimension, one that is just added on, but not really significant to the level of the three dimensions of space. This is due to the already space-oriented consciousness deriving from certain sets of perceptions established early in the history of civilization and standardized through certain programming models that are based on the metrics of space and not time, a topic to

which we shall soon turn. It is for this reason that in the formulations of modern physics time is symbolized by a small *t* that runs in a horizontal line running from left to right at the bottom of any graphing of space with its *x* and *y* coordinates.

This graphing of small *t* time gives rise to the notion of the "arrow of time," which is virtually a bedrock dogma of much of modern Western physics. This is the much-touted notion of linear time that supports doctrines of economic inexorability, material progress, and the like. Of course to anyone versed in the ways of nature, linear time and the arrow of time can be seen as nothing more than artificial constructs, for the biological nature of time is perceptible at the very least through the great interlocking cycles of nature. Nor is there anything linear about the Earth's rotations around the sun, or of the moon around the Earth, all of which give lie to the physicalist and materially progressivist notion of linear time. Only the technosphere, sustained in its structure by the limited consciousness of time, is driven by this linear principle and for this reason is doomed to run aground on the shoals of its own artificiality.

TIME AS THE UNIVERSAL FACTOR OF SYNCHRONIZATION

The nature of time is grasped poetically in the form of cycles: "To every season there is a time. . ." Biorhythms can even be mapped and the cycles of the biological order of reality can be demonstrated as functions of a chronobiology. But the biological cycles only demonstrate the manifestation of time in the space ofliving matter. If the whole of nature is observed, then one can begin to grasp the masterful orderliness by which every least detail occurs in relation to all the other details in their various cycles-yes, one can grasp in this phenomenal order another deeper aspect of time, and that is time as the universal factor of synchronization. This is the synchronic order of time, the order by which everything in the universe occurs simultaneously in a masterful synchronization from moment to moment in an ever-changing kaleidoscope of infinite varieties of order and harmony.

Only historical man deviates from this masterful symphony of time, the synchronic order. Nonetheless, we speak of being "on time," "in sync," "in tune," "in resonance," "in harmony," or of being "tuned-in." All of these expressions refer to the attunement of time and the nature of consciousness as awareness in the present moment, in the here and now. This is possible because the same law governs both time and the relation of consciousness to the moment. To answer Vernadsky's question, "How can processes which seem purely physical be affected by consciousness?"- the physical is affected by consciousness, because consciousness is actually a

function of time. When someone "discovers" a law of nature, it is because their consciousness is attuned to the natural process in time, and the law therefore "reveals" itself.

But this consciousness can be and most often is of a profoundly unconscious nature. Time is actually the governing principle of a higher self-existing consciousness that regulates the order of the universe, both in regard to its living and nonliving matter. Because time continuously synchronizes everything into a single coherent whole from the micro to the macro levels, time accounts for the harmony of the universe. Only man deviates from the universal harmony, and the technosphere, a projection of the human mechanization of time, intrudes upon the intrinsic harmony to the point of its own demise, but man deviates for a purpose.

The harmony manifested by time as cosmos-which literally means "order" -gives rise to the great and simple formulation of the Law of Time: T(E) $=$ Art; Energy factored by Time equals Art. This means that energy, any manifestation of the physical three-dimensional world, possesses order and is in harmony with its environment because it is factored by time. In the conception of the Law of Time, however, capital *T* refers to time as the universal factor of synchronization. As the universal factor of synchronization, time is defined by the self-existing and intrinsically perfect mathematical ratio 13:20. Derived from the mathematics of the ancient Maya, this ratio is a universal constant of time that organizes all of the universe as a radial sequence of synchronous moments reflecting different evolutionary phases simultaneously. Because everything perceived is an aspect of instantaneous universal synchronization, time is also the medium of instantaneous information transmission throughout the universe.

The noted Russian astrophysicist N. A. Kozyrev (1908-1983), whose work began half a century ago with the theory of the internal structure of stars, later conducted a famous series of experiments using telescopes, mirrors, and aluminum, in which he was able to confirm a receipt of information from distant galaxies prior to the time it took the information to arrive via light as a physical medium. In Kozyrev's own words: "The tests proved the existence of the effects through time of one material system upon another. This effect does not transmit a pulse (momentum), meaning it does not propagate but appears simultaneously in any material system. In this manner, in principle it proves possible to have a momentary relationship and a momentary transmission of information. Time accomplishes a relationship between all phenomena of nature and participates actively in them. . . . Time contains the entire universe of still unexplored phenomena."5 The results of these experiments led Kozyrev to various conclusions, among them that time and duration are not the

same thing, and that the velocity of time is instantaneously infinite, formulated as

$$T_V \longrightarrow \infty$$

Formulation: velocity of time is instantaneously infinite

This being so, time must also be the factor or medium that accounts for the experiences of telepathy or other paranormal phenomena. A second, most provocative conclusion derived from his experiments is that time is actually generated as an instantaneous and even simultaneously radial transmission of information from the core of stars, a fact confirmed by the Law of Time's description of the synchronic order of time as being radial in nature.

FURTHER EXPANSES OF FOURTH-DIMENSIONAL TIME: THE EVOLUTION OF TIME AS CONSCIOUSNESS

Leaving aside for the moment further discussion of Kozyrev's seminal work and its conclusions, at this point let us summarize the two chief qualities of time as defined by the Law of Time: 1) time is the factor of universal synchronization, and 2) time possesses an infinite instantaneity of velocity that is faster than the speed of light, and hence is correlated with telepathy. From these two determining features of the nature of time, two other corollary conclusions may be drawn: 3) the cyclic nature of third-dimensional biological phenomena is a function of the factor of universal synchronization which establishes harmonic ratios that determine the different life processes of different organisms, while 4) the ability of any species or organic whole to maintain its unity with itself and all of its members or parts is an instantaneous function of time as telepathy.

To better understand the Law of Time and its radical non-linear definition of time-which is actually the noospheric description of time-we may say that time, being synchronically instantaneous, is both "vertical" in relation to space (which is "horizontal"), and "radial" from the perspective of its own dimension, the fourth. Rather than being the small t line or arrow at the bottom of the physicist's graph, time as the fourth dimension is greater than and inclusive of the third dimension, much as the etheric atmosphere includes and surrounds the physical Earth in a radial "all-at-onceness." To try to measure this phenomenon with the metrics of space and its essentially linear yardsticks is to constrain time into definitions and descriptions that are totally alien to its nature.

In fact, from the point of view of the dynamics of time, it is space that is the moving line, or rather a set of points in a moving vector that can be described as

line. Let us extrapolate from the important observation made by Vernadsky at the conclusion to *Problems in Biogeochemistry II:* if the geometry of time reduces space to a point supplied by an infinitesimal vector, then from the point of view of time, space is an infinitely locatable point. What is this point? It is the point of awareness at which an individual body becomes aware of time. Here, the "subjective" description or experience of time cannot be separated from the issue of consciousness. (See plate 3, Model of "Vertical Time" in Relation to Horizontal Space.)

In the description of time as vertical in relation to horizontal space, this point of awareness of a body in time is defined as the Locus of Consciousness, or L of C. In the flow of moment-to-moment instantaneity that is synchronous with the flow of space, the Locus of Consciousness is that point at which time vector and space perception connect. From this defining point of consciousness in the here and now, the flow of space creates a horizontal sensation: one direction flows to the "past," the other to the "future." This is what is normally defined as the sensation of time or the arrow of time. It is actually the definition of the horizontal flow of space in relation to vertical time. What is usually not considered is the vertical dimension of time that connects awareness to space at any given moment, creating sequences of Awareness Units, or AUs.

From the defining point of the Locus of Consciousness, there are essentially two spaces and two times: *near space* and *far space,* and *low time* and *high time.* Near space corresponds to low time and far space corresponds to high time. Near space is essentially defined by the perimeter of sense experience, inclusive of the extension of the senses through technological apparatus such as telescopes, microscopes, and the like. This is the domain oflow time. Far space is defined as that space beyond the perimeter of the sense perceptions, and is characterized by subliminal sensory perceptions. This is the domain of high time and the atemporality of space. In near space, low time is characterized by what appear to be "random events." The lower the time, the greater the increase of random events. Low time and near space define the qualities of the experience that are properly and purely third-dimensional. High time and far space are purely and properly the domain of the fourth dimension characterized by the dominance of the synchronic order of time.

The distinction between low time and near space and high time and far space is defined as the threshold of synchronicity. In high time, synchronicity (s) predominates and is greater than random events (re), or (s»(re). In low time, random events predominate and are greater than synchronicity, or (re»(s). Note that the realm of quantum physics occurs in the microrealm of far space. It is this factor that accounts for the "fuzziness" of the behavior of subatomic particles, quarks, tachyons, and so

forth, which defy the limitations of linear time. These phenomena occur in the subliminal realm of the synchronic order. It is the human mind that is not accustomed to behavior in the pure realm of synchronicity that cannot grasp that these particles are moving according to radial laws of fourth-dimensional time, and so appear highly irregular and random to the sense perceptions of the observers that are totally conditioned by third-dimensional space perceptions. Similarly, the high time of the macro threshold of the synchronic order represents the "other side," the "hereafter," the realm of pure vision, which is also governed by strict laws of radial time, and which, to the conditioned experience of a perceiver on this side of the threshold, may appear as something from a distant future or past reality, or even as in a dream. The orderly explication of the Law of Time provides complete mathematical descriptions and principles that account for the radial order of time, even as it coordinates the near space and low time of random events.

In any case, the horizontal line of space in relation to the vertical line of time defining any given Locus of Consciousness describes the macroworld above and the microworld below. As we have noted, the higher threshold of synchronicity above the horizon of space defines the realm of *higher consciousness,* the lower threshold of synchronicity below the horizon of space defines the realm of *quantum physics.* Connecting the macro realm of atemporality and high time, and the lower or micro realm of atemporality and high time, is the vertical time vertice of the ever-present now. At the two far ends of this time vertice of the ever-present now is the Locus of God, the selfsame in each direction. These extreme points of the vertice of time return far space to the Locus of Consciousness through a process of toroidal sublimation. We are not really dealing with a description of a two-dimensional plane, but a dynamic four-dimensional model held together by a toroidal motion that is continuously returning the farthest space and the highest time, whether from above or below the threshold of synchronicity-" God" -to the Locus of Consciousness.

Depending on the clarity of mind at any given moment, the vertice of time constantly and instantaneously transmits information to the Locus of Consciousness. The discrete units of information thus transmitted are referred to as *celestial harmonics.* A celestial harmonic is described as the index of synchronic incidence defining different levels of co-occurrence. I can be in the present moment sitting in a room, and at the same time, by being fully present in the here and now, I can spontaneously experience any number of telepathic thoughts, memories, feelings of deja vu, and so forth. These experiences are the different levels of co-occurrence that define the index of synchronic incidence and are categorizable as celestial harmonics. The higher the time, the greater the density of celestial harmonics per AU (Awareness Unit). It

is the vertical vertice of time and its power of transmission that account for the vision-ary or revelatory experiences of saints, poets, and mystics throughout the ages. It is the mathematics of the Law of Time that provides the "mapping" that explains, identifies, and even increases these different harmonic incidences of the synchronic order.

Because the vertice of time connects ultimately to the "Locus of God" -the mutually defining points that become One at the far ends of the toroidal motion of the vertex of time-this accounts for the existence of the *perennial philosophy,* the unitive nature of the most revelatory or ecstatic experiences of the great mystics and seers. It is also the relation of awareness in the Locus of Consciousness at any present moment that allows any random event of low time to trigger telepathic ascent into high time depending on the clarity of and duration of the Awareness Unit (AU). From this point of view, the random quality of events in near space is only relative in relation to the absolute nature of the synchronic order, and merely a function of the third-dimensional biological space orientation. For those accustomed to the actual nature of fourth-dimensional time, which includes and controls the third-dimensional order of near space, the random events constituting low time are actually "signs" that may be read as message bearing signals of the synchronic order of high time.

Brief reflection on this description of vertical time in relation to horizontal space will demonstrate the value of what is referred to as *meditation without an object* such as that cultivated in the Buddhist traditions, as well as affirm the One Divine Source of the purely monotheistic traditions. Without a clear mind of awareness in the present moment there can be no clear seeing of reality, nor can there be the realization that all of what our senses report to us is constructed in our own mind to conform to what we think is a universe outside of us. At the same time, if we can extend the duration of our awareness in the Locus of Consciousness indefinitely in the vertical direction of time, we come upon the ineffable experience that is an emanation of the Locus of God, however or in whatever "language" our senses may later report or define such experiences. Thus we return to the paradox of the definition of space as an infinitely locatable point-this point is none other than our own minds, in which the construct of space is created and dissolved from moment to moment. Such is the subjective description of time from the point of view of the Law of Time, a descrip-tion that begs each one of us to take absolute responsibility for our own experience. But there is an "objective" description as well, in which time is also defined as in-separable from consciousness.

Implicit in the subjective here-and-now description of the experience of time is the radial matrix of time. At the experiential level it is the now-centered point in the Space-Locus of Consciousness which defines the center of a radial order of time.

Time radiates out from each here-and-now awareness moment. But the Law of Time also supplies an objective description in which the radial nature of time has two points of determining order: the point of infinite lucidity and cosmogenesis, which is the Locus of God; and the receptive locus of the infinitely locatable point, which is space as constructed by each individual consciousness. Intermediate between the two points-Locus of God and Locus of (individual) Consciousness-is the determining radial matrix of fourth-dimensional time, the universal frequency of synchronization.

Mathematically defined as the ratio 13:20 and described by the 13 x 20 matrix of the Harmonic Module, in this mathematical model of fourth-dimensional time we perceive the root of the Law of Time and its basis in the mathematics of the Mayan time science. It is important to understand very clearly that the 13:20 frequency and the mathematical matrix that defines the operations of this frequency of synchronization are the pure mathematics of time totally apart from the metrics and geometries of third-dimensional space. This is a point of profound significance to which we shall later return.

In the model of objective time, the dynamics of the Law of Time are demonstrated as the evolution of time as consciousness. Here the two unresolved issues of Vernadky's description of the biosphere are unified, the answers to which are the determining factors that allow the triggering of the noosphere: The evolution of time is inseparable from consciousness. Conversely, the evolution of consciousness is inseparable from time. Both time and consciousness are nonphysical fourth-dimensional factors coordinating the third dimension. Because consciousness is synchronized with or by time, it can affect physical third-dimensional processes, in whatever way, whether the acting agent is aware of this or not. Consciousness of the Law of Time, however, is only possible through a profound act of self-reflection. Once it has been made conscious, the discovery of the Law of Time affects the entire medium of planetary consciousness, the noosphere, at first imperceptibly, but then building to a great point of climax coinciding with the climax of the biogeochemical combustion. (See plate 4, The Dynamics of Time: Showing the Evolution of Time as Consciousness.)

This dramatic moment of the discovery of the Law of Time is evident in the graphic description of the dynamics of time, showing the evolution of time as consciousness. The dynamic of the universal, cosmically intelligent, and intelligible whole-the *galacticbrain-is* depicted as a circle encompassing the evolutionary spectrum, showing the index of energy-mind progression from the atomic cellular and biological levels to purely mental conditions of being, all of which are functions of

the formulation T(E) =Art. From the point of God-Galactic   Ordering Dynamic-
the circle, or rather, sphere, is divided vertically and horizontally into four quad-
rants. The movement of the evolution of time as consciousness travels out of the
God center, from right to left, and thence describes, in counterclockwise circular
motion, the movement of time as consciousness passing through, or rather defining,
the four quadrants, until it returns to the Source again as hyperdimensional time, or
"pure mind." The left-hand side describes both the primary prelife, lower left-hand
quadrant, and the primary post-life, upper left-hand quadrant. The right-hand side
describes the secondary reflex life, the lower right-hand quadrant being the purely
third-dimensional   life (biosphere), and the upper right-hand quadrant being the
evolved fourth-dimensional   life (noosphere).

The lower half of the sphere beneath the horizontal line running through the
God center refers to the Domain of Potentiality, the upper half to the Dominion of
Time. The prelife quadrant of the Domain of Potentiality refers to the preconscious
quantum dimensional space of pure energy. The lower right-hand quadrant refers to
third-dimensional space, the locus of space travel and the realm of the cosmic un-
conscious. Within the Dominion of Time, the upper right-hand quadrant refers
to the fourth-dimension time, the locus of time travel, and the realm of cosmic
consciousness. Finally, the upper left-hand quadrant is the realm of hyperdimen-
sional time, or "pure mind." By studying this graphic description, one can grasp the
movement of time as consciousness from inorganic preconscious, where duration in
time is virtually infinite, to the secondary reflex life, or living organic matter in the
third dimension. Here time is unconscious and life builds on the cosmic unconscious
as the slowly mutating and evolving biosphere. The cosmic unconscious comes to a
climax in the creation of the 12:60 artificial civilization, which is really not true
civilization, but rather the technosphere itself. At this point there are moments of
consciousness, but only moments. True sustained consciousness is possible only in
conditions removed from the technosphere.

In the evolution of time as consciousness, the discovery of the Law of Time is a
product of the crisis of consciousness unable to sustain itself in the technospheric
medium. That is because this medium is a pure function of artificial 12:60 time.
Even though the extensions of the senses and the capacity of technology provide the
human within the biosphere a holistic perspective of seeing the whole Earth from
space, the consciousness is continuously subordinated to the care and maintenance
of the machine (or its lifeblood, money), and so cannot remain in a sustained state of
heightened awareness or continuing consciousness. Continuing consciousness is only
possible with the discovery of the Law of Time, which the crises of the technosphere

and of consciousness have themselves brought about. In this regard, the discovery of the Law of Time is the great point of human self-reflection that defines the advance from an exclusive third-dimensional operation and aberrant timing factor to a purely fourth-dimensional and conscious natural timing factor. It is the difference between the cosmic unconscious and cosmic consciousness, the biosphere and the noosphere-in other words, the very topic of this book.

DE CHARDIN AND THE PLANETIZATION OF CONSCIOUSNESS

The discovery of the Law of Time defines the point between the two stages of the noosphere as described by Pierre Teilhard de Chardin: "The first stage was the elaboration of lower organisms, up to and including man, by the use and irrational combination of elementary sources of energy received or released by the planet. The second stage is the super-evolution of man, individually and collectively, by the use of refined forms of energy scientifically harnessed and applied in the bosom of the Noosphere, thanks to the coordinated efforts of all men working reflectively and unanimously upon themselves. . . In becoming planetised humanity is acquiring new physical powers that will enable it to super-organize matter. And, even more important, is it not possible that by the direct converging of its members it will be able, as though by resonance, to release psychic powers whose existence is still unsuspected?"[6] The identification of telepathy with the velocity of time emphatically underscores de Chardin's final point.

On the other side of the discovery of the Law of Time, civilization, having reached its climax as the technosphere, is replaced by an entirely new noospheric order of human organization defined as PAN: Planet Art Network. This is a structural definition of what Teilhard de Chardin refers to as the "planetization of consciousness." This organization (bionoospheric and not institutional) is "planet" because the human organism is self-realized as a planetary organism. It is "art" because functioning again in the natural timing frequency, the human is governed by the Law of Time, $T(E) = Art$, and hence the reality and the activities of everyday life are defined as art. And it is a "network" because the city, defined by civilization (literally living in cities) and which was a sustaining component of the technosphere, is no longer necessary or viable. Rather, the human becomes redistributed throughout the biosphere-what Teilhard de Chardin refers to as the "radiation of man "--connected by a telepathic network that greatly diminishes the reliance on much of the technology that characterized the technosphere. Hence Planet Art Network: the replacement of civilization with the fourth-dimensional social organization of the human functioning as the tele-

pathically coordinating   species of the noosphere.   In this condition   life evolves toward a hyperorganic   stage, attaining   a state of superconscious   activity and self-reflection where time travel replaces the space travel of the phase known as civilization.

This evolutionary   mode, coinciding   with the evolving   needs of the local star, conduces   at some distant point in the future to the subliminal consciousness   and the postorganic   postlife that is necessitated   by stars as they advance to the stage of super-nova. According   to the Law of Time, the nature of consciousness   is actually a function of stellar evolution, planets being but harmonic nodes in greater heliospheric fields of resonance.   Since time is inseparable   from consciousness,   this understanding would seem to affirm Kozyrev's hypothesis   that time is generated   from the stellar core. "Stars absorb energy from the motion of time," declares Kozyrev, "a star seems to be a time machine."7 *The Mayan Factor* further places the coordinating   medium of time as emanating   from the core of the galaxy, Hunab Ku, One Giver of Movement and Measure.   In the Chilam Balam prophetic   tradition,   Hunab Ku is also the name given to the final religion   of the One God that appears   after the religion   of the *conquistadors* has finally passed.   Seen from the perspective   of the Galactic Brain, the crisis through   which we are now passing is but the final stage before consciousness bursts into a new radiance of biosolar-telepathic   wonder where negative emotions and thought   forms no longer have any place to cling or hide. The Law of Time purposively   points to this great end.

The whole of the spectrum   of the Galactic Brain is mediated   by the universal frequency of synchronization,   mathematically   modeled as the 13:20 matrix, the organizing factor of the synchronic order. The technicalities   of this evolutionary   spectrum of the Galactic Brain have been defined in *The Dynamics of Time: 260 Postulates* (1996) so that the process of the evolution   of time as consciousness   may be studied and its coming stages prepared for. The mathematical   model of this 13:20 matrix is a description   of the fourth-dimensional   timing frequency and is both the source of the time vector potentialities   and the mathematical   tool for mapping   the order of synchronicity.   Through   the discovery of the Law of Time, the 13:20 matrix is realizable through   tools that are in accord with its mathematics,   and thereby it becomes useful to the everyday consciousness   of the human. This too becomes a factor accounting   for the noosphere's   becoming   conscious.

The fourth-dimensional   "tools" made accessible through   the Law of Time include the Thirteen   Moon/2 8- Day calendar, the Dreamspell, and the Telektonon. They will be described more fully in Chapter 8, "Making the Transition   to the New Time." With these tools one can begin to construct a map of the time vector potentialities contained   in the synchronic order as it manifests on a day-to-day basis. Once

the construct is made conscious and correlated to a point in third-dimensional time, then the body in time-the infinitely locatable point that is space-may be coordinated by the same common structure of fourth-dimensional time. Following this procedure the individual human consciousness begins to participate in the larger unfolding of the noosphere, and slowly but surely is realized as yet another manifestation of the formulation of the Law of Time, $T(E) =$ Art. It is the human being itself that incorporates time, or rather wakes up within itself the order of time. Time is art, while art is actually a function of consciousness expressing itself.

THE MAYAN UNDERSTANDING OF THE LAW OF TIME

While we will have cause to turn our attention later in this book to the "how-to" of fourth-dimensional time, we may consider further the nature and meaning of the mathematics of the Law of Time and their origin with the mysterious civilization of the ancient Maya. The template or matrix of the 13:20 frequency, a 13 x 20 (260) unit structure, was the means for accommodating the base "calendar" used by both the ancient and present day Maya: the *Tzolkin,* or sacred calendar, a set of thirteen numbers and twenty signs that repeat their sequences of permutations every 260 days. While this 13 x 20 matrix accommodates the Tzolkin, it is not confined to being a calendar, as I amply demonstrated in *The Mayan Factor.*The 13:20 frequency is the universal constant of time from whose mathematics the Tzolkin is derived. Based on the permutation table, called the *buk xok* in the Chilam Balam tradition, this matrix is a Harmonic Module, a fractal yardstick of radial time with multiple applications, something analogous to the periodic table of elements, but of the synchronic order.

It is still a profound challenge to all modern Western scientific thought that the Maya would have possessed such mathematics, apparently inherited from the earlier and even more mysterious Olmec people, and that with this mathematics they would have evolved such a profound perception of time. This was most certainly a factor in the destructive attitude taken toward the Maya by the religious zealotry of the conquerors of Mexico. It is also astonishing that the mathematics in which the Harmonic Module is embedded is a vigesimal (20) count, utilizing a zero and a positional ordering system that accounts for larger or greater values that advance by binary exponentiality rather than a decimal sequentiality. But, quite simply, this system exists in this manner because it is the mathematics appropriate to time. This mathematics is a factor to which any disinterested researcher on the topic of time must now become accustomed.

It is by reason of this mathematics and its ability to "download" the 13:20 universal frequency of synchronization that the ancient Maya were able to construct a complex system of "calendars" and an astronomical knowledge that is precise not for its telescopes, of which there were none, but because of the nature of the mathematical system itself. More appropriately described as synchronization devices or synchronometers, the Maya used at least seventeen of these timing instruments simultaneously during the great age of their civilization, A.D.435-830. This fact in itself tells us that the Maya understood time so radically differently from the perception that has evolved in the techno sphere that we must stand in awe that such a knowledge would have developed by a people whose technological development was so minimal, but whose artistic accomplishment was inseparable from their scientific achievement.

Harmonic Module

Yes, the Maya most definitely knew that time is the universal factor of synchronization, so their synchronometers must have been for the purpose of attaining a master synchronization with the cosmos. This presupposes such a different state of mind that all the values of the present day must be challenged. The mystery of it is that this mathematics and time science developed in the New World, remote from the saga of civilization in the Old World. The fact that the later Maya practiced ceremonies and blood rituals, the fascination of so many present-day archeologists, should not detract from the understanding that these ceremonial practices stem from a totally different perception of life-and death. Before we judge, we must consider the inescapable truth that nothing in history matches the terror of the different kinds of war and weapons of mass destruction that characterize the fifty-six-year cycle of the technosphere, 1945-2001. Who then is the more barbaric-the Maya, or modern man, *"Homo technosphericus"*?

It is the study of this vigesimal mathematics and its 13:20 Harmonic Module that has led to the discovery of the Law of Time. In this regard the Law of Time is a universal law independent of any culture or civilization, even that of the Maya, much like the law of gravity is also a universal law. However, if it had not been for the Maya, who evolved their understanding of the 13:20 frequency of synchronization to such a high degree, there would never have been a pursuit that led to the discov-

Galactic Notation, Dot-Bar (0–19) Code

Vigesimal count, 1–19, where in first order 1 = 1 and
0 = 20 position, so in next order 1 = 20, in third order 1 = 400, etc.

ery of the law underlying their knowledge of time. If with this law we may categorize the time vector potentialities in six stages of consciousness-preconscious, unconscious, and conscious, continuing conscious, superconscious, and subliminal conscious-then we may be certain that the ancient Maya were also familiar with the time science associated with the higher states of consciousness revealed by the Law of Time. With this time science and mathematics of higher consciousness, the Maya were able to bequeath a prophetic tradition mathematically coded in the Harmonic Module, which, among other matters, led to the discovery or making conscious of the Law of Time itself.

Once we appreciate the radically different perception of time and knowledge that is embodied in the Harmonic Module, the mathematical modeling of the 13:20 universal frequency of synchronization, then we may turn to its uses as the fractal radial measure of time applied to many levels of thought and knowledge. For instance, using the 13:20 matrix we may turn to an understanding of the Law of Time in human history, as is necessitated by these reflections. With the Mayan time knowledge and the placement of their civilization in the New World, we have a gauge and an alternative base of knowledge upon which to evolve a planetary perspective and an objective means of critique of the mainstream development of civilization in the Old World. We may then ask the questions: How did we become what we are now, and how was it that our civilization evolved into the technospheric medium?

▼

The Law of Time in Human Affairs
The Analysis of History

THE KEY to *The Mayan Factor* is the application of the Harmonic Module as a fractal measure that is descriptive of the cycle of thirteen baktuns, the Mayan measure of history. This measure of thirteen baktuns, a cycle extending from 3113 B.C. to A.D. 2012, had been deduced from the stone inscriptions of the Mayan monuments of the Classic period, most of which bear a date within the tenth baktun cycle, A.D. 435-830, or, in the transliterated vigesimal notation of the Mayan Long Count, 9.0.0.0.0-10.0.0.0.0. However, one of the principle discoveries of *The Mayan Factor* demonstrated that the thirteen baktun cycle was also a function of the Harmonic Module and identical with its mathematical mapping as the 13:20 matrix. There are very profound implications to this correlation of the cycle of history having a one-to-one identity with the 13:20 frequency matrix. For this reason the cycle of history is referred to as a *Wave Harmonic* of the galactic order of time. Even though history may appear to be a random, haphazard, and checkered advance of humanity from living in small agricultural communities to the present-day technosphere, this process has actually been an orderly program of the biosphere, the region for the transformation of cosmic energy on Earth.

The same principle of the analysis of the Law of Time applies here. That is, by analogy, the historical events analyzed from a political or economic perspective represent the perception of the random events of near space and low time, while the analysis of the thirteen baktun cycle Wave Harmonic of history represents the

perspective of far space and high time. In this Wave Harmonic, the program of history is mathematically defined by 13 baktuns-each baktun consists of 20 katuns- 13 baktuns x 20 katuns = 260 katuns = 13 x 20 matrix of the 13:20 frequency of synchronization. In the 13 x 20 matrix of the Harmonic Module each unit equals one kin, the base unit of fractal measure. By fractal equivalence, in the mapping of history one kin = one katun, one katun = 7,200 days; therefore one baktun = 144,000 (7,200 x 20) days. The mathematical perfection of the cycle of history matching the 260-unit model of the harmonic matrix means that history is a factor of synchronization of the higher order of time coordinating the human organism within the biosphere.

By means of the *thirteen baktun Wave Harmonic of history,* the incidence of human Civilizational Advance (CA) may be plotted in a very precise way as a progression going from a very dispersed and scattered state to the point of attaining its exponential climax in the final saga of geochemical combustion, the fifty-six-year cycle of the technosphere. In this regard we must ask: What do we mean by "history" from the Wave Harmonic point of view? As an organism that is a function of the biosphere, history defines that stage when that organism, humankind, enters a process of altering its biomes through increasingly artificial means or extensions of itself that exhibit a compulsive reordering of society into denser and denser clusters of habitations known as cities, hence civilization, "city-life."

In the stage before history, the human had created certain tools and had begun experiments in agriculture and horticulture, but the mental order remained in an aboriginal condition. Unconsciously absorbed as an integral mechanism within the cycles of the biosphere, the human wrapped his understanding of these cycles and of his place in them in the garb of myth and ritual. But with history, something different occurs. The artificial means or extensions of the senses are ordered by a different form of mentality. Those projections of thought and consciousness, though immaterial, affect the material surroundings, and take on an aggressive dynamic. The aggregate effects of these artificial extensions are maintained by a new mental dynamic that is contained and then conditioned by a new kind of macro-organizing thought structure, independent of the actual cycles of the biosphere. What is this new mentality? How can we most precisely define it?

Here are some points to ponder. The Mayan reckoning of the beginning of history is precisely dated to August 13, 3113 B.C., Long Count 13.0.0.0.0. The Hindu reckoning of the beginning of the Kali Yuga is dated to February 19, 3102 B.C. These dates are only eleven years apart. What cosmic event occurred at that time to initiate the Wave Harmonic of history? As we have seen, there is a perfect identity of the

13 Baktun Cycle: Wave Harmonic of History

260-KATUN CYCLES
52-UNIT GAIA LIGHT BODY

Key:
One square is equal to 7,200 days.
One column, 20 squares, 144,000 days, is known by the Mayas as one Baktun.

7,200 · · · 144,000

Baktun periods (right margin)

Baktun count	Date	Name
13.0.0.0.0	3113 B.C.	BAKTUN OF THE STAR PLANTING
	(400 TUN)	
1.0.0.0.0	2718 B.C.	BAKTUN OF THE PYRAMID
2.0.0.0.0	2324 B.C.	BAKTUN OF THE WHEEL
3.0.0.0.0	1930 B.C.	BAKTUN OF THE WESTERN MOUNTAIN
4.0.0.0.0	1536 B.C.	BAKTUN OF THE HOUSE OF SHANG
5.0.0.0.0	1141 B.C.	BAKTUN OF THE IMPERIAL SEAL
6.0.0.0.0	747 B.C.	BAKTUN OF THE MIND TEACHINGS
7.0.0.0.0	353 B.C.	BAKTUN OF THE ANOINTED ONE
8.0.0.0.0	A.D. 41	BAKTUN OF THE LORDS OF RED & BLACK
9.0.0.0.0	A.D. 435	BAKTUN OF THE MAYA
10.0.0.0.0	A.D. 830	BAKTUN OF THE HOLY WARS
11.0.0.0.0	A.D. 1224	BAKTUN OF THE HIDDEN SEED
12.0.0.0.0	A.D. 1618	BAKTUN OF THE TRANSFORMATION OF MATTER
	A.D. 2012	SYNCHRONIZATION / NEW HARMONIC / FIELD BEYOND DUALITY

20 Day-Sign rows (left margin)

DRAGON / IMIX
WIND / IK
NIGHT / AKBAL
SEED / KAN
SERPENT / CHICCHAN
WORLD-BRIDGER / CIMI
HAND / MANIK
STAR / LAMAT
MOON / MULUC
DOG / OC
MONKEY / CHUEN
HUMAN / EB
SKYWALKER / BEN
WIZARD / IX
EAGLE / MEN
WARRIOR / CIB
EARTH / CABAN
MIRROR / ETZNAB
STORM / CAUAC
SUN / AHAU

Historical grid (by day-sign row across baktuns)

Day-sign	Star Planting	Pyramid	Wheel	Western Mtn	House of Shang	Imperial Seal	Mind Teachings	Anointed One	Lords Red&Black	Maya	Holy Wars	Hidden Seed	Transformation
DRAGON/IMIX	URUK, MENES	ZOSER, EGYPT CALENDAR	SARGON	SHANG DYNASTY, CHINA	AKHNATON	CHOU DYNASTY	KUSHITE	ASOKA / SPREAD OF BUDDHISM	CHIN DYNASTY	MAYA	CHIMU	XOCHICALCO	AZTEC
WIND/IK			BABYLON	CRETE	HITTITE EMPIRE	NINEVEH	ASOKA	BABYLON REBUILT	HUANG-TI	EARLY	MOCHE	TOLTEC	INCA
NIGHT/AKBAL	UNIFIED SUMER					CHIN DYNASTY	NAZCA	GERMANIC	TIKAL	BLACK PLAGUE	MOGHUL/INDIA	REVOLUTION
SEED/KAN	KILNS	GREAT PYRAMID		EGYPT-QUEEN HATSHEPSUT	CH'IN	SPREAD OF BUDDHISM	ASOKA	MAYA	XOCHICALCO	HEIAN JAPAN	KUBLAI KHAN	CHING DYNASTY
SERPENT/CHICCHAN	EGYPT	GIZA	WARFARE	OLMECS	VEDIC CIVILIZATION	HAN	TEOTIHUACAN	TIAHUANACO	COPAN	ANGKOR WAT	MING DYNASTY	IMPERIALISM
WORLD-BRIDGER/CIMI	OLD	CHARIOT	CH'IN	HUANG-TI	MAYA	MING DYNASTY	ANGKOR WAT	CRUSADES				
HAND/MANIK	KINGDOM	INDIA	VALLEY OF KINGS	HORSES	LA VENTA	GREAT WALL	RISE OF CHINA	SPREAD OF ISLAM	BUDDHISM IN TIBET	WORLD WARS
STAR/LAMAT		EGYPT	CENTRAL ASIA	VEDAS	INDIA	DYNASTY	TEOTIHUACAN	CONSTANTINE	TANG DYNASTY	SUNG DYNASTY	EUROPE EXPLORATION
MOON/MULUC	HIEROGLYPHS	ARKAD	MIDDLE KINGDOM	JADE	HORSE WARFARE	BUDDHA / MENCIUS / CONFUCIUS	HAN	MOCHE	PALENQUE	MAYA	OTTOMAN TURKS	FRENCH REVOLUTION
DOG/OC		UR		KING TUT	RAMSES	PERSIAN EMPIRE	EARLY	GERMANIC INVASIONS	PACAL VOTAN	RISE OF	ANGKOR WAT	ROMANTICISM
MONKEY/CHUEN	CUNEIFORM	HARAPPA		ASSYRIA	JERUSALEM	PLATO / CHUANG TZU	TEOTIHUACAN	HAN DYNASTY	END OF	IFE	EUROPEAN	MARS
HUMAN/EB						CONFUCIUS	ARISTOTLE	JULIUS CAESAR	CHRIST	CHARLEMAGNE	ZIMBABWE
SKYWALKER/BEN		INDIA	ZIGGURATS	HITTITES	VEDAS	ZOROASTER	GREAT WALL	RISE OF ROME	BUDDHISM IN CHINA	SPREAD OF ISLAM	TIBET	RUSSIA/KIEV
WIZARD/IX		CIVILIZATION	BRONZE	HORSES	IRON		PLATO		CONSTANTINE		CRUSADES	A-BEL/MALDEK
EAGLE/MEN			TECHNOLOGY	EMPIRE	WEAPONS & WAR MACHINES	IRON		OF CHINA	MENKAURE	CHINA	BENIN	NUCLEAR & SPACE
WARRIOR/CIB			MENKAURE LEGAL CODE	EGYPTIAN EMPIRE	PHOENICIANS	ASSYRIAN	WESTERN AMERICA	BANTU	MISSISSIPPI CULTURE	TANG	HEIROGLYPHIC STAIRWAY	PRINTING, CONQUEST
EARTH/CABAN			UR NAMMU LEGAL CODE		MYCENEANS		PELOPONNESIAN WAR	GUPTA DYNASTY, INDIA	PADMASAMBHAVA		FALL OF CONSTANTINOPLE	ELIZABETH
MIRROR/ETZNAB	STONEHENGE	PYRAMID TEXTS	HAMMURABI	ARYANS INVADE INDIA							QUEEN ELIZABETH / GALILEO / KEPLER
STORM/CAUAC												
SUN/AHAU	GILGAMESH		HAMMURABI				ARISTOTLE	CHRIST	JULIUS CAESAR	CHARLEMAGNE	ZIMBABWE	

Bottom planetary row

PLUTO · PLUTO · NEPTUNE · URANUS · SATURN · JUPITER · MARS · A-BEL/MALDEK · EARTH · VENUS · MERCURY · PLUTO · NEPTUNE · URANUS · SATURN · JUPITER · A-BEL/MALDEK · MARS · EARTH · VENUS · MERCURY

○ GALACTIC/LUNAR MOVING EXHALATION · ● SOLAR MOVING INHALATION

Wave Harmonic of history, as a fractal equivalence, with the Harmonic Module, itself a description of the universal 13:20 frequency of synchronization. This being so, both the calculation of the beginning of history as well as the duration of its entire cycle are functions of the Law of Time. This means that something within the Earth's noosphere occurred that triggered the Wave Harmonic, itself a manifestation of the Law of Time. Also, by most judgments and standards, history began at a very precise place as well-Sumeria, in the Mesopotamian basin of what is now called the Middle East. Why? And what relation is there between the precise event that triggered the Wave Harmonic of history and Sumeria, the site of the first city, Uruk? What event could have established a macro-organizing principle to propel the dynamic of human thought and technology into the trajectory concluded by the technosphere?

THE ORIGINS OF THE 12:60 FREQUENCY

In the recently published book *The History of the World-A 6,000 Year Chronicle of Time,* we find the point that establishes the definite artificiality of a new kind of macro-organizing principle, driving humankind toward the Inevitable Event; here we find the genesis of artificial time: "Ca. 3000 B.C. Sumerians divide day into 24 hours, 60 minutes, 60 seconds and circle into 360 degrees."! While this is a fact we may take for granted because it is the basis of mechanized time in the form of the clock, for precisely that reason it should give us pause. For one thing, this means that the measuring system of the clock was already established at the beginning of history, some 4,500 years before the clock as we know it was actually invented! This is quite an astonishing fact. It means that mechanization was implicit in the first intellectual act of history. Why or how would it have occurred at the precise point of the beginning of history in Sumeria?
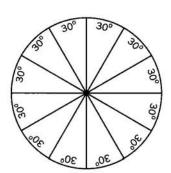
The Law of Time defines this mechanistic organizing principle as the basis of the 12:60 artificial timing frequency (irregular twelve-month calendar combined with mechanical sixty-minute hour). Therefore, it was at this point at the beginning of history that artificial time and its progeny, mechanization, were actually registered as a thought form and thus became embedded in the as-yet-unconscious noosphere. Or, was it already embedded in the noosphere to be triggered at this precise point-and if so, why and how? The point is that history, as it has evolved as the mainstream of civilization from Sumeria to the World Trade Center, has always been driven by the organizing principle of artificial time. It is artificial time that separates history from prehistory-and, as we shall see, from post-history as well. It was due to the

The Error in Time

The measure of a two-dimensional plane in space has nothing to do with the experience or the nature of time.

"TIME WAS COMPRESSED INTO A FLAT CIRCLE..."
Dreamspell "Genesis"
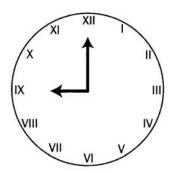
Sumeria: Ca 3000 B.C.
Day divided into 24 hours,
60 minutes, 60 seconds
based on 360 degree circle—
two-dimensional plane in space—
divided into twelve parts

Earth's solar orbit = 365 days
360 degrees ≠ 365 days

Europe: 800-1600 A.D.
Clock—two-dimensional plane
in space—divided into twelve
parts each 30 degree of arc =
1 hour = 60 minutes
each minute = 60 seconds
  A.M. = 12 hours
  P.M. = 12 hours
      = 24 hours

I - 31	II-28/29	III - 31
IV - 30	V - 31	VI - 30
VII - 31	VIII - 31	IX - 30
X - 31	XI - 30	XII - 31

Rome (Vatican): 44 B.C. - 1582 A.D.
Twelve-month Julian/Gregorian
calendar derived from twelve part
division of circle; irregular measure
due to fact that 365 is not divisible
by twelve.

genesis of artificial time at the beginning of history and its emplacement within the planetary noosphere that also generated the thirteen baktun Wave Harmonic of history. For the very purpose of the thirteen baktun Wave Harmonic of history is to encompass and coordinate the cycle of artificial time. Why?

The Wave Harmonic is a function of the 13:20 synchronization frequency. It is a function of cosmic time. In the higher knowledge of the Mayan understanding, it provided the perfect measure of the cycle of artificial time. From the perspective of the actual noospheric timing, which operates according to the natural 13:20 cosmic timing frequency, history is none other than a manifestation of artificial time. Civilization becomes organized by the principle of artificial time. But because it is artificial, it cannot endure. If the mathematical basis of mechanized time, and hence of mechanization, was already established at the beginning of history, then the end of history is the end of artificial, mechanized 12:60 time. And in the end, the Law of

Time codes and encompasses the whole of the cycle of artificial time through the thirteen baktun Wave Harmonic of history. What is important to grasp is that the entire cycle of artificial time was *alreadyperceived* by the Mayans as a phenomenon that could not endure more than the length of the cycle of thirteen baktuns.

It is necessary for the reader to understand how this perspective was discovered. It was the result of a phenomenological experiment of living according to the synchronic cycles of the Mayan time science. After the death of my son in 1987, my wife and I began in earnest to follow the cycles encoded in the Mayan calendar: 13-day, 20-day, 52-day and 260-day cycles. Our life changed dramatically. At the same time, I endeavored to define the mathematical basis of these cycles. Once I resigned my academic position in early 1989, we were swept by a wave of time that took us from the Rocky Mountains to Southern California to the Hawaiian Islands in the middle of the Pacific Ocean. There, in relative isolation from the rest of the world, we plunged into our experiment. Before we had truly settled in, the time wave took us to Switzerland, where on December 10, 1989, in the Museum of Time in Geneva, we were able to put our phenomenological experiment to the test-although we did not consciously realize at the time that we were doing so.
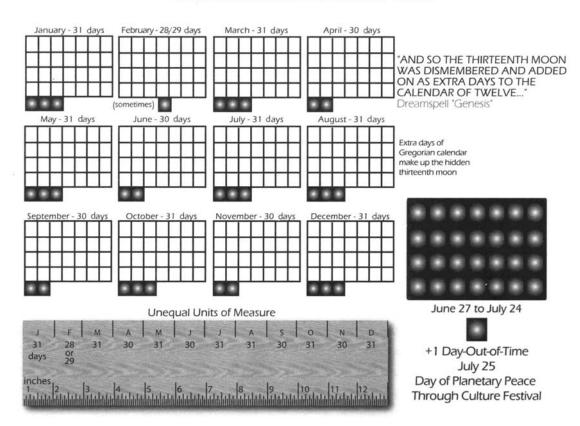
There in the Museum of Time, essentially surrounded by examples of the history of the clock and mechanization, and because our perceptions had been altered by our living so completely by the various timing cycles encoded in the Mayan calendar system, we were able to spontaneously perceive the existence of two timing frequencies. The natural frequency-the one we had been living-we understood instinctively to be the 13:20 timing frequency. The other frequency-the one enshrined in this Museum of Time-we understood to be the artificial 12:60 timing frequency. This realization of artificial time was rooted in the evident proof that the clock is based on the twelve-part division of a flat circle, a spatial plane that clearly has nothing to do with the dynamics of time. It is a manifest error, but one that humanity has taken for granted and endowed with all of the characteristics of "truth."

We also immediately saw that the error of mistaking the division of a two-dimensional plane in space for a measure of time was transmitted not only through the clock, but through the twelve-month Gregorian calendar as well. With brief reflection upon what a gross error this was-substituting a twelve-part division of space as a measure of time, and then elevating this mistake as the truth of the measure of time-we understood how it could have actually led humanity away from the natural time of the universe. In making this observation, we immediately and intuitively grasped the necessary solution: replace the erroneously measured twelve-month Gregorian calendar with the perfect measure of the Thirteen Moon/2 8-Day calendar.

Our research into the mathematical codes behind the Mayan calendar now progressed rapidly, but our attention also turned to the question: Whence came the thought form of 24 hours, 60 minutes, and 60 seconds as a measure of a circle of 360 degrees? It was clear to us that this division of time based on the division of a circle in space occurred at what is the beginning of history, a fact later confirmed for us in the already cited *History of the World* (1997), which states that this division of 24 hours, 60 minutes, 60 seconds and the circle into 360 degrees was devised "Ca. 3000 B.C."

Once we had finished working out the mathematical codes, we turned to a consideration of the actual implications of the error in time. It was now also clear why the Mayan time science was so superior. It was based on the reality of time as a factor of synchronization. By contrast, the concept of time as it had developed in the mainstream of civilization was limited, linear, and totally third-dimensional, a fact that confirmed Vernadsky's analysis, as well, that our notions of time are a function of the metrics of space. By 1991, the experience in the Museum of Time had driven us into

What Difference Can a Calendar Make?

"AND SO THE THIRTEENTH MOON WAS DISMEMBERED AND ADDED ON AS EXTRA DAYS TO THE CALENDAR OF TWELVE..."
Dreamspell "Genesis"

Extra days of Gregorian calendar make up the hidden thirteenth moon

June 27 to July 24

+1 Day-Out-of-Time
July 25
Day of Planetary Peace
Through Culture Festival

Gregorian Calendar and the Hidden Thirteenth Moon

creating a full-blown psychomythic analysis and description of this moment of realization concerning the nature of time. The complete structure of the mathematical codes of time, as well as the psychomythic description of the causes and effects of the error in time, is known as the Dreamspell, which is defined as follows:

"DreamspeH: function of fifth-dimensional galactic-solar planetary regulation; 26,000-year renewable cycle and planetary castle genesis; any consensus reality; in disregard of interdimensional reality creates entropic spell of history; cure for loss of galactic memory."2 The *planetary castle genesis* refers to the *five castles of time* (each 5,200 years in length), divided into three *geneses-the* Dragon, the Monkey, and the Moon-that constitute the entire fractal panorama of the 26,000-year cycle of history that ends in 2012, and is meant to be renewed in 2013 (an obvious synchronic reference to the 13:20 timing frequency). In the Dreamspell analysis, the beginning of history occurs almost 5,200 years ago between the Monkey and the Moon geneses, and is marked by the imposition of the false 12:60 timing ratio.

In light of this analysis and definition it is worth quoting certain passages from the Dreamspell text that describe this precise moment at the beginning of history and that the Law of Time defines as the root error of civilization. First we quote from the "Dreamspell Genesis," and then from the descriptions of the "Dreamspell Journey and Mission of Timeship Earth 2013." The purpose of quoting these passages here is to establish a psychomythic context to explain the profound nature of what we refer to as the error in time compounded over 5,000 years of history:

Imposters, male priests and warriors usurped the power of the thirteen moons. They hid the thirteen among themselves and attempted to banish all memory of the matrix dreamspell of magic. . . The planetary kin had imposed upon them the diminishing power ratio of 12:60. No longer the magic of thirteen moons but a twelve month calendar of uncertain meaning. No longer the timeless gyre of magical flight, but a sixty-minute hour to earn one's bread.

Time was compressed into a flat circle. . .

The 13:20 ratio is the base operating ratio of timeship Earth. . .

In that vital moment during the magic flight. . . Toward the moon genesis, another spell was cast. Instead of the 13:260 ratio already stored deep within the crystal core of timeship Earth, the planetary kin received the 12:60 ratio, the dark dreamspell of history. . . And so the thirteenth moon was dismembered and added on as extra days to the calendar of twelve. . .

The absorption of the thirteen by the twelve was called an improvement by the male imposter priests hypnotized by the combined powers of Jupiter and Saturn. It takes twelve years for Jupiter to orbit once around the sun. It takes sixty years for Jupiter and Saturn to be conjunct.

Twelve times five equals sixty, one sixth of the flat three hundred sixty degree circle. The difference between twelve and five is seven. While the priests of the calendar of ancient Babylon banished the power of the thirteen moons, they replaced that power with the power of seven.

While the twelve diminished the power of thirteen by one, the sixty raised the power of twenty by three. A seeming increase in power occurred, but an increase only on the flat plane of the third-dimensional time to which the planetary kin were now consigned.

With the banishment of the thirteen moons, the fourth-dimensional time magic. . . became the property of the priest class. Setting up religions and governments to maintain the kin within the third dimension, the priests were assured that anyone having fourth-dimensional experiences either be appropriated or destroyed.J

So much for the psychomythic impression of the genesis of artificial time, the flat time of an exclusive third-dimensional reality called history. A few further quotations from the Dreamspell emphasize both the interplanetary and mathematical root of false time:

At -3187 Dreamspell years the time bandits on the sixth and seventh orbits pulsed their beam. The 12:60 frequency of the memory virus took immediate effect on the third-dimensional space suits. . . The Dreamspell of history was cast.

Imposter priests on Earth substitute the 12:60 ratio. . . Instead of the magic of following thirteen moons, a non-circulating twelve-month calendar is substituted; instead of the beauty and power of magical flight, the sixty-minute hour. The result is disastrous.

The twelve-month calendar is the consequence of the 12:60 ratio imposed at -3187 Dreamspell years (3113 B.C.,Julian/Gregorian). With no basis in or capacity for measuring galactic time, the twelve-month calendar is actually a third-dimensional prison keeping the four root races separate and at war with each other.4

These descriptive explanations of the error in time define such a profoundly radical point of view that we must flesh out the implications and description of the

course of artificial time according to the analysis of the Law of Time. From the outset of civilization in Sumeria, artificial time captures the human mentality in the order of low time and near space (third dimension), separating it from high time and far space (fourth dimension). The registration of artificial time within the unconscious structure of the noosphere, which is intrinsically governed by the universal 13:20 frequency of synchronization, creates a conflict and a pressure in the noosphere, a time warp or taint that affects the entire biosphere.

Civilization-living in cities-increasingly becomes the human norm within the biosphere. Where there had been no civilization, at a few key places around the planet civilization now arises-a process that goes from the crystalline structures at the origin to the later phases of imperialism and empire building. This cycle is repeated again and again. Even in the New World where the 13:20 natural timing frequency prevailed, the later stages of civilization succumbed to the effects of the 12:60 already seeded in the noosphere. Ultimately, all humanity and the biosphere were to be governed by the artificial timing frequency that ends with the construction of the technosphere, the final and supreme expression of artificial time. Indeed, the technosphere is the absolute conclusion of what can rightly be called an artificial time warp in the biosphere.

Concerning the mathematical basis of the 12:60 frequency, V. A. Ponko of the Russian Academy of Sciences, Novosibirsk, has conducted extensive research and wave analysis on the mathematical properties of the cycles of history. He has concluded that as a mental coordinate, the number 12 is a strict construct of the angles of space. Since it does not correspond to the sinusoidal curvature of the cycles of time and the plotting of all organic phenomena, when used as a time factor the number 12 offers no "protection" from bombardment by any number of cosmic forces. The mathematical plotting of the 13:28 frequency that characterizes the Thirteen Moon calendar, on the other hand, is in alignment with the sinusoidal curve properties of organic phenomena, and therefore functions as an "umbrella" maintaining the organism in resonance with the biosphere.s

Here let us make a more precise definition of timing frequencies and the nature of calendars as the macro-organizing programming systems of the human in the biosphere. By defining time as the universal frequency of synchronization, we are saying that synchronization is the fundamental program to which everything adheres and which makes everything perceptibly coherent, hence synchronic order. Therefore, the natural timing frequency that is a universal phenomenon both regulates the phenomenal order of the cosmos, and in the human is absorbed as a mental frequency that unconsciously synchronizes the mind and senses with the natural

order. The result is the normal sensation and experience of the harmony of reality. This defines both a fundamentally prehistoric perception of reality as well as the spiritual experience that is common when we are confronted with the awesomeness of nature-usually far away, it should be noted, from city life. This universal factor of synchronization we have identified as the mathematically precise ratio 13:20, a ratio constant embedded in the structure and order of the calendrical and astronomical system of the ancient Maya.

If we understand that this frequency of synchronization is a genuinely universal constant, then we may comprehend how not only the entire biosphere, but solar system and galaxy are also governed by the same frequency. This is how the Kozyrev experiments could show that there is instantaneous transmission of information throughout the universe, which in its entirety is a function of the formulation *velocity of time is instantaneously infinite.* Synchronization and infinite instantaneity of transmission are mutually defining-everything is always instantaneously synchronized. We can further say that synchronization "syntropizes" while dissynchronization "entropizes." There is no lag time in synchronization.

This being the case, we can then begin to understand how the acceptance and institutionalization of the artificial 24-hour, 60-minute, 60-second division of the 360 degree circle as the basis for defining time could be such a singular and ultimately disastrous deviation from the universal frequency of synchronization. Thus when we speak of the artificial 12:60 timing frequency, we are referring to the mental effect of the feedback program of the use of artificial and erroneous instruments of measure. Rather than allowing the mind to remain in the natural harmony of synchronization with nature, the artificial 12:60 standard and its instruments establish a feedback effect in the mind that accustoms it to the deviation from nature. This habituation results in the creation of an unconscious timing frequency that is accepted by the consensus reality as the actual norm. Separation of human order from the biosphere becomes accepted and acceptable, making civilization not only possible, but setting it up, as it were, as a parallel rival to "nature." In fact, it is the unconscious mental frequency of 12:60 artificial time that coordinates and maintains civilization as a belief system.

When we speak of the instruments of measure of artificial time, we are specifically referring to the Gregorian calendar as the macro-organizing principle and the watch or mechanical clock as the micro-organizing principle. The macro-organizing principle organizes our life into days, weeks, months, and years. The micro-organizing principle organizes our life into seconds, minutes, and hours. These two instruments have their common root in the error in time that occurred 5,000 years ago at

the beginning of history. Try to think of life without these instruments and you will quickly realize how second nature they are-and yet there was a time when such instruments and their terminology did not exist. Before turning our attention to an analysis of these two instruments and their effects on human consciousness, we must view the entire cycle of the Wave Harmonic of history as a function of the macro-organizing principles of time that the human in the biosphere adopted for its uses and that, in turn, condition at a most profound level the worldview of the culture or civilization that uses it.

HISTORICAL CALENDARS AS INSTRUMENTS OF ASTRONOMICAL MEASURE

It may be rightly asked, What does a calendar measure? At a minimum, a calendar is or should be the measure of the Earth in its rotation around its local star, the sun. This rotation takes 365 days. The Earth's satellite, the moon, is the obvious synchronizing factor between the Earth and the sun. But here we encounter a difficulty. The moon can be measured by various cycles. The synodical cycle, from new moon to new moon, is 29.5 days. The sidereal cycle, the measure taken from where the moon appears at the same place in the sky, is just over 27 days. There is an apsidal cycle, however, taken from the measure of when the moon's axis is tilted farthest from the Earth, which is 28 days. This variance of measures is due to the fact that until the rise of rocketry, we could not really see the moon from space. In actuality the moon rotates around the Earth thirteen times during the time it takes the Earth to orbit the sun once.

If one were objectively seeking the proper measure of the Earth's orbit using the moon as the measuring device, we would therefore construct an instrument for time reckoning that consists of an even harmonic measure of thirteen cycles of twenty-eight days each. The 28-day cycle conforms, of course, to the female menstruation cycle, an obvious human biological cycle, and it also divides perfectly into four 7-day subcycles or weeks. Also, 13 x 28 = 364, the same number of days as thirteen moons multiplied by four 7-day weeks (a total of fifty-two weeks), with the 365th day being a free day, or Day Out of Time, no day of the week or month at all. We shall deal with the perceived extra quarter-day later in our discussion.
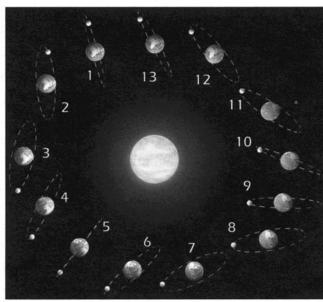
The point is this: If time is a factor of synchronization, then a calendar-as an instrument for measuring the count of time-should also be constructed so that it maximizes the factor of synchronization. This can only be done if the instrument of time reckoning is constructed on harmonic principles in conformity with the objective data of nature. Such an instrument would also conform to the orderly processes

of the biosphere taken as a whole, and be a great assistance in bringing into consciousness the cosmic programs that organize the biosphere and noosphere. The Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar is the perfect instrument for such a simple registration of harmony and synchronization. It should also be noted that in its mathematics the Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar is a function of the 13:20 timing frequency. This in itself establishes the Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar as a perfect instrument of the Law of Time and as a function of the synchronic order of reality.

Since the process of civilization represents a break from a long cycle generally undistinguished by the kind of perturbations that characterize history, the analysis of the Law of Time assumes that in prehistory humans lived in relative harmony, and therefore that the humans tended to use harmonic instruments of time reckoning. The humans living in greater harmony with the biospheric cycles would be disposed to be in greater unconscious or aboriginal attunement with the noosphere. Since the noosphere is regulated by the synchronic order of the universal 13:20 timing frequency, the humans would be more naturally disposed to devise, adopt, or intuitively utilize the time measure in greatest accord with this instinctual 13:20 noospheric timing ratio.

This instrument of time measure would, of course, be the Thirteen Moon/2 8-Day calendar. It should also be noted that this calendar is a perfect solar-lunar measure; that is, it uses the even, regular lunar cycle of28 days as the standard of measuring the 365-day solar cycle of the Earth. The balance of solar and lunar may also be taken as

Moon Circling Earth Thirteen Times per Year

Did you know the moon goes around the Earth thirteen times a year?

Click the Sun!

SEE: HTTP://WWW.TORTUGA.COM/WWW/ANIMATIONS/ANIM_MOON.HTM

symbolic of human psychological characteristics and their balance or imbalance. A solar-lunar calendar will represent and reflect a balance of the solar-lunar, masculine and feminine qualities within the human being. It is important to bear in mind these considerations of calendars and their effect on shaping the human historical consciousness and its psychological makeup. From this perspective, history is, in fact, a process of falling away from the perfection of harmonic standards.

Evidence exists that the Thirteen Moon/28-Day measure was widely known in prehistory. We find evidence of its use as a prehistoric synchronic measure in the remote past of China, in Polynesia, and scattered across late neolithic Europe and the Middle East. Among the Maya it was known as the *Tun Uc,* literally "moon count" or count of seven, while the living tradition of the Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar is still continued in South America and in the British Isles, where it is known as the Druid Tree calendar. While the Druid calendar has no year count attached to it that would definitively testify to its prehistoric ancestry, the South American calendar does. Known as the *Pachacuti,* the South American Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar is currently in the year 5509, which places its origins at 3308 B.C., toward the middle of the fourth millennium before Christ, and several hundred years before the beginning of the thirteen baktun Wave Harmonic of history.

If we understand that calendars are genuine time-measuring devices meant to synchronize us with the cosmic order within the biosphere, and that calendars are thereby programming devices, we may then say that a calendar of perfect harmony can have no history. In other words, by its harmony such a calendar is always in tune with the cosmos, which is beyond history. History can only be a function of a disharmonic programming, not in sync or even at odds with the laws of natural time.

From the point of view of timing devices, there are two factors in the establishment of history. The first is the 12:60 program established 5,000 years ago with the division of the day into 24 hours, 60 minutes, 60 seconds, based on the 360-degree division of the circle. The other factor is the use of a purely lunar calendar that is difficult to reconcile with the actual measure of the solar year. The purpose of the 12:60 measure was to establish a timing standard that was actually a pseudosolar calendar to assert male intellectual dominance. The Babylonian (and later, Egyptian) calendar consisted of twelve 30-day cycles $= 360$ days $= 360$ degrees, plus an extra 5-day cycle. The 30-day measure is not actually a natural one, being a half day more than the synodic lunar measure, but one that conforms to the hexagisimal (6-based) mathematics of the circle. For this reason, this instrument of time reckoning is defined as *pseudosolar.* Its ultimate descendent, as we shall see, is the twelve-month Julian/Gregorian system.

By contrast, the Maya also had a 365-day solar calendar, the *Haab.* Its measure, however, is that of eighteen 20-day cycles (18 x 20 = 360) plus the 5-day cycle *(uayeb),* the 20-day cycle *(vinal)* being a mathematical function of the 13:20 frequency. In addition, the Maya had the measure of the *tun,* the 360-day count of which is precisely the same as that of the degrees of the circle. It was the tun that the Maya used to measure the thirteen baktun count, which actually consists of 5,200 tun (5,125 solar years). The purpose of this measure was to provide an exact harmonic standard for the measure of history that, we may recall, is the duration of artificial time. It is very relevant that the harmonic standard of the thirteen baktun Wave Harmonic of history is the 360-day tun, the actual temporal equivalent of the degrees of a circle in space. The precise measurement of the cycle of artificial time, which turned out to be anything but harmonic, could yet be measured with a harmonic unit that reflects both the circle *and* the mathematical perfection of the Law of Time. How better to coordinate the entire cycle of artificial time than by the tun, a unit of measure that reflects the 360-degree circle, the basis of the original error in artificial time? As we will later observe, the fact that the Law of Time coordinates even the cycles of artificial time is also evident in the analysis of the timing of the fatal flaw of the Twin Towers apocalypse.

While the Babylonians began to apply a hexagisimal time-reckoning device based on spatial metrics of the circle, another factor became predominant in the Old World: the rise of the synodical lunar calendar as the exclusive measure of time. The synodicallunar calendar is purely lunar in that it is not evidently or perfectly harmonized with the 365-day measure of the solar cycle-a fact of great consequence for the development of mainstream civilization. The Babylonian calendar, with its abrogation of the thirteen perfect 28-day months, established the pseudosolar twelve-month measure. This twelve-month measure conformed to the lunar measure of twelve synodic lunations per lunar year. However, twelve lunations are only 354 days, eleven days short of the solar year. This required an intricate set of calculations to make the lunar calendar keep up with the measure of the Earth's solar orbit. And in reality, although we tend to think of the moon as feminine, the knowledge of the synodic measure, the cycle from new moon to new moon, became the exclusive province of a male priest class that used the lunar calendars to capture and control the feminine principle, and to oppress women in general. Whereas the Babylonian and Egyptian solar calendars fell into disuse over time, the lunar calendar persisted.

Since there is only one moon orbiting Earth, it should be kept in mind that all lunar calendars are essentially the same. One and the same moon in all its phases is apparent to all humans on Earth. So when we speak of different lunar calendars-most notably the Hebrew, the Islamic, and the Chinese-the measure is basically the

same, from new moon to new moon, but New Year's Day falls differently in each of them, thus accounting in part for the various calendrical traditions. Within each of these lunar calendars, a different set of holidays is programmed. It is the programming of the different holidays and festivals of the calendars, along with the dating of their new year, that makes each lunar calendar tradition distinct and that also demonstrates how a calendar is a programming device. For instance, if one were to take out the different holidays programmed into the Hebrew lunar calendar, there really would be no such thing as Judaism. This demonstrates that the cultural conditioning of a people is totally dependent on the programming of the calendar they use. This also shows how a calendar is a feedback mechanism that maintains a group of people within the confines of its own self-established belief system.

Of the three lunar calendars we have mentioned, the oldest count of years is accorded to the Hebrew calendar. This year Rosh Hashanah, or Jewish New Year, occurred on the new moon, September 17, 2001, and marked the beginning of year 5762. This places the origin date for the Hebrew calendar in the year 3761 B.C., some 453 years prior to the commencement of the Pachacuti count. The Hebrew calendar (like the Chinese calendar, which we will discuss below) makes up for the slippage of eleven days per solar year by intercalating a thirteenth lunation cycle approximately every three years, or exactly seven such thirteenth moons every nineteen years. These numbers too-13, 7, and 19-are key harmonic factors of the synchronic order of time. This demonstrates that, at the very least, the synodical lunation calendars are calibrated in their larger cycles by the Law of Time. But the effect of being a purely lunar measure, at variance with the actual 365-day measure of the solar year, creates an interesting and one-sided approach. There is no question that the lunar calendar civilizations are the tool of powerfully patriarchal societies, the tables of the moons and the years being the possession of a dominant male priest class.

The Chinese lunar calendar differs from the Hebrew in one important distinction: from the most ancient times it has been embedded in a system known as the *five elements,* and is coordinated with a very elaborate mathematical system that bears some resemblance to the 60-60, 24-360 basis of the Sumeriani Babylonian 12:60 frequency. This synchronizing system accounts for the Chinese cycles of years that are counted by the twelve zodiacal animals in combination with the five elements: earth, fire, wood, water, and metal, thus giving rise to 60 (12 x 5) year cycles. Three of these sixty-year cycles create a "group" or cycle of 180 years. We are now (in 2001) in the eighteenth year of the twenty-seventh group, or year 4,698 of the Chinese lunar calendar. So embedded is Chinese culture and civilization in this calendar, with its elaborate system, that to take away this calendar would virtually eliminate

Chinese culture altogether. Perhaps more than any other factor, this highly involved calendar also accounts for the longevity and tenacity of Chinese civilization as one continuous tradition for the duration of its history, which according to the reckoning of its calendar began in 2697 B.C., a date, interestingly enough, that coincides with the dedication of the Great Pyramid of Egypt.

Despite its marvelous system, the Chinese lunar calendar is still just that: a lunar calendar. The problem with this, from the point of view of the Law of Time, is that when it is not regulated by a proper solar count or measure, the lunar calendar leads people into one-sided developments of one kind or another, if only to the extent to which these calendars foster such profoundly patriarchal societies, of which the Chinese is certainly no exception. The influence and use of the Chinese lunar calendar system extends into southeast Asia, Tibet, Mongolia, Korea, and Japan. As a field of thought within the noosphere, the Chinese system is the equal in power base to the Babylonian and Indian systems, at least up to the time of the dominance of the Gregorian. Even today, the Chinese New Year exerts a powerful attraction worldwide.

While the Chinese and Hebrew lunar calendar systems maintain a powerful conservative strain of human society, the intercalation of the thirteenth moon, seven times every nineteen years, creates a kind of circulation within the system. Thirteen is the number of circulation, whereas twelve is that of a static, non-circulating spatial order. The taboo on the number thirteen-epitomized by the superstition about Friday the thirteenth-must certainly be related to the suppression of the solar-lunar Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendars in virtually all historical societies. This irrational repulsion of the number 13 serves psychologically in defense of the "rationality" of the number 12, a number that does not circulate time and is at the root of the linear conception of time. The illogical and irrational decisions that are made and then institutionalized into the human social fabric must at one point be discounted. Any illusion or error pursued for too long will always end in disaster.

The Islamic lunar calendar, used by some 1.3 billion humans, is distinguished by two factors:

1) It is based on a known historical incident, the *Hegira* or flight of the prophet Muhammad from Mecca to Medina, dated to the new moon or Muharram 1, Julian, July 16, 622 (Gregorian, July 26).

2) It is a pure twelve-month lunar calendar running on a cycle of pure lunar years of 354 days, with no intercalary lunations, and in this regard does not annually harmonize with the 365-day solar cycle.

For this reason, this year 2001 saw the beginning ofIslamic lunar year A.H. *(M-ter Hegira)* 1422. But if we are to count the solar years since the Hegira, correlated to Gregorian July 26, then it is solar year A.H. 1379. We see here a discrepancy of some some forty-three years between the solar count and the lunar count. The lunar count continuously retrocedes so that it takes thirty-two years for one Muharram to occur at the same place in the cycle of the solar year. In essence, the Islamic lunar calendar creates a hermetic, retrocessing time bubble with no circulation of the power of the thirteenth moon, and that accounts for the highly conservative and patriarchal nature of much ofIslamic society. Again, while there may be a virtue to maintaining a strict lunar calendar count, if it is not correlated to a harmonic solar or solar-lunar standard, the effects will be precisely of the nature that we see occurring in today's world, a point to which we shall later return.

Finally, in this brief consideration of calendars as the principle macro-organizing system for the programming of human society, a word should be said about the system of calendars in the predominant part of the Indian subcontinent. Long before they adopted the Babylonian solar zodiac and hexagisimal spatial principles for reckoning time, the Hindus also had a type of 28-day count, but one based on the course of the moon in relation to a set of stars called Nakhsastras; this created a kind of 28-part lunar zodiac. In this system, however, the Hindus divided the 360-degree lunar ecliptic into twenty-seven equal parts (27 days $=$ sidereal cycle of the moon) each part equal to 13 degrees, 20 minutes of arc, the precise measure of the 13:20 timing frequency. A complex variety of lunar calendars were developed early on, but were gradually displaced by what we call the pseudosolar Babylonian division of the Earth's ecliptic into twelve 30-degree segments, a fact that reflects the adoption to the unconscious 12:60 frequency program.

The Hindu (pseudo) solar calendars are all based on the same division into 30-degree arcs-a circle or plane in space! While the base count of the present era is taken from February 18,3102, the beginning of the Kali Yuga-the last and darkest age-exactly 5,104 years ago (dated from Gregorian year 2002), today there are at least six different calendars in use throughout the subcontintent, each essentially the same as the other, but characterized by different dynastic starting points. These differing counts, coupled with the distinct profusion of religious holidays, accounts for the jarringly conservative and colorful confusion that characterizes present-day Indian society-a neo-Babylonian time warp, its populace locked into place by complex systems of pseudo-solar calendars set in the context of earlier Hindu astronomical cycles of a vast and overwhelmingly cosmic nature.

"TIME IS MONEY": THE WATCHWORD OF THE 12:60 FREQUENCY

All of the aforementioned time-reckoning systems, with their various beginning points, can be mapped within the 5,200 tun/5,125 solar cycle of the thirteen baktun Wave Harmonic of history. While we can generally see how the Babylonian and lunar calendar systems shaped the mainstream civilizational orders of the Old World, in our time map we must also take into account the workings of the 12:60 artificial timing frequency within the unconscious noosphere. In this sense, the 12:60 frequency refers to the principle programs of control adopted and maintained through use of the twelve-month calendar systems in the Old World. (See plate 5, Noospheric Time Map-Wave Harmonic of History.)

Plotting the incidence of these calendrical streams on the time map, we must keep in mind that the calendar systems are the chief instruments for establishing and maintaining the human mind and social order within very specific programs of behavior. These programs, at least in the Old World, were characterized by the introduction of artificial systems of exchange called money, and accompanying programs of taxation. These systems were adopted to a greater or lesser degree by all the Old World societies. In this we find the root of the slogan, "time is money," where money is the artificial medium to negotiate artificial time. The end of history is the end of money and the end of artificial time. The word "calendar" itself is derived from a Latin word meaning "account book," the first day of every month being *calends* or the date of payment of debts.

Now, let us return to a consideration of the two principal and resultant 12:60 instruments dominating the end of historical time: the Gregorian calendar and the mechanical clock. We may note that toward the conclusion of the twelfth baktun cycle (A.D. 1618), the clock reaches its perfection at the very moment of the implementation of the Gregorian calendar reform (A.D. 1582), just after the act of global circumnavigation had been accomplished. Within the entire thirteenth baktun cycle, 1618-2012, the coincidence of these three factors-clock, calendar, and European global circumnavigation-induced what amounts to a 12:60 frequency capture of planetary time in the biosphere. What are the implications of this takeover of time by an irregular and irrationally measured Gregorian calendar and its accompanying micro-organizing device, the mechanical clock?

Plotting the growth curves of human population, machine, and money, we see that the complete infusion of the 12:60 artificial timing frequency creates an unprecedented acceleration, the exponential peak of which occurs at the moment of the Inevitable Event. For this reason, according to the Law of Time, it is important to

comprehend even more deeply the nature of calendars and their effect, especially with regard to the current global standard.

Because the calendar is a macro-organizing principle, when accepted over time it establishes in the mind, individually and collectively, a set of perceptions that are automatically taken for granted as being "real" and "indisputable." These sets of perceptions define the paradigm by which a people, culture, or even an entire civilization operates. The Gregorian calendar, the current global civil standard, is the paradigmatic macro-organizing principle in which are embedded all the laws, customs, institutions, and scientific principles governing the present global civilization-not to mention all the holidays of the Vatican-ordained Catholic Church. According to the Law of Time, the current calendar is an irregular standard of measure; its units of measure do not correspond. This calendar represents, therefore, the institutionalization of disorder and entropy. Because it has existed for a sufficiently long duration in the human historical cycle-2,OOO years, including its predecessor, the Julian calendar-the perceptions fostered by the unconscious acceptance of the Gregorian calendar are taken as the unshakable bedrock of nature and reality. All current beliefs-economic, political, and scientific, from democratic neo-liberalism to the special theory of relativity-are actually products of the underlying perceptions promoted by this calendar, and have no reality apart from the beliefs about time that the calendar engenders. *Change the macro-organizing principle and you change the paradigm.*

THE NEED FOR A TRULY "NEW MILLENNIUM"

As the global civil standard, the artificial, irregularly measured Gregorian calendar is a self-reinforcing feedback loop. As such, it furthers and maintains all linear time concepts, thereby establishing a host of entropic, disordered value concepts such as the violent universe, the degradation of matter, quantum physics, the arrow oflinear time, the doctrine of techno-economic inexorability, and an attendant host of unresolvable problems-crime, drug abuse, terrorism, environmental deterioration, and so forth. Why? Because as an irregular standard of measure, the Gregorian calendar is incapable of producing harmony. Only harmony can unify. The Gregorian calendar is not a unifying harmonic standard. Lack of a unifying global standard exacerbates all current conflicts. Condition the mind to an irregular standard and the mind will adjust to disorder and chaos as normal conditions of existence.

The world's racial, tribal, historical, and religious conflicts are embedded in and a function of different timing systems (calendars), all now coordinated within a master

irregular timing standard and macro-organizing principle, the Gregorian calendar. In this calendar's irregularity is embedded the view that the world of the inevitable degradation of matter is the exclusive object of all present-day science, and hence is also reflected in the entropic nature of global civilization and its deteriorating social processes. The Gregorian calendar conditions the mind to hopelessness of resolution. Without a unifying harmonic standard humanity is incapable of finding long-term resolutions for any of its problems. Disharmony can never produce harmony. Only harmony can produce harmony. All conflict can only be resolved by the application and within the context of a harmonic timing standard.

Now, following the attack on the Twin Towers and the Pentagon, we can say that the Gregorian calendar is bringing history to an end. The Inevitable Event was programmed into the Gregorian calendar, and the Gregorian calendar usurped the power of all calendars in the thirteenth and final baktun cycle of history. When the third millennium officially opened at the dawn of the year 2001, the pride of industrial man was at an all-time high. Would it be a millennium of peace or one of war? If the last century of the second millennium was the century of total war, was the third millennium going to do anything but inherit the unfinished programs of the old millennium? Could the Earth and the biosphere withstand a millennium of total war? Hardly. The Vatican "jubilee year," which ended with the beginning of the third millennium, turned sour with the Twin Towers apocalypse, as is vividly reflected in a photo of Pope John Paul II taken just after the Inevitable Event. The Gregorian calendar marks its inception with the birth of Christ, a date and moment that was never historically noted, and so is shrouded in speculation and conjecture. Now the twisted civilization of Gregorian time is locked in mortal combat against a terroristic specter that it alone could have projected into manifestation. Soon, by biospheric standards, the world of artificial time will be over and gone. And then the millennium will be truly new.

The very word *millennium* conjures possibilities of Earth-shattering events and cosmic prospects. If the inception of the Kali Yuga, 3102 B.C., can be said to be the point where the historical process became irreversible, eleven years after history began in 3113 B.C., then in counterbalance, the Inevitable Event, 2001, which had to occur eleven years before the end of the cycle of history, A.D. 2012, was more than just millennial. It was the termination of more than 5,000 years of the irreversible motion of artificial time. Such symmetry-eleven years after the beginning and eleven years before the end of history-is the hallmark of the synchronic order. For 5,100 years the count of days has numbered the long and increasingly perilous saga of human civilization. How bright was the beginning and how grim will be the end?

There at the beginning of the cycle was the "first city," Uruk. There at the end of the cycle, the fallen Twin Towers of Babel of the "last city," New York (= New Uruk), the ultimate monument to history itself and the final event to initiate the actual closing of the cycle of history.

> *There it is, the city of Uruk. Urshunnabi, climb up on that wall, the outer all shining with the brilliance of burnished copper. The seven wise men laid the foundations. One third of the city is buildings, cunningly executed, one third of the city is garden with rose and bird, and one third of the city is field with the temple of Ishtar within. Goddess of love and struggle.*
>
> - *THE EPIC OF GILGAMESH6*

IfUruk is the place where the seven wise men laid the foundations, those foundations were measured by the 24 hours, 60 minutes, and 60 seconds derived from the 360 degrees of the circle. Fifty-one centuries later, the gardens are all but gone, the fields themselves mechanized and chemicalized by the technosphere. Earth's inhabitants are in terror. Five weeks after the Inevitable Event, now known simply as 9-11, the end of history still smolders. After the struggle, will the goddess of love return?

▼

5

The Climax of History, the Fifty-six Years of Hiroshima— Artificial Time Runs Out

THE IMAGE of the Noospheric Time Map-Wave Harmonic of History on plate 5 of the color insert, showing the concurrent evolution of the different calendars of the major civilizations of the world (the illustration is by no means exhaustive), is intended to demonstrate the fact that the human race was not unified by a single coherent timing standard throughout twelve of the baktuns of historical development. It was only in the thirteenth and final baktun that humans became organized by a single timing standard. However, it was not a timing standard in accord with the synchronic order of the Law of Time, but the artificial 12:60 timing frequency as represented by its two organizing instruments, the Gregorian calendar and the mechanical clock.

The seeds of this moment had already been planted in the noosphere at the beginning of history. From both Sumeria and Babylonia the taint of the 12:60 frequency then spread through the noosphere and, by means of historical dissemination and conquest, throughout the Old World. By the time the historic moment arrived to ripen the 12:60 frequency into its full fruition-A.D. 1618, the beginning of the scientific revolution and the thirteenth baktun-there were virtually no longer any cultural traditions governed by the natural 13:20 timing frequency. The civilizations and peoples of the New World were now under the subjugation of the prevailing world order of European global imperialism. The stage was set for the brief but final phase of mechanization, of which the technosphere itself is the climax.

What the Noospheric Time Map also delineates is that the 13:20 frequency was the unconscious organizing factor of prehistory, and that, undoubtedly, a key timing system intuitively evolved among many prehistoric peoples independently of one another. This was the universal, harmonic solar-lunar standard of the Thirteen Moon/2 8-Day calendar. The defining point of history arrives with the establishment of a 12:60 timing standard within the noospheric unconscious. This frequency predominates in the development of twelve-month pseudosolar calendars, as well as the twelve-month synodicallunation calendars that are not the measure of a solar year. These two commingled systems are entwined throughout the ancient history of the Old World as the central thread of development shaping the conception of time and resulting in what were to become the two dominant instruments of human time reckoning, the Julian/Gregorian calendar and the mechanical clock.

Julius Caesar himself instituted the famous "calendar reform" that created the 446-day year of confusion in 45-44 B.C., and established a calendar that was just as patently confusing. Julius Caesar's was not the only calendar reform in the ancient world. The Essene movement, founded by someone known simply as the Teacher of Righteousness and of which Christ was supposedly a member, began as a revolt against the Hebrew lunar calendar. The issue was the need for fixed holidays within the solar cycle, something that is virtually impossible in a lunar calendar that retrocedes eleven days every solar year. There is strong reason to believe that among other calendars, the Essenes favored the Thirteen Moon/2 8-Day calendar. This even leads to the question: did Christ himself follow a thirteen moon calendar? In any case, it is the 12:60 frequency transmitted through the irrational disorder of the Julian/Gregorian calendar that captures the mind of the human race and the biosphere during the final years of the cycle of history. And it is precisely for this reason that the pace of human civilization becomes exponentially and entropically accelerated during the last few centuries of its development.

Shocked into higher consciousness by its own barbarism masquerading as civilization, at the end point of history the human has the opportunity to return to the natural 13:20 frequency of synchronization. This return would mark the emergence of humanity from the unconscious mechanistic compulsion of artificial time into the conscious field of post-history. The only possible option to unify humanity-once the yoke of the Gregorian calendar is removed-is the true solar-lunar calendar of Thirteen Moon/28 Days. With the possibility of this positive end in sight, we may turn to a more descriptive and definitive analysis of the technosphere. In this way understanding the modalities of the technosphere as a distinct and entire process, we

Gregorian Calendar 28-Year Cycles: 1945–2001, the Age of Terror

It takes twenty-eight years for the Gregorian calendar to run through its cycle of permutations. Every twenty-eight years, like a phonograph record of time—a chronograph—the Gregorian calendar guides its users through a mentally debilitating construct of unevenly measured and irrationally named months, paced by a system of 7-day weeks that bears little relation to the lengths of the months or years. In addition, every four years there is an extra day. Within this medieval mathematical jumble are kept the collective unconscious programs that repeat every twenty-eight years. What happened in 1945 will somehow repeat or have an effect again in 1973, in 2001, and then in . . . it's up to you. You can change this if you want to.

First day of the year	Tuesday	Wednesday	Thursday	Friday	Sunday	Monday	Wednesday	Friday	Saturday	Saturday	Monday	Thursday	Tuesday	Sunday
Hiroshima 1945–72						1945								
	1946													
		1947												
											1948			
									1949					
					1950									
						1951								
													1952	
			1953											
								1954						
									1955					
														1956
	1957													
		1958												
			1959											
				1960										
					1961									
						1962								
	1963													
							1964							
								1965						
									1966					
					1967									
												1968		
		1969												
			1970											
								1971						
									1972					
Twin Towers 1973–2000						1973								
	1974													
		1975												
												1976		
									1977					
					1978									
						1979								
													1980	
			1981											
								1982						
									1983					
														1984
	1985													
		1986												
			1987											
				1988										
					1989									
						1990								
	1991													
							1992							
								1993						
									1994					
					1995									
												1996		
		1997												
			1998											
								1999						
									2000					
Inevitable Event 2001 – ?						2001								
	2002													
		2003												

2004 Year of the Great Calendar Change
Where will you be? 2012

might then develop a deeper insight into where we have just been and why we need to go somewhere else.

The technosphere defines a 56-year cycle, 1945-2001, coordinated by two complete Gregorian 28-year cycles. For any Gregorian calendar year, the days of the weeks in their irregular monthly succession and in relation to the permutation cycle of leap years repeat precisely every twenty-eight years, during which time there are always exactly seven leap years. This means that Gregorian calendar years 1945, 1973, and 2001 possess the same exact annual arrangement of the days of the week in their monthly succession. If today is Sunday, November 11, 2001, so it was in 1973, and likewise in 1945. In this regard the Law of Time frames the cyclic recurrence of the otherwise irregular 12:60 Gregorian calendar by the intrinsic formulation 28:7. That is, just as the 19:7 factor coordinates the lunar calendars every nineteen years, there being seven intercalations of the thirteenth moon during that cycle, so in the Gregorian calendar every twenty-eight years there are always exactly seven leap days and years.

Understanding a calendar as the instrument that locks the conditioned programs of a given culture or people into place, we can now understand how the unconscious metaprogram of the macro-organizing principle of the Gregorian calendar cumulatively recycles all its millennial programs every twenty-eight years. Since its inception in 1582, the Gregorian calendar has been dragging forward a host of conditioned thought forms and perceptions, including those inherited from 1,500 years of the Julian calendar that it had reformed. At points of dramatic break in the continuity of human consciousness, a new set of cycles is set to recur. Such was the case in the year 1945, with the awesome blast of Hiroshima. The entirety of the mind field conditioned and held in place by the Gregorian calendar then reaches its full fruition during the two subsequent 28-year cycles, fifty-six years in all-thus bringing forward two millennia of conditionings, conflicts, and unconscious death wishes or apocalyptic programs. The first cycle was initiated in the year 1945, the year in which Vernadsky died, the atomic bomb was tested once and used twice, and the Second World War came to an end. That year, 1945, marks the beginning of the technospheric bubble. It is most telling that the Second World War was concluded at the beginning of this 56-year cycle of the technosphere, for it was a war concluded not with peace but with instruments of mass destruction and terror. Thus began the 56-year era of Atomic Terror.

The technosphere has its origins with the full capture of the human mental field by the 12:60 frequency in 1618. From 1618 onward, the noosphere is increasingly obscured by a mental field known as the *technospheric sheath.* Slowly but surely, the

technospheric sheath replaces civilization. This is first done by the introduction of mechanistic linear time. It is important to note that the Julian count, the basis of all modern scientific calculations, is a scale created by Thomas Scaliger in 1583, twenty-one years after the 1562 Mayan book burning. This linear time scale, like the Gregorian calendar reform itself, was intended to co-opt the Mayan thirteen baktun Long Count by setting a count of days that begins the first of January, 4713 B.C., or some 1,600 years prior to 13.0.0.0.0, the beginning of the thirteen baktun count in 3113 B.C. This deliberate historical act, the Julian count, along with the Gregorian calendar and the mechanical clock, established the paradigmatic notion of the linearity of time in the ripening field of scientific thought. Reflected in the noosphere, this linear, irreversible time concept levels and stunts the realization of human mass consciousness. In fact, during the technospheric cycle, especially after 1754, the ceiling of human conscious-ness is maintained by a preoccupation with mechanistic third-dimensional operations while becoming increasingly alienated from the organic order of reality. This creates the 12:60 consciousness constant, a mental ceiling that actually diminishes in propor-tion to the increasing rates of multiplication, propagation, and intrinsic velocity of the machine.

With the actual rise of the Industrial Revolution, dated in the noosphere to A.D. 1754, the synchronic point at which mechanization becomes an irreversible factor of the biosphere, the technospheric sheath, henceforth enters its next stage, going from a purely mental sheath to the industrial sheath, the prelude to the proto-technosphere itself. The industrial sheath spreads throughout the biosphere between 1754 and 1901, the official beginning of the twentieth century. At this point we enter the forty-four years of the proto-technosphere, 1901-1945. During this critical stage of the proto-technosphere, the actions of human behavior interacting with machine technology make the expression of true culture increasingly difficult, if not impos-sible. Civilization becomes a set of symbols purveyed through museums, galleries, and theaters, and recorded and reproduced in ever more advanced technological forms. But what of culture, which is not the same as civilization-what becomes of culture?

To begin to answer that question, some further definitions are in order. The technosphere is defined by and based upon one key term: *technology.* According to the common dictionary definition, which already reflects the mass mind, technology is "the totality of the means employed to provide objects necessary for human suste-nance and comfort."l Today virtually all the means employed are themselves me-chanical in nature. In common parlance, therefore, technology refers to the complex apparatus of mechanization. In fact, technology *is* mechanization; it is the ability to

convert human labor into processes carried out purely by machine-oriented or mechanical means. This is also inclusive of the entirety of computer technology, which represents the mechanization of the more purely mental processes of thought and communication.

Mechanization, we must remember, originated in the clock, in the mechanization of time. It is the mechanization of time that presupposes the tendency toward mechanization as a state of mind within the noosphere. Since artificial time is characterized by the illusion of an inexorable and irreversible linearity, the compulsion toward materialism is also experienced in the same way, an inexorable motion spearheaded by the advance of ever more improved machines. The machines themselves are the products and means of industrialization-the technological transformation of raw goods into consumer goods, a process accounting for much of the free energy introduced into the biogeochemical combustion of the biosphere.

Inseparable from mechanized technology, too, are materialism and the concept of the World Market and, more recently, of globalization. Materialism is implicit in the dictionary definition of technology as the means employed not only for human sustenance but also for human *comfort.* This comfort can only be of a material form or nature, hence the pursuit of comfort through mechanized technology can only be for the furtherance of a philosophy and exaggerated lifestyle of materialism-the belief that only the material things of this world have any value. Of course, the value of material goods and comforts increases when the value of money is put into the technospheric equation. The first stock market opened early in the eighteenth century, providing a place where money could be used as speculative capital to promote the advance of commodities and machine products. The entire sphere involving commodity production and its conversion into consumer products eventually came to be known as the World Market. Integral to the success of the World Market was the creation of the modern banking system, based on the institutionalization of interest rates and the principle of lending money to companies for the purpose of furthering the transformation of the biosphere into the technosphere.

While the concept of the World Market prevailed for a long time as the definition of the system for exploiting and extracting natural resources from the biosphere, and then converting them into industrial goods to be consumed by the human populace worldwide, globalization is far more recent. Globalization represents the absolute triumph of capitalism as the dominant economic doctrine of the human species in the biosphere, and the absolute basis of the technosphere in its final phase of development. As such, globalization is the economic system of neoliberal market

economics that treats the whole world as the proper sphere of its policies and practices. It is a specialized form of monetary imperialism that gives rise to and is supported by the doctrine of monetary politics, the use of money as a means of coercion or even for the buying out of whole governments. Of course, the principle practitioner of monetary politics is the nation with the most money, the United States of America, home of the World Trade Center.

Fostering corporate multinationalism, globalization is inseparable from the consumer philosophy it promotes. Consumerism is the devaluation of the human into a link in the chain of the cycle of industrial production, the object of globalization being to inspire and promote a massive and wide-scale consumerism worldwide. This is what is meant by such phrases as "increasing consumer purchasing power" and "opening new markets." To promote and defend its interests, the all-pervading system of globalization first developed the World Trade Center, and in the last decade, following the end of the Cold War, the GAIT and the WTO, the global "Chamber of Commerce."

As a political hegemony, globalization is managed by the G-7 group of the seven most industrialized nations (the United States, Canada, the United Kingdom, France, Italy, Germany, and Japan-now, with Russia, sometimes referred to as the G-8). This organization, headed by the finance ministers of these seven countries-like the seven wise men of Uruk at the beginning of history-was secretly formed in 1974 by the CIA, one year after the completion of the World Trade Center Towers and the formation of OPEC. The first public meeting of the G-7 occurred in the summer of 1990, just prior to the Iraqi invasion of Kuwait. The doctrine and system of globalization-now overtly controlled by the G-7 and its chief ally, the Euromarket nations-is inseparable from industrial technology as the means employed to provide objects necessary for human sustenance and comfort. Implicit in the philosophy of globalization is the right of the G-7 to promote and defend its way of life, regardless of its ultimate effects on the biosphere and at the expense of ideologies and beliefs not consistent with it. To defend itself, globalization has at its disposal the U.S. military, the command of which is housed by the Pentagon, and the new technospheric multinational military cartel, NATO. In a word, globalization is the triumph of the military-industrial complex.

From the point of view of the biosphere, globalization is the cancer of the human species consuming non-renewable resources and, through the release of free energy, effecting the final critical increase in biogeochemical combustion. The planetary instrument for furthering the entire process and philosophy of globalization is the technosphere. The technosphere may be defined as the entire apparatus of

mechanized technology and its support philosophy (globalization), understood as an artificial sphere encompassing the globe. As such, the techno sphere is discontinuously interspersed within the biosphere. More precisely, the technosphere is located physically and mentally between the biosphere and the noosphere, in other words, between the Earth's vital sphere and its mental envelope.

Being the description of an evolutionary stage, the technosphere is governed by the Law of Time as a 56-year event continuum along the lines of an artificial planetary cocoon. Insofar as it is the projection of human thought, the technosphere is the materialization of the sum mental processes denoted and conditioned by mechanization in all its aspects, and that have their primary root in the mechanization of time. It is the mechanization of time that essentially establishes the artificial timing frequency as the capacity to engender the machine and, consequently, an artificial structure, the technosphere. Because it is artificial, however, its duration is highly limited and is subject to the inherent inconsistencies and contradictions in human thought and social structures because of the aberrant effects of adapting to artificial time in the first place. The effect of adaptation to artificial mechanized time creates a social-political hierarchy known as the technocracy-rule according to the needs of technology. It is the effect of maintaining the technocracy and the technosphere itself that establishes the inability of human consciousness to do anything more than remain in a constant, servile, and unchanging state of machine dominance. All the while, by contrast to the unchanging condition of consciousness, the machines evolve exponentially in number and complexity. As Marshall McLuhan so correctly put it, the humans are the bees of the machine.

To be fully understood, the technosphere cannot be seen apart from its place in the biosphere-noosphere continuum. The technosphere represents the absolute control of the biosphere by artificial 12:60 time. Artificial time generates the artificial medium of money, hence the operating philosophy of the technosphere: "time is money." Money is the lifeblood of the technosphere. Servitude to money draws humans away from the biosphere in order to be devoured by Mammon-the technosphere as an all-consuming entity. In this process the humans get money in return for selling their bodies and souls to artificial time, usually eight hours a day, often to produce artificial goods or for service in maintaining the artificial system of money itself. This money gained from servitude is used to buy consumer goods, including more machines of every kind, and thus the human participates as a vital link in the cycle of biogeochemical combustion. In this way the mechanized lifestyle converts the human-the consumer-into the biomass necessary for maintaining the technosphere.

By 2013
Earth is galactically synchronized into a new biogeological epoch: the psychozoic Era.

As the mental envelope of Earth, above and discontinuous with Earth, the noosphere can only mean one thing: the advent of universal telepathy among the humans.

The difference between the new time and the old time is like the difference between heaven and hell.

Planetary 9-11, 2001 inaugurates biogeochemical combustion, biospheric means of transformation, and self-mutation.

Technosphere: Biospheric agent devised for maximum biogeochemical combustion.

Built in an area known as "Hell's Bottom"

The Pentagon
1941–200?

Impregnable fortress of the American war machine, meant to protect "democracy" = American domination of world market and foreign/economic policy of globalization. "The form of the Pentagon . . . is that of a pentagram, the chief magical aid for gathering power. When a pentagram is drawn with its base toward the north, and its chief point to the south, it is useful for negative or black magic purposes."
—*Transformative Vision*, page 249

*Note: Gregorian calendar coordinated by Law of Time. Repeats precise order of days and weeks precisely every 28 years.

1945 Hiroshima

56-year cycle of Hiroshima "Age of Terror" Technosphere Replaces Civilization

PAX CULTURA   PAX BIOSPHERICA

NOOSPHERE

By 2012
Humans realize a permanant condition of peace through culture.

By 2009
Humans are reorganized by the Law of Time and begin the construction of a galactic culture on Earth.

Dismantling of the technosphere stabilizes the biosphere and reveals the noosphere—2005.

By leaving artificial time and returning to natural time via the Thirteen Moon calendar, humans advance the noosphere.

2004: Last opportunity for humans to change their macro-organizing principle.

Exhaustion of the Technosphere— 2001–04.

Exponential growth curves of money, machine production, energy, and people climax.

Planetary 9-11: time runs out on the technosphere.

"New" millenium nipped in the bud; civilization R.I.P, 2001

PERIMETER OF   BIOGEOCHEMICAL COMBUSTION

Communication
Internet   Satellite
Television
Truck   Radio   Cell Phone
Automobile   **Noospheric Obscuration**   Raw Goods   Forests
Biospheric Degradation   Planetary   Minerals   Agriculture
World Trade Center   **Biospheric Depletion**
Shipping   Air   Ocean
Rail   1973 2001   Industrial Goods
9-11
Biospheric Depletion   Inevitable Event   **Biospheric Degradation**
Hydroelectric $$$$$ Nexus of Consumption (Market)
Fossil Fuel
Nuclear   City

Transport   Commodity Production   Energy

TECHNO   SPHERE

Globalization
World Market
1987 Harmonic Convergence
1973 World Trade Center
2001 The Inevitable Event
14 Years
28 Years
28 Years

BIO   SPHERE

Technosphere:
Interlocking interactive pentagon of five artificial systems - WTC = Nerve center and hub of the technosphere and its driving power, globalization.

Biosphere:
Controlled by artificial (12:60) time. Time is Money— lifeblood of the technosphere.

Humans devoured by Mammon. Get money in return and create biomass to maintain technosphere.

Biosphere–Technosphere–Noosphere

As an operating planetary structure, the technosphere consists of five interactive components.

1. COMMODITY PRODUCTION

Commodity Production, the basis of the entire World Market as a biospheric system, refers to the transformation of natural resources through industrial means into consumer products. Commodity production alone accounts for the complex of industrialization that brings the World Market and the technosphere into existence. According to *The Biosphere Catalogue,* the post-World War II growth of the World Market necessitated the establishment of the World Trade Center, a global complex (114 such centers in 1985), but with its principle coordinating unit being the Twin Towers in New York City, home of the World Trade Institute and the corporate offices of the New York Stock Exchange, the key to the world money and commodities market.

2. CITIES

Cities, the second technospheric component, represent the human social organism or marketplace for accommodating the production and consumption of industrial goods. Civilization is city life as it has evolved from Uruk to New York (= New Uruk). While prior to industrialization the city depended on a healthy agrarian economy for its support, industrialization pushed the city to new heights of artificiality, not the least of which were round-the-clock lighting systems that allowed for 24-hour consumer markets. As such, the city is the nucleus of the technospheric system, the hub of its commodity production, of its energy consumption, and of its transport and communication empires. The growth of the cities around the world is exponential in the second half of the twentieth century, reflecting the triumph of the technosphere. It should be noted that in the fifty-six years of the technosphere, the human population almost tripled-from 2.2 to 6.2 billion, a growth demonstrated in the vast expansion of the large urban centers.

3. ENERGY

Energy is the third component of the technospheric complex. The tremendous needs of industrial production have transformed the natural energy processes of the biosphere into gigantic artificial complexes for the production of energy to maintain factory and city alike. The impact of the different artificial energy systems upon the biosphere has been enormous. These systems include coal, oil, and fossil fuels in general, as well as hydropower and nuclear energy. The whole syndrome of artificial
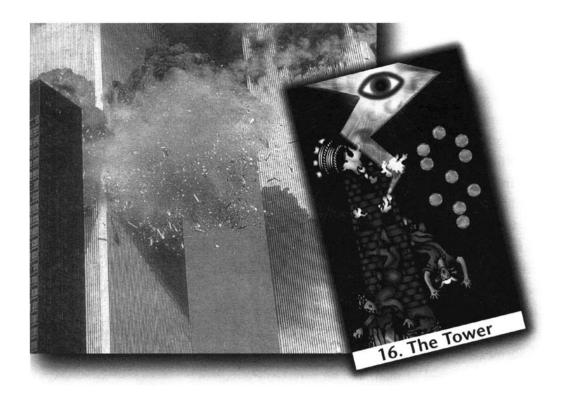
time, artificial means, acceleration of the machine, and expansion of human population has required and created the enormous output of artificial energy into the biosphere and contributed greatly to the destabilization and loss of natural resources and atmospheric and hydrospheric contamination through the release of toxic "free energy" by-products.

4. TRANSPORT

Transport. Without the highly industrialized transport systems, the commodity production, the vitality of the cities, and the access to provisions of fuel required for the energy systems would collapse. No sooner had industrial production begun early in the eighteenth century than the first artificial transport systems came into being: the steam- or coal-driven locomotive, and the great transoceanic shipping lines. By the twentieth century, the railroad system and worldwide shipping industry were supplemented by the invention of the combustion engine, which made the trucking industry possible. Following World War II, rocketry and jet propulsion established the transportation might of the great airline companies of the second half of the twentieth century. It is no coincidence that commercial airplanes, the symbol of the technosphere's advanced transport systems, were used to bring down the Twin Towers and to penetrate the Pentagon.

5. COMMUNICATION

Communication is the fifth component that unifies the technosphere into one whole system in touch with itself everywhere. From telegraph to telephone, radio, television, and then finally fax, cell phone, and the Internet, the industrial-era technologies, with their electronic instantaneity, have created the vast communication networks and media empires that keep the world humming and promote globalization above all. When considering modern communication we must also bring into focus the chief method of globalization, which is marketing-propaganda on behalf of consumerism. Marketing is the use of means of mass communication to control the mind of the consumer. In the final stage of globalization, marketing replaces consciousness, or rather, marketing is the manipulation of consciousness-the latter already having been reduced to a stunted level-for purposes of consumerism, or for ideological needs such as patriotism and fear campaigns. The Internet, the marriage of computer and telephone technologies, represents the final stage of the Tower of Babel, and the completion of the process of globalization. The only place to go after the Internet is technology-free telepathy.

The Tower

From the biospheric perspective, this five-tiered complex of the technosphere is a whole unit. All the subsystems evolved together to establish the structure and operating procedures of the technosphere. When the technosphere goes, the entire system folds. This is what is now beginning to occur. Following the Inevitable Event, the whole technospheric system will be coming down slowly over the next few years, like a giant circus tent that has lost its central prop. How gracefully or gracelessly this happens is dependent on the response of the Pentagon-or the will of humanity to rouse itself in the face of even worse barbarisms.

Because it consists of five interactive components, the techno sphere can be graphically depicted as a pentagon, a five-sided figure. At the center of this pentagon of the technosphere are the World Trade Center Twin Towers. The actual Pentagon, which was attacked along with the Twin Towers, was designed in the late 1930s to house the U.S. Department of War. Its construction occurred in the years 1941-1943, in an old neighborhood of pawnshops and bars called Hell's Bottom.2 When it was built it was the world's largest office building in terms of actual space. Of course, when they were built, the Twin Towers of the World Trade Center were the world's tallest office buildings. The structure of the Pentagon is the prototypical morphology

of the structure of the five systems that constitute the technosphere. The Pentagon was the impregnable fortress of the American war machine, protecting American interests and globalization around the world. If there were two central points-actual and symbolic-to what is known as the military-industrial complex, it was the Pentagon and the World Trade Center, and this is undoubtedly the reason why they were both targets of the Inevitable Event.

What is architecturally noteworthy about the Pentagon is that it is designed with five inner pentagonal corridors and office slabs, and that it is constructed with its odd point to the south. Since a pentagon is actually a pentagram, a five-pointed star with its points connected, the Pentagon represents an *inverted* pentagram, as its odd point faces south rather than north. In the traditional Tarot deck it is interesting that the Fifteenth Major Arcana, The Devil, contains an inverted pentagram between the horns of the Beast. Paul Foster Case writes, "This is a key to the whole meaning of the figure [of the devil]. For the Pentagram is the symbol of man, and an inverted Pentagram suggests the reversal of true understanding of man's place in the cosmos."3 While the Fifteenth Major Arcana contains the pentagon as the inverted pentagram, the next card, the Sixteenth Arcana, is The Tower, which shows the tower being struck and broken apart by lightning (fire of heaven), with humans falling or jumping out of the windows to their death-as accurate a symbolic depiction of the collapse of the Twin Towers as could be found.

VYhat the startling conjunction of these symbolic correspondences points to is the profoundly archetypal nature of the Inevitable Event. It has been prefigured and prophesied, and has now come to pass. No matter how much America and its allies, many of them bought for a price, may strike back, the deed has been done. The Towers are gone; the Pentagon has been penetrated. While it will take several years for the full realization of the absolute magnitude of this archetypal event to sink into the

15. The Devil

9-11

THE PENTAGON

The Devil and the Pentagon

collective mind, it is important to demonstrate the actual structure in time of the techno sphere so that the finality of its end may be seriously considered, and the gate to the future, which has thereby been opened, can be made clearly visible.

As we have shown, the technosphere is a structure totally brought about by the 12:60 timing frequency, and thus is purely a function of the latter. As such, the technosphere is embedded in the global macro-organizing principle of the 12:60 frequency, the Gregorian calendar. Two 28-year cycles, each one divided into four 7-year subcycles, define the duration of the technosphere. Remember that the Gregorian calendar repeats every twenty-eight years. As we have pointed out, the 56-year cycle of the technosphere, 1945-2001, is preceded by the 44-year cycle of the proto-technosphere. The two World Wars were a function of the proto-technosphere, the final major act being the construction of the Pentagon, specifically for consolidating the American war machine-the world's largest office building means that the world's largest business is war, with a $318 billion budget for the year 2001-2002 alone!

The fifty-six years between Hiroshima and the Inevitable Event were the age of terror, for it was atomic terror that initiated the technosphere in a baptism of nuclear fire, and in the end, it was an unimaginable suicidal terror that brought down not just one, but both of the Twin Towers of Babel. The final collapse of the technosphere is also the final war between blood and money. Artificial time has run out. Only a new time will be able to regenerate the biosphere and spiritually revive mankind. What follows is a chronological description of the eight 7-year stages of the fifty-six years of the technosphere. Note the persistence of certain themes. (See plate 5, Noospheric Time Map-Wave Harmonic of History.)

GREGORIAN A, 28-YEAR CYCLE:
TRIUMPH OF THE WORLD MARKET, 1945-1972

1. 1945-1951. CYCLE OF THE BOMB: ATOMIC TERROR
AND THE DIALECTIC OF THE COLD WAR.
During the first dynamic 7-year cycle, with the triple event of the first test of the atomic bomb and its two detonations at Hiroshima and Nagasaki, the biosphere becomes irrevocably altered by the introduction of a constant, steady state background radiation into the atmosphere, the actual inception of the biogeochemical combustion. This act officially establishes the technosphere. The reality is that the humans also created their first weapon of mass destruction. It is this act that also immediately sets in motion a destabilization of the human consciousness in the noosphere.Within two years, Mahatma Gandhi, the world's foremost pacifist, is

assassinated, as a "free" India is partitioned into three parts-India, Pakistan, and what is later to become Bangladesh. In the same year, 1947, the iron curtain between communist Eastern Europe and the West, epitomized by the Berlin Wall, turns the enmity between the two major powers, the Soviet Union and capitalist America, into the Cold War. The subsequent formation (1949) of the NATO military cartel counters the United Nations, which was founded in 1945 to replace the League of Nations. The UN now has the task of keeping World War III from happening by providing a forum where the "superpowers" can keep their cold war from heating up, and that will contain and manage the spread of nuclear power. Nonetheless, the terror of the Bomb as the ultimate deterrent engenders the arms race. Soon Russia, the United Kingdom, France, and eventually China get the Bomb. War in Indochina, the establishment of the Israeli state in Palestine (1948) at the expense of the sovereignty of the Palestinian people, and the completion of the Chinese Marxist Revolution under Chairman Mao are the highlights of 1949, followed by the Korean War in 1950. All this demonstrates the instability of the world. At the same time, 1949, commercial television production begins in the United States; the age of radio is replaced by the "tube." Americans also begin building freeways and the new system ofInterstate highways marking the triumph of "automobile culture," and the beginning of the suburban consumer lifestyle.

2. 1952-1958. CYCLE OF THE OPENING OF THE TOMB
AND THE BEGINNING OF THE SPACE AGE.
In the summer of 1952 a Cuban archaeologist discovers the tomb of the Mayan sage, Pacal Votan. This unprecedented archaeological event marks the beginning of the final sixty years-three katun cycles-of the Mayan thirteen baktun cycle of history. In the following year, 1953, the superlethal H-bomb is tested. The DNA code is discovered, as are the Earth's radiation belts. The United States and Russia conduct numerous nuclear weapons tests in Nevada, Siberia, and the Pacific Ocean. Wars for independence occur in various African states, and in general the era of European imperialism is at an end, followed by the neo-colonialist (Third World) era of guerrilla warfare, poverty, and social instability. In 1956, the year the Russians launch the first sputnik and begin the space age, the United Nations tables the issue of calendar reform indefinitely, thus closing the chapter begun when the League of Nations proposed global calendar reform in 1931. The year 1956 also marks the beginning of the electronic pop culture of the technosphere, rock and roll. By the end of this cycle, the "space race" joins the arms race as a force in promoting the advance of the technosphere. Commercial airlines adapt to jet propulsion, and the great age of air

travel begins, with the airport to become the centerpiece of globalization. Initial experiments in computer technology-Univac-and the first great computer corporation, IBM, announce the beginning of what is to become the major technology of globalization. A small fast-food franchise named McDonald's opens in the United States.

3. 1959-1965. CYCLE OF THE ATOMIC MIND EXPLOSION.

The July 26 Cuban Revolution of Fidel Castro, triumphant in 1959, establishes a communist state in the Americas and heightens the Cold War. That same year the Chinese communists bring to a definitive end the rule of the Dalai Lama in Tibet. In the Congo, the popular hero Patrice Lumumba is assassinated after only two months in office. Also in 1960, the human population hits three billion, an increase of one billion since 1930. In 1961 the Institute of Mathematics of the Siberian Branch of the Soviet Academy of Sciences begins the monumental mathematical analysis of Mayan hieroglyphic texts. The attempted 1961 Bay of Pigs invasion of Cuba is followed in 1963 with the assassination of John F. Kennedy, an act that reflects a rising level of cultural turmoil in the United States. Martin Luther King Jr. emerges as a popular hero of nonviolence and civil rights, an issue that points to a more radical discontent in America, culminating in 1965 with the Watts race riots. Rachel Carson's book *Silent Spring* (1963) signals the rise of ecological awareness. The Beatles transform rock and roll into a world-class cultural phenomenon that foments a widespread countercultural movement and atomic mind explosion, fueled by Timothy Leary, LSD, hippies, and the new antiwar movement against the conflict in Vietnam. In 1961 Yuri Gagarin is the first man in space, and the Vatican II Ecumenical Council comes to the conclusion that the best way the Church will survive in the next century is through a strong Pope. The Vatican II document also includes an appendix on calendar reform, the wording of which makes it difficult for there to be any alternative but a watered-down version of the Gregorian calendar. This act seals the technosphere within the unquestioned confines of Gregorian time, ultimately turning the atomic mind explosion in on itself.

4. 1966-1972. FROM THE WHOLE EARTH TO THE WORLD TRADE CENTER: THE TRIUMPH OF THE WORLD MARKET.

In 1966 construction begins on the World Trade Center Twin Towers, while in 1968 World Trade Centers are independently established in Houston, New Orleans, and Tokyo. That same year, UNESCO hosts the first and only conference on the biosphere ever sponsored by the United Nations, "Man and the Biosphere" (MAE), but the program slowly dies on the vine. The cultural conflict in the United States and
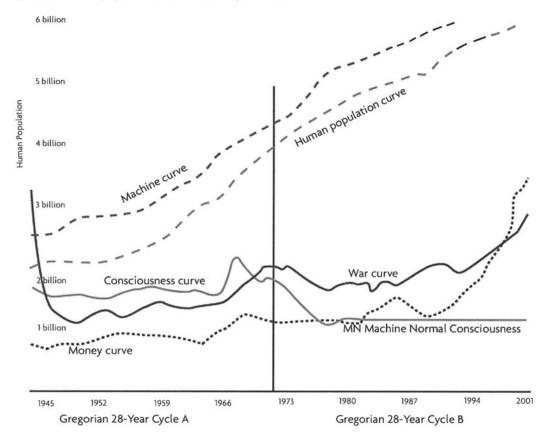
the entire world also reaches a fever pitch in the years 1967-1969. This ferment includes: race riots, antiwar riots, a march on the Pentagon, the assassinations of Martin Luther King Jr. and Robert Kennedy, and riots in major capitals around the world and on both sides of the iron curtain, as well as the Maoist cultural revolution in China. The excitement of the '60s climaxes in 1969 with the success of the Apollo XIII manned mission to the moon and the consequent feedback factor of the human race seeing itself instantaneously on television as the whole Earth beamed from space, an opening to the noosphere. Apollo XIII initiates the next phase of the space race, travel to other planets. Also in 1969, the Woodstock concert marks the apex of the early rock-and-roll culture and the visionary climax of the cultural revolution. The 1971 Concert for Bangladesh establishes rock and roll with a conscience. In 1970 the vision of the whole Earth is translated into the first Earth Day and the birth of the ecology movement. The United Nations follows two years later with the Stockholm Conference on the Environment. The revolutionary fervor of the previous years turns more violent, and repressive governmental police powers win the day. The first 28-year cycle ends with a whimper, the dynamic destabilization of consciousness reaches a plateau of normalcy-a normalcy to be increasingly punctuated by terrorist activity, as in the Palestinian takeover of the Olympic Village in September 1972. Both apart from as well as in reaction to such activity, the technosphere has now become all-dominant and all-powerful in human affairs.

SUMMARY, GREGORIAN A: 1945-1972

During this cycle, the dynamic of the accelerated geochemical combustion destabilizes the human consciousness while increasing the curve of the machine in human affairs. By 1973 the machine curve meets and surpasses the human population curve; this stabilizes human consciousness at a level of machine normalcy (MN). Human consciousness will remain stabilized at MN, largely through varying forms of terror and fear programming, for the duration of the second and final 28-year cycle. This normalization of human consciousness allows the diverse and rapidly evolving technological components of the technosphere to reach a point of consolidation. This stabilization of the World Market fosters its next and concluding phase: globalization and the triumph of marketing over human culture. It should be kept in mind that the instruments and weapons of mass destruction, of which there were none on January 1, 1945, have now proliferated to five different countries and provide the ultimate backdrop to these first twenty-eight years. The core of the UN's Security Council is formed by the five countries that possess atomic weapons. Geopolitically, the bio-

Machine Normal Consciousness in Relation to Technospheric Growth Curves

Human consciousness, overwhelmed by war—the ever-propagating machine and bondage to artificial time—succumbs to money and stabilizes at Machine Normal, the standard consciousness of the technosphere, which represents an ever-diminishing ratio of intelligence in relation to the growth curves of population, machine, money, and war.

sphere is in control of technocratic powers that are virtually all located in the Northern Hemisphere-whether it is the Pentagon, NATO, the World Trade Center, the United Nations, or the Soviet space program.

GREGORIAN B 28-YEAR CYCLE: CLIMAX OF GLOBALIZATION, 1973-2001

1. 1973-1979. CYCLE OF THE CONSOLIDATION OF THE TECHNOSPHERE: CLUB OF ROME, OPEC, AND THE G-7.
The dedication of the World Trade Center Twin Towers on April 4, 1973 (a repeat of the calendar year of the Bomb, 1945) is the counterpart to the construction of the Pentagon (1940-1941), which sponsored the bombing of Hiroshima and Nagasaki. The tallest buildings in the world when they opened, the 110-story Twin Towers seal

the position of New York as the "capital of the world," for on the other side of Manhattan is the glass tower of the United Nations. Simultaneous to the dedication of the Twin Towers is the formation of the Organization of Petroleum Exporting Countries (OPEC). With the exception of Venezuela, OPEC is largely an Arabic (Islamic) economic alliance that, for the first time in the history of the technosphere, brings a Third World influence into planetary politics. The subsequent "oil shortage" demonstrates the technosphere's vulnerability, which in turn causes a further "hardening of the arteries" of its consciousness-the covert formation by the CIA of the G-7. Also in 1973, after five years of study the Club of Rome issues *The Limits of Growth,* which in its analysis of trends foresees a major environmental (biospheric) crisis within one hundred years, yet nonetheless establishes and promotes the standard world model, a setting of production quotas at the 1973 level, to foster sustainable growth at least until 2020. The "standard world model" corresponds to the "normalization" of consciousness. The third war (previous ones having occurred in 1967 and 1949) between Israel and its neighbors occurs this year. By 1975, the world population is at four billion, up a billion since 1960. In 1976 Voyager II reaches Mars. In 1978 Karol Wojtyla becomes Pope John Paul II, the first global Pope, fulfilling the Vatican Council's requirements of a popular Pope to assure the survival of the Church into the next century. With Gregorian civilization triumphant, Mexico, home of the Maya, is the first country visited by the new Pope. In the same period, between 1978 and 1979, the Iranian Islamic revolution occurs, toppling the pro-Western Shah, signaling a heightened conservative Islamic resistance to Westernization and the technosphere. Japanese technology and corporate capitalist economy flourish, capped by the construction in Tokyo of the "New City" Shinjuku and, despite many environmental protests, the Narita airport. The mainstream global consciousness is now "comfortably numb" and on course to unprecedented materialism.

2. 1980-1986. CYCLE OF THE TRIUMPH OF THE TECHNO SPHERE.

The first cycle of the stabilized new normalcy establishes the triumph of marketing-the election of a second-rate American movie star for President, and the birth of the yuppie (young urban professional) generation of America. The rise of MTV signals the standardization of rock style as global culture; while the Live Aid global television concert on July 13, 1985, to raise awareness of AIDS in Africa, is the largest ever of its kind. The September 17, 1985 Mexico City earthquake, the worst in modern times to hit the world's largest city, demonstrates the continuing vulnerability of the techno sphere to natural catastrophe. The early 1980s witness the Intifadah uprising of Palestinians against Israel. The War on Drugs, an aggressive

antidrug campaign waged by the West against narcotraffic, mostly from South America and the Middle East, heightens the new normalcy as world drug laws tighten, placing marijuana and psychedelics in the category of "hard drugs." Yet drugs continue to be a major social problem in the industrialized West. In 1986 President Reagan attacks Kadafy of Libya and invades Grenada, testing American ability to commit limited acts of aggression without inciting world censure. The construction of Biosphere II in Arizona, an effort to test the possibility of establishing an artificial biosphere on other planets, ends inconclusively. In 1985 in Bhophal, India, the worst modern industrial toxic chemical disaster occurs with more than 2,000 deaths, followed on April 26, 1986 by the Chernobyl nuclear power plant disaster, the worst since the beginning of the nuclear age. In America the suburban automobile culture gives rise to the super shopping malls. The personal computer (PC) is introduced, while electronic game arcades flourish. Sunday football becomes the major American television pastime, while television itself makes world soccer the number one competitive global sport; the broadcast of professional sports assumes the role of a primary noospheric diversion.

3. 1987-1993. CYCLE OF THE END OF THE COLD WAR AND TRIUMPH OF THE G-7.

On January 24, 1987 Voyager II sends back photos from Uranus; four days later, January 28, 1987, seven American astronauts die in a shuttle launch explosion. On August 16-17, 1987 the Harmonic Convergence peace meditation attracts hundreds of thousands who gather at sacred and natural sites around the world; later that year, October 19, 1987, the New York StockMarket crash occurs, the biggest point drop ever, and Russian Prime Minister Gorbachev initiates disarmament accord, or *glasnost*. By the end of 1987 the population is at five billion, up one billion since 1975. During 1988-1989, a rolling wave of largely peaceful revolutions and civil uprisings throughout most of the Warsaw pact nations culminates on December 31, 1989 with the tearing down of the Berlin Wall-the end of the Cold War. At the same time, President Bush invades Panama to continue testing Drug Wars and limited-aggression capability. In the summer of 1990 an international bankers' reunion is followed by the first public meeting of the G-7. Every year henceforth, the G-7 meets publicly to set policy for globalization. Within a month of the first public G-7 meeting, August 1990, Saddam Hussein invades Kuwait, and Bush retaliates with the Gulf War, January-February 1991. In August 1991 Gorbachev is ousted in a putsch, marking the end of the Russian Marxist era. Destabilization, war, and genocide afflict the Balkans. A new wave of environmental concerns-ozone depletion, destruction of rain forests, and global warming-inspire a reactivation of Earth Day, 1990, followed

two years later by the 1992 Rio Summit, the second United Nations Environmental Conference and the first in twenty years. The conference generates much paper, but the doctrine of sustainability (sustainable industrial growth) is the principle outcome. Meanwhile, with the absence of Marxist Russian economic influence, the neoliberal capitalist economics of America flourish as full-blown globalization, multinational corporations, and the prominence of the IMF and World Bank foment a uniform global corporate culture of cheap consumer services and franchised retail outlets for brand-name goods. This period also sees the rise of East Asian capitalist economies, although the Japanese economic bubble bursts in 1991. Early in 1993 a terrorist bomb explodes in the underground garage of the World Trade Center Twin Towers. The period 1989-1993 marks the beginning of the discovery of the Law of Time-the definition of the artificial 12:60 and natural 13:20 timing frequencies, the Dreamspell codes, and the decoding of the Telektonon Prophecy of Pacal Votan in 1993.

4. 1994-2000. CYCLE OF THE CLIMAX OF GLOBALIZATION.

In 1994, the GAIT Treaty is signed, the Levy-Shoemaker comet hits Jupiter, and a million Mricans die in the Rwanda massacre. The indigenous uprising in Chiapas, Mexico on January 1, 1994 provides a counterpoint to the triumph of globalization that is manifest through worldwide airport expansions, and an aggressive form of tourism that feeds the airline industry. Israel and Palestine enter the "peace process," while Yeltsin consolidates his power in Russia. This is the era of United Nations peace-keeping missions, mostly in the Balkans and Africa. Following the FBI/BATF -inflicted firestorm on a fundamentalist compound in Waco, Texas, a year later, in 1995, a terrorist bomb destroys the Oklahoma City Federal Building. The United States and the United Kingdom inaugurate control of Iraqi no-fly zones, enforced by regular bombing raids; the United States also conducts military actions in Somalia, as well as more successful ones in Haiti. This is the era of rapid expansion of computer and biotechnologies, exponential rise of New York Stock Exchange and the new specialized technologies exchange, the NASDAQ. Bill Gates of Microsoft typifies the rise of the new self-made billionaires of the Clinton era. In January 1995 the Kyoto earthquake occurs, followed by the Tokyo subway nerve-gas terrorist attack, while the Internet, the "information superhighway," is fully up and running. In 1996 in Brasilia, Brazil, the First Planetary Congress of Biospheric Rights signals rise of a new calendar reform movement with the proposal of the World Thirteen Moon Calendar Change Peace Plan, submitted to both the United Nations and the Vatican. In 1997 the Kyoto environmental conference on global warming sets policy, but the United States refuses to ratify it. In 1998 simultaneous U.S. embassy bombings in Kenya and Tanzania signal a

new phase of war on terrorism, singling out a Saudi national, Osama Bin Laden, as the terrorist mastermind. By 1999 the world population is six billion, up one billion since 1987. In late spring 1999 NATO initiates a unilateral bombing campaign ofYugoslavia over the disputed region ofKosovo. The World Summit on Peace and Time, at the University for Peace, Costa Rica, sends emissaries to the Vatican and the United Nations with the Declaration of Thirteen Moon Calendar Reform; later in 1999 WTO has its first meeting in Seattle, which sparks anti-globalization riots. In 2000 the Y2K computer scare surrounding a bad time program fails to materialize. On Rosh Hashanah, September 28,2000, Hebrew year 5761, Israeli leader Ariel Sharon's presence at Temple of the Mount, Jerusalem, sparks a new Intifadah of Palestinians, which continues unabated through 2001, the official first year of the new millennium.

5. 2001-? *GOTTERDAMMERUNG* OF THE TECHNO SPHERE: FIRST YEAR OF THE THIRD MILLENNIUM, REPEAT OF GREGORIAN CALENDAR YEARS 1945 AND 1973.

In July 2001, G-7 meets in Genoa, Italy, as more than 100,000 anti-globalization protesters riot. In early September the United States and Israel walk out of the United Nations Conference on Racism in South Africa. Then, within ten days occurs the Inevitable Event, Gregorian 9-11, 2001, the cumulative synchronic pressure point where the technospheric bubble-the artificial time warp in the noosphere-bursts open, spawning in its wake the full-scale War on Terrorism-another name for World War III. The Inevitable Event exemplifies the built-in failure of the Gregorian calendar to commence another 28-year cycle as was done in 1945 and 1973. If the 1945 cycle began with the end of one world war, the 2001 cycle begins with the start of one. Since 2001 is also first year of the third millennium, the Gregorian calendar has created its own apocalypse, opening a noospheric fissure-the climax of the biogeochemical combustion of the biosphere. Now it is only a matter of time before the technosphere experiences total collapse. The nature and extent of the damage sustained during the collapse is in proportion to the intelligence that responds to the knowledge of its collapsing. If this 28-year Gregorian calendar cycle were to go unimpeded until 2029, it is not certain what would be left of the biosphere. But there is one thing of which we may be certain: *artificial, linear time has run out.* An American newspaper editorial at the end of 2001 sums up the crash of the dominant linear time paradigm: "History seems to have slammed into reverse gear around a world that was widely assumed a year ago to be moving in a straight line toward a more prosperous and secular future, one that would be shaped by stock markets and the Internet, not by turbaned zealots or theocracies that have or want nuclear trigger fingers."4

With destabilization normalized, the technosphere replaces civilization and marks the end of culture-the new barbarism prevails, culminating in total war. The 9-11 is what actually completes the technospheric cycle. Henceforth it will be the advent of the noosphere, but not in the way predicted by the authors of *The Biosphere Catalog:* "The Noosphere as an active force consists in the harmonious synthesis of the Biosphere and the Technosphere by intelligence."5 By the analysis of the Law of Time, the intelligence is nowhere evident because there is no harmony of intelligence possible under the present timing standards that dominate all the major players in the present global conflict. Since the technosphere is totally a function of the artificial timing frequency, and since artificial time is now short-circuiting itself, there will be no techno sphere to harmonize when natural time is restored to the entire biosphere. Then the noosphere will commence, but only if there is world harmony. Only a harmonic standard will bring harmony to the world. The failure of the Gregorian calendar and its civilization, crystallized in the now-collapsing technosphere, must be quickly acknowledged. By adopting a harmonic standard as soon as possible, the shift to the noosphere can commence, rising and building itself up from the shards and ashes of the toppled technosphere.

▼

6

The Solution of the Law of Time
Get a New Calendar

"I am in favor of a standardized calendar for the whole world, just as I am in favor of universal coinage for all countries, and a supplementary artificial language (like Esperanto, for example) for all peoples. . . I am always ready to endorse any honest movement which will help unifY the peoples of the world. „

-MAHATMA GANDHI, QUOTED IN *THE JOURNAL OF CALENDAR REFORM,* 19311

VIEWED FROM THE PERSPECTIVE of the noosphere, the failure of human civilization is the failure of the human being to become synchronized with itself in the correct time of universal nature. Instead of operating as a planetary organism in absolute synchronization with a knowledge of being coordinated by a common harmonic standard, humans race toward the end of history, dissynchronously operating under a plethora of calendars of differing measures enshrining competing belief systems, all globally coordinated by an instrument of irregular measure and obscure nomenclature-the Gregorian calendar. Dissynchronized and at odds with itself everywhere, humanity is broken apart into splintered mind fields, each controlled by a different timing standard, a fact about which the human race is virtually ignorant-to its own detriment.
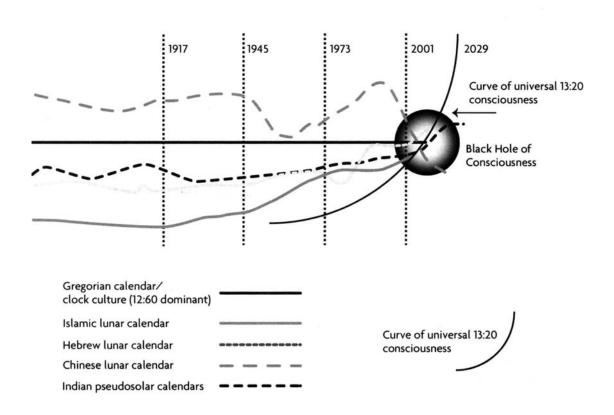
India, with its different neo- Babylonian calendars, is at odds with Pakistan, which operates according to the Islamic lunar calendar; the Israelis, at odds with the Palestinians, hold as tightly to the Hebrew lunar calendar tradition as the Palestinians do to their Islamic lunar calendar traditions. In Asia, China follows its own complex and ancient lunar calendar tradition, and watches as the United States and its G-7 alliances, all dominated by the Gregorian calendar, get ready to spar with terrorists and militants who also follow the Islamic lunar calendar. India has the Bomb, Pakistan has the Bomb, China has the Bomb. The United States has the Bomb, the United Kingdom has the Bomb. France has the Bomb. Russia, the Ukraine, and other former Soviet nations have the Bomb. It is commonly assumed that Israel also possesses the Bomb. Does Iraq have the Bomb? Can a terrorist get access to materials to create the Bomb as well? The nuclear clock is ticking again.

The number of weapons and technologies of mass destruction has increased several thousandfold since 1945 when, at the time of Vernadsky's death, there were virtually none. This is not to mention the biological weapons of mass destruction, more ambiguous, more lethal, more hidden-none of which really existed in 1945 either. With the fallout from the Inevitable Event an anarchic planetary free-for-all is taking shape. From the noospheric point of view, the humans have run out of (artificial) time, and are now committing their last egoistic act of desperation to hold what they perceive to be their dominant place in the scheme of things. The fact is, however, that the planet belongs to the biosphere and not to the humans.

The inability of the Gregorian calendar to sustain another 28-year cycle, much less another millennium, means that an anarchy of time and a time of anarchy is loosed upon the planet. At the present rate, what would the world look like in 2029? One does not want to imagine. The anarchy of time is exemplified by the different competing powers that are unconsciously driven and motivated by programs stored in their differing calendar systems. This failure of artificial time to contain itself is truly the apocalypse. The apocalypse could occur only when the time program had become saturated. The two 28-year cycles, 1945-2001, carried forward not only the exponential advance of machine time, but the accrued karmic baggage of two millennia of the invented religion of Christ. Throughout the last millennium, the protagonists of this religion waged a type of holy war against an embattled world-a war waged by missionaries and conquistadors alike, down to this very day. The week before the Inevitable Event, the Taliban was deporting Christian missionaries from Mghanistan, while other Christian missionaries scour the jungles looking for one more indigenous soul to convert. This activity is inseparable from the Gregorian calendar that programs it.

Entropic Black Hole of Consciousness

A calendar is a mental instrument for holding the programmed patterns of thought and behavior of a given culture, people, or civilization. A people can rise no higher than the program of time their culture imposes on them as second nature. A program of time determines nature of consciousness. Different timing programs scheduled by synchronically inaccurate devices within a biospheric whole governed by a universal timing frequency apart from the deviant human standards can only result in an entropic black hole of consciousness: the clash of civilizations and cultures that precedes the mentally cleansing force of the noosphere and the inevitable return to natural time and the universal 13:20 timing frequency.

1917	1945	1973	2001	2029

Curve of universal 13:20 consciousness

Black Hole of Consciousness

Gregorian calendar/
clock culture (12:60 dominant)

Islamic lunar calendar

Hebrew lunar calendar

Chinese lunar calendar

Indian pseudosolar calendars

Curve of universal 13:20 consciousness

Now the default of the Christian program of the Gregorian calendar and its system of social organization, global civilization, is erupting in an entropic black hole of time. The result of this black hole of time is an entropic harmonic convergence, where all of the conflicting points of the differing timing programs that the Gregorian calendar attempted to synchronize, come into a common point of hostile impact. Seen in this light, the Final War is really the final battle in a long saga that we can properly call the Time Wars.

THE AGE OF THE TIME WARS

The Time Wars began with the application of the error in time at Uruk: the 24-hour, 60-minute, 60-second timing frequency derived from a 12-part division of the circle, a two-dimensional plane in space. Since this measure does not correspond to the reality of time as the universal (13:20) frequency of synchronization, it creates a mental dissynchronization that manifests as the battle of the mind against itself, and against nature. The dynam'ic of the "progress" of civilization is really the dynamic of dissynchronization inherited by the human mind. The gradual encroachment of civilization into all aspects of human society and the biosphere increases the incidence of dissynchronization. The resulting aphasic mental states lead to belligerence and various attitudes of dominance over others and nature-but never to any satisfaction.

Viewed by the Law of Time, civilization is the institutionalization and embodiment of the dissynchronous artificial timing frequency. The dynamic of dissynchronization results in increasingly artificial technological means and reliance on the artificial medium of money to replace the biological or organic functions of our nature and of the biosphere in general. Not only does this process tend toward an "improvement" in the accuracy of the means of war, but also in the capacity of the latter for greater mass destruction. Set apart from the natural cycles by the dissynchronous frequency of mechanization, the Time Wars are also waged against the biosphere, which is viewed as a hostile force to be overwhelmed and plundered. Everywhere on Earth, nature is on the run. Everywhere on Earth, the human looks at his watch-what will he do next? Catch another plane? Fire another bullet? Press another button and let loose another bomb?

The 56-year cycle of the technosphere witnessed the greatest creation and stockpiling of lethal weapons, more than in all the previous history put together, enough to destroy the Earth many times over. The 56-year cycle of the techno sphere also witnessed the greatest plundering thus far of the biosphere, more than in all the previous cycles of history put together. Continued at the current rate, the biospheric plunder would bring extinction to virtually all life within another generation. These two facets of self-destruction-technospheric and biospheric-point again to the Inevitable Event. It is the Pentagon that has led in military spending and strategizing, just as it was the activity within the World Trade Center Twin Towers that dominated and coordinated from afar the plunder of the biosphere-both precedents for the consequent construction and expansion of the technosphere.

But now time has run out on the technosphere. The world has gone flat and valueless with no future vision beyond war. All the money in the world will not put it

back together, nor will all the bombs in the world salvage it against its enemies. Who are the enemies of the technosphere, and what would cause thereto be enemies against the technosphere? And who or what is there that speaks for the biosphere? For if the biosphere is to become the noosphere, it must come about from an understanding of the intelligence of harmony. Clearly, such understanding of harmonic intelligence has not been nor will it be forthcoming from the technosphere-or from the Gregorian calendar that programs it. Only the Law of Time can supply the harmony necessary to complete this great movement from biogeochemical combustion to noospheric mind. The Law of Time replaces all that is artificial, while confirming all that is true, whether in human history or the universe.

Let us return to the analysis of the Time Wars and the clash of timing programs. The Twin Towers were the absolute triumph of the artificial 12:60 timing frequency, whose program is embedded in the Gregorian calendar and paced by the mechanical clock. Who steered the hijacked planes into their Gregorian targets? Nineteen militant Muslims, we are told. Why nineteen? And what are the religious backgrounds of the twenty-two most-wanted terrorists in the world? They are twenty-two Muslims. Why that number, and why are all the terrorists Muslims? In the noospheric analysis, the Inevitable Event was the suicide of the technosphere unable to sustain two clashing time programs. It was a program of the strict Islamic twelve-month lunar calendar that drove its belief system into the Twin Towers and the Pentagon, the two supreme monuments of the program of the twelve unevenly measured months of the Gregorian pseudosolar calendar. Is it Islam that is the enemy of the technosphere? Is it Islam that is the champion of the biosphere? Indeed what is Islam? Why is Islam the most resistant force against globalization and the technosphere? We know where the Vatican, the bastion of Christendom, is and who ordained the Gregorian calendar, but what do we know about Islam?

If we strip history away from the force known as Islam (1.3 billion Muslims in the world), and reduce it to its most essential point, then Islam is the teaching of the Holy Quran. What is the Holy Quran? It is the last whole revealed text for all humanity, received and recorded over a 23-year period by a single human being, Muhammad the prophet (570-632). While militant Muslims and terrorists have dominated the mass media image ofIslam for the past few decades, what is the Quran and what does it actually teach? It is also a function of the Gregorian program that scarcely anyone in the West really knows or is familiar with the Quran, since the West has been at odds with Islam since the time of Muhammad. As the supreme text of monotheism, the Quran is actually a psychoactive book that upholds Islam as the final religion for humanity. "He is the one who sent His messenger with the

guidance and the religion of truth, to make it prevail over all other religions. God suffices as a witness." (Quran, 48:28) *Islam* means "peace, which is submission to the will of God."

Islam is also the law of nature. Within the vast system of intricate, mathematically based logic that constitutes the Quran-which is a profoundly ahistorical text as well-one feature stands out: the description and definition of nature and the natural order as the chief proof of God's design and guiding wisdom. From the Quranic point of view, the biosphere, inclusive of the creation of the human, is the overwhelming single proof of God's wisdom in establishing a life-support system for our indwelling consciousness to evolve our bodies on this Earth. The biosphere is Islam, or "peace, which is submission to the will of God," understood as the divine law of nature.

> In the creation of the heavens and the earth, the alternation of night and day, the ships that roam the ocean for the benefit of the people, the water that God sends down from the sky to revive dead land and to spread in it all kinds of creatures, the manipulation of the winds, and the clouds that are placed between the sky and the earth, there are sufficient proofs for people who understand. (2:164)

> He created you from one person, then created from him a mate. He sent down to you eight kinds of livestock. He creates you in your mother's bellies, creation after creation, in trimesters of darkness. Such is God your Lord. To Him belongs all sovereignty. There is no other god beside Him. How could you deviate? (39:6)

> Among His proofs is that you see the land still, then as soon as we shower it with water, it vibrates with life. Surely the One who revived it can revive the dead. He is Omnipotent. (41:39)

> He created the human from a tiny drop, then he turns into an ardent opponent. And he created the livestock for you, to provide you with warmth and many other benefits as well as food. They also provide you with luxury during your leisure, and when you travel. And they carry your loads to lands that you could not reach without a great hardship. Surely your Lord is Compassionate, most Merciful. (16:4-7)

> He sends down from the sky water for your drink and to grow trees for your benefit. With it, He grows for you crops, olives, date palms, grapes, and all kinds of fruits. This is sufficient proof for people who think. (16: 10-11)

> And He committed the sea to serve you; you eat from it tender meat, and extract jewelry which you wear. And you see the ships roaming it for your commercial benefits, as you seek His bounties, that you may be appreciative. And He placed stabiliz-

ers (mountains) on earth lest it tumbles with you, as well as rivers and roads that you may be guided. And landmarks, as well as the stars to be used in navigation. Is One who creates like one who does not create? Would you now take heed? (16:14-17)

As for the Earth, we constructed it, and placed on it stabilizers (mountains) and we grew on it a perfect balance of everything. We made it habitable for you, and for creatures you do not provide for. There is nothing that we do not own infinite amounts thereof. But we send it down in precise measure. And we send the winds as pollinators, and cause water to come down from the sky for you to drink. Otherwise you could not keep it palatable. (15:19-22)2

Viewed from its own context, the Quran is the criterion for evaluating the spiritual progress of human existence on this Earth inclusive of man's ability to read the proofs of nature as manifestations of God's wisdom and to comport himself within this nature, the biospheric life-support system, in a manner consistent with the truth. From the Quranic perspective, human freedom of choice is at the root of the biospheric destruction. Choosing anything but to be submissive to God, the human is in rebellion against nature-both his own and that of the biosphere. "We have offered the responsibility [freedom of choice] to the heavens, and the earth, and the mountains, but they refused to bear it, and were afraid of it. But the human being accepted it; he was transgressing, ignorant." (33:72)

The result of this ignorance on behalf of his own aims and intentions rather than that of a respect for the divine plan (biosphere) of the Creator, accounts for the human situation today, at odds with and surrounded by an increasingly out-of-control biospheric degradation and corruption of natural time: "Disasters have spread throughout the land and sea, because of what the people have committed. He [God] thus lets them taste the consequences of some of their works, that they may return [to the right works]." (30:41) Thus, the current techno spheric destruction actually points toward a return of humans to the path of right works.

The forces that created the phenomenon of historical Islam are the enclosing of the Holy Quran within the rigid system of a twelve-month, non-circulating lunar calendar, compounded and supported by the development of the *hadith* and *sunna* (non-Quranic) traditions. A profoundly conservative social order, Islam is nonetheless activated and motivated by a holy scripture that enunciates an attitude toward nature that is the direct opposite of the 12:60 system that produced the technosphere. In this regard, the precepts of the Holy Quran-as of many another holy scripture-make it the "enemy" of the technosphere. From the noospheric perspective, historically and culturally, however, the assault on the nerve centers of the techno sphere

could only have been effected by humans whose belief system was rooted in the Holy Quran, which had been at odds with the Gregorian civilization for centuries. In this way, the Quran was the noosphere's weapon used to bring about the circumstances that would lead to the resurrection of the biosphere-the noosphere itself. But only if man consciously chooses the right return path: synchronized harmony in time. The problem is not so much the rigid lunar calendar of Islam, but the irregular global standard of the Gregorian calendar, which, instead of standardizing all measures and perceptions of time, fosters a human social disharmony and an incessant antagonism against nature-and against Islam.

So then, how are we to return to the right works? Read and study the Quran, yes-but also make a fundamental change in the world. The solution of the Law of Time is: Get a new calendar! Humanity must take a long, hard look at its own timing systems and scrap what needs to be scrapped, no matter what kind of temporary inconveniences this may cause. Calendar reform is an issue that upsets many apple carts. Yet it is the only method that has not been commonly tried and the only step that has not yet been collectively taken. It is a characteristic of the dominant mindset that it writes history in the way that suits its own needs and supports its philosophy. In any of the reviews of the century carried by the mass media during the past year, you will find no mention of the World Calendar Reform Movement; nor will you find, for instance, any mention of the Roerich Peace Pact (1935); nor of the Harmonic Convergence-all buried by the marketing of history to suit the needs of globalization. What do these three phenomena have in common? A concern for peace based on an understanding that without harmony, the human cultural situation will only worsen. If humankind suffers from an excess of disharmony, in the noospheric analysis the only solution is a harmonic standard of time to synchronize all humanity simultaneously-the Law of Time refers to this as the Thirteen *Moon!* 28-Day frequency shift.

CHANGE YOUR CALENDAR, CHANGE YOUR MIND

> *"Since the advent of the Nuclear Age, everything*
> *has changed but the way people think, thus, we*
> *drift towards unparalleled catastrophe. "*
> -ALBERT EINSTEIN3

To change how people think you must take a profoundly simple and universal element of everyday life, one in which all everyday thinking is rooted, and change it so

radically that the way in which people think will itself be dramatically changed. If you want to know that something has really changed, change the calendar! This is the meaning of the replacement of the Gregorian calendar by the Thirteen Moon calendar. The calendar change is necessary because, as the pragmatic application of the discovery of the Law of Time, it brings into focus the essence of this discovery: Time is a frequency, the frequency of synchronization. If a calendar does not increase synchronization, it is not performing its highest function. This is the fundamental critique of the Gregorian calendar-and of all concepts of time based solely on physical, third-dimensional astronomical measurements. This discovery is so new and startling that it affects all human thought and is a matter to which all belief systems, religions, and methods of science must be cognizant. Yet nothing, it seems, is more difficult for humanity than to make this change from a manifest disharmony to a manifest harmony.

Historical man recoils at the prospect of actual harmony-harmony in natural time. This is because historical man defines his existence and thrives upon the disharmonies of his own invented time. The Gregorian calendar keeps the human mind entrained in a diabolical disorder of meaninglessly named months of uneven measure, while every day is tracked and driven by a relentless mechanism called a clock. This immersion of the mind of historical man in the frequency of his own artificial time, more than any other factor, condemns him to a world of inescapable horrors: traffic jams, poverty, terrorism, unresolvable historical and territorial disputes, global warming, environmental degradation, social disorder, insanity, and drug abuse. The problem of historical *human-Homo historicus-is* compounded by the unconscious nature of his acceptance of this timing sensibility, believing it to be the actual nature of time. Hence, all his public and economic policies are driven by and determined by the relentlessness of this perception that time is an arrow blindly pulling him into a future in which his only defense is the creation of more technology, the technosphere itself being a pure expression of the application of the mechanization of time.

THE SECRET HISTORY OF CALENDAR REFORM

When you went to bed on October 5,1582 you woke up on October 16. In this way Pope Gregory XIII promulgated his reform of the Julian calendar, from which the Gregorian calendar differs not one whit, except for the precise working out of the formula for leap year. When this "reform" occurred, the time sensibility of historical man was already crippled and disabled. The Gregorian calendar, by its moment of

historicity, bound that crippled time disorder into its final institutional form, assuring that not only European man, but eventually all cultures and races dominated by European thought and conventions would assume and accept this deformed and deforming standard of time.

The mechanical clock, though evolved over many centuries, was perfected just after the Gregorian Calendar Reform of 1582 and promoted by Europeans as an example of the human triumph over nature. So it was that the human mind assumed as second nature its own invented time, encoded as a frequency that we have identified as the 12:60, an unconscious mental ratio determined by the irregular twelve-month calendar and artificial sixty-minute hour. The combination of these two factors in this one timing frequency have consigned historical man to a hopelessly debilitating mental disorder that is referred to as modern civilization, or nowadays, postmodern. But postmodern is not yet post-historical. Postmodernism is just the final convulsion of the time disorder that afflicts the human race as a virulent mental disease and encapsulates man in the technospheric cocoon of his own making. The only cure for such a profound and pervasive disorder is absolute harmony, the very harmony from which historical man so recoils.

In this light, it is well to know that through the first half of the twentieth century a vigorous and well-organized calendar reform movement flourished. Such was the character of this movement to reform the Gregorian calendar that in 1923 the League of Nations called for proposals for reform. More than 500 proposals were received; by 1931, these were narrowed to three:

> The International Calendar Organization, represented by Mr. Broughton Richmond, promoted a perpetual calendar based on the principle of five-five 73-day cycles = 365 days-and the year divided into twelve months of five 6-day weeks each plus a 5-day cycle [The Thirteen Moon calendar also includes the program of seventy-three 5-day periods-overtone chromatics-integrated with the fifty-two 7-day weeks: 52 x 7(+1) = 5 x 73.]

> The International Fixed Calendar League, represented by Mr. Moses Cotsworth, also supported by Eastman Kodak and the International Chamber of Commerce, promoted a perpetual Thirteen Month/28-day calendar, which was first presented by Auguste Comte (1842-1849), inclusive of the "day out of time." Though it was not backed by a more thorough mathematical science, which has now been supplied by the discovery of the Law of Time, this was by far the favored calendar, as it is the one that possesses a perfect structural harmony and obvious regularity of all its parts.

3. The World Calendar Association, represented by Elizabeth Acheles, promoted the World Calendar, a modified but perpetual version of the twelve-month Gregorian calendar, which also included the principle of a "day out of time" ("null day"). This group turned out to be the longest-lived and the most vocal, and was responsible for the publication of *The Journal Of Calendar Reform (1931-32).*4

It is instructive to read some of the early texts on the topic of calendar reform to see how the same issue of harmony and order brought up by the Law of Time was at the root of the call for the establishment of a perpetual, harmonic calendar. The base argument, as presented in Alexander Philip's *The Reform of the Calendar* (1914), is stated as follows:

> Suppose, for example, that by some strange convention the meaning of the figures we employ in numerical notation were to change every year; suppose the figure which this year represents 2 were next year to mean 3, next year 4, and so on; suppose again that our weights and measures were to fluctuate in a similar manner. . . then we affirm, without fear of contradiction, that the whole fabric of science and the mechanical arts could never have been raised at all. . . we should in such circumstances have been compelled to rest content today with the very simplest and most primitive appliances. Yet, strange as it may sound, such are the conditions under which, in modem society, human action is organized. For what is the framework. . . by which we arrange our actions? It is no other than the scheme under which we arrange our time-in one word, our calendar. . . [thus] the disorganized state of all social arrangements is ascribable to the calendar. . . The dislocation of our calendrical arrangements is due to two distinct causes. . . the incongruity of the week; [and] the irregularity of the lengths of the months. . .5

The argument made is a profound one, and was the motivating basis of the calendar reform movement in general, no matter which calendar was being promoted. It is fair to ask: Why do we expect a rigorous standard of uniformity in our measurements of space (size, weight, volume, etc.), but spurn or ignore the same requirement of uniformity in our measurement of time, especially the time that governs our everyday social arrangements and consciousness? How can we think that this would not have a profound underlying effect on the very nature and conduct of our society?

Most interestingly, as a movement calendar reform arose strongly during the proto-technosphere, between the two World Wars, only to be swept away by the clouds of war and the contradictory factions of disharmony in which modern
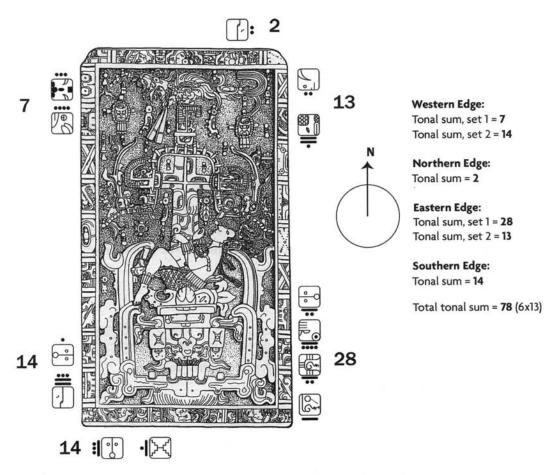
civilization was already immersed. Any effort at altering or changing the direction and motion of modern civilization is treated as a threat or derided as ineffectual activity that is scientifically unprovable or that will cost humanity too many dollars to make the change. Such was the fate of the first great calendar reform movement that arose with such fervor in the late nineteenth century only to find its ignominious end when the final debate on calendar reform was adjourned indefinitely by the United Nations Social and Economics Committee in 1956. No one reads about the calendar reform movement in the history books. Because debate on the matter was effectively adjourned, it is assumed that calendar reform is a dead issue of no relevance to the development of postatomic, technospheric man. On the contrary, seen in the dim light of the still-smoking ruin of the Twin Towers, the calendar reform arguments concerning humanity's irrational behavior and its relation to the "immorality" of a skewed timing measure, the calendar, as well as to an inhuman timing device, the clock, were never more relevant.

Not the least import of calendar reform is the opportunity to create a new basis for unifying humanity. As was stated in the "Resolution Adopted by the Fourth General Conference on Communications and Transit of the League of Nations," which took up the issue of calendar reform: "A great number of delegations expressed the opinion that any reform of the calendar could only be put into practice if it came into force simultaneously throughout the world, or at least in a very great majority of States, and it was for this reason that the study of this question had been placed under the auspices of the League of Nations."6

The tragedy of the human inability to agree on a matter so obvious to logic and reason is a testament to the already crippling effects of having operated so long under parochial, sectarian, and often disharmonic timing standards. While the International Chamber of Commerce, the League of Nations, and various international scientific bodies supported the first effort at reform in 1914-1956, the second movement, 1989-present, arose as a purely populist effort, but with an entirely different information base. Recognizing instinctively that the calendar reform issue is more than merely a matter of mathematical order in relation to natural cycles, it is a profoundly theological issue as well, the second reform movement also developed from a non-Western inspiration: the Mayan calendar.

While the psychology of the dominator civilization all but blurs out any other considerations of calendar besides the prevailing Gregorian one, an objective study of the matter demonstrates that the latter is a primitive instrument that eschews both natural cyclic order and any mathematical harmony. In place of the anachronistic standard of the Gregorian calendar, the second calendar reform movement raised

a new criterion, the Law of Time, a whole system principle that integrates the mathematical and the moral, the theological and the psychological, and the economic and scientific issues that are embedded **in** the entire topic of calendar reform. Precisely for the reasons of historical man's unconscious habituation to his own disharmonies and the accelerating and cumulative effect of this ignorance on the disorder of his own social life as well as the natural world around him, the second calendar reform movement has developed with a much greater moral and prophetic urgency.

Western Edge:
Tonal sum, set 1 = **7**
Tonal sum, set 2 = **14**

Northern Edge:
Tonal sum = **2**

Eastern Edge:
Tonal sum, set 1 = **28**
Tonal sum, set 2 = **13**

Southern Edge:
Tonal sum = **14**

Total tonal sum = **78** (6x13)

**Sarcophagus Lid of the Tomb of Pacal Votan
Showing Disposition of Thirteen Clear Signs**

The tonal sums (dot-bar code) of the thirteen signs are key to affirming the prophecy of the Thirteen Moon calendar. Note that the sums of the two sets on the eastern edge equal 28 and 13, while opposite the 13 set is the perfect 7. The tonal sums of the other two sets on the western and southern edge both equal 14, for a sum of 28. The northern edge has a single sign whose tonal sum is 2 twice 7 = 14, and twice 14 = 28; twice 13 = 26 fractal of 260 and code to the Gregorian date 7/26; while twice 28 = 56, the number of years from Hiroshima to the Inevitable Event.

"Consciously using the tool of the Thirteen Moon calendar to replace the erroneous measure of the artificial twelve-month calendar is, in itself, an unprecedented act of human self-reflective consciousness. Collective adaptation to the Thirteen Moon calendar is an intrinsic heightening of consciousness which rapidly awakens the telepathic programming inherent in human biology, frustrated for so long for not having been allowed development in the correct timing frequency."[7]

It was in 1987 that *The Mayan Factor: Path Beyond Technology* first brought to major public and international attention the possibility that a superior timing sensibility was developed by a thoroughly non-Western culture, the Maya. This book was published with scarcely any knowledge of the calendar reform movement that had gone into a debilitating coma in 1956. Yet, by pursuing the mathematical base of the Mayan calendar, the essence of the Mayan achievement, the Law of Time was extracted, a discovery that brought on the second calendar reform movement, the World Thirteen Moon Calendar Change Peace Movement. Prompted by a prophetic revelation concerning the Thirteen Moon!28-Day calendar decoded from the tomb of Pacal Votan, the premise of the second calendar reform movement was tested worldwide from 1993 to 2000, a time defined as the "seven years of prophecy." By the year 2001, the official beginning of the third Christian millennium, a loose, far-flung calendar reform movement, pioneering in the development of a new science of time and consciousness was promoting the Thirteen Moon!28-Day calendar worldwide.

A REVOLUTION IN TIME

> *"Fire in the lake, the image of revolution. Thus,*
> *the superior person sets the calendar in order and*
> *makes the seasons clear"*
>
>   *-I CHING,* HEXAGRAM 49, "REVOLUTION"[8]

By common consent, a calendar is a system for reckoning time. Virtually all current time-reckoning systems take account only of chronological or, better put, astronomical time-the movement of the Earth in relation to celestial bodies, the sun, moon, planets, stars, and constellations. This is a purely third-dimensional, physical consideration of time. The Law of Time affirms a higher order of time-the synchronic order. This is the time of the fourth dimension, which includes the chronological but enfolds it in a higher mental and mathematical order of reality. According to the Law of Time, what you don't know about the calendar you are using could kill you. By operating according to purely third-dimensional chrono-

astronomical timing standards and without knowledge of the synchronic order of fourth-dimensional time, humanity subjects itself to a one-sided view of reality that is hazardous to the planet and jeopardizes the future existence of the human species as well as all life on Earth.

To correct this situation a radical solution is required-a new calendar embedded in the synchronic order revealed by the discovery of the Law of Time. This is the significance of the Thirteen Moon/2 8-Day calendar-it epitomizes the incorporation of the chrono-astronomical order of time into the synchronic order, and hence provides the vehicle for humanity to escape its otherwise certain plunge into disaster within the next decade. When a dogma is encountered while one is engaged in the pursuit of truth, it must be challenged and abolished. Such a dogma is the calendar in use as the world standard, the Gregorian calendar. That this calendar, originally a system of thought peculiar to one people or religion, should dominate all the peoples and even life of the planet makes it subject to the critique of planetary anthropology.

The discovery that time is a frequency mathematically expressed as the ratio 13:20 requires a profound reorganization of all thought about time and the consequent reorganization of human society as a planetary organism. As the unified field theory of time, the Law of Time calls for the human synchronization in time predicated on the establishment of the Thirteen Moon calendar as the global civil standard replacing the current erroneous timing standard, the Gregorian calendar. This is a matter of the utmost seriousness, since it is also recognized that all belief systems are the function of programs locked up or embedded in the calendars or time-reckoning systems used by a people. The fate of the species and the biosphere may well depend on whether or not humanity is able to understand this point.

What is it about the calendars in use that condemns their users to endless conflict and inability to unify as a species? What is at the root of their disharmony? It is the pursuit of astronomical time. All people today are bound by calendars based on a pursuit of accuracy of astronomical time-the length of the year being the object of this pursuit. Astronomical time is a losing game of an ever-changing and elusive order that results in an entropic reductionism that has little to do with consciousness or synchronization. The year's length (measure of the orbit of the Earth around the sun) calculated by Pope Gregory XIII at 365 days, 5 hours, 48 minutes, and 20 seconds, slows at the rate of $1/2$ second per century, while the length of time in the Gregorian calendar is off from the "true" solar year by 25.9678 seconds per year! Obsessed with rectifying this discrepancy, in 1972 reductionist science came up with Atomic Time to replace Earth Time, and the atomic cesium clock replaced the measure of the year as 365.241299 days with 290,091,200,500,000,000 oscillations of Cs per year!

But what does this staggeringly astronomical figure mean, and of what value is it?

In profound contrast to this obsessive reductionism in which there is no place for spirit, mind, or consciousness, fourth-dimensional radial mathematics represents a mental order greater than and encompassing the astronomical order of the third-dimensional universe. According to the Law of Time, in time reckoning, consideration should be given to systems of the harmonic order of synchronic time that proceed from the radial mathematical order of the higher mind. The higher mind represents the evolved state of mind-the noosphere-that evolution on Earth tends toward, but that has not yet been attained. As long as the human concept of time is governed by the obsessive pursuit of the impossible to attain perfection of astronomical time, this pursuit and the civilization that it propels are doomed to failure. What is known as history is embedded in this pursuit of "fixing" astronomical time, which has culminated in the dogma of the Gregorian calendar and the microatomic measure of the cesium clock. When did this pursuit begin, why did it come to dominate the human species, and to what effect?

As we have seen, the values, customs, and norms of a nation, culture, or civilization are embedded in the calendar it uses. The Gregorian calendar, the current global civil standard-indeed, the foundation in time of globalization-is the calendar of the Caesars, of the Roman Empire, of the Catholic Church and the Vatican. To change this calendar is to change history itself. Can it be done? The League of Nations attempted this in the 1930s but failed. The United Nations tabled this effort in 1956. Since the United Nations adjourned the matter of calendar reform indefinitely, in 45 years the Earth's population has more than doubled, that is, it has increased by more than 3.2 billion people, a factor that is still out of control, and that may have much to do with the fact that humanity is actually in a fog about time.

The reasons for wanting to replace the Gregorian calendar are no less valid today. The Gregorian calendar is not a standard of measure. It lacks logic and reason. It numbs and befuddles the mind when trying to make calculations by it. It is shrouded in an arcane and medieval obscurantism. The net effect of the use of this calendar is to perpetuate a fundamental level of mental confusion and ignorance concerning the actual nature of time itself-an ignorance that is hardened into dogma by the unwillingness of habit to consider any other possibility, but rather to accept the entire system as second nature. The argument that it encodes the most accurate and scientific measure of the solar orbit of the Earth is irrelevant in relation to the effect of its irregular measure on the mind and its numbing power as the dogma of a conquering people. Indeed, the solar measure of 365.241299 days per year has nothing intrinsically to do with "30 days hath September. . . ," and vice versa. In fact, the

measure of the Earth's orbit is one matter; the purpose of calendars and time reckoning as factors of synchronization is a wholly other matter. But then, since the very nature of a culture or a civilization is determined by the calendar it keeps, the use of a deformed standard can only inhibit and skew even the questions one asks about time.

The failure of calendar reform by 1961, the year of the Vatican II Council, only promoted an increasingly complacent acceptance, however cleverly disguised, of a millennial dogma, the Gregorian calendar. In the conclusion to the "last word" on the subject, *Calendar: Humanity's Epic Struggle to Determine a True and Accurate Year,* David Duncan summarizes, "We take in stride a calendar [the Gregorian] that is flawed but endures, largely because it works just fine for most of us, and it is what we are used to."9 It is not at all objective to accept something because we are used to it. This attitude is anything but scientific. Rather, it is the smug basis of nothing more than a self-fulfilling dogma-and yet the civilization that bases itself on this aberrant timing measure prides itself as being the most scientific in all history!

THE CONFUSION OF IRREGULAR TIME

Due to this flawed time sensibility, it may be concluded that humankind today is little capable of moral reason or logic, which itself is a result of, or at least strongly reinforced by, habituation to a timing standard that is irrational and illogical. Anytime we overlook or dismiss a fault due to habit, or simply because we are accustomed to the use, say, of an instrument, even if that instrument is demonstrated to be flawed and irregular, is evidence of a moral laziness that will eventually contaminate the entire consciousness that accepts and accommodates itself to the flaw. The exercise of truth is a moral prerogative. The fact of the matter is that the Gregorian calendar is a hodgepodge of flaws and accretions, rationalized into a systematic formulization that has no basis in reality. The celebration of Easter is a case in point.

Easter is the celebration of the day Christ was resurrected from the dead. It may be logically assumed that this occurred on one and only one particular day, just as the celebration of his birth occurs on Christmas Day (although, similarly, no one really knows that this was the actual date of his birth). By the time the Christian religion had become an established force within the Roman Empire, however, no one knew precisely on what day the Resurrection had taken place. The Council of Nicea, convened by Constantine in A.D. 325, called for a debate on the matter in which various theories were presented. The debate was concluded with the victory of one conjectural system over the other. The winning system stated that Easter

would be celebrated on the first Sunday after the first full moon after the spring equinox, except when the full moon was on a Sunday, in which case it would be celebrated on the following Sunday, and this was so that it would not be celebrated on the same day as Jewish Passover.

Over the centuries this conjectural theory regarding the date of Christ's resurrection was buttressed with a system of elaborate calculations for predicting when Easter would occur. These calculations were all made with regard to establishing an alignment of the synodic lunar cycle of 29.5306 days (which resulted in a lunar year of 354.3672 days) and the solar year of 365.241299 days! Being fortified with such elaborate mathematical calculations did not lessen the fact that the system was originally-and still is-a mere speculation of a highly clever but relative nature. Thoroughly embedded in the Julian-Gregorian calendar, the system of determining Easter is inseparable from the Gregorian calendar itself, and is one of the chief reasons for the resistance to its reform-as witnessed by a reading of the calendar reform arguments of the 1930s. The entire system of this calendar, inherited without question from the Caesars of the Roman empire, is actually nothing more than a form of self-perpetuation of a priestly hierarchy that includes in its support a host of bankers, industrialists, and scientists and the elaborate social system that is under their control-the technosphere of global civilization itself. Take away the calendar and the entire structure loses its foundation.

"If the Julian/Gregorian calendar was to be offered as a new device for measuring time, we, with our present knowledge and state of living, would reject it as something utterly impracticable, lacking in harmony and order, unbalanced and irregular, too clumsy a calendar to make calculations by, while the various sections are not comparable."10

A science or any scientist that unquestioningly follows the Gregorian calendar is, in reality, not worthy of the name. What is science? A concern for logic and precision of measure, we might answer, as well as standards of measure that utilize uniform units of measure in accord with what is being measured. Yes, the year is calculated as being 365.241299 days in length, but if the annual standard of measure that is used is irregular and unscientific, then it avails nothing, and indeed deforms the mind leading it down byways that may only end in self-destruction. Thus the pursuit of a true and accurate year in itself may be an illusory pursuit, blinding us to the actual nature of time, and leading us away from a genuine understanding of ourselves and our role and purpose on this Earth.

To change and replace the calendar with the thirteen moon standard is to return us to our original purpose, leading us back to pathways of harmony and natural

health. According to the Law of Time, the damage already inflicted in the time humanity last hesitated and lost the chance to alter its timing frequency, forty years ago, has been incalculable. The final opportunity to change the calendar and the timing frequency is now upon us. Because of this we must be very clear and unshakable in our understanding and determination to expose and eliminate the current civil calendar for once and for all. Even apologist David Duncan's unabashedly pro-Gregorian book *Calendar* (1999) concludes with its time line on the date 2012, "Current Mayan Great Cycle will end."ll But will we also end? By 2012, it will be too late to change. We must begin to change now.

In reviewing the quirks and twists of history that constitute the Gregorian calendar, we must ask: Why do we continue to use such an instrument, and what are its effects? Is a calendar something more than a tool for scheduling the payment of debts *(calends),* or is it an instrument of synchronization? The harmony or disharmony of time is a profound matter rooted in the instrument of time reckoning that we use. There can be little question that we live more in a time of chaos than of harmony. We may also say in regard to the effect of standards of measure on the mind, that the chaos of the time is embedded in the calendar we use. If we are to leave this time of chaos and enter a time of harmony, then we must exchange the instrument in which the chaos is embedded for an instrument that is the very model of harmony-the Thirteen Moon/2 8-Day count. This is the choice humankind must now make.

The issue of the nature of time, or of the times in which we are living, cannot be separated from the issue of the calendar. The very nature of the calendar that the world follows has stunted the mind and warped the body's innate timing sensibility, reducing the understanding of time to being merely a matter of chronology. "Chronology is a register or reckoning of successive years, a time scale. It may also be described as a system of registering time massively."12 Virtually all time reckoning has proceeded from astronomical indicators, the major exception being the Maya, who actuated from a solely mathematical outlook. Yet with this mathematical outlook the Maya devised a chronological method that has never been surpassed, a fact attested to by many, including the architects of the Kitt Peak Observatory in Tucson, Arizona, where a mosaic mural depicting the civilization of the Maya asserts the superiority of their calendar over that of the Europeans.

It is significant that the earlier calendar reform movement, while occasionally acknowledging the brilliance of the Maya, made no use of the Mayan knowledge. But this was because the time sensibility was restricted to thinking of time solely in terms of chronology, or at best as a schedule for keeping good accounts, with little
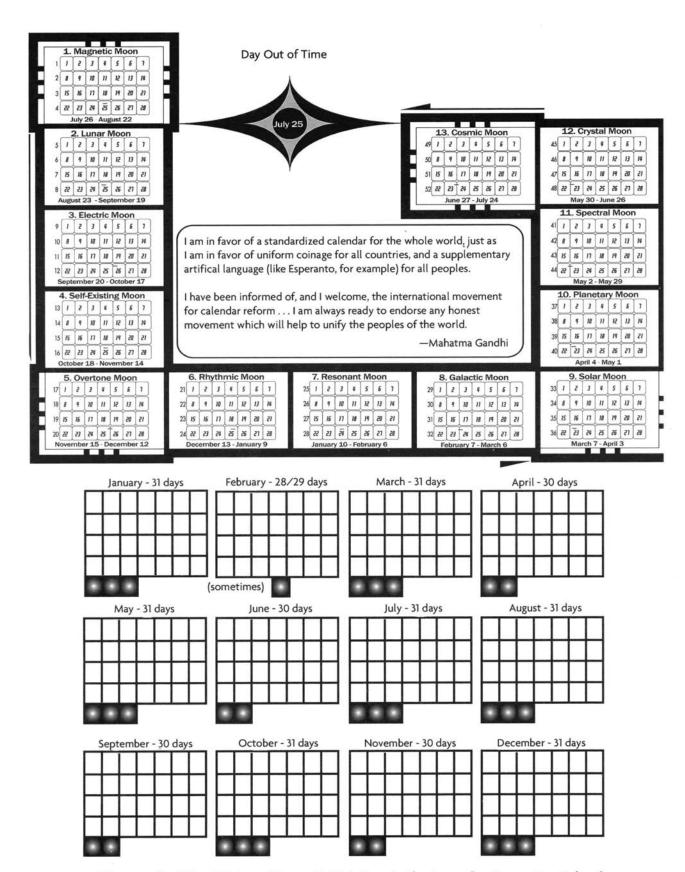
comprehension   at all of the synchronic   nature or order of time. And since the system of chronology   was synonymous   with the system of control embedded   in the Gregorian calendar system, the earlier reform movement   failed altogether   to make any impact on the Vatican, much less on the global power structure   itself.

All the thought,   action, and good intention   put into the years of calendar reform notwithstanding,   the Gregorian   calendar   prevailed,   and, tragically, not one of the proposals   or recommendations   was ever even considered   for adoption by the papal authorities   who maintain   control over the calendar.   In the 1930s, the propaganda   of the Church   was aimed at limiting any possibility of reform, for it would not give up the succession   of the seven-day week. In any perpetual   calendar, such as the Thir- teen Moon/2 8- Day calendar, the observance   of the Day Out of Time is necessary for maintaining   the harmony   of the fifty-two weeks that complete   themselves in 364 days. The continuous   succession   of the week does not stand in a constant   relation with the other elements of the calendar and is one of the main causes of confusion   in the Gregorian   calendar.   Arguing   that such a break as a Day Out of Time, no day of the week at all, would plunge the world more deeply into chaos, barbarism,   and war, the Vatican effectively blocked all effort at reform. The completion   of the century of total war, capped by the Inevitable   Event, roundly refutes this point. It may just as easily be argued that because we did *not* change the calendar, we are now plunged into the final barbarism   and unholy war.

When   the Vatican II Council in 1961 affirmed   in its backward   and highly re- strictive language that it was not opposed to reform, so long as such reform did not disrupt the seven-day week and respected the tradition of Easter as a "movable feast," the door to reform slammed shut. By this time all the early reformists   had literally died out and the question of calendar reform appeared to have become one of the buried issues of history.

What the priests of the Catholic Church thought they had buried through an auto-da-fe   in Izamal, Yucatan, 1562, and overcome   through the imposition of the Julian-Gregorian   calendar   over the conquered   Maya, returned with the precision of prophetic timing in 1987. The publication   of *The Mayan Factor* not only opened the door to a new look at the Maya, but also to an understanding   of time that was anything but chronological.   A new dimension of time appeared-radial,   fractal time, the synchronic   order. And behind the reassessment   of the nature of time was the provocative   call of Mayan prophecy-the   end of the thirteen baktun Long Count, 2012.

The Law of Time defines the human problem as being one of radical and de- structive dissynchronization   from natural time, resolvable only by a return to natural

Day Out of Time

July 25

1. Magnetic Moon

1	1	2	3	4	5	6	7
2	8	9	10	11	12	13	14
3	15	16	17	18	19	20	21
4	22	23	24	25	26	27	28

July 26 - August 22

2. Lunar Moon

5	1	2	3	4	5	6	7
6	8	9	10	11	12	13	14
7	15	16	17	18	19	20	21
8	22	23	24	25	26	27	28

August 23 - September 19

3. Electric Moon

9	1	2	3	4	5	6	7
10	8	9	10	11	12	13	14
11	15	16	17	18	19	20	21
12	22	23	24	25	26	27	28

September 20 - October 17

4. Self-Existing Moon

13	1	2	3	4	5	6	7
14	8	9	10	11	12	13	14
15	15	16	17	18	19	20	21
16	22	23	24	25	26	27	28

October 18 - November 14

> I am in favor of a standardized calendar for the whole world, just as I am in favor of uniform coinage for all countries, and a supplementary artifical language (like Esperanto, for example) for all peoples.
>
> I have been informed of, and I welcome, the international movement for calendar reform . . . I am always ready to endorse any honest movement which will help to unify the peoples of the world.
>
> —Mahatma Gandhi

13. Cosmic Moon

49	1	2	3	4	5	6	7
50	8	9	10	11	12	13	14
51	15	16	17	18	19	20	21
52	22	23	24	25	26	27	28

June 27 - July 24

12. Crystal Moon

45	1	2	3	4	5	6	7
46	8	9	10	11	12	13	14
47	15	16	17	18	19	20	21
48	22	23	24	25	26	27	28

May 30 - June 26

11. Spectral Moon

41	1	2	3	4	5	6	7
42	8	9	10	11	12	13	14
43	15	16	17	18	19	20	21
44	22	23	24	25	26	27	28

May 2 - May 29

10. Planetary Moon

37	1	2	3	4	5	6	7
38	8	9	10	11	12	13	14
39	15	16	17	18	19	20	21
40	22	23	24	25	26	27	28

April 4 - May 1

5. Overtone Moon

17	1	2	3	4	5	6	7
18	8	9	10	11	12	13	14
19	15	16	17	18	19	20	21
20	22	23	24	25	26	27	28

November 15 - December 12

6. Rhythmic Moon

21	1	2	3	4	5	6	7
22	8	9	10	11	12	13	14
23	15	16	17	18	19	20	21
24	22	23	24	25	26	27	28

December 13 - January 9

7. Resonant Moon

25	1	2	3	4	5	6	7
26	8	9	10	11	12	13	14
27	15	16	17	18	19	20	21
28	22	23	24	25	26	27	28

January 10 - February 6

8. Galactic Moon

29	1	2	3	4	5	6	7
30	8	9	10	11	12	13	14
31	15	16	17	18	19	20	21
32	22	23	24	25	26	27	28

February 7 - March 6

9. Solar Moon

33	1	2	3	4	5	6	7
34	8	9	10	11	12	13	14
35	15	16	17	18	19	20	21
36	22	23	24	25	26	27	28

March 7 - April 3

January - 31 days

February - 28/29 days

(sometimes)

March - 31 days

April - 30 days

May - 31 days

June - 30 days

July - 31 days

August - 31 days

September - 30 days

October - 31 days

November - 30 days

December - 31 days

Wavespell of the Thirteen Moons in Relation to the Irregular Gregorian Calendar

time through the perfect and perpetual harmony of the Thirteen Moon calendar. With the analysis of the Law of Time, there is an even greater urgency and a more profound certainty. Reform is not only insufficient but also impossible. If the calendar is not changed within the next decade, it will be the end of civilization as we know it. There is a genuine and legitimate need to bring the issue of calendar reform into the public eye once again.

Yes, to change the calendar involves a frequency shift. The collapse of the technosphere will dispose the human mind to rethink its options. It may even reorient the human mind to a consideration of the biosphere as being the greater vehicle in which we, as humans, are being carried. Such a massive change in attitude, a mind shift and a paradigm shift, may arouse in the human breast a spiritual reawakening as well. Harmony is spirituality. By changing the calendar, humanity can know it has turned a page of destiny-an act that may cause it to appreciate what has already been written in a book it had not been inclined to study, the Holy Quran:

> God is the One who raised the heavens without pillars that you can see, then assumed all authority. He committed the sun and the moon, each running in its orbit for a predetermined period. He controls all things, and explains the revelations that you may attain certainty about meeting your Lord. He is the One who constructed the earth and placed on it mountains and rivers. And from the different kinds of fruits, He made them into pairs-males and females. The night overtakes the day. These are solid proofs for people who think. (13:2-3)

In this passage we can find ample evidence of the formal order of the Law of Time and the biosphere-solid proofs. As for the "people who think," do they not then constitute the noosphere?

▼

7

Humans—Noospheric Chips:
Consciousness and Reality Redefined

"And conquered by the sense of the earth and human sense, hatred and internecine st'ruggles will have disappeared in the ever-warmer radiance of Omega. Some S017:of unanimity will reign over the entire mass of the noosphere. The final convergence will take place in peace. „

—PIERRE TEILHARD DE CHARD IN,
THE PHENOMENON OF MAN!

Once begun, the exhaustion of the technosphere is irreversible. The exponential growth curves of money, machine production, energy output, and population increase come to a climax. By 2004 the humans will be at another major crossroads: to go wholeheartedly into the harmony of the noosphere, or to suffer the rest of their decline in an ignominious twilight of terrorism, barbarism, and cultural anarchy. By 2004 the humans will have their last opportunity to change their macro-organizing principle. By relinquishing the artificial time held in place by the old calendar and becoming unified in time under a calendar that is a perfect harmony, humans will enact the coming of the noosphere. Only harmony will bring harmony; only harmony will cancel the errors of history, a manifest disharmony. Only an act of harmony can manifest the noosphere. Only this time-changing act, consciously carried forward by a significantly roused number of humans, will create a mental field so positive and

constructive as to engender the radical break that leads to an entirely new cycle of existence of the life on Earth: the noosphere. Entrance into the noosphere of harmonic time through the calendar change will be much like going from a black-and-white movie to one in Technicolor. The difference between the new time and the old time is literally like the difference between Heaven and Hell.

September 11, 2001: the Twin Towers collapse, creating a rupture in the technosphere. Everything comes to a halt. The New York Stock Exchange is closed for four days-a virtually unprecedented event. All commercial airline traffic in America is halted for two days. Even the United Nations postpones the opening of its fifty-sixth General Assembly by three weeks. Six weeks after September 11 a new, sinister form of war is engulfing the technosphere. The Americans assert the right to mercilessly bomb Mghanistan in self-defense. The response of war is the final self-destructive impulse of the techno sphere to protect itself, but this will only widen the effects of the suicidal blow it has already sustained. The war will only make definite that it is the last climax of the biogeochemical combustion engendered by the pursuit of an error in time.

The rupture in the technosphere is the break in artificial time, and therefore amounts to the opening of a noospheric fissure-an inrush of cosmic consciousness and a moment of simultaneously heightened natural time. When the towers collapsed, belief systems shattered. Because it was viewed on global television, it was an event witnessed by all humanity and it entered through the optical cortex into the brain, arousing potent images from the subconscious. This is a noospheric act because it is the entire mind of the whole species that receives this single image in one simultaneous moment. In that shattering image, however unconscious, the noosphere immediately entered the field of human consciousness, much as a leak in a boat allows water to come rushing in. From the perspective of the noosphere, the technosphere is a medium of transformation resulting from the pursuit of a distorted perception of time. With the destruction of the Twin Towers, the transformation is complete; following the war, the technosphere can be creatively dismantled.

THE NOOSPHERE: RAINBOW BRAIN OF TIMESHIP EARTH

What is the noosphere? Can we define the noosphere more precisely so that it is a less nebulous term? Can we make the noosphere concrete enough so that it may be understood and accepted as the coming new way of a higher level of everyday normalcy? First of all, let us say that the noosphere has existed as long as life has existed on this Earth. In this sense, the noosphere is the sum of the mental interactions of all life. The mental interactions, or field of mind, exist as a great unconscious medium,

inseparable from the Law of Time. That is, if all life and the phenomenal world of the biospheric medium are synchronized by the Law of Time, then the programs of the organization oflife, from the periodic tables to the DNA code, will also be synchronized by and embedded in the mathematics of the Law of Time. Being a function of the whole system of the Earth and integral to the functioning of the biosphere as an interplay of cycles in which organic and inorganic interact with a set order of chemical transmutations, the noosphere must also be the mental coordinating field or program of this complex of vital interactions. It must, therefore, be a characteristic of biospheric evolution that the noosphere remains unconscious until a significant moment is reached-the climax of the cycle of biogeochemical combustion, the enactment of the biosphere-noosphere transition.

As the Earth's mental field, it must be an act of collective self-reflection that arouses the noosphere into functioning consciousness. By its definition as the mental envelope of the Earth, the noosphere can come into conscious manifestation only through an act of collective self-reflection, such as the proposed calendar change. Also, as the mental envelope of the Earth that is above and discontinuous with the biosphere, the noosphere-mind sphere--can mean only one thing: the advent of universal telepathy among the humans. The Internet can be seen as a third-dimensional reflection of the noosphere, a form of electronic proto-telepathy. But, ironically, as long as the humans hold on to the Internet, they cannot experience the true evolutionary potential of genuine universal telepathy. The point is that telepathy can only function in a field of reality that is synchronized by the natural 13:20 timing frequency. Time and telepathy are mutually defining factors dependent on unity of thought. The humans have chosen a path of disunity, so that their calendar programs clash and are at odds with each other and with natural time. This maintains the technosphere, destroys the biosphere, and keeps the noosphere in the unconscious. But now, with the Inevitable Event, the break has occurred and the shattering of the Dreamspell of History has begun. The noosphere's rainbow brain leaks back into human consciousness.

The rainbow brain of the noosphere-what is that? As the mental envelope of the Earth, the noosphere possesses a structure ordained by the Law of Time and congruent with the structure of the whole Earth. Within the noosphere are to be found the evolutionary control panel or programs, defined as the *psi bank-the* medium of information storage and retrieval for all the mental programs. The noosphere is the field of planetary consciousness in which humans are intended to participate and complete their evolution. However, operating by artificial time is like looking through a glass darkly. This being so, there is no noosphere to see. Humans generally experience consciousness through the chinks in their sensory prism, conditioned

by separatist beliefs, making it most difficult to attain a perception or experience the field of consciousness as coextensive with the Earth. Indeed, if the biosphere is the region on Earth for the transformation of cosmic energies, the noosphere is that region of the Earth for the reflection of cosmic consciousness and its mental programs. Seen through the lens of universal synchronized time, the humans accommodating to a single instrument of time measurement are inherently sharing a single thought form. It is that act of self-reflective convergence that makes the noosphere conscious and draws it toward the resplendent omega point of 2012 and beyond.

As with all the other geochemical structures and processes of the Earth that are planetary in nature, the noosphere, the rainbow brain of Earth, actually has a coherence and an order that we may define in a precise way. In so doing we shall redefine the nature of human reality and the human being itself. We must enlarge our lens of perception to encompass the whole Earth as a single being. In relation to this single being of the Earth, the individual human is hardly even a speck. The dimensions and proportions by which we commonly measure reality must also expand to accommodate the vast dimensions of the Earth as a single entity, a planetary geocosm within the solar field, the heliosphere. Since the sun is also a star, the heliosphere is a function and member of the galactic order of being. As the mental "thinking sphere" of this planetary being, Earth, the noosphere is above and discontinuous with the biosphere, the hydrosphere, and the atmosphere. It is contained by and functions within the vast invisible electromagnetic field of the Earth. Though the ionosphere is the lowest level of the electromagnetic field system of the Earth, the main structures of this field are the two radiation belts located 2,000 and 11,000 miles above the Earth. It is within the two radiation belts that the control panels of the noosphere are to be found-the psi bank.

KIN: BIPOLAR BASE MEASURE OF THE 13:20 MATRIX

"And He is the One who created the night and
the day, and the sun and the moon; each
floating in its own orbit. "

                                        -QuRAN, 21:33

In the simplest aspect of our daily experience of time on Earth we have the full play of the law of alternation-day-night, sun-moon, north-south. Because we know the bipolar nature of the Earth, dividing it into two geomagnetic fields, north polar and south polar, we can then define the complementary bipolar field of time, which divides the cycle of the Earth as it makes one rotation on its axis into one day and night. This

entire unit, day and night, is defined as a *kin,* the base unit of synchronic time measurement. From the perspective of the noosphere, day and night are a function of the two alternators-day alternator and night alternator-that operate as the phasic motion of the rainbow brain of the noosphere working in tandem with the electromagnetic field. The two phasic alternators regulate the activation of photons (day) and the regeneration of photons (night) within the entirety of the life process of the biosphere.

THE NOOSPHERIC FOURFOLD/EIGHT-PART STRUCTURE

"He created the heavens and the earth truth-
fully. He rolls the night over the day and the
day over the night. He committed the sun and
the moon, each running for a finite period.
Absolutely he is the Almighty, the Forgiving."
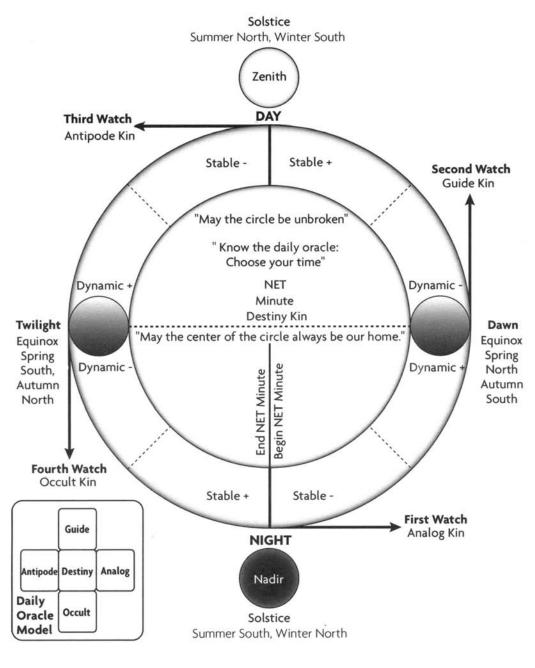
-QURAN, 39:5

"We rendered the night and the day two
signs. We made the night dark and the day
lighted, that you may seek provisions from
your Lord therein. This also establishes for you
a timing system, and the means of calcula-
tion. We thus explain everything in detail. "
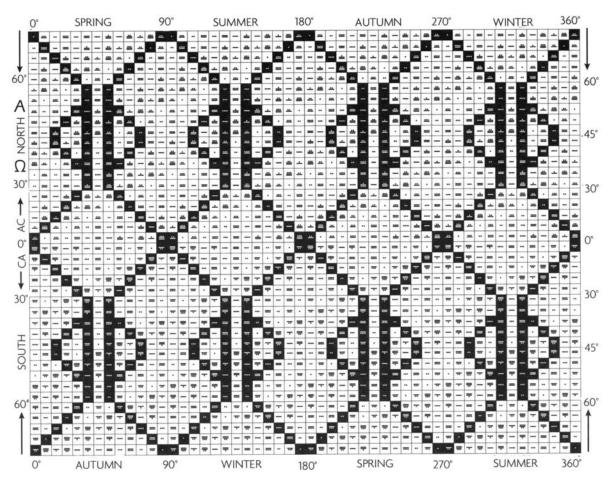
-17:12

Since the two alternators are also in interplay with the bipolar magnetic fields of the Earth, a four-part process is revealed that is magnetically distributed as an overall eight-part structure. The unit of one kin divides the rotational cycle of the Earth in its orbit into four distinct phases daily and annually. The four daily points are defined by: the dawn, when the part of Earth you are in first experiences the solar photonic activation; the high noon (zenith), when the part of Earth you are in is in closest direct relation to the sun; the twilight, when the photonic activation ceases and the sun disappears from view; and midnight (nadir), the point at which the point of Earth you are on has rotated to its farthest distance from the sun, the height of the cycle of photonic regeneration. This daily process is mimicked in the four points of equinox and solstice, where for either hemisphere the equinoxes are the same as the points of dawn and twilight and the solstices correspond either to high noon or to midnight. Because of the magnetic polarity of the Earth, the four-part process is

Solstice
Summer North, Winter South

Zenith

DAY

Third Watch
Antipode Kin

Stable −   Stable +

"May the circle be unbroken"

" Know the daily oracle:
Choose your time"

Second Watch
Guide Kin

Dynamic +

NET
Minute
Destiny Kin

Dynamic −

Twilight
Equinox
Spring
South,
Autumn
North

Dynamic −

"May the center of the circle always be our home."

Dynamic +

Dawn
Equinox
Spring
North
Autumn
South

End NET Minute   Begin NET Minute

Stable +   Stable −

Fourth Watch
Occult Kin

First Watch
Analog Kin

NIGHT

Nadir

Solstice
Summer South, Winter North

	Guide	
Antipode	Destiny	Analog
	Occult	

**Daily
Oracle
Model**

Four-Part Bipolar Kin:
Four daily watches,
Four annual seasons—
Two points of balance
Two points of return

Net Minute Model

**Psi Bank—Four Bipolar Plates Accommodating NET Time
Autoregulatory System of the Noosphere**
(from *Earth Ascending,* Map 1)

simultaneously experienced in opposite phases, that is, winter in the North is summer in the South-hence the four-phased process yields a bipolar eight-fold structure.

This four-part day-night seasonal process defines the structure of the four psi bank plates, which also coordinate the four-year cycles of the Earth. The psi bank plates, the "nervous system" and control panel of the noosphere, are a complete function of the 13:20 timing frequency and thus participate in the systematic regularity of the fourth-dimensional synchronic order. This means that the psi bank is the registration within the Earth's magnetic field of the 13:20 timing matrix by which all life and the planetary evolutionary process as a whole are regulated. Simulating the four-part process of the Earth rotating on its axis in time, four stages per day, four seasons per year, in four-year cycles-not to mention the four phases of the moon-four psi bank plates accommodating the bipolar field yield eight 260-unit 13:20 frequency information matrices.

That is, each of the four psi bank plates conforms to a mirror symmetry of the bipolarity of the Earth's magnetic field. Each plate is divided by mirror symmetry into a 260-unit Northern and a 260-unit Southern hemispheric half, for a total of two bipolar matrices and 520 units per plate, or 2,080 (520 x 4) units in all. These units are referred to as *psi chrono units* or *time-bearing information units.* The information for the different sequences of the Earth's biogeochemical evolutionary processes is all regulated by these time-bearing information units.

We have to understand that through the medium of universal cosmic time the Earth, the Sun, and every star, constellation, and galaxy is coordinated in this way by the synchronic 13:20 frequency of time. It is the 13:20 frequency that establishes holonomic consistency in time throughout the universe. The Earth's noosphere is a lens of time. All cosmic information is focused through this lens. It is this noospheric lens of time that makes Earth into a geocosmic thought form.

The noospheric lens of time and mind has been operating ceaselessly-but unconsciously-since the beginning of the evolution of the Earth. Since the noosphere is a function of the universal synchronic timing frequency, its conscious activation must also come about through a superior mental coordination with this correct synchronizing timing frequency. The psi bank 13:20 frequency is consciously activated and registered at the human level by the mental engagement of the 13:20 matrix as enacted through the 260-day cycle. The interaction of the 260-day galactic cycle with the 365-day solar biotelepathic cycle defines one noospheric year, or one solar-galactic cycle of fifty-two human years (= fifty-two 365-day solar orbits = seventy-three 260-day galactic cycles). This great noospheric coordination of fifty-two solar orbits with seventy-three galactic cycles is fractally present in a single solar orbit, where fifty-two 7-day weeks = seventy-three 5-day cycles known as chromatics. What is important in coming to understand the noosphere as Earth's geocosmic time lens and rainbow brain, is that we must change our perspective altogether from anthropocentric to noospherocentric, and in this way evolve into *Homo noosphericus.*

THE CYCLES OF NET TIME

For the noosphere, the rainbow brain of planet Earth, time is different-it is slower and longer. From the noosphere's point of view, what we call a year is a solar orbit. What we call a day is a single rotation of the Earth on its axis. The cycles of the moon are the lunar phasings that calibrate the synchronization of the Earth in time. The Earth is not a spaceship. The Earth is a Timeship. As a Timeship, the Earth is a function of the master synchronization frequency that coordinates and moves it in

time through ever greater circles of inclusiveness and syntropic integration. Seen through the noospheric lens of time, the technosphere is a highly exaggerated acceleration of the biogeochemical continuum through highly artificial and resource-depleting means-it is but a smoking bubble whose fragile struts and frets are laced together by transport and communication systems that yield a cacophony rather than a harmony. And for this reason, the disharmony of the bubble ultimately explodes upon itself, releasing Earth from the prison of false time into the fresh air of real time and the advance into the geocosmic splendor of the noosphere. Synchronized with the galactic cycles, the noospheric mind of the whole Earth is reckoned far differently from the artificial units of measure that condition the anthropocentric notions of time evolved in the era of *Homo historicus.*

Here is how the fourfold process of Earth in time is reckoned by the noosphere. Please note that in Noospheric Earth Time (NET), time is universal synchronization. At any given moment, it is always the same noospheric moment in time on

---

Table of Noospheric Earth Time Units
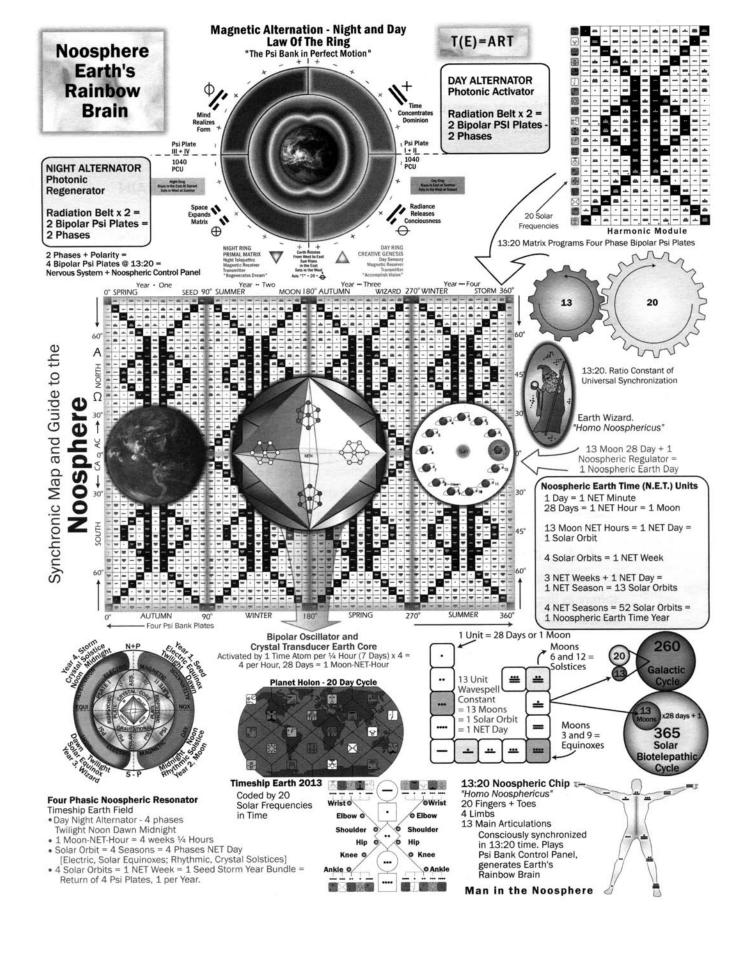
1. One Noospheric Earth minute =1 day-and-night rotation of Earth on its axis =1 kin.

2. Twenty-eight Noospheric Earth minutes = 1 Noospheric Earth hour = one moon of 28 kin. where every 7-day week = 1/4 Noospheric Earth hour =7 kin.

3. Thirteen Noospheric Earth hours (moons) = 1 Noospheric Earth day = 365 kin (days) = 1 solar orbit. or 1 human year (= 13 NET hours x 28 minutes + 1 NET minute, "Day Out of Time:')

4. Four Noospheric Earth days = 1 Noospheric Earth week = 4 solar orbits (years) = 1,460 kin (days).

5. Three Noospheric Earth weeks plus 1 Noospheric Earth day = 1 Noospheric Earth season = 13 solar orbits or 13 human years.

6. Four Noospheric Earth seasons =1 Noospheric Earth year =52 solar orbits (52 human years) = 73 260-day galactic cycles = 18,980 kin (days).

7. Five Noospheric Earth years = 1 Noospheric time chord = 260 solar orbits.

8. Twenty Noospheric time chords = Vs Noospheric evolutionary subcycle = 5,200 solar orbits = 1 Noospheric Century of 100 Noospheric Earth years.

9. Five Noospheric evolutionary subcycles = 1 galactic evolutionary day = 26,000 solar orbits = 5 Noospheric Earth centuries or 500 Noospheric Earth years of 52 solar orbits each.

Earth. Whether that moment is experienced on the night or day side of the Earth, that moment is simultaneous and encompasses both sides of the Earth at once. This is true not only because time is the factor of synchronization- $T(E) = Art,$ where art is the result of any synchronization-but also because the velocity of time is infinitely instantaneous. By thinking that the Earth really does conform to the 24 hours of the clock, the humans have retarded their time sensibility, and consequently their artificial processes have become increasingly artless. In considering the N oospheric Time measurements, remember that as a human you are but a cell in the biospheric organism-or, as we shall see, a chip of the noospheric rainbow brain.

As the measure of the mind of the Earth, the N oospheric Earth Time (NET) reckoning units coordinate consciousness as a planetary, or, more accurately, a solar-planetary phenomenon. For instance, if one NET day is a single 365-day solar orbit of the Earth, dawn of the noospheric Earth day is experienced as the spring equinox, but the noosphere is bipolar. So the dawn is also simultaneously the autumn equinox or twilight of the other polar magnetic half of the Earth. To fully engage and grasp such a thought is to expand the limits of consciousness. Like dolphins who never sleep but only rest half of their brain at a time, so it is with the rainbow brain of the noosphere. Such consciousness has nothing to do with the workings of the everyday egoistic human consciousness, which can understand things only according to a limited frame of reference defined by its own limited and highly conditioned ego needs. The geocosmic consciousness of the noosphere can be apprehended only as a single telepathic unity in and by which all members of any given species or organism are organized. To consider that the noosphere itself could become the organizing principle of the human species as a whole is to engage in conscious mental evolution.

Small aboriginal prehistoric bands of humans experience an unconscious level of this geocosmic noospheric mind. Dolphins, other mammals, and all animal species experience this noospheric mind. Even trees and crystals are organized by this noospheric mind of time.

Homo historicus, however, slowly but inexorably cut himself off from the noospheric mind of time by substituting erroneous instruments of measure, or instruments of measure that were incomplete in relation to the noospheric time cycles. The result was the exponential surge in biogeochemical combustion that characterized the final baktun cycle, culminating in the fifty-six-year blister of artificial time, the technosphere. The fact that the time blister popped eleven years before the end of the cycle of *Homo historicus,* 2012, means that *Homo noosphericus* is ready to emerge from the shattered cocoon of false time. Liberated from artificial time and from the technosphere itself, and enrolled in the natural time of telepathy, the human will experience

Magnetic Alternation - Night and Day
Law Of The Ring
"The Psi Bank in Perfect Motion"

T(E)=ART

DAY ALTERNATOR
Photonic Activator

Radiation Belt x 2 =
2 Bipolar PSI Plates -
2 Phases

Φ Mind Realizes Form

Time Concentrates Dominion

Psi Plate III + IV
1040 PCU

Psi Plate I + II
1040 PCU

Night Ring
Rises in the East At Sunset
Sets in West at Sunrise

Day Ring
Rises in East at Sunrise
Sets in the West at Sunset

NIGHT ALTERNATOR
Photonic Regenerator

Radiation Belt x 2 =
2 Bipolar Psi Plates =
2 Phases

2 Phases + Polarity =
4 Bipolar Psi Plates @ 13:20 =
Nervous System + Noospheric Control Panel

Space Expands Matrix

Radiance Releases Conciousness

NIGHT RING
PRIMAL MATRIX
Night Telepathic
Magnetic Receiver
Transmitter
"Regenerates Dream"

Earth Rotates
From West to East
Sun Rises
in the East
Sets in the West
Axis "T" = 20

DAY RING
CREATIVE GENESIS
Day Sensory
Magnetic Receiver
Transmitter
"Accomplish Vision"

Harmonic Module
13:20 Matrix Programs Four Phase Bipolar Psi Plates

20 Solar Frequencies

13   20

13:20. Ratio Constant of
Universal Synchronization

Earth Wizard.
"Homo Noosphericus"

13 Moon 28 Day + 1
Noospheric Regulator =
1 Noospheric Earth Day

Synchronic Map and Guide to the Noosphere

Year • One   Year • Two   Year • Three   Year • Four
0° SPRING   SEED 90° SUMMER   MOON 180° AUTUMN   WIZARD 270° WINTER   STORM 360°

A Ω ↑ AC CA ↓

60° NORTH 45° 30° 0° SOUTH 30° 45° 60°

MEN

Sun

0° AUTUMN   90° WINTER   180° SPRING   270° SUMMER   360°
← Four Psi Bank Plates

Noospheric Earth Time (N.E.T.) Units

1 Day = 1 NET Minute
28 Days = 1 NET Hour = 1 Moon

13 Moon NET Hours = 1 NET Day =
1 Solar Orbit

4 Solar Orbits = 1 NET Week

3 NET Weeks + 1 NET Day =
1 NET Season = 13 Solar Orbits

4 NET Seasons = 52 Solar Orbits =
1 Noospheric Earth Time Year

Bipolar Oscillator and Crystal Transducer Earth Core
Activated by 1 Time Atom per ¼ Hour (7 Days) x 4 =
4 per Hour, 28 Days = 1 Moon-NET-Hour

Planet Holon - 20 Day Cycle

1 Unit = 28 Days or 1 Moon

Moons 6 and 12 = Solstices

13 Unit Wavespell Constant
= 13 Moons
= 1 Solar Orbit
= 1 NET Day

Moons 3 and 9 = Equinoxes

20 13   260 Galactic Cycle

13 Moons x28 days + 1   365 Solar Biotelepathic Cycle

Four Phasic Noospheric Resonator
Timeship Earth Field
• Day Night Alternator - 4 phases
  Twilight Noon Dawn Midnight
• 1 Moon-NET-Hour = 4 weeks ¼ Hours
• Solar Orbit = 4 Seasons = 4 Phases NET Day
  [Electric, Solar Equinoxes; Rhythmic, Crystal Solstices]
• 4 Solar Orbits = 1 NET Week = 1 Seed Storm Year Bundle =
  Return of 4 Psi Plates, 1 per Year.

Year 4. Storm Crystal Solstice Noon Midnight   N+P
Year 1 Seed Electric Equinox Twilight Dawn
ALTERNATOR MAGNETIC AXIS
PLATE IV III II
BIOPSYCHIC PLATE
CRYSTAL CORE
GRAVITATIONAL
PSI
EQUI   NOX
ELECTRO SOLAR MAGNETIC DAY
Twilight Dawn
Solar Equinox
Year 3. Wizard   S-P   Midnight Noon Rhythmic Solstice Year 2. Moon

Timeship Earth 2013
Coded by 20
Solar Frequencies
in Time

13:20 Noospheric Chip
"Homo Noosphericus"
20 Fingers + Toes
4 Limbs
13 Main Articulations
  Consciously synchronized
  in 13:20 time. Plays
  Psi Bank Control Panel,
  generates Earth's
  Rainbow Brain

Wrist Wrist
Elbow Elbow
Shoulder Shoulder
Hip Hip
Knee Knee
Ankle Ankle

Man in the Noosphere

noospheric organization into psychic biomes. Through the psychic biomes-collectives of communities coordinating their bioregional network according to the structure of the "thought moments" of noospheric time-the human will fully evolve the Earth as a planet with solar-galactic consciousness.

ELECTROMAGNETIC WORKINGS OF THE EARTH'S RAINBOW BRAIN

What we call the cycles of time are the thought moments of the Earth. These thought moments coordinate the complex orders of Timeship Earth, understood as a whole system. Because the operating mechanism of the noosphere that governs the Earth's cyclic thought moments is inseparable from the general structure and functions of the electromagnetic field in which it is located, we may refer to a *rainbow brain* of the noosphere. Why is this so?

Let us return to the structure of the noosphere, Earth's mind in time. Consisting of the four bipolar psi bank plates, these four synchronic time plates are located between the two radiation belts, that is to say between 11,000 and 2,000 miles above the biospheric surface of the Earth. With the location of its information time-bearing mechanism between the radiation belts, the noosphere must by necessity operate in tandem with the electromagnetic field as it is regulated by these two master radiation belts. What do these belts do? They emanate Earth's electromagnetic aura, and function as a protective shield around the Earth. They do this by trapping solar-cosmic radiation, keeping much of it from hitting the biosphere directly, channeling it instead through the Earth's magnetic poles into the Earth's core.

In the polar regions excess cosmic radiation, including electrically charged plasmas and solar discharges from coronal mass ejections, is released into the atmosphere as the auroras-aurora borealis (or northern lights) in the North, and aurora australis (or southern lights) in the South. The increased solar activity during the most recent and current sunspot cycles has enhanced and extended the auroral activity in recent years far beyond the polar zones. In addition, since 1987 great influxes of plasma into the solar system have intensified the incidence of spectral plasmic activity within the atmosphere itself. This amounts to an increase in rainbows, halos around the sun, and brilliantly colored clouds. While these phenomena may be explained to a certain degree as meteorological effects (the angle of the sun's rays, moisture in the atmosphere, and so on), is there more to a rainbow than meteorological side effects? And what relation is there between the noosphere, the electromagnetic field, and the increased plasmic-rainbow activity?

Again, seen from the perspective of whole Earth, the rainbows and spectral plas-

mic effects, including the auroras, are the free energy released by the noosphere. Rainbows are to the noosphere what toxic waste is to the technosphere. The noosphere itself implies a mental field that is interacting with the electromagnetic field. The Earth's electromagnetic field is actually the strongest of all the planets in the solar system. The only other planet that has a field approaching the strength of the Earth's field is Uranus. If the Earth's electromagnetic field is the strongest, is this an indication of the strength of the noosphere as well? If the rainbows, auroras, and other spectral plasmic activity are a demonstration of the free energy released due to the interaction of the noosphere and electromagnetic fields, and the noosphere is the mental envelope of the planet, inclusive of the as-yet-to-be-unified mind of the human species, what forms of free energy might be released if the human mental field were operating as a single unity in the correct timing frequency?

One other mechanism crucial to the entire system of noosphere and electromagnetic fields is the crystal core at the center of the Earth. In the 1970s Russian scientists put forth the idea that the Earth is crystalline in nature, an idea that extended Plato's notion of the Earth as a dodecahedron, one of the five "platonic solids." The idea was that the Earth's surface was held together by a field of resonance that corresponds to the crystal resonance of certain geometrical solids. R. Buckminster Fuller also gave play to this notion in his description of "spaceship earth." Then in the 1980s American seismologists confirmed that the core of the Earth is actually a gigantic iron crystal structure in the shape of an octahedron, elongated at its ends, which point to the North and South Poles.

From the point of view of fourth-dimensional time, the planet Earth is another manifestation of space as an infinitely locatable point, an orbiting body upon which all the vectoral programs of cosmic time may be unfolded. Understood as a Timeship, the Earth's structure is constructed to facilitate its travel in time on a particular route in space in conformity with its relation to the local star, the sun, to the other planets of the solar system or heliosphere, and in synchronization with the universal timing constant 13:20, which maintains the Earth in the synchronic order. The role of the magnetic octahedral crystal core is to function as the bipolar oscillator and crystal transducer whose purpose is to maintain the Earth in the synchronic order of the 13:20 timing frequency. Thus, if the Earth's noosphere contains the 13:20 timing programs of the psi bank, and the crystal bipolar oscillator is meant to maintain the Earth's space body in the synchronic order, obviously there is a resonant relation between the crystal core and the noospheric-electromagnetic field programs.

The transductive properties of the crystal allow it to transform energy from one state to another. The crystal core also stores electronic plasmas that travel to it from the

Earth's poles through an electromagnetic flux tube system. Within the crystalline core, the electronic plasmas are transduced into information. This is the information of time understood as cosmically transmitted thought forms. These plasmic thought forms conform to programs already established in the psi bank of the noosphere. These are the Earth's thought forms, the cycles of the Earth's brain waves, as it were, that allow it to maintain its biospheric programs and to evolve its mental field, the noosphere. The very descriptions of the Noospheric Earth Time (NET), and of time itself as a synchronous instantaneity inseparabJe from telepathy, are examples of the Earth's thought forms transduced through a human biocomputer and then transmitted into a form of human language for the purpose of communication. Keeping this description of the noospheric brain in mind, let us return to our analysis of the biosphere-noosphere transition.

MAKING THE NOOSPHERIC LEAP: TRANSFORMATION OF HUMANS INTO NOOSPHERIC CHIPS

The transition to the noosphere is experienced by Earth as a crisis because its systems are stressed. Since the Earth functions as a whole system, stress on one component of the system actually stresses the whole order. Let us review the cumulative stress points. Human 12:60 electromagnetic activity has perturbed and distorted the electromagnetic field. The release of free energy due to geochemical combustion adds to this stressful distortion through the depletion of ozone in the ionosphere and global warming. The radioactivity released into the atmosphere adversely affects the resonant field of the DNA, already driven by the 12:60 frequency to accelerate the multiplication and propagation of the human biomass throughout the biosphere. Through its artificial means, the machine, the human further upsets the inherent balance maintained by the pressure that the species exert upon each other, resulting in mass species extinction.

Yet all this is according to an evolutionary program that is intended to bring about an ultimate crisis by which the biosphere snaps into becoming the noosphere. Clearly, if the root of this crisis is the deviation of the dominant species operating according to an artificial timing mechanism at odds with the universal timing frequency, then the stabilization of the transition to the noosphere will come about through the dominant species consciously "returning" to the correct timing frequency. This it can only do by adhering to a macro-organizing program that puts the human species completely in the 13:20 frequency.

If the whole system analysis seeks to locate the flaw in the operation of Times hip Earth, then we must finally declare that this flaw is the human civilization in its entirety, as it is maintained by erroneous and artificial timing constructs. Since the

noosphere, the mind of time on Earth, defines the next evolutionary cycle, and because the humans are following a course dictated by being in the wrong time, calendar reform is the eye of the needle through which humanity must pass in order to get to the noosphere. Only by fully manifesting the noosphere will the Timeship Earth be truly put back on course once again. The noosphere is the program of time on Earth. Time is all that the noosphere has to give us. In consideration that the artificial time of the technosphere has fundamentally run out, the noospheric time should be a welcome gift.

Science is always absolutely precise. It is not just calendar reform that is the eye of the needle through which to pass into the noosphere-it is the Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar calibrated by the 260-day Wizard's Count, synchronized to the Gregorian calendar date, July 26, that provides the exact ticket of admission into the noosphere. And then this ticket must be used at just the right moment-when the show is ready to begin. To use another metaphor, there is a lock on the door to the noosphere, and there is only one key that will fit and unlock this noospheric gate. That key is the Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar, correlated to July 26 on the Gregorian calendar. It is the precisely applied use of this Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar that will make each human a noospheric chip of the rainbow brain. This is because the Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar is the key with the precise design for not only opening but also for continuing to operate the noosphere through a matching of the everyday frequency of time with the frequency of the noospheric control panel, the psi bank.

It is because the daily program of the Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar is embedded in the 13:20 frequency that the consciousness of the humans will finally change and rise above the stunted level by which it is currently maintained in the artificial world of the technosphere. Time is of the mind, and the natural time registered by the Thirteen Moon/2 8-Day calendar is the opening to the geocosmic mind of the universe, which adherence to artificial time has kept the human from experiencing. The noosphere is the fractal lens of this geocosmic mind on Earth. Since the geocosmic mind is purely a function of the Law of Time-energy factored by time equals art, where the 13:20 synchronizing ratio of time is characterized by infinitely instantaneous velocity-then the fundamental nature of this mind is telepathy.

The Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar is, therefore, the perfectly designed instrument to make the noospheric leap into telepathy, the planetization of consciousness that establishes the daily reality of the noospheric mind. Since the noospheric mind interacts with the electromagnetic field, and because the ratios and cycles of the Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar conform to the fractals and ratios of the NET, by using this calendar the human becomes transformed into a noospheric chip. The

fractals and ratios of NET become the normative operating cycles of the human in its daily reality. This accounts for an increasing noospheric synchronization that allows the noospheric chip to attain its purpose: generating the Earth's rainbow aura. If the free energy of rainbows is to the noosphere what the free energy of toxic waste is to the technosphere, then the generation of the rainbow implies a type of activity on the part of the human to produce such free energy. To understand what this activity might be and how it works, we must first understand the morphic and holonomic relation between the human noospheric *chip-Homo noosphericus-and* the structure of the noosphere itself as it is programmed into the geocosmic measure of the Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar.

HUMAN BEINGS AS FRACTAL REFLECTORS OF THE 13:20 MATRIX
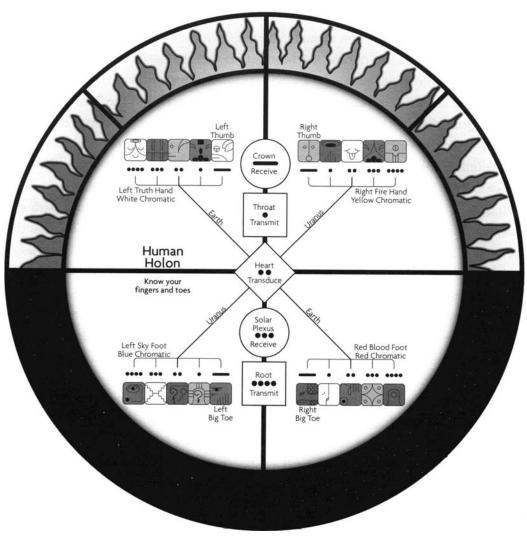
From the noospheric perspective, the prototype human is an embodiment of the 13:20 synchronization factor. The human has four limbs. Each of the four extremities has five digits, for a total of twenty fingers and toes that distinguish the human's operational capacity. The four limbs conform to the fourfold phasic operation ofNoospheric Earth Time, while the twenty digits conform to the 20 (4 x 5) factor of the 13:20 ratio. The human also has thirteen main joints or articulations: two ankles, two knees, two hips, two wrists, two elbows, and two shoulders; these six pairs coordinate the four extremities with the body, while the thirteenth articulation, the neck and spinal column, coordinates the body proper. These thirteen main articulations plus the twenty digits of the hand and feet conspire to make the human the perfect exemplar of 13:20 timing frequency, that is, a perfect model of synchronization itself.

Add to this the fact that the human has a highly evolved and refined brain and nervous system that is maintained and expressed by the skeletal structure of the thirteen joints of the body and limbs, completed by the sensitive mechanism of the twenty digits, and we see that the human is the perfect biocomputer for processing the information of the instantaneously telepathic geocosmic mind. The means to process the geocosmic information, and also the means by which the human is transformed into the noospheric chip, is found in matching its factors of daily synchronization and intelligence with those of the psi bank, the noospheric control panel. This is called harmonic arrangement of the synchronic order.

Of course, this description of generalized structure, activity, and interaction of the *Homo noosphericus* with the noosphere as such presupposes an entire reorientation of the goals and methods of being human. Such a reorientation of the human is also a function of making the radical change from the erroneous measure of the twelve-

month Gregorian calendar, in which are embedded all of the Babylonian programs of history, to the perfect history-less harmony of the Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar- the mere change of calendars encompasses a mental frequency shift. The readiness to make this change depends on the degree of moral revulsion the human experiences during the collapse of the technosphere. This moral revulsion would then correspond to a turning in the deepest seat of consciousness, which would then dispose the human intelligence to a consideration of the untried solution-change the calendar!

The Thirteen Moon calendar is the NET instrument for daily synchronization and unification of the human species as a single organism in time. Once adopted to the correct measure of this instrument, the human will de facto trigger the noosphere as an operating system of absolutely higher consciousness and mental order. **In** fact, the purpose of human evolution is precisely to become the ignition of the noosphere,

Human Noospheric Chip

and thence to become normalized as the noospheric chips that maintain the operations of the noosphere. As a truly planetized being and consciousness, *Homo noosphericus* will engage in an order and type of reflective activity undreamed of in the technospheric era that is now passing.

First, by adapting to the daily NET timing instrument, the humans will be utilizing a "calendar" that correlates both a 365-day solar biotelepathic cycle and a 260-day galactic synchronization cycle. When the lunar phases are added to the interaction of these two cycles, then the human is able to enjoy the harmonic richness of time-the noosphere. The synchronizing and interactive measures of the counts of the solar and galactic cycles yield multiple levels of harmonic orders of time (Earth's "thought moments") that will activate aspects and levels of consciousness hitherto dormant in the human mind. The very mental act of replacing the order of twelve by the order of thirteen is a profound one. How is this so? Could it be that the whole of civilized history itself is based on the fear of the number *thirteen-triskaidekaphobia,* epitomized in the superstition about Friday the thirteenth-and that, therefore, dealing with the true nature of time has been avoided altogether?2

Currently humans operate by a world standard whose measure includes: seven-day weeks, inclusive of the notions of the 5-day work week and the 2-day weekend; an irregular distribution of twelve months of either thirty-one, thirty, or, in one instance, twenty-eight days; all set within a longer annual cycle that concludes with its visionless moment of New Year's Eve. Many Gregorian calendars will include the phases of the moon, but because the months differ in length there is no way in these calendars of seeing how the phases of the moon might be synchronized with the measure of Earth's orbit around the sun, nor is there any reason to consider that the uneven measure of twelve months has anything intrinsically to do with the solar orbit. Within the twelve-month structure of the Gregorian calendar, weeks, months, and phases of the moon all appear to be haphazard and arbitrary. Such a disorderly order can only bode an undercurrent of uncertainty and fear for the human mind.

By contrast, in the measure of the thirteen moons of twenty-eight days each, the 13 corresponds both to a 13-day cycle and to the cycle of the number of months (moons) per year. The measure of the 7-day week (a NET quarter hour) becomes an orderly harmonic: four perfect weeks occurring each moon, fifty-two perfect weeks each year, each week always beginning and ending on the same day of the week, week after week, year after year, while in fact every day of every moon occurs on the same day of the week, year after year. The effect of such a harmonic regularity on the human mind is incalculable. This is what is meant by a *perpetual calendar.* And to maintain this perfect regularity, the 365th day of every year (solar orbit), is no day of
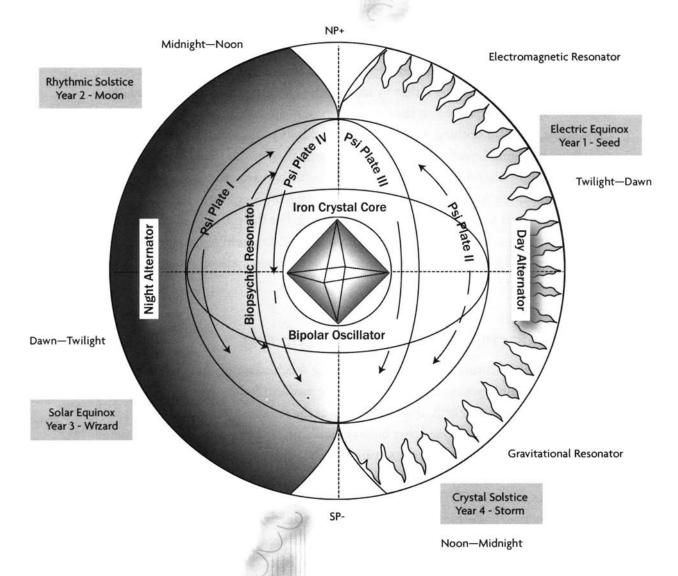
the week at all, but a Day Out of Time, a day for the human to be refreshed in utter timelessness.

Realizing that a day is actually a kin or one NET minute, the measure of one rotation of Earth on its axis, a 4-day cycle of four NET minutes constitutes a harmonic, a 5-day cycle constitutes a chromatic, while the 13-day cycle corresponds to one *wavespell,* the time constant that accommodates the measure of thirteen. Hence, a wavespell can be either thirteen days, thirteen weeks, thirteen moons, thirteen years, or so forth. The point is that by making the change of calendars the foundations of the mind organized in time are irrevocably altered. From the noospheric perspective, there is nothing arbitrary about the laws of nature. The same lack of arbitrariness should be reflected in the instruments that we use to measure time. By adapting to the Thirteen Moon/28-Day measure, the humans are adapting to a measure in which there is nothing arbitrary because it is a pure expression of the Law of Time. Thirteen is not at all a harbinger of bad luck, but the gateway to harmony in time! And it is by using this thirteen-based harmonic instrument of measure that the human is realized as a noospheric chip, a fractal of the noospheric mind, the mind of time on Earth.

NOOSPHERIC CHIPS: WIZARDS OF GALACTIC TIME

In the noospheric construction of the operating mechanism of the Timeship, the human is a vital link, providing the biotelepathic medium for the synchronization of the geocosmic mind on Earth. If we look again at the structure of the noosphere, the components include: the crystal core bipolar oscillator, packed with Technicolor time beams and cosmic thought moments, waiting to be self-reflectively realized; the human noospheric chip, the representative of the biosphere to mentally engage the timing cycles of the NET; the electromagnetic field, which provides the medium of expression between the biospheric order, the human, and the noospheric mind of time; and the noosphere itself, the mind of time on Earth, whose articulation through the psi bank control panels and through the Earth's resonant field structure yields an enlarged measure of Earth consciousness, Noospheric Earth Time itself. In expanding our minds into the noosphere we will understand that what lives is the Earth and the Earth lives through us.

As a noospheric chip, the human is a fractal reflector of the 13:20 timing frequency. Midway between the bipolar oscillator and the noospheric psi bank plates, the human noospheric chip is designed to receive, transduce, and transmit programs from the crystal core by synchronizing these programs with the psi bank.

**Four-Phasic Noospheric Resonant
Field Model, Timeship Earth 2013**

Three resonators establish the gravitational, electromagnetic, and biopsychic fields
held in place by the crystal core, the bipolar oscillator.

Two poles extend the bipolar field of Earth, which, guided by the day-night alternators,
create the four-phasic noospheric field model.
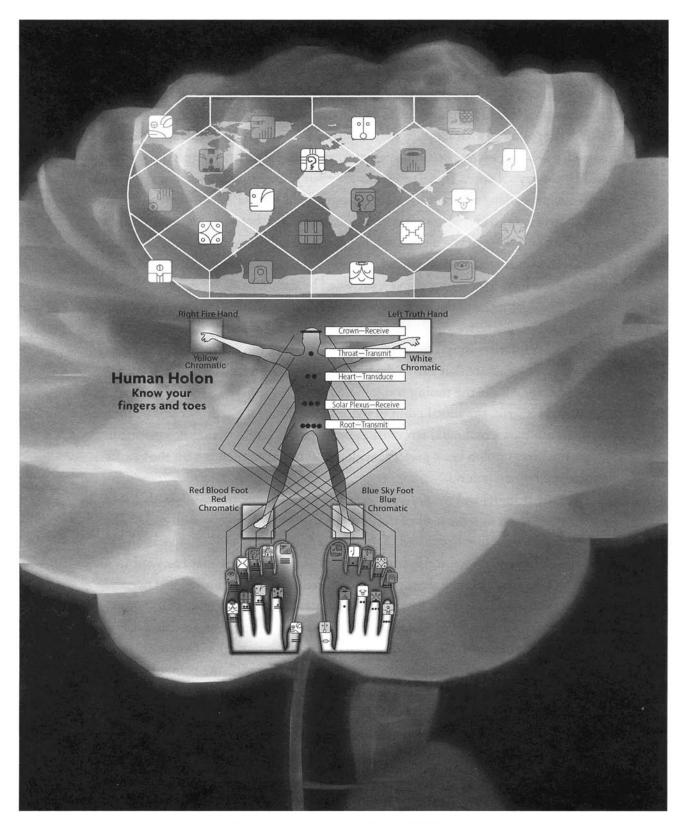
Four psi plates govern the four phases, from daily NET minute to seasonal NET day,
and to the four-part NET week, or Seed-Storm year bundle.

This is a process that can occur only within the construct of the regular harmonic sequence provided by the noospheric timing gauge of the Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar. Interaction with the crystal core can only be through telepathic means, and the human-as the midway point between the core and the electromagnetic fields-is like a sensitive piece of litmus paper. To understand the human in this way is to totally redefine the reality of what it means to be human on Earth. From this perspective, the human is a biocomputer whose information source feeds it programs stored and emanated by the crystal core. These programs are then brought into conscious registration through working the corresponding programs of the psi bank. Right now, we don't know what the crystal core is emanating, much less that such a structure exists within the Earth. Like a crystal radio-set, the noosphere is the antenna, the geocosmic programs are transduced and generated at the crystal core, the human is the biocosmic tuner, and the broadcast transmission is provided by the psi bank.

The 13:20 template of the human noospheric chip is defined as the human holon, its twenty digits and thirteen main articulations conforming perfectly to the geocosmic 13:20 synchronization frequency of universal time. It is the intrinsic resonance of this geocosmic structure that allows the human to be in resonance with the planet as a whole system. While the timing programs to be broadcast are all loaded in the psi bank control boards, the actual point in space of the physical Earth is coded by time into a twenty-part icosahedral structure called a planet holon. Being holonomic in nature, the planet holon has a perfect incidence of correspondence with the twenty digits of the human holon.

The twenty digits and twenty-part structure of the planet holon are both coded by the twenty icons or solar seals of the 260-day galactic synchronization cycle. The icons or seals are the manifestations of the 20 (4 x 5) factor of the 13:20 synchronization ratio. They are coded for human legibility as simple icons that conform to a postliterate alphabet. In time these twenty icons create a fourth-dimensional twenty-day solar cycle which interacts with the 13-day galactic cycle to create the 260 unit synchronization sequence or "galactic spin." The point is that when this galactic spin is synchronized with the 365-day solar-lunar measure of the Thirteen Moon count, there is a daily program for identifying the human with the planet holon, a factor that facilitates the planetary resonance of the noospheric chip.

As a noospheric chip, the human is in every way a holonomic reflection of the whole system Earth. As a system of resonators-gravitational, electromagnetic, and biopsychic-the human and the Earth both have bodies with a center of gravity; both exhibit electromagnetic fields; and both share in common a biopsychic resonance, the mutual interface of the noosphere or mind of time with the other two

Planet Holon—Timeship Earth 2013

fields of resonance. The redefinition of the human according to the Law of Time and to the nature of the noosphere also redefines the human's reality. What will the human do when history has been eliminated from the calendar and the new calendar itself is actually operated as a synchronometer-a measure of synchronicity?

First of all, as the necessary prelude to galactic culture, the absolute synchronization of the human in geocosmic time, the technosphere will be dismantled. Reorganized by the Law of Time into psychic biomes, the dismantling will naturally phase into the genuine creation of the new culture of solar-galactic consciousness. "Path beyond technology" means path of telepathic harmony. With its goals absolutely reoriented following the mental pole shift of the calendar change, the hierarchy of human values will also undergo a profound reordering. What if money were no longer the first consideration in human affairs? What if the consideration were instead how artful or artistic that action or event might be? What if the diaspora of humanity through industrialization and mass transport came to an end and the humans willingly chose to live in smaller communities organized by gardening and other Earth-related activities, inclusive of the transformative dismantling of the technosphere and the regeneration of the biospheric medium? What if the study of time replaced the study of physics as the dominant mode for determining the nature of reality? And what if, due to the time shift, a spiritual awakening swept through the human race so that a moral orientation of values was organized around the preservation and furtherance of the biosphere, and an acknowledgement that only One Supreme Creator could have ordained something so perfect as the noospheric mind of time? What kind of world would that be? What kind of art would be practiced in that world and what kind of science would be known?

Organized by the NET, human existence would spiral into the collective telepathic mind. A type of Earth geomancy would become the science of the noosphere. Or perhaps a more accurate name for this science would be *Earth geochronomancy*-the study and investigation of Earth in relation to the cycles of cosmic time and telepathy with an end to perfecting the Earth as a work of art. With minds expanded toward accommodating the longer, slower measure of NET, geochronomancy would inspire an entirely new vision of the Earth within the heliosphere (the solar system) and the galactosphere (the galactic order of things). Making the Earth's rainbow brain visible and manifest would be only the beginning of a willingness to explore further untapped psychic energy sources and means, or what is referred to in *Earth Ascending* as the science of radiosonics. Key concentrations of human habitation and activity would be organized to occur at or close to those geomagnetic energy points or centers, the whole cultural process of which would correspond to making a map

on Earth of the image of galactic being as it moves in its great patterns of time. Would this not make the human species into a race of wizards?

In this consideration we may find a reason why the 260-day unit galactic synchronization measure-a galactic spin-is the key to what is called the *Wizard's Count.* The perfect synchronization of the 260-unit galactic spin with the 365 -day Thirteen Moon/28-Day solar orbit establishes the 52-year cycle, or one NET year. A NET year (fifty-two solar orbits) is a "wizard's measure," for on this measure the human can expand its consciousness to encompass the Earth in its greater cycles of development. The Wizard's Count is also given its name because of the set of the four solar icons or seals that code the July 26 synchronization date in 4-year cycles: year one, Yellow Seed year; year two, Red Moon year; year three, White Wizard year; and year four, Blue Storm year. An entire Seed-Moon- Wizard-Storm sequence of four NET days (four solar orbits) consists of fifty-two moons, or one NET week, the perfect fractal of the fifty-two 7-day weeks in one NET day and the fifty-two solar orbits in one NET year. This four-part sequence is also called a Seed-Storm year bundle, the harmonic essence of the wizard's measure. Thirteen Seed-Storm year bundles, where each of the four icons is coded by the thirteen galactic tones (4 x 13 = 52), yield one NET year. Please note that even the Gregorian July 26 synchronization date is a function of the synchronic order: July = 7, while 26 is 13 doubled, 7 and 13 being the two principle numbers governing the 13:20 matrix of the Harmonic Module!

In the symbolism of the iconic sequence it is the Seed that is planted, it is the Moon that coordinates the growth cycles, it is the Storm that generates the energy, and it is the Wizard who knows and acts upon what is given. It was a White Galactic Wizard that coded the date and coordinated the year beginning July 26, 1987- followed twenty-one days later by the Harmonic Convergence. Thus it was the White Galactic Wizard who opened the gates to the closing of the Mayan baktun cycle of history and the commencement of the coming cycle of galactic culture. And on July 26,2003, the year of the White Spectral Wizard will commence. This year will end with its Day Out of Time, coded by the White Spectral Mirror. The day following, July 26,2004, will begin the year of the Blue Crystal Storm. On the Wizard's Count, which is not a calendar but a synchronometer, these two dates, White Spectral Mirror and Blue Crystal Storm, are the point in time when the Gregorian calendar ticket to the old time will be eliminated and the new Thirteen Moon calendar ticket for admission to the new time of the noosphere will be validated. This is when the noospheric show will be ready to begin its prelude. (See plate 6, Noosphere-Mind of Time on Earth.) Will the humans also be ready?

▼

144.　　• Humans-Noospheric　Chips

Making the Transition to the New Time

A How-to Catalog and Guide to the *Pax Cultura, Pax Biospherica*

BY THE TIME these words are read, the technospheric collapse will have generated several more devastations and disasters. The wound received by the technosphere on September 11 was a mortal one. The technosphere suffered cardiac arrest for almost a week. Not only did the towers collapse, an event that occurred via television within the central nervous system of the human species, but belief systems, too, came crashing down. No longer is America the unassailable fortress of "democracy," while democracy itself is a concept that joins monarchy, nation states, imperialism, colonialism, capitalism, communism, and a host of other outmoded systems of belief and thought constituting the saga of human history-that is, the history of civilization. But all that is now ending. The perimeter of biogeochemical combustion and the limits of the technosphere have coincided. It is the Earth's turn to speak. How will the Earth speak?

The Earth can only speak through the noosphere, and the noosphere can only speak from the center of time that is constructive peace. Peace is harmony. Peace is the culture of the biosphere. The conscious harmony of time in the biosphere is the culture of peace known as the noosphere. Through the noosphere, the Earth speaks in ever-widening circles of order and meaning. While sunrise and sunset mark the passage of solar time, observing the phases of the moon keeps us in tune with the

mystery of time. One kin, one passage of night and day, one NET minute, synthesizes the experience of the whole Earth during a single rotation on its axis. The synchronic order supplies a 260-unit synchronization gauge that the mind may engage and employ in the construction of a harmonic vision of reality. Twenty-eight NET minutes make one moon, one NET hour, moon after moon. The pattern of one moon contains the construct and pattern of every moon. The harmonic perfection of the synchronic order of reality releases the mind through the center of time into a freedom it had not known in the dark passage of history. How are we going to make this transition? Can we really shake off the old and the obsolete that easily?

THE THIRTEEN MOON CALENDAR MOVEMENT:
THE DAWN OF A NEW GALACTIC CULTURE

"Greetings Explorers on Timeship Earth!" reads the opening text of the pocket-size *13 Moon Natural Time Journal.* "Welcome to this 13:20 natural time portal and fourth-dimensional galactic time template. A solar-lunar Earth calendar of the 13:20 timing frequency that is expressed through the thirteen tones of creation and the twenty sacred solar tribes. Attuning to this calendar will help you awaken and align to the pulse of the Universe, the rhythm of the One heartbeat. 13:20 is the natural timing frequency that unifies planetary and galactic consciousness. . . It is the expression and remembrance that Time is Art . . . By attuning to the 13:20 frequency of natural time, we break out of the 12:60 time warp and activate the remembrance of our true human nature. Time is energy. It is a frequency of the fourth dimension; mind, telepathy, imagination, and creation. Time is an exploration of unlimited Universal potential. So let us begin the journey and return to the rhythm of nature's galactic heartbeat. . ."1

This is the Earth speaking through a noospheric chip. Produced in Canada, it is one of many Thirteen Moon calendars produced this Yellow Solar Seed year. Others have been produced in Germany, Austria, Italy, Russia, the Netherlands, Japan, Brazil, Argentina, Chile, Mexico, and the United States. One such example from the United States is known as the 13 *Moon Natural Time Calendar: Ancient Science for the Art of Now.* Going through its pages one is flooded with a wealth of information, summarized by a quote from traditional Hopi wisdom: "We now face the final test of human consciousness-to restore our oneness with creation. We are going home. It is a process. It is like the seed becoming the green shoot and then the flower."2 To make the calendar change is to restore the oneness with nature. The break with the oneness with nature was codified and thence programmed into an irreversible reality

by the Gregorian calendar and mechanical clock. Only the breaking of the pattern of time established by these two instruments will release us again into natural time. The Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar exists as the tool to demonstrate the contrast between harmony and disharmony, and to assist us, as a species, into effecting this return. If we are going home then we must make a turn away from our present course.

Through returning to natural Time, we return to our natural state of divinity, living in harmony with the Earth and each other. We return to the nature of our spiritual existence. Realigning with the rhythm of the universe through the 13 Moon Calendar allows us to lay the foundation for the new paradigm of love and unity, replacing the 12:60 paradigm of fear and separation. . . The World Calendar Change Peace Plan strives to establish a new culture of peace on Earth through returning humanity to natural time. It is the goal of the worldwide Foundation for the Law of Time to effect the calendar change by the Day Out of Time (July 25), 2004 . . . Join the global movement to effect planetary £hange and establish the new culture of peace on Earth! Return to divinity and creative existence. . . Walk the path of the sacred warrior.]

The movement to change the calendar is a living force, a force that is living the New Time. Its premises are so diametrically opposite to those of the technosphere that, especially in the power bases of America and the G-7, one will find scant mention or notice at all of this movement. Yet it is a cultural phenomenon. In Tokyo, San Francisco, Milan, or Moscow one may find signs of the presence of this movement in the underground dance events, the raves or the Earthdance. More and more young people take on the names of their galactic signatures, the 260-day kin code for their date of birth in the synchronic order, names like Lunar Storm or Spectral Night, Galactic Wind or Planetary Dragon. These are all signs of the beginning of galactic culture on Earth, a phenomenon that has only been increasing over the past decade. The point is that the New Calendar Change Movement is a grassroots phenomenon as well as an ideological strategy known as the Campaign for the New Time. These signs are all whispers of the noosphere blowing through the bleak industrial corners of the technosphere.
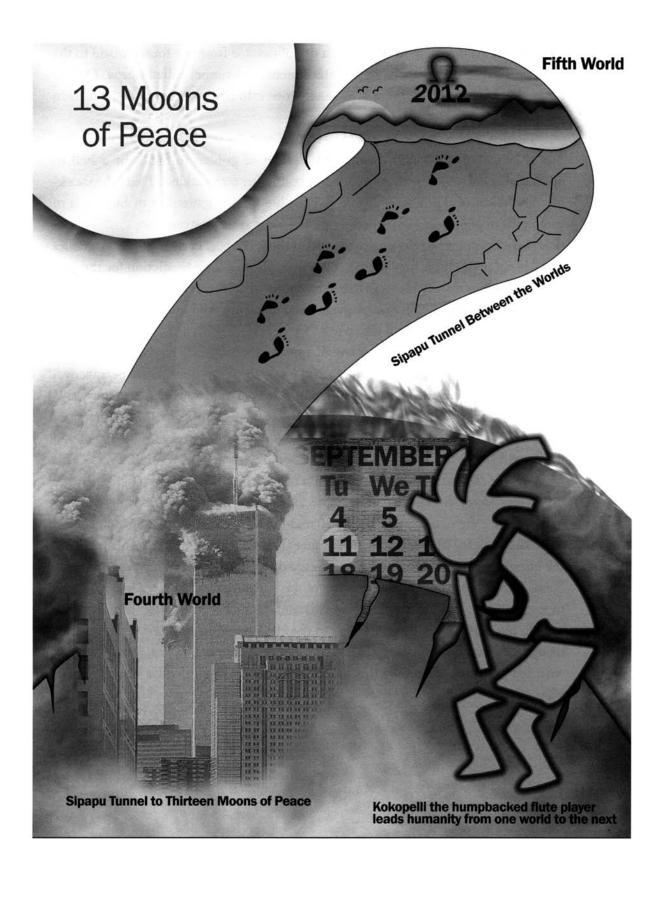
Behind the more populist front of the Natural Time Movement is the science of the Law of Time, a genuinely noospheric science of peace and harmony. This science is already being studied and put into preliminary practice. As the crisis of the biosphere began to crest in 1987, halfway through the second 28-year phase of the technosphere, the noosphere began to download its measure of time through the

discovery of the Law of Time. Invisible to the predominant forces of the technosphere, the science of the Law of Time began to map out an entirely new domain of thought, the synchronic order, a domain that could only be entered and applied through the correct noospheric measure, the Thirteen Moon/28-Day synchronometer.

All science throughout history is based on evolutionary advances predicated on both the premises and limitations of its preceding stages. We are at such an evolutionary moment now. The issue of the calendar change is only the beginning of the emergence of a new whole system scientific order. Understanding the flaws that are built into the present system of purely materialist science, we can proceed to the establishment of the science of the synchronic order. Like the radical simplicity and perpetual harmony of the Thirteen Moon calendar itself, the noospheric science of the synchronic order is predicated on an equally radical mathematical base reflecting and embedded in the 13:20 universal timing frequency itself. And as the underlying order of a whole system science, this mathematics is reflective of the non dualistic premise of a superior moral order. The deviation from universal synchronic time is a moral deviation as well. It is this moral deviation that most strongly prompts the current calendar change movement.

As a profoundly nondualistic, unifying whole system premise, the Law of Time encompasses not only a scientific-mathematical basis of morality, but a theological-eschatological intention that reunifies the various disciplines scattered and separated by the rise and totalitarianism of modern secular science. Because of the historical dominance of the Gregorian calendar, in which modern science is embedded, the dethronement of the calendar-the "devaticanization" of the world, as it were-is an apocalyptic moment.

As the Law of Time defines it, this is merely the apocalypse of the 12:60 timing frequency and all its corrupted institutions, much as foretold in the Book of Revelations. This apocalyptic moment was stunningly supplied by the terrifying collapse of the Twin Towers. As the nerve center of the financial, commodities, and transport sector of the technosphere, and hence of the city itself, the collapse of the towers in hardly more than an hour's time is perfectly reflected in the vivid descriptions of the eighteenth chapter of the Book of Revelations, "Fall of Babylon." Yet as the Mayan prophecy of Pacal Votan also makes absolutely clear, the apocalypse of the 12:60 is the resurrection into the 13:20 timing frequency, the return to natural time, all to be accomplished by A.D. 2012, Teilhard de Chardin's "omega point." The advent of the noosphere is preceded by the post-apocalyptic harrowing of hell. In this harrowing of hell, defined as the span of time from July 26, 2000-July 25, 2004, humanity must make a crossing from one time to another. This crossing is much like those we hear

13 Moons
of Peace

Fifth World

2012

Sipapu Tunnel Between the Worlds

Fourth World

SEPTEMBER
Tu   We T
4   5
11   12 1
18   19 20

Sipapu Tunnel to Thirteen Moons of Peace

Kokopelli the humpbacked flute player
leads humanity from one world to the next

about in the cosmovision of the Hopi, a rite of passage from the fourth world to the fifth world that occurs through an interdimensional tunnel called *sipapu.* On the other side of that tunnel, there is an emergence into the new time called "thirteen moons of peace."

"Golden Age of Miracles and Heaven on Earth," a story in the *National Examiner* (November 29, 1988), begins: "A heaven of golden miracles or a hell of unspeakable horror is less than twenty-five years away for mankind. That's the shocking prediction of the man who was responsible for the gathering of hundreds of thousands of people in 1987 to celebrate the Harmonic Convergence. . ." The article makes its point by referring to the end of the 5,125 year cycle in 2012. "Argiielles said Mayan predictions have always come true. He said their prediction for the year 2012 is that if humanity learns to live in harmony with Nature, a new age of miracles and light will occur. Otherwise plagues, wars, terrorism, and finally, the breakup of the planet into asteroids, will take place."4

As for the Inevitable Event, it would appear that humanity has begun the worst of the prediction-plagues, war, terrorism-yet, from the noospheric perspective, two points mitigate the absolute plunge into hell. The first is that the Inevitable Event punctured a hole in the technosphere eleven years prior to 2012. What does this mean? It means that this is the time of hell on Earth. "Every single one of you must see it [hell]; this is an irrevocable decision of your Lord." (Quran, 19:71) This being so, we can potentially emerge from it before the 2012 omega point. The other mitigating factor is the existence of a 13:20 movement dispersed throughout humanity. Since the noosphereis the 13:20 mind of Earth, the Thirteen Moon Calendar Change Peace Movement is the advance presence heralding the transition from the biosphere to the noosphere. This passage through hell is of a four-year duration, 2000-2004. The exponential implosion of the technosphere has already begun. But to avoid a long, debilitating siege of barbarism, humanity must select a positive direction by 2004 so that it can make it to the 2012 deadline as a species returned to living in harmony with nature. This it can only do by the dramatic and radical break with the past time offered by the Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar Change Peace Plan.

Campaign for the New Time

4:7::7:2013

Earth Wizards Define Spiritual Order of New Time — Lay Foundations of Shambhala in Temple of Rainbow Plasmic Body

7th Seer — Pacal Votan
Blue Galactic Storm 2000–2001 — Seed Cube — Flowering

6th Seer — Quetzalcoatl
Yellow Solar Seed 2001–2002 — Serpent Cube — Sex (Life Force)

4th Seer — St. John of Patmos
Red Planetary Moon 2002–2003 — World-bridger Cube — Death

White Spectral Wizard 2003–2004 — Hand Cube — Accomplishment

2nd Seer — Padmasambhava — Fulfillment of the Cycle of Seven Seers 1997–2004

Blue Galactic Storm (2000–2001)

Foundation for the Law of Time Established — Launching of the Campaign for the New Time:
- PAN Peoples Prepare
- Mass Media
- Diplomatic

Preparation of Strategies — International Kin Gathering — PAN Congresses

Tibetan Lunar Calendar — Japan Mount Fuji

Planetary Peace Through Culture Festival — First Seed-Storm Year Bundle Gathered — See the Rainbow

Listen Again — Tree shapes space / Way of conduct informed by truth
Stabilizing — Telepathy establishes the temple
Meditation / The Temple — Galactic octave limits space
Measuring

Yellow Solar Seed (2001–2002)

Banner of Peace returned to Altai — Organization of PAN Peoples New Time Congresses

Chinese and Islamic Lunar Calendars — Colombia New Time Peace Congress — China, Iran, Saudi Arabia

Indigenous Peoples Councils

Planetary Peace Through Culture Festival — See the Rainbow Round the Earth

People Together — Tree evolves space
People Organized — Truth evolves way of conduct
Evolving — Telepathy evolves the temple
Inner Space — Galactic octave resounds as mind

PAN Peoples New Time Congresses Develop Local Programs for Social Transformation

Red Planetary Moon (2002–2003)

PAN Peoples New Time Congresses Implement Strategies — Time of Great Awareness of New Time

UR Council for the Integration of all Lunar Calendars in 13 Moon Calendar — Africa, India

Planetary Peace Through Culture Festival — Be the Rainbow Round the Earth

People Apart — Tree defines life
Wisdom of the People — Conduct defines the way
Transcending — Temple incorporates telepathy
Inner Time — Galactic octave defines evolution

White Spectral Wizard (2003–2004)

Calendar Reform Becomes Major World Issue — Vatican Put on Notice — *Wall Street Journal* Ad Strategy — Harmonic Convergence of PAN — Media Diplomatic Strategies

Power of the People — Tree of time turns Earth
Way of the People — All points unify in conduct
Wisdom Arousing — Telepathy becomes time travel
Accomplished — Galactic octave universalizes space

Victory of the New Time — Thirteen Moon Calendar Reform Attained — Thirteen Moons Proclaimed and Accepted as New World Calendar — Circumpolar Rainbow Victory Event — Sacred Earth — Sacred Order

---

Afro-Eurasian • Plate - PNM 1-6
Pacific Plate • PNM 19-24
American • Plate PNM 13-18
Atlantic • Plate PNM 7-12

THE BIRTH OF THE CAMPAIGN FOR THE NEW TIME

"We inspired Moses: 'Lead My servants out, and strike for them a dry road across the sea. You shall not fear that you may get caught, nor shall you worry.
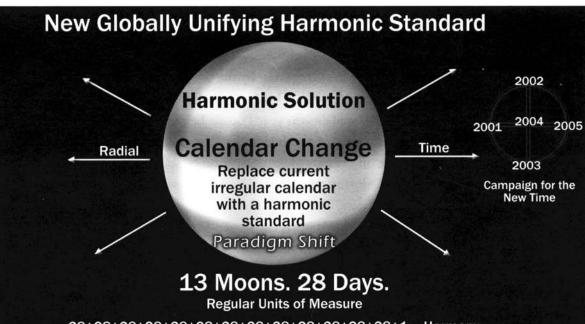
"Pharaoh pursued them with his troops, but the sea overwhelmed them, as it was destined to overwhelm them. "

-QURAN, 20:77-78

The Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar is the dry path across the waters of the 12:60 chaos. Holding surely to this path, "Pharaoh's troops will be overwhelmed," as it is destined, for the truth always prevails and when falsehood is exposed, falsehood perishes. The 12:60 frequency enshrined in the Gregorian calendar represents an artificial, hence false notion of time. The Pharaoh's troops are the forces of the technosphere that, embedded in the artificial structure of the Gregorian calendar, are destined to be overwhelmed and overcome by the fury unleashed both by human nature and nature itself in response to decades, if not centuries, of irresponsible despoiling of the Earth. The dry path of the Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar is the only path broad enough for all humanity to leave the ever increasing ocean of chaos that characterizes human existence bound in the collapsing 12:60 matrix born of Gregorian civilization, the technosphere. Yes, the dry path across the waters of the 12:60 chaos provided by the Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar truly is for the salvation of life on Earth.

Ever since 1993, the Thirteen Moon Calendar Change Peace Movement has consciously been drawing from the infinite riches of the noosphere to create not only the mechanism for making a shift in the frequency and hence bring stabilization to the biosphere, but has been anticipating the biosphere-noosphere transition into the *Pax Cultura, Pax Biospherica.*

Foll{)wing in the footsteps of its predecessor, the new calendar movement has dutifully contacted the United Nations and the Vatican and convened various congresses and delivered ultimatums in an effort to draw attention to mankind's time malaise. Now that the Inevitable Event has fully disengaged the human mind from the reality it thought it was pursuing in the new millennium, the second definitive wave of the World Thirteen Moon Calendar Change Peace Movement has also been launched: the Campaign for the New Time.

New Globally Unifying Harmonic Standard

FOURTH DIMENSION: Pure whole number mathematical order—syntropy, synchronic order

Harmonic Solution

Calendar Change

Replace current irregular calendar with a harmonic standard

Radial

Time

Paradigm Shift

2002

2001   2004   2005

2003

Campaign for the New Time

13 Moons. 28 Days.

Regular Units of Measure

28+28+28+28+28+28+28+28+28+28+28+28+28+1 = Harmony

"Mental barrier" separating fourth-dimensional realm of conscious wholeness of synchronic order from third-dimensional realm of "hard science" physical plane of reality and materialism.

Line of inexorable technological progress: neoliberal economics, globalization = biospheric instability and destruction.

THIRD DIMENSION: Manifestation-matter entropy and disorder

Coercion
Compromise
Money

Political Solution

Military Solution

Guerrilla Warfare
Terrorism
Convential War

$$$$$

Stalemate
Deadlock

$$$$$

IMF - World Bank
G-7 WTO
Security Council

NATO
Nuclear war
Arms Industry

"Secret Deals"

Past   Future

Linear Arrow of Time = line of inevitable degradation and entropy of manifestation (matter)

Gregorian Calendar Time Line = macro-organizing timing standard establishes irregular measure as basis of all dominating concepts of linear time, disorder, entropy, and the techno-economic inexorability

Irregular units of measure:
31-28(29)-31-30-31-30-31-31-30-31-30-31 = Disharmony

If today is Sunday, July 8, what day of the week will August 8 be?
What is the meaning of the names of the months?
If *September* means "seven" why is it the ninth month?
August is named after Augustus Caesar, July for Julius Caesar, March for Mars, the god of war;
could this be a reason why we are programmed for chaos and violence? Think about it.

This campaign consists of a preparatory four-year cycle, 2000-2004, the Harrowing of Hell, which is the duration of the campaign itself, plus a one-year trial period, 2004-2005. The goal of the four-year campaign is universal calendar reform, the replacement of the Gregorian by the Thirteen Moon Calendar, effective Blue Crystal Storm, July 26,2004. This final year of the Blue Crystal Storm, 2004-2005, also completes a Seed-Storm year bundle begun in 2001, fateful year of the Yellow Solar Seed, the year of the Inevitable Event. To ensure the success of this unprecedented move on the part of humanity, the calendar reform must include the one-year trial period, during which time the entire species must be operating by a new standard, the harmonic Thirteen Moon/2 8-Day synchronometer. "If you never try it, you'll never know what it is," is the slogan that describes the campaign's target year: July 26, 2004-July 25, 2005, an entire year without the Gregorian "30 days hath September. . .," but instead, Thirteen Moons of Peace.

To realize its ambitious goal of universal calendar reform, the Campaign for the New Time must impress itself on the human consciousness as the all-unifying campaign for peace to overcome the destructive forces unleashed by the technospheric collapse. Fqrtunately, much groundwork has already been laid. The codes of the Law of Time have been formulated and compiled. Preliminary practices to engage the synchronic order of the noosphere have already enlisted humans from around the planet. What the Vatican has tried to ignore and what the United Nations has been unable to fully engage must now be brought to the forefront of all humanity as the harmonic solution. The harmonic solution is a set of logical arguments that should be studied and rehearsed by everyone who seriously wishes to even consider the possibility of a Campaign for the New Time. Let us contemplate the following set of logical arguments.

Premise

Currently all conflict resolution of a global scale is attained through one of two poles: a political solution or a military solution. No other alternatives are recognized. According to the Law of Time, there is a third solution, the harmonic solution. Without this third solution, no harmonic resolution is ultimately possible for any conflict on a global scale. The third solution defines the first two solutions as a polarity embedded within a timing standard that is hopelessly irregular and that, therefore, disposes the mind to disharmony. A mind predisposed to irregularity and disharmony is incapable of producing any long-term solution. The basis of the harmonic solution is to change the timing standard from an irregular to a regular one, thereby inducing a timing sensibility that disposes the mind to harmony rather than disharmony.

Thirteen Moon/28-Day Count and Global Conflict Resolution

The inability to attain global peace, much less the resolution of many localized conflicts that have become endemic, is due to a lack of a globally unifying timing standard-the macro-organizing principle of human sensibility. Present-day conflict resolution is represented by two poles, political and military. The military solution consists of guerrilla warfare, terrorism, and outright military conflict, all of which are engendered by problems of inequality; injustice; rampant nationalism; tribal, racial, or religious antagonism; and greed for control of natural resources. Underlying the military solution is an aggressive armaments industry that seeks to hold its own as a capitalist venture, always seeking new markets. The political solution is always fostered as the only cure for the military solution, and is administered through varying degrees of coercion, compromise, and the inevitable lure of money-the IMF and the World Bank are never far behind any political solution.

Neither the military nor the political represent any kind of morally satisfactory or enduring solution because both are functions of and embedded in a timing standard that has disharmony built into it. Even the local timing systems, themselves feedback loops holding in place various belief systems, are coordinated by the dominant disharmonic standard. As long as the current global standard, the Gregorian calendar, is the controlling timing factor, resolution on a global and local level is not only impossible, but increasing disharmony is guaranteed. The harmonic solution calls for the immediate establishment of a globally unifying harmonic standard, the Thirteen Moon/28-Day count. With its absolutely consistent units of measure, this macro-organizing principle is a paragon of harmony and thereby represents the positive, creative, and viable first step to enduring global conflict resolution.

Thirteen Moon/28-Day Paradigm Shift

The harmonic solution, the alternative to the polarity of the military and political solutions, calls for the immediate replacement of the current irregular measure with the harmonic standard of the Thirteen Moon/28-Day count. This replacement constitutes the long-awaited and long-prepared-for paradigm shift in human consciousness. The very analysis and concern that engendered the first movement to replace the Gregorian calendar-the effects of an irregular measure on human behavior-is now so dire that the concluding step must be taken. To quote Einstein once again, "Since the advent of the nuclear age, everything has changed but the way people think; thus we drift toward unparalleled catastrophe." With the analysis of the Law

of Time we know why thinking has not changed-the human mind is the pawn of an aberrant timing mechanism. To change the way people think, make one little change in their everyday lives: Change the calendar. If we could send a man to the moon, we can change the calendar. This change will be the first step-the rest will come easily because with this one change we shall have changed our minds and entered into a New Time. To make this one little change a target date is needed, and the people need to mobilize as a force of synchronization for peace to mandate this change. The target date is July 26, 2004--the mobilization has already begun.

New Worldview of the Law of Time

The Thirteen Moon/28-Day count is the pragmatic application of the Law of Time. The discovery of the Law of Time was necessitated by evolution as the only way that could offset the deleterious effects of an erroneous timing standard on human consciousness. The Law of Time takes the radical view that time is a frequency, the universal frequency of synchronization; that the purpose of time is to synchronize; and that, therefore, a calendar is in harmony with the Law of Time to the degree to which it maximizes opportunities for synchronization. From the perspective of the Law of Time, the current macro-organizing standard is anything but synchronous, and hence contrary to the laws of nature. Synchronization produces harmony, harmony is a function of beauty, and beauty is the natural result of the Law of Time: $T(E) = Art$, energy factored by time equals art, where art is the entire spectrum of phenomenal reality in which even the most menacing-looking creature is elegantly constructed.

National Geographic recently stated: "Beauty seems to be an intrinsic part of nature and perhaps even the organizing principle of reality. Scientists in testing their theories, invariably find that the simplest, most elegant, most beautiful is the correct one. Rainbows, butterflies and the periodic table are some examples of intrinsic beauty. The world will be saved by beauty."[5] The Law of Time agrees. The world will be saved by beauty, and the proponents of peace through culture will be in the vanguard. The Law of Time formalizes the perception of the intrinsic beauty of nature- $T(E) = Art$-and thereby provides a scientifically solid critique of the ugliness and social disharmony fomented by the irregular and artificial timing standards that control humanity today. By the same formulation, the Law of Time also establishes a vast and comprehensive definition of the fourth dimension, which was wanting until now precisely because of the embedding of all current perceptions in the erroneous timing standard.

The mathematical order underlying the universal frequency of synchronization,

13:20, describes a new order of reality, the synchronic order. The synchronic order governs the fourth-dimensional order of reality much as the laws of gravity, thermo-dynamics, and the special theory of relativity govern the third-dimensional order of reality. By taking into account the nature of the synchronic order, humanity's views of the third dimension will inevitably be altered to a greater conformity with the harmony of the fourth dimension. The fourth dimension is defined as the primary mathematical order of time, governed by a syntropic whole number system of ratios and fractals operating in a radial and nonlinear manner.

The third dimension is the world of manifestation and matter that inevitably entropizes. Losing sight of the inherent harmony of the synchronic order from which it is actually inseparable, the human fixation on the increasing entropic anomalies of the third dimension produces problems such as how to reckon what appear to be the extra hours, minutes, and seconds that occur every time the Earth orbits the sun. To this seeming dilemma, the Law of Time asserts that number precedes manifestation, harmony precedes materialization, therefore manifestation must accord with num-ber, and materialization must reflect an original harmonic order. Entropy and deg-radation cause manifestation to deviate from number and mathematical law. But for mind to be stable, mind must accord with and conform to mathematical law rather than with entropy and degradation. The timing standard in use causes the mind to conform with entropy and degradation. This is what must be corrected.

Harmonic Solution-Harmonic Resolution

Harmony can only produce harmony. From order comes order. From disorder you can only expect chaos. From disharmony can only come disaster. Irregular measure entropizes. Harmonic measure syntropizes. These are the contrasting values brought into focus by replacing an irregular macro-organizing principle with a regular one. Implementation of a globally unifying harmonic standard is the only hope for re-solving all conflicts in time. A harmonic standard lifts all conflicts to a higher level dialog of unification in time. The harmonic solution, the World Thirteen Moon Calendar Change Peace Plan, provides: the opportunity to call an immediate and universal cease-fire, as well as a halt to the otherwise inexorable process of entropic degradation of society and environment; and offers the resolution to establish new agreements, to renegotiate old treaties, and to create a new globally binding and unifying covenant for all people in a new time.

It must be understood that to change the calendar is to delegitimize all the insti-tutions embedded in it. This radical but peaceful delegitimization of the old order is

what is needed to break the deadlocks, stalemates, and historically outmoded treaties and agreements now binding on humanity. The new globally unifying standard, the Thirteen Moon/28-Day count, will legitimize and institutionalize harmony and thus create the advent of a synergistic order capable of resolving entropic disorder because it is reflective of and rooted in the primordial whole number structure of the synchronic order of reality. In its entirety, this represents a new step and direction for human evolution-a step without which there might not be any creative future for humanity and the planet.

How to Accomplish World Peace Now

The analysis, the historical precedents, and now the affirming authority of the Law of Time render the harmonic solution as the only way to immediately bring about World Peace. All that is lacking is the will to synchronization among all good-hearted people, groups, and organizations otherwise committed to peace, a better environment, and human spiritual well-being in general. How to accomplish World Peace is to galvanize the human will to synchronization on behalf of the establishment of a genuine time of harmony and peace. This can only come about through the simple but highly radical and paradigm-altering act of exchanging the current macro-organizing system of the Gregorian calendar for the harmonic order of the Thirteen Moon/28-Day count. All other localized calendar systems would be kept intact, but they would be coordinated by a new standard, a standard that promises harmony instead of disaster, order instead of chaos, peace instead of war.

Such is the harmonic analysis and solution of the Law of Time, which can be summed up by a simple demonstration of the irregular Gregorian calendar contrasted with the regular Thirteen Moon calendar, as well as the question: "Which do you prefer, harmony or disharmony?"

If you answer this question on behalf of harmony, and you agree with the foregoing premises and analyses, you must move into action. You need to get a new calendar, a Thirteen Moon/2 8-Day calendar and find out for yourself: noosphere or necrosphere, the choice is yours. The option opened by the Inevitable Event and the collapse of the technosphere is precisely that: necrosphere, the transformation of the biosphere into a sphere of death-a dead planet-or the noosphere, the mental envelope of the Earth, governed on the human plane by the Thirteen Moon/2 8-Day calendar. The difference between the necrosphere and the noosphere is the difference between a machine and the Earth as a whole system. You cannot even really say there is a comparison. But what we can say most emphatically is that the Thirteen

Moon/2 8-Day calendar and the shift to the 13:20 frequency is the pure manifestation of the Law of Time in human affairs. It is the only antidote to the destructive grip that the 12:60 timing frequency now has upon the biosphere through its thoroughly artificial instrument, the technosphere. (See plate 7, Necrosphere or Noosphere.)

THE FINAL DECISION: NOOSPHERE OR NECROSPHERE?

As these lines are being written, seven weeks have passed since the Inevitable Event. The analysis of this event from the perspective of the biosphere, the temporary structure of the technosphere, and the advent of the noosphere was a spontaneous inspiration. Each morning, often well before dawn, I would be called to this technospheric device, an iMac, to put the noospheric mandate down into words. In this process, the matter of prophecy kept occurring and could not be avoided. Even the issue of calendar change increasingly takes on the quality of a prophetic enactment. What is prophecy from the noospheric perspective?

Prophecy is the release of information according to the psi bank timing program and in relation to degrees or levels of consciousness positioned at different points in time. The points in time are human channels. That is, there are the prophets who declare the prophecies by whatever means or forms, and then there are the decoders of the prophecies, those able to read the signs according to the prophecies with the aid of different symbolic lexicons. Prophecy is always startling to the mass mind, which is ignorant of the true nature of time. A prophetic event may seem totally random, when it is not. Someone may design a plot, such as that of the Inevitable Event, with whatever fantastic notions and motives. Yet the occurrence may go beyond being merely a matter of human manipulation. The humans were but the instruments of sets of cause-and-effect chain reactions established within the structure and evolution of the biosphere and the playing out of human karma.

According to the psi bank timing program governed by the Law of Time, the technosphere could only have a limited duration. Two perfect 28-year cycles of the Gregorian calendar program, leading to the first year of the third millennium, marked the duration of the technosphere. Because this cycle concluded with the beginning of the third Christian millennium, a singular event was poised in time to attract and catalyze a host of prophetic moments long prepared for and sealed in the psi bank by Christian, Islamic, and even Mayan prophecies. Such was the Inevitable Event. Within the motivations of the perpetrators of the Inevitable Event, the biosphere found its perfect instrument of divine purpose. That there were nineteen hijackers conforms to the Quranic nineteen code expressed in the enigmatic verse, "Over it is nineteen."

(74:30) The following verse begins, "We appointed angels to be guardians of Hell, and we assigned their number [19] . . ." This verse ends by asking, "What did God mean by this allegory? . . . None knows the soldiers of your Lord except He. This is a reminder for the people." (74: 31)

Certainly in the success of their mission, whether they were conscious of it or not, the nineteen Muslim hijackers-who organized themselves as four leaders (pilots), three logistics people, and twelve "soldiers"-fulfilled their function of being the prophetic emissaries of the nineteen guardian angels who watch over Hell. And indeed the gates to Hell have been opened. In the world of the secular mind of the technosphere, no one wanted to talk about the apocalypse or Armageddon, though the jihad was brought up quite often as a factor in the thinking of the Islamic terrorists.6

Whether it is seen as a prophetic or karmic event, as we stated earlier, there is no question that the timing programs of two civilizations, the Gregorian and the Islamic, were on a collision course. "The civilization of Islam is radically so different from that of Western civilization which dominates the world today. The two are different in their description oflife as well as the foundation on which they base such a description. The difference between the two civilizations is so essential that they have developed in ways which are radically contradictory to each other."7 So wrote the eloquent Saudi historian, Muhammad Husayn Haykal in his essay "Islamic Civilization," as presented in his masterful biography, *The Life of Muhammad.* And what is at the root of this difference? A separation of church and state, which in the West led to a profound materialism and economic worldview.

Haykal continues, "The victory of materialist thinking was largely due to the establishment of Western civilization primarily upon an economic foundation. This situation led to the rise in the West of a number of worldviews which sought to place everything in the life of man and the world at the mercy of economic forces. . ." As for the sanctity of its economic beliefs, Haykal concludes that the West has tied its economic activity "hand and foot by public laws and commanded that every Western state and army prevent any violation of economic laws with all the power and coercive means at its disposal."8 Given this insightful assertion by an Islamic thinker written a half-century ago, it is not at all surprising that the terrorists concentrated their attacks on the most visible symbols of Western global materialism and economic and military imperialism, the Twin Towers and the Pentagon. It is also of note that one of the logistics men on the team of nineteen hijackers, Majed Moqed, had been a professor of economics at King Saudi University in Riyadh.

However we see this event, the most important point is that it actually happened, no matter who caused it or how. In this regard the collapse of the World

Trade Center towers and the penetration of the Pentagon was the Inevitable Event both from the point of view of the biosphere and from that of prophecy as mandated by at least two major timing programs, the Gregorian and the Islamic. Of course, prophecy is a matter far from the consideration of the technocratic mind, so the immediate aftereffect is a heightened nationalism, patriotism, and commitment to war. But what is going on from the noospheric point of view is not so much the combat of different armed camps defending or attacking competing ideologies, but an end game, the biomass of the technosphere maneuvering against time in a self-destructive process that is really nothing more than the continuing collapse of that which it is defending.

How long will this collapse take? With the weapons of mass destruction currently at the disposal of the combatants, it shouldn't take too long before the human race realizes that if it doesn't stop the self-destructive process, it will soon be curtains for all life on Earth. A more significant question, if we wish to make the transition to a new time, is: How will the self-destruction end, and how can it be stopped-or can it? It is easy to see how wars begin, but no one can tell how they will end.

THE SOLUTION TO WAR: PEACE THROUGH CULTURE, PEACE OF THE BIOSPHERE

At the end of the First World War, the League of Nations was formed to keep the Second World War from happening. The League of Nations was unable to both effect the calendar reform it promoted and keep the Second World War from happening. These are not unrelated events. The Second World War effectively eliminated the League of Nations, and toward its end a new organization, the United Nations, was formed. Like the League of Nations, the United Nations was formed to prevent the next world war from happening. Within eleven years, the United Nations tabled the calendar reform begun by the League of Nations. Coincident with the formation of the technosphere, the United Nations has now also completed fifty-six years of existence. With the expanding "war against terrorism," is its purpose now over as well? The only way the United Nations can survive is to maintain its humanitarian agencies, for the age of nationalist politics and nation-states is over, succeeded by the politics of terrorism, the last politics of history. What new kind of global organization will we need at the end of the War on Terror, or World War III?

What we will need is an entirely new agency, a Planetary Biospheric Assembly that will model and create a sustainable *Pax Cultura, Pax Biospherica.*Given the failure to enact a calendar reform on the part of both the League of Nations and the
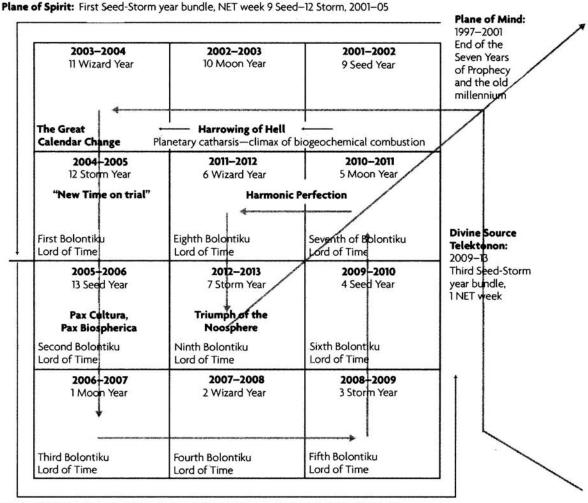
United Nations and in consideration of the chaos now clearly embedded in the Old Time, only an agency or instrument that fully embraces and promotes the calendar change will be able to move into the genuinely peace-fulfilling role that such an organization must take. If the United Nations could accept the route of calendar change as the only way to bring all humanity to a new point of discourse, then it could take on a renewed life. But if it cannot rise to this occasion, then another organization must take its place, the Planetary Biospheric Assembly. Even so, when we speak of the *Pax Cultura, Pax Biospherica,* we are speaking of a new human covenant, one in which the biosphere takes precedence over all nationalist corporate interests, and in which peace as a manifestation of culture is the primary value of the new time. Such a covenant would be a biospheric covenant, an agreement and understanding that, first of all, the human is a member of the biosphere, and second, that in consciously accepting the calendar change, the human is also in the process of becoming *Homo noosphericus.* Henceforth, it will be art and not money, bioregions and not nation-states, that will be the cause of social organization. Only in this way will humanity be guaranteed a true post-historical future.

Assuming the calendar change occurs on Blue Crystal Storm 2004, the first step in ~ngendering the full manifestation of the noosphere will be the dismantling of the technosphere. This can only be accomplished if a full reorganization of the human in time, inclusive of an adjudication of inequalities and a redistribution of wealth, begins to occur during the 2004-2005 Crystal Storm year. The following four years, 2005-2009, a genuine First World Peace, would see the constructive transformation of the five-part technospheric system. All the apparatus of heavy industry, energy, and the transport system would be turned like compost, to be replaced by non-polluting technologies and means of transport, while the cities would be transformed into urban gardens with the human race once more becoming decentralized. This process itself, a massive planetary engineering project with an eye on the full development of geochronomancy, would prove to be the greatest and most thoroughly positive transformation in human history. By 2009 humans reorganized by the Law of Time and having finally arrived at the "path beyond technology," will be enjoying universal telepathy, the noosphere-life beyond the Internet. By 2012 the humans will realize peace through culture as a permanent value, and by 2013 Earth will be galactically synchronized through a fully activated noosphere into the beginning of an entirely new geological era, defined by Vernadsky as the Psychozoic Era.

Pax Cultura, Pax Biospherica refers to both the new era of humanity following the devastation of the Final War and the governing body of bioregional councils (not nation-states) comprising the new world "government," the Planetary Biospheric

Arcturus Victory Strategy
Pax Cultura, Pax Biospherica

Telektonon, the Theater of Time, provides the journey through the Cube of the Law:
Plane of Mind, Plane of Spirit, Plane of Will, and Divine Source Telektonon—each plane
Seed-Storm year bundle, an entire universe of noospheric time!

Plane of Spirit: First Seed-Storm year bundle, NET week 9 Seed–12 Storm, 2001–05

Plane of Mind:
1997–2001
End of the
Seven Years
of Prophecy
and the old
millennium

2003–2004	2002–2003	2001–2002
11 Wizard Year	10 Moon Year	9 Seed Year

The Great Calendar Change — **Harrowing of Hell** —
Planetary catharsis—climax of biogeochemical combustion

2004–2005	2011–2012	2010–2011
12 Storm Year	6 Wizard Year	5 Moon Year
"New Time on trial"	**Harmonic Perfection**	
First Bolontiku Lord of Time	Eighth Bolontiku Lord of Time	Seventh of Bolontiku Lord of Time

Divine Source Telektonon:
2009–13
Third Seed-Storm
year bundle,
1 NET week

2005–2006	2012–2013	2009–2010
13 Seed Year	7 Storm Year	4 Seed Year
Pax Cultura, Pax Biospherica	**Triumph of the Noosphere**	
Second Bolontiku Lord of Time	Ninth Bolontiku Lord of Time	Sixth Bolontiku Lord of Time

2006–2007	2007–2008	2008–2009
1 Moon Year	2 Wizard Year	3 Storm Year
Third Bolontiku Lord of Time	Fourth Bolontiku Lord of Time	Fifth Bolontiku Lord of Time

Plane of Will: Second Seed-Storm year bundle, 1 NET week, 13 Seed–3 Storm, 2005–09
Time of Transformational Destructuring—First World Peace

Assembly. The main purpose of the new governing body would be to monitor the advent of the noosphere. Overcoming Northern Hemisphere bias, the *Pax Cultura, Pax Biospherica* will not find any permanent seat, but will begin its existence as a planetary noospheric congress in the Southern Hemisphere. All of this could be made possible only because of the completion of the calendar change. So let us assume the best. The how-to of paradigm shift begins with the Thirteen Moon calendar.

If you follow the Thirteen Moon calendar or tell others to follow it with you, what is the payoff? The payoff is that you get to become a noospheric chip. Only a noospheric chip can bring Heaven on Earth, which is nothing more than full human participation in the noosphere. This is not at all a theoretical matter, but something that can be practiced and followed on a day-to-day basis. Fortunately, a path has been shown, complete with travel aids.

CONCISE *HOMO NOOSPHERICUS* HOW-TO TIME TRAVELER'S GUIDE TO THE BIOSPHERE-NOOSPHERE TRANSITION

This analysis of the Inevitable Event could never have occurred if the Law of Time hadn't been discovered and defined. The Inevitable Event simply supplied the Law of Time with precisely the right historical moment to provide a thorough analysis and explanation of time as the whole system in which we humans live and operate, inclusive of the biosphere, the technosphere, and the noosphere. As the chief discoverer of the Law of Time, assisted by my wife and an increasing number of other humans who have engaged the Law of Time, I have sought only to make a presentation of matters in which we, as a species, are thoroughly immersed, and thus find difficult to comprehend. Such is the technosphere, and such also is the medium of time. Since the publication of *The Mayan Factor* and my pursuit of the underlying mathematics of the Mayan calendar, I have remained outside the conventional arenas of discourse and communication, preferring instead to remain more anonymous in order to test the various hypotheses of the Law of Time.

In this process over the past twelve years, the Law of Time has precipitated from the noosphere various tools and didactic texts, all for the purpose of enabling us to make the shift from the old paradigm of the time of war to the new paradigm of the time of peace. These tools and principles are actually practiced on a daily basis, and so provide a pragmatic means of applying the Law of Time. Because of my vows and need for scientific "purity" of the experiment I have been living, I was involved at all times in doing my utmost to remain in the 13:20 frequency. For this reason, the tools and texts prompted by the noosphere to define the Law of Time were, for the most part, all produced outside the commercial mainstream. Now a great effort must be taken to make these tools and texts available to humanity in order to assist in the transition from *Homo historicus* to *Homo noosphericus*. By presenting a catalog of these tools and texts we only mean to suggest and define for the reader the scope and existence of a preliminary science of time and telepathy.

Part I. The Tools: Establishing Noospheric Earth Time (NET)

THIRTEEN MOON/28-DAY SYNCHRONOMETER

The harmonic standard of noospheric time, the Thirteen Moon/28-Day synchronometer, is a perpetual, harmonic calendar. It is called a Moon calendar because it is based on the female 28-day menstruation cycle, which is also the average lunar cycle. In actuality the moon goes around the Earth thirteen times a year. This means that the Thirteen Moon calendar is a genuine solar-lunar calendar that measures the Earth's orbit around the sun by the apsidallunation cycle of twenty-eight days. Thirteen perfect months of 28 days = 52 perfect weeks of 7 days = 364 days. The 365th day is called the Day Out of Time because it is no day of the week or month at all. This day, which falls on the Gregorian correlate date of July 25, is a day for forgiveness and the artistic celebration of life and freedom. The synchronization or New Year's date of the Thirteen Moon calendar is July 26, and corresponds to the rising of the great star Sirius. This makes the Thirteen Moon calendar a tool for harmonizing ourselves with the galaxy. Of course, the Thirteen Moon calendar also synchronizes the phases of the moon in a pattern that demonstrates its regularity and order.

One of the great advantages of the Thirteen Moon synchronometer is that day/date calculations are amazingly simple. Any day of any week is the same for any Moon, any year. The first day of every Moon is always a Thirteen Moon Sunday (Dali). The last day of every Moon is always a Thirteen Moon Saturday (Silio). In the Thirteen Moon calendar the obscurely named Gregorian months are replaced by names that correspond to a fourth-dimensional cosmology of time. Each Moon also has a totem animal. The traditional names of the days of the week are replaced by galactic names that describe seven primary plasmas-electronically charged particles that activate our magnetic fields. The plasmas and their symbolic seals appear above the days of the week. The Gregorian calendar makes day/date calculations very difficult because the months are of uneven measure so the days and dates of the week vary from month to month and year to year. The Thirteen Moon calendar is truly unique because it is synchronized with the Harmonic Module, the measure of the universal 13:20 timing frequency.

THE HARMONIC MODULE

The basis of the Tzolkin or sacred 260-day count of the Maya, the Harmonic Module is the 13:20 synchronization gauge and permutation table that consists of thirteen sequences of twenty icons or solar seals and twenty sequences of thirteen galactic tones, 1-13. The resulting 260 permutations, combined with the perfect harmony of

the Thirteen Moon calendar, give each day a unique quality of tone and icon known as a kin or one NET minute. The two cycles-Thirteen Moons/28 days and the 260-day Harmonic Module-perfectly mesh every fifty-two years to complete one NET year. In one NET year of 18,980 kin, no two days are the same! Each of the units in the Harmonic Module is called a kin, the base unit of synchronic measure. Articulating the Harmonic Module is a pattern of fifty-two Galactic Activation Portals. See if you can find the radial sequence of thirteen sets of four, counting inward from the corners. Notice that the numbers of each set of four equals 28. Thirteen sets x 28 = 364, the number of days in the Thirteen Moon calendar! (See image containing the Harmonic Module on page 170.)

WAVESPELL

The thirteen-unit form constant of fourth-dimensional time is the wavespell. It is important to see the Thirteen Moon calendar in this modular format, Planetary Service Wavespell, for then it makes more sense to speak of the calendar as a synchronometer. The wavespell's form describes the motion of time as a fractal fourth-dimensional cosmology. The numbers 1-13 in the dot bar notation that code the thirteen positions are known as tones. The names of the tones in sequence define the cosmology, which is also evident in the very structure of the wavespell. The thirteen tones give their names to the thirteen Moons. The structure consists of two gates, the Magnetic and the Cosmic, the first and the thirteenth moons/tones, which correspond to the two entrance and exit gates or portals. Complementing the two gates are the two towers, the fifth or Overtone tower and the ninth or Solar tower. The two gates and the two towers, tones 1, 5, 9, and 13, articulate the structure of the wavespell. Between the places of articulation are three sets of chambers. The first set, tones 2-3-4, helps establish the wavespell; the second set, tones 6-7-8, helps extend the wavespell; and the third set, 10-11-12, serves to convert the wavespell. (See plate 2, Planetary Service Wavespell.)

The structure of the wavespell also defines a four-dimensional geometry of time that connects different points of the wavespell over time. Each of these dimensional geometries is known as a pulsar. It is useful to know the pulsars in extending the mind synchronically over different timing sequences. The fourth-dimensional pulsar connects the four points of articulation, 1-5-9-13, or Magnetic, Overtone, Solar, and Cosmic Moon/tones, and is called the fourth-dimensional time pulsar. The first-dimension life pulsar connects the positions 2-6-10, or Lunar-Rhythmic-Planetary Moon/tones. The second-dimensional sense pulsar connects the 3-7-11, or Electric-Resonant-Spectral Moon/tones; and the third-dimensional mind-form pulsar connects
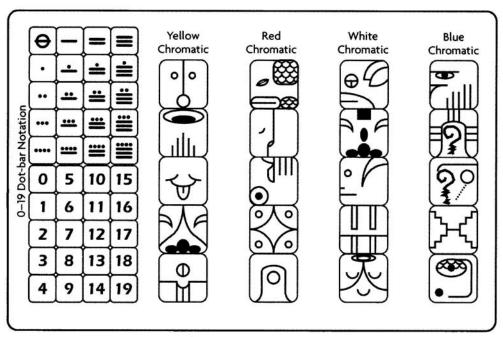
the 4-8-12, or Self-existing-Galactic-and -Crystal Moon/tones. Remember, the wavespell accommodates any sequence of kin whose tones correspond to 1-13, and may be either a thirteen-day wavespell cycle, a thirteen-week cycle (one-quarter of an NET day), a thirteen-Moon cycle (one NET day), a thirteen-year cycle (one NET Season), and so on. Once you know the wavespell you have come to know the form in time of the noospheric mind.
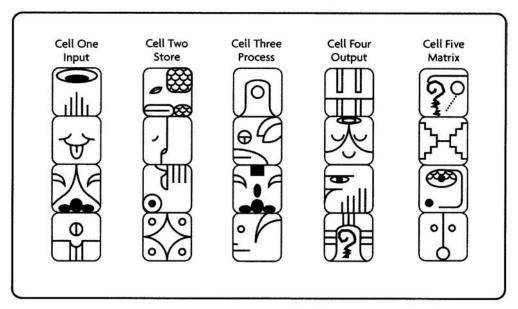
THE WAVESPELL'S TONES AND THEIR PULSARS

1. Magnetic tone of purpose-fourth-dimension   time pulsar

2. Lunar tone of challenge-first-dimension   life pulsar

3. Electric tone of service-second-dimension   sense pulsar

4. Self-existing tone of form-third-dimension   mind-form pulsar

5. Overtone tone of radiance-fourth-dimension   time pulsar

6. Rhythmic tone of equality-first-dimension   life pulsar

7. Resonant tone of attunement-second-dimension   sense pulsar

8. Galactic tone of integrity-third-dimension   mind-form pulsar

9. Solar tone of intention-fourth-dimension   time pulsar

10. Planetary tone of manifestation-first-dimension   life pulsar

11. Spectral tone of liberation-second-dimension   sense pulsar

12. Crystal tone of cooperation-third-dimension   mind-form pulsar

13. Cosmic tone of presence-fourth-dimension   time pulsar

DREAMSPELL

Described as the fourth dimensional tool kit, the Dreamspell also encodes a psycho-mythic cosmology known as the Journey of Timeship Earth 2013. It is this cosmology that makes the Dreamspell a psychoactive tool kit for personally engaging you in the fourth-dimensional synchronic order of time. The fundamental premise for making it psychoactive lies in finding your galactic signature, the color, icon, and tone that code your date of birth. This combination of factors-color, tone, and icon-establishes a mathematical code that allows you to use your galactic signature in mapping increasing orders of synchronicity. There are four colors, thirteen tones,

The Four Chromatics

The Five Time Cells

and twenty icons. The four colors code each of five sets of icons and correspond to the base four-phasic function of the noospheric rainbow brain–red initiates, white refines, blue transforms, and yellow ripens. The icons themselves actually correspond to the mathematical code 0-19.

Red Family: Dragon (1), Serpent (5), Moon (9), Skywalker (13), and Earth (17)

White Family: Wind (2), World-bridger (6), Dog (10), Wizard (14), and Mirror (18)

Blue Family: Night (3), Hand (7), Monkey (11), Eagle (15), and Storm (19)

Yellow Family: Seed (4), Star (8), Human (12), Warrior (16), and Sun (20 = 0)

The mapping of synchronicity through use of the galactic signature is done through a set of tools: the Galactic Compass, Journey Board, Oracle Board, and Time Atom Cube. The point of engaging the Dreamspell is to learn of the infinite possibilities of fractal synchronic mapping of the events of your life and the lives of your family and friends, as well as current events and human history. The compass and boards describe the radial mathematics of fourth-dimensional time and also provide the means for fully engaging the synchronic order of the noospheric mind. The interactive complex of changing the family and clan relations to which the galactic signature entitles you also provides the basic patterns of social organization in time. The Dreamspell is indispensable for education concerning the radial, fractal nature of fourth-dimensional time and mathematics.
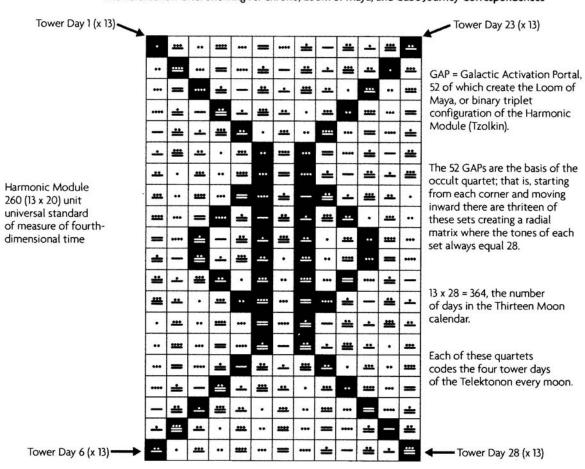
TELEKTONON

Meaning "Earth Spirit Speaking Tube," *Telektonon* is the name of the prophecy of Pacal Votan, and the definition of a complex program for establishing universal telepathy. It should be noted that the tomb of Pacal Votan was discovered in 1952, after 1,260 years, because of a tile tube, the Earth Spirit Speaking Tube, which ran from the top of the pyramid temple, down the secret stairwell, and into the wall of the elaborate tomb beneath the pyramid. The prophecy itself was decoded from the inscriptions and symbols of the elaborately carved sarcophagus lid of the tomb. Essentially defining a period of "Seven Years of Prophecy," (1993-2000), followed by a 13-year Cycle of Creation (2000-2013), the Telektonon is practiced on a daily basis by means of a board and various moving parts.

The purpose of the daily play is to learn how to operate by a set of coordinates that define the nature of telepathic consciousness as the interplay of five circuits that connect the ten planetary orbits (the Asteroid Belt, remnants of the lost fifth planet Maldek, is included as one of these orbits). The key interplanetary connection is between Earth, the third planet, and Uranus, the eighth planet, which creates the third or biotelepathic circuit. The Earth-Uranus circuit constitutes twenty-eight steps and thus corresponds to the 28-day measure of the Thirteen Moon calendar. Between days 7 and 22, one is

The Telektonon Grid

Tower Day 28 GAP				
	Day 13	Day 12	Day 11	Day 10
	Day 14	Day 21	Day 20	Day 9
	Day 15	Day 22	Day 19	Day 8
	Day 16	Day 17	Day 18	Day 7
Tower Day 1 GAP				Tower Day 6 GAP

Tower Day 23 GAP

116 cube days per moon x 13 moons =
208 cube days or 208 kin per year

4 tower days per moon, each tower day =
1 GAP equivalent x - 13 moon =
52 GAP kin, or Loom of Maya

208 + 52 = 260 kin, or one Tzolkin grid
Two sets of teams, two polar Tzolkin grids =
1 psi bank plate = 260 x 2 520 kin or
520 psi chrono units per psi bank plate per year

The Telektonon Grid: Showing Psi Chrono, Loom of Maya, and Cube Journey Correspondences

Tower Day 1 (x 13)   Tower Day 23 (x 13)

Harmonic Module
260 (13 x 20) unit
universal standard
of measure of fourth-
dimensional time

GAP = Galactic Activation Portal,
52 of which create the Loom of
Maya, or binary triplet
configuration of the Harmonic
Module (Tzolkin).

The 52 GAPs are the basis of the
occult quartet; that is, starting
from each corner and moving
inward there are thirteen of
these sets creating a radial
matrix where the tones of each
set always equal 28.

13 x 28 = 364, the number
of days in the Thirteen Moon
calendar.

Each of these quartets
codes the four tower days
of the Telektonon every moon.

Tower Day 6 (x 13)   Tower Day 28 (x 13)

Telektonon - Rinri GAPs and Towers with Harmonic Module

able to take the "Warrior's Cube Journey" to uncover knowledge hidden by the Tower of Babel. The sixteen positions of the Cube of the Law (days 7-22) are the heart of the Telektonon play, which also includes a rehearsal of the thirteen baktun history with the intention of "redeeming the Babylon planet" as Timeship Earth 2013.

THE RINRI PROJECT

Described as a "four-year telepathic biosphere-noosphere transition Circumpolar Rainbow Bridge Experiment," the Rinri Project builds on the Telektonon play that establishes the biotelepathic circuit. On this circuit, two towers, days 1 and 6, define a four-day Earth Walk, and two towers, days 23 and 28, define a four-day Heaven Walk. Between the second and the third towers, days 6 and 23, are the sixteen positions of the Cube of the Law, days 7-22. The four towers every Moon correspond to one radial set of four Galactic Activation Portals in the Harmonic Module-thirteen moons x four towers = 52 Galactic Activation Portals (GAPs). Sixteen cube positions each moon x 13 Moons = 208, the remaining number of kin in the Harmonic Module once the 52 GAPs have been subtracted from the 260 units. Since the Harmonic Module is the basis of the psi bank, this formulation provides a way of coordinating the four psi bank plates of the noosphere to the Thirteen Moon calendar year on a daily and annual basis.

Since there are four plates, it takes four years, one year per plate, to open the psi bank. The first opening occurred between 1996-2000. The second opening, 2000-2004, is now occurring and is programmed by a coordination of the twenty-four runes of the Elder Futhark to the twenty-four psi membranes-6 runes per week every Moon x four weeks = 24. Since each psi plate is a mirror symmetry pair of Harmonic Modules, reflecting the North and South magnetic poles of the Earth, the Rinri project is practiced by telepathically interactive teams in the Northern and Southern Hemispheres. The Rainbow Bridge refers to making visible the dynamic of Earth's electromagnetic aura and extending it permanently from pole to pole. This is how the noosphere is visibly manifest.

Rinri is a Japanese word meaning "ethical enlightenment," and its application includes seventeen moral precepts that are studied during the sixteen-day cube journey, the seventeenth corresponding to the tower day 23.

260 POSTULATES OF THE DYNAMICS OF TIME

While the Telektonon is predicated on the fourth-dimensional tool kit, the Dream-spell, the 260 Postulates of the Dynamics of Time elaborate on the nature and theory of the biosphere-noosphere transition by providing a set of twenty systematic

thirteen-part logics that describe and define the dynamics of time as the evolution of consciousness. Because there are 260 postulates corresponding to the 13:20 matrix, a postulate can be studied and meditated on each day over a 260-day cycle according to the code number of the daily icon combined with the number of its tone, for example, Red Lunar Dragon, where Dragon is 0-19 code number 1, and Lunar is tone 2, therefore the postulate to study for the day is 1.2. This daily programming, established by the Telektonon practice is how knowledge is reformatted according to the synchronic order. This in itself precipitates the noosphere.
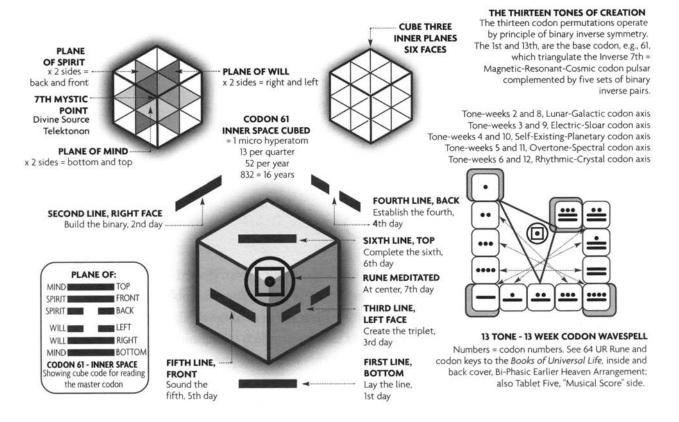
TWENTY TABLETS OF THE LAW OF TIME, SIXTEEN-YEAR CUBE OF THE LAW

The Twenty Tablets can be described as a road map of the fourth dimension. By focusing on a sequence between the years 1997-2013, by fractal analogies, the telepathic engagement encompasses the 26,000-year cycle as well as the coming cycle of the Psychozoic future. The crux of the daily play of the synchronic order is called *cubing the codon.* The point is to telepathically reharmonize the DNA that has been adversely affected by the 12:60 timing frequency. There are sixty-four DNA codons whose six-part binary structure is identical to that of the sixty-four hexagrams of the I Ching when both are written with a simple binary language of broken or unbroken lines. Each of the codons establishes a precise thirteen-stage permutation sequence. 64 x 13 = 832 codon permutations. The sixteen years from 1997 to 2013 also constitute 832 weeks (16 x 52 = 832 = 64 x 13). Therefore, each codon has one-quarter year, thirteen weeks, to run its permutation sequence, one sequence per week. Since each codon consists of six lines, each week the codon is built one line per day for six days, each line adhering to one side of a cube. On the seventh day, the codon is cubed and sealed by one of sixty-four "UR Runes." The UR Runes are the master cosmic runes, each of which governs an entire thirteen-unit codon permutation sequence. The Twenty Tablets also contain much synchronic information for experiencing what is referred to as *fractal time compression,* the expanded mental ability to engage in different planes or levels of time simultaneously. All of this is to establish a mind training for fully engaging the fourth-dimensional synchronic order of reality and time travel.

7:7::7:7 TELEKTONON REVELATION

While the Twenty Tablets of the Cube of the Law synchronize the DNA Codons in all their permutations on a weekly basis over a sixteen-year cycle, the 7:7::7:7 Telektonon Revelation establishes the 28-day cycle as the basis for synchronizing

Three planes create the cube. The six faces
of the cube code the six lines of the codon.
Cube the codon according to the thirteen
tones of creasion

**PLANE
OF SPIRIT**
x 2 sides =
back and front

PLANE OF WILL
x 2 sides = right and left

**7TH MYSTIC
POINT**
Divine Source
Telektonon

PLANE OF MIND
x 2 sides = bottom and top

**CODON 61
INNER SPACE CUBED**
= 1 micro hyperatom
13 per quarter
52 per year
832 = 16 years

**CUBE THREE
INNER PLANES
SIX FACES**

THE THIRTEEN TONES OF CREATION
The thirteen codon permutations operate
by principle of binary inverse symmetry.
The 1st and 13th, are the base codon, e.g., 61,
which triangulate the Inverse 7th =
Magnetic-Resonant-Cosmic codon pulsar
complemented by five sets of binary
inverse pairs.

Tone-weeks 2 and 8, Lunar-Galactic codon axis
Tone-weeks 3 and 9, Electric-Sloar codon axis
Tone-weeks 4 and 10, Self-Existing-Planetary codon axis
Tone-weeks 5 and 11, Overtone-Spectral codon axis
Tone-weeks 6 and 12, Rhythmic-Crystal codon axis

SECOND LINE, RIGHT FACE
Build the binary, 2nd day

FOURTH LINE, BACK
Establish the fourth,
4th day

SIXTH LINE, TOP
Complete the sixth,
6th day

RUNE MEDITATED
At center, 7th day

**THIRD LINE,
LEFT FACE**
Create the triplet,
3rd day

PLANE OF:
MIND — TOP
SPIRIT — FRONT
SPIRIT — BACK
WILL — LEFT
WILL — RIGHT
MIND — BOTTOM

CODON 61 - INNER SPACE
Showing cube code for reading
the master codon

**FIFTH LINE,
FRONT**
Sound the
fifth, 5th day

**FIRST LINE,
BOTTOM**
Lay the line,
1st day

13 TONE - 13 WEEK CODON WAVESPELL
Numbers = codon numbers. See 64 UR Rune and
codon keys to the *Books of Universal Life*, inside and
back cover, Bi-Phasic Earlier Heaven Arrangement;
also Tablet Five, "Musical Score" side.

Codon Cube Cosmology
Sounding the Thirteen Tones of Creation

the seven primary plasmas-electronically   charged ions-into   four aggregates called
time atoms. The seven plasmas, which also replace the names of the days of the
week, are in two sets of three, with the middle or fourth acting as a catalytic agent.
The first three plasmas form a sensory quantum and the last three plasmas form a
telepathic quantum. Activation of the plasmas releases radion, a telepathic lubricant;
hence, the seven plasmas are also referred to as radial plasmas. The four plasmic
aggregates are known as the Analog Time Atom (week 1), the Antipode Time Atom
(week 2), the Occult Time Atom (week 3), and the Unified Field Time Atom, (week
4). Like the Twenty Tablets, the 7:7::7:7 Telektonon Revelation also involves prin-
ciples of fractal time compression where each day during the first week is the equiva-
lent of 260 moons or twenty years; the following two weeks, each day is thirteen

The Seven Seals, Seven Radial Plasmas

Dali

Seli

Gamma

Kali

Alpha

Limi

Silio

moons or one year; and the last week each day is one moon. Played on a board with cards containing affirmations from the Buddhist sage, Padmasambhava, the object of the 7:7::7:7 is to place the time atoms within the crystal octahedron at the center of the Earth so that each Moon a master time molecule is telepathically placed at the center of the Earth per one NET hour. In this way, Noospheric Earth Time is activated, the telepathic mind is engaged with the phenomenal reality represented by the plasmas, and the rainbow brain of the noosphere is hastened into everyday presence.

The seven daily plasmas constituting one thirteen-moon week, or one NET quarter hour are:

Dali (Sunday)-thermic charge

Seli (Monday)-luminic charge

Gamma (Tuesday)-luminic-thermic charge (these first three create one sensory quantum)

Kali (Wednesday)-luminic-thermic, thermic-Iuminic catalytic agent

Alpha (Thursday)-double-extended electron at the South Pole

Limi (Friday)-mental electron at the North Pole

Silio (Saturday)-mental electron-neutron at the center of the Earth (these last three create one telepathic quantum)

Part II. The Peace Plan: Establishing the *Pax Cultura, Pax Biospherica*

From the time of the formation, or rather, the calling into existence of the World Thirteen Moon Calendar Change Peace Movement, there had to be a *World Thirteen Moon Calendar Change Peace Plan.* The original of this Plan was submitted to the United Nations in 1995 for its fiftieth anniversary. The crux of the Peace Plan is that to change the world standard calendar is the opportunity for humanity to stop in its tracks and redirect itself. By stopping in its tracks to change its timing frequency, humanity can also use the opportunity to call a universal cease-fire and declare an emergency peace worldwide. Only in this way can the new time be experienced and fully engaged.

At the First Planetary Congress of Biospheric Rights (1996), this Peace Plan was extended to include the establishment of a new human covenant that would restore to humanity its intrinsic biospheric rights, the same as enjoyed by the rest of life in the biosphere: free land, clean air, clean water. The premise of the Biospheric Covenant is that humanity is first and foremost a member of the biosphere, and not of any artificially constituted nation-state. The Biospheric Congress also mandated the revival of the Banner of Peace and Roerich Peace Pact (1935) as one of the emblems to be used to identify the biosphere as a zone of peace.

The World Congress on the Law of Time and Judgment Day Tribunal (1997) extended the Biospheric Congress to include an indictment of the Gregorian calendar as a crime against the biosphere-"the crime of the millennium"-and the establishment of the Law of Time, inclusive of the Twenty Tablets, as the new dispensation of knowledge awarded in compensation to humanity, based on the synchronic veracity of the Thirteen Moon Calendar Change Peace Plan.

By 1999, the World Summit on Peace and Time provided the Declaration of Calendar Reform and a set of People's Resolutions, which were presented to the United Nations and the Vatican. The Resolutions define a seven-part educational program, which, like the Biospheric Covenant, envisions a radical reorganization of human society.

The purpose of these documents and declarations is for the creation of a state of universal unconditional peace so that human society can be rebuilt as a harmonic unity in phase with the biosphere as a whole. The result of the Thirteen Moon Calendar Change Peace Plan would be the creation of a new order of life on Earth-the *Pax Cultura, Pax Biospherica.*

The Advent of the Noosphere
A Prayer and a Vision

IT IS MORNING   once again, or, rather, it is predawn. It is still the first watch of the day. Outside there is a full moon. On the Gregorian calendar it is November 1, 2001, All Soul's Day, the sequel to Halloween, the day of honoring the dead. In another two weeks it will be the New Moon of Ramadan, Islamic lunar year A.H. 1422. On the Thirteen Moon synchronometer it is now the fifteenth day of the Self-existing Owl Moon, the moon of form, the moon to define, measure, and ask the question, "What form will my service take?" Well, my service will be to complete this book and prepare it for the world, for now it is the time of the advent of the noosphere, the reality of which Vernadsky said must be communicated to the world's politicians and statesmen. They didn't listen then. WIll they listen now? And on the 260-kin synchronization gauge it is kin 42, White Electric WInd. The WInd "communicates spirit," the Electric tone "activates service." WInd is the second of twenty solar seals that code each day in the synchronic order.
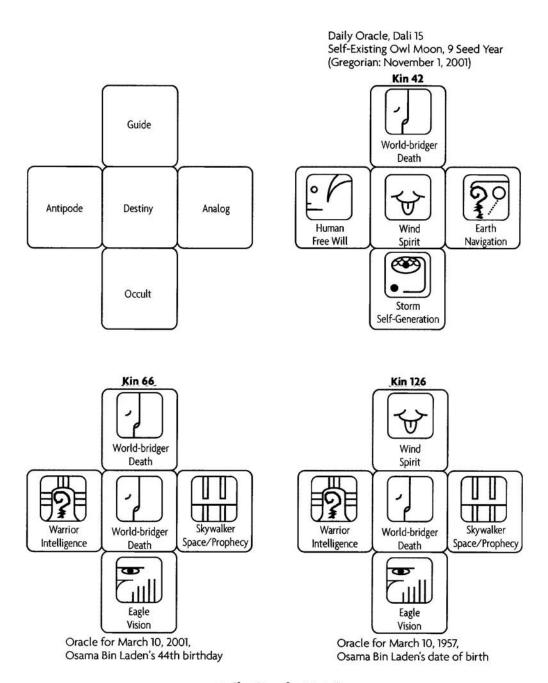
By its mathematical relationships to the other nineteen solar seals, the solar seal of the daily kin possesses a unique five-part oracle. In today's oracle the WInd is guided by the World-bridger, who brings the power of death. In the psi bank, the matching psi chrono unit for today, the fifteenth day of the Self-existing Owl Moon, is kin 66, Magnetic World-bridger, the first tone in the 13-kin wavespell of the World-bridger, which means today is very strongly penetrated by the power of death. What is death to the noosphere? An inevitable and unavoidable event, a critical and

Dragon Nurtures Birth	Serpent Survives Life-Force	Moon Purifies Universal Water	Skywalker Explores Space	Earth Evolves Navigation
Wind Communicates Spirit	World-bridger Equalizes Death	Dog Loves Heart	Wizard Enchants Timelessness	Mirror Reflects Endlessness
Night Dreams Abundance	Hand Knows Accomplishment	Monkey Plays Magic	Eagle Creates Vision	Storm Catalyzes Self-Generation
Seed Targets Flowering	Star Beautifies Elegance	Human Influences Free Will	Warrior Questions Fearlessness	Sun Enlightens Universal Fire

**The 20 Solar Seals
Names, Actions, and Powers**

equalizing stage in the recycling of biomass, a furtherance of the biogenic migration of atoms, the creation of biospheric compost, a release of consciousness back into the noosphere, an opportunity to consider the value of life. But to the ordinary mind of the artificial technosphere, death is the ultimate object of fear, and the fear of death is the chief object of manipulation by those who generate terror. It is of note that by his date of birth, March 10,1957, the galactic signature of Os am a Bin Laden is White Solar World-bridger, kin 126, while for this, his forty-fourth year, his birthday was coded by kin 66, White Magnetic World-bridger, both signatures bearing the destiny seal of the power of death. This is an example of how the synchronic order is "read" on a daily basis.

It is a mistake to think that the terror is just the malevolent intention of a single human being. The terror is co-extensive with the technosphere. In fact, the technosphere is the age of terror. The terror was generated at Hiroshima, and repeated at Nagasaki fifty-six years ago. And the terror was compounded by the original perpe-

Daily Oracle, Dali 15
Self-Existing Owl Moon, 9 Seed Year
(Gregorian: November 1, 2001)

Kin 42

Guide

Antipode   Destiny   Analog

Occult

World-bridger
Death

Human   Wind   Earth
Free Will   Spirit   Navigation

Storm
Self-Generation

Kin 66

World-bridger
Death

Warrior   World-bridger   Skywalker
Intelligence   Death   Space/Prophecy

Eagle
Vision

Oracle for March 10, 2001,
Osama Bin Laden's 44th birthday

Kin 126

Wind
Spirit

Warrior   World-bridger   Skywalker
Intelligence   Death   Space/Prophecy

Eagle
Vision

Oracle for March 10, 1957,
Osama Bin Laden's date of birth

Daily Oracle Matrix

trators of that terror many thousands of times over in the creation and stockpiling of weapons of mass destruction, an act soon imitated by the then archrival, the Soviet Union, and by other nation-states, namely, the United Kingdom, France, and China. Those called the "terrorists" today have nothing to compare to the stockpiles of these weapons by these five nation-states who constitute the permanent members of the United Nations Security Council-the "nuclear club." That is who rules the world today, the official possessors of the weapons of mass destruction, who jealously guard their secrets. If this is the ultimate ruling body of the planet, and the reason why they are the ruling body is their possession of these instruments of death, then why should anyone be surprised at the existence of "terrorists" in the rest of the world? And why, we may ask again, are these terrorists mostly, it would seem, from the Islamic world? In addition to the nuclear arsenals, there are the biological and chemical weapons of mass destruction. Those who live by the manufacture of terror must surely die by their own means. If other nations have developed the same systems of terror, it is only in self-defense or in imitation of the masters of terror.

Everyday for four weeks now, I have been waking up at this time to continue work on this text, *Time and the Technosphere*I had at first thought that the book could be complete with eight chapters. People don't have time to read, and the topic warrants as brief and pithy an explanation as possible. After all, it is really a time of reflection-and then action. The masters of terror have cloaked themselves as the protectors of civilization and as the moral crusaders who will rid the world of evil. Yet what is civilization today but the resource-consuming cancer of the biosphere? Is this what is being protected-the right to promote the disease upon the biosphere? The terrorists who attacked the Twin Towers and the Pentagon clearly knew the symbolic and actual value of their targets. They also undoubtedly knew the depths of the death-fear of the superpower masters of terror, whose reaction would most likely foment a global war. But in such a war, who would win? In this regard, from the noospheric perspective, the Inevitable Event was the technocide-death by technospheric means-of the technosphere itself. The technosphere was created by and thrived on means of terror, and the means of massive terror as well as the economic imperialism perpetrated by the superpower managers of the technosphere could only have produced a reaction against itself known as terrorism. The end result is collective suicide. There are no flags in the blood of the dead, nor is there any evident religious belief. There is only human biomass ultimately indistinguishable and anonymous to the biosphere.

Eight chapters were needed in order to complete the information about the biosphere, technosphere, noosphere, and the Law of Time. Maybe a new spirit of the

biosphere will arise from the considerations of my book. Maybe the noosphere will spark in others the need to allow the biosphere to reclaim us from the technosphere. Anyone who says this is "turning back the clock" is only betraying their immersion and unexamined belief in the reality of artificial mechanical time. Yes, eight chapters were necessary to unfold this analysis and solution. But I knew there had to be a ninth chapter for the testament to be complete. For this is a living testament, and if anything has been learned by living according to the synchronic order of fourth-dimensional time, it is the renewed power of number itself. There is a power and meaning to number understood as a universal, self-existing mental construct. The synchronic order is constructed of number. And as Pythagoras perceived, number is a kind of spiritual entity that can only be aroused by an act of meditative contempla-tion. Each whole number bears its own resonance. You can feel this in the contem-plation of the difference between even and odd numbers.

The resonance of 8, an even number, is harmonic order and balance, geometri-cally evident in the octagon or the octahedron. But the resonance of 9, an odd num-ber, is quite different. Nine months to give birth, three times three, a rhythmic tri-plicity-that is nine. The Germanic god-hero Odin, or Votan, spent nine nights hanging from a tree in order to gain knowledge of the mys-teries of woman. When the tomb of Pacal Votan was opened on June 15, 1952, it revealed a large vaulted chamber beneath the pyramid of the inscriptions in Palenque, Chiapas, Mexico. Entering the tomb, in the center of which is the famous sarcophagus, one sees on the walls the beautifully sculpted figures of nine personages. Today these sculptures have almost completely worn away. But originally, these low-relief sculptures modeled out of lime-stone, depicted with great elegance, a series of figures commonly known as the Nine Lords of Night, or the Nine Lords of Time. Are the Nine Lords of Time, the Lords of Night who guard Pacal Votan in his tomb, the same as the nine nights of OdinIVotan? And who was Pacal Votan? With what mythic resonance are we dealing?

A Mayan seer, a sage-king of the seventh

Nine Lords of Time Begin to Gather for a Council of the Earth

century of the Christian era, had deliberately created a mysterious tomb for himself, only to have it hidden, buried beneath a pyramid temple, but a tomb intended to be opened more than twelve centuries later, in the seventh year of the time of the terror, the time of the technosphere. How ingenious, how uncanny, that it would have been unknown for 1,260 years-a number also known in the thirteenth chapter of the Book of Revelations as the number of days of exile of the woman clothed with the sun, her feet on the moon, and twelve stars around her head. What does this allegory mean? Is it not the same as the exile of the human soul in the deadening world of 12:60 materialism? Sixty years remained from the opening of that mysterious tomb to the closing of the cycle of history, the omega point of 2012. How could the timing of the opening of the tomb have occurred so precisely-1,2 60 years from dedication to discovery, 1,320 years from its dedication to the closing of the cycle? How could those years be such a perfect reflection of the artificial 12:60 and the natural 13:20 timing frequencies? How could a Mayan sage in Central America so long ago be able to see, it would seem, into our future?

When we study the globe and consider things synchronically from the perspective of the noosphere, we find some interesting correspondences. Pacal Votan lived in the tenth baktun cycle, between the Christian years 603-683, on the opposite side of the world but at almost the same latitude as Mecca, and just after the time of Muhammad, 570-632. Today the religion that God commanded Muhammad to found, Islam, is at the center of the terrorist storm, while the prophecy of Pacal Votan and of the Mayan calendar in general has placed the end point of history at 2012, a mere eleven years after the Inevitable Event that placed Islam at dead center of the world mind. How could this be, the religion of the prophet Muhammad and the prophetic timing of the Maya so close at hand? Is this some revelation of the Nine Lords of Time, or of God speaking through them-and who are the Nine Lords of Time? Are they destined to return? Could it be that the Nine Lords of Time, like some higher dimensional Lords of the Ring, are a manifestation of time to be released, one by one, in an annual sequence during the last nine years of the Great Cycle, 2004-2013?

These Nine Lords of Time are known in Mayan as the Bolontiku; their counterparts are the Oxlahuntiku-the nine lords and the thirteen lords, respectively. The nine lords govern the underworld, the time of the third dimension, which is why they are depicted in descent to the sarcophagus of Pacal Votan, while the thirteen lords govern the heavenly realms. The nine govern the nine vigesimal orders of number, while the thirteen govern the form of time. The dedication of the tomb of Pacal Votan in A.D.692 corresponded to the Long Count baktun date of9.13.0.0.

The nine and the thirteen lords-Bolontiku and Oxlahuntiku-are present in the very numbers of the dedication date. And the nine and the thirteen also governed the prophecy of Quetzalcoatl, of Thirteen Heavens of decreasing choice and Nine Hells of increasing doom. This prophecy refers to the sequence of twenty-two 52-year cycles that began in A.D. 843 and ended in A.D. 1987. Six years later, in 1993, during the first year of the 260th and final katun cycle of history, I began to decode the prophecy ofPacal Votan, some forty-one years after the tomb had been opened.

Telektonon, the Prophecy of Pacal Votan, was meant to be decoded precisely and only at the moment of its absolute usefulness, kin 144: Yellow Magnetic Seed, July 26, 1993. This moment defined the Seven Years of Prophecy, 1993-2000. It also established the validity of the Dreamspell or WIzard's Count as the reformulated Year- Bearer Count of the Chilam Balam, the jaguar priests or night seers. That is, the Telektonon Prophecy could only have been triggered when kin 144 occurred as the Year Bearer, Yellow Magnetic Seed, kin 144, correlated to the Gregorian date of July 26, 1993.

The precise revelation of this prophecy on kin 144, July 26, 1993, was dependent on and could only have occurred because a prophetic count, the WIzard's Count, de-rived from the prophetic tradition of the Chilam Balam, had already been established. This "count" provided the basis of *The Mayan Factor* and was woven into the conclu-sion of the Prophecy of the Thirteen Heavens and Nine Hells, Harmonic Conver-gence, August 16-17, 1987. And the precise number of kin 144, the revelation date of the prophecy of Pacal Votan was meant to accord with the Book of Revelations num-ber of the elect, 144,000 (Revelations 7:4). In fact, that very day I discovered that the number 144 transliterated from the vigesimal count into Arabic numbers is written 7.4, which is the same as the chapter and verse number where the 144,000 are first mentioned in the Book of Revelations (7 $=$ 140, or 7 x 20, plus 4 units $=$ 7.4). More uncanny stuff-but not so to the noosphere, the Earth's mind of time. In the noosphere everything is woven of number, and number is intrinsically synchronizing, which is why numerology has held such a fascination for the human mind throughout history.

When I first began to decode this "final prophecy of the Maya," or Telektonon, a prophecy that commands the return to natural time through the Thirteen *Moon!* 28- Day calendar, I was stunned and not a little frightened. I had already taken many steps to remove myself from mainstream society and conventional life. But now I was dealing with a genuine prophecy, and I was to be its messenger. This was not my invention. The world is filled with enough madmen and lunatics spouting their par-ticular visions. How could I ever make the world understand that this vision, this prophecy, was real, that it was the fulfillment of a Mayan who lived and died thirteen

centuries ago, and that his tomb was the vehicle of this prophecy, a prophecy meant precisely for this moment in time-the biosphere-noosphere transition?

I returned to the texts of the Chilam Balam, whose prophetic stream includes day prophecies, year prophecies, katun (twenty year), and *ahau* (260-year) cycle prophecies, prophecies of Quetzalcoatl, and finally the special prophecies of the mysterious Antonio Martinez and the coming religion of the Hunab Ku, "One Giver of Movement and Measure." I realized that the meaning and fulfillment of this entire prophetic stream was crystallized in the Harmonic Convergence and its 26-year aftermath. Chilam Balam, the jaguar priests, are the wizards of time, inspired by the guidance of the Bolontiku, the Nine Lords of Time, the Lords of Number. By command of the Supreme One (Hunab Ku), the wizards are directed to establish clear paths of rekindled knowledge. The ancient Maya prophesied their own destruction. Therefore, within the prophecies of the Chilam Balam they laid the seeds of their reconstruction-but not simply as Maya. The reconstruction had to be planetary, for their destruction in the sixteenth century was also an act of planetary consequence-the plunging of the entire world into the prison of artificial, mechanized time. The fulfillment of the prophecies along with the new dispensation of time had to occur before the end of the cycle, 2012.

For this reason, the master synchronic architect of the Mayan prophets, Pacal Votan, prepared the way with the discovery of his tomb in 1952. This phenomenal act of prophetic release meant that now the messenger of his prophecy of time had to be summoned to his task. This was to be my role and responsibility-one that I accepted, for I saw no other choice. The course of my life from the moment I had experienced an illumination atop the Pyramid of the Sun at Teotihuacan in 1953, to that moment forty years later, in 1993, when I first perceived that the meaning of the prophecy Telektonon was a single trajectory. The noosphere had found another chip. After all, if the noosphere is the mind of time on Earth, prophecy is just another way of radializing time, of bringing it around from one point in a cyclic motion to another. My preparation had been going on for a while.

Once I had received knowledge of the prophecy of the Thirteen Heavens and Nine Hells from Tony Shearer back around 1970, I prepared myself by study and meditation for the moment of the Harmonic Convergence. It may be asked: If the Harmonic Convergence concluded the cycle of the Nine Hells, then why are we experiencing the

apocalyptic events of Hell on Earth now, some fourteen years later? What was the actual meaning of the Harmonic Convergence, and what does it mean for us today?

First of all, the Harmonic Convergence refers to the entire 26-year cycle from White Galactic WIzard to Yellow Galactic Seed, 1987-2013. The conclusion of the Ninth Hell refers to the release of humanity into the 26-year time zone of free will, choice, and decision in preparation for the completion of the cycle, omega point 2012, and the Galactic Synchronization, 2013. The full and true Harmonic Convergence will not be complete until the Earth itself becomes the Galactic Seed, 2013. If the twenty-six years are the free will zone of choice and decision, what are we to choose and decide? The choice is, as I was quoted in the *TVtlllStreet Journal* in 1987, " between a 'new age' and all-out destruction." The decision is to accept the knowledge of the error in time (12:60) and the choice is to return to natural time (13:20) by means of the Thirteen Moon!28-Day calendar. This the prophecy ofPacal Votan fully affirms.

In principle, the Harmonic Convergence refers to the converging of all aspects of reality in a great, all-unifying harmony. The initial moment of the Harmonic Convergence that witnessed hundreds of thousands of humans congregated at sacred sites worldwide at the dawn of August 16, 1987, Blue Electric Eagle, was a pure prophetic enactment of humanity being harmonically converged with the natural order of time. This visionary moment demonstrated that, indeed, Harmonic Convergence was possible. The wave of unconscious energy released through the collective psyche of the species as a result of this moment of prophetic purity reached a climax with the fall of the Berlin Wall and the end of the Cold War.

Early 1990, the role of the Harmonic Convergence in this process was echoed in the mass media as the question, "Did the Harmonic Convergence bring the world closer to peace?"l Before the question could be answered, the next phase of the prophetic end time began to unfold. Rather than determine how to make the choice to enter a genuine new age, the human race defaulted to an absolute materialism. It was this collective turn taken by the planetary leadership, now known as the G-7, that engendered the apocalypse we are now witnessing. In this turn, the Harmonic Convergence was forgotten, deleted as it were from the official public texts of contemporary history. The stage was thus set for the next revelation, the Telektonon of Pacal Votan.

In distinguishing the Seven Years of Prophecy, 1993-2000, Magnetic Seed-Resonant WIzard years, the Telektonon of Pacal Votan makes an absolutely clear analysis of the human condition at this time: unless the human race forsakes the false time governed by the instruments of the Gregorian calendar and the mechanical clock by the year 2000, then it will face its own destruction, biospheric collapse, and Hell on Earth. But ifby the year 2000 it can make the decision to reject the calendar of the false

12:60 time and adopt the perfect instrument of the natural 13:20 time, the Thirteen Moon!28-Day calendar, then humanity will have been able to make the choice of entering a new age. For the new age, so longed for, is actually only realizable as a new time. A new time can only come about by the rejection of the instrument that holds in place the hallucination of the old time, replacing it instead with an instrument of such perfect harmony that it has no history, but is truly post-historical.

For this, the messengers of time, myself and my wife, embarked on a course of being galactic gypsies, with no visible means of support, in order to warn the world of the meaning of the time and to offer to the world the opportunity of changing its course by changing its calendar. When the year 2000 rolled around, humanity remained unmoved. The Gregorian calendar, the Vatican, and the G-7 appeared to be as strong as ever. The prophecy did not fail, but humanity did fail to heed the message regarding artificial and natural time. In this process, as "messengers" my wife and I were only playing out an archetypal role. So beginning with the Blue Galactic Storm year, July 26,2000, thirteen years after the White Galactic WIzard year, humanity was placed in judgment. This is merely a matter of natural karmic law.

The four-year cycle, 2000-2004, became known as the prophetic cycle of the Harrowing of Hell. Just as Jesus was crucified and then experienced the Harrowing of Hell before his resurrection, so too humanity has been crucified on the technospheric cross of false time, and is now in the Harrowing of Hell awaiting the resurrection in natural time. For having failed to take seriously all its messengers and all its prophets of all times, humanity was now to pass en masse through hell. Since the Galactic Storm year, 2000-2001, completed a Seed-Storm Year bundle begun in the fifth year of prophecy (1997-1998), the 2000-2001 Blue Galactic Storm year was the year of evaluation. The full judgment was withheld until the Solar Seed Year, 2001-2002.

The Solar Seed year is the second year of the Harrowing of Hell, but the first year of the next four-year Seed-Storm Year bundle. The first half of the Yellow Solar Seed occurs during the second half of the first official year of the third millennium, 2001. The moment was now ripe for the Inevitable Event, for it was also the same Gregorian calendar year as 1945 and 1973. In the Telektonon Prophecy, verse 120, section 19, it is declared, "When the Lunar Moon has overflowed its banks, the G-7 will be no more." So it was on the twentieth day of the Lunar Moon (Blue Self-existing Monkey, galactic signature of Karl Marx), that the Tower of Babel, the World Trade Center, was struck a fatal blow, while the Pentagon, magical structure of the priests of the Dark Lords of Matter, built in "Hell's Bottom," Arlington, Virginia, during the Ninth Hell cycle, was mortally penetrated.

It is still the time of the Harmonic Convergence. The Harrowing of Hell

represents the last cycle of respite for humanity. By July 26, 2004, Blue Crystal Storm, humanity must make the "choice between a 'new age' and all-out destruction" when it will have the last opportunity to make the decision of rejecting the old time and calendar and replacing it altogether with the instrument of perfect harmony, the Thirteen Moon!28-Day synchronometer. Only such a harmonic organizing principle, universally accepted and applied, can ensure a time of harmony and the fulfillment of the Harmonic Convergence.

Is it possible that within the noosphere the Harmonic Convergence is awaiting its next climax on the Day Out of Time and the Thirteen Moon Synchronization date of the year 2004, that is, on Gregorian July 25 and 26, 2004? One reads through the *Journal of Calendar Reform* and the many texts and arguments for calendar reform that were put forth in the 1930s and feels the missed opportunity. Even Gandhi was in favor of a new universal timing standard as a principle means of unifying humanity in peace. Did World War II occur because the League of Nations failed to enact the calendar reform on January 1, 1933, as it had fully proposed? The League of Nations had promoted calendar reform as one of its major agendas since the 1920s. This world organization failed at calendar reform and at preventing World War II. Who or what prevented that reform from happening, and why?

Let us look at the matter again. In order to remain constant, any perpetual calendar ordered by the seven-day week requires the principle of a null day, a Day Out of Time that is no day of the week at all. This was a feature of the preferred Thirteen Moon!28-Day calendar proposed by the International Chamber of Commerce, as well as the other modified calendars of twelve months. Reading through archives and literature, pro and con, it is clear that what defeated the calendar reform was the conservative, Vatican-inspired objection to the null day, the Day Out of Time. To observe such a day, which is no day of the week at all, it was argued, would break the weekly succession of days set in motion by God at the beginning of creation-such a break would plunge the world into barbarism, chaos, and war. "The adoption of the weekly cycle was a triumph of Christianity to the detriment of paganism. The cult of Christianity is inextricably connected to the week whose origin reaches to the dawn of history. "2 Therefore, it was contended, to interrupt this weekly succession would destroy Christianity itself. As a result of such propaganda, the League of Nations faltered, no calendar reform occurred at all, and the world was plunged into war-a war that ended with the beginning of the age of terror. This terror is now running its course, like a fever sweeping through the biosphere. WIll it be possible to consider again what the League of Nations faltered on and what the United Nations simply chose to ignore?

Who really lost out when the calendar reform issue was tabled in 1956 at the United Nations? It was not God who invented the week as we know it, but more likely the Babylonians. Behind the week is the mystery of the whole number seven, recalled in the Epic of Gilgamesh as the seven wise men of U ruk. But the Babylonians clothed the seven-day cycle in the raiment of the sun, moon, and five principle planets-Mercury, Venus, Mars, Jupiter, and Saturn-to which the days of the week have no actual relation. Seen in this way, the seven-day week was intended to be a means on Earth for reenacting some remote mythic reality related to these seven heavenly bodies. What was that mythic reality, on what hidden knowledge is the count of the seven-day week presumed? Borrowing from Babylon, the ancient Hebrews incorporated the seven-day week into their purely lunar calendar. And it was thus from the Hebrews that the seven-day week entered the Julian and then the Gregorian calendars. It was not, however, the Romans who adopted the week, but the Christian successor to the Roman empire, the Church of Rome. What truly was the origin of the week? And what relation or meaning does it have in the first place? Even to F. H. Colson, a Christian scholar writing as late as 1926, the seven-day cycle is described as "that intruder the week, consisting indeed of a fixed number of days, but paying no regard to months or years."3

With its fixed number of days, the week makes sense only in a system of time reckoning that is synchronic rather than astronomical in nature. To those whose minds are set on the synodic lunation cycle as the absolute standard, as does the Gregorian calendar, the week is what ensures the greatest disorder in the calendar-and yet it is defended to the death. The week gains its power from the whole number 7, and not from the jumble of names in which the week is clothed. The seven-day cycle is the closest whole number that corresponds to the four phases of the moon, which, as whole numbers, are also seven days each. In fact, the fixed 7-day cycle only makes sense within the context of the Thirteen Moon calendar with its 28-day cycles divisible by four and seven, creating the annual cycle of fifty-two perfect weeks-plus the Day Out of Time, ensuring a perpetual harmony.

Was the Babylonian naming of these days-with only one name a reference to the moon-meant to be a cover-up of some earlier knowledge, a knowledge both more purely lunar and harmonic, such as the Thirteen Moon calendar? Is all of history, then, just based on a cover-up of harmonic time? What would really happen if there were a Day Out of Time, no day of the week or month at all? Would old belief systems dissolve? Would there be a psychic release, a sense of freedom? Since 1993, sixty years after the failure of the League of Nations to enact calendar reform, the Thirteen Moon Calendar Change Peace Movement has made certain that the

Day Out of Time is the day for forgiveness of debts, of release into timelessness, and for experiencing the full meaning of time is art. This day is now annually celebrated worldwide by increasing numbers of humans. All the while, the Gregorian world has arrogantly plunged blindly forward, locked into its mechanistically chaotic timing sensibility, only to receive the mortal wound of the Inevitable Event, causing it to fall through the seams of its own making, the technosphere. A Day Out of Time, it seems, might be a relief to a world now consumed by chaos, barbarism, and war.

> He sends down from the sky water for your drink and to grow trees for your benefit. With it He grows for you crops, olives, date palms, grapes, and all kinds of fruits. This is sufficient proof for people who think. And He commits, in your service, the night and the day, as well as the sun and the moon. Also, the stars are committed by His command. These are sufficient proofs for people who understand. (Quran, 16:10-12)

Yes, the biosphere is a set of proofs for people who understand, an immense order that reflects and transforms the cosmos through the very process of life on Earth. Who are the people who understand, and where are those people today? Who will speak for the biosphere? Who will take the message of the advent of the noosphere to the statesmen and the politicians that they may take heed and note that what is occurring is not really in their control at all, but is the climax of a phenom-enal process known as biogeochemical combustion? And who will declare that this climax will inevitably shake all the towers to their foundations and level the moun-tains of industry to a flat plain from which the noosphere will manifest as the equal-ity of telepathy for all?

This book, and this ninth chapter in particular, is like a long meditation, a vision, inspired by the dark tragedy of the Inevitable Event. As a vision, these thoughts are both those of one solitary individual, albeit a noospheric chip, and the continuation of the vision of that ancient seer, Pacal Votan. Could it be that Pacal Votan in his time knowledge rehearsed all these words, these thoughts, this entire vision itself? On the sarcophagus lid of Pacal Votan is a cross, not the cross of death as in Chris-tianity, but the cross of life, a tree, a cosmic tree. Across that tree is a serpentine band with two dragonlike heads, one at each end. This band represents the galaxy. The head at each end represents the galactic vision that sees equally into the past and the future. Sometimes this is called the *zuvuya,* the reflex of cosmic memory. The entire galaxy, the Milky Way, is this reflex of cosmic memory. What if all of humanity is meant to be opened into this cosmic memory? This is what is meant by the advent of the noosphere, the mind of time on Earth, the mental envelope of planetary con-

sciousness arising from the grave crisis of the biosphere through which we are now passing at this very moment.

Because we are now defining the noosphere does not mean that the noosphere was not known to those ancient Mayan time scientists like Pacal Votan, especially if the noosphere is defined as the mind of time on Earth. To such time scientists a NET year would be no time at all, or rather, it would be but a single, fifty-two solar orbit rehearsal of life. How many such rehearsals would be necessary before something was finally learned? The Prophecy of Thirteen Heavens and Nine Hells, for instance, was actually just the passage of twenty-two NET years. Is this how long was needed to see if the human race would learn anything? And if Pacal Votan and Muhammad were around today, what would they think and do?

Knowing the nature of the synchronic order of time, someone like Pacal Votan, obviously one of the most singular of all personalities of the Mayan world, would have possessed a consciousness like the two-headed galactic band, the consciousness of galactic memory. In the zuvuya of galactic consciousness, peering into the deep past is peering at the present from the future. This is possible in the radial time of the fourth dimension freed from the strict linear construct of past-and-future-time. From some higher state of mind, from a mind and consciousness identified completely with the galaxy, this has all been foreseen, this has all been written in a book. Now we who are in this present state of end-time consciousness are being asked to self-reflect. We are being asked if we can manage to hold the noospheric lens steady enough to see that the technosphere had to end, and that the technosphere could only end by the means by which it maintained all of the biosphere in its control, by terror itself.

Yes, we are all a bit like the frog at the bottom of the well whose vision and perception of the universe is circumscribed by what the opening of the well allows it to see. The well is the technosphere, both as a planetary apparatus and as a belief system. On the other side of that well is a vast world that we have actually never seen. This vast world is the noosphere and beyond. And what is beyond? Many of the traditional peoples say that we originally came from the stars. If we came from the stars, are the star people still out there? And what do the star people think of all that is happening on Earth today? And what do they think of their lost star children, many of whom now believe it is childish to think that we came from the stars? And if there are star people still out there, wouldn't they be too sophisticated to think they could get anywhere in a rocket ship, or even a UFO, subject to the entropic degradation of the material plane?

No, they wouldn't rely on such primitive technology, but would be in tune, as is the rest of the universe, with the universal frequency of synchronization and the

capacity of time to travel at an infinitely instantaneous rate of transmission. This being so, we could receive telepathic messages from the star people-if we were ready for it and knew precisely why, when, and how such communication occurs. In fact, as we have said earlier, the noosphere is the region on Earth for the receipt and transmission of messages of cosmic consciousness. This being so, the future of human evolution, of *Homo noosphericus,* would be nothing less than to become a medium of cosmic consciousness, adapting to the expanded measure of Noospheric Earth Time, traveling back to the stars but through the superior knowledge of the actual laws of time.

In writing this book, I have only a sense of duty, of responsibility to expand the vision of my fellow earthlings from the technosphere to the noosphere. In the Law of Time there are no arbitrary distinctions between reason and art, science and prophecy. The universe really is a giant radio transmitter. This book is as much an exposition of matters generally not thought about, as it is a personal testament and vision. In that regard this text is a portion of a broadcast transduced and received by me functioning as a noospheric chip, on behalf of the biosphere-noosphere transition.

In the tomb lid ofPacal Votan are impressed all the frequencies of this broadcast transmission called *Time and the Technosphere.* I know that Pacal Votan took an earthly form for just this purpose. He left his body in that tomb, a jade mask being the actual impression of his face. According to Chinese and ancient Mexican tradition, jade is the stone of immortality. Was Pacal Votan an immortal? Where did his consciousness and spirit go once his body was placed in the sarcophagus? Why did he leave the Telektonon, the Earth Spirit Speaking Tube, running from the tomb to the temple floor at the top of the Pyramid of the Inscriptions? Knowing the frequency of the synchronic order governing the psi bank of the mental envelope of the Earth, did he place his thoughts in the noosphere to be released at the precise moments of the opening of his tomb and the decoding of his prophecy? And then where did he go?

Beginning in 1980 I became conscious that, from time to time, I had been receiving telepathic transmissions. I soon identified these transmissions as coming from the star Arcturus. In *Earth Ascending,* originally written in 1983, the nature and program of the psi bank, the control panel and regulating mechanism of the noosphere, became known to me. This was followed by *The Mayan Factor,* and then the decoding of the Law of Time. At the moment when I had just finished writing *The Mayan Factor* in 1986, I received the inspiration for what is called the planet holon, the twenty-part structure accommodating the program of the twenty solar seals. When I received this image it was known to me as the program of the Arcturus Protectorate. As I understood it, the Arcturus Protectorate was established by the "star people" as a kind of protective time shield around the Earth. By means of the activation of

this time shield, the star people would know that some of the earthlings were waking up to time and beginning the conscious activation of the noosphere. This is exactly what came about through the *Dreamspell,* beginning in 1990.

The *Dreamspell* is such a radical break from the past, and such a pure statement of the history-less fourth-dimensional future, that in order to comprehend it, in 1992 I wrote two other books, one called the *Arcturus Probe: Tales and Reports of an Ongoing Investigation* and the other *The Call of Pacal Votan: Time is the Fourth Dimension.* Some people will say that the *Arcturus Probe* is an exaggerated fantasy, yet I cannot deny what a purely telepathic process it was to write that book, which fills in many points of the psychomythic cosmology of *Dreamspell: The Journey of Timeship Earth 2013. The Call of Pacal Votan* was originally titled *A Treatise on Time Viewed from its Own Dimension,* and is a purely scientific description of the mathematical codes of the Dreamspell in relation to the biosphere-noosphere transition. The one text purely imaginal, the other purely rational, yet both were two sides of the same coin, a rendering of the Law of Time in its cosmological and mathematical comprehensiveness. Then came the even more abrupt break with my conventional past, the Telektonon Prophecy of Pacal Votan.

I bring up all of these personal details because people often ask where it all came from and where I got my ideas. But more importantly, I bring them up because, as I have been indicating, all of this was foreseen and known by a seer in another time, in another world-Pacal Votan. And this process of one person hiding a prophecy and another person in another time finding that prophecy, this is also a further revelation of how the noosphere functions. The French mathematician and philosopher Charles Henry (1859-1926) declared, "As the individual becomes more collective, the collective becomes more individual."4 As individuals, we humans are meant to grow into the collective mind known as the noosphere, while the noosphere, which is the collective, could only be known through its incorporating itself through the individual. I am one such individual, a noospheric chip. The noosphere could not be understood if it did not take on a personality or a number of personalities. Otherwise the noosphere would remain in the purely theoretical state or condition.

Now that the Inevitable Event has occurred, the noosphere is recruiting. The program of recruitment is called the Campaign for the New Time. This is a genuine campaign, but a peace campaign and not a military one. As a campaign it must reach its climax by mid-2004, a full eight years before the end of the cycle, northern winter/southern summer solstice 2012, the noosphere's omega point. The reason for this is that any later than 2004, the prophecy will be negatively fulfilled. A minimum

of two Seed-Storm Year bundles-eight years-are needed to creatively destructure and then to reconstruct. The Inevitable Event was a sign of God showing us that the end had already occurred. Now all the forces of goodwill and harmony must be channeled into the conscious act that will coincide with the noosphere's readiness to manifest through all of us, and that is the calendar change-the untried solution, the most important unfinished business of the last millennium.

This is no longer a matter of debate. There is no other solution that hasn't been tried. There is no other way that the noosphere can become collectively conscious than through the human adoption of a timing system of perfect harmony. By meeting our deadline with the noosphere at the time of the Great Calendar Change in the middle of the year 2004-0n the White Spectral Mirror, Day Out of Time, the day of release from the old, and Blue Crystal Storm, the day of entering the new-then the biosphere will harmonically converge with the noosphere, and the *Pax Cultura, Pax Biospherica* may begin in all seriousness. Such is the advent of the noosphere.

What did the Maya foresee for 2012? What is Pacal Votan's vision? Pacal Votan's vision is the fulfillment of a prayer-a prayer that I have heard through the silence:

o Hunab Ku, One Giver of Movement and Measure, be kind to the children of this Earth. We see how every year you give and how every year you take away. This is so the children of Earth can learn to be free and dwell only in your presence. Yet we know that the children of the Earth must undergo their lessons as well. And we know that they must enter the dark time of testing. 0 Hunab Ku, in their time of darkness, in their time of forgetting, do not forget them, spare those who are good, if you can. Prepare for them the Second Creation you have promised to the righteous among them. Break for them the spell of false time before they destroy this Earth! And show to them the splendors of the Second Creation, of the New Heaven and the New Earth. Show them these wonders before the Great Cycle is finished, so that they may yet wake up from the sleep of time. And 0 Hunab Ku, may the nine great Lords of Time return to Earth! May they teach the children of the Earth how to become a race of wizards, tilling the noosphere as they have tilled the Earth. 0 bring to these children of the Earth a good Time, a Time of Peace as long, at least, as was their time of history and war, and then let that Time of Peace be multiplied sevenfold!

And here is the vision that fulfills the prayer:

Planet Earth, Rhythmic Solstice, Blue Resonant Storm year, 2012 Omega Point. The Earth's axis is tilted so that the North Pole is at its farthest from the sun, and the South Pole is at its closest. High above the Earth an iridescent, thin rainbow band

arches from one pole to the other. A second band does the same, but over the opposite side of the Earth. The Earth slowly rotates beneath these two rainbow bands that remain unchanging, constant in their positions, one of them directly opposite the sun, the other holding a position on the midnight side of the Earth's turning. The band facing the sun is the Earth's day alternator. The other band is the Earth's night alternator. If we glide across the surface of the Earth we see that everywhere there are small encampments, circular and radial in formation. Yurts, tents, adobe, and earthen structures-and gardens. The once-teeming cities are eerily silent, yet still inhabited, though with far fewer people than during the time of the technosphere. And everywhere in the small encampments people are reverentially gathered. This is the moment of the closing of the cycle. It is as if everyone is drawing in a single breath at the same time, and exhaling it at the same time. From wherever you are, even though there are clouds, you can see the shimmering iridescent rainbow alternator, either by day or by night. Clusters of people are gathered in circles of deep meditation. Around them the children laugh and play. "We are the noosphere," a voice is repeating, "we are the noosphere." This sets up a vibration and people everywhere stop in their tracks, they look toward the sky. They listen. "The galaxy is renewing our thought. The galaxy is renewing our mind. The galaxy is renewing our world, this Earth. Let us go home and learn some more." Drums and chanting fade into the twilight in one place and beckon the dawn in another. "Let us say the prayer again: '0 Hunab Ku, Allah, One Maker, Our Creator, we submit to You. Continue to keep us whole, continue to broadcast the noosphere through us, continue to let us listen to the higher collective voice that we are so that tomorrow we may register another kin, another NET minute in the glorious journey of Timeship Earth toward its goal of universal unification in your One Unending Thought, 0 Hunab Ku, do not forget us, now, and do not let us forget you! Thank you for the closing of the cycle! May what we have learned stay with us and become the inheritance of our children for seven times seven generations to come, and may you bring us another cycle for all our descendants to live in continuing peace and harmony!'"

This is the vision. I am a noospheric chip. Do not turn away from your visionaries. Your prophets are still calling you and teaching you, if you would pay attention. There is much to do and learn. There is nothing more joyful than the positive construction of harmony.

Time and the Technosphere, First Draft Transmission completed,
Self-existing Owl Moon Dali 15,
Yellow Solar Seed Year
Kin 42, White Electric WInd:

> *I activate in order to communicate*
> *bonding breath*
> *I seal the input of spirit*
> *with the electric tone of service*
> *I am ptided by the power of death*

First draft edited, completed, and sealed,
Overtone Peacock Moon Seli 2,
Yellow Solar Seed Year
Kin 57, Red Overtone Earth

> *I empower in order to evolve*
> *commanding synchronicity*
> *I seal the matrix of navigation*
> *with the overtone tone of radiance*
> *I am guided by the power of life force*

Second draft edited, completed, and sealed,
Rhythmic Lizard Moon, Seli 23, Navigation Tower
Yellow Solar Seed Year
Kin 106, White Lunar World-bridger
Pacal Votan Clear Sign

> *I polarize in order to equalize*
> *stabilizing opportunity*
> *I seal the store of death*
> *with the lunar tone of challenge*
> *I am guided by the power of endlessness*
> *I am a galactic activation portal*
> *enter me*

194. • The Advent of the Noosphere

Mayall   beings be well and happy!

May this text and these words inspire by their truth.
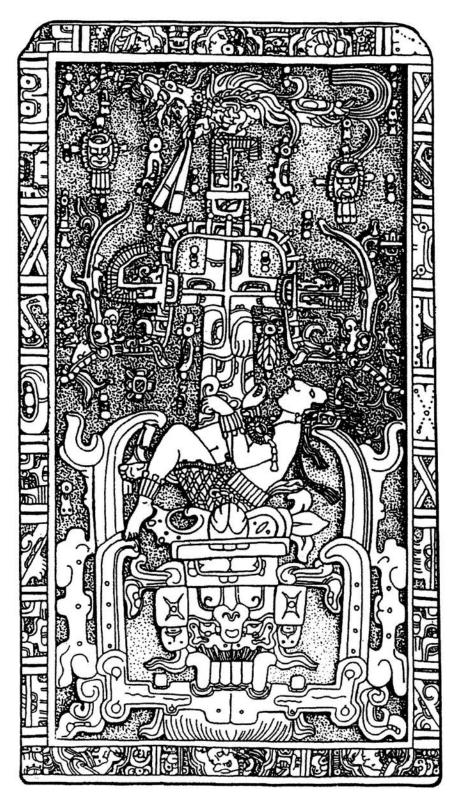
If! have left out or omitted   any logic or fact, or unnecessarily   maligned any truth or being by my endeavor to convince through   dear argument,   may the Creator know that no such malice or oversight   was ever intended.   I am but a human transmitter,   a noospheric   chip. My ability is commensurate   with the frailties attendant   to one too long steadfast on a path too little comprehended   by many of those around him.

May the truth prevail!

Jose Argiielles, Ph.D.
known in prophecy's light as
Valum Votan, the Closer of the Cycle
devotee of Bolon Ik

Brightwood, Oregon
Cascadia Bioregion
North American Plate

▼

Sarcophagus lid of the tomb of Pacal Votan 9.13.0.0.0 (A.D. 692)

Epilogue
Networking the New Time

TO READERS for whom the notion of calendar change, much less that of a Campaign for the New Time, is totally novel, yet who may have an interest in learning more about and participating in the preparation for the Great Calendar Change of 2004, there is a place to begin and a way of going about it.

The official coordinating agency for the Campaign for the New Time and the World Thirteen Moon Calendar Change Peace Movement is the Foundation for the Law of Time. As a nonprofit public charities educational corporation, the Foundation for the Law of Time provides the communications and information hub for the Planet Art Network (PAN). The Foundation also publishes calendars, tools, and literature about the Law of Time and sponsors various educational programs, periodic seminars and congresses, and projects such as the new time educational caravans and the development of garden-oriented land bases.

For general information on the Law of Time or the Campaign for the New Time and its educational programs contact:

Foundation for the Law of Time, World Headquarters
Post Office Box 513
Brightwood, Oregon 97011 U.S.A.
Tel: +1 (503) 622-1976
Fax: +1 (503) 622-0198

The Foundation for the Law of Time's outreach activity program is known as the Planet Art Network (PAN), the loosely knit and decentralized base of operations for the World Thirteen Moon Calendar Change Peace Movement. The PAN is organized into Bioregions, each with its PAN nodes (local chapters) and a governing Bioregional Council. The PAN nodes organize "crystal day meetings" once every thirteen-day wave spell-the crystal (twelve) tone day is the day to call a round table or court of the kin to review past actions and prepare for future ones. The PAN nodes also offer educational programs and disseminate calendars and other educational tools and literature provided by the Foundation, which constitute the information outreach of the World Thirteen Moon Calendar Change Peace Movement. The Campaign for the New Time is the coordination of the world PAN toward the goal of the Great Calendar Change of 2004. The PAN is also generally responsible for organizing the annual Day Out of Time events in its different localities and bioregions.

For information about local Planet Art Network (PAN) operations, contact:

Foundation for the Law of Time/Gnomicile Land Base
World PAN Coordination Center
PMB 267
105 North First Avenue
Sand Point, ID 83864-1301 U.S.A.
Tel: +1 (208) 255-1172
Fax: +1 (208) 265-9107

The official Web site for the Foundation for the Law of Time, Planet Art Network, World Thirteen Moon Calendar Change Peace Movement and Campaign for the New Time is:

www.tortuga.com

This Web site is continuously updated and offers a great range of both practical and theoretical information about the Law of Time, the Campaign for the New Time, ongoing and upcoming events and educational seminars, listings of major PAN nodes worldwide, Law of Time archives, and links to other relevant Web sites.

A major aspect of the Campaign for the New Time is the development of a program of "strategic alliances," information about which is also available at www.tortuga.com. If you belong to an organization that you feel could be in alignment with the goals of the Campaign you can check out the Strategic Alliance page of the Web site or directly contact the Foundation for the Law of Time, World

Headquarters. The goal of the Strategic Alliances is to establish a "synchronization for peace force"-a coalition of a wide spectrum of organizations that are in alignment with the calendar change and are willing to help organize local events and information dissemination for the Great Calendar Change of 2004.

See also Appendix II, "The World Thirteen Moon Calendar Change Peace Movement and the Discovery of the Law of Time: A Brief Chronotopology of Transformation. "

Appendix I

Summary Critique of the Gregorian Calendar

What Every Proponent of the Thirteen Moon
Calendar Should Know

NOT ONLY is the idea of the calendar as an instrument to determine a true and accurate year misleading, but solely focusing on this purpose blinds us to any consideration of time apart from duration or measurement of motion in space. The Law of Time asserts that the actual nature of time is synchronic; hence the purpose of calendars is to synchronize us in time according to various cycles whose harmonic numbers extend from and return us to a higher mental order of reality. It is a fatal error to dismiss a mathematics of harmonic perfection when it is allied with the ordering and comprehension of cycles. The pursuit of a true and accurate year totally subordinates the cyclic nature of time to the ceaseless imperfection and change that characterize the phenomenal world when it is considered as the sole factor of existence. This defines the thoroughly materialist worldview of the 12:60 consciousness.

In order to prepare the ground for a proper consideration of the Law of Time and the evolutionary necessity of the synchronic order of time as the harmonic reorganizing factor of humanity in its post-historic phase, it is necessary to expunge from the mind the error known as the Gregorian calendar. To demonstrate and expose the illogical and irrational nature of the Gregorian calendar as a standard of

measure, the following seven points are presented as a simple appeal to the intrinsic logic and intelligence of any human being.

1. We require of a standard of measure that its units of measure are regular and equal with one another.

This is not the case with the Gregorian calendar, whose base unit of measure, the month, proceeds in an irregular and uneven manner: 31 days, 28 days, 31 days, 30 days, 31 days, 30 days, 31 days, 31 days, 30 days, 31 days, 30 days, and 31 days. Why would anyone use a standard of measure with irregular units? Do you know what results when a crooked standard of measure is employed consistently for millennia? It might be noted that at the time of Augustus Caesar, August was called Sextile and had thirty days, while February then had twenty-nine days. In order to honor Augustus and make him the equal of Julius Ouly) which had thirty-one days, the twenty-ninth day was taken from February and added on to Sextile, whose name was then changed to Augustus (August). By harmonic contrast, the Thirteen Moon calendar is perpetual in that all of its units of measure are equal-28 days each.

2. The names of the months are as illogical as their uneven numbering.

January is derived from the God of the doorway; February is an obscure word referring to an animal divinatory rite; March refers to Mars, the planet and the god of war; April and May refer to goddesses of the spring; June to the wife of Jupiter; July and August are named after the two most prominent Roman Emperors, Julius and Augustus Caesar. As for the remaining months, September, the ninth month, means seven; October, the tenth month, means eight; November, the eleventh month, means nine; and December, the twelfth month, means ten. Of course, having grown habituated to the crooked standard of measure, it is easy to overlook and dismiss as innocuous the irrational naming of the months. But is it so innocuous? What do the names of these months have to do with an order of time, or even a cosmology or culture of time, which we assume a calendar might reflect? By blindly accepting this irrational disorder of names, do we not predispose ourselves to accept irrational disorder in commonplace things around us, and even within the fabric of our society, thus reinforcing in us a tendency to accept a superficial treatment of the symptoms, while ignoring the roots?

3. Leap year and leap day is the most highly touted aspect of the Gregorian calendar.

Structurally, the Gregorian calendar is indistinguishable from the Julian calendar. The only thing that separates the Gregorian from the Julian calendar is the correction

of the leap year day. Pope Gregory XIII "corrected the calendar" by deleting three leap days from the years that begin the centuries, except those divisible by the number four. Leap day is the extra day that accumulates every four years due to the length of the astronomical year being 365.241299 days and not 365. It can be seen that the fraction .241299 is not quite 1/4, which would be .25. The Julian calendar did nottake this into account, hence an error crept in that caused the spring equinox on the calendar to fall some ten days behind the solar moment of the spring equinox-a fact noted by the conquistadors when they encountered the Mayan calendar, which had no such discrepancy. Thus, in 1582, Pope Gregory XIII "improved" on Julius Caesar's calendar, some 1,627 years later, by adopting the rule that there would be no extra day on centuries-OO years-except on those that are multiples of four. Hence, there was no leap day in the year 1900, but in the year 2000, a multiple of four, there was.

What is not well known is that the Vatican does not recognize the leap day in its ceremonial calendar. Why is that? In most countries where Latin-derived languages are spoken, leap day and leap year are referred to as *bisiesto,* or "bisextile" day and "bisextile" year. If leap year is every four years, why is it referred to by a word that connotes six, *sextile?* On the official liturgical Church calendar there is no February 29! Instead, there are two February 24s, and the second February 24 is not counted. If there were to be an extra day that was counted, then the system of fixed feast days would be thrown off. Instead, on leap years, February 24, the Day of the Feast of St. Matthew, is counted twice-or extended to be 48 hours. And since in the Church tradition derived from the Romans the days are counted from the first of the next month, the first always being known as the calends, the date February 24 is technically referred to as the "sixth of the calends of March" (February 24 = sixth calends of March, February 25 = fifth calends, February 26 = fourth calends, February 27 = third calends, February 28 = second calends, and March 1 _ calends of March). For this reason, the leap year is known as *bisiesto* because the sixth *(siesto)* calends of March is doubled, hence "bi." Thus, February 29 is not recognized by the official Church calendar of the Vatican, and it is also not counted as a day in its liturgical calendar. February 29 only arose out of popular tradition in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries. The nemesis of accounting for the .241299 extra day per year reveals the fixation of astronomical time in seeking a "true" year and detracts from the possibility that the issue of an intercalary, or extra, day can logically and synchronically be handled in many other ways. In the end, it is the mystique surrounding leap day that further contributes to the numbing of the sensibility of time accumulated in the instrument known as the Gregorian calendar, "the little grid of boxes that rules so much of our lives."l

4. The word we use to describe the instrument for measuring, the Earth's orbit around the sun, *calendar,* is derived from the word *calends.*

Calends was the Latin name given by the Romans to the first day of every month. What does it mean? *Calends* is the name of the account book, the book of payments recording the monthly debts and bills to be paid! No wonder we are ruled by the philosophy "time is money!" This philosophy is rooted in the very word we use to describe time reckoning, *calendar.* A more accurate word for time reckoning might be "chronometer," or even better, "synchronometer." But perhaps the word "count" is simpler. We might just say, for example, Thirteen *Moon!2* 8-Day perpetual count.

5. Dominicalletters code the years of the Gregorian calendar.

Scarcely known to anyone but Vatican insiders is the system of dominicalletters that is used to code the years according to the day of the week on which the first Sunday of the year falls. Since the week has seven days, there are seven and only seven dominical letters. These are the letters a-g, where $a = 1, b = 2, c = 3, d = 4, e = 5, f = 6,$ and $g = 7.$ Hence, G-7 (the group of the seven most industrial nations), the name given in 1974 by the CIA to the ruling oligarchy of globalization, is totally rooted in the system of the seven dominicalletters, a-g, to which the Gregorian calendar can be reduced. It works as follows: In 2001, the first day of the year was on a Monday, hence in this year all Mondays are coded by the letter a. Counting forward to the first Sunday, January 7, Sundays this year are coded g. The letter of the year, which is always a capital letter, is based on the lower case letter that codes the first Sunday, therefore, the year 2001 is coded as the capital letter G-it is truly a G-7 year! Not only that, but by this system of "G-7" dominicalletters, it can be demonstrated that the order of the Gregorian calendar year repeats within a cyclic structure of precisely twenty-eight years, where the days of the week and the month repeat once again. Hence, the cycle 1973-2001 is a repeat of the cycle 1945-1973, which is a repeat of the cycle 1917-1945, and so forth, where the years 1917, 1945, 1973, and 2001 are calendrically indistinguishable from each other. In any twenty-eight-year cycle, there are always exactly seven leap years! Thus, the key code numbers 28 and 7 of the Law of Time and of the perfect Thirteen *Moon!2* 8-Day calendar are hidden in and even govern the cyclic order of the Gregorian calendar, whose secrets pretend to lie concealed in the Vatican archives!

Expose these secrets and show that the true harmony of time is contained in the 13:20 matrix of the Harmonic Module, which is perfectly coded by 28 and 7. Within this matrix, any set of four tones radially opposite each other, an occult quartet, always adds up to 28. There are 65 (x4) such sets that constitute the Harmonic Module, while seven (multiplied by four), is the prime factor of 28, and is the key

unit holding the 13:20 matrix in place, evident in the position of the seventh vertical column on either side of which is a perfect harmony of six columns each. The seven is also the implicit number in the ratio 13:20 (13 + 7 = 20: 20 - 7 =13). But whereas the 13:20 matrix is a harmony in which the Law of Time is encoded, the Gregorian calendar is a disharmony, but one that is nonetheless governed by the Law of Time. What the Vatican attempted to destroy at the hands of Bishop de Landa in 1562, in the famous book burning at Izamal Yucatan, is redeemed by the Law of Time. Free of the obscuring, illogical irrationality of the inexact measure of the Gregorian calendar, the actual truth of the synchronic order of time may be discovered and revealed as the 13:20 mathematical code ofthe Harmonic Module, perfectly coordinated with the Thirteen Moon!28-Day count.

6. The Gregorian calendar makes day/date calculations difficult.
The twelve uneven months of the Gregorian calendar operate by a subsystem of fifty-two 7-day weeks, plus one day. Because of the irregularity of the numbering of the months, and because there are 365 and not 364 days in a year, it is almost impossible to make easy calculations month to month and year to year, while insistence on the unbroken succession of the week only compounds this issue. For example, if today on the Gregorian calendar it is Friday, May 4, 2001, what day of the week will June 4 be? What day of the week will July 4 be? There is an immediate mental block-a numbing of the mind. You have to stop and think about it. And in this numbing pause in which your cognitive brain has to be engaged, you lose your telepathic awareness, much as when you look at a clock to find out what time it is. Why should it be this way? Who benefits? The answer is, the priests (who know the tedious rules for stating that if it is Friday and it is 2001, then it is dominical e) and the bankers (who gather interest based on the confusion over the erratic disparity of days every month). By contrast, on the perpetual Thirteen Moon calendar, this day would be Spectral Moon Gamma 3-while every third day of every Moon is coded by Gamma. In fact, the third day of every week is coded by the name Gamma. Once the 28-day count is mastered, there is no need to engage the cognitive brain to figure out what day of the week Crystal Moon 3 or Cosmic Moon 3 will be-and in this way the mind is liberated into a telepathic knowing.

The system of the seven-day week was introduced into the Julian calendar at the Council of Nicea, A.D. 325, and was adopted from the Jewish calendar, which was derived from the Babylonians, for whom it was an astrological-astronomical construct. The fact that the week came from the Babylonians dissolves the argument used by the Vatican to counter the Day Out of Time. According to the Vatican, disrupting the succession of the seven-day week would disrupt an order set in motion by

God. The matter of the 7 and the 52 has a much deeper significance when understood in the higher-dimensional light of the Law of Time. A count of fifty-two 7-day weeks makes perfect sense if you have a count of thirteen 28-day months (7 x 52 = 13 x 28). The observance of the Day Out of Time, the 365th day of the year, produces a perfect and perpetual harmony. Knowing this, to continue to insist on fifty-two weeks while being unwilling to give up a twelve month count that does not have a Day Out of Time is to persist in an adherence to hopeless disharmony. Why do it?

7. What's in a name? Think about it.

What does it mean to follow calendars called the Julian and the Gregorian? A calendar is an instrument of control. The two most significant calendar reforms in history were the Julian calendar reform of 46-45 B.C., and its successor, the Gregorian, in A.D. 1582. Julius Caesar's motives had everything to do with his personal ambition and the conversion of Rome from a republican to an imperial form of government. Julius Caesar's calendar assured it to be the basis of imperial dominance. The course of the empire utilizing the Julian and later Gregorian calendar has prevailed as the dominant force now inseparable from the course of history itself. The 445-day "year of confusion" (46 B.C.), which attended Julius Caesar's reform, was matched by the second significant reform, the Gregorian, in which ten days were "lost forever," between October 5-16, 1582, so that the calendar could "catch up" with the sun.

While European Catholic countries easily accepted the reform, Protestant countries grudgingly acquiesced. Throughout the Americas, however, the Julian-Gregorian calendar was imposed as an instrument of power and symbol of dominance over the peoples the Europeans had conquered, including the high civilizations of the Maya, Inca, and Aztecs-all of whom happened to use, among other calendars, a Thirteen Moon!28-Day count. As with Julius Caesar, for Pope Gregory XIII the moment was politically ripe for a reform that would communicate itself as a means of expressing and extending power and control, but this time over the entire globe. As European dominance and control spread around the planet, even nations with their own established timing systems accepted, for the sake of "international policy," the Gregorian Oulian) calendar system for measuring the solar year. And so Western dominance over every aspect of global life became absolutely assured-until the moment of the Inevitable Event.

From its roots in the imperial ego of Julius Caesar to the timely "reform" of Pope Gregory XIII, it is not surprising that this calendar, "despite its odd quirks and the twists of history that produced it,"2 has become the standard of global civilization. Given the irregularity of the Julian-Gregorian calendar and the pursuit of the accuracy of astronomical time, history could be nothing more than a compilation of

odd quirks and twists, while global civilization itself is the triumph of artificial time over the natural world. Only a species whose time sensibility had been captured by instruments of artificial measure could have become so alienated as to have produced the monstrous conundrum known as the "fast world," a civilization where money and technological advance prevail over human sensibility and the natural order. It is toward the correction of this destructive momentum that all efforts of calendar reform must now be directed.

In light of this critique, it is worth reprinting the opening section of the "United Manifesto by Advocates of Calendar Reform" that was first published in 1914 at the beginning of the First World War-some ninety years in advance of the Great Calendar Change of 2004. It can be seen that the issues of irregularity that prompted reform then are still issues today. However, the effects of not attending to these issues have only become compounded and even more complex, resulting in the chaos of a world at war with terror. Such is the nature of an error gone uncorrected over time-it only becomes more entrenched and turns into the dogmatic and hopelessly conflicted thinking of the everyday mind and its way of life.

United Manifesto by Advocates of Calendar Reform

WHEREAS we, the undersigned, have for some time been interested in a Reform and Simplification of the Calendar now in use in Western Europe, America, and elsewhere, with a view to equalizing the four quarters of the year, alleviating the irregularities of the months, and establishing a perpetual correspondence between the day of the week and the day of the month, and have supported one or other of several proposals which have been formulated for effecting these reforms; and WHEREAS said proposals usually provide for placing the 365th day of every year and the 366th day of Leap Year without the weekly and monthly enumeration; and WHEREAS we have found that in certain quarters-both ecclesiastical and scientific-Dbjections, possibly often sentimental, but none the less firmly held, have been stated to the employment and adoption of these expedients. . . Therefore we have resolved to unite in urging and advising that the very simple changes under noted should now be made in the Julian and Gregorian Calendars by international agreement. . .3

If you have a crooked standard of measure, and follow it because your parents were also following it, you have become a crooked man. It takes a crooked man to walk a crooked mile and build a crooked house. The issue of calendar reform is both logical and moral. Bad logic leads to bad morality. An error in time dooms the mind. Apocalypses are the reward for bad timekeeping. To remove yourself from the fires of your own self-created apocalypse, change your calendar. In a world of harmony there is no apocalypse.

▼

Appendix II

The World Thirteen Moon Calendar Change Peace Movement and the Discovery of the Law of Time

A Brief Chronotopology of Transformation

IT WAS during the seven-year cycle (1993-2000) when the World Thirteen Moon Calendar Change Peace Movement was being aroused around the planet, that the Law of Time was articulated in its various aspects and particulars, and the synchronic order defined in its whole system fullness. This occurred through a number of key events accompanied by a number of publications detailing the mathematical, cosmological, theological, and scientific aspects and imperatives of the Law of Time.

By the standards of the synchronic order, all events form points in a radial time set that describe a geography of time defined as a chronotopology. Coined by the late philosopher and mathematician Charles Muses, the term *chronotopology* defines an event point of meaning that creates a root meaning from which time-formed, -blossomed, or -radiated meanings emerge above a horizon of meaning.! The Law of Time now gives a precise field in real time to illustrate Muses's notion of chronotopology in which Time is a radial power of profound interrelations.

The following chronotopological sequence-a resume of the events in a particular geography of time, the seven years of prophecy, 1993-2000-defines the conscious emergence and articulation of the Law of Time. In this chronotopology, the "root meaning" occurred in 1989 at the Museum of Time in the form of the discovery of the 12:60 and 13:20 timing frequencies, and the subsequent working out of the implications of this discovery. The "horizon of meaning" was reached July 26, 1993, kin 144, with the decoding of the Telektonon Prophecy and the consequent development of the World Thirteen Moon Calendar Change Peace Movement. The "source meanings," however, extend back to the seventh century with the origins of the prophetic traditions underlying the discovery of the Law of Time. The seven years of prophecy established the field of radiated meanings of the Law of Time as a set of radiated event points and a body of literature and tools. Here follows, then, a brief chronotopology of the key event points of this movement:

1989	Root meaning: discovery of the 12:60 and 13:20 timing frequencies, Museum of Time, Geneva, Switzerland.
1990	Realization of the Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar in its wavespell form.
1992	Recognition and celebration of the Day Out of Time as a planetary event.
1993	Horizon of meaning: decoding of Telektonon Prophecy and birth of World Thirteen Moon Calendar Change Peace Movement.
1994	Launching of the Planetary Moral Emergency and World Thirteen Moon Calendar Change Peace Plan.
1995	80 Days Around the World for a New Time of Planetary Peace: Chile, South Africa, Egypt. Russia, India, Hong Kong, Japan, Hawaii, and Mexico.
1995	Day Out of Time Calendar Burning and Return of Natural Time Ceremony, Serpent Mound, Ohio.
1996	First Planetary Congress of Biospheric Rights, Brasilia, Brazil.
1996	Biospheric Awareness Day, Gotemba, Mt. Fuji, Japan.
1996	Four Corners Boundary Dissolving Ceremony, Four Corners, United States.
1996	Harmonic Convergence of Humanity, Mexico City, followed by Peace March, Teotihuacan, Mexico.
1996	United Nations, Planetary Moral Emergency Appeal.
1997	Judgment Day Tribunal and World Congress on the Law of Time, Tokyo, Japan.

1997-present	Ongoing movement in Brazil to make July 25, Day Out of Time, official "Peace and Culture Day;' based on recognition of the Banner of Peace (seventy cities so far).
1998	Special peace mission to the Vatican, Rome, Italy.
1998	Special mission to Guatemala to meet with Quiche Maya elders.
1998	UR Council for the Theology of Peace, Milan, Italy.
1999	world Summit on Peace and Time, University for Peace, Costa Rica, followed by the dispatching of Special Emissaries to the United Nations and the Vatican.
1999-present	Ongoing movement in Japan to declare Day Out of Time a "Day of Festival"; more than one hundred events occurring annually.
1999	Peace March, Teotihuacan, Mexico.
1999	Seven Week Earth Wizard Seminary, Picarquin, Chile.
1999-2000	Ongoing in South America, launching of "La Karavana;' Thirteen Moon educational caravans, and in Europe, from the United Kingdom to North Africa, the New Time Caravan.
2000	Initiation of Seven-Day Earth Wizard's Seminars: Japan, United States, Italy, Russia, South America.
2000	Circumpolar Rainbow Bridge Experiment, phase I, worldwide.
2000	Fruit of meaning: establishment of Foundation for the Law of Time, Oregon.
2001	Launching of the Campaign for the New Time, Brazil. Argentina, Japan, Altai region.
2001	Campaign for the New Time PAN Thirteen Moon Leadership Conference, Oregon.
2001	Seven-day special Congress on Time and World Peace, Medellin, Colombia.

During this chronotopological sequence of radially connected event points, key writings, publications, and tools describing and defining the Law of Time and the synchronic order include:

Dreamspell: The Journey of Times hip Earth 2013, 1990-91

Thirteen Moons in Motion and *Turtle of the Thirteen Moons,* 1993, 1996

The Story of Time: The Story of Turtle and Tree, 1993

Treatise on Time Viewed from its Own Dimension (Published as *The Call of Pacal Votan:*

Time is the Fourth Dimension), 1992, 1996

Telektonon ofPacal Votan and the *Telektonon, Game of Prophecy,* 1993-1995

World Thirteen Moon Calendar Change Peace Plan, 1994-1995

Pacal Votan and Judgment Day: The Second Quranic Dispensation, 1995-1996

First Planetary Congress of Biospheric Rights, 1996

The Galactic Culture Master Plan, New Time Economics, 1996

A Brief Guide to The Thirteen Moon Calendar Change Peace Movement, 1996

Rinri Project: Four-Year Telepathic Biosphere-Noosphere Transition Circumpolar Rainbow Bridge Experiment, 1996

The 260 Postulates of the Dynamics of Time and the Evolution of Time as Consciousness, 1996

The Discovery of the Law of Time, T(E) ₌Art, 1996

The Principia Mathematica of the Fourth Dimension, 1996

Twenty Tablets of the Law of Time: Sixteen Year Telektonon Cube of the Law, 1997

World Congress on the Law of Time and Judgment Day Tribunal, 1997

World Summit on Peace and Time, Summary, Review, and Conclusions, 1999

7:7::7:7, Telektonon Revelation and Plasma Universe Model, 1998-2000

The Rainbow Bridge Project: 28 *Meditations on the Law of Time,* 1999-2000

The UR Papers: Documents and Appeals for a Council of Universal Religion, 1996-2001

WIth the conclusion of the seven years of prophecy, marked by the rainbow bridge experiment, phase I, the greater part of the Law of Time had been uncovered, described, and defined. What emerges from consideration of all these events and accompanying literature is an entirely new model of the universe as well as a program for the reorientation of knowledge and the social reorganization of humanity-all based on a corrected understanding of time through the implementation of the calendar change. This was all to demonstrate that there is much more to a calendar change than the mere replacing of one calendar with another, for a calendar itself bears within it an understanding of time that tacitly and unconsciously shapes our very thinking about time. What the calendar change, then, really signifies is the end of one worldview and the birth of another. WIth the Law of Time, what was once unconscious is again made conscious, leading to a radical self-awareness of how wrong we have been about time, and what we might anticipate in changing our tools for navigating in time.

Because the growth of the Planet Art Network (PAN) as the social form of the World Thirteen Moon Calendar Change Peace Movement is inextricably involved with the unraveling by stages of the Law of Time, to define the constituent principles of the Law of Time is also to define the new worldview and the social organization appropriate to it. These constituent principles include: time is art; universal telepathy; holonomic consistency and reciprocity; synchronic order; fractal and radial mathematics of the 13:20 matrix; biosphere-noosphere transition; Banner of Peace; *Pax Cultura, Pax Biospherica;*the psi bank and the dynamics of the evolution of time as the evolution of consciousness; fourth-dimensional time and third-dimensional space. A mere consideration of these constituent principles will make one realize to what extent the calendar change is more than just an end to history, but the establishment of a new world, a New Heaven and a New Earth. This is precisely the promise offered by the Thirteen Moon calendar change and the discovery of the Law of Time. (See plate 8, Chronotopology of Transformation.)

▼

Appendix III

Telektonon Prophecy
of Pacal Votan

TI-IE REVELATION of the prophecy of Pacal Votan on July 26, 1993 was the culmination of the event that occurred on June 15, 1952, when the archaeologist Alberto Ruz Lhuillier pried open a large monolithic trapezoidal door beneath the Pyramid of the Inscriptions at Palenque, Chiapas, Mexico, and beheld what had not been seen by human eyes for 1,260 years: the tomb of Pacal Votan. A subsequent event, the lifting of the magnificent sarcophagus lid-measuring some four-by-three meters and weighing several tons-to reveal the human remains amidst a splendor of jade, including the jade mask, occurred on November 27, 1952. For some forty years afterwards, scholars debated the meaning of the tomb and the person buried within it. In the 1970s, the Russian scientist Knozerov dubbed the man in the tomb an "astronaut" or "cosmonaut" because of the similarity of the position of the figure sculpted on the sarcophagus lid to the positions of Russian cosmonauts in their little space capsules. This theory inflamed the imagination of some and was debunked by others, the end result being the enhancement of the awesome mystery of the tomb and the intention of its designer, the man buried in it.

The image of the sarcophagus lid is now world famous. Its symbolism has been interpreted to varying degrees by different archaeologists. In my book *The Mayan Factor,* the placement ofPacal Votan in his "time of power," 631-683, is defined and analyzed as occurring in the most harmonic and mathematically synchronic point of

the entire thirteen baktun cycle, a point of fact that deepens the enigma of Pacal's knowledge and purpose. And herein lies the key question: What was his purpose, and why did he construct his tomb to be so elegantly buried for 1,260 years, to be discovered and opened just sixty years before the closing of the cycle, A.D. 2012? Clearly, the mystery of the tomb and its discovery had everything to do with the end of the cycle. At least this had come to be my surmise ever since the 1987 Harmonic Convergence. Like a hawk circling its prey, the meaning of the tomb finally came to my consciousness like a direct hit from the beyond. I was the prey, the hawk, the prophecy itself. Such was the revelation of the Telektonon Prophecy on the morning of July 26, 1993.

The coded key was the tiled "speaking tube," by which the tomb was discovered in the first place. Suddenly, this tube spoke its meaning to me: Earth Spirit Speaking Tube, Telektonon by name. After four intense weeks of decoding the glyphs and symbols of the tomb while living in the pool house of an isolated estate in the wind-blown northern part of the main island of Hawaii, I knew that I had to abandon the dreamlike life I led in this Pacific paradise, and with my wife and companion head directly into the unknown, the first stopping point being Mexico, the source of the prophecy. After four months or so of traveling through Mexico, completing the de-coding and announcing the prophecy, including a return to the tomb, we were fi-nally directed to a converted carport in a field near the village of Ocotithin, not far from the birthplace of Quetzalcoatl. It was here where, for a period of nine morn-ings, I awoke dutifully two hours before sunrise to listen to the voice and write down by hand, in a specially prepared notebook, the words exactly as I heard them. After-ward, I numbered the 126 verses and distinguished the nineteen sections.

Because the prophecy itself is so inextricably connected with the Law of Time and the message of *Time and the Technosphere,* I feel it is important to present it as background information to the text of this book. In actuality, the text of the Proph-ecy is an integral part of the *Telektonon, Game of Prophecy,* where it is read, section by section, on a daily basis, according to the code number of the kin of the day.

THE TELEKTONON OF PACAL VOTAN

The Talking Stone of Prophecy That Unites the People of the Dawn with the People of the Book

"Then   if they reject thee,
so were rejected apostles
before thee, who came with clear signs,

● INTRODUCTORY VERSES: ONE LIVING PROPHECY

1. Pacal Votan's Gospel of the Telektonon
   A Special Dispensation for the Day of Truth,
   A.D.1993-1994, kin 144.

2. Proclamation   on behalf of the three messengers
   of the awakening,
   of the three special voices of prophecy,
   the special witness of time and the last call.

3. Telektonon
   the inner sun
   the mother of all prophecy
   message of the star witness, Bolon Ik
   received and repeated by her servant in love,
   Pacal Votan.

4. In the seventh year of Harmonic Convergence
   the seven seals of the apocalypse
   become the seven years of prophecy. . .
   thirteen years in all.

Thirteen moons the path to walk;
thirteen moons the path to talk;
people of the dawn, one mind,
people of the book, one God;
one living prophecy, one people, one Heaven,
one Earth.

●● NAH CHAN: THE PALACE OF BOLON IK

5. o children of the people of the dawn, a children of the people of the book, I come as the special witness of time to remind you, especially on the day of truth, that in your origin you are one, and on the day of truth you are to make yourselves one again. For this I remind you of the Cube of the Law, Telektonon, and the 28-day, thirteen moon way that is the path of the righteous.

6. Nah Chan, Palenque, Xibalbay, Tollan, Xochicalco, Tepozteco, Amatlan: in these signs dwell my special agents, the witnesses of truth, 13.66.56 and Bolon Ik, Daughter of Job.

7. For those with eyes, with open mind and sincere heart, this teaching is complete in every stone alignment and marking of the star command base now called Palenque.

8. New Jerusalem is the Palace of Bolon Ik, whose number is 1,728 (144 x 12), Cube of the Law. Seventeen is the power of Heaven, "solar Uranus," which is Earth in Heaven. Twenty-eight is the power of Telektonon, the Spirit Tower of the power of 7 times 4.

9. Never forget, children of the day of truth: All is number. God is a number. God is in all.

10. And everything there in the palace is laid out foursquare from the cord of Heaven, which is the command of the Telektonon. "Divine word never uttered until the Day of Truth." And in that palace, foursquare is the tower of the Cube of the Law.

●●● THE CUBE OF THE LAW AND THE TOWER OF BABEL

11. o children of the day of truth, before the separation that divided you into the children of the dawn and children of the book, there was only the Cube of the Law and the Law of the Cube.

12. Everyone and everything moved and lived within this Law: one mind, one spirit, one will.

13. Within the dimensions and measurements of the cube are all knowledge of Heaven and Earth. And in order to know, expand on, and delight in the sublime Law of the Cube, God created you, 0 children of the day of truth.

14. And though shaped of no more than mud and sounding clay, in you is the perfection of knowing the Cube of the Law, if only you remembered!

15. Children of the Day of Truth, just as the cube is the measure of the perfection of God's thought, so you are the measure of God's unceasing movement, which is called time.

16. In you the cube is the crown of perfect knowing of God's will in time. But true to his word, Iblis made wrong fair-seeming. To show himself man's enemy, Iblis split the cube. He drove a forgetting of time within the mind, separating mind from spirit, which is God's movement in all things.

17. And from this forgetting in man, mind and spirit became confused. The will weakened. Ego was born. Iblis's many-headed self triumphed. False authority arose. Babylon came to be and in its center the Tower of Babel, the monumental curse for no longer knowing time.

18. In the forgetting was the separation of the people of the dawn from the people of the book. Had there been no Tower of Babel, there would have been no book. The Tower of Babel was a deceit intended to show the Cube of the Law existing outside of the perfection of knowledge already formed within you, a children of the day of truth.

19. Product of the forgetting, the Tower of Babel has a shadow of ever-darkening and all-encompassing dimensions that spreads 5,000 years from Babylonia to all of Earth's most remote wildernesses and mountain retreats. Iblis's curse of Ego and false time are complete but hold only to the day of truth.

20. For God is gracious and most merciful. As long as He could, He kept the people of the dawn away from the Tower of Babel. And to both the people of the dawn and the people of the book, He sent many messengers, apostles of light, witnesses of truth, doers of the righteous way, which is always framed by the invincible Law of the Cube.

●●●● TELEKTONON: THE FRAME OF TIME

21. As the special witness of time, I, Pacal Votan, know the perfect count of days. I bow in the temple of the tower and the rock, the sanctuary of Bolon Ik. In my body, formed of the ultimate perfection of God's power of all movement and measure (Hunab Ku), is the recollection that is prophecy. Knowing this body as the measure of time, I had built this palace and this tower to correct and to also look for the Tower of Babel, a memory of the remembering. And in my ninefold temple, where, guarded by the nine powers of time, I had this body laid, I left this legacy for you, the Talking Stone of Prophecy.

22. Telektonon, the frame of time I left for you, is a mirror to show you your own truth of time for one last time. For now is the day of truth, the hour of judgment.

23. You, children of the dawn, and you, people of the book, unify yourselves the only way you can: in time, through time, as time.

24. Telektonon, the perfection of time, is the only way for you to escape the fire that consumes the unrighteous. If you who know, who have followed the straight way, the good path, now falter in this challenge of unification in time, Telektonon, which has already been prepared for you, you will perish forever in the fire that now consumes all unbelievers. God's command is in you. Do not listen to the evil one now.

25. Listen! My knowledge is this: My count of days is perfect, my knowledge of the Cube of the Law is unsurpassed. Twelve is the number of the temple, but thirteen is the number of God. Twelve times twelve, 144, is the number of the perfection of the temple as light. And twelve times 144, 1728, is the number of the Cube of the Law, Telektonon, the divine word unuttered until now.

26. "... To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in that stone, a new name written, which no man knoweth, saving he that receiveth it." (Revelations 2:17) And that name is Telektonon, and that stone is crystal, and that hidden manna is knowledge of the revelation of time.

27. The number of the elect is 144,000. This was the number set aside by God to be free of Iblis's curse. Dispersed is this number among mankind, and always was it meant to multiply both among the people of the dawn and the people of the book.

28. But since a human kin is the measure of the perfection of time, 144,000 is also the number of days within a cycle of twenty generations.

29. Twelve times 20 generations is 1,728,000 days, the number of the Cube of the Law. But for God, one cycle more, 144,000 days more to entice Iblis to make his score, a total of 1,872,000 days, thirteen cycles of God's elect.

30. I am Pacal Votan, time's special witness, galactic agent of the Nine Great Lords of Destiny, by oath pledged to the honor of Bolon Ik.

31. In my body of time, thirteen star histories rehearse themselves for the day of truth. Each star history possesses its own knowledge keeper appointed by the Nine Great Lords of Galactic Destiny. Thirteen Wisdom Holders, Nine Great Lords, twenty-two in all, to each of whom I am bound by a luminous thread of knowing, sealed by oath to Bolon Ik, White Solar Wind, kin 22 in the Book of Destiny, the Book of Kin.

■■● ALL IS NUMBER

32. All is number. God is a number. God is in all.

33. Child of the day of truth, listen: 20 is the number of totality. You have twenty fingers and toes because God has made you the totality of time. Thirteen is the number of God's cosmic wisdom, perfect in its power of unceasing change and circulation. Thirteen are the joints of your limbs and body. Seven is the difference between 13 and 20. Seven is the mystic perfection between one and thirteen. Seven is the erect spine of the vigilance in which are met the 144,000 mystic fibers of the body's thirst for prophecy.

34. 144,000 kin, 144,000 days, these are called a baktun. Thirteen baktuns, one perfect cycle to rehearse all thirteen star histories. Each baktun, twenty generations, each generation 7,200 kin. So it was that Bolon Ik ordained the sacred count of days, each day a sacred kin, each kin one of the elect, a turning in the twist of universal time, each kin ruled by the power of the nine, the power of the Nine Great Lords of Time.

35. So began the sacred thirteen baktun count, 3,113 years before the birth of the second of the special messengers, the Apostle Jesus Christ, who sent to you a Book of Dark Prophecies, twenty-two sacred chapters in all, through his appointed witness, John of Patmos.

36. All this I know and declare to be true, for I am time's special witness to the day of truth, Pacal Votan, rehearser of the thirteen star histories, he who adds the 144,000 elect to the cubing of the cube, assuring not twelve baktuns, but thirteen to be the number to bring on the day of truth, God's judgment of your power of remembrance!

37. Children of the people of the dawn, in separating you from the people of the book, God meant you to be the reminder that wisdom is already perfect in your bodily form of time.

LORD BUDDHA

38. In remembrance, many messengers did he send you, many fires did he light high atop the mountain for you to see. And one special messenger did he send, one special witness of the dawn.

39. In India, at the midpoint of the seventh baktun, the very center of the mystic cycle, thirteen baktuns in all, Lord Buddha did awaken at the dawn, the morning star, the tree, the Earth, his witnesses of illumination. For seven weeks, he sat beneath that tree. Never moving, he traveled the seven directions and visited with his mind every realm of God's vast creation, only to learn the turning of the Wheel of the Law.

40. Withstanding all efforts of the evil one, he taught unceasingly for nine times five years more, until the age of eighty. All mind teachings did he give; the unwritten Book of Enlightenment did he leave with the Earth. His last turning of the Wheel of the Law was the teaching of the Wheel of Time. Given at the request of King Suchandra of Shambhala who traveled far from Central Asia to receive this teaching, the teaching of the Wheel of Time closed the life of Lord Buddha.

41. "All composite things are impermanent," declared Lord Buddha at his death, "Be a lamp and a refuge unto yourself, look to no outer authority but yourself!" The fire of Lord Buddha's illumination lit many lamps. The Book of Enlightenment he left with the Earth is a book for all to know in silence with the Earth.

42. In Shambhala did King Suchandra transmit the teaching of the Wheel of Time, Kalachakra, as it is called. Invoking the Nine Great Lords of Galactic Destiny, Shambhala prospered in abundance and wisdom. When came the seventh ruler after King Suchandra, Queen Visvamati, the people of Shambhala ascended as one into the paradise of the fifth dimension, where their wisdom continues to water the rivers that flow beneath the gardens of the righteous.

43. Integrating the power of the five, which is the center, with the power of twelve, which is the root of the cube, the Kalachakra is also the cycle of sixty years (5 x 12). By the Law of the Cube, which is the power of sixteen, foursquare or 7 plus 9, sixteen cycles

of sixty years is the appointed time of prophecy, the prophecy of Kalachakra, which is the time of the day of judgment.

44. So it was that after the arrival in Tibet of Buddha's special voice, Padmasambhava, late in the tenth baktun, that the Lords of Shambhala determined to release the teachings of the Wheel of Time among the people of the dawn inhabiting Tibet. Thus it was that the Wheel of Prophecy turned the first of these sixteen cycles in A.D. 1027 and completed the sixteenth of these 60-year cycles in A.D. 1987, in partial fulfillment of the Harmonic Convergence of all prophecy.

45. 0 people of the dawn, do not doubt. The appointed day is come.

●●● THE HEPTAGONON OF MIND

46. People of the dawn, people of the book, children of the day of truth. To safeguard as long as possible the teachings of the Original Ones from the confusion of the Tower of Babel, God divided the Earth by its one ocean into great island masses called continents. And most far from Babylon was Amerrikua, and also distant was Australia and the Island Kingdoms of Polynesia. Even in Africa, close to Babylon, for many great cycles were the people of the dawn protected in their natural wisdom.

47. But inexorable is my count of days, inexorable the rolling of the Wheel of Time, inexorable the Law of the Cube.

48. Telektonon is the name of the blessing received by those who master the Law of the Cube. Great is the power of God, whose power and blessing are ever close and near, foursquare the manifest action of radiance from the divine intersection of God's presence: divine mind, divine spirit, divine will, divine source from which the Cube is sprung. Foursquare the Cube, the measure of Telektonon, one vast, far-spreading word that is no word at all, but number multiplying itself from within God's unending meditation, which we choose to call creation.

49. From one intersection, six directions plus the seventh, the moving center of time, the navel of Heaven whose cord is a fiber called Kuxan Suum. From the navel of Heaven to the solar plexus runs the Kuxan Suum, highway that reaches to the roots of the stars, passing through each of the heavenly dimensions.

50. I who say this, know, for I am Pacal Votan, who left for you a talking stone, Telektonon. Time's special witness am I, God's spy holding vigil, keeping the sacred count of days, exposing to you the lie of Babylon, the falsification of the Cube into the Tower of Babel!

51. Who now but I can tell you that seven are the directions of the Cube, the Heptaganon of Mind: twelve are the gates, sixteen the powers; moved by the nine great powers of time, these sixteen powers become the number of the elect of the Cube, 144. Multiplied by the millennium, 144 becomes 144,000, sacred number of days I laid for prophecy to know during my first baktun count.

52. Children of the book, even before the close of my first baktun, twenty generations from the year 3113 B.C.,the foundations of the Tower of Babel were laid. Captive now were the 144,000 within the Earthly prison of Babylon's materialism.

53. Yet, by my devotion and power of meditation, from deep within the Earth, aided by Bolon Ik's perseverance on far Uranus, Earth's harmonic twin, I kept the sacred count of days, I watched over the movement of the sacred march of kin.

54. Four more baktuns passed, and Babylon's power was swollen with the loot of Empire. Despite the righteousness of Abraham and the Law of Moses, the shadow of the Tower of Babel only increased in size and darkness.

55. Came the sixth baktun and Imperial Babylon was complete. Its seal of false time and power, taxation, and armed expanse had fulfilled Iblis's desire to degrade and ruin all humanity by making wrong fair-seeming. Fair-seeming now to amass wealth and power; fair-seeming to make a count of time by twelve months; and fair-seeming to regard the thirteenth moon with superstition and contempt! Fair-seeming to gather taxes and to pay them; fair-seeming to make war for the power of King's; fair-seeming that birth and death must be paid for; fair-seeming that all power come from the priests, Iblis's most cherished of men.

56. 0 people of the book, lost to you was all memory of the Law of the Cube, slavery became your lot! But I am Pacal Votan, time's special witness. Even before the coming of the second special messenger, Christ the Apostle of Love, by my free will and my knowledge of the power of seven, I laid claim to the Seven Seals of Prophecy that on the day of truth, Iblis's curse would be finished and the righteous would triumph. And now the day of truth is come. Telektonon, the talking stone, now speaks in a voice for all to hear.

57. By the seventh baktun, the Seven Seals of Prophecy were stored in Earth's special lodestone of truth, whose custodian am 1.

58. By the eighth Baktun, Iblis had caused the Tower of Babel to speak more tongues in a growing clash of empires. Into this confusion came the Apostle of Love, crucified for driving the moneylenders from the Temple, misunderstood by the people of the book, finally to be absorbed by the Priests of Babylon, now Roman by tongue, who use this Christ as their emblem to spawn Iblis's greatest evil, the total usurpation of Earthly Time.

▬▬▬ THE   BOOK   OF   DARK   PROPHECIES

59. One special voice did this Jesus have, a man named Saint John ofPatmos, in whom the gift of prophecy was fulfilled. From my ark of universal time, Earth's special lodestone of truth, rock of Heaven, attained by thirteen tones, I guided Saint John's hand by the mystic power of seven. And so was sent to the world the Book of Dark Proph-

ecies, Revelations, the Apocalypse, twenty-two mystic chapters, the first thirteen mirroring my thirteen great baktuns, nine more for the Lords of Time, seven of these for each of Seven Years of Prophecy, and the last two to complete the visionary power of the righteous of the Cube: 144,000 times thirteen.

60. To those who can read they will find Iblis's numbers 1,260 and 666, well known on the day of truth, for 12:60 is the ratio of the false time that makes martyrs of the righteous, and 666 the number of the beast who captures my thirteenth baktun.

61. Children of the day of truth, children of the dawn, people of the book, all this can you hear in the stones of Palenque where in the tenth baktun I took pure human form. Of the twenty-seven books of the New Testament, the twenty-seventh is Revelations. Twenty-seven steps ascend to the Palace of Bolon Ik. This palace, New Jerusalem, is the mystic power of Telektonon, the twenty-eighth step, the power of seven sanctified foursquare.

62. Twenty-two chapters of Revelations are the twenty-two kin complete in Bolon Ik: thirteen for the power of time, nine for the Nine Lords of Time, whose forms still guard my ark of stone deep within the ninefold temple of the Cube of the Law. Perfect was the time of my coming, kin 1, 366, 560. Perfect was the time of my going, kin 1, 385, 540.

63. Installed in the House of the Serpent, my coming was commemorated by the departure of the third messenger, the special messenger of the day of truth, the Apostle Muhammad, who left for the righteous of the Earth the Book of the Righteous, the Holy Quran, clear signs to understand.

64. As Buddha taught so pure one mind, so Muhammad taught so pure one God. Submission to the will of God is at the center of the Law of the Cube. Truly for the righteous there is only the straight way, the path of basic goodness, laid out in the heart as obedience to God's will, the divine plan unfathomable to those who cry, "reason alone can save us!"

THE PROPHECY OF THE SEVEN GENERATIONS

65. I am Pacal Votan, witness of time. Telektonon is my gospel. The talking stone of unifying prophecy is my legacy intended for that special messenger who understands the meaning of my numbers.

66. By my symbolic channel of communication called Telektonon did I intend this prophecy to be discovered and recovered. Once forty years had elapsed from the time of the discovery of my Uranian crypt, then would come the recovery, the recollection by my special agent of the numbers rehearsed and repeated to announce the day of truth.

67. Perfect was the time of my coming. Perfect was my mission. Perfect was the time of my going. Perfect is the discovery of my prophecy. Perfect is the Telektonon, the little book the angel of the Lord made Saint John of Patmos taste and eat, which you now possess, a treasure for the day of truth.

68. What you witness by these words is the last message I gave to my people, the message of 9.13.0.0.0, heard from my ark of stone through the Telektonon, Earth Spirit Speaking Tube. To my people I declared:

69. "Seven katuns are there to follow me. Seven generations, each one guarded by a solar witness taking account of what you do, each solar witness sealing your time with a prophecy to be known as the Book of the Seven Generations. And this book is to be opened for the day of truth.

70. "After the seven generations, the end of the baktun. Ten baktuns gone, the glorious Age of Maya gone, the Long Count of my days to be completed at 1,440,000 kin, the mystic number of the elect multiplied by ten.

71. "Then will come the three baktuns of Babel, the coming exile of 12:60 time. Thirteen years after this tenth baktun shall come the last prophetic round: thirteen cycles of Heaven, each fifty-two years, followed by nine cycles of Hell, each also fifty-two years. When the third round of Heaven begins, the Messenger of the Last Call will come to you, Quetzalcoatl-Kukulkan, the prophet by name.

72. "And when the thirteenth Heaven cycle is over, then will come the complete destruction of all we are and know. Before the twelfth baktun is over, two priests bearing false witness, ornamented with the sacred numbers five and thirteen, will see to it that the thirteenth baktun will be the end of time.

73. "Unrelenting will be the roll of the Nine Hells into the abyss of fire and madness. In the time of the last Hell, though you will be declared free, free you will not be. Ten Kings in succession will mark the climax of time. Seven years will follow the ending of the last Hell. Then will sound the angel of the seventh trumpet, the seven thunders will roll, the beast of seven heads called G-7 will place his mark on your foreheads and hands, the false one from Babylon will return to be embraced by the 11 Serpent. Then the day of truth will come, the Seven Years of Prophecy."

TIME'S SPECIAL WITNESS

74. People of the dawn, people of the book, children of the day of truth, many messengers have been sent to you, many prophets have been given to you. A Book of Enlightenment has been placed in the Earth for all to read in communion with the Earth. A Book of Dark Prophecies has been left for you. A prophecy of thirteen Heavens and nine Hells to accompany the Book of Dark Prophecies has also been left for you. A great prophet and messenger has left you clear signs to understand and a book of unassailable righteousness, the Holy Quran.

75. As the special witness of time, I have left for you my talking stone, Telektonon, breath of precious Bolon Ik, and have sent you both a prophet, Quetzalcoatl of sacred Xochicalco, and for the day of truth I have appointed also a special messenger who can hear my talking stone and write and explain its numbers and its meaning for you, children of the righteous.

76. Do not doubt any of this. When the moment comes for him who is to be the eleventh in succession, to succeed the one, 11 Serpent, then join the believers and begin the prophecy that liberates from all Kings and successors.

77. Ten witnesses I place around my tomb, ten Uranian emissaries, one each for each of ten baktuns. Of these am I the eleventh. Who would be the eleventh in the final succession of the Kings of Mexico must own me as the eleventh, then will all go well.

78. Six messengers did I place on my talking stone of prophecy: three above, the messengers Lord Buddha, Muhammad, and Christ; and three below, Padmasambhava, Quetzalcoatl, and Saint John of Patmos. Of these am I the seventh.

79. Pacal Votan am I, time's special witness, messenger of the Telektonon, instrument of the seventh angel, I declare again and again: All is number. God is a number. God is in all.

●●● WAR OF THE RIGHTEOUS

80. Look carefully at my stone and listen: ten messengers, 24 signs, for ten are the number of orbits of planets around this star, Kinich Ahau, your Sun. From my point of origin, your star is designated 24, number of the circuit of externalizing intelligence. If you are of the righteous, then in this is a sign for you of your star mission.

81. And from each of the three oracle mouths of the arms of the cross of my Kuxan Suum, you will find twenty-four rays repeated three times, one-half the number of the elect (3 x 24 = 72). Add to this 3 times 11 (33) and the number is 105, the difference between the number of days in your solar orbit, 365, and the number of kin in my sacred count, my galactic spin, 260.

82. 13:20 is the ratio of natural sacred time. 12:60 is the ratio of the false time of the Tower of Babel. 13:20, thirteen moons, twenty fingers and toes. 12:60, twelve-month year, sixty-minute hour. Children of the day of truth, in this is a sign for you to discriminate between the power of the evil one who seeks to trap you in his machine, and the power of the righteous who need nothing but that with which God has endowed them: their body of time and their natural path synchronized by thirteen moons.

83. Children of the day of truth this is your only decision, for God knows and sees all that is in your hearts. People of the dawn, people of the book, on the hour of judgment unify yourselves in the only way you can: in time, as time, through time. For this in the year of kin 144, Telektonon is revealed to you, God's plan for peace on Earth, the last and only hope for spiritual renewal and salvation, immediate acceptance and adoption of the twenty-eight-day, thirteen-moon way, the calendar Telektonon. "And he had a name written that no man knew but himself." (Revelations 19:12) And that name is Telektonon.

84. Children of the day of truth, people of the dawn, people of the book, foursquare is my talking stone, invisible its design, its crystal lacing of star histories met in my human form. Time's special witness am I seeking apostles of time to organize the day of truth

into the revelation of God's redemption. Universal forgiveness awaits those who understand God's plan, a common time of twenty-eight days, thirteen moons, begun together at the appointed hour, on the day called Lunar Moon, the first day of the second year of prophecy.

85. Two solar faces there are upon my talking stone, the one an icon of my solar shield, Galactic Sun, the other, Lunar Sun, an emblem of the perfect lunar timing of Earth's solar orbit.

86. Children of the day of truth, the hour of judgment has come for you. How much longer do you need to suffocate in the Babylonian exile of 12:60 time? My children are the oppressed. Is it not time for the war of the righteous to restore equality? Why not wage the war then that destroys altogether the old time? Why not smash the caskets of the Babylonian wine of fornication in a single stroke?

HOLY VICTORY MARCH

87. 0 children of the day of truth, people of the dawn, people of the book, in your origins you were one blood, today the hour of judgment demands you become one again, unified in time. Who among you will join my apostles of the Telektonon? Already the gift has been given. Already we left for you the 13:20 tool, my sacred count of days, 260 kin, to turn the solar-lunar wheel of 365 days. And when prophecy was vindicated at the conclusion of the ninth Hell, we sent among you the perfect form of this gift, Dreamspell, containing the message of the thirteen moons.

88. But this was not enough, the seventh trumpet had yet to sound, and so it did in the fortieth year following the discovery of my Uranian ark of stone. And now my prophecies are revealed. The Mayan Apocalypse of kin 144, Yellow Magnetic Seed, turns the seventh year of karmic destiny into the opening of the first of my seven seals of prophecy.

89. In this seal foursquare, all prophecies converge. The Beast of the G-7 stands revealed. The Babylonian Vatican is exposed. In the rainbow dream vision 144,000 of the elect are called again to meet, gathering together in circles to listen, to sing, and to dance to the song Telektonon.

90. 0 children of the day of truth, people of the dawn, people of the book, seven is my sacred power. Foursquare seven is 28, the number that, perfectly followed, opens Heaven's gate. Walking together the sacred thirteen moon, 28-day way, you will be joined to God's command, a holy victory march of the righteous to restore sacred order to this troubled Earth and to recover your lost powers.

91. Four powers of seven are given to you to be your comfort in the Victory March, one power for each of four perfect weeks, every twenty-eight days. By the first power of seven, claim your power of prophecy, by the second power of seven, maintain your power of prophecy; by the third power of seven, proclaim the victory of prophecy; by the fourth power of seven, become the victory of prophecy!

92. 0 children of the day of truth, 144,000 times thirteen is an army of the righteous. Learn again the count of sacred time and join this army. 0 children of the day of truth, realize that everything about the old 12:60 time is now become a garment of false being, a moral corruption, a banquet feast for the evil one.

THE STORM OF NON-EGO

93. 0 children of the day of truth, children of the people of the book, in the Storm is the sign of God's power. To the Storm is assigned the power of nineteen, the mystic saturation of all number. One hundred fourteen Suras, nineteen times six, the power of the Cube, are the number of Suras in the Holy Quran. Twenty-two years after the finding of my Uranian crypt, Telektonon, came complete revelation of the Quran's power of nineteen, Allah's mercy. Nineteen more years then to unfold the karma of Allah's prophet besieged by Babylonian conspiracy. Then comes the destined year nineteen, kin 144, hour of prophecy's convergence, moment of the day of truth.

94. Let the 124,000 messengers call forth a remnant of 20,000 more; let each of these sound seven trumpets, seven times. Let these seven times seven trumpets call for a following of God's perfect plan. Mark seven times seven years since the evil one showed his fiery face at Hiroshima. Be honored by God's cancellation of Iblis's power of moral oblivion. Let the storm of God's power of nineteen cleanse with cosmic mercy the blood of all martyrs from the thrones of Kings, and let these thrones themselves be dissolved by the pure water of sacred time flowing through the gardens of the righteous.

95. I am Pacal Votan, time's special witness, revealer of the Cube of the Law, devoted patron of the mystery that is woman, the consummation of the telepathic power of twenty-eight, known to me by name of Bolon Ik.

96. Pacal Votan am I, enigma to your men of reason. My existence is proof of the workings of higher law. Telepathy is participation in God's knowing, but is no cause to claim full knowledge of His powers. Prophecy too is natural law, the complement to God's mercy.

97. 0-19 is my code. In it are all demonstrations of the wisdom that is always close and near, but that comprehends the web of galactic being and all forms of its natural orders in time. Just as nineteen is the power of God's mercy, so zero is the fullness and emptiness all at once that characterize the nature of mind and all it can know.

98. Lord Buddha called this power of zero Sunyata. The special voice of Buddha, Padmasambhava, whose life span followed mine, exactly as Muhammad's preceded it, knew this Sunyata to be the basis of non-ego.

99. If you would know me and all that I witness for you in this hour of judgment, children of the dawn, people of the book, then practice the being that is non-ego.

THE ECSTASY OF DELIVERANCE

100. Because I repose on Telektonon, the mother of all prophecy, mine is the ecstasy of deliverance. With a mind of non-ego clasped to the heart of God I have sent out my

message of the Mayan Apocalypse. By relinquishing the calendar of twelve and leaving the prison of mechanized time, God's mercy will come swiftly to you.

101. Thirteen moons, twenty fingers and toes, thirteen joints, four limbs, five senses do you already possess. God's knowing and power of movement are already in you like a mother pregnant with child.

102. Why tarry now? When a house is burning, scurrying for your possessions will only cost you your life. This house that is burning is Babylon, the 12:60 way of life, which is now destroying your biosphere and poisoning everything about your life. Do not linger now fondling your machines. This is the Day of Judgment. If you can remember, leave this burning house and know that a better way has already been prepared for you, a holy victory march, my seven years of prophecy, Telektonon, the sacred revelation of time.

103. The Cube of the Law is awaiting its construction through the collective mind, spirit, and will of you, 0 children of the day of truth. Iblis, Satan, the evil one is none other than your ego clinging to the fatal lures of Babylon. God knows nonetheless exactly what is in your heart. Why not, then, become an apostle of the holy victory march? The ecstasy of deliverance is meant to be shared by all.

THE PROPHETS OF PEACE ARE AWAKENING

104. Pacal Votan am I, time's special witness am I, who bequeaths to you a talking stone, a legacy of place, Nah Chan, House of the Serpent, by prophecy known as Palenque.

105. And at Xochicalco, too, you will find stone utterances of my gospel left by command of my apostle, Topiltzin Ce Acatl Quetzalcoatl, who closed Christ's first millennium, as now my prophecy is come to close Christ's second millennium.

106. 0 people of the dawn, people of the book, children of the day of truth, make yourselves as one again and do not doubt the accuracy of the appointed hour on the day Lunar Moon! Synchronize now, and in all humility accept God's plan, twenty-eight days, thirteen moons, plus one day for deliverance and forgiveness.

107. Pardon now in public your enemy's indiscretions, and make full confession of your own transgressions. If you are sincere, God will see this in your heart and by His mercy many will follow your way; and if you proclaim for the cause of righteousness and truth, a new beginning and a new time, Telektonon, the thirteen moon way, and you enjoin others to do likewise, then God will know this, too, and make you a great general in the holy victory march.

108. And, if you have means and wealth, and you hear these words, or have explained to you the curse of 12:60 time and the blessing of 13:20 time, then do not doubt it and practice charity. Provide for the children orphaned by war and provide for the reconstruction of the Earth, that the practice of art and culture may flourish once again. Practice such charity with zeal, for soon you shall see an end to money. No more will flow the drunken wine of Babylon's fornication, and then what will you be with your paper credits and your useless machines?

109. The prophets of peace are awakening. Truly, the hour of judgment is come. Among the angels am I known as the mysterious benefactor of the righteous. Will you throwaway this opportunity, too? Beware for now the fire that consumes all falsehood is raging.

▰▰▰ THE WIZARD'S HOARD OF THE LORE OF DEATH

110. People of the dawn, people of the book, children of the day of truth, because I am time's special witness, everything about my talking stone of prophecy is in fulfillment of God's divine plan.

111. Mine is the teaching of the 12:60 way of exile and the 13:20 way of redemption. Exactly 1,260 years passed from the dedication of my temple and closing of my Uranian crypt, A.D.692, 9.13.0.0.0, to its discovery and reopening in A.D.1952, 12.17.0.0.0. Another five times seven years, the numbers of my sacred ratio passed before the closing of the ninth Hell, A.D.1987, commemorated by the sacrifice of 3 Monkey, the first of four sacred signs on the western edge of my great talking stone. In this sacrifice was a sign of the death and transcendence of the way of the people of the book, "Joshua," and the people of the dawn, "Maitreya."

112. Eleven sets of triple disks, thirty-three in all, will you find upon my stone, for 33 is the number of the initiate, the middle harmonic of 65 that constitutes the Tzolkin, my sacred count of thirteen times twenty. All clear signs have I left for you, two borders of stars, the host of the Nine Lords of Time repeated by number on each side, top and bottom of my stone, a ledger of star histories complete in my form.

113. But especially would I have you look at Mars and consider again the disposition of the thirteen sacred signs placed around the edge of my stone, from 8 Ahau, my seal of truth, to 13 Cimi, the galactic closing of the wizard's hoard of the lore of death.

114. Ten emissaries celebrate the glory of my gifts for you, signs of peace from other worlds that beckon you to awaken from your sleep of Earthly Hell to join yourselves to God's command, Telektonon, the 28-day, thirteen-moon way and find in that count of days a path that leads directly to the paradise that is the repose and reward of the righteous.

115. One hundred forty is the number of the Telektonon, perfect its ratio 5:7 (28 x 5 = 20 x 7), the same as my sacred ratio 260:364(+1)

116. All is number. God is a number. God is in all.

▰▰▰▰ SEVEN PERFECT ORACLES

117. People of the dawn, people of the book, children of the day of truth, this completes my testimony, I, Valum Votan, holder of the solar shield, protected have I been by the perfect love of Bolon Ik, who has stored my prophecy until this moment of release.

118. Seven perfect oracles have I given you, a perfect calendar of thirteen moons, an instrument to renew your spirit and your powers of Prophecy, Telektonon, and a book

of knowledge for you to penetrate the forgotten history of your star, Dreamspell. Also have I sent two messengers who bear witness to my truth, and thirteen perfect signs.

119. Now is the time of my prophecy. Now is the day of truth. Now is the opening of the seven seals. Now is the sounding of the seven trumpets. Now is the hour of judgment. Now is the song of the 144,000, the seed army of the righteous.

120. When the Lunar Moon has overflowed its banks, the G-7 will be no more.

121. When the Electric Wizard arrives, gather in banners of righteousness.

122. When arrives the Self-existing Storm, you will be fortified with spiritual abundance.

123. When comes the Overtone Seed, neither money nor priests will besiege you any longer, but the Earth will sing in harmony with your righteousness, Babylon will be no more, the Law of the Cube will be fully rehearsed in the hearts of the righteous.

124. In the sign of the Rhythmic Moon, senses will open to the manna of Heaven; no where will you find any longer signs of the evil one; a cosmic race will you be once again.

125. And when comes the seventh year, the Resonant Wizard will seal the Heavens and the Earth with the glory of all prophecy, the redemption of all prophets, messengers, apostles, and witnesses of truth.

126. Five years then will you have to close the cycle of the Seed, and another eight, thirteen years in all, to prepare for the coming of the Galactic Seed, 2013 Arcturus Dominion, the fulfillment of the star cycle of Valum Chivim, witnessed by the special agent, Pacal Votan, to the glory of love, Bolon Ik, and on behalf of the mercy of God's divine plan, Telektonon, Cube of the Law, the mighty talking stone of prophecy.

"Man is one. Culture is indivisible. "
-ALBERTO Ruz, 1952, 12.17.0.0.0.

Transcribed 12 Seed, kin 64,
Resonant Moon Day 13,
Warrior's Cube 7, 0 Yax
Yellow Magnetic Seed Year, kin 144,
First Year of Prophecy

Blue Spectral Monkey/White Solar Wind
Tepoztlan, Morelos, Mexico

Appendix IV
The Nineteen Code

THE MYSTERY [1] of the motives of the hijackers, who were instrumented by divine will, if not by biospheric necessity, to catalyze the Inevitable Event, lies in their very number: nineteen. While the nineteen is related to the Quranic verse 74:30, "Over it is nineteen," and can be interpreted prophetically, the Law of Time confirms the Quran in demonstrating that the number nineteen possesses a supreme and indeed inviolable value. The Law of Time validates all that is true, and contains within it the mathematical confirmation of all systems of thought as different facets of the same synchronic order.

The Law of Time is based on the mathematical code of the Harmonic Module, itself a function and a demonstration of the 13:20 ratio. The vigesimal mathematics of the 13:20 frequency is known as the 0':"'19code, which is written with a simple dot-bar notation. As such the 0-19 code is a whole number system in which the count is not 1-9 but 1-19, and the positional zero represents a factor of 20 rather than of 10. As the demonstration of a radial mathematical code, the number 19 plays a singular role in the 13:20 matrix. As the largest compound prime number of the 0-19 count, within the context of this count 19 has certain unique properties and values. It may be asked: why 19?

First of all, let us consider the theological dimensions of the number 19 as hinted at by the Quranic verse 74:30. Long an enigma to scholars of the Quran, it was only through the genius of an Egyptian scientist, aided by a computer, that the meaning

of the verse was finally revealed as the nineteen code-an intricate mathematical system based on the number 19 underlying the entire structure of the Holy Quran.

"For the first time in history we have a scripture with built-in proof of divine authorship-a superhuman mathematical composition."1

The contribution of Rashad Khalifa (1935-1990) to the role and meaning of the Holy Quran for the entire modem world is without parallel. The martyrdom of this genuine seeker and messenger needs to be redeemed and placed in its proper light. According to Dr. Khalifa, "Nineteen is the common denominator throughout the Quran's mathematical system." "This is one of the greatest miracles" (74:35). To summarize in his own words, Dr. Khalifa states:

> The Quran is characterized by a unique phenomenon never found in any human authored book. Every element of the Quran is mathematically composed-the suras, the verses, the words, the number of certain letters, the number of words from the same root, the number and variety of divine names, the unique spelling of certain words, the absence or deliberate alteration of certain letters within certain words, and many other elements of the Quran besides its content. There are two major facets of the Quran's mathematical system: (1) The mathematical literary composition, and (2) The mathematical structure involving the numbers of suras and verses. Because of this comprehensive mathematical coding, the slightest distortion of the Quran's text or physical arrangement is immediately exposed.2

Like the Law of Time, which could only have been discovered after the opening of Pacal Votan's tomb, in A.D. 1952, the nineteen code of the Quran could only be discovered and unveiled over a twenty-two-year period between 1968 and 1990. Why? Because only with a modem computer could Dr. Khalifa subject every last word and letter of the Quran, in its Arabic original, to the rigorous analysis necessary to expose its mathematical perfection. As Dr. Khalifa writes in his footnote to 10:20 ("They say, 'How come no miracle came down to him from his Lord?' Say, 'The future belongs to God; so wait, and I am waiting along with you.'"):

> 10.20: In retrospect we see now that the Quran's miracle, indeed "One of the greatest miracles" (74:35), was divinely predestined to be unveiled 14 centuries after Muhammad. In view of the current condition of the traditional Muslims, ifMuhammad had been given this miracle, those Muslims, who are already idolizing Muhammad beside God, would have worshipped him as God incarnate. Additionally, this miracle is obviously designed for the computer age, and to be appreciated by mathematically sophisticated generations.3

The phenomenon of the intricate patterning of the nineteen code as witnessed, for example, in the 19 x 142 (2,698) occurrences of the word *God* in the Quran,

writes Khalifa, "alone suffices as incontrovertible   proof that the Quran is God's message to the world. No human being(s) could have kept track of 2698 occurrences   of the word 'God,' and the number of verses where they occur."4 One must bear in mind that the Quran was revealed in a time of primitive simplicity over a twenty-three-year period so that the suras and verses were separated in time and place, while the chronological   order of the revelation of the suras is not at all the same as their final format. Moreover, the miracle of the nineteen code is not limited to the appearance of the word God, but is vast, intricate,   and comprehensive.   Dr. Khalifa lists a set of nineteen   "simple facts" that confirm the Quran's mathematical   coding. The "simple facts" are those not requiring a calculator or computer to be ascertained.   We hereby reproduce   these "simple facts," as they are presented   in Appendix   1 of *Quran: The Pinal Testament* (all references   to letters and words are to the Arabic original):

1. The first verse (1:1), known as *"Basmalah,"* consists of   19 letters.

2. The Quran consists of 114 suras, which is   19 x 6.

3. The total number of verses in the Quran is 6346, or   19 x 334.
   (6234 numbered verses and 112 unnumbered   verses
   [Basmalahs]. 6234 +112 = 6346. Note that $6 + 3 + 4 + 6 =$ 19.

4. The *Basmalah* occurs 114 times, despite its conspicuous
   absence   from Sura 9 (it occurs twice in Sura 27). 114 $=$ 19 x 6.

5. From the missing *Basmalah* of Sura 9 to the extra
   Basmalah of Sura 27 there are precisely   19 suras.

6. It follows that the total of the sura numbers
   from 9 to 27 (9 +10 + 11 + 12 . . . + 26 + 27) is 342, or   19 x 18.

7. The total (342) also equals the number of words
   between the two *Basmalahs* of Sura 27, and 342 $=$ 19 x 18.

8. The famous first revelation (96:1-5) consists of   19 words.

9. This 19-worded first revelation consists of 76 letters,   19 x 4.

10. Sura 96, first in the chronological sequence, consists of   19 verses.

11. This first chronological sura is placed atop the last   19 suras.

12. Sura 96 consists of 304 Arabic letters. 304 $=$ 19 x 16.

13. The last revelation (Sura 110) consists of   19 words.

14. The first verse of the last revelation (110:1) consists of   19 letters.

15. 14 different Arabic letters form 14 different sets of "Quranic Initials" (such as A.L.M. of 2:1) and prefix 29 suras. These numbers add up to $14 + 14 + 29 = 57$ and $57 =$ 19 x 3.

16. The total of the 29 sura numbers where the Quranic Initials occur is $2 + 3 + 7 + . . . + 50 + 68 = 822$, and $822 + 14$ (14 sets of Initials) $= 836$, or   19 x 44.

17. Between the first initialed sura (Sura 2) and the last initialed sura (Sura 68) there are 38 un-initialed suras. $38 =$ 19 x 2.

18. Between the first and last initialed sura there are   19 sets of alternating "initialed" and "un-initialed" suras.

19. The Quran mentions 30 different numbers: 1,2,3,4, 5,6, 7, 8,9, 10, 11, 12, 19,20,30,40,50,60, 70, 80, 99,100,200,300,1000,2000,3000,5000,50,000, & 100,000. The sum of these numbers is $162,146 =$ 19 x 6534.

Apart from the "simple facts," through use of his computer, a Hewlett Packard HP-IOOO E-series, Dr. Khalifa demonstrated many more complex levels of the coding of the number 19 throughout the Quran. These findings are synthesized in the Appendices to *Quran: The Pinal Testament,* and are also available in his other texts detailing his research, such as *The Miracle of the Quran.* The net effect of the truly monumental research effort exerted by Dr. Khalifa was the promotion of a highly reformed Islam based on "the Quran, the whole Quran, and nothing but the Quran." It is for this reason that Dr. Khalifa's translations of the Quran are referred to as "the Final Scripture," (1980) and the revised translation (1992) as the "Final Testament." It was also Dr. Khalifa's insistence on the Quran as the sole basis of Islam that earned him his martyrdom in Tucson, Arizona, on January 31, 1990.

NINETEEN IN THE TWENTY-COUNT POSITIONAL SYSTEM

The Law of Time-T(E) =Art, where T equals the 13:20 timing frequency ratio- upholds the validity of the research of Dr. Khalifa and graphically demonstrates *why* 19 is the mathematical factor that underlies the Holy Quran.

The fact that the Mayan vigesimal system is known as the 0-19 code, and that in this code 19, and not 9, has the supreme value of being the highest number, absolutely enhances the power and significance of Dr. Khalifa's discovery concerning

74:30, "Over it is nineteen." The supremacy of the value of 19, imperceptible if we only follow the decimal 1O-count, is fully demonstrated when we examine the 0-19 number code in which the numbers 0-19 are reproduced in a 5 x 4 (= 20) matrix, beginning with 0 and ending with 19. In this number set, which also demonstrates the mathematics of the radial matrix, there are ten pairs of numbers radially arranged, each pair of which adds up to 19:
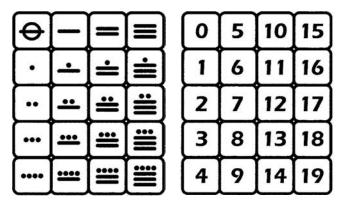
$$0+19=19$$
$$1+18=19$$
$$2+17=19$$
$$3 + 16 = 19$$
$$4+15=19$$
$$5+14=19$$
$$6+13=19$$
$$7+12=19$$
$$8+11=19$$
$$9+10=19$$

In other words, within the parameters of the mathematical matrix in which nineteen is the integer with the highest value, its value completely informs the radial order of the entire vigesimal system. "Over it is nineteen." This is truly astonishing confirmation of the value accorded to 19 in the Quran. If the Quran is the true word of God, then we must expect that even knowledge unknown to Muhammad or Dr. Khalifa would be contained or coded in the Quran. We are referring, of course, to the Law of Time in its mathematical particulars, beginning with its mathematical base of expression, the 0-19 code.

19 = 7: NINETEEN IN THE 0-19 DOT-BAR NOTATIONAL SYSTEM
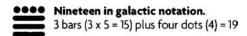
Just as the number 19 takes on a supreme value in the vigesimal system inconceivable in the decimal system, so the vigesimal order commands its own notational system. The 0-19 dot-bar notational system substantiates the meaning and power of 19 as the prime mathematical, saturated value unit in the twenty count. The dot-bar notational order is a holographic system distinct from the alphabetic system of Arabic numerals by which we write 1-10.

The distinction between use of the two notational orders is profound. This notational order uses only three notational symbols to build up the holographic context of

Any radially opposite set of numbers always equals 19, e.g., 4 and 15, 0 and 19, 9 and 10, 2 and 17, 11 and 8.
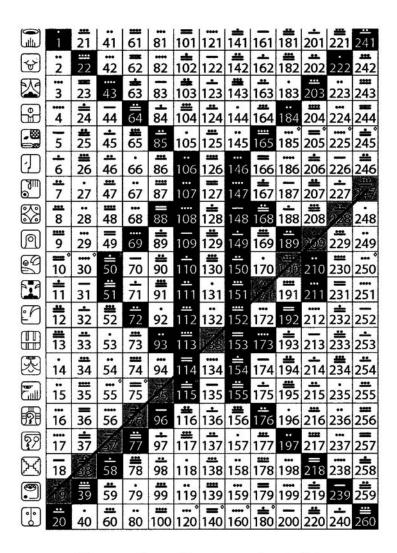
Nineteen is the highest value and the most saturated notation, being the only one with seven notational symbols—three bars and four dots.

Nineteen in galactic notation.
3 bars (3 x 5 = 15) plus four dots (4) = 19

Dot-bar notation system, 0–19 code

the fourth-dimensional number. One dot represents one unit; one bar represents a five-unit order; and a positional zero completes the system. The vigesimal notational system reveals the entire radial sequence of the 0-19 code to be a highly streamlined and aesthetic pattern. Brief contemplation shows that there are two patterned orders consisting of four vertical sets of five units each, and five horizontal sets of four units each. It is seen that nineteen represents the maximum saturation of both the vertical and horizontal orders, and consists of the maximum number of dots (four) and the maximum number of bars (three). It is also visibly manifest that $19 = 7$ notational units, the maximum number of units.

The fact that 19 is represented by seven notational units confirms Sura 1, which has seven verses and the first line of which consists of nineteen Arabic letters. However, from the point of view of the Law of Time, 7 is the key implicit mathematical unit in the absolute timing frequency ratio, 13:20-the difference between 20 and 13 is 7, and the midpoint between 1 and 13 is also 7. While Dr. Khalifa is responsible for determining the dominance of nineteen as the mathematical key underlying the patterning and meaning of the Quran, the Law of Time provides an even more profound lens through which to consider Dr. Khalifa's work, by placing nineteen in a superior (vigesimal) mathematical and theological context.

1	21	41	61	81	101	121	141	161	181	201	221	241
2	22	42	62	82	102	122	142	162	182	202	222	242
3	23	43	63	83	103	123	143	163	183	203	223	243
4	24	44	64	84	104	124	144	164	184	204	224	244
5	25	45	65	85	105	125	145	165	185	205	225	245
6	26	46	66	86	106	126	146	166	186	206	226	246
7	27	47	67	87	107	127	147	167	187	207	227	247
8	28	48	68	88	108	128	148	168	188	208	228	248
9	29	49	69	89	109	129	149	169	189	209	229	249
10	30	50	70	90	110	130	150	170	190	210	230	250
11	31	51	71	91	111	131	151	171	191	211	231	251
12	32	52	72	92	112	132	152	172	192	212	232	252
13	33	53	73	93	113	133	153	173	193	213	233	253
14	34	54	74	94	114	134	154	174	194	214	234	254
15	35	55	75	95	115	135	155	175	195	215	235	255
16	36	56	76	96	116	136	156	176	196	216	236	256
17	37	57	77	97	117	137	157	177	197	217	237	257
18	38	58	78	98	118	138	158	178	198	218	238	258
19	39	59	79	99	119	139	159	179	199	219	239	259
20	40	60	80	100	120	140	160	180	200	220	240	260

Nineteen Strand in Harmonic Module

Kin numbers beginning with 19, lower left, are advancing multiples of nineteen, the last being 19 x 13 (247). Actually, the difference between every kin number on this diagonal is a difference of 19.

19 = 260: THE TZOLKIN "OVER IT IS NINETEEN" STRAND

"All is number. God is a number. God is in all. "
-DYNAMICS OF TIME, POSTULATE 19.13

The 0-19 code provides the order of 20 in the ratio 13:20. Like the 0-19 radial matrix, the 13:20 ratio is also organized as a radial matrix of 260 (13 x 20) kin or units. As a cycle of 260 days, the 13 x 20 timing matrix is the fourth-dimensional

gauge that synchronically unifies the Thirteen Moon calendar. Known by the traditional and ancient Maya as the *Tzolkin* or "sacred count," the 13 x 20 gauge or Harmonic Module is the key to the mathematics of the fourth dimension, or the "Hereafter." Just as the mathematics of the third dimension is decimal-based, so the mathematics of the fourth dimension is vigesimal-based. Hence, the power of 20 as a self-existing proportion (4 x 5 = 5 x 4).

For any frequency to occur two proportions must be coincident. Thirteen, which is a function of the 7 factor, is the proportion that complements the 0-19 vigesimal proportion of 20. Hence the Tzolkin consists of twenty horizontal orders and thirteen vertical orders = 260 kin, which are also arranged in twenty sets of thirteen-kin wavespells, all numbered 1-13 in dot-bar notation. All of the kin in the 260-unit matrix are also individually numbered: kin 1, kin 2 . . . kin 259, kin 260.

Within the 13:20 order of 260 kin, 13 sets of 20 or 20 sets of 13, only two of the numbers in the vigesimal code 0-19 occur thirteen times: the number 19 and the number 20 (= positional zero). While 20 occurs precisely thirteen times, 19 occurs thirteen times with a remainder of thirteen (13 x 19 = 247 = 260 - 13).

The position and notational order of the thirteen occurrences of the number 19 in the 260-unit Tzolkin create a perfect strand of thirteen units. This 19 x 13 (19 _ 260) strand demonstrates the supreme invariability and inviolability of the number 19 in the vigesimal code of fourth-dimensional time.

The purity of the movement of the 13 x 19 strand of the Tzolkin is further augmented by the vigesimal or 20-count manner of writing numbers. Even as transliterated into the Arabic system of writing numbers, it will be seen that in the vigesimal code every multiple of 19 always adds up to 19, a similar power held by all multiples of 9 in the decimal code. In vigesimal notation, the second order units are always multiples of 20 and not 10. Hence 38 = 1.18, where 1 = 20 + 18; or 5.14 = 114, where 5 = 100 + 14.

Finally, while the sequence 1-13 defines the thirteen galactic tones of fourth-dimensional time, the 0-19 matrix is represented by twenty icons and a four-color (4 x 5 = 20) permutation sequence. The combination of color, icon, and tone gives each of the 260 kin a "galactic signature." This completes the description of the Harmonic Modulerrzolkin.

We now present the thirteen multiples of 19 as defined by the 13 x 19 strand running from lower left to upper right in a perfect cross-stitch sequence that reverses the horizontal order of the 0-19 code frequencies. In other words, the first order represented is the order of (1 x 19) 19 (frequency 19, icon Storm), and the last is the

19 x 13 (19 = 260 code):

Each multiple of 19 is listed with a) kin number; b) vigesimal notation; c) galactic signature; d) 0–19 frequency order + tone number (Dynamics of Time Code); and e) number of units away from 20th position:

a. b.	c.	d.	e.
1 x 19 = kin 19 = 0.19	Blue Rhythmic Storm	19.6	1
2 x 19 = kin 38 = 1.18	White Crystal Mirror	18.12	2
3 x 19 = kin 57 = 2.17	Red Overtone Earth	17.5	3
4 x 19 = kin 76 = 3.16	Yellow Spectral Warrior	16.11	4
5 x 19 = kin 95 = 4.15	Blue Self-existing Eagle	15.4	5
6 x 19 = kin 114 = 5.14	White Planetary Wizard	14.10	6
7 x 19 = kin 133 = 6.13	Red Electric Skywalker	13.3	7
8 x 19 = kin 152 = 7.12	Yellow Solar Human	12.9	8
9 x 19 = kin 171 = 8.11	Blue Lunar Monkey	11.2	9
10 x 19 = kin 190 = 9.10	White Galactic Dog	10.8	10
11 x 19 = kin 209 = 10.9	Red Magnetic Moon	9.1	11
12 x 19 = kin 228 = 11.8	Yellow Resonant Star	8.7	12
13 x 19 = kin 247 = 12.7	Blue Cosmic Hand	7.13	13

What is sufficient is to contemplate the *formal inviolability of the number 19 as a constant (strand) within the Tzolkin matrix* as well as its *invariability of form when written in the vigesimal system.* That is, in the pure 0–19 notational system, any multiple of 19 always adds up to 19 and consists of 7 notational units, e.g., 8.11 (= 8 + 11 = 19) = 8 (= 1 bar 3 dots = 4 units) + 11 (= 2 bars 1 dot = 3 units) = 7 units (= 3 bars 4 dots = 19).

order of (13 x 19) 7 (frequency 7, icon Hand), showing again the intimate relation between 19, 13, 6, 7, and 20, the key integers of the codes of fourth-dimensional time.

19 = 260, THE SIX SURAS THAT ARE MULTIPLES OF 19

In seeking proof of the Law of Time within the Quranic nineteen code, we need cite but a few examples that can demonstrate from within the nineteen code itself the key mathematical components of the Law of Time. In addition to the number 19, we

must look for any of the factors involved in the 13:20 frequency, such as 260, 7, 6- the difference between 19 and 13-and, of course, 13 and 20, or any of the multiples of these integers.

Following the method of Dr. Khalifa, probability analysis of mathematical constituents based on the assumption that certain numbers will be self-verifying, we start our program with the six suras that are multiples of nineteen:

Sura 19	"Maryam"	98 verses
Sura 38	"Saad"	88 verses
Sura 57	"Iron"	29 verses
Sura 76	"The Human"	31 verses
Sura 95	"The Fig"	8 verses
Sura 114	"People"	6 verses
=399, total of sura numbers		=260 verses in six suras that are multiples of nineteen.

= 19.19 vigesimal code

As can be seen, the sum of the six numbers of the suras that are multiples of 19 is exactly 399, or 19 x 21, the maximum factor in the vigesimal 20 x 20 matrix. Expressed in the vigesimal code this number, $399 = 19.19$ [19 (x 20 = 380) +19], the only multiple of 19 in the vigesimal code that is written with two 19s, whose sum is precisely twice nineteen, 38, and is written with fourteen notational symbols rather than seven. This unique number, 19.19 (399), verifies "nineteen is over all," by placing 19 over 19 itself. The unique qualities of this most unique of multiples of 19 also indicates why the Quran consists of exactly six times nineteen suras. Six is the difference between the Quranic 19 and 13, the prime number of the Law of Time.

More amazing than the sum of the six suras that are multiples of 19 being 19.19 is the fact that the sum of the verses of these same six suras is 260. This is incontrovertible evidence for the formulation $19 = 260$, and substantiates the mathematical patterning of the Quran to include the principle factor of the Law of Time, 260 (= 13 x 20). We are certain that Dr. Khalifa added the verses of these same suras and may have been perplexed at the meaning of the resultant number, 260. Of course, Dr. Khalifa did not know that 260 is the sum factor of the two proportions that create the natural timing frequency, 13:20.

It is also interesting that discovery of the 13:20 timing frequency, December 10, 1989, was made at almost the precise moment as Dr. Khalifa had completed the introduction to *The Pinal Testament,* the summation of his research on the Quranic nineteen code, Ramadan 26, 1409 (December, 1989). This points to the mysterious

movement of the Divine Will in establishing the mathematical proof of the Quran. Just as the work of Dr. Khalifa was terminated within a month of his completing the Final Testament, so the Law of Time, which would substantiate and vindicate the Quranic nineteen code, was ordained and propelled into its process of manifestation at exactly the same moment.

Now with the Law of Time the investigation begun by Dr. Khalifa is complete. Just as there are six suras that are multiples of 19 within the Holy Quran, so the key factor of the Law of Time, the number 260, is coded into the sum of the verses of these six suras. The door is opened for entirely new comprehension of the meaning and purpose of the Holy Quran. The Law of Time and the Holy Quran in mutual resonance will establish the proof of the advent and triumph of the Religion of Truth. (9:33,48:28; 61:9)

Most of the foregoing text of Appendix IV is taken from 19 = *260: The Holy Quran and the Law of Time* (1999), an unpublished manuscript by Jose Argiielles.

▼

Notes

Preface

1. Meg Sullivan', "New Age Will Dawn in August, Seers Say. . .," *Wall Street Jou17lal,* June 23, 1987, p. 1. Front-page story on the Harmonic Convergence.

2. For the prophetic tradition of the Chilam Balam, see *The Book of Chilam Balam of Chumayel,* edited and translated by Ralph L. Roys (Norman, Okla.: University of Oklahoma Press, 1967); *The Codex Perez and the Book of Chilam Balam of Mani,* edited and translated by Eugene Craine and Reginald Reindorp (Norman, Okla.: University of Oklahoma Press, 1979); and *El Libro de los Libros de Chilam Balam,* edited and translated by Alfredo Barrera Vasquez and Silvia Rendon (Mexico City: Fondo de Cultura Economica, 1948, 1986). The issue of being a "prophetic messenger" is a touchy one for many people. However, as it is written in the Quran, "In truth we are always sending messengers. . ." (44:5). Messengers, as often as not, are self-revealed and confirmed only by God. In my case, I have been able to trace back the prophetic lineage of the Chilam Balam to Pacal Votan, from whom I have received direct transmission. The method of transmission is similar to that of the *terma* tradition of Tibet. Terma, or "hidden treasure," is left by a sage or prophet to be "discovered" at a precise moment much later in time by one designated to do so. See Tulku Thondup Rinpoche, *Hidden Teachings of Tibet: An Explanation of the Terma Tradition of Tibetan Buddhism* (Boston: Wisdom Publications, 1997).

3. This phrase is used often by Dr. Rashad Khalifa (1935-1990), whose groundbreaking translation and research of the Quran through the aid of the computer led to the discovery of the intricate nineteen-based mathematical code that underlies this unique text. His work is summarized in his translation of the Quran with its numerous appendices, *Quran: The Final Testament* (Fremont: Universal Unity, 1992). My own studies on this topic have resulted in two works: *Pacal TfJtIlund Judgement Day* (portland, Oreg.: Planet Art Network, 1999), and 19 _ 260: *The Holy Quran and the Law of Time,* unpublished, 1999. See also Appendix IV to this book, "The Nineteen Code."

4. See, for example, Samuel P. Huntington's *The Clash of Civilizations and the Remaking of the World Order* (New York: Simon & Schuster, 1996, 1997); Benjamin R. Barber's *Jihad vs. McWorld* (New York: Random House, 1995, 1996); and Yossef Bodansky's *Bin Laden: The Man Who Declared War on America* (New York: Forum, 1999,2001). These writers, of course, all express a pro-globalization perspective.

Chapter 1

1. John ofPatmos, "Book of Revelation," Chapter 18, "The Fall of Babylon," verses 10, 16-17, 19-20, *The Holy Bible, New International Version*(Grand Rapids: Zondervan Bible Publishers, 1989), 1419-20.

2. Jose ArgUelles, *The Call ofPacal Votan: Time is the Fourth Dimension* (Glasgow: Altaea, 1996), 37.

3. Jose ArgUelles, *The Dynamics of Time: 260 Postulates* (Portland, Oreg.: Planet Art Network, 1999),30.

4. Kareng Koshev, "The Great Rainbow Bridge." Altai: unpublished paper, 2001.

Chapter 2

1. 1. Laptev, *The Planet of Reason: A Sociological Study of the Man-Nature Relationship* (Moscow: Progress Publishers, 1973; English translation, 1977),220.

2. V. 1. Vernadsky, "L'etude de la vie et la nouvelle physique" in *Revue generale des sciences,* vol. 41: 695.

3. V. 1. Vernadsky, *The Biosphere*(1926), abridged version (Oracle, Arizona and London: Synergetics Press, 1986), 22.

4. Ibid., 76.

5. Ibid., 77-78, 81.

6. Ibid., 82.

7. Ibid.

8. V. 1. Vernadsky, "Problems in Biogeochemistry II," in *Transactions of the Connecticut Academy of Sciences*(New Haven: Yale University Press, 1944),487-88,498.

9. v.1. Vernadsky, "Problems in Biogeochemistry II," Postulate 18, 511-12.

10. Jose ArgUelles, *The Dynamics of Time: 260 Postulates* (Portland, Oreg.: Pbnet Art Network, 1999), postulates 3.7 and 3.9, 24, 25.

11. V. 1. Vernadsky, "Some Words about the Noosphere" (1944), quoted in Andrey Lapo, *Traces of Bygone Biospheres*(Moscow and London: Mir Publishers and Synergetic Press, 1987),69.

12. Ibid., 71.

13. G. E. Hutchinson, "The Biosphere," *Scientific American,* vol. 53, no. 3 (1970): 223. Quoted in Lapo, *Traces of Bygone Biospheres,*77.

14. P. Duvigneaud, "Noosphere et l'avenir de la vegetation du globe," *Proceedings of the XII International Botanical Congress,Bruxelles,* 1979, 78. Quoted in Lapo, *Traces of Bygone Biospheres,* 76.

15. Tango Snyder, editor in chief, *The Biosphere Catalogue* (London and Forth Worth: Synergetic Press, 1985), 103.

16. V. 1. Vernadsky, "Scientific Thought as a Planetary Phenomenon," quoted in Lapo, *Traces of Bygone Biospheres, 73-74.*

17. Vernadsky, "Problems in Biogeochemistry II," 511.

Chapter 3

1. Maria Maroushkina, "Is a Path Beyond Technology Possible for the Western Culture?" Moscow: unpublished research paper, 2000.

2. James Glanz, "Physics' Big Puzzle Has Big Question: What Is Time?" *New York Times,* June 17, 2001, p. D-1.

3. Ibid.

4. Dogen, "The Time Being," from *Moon in a Dewdrop: Writings of Zen Master Dogen,* edited by Kazuaki Tanahashi (New York: North Point Press, 1985), 76-77.

5. N. A. Kozyrev, "Possibility of Experimental Properties of Time," unpublished paper, 1967, 35. This paper was taken from the Web site www.kozyrev.ru. Virtually unknown in the West, Kozyrev's work has had an especially great influence on the Novosibirsk School of the Russian Academy of Sciences. See, for example, M. M. Lavrentiev, "Physical Theories (Mathematical Models) Adequate to the Reality-A Necessary Condition for Progress of Natural Science of the XXIst century," in *Search for Mathematical Laws of the Universe* (Novosibirsk: Sobolev Insititue of Mathematics, 2001) 29-51, and Irina Eganova, "On the Nature of the Stars: N. A. Kozyrev's Approach and His Results," in *Search for Mathematical Laws of the Universe,* 215-76; and M. M. Lavrentiev and Irina A. Eganova, "N. A. Kozyrev's Method of Astronomical Observations: Information from True Positions of Stars, Stellar Systems, and Planets," *Instantaneous Action at a Distance in Modern Physics: "Pro" and "Contra,"* edited by Andrew E. Chubykalo, Viv Pope, and Roman Smirnov-Rueda. (New York: Nova Science Publishers, 1999).

6. Pierre Teilhard de Chardin, *The Future of Man* (New York: Harper & Row, 1959), 183.

7. Quoted in V. P. Kaznacheev, "The General Pathology: Consciousness and Physics," Novosibirsk: Russian Academy of Medical Science, unpublished paper, 2000, 28.

Chapter 4

1. Christos Koneatis, *The History of the World-A 6,000 Year Chronicle of Time* (London: Christos Koneatis, 1997), no pagination.

2. Jose and Lloydine Argiielles, *Dreamspell: The Journey of Timeship Earth 2013,* (Hong Kong: Interlink Productions, 1991), 35.

3. Ibid., 5-9.

4. Ibid., 14-15, 60, 61.

5. V. A. Ponko, private conversation, Novosibirsk, August 18, 2001.

6. *Epic of Gilgamesh,* translated by Caravan of Dreams Theater, quoted in *The Biosphere Catalogue, 116.*

. Notes

Chapter 5

1. *Webster's Ninth New Collegiate Dictionary,* (Springfield: Merriam Webster, 1987), 1211.

2. See Jose Argiielles, *The Transformative Vision: Reflections on the Nature and History of Human Expression* (Berkeley: Shambhala Publications, 1975),249.

3. Paul Foster Case, *The Tarot: A Key to the WISdom of the Ages* (New York: Macoy, 1947), 158.

4. Jim Hoagland, "The Faithful Come and Wars Erupt Worldwide," *The Oregonian,* December 24,2001, p. C-7.

5. *The Biosphere Catalogue,* 103.

Chapter 6

1. Mahatma Ghandi, "Gandhi on Calendar Reform," *The Journal of Calendar Reform,* vol. I (New York: The World Calendar Association, 1931): 143.

2. All quotes from the Quran used in this text are taken from Rashad Khalifa's translation, *Quran: The Pinal Testament* (Fremont, Calf.: Universal Unity, 1992). All numeration refers to sura number and verse, which are henceforth indicated in parentheses following the quote.

3. Popular quote attributed to Einstein, source unknown.

4. See Broughton Richmond, *Time Measurement and Calendar Construction* (Lei den, Netherlands: J. Brill, 1956), 19-20.

5. Alexander Philip, *Reform of the Calendar* (London: Kegan Paul, Trench, Triibner & Co., Ltd., 1914), 6-8.

6. "Resolution Adopted by the Fourth General Conference on Communications and Transit of the League of Nations," *The Journal of Calendar Reform,* vol I: 162.

7. Argiielles, *The Dynamics of Time,* postulate 6.4,34.

8. *I Ching or Book of Changes,* translated by Richard Wilhelm and Cary F. Baynes (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1967), 189.

9. Richmond, *Time Measurements and Calendar Construction, 70-71.*

10. David Ewing Duncan, *Calendar: Humanity's Epic Struggle to Determine a True and Accurate Year* (New York: Avon Books, 1998),307.

12. Richmond, *Time Measurements and Calendar Construction, 16.*

Chapter 7

1. Pierre Teilhard de Chardin, *The Phenomenon of Man* (New York: Harper & Row, 1955),288

2. For an enlightening look at the subject of *triskaidekaphobia,* see Jonathon Cott, *Thirteen: A Journey into the Number* (New York: Doubleday, 1996).

Chapter 8

1. Star Roots, 13 *Moon Natural Time Journal* (Manson's Landing, British Columbia: 2001), no pagination.

2. Ben 4 and Ben 5, *13 Moon Natural Time Calendar, Ancient Science for the Art of Now* (Newport, Oreg.: Skytime, 2001), no pagination.

3. Star Roots, *13 Moon Natural Ttme Journal,* no pagination.

4. "Golden Age of Miracles and Heaven on Earth," *National Examiner,* November 29, 1988, p. 17.

5. *National GeographicMagazine,* publicity blurb, 2001.

6. "Tracking the Hijackers," *The Oregonian,* October 4, 2001, p. A-12. See also Appendix Iv, "The Nineteen Code."

7. Muhammad Husayn Haykal, "Islamic Civilization as Depicted in the Qur'an," in *The Life of Muhammad* (Indianapolis: American Trust Publications, 1993), 518.

8. Ibid., 518-19.

Chapter 9

1. See, for instance, Dan Oldenburg in the *Washington Post's* full-page article, "The Harmonic Convergence Revisited," May 4, 1990, p. D-5.

2. *Nuestra Civilizacion Frente a la Reforma del Calendario* (Our Civilization Confronted with Calendar Reform) (Buenos Aires: Casa Editora Sudamericana, 1944), 6.

3. F. H. Colson, *The Week: An Essay on the Origin and Development of the Seven-Day Cycle* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1926), 2.

4. Quoted in Jose Argiielles, *Charles Henry and the Formation of a Psychophysical Aesthetic* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1972), 128.

Appendix I

1. *San Jose Mercury News,* quoted on book cover of David Ewing Duncan's *Calendar, 1998.*

2. Duncan, *Calendar,* 289.

3. Philip, *Reform of the Calendar,* 10 1-2.

Appendix II

1. Charles Muses, *Destiny and Control in Human Systems: Studies in the Interactive Connectedness of Time (Chronotopology)* (Boston- Dordrecht- Lancaster: Kluwer-Nijhoff Publishing, 1984), 20-21.

Appendix IV

1. Rashad Khalifa, *Quran: The Final Testament,* (Fremont, Calif.: Universal Unity, 1992), 375. All further quotes from the Quran and from Rashad Khalifa are from this same work, which in addition to containing the complete Quran in translation also includes thirty-eight Appendices summarizing Dr. Khalifa's research.

2. Ibid., 375.

3. Ibid., 123.

4. Ibid., 375.

Glossary

THIS GLOSSARY IS constructed to aid the reader in developing a more systematic and technical comprehension of the Biosphere and the Law of Time. Though by no means exhaustive, it is hoped that the terminology used in the text is herein defined in a manner appropriate to cultivating a noospheric point of view.

13:20 timing frequency: Fourth-dimensional timing frequency mathematically expressed as the ratio constant .13:20; universal frequency of synchronization by which the universe is maintained in synchronic order; basis of Law of Time; codified as 260-unit 13:20 matrix of Harmonic Module, coordinates Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar with synchronic order.

12:60.timing frequency: Artificial, purely third-dimensional timing frequency based on combination of irregular twelve-month calendar and mechanistic sixty-minute hour, adoption of which results in unconscious program within the human mental order, causing the species to deviate altogether from the natural biospheric order, resulting in the technosphere.

astronomical time: Measure of time in third-dimensional physical space without regard to intrinsic harmonics of the synchronic order, usually interpreted as duration and, based solely on matter that is in constant state of entropy, results in standards of measure characterized by infinitesimal.slippages of time and consequent fractional number sequences in need of periodic correction.

baktun: Fifth order of Mayan vigesimal number sequence; in time reckoning equals 144,000 kin (days), or 394.52 years; thirteen per great cycle, measure of human historical era or "great cycle": 3113 B.C.-A.D.2012.

biogenic migration of atoms: Biospheric principle by which evolution over time within finite quantity of living matter (biomass) is accounted for by changes of atomic.,cellular-

molecular state and condition; occurring uniformly at periodic transitions accounts for major evolutionary mutations.

biogeochemical, biogeochemical combustion: Term used by V. 1. Vernadsky to refer to biospheric dynamic as whole system order unifyIDg living (bio) and inert (geochemical) matter in a single process; biogeochemical combustion occurs when exponential curve of acceleration of biogenic migration of atoms becomes absolutely vertical, precipitating advent of noosphere.

biomass, biomass constant: Sum quantity of living matter, which, according to Vernadsky, has remained relatively stable since the origin of life on Earth; as a constant, maintained by synchronic timing factor mathematically described as an annual orbital ratio of $73(5) = 365$ days per solar orbit of Earth.

biosphere: Sphere or mantle oflife and its geochemical support system distributed throughout Earth's ocean-land surface

biosphere-noosphere transition: Description of the transformation of the general biospheric condition due to accelerated excitation of biogenic migration of atoms creating release of free energy and consequent biospheric destabilization, characterized as biogeochemical combustion, whose resolution is emergence of new evolutionary order, the noosphere; change from historical technosphere to post-historic, post-technological phase.

Bolontiku: Nine Lords of Time; in Mayan cosmology, nocturnal rulers of the underworld or *inframundo;* guardians of the passage of death and resurrection; keepers of time and the knowledge of time as noospherically registered in Earth's orbit.

calendar: Derived from the Latin *calends,* or account book, a day for making payments; generic word used to define systems of timekeeping based on measure of Earth's orbit around the sun, often utilizing synodic measure of the moon as a means of calculating.

Chilam Balam: "Jaguar priest," name of Mayan prophet *(ah bobat)* who lived just before the time of conquest, which he accurately predicted; name given to lineage of Mayan prophets extending from the end of tenth baktun (circa A.D. 830) up until the nineteenth century; name given to series of post-conquest texts in which the various categories of prophecies of this lineage are recorded.

chronomancy, geochronomancy: "Divination by time"; the science and art of fourth- dimensional time considered as a whole system where science is knowledge and art is practice; oracular method of reading the synchronic order; description of incipient "Earth time science" incorporating principles of whole Earth geomancy into time structures of the synchronic order.

chronosphere: Sphere of time that activates noosphere; fourth-dimensional field created by the planet holon in resonance with the rotation of the third-dimensional planet body; coded as movement of four chromatics (biopsychic field) across the planet holon, stitching together gravitational fields (five Earth families) and electromagnetic fields (four color families).

chronotopology: Term coined by Charles Muses to define any geography of time and consisting of an event point of meaning that creates a root meaning from which time-formed, -blossomed, or -radiated meanings emerge above a horizon of meaning.

Day Out of Time: The 365th day of the Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar, no day of the week or month at all (52 x 7 day weeks = 13 moons times 28 days = 364); occurs on Gregorian correlate date July 25, and precedes Thirteen Moon "New Year's" or synchronization date, correlated to July 26.

Dreamspell: Any agreed-on consensus reality; a collective mind-set defining a noospheric epoch, such as "Dreamspell of history"; term given to proofs and tools demonstrating radial and fractal principles of fourth-dimensional mathematics; cosmo-mythic structure of Earth history and its future, otherwise known as *Dreamspell: The Journey of Timeship Earth 2013*.

free energy: Release into biosphere of gases (such as carbon monoxide) and other chemical by-products of industrialization that accelerate biogenic migration of atoms, resulting in biogeochemical combustion; in noosphere refers to release of spectral plasmic-atmospheric phenomena through human telepathic interaction with the electromagnetic field.

fourth dimension: Dimension of time greater than and containing three dimensions of space that it informs and governs.

galactic signature: Combination of one of thirteen galactic tones and twenty solar seals that constitute the harmonic module and that code any given day of the third-dimensional Thirteen Moon calendar.

geocosmic: Holonomic perception expressing unification of Earth whole with the cosmic order.

Gregorian (Julian) calendar: Current world standard calendar consisting of twelve irregularly numbered and obscurely named months coordinated by the 7-day week and intercalary leap year system establishing 28-year cycles; created by the reform of Pope Gregory XIII (1572-1583) in 1582, which "corrected" the Julian calendar (established by Julius Caesar, 45-44 B.C.)by lopping off ten days and refining the intercalary system so that only centuries that are multiples of four are leap years; supreme example of astronomical time measure; principle macro-organizing principle establishing 12:60 artificial timing frequency.

Hannonic Module: 260-unit mathematical matrix of 13:20 frequency, inclusive of a 52-unit binary triplet configuration or set of galactic activation portals; sometimes referred to as Tzolkin, 260-kin sacred count of the Maya; basis of fourth-dimensional vigesimal mathematics of time; coordinated with third-dimensional calendar of Thirteen Moons, establishes basis of 260 galactic signatures.

heliosphere: Sun and its system of planets considered as a whole organism; also known as heliocosm.

holonomics: Of or pertaining to the law governing whole systems.

holonomic consistency and reciprocity: Law by which any whole principle of reality is capable of evoking a like response or reflecting a fractal order at whatever level or through whatever structure.

holon: Any organic whole unit, fractally replicable; basis ofholonomics, law governing whole systems.

human holon: Fourth-dimensional structure of the human being conforming to the 13:20 frequency (twenty digits, thirteen main articulations).

Hunab Ku: "One giver of movement and measure"; in Mayan cosmology, can refer to God as the Supreme Creator.

Inevitable Event: Law of Time definition of the point in synchronic order when the artificial time generated curves of machine, human population, and money converge exponentially in one dramatic, prophecy-fulfilling moment, marking the conclusion of technospheric expansion; name given to the events of September 11, 2001 (9-11), epitomized by the col~ lapse of World Trade Center Twin Towers (Fall of Babylon).

Julian Count: Established by Thomas Scaliger, 1583, the year after Gregorian calendar "reform," to establish a linear count of days beginning January 1, 4714 B.C., some 1,600 years prior to commencement of thirteen baktun Long Count of the Maya; official modern scientific count, basis of linear time paradigm.

katun: Fourth order of vigesimal mathematics = 8,000 kin; in Mayan time count, where the second order vinal is 18 and not 20, a katun = 7200 kin, or 19.7 solar years; twenty katuns equal one baktun of 144,000 kin; 260 katuns per thirteen baktun cycle.

kin: In fourth-dimensional mathematics the base unit of measure, possessing fractal properties; one day and night or turn of Earth on its axis; any human being so designated by assuming the galactic signature of the date of birth.

Law of Time: T(E) =Art, Energy factored by Time equals Art, where T (time) is the fourth-dimensional universal synchronization frequency constant 13:20, E (energy) refers to any phenomenal manifestation, and Art to the fact that the synchronizing frequency of time harmonizes everything into a natural condition of beauty.

Long Count: Mayan count of days (kin) measured by thirteen baktuns of 144,000 days each for a total of 1,872,000 kin, the measure of history from Juliani Gregorian correlates August 13, 3113 B.C. to December 21, 2012; still maintained through use of Tzolkin by Quiche Maya, Guatemala.

lunar calendar: System of time measurement using synodical measure of the moon-from new moon to new moon, approximately 29.5 days; twelve lunar months equaling a total of 354 days, eleven days short of the measure of solar orbit; used by many of the Old World civilizations; with the exception of Islamic lunar calendar, most lunar calendars intercalate a thirteenth moon, seven per every nineteen years.

machine: Capacity for the human to externalize its internal processes as well as motor functions into different means of mechanical reproduction, the sum possibilities of which establish a technological complex requiring constant maintenance, thus subordinating human consciousness to its level; the ultimate manifestation of the 12:60 timing frequency; any industrially produced tool believed to advance the level of human comfort and accomplishment.

noosphere: Earth's mental envelope or field, discontinuous with and above the biosphere; unconscious until the discovery and application of the Law of Time; activated by registration of the human biomass in correct 13:20 timing frequency via universal adoption of Thirteen

Moon calendar; description of transformed state of biosphere, coincident with the end of history; condition of universal telepathy subsequent to collapse of technosphere and application of Law of Time; functions in tandem with programs from Earth's octahedral core.

noospheric chip: Description of human operating in noosphere, holonomically resonant with intrinsic 13:20 codes of synchronic order, capable of interacting with the psi bank to participate in the creation of Earth's rainbow brain.

Noospheric Earth Time (NET): Time measure based on Earth in its orbit in relation to the sun and moon in heliospheric space, rather than from the perspective of human (astronomical time); base unit of measure is one rotation of Earth on its axis or one kin (one night and day), which establishes one NET minute; twenty-eight NET minutes per Moon, or one NET hour, 365 NET minutes, or Thirteen NET Hours plus one NET minute per solar orbit; takes into account that for any NET minute axial magnetic bipolarity of Earth is a changing dynamic reaching two peak points called solstices and two stable points called equinoxes; this four-part division is holonomically registered daily in two peak points, midnight (where day begins and ends) and noon, and two stable points, sunrise and sunset.

occult quartet: Demonstration of radial mathematics of Harmonic Module where the tones of any four kin radially equidistant from each other always equal 28; or the tones of any two kin radially opposite always equal 14.

octahedral core: Iron crystal structure at center of Earth; plasmic storage zone in resonance with the noosphere; in 7:7::7:7, telepathically coordinated by four time atoms (= one master time molecule).

omega point: In the work of Pierre Teilhard de Chardin, defines the climactic convergent point (harmonic convergence) of human evolution as the emergence of the hyper-personal; defined by the Law of Time as point of full superconscious establishment of universal telepathy as the norm of the human mental condition; dawn of omega point: winter-northern-summer-southern solstice, 2012, completion of omega point dawn, Yellow Galactic Seed (July 26,2013), otherwise known as Dreamspell of galactic culture.

oracle: For anyone of 260 kin of the Harmonic Module, a cruciform five-part structure demonstrating a uniform set of mathematical relationships in relation to the (0-19) code number of the daily solar seal (destiny kin) informing any day of the Thirteen *Moonl2* 8-Day calendar; consists of center, code number of destiny kin; right analog kin-always 19 when added to the number of destiny kin; left, antipode kin-always a difference of 10 from the destiny kin; below, occult kin-when added to destiny kin always equals 21; and above, guide, always the same color as destiny kin.

Oxlahuntiku: The Thirteen Lords of Time that govern the power of the cosmic order of time that is based on circulatory power of prime number 13 (as opposed to 12, which is static and non-circulatory); coded as thirteen 28-day moons that govern terrestrial solar orbit; basis of prophecy cycle of Quetzalcoatl, Thirteen Heavens (Oxlahuntiku) and Nine Hells (Bolontiku); in Telektonon prophecy, the thirteen-year cycle-2 000-2 013-in which the first four years, 2000-2004, establish self-existing power of time, and last nine years, 2004-2013 are coded by the Bolontiku, the Nine Lords of Time.

Pacal Votan: Mayan prophet (A.D. 603--683), chief technician of Mayan synchronic time science; eleventh ruler of the dynasty of Palenque (Nah Chan), Chiapas, Mexico; assumed power in A.D. 615, but key rulership occurred in critical 52-year cycle, 631-683 (seventy-third such cycle since commencement of thirteen baktun count); best known for the carved sarcophagus lid of his elaborately concealed tomb discovered in 1952, 1,260 years after its dedication in A.D. 692, which was also 1,320 years before the closing of the cycle, 2012.

Pax Cultura, Pax Biospherica: Principle of new human social order following establishment of Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar and inaugurating the advent of the noosphere (2004) in which nation-state is replaced by biospheric regionalism governed by a Planetary Biospheric Assembly; due to perfect harmony of new world standard calendar of thirteen moons/28 days, harmony, art, and aesthetic values elevate culture as the new operating norm of the human reintegrated within the biosphere, hence *Pax Cultura, Pax Biospherica.*

planet holon: Twenty-part icosahedral noospheric matrix superimposed on Earth's surface; corresponding to 0-19 code of twenty solar seals, creates three orders analogous to three planetary fields of resonance; gravitational field-horizontal order of five Earth families of four seals each; electromagnetic field-four diagonal bands, from lower left to upper right, of the four color families (red, white, blue, yellow) of five seals each; and biopsychic field-the four chromatics of five seals each moving diagonally from upper left to lower right, which coordinate the daily sequence of the motion of the chronosphere.

psi bank: Regulating mechanism of the noosphere consisting of four bipolar plates, each plate in mirror symmetry containing 520 (260 x 2) psi chrono units, 2,080 in all, which are the complete registrations of the universal fourth-dimensional 13:20 timing frequency governing all of the various evolutionary stages of the terrestrial biogeocosm; engine of the chronosphere, located between the two radiation belts 2,000 and 11,000 miles above Earth's surface.

psi chrono unit: Time-bearing information unit; base unit of the psi bank; codes and contains all information for anyone of the 260 galactic signatures of the 13:20 matrix or Harmonic Module; psycho activated through coordination with Thirteen Moon/Telektonon known as Rinri Project.

Psychozoic Era: Term coined by V. 1. Vernadsky defining the next geological era; meaning the era of the spiritualization of life, it is coincident with the noosphere in its full emergence after the omega point has been reached, 2012-2013.

Quetzalcoatl: Mexican prophet (A.D. 947-999) who left the legacy of prophecy of Thirteen Heavens and Nine Hells, basis of Harmonic Convergence (1987) and commencement of the "Time of Prophecy," 1987-2013.

Quran, Holy Quran: Literally "recitation;" last revelation and moral-spiritual criterion for historic humanity; received over a twenty-three-year period by the Prophet Muhammad (A.D. 570-632); proven by Dr. Rashad Khalifa (1935-1990) to be a radically nonlinear text rigorously constructed of a nineteen-based mathematical code.

radion, radial plasmas: Telepathic fluid or lubricant released through telepathic interaction with the seven primary plasmas, or electrically charged particles, hence radial plasmas; the

names of the seven plasmas replace the names of the week in the Thirteen Moon/2 8-Day calendar; activated in the 7:7::7:7 Telektonon Revelation practice.

radiosonics: Name given to the new science based on synchronicity rather than causality and in which, as a consequence, synaesthetic experiences and syntropic values are normalized.

rainbow brain: Description of activated noosphere, where human telepathic interaction with the electromagnetic field triggers the release of the circumpolar rainbow bridge-Earth's day-night alternator system.

Rinri Project: Law of time practice for coordinating the opening of the psi bank, psi chrono unit per psi chrono unit, on a daily basis over a four-year cycle by means of the Thirteen MoontTelektonon.

synchronic order: Order of fourth-dimensional time, in contrast to third-dimensional astronomical time, that synchronizes all aspects of third-dimensional physical plane reality including its timekeeping systems; entirely new domain of human mental-spiritual experience coincident with the dawning of noosphere; characterized by absolute harmonic perfection, described by vigesimal 0-19 code, as distinct from decimal, hex, or duodecimal mathematics that govern third-dimensional timing codes.

synchronometer: Measure of synchronization or synchronicity; precise Law of Time definition of means and purpose of what is generically referred to as the "calendar."

technosphere: Global sphere of technology; artificial stage between biosphere and noosphere, representing the climax-biogechemical combustion-of acceleration of biogenic migration of atoms precipitating biospheric crisis as a prelude to the advent of noosphere; characterized by exponential curves of human population, machine, and money at expense of biospheric integrity and stability; defined as the specific fifty-six-year cycle (two Gregorian 28-year cycles) 1945-2001, in which war and terrorism are the governing features; complete manifestation of the 12:60 order of time; concluded on September **11,2001,** the Inevitable Event.

Telektonon: "Earth Spirit Speaking Tube," the name of the psychoduct leading from the tomb of Pacal Votan beneath the Temple of the Inscriptions to the temple floor atop the pyramid, the discovery of which, in 1949, led to the excavation and revelation of the long-concealed tomb in 1952; name given to the prophecy ofPacal Votan, decoded in 1993-1994, prophesying the Thirteen Moon/2 8-Day calendar as the only means to keep the human race from destroying the biosphere and itself; definition of the fourth-dimensional structure of the heliosphere in which consciousness is a function of the planetary orbits; basis of a board "game" coded to synchronic order via Thirteen Moon calendar for the awakening of telepathy; basis of the Cube of the Law, days 7-22, containing numerous principles of the Law of Time as a daily practice; basis of other practices for establishing synchronic order as principles of a new consciousness, including *20 Tablets of the Law of Time* and the 7:7::7:7.

third dimension: Space; physical plane of reality coordinated and contained by time, fourth-dimensional order of reality.

Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar: Pragmatic application of the Law of Time, perpetual harmonic perfection of which is intended to correct for disorder of human consciousness resulting from adherence to irregular, astronomical timing standards and mechanistic timing devices; coordinated with Harmonic Module and Telektonon establishes means for conscious human participation in synchronic order; 28-day measure based on female menstrual cycle, also corresponds to apsidal measure of moon from the point at which the polar axis is tipped farthest from Earth; prevalent in pre-history, all but eliminated by historical consciousness that made 13 taboo; perfect vehicle for establishing noosphere as daily consciousness in post-technospheric post-history.

time: Fourth dimension; universal factor coordinating space to manifest synchronically; traveling faster than speed of light, accounts for instantaneity of information transmission (telepathy) from distant points; expressed as formulation which states that the velocity of time is instantaneously infinite; fourth-dimensional structures that are radial and fractal in nature, third-dimensional cycles being manifestations thereof; expressed as $T(E) = Art$, accounts for universal harmony of the cosmos.

tun: Third positional order of vigesimal mathematics where one unit $= 400$ kin; in Mayan time count, because of second positional order, vinal, being 18 instead of 20, one tun $= 360$ kin; basis of measure of katuns and baktuns in Long Count, where 5,200 tuns $= 260$ katuns $= 13$ baktuns, or 5,125 solar years.

Tzolkin: "Sacred Count," 260-day calendar of the Maya, basis of Mayan time knowledge and the Long Count; temporal manifestation of Harmonic Module or universal 13:20 timing matrix.

UR: "Universal Religion," "Universal Recollection;" description of human spirituality in the noosphere or Psychozoic Era.

vigesimal, 0-19 code: Twenty-count based mathematics utilizing zero for positional orders that advance in exponential binary fashion; also known as 0-19 dot-bar code notational system, where dots equal single units, bars equal five units, plus positional zero; basis of mathematics of fourth-dimensional order of time, distinct from mathematical systems of third-dimensional space.

Wave Harmonic of history: Fourth-dimensional description of thirteen baktun cycle (3113 B.C.-A.D. 2012) identified precisely with 260-unit Harmonic Module, where each of thirteen baktuns contains twenty katuns (13 x 20); basis of creating synchronic order out of entropic disorder of third-dimensional historical time.

wavespell: Thirteen-unit cosmological form-constant for coordinating fourth-dimensional timing cycles; consists of two gates, Magnetic first position and Cosmic thirteenth position; two towers, fifth and ninth positions; and three sets of chambers, nine chambers in all; when coordinating Thirteen Moon/28-Day calendar, known as Planetary Service Wavespell.

Wizard's Count: Name of count to establish synchronic order as manifestation of the Law of Time in order to transit from 12:60 technosphere to 13:20 noosphere; based on

prophetically modified year-bearer count of the Chilam Balam tradition; correlated by the Dreamspell to July 26, 1987, White Galactic Wizard, every four years there are four year bearers: Yellow Seed, Red Moon, White Wizard, and Blue Storm (one four-year Seed-Storm Year bundle) that, combined with thirteen galactic tones creates 52-year solar-galactic cycle, or in NET time, one Earth Year, also known as a Wizard's Year.

▼

Bibliography

I. About the Biosphere, Technosphere, and Noosphere

Argiielles, Jose: *EJ:rh Ascending: An Illustrated Treatise on the Law Governing Whole Systems.* B~.~ldh: Shambhala Publications, 1984. Second and third editions, Santa Fe: Bear & Co., 1988 and 1996.

-. "Peace is the Culture of the Biosphere: Statement and Reflections." Brightwood, Oregon: Foundation for the Law of Time, unpublished paper, 1996.

Argiielles, Jose and Lloydine Argiielles. *A Complete Guide to the First Planetary Congress of Biospheric Rights.* Portland, Oreg.: Planet Art Network, 1996, 2002.

-. *The World Thirteen Moon Calendar Change Peace Plan.* Portland: Planet Art Network. 1999.

Coats, Callum. *Living Energies: An Exposition of Concepts Related to the Theories of Viktor Schauberger.* Bath, England: Gateway Books, 1996.

"Global Consciousness Project: Registering Coherence and Resonance in the World," http://noosphere. princeton.edu.com.

Kaznacheev, V. P. "The General Pathology: Consciousness and Physics." Novosibirsk: Russian Academy of Medical Science, 2000.

Lapo, Andrey V. *Traces of Bygone Biospheres.* Moscow and London: Mir Publishers and Synergetic Press, 1987.

Laptev, 1. *The Planet of Reason: A Sociological Study of Man-Nature Relationship.* Moscow: Progress Publishers, 1973. English Translation, 1977.

Ponyko, V. A. *Vednie V Systemy "Ekoprognos": Metodologiya Prognosirovaniya Anomalii Ekosperi* (Ecoprognosis: Methodology for Making Prognosis of Anomolous Phenomena in the Ecosphere). Moscow: Institute Ustoychivogo Rasveteya, 2000.

Smil, Vaclav. *Energies: An Illustrated Guide to the Biosphere and Civilization.* Cambridge, Mass. and London: MIT Press, 1999.

Snyder, Tango, editor in chief, and the Institute of Ecotechnics. *The Biosphere Catalogue.* London and Forth Worth: Synergetic Press, 1985.

Teilhard de Chardin, Pierre. *The Future of Man.* New York: Harper & Row, 1964.

-. *The Phenomenon of Man.* New York: Harper & Row, 1959.

Vernadsky, V. 1. *The Biosphere.* Abridged version based on the French edition of 1929. Oracle, Arizona and London: Synergetic Press, 1986.

-. *The Biosphere: Complete Annotated Edition.* Revised and annotated by Mark A. S. McMenamin and Far West Institute. New York: Copernicus/Springer Verlag, 1998.

-. "Problems in Biogeochemistry 11." In *Transactions of the Connecticut Academy of Sciences,* vol. 35 (1944): 483-517.

II. About the Law and Science of Time

Acheles, Elisabeth. *Of Time and the Calendar.* New York: Hermitage House, 1955.

-. *The World Calendar Reform Since 1930.* New York: G. P. Putnam's Sons, 1937.

Alcala, Luis Alvarez. *El Calendario Azteca.* Edited by B. Costa-Amico Mexico City: 1970.

Argiielles, Jose. "Calendar Reform and the Future of Civilization: Preparatory Reflections for the World Summit on Peace and Time," San Jose, Costa Rica: University for Peace, unpublished paper, 1999.

-. *The Call of Pacal Votan: Time is the Fourth Dimension.* Glasgow: Altea, 1996.

-. "Campaign for the New Time: Science Demonstrates a New Time of Peace on Earth," Brightwood, Oregon: Foundation for the Law of Time, unpublished position paper, 2000.

-. *Earth Ascending: An Illustrated Treatise on the Law Governing Whole Systems.* Santa Fe: Bear & Co, 1984, 1988, 1996

-. *The Dynamics of Time: 260 Postulates.* Portland, Oreg.: Planet Art Network, 1999.

-. *The Mayan Factor: Path Beyond Technology.* Santa Fe: Bear & Co., 1987. Second edition, 1996.

Argiielles, Jose and Lloydine Argiielles. *Discovering the New Time.* Tokyo: Fuunsha, 1997.

-. *Thirteen Moons in Motion.* Portland, Oreg.: Planet Art Network, 1999.

Barbour, Julian. *The End of Time: The Next Revolution in Physics.* Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1999.

Ben 4 and Ben 5. 13 *Moon Natural Time Calendar: Ancient Science for the Art of Now.* Newport, Oreg.: Skytime, 2001.

Colson, F. H. *The Week: An Essay on the Origin and Development of the Seven-Day Cycle.* Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1926.

Cott, Jonathon. *Thirteen: A Journey into the Number.* New York: Doubleday, 1996.

Coveney, Peter and Richard Highfield. *The Arrow of Time: A Voyage Through Science to Solve Time's Greatest Mystery.* New York: Fawcett-Columbine, 1990.

Davies, Paul. *About TIme: Einstein's Unfinished Revolution.* New York: Simon & Schuster, 1995.

Deutsch, David. *The Fabric of Reality.* London: Penguin Books, 1997.

Dogen. "The Time-Being," from *Moon in a Dewdrop: Writings of Zen Master Dogen.* Edited by Kazuaki Tanahashi, New York: North Point Press, 1985. 76-83.

Duncan, David Ewing. *Calendar: Humanity's Epic Struggle to Determine a True and Accurate Year.* New York: Avonbooks, 1998.

Dunne, J. w. *An Experiment with Time.* Charlottesville, Va.: Hampton Roads, 2001.

Eganova, Irina. "On the Nature of the Stars: N. A. Kozyrev's Approach and His Results." In *Search for Mathematical Laws of the Universe,* edited by M. M. Lavrentiev, 215-276. Novosibirsk: Sobolev Institute of Mathematics, 2001.

Fraser, J. T. *Time, the Familiar Stranger.* Redmond, Wash.: Tempus-Microsoft, 1987.

Fraser, J. T., ed. *The Voices of Time: A Cooperative Survey of Man's Views of Time as Expressed by the Sciences and the Humanities.* New York: George Brazilier, 1966.

Heath, Robin. *Sun, Moon & Earth.* Powys, Wales: Wooden Books, 1999.

International Society for the Study of Time (ISSO), www.studyoftime.org/index.html.

The Journal of Calendar Reform, vols. I and II. New York: The World Calendar Association, 1931,1932.

Koneatis, Christos. *The History of the World-A 6,000 Year Chronicle of Time.* London: Christos Koneatis, 1997.

Koshev, Kareng. "The Great Rainbow Bridge," Altai: unpublished paper, 2001.

Kozyrev, N. A. "Possibility of Experimental Study of Properties of Time," Novosibirsk: Russian Academy of Sciences, unpublished paper, September, 1967.

-. www.kozyrev.ru.

Landes, David S. *Revolution in Time: Clocks and the Making of the Modern World.* Cambridge, Mass.: Belknap Press, 1983.

Lavrentiev, M. M. "Interpretation of Astronomical Data Connected with N. A. Kozyrev's Discovery." In *Memoranda of Differential Equations of Mathematical Physics,* vol. 12, (1997): 135-41.

-. "Physical Theories (Mathematical Models) Adequate to the Reality: A Necessary Condition for Progress of Natural Science of the XXIst Century." In *Search for Mathematical Laws of the Universe,* 29-51. Novosibirsk: Sobolev Institute of Mathematics, 2001.

Lavrentiev, M. M., and Irina A. Eganova. "N. A. Kozyrev's Method of Astronomical Observations: Information from True Positions of Stars, Stellar Systems, and Planets." In *Instantaneous Action at a Distance in Modern Physics: "Pro" and "Contra,"* edited by Andrew E. Chubykalo, Viv Pope, and Roman Smirnov-Rueda. New York: Nova Science Publishers, 1999.

Malmstrom, Vincent H. *Cycles of the Sun, Mysteries of the Moon: The Calendar in Mesoamerican Civilization.* Austin: University of Texas Press, 1997.

Man and Time: Papers from the Eranos Yearbook 3. Bollingen Series XXX. Edited by Joseph Campbell. New York: Pantheon Books, 1957.

Maroushkina, Maria. "Is a Path Beyond Technology Possible for Western Culture?" Moscow: unpublished paper, 2000.

Muses, Charles. *Destiny and Control in Human Systems: Studies in the Interactive Connectedness of Time (Chronotopology).* Boston- Dordrecht -Lancaster: Kluwer- Nijhoff Publishing, 1984.

Nuestra Civilizacion Frente a la Reforma del Calendario (Our Civilization Confronted with Calendar Reform). Buenos Aires: Casa Editora Sudamericana, 1944.

Penrose, Roger. *Shadows of the Mind: A Search for the Missing Science of Consciousness.* Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1994.

Philip, Alexander. *The Reform of the Calendar.* London: Kegan Paul, 1914.

Philosophy of Time. www.dna2z.com/projects/time.html.

Price, Huw. *Time's Arrow and Archimedes Point.* Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1996.

Reference Library Books. *The World of Time and Timepieces.* London: B. P. C. Publishing, 1972.

Richmond, Broughton. *Time Measurement and Calendar Construction.* Leiden: J. Brill, 1956.

Seabury, Rev. Samuel. *The Theory and Use of the Church Calendar in the Measurement and Distribution of Time.* New York: Pott, Young & Co., 1872.

Spinden, HerbertJ. *Maya Dates and What They Reveal.* Brooklyn: Museum of the Brooklyn Institute of Arts and Sciences, 1930.

Star Roots. 13 *Moon Natural Time Journal.* Manson's Landing, British Columbia, 2001.

The Study of Time: Proceedings of the First Conference of the International Society for the Study of Time, Oberwolfach, Black Forest, West Germany. Edited by J. T. Fraser,. F. C. Haber and G. H. Miiller. Berlin-Heidelberg-New York: Springer Verlag, 1972.

The Study of Time II: Proceedings of the Second Conference of the International Society for the Study of Time, Lake Yamanaka, Japan. Edited by J. T. Fraser, F. C. Haber and G. H. Miiller. Berlin-Heidelberg-New York: Springer Verlag, 1975.

Vanderkam,James C. *Calendars in the Dead Sea Scrolls: Measuring Time.* London and New York: Routledge, 1998.

Votan, Valum. *Principia Mathematica of the Fourth Dimension: Introduction and Annotated Bibliography.* Portland, Oreg.: Planet Art Network, 1999.

Whitrow, G. J. *The Natural Philosophy of Time.* New York: Clarendon Press, 1980.

Wolf, Fred Allen. *Parallel Universes: The Search for Other Worlds.* New York: Touchstone, 1988.

III.About the Inevitable Event: Prophecy, History, and Politics

Ahmad, Mirza Ghulam of Qadian. *The Philosophyof the Teachingsof Islam.* London: London Mosque, 1979.

America at War. New York: Profiles Presents, 2001.

Argiielles, Jose. *Pacal Votan and Judgement Day.*Portland, Oreg.: Planet Art Network, 1999.

Barber, Benjamin R. *Jihad vs. McWorld.* New York: Random House, 1995, 1996.

Bodansky, Yossef. *Bin Laden: The Man Who Declared War on America.* New York: Forum, 1999,2001.

The Book of Chilam Balam of Chumayel. Edited and translated by Ralph L. Roys. Norman, Okla.: University of Oklahoma Press, 1967.

Case, Paul Foster. *The Tarot: A Key to the Wisdom of the Ages.* New York: Macoy, 1947.

The Codex Perez and the Book of Chilam Balam of Mani. Edited and translated by Eugene Craine and Reginald Reindorp. Norman, Okla.: University of Oklahoma Press, 1979.

"Golden Age of Miracles and Heaven on Earth," *National Examiner,* November 29, 1988, p. 17.

Haykal, Muhammad Husayn. "Islamic Civilization as Depicted in the Qur'an." In *Lift of Muhammad.* Translated from the 8th edition by Isma'il Ragi A. al-Faruqi, 517-55. Indianapolis: American Trust, 1993.

Hoagland, Jim. "The Faithful Come and Wars Erupt Worldwide," *The Oregonian,* December 24, 2001, p. C-7.

Huntington, Samuel P. *The Clash of Civilizations and the Remaking of the World Order.* New York: Simon & Schuster, 1996, 1997.

I Ching or Book of Changes. Translated by Richard Wilhelm and Cary F. Baynes. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1967.

Izquierdo, Ana Luisa. *Alberto Ruz Lhuillier Frente al Pasado de los Mayas.* Mexico City: Secretaria de Educacion Publica, 1987.

Jenkins, John Major. *Maya Cosmogenesis 2012: The True Meaning of the Maya Calendar End-Date.* Santa Fe: Bear & Co., 1998.

John of Patmos, "Book of Revelation," Chapter 18, "The Fall of Babylon." *The Holy Bible, New International Version.* Grand Rapids: Zondervan Bible Publishers, 1989.

Katchongva, Dan. *From the Beginnings of Lift to the Day of Purification: Teachings, History & Prophecies of the Hopi People.* Los Angeles: Committee for Traditional Indian Land and Life, 1972.

Khalifa, Rashad. *Quran: The Final Testament.* Fremont, Calif.: Universal Unity, 1992.

Kyipchakoba, P. v., ed. *Altai U Drevnue Maya* (Altai and the Ancient Maya). Gorno-Altaiski, 2001.

Landa, Fray Diego de. *Yucatan Before and After the Conquest.* Translated by William Gates. New York: Dover, 1978.

El Libro de los Libros de Chilam Balam. Edited and translated by Alfredo Barrera Vasquez and Silvia Rendon. Mexico: Fondo de Cultura Economica, 1948, 1986.

Mahmud, Sayyid Fayyaz. *A Short History of Islam.* Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1960.

Mano, Galactica Azul. "La Profecia Maya y las Torres Gemeles" (Mayan Prophecy and the Twin Towers). Manzaneles, Colombia: unpublished research paper, October, 2001.

Oldenburg, Dan. "The Harmonic Convergence Revisited," *Washington Post,* May 4, 1990, p. D-5.

The Roerich Pact and the Banner of Peace. New York: The Roerich Pact and Banner of Peace Committee, 1947.

Ruz, Alberto. *Palenque, Official Guide.* Mexico City: Instituto Nacional de Antropologia e Historia, 1978.

September 11,2001: The Day that Changed America. New York: God Bless America, 2001.

September 11,2001. New York: Time-Warner, 2001

Shearer, Tony. *Beneath the Moon and Under the Sun: A Reappraisal of the Sacred Calendar and the Prophecies of Ancient Mexico.* Albuquerque: Sun Books, 1975.

"Tracking the Hijackers," *The Oregonian,* October 4,2001, p. A-12.

Tulku Thondup Rinpoche, *Hidden Teachings of Tibet: An Explanation of the Terma Tradition of Tibetan Buddhism.* Boston: Wisdom Publications, 1986, 1997.

▼

Books of Related Interest

THE MAYAN FACTOR
Path Beyond Technology
by Jose Argiielles

EARTH AsCENDING
An Illustrated Treatise on Law Governing Whole Systems
by Jose Arguelles

SURFERS OF THE ZUVUVA
Tales of Interdimensional Travel
by Jose Arguelles

MAYA COSMOGENESIS 2012
The True Meaning of the Maya Calendar End-Date
by John MajorJenkins

GALACTIC ALIGNMENT
The Transformation of Consciousness According to Mayan, Egyptian,
and Vedic Traditions
by John Major Jenkins

THE MAYAN ORACLE
Return Path to the Stars
by Ariel Spilsbury and Michael Bryner

SECRETS OF MAYAN SCIENCEIRELIGION
by Hunbatz Men
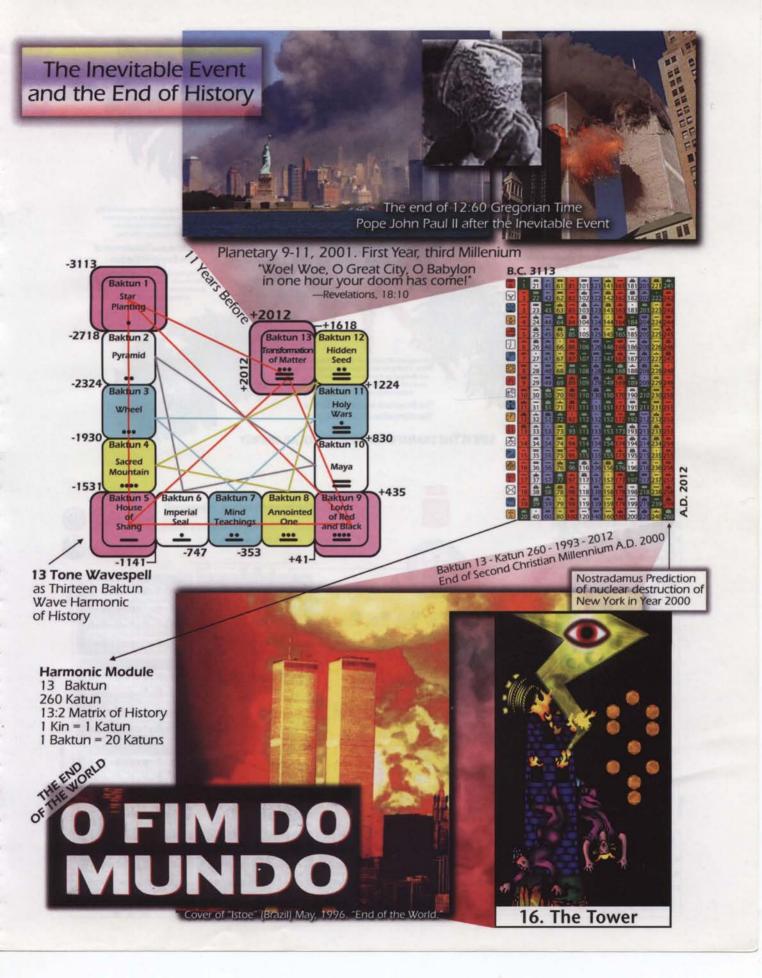
THE LOST REALMs
by Zecharia Sitch in

Inner Traditions. Bear & Company
P.O. Box 388
Rochester, VT 05767
1-800-246-8648
www.InnerTraditions.com

Or contact your local bookseller

www.foundationforthelawoftime.org

www.tortuga.com

The Inevitable Event and the End of History

The end of 12:60 Gregorian Time
Pope John Paul II after the Inevitable Event

Planetary 9-11, 2001. First Year, third Millenium
"Woe! Woe, O Great City, O Babylon in one hour your doom has come!"
—Revelations, 18:10

11 Years Before

-3113

Baktun 1
Star Planting

-2718
Baktun 2
Pyramid

-2324
Baktun 3
Wheel

-1930
Baktun 4
Sacred Mountain

-1531
Baktun 5
House of Shang

-1141

Baktun 6
Imperial Seal
-747

Baktun 7
Mind Teachings
-353

Baktun 8
Annointed One
+41

Baktun 9
Lords of Red and Black

+2012

Baktun 13
Transformation of Matter

+2012

+1618
Baktun 12
Hidden Seed

Baktun 11
Holy Wars
+1224

Baktun 10
Maya
+830

+435

13 Tone Wavespell
as Thirteen Baktun Wave Harmonic of History

Harmonic Module
13 Baktun
260 Katun
13:2 Matrix of History
1 Kin = 1 Katun
1 Baktun = 20 Katuns

B.C. 3113

A.D. 2012

Baktun 13 - Katun 260 - 1993 - 2012
End of Second Christian Millennium A.D. 2000

Nostradamus Prediction of nuclear destruction of New York in Year 2000

THE END OF THE WORLD

O FIM DO MUNDO

Cover of "Istoe" (Brazil) May, 1996. "End of the World."

16. The Tower

The total mass of living matter has never differed considerably from the present value.

The Continuity and Invariance of Life on the Earth

Living matter today is genetically connected with all the living matter of preceding ages, and conditions favorable to life on Earth have never differed vastly from those of the present.

Multiplication as a Manifestation of Transformed Solar Energy

The movement of living matter resulting from the multiplication of organisms operates with an astonishing regularity.

The rate of production of new living matter is proportional to the amount already produced.

Whatever may be the phenomena of life, the energy evolved by organisms is mainly (perhaps entirely) the radiant energy of the Sun

Vegetation as a Transformer of the Energy of the Sun.

We may regard living matter in its entirety as the peculiar and unique domain for the accumulation and transformation of the luminous energy of the Sun.

Throughout all geological ages the chemical effects of living matter on its surroundings have not changed, so that the composition of the crust and of the living matter are the same today as they have always been.

The Biosphere as a Region for the Transformation of Cosmic Energy

LIFE IS THE TRANSFORMATION OF SOLAR ENERGY

• MAGNETIC MOON

•• LUNAR MOON

••• ELECTRIC MOON

•••• SELF-EXISTING MOON

— OVERTONE MOON

≐ RHYTHMIC MOON

⁝ RESONANT MOON

DAY OUT OF TIME

7/25

Planetary Service Wavespell

YEAR OF THE RED PLANETARY MOON

© 2002.7.26 ~ 2003.7.25

PLASMA

DALI · SELI · GAMMA · KALI · ALPHA · LIMI · SILIO

TOOLKIT

HUMAN HOLON

PLANET HOLON

⁝⁝ COSMIC MOON

⁝⁝ CRYSTAL MOON

⁝⁝⁝ SPECTRAL MOON

≡ PLANETARY MOON

⁝⁝ GALACTIC MOON

⁝⁝⁝ SOLAR MOON

Left Hand · Right Hand

Left Foot · Right Foot

Locus of God

Time vertice (ever-present now)

*L of C =
Locus of Consciousness
Point at which time
vector and space
perception connect.
Result = AU
(Awareness Unit)

"Atemporality"

High Time
4 D

Domain of Synchronic Order

Zone of Higher Consciousness

The higher the time
the greater the density
of celestial harmonics
per AU

Celestial Harmonic:
Index of synchronic incidence
(levels of co-occurances)

(S) > (RE)

Threshold of Synchronicity

Low Time
3 D

Future   Past

"Temporality"

*L of C

Near Space

The lower the time the greater
the increase of random events.
However, any random event
can trigger telepathic ascent

into high time depending on
clarity and duration of AU

(RE) > (S)

Macro

Horizon of Space

Micro

Electron shells of element 79, Gold (AU)

Low Time
3 D

(RE) > (S)

Zone of Quantum Physics

Threshold of Synchronicity

Near space defined by
perimeter of sense organs
(and their technological
extensions)

Far space is beyond all
but subliminal sensory
perception

(S) > (RE)

High Time
4 D

High time = (S) > (RE)
Synchronicity (S) predominates

Far space returns
to Locus of
Consciousness
via toroidal
sublimation

Low time = (RE) > (S)
Random Events (RE) predominate

Locus of God

Model of "Vertical Time" in Relation to Horizontal Space

A Presentation of the Foundation for the Law of Time
T(E)=ART. Energy factored by Time equals Art.

The Dynamics of Time
Showing the Evolution of Time as Consciousness - T(E)=Art

GALACTIC BRAIN, or evolutionary spectrum showing index of energy-mind progression from atomic-cellular biological to purely mental conditions of being, T(E)=Art. Energy factored by time equals art.

Primary Post-life

Secondary Reflex: Life

Dominion of Time

Fourth-Dimension: Time

Locus of Time Travel

Hyperdimensional Time
Pure Mind

Subliminal Conscious

Super Conscious

Cosmic Conscious

Post-organic

Hyperorganic

13:20 PAN

Telepathy

Supernova

Mind Returns to Source

Continuing Conscious

GOD

Discovery of The Law of Time

Energy Released from Source

Conscious

12:60 Civilization

Stellar Mass

Instinct

Unconscious

Cosmic Unconscious

Quantum Dimensional Space Pure Energy

Preconscious

Inorganic

Organic

Locus of Space Travel

Atomic

Cellular

Third-Dimension: Space

Domain of Potentiality

Primary Pre-life

Secondary Reflex: Life

13:20
Fourth-Dimensional
Timing Matrix
Source of
Time Vector
Potentialities

13:20 Matrix
Realizible Through
Fourth-Dimensional
Tools:
13 Moon Calendar,
Telektonon,
Dreamspell

Time Vector Potentialities:
Preconscious
Unconscious
Conscious
Discovery of the Law of Time
Continuing Conscious
Super Conscious
Subliminal Conscious

Vector Point Potentiality
Body in Time = Space

T(E)=Art

Noospheric Time Map - Wave Harmonic of History

Wave Harmonic of History 5126 Year Cycle Synchronization Time
13 Baktun - 260 Katun - 1,872,000 Kin The Noosphere

13:20 Matrix Harmonic Module
Universal Synchronization Gauge =
260 Kin = 1 Galactic Spin =
260 NET Minutes
13 NET Minutes =
1 Wavespell (13 Tones)
20 Wavespells =
9 NET Hours, 8 NET Minutes

NET
Noospheric
Earth
Time =
Earth = Body in Space =
Unit of measure of
index of synchronicity

T(E) = Art
T = 13:20 Frequency of
Synchronization
where $T_V \longrightarrow \infty$
E = Earth
Art = Blossomed Noosphere,
Earth consciousness
synchronically
unified

260 Kin
4th Dimensional
Wheel of
Synchronic
Order =
Factor of
Synchronization =
1 G-Spin =

73 G-Spins =   52 Years

365-Kin
1 NET Day
3rd Dimensional
Biotelepathic
Wheel =
Factor of
Life Experience
(73:5)
(7:52)

July 24, 2004
July 25. 2004
July 26. 2004
July 27. 2004
July 28. 2004

Magnetic Moon 7.26-8.22		July 26		
Lunar Moon 8.23-9.19			Cosmic Moon 6.27-7.24	Crystal Moon 5.30-6.26
Electric Moon 9.20-10.17				Spectral Moon 5.2-5.29
Self Existing Moon 10.18-11.14				Planetary Moon 4.4-5.1
Overtone Moon 11.15-12.12	Rhythmic Moon 12.13-1.9	Resonant Moon 1.10-2.6	Galactic Moon 2.7-3.6	Solar Moon 3.7-4.3

Wavespell = 13 Tones
1 Tone = 1 Moon = 28 Kin
1 Kin = 1 NET Minute

◐ = 1 NET Minute

x 28 = 1 NET Hour.

7 NET Minutes =
¼ Hour =
1 Week ⊕

1 NET Hour =
1 Moon ◑

1 Moon (NET Hour)
= 1 Lunar Orbit

◐ = 1 NET Hour x 13

= 1 NET Day
(13 NET Hours)
= 1 Solar Orbit
= 13 Lunar Orbits

52 NET Days
= 52 Solar Orbits
= 1 NET Year

= 73 Galactic Spins
= 13 Seed-Storm 4-Year
Bundles

1 4-Year Bundle =
1 NET Week

13 NET Days =
1 NET Season

1 NET Week =
4 Solar Orbits

1 NET Season =
13 Solar Orbits

Noosphere—Mind of Time on Earth

Necrosphere or Noosphere?

A Chronotopology of Transformation

Noosphere

Mind of Time on Earth

2012 and Beyond

Time - Formed Blossomed or Radiated Meaning

T(E)=ART

Great Calendar Change of 2004
Campaign for the New Time

PAN   PAN

The Inevitable
Event
9-11
2001

Foundation for — Congress — Vatican Alert — On Peace and Time

Biospheric Rights

Emergency UN

Change Peace Plan

Analysis of Artificial Time — Irregular Calendar

13 Moon Calendar

Planetary Moral

First Planetary Congress

Judgment — the Law of Time

World Summit — UR Council

World Thirteen Moon
Calendar Change
Peace Movement and
The Discovery of the
Law of Time

"Law of Time.
Making conscious
what was unconscious"

2000
1999
1998
1997   Seven Years
1996   of Prophecy
1995
1994

Discovery of   AD 1993   The Law of Time

Horizon of   Meaning

TELEK   TONON

1992. The Time Shift. Thirteen Moons in Motion; Turtle of
Thirteen Moons; Treatise on Time.

Desert
Storm
Kuwait
End of
Cold War

1991. Dreamspell.

1990. Thirteen Moon Wavespell Calendar.

Berlin   Wall

1989 Museum of Time.
13:20 - 12:60 Discovery
Root Meaning.

Roots of
Meaning

1987. Harmonic Convergence Root Source.
[Mayan Factor]

Chronotopology:

A geography of time or radial
time set defined by an event
"Law of Time—Telektonon,"
which creates a root meaning
from which time-formed,
-blossomed, or -radiated
meanings emerge.

13 Heaven 9 Hell Prophecy of Quetzalcoatl

1984. Charles Muses "Studies in the Interactive
Connectedness of Time. Chronotopology"

1971. NA. Kozyrev - $T_V\infty$"

1952. Discovery of tomb of Pacal Votan

Chilam Balam

Hiroshima   1945

Mechanization of Time

Gregorian Calendar
Conquest of Mexico

Crusades   Muhammad

Pope Gregory I

Pacal Votan

Source meanings
of the Law of Time
radially resonated
toward seed point
creating horizon of
meaning

Paul J. Nahin

Time Machine Tales

The Science Fiction Adventures and Philosophical Puzzles of Time Travel

Springer

Science and Fiction

More information about this series at http://www.springer.com/series/11657

Science and Fiction – A Springer Series

This collection of entertaining and thought-provoking books will appeal equally to science buffs, scientists and science-fiction fans. It was born out of the recognition that scientific discovery and the creation of plausible fictional scenarios are often two sides of the same coin. Each relies on an understanding of the way the world works, coupled with the imaginative ability to invent new or alternative explanations - and even other worlds. Authored by practicing scientists as well as writers of hard science fiction, these books explore and exploit the borderlands between accepted science and its fictional counterpart. Uncovering mutual influences, promoting fruitful interaction, narrating and analyzing fictional scenarios, together they serve as a reaction vessel for inspired new ideas in science, technology, and beyond.

Whether fiction, fact, or forever undecidable: the Springer Series "Science and Fiction" intends to go where no one has gone before!

Its largely non-technical books take several different approaches. Journey with their authors as they

- Indulge in science speculation – describing intriguing, plausible yet unproven ideas;
- Exploit science fiction for educational purposes and as a means of promoting critical thinking;
- Explore the interplay of science and science fiction – throughout the history of the genre and looking ahead;
- Delve into related topics including, but not limited to: science as a creative process, the limits of science, interplay of literature and knowledge;
- Tell fictional short stories built around well-defined scientific ideas, with a supplement summarizing the science underlying the plot.

Readers can look forward to a broad range of topics, as intriguing as they are important. Here just a few by way of illustration:

- Time travel, superluminal travel, wormholes, teleportation
- Extraterrestrial intelligence and alien civilizations
- Artificial intelligence, planetary brains, the universe as a computer, simulated worlds
- Non-anthropocentric viewpoints
- Synthetic biology, genetic engineering, developing nanotechnologies
- Eco/infrastructure/meteorite-impact disaster scenarios
- Future scenarios, transhumanism, posthumanism, intelligence explosion
- Virtual worlds, cyberspace dramas
- Consciousness and mind manipulation

Paul J. Nahin

Time Machine Tales

The Science Fiction Adventures
and Philosophical Puzzles of Time Travel

Springer

Paul J. Nahin
Department of Electrical Engineering
University of New Hampshire
Durham, NH, USA

Also By Paul J. Nahin

Oliver Heaviside (1988, 2002), Johns Hopkins
Time Machines (1993, 1999), Springer
The Science of Radio (1996, 2001), Springer
An Imaginary Tale (1998, 2007, 2010), Princeton
Duelling Idiots (2000, 2002), Princeton
When Least Is Best (2004, 2007), Princeton
Dr. Euler's Fabulous Formula (2006, 2011), Princeton
Chases and Escapes (2007, 2012), Princeton
Digital Dice (2008, 2013), Princeton
Mrs. Perkins's Electric Quilt (2009), Princeton
Time Travel (1997, 2011), Johns Hopkins
Number-Crunching (2011), Princeton
The Logician and the Engineer (2013), Princeton
Will You Be Alive Ten Years From Now? (2014), Princeton
Holy Sci-Fi! (2014), Springer
Inside Interesting Integrals (2015), Springer
In Praise of Simple Physics (2016), Princeton

Frontispiece: The Pioneers of Time Travel

The scientific pioneers were Albert Einstein (1879–1955) and Kurt Gödel (1906–1978), good personal friends who are shown here in 1954 at the Institute for Advanced Study in Princeton, New Jersey, in a photo taken by Richard Arens. It was Einstein's 1916 general theory of relativity (theory of gravity) that Gödel used as the basis for his 1949 paper that was the first to show that the general theory does **not** forbid time travel into the past.

The literary pioneer of time travel was of course Herbert George Wells (1866–1946), who is shown here as a college freshman cut-up around 1885. The photograph was taken as a prank by an unknown friend while Wells was a student in a biology course given by Thomas Huxley, at the Normal School of Science in

South Kensington (a branch of the University of London). A far too thin and impoverished Wells was then still a teenager, and *The Time Machine* lay a distant 10 years in the future.

Einstein/Gödel photograph courtesy of the American Institute of Physics Emilio Segré Visual Archives of the AIP Niels Bohr Library. Wells photograph courtesy of the rare Books and Special Collections Department of the Library of the University of Illinois at Urbana-Champaign.

A Note on the Story Citations and Science Fiction History

"You will find it a very good practice always to verify your references, sir."
   —advice given in 1847 to a young scholar by Martin Joseph
                                    Routh, President of Magdalen College, Oxford

Most of the pulp science fiction stories I've cited in this book, in their original form as ink on paper, have long since vanished from our region of spacetime and exist today only (alas) on microfilm reels in scholarly vaults. I am especially indebted to Texas A & M, the Claremont Colleges, the California State Universities at Northridge and Fullerton, Mount Holyoke College, the New York City Public

Library, and the University of Delaware, for giving me access via Inter-Library Loan (through my home institution, the University of New Hampshire) to their extensive archives of ancient science fiction magazines.

A number of the really good stories *have* been anthologized, however, and so are still readily available today in book form. In essentially all cases, though, for historical reasons, I've given the original publication information (magazine and date). You can find which of the stories cited are available in one or more anthology reprints by going to an immensely useful, searchable database on the Web, at: http://www.isfdb.org, and I gratefully thank all those in the science fiction community responsible for creating and maintaining that database.

The following two books by science fiction historian Sam Moskowitz (1920–1997), who lived through what Isaac Asimov called the 'Golden Age of [magazine] Science Fiction,' may be difficult to find today but, if you are interested in the early history of *magazine* science fiction (beyond simply the subgenre of time travel), the hunt for them will be well worth your time:

Science Fiction by Gaslight: a history and anthology of science fiction in the popular magazines, 1891–1911 (World Publishing Company 1968);
Under the Moons of Mars: a history and anthology of "The Scientific Romance" in the Munsey Magazines, 1912–1920 (Holt, Rinehart and Winston 1970).

Some First Words

Is time travel in principle (never mind the difficulties) a possibility? It has received some thought in the past and deserves some more.
—David Park, in his 1980 book *The Image of Eternity*

He used to have quite a reputation, but the last couple of years he's been working on time ... You know, time travel, that sort of rot. An A-1 crackpot.
—a character (discussing a colleague) disagrees with Park, in Mack Reynolds' "Advice from Tomorrow," *Science Fiction Quarterly*, August 1953

In 1993 the first edition of my book *Time Machines* was published by the Press of the American Institute of Physics. In 1999, after Springer acquired AIP Press, the second edition of that book appeared. So, is this the third edition? Well, yes *and* no. It *is* because large chunks of the 1999 edition are still here, along with new discussions of the advances by physicists and philosophers that have appeared in the intervening 18 years. The prime example of that centers on the time travel paradoxes. Those discussions contain mostly what is in the second edition, but they have also been brought up to date with the latest thinking on the paradoxes, by physicists and philosophers.

And yet this book is *not quite* the third edition because the emphasis is now on the philosophical and on science fiction, rather than on physics as it was when written for AIP Press. In that spirit there are, for example, no Tech Notes filled with algebra, integrals, and differential equations, as there are in the first and second editions of *Time Machines*. That's because I wish to avoid having this book seem to be simply a long physics treatise. I have, in fact, some sympathy with the following views, expressed by two philosophers:

"There is one metaphor in the physicist's account of space-time which one would expect *anyone* to recognize as such, for metaphor is here strained far beyond the breaking point, i.e., when it is said that time is 'at right angles to each of the

other three dimensions.' Can anyone really attach any meaning to this—except as a recipe for drawing diagrams?"[1]

and

"This is from the outset a study in descriptive metaphysics. In consequence, I shall have nothing to say about twice-differentiable Lorentzian manifolds, Minkowski diagrams, world-lines, time-like separations, space-time worms [a 'thick' world-line], or temporal parts."[2]

I don't *completely* endorse these sentiments, however, and so please understand that I am not denying the ultimate importance of *physics* when it comes to achieving a deep understanding of time travel. To quote yet another philosopher,

"Arm chair reflections on the concept of causation [are] not going to yield new insights. The grandfather paradox is simply a way of pointing to the fact that if the usual laws of physics are supposed to hold true in a chronology violating space-time, then consistency constraints emerge. *[To understand these constraints] involves solving problems in physics, not armchair philosophical reflections* [my emphasis]."[3]

I could not agree more. So, in *Time Machine Tales* you *will* find some physics. In support of time travel to the future (and in how to make a wormhole time machine for travel into the past), for example, I'll show you a high school level derivation of the famous time dilation formula from special relativity. There are some spacetime diagrams, some simple algebraic manipulations, and here and there just a touch of freshman calculus; even the metric tensor gets a few words, too. But it is, admittedly, pretty light-weight stuff.

So, while certainly saluting the premier position of physics, *Time Machine Tales* is not a scholarly, in-depth treatment of time travel physics. Rather, it is an examination of how science fiction writers (and many philosophers, too) have viewed time travel. (Even in the physics discussions, science fiction will regularly appear.) Those views, by their very nature, are far more romantic than are those of hardcore theoretical physicists. History has shown, of course, that the results of the work of theoretical physicists may, in the end, prove to actually be far more astonishing than anything fiction writers cook-up—and if there is any scientific subject for which that may again prove to be true it's time travel—but for us, here, it will be the fiction writer who has center stage.

The philosophers will be only slightly less important in this book. While much of the early philosophical literature on time travel and backwards causation reads like imaginative fairy tales spun out of vacuous vapors (more on this soon), many modern philosophers have shown themselves to be quite sophisticated. What they

---

[1]C. W. K. Mundle, "The Space-Time World," *Mind*, April 1967, pp. 264–269.

[2]J. F. Rosenberg, "One Way of Understanding Time," *Philosophia*, October 1972, pp. 283–301.

[3]John Earman, "Recent Work on Time Travel," in *Time's Arrows Today: recent physical and philosophical work on the direction of time* (Steven F. Savitt, editor), Cambridge University Press 1995, pp. 268–310. We'll discuss the idea of *consistency constraints* in some detail later in the book. Earman is Professor Emeritus of History and Philosophy of Science at the University of Pittsburgh.

have written deserves serious consideration by anyone interested in time travel, and that includes physicists. However, while the time travel interests of philosophers and physicists have a lot of overlap, those interests are *not* in total agreement. For example, while both groups talk of the grandfather paradox, the philosophers worry in particular about motivation (*why* the murderous mission?), while physicists have *never* to my knowledge asked themselves that question[4] (other than to figure out how to avoid it!). After all, philosophers talk of flesh-and-blood humans as time travelers, while the physicists send only billiard balls (with no personal identities or memories) on time trips into the past for the *expressed purpose* of avoiding the messy human issues of 'motivation' and free will. This approach by physicists isn't because they are cold and emotionless. It is a useful strategy because, if it can be shown that a mere billiard ball can travel into the past then, as one *philosopher* pointed out long ago, "It is implausible that it should be possible for some physical systems to travel back in time, and not others. Thus, if we suppose that simple objects can time-travel … then we must suppose that more complicated systems, e.g., human beings, can also time-travel."[5]

For the most part, philosophers and physicists have worked at the extreme, opposite points of the time travel spectrum. Much better, I think, would be to adopt the following, more balanced position advocated recently: "The study of time machines is a good opportunity for forging a partnership between philosophy and physics. Of course, philosophers have to recognize that in this particular instance the partnership is necessarily an unequal one since the mathematical physicists have to do the heavy lifting. But it seems clear that a little more cooperation with philosophers of science in attending to the analysis of what it takes to be a time machine could have led to some helpful clarifications in the physics literature."[6]

In the past, philosophers gained a reputation for being just a bit too 'unconstrained by the facts' for scientific tastes—as the English mathematician Augustus De Morgan (1806–1871) wrote in an 1842 letter, "There are no writers who give us so much *must* with so little *why*, as the metaphysicians"[7]—but I do think today's physicists would do well to reexamine that harsh opinion.

Philosophers of the 'old school' may look askance at a non-philosopher (me!) leveling criticism at them, and so let me step aside and quote from a member of the

---

[4]Nicholas J. J. Smith, "Why Would Time Travelers Try to Kill Their Younger Selves?" *The Monist*, July 2005, pp. 388–395. As Smith writes, "[Motivation] does not impact upon the possibility, or even the likelihood of backwards time travel. Yet it is deeply puzzling, and we will have no idea what time travel would actually be *like* until we explore it." See also Peter B. M. Vranas, "Can I Kill My Younger Self? Time Travel and the Retrosuicide Paradox," *Pacific Philosophical Quarterly*, December 2009, pp. 520–534.

[5]P. Horwich, "On Some Alleged Paradoxes of Time Travel," *Journal of Philosophy*, August 1975, pp. 432–444.

[6]John Earman, Christopher Smeenk, and Christian Wüthrich, "Do the Laws of Physics Forbid the Operation of Time Machines?," *Synthese*, July 2009, pp. 91–124.

[7]D. J. Cohen, *Equations from God: pure mathematics and Victorian faith*, The Johns Hopkins University Press 2007, p. 119.

'modern school' of philosophical thought: "Space-time is the basic spatiotemporal entity. Many philosophers have mouthed this truth, but few have swallowed it, and very few have digested it ... An appreciation of this truth is crucial to what is commonly referred to as the philosophy of space and time ... In large measure the lack of progress in this area can be traced to the fact that philosophers have not taken seriously the corollary that talk about space and time is really talk about the spatial and temporal aspects of spacetime."[8] This is a polite way of telling philosophers that they had better learn some physics!

What provoked those harsh words was that 'modern' philosopher's perception that 'old school' philosophers were not talking science when they wrote of space and time, but rather were in the business of telling each other irrelevant stories and myths, a curious philosophical approach involving the 'telling of tales' that reached its peak in the early and mid-1960s. Spacetime story telling seems to have started with a paper by the Oxford philosopher Anthony Quinton (1925–2010), who argued[9] that although there can be multiple, disjointed spaces, there can only be a single time that is the same for everyone, everywhere. The issue is *not* the truth or not of that assertion (Newton believed it, modern physicists don't), but rather Quinton's technique for arriving at it: myth construction.

Myth construction strikes those trained in the technical sciences as, while perhaps interesting—even physicists, after all, can enjoy a good fairy tale now and then—something quaint and totally beside the point. In his paper Quinton tells a fairy tale about how he thinks someone can live continuously in time and yet, via dreaming, be in two different spatial worlds; when awake he is in one world, while when the person is asleep he is in the other. Quinton argues that this multispatial myth is plausible, but that a search for an analogous multitemporal myth is doomed. This prompted a reply[10] from another 'old school' philosopher who rebutted Quinton with an even more outlandish counter-myth involving "the warring tribes of Okku and Bokku"!

It was this back-and-forth spinning of hypothetical tales that caused the 'modern' philosopher to write in his paper (note 30) that "the procedure for arriving at answers to these questions [about space and time] adopted by Quinton and most other ['old school' philosophers] is, to say the least, a curious one: a story is told about a mythical land—usually called something like the land of Okkus-Bokkus [which is now seen to an outrageous pun]—and then we are asked what we would say if confronted by experiences like those of the Okkus-Bokkusians. As often happens with such a question, people have said all sorts of things, not all of which are interesting or enlightening."

Another modern philosopher was even less gentle in his rejection of the fairy tale approach to spacetime physics: "Quinton [and others of a similar approach invite

---

[8]J. Earman, "Space-Time or How to Solve Philosophical Problems and Dissolve Philosophical Muddles Without Really Trying," *Journal of Philosophy*, May 1970, pp. 259–276.

[9]A. Quinton, "Spaces and Times," *Philosophy*, April 1962, pp. 130–147.

[10]R. G. Swinburne, "Times," *Analysis*, June 1965, pp. 185–191.

us] to say what we should think in certain strange circumstances which they describe within common-sense language [as opposed to scientific terminology]. I must say that if I found myself in the circumstances which they describe I just would not know what to think. Probably I should simply conclude that I had gone mad . . . It looks as though these writers are inviting us to consider *what we should say if we knew no science* [my emphasis]."[11]

Even before the modern philosopher (note 30) wrote in 1970 to complain about myth-making, another had already done so: "Whenever a human being produces an argument which opens 'Suppose I had 23 senses . . .,' 'Suppose I were God . . .,' 'Suppose I experienced objects extended in four spatial dimensions . . .,' we can protest that the argument is worthless. For in supposing that he has transcended our human point of view, he has also transcended the limits of our understanding."[12] As this author concluded his very funny paper, such opening sentences are the signatures of myths from "The Philosopher's Fairy Tale Book."

The strained relationship between myth-making philosophers and physicists, especially concerning time travel, has a historically interesting antecedent in the 1920s negative reaction among many over Einstein's theories of relativity (the very theories that give apparent life to time travel). To illustrate my point, consider the October 1913 letter Oskar Kraus (1872–1942), a philosophy professor at the German University in Prague, sent to Ernst Gehrcke (1878–1960), a physics professor at the Reich Institute of Physics and Technology in Berlin. Both men were opponents of Einstein but, as Kraus wrote in his letter, it was only Gehricke among the physicists he considered to be sympathetic to him: "[I] would not know . . . anyone else but you who as a specialist would not reject the intervention of a philosopher from the start."[13]

So, I think Earman's proposal a sound one, an echo in fact of similar words that the physicist Kip Thorne wrote (in the Foreword to the second edition of *Time Machines*) concerning science fiction writers: "Smart physicists seek insight everywhere, including from clever science fiction writers who long ago began probing seriously the logical consequences that would ensue if the laws of physics permitted time travel."[14]

To emphasize this new, combined, diversified focus (but also to retain some connection with my earlier books) is the reason I have altered the title, just a bit. In addition, each chapter now concludes with several open-ended questions, suitable for motivating either classroom discussions or more extensive essay responses.

---

[11]J. J. C. Smart, "The Unity of Space-Time: Mathematics Versus Myth Making," *Australasian Journal of Philosophy*, (no. 2) 1967, 214–217.

[12]M. Hollis, "Times and Spaces," *Mind*, October 1967, pp. 524–536. Hollis ends by saying he is prepared to accept the failure of his paper to convince many of his colleges to change their ways, and he is waiting for one of them to write a paper opening with "Twice upon a time in another space no distance in any direction from here . . ."!

[13]Quoted from the Introduction to Milena Wazeck, *Einstein's Opponents: the public controversy about the theory of relativity in the 1920s*, Cambridge 2014 (published in German in 2009).

[14]Thorne is Professor Emeritus of Physics at the California Institute of Technology.

Teachers, in particular, may find this a useful feature if using the book in an academic setting. The book ends with reprints of two of my own published time travel stories (one from *Analog* and the other from *Omni*), with each serving as an illustration of technical issues raised in the book. From my own teaching of an undergraduate honors class in time travel at the University of New Hampshire, I think the assigning of story writing to be an excellent tool for teachers to use. I found reading student stories to be a lot of fun, and students may well surprise teachers with innovative ideas.

Now that I've mentioned story writing, let me say something about the heavy presence of time travel science fiction stories in this book, the majority of which originated in the often maligned pulp magazines of the 1920s through the 1950s. 'Pulp' has long been burdened with a bad literary reputation. As the editor of one anthology of pulp fiction bluntly put it, "Pulp equated with rubbish. Crap of the basest nature."[15] Part of the reason for that was cosmetic; as I wrote in an earlier book, "The term *pulp* came from the use of inexpensive wood-pulp—you could *feel* the lumpy wood chips in each ragged, untrimmed page—to make paper that was far too crummy for the use by any publisher of 'words meant to last.' Such paper quickly yellowed, turned brittle, and finally, amid billowing clouds of bits and pieces, entered into eternal oblivion. Think of the paper used in your newspaper before its final contribution to civilization in the bottom of your cat's litter box; pulp was worse."[16]

And then a little later, in the same book, "The stories in *Amazing* [*Stories* magazine] were 'read it in the morning, forget it by dinnertime' adventure fiction, the stuff you'd put inside a newspaper if on a crowded train or bus so fellow passengers wouldn't know what a low-grade mind you had. The transient nature of pulp fiction was independent of its literary quality, as the cheap acid-based paper that the stories were printed on began to oxidize and literally burn-up as soon as it rolled off the press. In the introductory essay to a 1950 collection of pulp-detective Philip Marlowe stories (*Trouble Is My Business*), mystery writer Raymond Chandler commented on this when he wrote 'pulp fiction never dreamed of posterity.' Pulp fiction was synonymous with trash fiction, and the nature of much of early pulp SF has been aptly described as 'scientific pornography for the mechanically minded,' and 'writing which drooled over descriptions of technology.'"

When publisher Hugo Gernsback (1884–1967) brought out the first issue of *Amazing Stories* in April 1926, it was the first pulp devoted totally to science fiction. With its masthead motto of "Extravagant Fiction Today—Cold Fact Tomorrow," and with the illustration on the contents page of each issue showing a muscular Jules Verne bursting from his grave in the heroic, up-up-and-away pose made famous years later by Superman, there could be no doubt as to what kind of fiction the reader would find under the dramatic, multi-colored cover art. It was fiction populated with mad scientists, and half-naked woman about to be ravished by alien

---

[15]Maxim Jakubowski, *The Mammoth Book of Pulp Fiction*, Carroll & Graf 1996.

[16]P. J. Nahin, *Holy Sci-Fi!: where science fiction and religion intersect*, Springer 2014.

invaders from outer space; all in all, stuff of interest only to teenage boys and imbecilic adults.[17]

How else, after all, to explain the publication of one tale[18] that was given the following heart-stopping editorial introduction: "Professor Lambert deliberately ventures into a Vibrational Dimension to join his fiancée in its magnetic torture-fields"? In defense of many of the readers of early pulp science fiction, however, not all were attracted by such nonsense. Just 2 months later (June 1931) one reader wrote to the same magazine to complain of masculine heroes saving weeping women from ungodly horrors: "Just why do you permit your Authors to inject messy love affairs into otherwise excellent imaginative fiction? Just stop and think. Our young hero-scientist builds himself a space flyer, steps out into the great void, conquers a thousand and one perils on his voyage and amidst our silent cheers lands on some far distant planet. Then what does he do? He falls in love with a maiden—or it's usually a princess—of the planet to which the Reader has followed him, eagerly awaiting and hoping to share each new thrill attached to his gigantic flight. But after that it becomes merely a hopeless, doddering love affair ending by his returning to Earth with his fair one by his side. Can you grasp that—a one-armed driver of a space-flyer! . . . We buy A.S. for the thrill of being changed in size, in time, in dimension . . . not to read of love . . . I wish . . . for plain, cold scientific stories sans the fair sex."
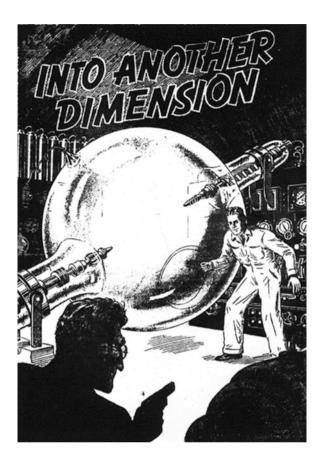
Here's another example, this one of the sort of tale that gave an aroma of the sophomoric to 'golden age' time travel science fiction. It was a story of a young man of the far future, with access to a time machine, who wants to see a dinosaur before he dies. So back he travels, back, back, until he at last finds himself in a "subterranean cave, dark and foul-smelling." At first he is puzzled (did dinosaurs live underground?), but then suddenly he hears a thundering roar and sees a huge black shape in the gloom. There can be no doubt now; it *is* a dinosaur, and he sees its red, gleaming eyes just as it crushes him into a pancake. But that's okay; he saw a dinosaur before he died. Then comes the dénouement. He hadn't really gone back quite as far as the Jurassic period, but only to the twentieth century, where he has been run down by the local express train in a subway tunnel![19]

---

[17]This was particularly thought to be the case for readers of the romance pulps, written for young women in the 1930s and 1940s (a separate and distinct audience from that of the science fiction pulps). As one commentator wrote on that genre, the heroes and heroines of such tales often displayed the "mental equipment of a banana split," with the implication that the same might be said of the readers, themselves. (See Margaret MacMullen, "Pulps and Confessions," *Harper's Monthly Magazine*, June 1937.) I don't think, however, that this particular complaint generally applied to the pulp science fiction readership. I'll have much more to say about Gernsback and early pulp science fiction speculations concerning time travel, in Chap. 4.

[18]T. Curry, "Hell's Dimension," *Astounding Stories*, April 1931.

[19]R. G. Thompson, "The Brontosaurus," *Stirring Science Fiction*, April 1941. In the editors of *Stirring*'s defense, notice the month: maybe this story was *meant* to be a joke. If so, it was an admirable success.

Vibrating into new dimensions was, apparently, a popular idea in 1930s pulp science fiction. This 'super science' gadget operated by vibrating an object faster than light, whereupon the Lorentz-FitzGerald contraction formula (see Chap. 3) predicts an *imaginary* size for the object—which means (so we are told) that the object has entered "another plane of existence." The inventor (the fellow with the gun) is inviting his grim-faced assistant to give the gadget a try. The original caption reads "Get into that vibrator! Get in, I say!"

    Illustration for "Into Another Dimension" by Maurice Duclos, *Fantastic Adventures* November 1939 (art by Kenneth J. Reeve), © 1939 by Ziff-Davis Publishing Co., reprinted by arrangement with Forrest J. Ackerman, Holding Agent, 2495 Glendower Ave., Hollywood, CA 90027

Today, however, the need to apologize for science fiction tales about time travel isn't quite so necessary. Now and then, in fact, you'll even find one of the better pulp stories cited in highly mathematical papers on time machines in the *Physical Review D*, one of the most important scholarly physics journals. Even those physicists and philosophers who mostly ignore science fiction—except perhaps to make slightly condescending remarks—would, if honest, admit that their early teenage interest in time travel was sparked by reading a really good science fiction story, and not by working their way through a physics textbook. Yes, when the physics eventually came later, it was very good—but the science fiction came *first*,

and it was pretty good, too.[20] It's in a 1937(!) tale, for example, that we find the claim for consistency around a closed loop in time, *decades* ahead of the physicists and philosophers.[21] And when you get to the final section of Chap. 4, I think you'll find it difficult to believe that Everett's many-worlds interpretation of quantum mechanics, dating from the late 1950s (which avoids the standard paradoxes of time travel) wasn't inspired by some youthful reading of science fiction from the 1930s and 1940s.

In a number of places in this book you'll find my comments on how science fiction has occasionally anticipated physicists on the subject of time machines and time travel. This is *not* to be interpreted as some sort of 'gotcha' in favor of science fiction. Far from it. When push comes to shove, physics *always* wins. This situation was specifically addressed by Joe Haldeman, in an afterword to his 2007 novel *The Accidental Time Machine*. There he wrote, about when he started in 1971 to write his earlier, now classic novel *The Forever War*, "I needed a way to get soldiers from star to star within a human lifetime, without doing too much violence to special and general relativity. *I waved my arms around really hard* [my emphasis] and came up with the 'collapsar jump'—at the time, collapsar was an alternate term for 'black hole,' though I was unaware of the latter term [because John Wheeler had invented it only 4 years before, as discussed in Chap. 1 and note 106]." And then Haldeman admitted "It's a truism of science fiction that if you predict enough things, a few of them are going to come true. . . . What I think it actually demonstrates is that *if you wave your arms around hard enough* [my emphasis], sometimes you can fly."

Now, there is one feature common to all books on time travel to the past (which is the central topic treated here, of course) that I would like to clearly state. It's obviously a subject of vast interest to physicists, and yet it offers (as far as I know) *absolutely no hope of suggesting even a single experiment for study*. (As far as I know, nobody is building a time machine in their basement.) A suggestion *has* been made that it may be possible to detect, in the *present*, the effects of the *future* operation of "man-made time machines, which could be of a size traversable by humans," that is, machines with a 1-m spatial extent offering a one second trip into the past.[22] With the best technology available today, however, the calculated effects on the proposed two-particle scattering experiment are orders of magnitude too small to measure.

---

[20]The view expressed by Vladimir Voinovich's time traveler in his 1986 novel *Moscow 2042* (Science fiction . . . is not literature, but tomfoolery like the electronic games that induce mass idiocy.) is, I think, wrong. For an interesting presentation on the role of science fiction in exciting an interest in science among youngsters, see the paper by Frederik Pohl (1919–2013), "Science Fiction: the stepchild of science," *Technology Review*, October 1994, pp. 57–61. In this essay Pohl, a well-known writer of science fiction and editor of *Galaxy Science Fiction* and *If* magazines, writes "Science fiction is [the ultimate protection] against future shock . . . if you read enough of it, nothing will take you entirely by surprise." Not even time travel.

[21]P. S. Miller, "The Sands of Time," *Astounding Stories*, April 1937.

[22]S. Rosenberg, "Testing Causality on Spacetimes with Closed Timelike Curves*," Physical Review D*, March 15, 1998, pp. 3365–3377.

This situation is really unprecedented in the history of science.[23] To cynics, it may seem to be a bit like writing learned papers on the thermodynamics of fire-breathing dragons (which, like other mythological entities—and time machines, too—have yet to be seen)! This one fact has opened the doors—and has kept them open for decades—for philosophers and science fiction writers, who can endlessly debate back and forth on all aspects of time travel to the past with nary a single experimental fact to complicate their lives. For physicists the situation is naturally frustrating, but for philosophers and science fiction writers it's a dream come true. This isn't to say it's *all* basically theological in nature. Both the physicists and the philosophers *have* written many fascinating papers and books and, of course, so have science fiction writers. Mathematical physics *has* been advanced.

Still, despite all of the theoretical work done in the last 30 years, work that has made it reasonable to seriously talk of 'time travel' and 'time machines,' I suspect many would nonetheless agree with these words from more than 75 years ago: "Of all the fantastic ideas that belong to science fiction, the most remarkable—and, perhaps, the most fascinating—is that of time travel . . . Indeed, so fantastic a notion does it seem, and so many apparently obvious absurdities and bewildering para-doxes does it present, that some of the most imaginative students of science refuse to consider it as a practical proposition."[24] For some, time travel is an even more unlikely possibility than (as declared by Robert Lewis Stevenson) is the "welding of ice and iron." Not all physicists and philosophers view the time travel/paradox arguments as convincing, however. Provocative, yes, of course, but many are not yet prepared to write 'signed, sealed, and delivered' at the end.

So, keep reading and I think you'll discover why there *are* those who are not so quick to dismiss the possibility of following the fantastic world line of H. G. Wells' intrepid Time Traveller[25] into the future. And, just maybe, into the distant past, too.

---

[23]Perhaps, however, I am too hasty. More recent theoretical calculations suggest that wormholes connecting our universe with other universes would, after converting into time machines, have characteristic thermal signatures. See P. F. González-Díaz, "Thermal Properties of Time Machines," *Physical Review D*, 2012, pp. 105026-1 to -7 which, however, concludes that a search for such signatures would be "quite difficult [with the] instruments available."

[24]I. O. Evans, "Can We Conquer Time?" *Tales of Wonder*, Summer 1940.

[25]The Time Traveller is never named in Wells' 1895 novel *The Time Machine*. An earlier (1888) attempt at a time machine story, with the awful title *The Chronic Argonauts* (the "chronic" was apparently inspired by the word *chronology*), so embarrassed Wells that he later called it "imitative puerile stuff," "clumsily invented, and loaded with irrelevant sham significance," and "inept," and so he hunted down and destroyed every copy of it that he could find. You can find *The Chronic Argonauts* reprinted in *The Definitive Time Machine* (H. M. Ceduld, editor), Indiana University Press 1987. The hero in that work *was* named: Dr. Moses Nebogipfel. There is one passage in *The Time Machine* that does tantalize; as the Time Traveller explores a museum of "ancient" artifacts in the Palace of Green Porcelain (they are, of course, artifacts of our *future*) he reveals that "yielding to an irresistible impulse, I wrote my name upon the nose of a steatite monster from South America that particularly took my fancy." Thus, the Traveller *has* given his name, but his signature exists only in the future, in a museum of the past that is yet to be built.

For Further Discussion

For time travel to the past to make any sense, the past must in some sense 'still be there.' This is a concept that we'll find later in the book to have significant support in relativistic physics, but for now let's limit ourselves to a purely romantic view. As an example of this, consider this passage by Canadian writer Grant Allen (1848–1899), from the Introduction to his 1895 time travel novel *The British Barbarians*: "I am writing in my study on the heather-clad hill-top. When I raise my eye from my sheet of foolscap, it falls upon miles and miles of broad open moorland. My window looks out upon unsullied nature. Everything around is fresh and pure and wholesome . . . But away below in the valley, as night draws on, a lurid glare reddens the north-eastern horizon. It marks the spot where the great wen of London heaves and festers." I personally find it quite tempting to imagine Allen somehow still there in his study of 1895, and of heaving and festering late-Victorian London, too, with H. G. Wells himself in the middle of it, still reading the first rave reviews of *The Time Machine*. In Wells' novel The Time Traveller journeys into the far future, while in Allen's work the protagonist is a twenty-fifth century anthropologist who has traveled back to the past of the late nineteenth century to study the 'British barbarians.' Read Allen's novel (it's available on the Internet, for free, as a Project Gutenberg book) and comment on the significance of its appearance at virtually the same time as Wells' great work. Why do you think Wells' novel is remembered, and Allen's is not?

In the opening paragraph of his paper "The Conundrum of Time Travel" (*Croatian Journal of Philosophy*, No. 37, 2013, pp. 81–92), Anguel Stefanov writes "Needless to say . . . the problems concerning time travel are being still tackled by science fiction only, but resolved by science proper neither theoretically, nor practically." Do you think this is correct?

Eventually every genre of writing becomes the target for parody, in which the *form* of the genre serves as the framework for what (it is hoped) is a humorous mockery. The most famous example of this, perhaps, is the annual

Edward Bulwer-Lytton contest in writing a take-off on the long-winded opening line of the 1830 novel *Paul Clifford*, by Bulwer-Lytton (1803–1873). That opening line *is* a wonder (a masterpiece of purple prose): "It was a dark and stormy night; the rain fell in torrents—except at occasional intervals, when it was checked by a violent gust of wind which swept up the streets (for it is in London that our scene lies), rattling along the housetops, and fiercely agitating the scanty flame of the lamps that struggled against the darkness." Here's a recent (from the 2015 contest) spoof: "The Contessa's heart was pounding hard and fast, like an out-of-balance clothes washer, which can get that way if you mix jeans with a lot of light things, though the new ones have some sensor thing to counteract that or shut off, but the Contessa's heart didn't have anything like that, so she had to sit down and tell Don Rolando to keep his hands to himself for a while." Science fiction isn't immune to such fun, and a good example of that can be found in the September 14, 2015, issue of *The New Yorker*, which has (on p. 50) "Eight Short Science-Fiction Stories" by Paul Simms. Here's the one I laughed hardest at: "The Gene-Splicers had tinkered with the DNA, producing a race of warriors who craved just two things: the thrill of battle and the taste of their own feet. They hungered for battle. They literally ate their own feet. None survived to reproduce, and within a few short years they were all gone. The Gene-Splicers chalked it up to experience, and decided to try harder the next time." That, and the other seven spoofs by Simms, cut across a wide swath of science fiction, but one theme noticeably absent was that of time travel. Try your hand at writing a *short* (fewer than 500 words) time travel spoof, and be prepared to read it aloud to an audience of your peers.

The tale "Through the Dragon Glass" by Abraham Merritt (1884–1943) appeared in the early pulp magazine *All-Story Weekly* of November 24, 1917. It described the discovery of a passage through an ancient Chinese mirror into an alternate world. One *might* think of this as an early conception of a wormhole, but more likely it may remind you mostly of Lewis Carroll's *Through the Looking Glass*. More interesting for us, in this book, is a story written 75 years ago that describes a gadget connecting two regions of spacetime, with a time shift of a week between the two regions. (See "Time Locker" by Lewis Padgett, in the January 1943 issue of *Astounding Science Fiction*.) The gadget falls into the hands of a crooked lawyer who, not understanding what he has, ends up accidently killing himself. As the story ends, the inventor of the gadget ruefully muses to himself that the lawyer

"must have been the only guy who ever reached into the middle of next week—and killed himself!" The gadget is, in everything but name, a wormhole time machine. Speculate on how such a spacetime structure could appear in a *science fiction magazine*(!) decades before there was any discussion of such a possibility in the physics world.

Adjectives used to describe many of the stories in the science fiction pulps included *primitive*, *trashy*, *tawdry*, *silly*, *absurd*, *crummy*, *ludicrous*, and *cheap*. One early pulp magazine actually boasted, of its contents, that they contained "sensational fiction with *no* philosophy." Speculate on how such a low-level 'literary' form could have been so successful in finding an enthusiastic audience for time travel paradox tales, tales that are in fact by their very nature simply *stuffed* with philosophical issues. As an example of the tremendous emotional power a particularly well-written time travel story can deliver, read Isaac Asimov's "The Ugly Little Boy" (*Galaxy Science Fiction*, September 1958). Asimov rated this story as among his most favorite of all the many he wrote. If you can read it without ending in tears, well, ... An excellent modern historical work on the pulps (of all genres, not just science fiction) is by Lee Server, *Danger Is My Business: an illustrated history of the fabulous pulp magazines, 1896–1953*, Chronicle Books 1993.

A literary fascination with time was already 'in the wind' when Wells wrote his *Time Machine*, as with Oscar Wilde's 1890 novel *The Picture of Dorian Gray*. Even decades earlier than that one can find a hint of time travel of a sort in Edgar Allen Poe's 1841 short story "Three Sundays in a Week." And just 4 years later Henry Wadsworth Longfellow wrote his haunting poem "The Old Clock on the Stairs," with these opening words:

Somewhat back from the village street
Stands the old-fashioned country-seat.
Across its antique portico
Tall poplar-trees their shadows throw;
And from its station in the hall
An ancient timepiece says it all,—

    "Forever—never!

Never—forever!"

The most interesting of all pre-Wells time travel fiction to appear in a mass-audience publication was, I think, the short story "The Old Folks Party" by Edward Bellamy, printed in the March 1876 issue of *Scribner's Monthly*. In this story a group of teenagers, who belong to a weekly discussion club, agree that at their next meeting they will all come dressed and behaving as they believe they will be dressing and behaving 50 years in the future. Also attending will be the grandmother of one of the young ladies. The meeting of the "old folks" takes place, and it invokes such powerful feelings of mortality that, at last, one of the young men can stand it no more: "Suddenly Henry sprang to his feet and, with the strained, uncertain voice of one waking himself from a nightmare, cried:—'Thank God, thank God, it is only a dream,' and tore off the wig, letting the brown hair fall about his forehead. Instantly all followed his example . . .." The young people then began to laugh with relief at once again being young, until they notice the grandmother is crying. Her granddaughter instantly knows what is wrong and says, "Oh, grandma, we can't take you back with us." Read, compare, and contrast, these works by Wilde, Poe, Longfellow and Bellamy, with the 'scientific' presentation of time travel by Wells.

Acknowledgements

My name is on *Time Machine Tales* as the author, but there are many others without whose help I could not have written it. For this, the revised and updated third edition of the original 1993 book *Time Machines*, I am enormously grateful to the publisher, Springer Science + Business Media, and to my physics editors at Springer, Dr. Sam Harrison and his assistant Ho Ying Fan in New York City. They made an intellectually demanding and inherently lengthy project (one that could easily have turned into a nightmare) a pleasant one. Springer's New York City-based editorial assistant Irene Bruce smoothly handled the administrative details of transforming the book from typescript to print. And to Serguei Krasnikov in Russia, Frank Arntzenius and Roberto Casati in England, Francesco Gonella in Italy, and Geoff Goddu and Archille Varzi in America, I offer grateful thanks for permission to reprint from their publications.

But the story of this book actually begins long before 1993.

Nearly four decades in the past, in 1979, when time travel was still mostly just a nutty idea used by science fiction writers and a few rogue philosophers—proposing to give a serious seminar on time travel at the weekly college *physics* seminar would almost certainly have resulted in getting the bum's rush out the nearest door, or maybe even tossed through the closest window (or, God forbid, *off the roof*!)—I wrote my first time travel tale for *Analog Science Fiction* magazine. Bought by then editor Ben Bova (you can read it in Appendix A), he also bought another time travel tale from me soon after he had become the fiction editor at the newly created *Omni Science Fiction* magazine (you can read it in Appendix B). (Years later, Ben's successor as *Omni*'s fiction editor, Ellen Datlow, bought a third time travel story from me—"The Invitation"—which you can read if you can locate the July 1985 issue.)

Those fictional experiences, and my discovery of Princeton philosopher David Lewis' seminal 1976 essay on the *logical* possibility of time travel, led me to plunge into a deeper study of the *physics* of time travel, to the point where as the 1980s ended (1988, to be precise) I thought a book should be my next writing project. Alas, nobody else shared that thought. I spent the next 3 years looking for a

publisher among numerous university presses; as I looked, the pile of rejection letters, like entropy, grew steadily larger.

The editor at one well-known university press, in fact, simply laughed at the idea of a scholarly time travel book when I called him on the telephone (e-mail was then still in its infancy) to ask, after a long period of no response to my written proposal, if he had gotten it. (Perhaps, I told myself, the mail truck carrying my precious document had fallen into a hyper-dimensional spacetime warp: how pathetically desperate is the anxious academic writer!) Later, I published a number of math/physics books with that same press (but now with new editors) and so there were no lasting hard feelings.

That laughing, unresponsive editor wasn't alone in his opinion, I have to admit, and it wasn't until 1991 when Maria Taylor, the publisher at the Press of the American Institute of Physics (AIP Press), decided to take a chance (a *big* chance) and publish the first edition of *Time Machines*. She made that decision in large part because of two extremely supportive reviews of my proposal from the academic physicists Edwin Taylor (MIT, and a former editor of *The American Journal of Physics*) and Gregory Benford (University of California, Irvine, as well as being an award-winning writer of science fiction who occasionally used the time travel theme). After the original *Time Machines* appeared, Ben Bova asked me to use it as a guide to writing a book on time travel for the new Writer's Digest series on science fiction that he was editing, aimed specifically at would-be story writers; that book came out in 1997 as *Time Travel*. Later, Trevor Lipscombe, then editor-in-chief at the Johns Hopkins University Press (and my former math editor at Princeton University Press), reprinted *Time Travel* (with a new Preface) in 2011.

After Springer acquired AIP Press (and all of its books) in 1995, and Maria Taylor herself went over to Springer, she and I collaborated again on bringing out the second edition of *Time Machines* in 1999. And now, 18 years later, here (with a title slightly altered for reasons I give in "Some First Words") is its successor.

To Sam, Ho Ying, Irene, Ben, Ellen, Maria, Edwin, Gregory, and Trevor, thank you for your support. But my greatest debt of all, one I can never even begin to repay, is to my wife of 55 years, Patricia Ann, a woman of infinite tolerance. Who else would put up with someone who plays first-person-shooter video games at midnight (the bigger and the louder the explosions, the better!) and writes books on time machines, all the while claiming not to be crazy?

University of New Hampshire, Exeter, NH, USA   Paul J. Nahin

Introduction

> Over the last few years leading scientific journals have been publishing articles dealing with time travel and time machines. ... Why? Have physicists decided to set up in competition with science fiction writers and Hollywood producers?
>
> —John Earman (see note 25 of *Some First Words*)

Writing about time travel is, today, a respectable business. It hasn't always been so. After all, time travel, *prima facie*, appears to violate a fundamental law of nature; every effect has a cause, with the cause occurring before the effect. Time travel to the past, however, seems to allow, indeed to *demand*, backwards causation, with an effect (the time traveler emerging into the past as he exits from his time machine) occurring *before* its cause (the time traveler pushing the start button on his machine's control panel years *later* to start his trip backward through time).

Thus, when H. G. Wells published his breakout masterpiece, *The Time Machine*, in 1895, even those readers who loved it as a *story* (and not all did) were still quick to dismiss it as a *romantic fantasy*. It was, in their view, certainly an emotionally powerful tale of pure imagination, but nothing more. Reviewers of the day used such words as "hocus-pocus" and "bizarre," and called the work a "fanciful and lively dream."[26] Any one of the novels by Wells' contemporary, Jules Verne (even such super-technology ones like the 1865 *From the Earth to the Moon*) would have been ranked *far* above Wells' novella in terms of 'it could actually happen.'

Wells himself always denied that his time machine was anything more than a literary device[27] to get his Time Traveller into the far future. Indeed, in 1934, in the

---

[26]These reviews are reprinted in P. Parrinder, *H. G. Wells: The Critical Heritage*, Routledge & Kegan 1972. A modern reviewer has applied such negative characteristics to the Time Traveller, himself, calling him "a kind of Trickster figure" and "a quack and magician." See Robert J. Begiebing, "The Mythic Hero in H. G. Wells's *The Time Machine*," in *Essays in Literature*, Fall 1984, pp. 201–210.

[27]Wells was not the first to use a machine to enable time adventures, as the Spanish writer Enrique Gaspar (1842–1902) used one in his 1887 story *The Time Ship: A Chrononautical Journey*. It's Wells' tale we remember, however.

preface to *Seven Famous Novels* (published by Knopf), a collection of his novel-length scientific romances (as science fiction had been known before the term *science fiction* came into use), including *The Time Machine*, Wells made his position perfectly clear: "These stories of mine collected here do not pretend to deal with possible things; they are exercises of the imagination ... They are all fantasies; they do not aim to project a serious possibility; they aim indeed only at the same amount of conviction as one gets in a good gripping dream." Wells then went on to say in that same preface that all attempts before at writing fantastic stories depended on magic. But not in his works. "It occurred to me that instead of the usual interview with the devil or a magician, an ingenious use of scientific patter might with advantage be substituted." Wells' great contribution to time traveling story-telling was his introduction of a *machine*; science instead of magic, drugs, dreams, blows on the head, or suspended animation.[28] Not all modern science fiction writers have followed Wells' lead, however.

A science fiction tale by Clifford Simak (1904–1988), for example, the 1978 novel *Mastodonia*, incorporates an alien creature marooned on Earth (because of a spaceship crash centuries earlier) who 'makes time tunnels.' One of the characters in the story, who is attempting to start a time-travel agency using these tunnels, explains why not having a time *machine* is causing her difficulties with prospective clients: "The whole trouble was that I couldn't tell them about some machine—a time-travel machine. If I could have told them we'd developed a machine, they'd have been more able to believe me. We place so much trust in machines; they are magic to us. If I could have outlined some ridiculous theory and spouted some equations at them, they would have been impressed." I think that's off the mark. We trust in machines not because they are magic, but for precisely the opposite reason. They are *not* magic, but rather are *rational*. And to dismiss mathematics is to say that some non-natural—some supernatural—influence is at work.

But is a time *machine* actually possible? Or is the idea of a time machine simply "Nonsense" and "A bilgeful of crap," as a character bluntly puts it in the 1972 novel *The Dancer from Atlantis* by Poul Anderson (1926–2001). Wells, himself, addressed this point in an autobiographical essay (published in the *Cornhill Magazine*) that he wrote in July 1945 (just 13 months before his death) in even blunter words. Writing under the name of "Wilfred B. Batterave," he penned a very funny summary of his life titled "A Complete Exposé of This Notorious Literary Humbug." There he described *The Time Machine* as "[A] tissue of absurdities in which people are supposed to rush to and fro along the 'Time Dimension.' By a few common tricks of the story-teller's trade, Wells gets rid of his Machine before it can be subjected to a proper examination. He cheats like any common spook raiser. Otherwise it is plain commonsense that a man might multiply himself indefinitely,

---

[28]Examples of 'non-machine' time travel stories of the last four types are, respectively, H. G. Wells' "The New Accelerator" (1901), Charles Dickens' *A Christmas Carol* (1843), Mark Twain's *A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court* (1889), and Edward Bellamy's *Looking Backward, 2000–1887* (1888).

pop a little way into the future and then come back. There would then be two of him. Repeat *da capo* and you have four, and so on, until the whole world would be full of the Time Travelling Individual's vain repetitions of himself. The plain-thinking mind apprehends this in spite of all the Wellsian mumbo-jumbo and is naturally as revolted as I am by the insult to its intelligence." Funny, yes, but still pretty harsh stuff.

As one writer has argued,[29] Wells was, rather than presenting a scientific discovery, simply attempting to refute the nearly suffocating, unjustified (in his mind), smug optimism of the well-to-do of the Late Victorian Age. And so, on his journey to the year A.D. 802,701, the Time Traveller finds the awful decay of humanity in the cannibalistic subjugation of the Eloi by the Morlocks, the end result of class warfare between the working class (Morlocks) and the idle, parasitic upper class (Eloi).

The German social philosopher Karl Marx, if he hadn't already been dead for 12 years in 1895, would surely have nodded in vigorous agreement as he read *The Time Machine*, even as he would have regretted Wells' decision to have the victory of oppressed workers take so long. (What irony that he is buried in London's Highgate Cemetery, the Victorian Valhalla where he has spent the last century and more quite literally mingling with many of the capitalistic ancestors of the Eloi!) What Marx would have thought of *time travel* as a possibility is, however, far less certain.

How things changed in the years that followed *The Time Machine*. There was, at first, admittedly a 'slight' decline in literary merit as the newly developing pulp science fiction magazines picked-up and ran with the time travel genre. Many of the magazine time travel tales of the 1920s, 1930s, and 1940s were, frankly, simply awful. BUT—some were pretty good, too. And some were, in fact, *very* good. From the 1950s on, there have been ever more sophisticated time travel tales from ever more sophisticated writers.

In the academic communities of philosophers and physicists, too, big events occurred. I give the philosophers the edge, in fact, with the 1976 publication of a hugely important paper that opened with these dramatic words: "Time travel, I maintain, is possible. The paradoxes of time travel [to the past] are oddities, not impossibilities. They prove only this much, which few would have doubted: that a possible world where time travel took place would be a most strange world, different in fundamental ways from the world we think is ours."[30] That writer wasn't the first philosopher to write on time travel to the past, but none had expressed themselves in such powerful and unequivocal words in unmistakable support of the concept.

---

[29]R. M. Philmus, "*The Time Machine*; Or, the Fourth Dimension as Prophecy," *Publications of the Modern Language Association*, May 1969, pp. 530–535.

[30]David Lewis, "The Paradoxes of Time Travel," *American Philosophical Quarterly*, April 1976, pp. 145–152. Lewis (1941–2001) was a Princeton University philosophy professor.

Lewis' paper is also notable because it gives what seems to be a clear definition of just what it means to say one has 'traveled in time,' either to the past *or* to the future:

> What is time travel? Inevitably, it involves discrepancy between time and time. Any traveler departs and then arrives at his destination; the time elapsed from departure to arrival (positive, or perhaps zero) is the duration of the journey. But if he is a time traveler, the separation in time between departure and arrival does not equal the duration of the journey.

To understand this, we need to appreciate the distinction between the *personal time* of the time traveler and the *external time* of remote observers of the time traveler. A time traveler's personal time is measured, for example, either by the time kept by his wrist watch or, perhaps, by a burning candle. (This distinction had actually appeared earlier in Horwich's paper—see note 27 in *Some First Words*—published the year before Lewis' paper.)

I say I 'give the edge to the philosophers' because, while the first *physics* time travel paper had appeared decades earlier, its author wasn't really a physicist at all but rather was Einstein's friend, the world-famous mathematical logician Kurt Gödel. Gödel's paper was, in retrospect, a pivotal event in establishing the 'respectability' of *scientific* time travel; it's worthwhile to take some time here to explain this important point. For physicists (and for philosophers and science fiction writers, too) a 'time machine,' one either constructed by intelligent beings or occurring naturally, manipulates (all the while obeying the known laws of physics) finite amounts of matter and energy in a finite region of spacetime.[31] A 'time machine' would be declared to be *plausible* if it could be explained by a rational, scientific theory. Such a rational theory is found in Einstein's general theory of relativity. (His *special* theory of relativity applies in those situations where there is no gravity.)

Until Einstein, the theory of gravity used by scientists was Newton's—a theory that, although amazingly accurate for any situation encountered on Earth, does have observable errors in certain astronomical applications. In addition, Newton's theory is a descriptive one; it makes possible the calculation of gravity effects without offering any explanation for gravity itself. Einstein's theory not only gives the right answers, even in those cases where Newton's theory doesn't, but it also explains gravity. It does that by treating the world as a four-dimensional structure in which all four dimensions (three of space and one of time) are in a certain sense on equal footing. The resulting Einsteinian description of the world is that of a unified spacetime in which time and space are intimately intertwined, whereas Newton's theory keeps time and space separate and distinct.

---

[31]I am going to feel free to use words like *spacetime* without having to first write introductory essays on relativity theory and tensor mathematics, because such words have entered common use. All those Hollywood science fiction movies, even the crummy ones that routinely trash the laws of physics, have at least expanded the general imagination!

As Newton wrote of time, at the start of his 1687 masterpiece *Principia*, a work that revolutionized physics, "Absolute, true, and mathematical time, of itself, and from its own nature, flows equably without relation to anything external, and by another name is called duration." This view of time would be, of course, discarded with the arrival of Einstein and his view of variable time depending on the state of the observer.

Unlike Einstein's view, Newton's view of the nature of time was entangled with theology. As one modern theologian has written, "Newton conceived of absolute time as grounded in God's necessary existence."[32] To quote Newton himself, in the *General Scholium* to the second edition of *Principia* (1713) he added words that didn't appear in the original: "God is a living, intelligent, and powerful Being; and, from his other perfections, [it follows] that he is supreme, or most perfect. He is eternal and infinite, omnipotent and omniscient; that is, his duration reaches from eternity to eternity; his presence from infinity to infinity; he governs all things, and knows all things that are or can be done. He is not eternity and infinity, but eternal and infinite; he is not duration or space, but he endures and is present. He endures forever, and is everywhere present; and, by existing always and everywhere, he constitutes duration and space. Since every particle of space is *always*, and every indivisible moment of duration is *everywhere*, certainly the Maker and Lord of all things cannot be *never* and *nowhere*."

Okay, I'll be honest—I really am not at all sure just what that means! Newton added these words to the *Principia* in response to criticism (from the influential philosopher George Berkeley (1685–1753)) that his original statements about absolute time were "pernicious and absurd notions," notions that were in fact atheistic in conception. That was a most serious charge in Newton's day, and he was trying (I think) to find some cover from those critics who spent more hours of the day thinking about God than of physics. Much more honest (in my opinion) are the witticisms 'time is just one damn thing after another' and 'time is what keeps everything from all happening at once.'[33] More funny than useful, yes, of course, but at least they're funny.

Newton's theological view of time is simply irrelevant to the modern physicist (although perhaps of more interest to the philosopher-historian) but in many cases it is of *central interest* to the science fiction writer. For example, Newton's religious

---

[32]William Lane Craig, "God and the Beginning of Time," *International Philosophical Quarterly*, March 2001, pp. 17–31, which discusses the question 'Why didn't God create the world sooner?' One irreverent answer is 'He was busy creating Hell for all those who ask that question,' but a more scholarly analysis can be found in Brian Leftow, "Why Didn't God Create the World Sooner?" *Religious Studies*, June 1991, pp. 157–172.

[33]This last 'definition' first (as far as I know) appeared in the work of the science fiction writer Ray Cummings (1887–1957), in his 1921 story "The Time Story," published in *Argosy-All-Story* magazine. He repeated the phrase in his 1929 novel *The Man Who Mastered Time*, and then again in the 1946 novel *The Shadow Girl*. ("This same Space; the spread of this lawn ... what would it be in another 100 years? Or a 1000? This little space, from the Beginning to the End so crowded with events and only Time to hold them apart!")

mindset and its (perhaps!) connection with time travel is treated in my short story "Newton's Gift," originally published in *Omni Magazine* (January 1979) and reprinted in Appendix B at the end of this book. Wells' Time Traveller's view of time is more Newtonian than it is Einsteinian—and perhaps that's not such a big surprise, considering that Einstein was only 16 years old when *The Time Machine* was published.

From the first (1905) it has been known that Einstein's special theory allows time travel into the future via the well-known mechanism of *time dilation*. (The faster a rocket ship travels relative to Earth, the slower is the tick-tock of a wrist watch worn by a rocketeer, compared to that of an identical watch back on Earth.)[34] To return from the future, however, to travel back into the past to the instant after the traveler began his journey, had been thought to be impossible. It was Gödel's discovery that showed the general theory, which has passed every experimental test it has been subjected to (most recently, the September 2015 detection, from two massive colliding black holes, of gravitational waves—'ripples in spacetime'—generated more than a billion years ago in an effect predicted by the general theory a century ago), does allow time travel to the past *under certain conditions*. It is this availability of a *theory* that distinguishes time travel speculations from the outlandish fantasy speculations with which it is often unjustly lumped—speculations that *are* in the province of quacks (such as ESP, astrology, and mind over matter a' la spoon bending).

In his general theory, Einstein showed how spacetime can be either 'flat' (in the no-gravity, special relativity case of what is called a *Minkowski spacetime*[35]) or 'curved' (those situations with gravity), and he did that not by verbal hand waving, but rather by writing mathematical equations that obey all the known laws of physics: his famous gravitational field, nonlinear differential tensor equations. These complicated equations are notoriously difficult to solve in general, but in certain, special cases they *have* been solved. Those solutions describe how matter and energy and spacetime interact. As the popular saying puts it, "Curved spacetime tells matter how to move, and energy and matter tell spacetime how to curve." In that sense, gravity *is* curved spacetime.

In 1949 Gödel found one such special solution to the field equations that describes the movement of mass-energy not only through space but also *backward in time* along trajectories in spacetime that are called *closed time-like lines* or *curves*

---

[34]One pulp magazine science fiction story (F. J. Bridge, "Via the Time Accelerator," *Amazing Stories*, January 1931) got this right when its time traveler explains how his time machine works with these words: "Time as we know it is not universally absolute. The rate of its passage depends to a great extent upon the velocity of its observer with regard to some certain reference system. A moving clock will run slower with respect to a selected coordinate system than a stationary one." (Recall my earlier comments on the personal time of a time traveler.)

[35]Named after Hermann Minkowski (1864–1909), Einstein's mathematics professor in Zurich who gave the now well-known spacetime diagram interpretation of special relativity which, when originally presented by Einstein, was in the form of pure mathematics.

(called CTLs or CTCs, respectively).[36] These trajectories are such that if a human traveled along one, *always at a speed less than that of light* (that's what *time-like* means), he would see everything around him happening in normal causal order from moment to moment (for example, the second hand on his wrist watch would tick clockwise into the local future), but eventually the CTL/CTC closes back on itself and the traveler finds himself in his own past.

On the scale of the Solar System, general relativity has causality built into itself, but on much larger scales things can be a good deal more complicated. On a very large, astronomical scale, in fact, curved spacetime can result in violations of causality, with effects occurring before their causes. That is what the physics and the mathematics of Gödel's solution imply. That is what is meant by saying there is a scientific, rational basis for discussing time travel to the past. It is particularly important to note that travel along one of the closed time-like world lines discovered by Gödel requires a *machine*, some kind of accelerating rocket ship. That's because none of Gödel's CTLs/CTCs are what is called a *geodesic*. That is, none are *free-fall* world lines.[37] This machine does not, however, generate CTLs/CTCs where none existed before (CTL/CTC *creation* requires what physicists call a *strong* time machine) but rather simply makes use of the CTLs/CTCs that are inherent in Gödel's spacetime. A Gödelian rocket ship then is an example of a *weak* time machine.

I mentioned earlier that "certain, special cases" of Einstein's gravitational field equations result in CTLs/CTCs. What was the "special case" that Gödel solved? His solution of the field equations is for a rotating, infinite, static universe composed of a perfect fluid at constant pressure. In such a universe Gödel found that naturally occurring CTLs/CTCs pass through every point in spacetime; that is, time travel in Gödel's universe is *not* the result of a machine *manipulating* mass and energy on a *local* scale (the classic science fictional description of a time machine); rather, in Gödel's spacetime time travel is a naturally occurring phenomenon! The observable

---

[36]Kurt Gödel, "An Example of a New Type of Cosmological Solutions of Einstein's Field Equations of Gravitation," *Reviews of Modern Physics*, July 1949, pp. 447–450. A CTL/CTC is a special type of *world line*; the trajectory through spacetime of every particle in the universe is a world line that extends from each particle's past to its future. Our everyday experiences are with world lines that never cross or come close to themselves (which would put a particle at or near the same spacetime point more than once). That lack of experience with CTLs/CTCs that self-intersect is what makes time travel to the past so difficult for humans to grasp. For a discussion of *how* Gödel did what he did, see Wolfgang Rindler, "Gödel, Einstein, Mach, Gamow, and Lanczos: Gödel's Remarkable Excursion into Cosmology," *American Journal of Physics*, June 2009, pp. 498–510.

[37]It was discovered in 1969, however, that this isn't strictly true *if* one allows for a test particle (our 'time traveler') to be electrically charged. Then, naturally present electromagnetic forces acting on the particle could be sufficient to propel the particle along a Gödelian CTL/CTC. That is, no rocket would be required. See U. K. De, "Paths in Universes Having Closed Time-Like Lines," *Journal of Physics A*, July 1969, pp. 427–432. There are other solutions to Einstein's equations that do allow time travel on free-fall geodesics: see, for example, I. D. Soares, "Inhomogeneous Rotating Universes with Closed Timelike Geodesics of Matter," *Journal of Mathematical Physics*, March 1980, pp. 521–525.

universe is, however, *non*-rotating and expanding (astronomers see red-shifts in the spectrums of distant stars) and so, although Gödel's spacetime satisfies the general relativity field equations, its time travel property does not hold in the spacetime in which we live. (This may account for why the initial reaction in the physics/ philosophical communities, to Gödel's discovery that time travel is *not* nonsense according to general relativity, was mostly indifference.) The failure to observe time travel in our universe may (somewhat surprisingly, I think) still have possible implications for us, however, as one philosopher has cleverly argued.[38] He points out that naturally occurring Gödelian time travel would endow the universe with properties particularly useful for the survival of intelligence (presumably that includes humans) against extinction from a multitude of cosmic disasters. So, for those who argue that the universe we live in was *made* for us (the advocates of various proofs of God's existence that have Him as Designer), we have an obvious question: why did He (apparently) skip incorporating time travel?

In an invited essay that appeared the same year as his time travel physics paper, Gödel specifically addressed the seemingly paradoxical aspect of what he had discovered: "By making a round trip on a rocket ship in a sufficiently wide course, it is possible in these [rotating] worlds to travel into any region of the past, present, and future, and back again, exactly as it is possible in other worlds to travel to distant parts of space. This state of affairs *seems* [my emphasis] to imply an absurdity. For it enables one, e.g., to travel into the near past of those places where he has himself lived. There he would find a person who would be himself at some earlier period of life.[39] Now he could do something to this person which, by his memory, he knows has not happened to him."

Gödel's nerve then failed him, and he defended the possibility of the paradox of a time traveler meeting himself in the past with what I think an astonishingly unconvincing argument (particularly so for a logician) based primarily on *engineering* limitations: "This and similar contradictions, however, in order to prove the impossibility of the worlds under consideration, presupposes the actual feasibility of the journey into one's own past. But the velocities which would be necessary in order to complete the voyage in a reasonable time are far beyond everything that

---

[38] Alasdair M. Richmond, "Gödelian Time-Travel and Anthropic Cosmology," *Ratio*, June 2004, pp. 176–190. Not all physicists think Gödel's result is actually time travel. At least two think it is all simply the result of mathematical hijinks, and that time machines must remain "an aspect of science fiction fantasy": see F. I. Cooperstock and S. Tieu, "Closed Timelike Curves and Time Travel: Dispelling the Myth," *Foundations of Physics*, September 2005, pp. 1497–1509. This skepticism towards Gödel actually started much earlier, when two physicists (one a Nobel physics laureate) incorrectly claimed Gödel had simply gotten his math wrong: see S. Chandrasekhar and J. P. Wright, "The Geodesics in Gödel's Universe," *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences*, March 1961, pp. 341–347. It was those two physicists who had erred, however, as was pointed out by the philosopher Howard Stein, in his "On the Paradoxical Time Structures of Gödel," *Philosophy of Science*, December 1970, pp. 589–601.

[39] You'll recall that this is *precisely* the situation that Wells mentions in his "Notorious Literary Humbug" essay. If only he had lived just three more years, to see what he thought to be an absurdity actually appear in the serious writings of a brilliant mathematician!

can be expected ever to become a practical possibility. Therefore it cannot be excluded a priori, on the ground of the argument given, that the space-time structure of the real world is of the type described."[40] That is, Gödel was trying to head off critics of his rotating universe model who might point to the time travel result as proof that the model had to be flawed.

In a footnote Gödel says that the time traveler would have to move at least as fast as nearly 71 % of the speed of light, and that if his rocket ship could "transform matter completely into energy" then the weight of the fuel would be greater than that of the rocket by a factor of 10^{22} divided by the square of the duration of the trip (in rocket years). A trip to the past in Gödel's universe would require a time machine that looked like Dr. Who's telephone booth attached to a fuel tank the size of several hundred *trillion* ocean liners. These are formidable numbers,[41] but they require no violation of physical laws, and that's what really counts if time travel is to be disproved. Gödel's use of engineering limitations for explaining away backwards time travel is actually worse than simply being wrong, because the puzzle is not in practicality but rather in showing, assuming that general relativity is correct, how correct mathematical physics can lead to what seems to be a paradoxical conclusion. (And see note 12 again, for another reason the 'fuel argument' really has no force at all against the possibility of time travel in Gödelian spacetime.)

So, what did the great man himself, Einstein, think of all this? In the same publication as Gödel's essay, he *cautiously* replied as follows: "Kurt Gödel's essay constitutes, in my opinion, an important contribution to the general theory of relativity, especially to the analysis of the concept of time. The problem here involved disturbed me already at the time of the building up of the general theory of relativity, without my having succeeded in clarifying it ... the distinction 'earlier-later' is abandoned for world-points which lie far apart in a cosmological sense, and those paradoxes, regarding the *direction* of the causal connection arise, of which Mr. Gödel has spoken ... It will be interesting to weigh whether these are not to be excluded on physical grounds."

Despite the mathematical physics of Gödel, showing the possibility of time travel to the past, many philosophers are not quite so sure. As one expressed his concerns, "No science-fiction staple poses more philosophical difficulties than time travel, but there is still no consensus as to whether time-travel fictions exhibit logical, metaphysical, or physical impossibility."[42] The best-known and possibly

---

[40]Kurt Gödel, "A Remark About the Relationship Between Relativity Theory and Idealistic Philosophy," in *Albert Einstein: Philosopher-Scientist*: volume 7 of *The Library of Living Philosophers* (P. A. Schilpp, editor), Open Court 1949.

[41]For the analysis of a rocket powered by matter/anti-matter, a known physical process that satisfies Gödel's energy requirement for time travel, see E. Purcell, "Radioastronomy and Communication Through Space," in *Interstellar Communication* (A. G. W. Cameron, editor), W. A. Benjamin 1963.

[42]Alasdair Richmond, "Time-Travel Fictions and Philosophy," *American Philosophical Quarterly*, October 2001, pp. 305–318.

oldest of the paradoxical situations that seem to be part-and-parcel of time travel is the so-called *grandfather paradox*,[43] expressed this way by philosopher David Lewis in his pioneering 1976 paper (see note 5):

> Consider Tim. He detests his grandfather, whose success in the munitions trade built the family fortune that paid for Tim's time machine. Tim would like nothing so much as to kill Grandfather, but alas he is too late. Grandfather died in his bed in 1957, while Tim was a young boy. But when Tim has built his time machine and traveled to 1920, suddenly he realizes that he is not too late after all. He buys a rifle, . . . and there [Tim] lurks, one winter day in 1921, rifle loaded, hate in his heart, as Grandfather walks closer, closer . . .

So, there's the puzzle. Tim can obviously achieve his goal—he has a loaded gun, he's an excellent shot, a clueless granddad is coming ever closer—but if Tim actually does kill grandfather, years *before* Tim was (will be) born, then how can Tim *be* born? And if he is not born, then how can Tim ('now' not in existence) travel back through time to kill grandfather? What a confusing mess, right? So, the only possible conclusion to all this is that the starting premise, that time travel makes sense, must actually be nonsense. Right?

Well, maybe, but then what of Gödel with his time traveling rocket ship? That's hard-as-diamond, unshakeable mathematical physics, for heaven's sake. We can't just ignore *that*! Lewis offers a way out of this conundrum, and when we get to the book's discussions on paradoxes (that's plural because, believe it or not, there are other paradoxes even *more* perplexing than that of killing granddad in the distant past) we'll return to his solution.

Ever since Lewis wrote his paper, philosophers have been particularly fascinated by the grandfather paradox and have shown themselves to be at least as inventive as the science fiction writers in discussing it, or variations on it.[44] Here, for example, is a twist on that paradox that I think particularly clever, one that avoids the murderous spirit of the tale told by Lewis and Horwich:

---

[43]The origin of this paradox is probably lost in time (the irony of that is *so* appropriate!), but I have traced it at least as far back as to the science fiction pulp magazine *Science Wonder Stories* which published, in its December 1929 issue, an editorial essay titled "The Question of Time Traveling." It challenged readers to think about the following scenario: "Suppose I can travel back into time, let me say 200 years; and I visit the homestead of my great great great grandfather, and am able to take part in the life of his time. I am thus enabled to shoot him, while he is still a young man and as yet unmarried. From this it will be noted that I could have prevented my own birth . . .."

[44]Even before Lewis' paper, Paul Horwich had reduced the grandfather paradox to *autoinfanticide*—a time traveler tries to kill his younger *self*—in "On Some Alleged Paradoxes of Time Travel," *The Journal of Philosophy*, August 14, 1975, pp. 432–444. But not all philosophers share this fascination. Earman (see the opening quote), for example, dismisses *all* of the science fiction paradoxes that are so beloved by fans of the genre as "while always good for a chuckle," they are just "crude and unilluminating means of approaching some delicate and deep issues about the nature of physical possibility." I think Earman is fundamentally correct, although I wouldn't go so far as to characterize the paradoxes as mere "chuckles." They are, after all, the source of much of the intellectual motivation prompting the exploration of the physics of time travel. An excellent example of this is found in the paper by the Russian physicist S. V. Krasnikov, "Time Travel Paradox," *Physical Review D*, February 14, 2002, pp. 064013-1 to 064013-8. The physics of the grandfather paradox is of *great* interest in this paper.

> Sarah has just completed building her time machine. She decides to test the machine on herself tomorrow morning at which time she intends to travel back one day. In the meantime, she goes home, puts some salve on the burn she received that day, and goes to bed. In the morning, Sarah, with coffee in hand, sits down to read the morning paper. She opens the paper to the following headline: 'Famous physicist found dead.' On the front page is a picture of her body, salve burn clearly visible on her arm, inside her pristine time machine. Underneath is the caption. 'Nobel-prize winning physicist found dead yesterday in mysterious device that materialized near city hall.' Extremely shaken, Sarah returns to the lab and destroys the time machine.[45]

Can any sense be made of this? We'll come back to this question later in Chap. 5, when we discuss the possibility (or not) of time being *multi*-dimensional.

Now, to conclude this Introduction, let me end with two amusing, connected short stories (in epistle form) that nicely describe the issues we'll take up in the rest of this book. The rejection letter for the denial of a research grant to fund the construction of a time machine has just been received . . .

That Useless Time Machine[46]

Dear Review Committee:
It is not our practice to raise complaints against a negative review report. We believe in peer refereeing and we respect it, whatever its content and consequences. However, in the case of our latest grant application (project named 'The Time Machine') we find it necessary to express our astonishment at the motivations with which our request for funding was turned down. Your main objection appears to be that our project is 'philosophically interesting' but 'practically useless', by which you mean that the project 'has no potential for applications.' We do not quite think that the main criterion for judging the scientific value of a project should be its practical usefulness, but never mind that. Let us agree that usefulness is a relevant criterion, especially when large amounts of money are involved. Why should that be a reason to turn down our project? Quite frankly, we cannot think of a project with better application potential than ours. Some examples:

- Cultural tourism: one could send herds of history fans back in time to witness the crucial episodes of the French Revolution, or to watch the Egyptians build the pyramids, or to videotape Socrates' lectures.
- Exotic safaris: we have already received several applications for dinosaur hunting expeditions (they got extinct anyway).

---

[45]G. C. Goddu, "Time Travel and Changing the Past: (Or How to Kill Yourself and Live to Tell the Tale)," *Ratio*, March 2003, pp. 16–32.

[46]Story by Roberto Casati (Senior researcher at CNRS, Paris) and Achille C. Varzi (Professor of Philosophy at Columbia University). Originally published in *Philosophy*, October 2001, pp. 581–583, and reproduced here by kind permission of the authors.

- Error detection: we could take a closer look at our past mistakes and learn how to avoid them in the future.
- Historic documentaries: think of the huge saving in set design, costumes, special effects, etc. (How much did *Gladiator* cost?)

And so on and so forth. Honestly, can you think of a project with better prospects for useful and thrilling applications?

Sincerely Yours,
The 'Time Machine' Research Group

Dear 'Time Machine' Research Group:
Thank you for your letter. We agree that it would be interesting to exploit a time machine for the uses that you suggest. It would also be remarkable if we could use it to prevent all sorts of unpleasant events that happened in the past. It would be remarkable, for instance, to be able to go back to November 22, 1963, and prevent Lee Harvey Oswald from killing John Kennedy, or to go back to April 14, 1912, and steer the Titanic around the iceberg. It would be excellent indeed to be able to do such things. However, suppose your project were to be successful. Suppose you *will* manage to build a time machine. Then why *didn't* you do any of those things? Why is it that our past history is still full of such sad events? Either this means that your project is doomed to fail and you will never manage to build a time machine; *or* it means that the project will succeed but that you are not going to use your time machine for these good purposes. In the first case, logic shows it would be pointless to support your project. In the second case, ethics dictates that it would be wrongdoing. Either way, you must concede that the reasons against your project are overwhelming.

Cordially Yours,
The Review Committee

Dear Review Committee:
Certainly you have noticed that our suggestions for practical applications of the time machine did not include any uses that could result in an alteration of the natural course of history. As a matter of fact, we believe that no such alteration is logically possible. According to our project, it is logically possible to *visit* the past but not to *modify* the past. No time traveler can undo what has been done or do what has not been done. So the logic is safe. This does not mean that the time traveler will be ineffectual during her stay in the past, of course; it simply means that what she is going to do is something that she has already done. An accurate catalogue of all the past events would include an account of the arrival of the Time Machine from out of nothing as well as an account of all the actions and reactions that followed. And ethics is safe, too. For, if indeed we managed to go back to Dallas, we could not stop Oswald from doing what he did. Nobody would be able to stop Oswald because nobody was able to stop him (and nobody was able to stop Oswald because nobody will ever be able to do so, even if they came from the future). Alas, the past is full of sad events but there is nothing that we can do about that.

Respectfully Yours,
The 'Time Machine' Research Group

Dear 'Time Machine' Research Group:
We appreciate the distinction between changing the past (impossible) and affecting the past (possible). However, this simply reinforces our initial impression: your project has no practical value. If in order to travel to the past one has to have been there already, and if one can only do what has already been done, then *á quoi bon l'effort*? Why should we invest in a 'Time Machine' at all? We are afraid that our decision is now final.

Yours with best wishes,
The Committee
Well, all seems to be certainly lost with *that*. But, wait, perhaps not. Maybe, with just one more *really good* appeal, The Committee's rejection can be reversed! If *you* were on the Review Committee, and had just read the following letter, how would *you* vote?

A Useful Time Machine[47]

Dear Review Committee:
We regret your continued decision to reject our proposal. Even though you have told us your decision is now final, we humbly ask your indulgence for one last appeal. We believe you have misinterpreted a crucial part of our proposal.

You maintain that our 'Time Machine' project 'has no potential for applications' and has 'no practical value.' You ultimately base this claim on the fact that "If in order to travel to the past one has to have been there already, and if one can only do what has already been done, then *á quoi bon l'effort*? Why should we invest in a 'Time Machine' at all?" Your argument however is a misinterpretation of our own comments that 'According to our project it is logically possible to visit the past but not to modify the past … This does not mean that the time traveler will be ineffectual during her stay in the past, of course; it simply means that what she is going to do is something that she has already done.' We regret the awkward and easily misleading locution of the last sentence, but such are the perils of talking about time travel. Regardless, please consider our clarification.

Certainly if we were proposing that the time traveler *be* 5 years old again, we would be proposing something not worth the effort—our proposed time traveler has already turned five and cannot do so again. But we are not proposing that the time traveler do things that have already occurred in her own personal past, but rather in

---

her personal future. The time traveler has not yet, from her personal temporal perspective, travelled back to, say, the library at Alexandria in 100 BCE. When she does travel back to 100 BCE to obtain scans of the books in the library before its destruction, she will be older than she is now. When she returns she will be still older (and we hope wiser, i.e., in possession of valuable information to which neither you nor we currently have access).

But is it true that as of 2002 AD [the year this letter was written] the time traveler has already visited Alexandria in 100 BCE? It could well be. But whether or not it is depends upon whether it is *also* true that our project will be successfully funded and completed. Because time travel into the past involves reverse causation, certain past events, such as the time traveler visiting 100 BCE, will be dependent upon certain future events, such as the successful funding and completion of our project. Hence, if it is not true that our project is both funded and completed, then it is not true that our time traveler has of 2002 already visited 100 BCE.
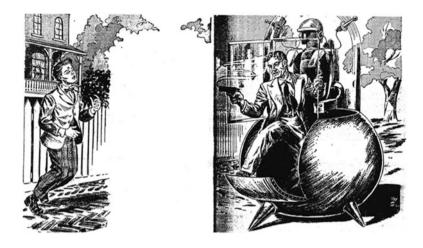
But suppose we were to learn now, before the funding and completion took place, that our time traveler had indeed been present at the library in Alexandria in 100 BCE. Would this imply that there was no reason to expend the effort to fund our project? After all, if the travel has 'already' happened, why bother funding the project? Firstly, such an argument does not imply that a 'Time Machine' would have no practical application, but rather expresses the futile hope that one could in fact get the practical benefits (if time travel is successful, we obtain the desired information) without expending the effort at all. Secondly, the hope is futile, for if we learn right now that our time traveler had been present at the library in 100 BCE, we would then know, assuming no other possible funding source, that you *will* expend the effort to fund our project. To deny this last is to make the impossible suggestion that even though your support is truly a causal antecedent of the successful trip, there is now no need for you to actually expend the effort to provide funding.

Hence, the effort is far from pointless, for the project will only succeed through your and our efforts. And success will generate, not only all the practical applications we outlined in our first letter, but, in addition, a host of information gathering applications such as more accurate historical research, lost item location identification, legal testimony verification, etc. Even if, as we (and you) acknowledged, no one could now prevent Oswald from killing Kennedy, wouldn't it be worth verifying that Oswald was the lone killer of Kennedy? Also, the information gathering need not be restricted to the past. For example, information concerning the prices of various stocks 10 years from now would be extremely valuable to a suitably cautious and prudent investor. Surely you cannot object to our information gathering in the future on the grounds that 'it will already have been done.' And just think, the information we obtain could be what allows you to obtain at very low prices those stocks that in the future will be extremely valuable and allows your esteemed committee to dramatically increase your support of worthy scientific endeavors.

Again, we ask you to reconsider your original decision.
Respectfully yours,
The 'Time Machine' Research Group

A time machine inventor makes an experimental test of the grandfather paradox! (Illustration from "Thompson's Time Traveling Theory" by Mortimer Weisinger), *Amazing Stories* March 1944 (art by Malcolm Smith). Reprinted by arrangement with Forrest J. Ackerman, Holding Agent, 2495 Glendower Ave., Hollywood, CA 90027.

Not everybody likes time machines as a science fiction gadget, not even otherwise enthusiastic devotees of the genre. For example, in a Letter-to-the-Editor published in the December 1931 issue of Astounding Stories, *one seventeen-year-old fan had this to say: "There is only one kind of Science Fiction story I dislike, and that is the so-called time-traveling. It doesn't seem logical to me. For example, supposing a man had a grudge against his grandfather, who is now dead. He could hop in his machine and go back to the year that his grandfather was a young man and murder him. And if he did this how could the revenger be born? I think the whole thing is the 'bunk.'" As this book will demonstrate, this young reader was not alone in that opinion. As this book will also demonstrate, in the last few decades that view has been rapidly evolving.*

For Further Discussion

Read again the penultimate sentence in the last letter from The 'Time Machine' Research Group, and then think about how you would respond to the following questions.

(1) Would *you* invest in a stock market if you knew somebody else had a time machine giving *them* advance information on stock performance?
(2) How might the existence of a time machine influence the future of the stock market, in general? For an early science fiction look at these questions, see Lee Laurence, "History in Reverse," *Amazing Stories*, October 1939.

One writer has speculated that Wells' model for the Time Traveller was the American inventor Thomas Edison. (See Martin T. Willis, "Edison as Time Traveler: H. G. Wells' Inspiration for His First Scientific Character," *Science Fiction Studies*, July 1999, pp. 284–294.) As Wells worked his way from *The Chronic Argonauts*, through revisions, to the final *Time Machine*, the story's hero evolved from Dr. Nebogipfel to the Philosophical Inventor to the Time Traveller. The one individual who could have inspired all of these various hero types was, according to Willis, Edison, a world-famous Victorian-age celebrity whose story was well known to Wells. If Wells had today's scientific personalities available as potential inspirations, who do you think he would use? How might that choice affect the story and structure of *The New Time Machine*?

The idea of *personal time*, used by the philosopher David Lewis (note 5) to consistently interpret time travel stories, has been used in a quite different way (although time travel gets a few words, too) by the philosopher Roy Sorenson. In his paper "The Cheated God: Death and Personal Time," *Analysis*, April 2005, pp. 119–125, Sorenson asks you to imagine an immortal god. For some reason this god runs afoul of a demon, who curses the god in a curious way. (The 'telling of a story' is a common technique in philosophical papers and, while foreign to what readers of physics papers are used to seeing, is not without some charm. Just be sure to always keep in mind that its

primary use is as an *attention-grabbing* device, but as far as having any other merit, well, that's often another story.) The curse is such that the life span of the once immortal god is reduced to that of a normal human life span and yet, perhaps surprisingly, the god will still never die. As Sorenson writes, "[The god] will live forever. But [the god] will not have a better life than a mortal. The demon has harmed [the god] as gravely as death harms mortals." How, you might wonder, is this to be done? As Sorenson explains, "[The god] lives half of its now mortal span, followed by a trillion years of nothingness, then a quarter of its mortal span followed by a trillion years of nothingness, then an eighth of its mortal span followed by a trillion years of nothingness and so on ad infinitum." Sorenson's argument is simply an exotic form of the high school summation of the geometric series $\frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{4} + \frac{1}{8} + \cdots = 1$, where there are an *infinite* number of terms to the left of the equality. (Each term represents a period of time during which the god is conscious, and each $+$ represents a trillion years.) Sorenson picked a trillion years of nothingness between consecutive periods of consciousness for (I suggest) dramatic reasons, but suppose instead that he had picked 1 μs for the period of nothingness. Discuss what effect this would have (if any) on the life of the god. Consider two cases:

(a) There is no minimum time duration for consciousness, and
(b) There *is* a minimum time duration such that, for any shorter duration, a consciousness remains 'unaware' even though it is *not* in a state of nothingness.

After working all night making some final calculations, a physicist carefully solders a final resistor into the control module of the world's first time machine and then steps into the gadget that is a sure bet to win the next Nobel Prize in physics. As she does, she notices that it is precisely 8:10 in the morning, as indicated on both her wrist watch and the clock on the lab wall. After settling into a plush leather seat she pushes the time machine's power button, the machine glows with a flickering blue-red halo and hums with a mighty throb for a while and then, at precisely 8:15 by her wrist watch, she steps out of the machine and back into her lab. She notices the clock on the wall now reads 8:05. That is, she took 5 min of personal time (8:10 to 8:15) to travel 5 min of external time into the past (8:10 to 8:05). On the one hand she certainly seems to be a time traveler, in that she exits the machine before she enters it. (Ignore the issue of there being *two identical* physicists in the lab from 8:05 to 8:10!) On the other hand, the elapsed personal and external

times are *equal*. Does this suggest a need to modify or expand David Lewis' definition of a time traveler? As you ponder this question, you might want to read the following four papers: (1) Paul R. Daniels, "Lewisian Time Travel in a Relativistic Setting," *Metaphysica*, October 2014, pp. 329–345, (2) Douglas Kutach, "Time Travel and Time Machines," in *A Companion to the Philosophy of Time* (H. Dyke and A. Bardon, editors), Wiley-Blackwell 2013, pp. 301–314, and (3) Frank Arntzenius, "Time Travel: Double Your Fun," *Philosophy Compass*, November 2006, pp. 599–616. A bit more demanding (but worth the effort) is the long chapter "Time Travel and Time Machines" by Chris Smeenk and Christian Wüthrich, in *The Oxford Handbook of Philosophy of Time* (C. Callender, editor), Oxford 2011, pp. 577–630 (see page 580, in particular).

> The idea that information is physical has given rise to a series of discoveries which indicate that physics has much to say about fundamentals of computer science.

The above quotation is the opening sentence to a most interesting paper by the physicist Dave Bacon, "Quantum Computational Complexity in the Presence of Closed Timelike Curves," *Physical Review A* (70), 2004. (When he wrote, Bacon was at Caltech, but he is now a software engineer at Google.) The title of Bacon's paper, translated into blunt English, is "It Would Be Really Neat If We Could Merge a Time Machine With a Computer." That is, to further quote from Bacon's paper, "One could [efficiently] solve a hard problem by trying out a solution to the problem, sending one's computer back in time, attempting a different solution to the problem, sending one's computer back in time, etc., until a solution to the problem has been found." There then follows a pretty sophisticated analysis on the self-consistent time evolution of a quantum system, ending with Bacon's frank admission that "we would not be honest if we did not end this paper with the caveat that this work is at best a creature of eager speculation . . . Practical considerations are humorous at best." Read Bacon's paper and discuss what he means by "a hard problem." (There *is* a technical term used by computer scientist for such problems: NP-complete.)

The occasional theological commentary in this book may strike some as a bit odd for a topic treated with heavy doses of deep mathematics in the physics literature but, as you'll see on the following pages, theology is an unescapable dimension to any informed discussion of time travel. A literary connection

between time travel and theology has, in fact, existed for a long time. As pointed out in Paul Alkon's *Origins of Futuristic Fiction* (University of Georgia Press 2010), "The first time-traveler in English literature is a guardian angel who returns with state documents from 1998 to the year 1728 in Samuel Madden's *Memoirs of the Twentieth Century*" (published in 1733, nearly three centuries ago). Madden was an Irish-Anglican clergyman whose book was satire rather than science fiction, but its time traveling aspect was a first. As Professor Alkon also writes, "Madden [was] the first to write a narrative that purports to be a document from the future. He deserves recognition as the first to toy with the rich idea of time-travel in the form of an artifact sent backward from the future to be discovered in the present." Your assignment: read and discuss Alkon's book.

You'll recall that Gödel cast his view of time travel in the form of a self-encounter in the past. In Frederik Pohl's "Let the Ants Try," we find a science fiction tale that appeared essentially simultaneously with Gödel's paper (*Planet Stories*, Winter 1949), in which a time traveler journeys back forty million years. Upon stepping out of his time machine, he hears a "raucous animal cry" from somewhere in the nearby jungle. Later, after other adventures in time, he returns to near the same point in spacetime. After stepping out of his time machine, he sees himself in the distance—the earlier version of himself during the first trip. Then, suddenly, the time traveler meets a violent death: "As his panicky lungs filled with air for the last time, he knew what animal had screamed in the depth of the Coal Measure forest." In fact, self-encounters had appeared in science fiction *years* before Gödel's paper. In the 1942 story "Minus Sign" (*Astounding Science Fiction*, November) by Jack Williamson, for example, a spaceship battles with itself while traveling backward in time. How do you think a scientist like Gödel would have liked these two stories? (Who knows, maybe he *did* read them!) If you could travel back in time to 1949 to ask him if such tales had been an inspiration, do you think he would be intrigued, amused, or instead would he be insulted?

Contents

About the Author

Paul J. Nahin was born in California, and did all of his schooling there, including a PhD in electrical engineering from UC Irvine (1972). He is now emeritus professor of electrical engineering at the University of New Hampshire. Prof. Nahin has published a couple of dozen short science fiction stories in *Analog*, *Omni*, and *Twilight Zone* magazines, and has written 18 books on mathematics and physics. He has given invited talks on mathematics at many prestigious institutions, and has appeared on National Public Radio's "Science Friday" show (discussing time travel) as well as on New Hampshire Public Radio's "The Front Porch" show (discussing imaginary numbers). He advised Boston's WGBH Public Television's "Nova" program on the script for their time travel episode.

Chapter 1
A Broad Look at Time Travel

"Hold infinity in the palm of your hand and eternity in an hour."

—William Blake, writing in "Auguries of Innocence" (1863), with words that could quite well describe what it would be like to time travel

"I need a place to hide, that's why I believe in yesterday."

—The Beatles (*Yesterday*, 1965)

1.1 Time Travel in the Fantasy and Science Fiction Literature

"Woodn't it be grate to go back in tyme and correct your mistakes? Wouldn't it be great to go back in time and correct your mistakes?"

—motto of *Time Twisters* comics

To travel in time.

Could there possibly be a more exciting, more romantic, more wonderful adventure than that? I don't think so, and in this opening section I want to just briefly discuss how fascinating many writers (and their readers) have found the concept of time travel, and to point out that the fascination began *long before* mathematical physicists discovered time travel lurking in Einstein's general theory of relativity.[1]

Before the arrival of humans on the surface of the Moon in 1969, the only other 'fantastic voyage' that could compare with time travel was traveling through outer space. During the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, in fact, such voyages were the center of a genre of fiction (now called *science fiction*) called the "imaginary voyage" or "extraordinary voyage." Marjorie Hope Nicolson's[2] 1948 book *Voyages*

---

[1]An excellent, book-length *literary* treatment of time travel is by David Wittenberg, *Time Travel: the popular philosophy of narrative*, Fordham University Press 2013.

[2]Marjorie Hope Nicolson (1894–1981) was a literary scholar of the first rank at both Smith College and Columbia University.

to the Moon carefully documents just how popular that form of literature was—and still is. Since 1969 the first such voyages have become history, of course, and time travel has replaced space travel as the modern "imaginary voyage."

It seems a safe bet that that, given a random selection of middle-aged adults, the vast majority of them would respond enthusiastically if asked whether time travel interests them. This fascination with time travel has actually been 'scientifically' documented. In one intriguing study,[3] several hundred men and women were asked to consider the possibility of spending an hour, a day, and a year back in both their personal past (since birth) and their historical past (before birth). They were further told that it would cost $10,000 to purchase such time travel services. Their response indicated that 10 % would be willing to spend that much money for an hour in the historical past, 22 % for a day, and 36 % for a year. As might be expected, the numbers rose as the cost dropped and, if such trips were free the interest was almost universal. As one writer put it, "Time travel [is] the ultimate fantasy, the scientific addition to the human quest for immortality."[4] And as a philosopher observed, "[T]he popular appeal of time travel . . . is no doubt due to a nostalgia for the past, which is almost an omnipresent aspect of the human condition."[5]

Fiction writers have, for *centuries*, recognized the fantasy appeal of time travel. The common fairy tale theme of 'The Three Wishes,' in which the recipient ends up using the final wish to undo the unforeseen consequences of the first two, is the precursor to all modern change-the-past time travel stories. Indeed, the means of time travel in the Norwegian poet Johan Wessel's 1781 play *Anno 7603 is* a fairy. Some of the best modern science fiction stories have played with the fantasy appeal of time travel by having gifts arrive by accident from the future: the moral of such tales is generally that unearned gifts usually bring grief.[6] The editor's introduction to a time travel story involving the Civil War referred to the fantasy aspect of time travel—with a reference to another age-old adult fantasy—when he wrote "time travel stories about the Civil War have one thing in common with pornography; they serve to titillate an impulse [in the case of time travel stories, the impulse to change history] and to frustrate [history]."[7] This is the motivation for the time traveler in Stephen King's 2011 novel *11/22/63*, who uses what appears to be a naturally occurring wormhole (connecting a Maine diner to 1958) for his attempts at preventing the assassination of John F. Kennedy.

---

[3]T. J. Cottle, "Fantasies of Temporal Recovery and Knowledge of the Future," in *Perceiving Time*, John Wiley 1976.

[4]T. Paul, "The Worm Ouroboros: Time Travel, Imagination, and Entropy," *Extrapolation*, Fall 1983, pp. 272–279.

[5]J. W. Smith, "Time Travel and Backward Causation," *Cogito* 1985, pp. 57–67.

[6]Among the many such tales, five particularly good ones are "Something for Nothing" by Robert Sheckley, "Mimsy Were the Borogoves" by Lewis Padgett (pseudonym of the married couple Henry Kuttner and C. L. Moore), "Child's Play" by William Tenn (pseudonym of Philip Klass), "The Little Black Bag" by Cyril Kornbluth, and "Thing of Beauty" by Damon Knight. All can be found in various anthologies.

[7]*The Fantastic Civil War* (F. McSherry, Jr., editor), Baen 1991.

A character in the 1985 novel *The Bird of Time* by George Effinger nicely captures the fantasy appeal of time travel with the declaration "The past ... is the home of romance." On a less poetic level, time travel and the movies and stories about it fascinate most people because they turn our everyday world view upside down and inside out.[8] Such movies and stories make people *think*. It is therefore not surprising that time travel movies have been popular for decades, from the pioneering *Berkeley Square* in 1933, to the classic 1960 filming of *The Time Machine*, to *Back to the Future* in 1985 (*the* top film that year in a *Boxoffice* magazine poll), to the flawless 1989 *Bill & Ted's Excellent Adventure*, to the clever *Terminator* action films, to the ingenious 2012 *Looper*, to the commercially successful 2014 *Interstellar*. Each of these films, and others, too, will be discussed later in the book.

When we discuss time travel, we should really be careful to distinguish between two quite different versions: to the future, and to the past. There is no dispute, today, about the first. As two *severe critics* of the possibility of time travel to the past wrote decades ago, "After 1900, special relativity made scientific discussion of time machines possible."[9] What they were referring to is the fact that, by traveling in a rocket ship fast enough (but never, unlike Superman, faster than the speed of light), and far enough, one could leave Earth, loop out on a vast journey perhaps halfway across the universe, and then return hundreds, thousands, even millions of years in the future. You could theoretically (ignoring all the *engineering* difficulties) do this, in fact, with the apparent passage of your 'personal time,' (as measured by your wrist watch or the beating of your heart) as brief as you'd like. (Physicists call 'personal time' *proper time*, and I'll return to this in Chap. 3.) This astonishing conclusion from special relativity, that time travel to the future makes physical sense, literally put a lot of Victorian-era trained physicists into shock.

A quite sophisticated use of this idea appeared early in science fiction, in the tale of a space traveler who returns from a high-speed trip out to the blue supergiant star Rigel in the constellation Orion.[10] The 900 or so light years of the round trip had taken just 6 months of ship or personal time (proper time), but a thousand years of back-home time. The traveler returns to Earth to find all he had left behind long dead and returned to dust: "Sometimes I waken from a dream in which they are all so near ... all my old companions ... and for a moment I cannot realize how far away they are. Beyond years and years."

Another story[11] of a trip into the future that delivers an equally powerful emotional impact, this time via a Wellsian-type time machine (more on what that

---

[8]Somewhat more pompous (but no less correct) was this observation by an academic: "The time-travel [film] romance is an attempt to reenchant the world, to regain a sense of belongingness, to reinstate the magical, autocentric Universe of the child and the primitive." See W. Wachhorst, "Time Travel Romance on Film," *Extrapolation*, Winter 1984, pp. 340–359.

[9]S. Deser and R. Jackiw, "Time Travel?" *Comments on Nuclear and Particle Physics*, September 1992, pp. 337–354.

[10]R. H. Wilson, "Out Around Rigel," *Astounding Stories*, December 1931.

[11]W. Tucker, *The Year of the Quiet Sun*, Gregg 1979.

means later in this chapter) rather than by rocket travel, tells of a time traveler trapped in post-nuclear war times, where there is no energy available to power his machine for the return trip. As the story ends, he finds the woman he had loved and left behind in the past. She is now the elderly widow of another man, having married his rival because the time traveler (just like Wells' Time Traveller) never returned.

A trip into the future does not *have* to be serious or sad. A nice example of that is the story of a spaceship crew that sets off for the Alpha Centauri triple star system, more than four light years distant.[12] They survive the trip, which requires 500 years of both personal *and* external time (this story is the *only one* I'll mention in this book that uses *a preserving drug* rather than physics). What causes me to include it in a book on *time travel* (stories in which proper and external time are one-in-the-same are simply *not* about *time travel*) is that, long before they arrive at the end of their journey, the secret of faster-than-light (FTL) travel is discovered back on Earth and so they arrive at their destination to find a human reception committee! As you'll see when we get to Chap. 3, knowledge of FTL travel is equivalent to knowing the secret of travel into the past, and so the crew is sent back in time, to Earth, to just one year after they left—and they listen to their own radio communications arriving from deep space.

The *real* adventure in time travel, as suggested by "Far Centaurus," would be to go backward in time, to visit the past. The editor of the science fiction pulp magazine *Thrilling Wonder Stories* used the powerful emotional hook of changing the past in a 1950 blurb announcing a time travel story coming in the next issue: "What's the biggest mistake you ever made? Don't worry about it. You may have pulled some awful boners in your time, but there's a sure-fire remedy for them all. It's simple. Just look up at that old time-clock on the wall—and turn it back to the moment just preceding your terrible blunder. Then make your corrections—and set your time-clock back to the present. You may be starting a new chain of error, but why fret? You can go back in time again..." Or, as the promotional text on the video package of the 1986 movie *Peggy Sue Got Married* says, "to do it again" is "the golden opportunity almost everyone has longed for at least once."

Writing less romantically, a philosopher declared that a "major source of interest in the time travel question is our general fascination with the exotic and the child-like frustration we sometimes feel at being confined to the present. We wish that the benefits of moving through space could be supplemented with the benefits which would accrue from movements through time."[13] Robert Silverberg, a science fiction writer who has used the time travel theme often and effectively, expressed this sentiment quite clearly when he wrote "Suppose you had a machine that would enable you to fix everything that's wrong in the world ... The machine can do anything ... it gives you a way of slipping backward and forward in time ... Call this machine whatever you want. Call it Everybody's Fantasy Actualizer. Call it a

[12]A. E. Van Vogt, "Far Centaurus," *Astounding Science Fiction*, January 1944.

[13]R. A. Sorenson, "Time Travel, Parahistory and Hume," *Philosophy*, April 1987, pp. 227–236.

Time Machine Mark Nine."[14] He gives a masterful demonstration of what he means by that in one of his own stories, a tale[15] set in a year when time machines actually exist. Even so, the characters use their imaginations to explore their fantasy worlds and wishes—wishes that could (if they *really* wanted to) be realized with a real time machine. Time travel fiction is, you see, the ultimate escapist literature!

The adventure promised by time travel to the past doesn't necessarily mean *pleasant* adventure, and science fiction has used that idea to great effect. The unstated horror of a trip backward in time, if you think just a bit about it, is that it would bring the dead past, filled with all its dead occupants, alive again, literally resurrected from dank and moldering graves. The top of Mount Everest, the bottom of the Marianas Trench, the sands of Mars—none of these exotic places can even be mentioned in the same breath with the *past*. The capture of the mystery and, yes, the sheer terror of the past, is in this opening line to a 1950s tale: "When Dr. Flitter came into the room, it seemed as though the past and its dead people came in with him, clinging to him like stale surgery smells, like the cold sweat of ancient autopsies."[16] In another equally macabre story, we read of a time traveler in the past anticipating a meeting with a long-dead lover as he "shivered with a renewal of horror . . . She ought to be grateful to him for having raised her from the dead, even briefly."[17]

Another tale, slightly less gruesome, tells us of a character who delights in pointing out all the bad aspects of living in the past.[18] Tell him *when* in time, and he quickly ticks off the disadvantages of being *then*. To live in ancient Greece would let you rub shoulders with Aristotle, sure, but you already know what he said and you'd soon regret the lack of modern plumbing. The year of the American Revolution might let you exchange greetings with George Washington, but you'd also have to put up with cholera in Philadelphia, malaria in New York, and the fact that if you needed an operation there would be no anesthesia anywhere. The Victorian Age appeals to modern romantics but, before you go back, you'd better have your eyes and teeth checked. The time traveling historian in one novel[19] takes these medical warnings to heart and has her appendix prophylactically removed, and is further advised to have her nose cauterized against all the awful stinks of her destination, the fourteenth century.

On the other hand, poor health care isn't *all* there is with time travel to the past. One time traveler from the future, for example, makes a very good living in the past

---

[14]R. Silverberg, "Ms. Found in an Abandoned Time Machine," *Beyond the Safe Zone*, Warner 1986.

[15]R. Silverberg, "Many Mansions," *Beyond the Safe Zone*, Warner 1986.

[16]R. Bretnor, "The Past and Its Dead People," *Magazine of Fantasy and Science Fiction*, September 1956.

[17]L. Marlow, *The Devil in Crystal*, Faber and Faber 1944.

[18]A. Bester, "Hobson's Choice," *Magazine of Fantasy and Science Fiction*, August 1952.

[19]C. Willis, *Doomsday Book*, Bantam 1992.

by winning bets on yet-to-happen events whose outcomes he knows.[20] Time travel to the past allows a Parisian curio shop in the present to offer remarkably authentic looking newspapers from 1804 whose only 'flaw' is that they appear to be fresh off the press—which of course they are![21] And the failed professor in one romantic story[22] finds the Paris of 1482 infinitely better than the Paris of 1961.

A popular fictional appearance of time travel is the use of the past as a hiding place, as a sanctuary for those wishing to escape the troubles of modern times.[23] An interesting twist on this idea was presented in one tale[24] in which the past is used for later military gain in the present. In this story the Earth of a thousand years in the future is ruled by a dictator, and the oppressed masses are unable to arm themselves for revolt. So, back into the past travels an agent to arrange for the construction of weapons, which are then stockpiled in hidden caverns where they can be retrieved for use ten centuries later. The past is used in this story as both a sanctuary *and* a repository from which to make war in the future, and so we have a time travel fantasy for both doves *and* hawks in the same tale! This military use of the past is passive; other writers have more aggressively used time travel to the past for military gain as, for example, mining uranium deposits before they have had time to reduce themselves to lead via radioactive decay,[25] or in drilling for Middle East oil in the past to deprive adversaries of it in the present.[26]

Time travel to the past would, perhaps, interest criminals, too. As the science fiction writer Larry Niven wrote, "If one could travel in time, what wish could not be answered? All the treasures of the past would fall to one man with a submachinegun. Cleopatra and Helen of Troy might share his bed, if bribed with a trunkful of modern cosmetics."[27] Or, as the tragically flawed inventor of the first time machine dreamed, before using time travel to commit what he thought would be the perfect locked-room murder, "The Great Harrison Partridge would have untold wealth. He could pension off his sister Agatha and never have to see her

---

[20]C. Sprague, "Time Track," *Startling Stories*, January 1951.

[21]M. Leinster, *Time Tunnel*, Pyramid Books 1964.

[22]U. K. Le Guin, "April in Paris," *Fantastic Stories*, September 1962.

[23]There are *many* excellent examples of such tales, a few of which are Clifford Simak, "Over the River & Through the Woods"; Ray Bradbury, "The Fox and the Forest"; Jack Finney, "Such Interesting Neighbors"; J. B. Priestly, "Mr. Strenberry's Tale"; James Gunn, "The Reason Is With Us"; and H. B. Piper, "Flight from Tomorrow." All can be found in various anthologies.

[24]R. F. Young, "Not to be Opened—," *Astounding Science Fiction*, January 1950.

[25]C. Simak, "Project Mastodon," *Galaxy Science Fiction*, March 1955.

[26]P. Anderson, "Wildcat," *Magazine of Fantasy and Science Fiction*, November 1958, and W. Jeschke, *The Last Day of Creation*, St. Martin's Press 1982.

[27]L. Niven, "The Theory and Practice of Time Travel," in *All the Myriad Ways*, Ballantine 1971.

again. He would have untold prestige and glamour, despite his fat and baldness, and the beautiful and aloof Faith Preston would fall into his arms like a ripe plum."[28]

Instead of viewing the past as an aid to crime, some writers have used it as the perfect dumping ground for criminals, as a highly convenient place to remove them from society.[29] After all, there can be no breakout from the prison of the past—at least not without a time machine. What might happen to criminal recidivists in a world that has mastered time travel is nicely explained in one story as follows: "If you cannot live among people, then off to the reptiles—one hundred or one hundred twenty million years before the present. There you wouldn't freeze in a tropical pre-glacial climate, and you could nourish yourself on plants. But there is no one to talk with, boredom, and in the end you offer yourself up as an afternoon snack to a tyrannosaurus."[30] With an interesting twist on this is the tale[31] of a physics professor who *helps* criminals disappear into the past to escape relentless police pursuit.

Museum curators, too, would seem to be obvious clients for time machine companies, as would collectors of extinct species who work for zoos. An example of the first case is in a novel[32] about a time travel business called *Time Researchers*, with the corporate mottos 'We Sift the Sands of Time.' It works as a futuristic version of Indiana Jones, as finders of lost historical artifacts for customers who can pay the substantial charges. A typical mission is to make original sound recordings of one of Lincoln's unreported speeches. We find the same idea in a short story[33] about a business called *Genealogy, Inc*., with the corporate motto

"An Ancestor for Everybody." It uses a 'time scanner' to provide its clients with a list of distinguished predecessors. And in another novel we read of the Historical Corps, whose time travel agents are "writing the definitive history of mankind.".[34]

Another use for time travel to the past, one of the most unusual I have seen, was suggested in a philosophical article[35] which considers an age-old question that has

---

[28]A. Boucher, "Elsewhen," *Astounding Science Fiction*, January 1943. Partridge's dream is shattered, however, because he overlooks a few details about time travel, ones that he wouldn't have missed if he could have read this book. We'll come back to this classic story, which merges a time machine with murder, later in the book.

[29]This is a popular science fiction scenario, and three of the best stories playing with it are P. Anderson, "My Object All Sublime," *Galaxy Science Fiction*, June 1961; I. Watson, "In the Upper Cretaceous with the Summerfire Brigade," in *Stalin's Teardrops*, Victor Gollancz 1991; and R. Silverberg, "Hawksbill Station," *Galaxy Science Fiction*, August 1967.

[30]S. Gansovsky, "Vincent Van Gogh," in *Aliens, Travelers, and Other Strangers*, Macmillan 1984.

[31]J. Finney, "The Face in the Photo," in *About Time*, Simon and Schuster 1986.

[32]W. Tucker, *The Lincoln Hunters*, Rinehart 1958. See also A. Bitov, "Pushkin's Photograph," in *The New Soviet Fiction*, Abbeville Press 1989.

[33]M. Shaara, "Man of Distinction," *Galaxy Science Fiction*, October 1956.

[34]L. A. Frankowski, *The Cross-Time Engineer*, Del Rey 1986. The same idea is in the 1991 film comedy *The Spirit of '76*, in which time-traveling historians from 2176 visit the past in an attempt to reconstruct the lost records of the founding of America.

[35]J. C. Graves and J. E. Roper, "Measuring Measuring Rods," *Philosophy of Science*, January 1965, pp. 39–56.

long bedeviled schoolboys: "If everything in the Universe doubled in size overnight while we slept, could we tell what had happened when we woke up next morning?" The usual answer to this puzzle (called the *Universal nocturnal expansion* by philosophers) is *no*, but the authors of the article suggest that 'all' we need do is take a yardstick back to yesterday and compare it with itself! Great idea, for sure, but it had appeared years earlier in a science fiction story.[36]

More ingenious uses for the past are discussed in the story[37] of a time travel business called *Time Associates*. One use comes in the form of a request from a United States senator who wants to send the disadvantaged of today back into the remote past, where they could have a fresh start on a virgin Earth. Yet another use comes from a religious fringe group that wants to purchase exclusive rights to the time of Jesus—not to visit, but to prevent *anyone* from visiting. The group fears that any such visitors would "learn the truth," which might contradict the very legends that form the heritage of Christianity. And, in what may be the most ingenious idea of all, *Time Associates* itself does not do business in the present, but rather 150,000 years in the past, in a 'new' country called Mastodonia. The corporate lawyer, you see, has determined that such an arrangement legally means the company is a *foreign* company doing business outside the United States, and so it is not liable for taxes to the IRS!

The tourist trade is a booming business in science fiction, with dinosaur hunting at the top of the list. There are many such tales,[38] including the cerebral stories in L. Sprague de Camp's short-story collection *Rivers of Time*, starting with the classic "A Gun for Dinosaur." The earliest (that I know of) fictional use of time travel to the past for hunting was not for dinosaur hunting, however, but rather for saber-toothed tigers, wooly mammoths, and cave bear.[39] Historical tours to the great events of the past are also an entertaining use of time travel.[40] Even mundane events may one day be on the 'to do' lists of time travelers to the past. In one, for example, curious crowds from the very far future show up, nightly inside the home a twentieth century family, much as tourists today visit Monticello.[41]

Perhaps the most direct use of the past's unique resource, itself, is realized in science fiction by Hollywood. In one tale,[42] after purchasing the motion picture

---

[36]H. M. Sycamore, "Success Story," *Magazine of Fantasy and Science Fiction*, July 1959.

[37]C. Simak, *Mastodonia*, Ballantine 1978.

[38]Two are B. W. Aldiss, "Poor Little Warrior," in *The Science Fictional Dinosaur*, Avon 1982, and a famous one by Ray Bradbury, "A Sound of Thunder," in *The Stories of Ray Bradbury*, Alfred A. Knopf 1980.

[39]C. Simak, "The Loot of Time," *Thrilling Wonder Stories*, December 1938, in which a time machine inventor raises money for his research by transporting hunters back 70,000 years to the Old Stone Age.

[40]Three such tales are R. Silberberg, *Up the Line*, Ballantine 1969 and "When We Went to See the End of the World," in *Beyond the Safe Zone*, Warner 1986; and G. Kilworth, "Let's Go to Golgotha!," in *The Songbirds of Pain*, Victor Gollancz 1985.

[41]B. Tucker "The Tourist Trade," in *Tomorrow the Stars*, Doubleday 1952.

[42]L. Laurence, "History in Reverse," *Amazing Stories*, October 1939.

rights to H. G. Wells' *Outline of History*, the head of a movie studio uses a time machine to send his ace cameraman into the past to get live action footage. Prehistoric animals, the ice age, Cheops building his pyramid, the destruction of Pompeii by the eruption of Vesuvius, the Battle of Hastings, Columbus, all the *originals* of these historical events appear in the final film. Years later this idea was developed even further in a very funny novel,[43] in which a movie director uses the eleventh century as a realistic setting for a picture. Realism isn't always the result, however, as portrayed in another tale; the films produced by a gadget that can 'look' into the past are failures because they don't look "authentic enough" to Hollywood moguls![44] (Fig. 1.1).

Fig. 1.1 The inventor of a time machine demonstrates it by sending the family cat on a trip. In the story the inventor, himself, travels back to 1901, where he accidently kills his grandfather in an early pulp magazine, non-paradoxical version of the famous riddle. Illustration for Raymond A. Palmer's "The Time Tragedy" (*Wonder Stories*, December 1934) by Frank R. Paul, ©1934 by Continent Publications Inc.; reprinted by permission of the Ackerman Science Fiction Agency, 2495 Glendower Ave., Hollywood, CA 90027 for the Estate

---

[43]H. Harrison, *The Technicolor Time Machine*, Doubleday 1967.

[44]A. Derleth, "An Eye for History," in *Harrigan's File*, Arkham House 1975.

1.2   Where Are All the Time Travelers?

> "If it [time travel] *could* be done, someone will eventually learn how. If that happens, history would be littered with tourists. They'd be *everywhere*. They'd be on the *Santa Maria*, they'd be at Appomattox with [cameras], they'd be waiting outside the tomb, for God's sake, on Easter morning."[45]

The question the title of this section asks is an echo of the one the physicist Enrico Fermi (1901–1954) asked in the 1950s, about the possibility of interstellar space travel and of alien intelligent life in the universe—if such travel is possible and 'they' exist, then *where are they*? Why haven't we at least received radio signals from them? For many, the apparent lack of time travelers among us is similar evidence for the impossibility of time travel. As one famous science fiction writer put it, "The most convincing argument against time travel is the remarkable scarcity of time travelers. However unpleasant our age may appear to the future, surely one would expect scholars and students to visit us, if such a thing were possible at all. Though they might try to disguise themselves, accidents would be bound to happen—just as they would if we went back to Imperial Rome with cameras and tape recorders concealed under our nylon togas. Time traveling could never be kept secret for very long."[46]

Clarke's idea is that, from the moment after the first time machine was constructed, through all the rest of civilization, there would be numerous historians, to say nothing of weekend sightseers, who would want to visit every important historical event in recorded history. They might each come from a different time in the future, but all would arrive (according to Clarke) at destinations crowded with temporal colleagues, crowds for which there is no historical evidence!

Long before Clarke the science fiction writer Robert Silverberg had already used the same idea in his 1969 novel *Up the Line*, where it's called the *cumulative audience paradox*. That paradox claims that as time travelers to the past continue to visit certain historically interesting dates and places, there will be an ever-increasing number of people present. As it is presented in the novel, "Taken to its ultimate, the *cumulative audience paradox* yields us the picture of an audience of billions of time-travelers piled up in the past to witness the Crucifixion, filling all the Holy Land and spreading out into Turkey, in Arabia, even to India and Iran . . . Yet at the original occurrence of [that event] *no such hordes were present!*" And later in the same work, we read "A time is coming [when we] will throng

---

[45]A skeptic's reaction to the idea of time travel in J. McDevitt's story "Time's Arrow" in *The Fantastic Civil War* (see note 7).

[46]Arthur C. Clarke, "About Time," in *Profiles of the Future*, Warner 1985. A story that I recall once having read (but cannot now remember either the author or the title) wonderfully illustrates Clarke's point. A time traveler in disguise at Golgotha for the Crucifixion has a camera hidden beneath his robe to avoid attracting attention. All goes well until he notices odd, clicking noises coming from all those standing near him. It is then he realizes the entire crowd is *nothing but* time travelers, from all through the ages, all with hidden cameras!

the past to the choking point. We will fill our yesterdays with ourselves and crowd out our own ancestors."

Philosophers are well aware of Silverberg's and Clarke's conundrum and, indeed, it can be found in the philosophical literature before Clarke wrote. In one paper, for example, we read "Actually I know of only one argument against the possibility of time travel that seems to carry any weight at all. This is the fact that it does not appear ever to have happened. That is, it might be argued that there will be no time trips from [2100] to [2017] because we were here in [2017] and saw no time travelers. But this argument is far from conclusive."[47] At most, in other words, the absence of temporal visitors amongst us is an objection to the *actuality* of time travel, and not to the *possibility* of time travel.

This same philosopher then mentions some ways around this concern, including one which he called a "pettifogging physical limitation on time travel: perhaps the energy expenditure varies as the fourth power of the time traversed, making only very short trips feasible, and its discovery lies too far in the future for its effects to have yet been felt." Another science fiction writer, as famous as Clarke, used that idea in his 1957 novel *The Door Into Summer* when Robert Heinlein has one character comment "Now if there was some way to photograph the Crucifixion . . . but there isn't. Not possible . . . there isn't that much power on the globe. There's an inverse-square law tied up in [time travel]." Or, perhaps, time travel *is* possible but it's so extraordinarily dangerous that it's impossible to get anyone to do it. In one provocative tale[48] that takes this idea to the extreme, we read that there is only *one* time traveler, ever, from the future—indeed, from just 18 min (!) in the future—and his first (and last) experiment destroys the Earth.

Clarke presented some other possible science fiction rebuttals to the puzzle of 'where are the time travelers?' As he wrote, "Some science fiction writers have tried to get around this [question] by suggesting that Time is a spiral; though we may not be able to move along it, we can perhaps hop from coil to coil, visiting so many millions of years apart that there is no danger of embarrassing collisions between cultures. Big game hunters from the future may have wiped out the dinosaurs, but the age of *Homo sapiens* may lie in a blind region which they cannot reach."

The idea of time as a spiral was quite popular in early science fiction. Typical is one tale[49] in which the time traveler suddenly finds himself not in 1933 but in 2189. His situation is 'explained' to him thus: "[The] time stream is curved helically in some higher dimension. In your case, a still further distortion brought two points of the coil into contact, and a sort of short circuit threw you into the higher curve."

---

[47]G. Fulmer, "Understanding Time Travel," *Southwestern Journal of Philosophy*, Spring 1980, pp. 151–156. The modern view of this 'paradox' is *not* that it describes a situation so absurd that time travel must be impossible, but rather that *all* the time travelers who *were* (will be?) at the Crucifixion *are* in the historically recorded crowd (see note 46 again). The Crucifixion happened just *once*, not over and over. I'll return to this point later in the book.

[48]D. Plachta, "The Man from When," *Worlds of If Science Fiction*, July 1966.

[49]R. H. Wilson, "A Flight Into Time," *Wonder Stories*, February 1931.

A few years later (in 1937) we find another story[50] with the same spiral-time concept; with a sixty-million year pitch to the time helix, there is no danger of a grandfather paradox. That same year spiral time was the central 'scientific' theme in the stage production "I Have Been Here Before" by the English playwright J. B. Priestley.

The very next year (1938) the young Isaac Asimov used the idea in his first attempt at professional writing, despite a life-long unhappiness with the concept of time travel. Titled "Cosmic Corkscrew," it was initially rejected, indeed it was *never* published, and eventually lost. Though, perhaps, not for long, since one enterprising modern writer has used it as the basis for his own time travel tale.[51] In it a traveler from the near future travels back to 1938 to retrieve "Cosmic Corkscrew" before Asimov loses it (perhaps that's *why* it was lost!) Even when writing introductions to other writers' time travel tales, Asimov would often insert personal comments on his opinion of the concept. For example, in one volume of an anthology series he edited, *The Great Science Fiction Stories* (of 1954), he wrote "To my way of thinking it is precisely because time travel involves such fascinating paradoxes that we can conclude, even in the absence of other evidence, that time travel is impossible." And in *The Great Science Fiction Stories* (of 1961) he bluntly declared "I think scientists who think up methods of time travel are probably all wrong."

Spiral time is a close cousin to circular time. One story[52] dealing with circular time has a time traveler who finds, after a trip one hundred years into the future, that he can't get all the way back to his own time because the required energy rises exponentially with increasing penetration into the *past*. Still, it's very cheap in energy to go forward in time in this tale, and that's what the traveler does, in search of help from the future's advanced technology. He never finds what he needs, however, and so goes forward right into the collapse of the universe and through a new Big Crunch that forms an identical new cycle of time. He thereby returns home to just before he left.[53] This eternal recycling of identical, circular time is so terrifying that the traveler decides to suppress what he has learned about how to time travel—and so maybe *that's* why there are no apparent time travelers. Science fiction writer Larry Niven has argued, however (see note 27), that while this may be a conceptually valid (?) way to travel into the past, he also warns that "Removing your time machine from the reaction of the Big Bang/Crunch could change the final configuration of matter, giving an entirely different . . . history." (I strongly suspect that Niven wrote that with a big smile on his face!)

---

[50]P. S. Miller, "The Sands of Time," *Astounding Stories*, April 1937.

[51]M. A. Burstein, "Cosmic Corkscrew," *Analog*, June 1998.

[52]P. Anderson, "Flight to Forever," *Super Science Stories*, November 1950.

[53]Turning this idea on its head is the approach of the 1978 novel *The Way Back* (DAW) by A. B. Chandler. Its characters return from the past to their own time by traveling even further backward, right through the Big Bang and into the *previous* (and identical) cycle of time.

The famed English physicist Stephen Hawking is so taken with the question of 'where are all the time travelers?" that he has elevated their apparent absence ("we have not been invaded by hordes of tourists from the future"[54]) to the status of being a demonstration of the impossibility of time travel to the past. His so-called *Chronology Protection Conjecture*, Hawking likes to say, "makes the universe safe for historians": that is, there is nothing to worry about (if you're concerned that time travelers could change the past) because time travel is simply impossible. You'll see later in the book that there are other possible ways to insure the safety of history *without* denying the possibility of time travel, and Hawking himself has backed away just a bit from the Conjecture, saying now that he was simply looking for a humorous line.

While Hawking's endorsement of it has made the Conjecture famous, he wasn't the first to state it. Two years earlier it had appeared, in of all places, a *financial* publication: "[If] time travel was possible, someone from the future would eventually either discover a time tunnel or build a time machine and come visit us."[55] And even before that, an economist presented a 'proof' for concluding that "time travelers do not and cannot exist."[56] He argued that if time travelers from the future were actually amongst us (our 'now' is their 'past') then, by virtue of their knowledge of things to come (our 'future') they would make financial deals so numerous and extensive that interest rates would be driven to zero. Interest rates are *not* zero, however, and thus no such time travel hanky-panky has occurred.

These sorts of financial arguments aren't like to convince many physicists or philosophers of the Conjecture's merit. At most we can only conclude from them that time travelers from the future have *not* influenced financial affairs, which doesn't mean they aren't here. In any case, the Conjecture was actually stated more than 20 years before Hawking by Larry Niven (see note 27), who declared what is called *Niven's Law*: "If the universe of discourse permits the possibility of time travel, and of changing the past, then no time machine will be invented in that universe." And Hawking's concern over time travelers meddling with the past was anticipated in science fiction, too, by at least half a century; in a 1950 tale, for example, we learn of a Master Historian, and the graduate students in his course on 'Experimental History' in the forty-sixth century, trying to correct a problem created by a previous tampering with the past![57]

Not all physicists and philosophers feel intellectually comfortable with the Conjecture, as it seems (to them) a too quick surrender: 'Time travel is a problem

---

[54]S. W. Hawking, "Chronology Protection Conjecture," *Physical Review D*, July 15, 1992, pp. 603–611. See also J. F. Woodward, "Making the Universe Safe for Historians: Time Travel and the Laws of Physics," *Foundations of Physics Letters*, February 1995, pp. 1–39.

[55]J. Queenan, "Time Warp: Or, Investing in the Future Is a Bust," *Barron's*, January 8, 1990, p. 46.

[56]M. R. Reinganum, "Is Time Travel Impossible? A Financial Proof," *Journal of Portfolio Management*, Fall 1986, pp. 10–12.

[57]L. Jones, "Sunday is Three Thousand Miles Away," *Thrilling Wonder Stories*, June 1950. A more recent, two-*novel* treatment of historians tinkering with history is by Connie Willis (*Blackout* and *All Clear*, both published in 2010).

so hard to do let's simply *define* it to be non-existent and then we won't have to worry about it anymore.' To *really* show that time travel is impossible, however, one needs to demonstrate how it would violate one or more of the laws of physics. Hawking, of course, understands this and has stated that, as one who is no fan of time machines and time travel, he believes there is new physics yet to be discovered that *will* forbid would-be time travelers from roaming up and down the centuries. Finding that new physics is the lure the study of time machines has for him. As he correctly writes in his autobiography,[58] "Even if it turns out that time travel is impossible, it is important that we understand why it is impossible."

One mathematical physicist who agrees with Hawking on the matter of the unlikely possibility of making a time machine is the New Zealand theoretician Matt Visser. Noting that while quantum field theory, and the general theory of relativity, are each amazingly good theories in many applications within their respective realms, they are not so good in spacetime regions at the so-called *Planck scale* (that is, when the density of mass-energy reaches the fantastic level of 10^{94} grams/cm^3 and beyond) where chronology violations (that is, time travel) seem to be spawned. As Visser has observed,[59] this situation won't change until 'we wander into the guts of quantum gravity,' the unification that will merge gravity with the quantum to give a theory that *always* works. Without quantum gravity, physics will continue to be "infested" (Visser's word) with "sick" (Visser's word) spacetimes that allow time travel. Visser believes that the discovery of the theory of quantum gravity can be 'guided' by *building* causality into it,[60] and the result will finally consign time machines to where (in his mind) they belong, the dust-bin of crackpot physics.

Well, perhaps so, but we don't have a quantum theory of gravity yet, and probably won't for some time to come, and so the puzzling questions about time travel remain. To end this section on a slightly gloomy note, an idea appeared in science fiction,[61] when Hawking was still a teenager, offering a possible rebuttal to the Conjecture. It opens with one of the inventors of the first time machine just returning from a trip to the past of 1938. Still, despite this success, the inventors are puzzled by what they call 'the problem': "But if *we* have time traveled, then obviously men of the future have time traveled. They will be able—*are* able to come back. [So] where are they?" They finally conclude that there can only be two

---

[58]Stephen Hawking, *My Brief History*, Bantam 2013, p. 113.

[59]Matt Visser, "The Quantum Physics of Chronology Protection," in *The Future of Theoretical Physics and Cosmology*, Cambridge 2003. This paper was Visser's contribution to the celebration of Hawking's 60th birthday, held in January 2002.

[60]This may seem like something new, but it really isn't. General relativity has causality built into it on a *local* level (where it belongs); a failure of causality (that is, time travel—see J. Sharkey, "The Trouble With Hyperspace," *Fantastic* April 1965) occurs in general relativity only when one studies *global* regions of certain spacetimes. Forcing a physical theory to have a *prescribed global behavior* would be to undo all of physics since the development of *local field theories*, along with all their amazing successes in explaining nature.

[61]M. Shaara, "Time Payment," *Magazine of Fantasy and Science Fiction*, June 1954.

possible answers. Either there is nobody in the future, or time travel is so dangerous (is that why the future might be empty—humanity misused time travel and killed itself off?) that all who invent it will suppress it. And that's what they decide *they* must do.

1.3   Skepticism About Tales of Time Travel

"May it not be that our inability to leap into the fiftieth century, A.D., seems impossible to us, merely because of certain prejudices we entertain or certain facts and tricks of which we are still hopelessly ignorant? Assuredly, this is not a foolish query. Its answer, whatever that may be, carries immeasurable consequences for metaphysics."

—a scholar wonders[62]

A thought-provoking possibility for explaining the scarcity of certified time travelers is the central thesis of a fascinating paper in the philosophical literature. The author of that paper argues (note 13) that nobody would believe a time traveler even if he willingly confessed and revealed his knowledge of the future, or even gave the details of his time machine. He goes on to make the astonishing assertion that even the *time traveler himself* would have doubts! This perhaps shocking suggestion deserves some elaboration, especially because it invokes the authority of the patron saint of skeptics for support, the Scot David Hume (1711–1776). The crucial point to keep in mind is explicitly stated in the argument: "The key question will not be 'Is time travel possible?' We shall instead ask whether it is possible to justify a belief in a report of time travel." This gets to the real heart of Clarke's puzzle from the previous section.

Much of the resistance to the idea of time travel lies in sheer skepticism. For many, time travel (to the past, in particular) is simply too much out of the ordinary to be taken seriously. For many, time travel would literally be miraculous. Hume's great work, *An Enquiry Concerning Human Understanding*,[63] contains a section on how a rational person should react to a claim that a miracle has occurred. Hume proclaimed that a miracle *by definition* violates scientific law and that, because such laws are rooted in "firm and unalterable experience," any violation of one or more of these laws immediately provides a refutation of the report of a miracle. In Hume's own words:

"Nothing is esteemed a miracle, if it ever happened in the common course of nature. It is no miracle that a man, seemingly in good health, should die on a sudden; because such a kind of death, though more unusual than any other, has yet been frequently observed to happen. But it is a miracle, that a dead man should come to life; because that has never been

---

[62]W. B. Pitkin, "Time and Pure Activity," *Journal of Philosophy, Psychology and Scientific Methods*, August 27, 1914, pp. 521–526. Pitkin's essay was a critique of time travel as presented in Wells' *The Time Machine*, which Pitkin called "one of the wildest flights of literary fancy."

[63]Making its first appearance in 1748, *Enquiry* has been reprinted numerous times since. I used the 1963 edition published by Open Court.

observed in any age or country . . . When anyone tells me, that he saw a dead man come to life, I immediately consider with myself, whether it be more probable, that this person should either deceive or be deceived, or that the fact, which he relates, should really have happened. I weigh the one miracle against the other; and according to the superiority, which I discover, I pronounce my decision, *and always reject the greater miracle* [my emphasis]."[64]

It is a strict interpretation of Hume that Sorenson (note 13) has adopted in claiming that a time traveler would have no success (among rational persons) with tales of 'different times.' As he explains, "Clearly the time traveler cannot persuade a reasonable person by baldly asserting 'I am a time traveler.' The improbability of his claim places a heavy burden of proof on him. But perhaps he could shoulder the burden by means of artifacts, predictions, and demonstrations." Sorenson dismisses all of these possibilities, however, by reminding us of the slightly sleazy history of parapsychology and ESP, both of which run counter to known scientific laws, but which have still duped "many a respected scientist." Any artifact, prediction, or demonstration of time travel, argues Sorenson, is more likely to be the result of deception and fraud than of actual time travel: "Should the time traveler take observers for a spin in his time machine, the skeptics will have us compare their adventures with séances." The rational reaction to such a spin around the centuries, according to Sorenson's presentation, would be like that of a magician who cannot figure out how a colleague has just done his newest act: 'Nice trick! How did you do it?'[65]

The time traveling tourist stranded in the past in one story is used to getting a skeptical reaction because he can provide his questioners no technical explanation for his situation. "How the hell should I know? I'm just a tourist. It has something to do with chronons [see the Glossary]. Temporal Uncertainty Principle. Conservation of coincidence. I'm no engineer."[66] Somewhat more successful (perhaps) is a time traveler born in 2003 who turns up in 1975. After he tries to convince an interrogator of how that can be, he apparently succeeds. As the time traveler later tells a new friend in the past of 1975, "What amazed me . . . was that he really believed me in the end." But the friend doesn't buy that, replying "He did? I think he just

---

[64]What Hume is alluding to here should be plain; as expressed in P. Heath, "The Incredulous Hume," *American Philosophical Quarterly*, April 1976, pp. 159–163, Hume was "an exposer of bad arguments in rational theology." For Hume, second-hand (or even more remote) tales of the return of a man from the dead—the claim that literally kept Christianity alive after Christ's execution—were suspect.

[65]This skeptical reaction was nicely captured in the story "E for Effort" by T. L. Sherred (*Astounding Science Fiction*, May 1947). As one character laments, "I've watched scribes indite the books that burnt at Alexandria; who would buy, or who would believe me, if I copied one. . . . What sort of padded cell would I get if I showed up with a photograph of Washington or Caesar? Or Christ?" The padded cell was indeed the fate of the time traveler in "The Ambassador from the 21st Century" (*Startling Stories*, March 1953) by H. J. Shay, the story of a man who journeyed from A.D. 2007 back to 1952 to warn of a future war; he was committed to a mental institution to receive help for his "illusion."

[66]J. Haldeman, "No Future In It," *Omni*, April 1979.

pretended. A scientist isn't likely to believe a thing that is against all logic."[67] If the reception committee is a crowd of conservative, cautious Humeans, it would seem that a time traveler is almost certainly doomed. Early science fiction time travelers from 2030, for example, were warned about receiving a skeptical response as follows (the editorial introduction to this tale[68] called it "a curious study of psychology"): "Our wisest men advised against [our trip to the past]. They said we could hope to be received only as imposters and fakirs, that . . . we would find only twentieth-century barbarians, suspicious, ill-tempered, likely to do us bodily harm."

For many, such skeptical reactions to self-proclaiming time travelers seems dogmatic in the extreme—the response of people with no imagination, no spirit, and heads full of cement. Humean skepticism requires, so it would seem, the rejection of anything and everything that is profoundly surprising, leaving the world a place of utter predictability and boredom. As one science fiction writer put it, "When the miraculous occurs, only dull, workaday mentalities are unable to accept it."[69] Sorenson answers this harsh criticism as follows: "Humeans respond [to Sheckley] by distinguishing between surprises. Most surprises in science do not violate accepted scientific laws. The strange wildlife in Australia was not excluded by biology, X-rays were not precluded by physics."

Sorenson does well, however, to avoid mentioning such profound surprises as, for example, the spectrum of black-body radiation and, later, the photoelectric effect, which were not in the domain of known classical science at the beginning of the twentieth century. Those puzzling, surprising, *totally mystifying* effects required new science—the discovery of the quantum concept by Max Planck. (Explaining the photoelectric effect, *not relativity*, is what won Einstein his Nobel prize.) A strict Victorian-age Humean, as described by Sorenson, would have wrongly rejected the experimental reports of all quantum phenomena and would also (perhaps just as wrongly) have rejected all reports of time travel.

A strict Humean definition (as described by Sorenson) that a miracle has occurred requires a violation of one or more of the *known* [my emphasis] scientific laws of nature.[70] As one modern philosopher defines a miracle, it is any event that "can be explained *only* [my emphasis] by reference to the intervention of a supernatural force."[71] Time travel, by that interpretation, is *not* a miracle because general relativity, not God, is all that is required. C. S. Lewis (1898–1963), late

---

[67]G. Gor, "The Garden," in *Russian Science Fiction* (R. Magidoff, editor), New York University Press 1969.

[68]P. Bolton, "The Time Hoaxers," *Amazing Stories*, August 1931.

[69]Robert Sheckley, "Something for Nothing," in *Citizen in Space*, Ballantine 1955.

[70]The word *known* is important. As a character in one early science fiction story puts it, "These things [four-dimensional object] sound like miracles; but, after all, what are miracles but phenomena which, *on account of our ignorance* [my emphasis], we cannot explain?" See B. Olsen, "The Four-Dimensional Roller-Press," *Amazing Stories*, June 1927.

[71]D. M. Ahern, "Miracles and Physical Impossibility," *Canadian Journal of Philosophy*, March 1977, pp. 71–79.

professor of Medieval and Renaissance Literature at Cambridge University, however, absolutely rejected Hume's view on how a rational person should react to certain surprising events. Lewis, one of the most thoughtful modern writers on Christian theology, had no patience with skeptics (or, as he called them, materialists).[72]

Professor Lewis graphically illustrated the dug-in position of the extreme skeptic as follows: "If the end of the world appeared in all the literal trappings of the Apocalypse; if the modern materialist saw with his own eyes the heavens rolled up and the great white throne appearing, if he had the sensation of being himself hurled into the Lake of Fire, he would continue forever, in that lake itself, to regard his experience as an illusion and to find the explanation of it in psychoanalysis, or cerebral pathology."[73] If the end of the world would receive such a skeptical response, then a mere time traveler would surely have no hope at all of being believed.

Lewis would certainly have rejected Sorenson's most astonishing assertion: "So far I have concentrated on the time travel question from the perspective of the time traveler's audience. What about the time traveler himself? Can he at least know he is a time traveler?" Sorenson argues that a time traveler, if authentic, should be able to convince his audience, and that if he can't (and he *cannot* if they are true Humean skeptics), then the time traveler must entertain doubts, too! It doesn't matter (says Sorenson) that the time traveler has memories of his adventures, and it doesn't matter that he knows in his heart that he speaks the truth. Using words that echo Lewis' sarcasm, Sorenson quickly dismisses the importance of the time traveler's self-knowledge, declaring such memories to be merely the symptoms of some deep psychosis, and the traveler's introspective sincerity to be a product of gross self-deception.

Sorenson specifically mentions the traditional Humean response to astonishing reports when he cites earlier writers on time travel in the philosophical literature. In one of those analyses, for example, we find an argument *for* the reasonableness of a rational belief in time travel ("I have been amused and irritated by the spate of articles proving that time travel is a 'conceptual impossibility'") by claiming such proofs must be faulty because there is a mathematically consistent explanation for such a belief.[74] (This author was referring to spacetime diagrams, which we'll get to in Chap. 3.) This paper received a very sharp rebuttal from another philosopher who convincingly used fundamental physics to show a simple use of spacetime diagrams in a special relativity setting does *not* support time travel to the past.[75] (I'll return to

---

[72]In Lewis' eerie, unfinished story "The Dark Tower," a tale of the 'chronoscope,' a gadget that "does to time what the telescope does to space," the persistent skeptic in the story is a Scot, surely created in the image of Hume. See C. S. Lewis, *The Dark Tower and Other Stories*, Harcourt 1977.

[73]C. S. Lewis, *The Grand Miracle*, Ballantine 1986.

[74]H. Putnam, "It Ain't Necessarily So," *Journal of Philosophy*, October 1962, pp. 658–671.

[75]J. Earman, "On Going Backward in Time," *Philosophy of Science*, September 1967, pp. 211–222.

this point in Chap. 3.) Even later a Humean-style rebuttal came from yet another philosopher, who showed how to explain the time travel phenomenon that Putnam (note 74) described *without* invoking time travel.[76] This isn't to say that Weingard doesn't invoke some pretty astonishing gadgetry (and more) himself, like matter transmitters and anti-matter humans. (You'll see how anti-matter ties-in with time travel a bit later in the book.) A resurrected Hume would surely applaud these rebuttal analyses (although he might also doubt his own fresh existence).

Hardly anybody is happy with Weingard's approach for avoiding time travel (including, I suspect, even Weingard). His 'explanations' seem, just like a time machine, to be incredible and, as Arthur Conan Doyle's Professor Challenger says in one tale not staring Sherlock Holmes, "You cannot explain one incredible thing by quoting another incredible thing."[77] An interesting science fiction exposition illustrating Professor Challenger's Humean philosophy occurs when a copy of *The New York Times* for December 1 shows up for some subscribers a week early, on November 22. It seems the only explanation is either that the paper really is from the future (due to some sort of fluke of the fourth dimension), or that it is a hoax. The first-person narrator of this 1973 tale[78] provides us with his reason for believing the former: "I don't find either notion easy to believe but I can accept the fourth-dimensional hocus-pocus more readily than I can the idea of a hoax." Hume couldn't have said it better.

It should be clearly understood that Hume was not arguing for disbelief in absolutely anything surprising, but rather for rational analysis. Historically, the context of Hume's times was that of what he took to be non-rational arguments for a belief in God, particularly those 'proofs' so beloved by theologians based on Design (Heath [note 64] calls such 'proofs' "philosophical museum pieces"). As Heath writes, "Hume . . . makes no attempt to deny the supposed facts; he simply argues that they are consistent with other explanations and other analogies of a less ambitious kind. There is no right to attribute to the causes of such phenomena abilities more extensive than are needed to produce the observed effects."

As a matter of fact, even Hume could be convinced of quite strange matters, and I think Sorenson does interpret the philosopher a little too narrowly. In his essay concerning Hume's position on holding a belief in God, Heath wonders whether there is "empirical evidence [imaginable] which would persuade any reasonable mind of the real existence of an infinite God." Heath answers his own question as follows: "If the stars and galaxies were to shift overnight in the firmament, rearranging themselves so as to spell out, in various languages, such slogans as I AM THAT I AM, or GOD IS LOVE—well, the fastidious might consider that it

---

[76]R. Weingard, "On Travelling Backward in Time," *Synthese*, July–August 1972, pp. 117–132.

[77]Arthur Conan Doyle, "The Disintegration Machine," *The Strand Magazine*, January 1929. Professor Challenger is nothing like Wells' thoughtful Time Traveller; in the original 1912 Challenger novel *The Lost World*, he was described as a "primitive cave-man in a lounge suit."

[78]R. Silverberg, "What We Learned from This Morning's Newspaper," in *Beyond the Safe Zone*, Warner 1986.

was all very vulgar, but would anyone lose much time in admitting that this settled the matter? . . . Confronted with such a demonstration, the hard-line Humean [but not Hume, himself, I think] could continue, of course, to argue that, for all its colossal scale, the performance is still finite, and so cannot be evidence of more than the finite, though immense power that is needed to achieve it."

Skepticism about 'time travel' was around long before the specific idea of a 'time machine' was conceived. For example, the eleventh-century Persian poet-philosopher Omar Khayyam was blunt in his evaluation of the likelihood of reliving the past. As he so beautifully wrote in one of the quatrains of the *Rubaiyat*,

> *The Moving Finger writes; and having writ,*
> *Moves on: nor all your Piety nor Wit*
> *Shall lure it back to cancel half a Line,*
> *Nor all your Tears wash out a Word of it.*

Quite a bit later the English poet Thomas Heywood, in his 1607 play *A Woman Killed with Kindness*, had one of his characters express a similar thought:

> *God, O God, that it were possible*
> *To undo things done, to call back yesterday;*
> *That Time could turn up his swift sandy glass*
> *To untell the days, and to redeem these hours.*
> *Or that the Sun*
> *Could, rising from the west, draw his coach backward,*
> *Take from the account of Time so many minutes,*
> *Till he had all these seasons called again,*
> *. . . . .*
> *But O! I talk of things impossible,*
> *And cast beyond the moon. . .*

When Gödel's discovery of time travel in his rotating universe was announced, the skeptics were easy to find. One philosopher[79] wrote of it "This property [of time travel] must be judged an absurdity by anyone committed to the ordinary modes of speech." And another[80] was only slightly less charitable: Gödel's solution was a "bizarre conception" and a "mere mathematical curiosity." Science fiction wasn't immune to skepticism, either, even though you might have expected that to be the one place where the high drama of time travel would be welcomed. Four *years* after Gödel's paper appeared we find one respected anthologist writing,[81] as part of his introduction to a story, "In this tale we meet our first Mad Scientist. Just as in reality the thoroughly cracked pots used to be found inventing perpetual-motion machines, so in science fiction we find the lunatic fringe more often than not trying to perfect

---

[79]J. D. North, *The Measure of the Universe*, Oxford University Press 1965.

[80]C. T. K. Chari, "Time Reversal, Information Theory, and 'World-Geometry'," *Journal of Philosophy*, September 1960, pp. 579–583.

[81]Groff Conklin, editor of *Science-Fiction Adventures in Dimension*, Vanguard 1952.

time-travel mechanisms." And that same year the founding editor of *Galaxy Science Fiction Magazine* declared "Time travel requires a suspension of disbelief that is almost unbelievable … Scientifically, time travel can't stand inspection.".[82]

Years later matters had not much changed. For example, in his marvelous 1985 book *The Past is a Foreign Country*, David Lowenthal repeatedly refers to time travel as "fantasy," and to science fiction stories about time travel as "unbridled by common sense." (Lowenthal is a professor of *geography*, not physics.) Science fiction writers were still often not much more enthusiastic about time travel. The well-known science fiction writer and critic Alexei Panshin, for example, agrees with Lowenthal, at one point, long after Gödel, writing "Time travel is a philosophical concept, not a scientific one. It is, in fact, as has often been pointed out, scientific nonsense."[83]

Skepticism does have its uses, however. Modern science fiction writers have often used it as a dramatic means of building conflict and tension in their time travel stories. A skeptical reception is extreme, for example, for a soldier-in-time who has fought in numerous wars, from the ancient past to a billion years in the future.[84] He finds that nobody believes him when he speaks openly of his temporal adventures during a visit to a present-day bar. Everybody merely thinks it is all a hilarious gag. This is in great contrast to one 1870s story[85] in which suspicion of a stranger plays a central role, but which finds its offered explanation in something entirely different from time travel. It tells of a man who suddenly appears in the midst of a Union military camp during the American Civil War.

This man quickly displays strange lapses in his background, as well as possessing knowledge of many different things well beyond anything that could be called common. The details of the story are not important for us but, if it were published in a modern science fiction magazine, this man would almost surely be identified in most readers' minds as a time traveler. In 1875, however, the author's narrator found his punch line in "his firm conviction that the quiet, gentle, well-behaved, modest gentleman, so singularly gifted … is, in plain terms, the devil!" Time travel certainly never entered the author's thoughts or, if it did, he lost his nerve at the idea of using it in this pre-Wells story. You'll recall from the opening of the Introduction that it was this 'use of the devil to explain mysterious happenings' that Wells wanted to move away from, and that was the motivation for his introduction of a time *machine*.

Hollywood has at least gotten the skeptical part of the psychology of time travel right (later discussions in this book will focus on how film makers have been less successful with the physics). When, for example, the time traveling villain in the

---

[82]H. L. Gold, editor of *The Galaxy Reader of Science Fiction*, Crown 1952.

[83]In his introduction to Robert Heinlein's classic time travel tale (to be discussed later) "All You Zombies—," in *The Mirror of Infinity*, Canfield 1970.

[84]F. Leiber, "The Oldest Soldier," *Fantastic*, May 1960.

[85]G. C. Eggleston, "Who Is Russell?" *American Homes*, March 1875.

1989 movie *Time Trackers* is confronted in the medieval past, he simply laughs-off a threat to reveal his true identity. "Go ahead," he says in effect, 'the only thing your talk of time machines from the future will accomplish is for people to think you are crazy!'

What would Arthur C. Clarke have thought of all this skepticism being directed toward those who claim to have a time machine? His thoughts about the difficulty time travelers would have in maintaining low profiles were what started the previous section, after all. My guess is that he would have had little patience with extreme incredulity. The surprise of being confronted by a time traveler would soon have turned to awe and pleasure IF—and I emphasize the IF—Clarke had been taken for a spin around the centuries in the stranger's machine. He would surely have ended-up quoting his own famous 'third law' to explain the wonder of it all: "Any sufficiently advanced technology is indistinguishable from magic."

Near the end of his paper, Heath writes what I think is the perfect rebuttal to anyone who would refuse to admit to time travel, even after taking a quick trip backward a few tens of millions of years to the late-Mesozoic era to hunt *Tyrannosaurus rex*, and even after seeing instant photographs of the dead monster with the skeptic's *own foot* on the great creature's head, or of his *own boots* dripping a bloody puddle of unholy size on the floor of the time machine. Writing about the Humean-unconvinced, even when faced with a rearranged firmament, Heath observes "But this now seems a cavil, designed only to prove that even omnipotence is powerless against the extremer forms of skeptical intransigence." Where God would fail to convince, a simple time traveler could hardly hope to do better!

1.4   Troubles with (some) Time Machines

"If you don't stop this senseless theorizing upon something that's an obvious impossibility, you'll find yourself working alone! Your ridiculous ideas sound like the ravings of a madman. Anyone with average intelligence realizes that the mere thought of traveling through time is absurd."[86]

If the previous section seemed just a bit gloomy concerning time travel, there is a very big reason for that. The sentiment expressed in the above opening quote to this section was a common one among philosophers long before physicists began to seriously think on the topic. While there *are* issues with time travel to the *future*, they are of an *engineering* nature, centered on how to build a big enough rocket ship with enough fuel to make the high speed, looping trip out into space and back again described in the opening section of this chapter. 'Mere' engineering problems are of no concern to physicists and philosophers. What *does* concern them are the far deeper puzzles of time travel to the *past*, the puzzles presented by what appear to be

---

[86]A science fiction physicist receives harsh criticism from a colleague in L. A. Eshbach's "Out of the Past," *Tales of Wonder*, Autumn 1938.

logical paradoxes. Before we get into the paradoxes, however, we need to first clear our minds of two common, popular notions of just what a time machine *is*. Both are false notions (one is due to H. G. Wells) which are, today, *rejected* by physicists (and most philosophers, too).[87]

As you'll see later in the book, all the theoretical time machines that have appeared in the modern physics literature involve spatial displacement. That is, they require *movement*. (On this point, the speedy DeLorean time car in the *Back to the Future* films has it right.) Wells' time machine, however, did not move; it always remained in the Time Traveller's laboratory (or at least on the spot where the laboratory would have been) unless he pushed it about after a trip in time. This, alas, results in a particularly troublesome problem: a Wellsian time machine heading into the past would run into itself!

Consider: There sits my time machine as I prepare for the first time journey ever, a trip back to the late-Mesozoic era to hunt dinosaur. I load my Continental. 600 super-high-power rifle with Nitro Express cartridges the size of bananas, kiss my wife good-bye, and climb in. I pull the lever. Now, Wellsian-type time machines don't *jump over* time but rather travel *through* time (see the Time Traveller's own description of how things looked to him, a description faithfully and spectacularly reproduced in the 1960 film). Therefore, the time machine will instantly collide with itself at the micro-moment *before* I pull the lever!

The resulting destruction obviously introduces a nice paradox: Given that this happens before I pull the lever, how did I manage to pull it? Many of the early science fiction writers were not totally oblivious to this collision problem and, in order to avoid materializing inside of an object in the future or the past, it was common to combine the time machine with an airplane.[88] Even that though might not be enough, as one writer thought a Wellsian time traveler would get "a severe case of the bends" if his body materialized in air![89] Of course, one might argue that Wells' machine does actually move because it is attached to the Earth, which is certainly moving, but it is not clear why this should result in the time machine arriving in the temporal past of the Earth, rather than in some past region of space (almost surely a vacuum).[90]

---

[87]Both of these notions still routinely appears in science fiction, however, because they are 'just too neat' to let 'mere physics' get in the way of a good tale. I use one, without apology, in my own story "Newton's Gift" in Appendix B.

[88]Three such tales are M. J. Breur, "The Time Valve," *Wonder Stories*, July 1930; F. J. Bridge, "Via the Time Accelerator," *Amazing Stories*, January 1931; E. Binder, "The Time Cheaters," *Thrilling Wonder Stories*, March 1940.

[89]J. Lafleur, "Time as a Fourth Dimension," *Journal of Philosophy*, March 1940, pp. 169–178, and "Marvelous Voyages—H. G. Wells' *The Time Machine*," *Popular Astronomy*, October 1943.

[90]Philosophers seem to be becoming more aware of the collison problem (which they have dubbed "the double occupancy problem"), and at least three papers published since the second edition of *Time Machines* discuss it: W. Grey, "Troubles With Time Travel," *Philosophy*, January 1999, pp. 55–70; P. Dowe, "The Case for Time Travel," *Philosophy*, July 2000, pp. 441–451; R. Le Poidevin, "The Cheshire Cat Problem and Other Spatial Obstacles to Backward Time Travel," *The Monist*, July 2005, pp. 336–352. Physicists don't concern themselves with the collison problem simply because they *aren't interested* in *Wellsian* time machines; I'll explain why I say this by the end of this section.

The general problem of 'where the past is' was nicely illustrated by the physicist Gregory Benford in his 1980 novel *Timescape*. In that story the world of 1998 is on the verge of total ecological collapse, and an attempt is made to change the past by aiming a backward-in-time message via faster-than-light tachyons (these hypothetical particles are discussed in Chap. 5) at the pivotal year 1963. When the principal scientist involved in this effort is explaining the process to a potential financial backer, he is asked, "Hold on. Aim for *what*? Where *is* 1963?" The scientist replies, "Quite far away, as it works out. Since 1963, the Earth's been going around the Sun, while the Sun itself is revolving around the hub of the galaxy, and so on. Add that up, and you find 1963 is pretty distant." An understanding of the question 'Where is the past?' actually goes quite a bit further back in science fiction. For example, after looking through a TV-like gadget to view the past, one character in a 1940s story complains, "You said you'd find Captain Kidd's treasure, but all I can see is fog and static." He is told that's because "It's too far back—1698 or thereabouts. The Earth was billions of miles from here then, and there are too many cosmic rays between."[91]

But let's suppose we ignore this concern about where things are for a time traveler, as do most science fiction stories. Still another problem with a true Wellsian-type time machine is that because it travels *through* time, the machine must *always* appear to be located in the same place. For example, to travel from Ford's Theater today to Ford's Theater on the evening of Good Friday, April 14, 1865, in a misguided attempt to save Lincoln from Booth's bullet (*why* this would be misguided will be discussed at length later in the book), a Wellsian-type time machine would have to occupy every instant of the intervening century and more. For observers outside the machine, the machine would appear to have been sitting in the same place all those years. There is an amusing illustration of a failure to understand this point by the scriptwriters of the 1989 film *Time Trackers*, who have time travelers 'hide' their Wellsian machine from accidental discovery by 'parking' it 5 s in the future!

Wells was well-aware of the "does a time traveling object disappear or not?" issue, and tried to have it both ways in *The Time Machine* by invoking what he had the Time Traveller call "diluted presentation." As we are told in the novel, the reason why we cannot see the model time machine he sends on its way into the future as a demonstration is that "the spoke of a wheel spinning, or a bullet flying through the air" is invisible because if those objects are "traveling through time fifty times or a hundred times faster than we are . . . the impression [they create] will of course be only one-fiftieth or one-hundredth." Similarly for the model. This explanation breaks down when one remembers that, even if you cannot see the spoke or bullet, they are still there and you can get in their way—Wells, unfortunately, has one of his characters stick a hand into the space where the model time machine was last seen.

---

[91]M. Jameson, "Dead End," *Thrilling Wonder Stories*, March 1941. The "cosmic rays" are presumably the cause of the interference.

This objection to Wellsian time travel was raised soon after the 1895 publication of the novel, and then again in 1914 by Pitkin (note 62), who noted that violent disaster awaited once the time journey ended. Wells, it is only fair to note, seemingly anticipated Pitkin when he had the Time Traveller say "So long as I travelled at a high velocity *through time* [my emphasis] . . . I was, so to speak, attenuated—was slipping like a vapor through the interstices of intervening substances!" What this is getting at is that for the Time Traveller to stop 'inside' anything (Pitkin's example was the pile of bricks the Time Traveller's laboratory is certain one day to become) would, as Wells had his hero say, cause "a profound chemical[92] reaction—possibly a far-reaching explosion—[that would] blow myself and my apparatus out of all possible dimensions." Just why this spectacular event doesn't occur when the time machine simply stops *in air*, never mind inside Pitkin's pile of bricks, is never addressed.

In any case, it seems clear from all of this that Wells' machine travels *through time*, just as the Time Traveller claims. But Wells, himself, raises doubt when he describes the observed effects of a departing time machine. At the beginning of the novel, when the Time Traveller sends his model machine into the future, we read "There was a breath of wind, and the lamp flame jumped. One of the candles on the mantel was blown out . . . and it [the model time machine] was gone—vanished!" And, at the end, when the Time Traveller makes his final exit, the narrator of the tale just misses the departure but tells us "A gust of air whirled around me as I opened the door, and from within came the sound of broken glass falling on the floor. The Time Traveller was not there . . . Save for a subsiding stir of dust, the further end of the laboratory was empty. A pane of the skylight had, apparently, just been blown in." Both of these descriptions read as *implosions*, air rushing in to fill a spatial void, as though the time machines had *jumped* in time. Is there an inconsistency here? Well, perhaps not, if one accepts the curious idea of "slipping like a vapor" for an operational Wellsian-type time machine.

One famous science fiction story[93] nicely illustrates these points. The inventor of the first time machine demonstrates it to colleagues by sending a brass cube 5 min into the future. After being placed in the machine, the cube vanishes and then, 5 min later, reappears. Did the cube travel *through* time, or was its journey 'instantaneous,' so to speak? If *through* time, the cube was present at every instant after the start of its trip—so why did it vanish? The cube gets to each instant before the observers do, but why this should produce the visual effect of disappearing is unclear. The description in the story implies the cube traveled 5 min into the future without existing at any of the in-between instants, and so the story's time machine certainly was *not* Wellsian.

An immediate implication of the immobility of a Wellsian time machine is that if you are being chased by an angry mob somewhen in time (perhaps because you unwittingly violated a sensitive social taboo), then hopping into your Wellsian-type

---

[92]Actually *nuclear*, but don't forget when Wells wrote his novel.
[93]F. Brown, "Experiment," *Galaxy Science Fiction*, February 1954.

time machine isn't going to help because the machine just sits there. The mob could simply take its deliberate time in first building a roaring fire and then pushing the machine (and you) into it. As one author (with a wonderfully appropriate name!) expressed this, "You might as well try to escape by taking a nap."[94]

Pulp science fiction, always alert to a good story gimmick, used this characteristic of Wellsian time machines in one clever tale[95] in which a criminal attempts to hide his crimes by sending the bodies of his victims into the far future. His mistake is to use a Wellsian time machine in which he escapes into the future. The police, however, having learned of his foul deeds, simply build a cage around the machine and arrest him when he exits 23 years later!

If a Wellsian time machine that moves *through* time suffers from a fatal collision problem, then how about that other favorite of science fiction, a time machine that *jumps* in time? (Recall the final departure of Wells' Time Traveller.) That certainly would avoid the self-colliding problem. When you pull the lever inside the machine you simply disappear from 'now' and (from your point of view) then instantly pop into existence 'then.' The problem with this sort of time machine is that a Time Traveller who uses it will have a *discontinuous* world line, with the break occurring at the moment his time machine 'jumps.' In the modern physicist's view of time travel, however, based on general relativity, a Time Traveller's world line should always be continuous. That's because general relativity is a smooth, local field theory described by differential equations, resulting in *continuous* CTLs/CTCs.

Imagine, for example, that a 'jumping' time machine inventor starts building his gadget at time t = A and expects to finish building it at time t = B > A. At time t = C < B, however, he runs into a problem. Fortunately, just at that moment a fully-functional time machine suddenly appears in the lab, and from it emerges a slightly older version of the inventor. The older version has the solution to the problem and, after telling the younger version the answer, gets back into the operational time machine and jumps off to . . . somewhen. The younger version then completes his machine at time t = B, gets into it, jumps back to time t = C, and . . ..[96]

In the past, philosophers have gotten themselves all tangled-up in debates over *personal identity*, that is, which version is *the* inventor, the younger or the older? Can they both be the same person, even though the older version has a world line (*starting* at t = C) that is separate and distinct from the world line of the younger (that *stops* at t = B)? One philosopher (note 74) left physics behind and pursued this question into the following *legal* question concerning our two (?) inventors: if the older version commits a crime and then vanishes in his time machine before the police can apprehend him, can the younger version be punished even though *he*

---

[94]M. Cook, "Tips for Time Travel," in *Philosophers Look at Science Fiction*, Nelson-Hall 1982. One modern story that gets Cook's point right is by I. Watson, "The Very Slow Time Machine," in *The Best Science Fiction of the Year* (T. Carr, editor), Ballantine 1979.

[95]M. Jameson, "Murder in the Time World," *Amazing Stories*, August 1940.

[96]This little story I've just told you involves what is called a *bootstrap paradox* (just where did that solution come from, that is, who thought it up?) and it is one of the real puzzles of time travel. I'll say *lots* more about such curious doings later in the book.

hasn't yet committed the crime? While certainly 'interesting,' this really is a non-issue for the modern physicist who is concerned only with the physical possibility (or not) of time travel to the past.

Well, okay, you might now say, if neither a Wellsian time machine or a 'jumping' time machine will do, then just what *are* physicists studying in their papers on time travel? The short answer here (in Chap. 3 I'll say more) is that physicists don't view time machines as super-tech gadgets covered with wires, meters, dials, and levers, humming away beneath a seated Time Traveller as gigawatts of power throb through massive copper/crystal rods, with the whole business surrounded by a pulsating red-blue glow. Hollywood absolutely loves that sort of thing, but it's simply all wrong. For modern physicists, a time machine is *a region of spacetime with special topological structure*. Then, to time travel, a Time Traveller moves through that region of spacetime (in a rocket, perhaps) along an appropriate path. To 'make a time machine' therefore, in modern terms, means to (somehow) manipulate finite amounts of matter/energy in such a way as to alter the topology of a finite region of spacetime from one that has no CTLs/CTCs to one that does.[97] The most famous example of such a spacetime topology alteration (or *warp*) is the creation of a *wormhole*. A wormhole is a *topological* artifact of a spacetime; wormholes were popularized in Carl Sagan's 1985 novel *Contact* (under the guidance of physicist Kip Thorne) and are now common in science fiction.[98] As mentioned at the start of this chapter, for example, even Stephen King uses one in his 2011 *mainstream* novel *11/22/63*.

I'll return to the 'topology of spacetime' in Chap. 3 but, just so we don't leave it here as a mysterious phrase, here's a simple illustration of a topology change. Imagine a long, flat, narrow, two-dimensional strip of paper. The strip has the following topology features of interest to us here: (1) it has a beginning (its left end) and an ending (its right end), and (2) it has two sides (the top surface) and the flip-side surface. Now, imagine that we take the right end of the strip, give it a half-twist of 180^0 through our three-dimensional space, and then finally we glue that twisted end to the left end of the strip. The half-twist and gluing (our *warp*) has changed both of the topological properties of the strip. That's because the strip now has *no end* (you can travel forever along the strip, always going 'forward' and never reaching a point where can't go forward some more), and the strip now has just *one* side. You can convince yourself that it is one-sided by coloring the strip with a

---

[97]There is a hint of this in one prescient science fiction story, in which the inventor of a time machine, when asked about how it works, replies "An electromagnetic *warping* [my emphasis] of the spacetime continuum." See N. Schachner, "When the Future Dies," *Astounding Science Fiction*, June 1939.

[98]A wormhole is featured in the 2014 film *Interstellar*, whose Executive Producer and technical advisor was Thorne. The film's special effects are relativistically correct (not the typical Hollywood 'fantasy physics'), and you can read how that was achieved in Oliver James, Eugénie von Tunzelmann, Paul Franklin and Kip S. Thorne, "Gravitational lensing by spinning black holes in astrophysics, and in the movie *Interstellar*," *Classical and Quantum Gravity*, February 2015. See also (same authors) "Visualizing *Interstellar*'s Wormhole," *American Journal of Physics*, June 2015, pp. 486–499.

crayon. During the coloring, *do not lift the crayon from the strip*. When you can color no more, you'll find that every last bit of the strip has been colored. You can't do that with the original strip without lifting the crayon and turning the strip over because the original strip was two-sided. Many readers will recognize that what we've done is make a *Möbius strip*, named after the German astronomer and mathematician August Möbius (1790–1868) who described it in 1858.

Here's another astonishing property our half-twist warp has introduced. Cut the Möbius strip lengthwise with a scissors; most people believe you will then get two strips, each the length of the original strip but each only half as wide. Actually, you get one strip with a *full* $360°$ twist, which means the result is back to having two sides. (To see this, make a Möbius strip, cut it, and *then* apply the crayon.) And if you cut this new strip lengthwise once more, you get two separate loops, linked together. Try it and see, but be very careful. As the late science fiction writer Cyril Kornbluth (1923–1958) warned, there may be horrific potential dangers in unschooled experimentation with topology warps:

> A burleycue dancer, a pip
> Named Virginia, could peel in a zip;
>   But she read science fiction
>   And died of constriction
> Attempting a Möbius strip.[99]

To end this section, I should point out that a change in the topology of a spacetime is *not* a necessary requirement for that spacetime to support time travel to the past. Gödel's rotating spacetime, for example, has a remarkably simple topology and, as you'll recall, it's literally *stuffed* with CTLs/CTCs, to the point that time travel to the past in Gödelian spacetime would be an everyday occurrence. You might think a world that presents time travel as a *fundamentally allowed* physical phenomenon, as does Gödel's spacetime, would be irresistible to science fiction writers. (So far as I know, however, no one has written a time travel story using the rotating universe idea.[100]) In Chap. 6, in fact, I'll show you just how easy it would be to time travel in Gödel's spacetime, using a rocketship as the means to move through that spacetime. Of course, *our* universe is not Gödelian, so the 'time travel to the past' question is not so easily answered for the spacetime we appear to actually inhabit.

---

[99]As you can see from this, science fiction writers have had fun with the Möbius strip. Two early examples *not* involving time travel are N. Bond, "The Geometrics of Johnny Day," *Astounding Science Fiction*, July 1941, and W. H. Upson, "A. Botts and the Möbius Strip," *The Saturday Evening Post*, December 1945. The use of the Möbius strip for time travel occurs, for example, in M. Clifton's "Star, Bright," *Galaxy Science Fiction*, July 1952.

[100]If he had lived, perhaps the well-known science fiction writer James Blish (1921–1975) would have written such a tale. In David Ketterer's biography of Blish (*Imprisoned in a Tesseract*, Kent State University Press 1987), there is this comment from a 1970 letter written by Blish: "I am especially intrigued by the spinning-universe form of time travel, especially since … nobody has touched it … But I should really stop mentioning the spinning-universe in public, or somebody will nobble onto it before I can get into it!"

1.5   Quantum Gravity, Singularities, Black Holes, and Time Travel

"A [spacetime] singularity is where God is dividing by zero."

—Anonymous

"A theory that involves singularities and involves them unavoidably, moreover, carries within itself the seeds of its own destruction."

—Peter Bergmann (1915–2002), Einstein's research assistant at the Institute for Advanced Study, Princeton

A fundamental objection to general relativity's suggestion of the possibility of time travel to the past is that, in a very deep sense, general relativity is known to be incomplete. That is, it is incompatible with quantum mechanics, which is the physics of the very, *very* small—the physics of atomic-size objects and *smaller*. We touched on this at the end of Sect. 1.2, and here we'll take a longer look at the issue of merging quantum mechanics with general relativity.

In quantum mechanics, the discrete nature of the atomic world appears in such phenomena as the photoelectric effect, in which light acts like individual particles (photons) rather than as continuous waves. Einstein's general relativity works beautifully on a cosmological scale but, like Maxwell's theory of electromagnetism, and unlike quantum mechanics, it fails when applied deep in the interior of the atom. Quantum theory, however, seems to work *everywhere*. As one physicist put it, "As far as we can tell, there is no experiment that quantum theory does not explain, at least in principle ... Though physicists have steered quantum theory into regions far distant from the atomic realm where it was born, there is no sign that it is ever going to break down."[101]

One of the central concepts in relativity is the *world line*, which is the complete story of a particle in spacetime. A world line assigns a definite location to the particle at each instant of time. This is a classical, pre-quantum concept, however, and today physicists use the probabilistic ideas of quantum mechanics to describe the location and momentum of a particle once they get down to the atomic scale of matter. Quantum theory is a discrete theory in which the values of physical entities vary discontinuously (in 'quantum jumps'), whereas in classical theories the values of physical entities are continuous. The difference between the two types of theories is something like the difference between sand and water. Mixing the two theories—the classically smooth, continuous general relativity and the discrete quantum mechanics—to get something called *quantum gravity*, is the Holy Grail of physicists today, and nobody has more than an obscure idea of how to do it.

---

[101]N. Hebert, *Faster Than Light: Superluminal Loopholes in Physics*, New American Library 1988.

Just one of the more curious results of the fusing of quantum mechanics with general relativity may be *quantum time*.[102] That is, in quantum gravity the smallest increment of time that has physical meaning—sometimes called the *chronon*, a term first used in a non-time travel science fiction story[103]—may have a non-zero value. As we'll see later in the book, much of the controversy over the possibility of time machines hinges on what is called the *quantum gravity cut-off*. This is the end-result of destructive spacetime stresses that tend to grow toward infinity whenever a time machine spacetime topology attempts to form. This process goes under the general name of the *back reaction*, and is conceptually similar to a rubber band growing ever more taut as it is stretched, an effect that resists more stretching (and, of course, if stretched too far the rubber band breaks).

The cut-off of those stresses, at some *finite* value, is imagined to occur when the terminal phase of the growth would take place in less than the minimum possible time interval. The cut-off happens because, it is thought, nothing can actually occur in less than the minimum time. The debate is over just what that minimum duration is, and over whether the cut-off would occur before the stresses could reach *finite* values large enough to destroy the putative time machine topology. If the cut-off occurs before the back reaction stresses climb to the critical value, then the time machine survives. Otherwise, not.

To see how this 'works,' consider the two fundamental physical constants associated with classical gravity, the *gravitational constant*[104] G and the speed of light c, and the fundamental physical constant associated with quantum mechanics (*Planck's constant*) ℏ. Now, if you play around with combinations of these constants it is easy to show that the following expressions have the units of length, time, and mass, called the *Planck length* (l_P), the *Planck time* (t_P), and the *Planck mass* (m_P), respectively:

$$l_P = \sqrt{\frac{\hbar G}{c^3}} \approx 1.6 \times 10^{-33} \text{ cm},$$

$$t_P = \sqrt{\frac{\hbar G}{c^5}} \approx 5.3 \times 10^{-44} \text{ s},$$

$$m_P = \sqrt{\frac{\hbar c}{G}} \approx 22 \times 10^{-6} \text{ g}.$$

The extremely tiny values of l_P and t_P (the chronon), in particular, indicate (*roughly*) where it is expected that the smooth, continuous spacetime of general

---

[102]H. Kragh and B. Carazza, "From Time Atoms to Space-Time Quantization: the idea of discrete time, ca 1925–1936," *Studies in History and Philosophy of Science*, June 1994, pp. 437–462.

[103]S. Weinbaum, "The Ideal," *Wonder Stories*, September 1935.

[104]This is the constant in Newton's famous inverse-square law for gravity; the attractive force F between two point masses m_1 and m_2, distance r apart, is $F = G\frac{m_1 m_2}{r^2}$.

relativity will itself become quantized, and so will have to give way to a quantum theory of gravity.

The associated value of the mass-energy density when this transition is imagined to occur is enormous; the so-called *Planck density* is the Planck mass divided by the cube of the Planck length and has the value of about 10^{94} grams/cm^3. This is where physicists expect classical and quantum gravity to part company. Can such an enormous mass-energy density actually occur?[105]

Yes, and more, in what physicists call *singularities*.

This was all still very speculative until about 50 years ago, but today the search for how to connect general relativity and quantum mechanics is serious business. That search is related to time travel studies via a fantastic sequence of discoveries in relativistic physics, made during the last 80 years, beginning in 1931 with the work of the young Indian astrophysicist Subrahmanyan Chandrasekhar (1910–1995). He combined quantum mechanics and *special* relativity to show that a non-rotating star above a certain mass (about 1.4 times the mass of the Sun) cannot evolve into a white dwarf, which had until then been thought the eventual fate of all stars. Stars more massive than 1.4 Solar masses (but not *too* massive) would, instead, become *neutron* stars. But what then happens to stars that are too massive for even *that* bizarre eventuality?

General relativity predicts that a sufficiently massive star—greater than about four times the mass of the Sun—will, when its fuel is nearly exhausted and its nuclear fires are beginning to fade, experience a truly spectacular event called *total gravitational collapse*. When its fuel-starved, weakened radiation pressure is no longer able to keep a massive, aged star inflated against the collapsing force of its own gravity, the star will suddenly implode and crush itself into what is called a *black hole*, a dramatic term coined in 1967 by the Princeton physicist John Wheeler (1911–2008) in an address before the American Association for the Advancement of Science. A black hole is an object with a gravitational field so strong that even light cannot escape—that's why it's black!—at whose center is something called a *singularity*. This is all well-known lore in the physics world.[106]

Indeed, cataclysmic views of the collapse of matter are actually quite old. In Lucretius' first-century B.C. *The Nature of the Universe*, for example, we find the following imagery on what it would be like if matter itself collapsed: "The ground will fall away from our feet, its particles dissolved amid the mingled wreckage of

---

[105]By comparison, the density of a neutron star is on the order of a 'mere' 10^{16} grams/cm^3.

[106]Perhaps not so well-known, however, is that science fiction was there long before Wheeler. In one classic tale (M. Leinster, "Sidewise in Time," *Astounding Stories*, June 1934) a scientist explains at the end, "We know that gravity warps space . . . We can calculate the mass necessary to warp space so that it will completely close in completely . . . We know, for example, that if two gigantic star masses of certain mass were to combine . . . they would simply vanish. But they would not cease to exist. They would merely cease to exist in our space and time." And then, as another character sums it up, "Like crawling into a hole and pulling the hole in after you." The explicit use of the complete term *black hole* for a region of weird spacetime also appeared in science fiction before Wheeler (P. Worth, "Typewriter from the Future," *Amazing Stories*, February 1950).

heaven and earth. The whole world will vanish into the abyss, and in the twinkling of an eye no remnant will be left but empty space and invisible atoms. At whatever point you allow matter to fall short, this will be the gateway to perdition." These words were actually inspired by earthquakes, not black holes and their singularities, but could a modern expert in general relativity and singularities have said it any better? But, what *is* a singularity?

As one theoretical physicist has dramatically written, "once gravity runs out of control, spacetime smashes itself out of existence at a singularity."[107] Or to quote Hawking, "A singularity is a place where the classical concepts of space and time break down as do all the known laws of physics."[108] One particular view of a singularity is that it is a place in spacetime that has infinite density and a gravitational field that is infinitely strong. The curvature of spacetime (more on curvature in Chap. 3) at this sort of singularity, sometimes called a *crushing* singularity, is also infinite. This is the sort of singularity believed to be at the center of non-rotating black holes. Historically, however, the occurrence of infinities in physical theories has been thought the red flag signaling that the theories have simply been extended too far, and their calculated results are nonsense.

Perhaps, then, singularities occur only in unrealistic physical applications of general relativity, and so it is only *perfectly* spherical collapsing stars that can end-up (on paper) as a black hole singularity. For a while physicists tried to establish that, but they were forced to abandon the attempt when it was shown that singularities are *unavoidable* and not just the result of idealistic assumptions.[109] This result worried many, and so the concern that general relativity was failing with its prediction of black holes and their singularities continued. In the case of a crushing singularity, perhaps all that meant is that once the collapsing star had fallen into a region even smaller than an electron, general relativity is no longer valid and the singularity is simply the 'math gone wild.' Einstein, himself, held that view. In his book *The Meaning of Relativity* (based on lectures he gave at Princeton in 1921), he wrote (concerning the use of the general theory to study the origin of the universe as a "big bang," which was a crushing singularity), "For large densities of field and matter, the field equations [of general relativity] and even the field variables which enter into them will have no real significance. One may not therefore assume the validity of the equations for very high density of field and matter, and one may not conclude that the 'beginning of the expansion' must mean a singularity in the mathematical sense."

Well, what does general relativity say about the singularity at the center of a black hole? To start, the theory says that, at a distance directly proportional to the

---

[107]P. C. W. Davies, *The Edge of Infinity*, Simon & Schuster 1981.

[108]S. Hawking, "Breakdown of Predictability in Gravitational Collapse," *Physical Review D*, November 15, 1976, pp. 2460–2473.

[109]S. W. Hawking and R. Penrose, "The Singularities of Gravitational Collapse and Cosmology," *Proceedings of the Royal Society A*, January 27, 1970, pp. 529–548. Ironically, one of the 'realistic' assumptions made in this paper, which appears to *force* singularities to exist, is that time travel is *impossible*!

mass of the collapsed object, a so-called *event horizon* will form. The event horizon is a surface in spacetime through which anything can fall into the hole, but through which nothing, not even a photon of light, can escape outward. The singularity at the black hole's center is therefore not visible to a remote observer (the singularity is said to be "clothed," and so not "naked"[110]). For all observers beyond the event horizon, the only visible properties of the hole are its mass (via its gravitational effects), its angular momentum (its spin rate), and its electric charge, and these properties are independent of the details of the pre-collapsed object (other than the requirement that electric charge and angular momentum are conserved).

There are actually several fundamentally different types of black holes. If the collapsed star forms a non-rotating, spherically symmetric, uncharged[111] object, then the result is called a *Schwarzschild* black hole, after the German astronomer Karl Schwarzschild (1873–1916) who found the first exact solutions to Einstein's general relativity field equations just months after Einstein published them.[112] Soon after that the Finn Gunnar Nordström and the German Heinrich Reissner independently found the solution to the field equations for the slightly more realistic non-rotating, *charged* black hole.[113] This is only slightly more realistic since it is highly unlikely a black hole wouldn't be spinning, as all observed stars are spinning and angular momentum is conserved during gravitational collapse. Another slightly more realistic solution, that of a *rotating*, uncharged black hole, was found by the New Zealand mathematician Roy Kerr in 1963, and this solution had a twist to it that at last explains why I am telling you all this—the singularity at the center of a Kerr black hole is not the *point* singularity of a non-rotating black hole but rather is a *ring* singularity. That is, there is a hole in the Kerr singularity through which matter can travel, without being destroyed, a hole that seems to act as a portal into

---

[110]A naked singularity, with no event horizon behind which to hide, would be particularly bothersome to physicists who don't like the idea of the breakdown of physics being on full display. What they think they'd then see would be completely unpredictable. Whether such a situation can actually exist is still open to debate, but there *are* both analytical solutions and computer simulations (incorporating realistic equations of state on the pressure response of matter as it is compressed) that seem to allow it (as in the gravitational collapse of an *infinitely* long, non-rotating cylinder that appears to result in an axial, thread-like, naked singularity).

[111]The word *charge* means either electrical *or* magnetic charge, although from a practical point *charge* probably does mean just electrical, as the theoretically possible magnetic monopole has yet to be observed and, in any case, it is thought that black holes will not have a significant electrical charge.

[112]Even *Einstein* hadn't yet solved them, and he apparently thought they were too complicated to be solved; when he saw Schwarzschild's result, he was so impressed that Einstein wrote to say "I had not expected that the exact solution to the problem could be formulated. Your analytical treatment of the problem appears to me splendid."

[113]Two years later, the University of Pittsburgh physicist Ezra Newman finally solved the field equations for the realistic, general case of a rotating *and* charged black hole.

other spacetime regions that may include past or *future* regions of spacetime. In other words, the ring singularity seems to be the entrance to a time machine.[114]

A discussion of singularities in general relativity is especially complicated for at least two reasons. First, there is more than one type, with *crushing* being just the (perhaps) most 'obvious.' Another type has no infinite curvature associated with it, but rather is a point in spacetime beyond which the worldline of a freely falling mass cannot be extended. Such a point is called a *geodesically incomplete* singularity, and it represents either an end to space or to time (in either case, that point is on the boundary or edge of spacetime). There are other types, as well—I've mentioned the naked singularity already—and the appearance of *any* of them is distinctly unsettling (recall Bergman's opening quote) to physicists. One that may be the most unsettling of all, however, is the *thunderbolt* singularity. This singularity propagates to infinity at the speed of light! As its discoverers dramatically put it, "It is not a naked singularity because you do not see it coming until it hits you and wipes you out."[115]

The other reason for a discussion of general relativity singularities being complicated is that they simply are not like the singularities of earlier theories. For example, in electromagnetic field theory spacetime is the *given background reference*; that is, a singularity in that theory is a point in spacetime where the *electromagnetic field* is undefined. In gravitational field theory, however, it is

---

[114]You can find discussions on how this is imagined to work in two papers by R. Weingard: "General Relativity and the Conceivability of Time Travel," *Philosophy of Science*, June 1979, pp. 328–332, and "Some Philosophical Aspects of Black Holes," *Synthese*, September 1979, pp. 191–219. See also M. Calvani et al., "Time Machine and Geodesic Motion in Kerr Metric," *General Relativity and Gravitation*, February 1978, pp. 155–163. I won't pursue black hole time machines in this book, as it is not what modern physicists consider a plausible means of time travel (*How are you going to gain access to a black hole?!!!*) For how one science fiction writer *did* use the idea, however, see L. Niven, "Singularities Make Me Nervous," in *Stellar* 1 (J.-L. del Rey, editor), Ballantine 1974. Black holes *are* bizarre objects—nearly as bizarre as time travel—and it seems risky to try to understand one in terms of the other (recall Professor Challenger's observation!).

[115]S. W. Hawking and J. M. Stewart, "Naked and Thunderbolt Singularities in Black Hole Evaporation," *Nuclear Physics B*, July 1993, pp. 393–415. As bizarre as is the thunderbolt, it was anticipated in science fiction by more than half a century. In the story "The Tides of Time" by R. M. Williams (*Thrilling Wonder Stories*, April 1940), the universe is collapsing at faster than the speed of light. Human scientists learn this when fleeing aliens stop their faster-than-light space ships to warn them. One of the human characters then looks out into the night sky and, in words that sound like those of Hawking and Stewart, "There would be no warning, for the rolling tide was traveling faster than light . . . It would come faster than the flicker of an eye. No one would see it come. One instant the world you knew would be around you. The next instant, there would be nothing. You would not even have time to know what had happened. Death, faster than the lightning flash!" This story may have been inspired by a tale published decades earlier, by the Canadian writer Frank Lillie Pollock (1876–1957). In his "Finis" (*The Argosy*, June 1906), written long before the concept of a super-nova, the light of a huge, distant star finally arrives to cook Earth into oblivion.

spacetime itself that is undefined, and there is no background 'something' in which spacetime is embedded to serve as a reference.[116]

One early suggestion on how to avoid the problem of the crushing singularity of the non-rotating black hole (which is, as mentioned earlier, not a realistic model for the gravitational collapse of a rotating star) is that the collapse may stop short of the singularity. That is, the collapsing body might instead rebound. This 'bounce' would occur after the star was inside its event horizon, so an external observer would not see the later expansion, an expansion imagined to be through the event horizon *but into a different region of spacetime.*[117] When Novikov's work was generalized the following year, the authors clearly had a hard time believing this dramatic imagery, despite their own mathematics, concluding with "It then appears necessary to believe in the existence of other [regions of the universe, including the past and the future] which will accommodate the re-expansion. This seems at least as fantastic as the alternative of [a point singularity].".[118]

In 1974 Hawking announced an astonishing partial connection of quantum mechanics with general relativity's black holes. He showed that, contrary to the usual image of black holes as being one-way trap doors to ...?, black holes actually *must* radiate energy.[119] His analysis, which stunned physicists by its beautifully simple arguments, invokes the famous *uncertainty principle*, one of the corner stones of quantum mechanics. Hawking himself found the result "greatly surprising." He also cautioned (in his 1975 paper) that the following picturesque imagery is "heuristic only and should not be taken too literally," but it has now been in physics for over 40 years and appears to be here to stay.

The uncertainty principle states that there are certain pairs of variables associated with particles, variables that cannot be precisely measured at the same time. Time and energy form such a pair because a non-zero time interval is required to measure a particle's energy, and the product of the uncertainty in both the time interval (Δt) and the energy (ΔE) must be at least as large as a certain non-zero constant. That is, if $\hbar$ is Planck's constant, then $\Delta E \Delta t \sim \hbar$. This allows the process of virtual particle creation, the appearance of particle/anti-particle pairs just outside the event horizon of a black hole. The uncertainty in the energy is what gives the combined mass of the particles in a pair; this uncertainty in the energy is the quantum fluctuation energy of the intense gravity field of the hole. The only

---

[116]See, for example, R. Geroch, "What Is a Singularity in General Relativity?" *Annals of Physics*, July 1968, pp. 526–540.

[117]See, for example, I. Novikov, "Change of Relativistic Collapse Into Anticollapse and Kinematics of a Charged Sphere," *JETP Letters*, March 1, 1966, pp. 142–144, and V. P. Frolov, *et al.*, "Through a Black Hole Into a New Universe?" *Physics Letters*, January 12, 1989, pp. 272–276. Igor Novikov is a Russian physicist at the University of Copenhagen, and he will appear later in the book when we get to the paradoxes of time travel to the past.

[118]V. De La Cruze and W. Israel, "Gravitational Bounce," *Nuovo Cimento A*, October 1, 1967, pp. 744–760.

[119]S. Hawking, "Black Hole Explosions?" *Nature*, March 1, 1974, pp. 30–31, and "Particle Creation by Black Holes," *Communications in Mathematical Physics*, 1975, pp. 199–220.

constraint is that the energy be returned to the field, via mutual annihilation of the matter/anti-matter pair within the time uncertainty dictated by the uncertainty principle.[120]

As Hawking showed, this time interval, although incredibly short, is still long enough for the two virtual particles to separate before annihilation, one falling into the hole and the other escaping. This would happen, for example, if the particle/anti-particle pair is an electron/positron pair, and so a negatively/positively charged black hole would tend to attract the positron/electron and repel the other particle (either way, driving the charge of the hole towards zero). (Hawking then later suggested[121] that the particle *entering* the hole could be thought of as an *emitted* particle traveling backward in time, an idea that can be traced back decades, to John Wheeler—I'll return to this idea in just a moment.) By this incredible quantum process, then, the black holes of general relativity slowly *evaporate* (!) as they glow with what is now called *Hawking radiation*. That is, black holes appear to be hot bodies. But *hot* is relative, as a black hole with the mass of the Sun would have a temperature of just sixty *nano*-degrees Kelvin above absolute zero, and it would take 10^{66} years (a stupendously enormous time compared to the age of the universe) to completely evaporate.

Indeed, one physicist had already mused that the *entire universe* might have been created by a similar quantum process, *out of nothing*, a so-called *vacuum fluctuation*.[122] The explanation for why the universe doesn't then disappear—and very quickly, too, because the energy for all the mass in the newly created universe is quite large (that is, ΔE is *really big* and so Δt must be *really small*)—is that the *negative* gravitational potential energy of all that newly created matter would cancel the positive mass-energy, and so ΔE is actually *quite small* and so Δt is then *quite large*. To perhaps show he wasn't quite convinced by all that, himself, Tryon whimsically wrote "I offer the modest proposal that our Universe is simply one of those things which happen from time to time."

As a final comment on the suggestion by Hawking of a connection between virtual particles at a black hole event horizon and backwards time travel, the idea

---

[120]The uncertainty principle has long been used in time travel science fiction. In one story, for example, a character is transported from 1950 to 2634 by a scientist of the future. Once there, this character decides he'd like to remain permanently in the 27th century. He is told that he can't because he is like an atom excited into an elevated energy state and, just as quantum mechanics says that eventually an electron in such a state will drop back down into a lower energy state, so do the "laws of time travel" require that he drop back to his normal time. How long can he remain in future, he is told, "depends on the mass [energy] of his body and the number of years the mass [energy] is displaced." That is simply the uncertainty principle. See W. Bade, "Ambition," *Galaxy Science Fiction*, October 1951.

[121]S. Hawking, "The Quantum Mechanics of Black Holes," *Scientific American*, January 1977.

[122]E. P. Tryon, "Is the Universe a Vacuum Fluctuation?" *Nature*, December 14, 1973, pp. 396–397.

originated (as I said before) with Wheeler, in 1941.[123] In an astonishing coincidence, even as Wheeler was telling his student Richard Feynman about this, a science fiction writer was also identifying anti-matter with backward time traveling 'normal' matter.[124] Later, the Polish science fiction writer Stanislaw Lem (1921–2006) took this idea, combined it with the quantum concept of energy fluctuation, and came up with one of his typically outrageous (and typically hilarious) ideas: shooting a single positron out of an accelerator back to the very beginning of time. His story character called this fantastic machine the "Chronocannon" and claimed that's what started the universe.[125]

Soon after Lem, a philosopher used a variant of this idea, in which the Big Bang creation of the universe was caused by a time traveler from the future who saw a need—his own existence—to generate the Big Bang. This leads to philosophical speculations on the cosmological implications of God as a time traveler.[126] Two recent physicists have taken this one step further by suggesting that the universe, via time travel, may have caused itself! As they put it, "the laws of physics may allow the Universe to be its own mother."[127]

The modern hope is that quantum mechanics (as in quantum gravity) will save physics from the horror of general relativity's singularities. This was the view of John Wheeler and, as the man who named black holes, his view is important to consider. General relativity is a classical, *smooth* theory that is fundamentally continuous, while 'our' universe appears to be a quantum one. So, perhaps, general relativity's prediction of singularities may be just an artifact without physical reality in the 'real world.' Wheeler's position was based on the quantum fluctuations of gravity fields, which are related to the uncertainties inherent in our knowledge of the values of physical entities. Such fluctuations are vanishingly small in systems of everyday size, but they increase dramatically at very tiny distances that are twenty orders of magnitude smaller than the nucleus of an atom. In the microscopic region of spacetime that the matter forming a black hole is falling into, these fluctuations might conceivably result in effects that preclude the formation of a singularity. Agreeing were two physicists who asserted that, even without a detailed knowledge of quantum gravity, quantum effects "would smash the idealized interior geometry"

---

[123]See Richard Feynman's Nobel lecture, reproduced in *Science*, August 12, 1966, pp. 699–708, where he recounts Wheeler's 'proof' for why every electron in the universe has *exactly* the same charge ('there is only *one* electron, weaving its way back-and-forth in time, with positrons being the electron when traveling backward-in-time').

[124]Will Stewart, "Minus Sign," *Astounding Science Fiction*, November 1942. 'Will Stewart' was a pen-name for John Stewart Williamson (1908–2006).

[125]S. Lem, "The Eighteenth Voyage," in *The Star Diaries*, Seabury Press 1976.

[126]G. Fulmer, "Cosmological Implications of Time Travel," in *The Intersection of Science Fiction and Philosophy* (R. E. Meyers, editor), Greenwood Press 1983. Isaac Asimov used a similar idea in his story "The Instability," *The London Observer*, January 1, 1989.

[127]J. R. Gott and L.-X. Li, "Can the Universe Create Itself?" *Physical Review D*, 1998, 023,501.

[that is, the ring singularity] of a rotating, charged black hole, thereby eliminating any possibility of using such a hole for time travel.[128]

And finally, to generalize beyond black holes to the hoped-for pay-off of the coming of quantum gravity in banishing singularities altogether, one recent study has examined how non-crushing singularities (that is, ones of the geodesically incomplete type) *are* apparently "healed" (the authors' term) by quantum effects.[129] With the eventual development of quantum gravity, perhaps all the singularities of general relativity will vanish while leaving the CTCs/CTLs intact, thereby removing a form of doubt in the theory's apparent support for time travel to the past. It may be a long time coming, however: as the University of Sydney philosopher of science Dean Rickles recently (2014) wrote in his book *A Brief History of String Theory*, "quantum gravity is in many ways . . . a revolution still waiting to happen."

1.6   Tipler's Time Machine

"In short, general relativity suggests that if we construct a sufficiently large rotating cylinder, we create a time machine."[130]

The time traveling property of the ring singularity in a rotating black hole once made it a favorite of science fiction writers, as in Joe Haldeman's classic 1974 novel *The Forever War* (in which the term used is not *black hole*, but *collapsar*, which is a nicely descriptive word in its own right). A major difficulty with this approach, however, as I mentioned in the previous section (note 114), is that of 'getting one's hands on' (so to speak) a black hole! So, is there any other 'time machine' that is consistent with general relativity? Yes, there is.

In 1974 a young physics graduate student at the University of Maryland, Frank Tipler, caused a bit of a stir when he published what seemed to be quite specific construction details for a time machine. Indeed, the final sentence (the above quotation) of his paper couldn't be clearer. Nobody had ever before made such a statement in a respectable physics journal and, best of all, there were no apparent spacetime singularities involved. However, a close look at Tipler's analysis does turn up some difficulties.

What Tipler had actually done was to show that if one had an *infinitely long*, *very dense* cylinder rotating with a surface speed of at least half the speed of light (the rotation speed is such that the outward centrifugal forces are balanced by the inward gravitational attraction of the cylinder), then this allowed the formation of closed

[128]N. D. Birrell and P. C. W. Davies, "On Falling Through a Black Hole Into Another Universe," *Nature*, March 2, 1978, pp. 35–37.

[129]T. M. Helliwell and D. A. Konkowski, "Quantum Singularities in Spherically Symmetric, Conformally Static Spacetimes," *Physical Review D*, May 13, 2013, 10404.

[130]F. J. Tipler, "Rotating Cylinders and the Possibility of Global Causality Violation,' *Physical Review D*, April 15, 1974, pp. 2203–2206.

timelike curves around the cylinder. This means that by orbiting the surface of such a fantastic cylinder, one could travel through time into the past—but not to earlier than the moment of the creation of the cylinder.

This last point is a very important one, as it does avoid one particularly odd paradox (called a *bootstrap*): a traveler going backwards in time to tell the inventor of a time machine (perhaps an earlier version of the time traveler himself) how to build the time machine. You can find this idea in early science fiction,[131] and a minor variant of it was amusingly illustrated in the 1985 film *Star Trek IV: The Voyage Home* (when you next watch the movie, ask yourself who actually invented "transparent aluminum"?) Bootstrap paradoxes are quite mysterious and still befuddle physicists and philosophers. Science fiction writers, on the other hand, love bootstraps as great story gimmicks.

Tipler's cylinder would also enable a time traveler to return to her original time, to go "back to the future," by orbiting the cylinder in the reverse direction (but no further into the future than when the cylinder ceases to exist). Later in the book I'll show you a simple illustration—based on a similar one in Tipler's PhD dissertation, published in 1976—of how the cylinder works as a time machine. No one, in fact, disputes any of this. It *is* true. On paper.

But Tipler did *not* prove that a time traveling property holds for cylinders of even very long but *finite* length, which are the only kind we could actually build from a finite amount of matter; he merely suggested that such might be the case. This suggestion does seem reasonable, because if the time traveler orbits at the midpoint of the cylinder, near the surface, then the gravitational end-effects of sufficiently remote ends of the cylinder would, you'd think, become negligible. Similar mathematical approximations are routinely made, for example, when calculating the electrical effects of charged cylinders of finite length. But as one physicist has warned, "Extrapolation from cylindrical symmetry to reality is very dangerous, since spacetime is not even asymptotically flat around an infinite cylinder."[132] The issue of whether a spinning, finite-length cylinder can create closed, timelike curves is still open: to quote another physicist, "[In] some respects an infinite cylinder may be a model for a long finite one, and the possibility cannot be dismissed that a time machine might be associated with a long, but finite rotating system."[133]

---

[131]See, for example, C. Cloukey, "Paradox," *Amazing Stories Quarterly*, Summer 1929. Later in the book I'll discuss even earlier literary occurrences of bootstraps (that is, of *information* on closed loops in time).

[132]K. S. Thorne, "Nonspherical Gravitational Collapse: Does It Produce Black Holes?" *Comments on Astrophysics and Space Physics*, September–October 1970, pp. 191–196. What "asymptotically flat" means will be discussed in Chap. 3.

[133]W. B. Bonner, "The Rigidly Rotating Relativistic Dust Cylinder," *Journal of Physics A*, June 1980, pp. 2121–2132. Tipler was not the first to study rotating cylinders in the context of general relativity. Such cylinders had been around for decades, going back to 1932. A good reference is M. A. Mashkour, "An Exterior Solution of the Einstein Field Equations for a Rotating Infinite Cylinder," *International Journal of Theoretical Physics*, October 1976, pp. 717–721. The first-analyzed configuration of matter that generates closed timelike lines, solved in all its general relativistic detail, was the infinite rotating cylinder studied by W. J. van Stockum,

There is, however, another potential problem besides the length of the cylinder. There is a strong likelihood that a Tipler cylinder under construction would collapse under its own internal gravitational pressure before it could be made nearly long enough to be even 'approximately infinite.' That is, such a finite-length cylinder might crush itself along its long axis into a pancake-shaped blob, something like what happens to a long cylinder of jello stood on-end. An ordinary can of jellied cranberry sauce will also sometimes display this curious behavior.

The required rotational speed raises yet another concern, as well. We are not talking about cylinders the diameter of a pencil, or even of a large water pipe. Recall that for a given surface speed, the larger the diameter the less the centrifugal acceleration at the surface. It is easy to calculate that even a huge cylinder 10 kilometers in radius, with a surface speed of half the speed of light, would have a surface acceleration *hundreds of billions* of times the acceleration of Earth's surface gravity. No known form of ordinary matter could spin that fast and not explosively disintegrate; Tipler has estimated that the required density for a time machine cylinder would be 40 to 80 orders of magnitude above that of nuclear matter. (In a masterful understatement, Tipler calls this astonishing stuff "unknown material.") Made from such incredibly superdense stuff, even a finite cylinder would still be as massive as the Sun but many trillions of times smaller. Showing no lack of imagination, Tipler has suggested the possibility of speeding up the rotation of an existing star as an alternative approach to that of building a cylinder.[134] That, of course, would be project for a far-future society, with a *very* advanced technology.

All of these concerns were discouraging to Tipler (who could blame him?), and his pessimism about the actual likelihood of achieving time travel via one of his cylinders is shown by the words he used to open his 1977 paper (note 134): "Any attempt to evolve a time machine] from [normal] matter will cause singularities to form in spacetime. Thus, if by the word 'manufacture' we mean 'construct using only ordinary materials *everywhere*,' then the theorems of this paper will conclusively demonstrate that a [time machine] cannot be manufactured." But not all physicists agreed.

"The Gravitational Field of a Distribution of Particles Rotating About an Axis of Symmetry," *Proceedings of the Royal Society of Edinburgh*, 1939, pp. 135–154. This is particularly interesting because, while Van Stockum didn't spot the presence of closed timelike lines in his solution, his cylinder is made entirely from *ordinary* matter.

[134]F. Tipler, "Singularities and Causality Violation," *Annals of Physics*, September 1977, pp. 1–36. See also his earlier paper "Causality Violation in Asymptotically Flat Space-Times," *Physical Review Letters*, October 1976, pp. 879–882, where he wrote "There are many solutions to the Einstein equations [of general relativity] which possess causal anomalies in the form of closed timelike lines (CTL). It is of interest to discover if our Universe could have such lines. In particular, if the Universe does not at present contain such lines, is it possible for human beings to manipulate matter so as to create them? [That is, to construct a time machine.] I shall show in this paper that it is *not* [Tipler's emphasis] possible to manufacture a CTL-containing region without the formation of naked singularities, *provided normal matter is used in the construction attempt* [my emphasis]."

Years after Tipler wrote, one physicist replied[135] with *two* pointed observations. First, Tipler's theorems apply only to singularities of the incomplete kind, not to the more convincingly fatal crushing (or curvature) type. Second, to quote Ori at length, "The standard interpretation of Tipler's theorems is to say that the appearance of a singularity in a given [spacetime] model indicates that this model is unrealistic and cannot be physically realized. Even for future-generation engineers it will probably be impossible to use 'singular matter' for the construction of their time machine. However, the theory of black holes provides an obvious counterexample to this interpretation. For, by applying this interpretation to the black hole singularity theorems one could conclude that black holes can never form." Yet black holes with several times the mass of the Sun *have* been detected in orbit about certain stars, and at least one supermassive black hole (with a mass equal to more than three *billion* Suns) has been detected at the core of galaxy M87. Indeed, it is now believed that the center of *every* sufficiently massive galaxy in the universe is home to a black hole (the one at the center of our own galaxy, the Milky Way, has a mass about three million times that of the Sun).

Even less concerned about singularities interfering with time travel were two other physicists who wrote[136] "It would seem that a successful attempt to manufacture [a time machine] within a finite region of space will be accompanied by the creation of a singularity . . . This does not immediately imply, however, that with a sufficiently advanced technology one could not make a time machine. *There is no reason to suspect spacetime singularities could not in principle be created through deliberate human action* [my emphasis]."

These optimistic views were, of course, welcome news for science fiction writers, who had been using Tipler cylinders almost from when Tipler first wrote of them. Indeed, Larry Niven liked them well enough to 'lift' the very title of Tipler's paper (note 130) for the title of a short time travel story for inclusion in his 1979 collection *Convergent Series*. Just one year after Tipler's paper appeared, Poul Anderson featured the cylinders in his 1978 novel *The Avatar*, where they are called "T-machines": one can imagine the "T" stands for Time or Tipler or even both. Anderson's story describes the cylinders as having been scattered about the universe by ancient, altruistic aliens called "the Others," for the use by any who come across them and who have the wits to decipher *how* to use them. Anderson recognized the obvious problems with Tipler cylinder construction, and so has one of his characters say of T-machines, "I have no doubt whatsoever that [they are] the product of a technology further advanced from ours than ours is from the Stone Age."

---

[135]A. Ori, "Must Time-Machine Construction Violate the Weak Energy Condition?" *Physical Review Letters*, October 1993, pp. 2517–2520. The weak energy condition is the seemingly 'obvious' requirement that the observed local mass-energy density should never be negative. Quantum mechanics predicts (and it has been experimentally confirmed) that there *are* exceptions.

[136]M. P. Headrick and J. R. Gott, "(2+1)-Dimensional Spacetimes Containing Closed Timelike Curves," *Physical Review D*, December 15, 1994, pp. 7244–7259. The '(2+1)' refers to a toy spacetime with just two spatial dimensions and one time dimension.

Even before (actually *long* before) Tipler's paper, science fiction had foreshadowed his physics. Oliver Saari (1918–2000), for example, had incorporated both superdense matter and the rule of 'no time travel before the creation of a time machine' in a story written *40 years* earlier.[137] Saari's fictional time machine works by warping spacetime via a plate of superdense matter. (An even earlier tale[138] had also used superdense matter, but it was badly flawed by its hocus-pocus invoking of 'rays' emitted by the newly discovered element of *tempium*.) The 'no time travel before the creation of a time machine' rule is the basis for an obvious response to Hawking's Chronology Protection Conjecture, discussed earlier in this chapter, and it was so used by one physicist to rebut the Conjecture: as he wrote,[139]

(1) time machines, if possible, must have the property of not being able to travel back to before their creation, and
(2) no time machine has yet been created.

The absence of time travelers amongst us, therefore, provides no insight, one way or the other, on the eventually possibility of constructing a time machine.

1.7   For Further Discussion

Observations of the background microwave radiation that permeates the universe is strong experimental evidence for the Big Bang, the singularity thought to be the origin of the universe. This singularity is not shielded from us by an event horizon, and so is not a naked singularity (note 110), which means it is potentially visible. In 1969 the English theoretician Roger Penrose, however, proposed a metaphysical 'law' called the *cosmic censorship principle*, which asserts that naked singularities are impossible. Discuss the obvious tension between Penrose's principle and the Big Bang singularity. (See, for example, P. Kosso, "Spacetime Horizons and Unobservability," *Studies in History and Philosophy of Science*, June 1988, pp. 161–173.)

---

[137]O. Saari, "The Time Bender," *Amazing Stories*, August 1937. In this story we read that the time traveler "could not travel into the past for the plate had to exist in all ages traveled, and it had not existed before he made it."

[138]E. L. Rementer, "The Time Deflector," *Amazing Stories*, December 1929.

[139]K. S. Thorne, "Do the Laws of Physics Permit Closed Timelike Curves?" *Annals of the New York Academy of Science*, August 10, 1991, pp. 182–193. Science fiction writer Damon Knight (1922–2001) anticipated Thorne's rebuttal in his story "Azimuth 1, 2, 3, … ," *Isaac Asimov's Science Fiction Magazine*, June 1982.

In the text I mention the "transparent aluminum" bootstrap paradox that appears in the 1985 movie *Star Trek IV*. Even earlier, a movie bootstrap appeared in 1980 film *The Final Countdown*. There, the designer of a modern naval warship that temporarily time travels back to the Pearl Harbor of December 6, 1941, turns out to be a crew member who was (is) accidently left behind in the past when the ship returns to the present. In the past he *will be* able to design the ship because he already knows how it *was* designed—by himself! In the more recent 2014 film *Interstellar*, a wormhole near Saturn is discovered. By the end of the film we learn that it was put there by future humans, humans who exist because their ancestors (us!) were saved from a planet-wide ecological disaster when they used the wormhole to discover new worlds in far-flung regions of the universe. Decide whether or not the existence of the wormhole represents a bootstrap paradox, and defend your position.

One difficulty in using a black hole as a means of traveling from one region of the universe to another (with time travel as a special case) is simply getting to a black hole in the first place. The nearest one to Earth, as far as is known, is many light years distant. One reason for this may be an anthropic one (see note 13 in the "Introduction"). That is, a planet near a rotating black hole would either be eventually swallowed whole, or have its surface blasted by a firestorm of radiation produced by in-falling matter. In any case, no intelligent life able to recognize time travel would ever evolve on such a planet in the first place. That is, we are here to wonder about the absence of near-by black holes precisely *because* we aren't near a black hole. The lack of black holes near Earth is addressed in Joe Haldeman's 'Earth vs. Aliens' novel, *The Forever War*, by using the time dilation effect of special relativity (discussed in Chap. 3) that allows long travel distances to be covered in a reasonable time (as measured by clocks in rocket ships traveling near the speed of light). Still, while the travel time to reach a black hole distant from Earth by many light years may only be 6 months of ship time, back on Earth many *years* may pass. Once at the black hole the ship enters it and instantly 'jumps' to a vastly different region of the universe. In the novel, no time travel after the time dilation experienced in just getting to the black hole occurs, but Haldeman uses that to great effect as follows. Before entering into combat, Earth's soldiers are told that when they exit the hole into a new region of the universe, they may encounter alien warships equipped with *their* latest technology, technology that could be far in advance of the Earth warship's technology

which dates from Earth's *past*. That is, humans will be fighting against technology that dates from the Earth warship's *future*. To quote the novel, "Relativity traps us in the enemy's past; relativity brings them from our future." Explain this.

In one of the quatrains of the *Rubaiyat*, the eleventh century Persian poet-philosopher Omar Khayyam wrote

> *The Moving Finger writes; and having writ,*
> *Moves on; nor all your Piety nor Wit*
> *Shall lure it back to cancel half a Line,*
> *Nor all your Tears wash out a Word of it.*

Nearly a 1000 years later the German theoretical physicist Hermann Weyl (1885–1955), a colleague of both Einstein and Gödel at the Institute for Advanced Study in Princeton, NJ, wrote the following in his book *Space-Time-Matter* (published in 1921, three decades *before* Gödel's 1949 time travel paper):

> *It is possible to experience events now that will in part be an effect of my possible future resolves and actions. Moreover, it is not impossible for a world-line (in particular, that of my body), although it has a time-like* [see the index] *direction at every point, to return to the neighborhood of a point which it has already once passed through. The result would be a spectral image of the world more fearful than anything the weird fantasy of E. T. A. Hoffmann* [an early nineteenth-century German writer of the eccentric] *has ever conjured up. In actual fact the very considerable fluctuations of the* [components of the metric tensor, to be discussed in Chap. 3] *that would be necessary to produce this effect do not occur in the region of the world in which we live . . . Although paradoxes of this kind appear, nowhere do we find any real contradictions to the facts directly presented to us in experience.* Compare these two views and, in particular, discuss what each says about the idea of 'reliving the past.'

In the opening section of this book ("Some First Words") I mention how now and then science fiction has anticipated physics. One interesting example of this occurs in a story of a time traveler *almost* meeting himself, a story published 2 years *before* Gödel's 1949 time travel paper in which he suggests just such a possibility. The story opens with a man on a ship spotting the signal fire of a castaway on a Pacific island, as well as the tiny, distant figure

(continued)

of a man waving and jumping about. While sailing in to help, the ship hits a mine left over from the war, and the would-be-rescuer becomes a castaway, too. After swimming to the island, he can find no trace of who built the fire, although there are footprints all about in the sand. Exploring the island, he finds the remains of a crashed interstellar spaceship (!), powered by a drive unit based on 'temporal precession.' The man, curious, turns the drive on and thus sends himself backward in time by one day. He then spots a ship on the horizon, builds a fire, waves and jumps about, then *recognizes the ship as his own ....* And so the loop nearly but not quite closes. The man, apparently, rushes off into the jungle, terror-stricken at the thought of meeting himself. (You can find this tale by A. B. Chandler (1912–1984), "Castaway," in the November 1947 issue of *Weird Tales*, a publisher more of fantastic, super-natural, and horror stories than of science fiction. Perhaps easier to locate would be an anthology in which it has been reprinted: *Science-Fiction Adventures in Dimension* (G. Conklin, editor), Vanguard 1953.)
Speculate on what happens to the man. In particular, does Wells' own criticism of *The Time Machine*, concerning "vain repetitions" of time travelers, apply here (see the "Introduction" again)?

A philosopher has argued against the force of Hawking's chronology protection conjecture as follows: "There is an old argument to the effect that while backward time travel may be *possible*, it will never actually occur—for if it were going to occur, we would *already* have encountered the time travellers involved, whereas in fact we have done no such thing. ... But consider an isolated society living in a remote part of the world. Some members of this society are engaged in a long-running debate concerning the possibility of human flight. Were a 747 to pass overhead, would the debaters necessarily recognize it as containing flying humans? The answer to their question might have been staring them in the face for years, without them realizing it." (See Nicholas J. J. Smith, "Bananas Enough for Time Travel?" *British Journal for the Philosophy of Science*, September 1997, pp. 363–389, in particular note 3 on p. 364. The perhaps curious appearance of 'bananas' in the title of this paper will become clear when, in Chap. 4, we delve into the details of the famous grandfather paradox.) How would *you* answer Smith's question? Do you think it is plausible, as Smith implies, that we could right now be observing (without realizing it) effects in the present-day world that are the result of time travelers amongst us? What sort of effect(s) might raise this suspicion in *your* mind?

As discussed in Sect. 1.6, Tipler expressed some pessimism in his 1977 paper (note 134) about the possibility of actually constructing a time machine from a rotating cylinder. But that doesn't mean he didn't have some doubts, too, about theoretical 'proofs' of something being impossible. In his 1976 PhD dissertation, for example, he included an amusing reference to Simon Newcomb (a real-life mathematician that Wells' Time Traveller cites in *The Time Machine*—see note 102 in Chap. 2) who published mathematical 'proofs' that it would be impossible with known science to build a "practicable machine by which men shall fly long distances through the air." Why do you think Tipler did that? You can read more about Newcomb's 'proofs' in "Is the Airship Coming," *McClure's Magazine* (September 1901, pp. 432–435) and "The Outlook for the Flying Machine," *The Independent* (October 22, 1903, pp. 2508–2512).

In his autobiography, the Princeton physicist John Wheeler had this to say about time: "The smooth flow of time—or our smooth passage through it—is an illusion that is shattered when we . . . ask about time at the moment of the Big Bang, at a moment of gravitational collapse, at the moment of the Big Crunch. Students and others often ask what existed before the Big Bang. To say that we don't know is not to say enough. Even to say that we have no *way* of knowing is not enough. We really have to say that space and time came into existence, along with matter and energy and the laws of physics, at the moment of the Big Bang. If the universe expands to a maximum size, starts contracting, and eventually collapses to a fiery death—a fate that seems likely to me and to some other theorists . . . then time and space, too, will end in this Big Crunch. I can reach no conclusion other than this: there was no 'before' before the Big Bang, and there will be 'after' after the Big Crunch." (See J. A. Wheeler, *Geons, Black Holes, and Quantum Foam: a life in physics*, W. W. Norton 1998, pp. 349–350.) That is, when the Big Bang singularity occurred, time was *created*, and if the universe should collapse in the far future in a Big Crunch, time will be *annihilated*. This is a view of *nothingness* that transcends even that of the grave. Sharing Wheeler's dark view of the ultimate fate of reality, but instead giving the *victory t*o time (rather than its annihilation), was the Irish writer Jonathan Swift (1667–1745) in his poem *Riddles* (circa 1724): "Ever eating, never cloying/All-devouring, all destroying/Never finding full repast/ Till I eat the world at last." How do you think theologians would respond to Wheeler and Swift?

The American philosopher Roy Sorenson was cited in note 13 in the discussion of the difficulties a time travel would have in convincing skeptics that he *had really* time traveled (short of bringing a fresh dinosaur egg back and hatching it!). This question was treated in early pulp science fiction ("The Sands of Time," see note 43 in "Some First Words") as follows: The time traveler takes a sealed box of pure radium (with his name written on the inside of the lid) into the distant past, and buries it in a secure location. Upon returning to the present he unearths the box; testing of the contents will show that some of the radium has radioactively decayed to lead. Indeed, the amount of decay would be a direct measure of how far back into the past the box had been transported. This issue was later elaborated on by the English philosopher Alasdair Richmond in his paper "Time Travel, Parahistory and the Past Artefact Dilemma," *Philosophy*, July 2010, pp. 369–373. There he imagined two possible ways a time travelling Shakespearean scholar might attempt to convince skeptical colleagues that he had discovered a draft of *Hamlet* dating from the year 1589 (10 years *before* the earliest accepted date of its composition by Shakespeare). The first attempt is to simply bring that draft directly back with him in the time machine, from 1589 to the present. Then, of course, many of the inherent clues as to the draft's authenticity, such as chemical composition of the ink, the weave of the paper, and orthography (the style of writing in 1589) would be consistent with the time traveler's claim, but other clues would *not*—the *age* of the paper and of the ink, for example, would be taken as evidence fatal to the claim, as they would not be nearly 430 years old. They would appear, in fact, to be practically new! The draft would, therefore, be dismissed as simply a clever forgery. The second attempt would try to get around this problem, as follows. After locating the draft in 1589, the time traveler *doesn't* bring it back to the present, but rather stashes it away in a secret hiding place. Then, once back in the present, he takes his colleagues to the secret hiding place and, with a flourish, reveals the draft which now *is* nearly 430 years old. Much to the time traveler's frustration, however, his colleagues still reject his time travel claim, this time saying he must have simply found the draft in the 'usual' way (under the floorboards in somebody's attic, for example), and is just pretending to have found it via time travel. Can you think of a way, using the *Hamlet* draft, the time traveler might be able to convince his skeptical colleagues?

The fan I quoted in "Some First Words," who wrote to *Astounding Stories* in 1931 to express his unhappiness with the appearance of women in that magazine's stories, was quite clear about his concerns—although, given the times, he carefully avoided any direct mention of sex. A modern, highly successful *female* writer of science fiction, Anne McCaffrey (1926–2011), didn't shy away from that, however, when she wrote the following in a hilariously funny essay: "Prior to the '60s, stories with any sort of love interest were very rare. True, it was implied in many stories of the '30s and '40s that the guy married the girl whom he had rescued/encountered/discovered during the course of his adventures. But no real pulse-pounding, tender, gut-reacting scenes. The girl was still a 'thing' to be used to perpetuate the hero's magnificent chromosomes. Or perhaps to prove that the guy wasn't . . . I mean, all those men locked away on a spaceship for months/years at a time. I mean . . . and you know what I mean even if I couldn't mention it in the sf of the '30s and '40s." (See Anne McCaffrey, "Hitch Your Dragon to a Star: Romance and Glamour in Science Fiction," in *Science Fiction, Today and Tomorrow*, R. Bretnor, editor, Harper & Row 1974, pp. 278–292.) Modern time travel science fiction has shown a huge change (for the better) on this score. Discuss, for example, the emotional power of a love story between a couple separated in time, as depicted in the 1975 novel *Bid Time Return* by Richard Matheson (made into the 1980 film *Somewhere in Time*). How do you think the 1931 fan would have reacted to Matheson's story? (Indeed, if that fan was a teenager—or even a few years older—in 1931, then 44 years later he would have been, at most, in his mid-60s and might well *have* read the novel.)

In the 2014 film *Interstellar*, a space probe dives into a black hole, gets a glimpse of the hole's singularity, measures some unspecified quantum effects, and then sends the measurements back to Earth (via the fifth dimension) as a signal in the form of spasmodic Morse code twitches of the second-hand on somebody's watch. This all leads (it is hinted) to a theory of quantum gravity. If you saw the second-hand on *your* watch suddenly begin to spasmodically twitch, would you then immediately think

(a) that a Morse code message was coming to you via the fifth dimension bearing the secrets of quantum gravity?

or

(b) that your watch needs a new battery?

or

(c) something else?

Vigorously defend your answer.

William Grey, a philosopher at The University of Queensland, pointed out numerous conceptual difficulties with the idea of time travel in his paper "Troubles with Time Travel," *Philosophy*, January 1999, pp. 55–70. That paper quickly prompted a rebuttal from the philosopher Phil Dowe (at the University of Tasmania), who replied a year later with the paper "The Case for Time Travel," *Philosophy*, July 2000, pp. 441–451. We'll eventually take up all the issues discussed in those two papers but, for now, read both papers and summarize their respective arguments. Do you feel one of the writers won the day (for you, anyway)?

Chapter 2
Philosophical Space and Time

> *"I do not believe that there are any longer any philosophical problems about Time; there is only the physical problem of determining the exact physical geometry of the four-dimensional continuum that we inhabit."* [1]

2.1 Time: What Is It, and Is It Real?

"Time is generally thought to be one of the more mysterious ingredients of the Universe." [2]

Before going any further with time *travel*, it will be well worth the effort to take a closer look at time itself, the 'stuff' or 'thing' or ... ? that we are interested in traveling 'through' or 'around' or 'across' or ... ? Oddly enough, I'll start with religion, as philosophical theologians had identified time as something unusual long before Newton's words on time in his *Principia* that I mentioned in the Introduction, and many thousands of years before science fiction writers and their time travel stories.

We can, in fact, trace the religious interest in time back at least sixteen centuries to the Christian theologian St. Augustine and his *Confessions* (in which he famously admitted "What, then, is time? I know well enough what it is, provided that nobody asks me: but if I am asked what it is and try to explain, I am baffled."). Certainly the seventeenth century Spanish Jesuit Juan Eusebius Nieremberg caught the spirit of wonder that time holds for the devout when he wrote, in his *Of Temperance and Patience*, that "*Time* is a sacred thing; it flows from Heaven ... It is an emanation from that place, where eternity springs ... It is a *clue* cast down from Heaven to guide us ... It has some assimilation to Divinity."

Going outside Christianity, we can easily find other equally strong reactions to the mystery of time. From Plutarch's *Platonic Questions* we learn that when the question of time's nature was put to Pythagoras, he simply uttered the mystical "time is the soul of the world." The *Laws of Manu* of Hinduism, the *Torah* of

---

[1] H. Putnam, "Time and Physical Geometry," *Journal of Philosophy*, April 1967, pp. 240–247.

[2] P. Horwich, *Asymmetries in Time*, MIT Press 1987.

Judaism, the *Koran* of Islam, and the revealed truths of Gautama Buddha are all full of references to time. It is, in fact, to the pagan gods of Greek mythology that we owe our 'modern' image of Chronos, or Father Time.

Not just the Greeks made time a god. In the *Bhagavad Gita* (*Song of the Lord*), the central religious-romantic epic of Hinduism that predates Christ by five centuries, one of the characters reveals his divine nature and declares his power thus: "Know that I am Time, that makes the worlds to perish, when ripe, and bring on them destruction." And in the even older Egyptian Book of the Dead, which dates back over three thousand years, the newly deceased was thought literally to become one with time itself. The merging of time and the resurrection of the body after death in the Book is shown in the line "I am Yesterday, Today and Tomorrow, and I have the power to be born a second time."

The Greek philosopher Plato (circa 400 B.C.) gave us a curious way to think of time: as a *closed loop*. While Plato did think of time as having a beginning, his conception did not have time extending off into the infinite future as does the modern, everyday view. Rather, Plato visualized time as curving back on itself—as *circular* in nature. This was, in fact, a reasonable reflection on what Plato could see everywhere in nature, with the seemingly endless repetition of the seasons, the regular ebb and surge of the tides (the old English word *tid* was a unit of time), the unvarying alternation of night and day, and the rotation of the visible planets in the sky. Whatever might be observed today, it seemed obvious to Plato, would happen again in nature. Circular time in science fiction was briefly mentioned in Chap. 1,[3] and it occurs outside that genre, too, as in James Joyce's novel *Finnegans Wake*, which opens in mid-sentence and ends with the first part of the same sentence. This view of time has a powerful, ancient visual symbol, the Worm Ouroborous, or World Snake, that eats its own tail endlessly.

Circular time, with its closed topology, was favorably presented in Stephen Hawking's famous book *A Brief History of Time*. In it he concludes that there is no need for God because in circular time there is no first event and hence no need for a First Cause. Vigorous philosophical rebuttals were quick to come, of course![4]

Turning to fiction, Ray Bradbury wrote a beautifully poetic passage about the mystery of time in "Night Meeting," one of the splendid sub-stories in his episodic 1950 masterpiece *The Martian Chronicles*. A man of A.D. 2002, who is one of the modern inhabitants of Mars, somehow meets the ghostly image of a long-dead Martian one cold August night. The conditions are just right for such a cross-time encounter. As the man thinks to himself, "There is the smell of Time in the air

---

[3] Another example from science fiction is the story by I. Hobana, "Night Broadcast," in which a television signal from the past is picked up by a gadget that is probing the *future*: "By going far enough into the future one comes upon what we call the past." You can find this tale in the *Penguin World Omnibus of Science Fiction*, Penguin Books 1986.

[4] See, for example, W. L. Craig, "What Place, Then, for a Creator?: Hawking on God and Creation," *British Journal for the Philosophy of Science*, December 1990, pp. 473–491, and R. Le Poidevin, "Creation in a Closed Universe Or, Have Physicists Disproved the Existence of God?," *Religious Studies*, March 1991, pp. 39–48.

tonight. . . . There was a thought. What did Time smell like? Like dust and people. And if you wondered what Time sounded like it sounded like water running in a dark cave and voices crying and dirt dropping down on hollow box lids, and rain. And, going further, what did Time *look* like? Time looked like snow dropping silently into a black room or it looked like a silent film in an ancient theater, one hundred billion faces falling like those New Year balloons, down and down into nothing. That was how Time smelled and looked and sounded. And tonight . . . tonight you could almost *touch* Time."

Well, lovely words, yes, but they don't really tell us what time *is*. Perhaps Einstein the physicist can tell us. In the *New York Times* of December 3, 1919, we find him quoted as follows: "Till now it was believed that time and space existed by themselves, even if there was nothing [Newton's view]—no Sun, no Earth, no stars—while now we know that time and space are not the vessel for the Universe, but could not exist at all if there were no contents, namely, no Sun, no Earth, and other celestial bodies." Less than 2 years later Einstein stated this view again (*New York Times*, April 4, 1921): "Up to this time the conceptions of time and space have been such that if everything in the Universe were taken away, if there were nothing left, there would still be left to man time and space." Einstein went on to deny this view of reality, saying that, according to his general theory of relativity, time and space would *cease to exist* if the universe were empty. This has the ring of one of Einstein's favorite philosophers, Spinoza, who declared in his *Principles of Cartesian Philosophy* that "there was no Time or Duration before Creation." In a correspondence with Samuel Clarke—Newton's friend who translated Newton's *Optiks* into Latin—the German philosopher Gottfried Leibniz (who began the correspondence in 1715) expressed similar ideas: "Instants, consider'd without the things, are nothing at all . . . they consist only in the successive order of things."

The pragmatic scientist would certainly agree with Leibniz. After all, what could it even mean to talk of time unless you can measure it? And what you use to measure time is a clock—some kind of changing configuration of matter involving spinning gears, ticking pendulums, and rotating dial pointers. Mere *unchanging* matter, alone, is not sufficient to measure time because a still clock measures nothing. *Changing* matter seems to be required. Yet, not surprisingly, not everybody agrees. The counterview, the view that time has nothing to do with change, was expressed in an interesting manner by a science fiction fan in a letter to the editor of *Wonder Stories* (January 1931): "Just one thing, you have these time-traveling yarns, good stuff to read all right, but bunk, you know; because if there's no such thing as time, which there isn't, *only change* [my emphasis], how can one travel in . . . something that doesn't exist. To our planet which goes around the Sun there is simply a turning and warming of one side and then the other, i.e., years, days, minutes, etc., is something purely artificial, invented by man to tell him when to do certain things, work and stop work . . ."[5]

---

[5] This fan's idea was not new. For Plato's most famous student, Aristotle, time was *motion* (in a world in which nothing moved, argued Aristotle, there would be no time), and he expressed this

Going even beyond the ideas of Einstein, Spinoza, Leibniz, Plato, Aristotle, and our science fiction fan, at least one metaphysician felt that time would have no meaning, even in a massive and changing universe, without the additional presence of conscious, rational beings.[6] That sounds very much like an echo of the French philosopher Henri Bergson who, in 1888, somewhat mysteriously declared that time is "nothing but the ghost of space haunting the reflective consciousness." A few years before Taylor, however, a fellow philosopher had argued for exactly the opposite view, that temporal passage is independent of the existence of conscious beings.[7]

All this divergence of opinion perhaps explains why even a lightweight Hollywood movie like Mel Brooks' 1987 *Spaceballs* can get a laugh from a time joke. Even kids know that the characters, when talking about time, haven't the slightest idea of *what* they are talking about. The movie, a spoof on such classic films as *Star Wars*, *The Wizard of Oz*, and *Raiders of the Lost Ark*, quickly reaches a point of crisis. To find out what to do next, the evil Lord Helmet and his chief henchman decide on a novel approach: they will look at an instant video of their own movie! (Instant videos are available *before* the movie is finished.) Perplexed at watching on a television screen everything that he is doing as he does it (the screen correctly shows an infinite regression of television screens, each being watched by a Lord Helmet), Lord Helmet initiates the following rapid-fire exchange. (It is, of course, a clever take-off on Abbott and Costello's "Who's on First?")

> *What the hell am I looking at? When does this happen in the movie?*
> *Now! You're looking at now, sir. Everything that happens now, is*
> *happening, now.*
> *What happened to then?*
> *We're past that.*
> *When?*
> *Just now, now.*
> *Go back to then.*
> *When?*
> *Now.*
> *Now?*
> *Now.*
> *I can't.*
> *Why?*
> *We missed it.*

---

view in his famous metaphor "Time is the moving image of eternity." For Aristotle, then, time and change were inseparably intertwined. For Aristotle the world had existed for eternity, and the circularity of time was a central and powerful image; using his vivid illustration, it is equally true *in circular time* that we live both before *and* after the Trojan War.

[6]R. Taylor, "Time and Life's Meaning," *Review of Metaphysics*, June 1987, pp. 675–686.

[7]S. McCall, "Objective Time Flow," *Philosophy of Science*, September 1976, pp. 337–362.

When?
Just now. [The henchman then sets the video to rewind.]
When will then be now?
Soon.

We may laugh at this, even dismiss it as mere movie madness, but could any of us *really* do much better if, like Saint Augustine, we were backed into a corner and asked to explain time? Somehow, I think even the distinguished twentieth-century Harvard professor Hilary Putnam whose words open this chapter would find it difficult to know where to begin. He might even become as confused as the time traveler in the 1968 film *Je t'aime, Je t'aime*, whose oscillations in time, from present to past and back again, leave him so befuddled that he decides he'd rather be dead. What, then, *can* we say about time? Despite Putnam's bold words, I suspect that most people would come down on the side of Augustine.

The mystery of time was well captured by R. H. Hutton (1826–1897), the literary editor of the *Spectator*, when he wrote in his 1895 review (see note 1 in the Introduction) of Wells' *Time Machine* that "the story is based on that rather favorite speculation of modern metaphysicians which supposes *time* to be at once the most important of the conditions of organic evolution, and the most misleading of subjective illusions . . . and yet Time is so purely subjective a mode of thought, that a man of searching intellect is supposed to be able to devise the means of traveling in time as well as in space, and visiting, so as to be contemporary with, any age of the world, past or future, so as to become as it were a true 'pilgrim of eternity.'"

Novelist Israel Zangwill (1864–1926) wrote a similar but much more analytical review of Wells' novel for the *Pall Mall Magazine* (see note 1 in the Introduction). Zangwill was the only Victorian reviewer to attempt a scientific analysis of time travel. Although he thought Wells' effort was a "brilliant little romance," Zangwill also thought the time machine—"much like the magic carpet of *The Arabian Nights*"—was simply "an amusing fantasy." Zangwill continued in his review with what was even then a common idea about a way one might actually be able, at least in principle, to look backward in time; one could travel far out into space by going faster than light and then watch the light from the past as it catches up to you. (Note, carefully, that Zangwill was writing in 1895, 10 years before Einstein's special relativity put a limit on possible speeds.) In this way, Zangwill wrote, one could watch "the Whole Past of the Earth still playing itself out."

Indeed, even before Zangwill, the well-known French astronomer Camille Flammarion (1842–1925) had made this dramatic idea a centerpiece of his 1887 novel *Lumen*. That book, a best-seller in Europe even before its appearance in England, describes how a man just dead (in 1864) instantly finds his spirit on the star Capella, where he is able to watch the light then arriving from the Earth of 1793. In particular, he watches the French Revolution play itself out and sees himself as a child. Flammarion may have, in fact, been inspired to write his novel by an essay written several years earlier (in 1883) by the British physicist

J. H. Poynting (1852–1914). Poynting's essay,[8] which opens with the statement that it was, in turn, inspired by an anonymous pamphlet published "30 or 40 years ago" on the same topic, specifically mentions watching historical events from Capella.

By the beginning of the twentieth century the idea of watching the past by outrunning light had drifted down into juvenile literature, as in the 1904 novel *Around a Distant Star* by Jean Delaire (the pen name for Pauline Touchemoline (1868–1950)), in which a young man builds a spaceship that can travel at two thousand times the speed of light. With it, he and a friend travel to an Earth-like planet nineteen hundred light-years distant and use a super-telescope to watch the Crucifixion (and then the resurrection) of Jesus. Early magazine science fiction also found the idea of looking backward in time with delayed light to be an irresistible one, involving romance and murder.[9] In another tale incorporating human emotions, a scientist loses his wife to a rival who kidnaps her and then escapes in a faster-than-light rocket ship headed for parts unknown. After searching for them with his own brilliant invention of the 'ampliscope' (several quantum leaps beyond the telescope), the scientist locates the couple, skipping from planet to planet light-years distant. His only pleasure, then, is to use his own faster-than-light craft to outrun the images of his lost love and watch them over and over. Eventually, however, he comes to realize the ultimate futility of it all. As the final line of this sad tale says, "It would be senseless, I knew, chasing on and on after yesterdays."[10]

The reality of time received a new twist with the additional imagery of instants of time being likened to the points on a *straight* line. In the West it was the Christian theological doctrine of *unique* historical events that gave rise to *linear* time in the minds of the common folk. The creation of the world and Adam and Eve, the adventures of Noah and the cataclysmic Flood, the Resurrection—these were all events that occurred in sequence, *once*. None would happen again and so, for Christianity, circular time just would not do.[11] In addition, it has been argued that the major spiritual content of Christianity—a significant reason for its popular support even in the face of brutally harsh Roman suppression—is that it brought the *expectation of change* into the static world of ancient times. It was, in fact, in ancient religious teachings that our modern view of linear time had its origin, a view that most people today (including the most hardened agnostic physicist) find to be as natural as Plato and Aristotle found circular time.

---

[8]J. H. Poynting, "Overtaking the Rays of Light," in Poynting's *Collected Scientific Papers*, Cambridge University Press 1920.

[9]As in, for example, G. A. England, "The Time Reflector," *The Monthly Story Magazine*, September 1905.
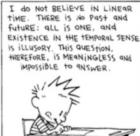
[10]D. D. Sharp, "Faster Than Light," *Marvel Science Stories*, February 1939. The year before saw the appearance of a story with the same idea, a story that specifically cites Flammerion: M. Weisinger, "Time On My Hands," *Thrilling Wonder Stories*, June 1938.

[11]Still, just to show how one can find support for almost any view in the same religious dogma, Ecclesiastes 1:9 would seem to be a claim *not* for linear time but rather for circular time!: "The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be; and that which is done is that which shall be done; and there is no new thing under the sun."

Calvin and Hobbes   by Bill Watterson

Even though linear time was the norm after Christ, there were still enough questions about time to perplex the deepest of thinkers, and the next 2000 years resulted in plenty of thinking. Discourses on time by such philosophers as Descartes, Spinoza, Hobbes, Kant, Nietzsche, and Hegel can be found by the yard in any decent university library. Nearly all (if not indeed all) of these presentations have metaphysical, even theological, underpinnings. For example, Descartes is generally believed to have argued for a discontinuous, atomistic nature to time (recall the *chronon* from Chap. 1). This is the modern view of his thinking, because in his *Meditations* (1641), in particular in the third meditation on God's reality, Descartes appears to argue that God must continually recreate the world at each *separate* moment of its existence. That is, the world is recreated in a discontinuous succession of *individual* acts by God.[12]

Finally, with Newton's discussion of *absolute* time, which is the belief that time is the same everywhere in the universe, there was for the first time a *physicist* writing about time (although, as I mention in Chap. 1, Newton's views were also influenced *heavily* by theological considerations, in addition to mathematical physics). But, despite Newton's genius, the mystery of time remained a mystery.

In 1905 Einstein's name appeared among the contributors to the study of time, and so at last something besides metaphysical speculation on the subject was added to the body of human thought. Einstein's paper on special relativity introduced the revolutionary idea of *relative* time, which is the anti-Newton belief that the passage of time is *not* the same everywhere, but rather depends on local conditions. In retrospect, Einstein's 1905 work seems to be the perfect reply to the comment by Isaac Barrow (1630–1677)—Newton's teacher and the first Lucasian professor of mathematics at Cambridge (the chair once held by Stephen Hawking centuries

---

[12]For more on this, see R. T. W. Arthur, "Continuous Creation, Continuous Time: A Refutation of the Alleged Discontinuity of Cartesian Time," *Journal of the History of Philosophy*, July 1988, pp. 349–375.

later)—that "because *Mathematicians* frequently make use of Time, they ought to have a distinct idea of the meaning of the Word, otherwise they are Quacks."

Then, just 3 years after Einstein, along came a second astonishing paper by the Cambridge philosopher John Ellis McTaggart (1866–1925). This paper[13] claims to prove that whatever time might be *thought* to be (even by Einstein), it really isn't that because time isn't even real. (This would seem, I think you'd agree, to have potentially profound implications for time travel!) The method of the paper is to deny the reality of time via an infinite-regress argument that one philosopher[14] has called the *pons asinorum* ("bridge of asses") of the riddle of time. As McTaggart's own opening sentence freely admits, "It doubtless seems highly paradoxical to assert that Time is unreal, and that all statements which involve its reality are erroneous."

McTaggart began his analysis by observing that there are two separate and distinct ways of talking about events in time. Following his terminology, one can say that events are either future, present, or past (the so-called *A-series*), or one can say that events temporally ordered by each being later than some other events, earlier than others, and simultaneous with still others (the so-called *B-series*). He then continued by asserting that time requires change, and followed that with the observation that the A-series (but not the B-series) incorporates such change. That is, if event X is earlier than event Y, then X is *always* earlier than Y and thus there is no change in this (or in any other) example of a B-series. As a specific example, let Y be the birth of a child, and let X be the birth of its mother. In contrast, if X is first in the future, then is in the present, and finally is in the past, then we have an example of change (and hence of *time*) in the A-series; for example, let X be the next time you blink.

With this rather pedestrian start, McTaggart then pulled his rabbit out of the hat. It makes no sense, he argued, to talk of the 'future,' 'present,' and 'past' of an event because these terms are mutually exclusive. That is, no two of these predicates can apply at once, and yet, paradoxically, every event possesses all three and thus we have a contradiction. It therefore, concludes McTaggart, makes no sense to talk of future, present, or past. And because it makes no sense to talk of them, they do not exist, and so there can be no A-series and hence no change, and thus no reality to time. McTaggart apparently realized just how befuddling all that would appear to just about everybody who read it, and so he played devil's advocate (D.A.) in his paper by trying to anticipate the various objections people could raise. Of course, he always managed to refute the D.A. at every turn. It is worth the effort to go through the details of McTaggart's 'proof,' as that will make it clear what there is about

---

[13]J. E. McTaggart, "The Unreality of Time," *Mind*, October 1908.

[14]L. O. Mink, "Time, McTaggart and Pickwickian Language," *Philosophical Quarterly*, July 1960, pp. 252–263. The phrase *pons asinorum* has its origin in a plane geometry theorem: the angles opposite the equal sides of an isosceles triangle are themselves equal. Seeing the truth of this is said to separate the quick-witted from the dull. It isn't clear (to me, anyway), however, on which side of McTaggart's 'proof' the quick-witted were imagined to fall. You'll see what I mean in just a moment.

'traditional' philosophical reasoning that so irritates modern philosophers trained in mathematical physics (and what makes physicists roll their eyes when confronted with arguments like McTaggart's).

The predicates of future, present, and past are really not incompatible for any event, the D.A. says some will claim, because the real predicates we should use are '*was* future,' '*is* present,' and '*will be* past,' and these *can* be possessed all at once by any event. Nice try, counters McTaggart, but that will not solve the problem. By allowing such modified predicates, we must actually allow for all nine possibilities, some of which are still incompatible. That is, the 'was,' 'is,' and 'will be' could each be potentially attached to 'future,' 'present,' and 'past': for example, 'was past' is incompatible with 'will be future.'

Oh, counters the D.A., we can eliminate that concern by allowing even more complex predicates to arrive at a third level of structure, such as 'is going to have been past,' and 'was going to be future,' and those *are* compatible. But McTaggart swats that argument away, too, by displaying new incompatibles, as well as by showing that the process of ever-increasing predicate complexity is a vicious infinite regress that drags along the seeds of its own doom at every step.[15] There is simply no escape from incompatibility, he says, and so there is no time.

Well! What can one do when presented with such an argument, one that seems to claim philosophers can wrest free the secrets of nature by pondering the historical accidents of English syntax? As David Hume once said, "Nothing is more usual than for philosophers to encroach on the province of grammarians, and to engage in disputes of words, while they imagine they are handling controversies of the deepest importance and concern." One modern philosopher apparently agreed with Hume, at least in the case of McTaggart's 'proof,' and he was pretty blunt with his evaluation of it: "McTaggart's famous argument for the unreality of time is so completely outrageous that it should long ago have been interred in decent obscurity. And indeed it would have been, were it not for the fact that so many philosophers are not sure that it has ever really been given a proper burial, and so from time to time someone digs it up all over again in order to pronounce it *really*

---

[15]Here's a clever way to systematically generate McTaggart's infinite regress of complex predicates, as presented by M. Dummett, "A Defense of McTaggart's Proof of the Unreality of Time," *Philosophical Review*, October 1969, pp. 497–504): "Let us call 'past,' 'present,' and 'future' 'predicates of first level.' If, as McTaggart suggests, we render 'was future' as 'future in the past,' and so forth, then we have nine predicates of second level, where we join any of the three on the left with any of the three on the right:

past		past
present	in the	present
future		future

Similarly, there are twenty-seven predicates of third level ... "Dummett's construction clearly shows that, at the N-th level, there are 3^N predicates, most of which are incompatible.

dead. These periodic autopsies reveal that something more remains to be said."[16] That is certainly true, in as much as McTaggart's disarmingly innocent argument has caused disagreement and furrowed brows among philosophers for decades.

It is, in fact, easy to find examples of the continuing debate over McTaggart's analysis and, as silly as it strikes physicists, it still has a pulse in some quarters. While at least one philosopher has argued that McTaggart simply didn't really understand his own proof, this philosopher nevertheless agreed with McTaggart's conclusion about the unreality of time.[17] Another writer has illustrated how McTaggart's ideas have found their way into modern philosophical debates on the meaning of time in the cinema, particularly in the analysis of *anachrony*, the telling of a story out of normal time sequence, such as occurs in time travel movies.[18]

Other sorts of metaphysical proofs for the unreality of time have been offered besides McTaggart's. For example, it has be argued that time is unreal, at least in a world empty of consciousness, because the concepts of past, present, and future could not possibly have any meaning unless events could be remembered, experienced, and anticipated. Or, for a second example, some have held time to be unreal, at least in a deterministic world (as some argue four-dimensional spacetime to be), because any event whose occurrence follows from present conditions, and from physical laws, would exist (they say) *now*. This view, which seems to assert that everything should happen at once, I personally find to be sufficiently obtuse as not to be bothered by it.[19] Debates between those who believe in the common-sense idea that present, past, and future are attributes of events (the 'tensers') and those who deny it (the four-dimensional spacetime, block universe 'detensers') continues to now and then still flair up on the pages of philosophy journals. At least one philosopher likes both views![20] Most modern physicists, I think, simply don't care about this line of inquiry.

On the other hand, less than a month before his death Einstein revealed his feelings about the meaning of present, past, and future, and his words appear to be ones that show some sympathy to the philosophers. In a letter written on March 21, 1955, to the children of his dearest friend who had just died, Einstein wrote—with full knowledge that his own illness would be his last—"And now he has

---

[16] F. Christensen, "McTaggart's Paradox and the Nature of Time," *Philosophical Quarterly*, October 1974, pp. 289–299.

[17] Q. Smith, "The Infinite Regress of Temporal Attributions," *Southern Journal of Philosophy*, Fall 1986, pp. 383–396. To this came a rebuttal a year later by L. N. Oaklander, in the same journal (Fall 1987, pp. 425–431).

[18] G. Currie, "McTaggart at the Movies," *Philosophy*, July 1992, pp. 343–355.

[19] But if, upon reflection, it starts to bother *you*, see R. Gale, "Some Metaphysical Statements About Time," *Journal of Philosophy*, April 1963, pp. 225–237. We'll soon get to some of the more common philosophical questions on the nature of four-dimensional spacetime, such as 'is it deterministic or is it fatalistic?,' and 'does free-will have any meaning in four-dimensional spacetime?' Even physicists are interested such questions!

[20] R. Weingard, "Space-Time and the Direction of Time," *Nous*, may 1977, pp. 119–131.

preceded me briefly in bidding farewell to this strange world. This signifies nothing. For us believing physicists, the distinction between past, present, and future is only an illusion, even if a stubborn one."[21] Later in this chapter I'll return to these curious words and speculate on what Einstein may have meant by them.

I started this opening section on a religious note, and I'll end it on one. If you think the philosophical speculations on the nature of time that I've so far cited are 'really far out,' here's yet another one that leaves all the rest in the dust. In a paper that took real nerve to write (or, perhaps, simply a wicked sense of humor—and I write that in pure admiration) we read of how a spacetime that supports time travel can give the start for a *physics* explanation to the theological concept of Hell! After introducing just a bit of elementary spacetime physics (which I'll skip describing here because we'll do it later in the book), the author[22] shows how to 'construct' a compact region in spacetime (Hell) with the following properties:

1. While "so small even the Hubble Telescope couldn't image it" it can hold an infinity of physical beings;
2. Each of the beings in it are doomed, because of its time travel property, to an infinitely long personal future of damnation;
3. Each of the beings in it, because of its time travel property, can view all the future stages of their own personal damnation and so be "continually presented with a reminder of the impossibility of escape—a refinement no causally normal Hell can seemingly offer." In other words, and not to be too ironic about it, 'Theological Progress Through Physics!';
4. Each of the beings in it are continually being compressed together ("brought into dismaying proximity" with themselves) and so will spend eternity "listening to a cacophony" of their own cries of despair from *their personal future*.

There's more, but that's probably enough for you to get the idea. Richmond does admit that, as it stands, his time travel creation of Hell is not compatible with either quantum theory or even general relativity. Still, it *is* something to ponder, don't you think, when the subject of time travel comes up!

2.2   Linear Time and the Infinity of Past and Future

"A thousand years is a huge succession of yesterdays beyond our clear apprehension."[23]

—H. G. Wells

---

[21]Quoted from B. Hoffmann, *Albert Einstein: Creator & Rebel*, New American Library 1972, pp. 257–258.

[22]Alasdair M. Richmond, "Hilbert's Inferno: Time Travel and the Damned," *Ratio*, September 2013, pp. 233–249.

[23]This line appears in Wells' 1944 doctoral thesis, written for the University of London. You can find an abridgement of the thesis in *Nature*, April 1, 1944, pp. 395–397.

The modern concept of linear time as a straight line extending from the dim past through the present and disappearing into the misty future gives rise immediately to twin questions: "Did time have a beginning?" and "Will time ever end?" As one philosopher put it (long before physicists became seriously interested in singularities like the Big Bang) "Endings and beginnings are rooted in the very conception of time itself."[24] Starting at the beginning, we'll ask if the past has been forever? Early Biblical scholars, of course, believed the answers to both questions to be *no*.

They believed that the world came into being because of a First Cause, God's creation of everything. Those scholars expended vast quantities of energy (and, need I say it, time itself) in calculating the date of creation. Martin Luther, for example, argued for 4000 B.C. as roughly when everything, including time, began. Johannes Kepler adjusted this by a notch, to 4004 B.C., and later the Calvinist James Ussher, Archbishop of Armagh and Primate of All Ireland, tweaked it again. His date is the most impressive of all, at least in detail: the first day of the world was 4003, 70 days, and 6 h before the midnight that started the first day of the Christian era. Six days after that first day of the world, Adam was made, and as a final dash of specificity, this last date was declared to be Friday, October 28! Ironically, then, though Christian theology may be given credit for introducing linear time, it certainly did not provide very much of it. The beginning of time was just 6000 years or so ago, and of course The End—in the form of the Battle of Armageddon—has been awaited (with varying degrees of eagerness) for the last 1000 years.

The discovery in the seventeenth century of geological time cast a certain amount of skepticism on those early calculations concerning the duration of the past. With the discovery that the very Earth itself could be decoded for its history, the lure of trying to decode a mere book of admittedly finite age declined for most people although it cannot be denied that modern Creationists still find such a task to have its rewards). Geological time was discovered to a *chasm* of time extending backward for billions of years, a duration that is really incomprehensible for the human brain. It has become fashionable for geologists to refer to such enormous durations with the apt term *deep time*, a subtle play on the metaphor of the "ocean of time."

It is nothing less than humbling to historians who pause to think on how little of the past is known, that is, recorded. As the ever anonymous wit once put it, "History is a damn dim candle over a damn dark abyss." Still, even as enormous as is the age of the Earth, it is not infinite. But of course our planet is very old, and the universe is many billions of years older. Is the age of the universe also the duration of the past? Or is the past itself actually *infinite*?

An implicit assumption of the infinity of the past (and of the future, too) can be found in Book Three of Lucretius' science poem *De Rerum Natura* (*On the Nature of Things*) where, just before the birth of Christ, Lucretius argues for the irrationality of fearing death: "The bygone antiquity of everlasting time before our birth

---

[24]I. Stearns, "Time and the Timeless," *Review of Metaphysics*, December 1950, pp. 187–200.

was nothing to us. Nature holds this up to us as a mirror of the time yet to come after our death. Is there anything in this that looks appalling, anything that means an aspect of gloom? Is it not more untroubled than any sleep?"

One philosopher[25] has traced the origins of rational support for the finite duration of the past to as far back as the sixth century A.D. The argument presented then by the Christian philosopher Joannes Philoponus of Alexandria (who is otherwise known as John the Grammarian) is simply that the world could *not* have been forever because that implies an infinity of successive acts could have taken place which (according to Philoponus) is impossible. A variation on this is the claim that if the past were infinite in extent, then everything would have happened by now! Infinity was just too big for the ancient mind (Zeno's hoary pre-Christian paradoxes, as is well-known today, are based on subtle errors in the use of infinity).

This view on the impossibility of an infinite past seems to have been the prevalent view; even as late as the twelfth century the debate among Christian theologians was not about the possibility of an infinite past, but instead about whether the Biblical 'six days of Creation' actually had taken place simultaneously. For many, the past was 'obviously' finite in duration.[26] Not all Christians accepted that conclusion, however, and the following century saw St. Thomas Aquinas (a follower of Aristotle) arguing for the opposite view of an infinite past.

Thomas' contemporary, St. Bonaventure, however, argued again for a *finite* past, and it is with Bonaventure that we start to see some mathematical sophistication.[27] Bonaventure argued that in a world infinitely old, the Sun would have made an infinite number of its annual trips around the ecliptic. But for each such trip the Moon would have made twelve monthly trips around the Earth, and so this second infinity would be twelve times as great as the first one, and how could that be? Infinity is infinity, and how can something be twelve times bigger than infinity? This argument doesn't have any strength today because of the nineteenth century German mathematician Georg Cantor's work on the concept of infinity,[28] but it *is* clever. Agonized, convoluted theological analyses of God, infinity, and eternity continued long after Aquinas and Bonaventure. Two examples should capture the spirit of those times.

---

[25]G. J. Whitrow, "On the Impossibility of an Infinite Past," *British Journal for the Philosophy of Science*, March 1978, pp. 39–45. Whitrow adds modern scientific support to the idea of a finite past by citing the prediction from general relativity of a singularity in spacetime at some finite past time; that is, the theory's prediction that time—and everything else—had its beginning in the now famous Big Bang.

[26]C. Gross, "Twelfth-Century Concepts of Time: Three Reinterpretations of Augustine's Doctrine of Creation *Simul*," *Journal of the History of Philosophy*, July 1985, pp. 325–338.

[27]See, for example, L. Sweeney, "Bonaventure and Aquinas on the Divine Being as Infinite," *Southwestern Journal of Philosophy*, Summer 1974, pp. 71–91, and S. Baldner, "St. Bonaventure on the Temporal Beginning of the World," *New Scholasticism*, Spring 1989, pp. 206–228.

[28]For simple high school-level presentations on Cantor's astonishing infinity results, see my book *The Logician and the Engineer*, Princeton 2013, pp. 169–171.

Consider first this one, on the supposed immortality of the soul. If $A = B$, then $2A = 2B$. Next, let $A = $ 'half alive' and $B = $ 'half dead,' where $A = B$ in the same sense that a glass half-full is also half-empty. Thus, to be completely dead is to be completely alive, and so the soul is immortal. Outrageous? *Yes*, in my opinion, but I do also have to admit the 'reasoning' does have a certain charm!

For my second example, let me begin by setting the historical stage. After publication of the English political philosopher Thomas Hobbes' *Leviathan* in 1651, with its arguments against the power of the Church and for civil power (with some criticism tossed in, as well, for universities), Seth Ward counterattacked. Ward, who was both a minister (later a bishop) in the Anglican Church and Savilian Professor of Astronomy at Oxford, was greatly offended by the secular nature of *Leviathan*. Even before Leviathan, in fact, Ward certainly would not have liked Hobbes' earlier denial of the existence of immaterial substances (such as souls). Ward's 1652 book *A Philosophical Essay Towards An Eviction of the Being and Attributes of God, the Immortality of the Souls of Men, the Truth and Authority of Scripture*, was the first of a two-punch reply to Hobbes. The second came in 1654 with the appearance of Ward's *Vindiciae academiarum*. In both of these works Ward attempted to undermine Hobbes' credibility by attacking his mathematical ability. (Hobbes had long been fascinated by, and was considered an expert on, the ancient problem of 'squaring the circle,' a task that has been known to be impossible only since 1882.[29]) In his *Essay*, Ward also attempted to defend the view that the world has a finite age—that is, it had a specific moment of creation, presumably by God. In an opening note, in fact, Ward cites Hobbes' rejection of immaterial substances as the motivation for his writing *Essay*.

To support his view of a finite age for the world, Ward invoked infinity in an interesting way. He argued that nothing is permanent, certainly not humans. Each is created; one can imagine tracing a chain of creation events backward in time through successive generations. Now, there are only two separate and distinct possibilities to where this chain could lead to in the past. First, it could terminate, after a finite number of generations, at a *first* generation, that is, with the 'creation' of the first human. If that is the case, then, said Ward (in effect), 'case closed.' If that is not the case, however, then the chain of successive generations never terminates, that is, the chain is infinitely long. But that, argued Ward, is nonsense—how could anything *infinitely* long have an end (our present *now*)?

Why Ward thought this an unanswerable paradox is hard to understand; after all, one can imagine a line in some coordinate system *beginning* at the origin and yet still being infinitely long (an example is the positive x-axis). This counter-example was not put forth by Hobbes in his own self-defense, but rather was offered by one of Ward's own colleagues at Oxford, John Wallis, the Savilian Professor of Geometry. As for Hobbes, he was little bothered by Ward's argument. As he pointed out (surely with a smile on his face), Ward was in danger of impaling

---

[29]The problem of 'squaring the circle' is, given a circle of area A, to construct (using only compass and straightedge) a square of area A.

himself as a theologian on his own sword: Ward's argument 'proved' the finite age not only of the world but of *everything*, including God (thus raising the awkward question of who, or what, made God?).

Similar problems with infinity lay behind Kant's rejection of an infinite past. It is interesting to note that Kant, somewhat paradoxically, thought an infinite *future* a possibility. Why did Kant think time could be infinite in one direction but not in the other? One philosopher tells us[30] that Kant "failed to make himself clear," and I think that *understates* the case. I say that because Kant's argument was that the duration of the future is less problematic than is that of the past because it is only the past that influences the present. The best I can do in 'explaining' this is to speculate that if the present depends on an *infinite* past, then perhaps Kant thought that the possibility of so much influence was simply too much for the present to handle! In any case, Kant's view falls apart if we consider the possibility of backward time travel and the resulting implication that the future could also influence the present.

There is, as will come as no surprise, a philosopher for every conceivable point of the compass, and so a paper by one on the logical possibility of an infinite past soon prompts a rebuttal by another.[31] In illustration of this, you'll recall the quote from Augustus De Morgan in the opening section of this book, concerning the philosophers of his times; De Morgan went on in his critique to amusingly summarize the metaphysics of those times as follows: "Here we go up, up, up,/And there we go down, down, down,/Here we go backwards and forwards/And there we go round, round, round."

So, with De Morgan's words in mind, here are a few more examples of how people have struggled with the issue of the past. One quite interesting, *scientific* twist on the duration of the past was pointed out before the exchange between Smith and Ells. In a paper[32] observing that although general relativity and its predicted spacetime singularity in the distant past may indeed allow for a finite past, that does not completely close the door to the possibility that the Big Bang was a continuation from a previous contraction phase of the universe, and so on, *ad infinitum*. (You'll recall the discussion in Chap. 1 of this idea in science fiction: see note 53 in that chapter.) To quote T. S. Eliot (from his "Little Gidding"):

---

[30]J. Bennett, "The Age and the Size of the World," *Synthese*, August 1971, pp. 127–146. See also Q. Smith, "Kant and the Beginning of Time," *New Scholasticism*, Summer 1985, pp. 339–346.

[31]See, for example, Q. Smith, "Infinity and the Past," *Philosophy of Science*, March 1987, pp. 63–75, and then read E. Ells, "Quentin Smith on the Infinity of the Past," *Philosophy of Science*, March 1988, pp. 453–455. Smith's paper "The Uncaused Beginning of the Universe" appeared in this same issue (pp. 39–57), stating that he believed, *really*, only in the *logical* possibility of an infinite past and that the universe had in fact originated in an uncaused (no God required) Big Bang singularity. And, indeed, he *had* so argued for a finite past, in "On the Beginning of Time," *Nous*, December 1985, pp. 579–584.

[32]R. Weingard, "General Relativity and the Length of the Past," *British Journal for the Philosophy of Science*, June 1979, pp. 170–172.

"What we call the beginning is often the end
And to make an end is to make a beginning.
The end is where we start from."

Even without entertaining such an oscillating, accordion-like universe that endlessly expands and shrinks, it is possible to have a universe that originated in a *single* Big Bang a finite time ago in the past but yet *has no first instant*! This astonishing statement shocks most at first encounter, but it is simply the cosmo-logical version of a well-known mathematical result. The instant $t = 0$ is not actually part of spacetime, because the Big Bang was quite literally a singular event for which the laws of spacetime physics fail. Thus, all instants in time are greater than zero—and there is no smallest number greater than zero. If you name a positive number, no matter how small, I can name a positive number still smaller, such as one-half of yours. (Of course, if there really is merit to the idea of a quantum of time, the chronon, this argument goes out the window.)

In an ingenious observation that seems to have been missed by most philoso-phers, E. A. Milne, a professor of mathematics at Oxford, suggested in his 1948 book *Kinematic Relativity*, that with general relativity it is conceivable to have both a single Big Bang a finite time ago *and* an infinite past. Pointing out that to talk meaningfully of time implies that we have a clock to measure it by, Milne looked for a Universal Clock that would be far more durable than our heartbeats, or anything else that exists only transiently. He suggested the expansion rate of the universe itself as the ideal clock. As we go back in time to the Big Bang, the expansion rate rises towards infinity and, as another analyst put it, "We see the Universe ticking away quite actively. *The Universe is meaningfully infinitely old because infinitely many things have happened since the beginning.*"[33]

The debate over the length of the past in modern times can be just as contentious as it was in medieval times. For example, in his editorial ("Down with the Big Bang") of August 10, 1989, the then editor of *Nature* (John Maddox) declared the standard explosive model of the universe to be "philosophically unacceptable," because "the implication is that there was one instant at which time literally began and so, by extension, an instant before which there was no time." For Maddox, this meant that the Big Bang "is an *effect* [my emphasis] whose *cause* [my emphasis] cannot be identified or even discussed." The usual (non-time travel) use of the words *cause* and *effect* is that the cause happens first and then the effect occurs—but if the Big Bang (the effect) is the origin of time, then how (asked Maddox) could there be a cause of the Big Bang *before* that beginning?[34]

---

[33]C. W. Misner, "Absolute Zero of Time," *Physical Review*, October 1969, pp. 1328–1333. In this view cosmic time is taken as proportional to the negative of the logarithm of the normalized volume of the universe ($V = 1$ represents maximum volume, and so time 'stops' at the end of the universe's expansion). Thus, because V goes to zero as we go backward in time, time runs ever faster as we travel ever further into the past. This puts the Big Bang (with $V = 0$) infinitely long ago.

[34]This was not a new insight, of course, as Aristotle had long ago (in his *Physics*) declared an instant in time with no predecessor to be an absurdity.

The answer is obvious *for creationists*, of course—God did it. Creationists avoid the question of God's cause, however, saying only that 'He needs no cause,' or even that 'He made Himself'! It is these standard (ridiculous) responses from creationists that Maddox said had prompted his editorial against the Big Bang, because creationists *embrace* the Big Bang as it seems to endorse their position of 'science by imagination.' Whatever the truth of that, I think juxtapositioning the *scientific* Big Bang model of the universe with theological metaphysics and the pseudo-science nonsense of creationism to be terribly unfair.

When will the philosophical debates on the age of the past end? Not until the end of the (infinite?) future, is my wager!

2.3   Cause and Effect

"There are few paradoxes which have been resolved so often as the time-asymmetry paradox."[35]

The philosophical literature is full of discussions about potential causal relationships between events. One of the most famous of these discussions, illustrating that cause and effect can be pretty slippery concepts, asks what at first appears to be an almost trivial question: Did the death of Socrates cause the widowhood of Xanthippe? The quick and easy answer is "Of *course*—she was his wife and it was his death that causes us to say she was then a widow. What could be more obvious?" One philosopher has provided some interesting commentary, however, that might make you reconsider, or to at least become aware of how different are the questions concerning time that are of interest to physicists and philosophers.[36]

Suppose we agree that there are two events to be considered; Socrates ceasing to live, and Xanthippe becoming a widow. Those events occurred at different places (in prison, and wherever Xanthippe happened to be). Then, as Kim asserted, "the two events occur with absolute simultaneity . . . [and so] we would have to accept this case as one in which causal action is propagated instantaneously through spatial space." (As we'll discuss in Chap. 3, the *relativity* of distant simultaneity weakens this assertion, but we'll take that up later.) For now, it is the conclusion that Kim draws from the assertion that interests us here: just *what* is propagating instantly? If it isn't mass-energy (as 'widowhood' would appear not to be!) then special relativity isn't bothered and physicists are happy. But those same physicists might also scratch their heads over *why* philosophers even wonder about such a question, because isn't becoming a widow just another way of saying that Socrates died and so we really don't have *two* events, but just one? In other words, for physicists this really isn't a question about cause and effect at all!

---

[35]J. Hurley, "The Time-Asymmetry Paradox," *American Journal of Physics*, January 1986, pp. 25–28.

[36]J. Kim, "Noncausal Connections," *Nous*, March 1974, pp. 41–52.

The central puzzle of time travel to the past is its apparent denial of causality—that is, its denial of the belief that we live in a world where every effect has a cause and that the cause happens first. *First* we flip the switch and *then* the kitchen light comes on. It is *never* the other way around. So deeply embedded is the temporal ordering of cause and effect in our feelings about how the world—and all the rest of the cosmos—works, that the Australian philosopher John Mackie (1917–1981) called causation the "cement of the universe" (and used that wonderful phrase as the title of a 1980 book). Without causality, said Mackie, everything would come unglued and fall apart. For example, when electrical engineers design an electronic system that they intend to actually construct (as opposed to doing a mere theoretical 'paper design') they insist that the design be a *causal* one. By that they mean the system must have no output before an input is applied. That is, the system must not be able to anticipate (foresee) the application of an input. To put it bluntly, our engineers are insisting that they are *not* building a time machine!

Now all that might seem to be self-evident, but there *are* some subtle problems. For example, it has become almost a cliché to say that nothing can go faster than light; that's what physicists mean by *relativistic causality*. In other words, no cause can produce an effect at a distant location sooner than the time lapse required for a light pulse to make the trip. Classical mechanics, however, the science of Newton's laws that engineers use all the time, is *not* relativistically causal. Push the left end of a rigid rod, for example, and the right end moves *instantly*. Most of the time the lack of this form of causality causes no problems, but the fact remains that the mechanics all engineers (and physicists, too!) learn first in school is flawed on a fundamental level. A rigid rod is an impossibility in Einstein's mechanics.

Indeed, it is interesting to speculate about how, after a discussion of causality, a traditional engineering professor would respond if challenged on this issue by a bright student. Causality might not look so obvious, after all, if such a student stuck up her hand in class and said "Professor, you've told us that everything that happens in nature is due to a cause. That what we see happening all around us, as the world unfolds, is the domino-process of cause-effect-cause-effect, and so on, into the future. But suppose, Professor, that at some instant, somehow, every particle in the world suddenly reversed its velocity vector. Wouldn't that mean, given the time-reversible nature of the classical equations of motion, the world would then run backward in time along the same path it had followed up until the instant of reversal? Wouldn't that mean what was effect is now cause, and that what was cause is now effect? And if cause and effect can change roles like that … well, Professor, just what do our words *mean*?"

An amusing, and instructive, cartoon illustration of the student's idea of reversing all the velocity vectors in a system appeared on the cover of the November 1953 issue of *Physics Today*. That issue contains an article on the 1949 nuclear magnetic resonance experiments performed by the American physicist Erwin Hahn, which in a certain sense dealt with just such reversed systems. In that illustration a group of runners on a multi-lane circular race track begin at the starting line in a coherent state, that is, all lined up together. Then, as they run around the track at various speeds, they gradually spread out into what appears to be an incoherent state.

But that incoherence is an illusion because if, at some instant (signaled in the cartoon by a pistol shot), they all turn around and run in reverse, they will all arrive back at the starting line *together, at the same instant*. The initial coherence of the runners was actually never lost, despite the superficial appearance of disorder, and the coherent state can be recovered at any time by a reversal of velocity vectors.

This isn't mere theoretical speculation, as an almost magical application of velocity vector reversal is actually used in what is called *optical phase conjugation*, a process to 'time-reverse' the severe distortion suffered by light beams during atmospheric propagation. For example, by effectively reversing the velocity vectors of photons, one can remove the turbulence blurring in satellite pictures of the Earth's surface as seen from space.[37]

Let me immediately short-circuit one possible answer our beleaguered professor might give in desperation, a response based on the fact that equations of physics are *not* all time reversible. Indeed, it was discovered decades ago that, in certain very rare, fundamental particle decay processes involving neutral K-mesons, there is the hint that perhaps nature *can* indeed distinguish between the past and the future. In particular, K-mesons should violate what is called *CP-symmetry*, and the so-called TCP theorem[38] says that then *T-symmetry* must also fail. In 1968/69 direct, experimental observation of the failure of T-symmetry in K-meson decays was reported. In an astonishing example of science fiction prescience, the use of K-mesons in a machine for affecting the past had appeared years earlier in a 1955 (!) story.[39]

So, could K-mesons account for the physical processes that we see evolve in time in one direction (past to future) but not in the other? As Hurley (note 35) put it so nicely, "The decay of the neutral K-meson is not time-reversal invariant; perhaps it is this ubiquitous meson which is responsible for the cream diffusing uniformly throughout our coffee in the morning. Possibly, but again this conjecture cannot account for the computer models [of diffusion processes that, like cream in coffee, also display a bias for one temporal direction over the other—in Chap. 3 I'll show you such a computer model] which have no neutral K-mesons." Still, the tiny chink that K-mesons appear to have made in the once-solid rock of time direction indistinguishability is an active area of research and speculation.

Even with that chink the fact that the classical laws appear to be insensitive to a direction of time, whereas the real world—which seems in no way dependent on the arcane properties of K-mesons—seems distinctly asymmetric, is a puzzle of the first rank. As one philosopher wrote, "The Universe seems asymmetric with respect to

---

[37]C. R. Giuliano, "Applications of Optical Phase Conjugation," *Physics Today*, April 1981, pp. 27–35.

[38]The TCP-theorem says that the 'mirror-image' of a physical process is a legitimate process, too, *if* the 'mirror' reverses time (T), electric charge (C)—so that particle and anti-particle are interchanged, and parity (P)—which is the measure of left and right. There is strong reason to believe in the validity of the TCP theorem because quantum field theory is compatible with special relativity only if the TCP theorem holds.

[39]F. Pohl, "Target One," *Galaxy Science Fiction*, April 1955.

the past and future in a very deep and non-accidental way, and yet all the laws of nature are purely time symmetric. So where can the asymmetry come from?"[40]

There have of course been attempts to answer that question. For example, one philosopher[41] discusses some curious mathematical examples he interprets as meaning, in the context of classical mechanics, that there are physical systems that are temporally irreversible *in principle*. A reply[42] from a fellow philosopher, however, argues that Hutchinson has, at most, shown only that classical mechanics is perhaps not deterministic. And that, Savitt argues, is not equivalent to showing a failure of time reversibility. There is, in fact, powerful experimental evidence that, with the rare exceptions of K-mesons, the classical laws of physics (including general relativity and quantum mechanics) *are* time-reversible.

Perhaps the most compelling of such evidence comes from the *reciprocity theorem* that electrical engineers routinely use when designing radio antennas. The theorem is easy to illustrate. Suppose two electrical engineers, Bob in Boston and Lois in Los Angeles, send radio signals to each other. Bob sends his messages by exciting his antenna with a time-varying current, which thus launches electromagnetic radiation into space. Lois' distant antenna intercepts some of that radiation, which then creates a (very tiny) signal current in her antenna.

The reciprocity theorem states the following: Suppose Bob makes a tape recording of his excitation signal and mails it to Lois, who then plays Bob's tape back into her transmitter as the excitation to *her* antenna. Then the signal current induced in Bob's antenna, as it intercepts Lois' launched radiation, will be the very same (very tiny) signal that Lois measured in her antenna as a result of Bob's transmission. This result is completely independent of the details of the two antennas, which can be utterly different in design, as well as independent of the details of the propagation path between Boston and Los Angeles (as long as those details don't change with time). The reciprocity theorem *is* true—it can be *measured* to be true as accurately as one wishes to perform this experiment—because of the reversibility of physics right down to the electronic level. In fact, the answer to the professor's problem of explaining why we don't see velocity vectors suddenly reverse, and then everything 'run backwards,' has not yet been found in any law of physics.

Now, to make things even more interesting, consider the problem of *mutual* or *simultaneous* causation, which can quickly lead to several interesting questions. When two leaning dominoes, A and B, hold each other up, is A nearly upright because of B, or is it B that is nearly upright because of A? When two children bob up and down on a see-saw, whose motion is the cause and whose is the effect? There are other puzzles, too, that involve mutual causation.

---

[40]J. Earman, "The Anisotropy of Time," *Australasian Journal of Philosophy*, December 1969, pp. 273–295.

[41]K. Hutchinson, "Is Classical Mechanics Really Time-Reversible and Deterministic?" *British Journal for the Philosophy of Science*, June 1993, pp. 307–323.

[42]S. F. Savitt, "Is Classical Mechanics Time-Reversal Invariant?" *British Journal for the Philosophy of Science*, September 1994, pp. 907–913.

For example, causation is usually thought to be transitive: if A causes B, and if B causes C, then A causes C. But if A and B are mutually causative, then 'A causes B' coupled with 'B causes A' leads to 'A causes A' (and to 'B causes B'). That is, mutual causation, together with transitivity, seems to imply *self*-causation! Except for those theologians who like this sort of result (it lets them answer the question 'Who made God?' with 'He made Himself'), hardly anyone likes self-causation. But how do we avoid the conclusion that perhaps the mutual causation of two leaning dominoes, coupled with transitivity, represents experimental proof that God could have made himself? Well, of course this is certainly outrageous stuff, but don't you wonder how our poor professor would respond if asked?

This last example is actually a far more esoteric one than we need to illustrate how our ordinary, everyday concept of cause and effect can be turned inside out by going only a little bit beyond the routine. Consider, for example, the problem of the data processing of recorded time signals, such as the information written onto magnetic tapes, hard drives, or disks. Typical applications that produce such recordings include the strata-probing seismic echoes from dynamite explosions set by oil exploration geologists; arms control compliance monitoring stations that listen for the acoustic rumbles generated by both earthquakes and underground nuclear tests—and then try to tell one from the other; and the gathering by various military intelligence agencies of turbine shaft/propeller noise signatures emitted by different types of submarines. In each of those situations, the raw information is recorded and then later processed with a certain degree of unhurried calm and leisure. That pool of oil, after all, has been underground for several hundred million years, and waiting a few more days or weeks for a computer analysis of the explosion echo isn't going to make much difference.

Such after-the-fact processing of recorded data is said to be done 'off-line, in non-real time.' When we play a disk back in the lab, however, we can do all sorts of neat things, like speed up the playback (make time 'run fast'), or slow it down (make time 'run slow'), or even play it *backwards* (make time 'run in reverse'). For various technical reasons, generically called *spectrum shifting*, such tricks are often quite useful. Now, the way we retrieve magnetically recorded information from (for example) a magnetic tape, is to run it through a playback machine with a 'read-head' that senses the magnetic flux variations. The electrical signal produced by the read-head is just like the original signal and, in fact, we can pretend we don't know it is really coming off a tape, but rather that it *is* the original signal. For high-quality digitally recorded tapes and disks, in fact, it is virtually impossible to distinguish the original from a playback.

Now, suppose we construct our playback machine with *two* read-heads, with the new head sensing the recording slightly *before* the old head does. The two heads produce the same electric signal, of course, but the signal from the new head is *ahead* in time compared to the signal from the old head. The new head is, in a certain sense, 'seeing the future' of the old head! We can use these two signals, the old head representing 'now' time and the new head representing 'future' time, to build real systems that are *not* causal. The causality violation occurs in non-real time, of course, not *our* time, but no matter; some absolutely astonishing signal

processing can be achieved this way. The universe is about fifteen billion years old, and pretending that time has shifted a few milliseconds or so doesn't seem to be too much violence to reality.

Two heads are often used on radio call-in talk shows to catch inappropriate remarks from intemperate callers and prevent them from being broadcast. A short time delay is introduced by first recording remarks 'live' on tape with a write head and, then a few seconds 'up-stream,' a read head regenerates the remarks for broadcast. A 5 s delay is generally sufficient, so what is heard on a radio receiver *now* actually occurred 5 s ago in the *past*. A caller can get terribly confused if she doesn't turn her own receiver off, because one ear hears the present on the telephone while the other ear listens to the past over the radio.[43] The 1956 British film *Timeslip* incorporates a similar situation, with an atomic scientist's perception advanced 7 s into the future as the result of an accidental radiation exposure. His resulting confusion and disorientation is the center of the film.[44]

2.4   Backward Causation

"Causation as a topic of philosophical discussion refuses to die. Each year, books and articles on causation continue to pour forth. Of course, all this activity may simply be a symptom of the necrophilia that infests so much of philosophy."[45]

All of the previous discussion has fueled countless arguments about what is called *backward*, *reverse*, or even *retro* causation. What is generally meant by forward causation is, of course, that any event that occurs at time *t* is caused by events that all occurred at some earlier time(s). Backward causation says that at least one of the causing events occurs after time *t*—this should make it clear that backward causation is a close relative of time travel. Indeed, one philosopher uses the terms *time traveler* and *retro-causal engineer* interchangeably.[46] The topic, understandably, is at the root of many hot philosophical debates, though not everybody (as this section's opening quote makes clear) thinks those debates are illuminating.

Just *why* does Professor Earman take his harsh position? He offers, as one reason, his disdain for the common philosophical 'proof' of the impossibility of

---

[43]A science fiction use of this idea is in B. W. Aldiss, "Man In His Time," *Science Fantasy*, April 1965, the story of an astronaut who returns from a trip to Mars and finds himself 3.3077 min ahead of everybody else.

[44]Science fiction had used a twist on this idea long before the film; see E. Binder, "The Man Who Saw Too Late," *Fantastic Adventures*, September 1939, a tale of what it might be like to have a 3 min *delay* in your vision.

[45]J. Earman, "Causation: A Matter of Life and Death," *Journal of Philosophy*, January 1976, pp. 5–25.

[46]B. Brown, "Defending Backwards Causation," *Canadian Journal of Philosophy*, December 1992, pp. 429–443.

backward causation: By definition, a cause is always before its effect. Yes, that's the entire 'proof.' One can, of course, win *any* argument by *defining* the answer to be what it is you wish to believe. More interesting, and certainly more pertinent to time travel, is the argument that if backward causation were possible then one could change the past—but that cannot be done because the past is dead and gone and thus unchangeable. That does seem to be a pretty solid argument against backward causation,[47] but Earman rebuts it by pointing out that the very same logic could be applied to the future, and so the usual, uncontested forward causation would also be denied. That is, one could argue that whatever the future will be, *will be* (literally 'by definition'), so one cannot change the future. A similar argument was presented even earlier,[48] in which we find "suppose that someone says 'I can change the future. I can do *this* or I can do *that*.' Well, then, suppose that he does *that*. Has he changed the future? No, because doing *that* was the future."

The reversal of the 'usual' causal order of events by backward time travel has been a mainstay of science fiction almost from the start of the genre. Consider, for example, this tale.[49] A man on vacation by himself, without his wife along, meets a young lady—and they fall in love. The man loves his wife, too, though, and he realizes (as the young lady leaves him for the last time), never to return, that it is all for the best. But she really hasn't gone that far away from him, as the reader soon discovers. She is a time traveler from the future, and after leaving him she goes even further back in time, back an additional 20 years. She does this because she has learned that he met his wife 20 years ago, and so she goes back to be *that* woman! Thus, the usual causal order of the two events 'a long marriage' and the 'pre-marriage courtship' has been reversed (if we accept the fact that the man doesn't remember what his wife looked like when they married).

Actually, even our everyday uses of cause and effect are not nearly so straight-forward as one might think, even when they are under far less stress than backward causation and time travel inflict. Consider, for example, the endless problems that are easy to imagine in the legal world. If a man falls off the roof of a ten-story building and is electrocuted as he plunges through power lines while still twenty feet above ground, was gravity or electricity the cause of death? Or was it both? As this example and others demonstrate,[50] one clearly does not have to discuss time travel to get into a serious argument about cause and effect. But with time travel, and the resultant backward causation, things can become even more perplexing. For example, we normally think it foolish to prepare, now, for an event that has already

---

[47]See, for example, D. H. Mellor, "Fixed Past, Unfixed Future," in *Michael Dummett: Contributions to Philosophy* (B. M. Taylor, editor), Martinus Nijhoff 1987.

[48]J. J. C. Smart, "A Review of *The Direction of Time*," *Philosophical Quarterly*, January 1958, pp. 72–77.

[49]R. F. Young, "The Dandelion Girl," *The Saturday Evening Post*, April 1, 1961.

[50]See also P. Mackie, "Causing, Delaying, and Hastening: Do Rains Cause Fires?" *Mind*, July 1992, pp. 483–500.

happened, but the prudent time traveler about to visit an ice age in the distant past would be wise to pack a fur coat before getting into his time machine!

One philosopher provides, I think, a good start at explaining why so many other philosophers (and not just a few physicists) have adopted the 'common sense' position of rejecting backward causation. As he writes, "Part of the answer, no doubt, is a confusion between affecting and altering [the past—a distinction we'll discuss at length later in this book]. We cannot alter the past. But then we cannot alter the future either, although we can affect it. However, I take the common-sense rejection of backward causation to be, for the most part, quasi-empirical. It is based on a thought experiment. Think how you would set about affecting the past. By building a time-machine, perhaps? But how would you build one? We have no idea how to start. Yet, by contrast, we can work out how to affect the future . . . we just move our bodies."[51] But, as he goes on to argue, if we accept that we can't *change* the past (which means there is no way we could actually observe backward causation), then there still exists the possibility that past events were as they were because of events in the future.

Are there actual phenomena that justify a belief in the possibility of effect before cause in real time (not just in tape recorder time)? The only example I know of, and a controversial one at that, is a theoretical result from a reformulation of electrodynamics by the great English physicist Paul Dirac (1902–1984). Classical theory models electric charges as point objects of zero size, which causes problems when one tries to calculate certain details, such as the total field energy of a single electron. The answer comes out as infinity. In an attempt to find more reasonable (that is, finite) answers to such questions, Dirac modified the zero size of a charge to one taking them to be extended objects (while retaining the validity of Maxwell's equations for electrodynamics right down to a point). To calculate how such extended objects will behave mechanically, however, one has to include what are called the *self-interaction* forces, such as the force one side of an electron exerts on the other side.

When it was all worked through, Dirac arrived at a third-order differential equation of motion, an equation that involves a force term proportional not to the usual first time derivative of the velocity (that is, to the acceleration), but rather to the second derivative.[52] This force is proportional to the first derivative of the acceleration, and is a quantity of direct interest mostly to the designers of automobile suspensions, who call it the *jerk*. There is no force in physics, at least not in Newtonian physics, that shows that sort of dependence, and there are some curious consequences. For example, in Dirac's theory an electron experiencing no external force can still continually accelerate, exhibiting what is called a 'runaway solution.'

Dirac showed how the runaway solution can be eliminated by picking a particular value for what up to then was an arbitrary constant of integration in the

[51]P. Forrest, "Backward Causation in Defense of Free Will," *Mind*, April 1985, pp. 210–217.

[52]P. A. M. Dirac, "Classical Theory of Radiating Electrons," *Proceedings of the Royal Society A*, August 1938, pp. 148–168.

analysis, but that trick causes, in turn, a new problem called 'pre-acceleration.' That is, if an electron experiences an external disturbance (Dirac considered a passing pulse of electromagnetic radiation), then the electron will start to move *before* the pulse reaches it! Now that does seem to be a pretty clear example of backward causation. The time interval during which the pre-acceleration occurs is very short, on the order of the time it takes light to travel across the spatially extended electron (about 10^{-24} s), but no matter. The apparent crack in the door of causality may be slight, but it was enough to satisfy some philosophers seeking scientific support for backward causation.

Not everybody liked this, however. One physicist was clearly uneasy about it, calling pre-acceleration "unpleasant" acausal behavior.[53] On the other hand, one can find believers, too.[54] Others have argued that the whole business is simply a non-problem. One philosopher, in fact, raised a very interesting technical point, arguing that Dirac's equation is non-Newtonian (remember the *jerk* force) and so we have no reason for coupling force and acceleration together as a cause-and-effect pair.[55] In Newtonian mechanics we do use that particular coupling, yet we do not think of force and velocity as a cause-and-effect pair because there is an integration operation involved in getting from to the other. Similarly, in Dirac's theory we have an integration operation separating force and acceleration.

One curious aspect to the debate on pre-acceleration is that many commentators seem not to have paid much attention to what Dirac himself had to say about it. As a Nobel laureate, it hardly seems likely that he would let such a result pass unnoticed and, indeed, his paper contains the following physical explanation: "It would appear that we have a contradiction with elementary ideas of causality. The electron seems to know about the pulse before it arrives, and to get up an acceleration ... The behavior of our electron can be interpreted in a natural way, however, if we suppose the electron to have a finite size. There is then no need for the pulse to reach the center of the electron before it starts to accelerate. It starts to accelerate ... as soon as the pulse meets its outside. Mathematically, the electron has no sharp boundary."

Two physicists suggested a fascinating connection between travel backward in time and Dirac's relativistically correct, quantum mechanical description of an electron.[56] They showed that in flat, two-dimensional spacetime the assumption of time travel to the past leads in a natural way to Dirac's equation. If, on the other hand, time travel only into the future is assumed, then additional assumptions are required to derive Dirac's equation. This connection between Dirac's equation and

---

[53]P. C. W. Davies, *The Physics of Time Asymmetry*, University of California Press 1977.

[54]J. Earman, "An Attempt to Add a Little Direction to 'The Problem of the Direction of Time'," *Philosophy of Science*, March 1974, pp. 15–47.

[55]A. Grunbaum, "Is Preacceleration of Particles in Dirac's Electrodynamics a Case of Backward Causation? The Myth of Retrocausation in Classical Electrodynamics," *Philosophy of Science*, June 1976, pp. 165–201.

[56]D. G. McKeon and G. N. Ord, "Time Reversal in Stochastic Processes and Dirac's Equation," *Physical Review Letters*, July 6, 1992, pp. 3–4.

time travel to the past makes some philosophers and physicists nervous, but it didn't seem to bother Dirac. In fact, he went on in his paper to show how the pre-acceleration implies the possibility of building a device for sending a faster-than-light signal backward in time. Science fiction writers were, of course, quick to grasp that idea and such gadgets were dubbed "Dirac radios."[57]

One of the more perplexing aspects of backward causation is that it seems to allow for the possibility of *causal loops*, and for the breaking of such loops, a central feature in many of the very best time travel stories. For example, suppose there is a gadget such that if I push its control button *now*, then today's lecture notes will have appeared in the gadget's output tray *yesterday*. Indeed, yesterday I found today's notes there and, in fact, I am about to go to class to deliver that lecture. A mighty good one it is, too, so I think I think I'll send it back to yesterday in just a few minutes with the help of the gadget. But I haven't yet pushed the button. What if I now decide *not* to push the button? Why did the notes appear so I could use them today? Philosophers call this potential breaking of a causal loop a *bilking paradox*. Later in the book I'll discuss how such paradoxes have regularly appeared in the physics and philosophy literature since the 1940s.

By contrast, such paradoxes had been discussed in the science fiction magazines long before World War II. For example, in a letter to the editor at *Astounding Stories* (June 1932) a fan clearly stated his objection to time travel with the aid of a bilking paradox. He suggested the following experiment: Immediately publish an open offer to the inventor of time travel (who will be born, presumably, at some future date) to travel back to one week before the offer is published. But of course (argued the fan) we'd have a pretty problem if we then decided not to publish the offer after the inventor showed up! As that fan wrote, "Paradoxical? I'll say so, if time travel is possible." That fan didn't know about what seems to be a generic limitation on time machines, however: that one can't travel back to a date before the date of the time machine's creation. Thus, that fan's particular bilking paradox actually has no force.[58]

For another fictional example of a bilking paradox, consider the story[59] of time travelers who, just before they begin a trip into the future, see Earth invaded by Martians. At first the invaders are unbeatable, but then the defending military forces of Earth suddenly and mysteriously acquire a fantastically powerful new weapon. It isn't long before the time travelers realize where it came from—they themselves will go into the far future, obtain the weapon, and then return with it to what is now their own past (when the weapon first appeared). But then they wonder what might happen if they don't go, if instead they 'cheat time.' After all, they reason, why

---

[57]See, for example, J. Blish, "Beep," *Galaxy Science Fiction*, February 1954.

[58]A similar bilking paradox had actually appeared the year before in the 1931 novel *Many Dimensions* by the English writer Charles Williams (1886–1945), which reads like a suitable script for an Indiana Jones movie.

[59]E. Binder, "The Time Cheaters," *Thrilling Wonder Stories*, March 1940. There is an amusing reference in this tale to Orson Welles' famous radio-drama-hoax, from just 2 years earlier, of just such an alien invasion based on H. G. Wells' *War of the Worlds*.

bother now to hunt for the weapon when the invasion has already been defeated? We are told that this potential bilking paradox is a "sinister conception, crawling evilly within their brains, like an unanswerable enigma."

Some philosophers, and practically all physicists, agree with that last assessment about bilking paradoxes, and so they believe there is simply nothing more to say. That is, bilking puzzles like the one in "The Time Cheaters" show that causal loops (and backward causation) must be impossible. Many feel this way about time loops, and backward causation, because (as is well known) time travel to the past can create all sorts of paradoxes. But such paradoxes are offensive only to human, culturally-biased intuitions on 'how things ought to work,' and not to the laws of physics which are indifferent to a reversal in the direction of time—which of course underlies what time travel is all about.

As the great American chemist G. N. Lewis expressed it, "Our common idea of time is notably unidirectional, *but this is largely due to the phenomena of consciousness and memory* [my emphasis]."[60] Lewis' words caught the eye of the editor at one science fiction magazine, who summed it up for his readers in a half-page essay that contained dramatic words hinting at backward causation: "A new theory of time ... reveals the possibility that events now occurring are among the factors that decided Caesar nearly 2,000 years ago to cross the Rubicon."[61]

Lewis' willingness to accept causality violations is not a universally popular view today. For example, one physicist has written[62] that "It is fair to say that most conservative physicists have very serious reservations about the admissibility and reality of causality-violating processes. Causality violation (i.e., the existence of a 'time machine') is such an extreme violation of our understanding of the cosmos that it behooves us to be as conservative as possible about introducing such unpleasant effects into our models." He then goes on to declare closed timelike loops to be verboten because "the existence of closed timelike loops leads us to such unpleasant situations as meeting oneself 5 min ago." He sums up his philosophical position nicely with "any theory that is 'just a little bit causality violating' is 'just a little bit inconsistent.'"

Agreeing with this physicist is at least one philosopher who believes that the "association of causality with a particular temporal direction is not merely a matter of the way we speak of causes, but has a genuine basis in the way things happen" and that there is indeed an asymmetry with respect to past and future that is bound up with our concept of intentional action.[63] He then goes even further when he continues with the claim that being an agent of cause is not a necessary condition for seeing the asymmetry; being an observer is enough, as even an immobile yet

---

[60]G. N. Lewis, "The Symmetry of Time in Physics," *Science*, June 6, 1930, pp. 569–577.

[61]Editorial essay, "Two-Way Time," *Astounding Stories*, September 1931.

[62]M. Visser, "Wormholes, Baby Universes, and Causality," *Physical Review D*, February 15, 1990, pp. 1116–1124.

[63]M. Dummett, "Bringing About the Past," *Philosophical Review*, July 1964, pp. 338–359.

intelligent tree (!) could detect the difference between past and future. (How he knows this about certain trees is left unexplained.)

The everyday views of causality that we have formed through our limited experiences when living in a world in which time travel is 'uncommon' may actually be incomplete. As the British philosopher Bertrand Russell (1872–1970) said with some humor long ago, in his 1912 Presidential Address ("On the Notion of Cause") to the Aristotelian Society, "The law of causality, I believe, like much that passes muster among philosophers, is a relic of a by-gone age, surviving, like the monarchy, only because it is erroneously supposed to do no harm." And I do agree with his fellow philosopher who, decades later, declared "The concept of cause is powerless to solve the problems posed by the concept of time. The fundamental laws of physics present our most careful, best established and most sophisticated understanding of time. Notoriously, nothing in these laws endorses the idea of a *flow of time nor of the direction* [my emphasis: we'll return to both of these issues later in this chapter] which is basic to our conception of it. Nor are these laws causal (in the sense of singling out causes) even when they are deterministic. The concept of cause is not a fundamental one and cannot illuminate the darker corners in our understanding of the fundamental concept of time."[64]

2.5 The Fourth Dimension

"We are facing an invasion of fourth dimensional creatures ... We are being attacked by life which is one dimension above us in evolution. We are fighting, I tell you, a tribe of hellhounds out of the cosmos. They are unthinkably above us in the matter of intelligence. There is a chasm of knowledge between us so wide and deep that it staggers the imagination."[65]

"Fourth dimension. Time factor. *You* know ..."[66]

The idea of a fourth dimension to *space* has long been a staple of science fiction, but it has also long been viewed with suspicion. Indeed, many quite sophisticated scientists have thought it to be quite mysterious. For example, in his 1897 Presidential Address to the American Mathematical Society, the Canadian/American

---

[64]G. Nerlich, "How to Make Things Have Happened," *Canadian Journal of Philosophy*, March 1979, pp. 1–22.

[65]From "Hellhounds of the Cosmos," *Astounding Stories*, June 1932, by Clifford Simak (1904–1988). Simak went on to write a number of much better tales, but this passage lends credence to the editorial introduction to the 1957 anthology *Famous Science-Fiction Stories* (Random House) that declared so much in the early pulp science fiction was "science that was claptrap and fiction that was graceless."

[66]Uninformative 'explanation' given to a befuddled, inadvertent time traveler who emerges miles away and one hour backward in time after a wild ride through the fourth dimension in a gadget (constructed from a bicycle tire!) in the shape of a three-dimensional Möbius strip (see note 99 in Chap. 1). From the story by H. Nearing, Jr., "The Maladjusted Classroom," *The Magazine of Fantasy and Science Fiction*, June 1953.

astronomer-mathematician Simon Newcomb (1835–1909) declared "The introduction of what is now very generally called hyperspace, especially space of more than three dimensions, into mathematics has proved a stumbling block to more than one able philosopher." Einstein stated Newcomb's view in blunter terms when he wrote "The non-mathematician is seized by a mysterious shuddering when he hears of 'four-dimensional' things, by a feeling not unlike that awakened by thoughts of the occult."[67]

To see just how right Einstein was with this observation, consider the reaction one Egyptian philosopher had (in 1929) to Einstein's own writings: "We have no doubt in our mind that nobody can understand it (the fourth dimension), including Einstein himself. The incomprehensibility of these assumptions [of general relativity] is due to their nature. They deal with the fourth dimension . . . and the reality of time and space. They can only be described by a mathematician's hypothesis or by religious faith."[68] This reaction is easy to understand—after all, anybody can 'see' that there are exactly three spatial dimensions, and that is that!

The 1901 novel *The Inheritors*, by the English writer Ford Madox Ford (1873–1939), like Simak's, is the tale of an insidious hyperspace invasion of our world. It illustrates Einstein's assertion about how many people react to the fourth dimension with an example from the time before the science fiction magazines. When the novel's narrator is bluntly told by an invader that she (the invader) is from the fourth dimension—an idea inspired by Ford's appreciation of how much success his acquaintance H. G. Wells had enjoyed with it—he recoils from that claim with the words "If you expect me to believe you inhabit a mathematical monstrosity, you are mistaken." And who can really blame that skeptical narrator? How can there be *four* spatial dimensions? No less an authority than Aristotle, writing in 350 B.C., had declared in his essay "On the Heavens" that "the three dimensions are all that there are."

Others were not so sure. In 1873, for example, we find an essay in *Nature* that refers to well-known mathematicians who even earlier had shown that they had an inner assurance of the reality of transcendental space (hyperspace).[69] The American philosopher Charles Sanders Peirce (1839–1914) was also an early advocate for the four-dimensionality of space. Just what he thought the nature of the fourth dimension to be is somewhat unclear, but the context of what he said suggests he took it to be spatial. He thought three-dimensional space to be "perverse" because of the existence of incongruous counterparts (such as left- and right-handed gloves), and this was apparently strong evidence for him that space could not be three-dimensional. Now, incongruous counterparts exist in all n-dimensional spaces, but Peirce preserved the special purity of the fourth dimension by suggesting that all physical objects, although capable of motion in the fourth direction, could

---

[67]A. Einstein, *Relativity: the Special and General Theory*, Crown 1961, p. 33.

[68]From A. A. Ziadat, "Early Reception to Einstein's Relativity in the Arab Periodical Press," *Annals of Science*, January 1994, pp. 17–35.

[69]G. F. Rodwell, "On Space of Four Dimensions," *Nature*, May 1, 1873, pp. 8–9.

themselves have no extent in that direction (remember, Peirce was a philosopher, not a physicist, and he offered no experimental support for any of this).[70]

But is it *really* possible that there could be *four* spatial dimensions? We experience three independent directions, each lying at a right angle to the other two—but why just *three*, and not ten or fifteen? Indeed, in an 1888 talk to the Philosophical Society of Washington, Simon Newcomb dismissed the view that space must necessarily be three-dimensional as an "old metaphysical superstition." Yet, despite Newcomb's open-mindedness, it has been shown that in the framework of classical physics there are, in fact, several powerful reasons for why there must be *exactly three* spatial dimensions.

The beginning of a scientific explanation for the dimensionality of space appears in Kant, who believed the *three* dimensions of space and Newton's inverse-square law for gravity are intertwined (but he offered nothing beyond philosophical speculation). The origin of Kant's view is actually quite old, dating back to the ancient Greeks, who had already begun to suspect that there was something special about *three* dimensions, at least as far as geometry was concerned. They knew of the infinity of regular two-dimensional polygons, but that there were just five regular polyhedrons in three dimensions (the so-called *Platonic solids*). This early observation was trapped in mystical speculations, however, and it wasn't until the development of physics as a science that non-mystical discussions on the dimensionality of space began to appear.

Beginning with the work of Einstein's friend, the Austrian/Dutch physicist Paul Ehrenfest (1880–1933) in 1917, we can find the idea that the Poisson-Laplace equation, a second-order partial differential equation that describes the potential functions for both Newtonian gravity and electrostatics, does not allow for stable planetary or electronic orbits in *any* space with dimensionality greater than three. Further, the distortionless, reverberation-free propagation of both electromagnetic and sound waves is possible only in spaces of dimensions one and three. These conclusions have been shown to hold even when we go beyond nineteenth century physics into general relativity and quantum mechanics.[71]

Using a slightly different approach, a biological-topological argument for why space cannot have fewer than three dimensions exists. In all of our common experience, complex intelligent life is always found to occur as an aggregate of a vast number of elementary cells, interconnected via electrical nerve fibers. Each cell is connected to several others, *not all immediate neighbors*, by these fibers. If space had only one or two dimensions, then such highly interconnected nets of cells would be impossible because the overlapping nerve fibers would have to intersect, which would result in their mutually short-circuiting one another.

---

[70]R. R. Dipert, "Peirce's Theory of the Dimensionality of Physical Space," *Journal of the History of Philosophy*, January 1978, pp. 61–70.

[71]See, for example, I. M. Freeman, "Why Is Space Three-Dimensional?" *American Journal of Physics*, December 1969, pp. 1222–1224, and L. Gurevich and V. Mostepanenko, "On the Existence of Atoms in n-Dimensional Space," *Physics Letters A*, May 31, 1971, pp. 201–202.

It wasn't long before these views on the dimensionality of space found their way into science fiction. An early use of space as four-dimensional occurs in an awkward rewrite of Jules Verne's *Around the World in Eighty Days*, in which a professor and his crew fly into hyperspace and around the world and to the moon and back, in less than a day.[72] They do this with a plane equipped with a four-dimensional rudder! More interesting is the tragic story (originally published in 1926) of a math professor who learns how to move into hyperspace and back.[73] A colleague catches him at it and, once over his astonishment, asks what is behind it all. The professor replies, "My assumption is that the fourth dimension is just another dimension—no more different in kind from length, say, than length is from breadth and thickness, but perpendicular to all three. Now suppose that a being in two dimensions—a flat creature, like [a moving shadow on a surface]—were suddenly to grasp the concept of a third dimension and so step out of the [surface]. He might move only an inch, but he would vanish completely from the sight of the world."

The professor has similarly learned how to step out of 3-space and into 4-space but, when asked to explain *how*, all he can say is "How can I explain? It's just the *other* direction. It's *there*!" His colleague can't see it, but nonetheless is quick to grasp the practical implications: "This is power! Think of it! A step, and you are invisible! No prison cells can hold you, for there is a side to you on which they are as open as a wedding ring! No ring is secure from you: you can put your hand *round the corner* and draw out what you like. And, of course, if you looked back on the Universe you had left, you would see us in sections, open to you! You could place a stone or a tablet of poison right in the bowels of your enemies!"

What the professor's colleague is getting at involves a comparison with a prison in planar 2-space, which would merely be a circle around the captive. Knowledge of the third dimension would make it possible to escape, however, by simply moving along that new direction, over the circle, and then back into the plane. To a 2-space guard it would seem that the prisoner had suddenly vanished from view *inside* the circle and then just as suddenly materialized again *outside* the circle. Similarly, to escape from a 3-space prison, one would merely move along the fourth dimension, and in the same way one could remove the yolk from an egg without damaging the shell; indeed, one could remove the yolk directly from the chicken without damaging the chicken![74]

---

[72]B. Olsen, "Four Dimensional Transit," *Amazing Stories Quarterly*, Fall 1928.

[73]R. Hughes, "The Vanishing Man," reprinted in *The Mathematical Magpie* (C. Fadiman, editor), Simon and Schuster 1962.

[74]This astounding insight appeared in early pulp science fiction in, for example, M. J. Breuer, "The Appendix and the Spectacles," *Amazing Stories*, December 1928. The concept appeared even earlier in Bob Olsen, "The Four-Dimensional Roller-Press," *Amazing Stories*, June 1927, and then later in Olsen's "The Great Four Dimensional Robberies," *Amazing Stories*, May 1928 to rob locked safe deposit boxes, and "The Four Dimensional Escape," *Amazing Stories*, December 1933, in which a man sentenced to die by hanging at San Quentin Prison is rescued, while standing on the gallows' trap, by an inventor who pulls him through the fourth dimension.

In a later tale[75] we meet another professor who dramatically uses this very feature of the fourth dimension. His right hand has been modified through an accident to exist in four-dimensional hyperspace and so, to finance his research, he uses his 'talent' to become the perfect pickpocket, able to reach into any wallet no matter how well secured. He also can, indeed, reach right into the very bowels of his fellow man. And he *does*. When he demonstrates his hand to the policeman who has arrested him for being a thief, the astonished officer chokes on a lemon drop. Dr. Fuddles then, of course, does the right thing and removes the drop from the poor fellow with ease. There is one additional aspect to Dr. Fuddles' hand, however, that the story missed. If he had turned his right hand over in the fourth dimension, then he would have had *two* left hands!

It was discovered in 1827 by Möbius (of the strip) that any three dimensional object can be converted into its mirror image by flipping it over through the fourth dimension. Thus, a left-handed glove can be made by pure geometry (no scissors, thread, or needle required) into a precise copy of its right-handed mate. If a living organism is so flipped, however, there may be a problem, as everything in the body would be reversed, including the optically active organic molecules discovered by Pasteur in 1848, which are involved in vital biological processes. These molecules, called *stereoisomers*, exist in two versions in nature (the left-handed and the right-handed versions, if you will), but our bodies have developed the ability to use only one version. To be flipped through the fourth dimension would make some reversed stereoisomers unable to participate in the digestion of food and we would starve to death.

For modern science fiction writers the fourth dimension (and hyperspace, in general), is still a major concept. One physicist, writing in *Analog* (today's premier 'hard science' fiction magazine), summed up nicely what was so fascinating in early pulp, and still is today, about the idea of an extra dimension or two, or perhaps even more, at least from a fictional point of view: "Are there hidden dimensions not accessible to us, dimensions in which we could go adventuring, dimensions within which malevolent hyper-dimensional aliens may be lurking, ready to pierce our flimsy paper-thin three-space bodies with their terrible hyper-sharp claws?"[76] The early pulp science fiction magazines encouraged this lurid imagery. Witness the editorial blurb that opened one many-dimensional monster story as follows: "It was a strange world in which Lester and Florence found themselves. A world of sudden

---

[75]N. Bond, "Dr. Fuddle's Fingers," in *Mr. Mergenthwirker's Lobblies and Other Fantastic Tales*, Coward-McCann 1946.

[76]J. Cramer, "The Other Forty Dimensions," *Analog*, April 1985. 'Monsters in hyperspace' stories were numerous in pulp science fiction. Three examples (in no particular order of literary merit!) are: M. J. Breuer, "The Einstein See-Saw," *Astounding Stories*, April 1932; P. Ernst, "The 32nd of May," *Astounding Stories*, April 1935; "The Monster from Nowhere," *Fantastic Adventures*, July 1939.

Fig. 2.1 An experiment in hyperspace goes astray. The young man is pulling on "hyper-forceps" in an attempt to retrieve a surgeon who has fallen out of 3-space (along with his patient, a professor of non-Euclidean geometry, who suffers from gallstones). The hyper-forceps allow the removal of the gallstones without cutting into the body. Illustration by Frank R. Paul, ©1928 by Experimenter Publishing Co. for "Four Dimensional Surgery" (*Amazing Stories*, February 1928) by Bob Olsen, reprinted by permission of the Ackerman Science Fiction Agency, 2495 Glendower Ave., Hollywood, CA 90027 for the Estate

death and strange science, ruled by inhuman beasts."[77] But as outrageous as that might sound, the real physics of hyperspace is even more amazing.

Hyperspace is, in general, simply any space with more dimensions than the one we obviously seem to live in. In particular, our universe appears to be a four-dimensional (three spatial and one temporal) hyperspace called *spacetime*. This four dimensional world can, at least mathematically, be thought of as the boundary surface of a five dimensional hyperspace. This is analogous to the way the two-dimensional space of the surface of a sphere bounds the three-dimensional space of the sphere itself. This interesting imagery appeared quite early in pulp science fiction. For example, in one remarkably sophisticated story, an eccentric scientist at one point exclaims "A mathematical physicist lives in vast spaces . . . where space unrolls along a fourth dimension on a surface distended from a fifth."[78]

There are some interesting geometrical implications to hyperspace which play big roles in time travel considerations. For example, for beings in the two-dimensional world of a sphere's surface there are *two* ways to travel from

---

[77] M. Duclos, "Into Another Dimension," *Fantastic Adventures*, November 1939. See the illustration for this story in "Some First Words."

[78] M. J. Breuer, "The Gostak and the Doshes," *Amazing Stories*, March 1930.

pole to pole. There is the usual way, *on* the surface of the sphere, and the hyperspace way which takes them *through* the sphere along the polar diameter. In imagery motivated by thinking of the sphere as an apple, and of the hyperspace path as a tunnel bored by a worm through the apple, it has become popular to call all such shortcuts, through any hyperspace of any dimension, *wormholes* (a word coined in the 1950s by the Princeton physicist-wordsmith John Wheeler). Wheeler used wormholes to show how electric charge could be thought of as lines of force trapped in the changing topology of a multiply connected space (indeed, Wheeler claimed that the observation of what we call electricity is experimental evidence that space is *not* simply connected).[79]

The general theory of relativity predicts the existence of wormholes in spacetime and, in fact, they were first 'discovered' theoretically in the mathematics of relativity as early as 1916 by the Viennese physicist Ludwig Flamm (1885–1964). Later analyses were done by Einstein, himself.[80] Wormholes have been discussed as a possible model for pulsars (as opposed to the more usual model as rotating neutron stars).[81] It has also been suggested that the interior of a charged black hole may be the entrance to a wormhole.[82] All of these various solutions to the gravitational field equations are generically called "Einstein-Rosen bridges" in the physics literature (see note 81, for example), and the term soon appeared in fiction, too.[83]

The use of hyperspace wormhole portals for explaining some observed physical phenomenon appeared in the scientific literature long before Wheeler's electricity example. In his 1928 book *Astronomy and Cosmogony*, for example, the British theoretician Sir James Jeans devoted a chapter to what were then called nebulae, the island-universes we now call galaxies. At the end of his discussion on the arms of spiral galaxies, Jeans offered the following speculation: "Each failure to explain the spiral arms makes it more and more difficult to resist a suspicion that the spiral nebulae are the seats of types of forces entirely unknown to us, forces which may possibly express novel and unsuspected *metric properties of space* [my emphasis]. The type of conjecture which presents itself, somewhat insistently, is that the centers of the nebulae are of the nature of 'singular points,' at which matter is poured into our universe from some other, and entirely extraneous, special

---

[79]A space is simply connected if *all* the points on the straight line that joins *any* two points in the space are also in the space. The interior of a sphere is simply connected. The interior of a sphere with a hole in it is *not* simply connected.

[80]A. Einstein, "The Particle Problem in the General Theory of Relativity," *Physical Review*, July 1, 1935, pp. 73–77.

[81]J. M. Cohen, "The Rotating Einstein-Rosen Bridge," in *Relativity and Gravitation* (C. G. Kuper and A. Peres, editors), Gordon and Breach Science Publishers 1971.

[82]A. Ori, "Inner Structure of a Charged Black Hole: An Exact Mass-Inflation Solution," *Physical Review Letters*, August 12, 1991, pp. 789–792.

[83]See, for example, J. G. Cramer, *Einstein's Bridge*, Avon 1997 (this is the same Cramer cited in note 76). The *Rosen* comes from the American-Israeli physicist Nathan Rosen (1909–1995), who was a collaborator of Einstein's.

dimension, so that, to a denizen of our universe, they appear as points at which matter is being continually created." This, in everything but name, is a wormhole.

What would hyperspace be like? It is intuitively obvious that in the case of the 2-D surface of a 3-space sphere, the 'hyperspace' wormhole path is shorter than the surface path. Even if this 'shorter path' view holds for wormholes in our 4-D spacetime, however, getting around in science fiction hyperspace may not be a simple task. One tale, for example, tells the story[84] of how one of the first space-ships to explore hyperspace gets lost. The trouble with hyperspace travel is that "You go in at one point, you rocket around until you think it's time to come out, and there you are. Where is 'there'? Why, that's the surprise that's in store for you, because you never know until you get there. And sometimes not even then." The same idea plays a central role in Robert Heinlein's 1957 novel *Tunnel in the Sky*, in which a 'hyperspace gate' is discovered by accident during failed time travel experiments.

Another story[85] asks the same question about hyperspace, and arrives at the same answer: "When you took the Jump … how sure were you *where* you would emerge? The timing and quantity of the energy input might be as tightly controlled as you liked … but the uncertainty principle reigned supreme and there was always the chance, even the inevitability of a random miss … a paper-thin miss might be a thousand light-years."

A common way to visualize hyperspace wormhole shortcuts is to imagine the beginning and the end of a journey as points A and B on the 2-D surface of a piece of paper. Then imagine that the paper is folded so as to position A over B, perhaps with A almost touching B. The distance from A to B *through hyperspace* (the 3-D space in which the folding took place) can clearly be much less than is the distance through 'normal' space (the distance covered by a trip that always remains in the 2-D surface). This is the specific example used in one tale to explain the instanta-neous "space-warp" (wormhole) device invented by the story's hero.[86] Such imag-ery actually appeared quite early in science fiction, as in one story in which a gadget is used to "bend space" so that Earth and Venus touch![87]

The idea of hyperspace folding has broken free from science fiction and can now be found in modern stories in other genres. For example, in one Stephen King story ("Mrs. Todd's Shortcut") a woman keeps finding ever shorter ways to drive from Castle Rock, Maine to Bangor. As the crow flies it is 79 miles, but she gets the journey down to 67 miles, and later to 31.6 miles. When doubted, she replies: "Fold the map and see how many miles it is then … it can be a little less than a straight line if you fold it a little, or it can be a lot less if you fold it a lot." The doubter remains unconvinced: "You can fold a map on paper, but you can't fold *land*."

[84]F. Pohl, "The Mapmakers," *Galaxy Science Fiction*, July 1965.

[85]I. Asimov, "Take a Match," in *New Dimensions II: Eleven Original Science Fiction Stories* (R. Silverberg, editor), Doubleday 1972.

[86]G. O. Smith, "The Möbius Trail," *Thrilling Wonder Stories*, December 1948.

[87]E. L. Rementer, "The Space Bender," *Amazing Stories*, December 1928.

For the purpose of wormhole creation in spacetime, we actually have to imagine much more: the folding of four-dimensional spacetime through a five dimensional hyperspace. The folding imagery has even appeared in the movies: spacetime folding is demonstrated with a piece of paper in both *Event Horizon* (perhaps the worst movie of 1997) and the 2014 *Interstellar*.

Another feature of hyperspace that science fiction has taken a liking to is its vastness. An interesting fictional treatment of this idea was given by a writer who, in real life, was an academic psychologist at the University of Michigan. He put himself in a story[88] of a starship captain who is explaining to the crew psychologist how he feels about hyperspace (or *subspace*, as it is called in the story): "God forsaken. That's just what it is. Completely black, completely empty. It frightens me every time we make the jump through it . . . it frightens me because—well, because a man seems to get lost out there. In normal space there are always stars around, no matter how distant they may be, and you feel that you've got direction and location. In subspace, all you've got is nothing—and one hell of a lot of that. It's incredible when you stop to think about it. An area—an opening as big as the whole of our Universe, big enough to pack every galaxy we've ever seen in it—and not a single atom of matter in it . . . until we came barging in to use it as a shortcut across our own Universe."

The vastness of hyperspace got a more humorous treatment from the early pulp science fiction writer Bob Olsen (1884–1956), who wrote the following verses[89] in the introduction to one of his many stories of the fourth dimension:

> I read a yarn the other day—
> A crazy concept, I must say.
> It states that objects have extension
> In what is called the "Fourth Dimension."
> In hyperspace one could, no doubt,
> Make tennis balls turn inside out;
> And from a nut remove the kernel
> And not disturb the shell external.
> A crook could pilfer bonds and stocks,
> Then laugh at prison bars and locks,
> One step in this direction queer,
> And presto! He would disappear!
> Let's hope, in planning new inventions,
> They'll give us cars with four dimensions.
> When searching for a parking place
> We sure could use some hyperspace!

It is not just science fiction that takes hyperspace seriously. We find a mathematician, for example, writing that "most science fiction addicts are familiar with

---

[88]J. V. McConnell, "Avoidance Situation," *If*, February 1956.

[89]B. Olsen, "The Four-Dimensional Auto-Parker," *Amazing Stories*, July 1934. "Bob Olsen" was the pen-name for Alfred Johannes Olsen.

the notion of 'hyperspace,' a higher dimensional space-time bounded by Space-Time through which, in the far distant future, interstellar voyages shortcut the (otherwise unsurmountable) distances between the stars. The purpose of this article[90] is to demonstrate that any . . . relativistic space-time model is the boundary of some . . . five-dimensional hyperspace." That is just what Breuer's magazine character (see note 78) said—in 1930!

The concept of *time* as a fourth dimension has long been a popular concept, and science fiction in particular has embraced it with enthusiasm. We find a little joke on the idea in a story where a young couple, visited by time travelers from 500 years in the future, are said to live in Apartment 4-D.[91] One physicist[92] traced the idea back to the late eighteenth century, finding references to the idea in pre-1800 works of the great French mathematical physicists Jean le Rond d'Alembert (1717–1783) and Joseph-Louis Lagrange (1736–1813). In fact, a philosopher[93] has found a 1751 passage written by d'Alembert that appears to indicate that it is some unknown, earlier person to whom the credit should really go: "I have said [that it is] not possible to imagine more than three dimensions. A clever acquaintance of mine believes, however, that duration could be regarded as a fourth dimension and that the product of time and solidity would be in some way a product of four dimensions; that idea can be contested, but it seems to me that it has some merit, if only that of novelty."

Still, it wasn't until a curious letter appeared in *Nature* in 1885 that the concept of time as the fourth dimension was mentioned seriously in an English-language scientific journal. The author, mysteriously signing himself only as "S.," began by asking "What is the fourth dimension? . . . I [propose] to consider Time as a fourth dimension . . . Since this fourth dimension cannot be introduced into space, as commonly understood, we require a new kind of space for its existence, which we may call time-space."[94] Who was this prophetic writer that, if he had just made a simple swap, would have been the first to use space-time as a word? Nobody knows. Bork speculates that it was an acquaintance of H. G. Wells, but Wells himself is on record that it certainly wasn't him.

In his 1934 *Experiment in Autobiography*, Wells wrote "In the universe in which my brain was living in 1879 there was no nonsense about time being space or anything of that sort. There were three dimensions, up and down, fore and aft and right and left, and I never heard of a fourth dimension until 1884 [when Wells was

---

[90]G. S. Whiston, "'Hyperspace' (The Cobordism Theory of Space-Time)," *International Journal of Theoretical Physics*, December 1974, pp. 285–288.

[91]L. Padgett, "When the Bough Breaks," *Astounding Science Fiction*, November 1944.

[92]A. M. Bork, "The Fourth Dimension in Nineteenth-Century Physics," *Isis*, October 1964, pp. 326–338.

[93]E. Meyerson, *The Relativistic Deduction*, volume 83 of *Boston Studies in the Philosophy of Science*, D. Reidel 1985, p. 78.

[94]S., "Four-Dimensional Space," *Nature*, March 26, 1885, p. 481. The editorial staff at *Nature* has informed me that, more than a century-and-a-quarter later, there is no longer any record of the identity of S. in the journal's archives.

eighteen] or thereabout. Then I thought it was a witticism." He had, in fact, said this before. In a 1931 edition of *The Time Machine* (Random House), for example, he wrote in the Preface that the idea for the novel "was begotten in the writer's mind by students' discussions in the laboratories and debating society of the Royal College of Science in the eighties and already it had been tried over in various forms by him before he made this particular application of it."

The idea of time as the fourth dimension entered the popular mind around 1894–95, with the publication of the first of Wells' so-called "scientific romances," *The Time Machine*. Then, after that pioneering use of time as the fourth dimension, science fiction quickly adopted the idea as the basis for one of its most popular subgenres. One of the great "golden age of science fiction" writers, 'Murray Leinster' (1896–1975)—the pen-name for William Jenkins—used it as the basis for his first published story.[95] It is the incredible tale of a Manhattan skyscraper (and its 2000 occupants) sent backward in time several 1000 years because its foundation slips (in an unexplained way) along the fourth dimension. The scientific sophistication of the story is primitive, with just one of the many logical flaws being a vivid description of the time travelers living forward-in-time even as their wrist watches run backward. Indeed, when pulp pioneering editor Hugo Gernsback reprinted the tale in one of the early issues of *Amazing Stories*, a reader complained about that very point. Gernsback felt compelled to defend the story, but could muster only a weak rebuttal based on an author's right to "poetic license."[96]

More technical is the discussion in the story of a clerk who transforms the main entrance to a department store into a time machine by building a tesseract (a four-dimensional cube).[97] The claim is made there that the fourth dimension of the cube/doorway is time. That tale appeared just 5 months after a classic of science fiction by Robert Heinlein (1907–1988) had appeared, also using a tesseract, in which the fourth dimension is taken as *spatial*.[98]

Some writers wanted to have the fourth dimension both ways, as space *and* time in the same story. One wonderful example of this is a classic,[99] written by one of the giants of science fiction. In that tale an electrical engineer named Nelson is caught in the middle of an enormous electromagnetic field surge produced by a short circuit in a power plant. As a physicist explains to the shocked board of directors of the utility, "It now appears that the unheard-of-current, amounting to millions of amperes . . . must have produced a certain extension into four dimensions . . . I have been making some calculations and have been able to satisfy myself that a

---

[95]M. Leinster, "The Runaway Skyscraper," *Argosy*, February 1919.

[96]H. Gernsback, "Plausability in Scientifiction," *Amazing Stories*, November 1926.

[97]W. P. McGivern, "Doorway of Vanishing Men," *Fantastic Adventures*, July 1941.

[98]R. Heinlein, "—And He Built a Crooked House," *Astounding Science Fiction*, February 1941. Here we read of a Los Angeles architect who builds a house in the shape of a tesseract as it would appear if collapsed into normal three-dimensional space. It isn't stable in 3-space (we are told), however, and so a California earthquake is sufficient to topple the house into a stable 4-D configuration, along with its occupants.

[99]A. C. Clarke, "Technical Error," *Fantasy No. 1*, December 1946.

'hyperspace' about ten feet on a side was, in fact, generated: a matter of some ten thousand quartic—not cubic!—feet. Nelson was occupying that space. The sudden collapse of the field [when the overload breakers finally broke the circuit] caused the rotation of that space."

Being rotated through 4-space has inverted the unlucky Nelson [see *For Further Discussion* at the end of this chapter for more on this point], and to bring him back to normal he must be flipped again. The physicist brushes aside a question about the fourth dimension as time, asserting that the only issue is one of space. Poor Nelson is, therefore, again subjected to a stupendous power overload—only now he disappears! Too late, the physicist realizes that the fourth dimension is both space *and* time and that Nelson has been spatially flipped *and* temporally displaced into the future. To understand the particularly monstrous fate of Nelson, just ask yourself what the result would be if he should materialize *inside* matter sometime in the future!

The interpretation of the fourth dimension as time is, of course, the one of interest to prospective time travelers, to physicists studying time travel, and to philosophers of time, and so for us, too. The sort of science fiction that is of greatest interest to us is like the one in which one of the characters, displaced in time, asks for an explanation from a higher-dimensional being who appears on the scene: "'Just where is Tuesday?' he asked. 'Over there [and when the being extends its hand, the hand disappears].' 'Do that again.' 'What? Oh—Point toward Tuesday? Certainly.'" The being explains the physics of the situation to the astonished time traveler thus: "It is a direction like any other direction. You know yourself there are four directions—forward, sideward, upward, and—*that* way! … It is the fourth dimension—it is duration."[100]

And how about stories like the one in which a mad inventor discovers how to make a substance whose atoms resist being pushed by "pushing back at right angles to all the other [spatial] directions." That is, to push on this exotic stuff is to risk experiencing a back reaction, of being pushed "off into the fourth dimension [which we are told is time] … into the middle of the week after next."[101] Now wouldn't *that* really be something?!

But of course it was H. G. Wells who, in fiction, pioneered time travel and its connection to the fourth dimension as it is popularly thought of today (with the caveats about Wellsian time machines kept firmly in mind). We are therefore quite interested, as *The Time Machine* opens, to listening-in as the Time Traveller expounds to a group of friends at a dinner party in his London home. He starts with the assertion "There is no difference between Time and any of the three dimensions of Space except that our consciousness moves along it." When asked to say more about the fourth dimension, he replies, "It is simply this. That Space, as our mathematicians have it, is spoken of as having three dimensions, which one may call Length, Breadth, and Thickness, and it is always definable by reference to

---

[100]T. Sturgeon, "Yesterday Was Monday," *Unknown Fantasy Fiction*, June 1941.

[101]M. Leinster, "The Middle of the Week After Next," *Thrilling Wonder Stories*, August 1952.

three planes, each at right angles to the others. But some philosophical people have been asking why *three* dimensions particularly—why not another direction at right angles to the other three?—and have even tried to construct a Four-Dimensional geometry. Professor Simon Newcomb was expounding this to the New York Mathematical Society only a month or so ago."[102]

2.6   Spacetime and the Block Universe

> "And now he has preceded me briefly in bidding farewell to this strange world. This signifies nothing. For us believing physicists, the distinction between past, present, and future is only an illusion, even if a stubborn one."
>
> —Albert Einstein[103]

The poet Henry Van Dyke wrote, in his 1904 "The Sun-Dial at Wells College," words that echo the spirit of Omar Khayyam's *Rubaiyat* from nine centuries before:

The shadow by my finger cast
Divides the future from the past:
Before it, sleeps the unborn hour,
In darkness, and beyond thy power:
Behind its unreturning line,
The vanished hour, no longer thine:
One hour alone is in thy hands,—
The NOW on which the shadow stands.

The very next year Einstein's theory of special relativity appeared and, 3 years later, came Minkowski's spacetime interpretation of special relativity. Van Dyke's beautiful poetry was dealt a mighty blow by those developments in mathematical physics, and in the rest of this chapter we'll see how that came to pass.

The modern view of reality, that the past, present, and future are joined together into a four-dimensional entity called *spacetime*, is due to Hermann Minkowski (1864–1909), Einstein's mathematics teacher when he was a student in Zurich. Minkowski gave spacetime (the visual imagery of Einstein's mathematics) to the world during a famous address at the 80th Assembly of German Natural Scientists and Physicians in Cologne, on September 21, 1908. Entitled "Space and Time," his

---

[102]And so Newcomb actually was. Wells, it is certain, routinely read *Nature* (one of his college friends, Richard Gregory, eventually became the journal's editor), and Wells must have read Newcomb's address of December 28, 1893 to the New York Mathematical Society when reprinted in the February 1, 1893 issue (on pp. 325–329), where he called hyperspace "the fairyland of geometry." From the Time Traveller's own words, then, that wonderful Victorian dinner party must have taken place in January or February of 1894.

[103]From a letter written by Einstein on March 21, 1955, to the children of Michele Besso, his dearest friend, who had just died. Einstein's use of the word *briefly* was due to his knowledge that he was nearly out of time, too (he died just a month later).

remarks were electrifying then and still are today.[104] He began dramatically: "Gentlemen! The views of space and time which I wish to lay before you have sprung from the soil of experimental physics, and therein lies their strength. They are radical." Then came the famous line, quoted in so many freshman physics texts and philosophy papers, concerning the nature of spacetime: "Henceforth space by itself, and time by itself, are doomed to fade away into mere shadows, and only a kind of union of the two will preserve independence." Minkowski explained what spacetime is in these words to his audience:

> "A point of space at a point of time ... I will call a *world point*. The multiplicity of all thinkable x, y, z, t systems of values we will christen the *world*. With this most valiant piece of chalk I might project upon the blackboard four world axes ... Not to leave a yawning void anywhere, we will imagine that everywhere and everywhen there is something perceptible. To avoid saying 'matter' or 'electricity' I will use for this something the word 'substance.' We fix our attention on the substantial point which is at the world point x, y, z, t, and imagine that we are able to recognize this substantial point at any other time. Let the variations dx, dy, dz, of the space coordinates of this substantial point correspond to the time element dt. Then we obtain, as an image, so to speak, of the everlasting career of the substantial point, a curve in the world, a *world-line*. ... The whole Universe is seen to resolve itself into similar world-lines, and I would fain anticipate myself by saying that in my opinion physical laws might find their most perfect expressions as relations between these world-lines ... *Thus also three-dimensional geometry becomes a chapter in four-dimensional physics* [my emphasis]."

With those words Minkowski gave mathematical expression to the philosophical exposition of Wells' Time Traveller to his dinner party friends. Taking the Minkowskian view of the primacy of spacetime as the ultimate building block stuff of reality was Princeton professor of physics John Wheeler, who wrote[105] "There is nothing in the world except empty curved space. Matter, charge , electromagnetism ... are only manifestations of the bending of space. *Physics is Geometry*." This idea was echoed in fiction, in the 1987 novel Moscow 2042 by Vladimir Voinovich, where we find a time traveler who declares "Anyone with even a nodding acquaintance with the theory of relativity knows that nothing is a variety of something and so you can always make a little something out of nothing."

But not everybody understood Minkowski. In a little-known yet quite erudite essay, published just after a stunning experimental verification of general relativity (the bending of starlight passing through the Sun's gravitational field[106]), an anonymous author presented an optical analogy to help those who thought relativity

---

[104]For a study that includes the original German text, careful English translations, and photographs of Minkowski's agonized corrections to his pre-address manuscript, see P. L. Galison, "Minkowski's Space-Time: From Visual Thinking to the Absolute World," *Historical Studies in the Physical Sciences* (volume 10), 1979, pp. 85–121.

[105]C. W. Misner and J. Wheeler, "Gravitation, Electromagnetism, Unquantized Charge, and Mass as Properties of Curved Empty Space," *Annals of Physics*, December 1957, pp. 525–603.

[106]General relativity had already explained the long-puzzling excess precession of the perihelion (point of closest approach to the Sun) of Mercury's orbit. The excess was an observational (and so experimental) fact which Newton's gravity *cannot* completely explain.

simply "a mathematical joke." Signing himself only as "W.G.," he included the following passage[107]:

> "Some thirty or more years ago [it was forty] a *jeu d'esprit* was written by Dr. Edwin Abbott entitled *Flatland* ... Dr. Abbott pictures intelligent beings whose whole experience is confined to a plane, or other space of two dimensions, who have no faculties by which they can become conscious of anything outside that space and no means of moving off the surface on which they live. He then asks the reader, who has consciousness of the third dimension, to imagine a sphere descending upon the plane of Flatland and passing through it. How will the inhabitants regard this phenomenon? They will not see the approaching sphere and will have no conception of its solidity. They will only be conscious of the circle in which it cuts their plane. This circle, at first a point, will gradually increase in diameter, driving the inhabitants of Flatland outward from its circumference, and this will go on until half the sphere has passed through the plane, when the circle will gradually contract to a point and then vanish, leaving the Flatlanders in undisturbed possession of their country ... Their experience will be that of a circular obstacle gradually expanding or growing, and then contracting, and they will attribute to *growth in time* what the external observer in three dimensions assigns to a movement in the third dimension. Transfer this analogy to a movement of the fourth dimension through three-dimensional space. Assume the past and future of the Universe to be all depicted in four-dimensional space, and visible to any being who has consciousness of the fourth dimension. If there is motion of our three-dimensional space relative to the fourth dimension, all the changes we experience and assign to the flow of time will be due simply to this movement, *the whole of the future as well as the past existing in the fourth dimension* [my emphasis]."

W.G.'s words are a clear and unequivocal statement of the so-called *block universe* concept of four-dimensional spacetime. One can find the block universe concept in the writings of the ancients, too. Consider, for example, the fifth-century B.C. Greek philosopher Parmenides' view of reality: "It is uncreated and indestructible; for it is complete, immovable, and without end. Nor was it ever, nor will it be; for now it *is*, all at once, a continuous *one*." And in Thomas Aquinas' *Compendium Theologiae*, written in the thirteenth century, we find "We may fancy that God knows the flight of time in His eternity, in the way that a person standing on top of a watchtower embraces in a single glance a whole caravan of passing travelers." This is the block universe idea, too, but whereas for Parmenides it was metaphysics and for Aquinas it was theology, for Einstein and Minkowski it was physics.[108]

---

[107]W. G., "Euclid, Newton, and Einstein," *Nature*, February 12, 1920, pp. 627–630. As with the mysterious S. (note 94), the editorial staff at *Nature* has informed me that, nearly a century later, there is no longer any record of the identity of W. G. in the journal's archives.

[108]And for some it was all nonsense. The British philosopher Peter Geach (1916–2013), for example, declared the Minkowskian view to be "very popular with philosophers who try to understand physics and physicists who try to do philosophy." See P. T. Geach, "Some Problems About Time," in *Studies in the Philosophy of Thought and Action* (P. F. Strawson, editor), Oxford University Press, 1968. In his introduction to Geach's essay, editor Strawson put in his two cents by stating the four-dimensional view of reality to be nothing but "fanciful philosophical theorizing."

The block universe concept may explain the enigmatic statement made by Einstein at the death of Michele Besso (note 103). As interpreted[109] decades later:

> "It seems that Einstein's view of the life of an individual was as follows. If the difference between past, present, and future is an illusion, i.e., the four-dimensional spacetime is a 'block Universe' without motion or change, then each individual is a collection of myriad of selves, distributed along his history, each occurrence *persisting on the world line, experiencing indefinitely the particular event of that moment* [my emphasis]. Each of these momentary persons, according to our experience would possess memory of the previous ones, and would therefore believe himself identical with them; yet they would all exist separately, as single pictures in a film. Placing the past, present and future on the same footing this way, destroys the notion of the unity of the self, rendering it a mere illusion as well."

It appears by his words that Einstein was indeed in agreement with the block universe concept, and that he was attempting to give his friend's family some reason to believe that their father still lives 'somewhen.' The makers of the 2002 film *Minority Report* made use of the block universe concept, even if not intentionally; there we see police stopping crime *before* it happens because they can 'see the future.'

Not everybody believed that this view of spacetime was Einstein's, however. Karl Popper (1902–1994), an Austrian philosopher of science, wrote 28 years after the scientist's death that "Einstein was a strict determinist when I first visited him in 1950: he believed in a 4-dimensional Block-Universe. But he gave this up."[110] Shortly before he wrote those words, however, Popper must have learned something new to convince himself of his final comment, because just 2 years earlier he had declared[111] Einstein to (still) be a determinist. Popper presents no evidence to support his claim of Einstein's philosophical conversion, however, and it would seem that the Besso letter still offers the best insight into his actual view of spacetime shortly before his death. I say this because I think Popper's labeling of Einstein as a determinist is wrong. Determinism says 'If you do A, then B will happen, and if you do not do A then (perhaps) something other than B will happen.' A deterministic universe has plenty of room for free will, because you can *choose* to do A or not to do A, and what you decide makes a difference. A fatalistic universe, however, as is the block universe, simply says 'You will do A and B will happen.' To accept the block universe, as did Einstein, is to be a fatalist, not a determinist.

---

[109]L. P. Horwitz, R. I. Arshansky, and A. C. Elitzur, "On the Two Aspects of Time: The Distinction and Its Implications," *Foundations of Physics*, December 1988, pp. 1159–1193. See also Einstein's own book (note 67) where he wrote "From a 'happening' in three-dimensional space, physics becomes, as it were, an 'existence' in the four-dimensional 'world'."

[110]See the *Seventh International Congress of Logic, Methodology and Philosophy of Science*, volume 4 (Salzburg, Austria, 1983), p. 176. Popper describes his early discussions with Einstein on the reality of time and the four-dimensional Parmenidean block universe in some detail in his autobiography: see volume 1 of *The Philosophy of Karl Popper* (P. A. Schilpp, editor), The Library of Living Philosophers, Open Court 1974, pp. 102–103.

[111]In the Foreword to the book by B. Gal-Or, *Cosmology, Physics and Philosophy*, Springer-Verlag 1981.

Einstein's final position on this, then, *might* have been like that of the fictional time traveler who takes a little girl 25,000 years back into the past, where she sees an ancient ancestor of humanity.[112] She then asks if the ancestor is really alive. The time traveler replies, "Every man who ever lived is still alive, child. In time there is no real death. When a man dies he's still alive 10 min ago, 10 years ago. He's always alive to those who travel back through time to meet him face to face."

Did Einstein *really* believe this? Not everybody thinks so. At the 1922 meeting of the French Philosophical Society, for example, the philosopher of science Emile Meyerson asked Einstein whether the spatialization of time (the idea that time is a dimension on the same footing as the spatial ones) is a legitimate interpretation of Minkowski's spacetime. Einstein's terse answer was that "it is certain that in the four-dimensional continuum all dimensions are *not* [my emphasis] equivalent."[113]

Use of the term *block universe* is generally thought to have originated with the Oxford philosopher Francis Herbert Bradley (1846–1924) who, in his 1883 book *Principles of Logic*, wrote "We seem to think that we sit in a boat, and are carried down the stream of time, and that on the bank there is a row of houses with numbers on the doors. And we get out of the boat, and knock at the door with number 19, and, re-entering the boat, then suddenly find ourselves opposite 20, and having then done the same, we go on to 21. And, all this while, the firm fixed row of the past and future stretches in a *block* [my emphasis] behind us, and before us." The house numbers would seem to be Bradley's way of referring to the centuries. Note that he wrote these words 12 years before *The Time Machine*, and that they preceded Minkowski's famous address by a quarter-century.

But this origin of *block universe* may not be as clear-cut as I have made it appear. Bradley, who was frequently criticized by the Harvard psychologist William James (1842–1910)—a man who argued for free will[114] and indeterminism, concepts disallowed in a block universe—may have been mocked on the idea by James during an address to the students of the Harvard Divinity School in March 1884 ("The Dilemma of Determinism"), the year after Bradley's book had been published. In his address James spoke of a deterministic world as being a "solid" or "iron block" (this are *not* characteristics of determinism, but rather of fatalism, and so James makes the same mistake as did Popper). However, writing the year before Bradley's book, in the April 1882 issue of *Mind*, James wrote (with obvious disdain) of "the universe of Hegel [the German philosopher Georg Hegel (1770-1831)]—the *absolute block* [my emphasis] whose parts have no loose play," as having "the oxygen of possibility all suffocated out of its lungs" and as being a universe in which "there can be neither good nor bad, but [only] one dead level of

---

[112]F. B. Long, "Throwback in Time," *Science Fiction Plus*, April 1953.

[113]A. Einstein, "La Théorie de la Relativité," *Bullentin de la Société Francaise de Philosophia* (volume 17), 1922, pp. 91–113.

[114]A famous line from James, one that perhaps illustrates his sort of reasoning about free will, is "My first act of free will shall be to believe in free will." If only proving theorems in math and physics were that easy.

mere fate." So, perhaps, the chain of evolution of the term block universe is actually from Hegel to James and *then*, finally, to Bradley.

We can actually find the block universe in fiction *before* Minkowski (and so certainly before pulp science fiction) came on the scene. In an 1875 (!) story[115] we read of a man who sees, years in advance, his own death in the American Civil War. In the following extract, this man speaks to an unnamed friend (who is the narrator):

> "Do you know," said Bernard, presently, "I sometimes think prophecy isn't so strange a thing . . . I really see no reason why any earnest man may not be able to foresee the future, now and then . . ."
>
>   "There is reason enough to my mind," I replied, "in the fact that future events do not exist, as yet, and we cannot know that which is not, though we may shrewdly guess it sometimes . . ."
>
>   "Your argument is good, but your premises are bad, I think," replied my friend, . . . his great, sad eyes looking solemnly into mine.
>
>   "How so?" I asked.
>
>   "Why, I doubt the truth of your assumption, that future events do not exist as yet . . . Past and future are only divisions of time, and do not belong to eternity . . . To us it must be past or future with reference to other occurrences. But is there, in reality, any such thing as a past or a future? If there is an eternity, it is and always has been and always must be. But time is a mere delusion . . . To a being thus in eternity, all things are, and must be present. *All things that have been, or shall be, are* [my emphasis]."

When the block universe concept did eventually appear in science fiction, it did so early. In a 1927 story, for example, a time traveler from the future and a man in the present (who is the narrator) have the following exchange:

> "I have just been five years into your future."
> "My future!" I exclaimed. "How can that be when I have not lived it yet?"
> "But of course you have lived it."
> I stared, bewildered.
> "Could I visit my past if you had not lived your future?"[116]

So, while the block universe has a bit of a history to it, the history of the concept of *mathematical* spacetime in physics has a much clearer origin: it derives from Minkowski, not from Hegel, Bradley, James, or even Einstein (who often gets credit for it even though he didn't use the concept in special relativity in 1905, 3 years before Minkowski's address.). Eventually, of course, Einstein did come to appreciate the power and conceptual beauty of four-dimensional spacetime, and it came to play a central role in his ideas about gravity. Indeed, in Einstein's general theory of relativity gravity *is* (curved) spacetime. The starting point for general relativity (and so a *scientifically plausible* theory of time travel) was Minkowski's creation of spacetime, and he is truly deserving of the title 'father of the fourth dimension.'

---

[115]G. C. Eggleston, "The True Story of Bernard Poland's Prophecy," *American Homes*, June 1875. George Cary Eggleston (1839–1911) had served as a soldier in the Confederate Army.

[116]F. Flagg, "The Machine Man of Ardathia," *Amazing Stories*, November 1927.

Of course, it is true that Newton's physics also talks about an analytical (as opposed to merely philosophical) space and time long before either Minkowski or Einstein, but 'Newtonian spacetime' is something very different from Minkowski's self-described "radical" view.[117] In the Newtonian view there is a universal time, a *cosmic* time, which is the same time for everyone, everywhere, in the universe. At every instant, a cosmic simultaneity exists for Newton. Newton's space is Euclidean; that is, through any point exterior to a line exactly one parallel line can be constructed and those two lines will never meet, all triangles (no matter their size) have an interior angle sum of 180°, and so on. For Newton, space and time were absolutely and uniquely separable. They were, as philosophers like to say, "distinct individuals."

Minkowski changed all that. For him space and time are only relatively separable, and the separation is different for observers in relative motion. For Newton, space and time are the *background* in which physical processes in the world evolve. For Minkowski, spacetime *is* the world.

In a famous philosophical paper[118] by an advocate of the block universe view of reality, we find the words "I … defend the view of the world … which treats the totality of being, of facts, or of events as spread out eternally in the dimension of time as well as the dimensions of space. Future events and past events are by no means present events, but in a clear and important sense they do exist, now and forever, as rounded and definite articles in the world's furniture." The title of Williams' paper comes from an ancient dilemma stated by Aristotle in his *De Interpretatione*, where he asked a question now classic in philosophy: "Will there be a sea fight tomorrow?"

Aristotle began his famous answer by first posing the following premise: If a statement about some future event is, eventually, shown to be true (or false), then that statement was true (or false) from the moment it was made. Consider, then, the following two assertions: (A) "It is true that there will be a sea fight tomorrow" and (B) "It is true that there will *not* be a sea fight tomorrow." Surely, argued Aristotle, (A) and (B) cannot both be true, but equally surely, one of them must be true. Suppose it is (A) that is true. Then there is nothing that can be done to prevent the sea fight, and so the future is fated. Suppose, however, it is (B) that is true. Then there is nothing that can be done to cause the sea fight, and so the future is fated. The conclusion is the same no matter which assertion is the true one; thus, the future is fated.

---

[117]See, for example, H. Stein, "Newtonian Space-Time," *Texas Quarterly*, Autumn 1967, pp. 174–200; G. Berger, "Elementary Causal Structures in Newtonian and Minkowskian Space-Time," *Theoria* (volume 40), 1974, pp. 191–201; J. Earman and M. Friedman, "The Meaning and Status of Newton's Laws of Inertia and the Nature of Gravitational Forces," *Philosophy of Science*, September 1973, pp. 329–359.

[118]D. C. Williams, "The Sea Fight Tomorrow," in *Structure, Method and Meaning*, The Liberal Arts Press 1951. Donald Williams (1899–1983) was a professor of philosophy at Harvard.

As might be expected, those who like the fatalistic block universe like this conclusion, but, ironically, Aristotle wasn't one of them—he disliked it so much that he struggled to find a way around it. On the other hand, there are philosophers, like Professor Williams (who believed in a fatalistic universe), who reject Aristotle's rejection of his own logic! Professor Williams went so far, in fact, to calling Aristotle's reasoning "a tissue of error" and "swaggeringly invalid." Possibly so, but the philosophical debates over the sea fight question, and the fatalistic (or not) nature of the world, have not ceased to this day.

In an even more famous paper, Professor Williams makes clear his belief that the passage of time is a myth; he poetically declared "the total of world history is a spatio-temporal volume, of somewhat uncertain magnitude, chockablock with things and events."[119] Professor Williams did, indeed, embrace four-dimensional spacetime, and this is demonstrated by the following incredible passage, perhaps his best-remembered words: "It is then conceivable, though doubtless physically impossible, that one four-dimensional area of the time part of the manifold be slewed around at right angles to the rest, so that the time order of that area, as composed by its interior lines of strain and structure, run parallel with a spatial order in its environment. It is conceivable, indeed, that a single whole human life should lie thwartwise of the manifold, with its belly plump in time, its birth at the east and its death in the west, and its conscious stream running alongside somebody's garden path."

Good Lord!

Now, I am willing to admit that Professor Williams probably wrote that wonderful passage mostly for effect,[120] but I ask you—what, if anything, does it *mean*? It is marvelous to read and yet it remains (for me) mysterious.[121] It should come as no surprise that Professor Williams originally presented his papers to the Metaphysical Society of America, rather than to the American Physical Society. But this passage was perhaps not without impact in areas far removed from metaphysics; some years later there appeared a science fiction story[122] that reads as though it had been inspired by Williams. In it, a scientist discovers how to bend his perception of the four dimensions so as to view verticality as duration and duration as verticality. Thus, he is in October while sitting, but when he stands up he is in November! As bizarre as this may seem, such coordinate interchanges actually do occur in the

---

[119]D. C. Williams, "The Myth of Passage," *Journal of Philosophy*, July 1951, pp. 457–472.

[120]In a footnote, Williams sort of admits this when he writes "I should expect the impact of the environment on such a being to be so wildly queer and out of step with the way he is put together, that his mental life must be a dragged-out monstrous delirium." I think this a great understatement.

[121]As it was for some of Williams' fellow philosophers, one of whom bluntly called the 'myth-of-passage' paper "an interesting piece of science fiction": see M. Capek, "The Myth of Frozen Passage: The Status of Becoming in the Physical World," in *Boston Studies in the Philosophy of Science* (volume 2), Humanities Press 1965. Capek's title reflects his view of the block universe as simply a giant refrigerator and so, turning the tables on Williams, we have 'passage' changed to 'frozen passage.' See also note 136.

[122]G. Wolfe, "The Rubber Bend," *Universe 5* (T. Carr, editor), Random House 1974.

mathematical theory of time machines; we'll see this later, for example, when we discuss Tipler's rotating cylinder time machine.

By the 1930s the block universe had found a home in pulp science fiction. The block universe view that past and present coexist with the present got dramatic treatment in one story of a high school teacher who invents a "spacetime warp" theory, and who is then tricked by an evil industrialist into implementing it in the form of a gun. The weapon produces incredible effects when it is tested; for example, an allosaurus appears, which we are told is "a carnivorous dinosaur of the Jurassic Age, the most frightful engine of destruction that ever walked the Earth!"[123] At the story's end, the teacher explains what has happened to a crowd of breathless newspaper reporters:

> "Spacetime was warped slightly ... The Einsteinian spacetime continuum buckled ... Because it was superficial, only a little of the past, a little of the future broke through. The folds of the warp distorted spacetime evanescently, erratically skirting the vast gulf where the past lies buried and lightly tapping the vast stores of the future. It is a truism of modern speculative physics that the past and the future exist simultaneously and coextensively in higher dimensions of space. De Sitter has speculated as to the possibility of seeing an event before it happens. It is quite possible, gentlemen. Events of the far future already exist in spacetime."

That 'explains' the dinosaur. In the teacher's words, "You tell me that two men saw an incredible beast. ... They swear it looked like a dinosaur. I think it was a dinosaur, gentlemen. It broke through when the warp tapped the past."

And just 2 years later, Robert Heinlein made world lines the central concept in the first of his many classic tales.[124] The story draws an analogy between a world line and a telephone cable: the beginning and end points in spacetime for the world line of a person (birth and death) are associated with breaks (faults) in a telephone cable. By sending a signal up and down the cable, and measuring the time delay until the arrival of the echo produced by such discontinuities, a technician can both detect and locate the faults. In the same manner, Heinlein's story-gadget sends a signal of unspecified nature up and down a world line and thus locates the birth and death 'discontinuities.' Knowledge of the death date, in particular, causes financial stress among life insurance companies, and an examination of *that* tension (not strange physics) is the fictional point of the story.

And then, 2 years after Heinlein's tale with its serious tone, a far less serious story[125] (featuring an Attila the Hun character who roams up and down the corridors of time kidnapping beautiful women for his harem!), we find an 'editorial' footnote telling its young readers that "scientists—especially the new order of meta-physical scientists—are agreed on the principles of Space-Time. The future is not a thing which *will exist*. Rather it is a thing which *does exist*—all events from

[123]F. B. Long, "Temporary Warp," *Astounding Stories*, August 1937.

[124]R. Heinlein, "Life-Line," *Astounding Science Fiction*, August 1939.

[125]R. Cummings, "Bandits of Time," *Amazing Stories*, December 1941.

the Beginning to the End, exist in a record upon the scroll of Time." This story, itself, was silly, but the block universe metaphysics was up-to-date.

Somewhat surprisingly, I think, is that even before pulp science fiction embraced the block universe, the concept had already made a deep impression on a broader audience. For example, in a 1928 New York stage play[126] the action alternately takes place in the years 1784 and 1928 and, to explain how that can be, one character (a time traveler) tells another:

> "Suppose you are in a boat, sailing down a winding stream. You watch the banks as they pass you. You went by a grove of maple trees, upstream. But you can't see them now, so you saw them in the *past*, didn't you? You're watching a field of clover now; it's before your eyes at this moment, in the *present*. But you don't know yet what's around the bend in the stream ahead of you; there may be wonderful things, but you can't see them until you get around the bend, in the *future*, can you?"

Then, after this prologue about the stream of time, comes the block universe idea:

> "Now remember, *you're* in the boat. But *I'm* up in the sky above you; in a plane. I'm looking down on it all. I can see *all at once* the trees you saw upstream, the field of clover that you see now, and what's waiting for you around the bend ahead! *All at once!* So the past, present, and future of the man in the boat are all *one* to the man in the plane."

Then, finally, the obvious theological conclusion: "Doesn't that show how all Time must really be one? Real Time—real Time is nothing but an idea in the mind of God!"

To end this section, the block universe conception was cleverly used by one science fiction fan who argued in support of time travel, in reply to another fan how had claimed that a failure of mass/energy conservation was fatal to the plausibility of time travel. Their exchange began with a letter to the editor at *Astounding Stories* in November 1937, written in response to a recent story[127]:

> "Let us say that there is, at a certain time, 'x' amount of matter in the Universe, and 'e' amount of energy. Then if a man of 'a' mass travels backward in time to this particular instant aforementioned, the total amount of matter is thus 'x' plus 'a', while if no other such mass changing occurrences take place, the amount of matter in the future is 'x' minus 'a'. Only a corresponding loss and gain respectively in the amount of energy could explain this conservation of energy, advocates [of time travel] say what they may. But you can't rob or add energy to a Universe nilly-willy! Or perhaps time doesn't enter in on the matter. Perhaps you can add matter in a Universe provided you take it away on some future date."

This fan's concern clearly made an impression on science fiction writers, and the case for conservation of energy is stated in many of the time travel stories that appeared after the publication of this letter.[128]

---

[126]"Berkeley Square" by J. L. Balderson. This play was made into a 1933 movie of the same name, and again in 1951 as the film *I'll Never Forget You*.

[127]O. Saari, "The Time Bender," *Astounding Stories*, August 1937 (see also note 137 in Chap. 1).

[128]Examples include the novels *Lest Darkness Fall* (Henry Holt 1941) by L. Sprague de Camp, and *The Time Hoppers* (Doubleday 1967) by Robert Silverberg.

A reply was soon received by the magazine in a letter (January 1938) from another fan:

> "[A recent letter] implies that the idea of time travel is incompatible with the law of conservation of mass and energy. I believe [the] reasoning is wrong [and that the] difficulty lies primarily in the assumption that a body moved in time is transported into a different Universe. According to Einstein, time and the three normal dimensions are so related as to form a continuous, inseparable medium we call the spacetime continuum. Time is in no way independent of the other components of our Universe. Hence a fixed mass [a time traveler and his machine] moved in time is by no means lost from the Universe, the action being analogous to a shift along any other dimension."

The block, or frozen, universe of Minkowski is clearly reflected in those words.[129]

2.7 Philosophical Implications of the Block Universe

> "Is the future all settled beforehand, and only waiting to be 'pushed through' into our three-dimensional ken? Is there no element of contingency? No free will? I am talking geometry, not theology."[130]

I should tell you now that, despite the enthusiastic embrace of the block universe by Williams and others (including Einstein), there are those who have been harsh in their criticism of Minkowski's spacetime. The major philosophical problem with the block universe interpretation of four-dimensional spacetime is that it looks like fatalism disguised as physics. It seems to be little more than a mathematician's proof of a denial of free will dressed up in geometry. One philosopher illuminated this concern with the following story, one that vividly illustrates the compelling need many humans have to deny a fatalistic world:

> "In a moving picture version of *Romeo and Juliet*, the dramatic scene was shown in which Juliet, seemingly dead, is lying in the tomb, and Romeo, believing she is dead, raises a cup containing poison. At this moment an outcry from the audience was heard: 'Don't do it!' We laugh at the person who . . . forgets that the time flow of a movie is unreal, is merely the unwinding of a pattern imprinted on a strip of film. Are we more intelligent than this man when we believe that the time flow of our actual life is different? Is the present more than our cognizance of a predetermined pattern of events unfolding itself like an unwinding film?"[131]

---

[129]In the context of mathematical physics (*not* science fiction) it has been shown that time travel does *not* imply any fatal violation of conservation of energy. See, for example, J. L. Friedman *et al.*, "Cauchy Problem in Spacetimes with Closed Timelike Curves," *Physical Review D*, September 15, 1990, pp. 1915–1930, and D. Deutsch, "Quantum Mechanics Near Closed Timelike Lines," *Physical Review D*, November 15, 1991, pp. 3197–3217.

[130]The lament of Victorian physicist Oliver Lodge (1850–1940) in his essay "The New World of Space and Time," *Living Age*, January 1920.

[131]H. Reichenbach, *The Direction of Time*, University of California Press 1956, p. 11.

Most people in the Western world would answer *yes* to Reichenbach's question. Most people do find Omar Khayyam's *Rubaiyat* to be a beautiful poem, yes, but still they reject its fatalistic message: "And the first Morning of Creation wrote/What the Last Dawn of Reckoning shall read." Indeed, William James quoted these very words in his 1884 address to the students of the Harvard Divinity School when he argued against fatalism and the block universe.

Besides fatalism, another reason for the stinging words by critics of Minkowski's spacetime is that, in it, events don't *happen*—they just *are*. That is, there seems to be no temporal process of *becoming* in Minkowski's spacetime. Everything is already there and, as what we perceive to be the passing of time occurs, we simply become conscious of ever more of Minkowski's "world points," or events, that lie on our individual world lines. Hermann Weyl (1885–1955), a German mathematical physicist who in his last years was a colleague of Einstein and Gödel at the Institute for Advanced Study in Princeton, expressed this very interpretation in words that have become famous, words that sound very much like those of Wells' Time Traveller: "The objective world simply *is*, it does not *happen*. Only to the gaze of my consciousness, crawling upward along the life line of my body [Minkowski's world line], does a section of the world [spacetime] come to life as a fleeting image in space which continuously changes in time [creating what we call the *now* or the *present*]."[132]

Weyl was skillful in finding poetic ways to express the world line view of reality, but not everybody is convinced by the poetry because it seems to deny the common sense idea of time 'flowing,' of temporal passage; it effectively says time is mind-dependent, a mere *illusion*, as the time traveler in "Berkeley Square" declared (note 126). One philosopher who was particularly opposed to Weyl's view was the British-American academic Max Black (1909–1989), and he expressed his opinion in no uncertain terms: "The picture of a 'block Universe,' composed of a timeless web of 'world-lines' in four-dimensional space, however strongly suggested by the theory of relativity, is a piece of gratuitous metaphysics."[133] Another philosopher who was unhappy with Weyl's view of the block universe was just as blunt: "While philosophers may be forgiven intellectual extravagances of this kind, I think it is a pity when they receive encouragement from theoretical physicists."[134]

Weyl's views had supporters, too, however. Consider, for example, the Time Traveller's speech to his friends at the fateful dinner party that opens *The Time*

---

[132]H. Weyl, *Philosophy of Mathematics and Natural Science*, Princeton University Press 1949, p. 116. Sir James Jeans had already said the same, somewhat less elegantly, in his 1935 Sir Halley Stewart Lecture: "The tapestry of spacetime is already woven throughout its full extent, both in space and time, so that the whole picture exists, although we only become conscious of it bit by bit—like separate flies crawling over a tapestry ... A human life is reduced to a mere thread in the tapestry." Jeans then immediately *rejected* this fatalistic view: see his *Scientific Progress*, Macmillan 1936, p. 20.

[133]From a book review in *Scientific American*, April 1962, pp. 179–185.

[134]H. A. C. Dobbs, "The 'Present' in Physics," *British Journal for the Philosophy of Science*, February 1969, pp. 317–324.

Machine: "There is no difference between Time and any of the three dimensions of Space except that our consciousness moves along it . . . here is a portrait of a man at 8 years old, another at fifteen, another at seventeen, another at twenty-three, and so on. All these are evidently sections, as it were, Three-Dimensional representations of his Four-Dimensional being, *which is a fixed and unalterable thing* [my emphasis]." Remember, these words were written in 1895, 13 years before Minkowski and his world lines, and of course decades before Weyl's famous words.

Wells' passage made a considerable impression on at least one well-known physicist of the time, who references it in his early book on relativity.[135] And in another book on relativity, published the same year, we find the same interpretation of Minkowski's spacetime as a block universe: "With Minkowski, space and time become particular aspects of a single four-dimensional continuum . . . All motional phenomena . . . become timeless phenomena in four-dimensional space. The whole history of a physical system is laid out as a changeless whole."[136]

The claim that time is an illusion has some thought-provoking implications concerning the concepts of omniscience and free will, concepts that occur in any discussion of time travel. Some old theology on God's omniscience, as discussed in Aquinas' *Summa Theologiae*, is seemingly lent at least some support by Minkowski's spacetime: "Now although contingent events come into actual existence successively, God does not, as we do, know them in their actual existence successively, but all at once; because his knowledge is measured by eternity, as is also his existence; and eternity which exists as a simultaneous whole, takes in the whole of time . . . Hence all that takes place in time is eternally present to God." Somewhat paradoxically, however, Aquinas did make a distinction between past and future. In that same work he declares that "God can cause an angel not to exist in the future, even if he cannot cause it not to exist while it exists, or not to have existed when it already has." For Aquinas, then, whereas the past is rigid and unchangeable, the future is plastic, which is *not* the block universe view of spacetime.

As one theologian has observed,[137] this does not mean that Aquinas thought God had to view all events simultaneous with all others.[138] Rather, our theologian says that Aquinas could have thought of the relationship between God and events as being similar to that between the center of a circle and all the points on the circumference. That is, each point on the circumference has its own identity, coming before and/or after any other point, but the center is related to each and

[135]L. Silberstein, *The Theory of Relativity*, Macmillan 1914, p. 134.

[136]E. Cunningham, *The Principle of Relativity*, Cambridge University Press 1914, p. 191. The use of the words *timeless* and *changeless* explain the characterization of the block universe as being *frozen* (in note 121).

[137]W. L. Craig, "Was Thomas Aquinas a B-Theorist of Time?" *New Scholasticism*, Autumn 1985, pp. 475–483. For the B-theory of time, look back at the discussion in the first section of this chapter.

[138]A science fiction story by Norman Spinrad, "The Weed of Time" (*Alchemy and Academe*, Doubleday 1970) graphically describes what a nightmare that could be!

every point on the circumference in precisely the same way. The center, then, is 'eternity' and the circumference is the temporal series ('one thing after another') of reality. Saying that God is *eternal* is thus very different from saying he is *everlasting*. The first means outside of time, whereas the second means he is a temporal entity but has neither beginning nor end.

Our theologian supports the first interpretation, invoking Aquinas' own words from *Summa Contra Gentiles*: "The divine intellect, therefore, sees in the whole of its eternity, as being present to it, whatever takes place through the whole course of time. And yet what takes place in a certain part of time was not always existent. It remains, therefore, that God has a knowledge of these things that according to the march of time do not yet exist."

The issue of God's eternity and his place in spacetime has long been a hot topic among theologians with a scientific inclination. Practically every issue of the learned journal *Religious Studies*, for example, carries an article on the subject, often invoking relativity theory to support some argument. The Bible, itself, can be a confusing guide on this matter. For example, consider the Old Testament story of King Ahab (First Kings 21). Ahab, King of Sumeria, coveted Naboth's vineyard, but Naboth would not sell. The King retreated, but his wife Jezebel arranged for Naboth's downfall and judicial murder and thus caused the arrival of all his property into her husband's hands. This angered God, who commanded Elijah to prophesy disaster on Ahab's house. Ahab responded with sackcloth, and at that God shifted the disaster to the house of Ahab's son. The point, here, is that God, declared to be omniscient, seems to have been *surprised* at Ahab's penitence. God is aware of everything in this tale, but only as it happens. That is, God's knowledge is subject to growth. This Hebrew concept of God as a participant in history is at odds with the contemporary Christian conception of divine knowledge of all that has been, all that is, and all that will be, a view which has its own Biblical support (for divine eternity). For example, Malachi 3:61 ("For I am the Lord, I change not"), and James 1:17 ("the Father . . . with whom is no variableness").

When *The Time Machine* was serialized in the *New Review*, it included a passage that does not appear in the now classic version of the story in which the Time Traveller explains his view of the connection between omniscience and the block universe to his dinner guests:

> "I'm sorry to drag in predestation and free-will, but I'm afraid those ideas will have to help . . . Suppose you knew fully the position and properties of every particle of matter, of everything existing in the Universe at any particular moment of time: suppose, that is, that you were omniscient. Well, that knowledge would involve the knowledge of the condition of things at the previous moment, and at the moment before that, and so on. If you knew and perceived the present perfectly, you would perceive therein the whole of the past. If you understood all the natural laws the present would be a complete and vivid record of the past. Similarly, if you grasped the whole of the present, knew all its tendencies and laws, you would see clearly all the future. To an omniscient observer there would be no forgotten past—no piece of time as it were that had dropped out of existence—and no blank future of things yet to be revealed . . . Present and past and future would be without meaning to such an observer . . . He would see, as it were, a Rigid Universe filling space and time . . . If 'past' meant anything, it would mean looking in a certain direction, while 'future' meant looking the opposite way."

Wells' "Rigid Universe" certainly sounds like the block universe, and he (or least, the Time Traveller) seems to have believed that it held important implications for the concept of free will.

The 'Rigid Universe' got an interesting science fiction treatment in a story[139] that imagined an event in the present that occurs 'before it should' (a heart patient learns that her obituary notice will be in next week's *New York Times* when that paper arrives 'early'). As one character explains to the sister of the lady who is soon to die, "The future mustn't be changed ... For us the events of ... the future are as permanent as any event in the past. We don't dare play around with changing the future, not when it's already signed, sealed and delivered in that newspaper. For all we know the future's like a house of cards. If we pull one card out, say your sister's life, we might bring the whole house tumbling down. You've got to accept the decree of fate ... You've got to."

With Einstein's discovery of the *relativity of simultaneity*,[140] we run into the question of 'How can there be any sense to the concept of divine, universe-wide knowledge in a four-dimensional spacetime?' That's because in some frames of reference it is possible for event A to be observed before event B, whereas in other frames the temporal order could be reversed, and so some theological questions prompted by spacetime physics are: 'What is God's frame of reference if he is to be actively involved in human affairs? Could God have a special frame of reference in which he is exempt from the relativity of simultaneity, a frame in which he imposes an absolute order on the sequence of becoming of events? Does it make any sense, that is, to say God enjoys what might be called 'divine immediacy'? And if so, what should we think of a God who follows rules of nature different from those that govern all he is supposed to have made?'

Theologians have debated questions like these for decades, and surely will continue to do so for many more decades to come. Alas, I suspect that physicists who study time travel have either been unaware, unimpressed, or just plain uninterested. That's too bad, because one doesn't have to be religious to appreciate the pure intellectual challenges presented by such questions. For example, consider the following debate between two philosophers, one who believes free will and divine foreknowledge are not compatible, and another who thinks the first has made a fundamental error in blurring the distinction between changing and affecting the past. (This distinction is of *great* importance

---

[139]R. Silverberg, "What We Learned From This Morning's Newspaper," *Infinity Four*, November 1972.

[140]This refers to the discovery that two events, which occur simultaneously for one observer in a spacetime, may not be simultaneous for another observer in the same spacetime. This will be discussed in more detail in the next chapter.

in any discussion of time travel.) This second philosopher presented some of his arguments in terms of a time traveler to the past[141]:

> "Consider the following. Parsons (P) has invented a special machine which allows him to go back in time. He enters the machine in 1986 and finds himself in the presence of or, perhaps better, observing, Quigly (Q) in 1876. P is an authority on Q, and knows immediately the situation Q is in. Not only that, but he remembers reading about the particular decision or act which Q made in that situation. Thus one might argue that from P's perspective what Q decides is as if already done. It is not already done, since P is standing there waiting for Q to do it. He has gone back in time. Yet from P's perspective, which is of one come back from the future, it is as if already done, since he knows what Q does decide. Since P strongly believes in the unalterability of the past, it is not within Q's power to do something other than what Q in fact does in that situation. From Q's perspective his decision is not already made nor is the action taken, so that it is in his power at that time to do either x or y. From his perspective, that he will do x rather than y is indeterminate; it is not yet done, though at the same time he can grant that P knows what he will do because for him it is as if he has already done it."

The first philosopher doesn't buy any of this, and dismisses it with "It should be abundantly clear . . . that the fact that such stories are in some way imaginable and intuitively graspable says nothing about their logical coherence." Given the interest among modern physicists in time travel, however, I think the first philosopher wouldn't write that today.

One possible reply to all of these theological issues that spacetime physics prompts can perhaps be found in a paper[142] (written by a philosopher and two mathematicians) that describes a five-dimensional spacetime in which the fifth dimension is initially given the provocative label of the 'eternity' axis. But then the authors lost their nerve and elected to rename it 'anti-time.' It is interesting to note that pulp science fiction anticipated that terminology by decades, as in one story[143] we read "Beyond the fourth there is a fifth dimension . . . Eternity, I think you would call it. It is the line, the direction perpendicular to time." For some, the eternity axis would appear to be perfect to serve as the temporal dimension for God, an axis distinct from the time axis of mere mortals.

The idea of supernatural beings existing outside of mortal time is an old one in theology, and it can also be found in secular literature long before science fiction got hold of it. For example, in the first act of Lord Byron's 1821 poem *Cain*, the fallen angel Lucifer tells Cain and his wife that

---

[141]For the complete exchange between these two philosophers, see W. Hasker, "Foreknowledge and Necessity," April 1985, pp. 121–157, B. Reichenbach, "Hasker and Omniscience," January 1987, pp. 86–92, and W. Hasker, "The Hardness of the Past: A Reply to Reichenbach," July 1987, pp. 337–342, all in the journal *Faith and Philosophy*. Hasker is the 'first' philosopher, and Reichenbach is the 'second' one. See also D. P. Lackey, "A New Disproof of the Compatibility of Foreknowledge and Free Choice," *Religious Studies*, September 1974, pp. 313–318.

[142]J. G. Bennett *et al.*, "Unified Field Theory in a Curvature-Free Five-Dimensional manifold," *Proceedings of the Royal Society of London A*, July 1949, pp. 39–61. A theological interpretation is given in G. Stromberg, "Space, Time, and Eternity," *Journal of the Franklin Institute*, August 1961, pp. 134–144.

[143]L. A. Eshbach, "The Time Conqueror," *Wonder Stories*, July 1932.

With us acts are exempt from time, and we
Can crowd eternity into an hour,
Or stretch an hour into eternity.
We breathe not by a mortal measurement,
But that's a myst'ry.

Before Minkowski, the debates over fatalism (as in Silverberg's story in note 139) and free will had been the exclusive province of philosophers, theologians, and lawyers (if a person has no control over his or her actions, then can we morally and ethically punish that person if those actions happen to be criminal?[144]). After Minkowski, the physicists (at least a few of them) joined the debates. According to one philosopher (note 118) the major motivation driving these debates is "the age-old dread that God's foreknowledge of our destiny can in itself impose the destiny upon us." The implication is, of course, that God is 'outside of time' and so can take in the entire Minkowskian block universe at a glance (hence his foreknowledge).

The relativistic view of the universe as a timeless four-dimensional spacetime seems to provide scientific, mathematical support for the conclusion that not only is the past fixed, but so is the future. Does that mean the future is what it will be—and if so, then why bother agonizing over the many apparent decisions each of us faces every day? If the future will be what it will be, then Christian theologians are left with the puzzling task of explaining what could possibly be meant by the Biblical exhortation (Deuteronomy 30:19) "I call Heaven and Earth to record this day against you, that I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing; therefore *choose* [my emphasis] life, that both thou and thy seed may live."

This issue has bothered philosophers for a very long time. The so-called Master Argument (the name reflects its supposed invulnerability to rebuttal), for example, comes down to us from its origins in ancient times, in the *Discourses* of the first century A.D. Roman Stoic philosopher Epictetus. That argument can be summarized[145] as follows:

1. The future follows from the past;
2. The past is unchangeable;
3. What follows from the unchangeable is unchangeable;

   Therefore,

4. The future is unchangeable.

This certainly does seem to be fatalistic, in effect arguing that all events in a block universe spacetime are recorded in a 'Book of Destiny.' Since ancient times many great works of literature have adopted that view, recounting tales of the foretold

---

[144]For more on this, in the context of time travel, see the penultimate question in the *For Future Discussion* questions at the end of this chapter.

[145]See, for example, the two papers by R. L. Purtill, "The Master Argument," *Apeiron*, May 1973, pp. 31–36, and "Foreknowledge and Fatalism," *Religious Studies*, September 1974, pp. 319–324.

fates of men, such as Sophocles' *Oedipus*. It is, in a block universe, as though our conscious experience of the world is no different from that of the man watching the projected film images of *Romeo and Juliet*.

That view is the central issue in the early sixth century A.D. Roman philosopher Boethius' influential *De Consolatione Philosophiae* (circa A.D. 500) which was written during a year of imprisonment before his execution for treason; perhaps he wondered during that year if his fate could have been anything different. Certainly he must have taken some consolation in fatalism, but in fact he tried to argue that God's vision of *all* temporal reality does not limit the freedom to act. According to Boethius, "The expression 'God is ever' denotes a single Present, summing up His continual presence in all the past, in all the present . . . and in all the future." That is, God sees in one timeless and eternal moment all that has been and will be freely chosen.[146]

When the fourteenth century English poet Geoffrey Chaucer prepared a translation of *Consolatione* he was obviously inspired by it when he wrote his very long, famous poem (*Troilus and Criseyde*) on the nature of love (Book IV.140):

> Some say "If God sees everything before
> It happens—and deceived He cannot be—
> Then everything must happen, though you swore
> The contrary, for He has seen it, He."
> And so I say, if from eternity
> God has foreknowledge of our thoughts and deed,
> We've no free choice, whatever books we read.
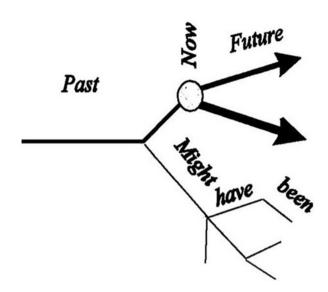
Two modern, purely philosophical rebuttals[147] to Chaucer, however, argue that his poetry misstates Boethius' philosophy when Troilus declares that divine foreknowledge is incompatible with free will. That is, in their view God's omniscience (a fundamental teaching in the theistic religions of Christianity, Judaism, and Islam) *is* compatible with free will (also a fundamental belief in those same religions). Both of these scholarly papers, though, depend much more on the nuances of grammar than most physicists will like.

The connection between spacetime physics and free will was made explicitly by the philosopher who wrote "For philosophers in either field, philosophy of science and philosophy of religion are too often viewed as mutually irrelevant . . . This is unfortunate, because sometimes the problems can be quite parallel and a consistent resolution is required. One especially intriguing case in point concerns, in

---

[146]In his *The Sirens of Titan*, a 1959 novel meant to be a parody of God's omniscience, Kurt Vonnegut gave the curious name of *chrono-synclastic infundibulated vision* to God's power to see the past and future.

[147]G. I. Mavrodes, "Is the Past Unpreventable?" April 1984, pp. 131–146, and A. Plantinga, "On Ockham's Way Out," July 1986, pp. 235–269, both in *Faith and Philosophy*.

Fig. 2.2 The common view
of time

philosophy of science, the possibility of ... time travel and, in philosophy of
religion, the relationship between divine foreknowledge and human freedom."[148]

That philosopher could well have included science fiction writers in his group of
people interested in both spacetime physics and free will. In one story,[149] for
example, a man in the twenty-fifth century is about to travel back into the past to
escape criminal prosecution. He is aked where he'd like to go, and he replies "I do
not understand the paradoxes—what if I choose to build gravity-deflectors in
Ancient Rome?" When he is told (correctly) that he couldn't do that because it
didn't happen, he persists: "But if I can choose any period, it means I can alter
history at will—which presumes that the present can also be changed." Then, at last,
he gets the explicit answer that bothers nearly everyone: "The real answer is that in
the final analysis your decision to choose a certain time period is already made, and
the things you will do [in the time traveler's personal time] are already determined.
Free will is an illusion; it is synonymous with incomplete perception." The same
idea appears in another tale (note 57); when one character says, "What you are
saying is that the future is fixed, and that you can read it, in every essential detail,"
the response is "Quite right ... both those things are true."

However, no matter how hard we try—and by *we* I include even those physicists
and philosophers who embrace the block universe with its support of time travel to
the past—it is very difficult to break free of the view of time as shown in Fig. 2.2.
That is, as the passage of time up to the present or *now* (with all to the left of that

---

[148]W. L. Craig, "Tachyons, Time Travel, and Divine Omniscience," *Journal of Philosophy*, March
1988, pp. 135–150. Tachyons are hypothetical faster-than-light particles that theoretically travel
backwards through time. They will be discussed in Chap. 5.

[149]W. Kubilius, "Turn Backward, O Time," *Science Fiction Quarterly*, May 1951.

instant as the past), while to the right of the *now* we have multiple possible futures (depending on our free will choices). Lying to the side of all that (in our thoughts and imaginations) are all that 'might have been' if we had made different choices than we did at earlier times in the past.[150]

With all that said, even if events are really laid out in the spatial and temporal web that constitutes the four-dimensional block universe, there still remains the great mystery of why we see them unfold in the particular sequence that we do. Why not in reverse order? Why, indeed, do we see what we call *time* run from what we call the past to what we call the future and, indeed, what do we really mean by *past* and *future*? As you'll see in the next chapter, these are not easy questions, and nearly everybody who has thought about them believes we are not yet even close to knowing the answers.

On that perhaps gloomy note, it seems appropriate to end here with a few more words from St. Augustine's *Confessions*, with words that follow those that helped open this chapter: "I confess to you, Lord, that I still do not know what time is. Yet I confess too that I do know that I am saying this in time, that I have been talking about time for a long time, and that this long time would not be a long time if it were not for the fact that time has been passing all the while. How can I know this, when I do not know what time is? Is it that I do know what time is, but do not know how to put what I know into words? I am in a sorry state, for I do not even know what I do not know!"[151]

2.8   For Further Discussion

In the comics one of Superman's more interesting adversaries is Mr. Mxyzptlk (pronounced *mix-yez-pitle-ick*), a being with seemingly magical powers from the Land of Zrfff in the fifth dimension. Mr. Mxyzptlk's powers are not really because of magic, however, but are 'merely' the result of his hyperspace world with its extra dimension. Mr. Mxyzptlk, for example, in one of his misadventures with Superman in 1954, begins selling a

---

[150]Figure 2.2 is based on a similar one in C. K. Raju, "Time Travel and the Reality of Spontaneity," *Foundations of Physics*, July 2006, pp. 1099–1113.

[151]There is another view of time even darker than St. Augustine's, which denies the existence of both future and past, and doesn't offer us much either for that special moment we call the present (or *now*). This view, called *presentism*, was hauntingly expressed in some lyrics I heard in the final episode of the second season (2015) of the HBO series *True Detective*: "There is no future/There is no past/In the present nothing lasts." Now *that* is depressing! Still, there are philosophers who believe even this view can support time travel: see S. Keller and M. Nelson, "Presentists Should Believe in Time-Travel," *Australasian Journal of Philosophy*, September 2001, pp. 333–345.

newspaper called the *Daily Mpftrz* in competition with the *Daily Planet*. Unlike a traditional newspaper that reports what *has* happened, the *Daily Mpftrz* (your guess is as good as mine!) prints what *will* happen. As Mr. Mxyzptlk says, "You see, as a resident of the fifth dimension, I can get all the news I want from the *fourth* dimension!" The science editor at the *Daily Planet* explains the meaning of that to his boss, Perry White: "That's right, Mr. White . . . many physicists consider *time* the fourth dimension . . . so if Mr. Mxyzptlk can travel from the fifth dimension to our three-dimensional world, he most likely *is* able to see the future!" (This leaves unanswered the question of *why* he continues to challenge Superman when he knows he will always be defeated—*as he always is*!) Presumably a five dimensional world would have our three spatial and one temporal dimension (for a total of four), and so the question now is: what is the nature of the additional (fifth) dimension? Is it spatial or is it temporal? (There is a brief appearance of the fifth dimension in the 2014 movie *Interstellar*, but we aren't told much of anything about its possible structure.) Discuss and compare the world of four space dimensions and one time dimension, with the world of three space and *two* time dimensions. (In Chap. 5 we'll discuss a possible connection between two-dimensional time and time travel.)

In the text it is stated that "If A and B are mutually causative, then 'A causes B' coupled with 'B causes A' seems to lead to 'A causes A.'" Suppose, however, that we imagine two adjacent sunken pools of water, **a** and **b**, on the same horizontal surface, with each pool filled to the brim. An overflow from one pool will flow into the other pool. Now, define the events A and B as 'A is the overflow of pool **a**' and 'B is the overflow of pool **b**.' Thus, A causes B and B causes A. Does the conclusion 'A causes A' make physical sense in this specific case? Discuss at length.

When reading A. C. Clarke's story "Technical Error" (see note 99), we learn that a rotation through 4-space *inverts* "the unlucky Nelson." The 'solution' to this awkward situation is to flip Nelson through 4-space a second time and so back to 'normal.' (When *Thrilling Wonder Stories* reprinted this tale in June 1950, after its original publication in 1946, the title was changed to the more appropriate "The Reversed Man.") Clarke may have missed an

important technical 'detail,' however, in that when first flipped through 4-space *everything* inverts, and so matter becomes anti-matter and Nelson would have instantly been annihilated in a 100 % conversion of matter to energy (that is, the flipped Nelson would have initiated a very large explosion). Compare this to Alice's concern in her flipped world (Lewis Carroll's *Through the Looking Glass*) when she wonders "Perhaps Looking-glass milk isn't good to drink." Explain why Lewis Carroll certainly was *not* thinking of matter/anti-matter explosions when he wrote his novel. What *do* you think he might have had in mind?

A time travel story, even earlier than Clarke's, that uses spacetime 'rotations,' was authored by Edmond Hamilton (1904–1977), one of the pioneering pulp fiction writers. In his "The Man Who Saw the Future" (*Amazing Stories*, October 1930), a man is hauled before the Inquisitor Extraordinary of the King of France to explain his mysterious disappearance, and subsequent reappearance, in an open field, amid thunderclaps and in plain sight of many onlookers. As the story unfolds, we learn that the man was transported five centuries into the future, from A.D. 1444 to 1944, by scientists working in twentieth-century Paris. The thunderclaps were produced by spacetime 'rotations,' as the atmospheres of 1944 and 1444 were reversed. A skeptical Inquisition naturally finds this tale preposterous and the first time traveler is burned at the stake as a sorcerer. Can you think of *why* such 'atmospheric swaps' might produce thunderclaps?

A trip around a Möbius strip reverses the 'handedness' of a plane figure (left and right are swapped). You can see this for yourself by making a Möbius strip, and then sliding an arrow (pointing *across the width* of the strip) around the strip. (Cut a notch in the side of the strip to mark the starting point, with the arrow pointing at the notch.) When you get back to the notch, the arrow will point *away* from the notch. Notice that the arrow never left the surface of the strip, or crossed any 'weird' boundary. Then, read H. G. Wells' short story "The Plattner Story" and comment on its use of 'handedness.'

The *autoinfanticide paradox*, which results when a time traveler tries to kill his younger self, continues to fascinate both physicists and philosophers, and papers regularly appear in the scholarly literature on the topic: see, for example, Kadri Vihvelin, "What Time Travelers Cannot Do," March 1996, pp. 315–330 (which introduces Suzy the time traveler); Ira Kiourti, "Killing Baby Suzy," June 2008, pp. 343–352; Peter B. M. Vranas, "What Time Travelers May Be Able to Do," August 2010, pp. 115–121; and Joshua Spencer, "What Time Travelers Cannot *Not* Do (but are responsible for anyway)," October 2013, pp. 149–162, all in *Philosophical Studies*. All deal with an issue that is psychologically fascinating: *moral responsibility*. Spencer, in particular, opens with this definition: Someone is morally responsible for an action *only* if she could have done otherwise. As he goes on to write, "If I have been attacked and both of my legs have been broken, then it seems illegitimate to criticize me for failing to run away; I could not have done otherwise." And yet all of these papers are on a point that (I think) physicists would soon lose interest in: is the question 'If Suzy is a time traveler, can Suzy kill baby Suzy, given that Suzy doesn't kill baby Suzy?' the same question as 'If Suzy is a time traveler, can Suzy kill baby Suzy, given that Suzy is now alive?' The answer to the first question is, from pure logic, NO, while the answer to the second question is just bit squishier: it all depends on what the word *can* means. For the second question, Suzy *can* kill baby Suzy if she has a weapon (knife, gun, poison, etc.) and she is in the past next to baby Suzy, but it is just that she doesn't because otherwise Suzy wouldn't be alive now (which is a given). Such debates seem unlikely to produce any insights into the physics of time travel. Compare this situation to the old schoolboy conundrum "What happens when an irresistible force meets an unmovable object?', which is a *self-inflicted* 'paradox.' That is, the words *irresistible* and *unmovable* are mutually exclusive and so, used this way, it should be no surprise that we have a conflict. Are the two time travel questions above, concerning Suzy, confusing through a similar mushy use of grammar? Or are they deeper than that? Vigorously defend your position.

In addition to H. G. Wells, another nineteenth-century writer who was highly influential in bringing the fourth-dimension out of academia and into public consciousness was the mathematician Charles Howard Hinton (1853–1907). Hinton was no angle-trisecting crank, having earned an M.A. at Oxford, an appointment in the mathematics department at Princeton, and then another at the University of Minnesota. Later, with the help of the eminent astronomer

Simon Newcomb, he obtained a position at the Naval Observatory in Washington, D.C., and was on the staff of the United States Patent Office at the time of his sudden death. Hinton was a man to be taken seriously. His first published essay "What Is the Fourth Dimension?" appeared in 1880, and then in book form in 1884 as part of his *Scientific Romances* (a phrase used by Hinton before it became associated with Wells' science fiction many years later). That book received a generally favorable review in *Nature* (March 12, 1885, p. 431). At one point he wrote "We might then suppose that the matter we know extending in three dimensions has also a small thickness in the fourth dimension," an idea that was used a few years later by the well-known British mathematician W. W. Rouse Ball (1850–1925) in an attempt to explain gravity. Hinton was extremely inventive, and he also proposed four-dimensional-space models for static electricity. Find out more about Hinton's life and work: a good source to start with is *Speculations on the Fourth Dimension: Selected Writings of Charles H. Hinton* (R. Rucker, editor), Dover 1980. Take a look, too, at J. E. Beichler, "Ether/Or: Hyperspace Models of the Ether in America," in *The Michelson Era in American Science 1870—1930* (S. Goldberg and R. H. Stuewer, editors), American Institute of Physics 1988.

Chapter 3
The Physics of Time Travel: Part I

> *"... within forty-eight hours we had invented, designed, and assembled a chronomobile. I won't weary you with the details, save to remark that it operated by transposing the seventh and eleventh dimensions in a hole in space, thus creating an inverse ether-vortex and standing the space-time continuum on its head."*
>
> —almost certainly *not* the way to build a time machine[1]

3.1 The Direction of Time

> "Of all the problems which lie on the borderline of philosophy and science, perhaps none has caused more spilled ink, more controversy, and more emotion than the problem of the direction of time ... [T]he main problem with 'the problem of the direction of time' is to figure out exactly what the problem is or is supposed to be!"[2]

Before we start talking about the physics of time travel, let me say a few more words on time itself, in a way slightly less metaphysical that was the discussion in the previous chapter (which is why I'm writing this *here*, in a chapter with an increased emphasis on the analytical). When we speak of journeying to either the future or the past, we are implicitly making a distinction in the direction of the time traveler's trip. But does time actually have a *direction*? Is there an *arrow* that points the way? The answer seems obvious: *of course* time has a direction. After all, everybody 'knows' it flows from past to future. There is a curious language problem here, however, because we also like to say the present recedes into the past, which implies a 'flow' in the opposite direction, from future to past. Well, despite this snarled syntax, can we at least distinguish past from future, whichever way time flows?

---

[1]L. Sprague de Camp, "Some Curious Effects of Time Travel," in *Analog Readers' Choice*, Dial 1981.

[2]See note 54 in Chapter 2.

This would seem to be an important question to answer because for the phrases *flow of time* and *direction of time* to have any objective meaning at all, it must be somehow possible to identify a difference between past events and future ones. The special moment at which that distinction occurs is known as the *now* or the *present* and, as events make the transition associated with that distinctive difference, between past and future, we say that the *now* (the present) moves or flows. Philosophers—and science fiction writers and physicists, too, who after all are human beings with human senses like everybody else—call this common feeling that we all have, of the passage of time, the *psychological arrow of time*. One philosopher gave an amusing (tongue-in-cheek) gastronomical interpretation of the moving *now* as follows:

> "New slices of salami are continually being cut from a nonexistent chunk of salami called the future. The *present* is the slice on top of the pile. The past are the pieces beneath this, and even though they are not present they still continue to exist in the same way that the top slice of salami does. . . . This [concept] faces humiliation before the embarrassing question of how fast the pile of salami slices grows."[3]

The 'moving now' does present a problem for physicists because there is nothing in the laws of physics that marks the present moment as unique, and therefore nothing that reflects a 'flow' of time, nothing that models the reality of a 'moving now' becoming part of the past and the events of the future becoming, successively, the new 'now.' As a philosopher wrote long before time travel became a serious topic in the physics literature, "Talk of the flow of time or the advance of consciousness is a dangerous metaphor that must not be taken literally."[4]

What that philosopher may well have had in mind is that all events in the block universe simply have coordinates in spacetime, and there is nothing corresponding to 'have been' (past), 'are' (present), or 'will be' (future). There is no 'moving now' in the block universe except for its subjective presence in our conscious minds. All we can say from physics is that events are ordered in an earlier/later sequence, and in fact, even that relatively weak condition holds only for *causally* related events.[5] The relativistic, four-dimensional block universe view of spacetime that so many physicists (including Einstein) so dearly love seems to have no room for an objective theory of the *flow* of time. And yet, even for those same physicists, there is a powerful psychological sense that time *does* flow. But are they mistaken? It is a fact that, with not just a little irony, Gödel (the 'discoverer' of time travel) was convinced that the possibility of a block universe spacetime with CTLs/CTCs

---

[3]R. Gale, "Some Metaphysical Statements About Time," *Journal of Philosophy*, April 25, 1963, pp. 225-237. For many, this analogy may well bring to mind a pile of baloney rather than one of salami (and I think this was Gale's intention).

[4]J. J. C. Smart, "The Temporal Asymmetry of the World," *Analysis*, March 1954, pp. 79-83.

[5]Two events A and B are *non*-causally related if their separation in spacetime is such that a particle would have to travel at a *superluminal* speed (faster than light) to go from A to B. We'll discuss the physics of causally related events later in this chapter.
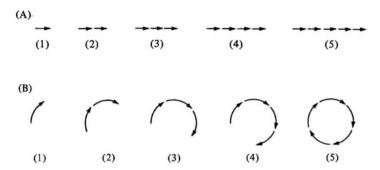
Fig. 3.1   Gödel's unreality of time argument

implies that the passage or flow of time *makes no sense*![6] To see how Gödel arrived at such an astonishing conclusion, consider Fig. 3.1.

In part A of the figure[7] we see what most people who talk of a passage of time intuitively mean, as time progresses through a sequence of instants (shown as line of left-to-right arrows going from (1) to (2) to (3) and so on). At each stage the right-most arrow is the present, and the arrows to the left of it (behind it) are the past, and the arrows to the right of the present are not shown because they are in the future and so don't exist yet. When you ask, at each step, which arrow is the *now*, the answer is clear.

Matters are dramatically different in part B of the figure, which shows the arrows forming a closed (circular) loop. Now there is no distinction between past and future, as each arrow is both ahead *and* behind any other arrow. In addition, there is no arrow that is uniquely the now. So, concluded Gödel, the passage of time can have no meaning in a temporal loop. As should come as no surprise, not everybody is convinced by this sort of argument.[8]

In principle, so it would seem, we can achieve perfect knowledge of what has happened but only imperfect prediction of what might happen. This observation seems to be at least a start at being able to tell past from future. And, in fact, the nature of the distinction between the two intervals of time seems obvious: we *remember* past events, but not future ones. As philosophers have so nicely put it, events in the past have formed *traces*, such as skulls, footprints in the sand, fossilized skeletons, surgical scars, photographs, taped recordings, carved stones,

---

[6]Gödel clearly states this in his 1949 philosophical essay (note 15 in the Introduction) concerning his 1949 technical paper (note 11 in the Introduction).

[7]This figure is based on the interpretation of Gödel's reasoning as presented by the philosopher Palle Yourgrau's 1991 book *The Disappearance of Time: Kurt Gödel and the idealistic tradition in philosophy* (Cambridge), which was expanded and reprinted a few years later under the new title *Gödel Meets Einstein: time travel in the Gödel universe*, Open Court 1999. Yourgrau later wrote a less technical version: *A World Without Time: the forgotten legacy of Gödel and Einstein*, Basic Books 2005.

[8]See, for example, S. Savitt, "Time Travel and Becoming," *The Monist*, July 2005, pp. 413-422.

and the like, whereas future events appear not to have formed traces. But is that necessarily so? Is it impossible for future events to create traces? The common-sense answer is *yes*, because of cause and effect, which dictates that there *must* be a temporal asymmetry in trace formation. That is, traces are the effects of *prior* causes. That line of reasoning leads us quickly to the fundamental issue of causation (which we've already encountered in Chap. 2), an issue that no discussion of time travel can avoid.

Part of the problem we have with backward time travel, and cause and effect, is as I've already mentioned, with language. The distinct and separate concepts of the temporal ordering of events, and of causality, have become merged in everyday thought. It is considered *obvious* to modern minds that if event A causes event B, then A *must* happen first. There is, however, at least one historical example of a similar merging of concepts that is parallel to our modern mixing of time order and causality—an example that shows how an issue can seem obvious and natural to the minds of one period of time, and yet to the minds of another period (our modern times) seem confused, odd, peculiar, even laughable.

As a *physicist* wrote in a paper[9] on advanced (that is, inverted causality) effects:

> Ancient Egypt was an essentially one-dimensional country strung out along the Nile, which flows from south to north. The winds were conveniently arranged to be predominantly northerly. To go north, a traveler could let his boat drift, while with a sail he could move south against the slow current. For this reason, in the writing of the ancient Egyptians, "go downstream (north)" was represented by a boat without sails, and "go upstream (south)" by a boat with sails. The words (and concepts) or north-south and up-downstream became merged. Since the Nile and its tributaries were the only rivers known to the ancient Egyptians, this caused no difficulties until they reached the Euphrates, which happened to flow from north to south. The resulting confusion in the ancient Egyptian mind is recorded for us to read today in their reference to "that inverted water which goes downstream (north) in going upstream (south)."

Often we can work our way free of the difficulties we create for ourselves with language, but only through common agreement. For example, the chairman of the board calls a meeting to order with mixed tenses by declaring "The meeting *will* take place *now*" and then saying at the end, "We will meet again *next* month, *same* time." We all know what these sentences mean, but only by our cultural heritage and not by the process of applying logic. The language problem causes similar difficulties for not only for fictional time travelers, but also for the physicists/philosophers who study the possibility of time machines. So—beware!

The idea of time flowing is a popular one, and it repeatedly appears in the time travel literature as the "river of time" or the "ocean of time." The deep psychological appeal of this sort of 'water language' has, not surprisingly, attracted the attention of philosophers. We can find one of the earliest expressions of the view in the *Meditations* of the second-century A.D. Roman emperor and Stoic philosopher Marcus Aurelius, who wrote: "Time is like a river made up of events which

---

[9]P. L. Csonka, "Advanced Effects in Particle Physics," *Physical Review*, April 1969, pp. 1266-1281.

happen, and a violent stream; for as soon as a thing has been, it is carried away, and another comes in its place, and this will be carried away, too." A most interesting essay on why such metaphors often seem so intuitively appropriate has been offered by one philosopher, who points out[10] that the seductiveness of the image of 'time as flowing water' is sufficiently great that you often find it in the scientific literature, too (Newton, you'll recall, wrote specifically in his *Principia* of time flowing). As for why such an image has such a powerful grip on our imaginations, I think we need look no further than to Kant. As he wrote (1781) in *Critique of Pure Reason*, "Time is nothing but the form of inner sense, that is, of the intuition of ourselves and of our inner state ... Because this inner intuition yields no shape, we endeavor to make up for this want by analogies." And what better than a rushing stream of water to represent our feeling of time rushing by?

Still, no matter how intuitive such water metaphors may be, they can still easily befuddle us as well. To quote our philosopher (note 10), "Time a river! A queer sort of river that. Of what sort of liquid does it consist? Is time a liquid? A very peculiar liquid indeed!" A classic paper by the philosopher Donald Williams (discussed in Chap. 2, note 119) expresses similar doubt about the water image of time. In the course of his writing, he presents a truly staggering collection of entertaining examples of 'time as metaphor,' of which I repeat just a few here: time flies, goes, marches, and rolls, as well as flows And then he offers *this* provocative imagery: the evolution of our lives is like "a moving picture film, unwinding from the dark reel of the future, projected briefly on the screen of the present, and rewound into the dark can of the past." Wow![11]

Returning to the water metaphor, the French astronomer Charles Nordmann (1881–1940) opened and closed his 1925 book *The Tyranny of Time* with following gloomy but all too true summary of the overwhelming sense we all have of the inexorable, one-way 'flow' of time. (The ellipses in what follows denote over 200 pages!) "Nothing can equal the bitter sweetness of dreaming on the banks of Time, that impalpable and fatal river strewn with dead leaves, our wistful hours carried downstream like rudderless wrecks ... In the eternal wave which rocks us, carries us along, and soon swallows us up, there is no rock to which we can fasten our frail barques; the very buoys we put out to measure our course are only floating mirages; and on the mysterious foundation of things our anchors slide along and fail to bite." A young person sees time, from Nordmann's perspective, as an ocean on which golden mornings arrive like waves from the future, whereas for an older person, liquid time is a nightmare flood, a swollen black torrent sweeping him first into the yawning abyss of the past and, ultimately and finally, into the eternal silence of the dark grave.

---

[10]J. J. C. Smart, "The River of Time," *Mind*, October 1949, pp. 483-494.

[11]And how about *this* image of time: Time is a snowball, with the center marking the beginning of the past, with ever new 'presents' accreting on the ever increasing surface as the snowball rolls down the hill of history!

The metaphor of time as a flowing river was ready-made for early science fiction writers, such as Caltech math professor Eric Temple Bell (1883–1960). His eventual novel *The Time Stream* began to appear in December 1931 as a serial in the science fiction pulp *Wonder Stories*, and Bell (writing as 'John Taine') made great use of the idea of time as a flowing stream, a stream in which one could swim into either the future or the past. There is strong evidence that Bell actually wrote the novel in July of 1921, but was unable to find a publisher for a decade, so odd did editors find the premise. By the time of its publication, others had beaten Bell into print.

The watery image of time had appeared a year earlier, for example, in a tale that played with the erosive nature of time in a dramatic way. As two time travelers speed into the future to rescue a friend, one of them describes the scene for us: "We huddled together in the whirling time girdling machine, cutting through the years as a ship's prow breasts surging waves. I could not help but think of the years as waves, beating in endless succession on the sands of eternity. They wore all away before them with pitiless attrition. Time seemed to eat all with dragon jaws."[12]

This image of time was taken a step further 3 years later in a story in which a large number of adventurers, from all across time, find themselves stranded at precisely the same place (in space and time). One of them offers his theory of what is behind this remarkable coincidence: They all have faulty time machines, like faulty boats, and all have hit the same snag on the 'river of time.' As he explains, "You may turn boats adrift on a river at many points, and they will all collect together at the same serious obstacle whether they have traveled a hundred or two miles. We are now at some period where the straight flow of time has been checked — perhaps it is even turning back on itself … [We] have struck some barrier and been thrown up like so much jetsam."[13]

The 'flow' of time does have its critics, of course. The British-American philosopher Max Black (1909–1988) argued[14] that questions about the direction of time are meaningless because there can be no direction to something that (he asserted) does not flow. His reasoning was that if time does flow, then he ought to be entitled to ask *how fast* it flows. That requires, in turn, a *metatime* or *supertime* for measuring the flow rate of 'ordinary' time. But because supertime must flow, too, we would then need a super-supertime, and so off we trip into what would appear to be the black hole of a McTaggert-like infinite regress. The view, of an infinite regress of times, was forcefully rejected by another philosopher with

---

[12]E. A. Manley and W. Thode, "The Time Annihilator," *Wonder Stories*, November 1930. This is the same magazine that, months later, finally published Bell.

[13]J. Wyndham, "Wanderers of Time," *Wonder Stories*, March 1933. Notice again, that we have the same magazine (whose editor must have had a particular fancy for such tales).

[14]M. Black, "The 'Direction' of Time," *Analysis*, January 1959, pp. 54-63.

these sharp words: "the very idea of super (or hyper)-time is indeed repulsive in its redundancy and its aroma of dilettante physics."[15]

A hierarchy of hypertimes has not bothered other analysts, however, and an entire subfield of specialty among philosophers (and some physicists, too) in time analysis has developed in what is called *multidimensional time*. One practitioner in this specialty sarcastically rejected the infinite regress complaint as a valid objection—he called it "a crushing and unanswerable position" but actually meant just the opposite—and stated that it was not at all clear (at least, not to him) why supertime must flow.[16] After all, he argued, we measure the flow of a river with respect to its banks without requiring that the banks themselves flow. (That actually strikes me as being a point that deserves debating, but I have not been able to find any mention of it in the later philosophical literature.) The idea of multiple time dimensions is particularly attractive for one sort of time travel (we'll take it up at the end of this chapter), but it enjoys far more popularity among science fiction writers and philosophers than it does with physicists.

Professor Black's objection (note 14) to talk of time 'flowing' was based, at least in part, on the observation that there are uses of the word *direction* that are not directly tied to something flowing. For example, consider the statement 'He is facing in the direction of north.' Black argued that this is mere pointing, and it is not at all the same as *moving* north. He then dismissed the possibility of there being any meaning to the direction of time, writing that making an analogy of time "with a sign-post or an index finger is too far-fetched to be worth considering." This claim (which some may feel leans too much on grammar) is, of course, an affirmation of the myth-of-passage view made famous a few years earlier by Donald Williams (note 119 in Chap. 2).

Not just philosophers have rejected the idea of time flowing. In his 1966 novel *October the First Is Too Late*, which deals with a world in which different parts of Earth simultaneously experience different eras of the past (see *For Further Discussion* at the end of this chapter for more on what this might mean), the British cosmologist Fred Hoyle (1915–2001) calls the 'river of time' a "grotesque and absurd illusion," and a "bogus idea." Another fictional work that agrees with Hoyle's non-moving image of time is the 1979 *Roadmarks* by Roger Zelazny (1937–1995). In that novel we read of "the Road," along which story characters can travel but which doesn't itself move; exits from the Road lead to the various centuries (which sounds a lot like the Francis Bradley's 1883 book that may have given the block universe its name). *Roadmarks* is a clever bit of writing, with many allusions to the paradoxes of time travel, but its explanation of the Road's origin as having been constructed by *dragons* (!) greatly undermines its interest for physicists.

---

[15]D. Zeilicovici, "Temporal Becoming Minus the Moving-Now," *Nous*, September 1989, pp. 505-524.
[16]C. W. Webb, "Could Time Flow? If So, How Fast?" *Journal of Philosophy*, May 1960, pp. 357-365.

In a block universe spacetime, there is no flow of time, but one philosopher believed that to be simply because the block universe is *incomplete* in its representation of reality. Writing in 1925, Hans Reichenbach (1891–1953) asked "What does 'now' mean? Plato lived before me, and Napoleon IV will live after me. But which one of these three lives *now*? I understandably have a clear feeling that *I* live now. But does this assertion have an objective significance beyond my subjective experience?"[17] Reichenbach went on to answer his question in the affirmative, and to deduce that the block universe view is missing something: "In the condition of the world, a cross-section called the present is distinguished; the 'now' has objective significance. *Even when no human is alive any longer, there is a 'now'* [my emphasis] ... In the four-dimensional picture of the world, such as used by the theory of relativity, there is no such distinguished cross-section But this is due only to the fact that an essential content is omitted from this picture."

So, what *is* Reichenbach's 'missing essential content'? Feeling that the block universe is unacceptably fatalistic—in his words of ridicule, "the morrow has already occurred today in the same sense as yesterday"—he found his answer in the probabilistic theory of quantum mechanics. Classical physics argues that given total information about the state of the world *now*, one could in principle calculate perfectly the future or the past; one could both predict and retrodict. In contrast, quantum mechanics distinguishes past from future in a fundamental way.

Quantum mechanics does not deny that in principle we can know the past with exquisite accuracy, because each and every event leaves traces, evidence that is available to all with the means to find and decode them. But quantum mechanics also takes as truth that there is an unavoidable uncertainty to the future. The instant that this uncertainty is crystallized into fact was taken by Reichenbach to be the very definition of 'now.' The ever-increasing record of the past, in turn, defines (for Reichenbach) the *movement* of the 'now.' Reichenbach believed that with these observations he had at last captured the 'moving now' in mathematical theory, and that he had finally elevated the present from speculative psychology to solid physics, and that he had shown that the 'flow of time' is independent of the need for a conscious mind. However—

A later, powerful analysis[18] of the time-flow issue, combining philosophy with physics, comes down solidly in support of the *opposite* conclusion: it expresses the view that a 'moving now' *is* only in our minds and is *not* an intrinsic attribute of reality. The premise of that argument is that a mind-dependent flow of time is incompatible with what is called the *relativity of simultaneity* (to be discussed later in this chapter) which states that there is no universal cosmic-wide 'now' (this is a fundamental conclusion of special relativity). For example, it is meaningless to ask

---

[17]I've taken this quotation from A. Grünbaum, "Is There a 'Flow' of Time or Temporal Becoming?" in *Philosophical Problems of Space and Time*, Knopf 1963.

[18]L. R. Baker, "Temporal Becoming: The Argument from Physics," *Philosophical Forum*, Spring 1975, pp. 218-236.

what is happening on a planet in the Andromeda galaxy (two million light-years distant) *right now*.

Early science fiction stories are full of theories about the nature of 'now,' and the vast majority of them have no basis in scientific thought. Some of them are ingenious, however, and even though they are largely the pet ideas of the authors (and no one else's), perhaps they resulted in some young readers of the science fiction pulps of the 1930s and 1940s thinking about deeper matters than did the comic strips of "Buck Rogers," "The Lone Ranger," or "Terry and the Pirates." For example, according to one story, time is a wave and the 'moving now' we experience is carried on a crest of that wave. There are time waves both ahead and behind the crest we happen to be on (so we are told), and so each such crest carries a different 'now' for a different reality—hence the curious title.[19]

In another, more recent tale[20] about object duplication via time travel (which we'll discuss in Chap. 4, but you'll recall H. G. Wells was worried about this long ago), nine (!) copies of the same person from the year 2314 meet in 1870 to try and figure out what is going on. Part of their interesting discussion is the following analysis of the 'present':

> "Gentlemen, I think I understand," said the first James Thomas."
>
> "Eight faces turned toward him, and he felt as though he were looking into multiple mirrors."
>
> "We hold that time is a single instant — the instant of the Present —which travels through Duration — do we not?"
>
> "Eight heads nodded."
>
> "We assume that time passes in a manner analogous to the stringing of an infinite number of beads. Each bead is the instant of Now when it is last on the chain. Beads are continually being added, and each one is the only Now until another is placed after it."
>
> "Yes, that is my theory," said another James Thomas. "It can also be likened to the process of knitting. No matter how many stitches are knitted, there is only one last stitch, only one Now."

Einstein, too, was greatly bothered by the place of 'now' in time, perhaps even more than were James Thomas and his 'friends.' In an autobiographical essay, the philosopher Rudolf Carnap (1891–1970) recalled a conversation about this with Einstein in the early 1950s, at the Institute for Advanced Study in Princeton: "Once Einstein said that the problem of the Now worried him seriously. He explained that the experience of the Now means something special for man, something essentially different from the past and the future. That this experience cannot be grasped by

---

[19]R. Ray, "Today's Yesterday," *Wonder Stories*, January 1934.

[20]A. and P. Eisentein, "The Trouble With the Past," in *New Dimensions 1* (R. Silverberg, editor), Doubleday 1971.

science seemed to him a matter of painful but inevitable resignation. ... Einstein thought ... that there is something essential about the Now which is just outside the realm of science."[21]

3.2   The Arrows of Time

> "On a microscopic level there is no preferred direction for time. The equations of motion don't give a damn whether time moves forward or backward."[22]

The central issue for philosophers of time (and for physicists, too, I think) is that of its reality (or not): is time *objective and something that really flows*, or is time simply a *mind-dependent illusion* and nothing more than an artifact of our incomplete perception of reality? As the previous section shows, there is little consensus on this issue. As a start on trying to get a handle on the matter, looking into a so-called 'arrow of time' may give us some guidance. I'll begin with the arrow I've already mentioned, the psychological arrow. As discussed before, this is the feeling we have of a 'moving now,' a feeling that has no appearance anywhere in physics. A 'moving now' simply has no place in any universe devoid of the physical processes in a brain that give rise to what we call consciousness—but that doesn't mean physicists don't wonder about the 'moving now' just as much as does everybody else (remember Einstein)! As one physicist wrote in a technical journal, "What does 'Now' mean? This question must surely be the starting point of any attempt at understanding the nature of time."[23]

Well, no matter whether time actually flows or not, most of us still believe we have had a past and hope we will have a future. Each of us thinks we can easily tell one from the other, too. We have, in fact, many not so subtle indications from our everyday lives of the obvious direction of time. Nearly all of these indications have the common theme of *irreversible change*. As the British mathematician J. J. Sylvester once put it, "The whirligig of time brings about its revenges."[24] The Roman poet Ovid, who died when Christ was a teenager, said the same in his *Metamorphoses* with the famous words "Time, the devourer of all things." The

---

[21]Quoted from *The Philosophy of Rudolp Carnap* (P. A. Schlipp, editor), The Library of Living Philosophers, Open Court 1963, pp. 37-38. For a view contrary to Einstein's, from another physicist, see K. B. M. Nor, "A Topological Explanation for Three Properties of Time," *Il Nuovo Cimento B,* January 1992, pp. 65-70, which claims to develop a geometrical explanation for the flow of time, and so (says Nor) there *is* an objective, mathematical reality to the 'moving now.'

[22]A science fiction character pretty accurately sums-up what a modern physicist would tell you today, in L. Eisenberg's story "The Time of His Life," *The Magazine of Fantasy & Science Fiction*, April 1968.

[23]J. P. Cullerne, "Free Will and the Resolution of Time Travel Paradoxes," *Contemporary Physics*, July-August 2001, pp. 243-245.

[24]J. J. Sylvester, "A Plea for the Mathematician," *Nature*, December 30, 1869, pp. 237-239.

image of time as devourer of all that is mortal was brilliantly presented by James Barrie in his *Peter Pan*, with the crocodile who had swallowed a ticking clock chasing Captain Hook all about Neverland.

No one yet has escaped the biological decay processes of time, and inanimate objects are no less immune to this aspect of time. Logs and cigarettes burn in the stove and ashtray, but they never unburn. Our cars rust but never 'unrust.' An explosion has never been seen to reverse itself, to form a dynamite stick or a bomb casing out of a collapsing fireball. Our world seems, indeed, literally to be built on an irreversible movement toward chaos, death, and decay. Lewis Carroll uses this observation in his *Through the Looking-Glass* when Alice tells Humpty Dumpty "one can't help growing older." And speaking of Humpty Dumpty, his famous fall provides a dramatic example of a one-way evolution from past to future; he wasn't at all convinced that Alice was correct but, once he had splattered, then

> All the King's horses and all the King's men
> Couldn't put Humpty Dumpty together again.

While we are on the subject of Mr. Dumpty, it is also worthwhile to note that nobody has ever figured out how to unscramble an egg. Why is that? One philosopher speculated that the answer is found in the "irreversible organic phenomena" taking place in our brains which results in our flow of consciousness always being in the same direction.[25]

More subtle than the undignified undoing of a prideful egg is the phenomenon of memory, which seems trivial only because most people have not thought very carefully about it. We remember the past while remembering nothing about the future. We might, in fact, be tempted to use the phenomenon of memory to answer the question of how to tell past from future. Anything you can remember *is* the past. But that is a circular definition, as discussed by Professor Smart (note 4) who observed that to ask why memory is always of the past "is as foolish as to ask why uncles are always male, never female." In *Through the Looking-Glass* the White Queen tells Alice that "it's a poor sort of memory that only works backward" but, except for the claims of clairvoyants, it seems that is the only sort of memory any of us has. Why is that so? Of course, that would *not* be the case for a time traveler while in the past. His personal past, which he would remember, would be the future for the world around him.

For physicists, the question of the direction of time is one of profound mystery. There seems, in fact, to be no fundamental reason why time should not be able to go from future to past—but then what would 'future' and 'past' *mean*—even though no one has ever observed time to do so. All the laws of classical physics, including general relativity, and quantum mechanics, too (except for the K-mesons mentioned in Chap. 1) involve time in such a way that they ignore its sign. In other words, replacing t with $-t$ results in a perfectly valid description of something that could actually happen. But not all such possibilities are observed to occur. Why not?

---

[25]H. Margenau, "Can Time Flow Backwards?" *Philosophy of Science*, April 1954, pp. 79-92.

In an unpublished paper written in 1949, while doing the work that would bring him a share of the 1965 Nobel prize in physics, Richard Feynman (1918–1988) wrote[26] "The relation of time in physics to that of gross experience has suffered many changes in the history of physics. The obvious difference of past and future does not appear in physical time for microscopic events . . . Einstein discovered that the present is not the same for all people [the relativity of simultaneity, to be discussed later in this chapter] . . . It may prove useful in physics to consider events in all of time at once and to imagine that we at each instant are only aware of those that lie behind us. The complete relation of this concept of physical time to the time of experience and causality is a physical problem which has not been worked out in detail. It may be that more problems and difficulties are produced than are solved by such a point of view."

Feynman did not elaborate on what he meant by the "problems and difficulties" with that point of view (which is clearly that of the block universe), but surely he had the logical paradoxes of time travel high on his list. As the Yale philosopher Henry Margenau wrote (note 25) in a tutorial on Feynman's work, "The theory of quantum electrodynamics developed by Feynman incorporates reversals in the course of time and thereby cherishes, in the minds of many, *an age-old phantasy* [my emphasis] of more than scientific appeal [which sounds like time travel to me]."

Because the individual classical equations of microscopic physics are time-reversible, the distinction between past and future for individual particles disappears. The equations are said to be symmetric with respect to time; the algebraic sign of *t* is irrelevant in the classical laws. It must be understood, however, that there *is* a crucial point to appreciate. When a physicist says *time reversal*, she is talking about a system evolving backward in forward time—that is, all the individual particle velocity vectors are instantly reversed at once. This is distinct from the time-reversed worlds of philosophers and science fiction writers (which we'll get into later in this chapter) in which time itself 'runs backwards.' The physicist's point of view is clearly expressed in an early essay by a chemist: "Every equation and every explanation used in physics must be compatible with the symmetry of time. Thus we can no longer regard effect as subsequent to cause. If we think of the present as pushed into existence by the past, we must in precisely the same sense think of it pulled into existence by the future."[27] More than three decades later, a mathematician and a physicist presented a similar statement: "In classical dynamics, the past completely determines the present, and therefore, by symmetry, the future also completely determines the present."[28]

---

[26]S. S. Schweber, "Feynman and the Visualization of Space-Time Processes," *Reviews of Modern Physics*, April 1986, pp. 449-508.

[27]G. N. Lewis, "The Symmetry of Time in Physics," *Science*, June 6, 1930, pp. 569-577.

[28]O. Penrose and I. C. Percival, "The Direction of Time*," Proceedings of the Physical Society* (London), March 1962, pp. 605-616.

   Besides the physics, there is also an interesting theological connection to time reversal. As one philosopher put it, "If all the laws are time reversal invariant and so no irreversible processes occur in the physical Universe then there is no inherent, intrinsically meaningful difference between past and future . . . If this is actually the natural case, then all mankind's major religions which preach a creation of the Universe (by a supernatural agency) and imply, accordingly, a differentiation between the past and the future . . . would have to make appropriate adjustments."[29]

   There are, as you might expect on such a controversial topic, dissenters to the view that the classical laws of physics are necessarily time-reversible. Dirac himself wrote that "I do not believe there is any need for physical laws to be invariant under time and space reflections, although all the exact laws of nature so far known do have this invariance."[30] Dirac did not, unfortunately, elaborate on just why he felt that way, but with the later discovery of K-mesons his position is seen to have been 'ahead of its time'! In a famous science fiction story[31] dealing with the direction of time, one character finally puts his finger on the real puzzle of the question of time: "How can a man live backward? You might as well ask the Universe to run in reverse entropy." That cogent question brings us, in fact, to the first scientific explanation developed to explain the observed asymmetric nature of time.

   It was the Englishman A. S. Eddington (1882–1944) who gave the picturesque name, the *arrow of time*, to the observed asymmetric nature of time's direction from past to future. He was also one of the popularizers of an explanation for the arrow, using the famous second law of thermodynamics.[32] The second law of thermodynamics states that a measure of the internal randomness or disorder—what is called the *entropy*—of any closed system (that is, one free of external influences) continually evolves toward that of maximum disorder, toward the condition called *thermodynamic equilibrium*. Indeed, so striking is this increase in entropy S with time in a macroscopically large system that the increase in entropy has come to be thought of as actually *defining* the direction of time. Eddington, however, was not the originator of the entropy concept. The history of entropy can be traced back to before the turn of the century, to the great Austrian scientist Ludwig Boltzmann (1844–1906) and his famous H-theorem. The quantity H in that theorem is directly related to the more familiar entropy,[33] defined by Boltzmann in 1877.

---

[29]H. Mehlberg, "Philosophical Aspects of Physical Time," in *Basic Issues in the Philosophy of Time* (E. Freeman and W. Sellars, editors), Open Court 1971.

[30]P. A. M. Dirac, "Forms of Relativistic Dynamics," *Reviews of Modern Physics*, July 1949, pp. 392-399.

[31]A. Boucher, "The Chronokinesis of Jonathan Hull," *Astounding Science Fiction*, June 1946.

[32]A. S. Eddington, *The Nature of the Physical World*, Macmillan 1929.

[33]The H-theorem was a direct continuation of the work by the Scottish physicist James Clerk Maxwell (1831-1879) on the statistical properties of gas molecules (determining the probability density function of the molecules' speeds). In 1866 Maxwell found this function for the particular case of thermodynamic equilibrium. In 1872 Boltzmann found the differential-integral equation the function satisfies in general, even if the condition of thermodynamic equilibrium doesn't hold. From this Boltzmann was able to define a quantity H that he showed evolves in time such that

The entropy S of a system in a given state is proportional to W, which is the number of different possible ways the state can occur as a result of all possible variations of system's internal, microscopic structure. The calculation of W is usually quite complicated, but in various highly idealized systems it can be straightforward. Consider, for example, a vacuum cylinder with a thin membrane dividing the interior into halves. Suppose that we insert (to be specific) six molecules into the left half of the cylinder (and none into the right half). If we define the microscopic state of the system to be the number of molecules in the left half, then initially $W = 1$ because there is just one way to put all six molecules on the left side. This represents the state of *minimum* entropy, the state of maximum order that is most distant from thermodynamic equilibrium. If we now puncture the membrane then the molecules, once confined to the left side, are free to move about the entire cylinder. At any given instant we can imagine counting the number of molecules on the left side—suppose that at some particular instant we count five, with one molecule having moved to the right side. Then, $W = 6$, because there are six ways to pick the molecule that has moved from left to right, and so the entropy has increased.

We think of the thermodynamic equilibrium state as being the state with equal numbers of molecules in both halves of the cylinder, and that state has the *maximum* entropy. (Can you show that this state is associated with $W = 20$?) With such a small number of molecules, it is *not* clear that W (and so S) will *inexorably* increase with time; perhaps, after one of the six molecules has gone to the right, it then returns to the left side before any of its companions have joined it on the right. Such an event is called a *reversal*, and it will happen with some non-zero probability. But the more molecules there are in the cylinder (instead of six, make the number a million million million—still a small amount of gas in our everyday world, hardly enough to fill a sewing thimble), the more likely it becomes that the value of S *will* monotonically increase with time.

The steady increase in entropy is often observed in the everyday, large-scale world. A drop of ink in a glass of water spreads out in an expanding cloud, a cloud we *never* see collapse backward into an ink drop. A long rod of metal, initially hotter at one end than at the other, evolves toward a constant temperature along its entire length. We *never* see a uniformly warm rod spontaneously begin to cool at one end and grow hot at the other. A hot bath grows cold—nobody has *ever* seen a bath at room temperature suddenly, all by itself, begin to heat up and then boil in the middle of the tub while the edges freeze into ice chunks. In all of these cases, the end (future) state represents greater internal randomness or disorder than does the beginning (past) state.

---

solution to his differential-integral equation approaches Maxwell's equilibrium solution. The *H*-theorem says that H always *decreases* in systems not in equilibrium and is at a *minimum* in systems in equilibrium.
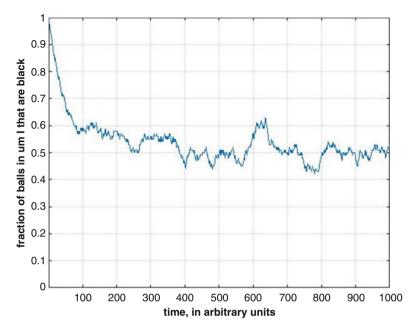
Fig. 3.2   Simulation of the Ehrenfest entropic gas clock

That is, low entropy *was* the past, and high entropy *will be* the future. The increase in entropy seems to define a direction to time, and so entropy has come to be called the *thermodynamic arrow of time*.

The first formal entropy model for the direction of time was put forth in a 1907 paper by the Austrian physicist Paul Ehrenfest (1880–1933) who was a friend of Einstein, and his Russian-born wife Tatyana (1880–1964), who was a skilled mathematician and her husband's occasional collaborator. In their paper the Ehrenfests developed one of the mainstays of physics, the so-called *entropic clock*. This clock, a statistical model based on the then new probability mathematics of Markov chains—after the Russian mathematician A. A. Markov (1856–1922)—describes how gases diffuse, and it is both a simple and a powerful concept. The Ehrenfest model is illustrated in Fig. 3.2, in a computer-generated plot based on a discussion by Princeton physicist John Wheeler of black hole fame (see Chap. 1).[34]

Imagine two urns, I and II, each containing *n* balls. Initially, at time $t = 0$, all of the balls in Urn I are black and all of the balls in Urn II are white. Then, at time $t = 1$ (in arbitrary units), a ball is selected at random from each urn and (instantaneously) placed in the other urn. This select-and-transfer process is repeated at times $t = 2$,

---

[34]J. A. Wheeler, "Frontiers of Time," in *Problems in the Foundations of Physics* (G. T. diFrancia, editor), *Proceedings of the International School of Physics* (Course 72), North-Holland 1979. See also W. J. Cocke, "Statistical Time Symmetry and Two-Time Boundary Conditions in Physics and Cosmology," *Physical Review*, August 25, 1967, pp. 1165-1170.

3, 4, ... At any given time each urn always contains n balls, but only at $t = 0$ are the colors of all the balls in a given urn necessarily the same. The phrase "selected at random" means (for example) that the probability of selecting a black ball from an urn containing b black balls is b/n. At any given time we completely describe the state of both urns by specifying the number of black balls in Urn I (or the number of white balls in Urn II, and so on). It is easy to write a computer simulation of this physical process,[35] and Fig. 3.2 shows how the fraction of black balls in Urn I evolves toward 0.5 as time increases. The plot is for $n = 100$ (200 balls total). The important observations are that (1) the evolution of the state of the system is toward 50 % black balls in Urn I (and this would be the case for 'almost all' sequences of random selections of the balls from the urns), and (2) the evolution is not mono-tonically decreasing from 100 % black balls to 50 % black balls, but rather has never-ending fluctuations about 50 % that may, in fact, be rather large in both amplitude and in duration.

There is a real puzzle with the entropic clock that may not be immediately apparent. The motion of each of the individual molecules is described by time-reversible physics, but when we average over 'many' molecules (assuming 200 mol-ecules is 'many') we lose detailed information about the individual molecules. The puzzle is then how is it that by *reducing* our knowledge of a system, through statistical averaging, we then find it displaying a *new property*, that of asymmetric time evolution, that we didn't see before when we watched the individual mole-cules. And if that question isn't troublesome enough, we also have two additional puzzles called the 'reversibility' and the 'recurrence' paradoxes to consider as well.

The reversibility paradox is the question raised earlier: the classical equations of physics work just as well with time running in either direction, and so *why don't* things actually go 'backward'? This question, originally raised by the British mathematical physicist and engineer William Thomson (1824–1907)—better known as Lord Kelvin—in 1874, was brought to Boltzmann's attention in 1876 by the German physical chemist Johann Loschmidt (1821–1895), one of Boltzmann's professors at the University of Vienna. Boltzmann's answer to this apparent paradox was that it *is* imaginable that a world could run backward if initial conditions were suitable. For example, if all the velocity vectors of every particle in an equilibrium state were reversed, then the system *would* unwind backward in time toward its original non-equilibrium condition. That is, a system in thermodynamic equilibrium, the state of highest entropy, could evolve toward one of low entropy. Boltzmann even suggested that such might be the case for regions in our own universe, that there might actually be beings in a world somewhere 'out there' who

---

[35]I used MATLAB, and you can find the code — gasclock.m — in Appendix C, written in such a low-level way as to be virtually 100% transferable to just about any of the popular scientific programming languages, and easily executed on an inexpensive laptop. Note that there are no K-mesons in the code (!) and so, as stated in Chapter 1, they aren't responsible for the uni-directional time behavior depicted in the figure.

experience time running counter to our earthly experience. He said that in 1877, and it is a remarkable statement for a conservative nineteenth-century professor.[36] However, Boltzmann continued, from most given states there are vastly more ways for entropy to increase than there are for it to decrease, and that is why we see what we see, a continuous *increase* in entropy.[37]

To find a science fiction writer speculating on reversed time people is, of course, much less remarkable! One pulp story, in fact, presents a curious treatment of the nuances of reversed time in which people talk backward (along with a marvelous bathroom scene of a man un-washing his hands!). This tale[38] tells us a young physics teacher who is "twisted into a reversed Time Stream" by an electrical discharge. As he lives backward in time, he observes everybody about him appearing to run in reverse, but even more puzzling is that they have developed a "dreadful, granite-like hardness." We soon learn why:

"For a while he could not understand the impenetrable hardness of external objects which he had experienced; it seemed they ought rather to be of intangible transiency, much as a dream, since he was re-viewing the Past. But a moment's thought gave him the logical answer. The Past is definite, shaped, unalterable, as nothing else in Creation is. Therefore, to argue that he could move or alter any object here [the past] was to argue that he could change the whole history of the world or cosmos. Everything he saw about him had happened, and could not be changed in any way. On the other hand, he was fluid, movable, alterable, since *his* future still lay before him, even if it had been reversed; he was the intruder, the anomaly. In any clash between himself and the Past, the Past would prove irresistible every time."

This passage reflects the modern view that the past cannot be changed, but explains that view in a way different from that generally accepted today. Modern physicists and philosophers invoke consistency requirements (which we'll take up in the next chapter) to explain the 'solidity' of the past. The author of this story also failed to explain why his physics teacher had no trouble moving about through the air of the past, which apparently is not any more resistant to being displaced than were air molecules before time reversal occurred.

---

[36]The Austrian-British philosopher Karl Popper (1902-1994) called Boltzmann's willingness to consider the possibility that different regions of the universe could have different directions of time "staggering in its boldness and beauty," but when on to say that Boltzmann must be wrong because "it brands unidirectional change an illusion [which] makes the catastrophe of Hiroshima an illusion." That is an emotional argument, of course, and although one of great power, I fail to see how it is related to physics. See Volume 1 of *The Philosophy of Karl Popper* (P. A. Schlipp, editor), Open Court 1974, pp. 127-128.

[37]For more on Boltzmann's views on entropy, see the end of his letter "On Certain Questions of the Theory of Gases," *Nature*, February 28, 1895, pp. 413-415.

[38]C. F. Hall, "The Man Who Lived Backwards," *Tales of Wonder*, Summer 1938. The modern classic of a time-reversed world is Philip K. Dick's 1967 novel *Counter-Clock World*. We'll encounter another time-reversed world again in Chapter 4.

It didn't take long for science fiction writers to incorporate entropy as time's arrow into time travel. In one early tale there is the brief statement that entropy is behind the operation of its gadget.[39] And a few years later the inventor of a "warp gun" tells us that "The stupendous distortion of the warp may actually bring about a sort of kink in spacetime, and result in a reversal of entropy"[40] and, sure enough, when the gun is fired a woman, who is hit by the warp, ages 70 years in seconds (which is, of course, exactly the opposite of what we would expect from a "reversal of entropy"!). Just a year later, the story of a college student about to flunk his senior physics course appeared.[41] An examination is scheduled for the following day, but he needs a week and a half of study time. To his rescue comes ENTROPY, INC., a company that sells time by placing its clients inside a "time-cabinet" in which the local entropy is greatly accelerated. To someone looking through a window at the interior of the time-cabinet, the occupants would appear as characters in a speeded-up movie. Referring to Eddington by name, the author tells us that "entropy is what makes time irreversible — is what gives us the feeling of the flow of time."[42]

In a hilarious, melodramatic story featuring one of early science fiction's stereotypical 'mad scientists,' the entropic arrow of time is the scientific explanation for time travel.[43] There we read of Bryce Field, "a master-scientist, a demon, cruel, ruthless," who is rejected in love by the stupendously beautiful Lucy Grantham. Her lack of enthusiasm is perhaps understandable, as Bryce is described as having "a lean-jawed, sunken-eyed" appearance, along with "lank, untidy hair sprawled across his massive forehead." As Lucy tells him at one point, "I could never love you; you are too clever, too brilliantly scientific." After hearing that, it is no surprise that before we are more than a page or two into the tale that we learn Bryce has Lucy strapped to a steel table in an underground laboratory-in-a-cave. There he tells her of her fate: "You are going on a long journey, my dear. So long a journey that even I, master-scientist, do not know when it will end. A journey into the future — alone! ... You, Lucy, shall be the victim of entropy! ... I have discovered how to make a [globe] of non-time. Entropy will be halted . . . You will be plunged into an eternal 'now.'"

And so the mad Doctor Field throws the switch on the wall of his "instrument-littered" cave on July 17, 1941, and Lucy remains "suspended" in time until the outside world reaches the date of August 9, 2450. That is the day she is at last dug-up from the cave by "big and muscular" engineer Clem Bradley and his "square-jawed" sidekick Buck Cardew, who uses a "warp in spacetime" to release Lucy from her "globe of non-time."

---

[39]M. J. Breuer, "The Time Valve," *Wonder Stories*, July 1930.

[40]F. B. Long, "Temporary Warp," *Astounding Stories*, August 1937.

[41]R. M. Farley, "Time for Sale," *Amazing Stories*, August 1938.

[42]Also citing Eddington was a tale by D. W. O'Brien, "The Man Who Lived Next Week," *Amazing Stories*, March 1941, which uses entropy to explain time travel. This curious story has the traveler arriving in the future with his clothing aged, which later 'de-ages' when the return trip is made!

[43]P. Cross, "Prisoner of Time," *Super Science Stories*, May 1942.

A few years later entropy was used in a similar but vastly more 'scientific' way. In that tale[44] we read of a scientist who has discovered "a field in which entropy was held level." As the reader is told, "An object in such a field could not experience any time flow — for it, time would not exist," since time flow is a *change* in entropy, and the 'change' of a level (or constant) field is zero. This interesting tale speculates on how such a field could have fantastic home uses ("Imagine cooking a chicken dinner, putting it in the field, and taking it out piping hot whenever needed, maybe twenty years hence!"). But its real use in the story is as a stasis generator for preserving fatally ill people until medical science has learned how to cure their diseases. This is, then, a high-tech method of suspended animation, of time travel into the future that is different from simply freezing (a clock in such a field would not age or measure the passage of personal time).

The gadget that does all this is called, somewhat sinisterly, the "Crypt," which we are told also makes a great bomb shelter, too, because "not even an atom bomb could penetrate a stasis field." The reason for that is intriguing: "The field requires a finite time in which to collapse — only there is no time in it." The interior of the Crypt is, quite literally, a frozen block of time more rigid and unyielding than the strongest steel.

As science fiction left the age of pulps and moved into the modern era, entropy continued to be useful a justification for time travel. Arthur C. Clarke used it,[45] as did Robert Silverberg. This last tale[46] is particularly interesting, as Silverberg pursued entropy beyond simply invoking it as a mere casual throwaway mention. When a newspaper from the future appears on people's doorsteps, the initial astonishment is replaced with puzzlement as the papers rapidly disintegrate. That is the result (we are told) of "entropic creep." The explanation continues, informing us that it is sort of like a strain in a geological fault (Silverberg has lived for decades in California, now and then a place of large to huge earthquakes, and it isn't surprising that he uses this particular imagery): "Entropy you know is the natural tendency of everything in nature to come apart at the seams as time goes along. These newspapers must be subject to unusually strong entropic strains because of their anomalous position out of their proper place in time."

Earlier I mentioned we had *two* puzzles associated with entropy; we've discussed 'reversibility,' so what's the other one, the 'recurrence paradox,' all about? The recurrence paradox is quite different from reversibility; it is based on a result established in 1890 by the great French mathematician Henri Poincaré (1854–1912). Motivated by the question of the stability of the motion of three masses governed by Newton's laws of mechanics (think, for example, of the Sun, the Earth, and the Moon), Poincaré showed that starting from almost any initial state, any fixed volume system with a finite amount of energy and a finite number of

---

[44]P. Anderson, "Time Heals," *Astounding Science Fiction*, October 1949.

[45]In, for example, his story of the tragic end of a geologist fifty million years in the past: "Time's Arrow," *Science Fantasy*, Summer 1950.

[46]"What We Learned from This Morning's Newspaper," *Infinity 4*, November 1972.

degrees of freedom will return *infinitely often and with arbitrarily little deviation* to almost every previous state. If you wait long enough, implies Poincaré's astonishing theorem, Pearl Harbor will happen again—and again, and again, and . . .. In 1896 the German mathematician Ernst Zermelo (1871–1953) used this result, which philosophers call the 'eternal return,' to claim that there could be no truly irreversible processes and thereby cast doubt on the idea that entropy *always* and *inexorably* increases.

Even for very small systems, however, such as a mere handful of molecules, the recurrence time is extremely large, and this was, in essence, Boltzmann's reply to Zermelo's concern. For example, if the gas-filled cylinder of our entropic clock has just 100 molecules (not the six I used in the earlier example), and if transitions from one side of the cylinder to the other side take place at the rate of one million per second, then the recurrence time has been calculated to be something like 30 million billion years![47] And for the universe itself, the recurrence time is simply incomprehensible. Mathematicians call 1 followed by a hundred zeros a *googol*, and the recurrence time in years for the universe has been estimated to be 1 followed by a googol of zeros (a so-called *googolplex* of years).[48]

Using a wonderful bit of imagery, one analyst wrote of the enormity of the recurrence time of a system considerably *less* complex than the universe this way: "If a man shuffled just a single pack of cards as rapidly as an individual molecule hits other molecules in air, and if a snail started to crawl around the universe . . . at the rate of one centimeter *during the life of the sidereal system* [my emphasis], the snail would have got round the universe many millions of times before it would become at all likely that the man would have got the pack back to the original order."[49] If this is what it takes to get a pack of cards back to its initial state, then try to conceive of the time interval required to restore *the world* to December 7, 1941.[50]

The notion of eternal recurrence considerably predates Poincaré, and its scientific (as opposed to astrological) study can be traced back to the fourteenth century.[51] A 'more recent' claim for eternal recurrence, also based on scientific arguments (conservation of energy), can be found in many places in the writings of the German philosopher Friedrich Nietzsche (1844–1900)—see, for example, his *The Gay Science* (1882) and *Thus Spake Zarathustra* (1883)—again predating

---

[47]J. M. Blatt, "Time Reversal," *Scientific American*, August 1956.

[48]The googol is a gigantic number, far greater than the number of raindrops that have fallen on the Earth during its entire history. And the googolplex is light years beyond that.

[49]R. B. Braithwaite, "Professor Eddington's Gifford Lectures," *Mind*, October 1929, pp. 409-435.

[50]Pulp science fiction writers, of course, were not discouraged by such calculations, as they depended on the *certainty* of recurrence over *infinite* time. See, for example, S. G. Weinbaum, "The Circle of Zero," *Thrilling Wonder Stories*, August 1936, and L. D. Gunn, "The Time Twin," *Thrilling Wonder Stories*, August 1939.

[51]R. Small, "Incommensurability and Recurrence: From Oresme to Simmel," *Journal of the History of Ideas*, January-March 1991, pp. 121-137.

Poincaré. All of Nietzsche's arguments are flawed,[52] but they are rational, physical arguments, as opposed to arguments based on metaphysics or theology. In fiction, a glimmer of the idea of a repetition of human affairs preceded Poincaré by some years, too.[53]

An important caveat concerning recurrence is that we could never *know* of it because the state of all the historical records (geological, memories, books, photographs, and so on) would, as part of the physical state of the universe, also recur. And so those records could, up to the instant *before* the recurrence, contain no signature *of* the recurrence because the recurrence has not 'yet' happened![54] The 1993 movie *Groundhog Day* stumbles on this point, as it has a character (for some unexplained reason) live through the same day over-and-over *and he is aware he is doing that*. Indeed, he can change events within that time loop at will. It is interesting to note that one 'time loop' pulp science fiction tale[55] specifically avoided that error (and cited Nietzsche, to boot), and so demonstrated that pulp science fiction *could* have some philosophical merit to it.

While the enormous recurrence time for the universe may seem reason enough to reject the possibility of Pearl Harbor repeating, there are more fundamental reasons for such a rejection. For example, an *expanding* universe, such as the one we live in, violates the Poincaré theorem's assumed condition of a *fixed* volume system. As Professor Eddington put it in a 1934 lecture at Cornell University, "In an expanding space any particular congruence becomes more and more improbable. The expansion of the Universe creates new possibilities of distribution faster than the atoms can work through them, and there is no longer any likelihood of a particular distribution being repeated. If we continue shuffling a pack of cards we are bound sometime to bring them into their standard form — but not if the conditions are that every morning one more card is added to the pack."[56]

An even more direct way to escape Poincaré's theorem is to use a result from general relativity. Using Einstein's theory instead of the classical dynamics that Poincaré used, it has been shown (by Frank Tipler, the inventor of the rotating cylinder time machine spacetime that was mentioned in the previous chapters and which we'll revisit later in the book) that the recurrence theorem is simply no longer true.[57] As Tipler wrote, "In general relativity, singularities intervene to prevent recurrence. General relativistic Universes are thought to begin and end in singularities of infinite spacetime curvature [the Big Bang and the Big Crunch,

---

[52]J. Krueger, "Nietzschean Recurrence as a Cosmological Hypothesis," *Journal of the History of Philosophy*, October 1978, pp. 435-444.

[53]See "Human Repetends" by Marcus Clarke (1846-1881), a story originally published in 1872 and reprinted *Australian Science Fiction* (V. Ikin, editor), Academy Chicago 1984.

[54]For more on this point, see D. W. Theobald, "On the Recurrence of Things Past," *Mind*, January 1976, pp. 107-111.

[55]C. F. Ksanda, "Forever Is Today," *Thrilling Wonder Stories*, Summer 1946.

[56]A. S. Eddington, "The End of the World," in *New Pathways in Science*, Macmillan 1935.

[57]F. J. Tipler, "General Relativity and the Eternal Return," in *Essays in General Relativity* (F. J. Tipler, editor), Academic Press 1980.

respectively], and these singularities force time in general relativity to be linear rather than cyclic." A twist to this, however, is that in his analysis Tipler assumed that gravity is *always* attractive, and that the spacetime satisfies a special condition (called the *Cauchy condition* that we'll take-up later) that avoids backward causation. The first assumption is violated in wormhole time machine spacetimes, though, and the second is *by definition* violated in *any* spacetime that supports time travel! So, who knows . . ... ?

Despite all of the previous discussion it is *not* true that the evolution of a system from past to future is *always* accompanied by an increase in entropy—that is, by an irreversible increase in some measure of the system's 'disorder.' Yes, it can be calculated that entropy is *very likely* to monotonically increase in systems of macroscopic size, but that is not the same as certainty. There *can* be fluctuations in the thermodynamic evolution of a system so as to have, at least for a while, a *decrease* in entropy (take another look at Fig. 3.2). All we can say, for sure, is that for macroscopically sized systems even very small fluctuations in increasing entropy are most improbable. To quote no less an authority than the combined genius of Gilbert and Sullivan (from their opera *H. M. S. Pinafore*), here's what we can honestly say of the possibility of failure in the supposed inexorable increase of entropy: "What, never?/No, never!/What, never?/Well, hardly ever." Still, for physicists, entropy is just too useful a concept to give up even though it does not *always* increase with increasing time for an isolated system.

Love it though they may, there are some puzzling aspects to entropy for physicists that remain to this day. For example, the idea that the universe began in some sort of Big Bang process 15 billion years or so ago is the generally accepted view today, The puzzle of that event, one that has been described as literally being a 'fireball explosion,' is that it must have been *fantastically* hot. This means that at the beginning (of everything) there was complete thermodynamic disorder, which from our earlier discussion means *maximum* entropy. Thus, we immediately have the question of how can the entropy of the universe be continuously increasing if it was as large as possible right from the start?[58]

One possible answer is that the proper model of the universe to use is the so-called *inflationary* universe. The inflationary model has a very high expansion rate for the early universe, much higher than the rate in the standard hot Big Bang model. In the standard model, the entropy puzzle occurs because of the ability of all particle processes to readjust rapidly to the ever-changing state of the universe; the so-called *relaxation times* of all particle processes were *short* compared to the expansion rate of the universe. That means that the actual entropy of the universe would, indeed, be the maximum possible at every instant (and so we have the entropy puzzle). In the inflationary model, however, the expansion rate of the early universe was temporarily so high that the relaxation times of particle processes

---

[58]It has been estimated that over the next 10^{116} years the entropy of the universe will increase by a factor in excess of 10^{14}. See S. Frautschi, "Entropy in an Expanding Universe," *Science*, August 13, 1982, pp. 593-599.

were *very long* compared to the expansion rate. That means the maximum *possible* entropy of the universe, at every instant, would greatly exceed the *actual* entropy. This 'entropy gap' is the cause, then, of the thermodynamic arrow of time, as the universe tries to 'catch-up' and reduce the resulting entropy deficiency.

There is also a philosophical problem with associating increasing entropy with the flow of time from the past into the future. Events in the past leave traces, artifacts taken to be ordered states—or at least more ordered than are their immediate surroundings. The classic example of this is a footprint in the sand, which is clearly a highly organized structure compared to the surrounding sandy beach. The footprint is the trace of a *past* event; such a trace was all the evidence, for example, that Robinson Crusoe needed to conclude that another human had walked that way. But now consider this famous counter-example,[59] that of a bombed city. Certainly there are traces aplenty of past bombing, and in fact one has to be careful not to trip over or to fall into them! The puzzle, of course, is in trying to argue that random bomb craters, strewn rubble, and crushed buildings, somehow constitute a more organized state (a 'footprint') than did the original city and its surrounding undamaged areas. This fuzziness was captured by one physicist who asked "If it were found that the entropy of the universe were decreasing, would one say that time was flowing backward, or would one say that it is a law of nature that entropy decreases with time?"[60]

For another example of the fuzziness of the relationship between entropy and time, consider the situation[61] of a cloud of non-colliding particles all initially moving toward each other. At first the radius of the smallest sphere that contains the cloud decreases with time but, eventually, as the particles move past another, the radius will grow without bound. Indeed, that inexorable increase of the radius could be taken as defining the direction of time that points toward the future. But in what sense is the *disorder* of the particle cloud increasing? After all, as the cloud expands it 'looks the same' at all times; only its scale (radius) changes. What has entropy to do with this expanding-into-the-future cloud? Perhaps nothing. Perhaps what is need is a *new* arrow of time.

So far we have looked in some detail at two arrows of time: the subjective, psychological feeling we have of time 'flowing,' which has no explanation in physics, and the thermodynamic, statistical quantity of entropy. A third arrow is the so-called *cosmological arrow* of the expansion of the universe. This arrow is not nearly as obvious as the first two. Only in the last century (since the 1920s), as a result of the American astronomer Edwin Hubble (1889–1953), has science become aware that the universe *is* expanding. An interesting speculation about the thermodynamic and cosmological arrows, one made numerous times, is that if the cosmological arrow should ever reverse—that is, if the universe should ever begin to

---

[59]See note 54 in Chapter 2.

[60]P. W. Bridgeman, *Reflections of a Physicist*, Philosophical Library 1955, p. 251.

[61]Taken from K. G. Denbigh, "The Many Faces of Irreversibility," *British Journal for the Philosophy of Science*, December 1989, pp. 501-518.

contract toward a Big Crunch—then the thermodynamic arrow would also reverse.[62] The reasoning is that the thermodynamic arrow *follows* the cosmological arrow in an *expanding* universe because that universe can continually 'swallow-up' ever more electromagnetic radiation as it is produced by any physical process. *If* the thermodynamic arrow continues to follow the direction of the cosmological arrow during a contraction, *then* the thermodynamic arrow would also reverse direction.

The usual objection to that suggestion is straightforward. If the direction of time did reverse, then we would see (so goes this argument) all sorts of odd events that would require enormously improbable physics, such as a shattered glass mirror reassembling itself. The error in that objection is subtle but equally simple. *It presupposes the retarded causality of our expanding universe*. In a contracting universe with a reversed thermodynamic arrow of time, however, there would be *advanced* causality, and thus there would be nothing at all improbable about such doings as self-assembling mirrors. As two physicists observed, "The mere reversal of the cosmological expansion will not of itself serve to reverse the direction of thermodynamic and electrodynamic processes, any more than the compression phase of a piston-and-cylinder cycle in a heat engine serves to reduce the entropy of the confined gas."[63]

Those same physicists go on to then mention Stephen Hawking's interest in the relationships among the various temporal arrows. At one time Hawking thought[64] he had discovered a connection between the thermodynamic and cosmological arrows, but then later abandoned that claim.[65] Hawking, in fact, has labeled his original claim "my greatest mistake in science," and has quite openly (and most entertainingly!) discussed his interest in the arrows of time.[66] Indeed, it was to be the subject of his doctoral dissertation but, as he wrote, "I . . . needed something more definite, and less airy fairy than the arrow of time, for my PhD, and I therefore switched to singularities and black holes. They were a lot easier."

Yet another arrow of time is the *electromagnetic arrow*, which refers to the fact that radio waves are observed to only propagate into the future, and never into the past. This is a mysterious fact, because Maxwell's equations for the electromagnetic field, like all the other laws of physics, have no intrinsic time sense. The electromagnetic arrow will be discussed in some detail in Chap. 4.

---

[62]T. Gold, "The Arrow of Time," *American Journal of Physics*, June 1962, pp. 403-410.

[63]P. C. W. Davies and J. Twamley, "Time-Symmetric Cosmology and the Opacity of the Future Light Cone," *Classical and Quantum Gravity*, May 1993, pp. 931-945.

[64]S. Hawking, "Arrow of Time in Cosmology," *Physical Review D*, November 15, 1985, pp. 2489-2495. See also the next paper in the same journal, D. N. Page, "Will Entropy Decrease if the Universe Recollapses?," pp. 2496-2499.

[65]For *why* he abandoned that claim, see S. Hawking *et al*., "Origin of Time Asymmetry," *Physical Review D*, June 15, 1993, pp. 5342-5356.

[66]S. W. Hawking, "The No Boundary Condition and the Arrow of Time,' in *Physical Origins of Time Asymmetry* (J. J. Halliwell *et al*., editors), Cambridge University Press 1994.

3.3 Time Dilation

"Time as we know it is not universally absolute. The rate of its passage depends to a great extent upon the velocity of its observer with regard to some certain reference system. A moving clock will run slower with respect to a selected coordinate system than a stationary one."

— an early science fiction time traveler explains how his time machine works[67]

In this section I'll set the stage for the scientific basis of time travel to the future, as well as for time travel to the past via the warped spacetime called a wormhole. We start by imagining two horizontal, parallel mirrors, one positioned over the other and separated by distance d. The two mirrors are in the same frame of reference with an Observer; that is, the Observer is looking at two mirrors that are stationary with respect to him. Between the two mirrors we further imagine that a particle of light, a photon, is bouncing endlessly back and forth, up and down, in relentless reflection. This simple system is called a *photon clock*, or the Einstein-Langevin clock, after the French physicist Paul Langevin (1872–1946), and it has been part of physics for decades. We define the time required for the photon to travel from one mirror to the other as a *tick* in time, and so the return trip defines the clock's *tock*. The rate of timekeeping measured by the Observer, the time interval separating consecutive ticks, is obviously then given by

$$t' = 2\frac{d}{c}$$

where c is the speed of light.
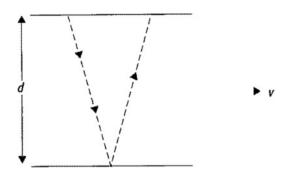
Suppose we next imagine that the Observer and the photon clock move at constant speed v to the right across *our* line-of-sight. That is, we remain in the original frame while the photon clock and the Observer are now moving at speed v relative to us. This means the photon clock is in a different frame of reference from ours and so *we* do not see the photon bouncing up and down vertically, but rather *we* see the photon tracing out the triangular path shown in Fig. 3.3.

A round trip of the photon evidently now requires more time than before because the distance in the stationary frame (our frame) is greater than the round trip distance in the Observer's frame (moving with the photon clock, he still sees a round trip distance of d). In fact, if t is the time between consecutive ticks as seen by a stationary viewer (us), then the round trip path length of the photon that we see is

$$2\sqrt{d^2 + \left(\frac{vt}{2}\right)^2}$$

[67]F. J. Bridge, "Via the Time Accelerator," *Amazing Stories*, January 1931.

Fig. 3.3 The moving
(relative to us) photon clock

and so

$$t = \frac{2\sqrt{d^2 + \left(\frac{vt}{2}\right)^2}}{c}.$$

This can be easily and quickly manipulated algebraically and combined with the earlier expression for t', the tick interval for an Observer in the same frame as the photon clock, to give the tick interval for the moving clock *as measured by a stationary viewer* (us):

$$t = \frac{t'}{\sqrt{1 - \left(\frac{v}{c}\right)^2}}.$$

Notice that this reduces to $t = t'$ when $v = 0$—that is, when the photon clock is stationary with respect to us.

This last result is the famous Einstein time dilation formula, which shows that $t \geq t'$, and indeed that $t = \infty$ when $v = c$. That is, to us the moving photon clock appears to *run slow* compared to clocks in our stationary frame of reference and, at the speed of light, time *stands still*.[68] A curious anticipation of this association between light and timelessness can be found in a poem by the seventeenth-century poet Henry Vaughn who, in the opening words to his "The World"—which appeared in 1650 as part of his *Silex Scintillans* ("Sparking Flint")—wrote

"I saw Eternity the other night
Like a great *Ring* of pure and endless light,
All calm, as it was bright,
And round beneath it, Time in hours, days, years
Driven by the spheres
Like a vast shadow moved, in which the world
And all her train were hurled."

---

[68]For $v > c$ the time dilation formula says that time becomes imaginary, and this is one reason for claiming that $v > c$ is not possible. The time dilation formula has been experimentally verified: see H. E. Ives and G. R. Stilwell, "An Experimental Study of the Rate of a Moving Atomic Clock," *Journal of the Optical Society of America*, July 1938, pp. 215-226.

A similar modification in the length of a moving object (measured in the direction of motion) occurs when $v > 0$. While an Observer moving with the object will measure its length to be L', a stationary viewer will 'report' it to be contracted to the length

$$L = L'\sqrt{1 - \left(\frac{v}{c}\right)^2}.$$

This effect is called the *Lorentz-FitzGerald contraction*.[69] For 'everyday' objects and speeds the contraction effect is an extremely small one. For example, for a low-altitude satellite 100 m long, moving at 18,000 miles per hour (that is, at $v = 2.7 \times 10^{-5}c$), the contraction is less than 4×10^{-6} cm.

In the early days of science fiction the contraction effect was fascinating to readers, but authors often got it wrong. For example, in one story[70] of a runaway spaceship falling into the Sun, we read "When our racing [ship] was drawn from the Earth's gravity and fell at ever increasing speed toward the Sun it soon approached the speed of light. As we fell faster and faster our length in the direction of the Sun progressed into nothingness. Then — it reached the speed of light — passed it. Now — mind you this — when the [ship] attained the speed of light it was of a *minus* length." This author has managed to make four errors in three sentences!

The same author botched the Lorentz-FitzGerald contraction again 5 years later, and added yet more errors to his growing list. In that tale[71] there is an episode of faster-than-light radio communication along with a lengthy, unfortunate dissertation that actually denies special relativity's fundamental assertion that all inertial frames of references are indistinguishable from each other (two frames are *inertial* if they have no relative acceleration—I'll say more on this in the next section). And in yet another story[72] of high-speed space travel the author has the contraction working in the wrong direction—as the rocket ship moves faster and faster it gets longer and longer.

As bad as those errors are, first prize for mangling the laws of physics has to go to the story[73] of a near light-speed spaceship on its way to Alpha Centauri. The crew mutinies and puts the captain and first office 'overboard' (think *Mutiny on the Bounty*) with 6 months' worth of provisions. This happens at mid-voyage, about 2 light-years from both home and destination, so matters look grim. Indeed, the author tells his readers, several times, that things look *very* bad. But are they? With a stated speed of 162,000 miles per second, the time dilation factor is slightly more than 2 and so, because the space boat is traveling at $0.87c$, it will take a little more

---

[69]Named after the Dutch physicist H. A. Lorentz (1853-1928) and the Irish physicist G. F. FitzGerald (1851-1901).

[70]J. H. Haggard, "Faster Than Light," *Wonder Stories*, October 1930.

[71]J. H. Haggard, "Relativity to the Rescue," *Amazing Stories*, April 1935.

[72]D. Wandrei, "A Race Through Time," *Astounding Stories*, October 1933.

[73]N. Schachner, "Reverse Universe," *Astounding Stories*, June 1936.

Table 3.1 The Lorentz-
FitzGerald time slowing
factor

1	$\dfrac{1}{\sqrt{1-\left(\frac{v}{c}\right)^2}}$
.1	1.005
.2	1.021
.5	1.155
.7	1.4
.9	2.294
.999	22.366
.9999	70.712

than 13 months of *space boat time* to complete the journey. If the men go on half-rations then it seems they *could* survive.

There is, of course, the problem of slowing down so as to arrive at Alpha Centauri at a reasonable speed, but that issue is ignored in the story. Instead, our attention is directed to the much more dramatic concern of a faster-than-light planet (don't ask!) colliding with the space boat and carrying the castaways onwards toward their destination. When this happens we read that time runs backwards (for what *really* occurs at superluminal speeds, keep reading this chapter) and, finally, in a repeat of an error I mentioned earlier, we are told that the Lorentz-FitzGerald contraction is negative for $v > c$.

The time-slowing (or size-shrinking) factor becomes pronounced only at values of v close to c, as shown in Table 3.1. For example, the last entry shows that a clock traveling at 99.99 % the speed of light will register the passage of 1 year while nearly 71 years pass on Earth. One science fiction writer got this dramatically wrong, even though he actually reproduced the Lorentz-FitzGerald equation in his story.[74] At one point he writes of the near light-speed rocket ship that stars in the tale, "If it [the ship's speed] was as slow as ninety-four percent [of the speed of light] ... for every moment ticked by the clocks of the [ship] hundreds passed on earth." In fact, the time dilation factor at that speed is 'only' 2.93.

One possible objection to time dilation is that the analysis done here has been for a *particular* clock. How do we know that another clock, one using wheels and pendulums, for example, instead of photons and mirrors, wouldn't be affected differently by motion? The answer comes from relativity itself, which says there is no way to detect uniform motion. If two clocks did behave differently, then this difference could be used as a motion detector. Since this is impossible within the framework of relativity, then *all* clocks, no matter what the details of their internal

---

[74]L. R. Hubbard, "To the Stars," *Astounding Science Fiction*, February and March 1950.

mechanisms may be (including the *biological* clocks of own bodies), must respond to motion just as does the photon clock.[75]

Time dilation can also be caused by gravity (it appears in the 2014 movie *Interstellar*), and that effect has been used to 'construct' a time machine from a wormhole (to be discussed later). You can get a qualitative understanding of how that happens by imagining a massive body (*massive*, to have a really big gravitational field) in space, on the surface of which is a hot object. That object emits electromagnetic radiation and, though it isn't essential to the following argument, further imagine that the temperature of the object is sufficiently high that some of the radiation (emitted by the very atoms of the object) is in the visible-light portion of the spectrum. Now, from elementary quantum theory we can also think of the object's atoms as emitting photons ('particles of light'), each of energy hf, where h is Planck's constant and f is the frequency in hertz (what used to be called 'cycles per second'). The higher the temperature, the higher the photon energy, and so the higher the frequency. In the visible spectrum, f is on the order of 10^{15} Hz, a frequency one *billion* times higher than commercial AM radio frequencies.

The radiating atoms can be thought of as tiny clocks, with alternate half-cycles of radiation being ticks and the half-cycles in-between being the tocks. The passage of time on the surface of the massive body can be measured by these atomic clocks in the hot, radiating object. To a distant observer, however, as she receives the photons from the hot object, the passage of surface time on the massive body will appear to occur at a reduced rate when compared with the photons emitted by her own identically hot object (her 'local' clock). That's because the radiation that arrives at the distant observer has traversed a gravitational field (a journey sometimes described as 'climbing out of a gravitational well') and so is down-shifted in frequency toward the red end of the visible spectrum. This effect is called either the *gravitational red shift* or the *gravitational time dilation* effect (or even the *Einstein shift*, because it was Einstein who predicted the effect in 1907).

You can 'understand' this dilation effect as follows. One can crudely think of a photon emitted by the hot object as something like a rock thrown upward. As the rock rises upward through the gravitational field, its *total* instantaneous energy is always constant, but the total, fixed energy is split between its kinetic and potential energies in an ever changing way. That is, as the rock rises, its kinetic energy continually decreases (the rock slows down), whereas its potential energy continually increases. A photon is not a rock, however, and it certainly can't slow down as

---

[75]Resistance to this conclusion persisted for years. See, for example, the letter "Relativity and Radio-activity," *Nature*, January 8, 1920, p. 468. The author of that letter wondered whether a clock based on radioactive decay might not somehow beat the 'conspiracy' of moving clocks running slow compared to stationary ones. And in a letter to *Science* (December 7, 1962, p. 1180), a reader objected to applying the laws of physics to biological systems, first asserting (incorrectly) that time dilation "has never been proved or disproved experimentally," and then "there is no known causal means by which greatly increased velocity could alter, without destroying the very biochemical basis of the life process, the metabolic changes which are responsible for the aging process."
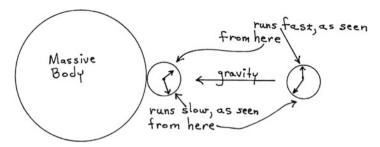
Fig. 3.4 Gravitational time dilation due to a massive body

it rises through a gravitational field (it *always* moves at the speed of light because the photon *is* light). The only way a photon can give up energy to balance the ever increasing potential energy (physicists will cringe at this, but read on) is to decrease its frequency. Hence, the red shift as seen by a distant observer of the photon, who thus sees time running slow on the massive body. Fig. 3.4 shows the case for a clock on a massive body, compared to a distant clock. Notice, carefully, the 'direction of gravity,' that is, the direction a small, unrestrained test mass will move.

A gravitational red shift in the *opposite* direction is nicely described in the famous 1966 science fiction story "Neutron Star" by Larry Niven. There a space traveler zooms down into a neutron star's intense gravity field (at half the speed of light!), passing within one mile of the star's surface. He reports what he observes in these dramatic words: "All around me were blue-white stars. Imagine light falling into a savagely steep gravitational well. It won't accelerate. Light can't move faster than light. But it can gain in energy by increasing its frequency. The light was falling on me, harder and harder, as I dropped." To Niven's intrepid spaceman, therefore, the passage of time on those distant blue-white stars appeared to be running *fast* compared to his wrist watch. This shows that the effect could equally well be called the 'gravitational *blue* shift.'

Notice that *gravitational*-induced time alterations do *not* have the symmetrical feature of motion-induced time dilations.[76] That is, for gravitational time dilations caused by photons either falling into or climbing out of gravity wells, observers at each end *agree* about whose clock is running slow, unlike in the motion-induced case where *each* of the relatively moving observers thinks it is the *other* observer's clock that is running *slow*.[77]

Now, comparing a massless photon to a rock which does have mass (and so potential energy), as each travels 'against' gravity, *is* straining the physics, with its one virtue being the provision of an initial plausibility argument. Gravitational time dilation is sufficiently important in the operation of wormhole time machines,

---

[76]Gravitational time dilation was experimentally observed in 1960, more than half a century after Einstein predicted it.

[77]A science fiction use of both the red and the blue gravitational shifts appears in the novel by J. P. Hogan, *Out of Time*, Bantam 1993.
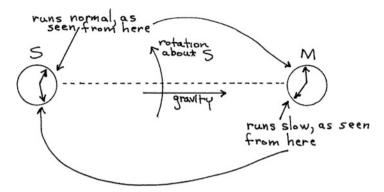
Fig. 3.5 Gravitational time dilation due to rotation

however, that perhaps another way to think about it that is more acceptable to hardcore physicists makes it worth another look. Imagine a turn-table disk that initially is *not* rotating (soon it *will* spin). On this disk imagine further that we fasten two clocks, one called S (for *stationary*) and one called M (for *moving*), as shown in Fig. 3.5. These two clocks are set to read the same time at some instant and then, thereafter, they tick-tock through time at precisely the same rate. We then start the disk rotating around a vertical axis through clock S. (Imagine S to be a *point* clock, and so it is *the* one point on the turn-table that remains at rest even as the disk rotates.) What happens to the time-keeping of S and M?

We can answer this question by using our earlier result concerning time dilation due to motion. Even with the disk now rotating, S appears stationary to an observer sitting on top of M, while M appears to be moving across the line of sight of an observer sitting on top of S. So, to the observer at S, clock M runs slow, while to the observer at M there is *no change* in the time keeping of clock S. This is a non-symmetrical outcome, and so should remind you of gravitational time dilation. This might be a puzzle to you, however, as we don't have a massive body in Fig. 3.5 to account for a gravity presence. This is where the genius of Einstein comes into play.

Anyone who has ever ridden on a merry-go-round knows there is an outward (pointing away from S) directed force called the *centrifugal force* that is 'trying' to toss you off the merry-go-round. Now, where there is a force there is an acceleration, and one of Einstein's starting points in his development of general relativity was to identify an acceleration, *whatever its origin*, with gravity. A massive body is, of course, one possible origin (the obvious one, in fact), but so is the rotation of the turn-table. So, we have the situation shown in Fig. 3.5, where now 'gravity' is directed as shown and, and as in Fig. 3.4, the direction of acceleration of gravity is toward the slow-running clock. Again, the direction of gravity is the direction a small, unrestrained test mass on the rotating disk will move. The further M is away from S, the greater the 'gravity' of the centrifugal acceleration and so the slower will M run as measured by the observer at S.

A 1968 story that uses the gravitational time dilation effect in a striking fashion tells of a starship's visit to a supernova, accompanied by a fantastic alien life-form—a ball of intelligent plasma named Lucifer that is telepathic.[78] While the ship stands off at a distance of 500 million kilometers, Lucifer will approach much closer to the *event horizon* (see the Glossary) of a black hole at the center of the supernova explosion and communicate its findings to a human telepath on the ship. A physicist in the crew is curious about one point, and asks the human telepath the following question:

"I have wondered about one item. Presumably Lucifer will go quite near the supernova. Can you still maintain contact with him? The time dilation effect, will that not change the frequency of his thoughts too much?"

Lucifer, in fact, dies in the black hole even as he saves the ship from destruction, and the human telepath will hear his death scream for the rest of her life. As the physicist later explains to the ship's captain, telepathy is instantaneous and has no limiting range (there is no known physical basis for believing any of this, but it is crucial for story effect):

"Remember the time dilation. He fell from the sky and perished swiftly, yes.
   But in supernova time. Not the same as ours. To us, the final stellar collapse takes an infinite number of years. . . . He will always be with her."[79]

3.4   The Lorentz Transformation

"If only he'd paid more attention to mathematics in school."
                              —a science fiction time traveler laments missed opportunities[80]

In this (and the next) section the math gets about as 'deep' as it gets in this book, but to leave it out struck me as a cheat. *You* can skip part (or all) of the math and simply read the prose, but it seemed unfair for me to make that decision for you.

We begin by imagining two distinct frames of reference. One we take to be stationary, and the other as moving at a uniform speed v with the respect to the first. The moving frame is said to be *boosted* with respect to the stationary frame. We orient these two coordinate systems so that the motion occurs along just one axis (the x-axis, as shown in Fig. 3.6, where I am using primed variables for the moving frame). That is, the two frames have coincident x axes, and parallel y and z axes that

---

[78]Poul Anderson, "Kyrie," in *The Road to Science Fiction* (J. Gunn, editor), volume 3, New American Library 1979.

[79]A mathematical discussion of how signals take forever (even though they are emitted in a finite time interval) to travel from the event horizon of a black hole to a distant receiver can be found in James B. Hartle, *Gravity: an introduction to Einstein's general relativity*, Addison Wesley 2003, pp. 264-268.

[80]D. Knight, "Extempore," in *Far Out*, Simon and Schuster 1961. Similar words ("If only I had more mathematics") were spoken by Einstein the day before he died — see Walter Isaacson, *Einstein: his life and universe*, Simon & Schuster 2007, p. 542.
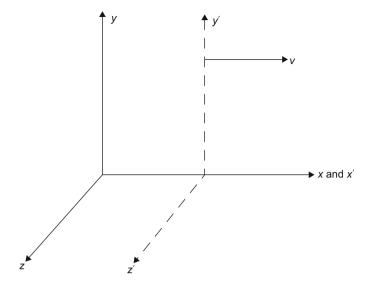
Fig. 3.6 Two reference frames in relative motion

are moving apart at the constant speed v. Let's also imagine that there is a clock at the origin of each frame, and that at the instant the origins match the clocks are synchronized; that is, $t = t' = 0$ is the instant the two coordinate systems coincide.

We further imagine that there is an observer at the origin in each frame. At some arbitrary instant of time, each observer records the coordinates of the arbitrary point P in space, as measured in his system. These observers could, for example, agree to record the coordinates of P in their system when their clock reads 5 s. It seems immediately obvious (as it was for Newton) that $t = t'$; that is, time runs at the same rate in each frame and thus it makes sense to talk about "the same instant" at every point in space. (After reading the previous section you know this *not* true, but temporally forget that!) Thus, at this 'same instant' the stationary observer records (x, y, z) and the moving observer records (x', y', z'). What are the relationships between the primed and unprimed coordinates of P? That is, what mathematical transformation converts from one frame to the other?

The answer seems obvious:

$$y' = y$$
$$z' = z$$
$$x' = x - vt.$$

This transformation, called the *Galilean transformation* after the Italian Galileo Galilei (1564–1642), satisfies the relativity principle, which says that uniform motion leaves the laws of physics unchanged. For example, in the stationary system Newton's famous second law of motion for a constant mass m,

$$F = m\frac{d^2x}{dt^2}$$

becomes the identical-appearing form

$$F' = m\frac{d^2x'}{dt'^2}.$$

More precisely, *all* the laws of mechanics known to Newton are unchanged. Any frame of reference in which Newton's laws of mechanics hold true is said to be an *inertial* frame. Given one inertial frame, we can find infinitely many others simply by applying the Galilean transformation.

However, when the mathematical laws of electrodynamics were discovered by Maxwell in the nineteenth century, it was a shock to physicists to learn that the Galilean transformation does *not* leave Maxwell's equations unchanged in form; the transformed equations predict electromagnetic effects for the moving system that are *not* predicted to occur in the stationary system. This meant that there was theoretical support for the possibility that electromagnetic experiments might be devised to detect uniform motion, and this eventually led to the famous Michelson-Morley experiment of 1887. This experiment, sensitive enough to detect the motion of the Earth itself through space, failed to detect any such motion. The conclusion was clear: the new electromagnetic effects predicted by the Galilean transformation do not exist, and so the transformation must be wrong even though it works for the laws of mechanics. So—what is going on?

The answer is inspired, and again returns us to the cornerstone of relativity: the idea that the laws of physics, *all* the laws, should look the same to observers in uniform relative motion. That is, there is no special or preferred system of coordinates—*all* inertial systems are equivalent in physics. Evidence from an extremely broad variety of sensitive experiments had, by the end of the nineteenth century, convinced physicists that Maxwell's equations *are* correct. Thus, a new transformation was needed that leaves both the laws of mechanics *and* the laws of electrodynamics unchanged with uniform motion. But, a single transformation that works on Maxwell's equations and on the mechanical laws would therefore mean that Newton's mechanical laws as stated cannot be correct, and this was a breathtaking conclusion: Newton had been unchallenged for two centuries.

As it turns out, Newton's laws are *almost* right. The only correction required is that the mass of a moving body is not independent of motion, but rather varies as

$$m = \frac{m_0}{\sqrt{1 - (v/c)^2}}$$

where m_0 is the so-called *rest mass* when $v = 0$.[81] This result says that m is infinite at $v = c$ unless $m_0 = 0$ (as it is for a photon), which is another reason for the belief that accelerating a mass (such as a spaceship) up to the speed of light is impossible because it would require infinite energy (look back at note 68, too). With this modification, the transformation that leaves all the laws of physics unaltered in form by uniform motion is what is called the *Lorentz transformation* (after the same Lorentz the contraction effect is named for), who discovered it in 1904 by direct manipulation of Maxwell's equations:

$$y' = y$$
$$z' = z$$
$$x' = \frac{x - vt}{\sqrt{1 - (v/c)^2}}$$
$$t' = \frac{t - vx/c^2}{\sqrt{1 - (v/c)^2}}.$$

In 1905 Einstein discovered how to derive these equations from a fundamental reexamination of space and time without concerning oneself about the details of specific physical laws.

By simple algebraic manipulation, the transformation equations can be rewritten as

$$ct = \gamma ct' + \beta \gamma x'$$
$$x = \beta \gamma ct' + \gamma x'$$

where

$$\beta = \frac{v}{c}$$

and

$$\gamma = 1/(1 - \beta^2)$$

are dimensionless constants. In compact matrix form, the Lorentz transformation becomes

---

[81]This variation of mass with speed was experimentally observed in 1901.

$$\begin{bmatrix} ct \\ x \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \gamma & \beta\gamma \\ \beta\gamma & \gamma \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} ct' \\ x' \end{bmatrix}$$

and the symmetrical 2×2 matrix is called the Lorentz boost matrix or simply the *boost*. Notice that when $v = 0$ (zero boost) the boost matrix reduces to the identity matrix; that is, the two frames are one and the same with at most a shift in the location of the origins. Note, too, that $\beta = 0$ and $\gamma = 1$ for *any* v when c is infinite—that is, the boost matrix is again reduced to the identity matrix and the Lorentz transformation becomes the Galilean *if c is infinite*. But c is not infinite, and all the implications of special relativity are the direct result of the *finite* speed of light.

The Lorentz transformation contains two results I have mentioned earlier in the book. For example, in Chap. 2 it was mentioned that simultaneity is a relative concept in reference frames in relative motion. Let's see what the transformation says about that. Consider two events that occur specifically on the x-axis. They are simultaneous in the stationary system (at, say, time $t = T$) but are at different places (at, say, $x = X$ and $x = X + \Delta X$). Their occurrences in time for the moving observer are

$$t'_1 = \frac{T - vX/c^2}{\sqrt{1 - (v/c)^2}}$$

and

$$t'_2 = \frac{T - v(X + \Delta X)/c^2}{\sqrt{1 - (v/c)^2}}.$$

For the moving observer, therefore, the two events are *not* simultaneous, being separated in time by

$$t'_1 - t'_2 = \frac{v\Delta X/c^2}{\sqrt{1 - (v/c)^2}}.$$

Only if $\Delta X = 0$ (the two events occur at the same place) will $t'_1 = t'_2$. That is, only if $\Delta X = 0$ are simultaneous events in one frame also simultaneous in another frame in relative motion.

And in the previous section we found that time runs slow in one frame as observed from another frame that is in relative motion. We can get this result from the t' equation of the Lorentz transformation by differentiating it with respect to t. Thus,

$$\frac{dt'}{dt} = \frac{1 - (v/c^2)\frac{dx}{dt}}{\sqrt{1 - (v/c)^2}}.$$

But since

$$\frac{dx}{dt} = v,$$

the speed of the moving frame as measured by the observer in the stationary frame, this gives

$$dt' = \sqrt{1 - (v/c)^2}\, dt$$

which is the same result we obtained by analyzing the photon clock.

The Lorentz transformation contains other interesting implications beyond these. For example, mention has been made several times to the 'relativity principle,' the belief that uniform motion has no observable effect on the forms of physical laws. But how do we know who is moving and who is stationary? After all, a system moving to the right past a stationary system could just as well be thought as the stationary system, while it's the *other* system that is moving to the *left* (at speed $-v$).

To study this question with the Lorentz transformation, we'll invert the transformation (that is, solve for the unprimed variables in terms of the primed ones). What we get back is just what you probably thought—the Lorentz transformation with v replaced by $-v$. That is, the Lorentz transformation is symmetrical, so two observers in different frames of reference each say it is the *other's* clock that is running slow! This follows immediately, in fact, from the original transformation written in matrix form. That is, multiplying through the earlier matrix equation by the inverse of the boost matrix, we get

$$\begin{bmatrix} ct' \\ x' \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \gamma & \beta\gamma \\ \beta\gamma & \gamma \end{bmatrix}^{-1} \begin{bmatrix} ct \\ x \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \gamma & -\beta\gamma \\ -\beta\gamma & \gamma \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} ct \\ x \end{bmatrix}.$$

The only difference between the original boost matrix and its inverse (which is, of course, the new boost matrix for the new interpretation of which frame is the moving one) is a change in sign for β, that is, in the sign of v. The inverse transformation is

$$y = y'$$
$$z = z'$$
$$x = \frac{x' + vt'}{\sqrt{1 - (v/c)^2}}$$
$$t = \frac{t' + vx'/c^2}{\sqrt{1 - (v/c)^2}}.$$

As a final example of what the Lorentz transformation tells us, consider the so-called *addition of velocities* problem. Suppose you are in a high-speed spaceship traveling past Earth at speed v. Earth is the stationary system (with the unprimed variables), and the spaceship is the moving system (with the primed variables). Assume the x and x$'$ axes are along the direction of motion. Imagine next that while standing in the nose of the spaceship, just as the spaceship passes Earth, you fire a gun in the direction of motion (away from the Earth), with the bullet exiting the gun with a muzzle speed of w. How fast is the bullet moving away from Earth? The common-sense answer in Galileo's time was $v + w$, but we now know that the Galilean transformation is wrong. What does the Lorentz transformation say?

Inside the spaceship, the position of the bullet at time t' after the gun is fired is

$$x' = wt'.$$

From the inverse Lorentz transformation, the location of the bullet earth's frame is

$$x = \frac{x' + vt'}{\sqrt{1 - (v/c)^2}} = \frac{w + v}{\sqrt{1 - (v/c)^2}} t'.$$

The transformation also tells us that (using $x' = wt'$)

$$t = \frac{t' + vx'/c^2}{\sqrt{1 - (v/c)^2}} = \frac{1 + wv/c^2}{\sqrt{1 - (v/c)^2}} t'.$$

Thus, the speed of the bullet in *Earth's frame* is

$$\frac{x}{t} = \frac{w + v}{1 + wv/c^2}.$$

Notice that for a low-speed bullet ($w \ll c$) this result[82] is close to $w + v$, but at high values for w the result is very much different. Indeed, suppose we don't fire a gun at all, but rather replace it with a flashlight. Now, instead of a bullet, we shoot *photons* at $w = c$. The Galilean transformation would (incorrectly) say that a stationary observer on Earth would see the photons moving away at speed $v + c$,

---

[82]This result was found by the French physicist Henri Poincaré (1854-1912) in June 1905, three months *before* the publication of Einstein's special theory of relativity which also contains the result. And it was Poincaré who first stated (in 1904) that "no velocity can surpass that of light, any more than any temperature could fall below the zero absolute."

which is a superluminal speed. The Lorentz transformation, however, says that the Earth observer would see a speed of

$$\frac{c + \text{v}}{1 + c\text{v}/c^2} = \frac{c^2(c + \text{v})}{c^2 + c\text{v}} = \frac{c^2(c + \text{v})}{c(c + \text{v})} = c.$$

That is, no matter what the speed of the moving observer on the spaceship is, he sees the light from his flashlight traveling at the same speed as does the stationary observer back on Earth. This peculiar effect is unique to the speed of light ($w = c$). We've derived it here as a consequence of the Lorentz transformation, but in fact Einstein actually did things in reverse order. That is, he began by *postulating* the invariance of the speed of light[83] for all observers in uniform motion, combined that with the principle of relativity which says all physical laws look the same to those observers, and so derived the Lorentz transformation using no mathematics beyond high school algebra.

A mathematically elegant alternative derivation of the addition-of-velocities formula can be done by simply noticing that the condition of two successive boosts should be, itself, a boost. Thus, if we have a frame moving relative to a second frame (which is itself moving relative to a third frame), then the boost matrix of the first frame relative to the third frame is the product of the two individual boost matrices. That is,

$$\begin{bmatrix} \gamma_3 & \beta_3\gamma_3 \\ \beta_3\gamma_3 & \gamma_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \gamma_2 & \beta_2\gamma_2 \\ \beta_2\gamma_2 & \gamma_2 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \gamma_1 & \beta_1\gamma_1 \\ \beta_1\gamma_1 & \gamma_1 \end{bmatrix}.$$

From this it is easy to show (if you know how to multiply matrices!) that

$$\beta_3 = \frac{\beta_1 + \beta_2}{1 + \beta_1\beta_2}.$$

Substitution of

$$\beta_1 = \frac{w}{c}, \ \beta_2 = \frac{v}{c}$$

immediately gives the addition-of-velocities formula.

A failure to understand the implications of the invariance of the speed of light resulted in two stupendous errors in the story "To the Stars," cited in note 74. At all times an officer stands watch on the bridge of a near light-speed rocket ship to be sure the ship doesn't accidently *reach* the speed of light. This is to be avoided (according to the author) because to reach the speed of light would cause the ship to

---

[83]Einstein's postulate was experimentally confirmed in 1932.

"hang there forever unmoving [in time] ... locked, protected and condemned to eternity by zero time." This horrible state is so easy to stumble into (the author was apparently unaware that it would require *infinite* energy) that occasionally the ship has to fire a 'check-blast' from its forward rocket tubes to slow down! Equally absurd is the means by which the development of this 'fatal' condition is detected: the nose of the ship mounts a forward-pointing light source (our earlier flashlight) and so, if the ship is getting too near the speed of light, it will start to *overtake* the photons emitted by that source!

The biggest puzzle of all, actually, is why the editor of *Astounding Science Fiction* let such a technically goofy story appear in a magazine recognized for its usual faithfulness to known science. Particularly so since the story appeared in 1950 and, as long ago as December 1937, none other than Isaac Asimov (then 17 years old) had written a letter to the editor[84] giving the proper interpretation of what happens when $v = c$. Here's what the young Asimov wrote (notice the early hint of his life-long pessimism concerning time travel to the past that appears near the end of his letter):

> "The effect on time of increasing speeds is ... well known. Relativity states that as speed approaches that of light, time slows up until at 186,000 miles a second, time (so to speak) stands still. This seems to refute statements found in so many astronomy books (and science fiction stories) that even at the speed of light it would take four years to reach the nearest star. No such thing! As time halts at the speed of light, a person traveling from Alpha Centauri to the solar system, or vice-versa, would not be aware of any lapse of time. In that sense the speed of light is infinite (as was thought in ancient times). This by the way offers an entirely scientific (if impractical) means of travel into the future. Say that someone wants to see how the world would look a hundred years from now. His procedure would be as follows: getting into his spaceship, he would proceed to a spot fifty light-years away at the speed of light. The journey would, for him, be practically instantaneous (due to the curious behavior of time at the speed of light). But fifty years would have elapsed on earth. He makes the return trip at the same speed. Another fifty years lapse on earth and he lands a hundred years after his time. With this system, however, it would be impossible to travel into the past, so I don't think it will ever be adopted."

Young Asimov missed an important detail concerning the reversal of the spaceship's direction of travel for the return to Earth, and I'll come back to it later in this chapter. But certainly he displayed a *far* better knowledge of the physics of time than did the author of "To the Stars" (who was, by the way, L. Ron Hubbard, a prolific writer of fantasy and science fiction before founding the Church of Scientology).

---

[84]The editor who bought "To the Stars" was the same editor editor of *Astounding* when Asimov's letter appeared, and so he was certainly aware of it.

3.5 Spacetime Diagrams, Light Cones, Metrics, and Invariant Intervals

"Come back when you know tensor calculus and I'll explain to you about n-dimensional forces and the warping of world-lines."
   —a science fiction physicist's reply after being asked how his time machine works[85]

It is helpful in discussions about the spacetime of special relativity to use what are called *Minkowski spacetime diagrams*. These are plots of the spacetime coordinates of a particle; the resulting curve is called the *world line* of the particle. Such diagrams are four-dimensional—three space axes and one time axis—and hard to visualize, much less draw on a flat sheet of paper! The convention is to make do, whenever possible, with a simplified spacetime that has just one space axis (horizontal) and one time axis (vertical). As you'll recall from Chap. 1, physicists often call such a simplified diagram a *toy spacetime*.

So, for a particle at rest in some observer's frame of reference, its spacetime diagram for that observer is a *vertical* world line. If the particle is not at rest then its world line will tilt away from the vertical; the greater the speed the greater the deviation from the vertical. Accelerated particles will have world-lines that *curve* away from the vertical. Straight, uncurved world lines represent unaccelerated particles, that is, particles experiencing no forces and so in free fall. Such a world line is called a *geodesic*. In Fig. 3.7 the world lines for these various cases are shown on the same axes. It is assumed in the figure that all three particles are at $x = x_0$ when $t = 0$.
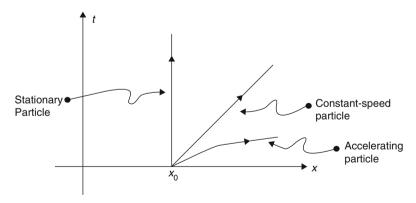
Fig. 3.7 World lines of three particles

---

[85]Poul Anderson, "The Little Monster," in *Science Fiction Adventure from WAY OUT* (R. Elwood, editor), Whitman 1973.
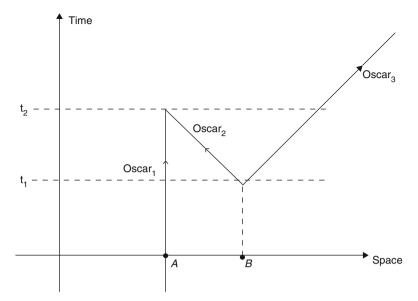
Fig. 3.8 A time traveler and his world line

Spacetime diagrams were embraced decades ago by philosophers looking for 'scientific' ways to support their position on time travel (whatever it might be), as opposed to the mere verbiage of traditional colleagues. A famous example of this is a 1962 paper by the Harvard philosophy professor Hillary Putnam (note 74 in Chap. 1). There we are asked to imagine the spacetime diagram of one Oscar Smith who, in Fig. 3.8, is at spatial location A next to his time machine. At time t_0 Oscar has not yet gotten into his time machine. A little later, at time t_1, we suddenly see not only Oscar at A but also *two more* Oscars who have appeared (apparently out of thin air) moving away from spatial location B! Between t_1 and t_2 we see the original Oscar at A and the two mysterious Oscars at B (for a total of three Oscars, labeled in the figure as Oscar$_1$, Oscar$_2$, and Oscar$_3$) move forward in time—but one of the new Oscars (Oscar$_2$) lives a decidedly odd existence in that his life seems to be running in reverse!

Eventually, at time t_2, the original Oscar$_1$ and the weird, reverse Oscar$_2$, merge and seemingly annihilate one another, vanishing into thin air to leave only a single Oscar (Oscar$_3$) for all time after t_2. Putnam argues that, although strange, what has just been described is still sensible and that, indeed, the very fact that we can draw the spacetime diagram of Fig. 3.8 supports the case for backward time travel. He claims this because although the spacetime diagram does show time increasing upward for all three Oscars (that is the time direction for an external observer) there is actually no 'spontaneous creation' or 'mutual annihilation' and all is sensible *if* Oscar$_2$ is understood actually to be a time traveler into the past with *his* time direction thus pointed opposite to that of the 'other two' Oscars. There is, of course, just *one* Oscar!
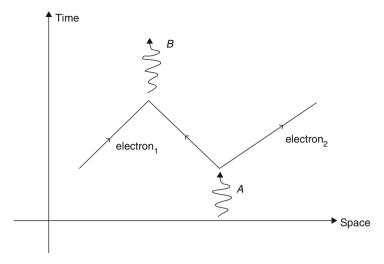
Fig. 3.9 Anti-matter via backward time travel

As mentioned back in Chap. 1, Putnam's suggestion was rebutted (see that chapter's note 76) by what is (in my opinion) an even less plausible mechanism for Putnam's kinked spacetime than is Putnam's invocation of time travel. That critic advocated, instead, an explanation based on matter transmitters and anti-matter, the latter an idea he credits to Feynman (who actually got it from Wheeler). In a paper by Feynman we do find the famous suggestion that a positron that appears to us to be moving forward in time is actually an electron traveling backward through time.[86] Logically, that greatly weakens the critic's view, because it puts him in the position of using anti-matter (explained in terms of backward time travel) to argue *against* backward time travel! But let's ignore that concern, give the critic the benefit of the doubt, and explore how anti-matter and backward time travel are imagined to be connected.

Feynman asks us to imagine the process shown in Fig. 3.9. Gamma ray A spontaneously creates an electron-positron pair, with electron$_2$ moving off to some distant region while the positron soon meets with electron$_1$, resulting in mutual annihilation and the production of gamma ray B. This description involves *three* particles, and each segment of the kinked line is a distinct particle. But Feynman said there is another way to look at this, a way that involves just *one* particle. According to Feynman, the kinked line in Fig. 3.9 (which should remind you of Oscar's kinked world line) is the world line of a single electron; the middle

---

[86]R. Feynman, "The Theory of Positrons," *Physical Review*, September 15, 1949, pp. 749-759. In a paper published the year before ("A Relativistic Cut-Off for Classical Electrodynamics," *Physical Review*, October 1948, pp. 939-946), he wrote "This idea that positrons might be electrons with the proper time reversed was suggested to me by Professor J. A. Wheeler." The identification of anti-matter with backward time travel occurred in science fiction (see note 124 in Chapter 1) almost simultaneously with Wheeler's speculation.

segment, that we call a positron, is just the electron traveling backward in time, and so we must reverse the arrowhead on it (indicating the opposite of the direction shown in Fig. 3.9).

There are two central questions at this point. First, why is a positron (with positive electric charge) moving forward in time mathematically (and physically) equivalent to a negatively charged electron moving backward in time? The answer is that the reversal in charge sign, which results from the reversal of the electron's proper time, follows from the TCP theorem that was mentioned in Chap. 2 (see note 38 there). And second, what causes the electron to suddenly move backward in time? Picturesquely, the electron is recoiling from the emitted burst of gamma ray B. Similarly, the absorption of the energy of gamma ray A by the electron that is recoiling backward in time causes a second recoil, giving the world line of what was originally called electron$_2$. This reinterpretation of a kinked spacetime diagram was described as follows (in Feynman's famous words): "It is as though a bombardier flying low over a road suddenly sees three roads and it is only when two of them come together and disappear that he realizes that he has simply passed over a long switchback in a single road."

In a later paper[87] Putnam's critic presented another line of attack against Putnam's interpretation of spacetime diagrams as lending support to time travel. There the critic observed that the presence of the time-reversed Oscar$_2$ shows that the "world of the Oscars" is not *temporally orientable*. A temporally orientable spacetime is one in which *every* point in it agrees with its local neighbors on the directions of past and future—a condition clearly *not* satisfied for the case of Oscar$_2$. As the critic pointed out, the first time travel spacetime discovered, the Gödel universe, *is* temporally orientable, and so in it the ambiguity of Oscar$_2$ (whether he is traveling backward in time as opposed to living forward 'in reverse') does not occur. That is, the critic agreed with Putnam's acceptance of the conceivability of time travel to the past, but not with his use of Feynman's concept of anti-matter as time-traveling matter. That critic wasn't alone in that opinion.

One physicist, for example, wrote of "Feynman's rather loose talk of particles 'traveling' backward . . . in time,"[88] and the well-known philosopher John Earman declared "It is true that Feynman uses the slogan 'Positrons are electrons running backward in time,' but it is dangerous to draw conclusions from slogans."[89] I am not sure what Earman meant by "slogans": a careful reading of Feynman indicates that he actually took the matter quite seriously.[90] In his 1949 positron paper (note 86), for example, he wrote that "the idea that positrons can be represented as electrons

---

[87]See R. Weingard in note 114 in Chapter 1.

[88]H. Price, "The Asymmetry of Radiation: Reinterpreting the Wheeler-Feynman Argument," *Foundations of Physics*, August 1991, pp. 959-975.

[89]J. Earman, "On Going Backward in Time," *Philosophy of Science*, September 1967, pp. 211-222.

[90]Feynman declares the view of a positron as a time traveling electron to be of value, for example, in his famous book *Quantum Electrodynamics*, W. A. Benjamin 1961, p. 68.

with proper time reversed relative to true time has been discussed by the author and others,"[91] and also that "Previous results suggest waves propagating . . . toward the past, and that such waves represent the propagation of a positron."

In any case, spacetime diagrams are highly useful in discussing time travel, but they do have some curious twists. In our everyday world, a path that joins two points on a surface with the *minimum* length is called a geodesic of that surface. As you'll see later in this chapter spacetime geodesics do indeed possess an extremal property, but rather than being a minimum it is a *maximum* property. Spacetime diagrams can be misleading on this matter, so it is important to remember that such diagrams are not a perfect representation of all the properties of a spacetime.

It is customary to draw spacetime diagrams with the speed of light as unity ($c = 1$). That is, a distance of 300,000 km on the space axis is represented by the same extension as is one second on the time axis. This means that the world line of a photon is tilted away from the vertical time axis by 45°. Because photons can travel in both space directions (to the left and to the right) in the two-dimensional spacetime we can draw on a piece of paper, and because the speed of light is the limiting speed of the universe, we can represent the collection of all possible world lines as those paths that *never* tilt more than 45° away from the vertical, which forms what is called a *light cone* in spacetime, as shown in Fig. 3.10 (which attempts to represent a *three*-dimensional spacetime, one with two space—imagine a y-axis, out of the paper, perpendicular to both the x and t axes—and one time dimension).

In Fig. 3.10 I have taken $x = y = 0$ at $t = 0$ for all the possible world lines involving speeds below the speed of light. Let's agree to call this spacetime point the Here-Now. Then, spacetime points in the upward half of the light cone are in the Future of Here-Now; similarly, spacetime points in the lower half of the light cone are in the Past of the Here-Now. We can draw a straight world line from the Here-Now to any point in the Future half-cone with a tilt of less than 45° away from the vertical, which means that a massive particle could travel from the Here-Now to that point at less than the speed of light. Similarly, a massive particle starting at any point in the Past half-cone could have reached the Here-Now by traveling at less than the speed of light. Such a world line is called *timelike* because its projection on the time axis is greater than its projection on a space axis—they are the world lines connecting spacetime points that are potentially causally linked. That is, an event at a spacetime point in the Past half-cone could have had an effect on the event at the Here-Now, even though its influence propagated at less than the speed of light. Also, an event at the Here-Now could potentially affect the event at any spacetime point in the Future half-cone of the Here-Now.

Any points in the regions of spacetime outside the Future and Past half-cones *cannot* be reached from the Here-Now except by world lines tilted more than 45°

---

[91]The "others" Feynman had in mind included, in particular, the eminent Swiss physicist Ernest C. G. Stükelberg (1905-1984), who in a 1942 article in the journal *Helvetica Physica Acta* also wrote of waves scattering backward in time.
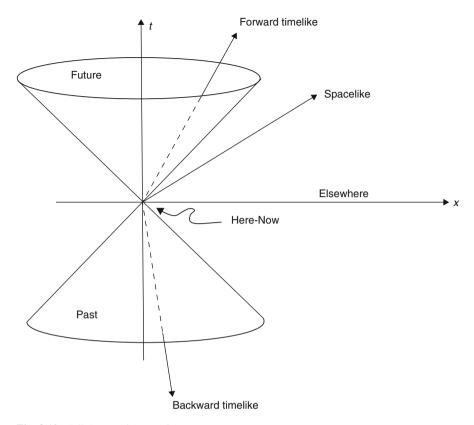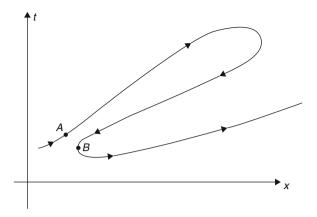
Fig. 3.10 A light cone in spacetime

away from the vertical. Such world lines, which represent travel at a speed faster than light, are called *spacelike* because their projections on a space axis is greater than their projections on the time axis. It is impossible for these world lines to connect causally linked events, and collectively they form the Elsewhere of the Here-Now. Notice that every point in spacetime has its own light cone. If A and B are causally linked, then if B is in the Future half-cone of A, then A is in the Past half-cone of B.

The imagery of the light cone is often useful in making seemingly quite abstract ideas appear transparent. For example, can an observer predict his own future from perfect knowledge of his own past? The easy answer is "No, because quantum uncertainties prohibit perfect knowledge of even the present, much less the past." But suppose we ignore quantum mechanics and limit our question to a universe that obeys only classical physics (which includes the special and general theories of relativity). Surprisingly (perhaps), the answer is *still* no. Having perfect knowledge of your own Past half-cone doesn't include knowing the *entire* past, so if you attempt to predict your own future (say, 1 min from now), there can be influences in Elsewhere that will arrive in the future (say, 59 s from now) about which you

Fig. 3.11 World line of a
particle traveling backward
in time from A to B

presently, by definition, cannot have any knowledge. And without that knowledge,
you cannot predict. As one writer amusingly concludes a tutorial on this topic, "the
prospect of predicting the future looks pretty bleak."[92]
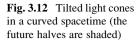
A spacetime diagram does not always have to have future directed world lines. If
a particle moves backward through time, assuming such a thing is possible, then the
diagram can show this by having the world line double back on itself, as in Fig. 3.11
(in which the world line curves back and comes arbitrarily close to itself: it is the
world line of a particle that visits itself in the past). Note that the world line in
Fig. 3.11 does not actually touch or cross itself, because that would represent more
than just a visit—it would represent a particle occupying the same spatial location at
the same time as its earlier self. That would be catastrophic and, because it *did not*
happen it *cannot* happen. Since the arrowheads on the world line always point in the
direction of the local future of the particle, if the 'particle' is actually human then
increasing memories are formed in the direction of the arrows. The time traveler at
B has more memories than he does at A, even though A and B are nearly identical
points in spacetime.
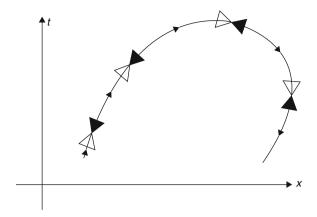
There is a problem with Fig. 3.11 that you may have caught. It is impossible to
draw such a doubled-back world line in such a way that *at all places* it never tilts
more than 45° from the vertical. That is, at least some portion of the world line will
have

$$\left|\frac{dx}{dt}\right| > 1$$

which represents superluminal motion (we'll return to this in Chap. 5). One way to
keep a bent-back world line always subluminal is to arrange for the light cones
along the world line to be tilted relative to each other, as shown in Fig. 3.12, which

[92]M. Hogarth, "Predicting the Future in Relativistic Spacetimes," *Studies in the History and Philosophy of Science*, December 1993, pp. 721-739.

Fig. 3.12 Tilted light cones
in a curved spacetime (the
future halves are shaded)

is possible only in a *curved* spacetime. This is an illustration of how general
relativity *locally* obeys special relativity's demand that nothing travels faster than
light and yet, *globally*, in curved spacetime, things are not so simple. In flat
spacetimes all light cones are always 'aligned,' but in curved spacetimes they
(generally) are not, and from that can come time travel to the past.[93]

Tilted light cones is the physics behind backward time travel around a rotating
Tipler cylinder, for example, a particular time machine we'll discuss later in
Chap. 5. Light cone tipping is, in fact, *essential* for time travel to the past. The
mere presence of mass tips light cones ('warps spacetime'), but the effect is
unnoticeable in everyday life on Earth. A truly enormous mass density is required
to tip nearby light cones over so that their Future halves noticeably open up toward
the massive body. If the massive body is additionally set to rotating, then a further
consequence of Einstein's general theory is that the local light cones are tilted
additionally in the direction of rotation. That is, the Future half-cones in spacetime
open-up both toward the body and in the direction of the rotation.

It should now be clear that the only way a world line can bend back on itself for a
close encounter visit is for both *x* and *t* to change. In other words, the world line of a
particle that remains fixed in space and reverses just its time direction *runs into
itself*. This is why the classic fictional time machine of H. G. Wells could not
possibly work. A real time machine must move in space as well as through time, as
does a Gödelian rocket (or, for that matter, as does the DeLorean time car in the
Back to the Future films). The idea of warping world lines, to support time travel to
the past, entered science fiction at an early date. For example, when the inventor of
the time machine in a 1930s tale[94] is asked about the principle underlying his
gadget, he replies "An electro-magnetic warping of the spacetime continuum.

---

[93]What is meant by a spacetime being *flat* will be formalized when we get to spacetime *metrics*
later in this section. The Minkowski spacetime of special relativity is a flat spacetime, has no tilted
light cones, and as such does *not* support time travel to the past.

[94]N. Schachner, "When the Future Dies," *Astounding Science Fiction*, June 1939.

The machine, if it works, will slide around the world-line of events and reappear at any specified time and place."

Using the Lorentz transformation equations from the previous section, we can establish quite general relationships between events in the Future, Past, and Elsewhere regions of spacetime. For example, (1) All events in the Future/Past for the Here-Now observer are in the Future/Past for any other nearby, relatively moving observer; (2) Any event in Elsewhere can appear to be simultaneous with the Here-Now for some observer and not simultaneous for another observer; and (3) The temporal ordering (the relations of *before* and *after*) of causally related events is the same for all observers. This is not so for events that are not causally related; if two events have a spacelike separation, then two observers can disagree over the temporal ordering of the events. This is, in fact, the basis for the two-wormhole and the cosmic string time machines, both of which will be discussed in Chap. 6. All these statements are easy to prove.

Consider, for example, statement (1). From the previous section we have (with $c = 1$)

$$t' = \frac{t - vx}{\sqrt{1 - v^2}} \quad \text{and} \quad x' = \frac{x - vt}{\sqrt{1 - v^2}}$$

where t and x are the coordinates of some event A as measured by the observer in the stationary reference frame, and t' is the time measured by the observer in the reference frame moving at speed v. Thus

$$x'^2 - t'^2 = \frac{(x - vt)^2 - (t - vx)^2}{1 - v^2} = [\text{after a little algebra}] \ x^2 - t^2.$$

For the stationary observer the criterion for an event to be in the Future half-cone is $t > |x|$, that is, $t^2 > x^2$. Thus, $x^2 - t^2 < 0$ for all Future events. But the foregoing result then says $x'^2 - t'^2 < 0$, too, which is the moving observer's criterion for the event being in his Future half-cone. The same sort of argument shows that the two observers also agree on Past events.

Next, suppose that two events A and B occur such that the stationary observer measures them to be $\Delta T = t_B - t_A$ apart in time. Then, we can establish statement (2) by writing

$$t_A' = \frac{t_A - vx_A}{\sqrt{1 - v^2}} \quad \text{and} \quad t_B' = \frac{(t_B + \Delta T) - vx_B}{\sqrt{1 - v^2}}$$

and so

$$\Delta T' = t_B' - t_A' = \frac{\Delta T + v(x_A - x_B)}{\sqrt{1 - v^2}}.$$

From this we have $\Delta T' = 0$ (that is, simultaneity) for the two events for the special observer moving at the speed

$$v = \frac{\Delta T}{x_B - x_A}$$

and this speed is less than the speed of light for the condition $x_B - x_A > \Delta T$. This is, of course, the condition for event B to be in the Elsewhere of event A. In fact, we can even have $\Delta T' < 0$ (with $\Delta T > 0$) for $v < 1$ in this case of spacelike separation of A and B. That is, a stationary observer and a sublight-speed moving observer can disagree about the temporal ordering of events with spacelike separation.

Similarly, for event B to be in the causal Future of event A, we have the condition $x_B - x_A < \Delta T$. Then,

$$\Delta T' = \frac{\Delta T - v(x_B - x_A)}{\sqrt{1 - v^2}} > \frac{\Delta T - v\Delta T}{\sqrt{1 - v^2}} = \Delta T \frac{1 - v}{\sqrt{1 - v^2}}.$$

Thus, $\Delta T > 0$ says $\Delta T' > 0$ for $v < 1$, and this establishes statement (3).

If we were drawing diagrams with both axes representing space (a plot of y versus x, for example), we would normally define a *distance metric* for the diagram using our everyday ideas about distance. That is, we could say that if we make differential movements of dx and dy along the two coordinate axes, then the differential distance ds is given by

$$(ds)^2 = (dx)^2 + (dy)^2.$$

This is, of course, just the Pythagorean theorem for the 'Euclidean' or 'as the crow flies' distance function. But it is not the only possible distance function. A distance function has several interesting mathematical properties,[95] but the one we are particularly interested in here is its invariance with respect to the coordinate system. For example, if we draw a line segment on a flat sheet of paper, the physical distance between its end-points does not depend on how we happen to select the x and y axes, a fact illustrated in Fig. 3.13 with the addition of a rotated and translated primed system. The coordinates for the endpoints A and B are obviously different in the two coordinate systems, but we still find that

$$(dx)^2 + (dy)^2 = (dx')^2 + (dy')^2.$$

---

[95]Mathematicians have defined the general properties of a distance function as follows: if A and B are any two points, and if $d(A,B)$ is the distance between A and B, then (1) $d(A,B) = d(B,A)$; (2) $d(A,B) = 0$ if and only if $A = B$; and (3) if C is any third point, then $d(A,B) \leq d(A,C) + d(C,B)$. The Pythagorean distance function possesses all three of these properties, but so do many other functions (for example, $ds = |dx| + |dy|$).
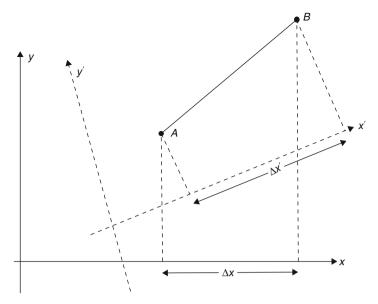
Fig. 3.13 Rotated/translated coordinate systems

We say that the Pythagorean distance function is *invariant*, that it is the same for all coordinates systems that are simply rotations and/or translations of each other.

We know that different observers, if in relative motion in the same spacetime, will see different space and time coordinates for the same event. Thus, it is natural to ask 'what is the metric for flat spacetime?' Is there, in fact, a metric that gives the same *distance* between two events for all observers? We might try to generalize in the obvious way from the Pythagorean theorem, and write

$$(ds)^2 = (dt)^2 + (dx)^2 + (dy)^2 + (dz)^2$$

where now all four dimensions are included. We would then ask ourselves whether it is true that

$$(ds)^2 = (ds')^2 = (dt')^2 + (dx')^2 + (dy')^2 + (dz')^2?$$

For our simple two-dimensional spacetime, this question reduces to asking whether

$$(dt)^2 + (dx)^2 = (dt')^2 + (dx')^2?$$

Using the Lorentz transformation equations from earlier, it is easy to discover that the answer is no. The 'natural' generalization of Pythagorean distance for flat, two-dimensional spacetime fails when four dimensions are included. So, what do we do now? Recalling the words of Professor Mundle from *Some First Words* (see note 23 there), we might wonder whether this difficulty could result from the fact

that there is no fourth direction along which the time axis can point at right angles to the three space directions? At least, there is no *real* direction—but perhaps there is an imaginary one. Accordingly, with $= \sqrt{-1}$, let's try

$$(ds)^2 = (idt)^2 + (dx)^2 + (dy)^2 + (dz)^2 = -(dt)^2 + (dx)^2 + (dy)^2 + (dz)^2.$$

Using *imaginary time*, something that seems to be in the realm of science fiction, has resulted in a change in the sign of $(dt)^2$.

This is a crucial change, however, because this new metric *is* invariant. For a reason to be explained in the next section, I will use the negative of this metric (a choice that has no impact on the invariance property) and so write

$$(ds)^2 = (dt)^2 - (dx)^2 - (dy)^2 - (dz)^2.$$

For our simplified two-dimensional spacetime this reduces to

$$(ds)^2 = (dt)^2 - (dx)^2.$$

As before, the Lorentz transformation equations (with $c = 1$) are

$$t' = \frac{t - vx}{\sqrt{1 - v^2}} \quad \text{and} \ \ x' = \frac{x - vt}{\sqrt{1 - v^2}}.$$

If we then calculate dx' and dt' from these equations, using

$$dx' = \frac{\partial x'}{\partial x}dx + \frac{\partial x'}{\partial t}dt, dt' = \frac{\partial t'}{\partial x}dx + \frac{\partial t'}{\partial t}dt$$

which are the fundamental relations for the *total* differential[96] of a function of two variables, and insert the results into $(dt')^2 - (dx')^2$, we quickly discover the invariance property of this quantity (a result we actually found earlier, in a different way, when we showed that observers in relative motion agree about what events are in the Future and what events are in the Past). Thus,

$$(dt')^2 - (dx')^2 = (dt)^2 - (dx)^2.$$

This quantity, on either side of the equality, is called the spacetime *interval* between the two events separated in flat spacetime by either dt, dx, dy, and dz, or by dt', dx', dy', and dz'. The observers in the unprimed and the primed systems see different individual space and time separations for two events, but they see the same

---

[96]The $\frac{\partial}{\partial x}$ and $\frac{\partial}{\partial t}$ symbols denote the *partial* derivatives with respect to x and t (see any good calculus book to brush-up on this). The rest of this chapter *will* have some more math in it, involving derivatives and even an integral or two, but nothing beyond freshman calculus. I've included it mostly for those who would feel cheated without *some* math!

interval. A single time coordinate, and three space coordinates, are said to form a *four-vector that is invariant under Lorentz transformation*. There are, in addition, other four-vectors that are also invariant under Lorentz transformation, such as the energy-momentum, velocity, and force four-vectors; all these quantities have invariants that are formed the same way, by taking the difference of the squares of the time components and the sum of the squares of the space components. The intrusion of the square root of minus one, in the time coordinate of the metric, seems a pretty clear indication that time *is* different from space.[97]

But still, the spatialization of time is nonetheless deeply embedded in Western culture. For example, when writing her popular 1978 book, drawing historical parallels between the fourteenth and twentieth centuries, Barbara Tuchman titled it *A Distant Mirror*, and not *An Old Mirror*. The mathematical mixing of space and time appeared quite early in science fiction, but often in comically mangled form. In one such tale, for example, as an evil scientist uses his time machine to transport captives into the past, he tells them, "We've got a longish journey before us, ten thousand years more, multiplied by the fourth power of two thousand miles."[98]

In general relativity, the metric of any four-dimensional spacetime has the structure of what mathematicians call a *symmetric quadratic Riemannian form*:

$$(ds)^2 = \sum_{i=1}^{4} \sum_{j=1}^{4} g_{ij}(dx_i)(dx_j), g_{ij} = g_{ji}$$

where $x_1 = t$, $x_2 = x$, $x_3 = y$, and $x_4 = z$, and the 16 g's are all functions of these four variables. (Because of the symmetry condition, only 10 of the g's are independent.) In this notation, a *flat* spacetime is mathematically characterized by $g_{11} = 1$, $g_{22} = g_{33} = g_{44} = -1$, $g_{ij} = 0$ for all $i \neq j$. Now, for a given spacetime, one can arbitrarily choose an infinity of coordinate systems. If just one of this infinity of systems is such that the ± 1, 0 values for the g's occur, then that spacetime is *globally* (that is, everywhere) flat. If no such coordinate system exists, then that spacetime is necessarily *curved*—I'll give you a more intuitive view of curvature in just a bit. (If this notation is extended to a fifth dimension[99] by including the additional coordinate x_5, then there are an additional eight off-diagonal g's and so

---

[97]Writing in 1972, one famous physicist said of his first encounter with the metric of special relativity (Minkowski spacetime), "Now, when I saw that minus sign [in $-(dt)^2$], it produced a tremendous effect on me. I immediately saw that here was something new." See P. A. M. Dirac, "Recollections of an Exciting Era," in *History of Twentieth Century Physics* (C. Weiner, editor), Academic Press 1977.

[98]V. Rousseau, "The Atom Smasher," *Astounding Stories*, May 1930.

[99]The fifth dimension was introduced in the 1920s by the German physicist Theodor Kaluza (1885-1954), but just what the nature of this fifth dimension might be remains a mystery. A few years after Kaluza, the Swedish physicist Oscar Klein (1894-1977) speculated that it might be a spatial dimension curled-up in a tiny circular path, so tiny that we don't notice it; the issue remains open. The idea of a fifth dimension appeared early in pulp science fiction, as in the January 1931 tale "The Fifth-Dimension Catapult," (*Astounding*) by Murray Leinster.

four new *independent* g's. These are just sufficient to describe the electromagnetic field, too, along with the gravitational field described by the other ten g's. That is what is meant by saying five-dimensional spacetime 'unifies' gravity with electromagnetism.) There is a g_{55}, too, which could be allowed to model a slowly varying gravitational constant, as suggested by Dirac in 1938.

The g functions are the components of the so-called *metric tensor of the second rank* (see the last discussion question for more on what this means) of that spacetime. The g's at each point in spacetime are related to the curvature of spacetime at that point, which in turn is dependent on the g's and on the energy density at that point. In fact, the ten equations for the g's, which *are* the famous Einstein gravitational partial differential field equations, are both nonlinear and coupled. That is, each g_{ij} is in general a nonlinear function of all the other g_{ik}, which accounts for the notorious difficulty[100] in finding analytical solutions to the field equations except in certain highly special cases, such as the spacetime of spinning spheres and rotating infinite cylinders.

What does it mean to 'solve' the field equations? It is useful to think of the equations schematically as follows:

local geometry of spacetime   ←   local density , momentum and stress of the mass - energy of spacetime where the direction of the arrowhead means that the 'usual' practice is to assume the right-hand side (the so-called stress-energy tensor) as given, and then attempt to calculate the left-hand side. If the attempted calculation can be done, then one has solved the field equations for the spacetime geometry that is associated with the assumed mass-energy distribution.

Suppose, however, that we reverse the direction of the arrowhead. That is, suppose we assume a desired geometry. That is what Einstein did when he assumed the geometry of a *static* (non-expanding) universe and solved for the required mass-energy. What he found was just what had been observed by astronomers up to that time—a multitude of 'grains of matter' (what physicists call *dust*) plus the infamous cosmological constant. The constant, with its repulsive gravity, was needed to counteract the ordinary gravitational attraction of the stars that tends to pull them together. The later discovery that the universe is not static, but rather is expanding, rendered Einstein's solution moot.

Now let's go Einstein one better, and assume a spacetime geometry that contains closed timelike curves (a time machine, in other words) and then try to calculate the mass-energy distribution required by that spacetime. If that can be accomplished— and in fact the field equations themselves provide an algorithmic means of solution in this direction—then the physicist's work is done. The required mass-energy distribution requirements are put out to bid to 'spacetime engineers' and the lowest bidder 'simply' constructs that mass-energy distribution and so builds us our time machine! When the calculations are done, however, what has happened without

---

[100]An elementary, quite interesting discussion of the enormous computational complexity of the field equations is presented in Richard Pavelle and Paul S. Wang, "MACSYMA from F to G," *Journal of Symbolic Computation*, March 1985, pp. 69-100.

fail, at least up to now, is that the resulting mass-energy distribution comes out with an 'unphysical' nature, a technical way of saying our spacetime engineer wouldn't know *how* to assemble the required mass-energy distribution. What is meant by 'unphysical' will be explored, in the particular case of wormhole time machines, in Chap. 6.

The 16 g's for a four dimensional spacetime are often written in the form of a 4×4 matrix. In fact, the metric tensor is of the *second* rank precisely because a matrix has a *two*-dimensional form; scalars and vectors, which have forms of zero and one dimension, are tensors of rank zero and one, respectively. The collection of the algebraic signs of the main diagonal terms (the g_{ii}) is called the *signature* of the metric tensor. The signature of flat (Minkowski) spacetime is thus written as $[+, -, -, -]$; in more general (curved) spacetimes, this same signature is called *Lorentzian*. By contrast, the signature of a four-dimensional Euclidean space is $[+, +, +, +]$. This signature is called *Riemannian*. The geometry of flat, Minkowski spacetime is not Euclidean geometry because the spacetime signature of its metric has both plus *and* minus signs. As an uncurved spacetime, Minkowski spacetime *has no gravity*; to get gravity, we need a curved spacetime.

The idea of linking the curvature of a four-dimensional space to physical phenomena is the signature feature of general relativity, but it actually pre-dates Einstein by decades. It can be found, for example, in the work of the British mathematician William Kingdon Clifford (1845–1879), done in the 1860s and 1870s before Einstein's birth (in the year of Clifford's death). In his posthumously published book *The Common Sense of the Exact Sciences* (1885), Clifford wrote "We may conceive our space to have everywhere a nearly uniform curvature, but that slight variations of the curvature may occur from point to point and themselves vary with time. These variations of the curvature with time may produce effects which we not unnaturally attribute to physical causes independent of the curvature of our space. We may even go so far as to assign to this variation of the curvature what really happens in that phenomenon which we term the motion of matter." It isn't a long jump from "motion of matter" to gravity![101]

Not everyone enthusiastically embraced this new, radical view of nature. For example, the great Scottish mathematical physicist James Clerk Maxwell (1831–1879), of Maxwell's equations fame, who knew Clifford through their common membership in the London Mathematical Society, summarily dismissed this part of Clifford's work as simply the speculations of a "space crumbler." Decades later, Einstein faced the same rejection when the eminent British

---

[101]Clifford almost surely found inspiration in this part of his work from the even earlier efforts of the German mathematician Bernhard Riemann (1826-1866). See, for example, Clifford's translation of Riemann's famous 1854 lecture "On the Hypotheses Which Lie at the Bases of Geometry," *Nature*, May 1, 1873, pp. 14-17, and continued in the next issue (May 8, 1873, pp. 36-37).

astronomer Sir James Jeans declared "Einstein's crumbling of his four-dimensional space may … be considered to be … fictitious."[102]

Spacetime geometries are not easy concepts to grasp, and the metrics of curved spacetimes are even more complicated than is the metric of the flat spacetime of Minkowski's special relativity. As one paper so aptly put it, "Experience has taught us that the space in which we live has a geometry that is three-dimensional and Euclidean … We are very much at home with [that] geometry … But the geometric properties of a Minkowskian space are so alien to us that we may well despair of visualizing them, and a Riemannian [curved] space … seems totally beyond comprehension."[103]

An important feature of Riemannian geometry is that although it is generally not globally flat, it is always *locally* flat. Thus any sufficiently small region in a curved Riemannian spacetime can be approximated, with arbitrarily small error, by a flat pseudo-Euclidean Minkowskian spacetime. That is, at each point in Riemannian spacetime, there is some *particular* inertial frame of reference in which special relativity is all there is to spacetime physics *at that point*. The particular inertial frame required is different, however, from point to point.

In a coordinate system different from rectangular, the flat Minkowskian metric can appear radically altered, but that is just an artifact of the mathematics and has no physical significance. For example, in spherical coordinates the Minkowskian metric becomes the equivalent

$$(ds)^2 = (dt)^2 - (dr)^2 - (rd\theta)^2 - (rsin(\theta)d\phi)^2$$

where ϕ is the azimuthal angle and θ is the angle measured from the polar axis. A related metric occurs in the theory of spherically symmetric, static (no time variation) time machine wormholes (discussed in Chap. 6), of the form

$$(ds)^2 = \left(e^{a(r)}dt\right)^2 - \frac{(dr)^2}{1 - \frac{b(r)}{r}} - (rd\theta)^2 - (rsin(\theta)d\phi)^2$$

where $a(r)$ is called the *redshift function* and $b(r)$ is called the *shape factor*. These two functions are nearly arbitrary, subject only to the constraints that both $b(r)/r$ and $a(r)$ vanish as r goes to infinity (r is the radial distance from the throat of the wormhole mouth). Indeed, as r increases, this curved wormhole spacetime metric

[102]Quoted in P. Kerszberg, "The Relativity of Rotation in the Early Foundations of General Relativity," *Studies in History and Philosophy of Science*, March 1987, pp. 53-79.

[103]R. W. Brehme and W. E. Moore, "Gravitational and Two-Dimensional Curved Surfaces," *American Journal of Physics*, July 1969, pp. 683-692.
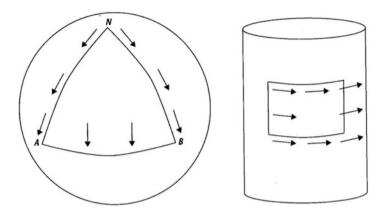
Fig. 3.14 The curvature of a space can be revealed by the process of parallel transport

reduces to that of flat Minkowskian spacetime, so this wormhole spacetime is said to be *asymptotically flat*.[104]

An intuitive appreciation of 'flatness' can be realized in terms of what is called the *parallel transport* of a vector around a closed path. In a curved space the vector will experience a rotation, which will not occur in a flat space. Two examples of parallel transport in ordinary three-dimensional space are shown in Fig. 3.14. The spherical surface on the left is curved because if you slide the vector from N to A to B and then back to N, all the while keeping it parallel to its immediately previous orientation, then when it gets back to N the vector will point to B, *not* toward A as it initially did. A similar trip on the cylindrical surface, however, results in zero rotation of the vector. Thus, the cylindrical surface, despite superficial appearances, is *not* curved.

Using the idea of the metric tensor, we can develop a more formal demonstration that the surface of a sphere, unlike like that of a cylinder, is not flat. On the surface of a sphere of radius a (*on the surface $r = a$ everywhere, and so $dr = 0$*), the measure of the distance between two points (in spherical coordinates) is[105]

$$(ds)^2 = a^2 sin^2(\theta)(d\phi)^2 + a^2(d\theta)^2.$$

Writing $x_1 = \phi$ and $x_2 = \theta$ yields the more general form

---

[104]For wormhole spacetimes that are not asymptotically flat, see (for example) K. Narahara, *et al.*, "Traversable Wormhole in the Expanding Universe," *Physics Letters B*, September 29, 1994, pp. 319-323.

[105]Note *carefully* that this is a purely spatial problem, with no time, and we are taking all of the metric coefficients as positive (unlike in the case of a spacetime metric).

$$(ds)^2 = g_{11}(dx_1)^2 + g_{12}(dx_1)(dx_2) + g_{21}(dx_2)(dx_1) + g_{22}(dx_2)^2$$

or, using the symmetry condition $g_{12} = g_{21}$, we have

$$(ds)^2 = g_{11}(dx_1)^2 + 2g_{12}(dx_1)(dx_2) + g_{22}(dx_2)^2.$$

From this we immediately have $g_{11} = a^2 sin^2(\theta)$, $g_{22} = a^2$, and $g_{12} = g_{21} = 0$.

Now, suppose we ask whether it is possible to find some new coordinate system (with variables x_1' and x_2') in which the invariant $(ds)^2$ is given by the flat Euclidean metric $(dx_1')^2 + (dx_2')^2$. In such a coordinate system (if it exists) we would have the 'flatness conditions' of $g_{11}' = g_{22}' = 1$ and $g_{12}' = g_{21}' = 0$. With such a change of coordinates, each of our original ϕ, θ coordinates would generally be a function of both of the new coordinates—that is, $\phi = \phi(x_1', x_2')$ and $\theta = \theta(x_1', x_2')$. Thus, writing the total differential of a function of two variables (see note 96 again), we have

$$d\phi = \frac{\partial \phi}{\partial x_1'} dx_1' + \frac{\partial \phi}{\partial x_2'} dx_2'$$

$$d\theta = \frac{\partial \theta}{\partial x_1'} dx_1' + \frac{\partial \theta}{\partial x_2'} dx_2'.$$

Substituting these expressions into the above expression for $(ds)^2$ on the surface of a sphere, and collecting terms, we arrive at

$$
\begin{aligned}
(ds)^2 &= a^2 \left\{ \left[sin^2(\theta)\left(\frac{\partial \phi}{\partial x_1'}\right)^2 + \left(\frac{\partial \theta}{\partial x_1'}\right) \right] (dx_1')^2 + \left[sin^2(\theta)\left(\frac{\partial \phi}{\partial x_2'}\right)^2 + \left(\frac{\partial \theta}{\partial x_2'}\right)^2 \right] (dx_2')^2 \right. \\
&\quad \left. + 2\left[sin^2(\theta)\frac{\partial \phi}{\partial x_1'}\frac{\partial \phi}{\partial x_2'} + \frac{\partial \theta}{\partial x_1'}\frac{\partial \theta}{\partial x_2'} \right](dx_1')(dx_2') \right\} \\
&= g_{11}'(dx_1')^2 + 2g_{12}'(dx_1')(dx_2') + g_{22}'(dx_2')^2
\end{aligned}
$$

We can now immediately write down each of the g' and, if we demand that they satisfy the 'flatness conditions,' then we have the following three statements:

$$sin^2(\theta)\left(\frac{\partial \phi}{\partial x_1'}\right)^2 + \left(\frac{\partial \theta}{\partial x_1'}\right)^2 = \frac{1}{a^2}$$

$$sin^2(\theta)\left(\frac{\partial \phi}{\partial x_2'}\right)^2 + \left(\frac{\partial \theta}{\partial x_2'}\right)^2 = \frac{1}{a^2}$$

$$sin^2(\theta)\frac{\partial \phi}{\partial x_1'}\frac{\partial \phi}{\partial x_2'} + \frac{\partial \theta}{\partial x_1'}\frac{\partial \theta}{\partial x_2'} = 0.$$

For a *globally* flat surface, that is, a surface that is flat *everywhere*, these three statements must hold in particular at the poles of the sphere. That is, at $\theta = 0^\circ$

and at $\theta = 180^\circ$. At both of these points $\sin(\theta) = 0$, and so at the poles the three statements reduce to

$$\left(\frac{\partial\theta}{\partial x_1'}\right)^2 = \frac{1}{a^2}$$

$$\left(\frac{\partial\theta}{\partial x_2'}\right)^2 = \frac{1}{a^2}$$

$$\frac{\partial\theta}{\partial x_1'}\frac{\partial\theta}{\partial x_2'} = 0.$$

But the third statement is incompatible with the first two and, because of that incompatibility, there is no primed coordinate system in which the g' coefficients in the metric are those of a globally flat metric. Thus, unlike the surface of a cylinder, the surface of a sphere is not flat but rather is curved. This almost surely comes as no surprise to you, but now you can *prove* it!

3.6   Proper Time and the Twin Paradox in Time Travel to the Future

"[The] equations of duo-quadrant lineations [have] been substantiated ... Our fourth-angle deviation from the six conceivable electronic dimensions did the trick all right. I went forward in Time."[106]

The spacetime interval of the previous section has an important interpretation that leads to one of the more dazzling results of special relativity—time travel into the future. First, recall the flat spacetime metric

$$(ds)^2 = (dt)^2 - (dx)^2 - (dy)^2 - (dz)^2$$

in which the use of unprimed variables indicates that the measurements on the space and time coordinates of a moving particle are made with respect to a stationary observer's frame of reference. Now, suppose that the space and time coordinates of a moving particle are made with respect to the particle instead. Then, using primed variables for measurements made in this new frame of reference, $dx' = dy' = dz' = 0$ because the particle is always at the origin (by definition)! Recalling the invariance of the spacetime interval for all observers, we conclude that

---

[106]A science fiction scientist babbles incoherent nonsense, not special relativity, about how to travel into the future, in a story by J. H. Haggard, "He Who Masters Time," *Thrilling Wonder Stories*, February 1937.

$$(ds')^2 = (ds)^2 = (dt')^2.$$

That is, the spacetime interval between two events is the time lapse measured by a clock attached to a particle that moves from one event to the other. This time is called *proper time*, which gets its name from the idea that it belongs to (is the *property* of) the moving particle. This is the technical reason for taking (as we did in the previous section) $(ds)^2 = (dt)^2 - (dx)^2$ rather than $(ds)^2 = (dx)^2 - (dt)^2$. The first choice avoids the somewhat awkward result of an imaginary proper time.

Next, we'll adopt what has come to be called the *clock hypothesis*, which states that an accelerated clock runs at the same instantaneous rate as an unaccelerated clock that is moving alongside at the instantaneously same speed. As we showed earlier (take a look back at Sect. 3.3), if the accelerated clock's instantaneous speed is v, then its rate of time keeping (dt') is related to that of the 'stationary' (unaccelerated) clock (dt) as

$$dt' = \sqrt{1 - \left(\frac{v}{c}\right)^2}\, dt$$

where c is the speed of light. The clock hypothesis is generally assumed to be true. Einstein, himself, in his famous 1905 special relativity paper, specifically took the rate of a clock's timekeeping to be velocity-dependent only. When asked during an interview decades later whether it is permissible to use special relativity in situations involving acceleration, Einstein replied "Oh, yes, that is all right as long as gravity does not enter; in all other cases, special relativity is applicable. Although, perhaps the general theory approach might be better, it is not necessary."[107]

The clock hypothesis has long had experimental verification. For example, in one experiment the time keeping of accelerated atomic clocks was determined to be given precisely by the time dilation formula of special relativity, even when their direct mechanical acceleration (the centripetal acceleration produced by a rapidly spinning disk) exceeded 66,000 gees![108] And even more impressive are the time dilation results of a later experiment in which the time keeping of near light-speed charged particles, orbiting in a magnetic field, was in excellent agreement with the time dilation formula, even as accelerations well in excess of 10^{15} gees were reached![109]

The total elapsed time between two events A and B, as measured by the proper time of an accelerated clock making the journey, is, therefore, given by

[107]R. S. Shankland, "Conversations with Albert Einstein," *American Journal of Physics*, January 1963, pp. 47-57.

[108]H. J. Hay, *et al.*, "Measurement of the Red Shift in an Accelerated System Using the Mössbauer Effect in Fe^{57}," *Physical Review Letters*, February 15, 1960, pp. 165-166.

[109]J. Bailey, *et al.*, "Measurements of Relativistic Time Dilation for Positive and Negative Muons in a Circular Orbit," *Nature*, July 29, 1977, pp. 301-305.
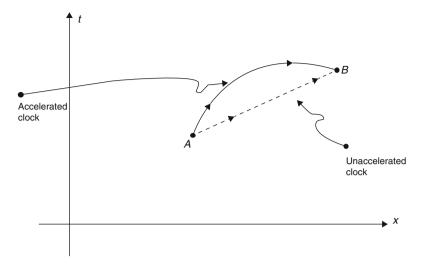
Fig. 3.15 World lines of two clocks (one accelerated and one unaccelerated)

$$t' = \int dt' = \int_{t_A}^{t_B} \sqrt{1 - \left(\frac{v}{c}\right)^2}\, dt < t_B - t_A \text{ if } v \neq 0$$

where $t_B - t_A$ is the elapsed time between A and B as measured by the unaccelerated clock. The inequality results because, for $v \neq 0$, the integrand is always less than 1. Now, we know that in a spacetime diagram the world line of the unaccelerated clock is a straight line, whereas the world line of the accelerated clock is a curved line. Thus, using Fig. 3.15, combined with the inequality $t' < t_B - t_A$, we have the following central result: the world line of *maximum* proper time is the one that *looks the shortest*, that is, the straight (or free-falling geodesic) world line. In the spacetime diagram the curved line looks longer, but in fact any curved line will have a smaller proper time than does the straight world line. This is a dramatic example of how Minkowskian *spacetime* geometry differs from Euclidean *space* geometry; in the latter geometry, there is no longest path between two points.

From this, we can now understand the famous paradox of the twins, Bob and Bill. Bill remains on Earth, but Bob gets into a rocket ship and goes on a high speed trip out into space. Eventually he brings his ship to a stop, turns around, and returns to Earth. The world lines of Bob and Bill are initially together, then they diverge as Bob goes on his trip, and then they come together again at the end of Bob's trip, as shown in Fig. 3.16. The details of Bob's trip are not important for a general statement of the paradox (although in just a bit I *will* present the details for one possible trip). All we need observe for now is that Bill's world line from A to B is straight, whereas Bob's is curved. Bill's body (that is, his local clock) will therefore measure a greater proper time than will Bob's; that is, Bob will be younger than his stay-at-home twin! Equivalently, upon his return Bob will hear his Earthbound
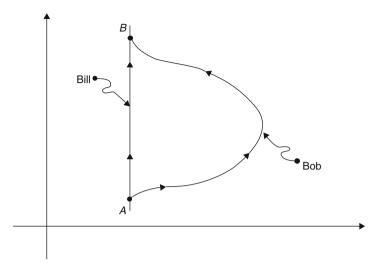
Fig. 3.16 World lines of unaccelerated (Bill) and accelerated (Bob) twins

brother declare the date to be further in the future than Bob's trip lasted (according to Bob). Bob will therefore conclude that he has traveled into the future.[110]

This situation is called a paradox, not because of the time travel aspect (there are no logical paradoxes associated with travel into the future), but rather because it seems to violate the very spirit of special relativity. That is, from Bill's point of view, Bob at first travels away and then returns. But one can argue that from Bob's point of view it is Bill who first recedes and then returns. So why is it *Bob* who is the younger, and not Bill? Long after Einstein's 1905 publication of special relativity, this point remained a great puzzle for many. For example, in the 1923 Presidential Address to the Eastern Division of the American Philosophical Association, we read this very objection to the twin paradox. The conclusion by the speaker is that such a thing "could happen only in a universe in which all squares were round and the *principio contradiction* had been put to sleep."[111]

So, what's the answer, why is it *Bob* who is the younger of the twins? The classic physics answer is that the two points of view are actually *not* symmetrical, that there is a definite asymmetry between Bill and Bob. After all, it is Bob who feels the acceleration from the rocket's engines as he blasts off from Earth—it is Bob, not

---

[110]The twin paradox is hinted at in Einstein's 1905 paper, but it is in a 1911 address to the International Congress of Philosophy in Bologna, by the French physicist Paul Langevin (1872-1946), that a human space traveler is first introduced (in a cannonball moving at near light-speed, an idea motivated by Langevin's reading of Jules Verne's 1872 novel *From the Earth to the Moon*). The writer Pierre Boulle proudly mentioned this contribution by his fellow Frenchman in the time travel story "Time Out of Mind" (you can find it in Boulle's collection *Time Out of Mind*, Vanguard Press 1966).

[111]W. P. Montague, "The Einstein Theory and a Possible Alternative," *The Philosophical Review*, March 1924, pp. 143-170.

Bill, who feels *force*—whereas Bill feels nothing unusual as he remains on Earth. The more fundamental physics answer, however, is that Bob's world line in spacetime is curved, whereas Bill's is straight.

In an open, spatially unbounded, flat spacetime, *curved* is indeed synonymous with *accelerated*, but this need not be so in a *closed,* flat spacetime. In an open, flat spacetime, the only way two world lines can diverge in the past and then meet again in the future is for at least one of them to curve, but in a closed but still flat spacetime, it is possible for two straight world lines to meet more than once. For example, Fig. 3.17 shows a simple two-dimensional spacetime that is the surface of a cylinder (which you'll recall we argued earlier is flat), rather than an infinite flat plane. The two world lines in that figure are *both* straight: to visualize this, imagine cutting the cylinder open along the (vertical) time dimension, and then flattening it out. Bob's world line, however, looks longer in the spacetime diagram, so Bob's proper time will be less than Bill's when they meet again, even though now *neither* of them has experienced any acceleration.[112] This is simply an interesting mathematical exercise, however, and as far as is known the spacetime we live in is not cylindrical and so Bob's trip into the future will require an accelerating rocketship.[113]
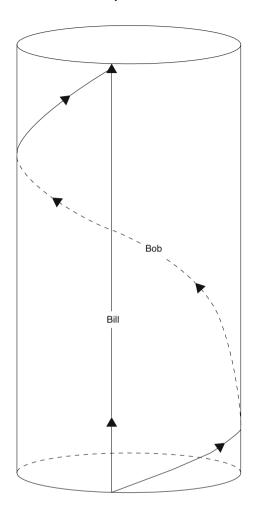
If we specify the details of Bob's trip, we can then precisely calculate the difference in elapsed time for the twins. In an analysis that dates back to 1962, the German astrophysicist Sebastian von Hoerner (1919–2003) did that for the following trip[114]: To begin, Bob gets into his rocket ship at time $t = t' = 0$ (t is time measured on Earth by Bill, and t' is time measured by Bob in his rocket). The Bill and Bob synchronize their clocks at the instant of departure. Bob's trip is to be made in comfort, and so his rocket accelerates at a constant rate (a one gee acceleration, for example, would be equivalent to Earth's gravity, and Bob would feel right at home). This is of practical importance, obviously, because we do not want the experienced acceleration to be incompatible with the physical survival of Bob. Bob

---

[112]See C. H. Brans and D. R. Stewart, "Unaccelerated-Returning Twin Paradox in Flat Space-Time," *Physical Review D*, September 15, 1973, pp. 1662-1666. For a similar treatment, this time by a mathematician, see Jeffrey R. Weeks, "The Twin Paradox in a Closed Universe," *American Mathematical Monthly*, August-September 2001, pp. 585-589.

[113]In Chapter 6 we'll discuss the idea of traveling into the past by moving faster than light (*superluminal* motion). A treatment of such travel, in Bob's cylindrical spacetime, is by S. K. Blau, "Would a Topology Change Allow Ms. Bright to Travel Backward in Time?" *American Journal of Physics*, March 1998, pp. 179-185, which answers that question in its last line: "Ms. Bright cannot [return] 'the previous night' and alter history," a conclusion that no doubt met with Hawking's approval. The 'Ms. Bright' in the title is the heroine of a 1923 limerick that you can find quoted in the first *For Further Discussion* of Chapter 6.

[114]Originally appearing in the journal *Science*, under the title of "The General Limits of Space Travel," von Hoerner's analysis was reprinted in the classic anthology *Interstellar Communication* (A. G. W. Cameron, editor), W. A. Benjamin 1963. The arithmetic was, alas, just a bit sloppy (the final formulas, fortunately, are correct), and many of von Hoerner's numerical evaluations are incorrect. Later, the British mathematician Leslie Marder cleaned-up the analysis in his beautiful little book on the twin paradox, *Time and the Space-Traveler*, George Allen & Unwin, Ltd. 1971.

Fig. 3.17 Unaccelerated
twin paradox in a
cylindrical spacetime

travels this way for a time interval of T (as measured by Bill on Earth) and T' (as measured by Bob in his rocket). At that time the rocket is traveling at its maximum speed. Bob then turns off the rearward engine and turns on a forward-mounted engine so as to experience a constant deceleration. Floor and ceiling interchange, but Bob always weighs the same. If he does this for the same time interval T (as measured by Bill on Earth) and T' (as measured by Bob) as for the initial acceleration phase of the trip, the rocket will be brought to rest with respect to Earth. At that time, $2T$ (as measured by Bill on Earth) and $2T'$ (as measured by Bob), the rocket is at its maximum distance from Earth. Bob then returns to Earth, using the same acceleration/deceleration process, and Bob arrives back home, gently, with a final speed of zero with respect to Earth (ignoring, of course, all the navigational problems due to the motion of Earth during the trip).

Assuming the clock hypothesis is true (not all physicists believe this,[115] but remember, we have Einstein[116] on our side with this!), the result is that if a is the constant acceleration of the rocket (as experienced by Bob), and c is the speed of light, then the relationship between the *total roundtrip time* as measured by Bill ($4T$) and as measured by Bob ($4T'$), is given by

$$T = \frac{c}{a}\sinh\left(\frac{a}{c}T'\right).$$

The difference in what each twin believes to be the date can, in fact, be truly astonishing. For example, if $a = 1$ gee and Bob travels (by his clock) for $4T' = 20$ years, then $4T = 339$ years.[117] Of course, there will actually be no disagreement between Bill and Bob over the date upon Bob's return because Bill will be long dead!

Is it likely that such a time trip[118] will someday be made into the future? It's just my opinion, but I suspect not. Bob will be traveling at virtually the speed of light at maximum speed ($0.9993\,c$, to be precise, at which point he will be 84 light-years from Earth), and to zip through space at such a speed would result in a very high rate of collision with stray hydrogen atoms (about one per cubic centimeter). The result of those energetic collisions would be the intense blasting of Bob with a lethal dose of gamma radiation. And, as von Hoerner showed in his original analysis (note 114), the energy required by Bob's rocket would be simply mind-boggling.

Professor Schild (see note 116), on the other hand, seems to have been less bothered by such considerations when he wrote, at the beginning of a prose discussion of the twin paradox, "I have no doubt that if our technology should ever advance to the stage where large-scale twin effects become noticeable with our unaided senses, then [people] will have no difficulty in adjusting their concepts of time until the new phenomena see quite natural."[119]

I'll end this chapter on time with the observation that it is the distinction between the proper time of Bob on a rocket ship, and the time of those who are not fellow

---

[115] Consider, for example, this remark by 1965 Nobel physics laureate Julian Schwinger (1918-1994) about the twin paradox in his 1986 book *Einstein's Legacy*: "The observer on the spaceship ... is *not* in uniform, unaccelerated motion ... The special theory of relativity does not apply to such an accelerated observer." Schwinger was wrong in this conclusion (see the next note).

[116] As a physicist wrote on this point after Einstein's death, "A good many physicists believe that [the twin] paradox can only be resolved by the general theory of relativity. ... However, they are quite wrong. The twin effect ... is one of special relativity." See A. Schild, "The Clock Paradox in Relativity Theory," *American Mathematical Monthly*, January 1959, pp. 1-18. Alfred Schild (1921-1977) was professor of physics at the University of Texas, and a recognized expert in the general theory.

[117] In using the T, T' formula, one has to be careful to use MKS units, that is, length and time measured in meters and seconds, respectively. Thus, $a = 1$ gee $= 9.81$ meters/second^2 and $c = 186{,}210$ miles/second $= 2.997 \times 10^8$ meters/second.

[118] For a science fiction use of such a trip, see Robert Heinlein's 1956 novel *Time for the Stars*.

[119] A. Schild, "Time," *Texas Quarterly*, Autumn 1960, pp. 42-62.

space travelers, that eliminates the occasional suggestion of simply *freezing* one's way via suspended animation to the future (as in the 1992 film *Forever Young*). That is, suppose you manage to talk a friend into climbing into a freezer (please don't actually try this!); at the moment he gets in, his wrist watch agrees with yours (both are powered and maintained at a constant temperature by 100-year nuclear batteries). Years later, when you thaw your friend out, you'll find that your watches still agree. But when Bob returns from his rocket trip, his watch will not agree with yours, but instead will be far behind. Bob is a true time traveler, but your frozen/thawed friend is not.[120]

A provocative illustration of the distinction between the proper time of a time traveler and of those who are not time travelers was given by a philosopher.[121] He begins his analysis by asking what appears to be a question with an obvious answer. Suppose, he says, it is [2018] and you suddenly wake up in a hospital and are told that you have been in a coma for the past 2 weeks. You are also told that you were in an auto accident 2 weeks ago, that you suffered temporary neural damage, and that the eventual reversal of such damage always, at some time within 4 weeks after the damage occurs, causes a day of excruciating pain *if you are conscious at the time*. Would you prefer for the day of damage reversal to be in the past 2 weeks (when you were in the coma) or in the next 2 weeks? The answer seems clear. After all, if the day that damage reversal occurs has already happened, then you simply slept through it and missed the pain. To prefer the day of pain to be in the future (when you will be awake) seems absurd. Now, let's add time travel to the equation.

All is as before, but now you immediately leave the hospital upon regaining consciousness to take a trip back to 1892, where you will stay for 2 weeks. Again, it seems clear that you would prefer to have had the day of pain in the past 2 weeks (in 2018), not in the next 2 weeks (in 1892). Note that the *next* is a reference to your proper time, because whereas 1892 is the global past, it is *your* personal future. Thus, now your preference would be to have the day of pain in the *recent personal past* of 2018, not the *distant global* past of 1892. Now, let's put another time travel twist to this story.

All is as before in the original tale, except now you are told in the hospital that the auto accident happened just after you made a time trip to 2092: as you walked out of your time machine in 2092, you were hit by a car. The 2 weeks you were in a coma were in 2092, before you were judged fit enough (although still unconscious) to make the time journey back to 2018. When would you now prefer to have the day of pain? Clearly, as always, in your *personal past*, which is now the *global future*.

Time *is* different for those who time travel and those who don't!

---

[120]In his 1956 novel *The Door Into Summer*, the always ingenious Robert Heinlein used *both* ideas, with the cold-storage method of reaching the future combined with a true time machine to allow his hero to return to his 'present' (the future's past).

[121]A. Gallois, "Asymmetry in Attitudes About the Nature of Time," *Philosophical Studies*, October 1994, pp. 51-59.

3.7   For Further Discussion

An interesting *theological* analysis of Feynman's idea of an electron traveling backward in time, expressed as thinking of the electron as being in 'one of God's films played in reverse,' is given by J. W. Smith, "Time Travel and Backward Causation," *Cogito* 1985, pp. 57–67. Wondering what it would be like for an electron to travel backwards in time, Smith's answer was: "Consider an electron e_1. At time t_0 it is at (x_0, y_0, z_0). At time t_1 it is at (x_1, y_1, z_1). If the direction of time for the electron was reversed, then the electron would be observed on the 'film of the world' to travel back along the same path as it did before, i.e., back to (x_0, y_0, z_0). If God stopped the 'film of the world' and examined the charge of e_1, then He would find that it was *negative*, not *positive*. Hence the electron traveling backwards in time is simply that: an electron traveling backwards in time, it is not a positron. Time reversal does not result in a reversal of charge. Thus, the Stückelberg-Feynman position is incorrect ...." Discuss this in terms of the TCP theorem. Is there a conflict? When God stops the 'film of the world,' does the electron even *have* an arrow of time?

All the modern, major religions of the world are in agreement on these two points: (1) God created the universe and (2) At some time in the past, the universe came into existence. This does raise the question of what was God doing *before* He created the universe (see note 7 in the Introduction). In his *Confessions*, Saint Augustine comments on the conundrum that (1) and (2) are possibly in conflict. After all, if God *created* the universe then, given any time t in the finite past, He must have been doing something *before* time t, which means that for any time t in the finite past the universe already existed. Thus, the universe had no instant of creation in the finite past and so had no first moment of existence—which implies (2) is false. However, like any good philosopher of religion, Augustine not only provided this theological puzzle, but also a way to wiggle free of it. His suggested counter is the assertion that time is *itself* a creation of God, that is, He made time as *part* of creating the universe. Thus, there was no time *before* He created the universe, and so the very question of 'what was He doing before He made the universe' has no meaning. What do you think of Augustine's two arguments?

The Australian philosopher J. J. C. Smart (1920–2012) invoked five dimensional spacetime in a way very different from that of including an 'eternity' axis for God's temporal time (see note 33 in "Some First Words"). What Smart argued for, instead, was *multiple* four-dimensional worlds existing together without conflict, just as an infinity of two-dimensional worlds can exist without conflict in a three dimensional space. As he wrote, "The reason why there could be two totally disparate space-times is simply the quite obvious one that two totally disparate four-dimensional spaces can exist within a suitable five-dimensional space. There is no difficulty in mathematical inconceivability here. Now let one of these four-spaces be our own space-time world, and let the other four-space be more or less similar, in accordance with whatever story you wish to tell about it." This idea had, in fact, been around long before Smart's 1967 paper. In his 1898 Presidential Address to the American Mathematical Society, for example, Simon Newcomb declared "Add a fourth dimension of space, and there is room for an indefinite number of Universes, all alongside of each other, as there is for an indefinite number of sheets of paper when we pile them upon each other." Newcomb's idea appealed to H. G. Wells' fancy so much that he built two novels, *The Wonderful Visit* and *Men Like Gods*, around it. In the first novel there is explicit mention of multiple worlds "lying somewhere close together, unsuspecting, as near as page to page in a book," and the second one speaks of one parallel universe being rotated into another. John Cramer (a University of Washington physicist) repeated Newcomb's and Wells' parallel universes/pages-of-a-book/rotation imagery almost word for word in his 1991 novel *Twistor*.

Read these three novels, and then discuss. In particular, is Wells consistent in his presentations (as a novelist there is, of course, no reason he should be!)?

Imagine the following two events, **A** and **B**, in Minkowski spacetime: **A** is the emission of a photon, and **B** is the absorption of that photon. What is the spacetime interval between **A** and **B**? It might seem that we need to know more about the precise spatial and temporal coordinates of **A** and **B**, but in fact the interval is *always zero* for any two events connected by light (by photons). To see this, write the flat Minkowski metric as

$$\left(\frac{ds}{dt}\right)^2 = 1 - \left(\frac{dx}{dt}\right)^2$$

and so, since $(dx/dt)^2 = 1$ (because photons—by definition!—travel at the speed of light) we have $(ds)^2 = 0$. The world line of any photon has what is called a *null* interval, as do all world lines on the surface of a light cone. Timelike world lines (in the interior of light cones, with $(dx/dt)^2 < 1$) have positive intervals, that is, $(ds)^2 > 0$. Spacelike world lines (in the exterior of light cones, in Elsewhere, with $(dx/dt)^2 > 1$) have negative intervals, that is, $(ds)^2 < 0$. This is one of the significant differences between *distances* in space (which are never negative) and *intervals* in spacetime. The American chemist G. N. Lewis (1875–1946)—see note 60 in Chap. 2—constructed a romantic illustration of this when he wrote "Any pair of points [in spacetime] which are separated by zero distance [interval] are in *virtual contact*. In other words, I may say that my eye touches a star, not in the same sense as when I say that my hand touches a pen, but in an equally physical sense." (See Lewis' paper "Light Waves and Light Corpuscles," *Nature*, February 13, 1926, pp. 236–238; Lewis was the originator of the term *photon* for a particle of light.) To understand what Lewis was getting at, you must understand that in spacetime we can have the interval between **A** and **B** as zero, and the interval between **B** and **C** as zero, but the interval between **A** and **C** may *not* be zero. To convince yourself of this, suppose the Minkowski spacetime coordinates (x, t) of **A**, **B**, and **C** are (1,3), (2,2) and (1,1), respectively. Show that $(ds_{AC})^2 = 4$, while $(ds_{AB})^2 = (ds_{BC})^2 = 0$. (Hint: draw a diagram of this spacetime and simply plug the coordinates of **A**, **B**, and **C** into the metric.)

The use of the time dilation effect of high-speed space travel was used by science fiction writer Donald Wandrei (1908–1987) in his tale "A Race Through Time," *Astounding Stories*, October 1933. Initially set in 1950, this is the story of two scientists, one evil (of course!) and the other good (of course!), who develop quite different methods for travel into future times. The evil one does it with a drug that slows the metabolic processes of the body, while the good one builds an atomic-powered rocket in his home workshop! The evil scientist kidnaps the good one's girlfriend, seals the two of them inside a crystal dome, and then injects her and himself with his drug. He has arranged matters so that they will emerge from the dome in the year one million A.D. Learning what has happened, the good scientist rushes to the dome finds he can't break in, but sees an indicator dial pointing at 1,000,000. (The evil scientist has conveniently provided the dial, as well as having made the dome transparent, much as modern-day movie criminals always include a count-down clock with glowing red digits on their bombs so the hero always knows just how much time is left to disarm the bomb.)

Returning to his rocket, the good scientist decides that he, too, will travel into the far future using time dilation. So, off he goes, on a trip like Bob's in Sect. 3.6. The story ends with an ironic twist—the good scientist thought the '1,000,000' he saw through the dome meant *one million years in the future beyond 1950*, and so he arrives back on Earth nearly 2000 years *after* his girlfriend and the evil scientist emerged from the dome. (They are, of course, long dead when the good scientist returns.)

On the outward leg of the good scientist's rocket flight we read of his "frightful speed — now thousands of light years per Earth second." Discuss this in terms of relativity theory. That is, does the rocket actually travel thousands of light years in one second of elapsed time back on Earth?

The American physicist Robert Forward (1932–2002) was, in addition to being an expert in general relativity, also a quite inventive science fiction writer. In his short story "Twin Paradox" (*Analog Science Fiction*, August 1983), for example, he used *biology* to give a surprising, ironic twist to the classic physics puzzle. The story flips the asymmetric aging of the twins by imagining that, just after the traveling twin's departure, the secret of immortality is discovered. The treatment has to be administered no later than at a certain age, however, and upon his return to Earth the traveling twin is just a bit too old for it to work. He thus becomes the last person to die of old age! In this tale, the details of the traveling twin's trip are somewhat different from Bob's trip. Read "Twin Paradox" (you can also find the story in Forward's 1995 book *Indistinguishable from Magic*), and summarize how the traveling twin's trip is accomplished.

In the mystical 1920 novel *A Voyage to Arcturus*, by the Scottish writer David Lindsay (1876–1945), we read of a spaceship that travels to Arcturus (the brightest star in the constellation Boötes, 36 light years from Earth) in just 19 h of proper time. The technical details of the trip are not explained in the novel, so assume they are the same as in Bob's trip. That is, $2T'= 68,400$ s as measured by a clock on the spaceship. The distance traveled in this time is

$$2\frac{c\left\{\sqrt{a^2T^2 + c^2} - c\right\}}{a}$$

where c is the speed of light, a is the constant acceleration/deceleration of the rocket (as measured on the spaceship), and T is how long an *Earth*-based clock says the trip takes. Use this formula, and the one relating T and T' in the text, to calculate

1. The value of the constant acceleration/deceleration, a (does the result seem reasonable to you?) and
2. The value of T (the length of time that passes on Earth as 19 h pass on the spaceship).

You don't have to discuss general relativity to encounter tensors of the second rank (as is the metric tensor). Electrical engineers run into such a thing, for example, when studying the lowly Ohm's law! In a copper wire, that law says the current density (the vector $\mathbf{J}$, in units of amperes per square meter) at any point is related to the electric field (the vector $\mathbf{E}$, in units of volts per meter) at that point by the *scalar* σ as follows: $\mathbf{J} = \sigma\mathbf{E}$, where σ (called the *conductivity*) is a single number. This says, in rectangular coordinates, that the x-component of $\mathbf{J}$ depends *only* on the x-component of $\mathbf{E}$, and similarly for the y-component and z-components of $\mathbf{J}$ and $\mathbf{E}$. More generally, however, each component of $\mathbf{J}$ depends on *all* of the components of $\mathbf{E}$ (as in certain crystalline structures), and so we have the equations

$$J_x = \sigma_{11}E_x + \sigma_{12}E_y + \sigma_{13}E_z$$
$$J_y = \sigma_{21}E_x + \sigma_{22}E_y + \sigma_{23}E_z$$
$$J_z = \sigma_{31}E_x + \sigma_{32}E_y + \sigma_{33}E_z$$

or, in matrix form

$$\mathbf{J} = \begin{bmatrix} J_x \\ J_y \\ J_z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \sigma_{11} & \sigma_{12} & \sigma_{13} \\ \sigma_{21} & \sigma_{22} & \sigma_{23} \\ \sigma_{31} & \sigma_{32} & \sigma_{33} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} E_x \\ E_y \\ E_z \end{bmatrix} = \boldsymbol{\sigma}\mathbf{E}.$$

So $\mathbf{J}$ is now related to $\mathbf{E}$ by $\boldsymbol{\sigma}$, a 3×3 *matrix* (9 numbers, instead of just 1). The matrix $\boldsymbol{\sigma}$ is, in fact, a tensor of rank 2. This tensor is in the three-dimensional space of the copper wire, while the 4×4 metric tensor matrix is in a four-dimensional spacetime, but both are tensors of rank 2. The number of numbers in a tensor of rank n, in a space of dimension d, is d^n. In general relativity, tensors of higher rank than 2 are required. For example, the

curvature tensor has rank 4, and so in a four-dimensional spacetime it is described by $4^4 = 256$ numbers. This goes a long way in explaining why, in general relativity, computing often involves a *lot* of arithmetic! The primary characteristic of tensors of any rank is that they are invariant under a change in coordinate systems (choosing a coordinate system is an arbitrary matter, made mostly for human convenience, about which Nature is indifferent). Read more about tensors, and write an essay on how they behave under a change in coordinates. A good place to start, at the level of this book, is Lillian Lieber's *The Einstein Theory of Relativity: a trip to the fourth dimension*, Paul Dry Books 2008 (an updated version of the original 1945 book).

Chapter 4
Philosophers, Physicists, and the Time Travel Paradoxes

> *"He felt the intellectual desperation of any honest philosopher. He knew that he had about as much chance of understanding such problems as a collie has of understanding how dog food gets into cans."* [1]

4.1 Paradoxes and Their First Appearance in Science Fiction

> "There's a lot we don't know about time travel. How do you expect logic to hold when paradoxes hold, too?" "Does that mean you don't know?" "Yes." [2]

More than 30 years ago Quentin Smith, a philosopher who believes in a finite length to the past, wrote a refutation to those who believe in an infinite past and, while that paper [3] has nothing to do with the paradoxes of time travel, in the course of presenting his reasoning he included the following curious passage:

> "Why does the sun arise in the morning and not at some other time? Why do the hands of a properly functioning clock point to 12:00 at noon and midnight and not at other times? Why does the death of a person occur at a later time than his birth? The answer in all these cases is: Because by the very nature of these events they could not occur at other times. It belongs to the very nature of the sun's rising that it occur in the morning and not in the afternoon or evening. It belongs to the very nature of a properly functioning clock to point to 12:00 at noon and midnight and not at other times. And it belongs to the very nature of death to occur at a time later than a person's birth."

But what of a time traveler born in 1980 who, in 2018, enters her time machine, pushes a few buttons, and then boldly steps out into the Cretaceous period seventy million years earlier—and is promptly eaten for lunch by a passing *Tyrannosaurus*

---

[1]A time traveler admits (to himself) how perplexed he is by paradoxes in Robert Heinlein's classic tale "By His Bootstraps," *Astounding Science Fiction*, October 1941.

[2]Excerpt from a conversation between two paradox-puzzled time travelers in Larry Niven's story "Bird in the Hand," *The Magazine of Fantasy & Science Fiction*, October 1970.

[3]Q. Smith, "Kant and the Beginning of the World," *New Scholasticism*, Summer 1985, pp. 339–346.

rex? Perhaps Smith himself would say that there is no contradiction between this and his third claim because, in the time traveler's *proper* time, her spectacular death does indeed come after her birth. For many, however, for a time traveler to die before her mother is born *is* a paradox, plain and simple, say what you will about proper time.

One science fiction view of time travel paradoxes is that nature would be so disrupted by them that, should one occur, the universe would be torn apart. In one story, for example, a paradox is on the verge of happening through the use of a Tipler-cylinder time machine (mentioned back in Chap. 1, and which we'll discuss in more detail in the next chapter). In response to this 'threat to common sense,' the universe 'decides' to avoid the paradox by simply eliminating the perpetrators via a local nova![4] Niven wasn't the first to use this idea. A famous story[5] by L. Sprague de Camp (1907–2000), written two decades before, had already put forth the suggestion that nature will take all required corrective action to avoid paradoxes.

In De Camp's tale we read of two big-game hunter guides who use "Professor Prochuska's time machine at Washington University"—built with the aid of a "cool thirty million" dollar grant from the Rockefeller Foundation—to operate a safari-for-hire business that transports hunters back to the late Mesozoic era. When a disgruntled client tries to go back to the day *before* a previous trip to shoot the guides (who had displeased him, or rather *would* displease him the next day), we learn just how nasty De Camp thought Mother Nature would be to avoid a paradox. (After all, the guides had *not been* shot during the safari, so they *could not be* shot.[6]): "The instant James started [to ambush the guides] the space-time forces snapped him forward to the present to prevent a paradox. And the violence of the passage practically tore him to bits [making his body look] as though it had been pulverized and every blood vessel burst, so it was hardly more than a slimy mass of pink protoplasm."

And even earlier we have a famous tale[7] that was discussed in Chap. 1, by Fredric Brown (1906–1972), a master of the special category of science fiction called the "short-short," in which everything happens in 500 words or less. As you might expect, the oddities of time travel were natural attractions for Brown's quirky talent. You'll recall that in this story the inventor of the first time machine demonstrates it to two colleagues by sending a brass cube 5 min into the future. After being placed in the machine, the cube vanishes and then 5 min later reappears. No paradoxes with that—it is a trip into the *past* that has the potential for deadly repercussions. We learn just how deadly when the inventor next declares that at

---

[4]L. Niven, "Rotating Cylinders and the Possibility of Global Causality Violation," *Analog Science Fiction*, August 1977. Niven took this title from a physics paper with that title, authored by Tipler, that had appeared three years earlier in *Physical Review D* (April 15, 1974, pp. 2203–2206).

[5]L. Sprague de Camp, "A Gun for Dinosaur," *Galaxy Science Fiction*, March 1956.

[6]This is a statement of the belief that the past cannot be changed, an idea we will examine later in this chapter.

[7]Look back at note 93 in Chap. 1.

three o'clock he will again place the cube in the time machine but, until then, he will hold the cube in his hand. Thus, he says, at 5 min before three the cube will vanish from his hand and immediately appear in the time machine because 5 min after that, at three o'clock, he will send it 5 min into the past. And indeed, at 5 min before three the cube does simultaneously vanish from his hand and appear in the time machine. Then, slightly before three, as the three men stand pondering what has happened, one of the observers asks what will happen if the inventor does *not* send the cube back at three o'clock? "Wouldn't there be a paradox of some sort involved?" he wonders.[8] His curiosity aroused, the inventor can't resist the experiment—and the universe promptly vanishes.

Time travel, of course, is full of potential paradoxes. A paradox, according to the usual dictionary definition, is something that appears to contain contradictory or incompatible parts, thus reducing the whole to seeming nonsense. And yet, truth is also evident in the whole. The history of science and mathematics has left a long trail of paradoxes, and those that involve time travel are merely among the most recent. Not all of the puzzles of time travel involve physics or logic, however. As one philosopher observed, "Doubtless time travel will raise a host of legal difficulties, e.g., should a time traveler who punches his younger self (or vice versa) be charged with assault? Should the time traveler who murders someone and then flees into the past for sanctuary be tried in the past for his crime committed in the future? If he marries in the past can he be tried for bigamy even though his other wife will not be born for almost 5000 years? Etc., etc. I leave such questions for lawyers and writers of ethics textbooks to solve."[9]

One way early science fiction writers had of responding to the puzzle of time travel paradoxes was to just give up and to concede that the logical puzzles are overwhelming. In one tale, for example, the inventor of the Chronoscope (a gadget that can only *view* the past) explains, "There is no time travel machine. Such a thing is a logical impossibility, treated seriously only by half-cracked writers of fantasy. Such a machine would lead at once into a hopeless paradox."[10] Equally concerned about time travel paradoxes was the pulp science fiction time traveler who told his partner, just before their first trip in time, that "I'm not sure any more about getting back. There's some unpredictable terms in the time-travel equation—paradoxes. Maybe we *won't* get back."[11]

---

[8]This is what is called a *bilking paradox*, and such paradoxes will be discussed later in this chapter. Brown gave this story a lot of thought. At one point in the tale one of the colleagues, puzzled by how the inventor will be able to place the cube into the time machine at three if it has already vanished from his hand and appeared in the machine, asks "How can you place it there, then?" Replies the inventor, "It will, as my hand approaches, vanish from the [machine] and appear in my hand to be placed there."

[9]L. Dwyer, "Time Travel and Some Alleged Logical Asymmetries Between Past and Future," *Canadian Journal of Philosophy*, March 1978, pp. 15–38.

[10]M. Jameson, "Dead End," *Thrilling Wonder Stories*, March 1941.

[11]E. Binder, "The Time Cheaters," *Thrilling Wonder Stories*, March 1940.

Fig. 4.1 One way pulp science fiction avoided paradoxes was to use a 'time viewer' (like the chronoscope in "Dead End") as in "The Time Eliminator" (*Amazing Stories*, December 1926). This illustration from the story (authored by somebody who used only the initials K.A.W.) by Frank R. Paul (©1926 by Experimenter Publishing Co.) shows the inventor demonstrating his gadget to his future wife and father-in-law. Able to look back in time, the screen is displaying scenes from the older man's courtship of his wife, decades in the past. Reprinted by permission of the Ackerman Science Fiction Agency, 2495 Glendower Ave., Hollywood, CA 90027 for the Estate

But are there *really* paradoxes? Or is it true, as the extraordinary boy-prodigy who invented a time machine exclaimed (when his teacher asserted that some questions could never be answered because "Nature is full of paradoxes"), "Ah, Professor, what nonsense! Nature is harmonious; it is we who bring the paradoxes into it."[12] Saying the same are two physicists, in a paper on the circular orbits of photons around black holes: "There are no paradoxes in physics, but only in our

[12]V. Grigoriev, "Vanya," in *Last Door to Aiya* (M. Ginsburg, editor), S. G. Phillips 1968.

attempts to understand physical ideas by using inadequate reasoning or false intuition."[13] And as the time traveler in an early pulp story[14] casually declares to a friend, after an astonishing adventure in the year A.D. 1,001,930, "Paradoxical? My dear fellow, the Einstein Theory is full of apparent paradoxes, yet to him who understands it there is no inconsistency whatever. Give me another cigarette, will you, Frank?"

It is in *Amazing Stories* that we find the first non-fictional speculations about time travel in a pulp magazine—and certainly long before any *physics* journal would touch the subject! Publisher and editor Hugo Gernsback started those speculations by reprinting Wells' *Time Machine*, which in turn sparked a fair number of readers' letters that were printed in the magazine's "Discussions" section. Typical of the less interesting is the following comment from a letter in the July 1927 issue: "In the 'Time Machine' I found something amiss. How could one travel to the future in a machine when the beings of the future have not yet materialized?" (We answered that question in the previous chapter with the twin paradox.) Far more interesting was this letter, in the same issue:

> "How about this 'Time Machine'? Let's suppose our inventor starts a 'Time Voyage' backward to about A.D. 1900, at which time he was a schoolboy … His watch ticks forward although the clock on the laboratory wall goes backward. Now we are in June 1900, and he stops the machine, gets out and attends the graduating exercises of the class of 1900 of which he was a member. Will there be another 'he' on the stage? Of course, because he *did* graduate in 1900 … Should he go up and shake hands with this 'alter ego'? Will there be two physically distinct but characteristically identical persons? Alas! No! He can't go up and shake hands with himself because … this voyage back through time only duplicates actual past conditions and in 1900 this strange 'other he' did *not* appear suddenly in quaint ultra-new fashions and congratulate the graduate. How could they both be wearing the same watch they got from Aunt Lucy on their seventh birthday, the same watch in two different places at the same time. Boy! Page Einstein! No, he cannot be there because he wasn't there in 1900 (except in the person of the graduate) … The journey backward must cease on the year of his birth. If he could pass that year it would certainly be an effect before a cause … Suppose for instance in the graduating exercise above, the inventor should decide to shoot his former self … He couldn't do it because if he did the inventor would have been cut off before he began to invent and he would never have gotten around to make the voyage, thus rendering it impossible for him to be there taking a shot at himself, so that as a matter of fact he *would* be there and *could* take a shot—help, help, I'm on a vicious circle merry-go-round … Now as to trips into the future, I could probably think up some humorous adventures wherein [the inventor] digs up his own skeleton and finds by the process of actual examination that he must expect to have his leg amputated because the skeleton presents positive proof that this was done."[15]

---

[13]M. A. Abramowicz and J. P. Lasota, "On Traveling Round Without Feeling It and Uncurving Curves," *American Journal of Physics*, October 1986, pp. 936–939.

[14]F. J. Bridge, "Via the Time Accelerator," *Amazing Stories*, January 1931.

[15]This story idea (the letter was signed only with the initials T.J.D.) may well have been the inspiration for R. Rocklynne, "Time Wants a Skeleton," *Astounding Science Fiction*, June 1941. Not all fans agreed with T.J.D. A few years later, for example, a teenager named P. Schuyler Miller (1912–1974), who would author several time travel classics himself, wrote a letter to the editor of *Astounding Stories* (June 1931) stating "there is nothing in physics … to prevent yourself from

All of the ingenious puzzles in this letter intrigued Gernsback, and may have, in fact, been the cause of his featuring a new, original time machine story[16] in the same issue. It was the tale of a scientist who transports an entire ship at sea 14,000 years back in time and causes it to hover over lost Atlantis! That story provoked a sharp letter from a reader who claimed its logic had a fatal flaw: the story's author indicated that the Atlantians observed the time travelers when, 'of course' (asserted the reader), the time travelers must actually have been invisible. The reader explained his reasoning as follows, beginning by defining A as one of the Atlantians.

> "Now A lived his life, thousands of years ago, and died. All right, now let us pass on in time 14,000 years. Now, back we come in time when A is again living his life. Lo and behold, this time A sees before he dies a strange phenomenon in the sky! He sees the shipload of people observing him. And yet these people are necessarily observing him during his one and only lifetime, wherein he certainly did not, could not, have observed them."

Gernsback printed this letter in his September 1927 editorial "The Mystery of Time," and concluded by saying "I do ... agree ... that the inhabitants of Atlantis would probably not have seen the ... travelers in time." Other readers felt this way, too, because after Gernsback published yet another time machine tale[17] in 1927, the same invisibility argument appeared again in the magazine's "Discussions" column.

Two years later an amateurishly written tale[18] appeared in which a man travels in time from 1928 to 2930 with the aid of an "astounding machine based on advanced electro-physics and the non-Euclidean theory of hyperspace." The purpose of that story was two-fold: to present several of the classic paradoxes of time travel, and then to make the claim that although the simple minds of twentieth-century people cannot understand the explanations of the paradoxes (possibly explaining why the author offers none!), the paradoxes are all trivial to the scientists of the thirtieth century. Despite this shortcoming (as well as some pretty awful dialog) the story nonetheless still managed to entertain readers with the sheer mystery of the paradoxes. Letters poured into the magazine from young fans, all demanding more time travel fiction.

So, that same year Gernsback responded with a story[19] that plays with the question of the role of time travelers in the past. (That question was clearly 'in

---

going into the past ... and shaking hands with yourself or killing yourself." That did, however, provoke the following harsh reply from another, more skeptical reader (in the December 1933 issue): "P. S. Miller once wrote that time traveling is not incompatible with any laws of physics ... 'he don't know from nothing.'"

[16]C. B. White, "The Lost Continent," *Amazing Stories*, July 1927.

[17]F. Flagg, "The Machine Man of Ardathia," *Amazing Stories*, November 1927.

[18]C. Cloukey, "Paradox," *Amazing Stories Quarterly*, Summer 1929.

[19]H. F. Kirkham, "The Time Oscillator," *Science Wonder Stories*, December 1929.

the air,' as Gernsback's old magazine *Amazing*[20] simultaneously published a story[21] addressing this same puzzle of time travel.) Could time travelers actually participate in events ("mix into the affairs of the period," in Gernsback's words), or would they just be unseen observers? This question, obviously inspired by the earlier discussion in *Amazing Stories*, intrigued Gernsback as much as it did his readers and so, along with Kirkham's story, he printed a challenge titled "The Question of Time-Traveling" (see note 18 in the Introduction):

> "In presenting this story to our readers, we do so with an idea of bringing on a discussion as to time traveling in general. The question in brief is as follows: Can a time traveler, going back in time—whether ten years or ten million years—partake in the life of that time and mingle in with its people; or must he remain suspended in his own time-dimension, a spectator who merely looks on but is powerless to do more? Interesting problems would seem to arise, of which only one need be mentioned: Suppose I can travel back into time, let me say 200 years; and I visit the homestead of my great great great grandfather, and am able to take part in the life of his time. I am thus enabled to shoot him, while he is still a young man and as yet unmarried. From this it will be noted that I could have prevented my own birth; because the line of propagation would have ceased right there. Consequently, it would seem that the idea of time traveling into a past where the time traveler can freely participate in activities of a former age, becomes an absurdity. The editor wishes to receive letters from our readers on this point: the best of which will be published in a special section."

Gernsback's challenge did not go unnoticed and, over the next year or so, he published a large number of reader responses in the magazine's letters column.

Indeed, a few months after issuing the challenge, in his introduction to another time travel tale,[22] Gernsback wrote that ever since the publication of Kirkham's tale "there has been a great controversy among our readers as to the possibility of time flying and the conditions under which it may be done." Most of those letters are interesting if not particularly profound, with one exception. That was a letter written by a 14 year old boy in San Francisco, and its appearance in the February 1931 issue of *Science Wonder* may well have served as the inspiration for several of the classic time travel tales published during the next 20 years:

> "Some time ago you asked us (the readers) what our opinions on time traveling were. Although a bit late, I am now going to voice four opinions . . .
>
> (1) Now, in the first place if time traveling were a possibility there would be no need for some scientist getting a headache trying to invent an instrument or 'Time-Machine' to 'go back and kill grandpa' (in answer to the age-old argument of preventing your birth by killing your grandparents I would say: 'who the heck would want to kill his grandpa or gandma!'[23]) I figure it out thusly: A man takes a time machine, and travels into the

---

[20]By this time Gernsback had lost control of *Amazing*, and *Science Wonder* was his come-back as a publisher of pulp 'scientifiction.'

[21]E. L. Rementer, "The Time Deflector," *Amazing Stories*, December 1929. Gernsback may well have been the editor, before he lost *Amazing*, who bought this story, and the magazine's new management simply used what remained in inventory.

[22]F. Flagg, "An Adventure in Time," *Science Wonder Stories*, April 1930.

[23]Look back at note 26 in "Some First Words."

future from where he sends it (under automatic control) to the past so that he may find it and travel into the future and send it back to himself again. Hence the time machine was never invented, but!—from whence did the machine *come*?

(2) Another impossibility that might result could be: A man travels a few years into the future and sees himself killed in some unpleasant manner,—so—after returning to his correct time he commits suicide in order to avert death in the more terrible way which he was destined to. Therefore how could he have seen himself killed in an entirely different manner than really was the case?

(3) Another thing that might corrupt the laws of nature would be to: Travel into the future; find out how some ingenious invention of the time worked; return to your right time; build a machine, or whatever it may be, similar to the one you had recently learned the workings of; and use it until the time you saw it arrives, and then if your past self saw it as you did, he would take it and claim it to be an invention of his (your) own, as you did. Then—who really *did* invent the consarn thing?

(4) Here's the last knock on time traveling: What if a man were to travel back a few years and marry his mother, thereby resulting in his being his own 'father'?"

Jim H. Nicholson

Gernsback's reply, immediately following this letter, was favorable, opening with "Young Mr. Nicholson does present some of the more humorous [?] aspects of time traveling. Logically we are compelled to admit that he is right—that if people could go back into the past or into the future and partake of the life in those periods, they could disrupt the normal course of events."[24] Nicholson's letter *is* ingenious, and it anticipated the central ideas of a number of science fiction tales yet to be written.[25] However, as you'll see as you read the rest of this chapter, contrary to Gernsback's view Nicholson's comments are *not* logically correct.[26]

---

[24]Despite these words, Gernsback apparently hadn't given up entirely on the 'invisibility of time travelers' view, as he had only a few months earlier published another such tale: R. A. Palmer, "The Time Ray of Jandra," *Wonder Stories*, June 1930. In this story (one either silly or hilarious, take your pick) a time traveler moves into the future by means of a 'time ray.' Unfortunately, the ray works differently on the various chemical elements, and not at all on either hydrogen or oxygen. Thus the time traveler—or at least *much* of him—and his machine do vanish into the future, but left behind are "several gallons of water spilled on the floor." (The human body is about 60 % H_2O.)

[25]For example, Nicholson's item (2) is a precise plot outline for L. Raphael, "The Man Who Saw Through Time," *Fantastic Adventures*, September 1941, and a version of item (4) is in Robert Heinlein's famous "All You Zombies—," *Magazine of Fantasy & Science Fiction*, March 1959.

[26]One cannot, however, fault the imaginative powers of James Nicholson (1916–1972). He eventually became President of American International Films, the company that made such science fiction 'classics' as *Attack of the Crab Monsters* (1957), the 1963 *X (The Man with the X-Ray Eyes)*, and *The Time Travelers* (1964).

4.2 Changing the Past and the Grandfather Paradox

> "I'm not kidding you at all Phil," Barney insisted. "I have produced a workable Time Machine, and I am going to use it to go back and kill my grandfather."[27]

As mentioned in "Some First Words," physicists and philosophers often have quite different approaches to time travel (see note 26 there again). A vivid illustration of that difference is found in a philosophical paper[28] that, after acknowledging the apparent restrictions of the grandfather paradox, turns its attention to a matter that almost surely is beyond the power of physics to study—namely, the nature of the *conversation* between a time traveler and his/her younger self. A physicist, on the other hand, views the restrictions as *the whole point*, because the central question that hovers over *any* discussion of time travel is that of 'changing the past.' As one science fiction fan summed it up in a letter to the editor of *Astounding Stories* (August 1931): "It is said that the past cannot be changed, and that any effort to do so would be useless. In my belief, no matter where or when a man goes in the past, if he appears in a year or day that has already gone by, *he is changing the past*. Then there should be no room for doubt: time traveling is impossible. It will never be done." And certainly killing your grandfather in the past (when he is still a baby) would qualify as a change to the past!

The idea of 'changing the past' occurred to the minds of philosophers long before it did in those of science fiction writers or physicists. Four centuries before Christ, the question had already been asked-and-answered by Aristotle. In his *Nicomachean Ethics*, in fact, we find him declaring that the Greek poet Agathon had known the answer a century earlier, and he quotes the poet as saying "Forever God lacks this one thing alone, To make a deed that has been done undone."

Agathon and Aristotle aside, some medieval theologians argued passionately that the past *could* be changed (but only by God). The eleventh-century Italian cleric Peter Damian (who became a Christian saint) is a famous exponent of that radical view.[29] Writing in his *De Omnipotentia Dei* ("On the Divine Omnipotence

---

[27]The opening line to F. M. Busby, "A Gun for Grandfather," *Future Science Fiction*, September 1957.

[28]Jiri Benovsky, "Endurance and Time Travel," *Kriterion—Journal of Philosophy*, 2011, pp. 65–72.

[29]R. P. McArthur and M. P. Slattery, "Peter Damian and Undoing the Past," *Philosophical Studies*, February 1974, pp. 137–141; P. Remnant, "Peter Damian: Could God Change the Past?" *Canadian Journal of Philosophy*, June 1978, pp. 259–268; R. Gaskin, "Peter Damian on Divine Power and the Contingency of the Past," *The British Journal for the History of Philosophy*, September 1997, pp. 229–247.

in Remaking What Has Been Destroyed and Undoing What Has Been Done"),[30] Damian made it clear that he believed nothing could withstand the power of God, not even the past. Ralph Waldo Emerson's poem "The Past" ("All is now secure and fast, Not the gods can shake the Past") would have been blasphemy for Damian. The following words from Damian testify to the strength of his commitment to a belief in the possibility of changing the past: "Just as we can duly say 'God was able to make it so [that] Rome, before it had been founded, should not have been founded,' in the same way we can equally and suitably say, 'God can make it so that Rome, even after it was founded, should not have been founded.'"[31]

Two centuries after Damian, Aquinas argued the contrary view, that changing the past is *not* within God's power. Whereas Damian felt it impossible to deny any act to God, Aquinas took the far more moderate position that part of God's law is that there be no contradictions in the world (this is, in fact, the modern view of time travel physicists) and that certainly God would be bound by his own law. As he wrote, "It is best to say that what involves contradiction cannot be done rather than that God cannot do it." In his *Paradise Lost*, John Milton's God is constrained even more: he is free to act or not, but if he does freely decide to act, it can only be to 'do right.' That might seem to preclude causing contradiction, as in changing the past, but perhaps not. Milton's contemporary, Thomas Hobbes, declared that there is no *a priori* standard of goodness, and thus (for Hobbes) there are no constraints on God's powers. For Hobbes, therefore, it would seem God could change the past. Theological changing of the past, as you might expect, leads to all sorts of mind-boggling puzzles. Because of such puzzles, theology would certainly be influenced by time travel, but just as certainly theological reasoning will not illuminate the puzzles of the time travel paradoxes.

The question of the immutability of past events is of special interest to theologians because it is directly related to the question of free will versus fatalism. That is, are humans the creators of the future, or are they mere fated puppets of destiny? One way theology gets involved with the issue of 'changing the past' is via what is called the *retroactive petitionary prayer*. (An 'ordinary' petitionary prayer, like the Lord's Prayer in Matthew 6 and Luke 11, asks for something in the present or the future.) Examples of retroactive prayers include that of the surgical patient who prays, just before an exploratory operation, for his tumor to be non-malignant, and

---

[30]This work is in the form of a letter to his friend Desiderius (who later became Pope Victor III), in which Damian rebutted Desiderius' defense of St. Jerome's claim that "while God can do all things, he cannot cause a virgin to be restored after she has fallen." Desiderius thought the reason God could not restore virgins is that he does not want to, to which Damian replied that this meant God is unable to do whatever he does not want to do, but this meant that God would then be less powerful than men, who are able to do things they don't want to do (such as go without food for a month). This is a good example of the dangers involved when getting into debates with theologians.

[31]The Argentinian writer Jorge Luis Borges (1899–1986) was so inspired by Damian's view that the past could be changed that he wrote a short story based on it (see "The Other Death," originally published in *The New Yorker*, November 2, 1968) and put a character in it named after Damian.

that of the soldier's wife who prays that her husband was not among those killed in yesterday's battle. Such prayers are for a happy outcome to an event that is over and done with at the time of the prayer. One might accept the rationality of praying about the future ("Please, God, let me survive tomorrow's battle and I'll be good for the rest of my life") but are prayers about the past even sensible? (The three major monotheistic religions of the world—Christianity, Judaism, and Islam—say *yes*.)

In an appendix titled "Special Providences" in his book Miracles, C. S. Lewis answers that question as follows:

> "When we are praying about the result, say, of a battle or a medical consultation, the thought will often cross our minds that (if only we knew it) the event is already decided one way or the other. I believe this to be no good reason for ceasing our prayers. The event certainly has been decided—in a sense it was decided 'before all worlds.' But one of the things taken into account in deciding it, and therefore one of the things that really causes it to happen, may be this very prayer that we are now offering. Thus, shocking as it may sound, I conclude that we can at noon become part causes of an event occurring at ten A.M. (Some scientists would find this easier than popular thought does.)"

Here we see Lewis, a prominent lay theologian, arguing for the present influencing (but not changing) the past. What can we make of that? Was Lewis arguing for backward causation, the close relative of time travel? I think perhaps so; the final two sentences in the above excerpt makes it plausible that he may have held that view. It is a view that does find much support in the block universe interpretation of Minkowskian spacetime. Lewis never mentions the block concept by name, but it is clear that he believed in the idea of God being able to see all of reality at once. Lewis believed, therefore, that God knows of a petitionary prayer before it is made; or, even stronger, if God is not a temporal being but rather is eternal and knows time 'all at once,' then God knows the prayer and the event being prayed about 'at the same time.'

Lewis did make it clear that he believed it is a sin to pray for something *known* not to have occurred—for example, to pray for the safety of someone known to have been killed yesterday. As he wrote, "The known event states God's will. It is psychologically impossible to pray for what we know to be unobtainable, and if it were possible, the prayer would sin against the duty of submission to God's known will." Taking a less judgmental position (but essentially agreeing with Lewis) were two philosophers who, writing of the battle of Waterloo, said "for one who knows the outcome of the battle more than a hundred and 50 years ago, [a retroactive petitionary] prayer is pointless and in that sense absurd. But a prayer prayed in ignorance of the outcome of the past event is not pointless in that way." Further, in support of backward causation, they also wrote that "to pray in 1980 that Napoleon lose at Waterloo" is logical because "why should your prayer not be efficacious in bringing about Napoleon's defeat?"[32] Disagreeing, however, was another philosopher who bluntly declared "A prayer for something to have happened is simply an absurdity, regardless of the utterer's knowledge or ignorance of how things went."[33]

---

[32]E. Stump and N. Kretzmann, "Eternity," *Journal of Philosophy*, August 1981, pp. 429–458.

[33]P. Geach, *God and the Soul*, Routledge & Kegan Paul 1969.

There have been all sorts of opinions expressed through the ages in reaction to the idea of affecting the past via retroactive petitionary prayers,[34] and on the role of backward causation. The British philosopher Michael Dummett (1925–2011), in particular, discussed Lewis' concept of such prayers with great sympathy,[35] and backward causation allows one to both explain them as well as retaining free will. That is, it is not God's foreknowledge that causes our later actions (forcing our behavior and so turning us into automatons), but rather it is our later *freely-chosen* actions that causes God's foreknowledge! While such theological speculations are interesting, in the end they are simply positions of faith, about which mathematical physics has nothing to say.

Eventually, of course, others besides philosophers and theologians began to ponder the questions raised by 'changing the past.' In a January 1963 personal letter to the editor of *The Magazine of Fantasy and Science Fiction*, Robert Heinlein wrote[36] "Mark Twain invented the time-travel story; 6 years later H. G. Wells perfected it *and its paradoxes* [my emphasis]. Between them they left little for latecomers to do." How a man as widely read as was Heinlein, who had authored some of the best short time travel stories ever written, could have written such an erroneous sentence is a mystery to me. *A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court* and *The Time Machine*, certainly both works of genius, are *not* pioneers in paradox. And Heinlein's own contributions are proof enough that there was a lot left to do with time travel, well after 1900.

The very first story to be written that even hints at the particular time travel paradox of changing the past seems to be by the Unitarian minister Edward Everett Hale (1822–1909), best known today as the author of the 1863 story "The Man Without a Country." Hale wrote "Hands Off" in 1881, and published it anonymously in *Harper's New Monthly Magazine* with the express purpose of stirring up some theological debate (which apparently it didn't). He certainly had no idea that he would come to be recognized by literary scholars as a pioneer in the yet-to-be invented genre of science fiction.

Hale's story opens with the mysterious words "I was in another stage of existence. I was free from the limits of Time, and in new relations to space." These words are spoken by an unnamed narrator, who seems to have just died, and who finds himself, in his new 'form,' observing "some twenty or thirty thousand solar systems" while in the company of "a Mentor [probably an angel] so loving and patient." Under the guidance of this Mentor, in an attempt to 'improve' history, the narrator alters the Biblical account of Joseph and his imprisonment in Egypt. At first, subsequent history *is* better, but then humanity

---

[34]A summary of those opinions can be found in G. Brown, "Praying About the Past," *Philosophical Quarterly*, January 1985, pp. 83–86. Debate continues on the retroactive prayer into the 21st century: see, for example, K. Timpe, "Prayers for the Past," September 2005, pp. 305–322, and T. J. Mawson, "Praying for Known Outcomes," March 2007, pp. 71–87, both in *Religious Studies*.

[35]M. Dummett, "Bringing About the Past," *Philosophical Review*, July 1964, pp. 338–359.

[36]Reprinted in the posthumously published *Grumbles from the Grave* (edited by Heinlein's widow, Virginia Heinlein), Del Rey 1990.

sinks into irreversible depravity. In the end the narrator watches the last handful of humans kill each other in a particularly symbolic place for the Christian world: "The last of these human brutes all lay stark dead on the one side and on the other side of the grim rock of Calvary!" There would be no Crucifixion and Resurrection for the salvation of humankind, which naturally greatly disturbs the narrator. But the Mentor calms him, saying "Do not be disturbed, you have done nothing." It has, you see, just been an experimental world, an alternate Universe, and the narrator has learned the lesson of "Hands Off" the past.

Hale's story is a better Sunday sermon than it is a change-the-past time travel tale, and the device of experimenting on a not-really-real Earth is disappointing from a modern science fiction point of view. But Hale's story almost certainly did have an immediate (if indirect) impact. There is no absolute proof, but with its appearance in a national magazine, it seems quite likely that "Hands Off" was read by Edward Page Mitchell (1852–1927), an editor on a daily New York newspaper, the *Sun*. I write that because, just 6 months after Hale's story appeared, the *Sun*, in its issue of September 18, 1881, printed Mitchell's "The Clock That Went Backward." That tale, published anonymously, used a machine (the clock) for time travel,[37] as well as incorporated the idea of time travel involving paradoxes. The story predates Wells' *Time Machine* by 14 years, and Wells' novel did not include a paradoxical element.[38]

There are, however, two *hints* at paradox in Wells' novel. In the opening, during the dinner party at which the Time Traveller tries to convince his friends of the possibility of a time machine, one of them observes that "It would be remarkably convenient for the historian. One might travel back and verify the accepted account of the Battle of Hastings, for instance." To that another guest replies, "Don't you think you would attract attention? Our ancestors had no great tolerance for anachronisms." The second hint occurs when the incredulous Editor, astonished at the disheveled appearance of the Time Traveller upon his return from the future, wonders "What *was* this time traveling? A man couldn't cover himself with dust by rolling in a paradox, could he?"

What might happen if time travelers *could* change the past? This question is nicely illustrated in one novel[39] where a time traveler finds himself stranded in the London of 1810. Despite his predicament, he takes solace with "I could invent things—the light bulb, the internal combustion engine, ..., flush toilets ... " But then he thinks better of doing any of that: "no, better not to do anything to change

---

[37]See Jan Pinkerton, "Backward Time Travel, Alternate Universes, and Edward Everett Hale," *Extrapolation*, Summer 1979, pp. 168–175. The time machine in Mitchell's story is more fantasy than anything else. It is simply stated that if the clock runs backward, then it travels backward in time.

[38]Wells' failure to use paradox in his famous novel surprises most modern readers and, in fact, one of the first reviewers specifically criticized him for this lapse. See the 1895 review of *The Time Machine* that appeared in *Pall Mall Magazine*, by Israel Zangwill, reprinted in Parrinder's book (note 1 in the Introduction).

[39]T. Powers, *The Anubis Gates*, Ace 1983, a work with equal shares of physics and magic.

the course of recorded history—such tampering might cancel the trip I got here by, or even the circumstances under which my mother and father met. I'll have to be careful."

This is really just a more recent treatment of the change-the-past paradox that was already well established in early science fiction. In a story[40] published a half-century before, we find the paradox explicitly stated, along with a possible solution that is similar to the kind of explanations that have appeared in the philosophical literature[41]:

> "Suppose you landed in your own past?," queried Eric."
>   Dow smiled.
>   "The eternal question," he said. "The inevitable objection to the very idea of time travel. Well, you never did, did you? You know it never happened!"

But, suppose you *could* land in your own past. What then?

One famous story[42] that considered this question *embraced* the idea of changing the past. In it a client on a dinosaur hunting safari fails to follow the instructions of his guide to do *nothing* in the past except shoot a dinosaur that is about to dies for "other reasons" anyway—alas, he accidently kills a butterfly. This results in enormous changes in history, as indicated by the 'before' and 'after' versions of the time machine company's ad:

> **before**
> TIME SAFARI, INC.
> SAFARIS TO ANY YEAR IN THE PAST.
> YOU NAME THE ANIMAL.
> WE TAKE YOU THERE.
> YOU SHOOT IT.
> **after**
> TYME SEFARI INC.
> SEFARIS TU ANY YEER EN THE PAST.
> YU NAIM THE ANIMALL.
> WE TAEK YU THAIR.
> YU SHOOT ITT.

Bradbury describes the death of the butterfly as having started the knocking "down [of] a line of small dominoes and then big dominoes and then gigantic dominoes, all down the years across Time." This is, of course, a somewhat unconvincing argument. After all, previous dinosaurs, when shot, must have fallen to the ground and flattened a lot of butterflies! With such threats for every decision, no matter how seemingly innocent, hanging over the head of a time traveler, it

---

[40]C. L. Moore, "Tryst in Time," *Astounding Stories*, December 1936.

[41]See, for example, P. J. Riggs, "The Principal Paradox of Time Travel," *Ratio*, April 1997, pp. 48–64. The 'principal paradox' is that time travel is inherently contradictory because it permits the possibility of traveling to an earlier time to prevent the trip. The grandfather paradox is a special case of this. For more discussion, see T. Chambers, "Time Travel: How Not to Defuse the Principal Paradox," *Ratio*, September 1999, pp. 296–301.

[42]R. Bradbury, "A Sound of Thunder," *Collier's*, June 1952.

would take a brave soul to do much more, while in the past, than just stand still and breathe.

Equally grim is the tale[43] that takes a different view by denying the past can be changed. There we read of a doomed hero who journeys back to 1865 to save Lincoln from Booth, but his "time-distorter" is quickly taken away from him by suspicious guards. Its internal workings tick, you see, and they think he is an assassin with a clock bomb. They destroy it, haul him away to his fate, and Lincoln goes on to meet his. In the same spirit (but even more shocking) is the result of a time traveler's intentional tampering with the past in David Gerrold's 1973 novel *The Man Who Folded Himself*. That traveler experiments with "making things different" and, in his words, "Once I created a world where Jesus Christ . . . went out into the desert to fast and never came back. The twentieth century I returned to was—different. Alien."

With such a stupendous power to alter reality, assuming the past *can* be changed, perhaps one might imagine prospective time travelers to the past being required to first file Historical Impact Statements![44] Not all would receive permission. In one classic tale,[45] for example, we read of a time traveler who takes a rifle and 5000 rounds of explosive bullets back to Golgotha. His intention—to be history's first Rambo by picking off any Roman soldier who gets within a hundred yards of Jesus! As outrageous as this concept is (but who among those now reading this won't admit to at least a momentary thrill at the idea and, perhaps, even a secret willingness to do it themselves, if they could), it isn't the story's peak. That comes when the reader is reminded that it was Christ's *desire* to die on the Cross, that he *had* to die for our sins; to prevent that from happening would change all of history for the last 2000 years. What, then, should the time traveler's colleagues do when they discover his plan? Should they stop him or not? What might happen if they do interfere? Of course, if the time traveler is 'now' in the past, isn't it already 'too late' to stop him? Oh, the conundrums of time travel and changing the past!

The classic change-the-past paradox is, of course, the grandfather paradox. A famous story[46] pushed this paradox to its logical limit to illustrate its supposed dangers. Having traveled to Greece in the fifth century B.C., the traveler suddenly realizes (with just a little exaggeration): "Ninety-five generations back you'd have more grandfathers than there are people on Earth, or stars in the Galaxy! You're kin to everyone . . . You as much as take a poke at anyone, and the odds are you won't even get to be a twinkle in your daddy's eye."

---

[43]R. Silverberg, "The Assassin," *Imaginative Tales*, July 1957.
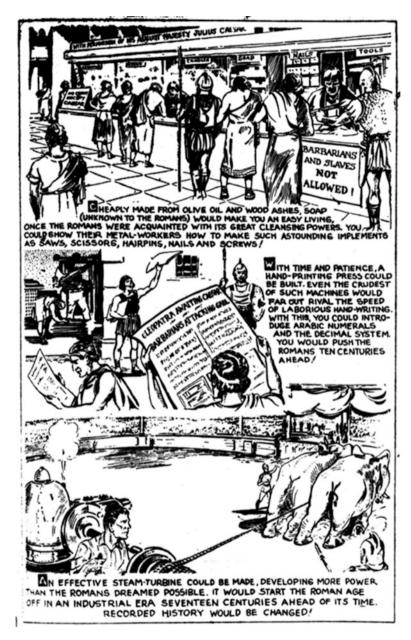
[44]See, for example, the novel by C. L. Harness, *Krono*, Franklin Watts 1988.

[45]A. Porges, "The Rescuer," *Analog Science Fiction*, July 1962.

[46]P. S. Miller, "Status Quondam," *New Tales of Space and Time*, November 1951. This is the Miller I mentioned back in note 15.

Fig. 4.2 Illustrator Jack Binder (1902–1986) was the author of a continuing series called "IF—
...." in *Thrilling Wonder Stories*. In each issue, the ellipses would be replaced with some phrase
such as "the Sun exploded!," "there was another ice age!," or "there was no friction!." The
installment shown here (and in Fig. 4.3) appeared in December 1938 and asserted that the past
could be changed by a time traveler

Fig. 4.3 (Fig. 4.2 continued). Illustration for "IF—You Were Stranded in Time!" ©1938 by Better Publications, Inc.; Reprinted by permission of the Ackerman Science Fiction Agency, 2495 Glendower Ave., Hollywood, CA 90027 for the Estate

Even earlier than Miller's tale is an equally famous one[47] that illustrates the same point in a graphic way. In A.D. 452 a time traveler shoots and kills one of Attila's Huns (who would have been his great-grandfather many times over); the result is that 50,000 of the Hun's descendants vanish! So dramatic did the readers of this story find the concept that author repeated the idea the very next year.[48] Twenty years later another writer topped these tales by having a time traveler accidently kill the original 'intelligent baboon' in the ancient past, thereby wiping out the entire human species![49]

Science fiction writers have been as puzzled by the grandfather paradox[50] as have been nearly everybody else. As the inventor of the first time machine says in one tale,[51] "I have devised a method [for travel] into the distant past. The paradox is immediately pointed out—suppose [the time traveler] should kill an ancestor or otherwise change history? I do not claim to be able to explain how this apparent paradox is overcome in time travel; all I know is that time travel *is* possible. Undoubtedly, better minds than mine will one day resolve that paradox, but until then we shall continue to utilize time travel, paradox or not."

Some may feel it overly dramatic that the classic time travel paradox has such a murderous form, but that is its historical origin in science fiction (not in either physics or philosophy). We can find the grandfather paradox discussed as if already well-known in a letter to the editor at *Astounding Stories* (January 1933). The author of that letter wrote "Why pick on grandfather? It seems that the only way to prove that time travel is impossible is to cite a case of killing one's own grandfather. This incessant murdering of harmless ancestors must stop. Let's see some wide-awake fan make up some other method of disproving the theory." As we proceed, you'll see just how clever some of those who responded to that writer's plea have been but, even today, as the grandfather paradox stands revealed as a red herring, it is preeminent in most people's imaginations. If a solution to the grandfather paradox puzzle escaped an early science fiction writer, then he would generally just mysteriously mention it and then hasten on to other matters. For example, in one story[52] the following exchange between the stock pulp-fiction characters of a young hero and a brilliant old scientist occurs:

---

[47]N. Schachner, "Ancestral Voices," *Astounding Stories*, December 1933.

[48]N. Schachner, "The Time Imposter," *Astounding Stories*, March 1934.

[49]C. Dye, "Time Goes to Now," *Science Fiction Quarterly*, May 1953.

[50]The 'paradox' is that, assuming you do arrive in the past with a working gun, why *can't* you kill your grandfather? After all, you *must* fail in that quest because otherwise you wouldn't be there from the future to even try. But *why* must you fail? It is, of course, not actually necessary to try to kill your grandfather to run into this paradoxical situation—just go back in time to any moment in the past and try to kill yourself! You won't succeed (if the past is unchangeable), but *why not*? (To argue 'because the past is unchangeable' is to beg the question. We need more insight than that.)

[51]M. Reynolds and F. Brown, "Dark Interlude," *Galaxy Science Fiction*, January 1951.

[52]C. South, "The Time Mirror," *Amazing Stories*, December 1942.

"You mean that time travel really is possible? That men can be transported into the future or the past—?"

The other held up a restraining hand. "Yes. Time travel *is* possible . . ."

"But professor! Think of what you're saying! You're telling me that I could go back and murder my own grandfather. That I could prevent myself from being born—?"

Again the elder man sighed. "I was afraid of this," he said. "I knew you could not understand." He hesitated. Then: "At any rate, take my word for it that time travel is possible. Also, I assure you that there are any number of perfectly sound theoretical and practical reasons why you never could hope to murder your grandparents."

We are, however, not told just what those reasons might be.

Even when all has been said about the impossibility of changing the past, and even when they are finally willing to concede that point, most people still cannot help wondering *why* the time traveler can't kill his grandfather. There the time traveler is, after all, just two feet away from the nasty young codger (I assume he is nasty to make the whole unpleasant business of murder as palatable as possible), with a perfectly functioning and well-oiled revolver in his hand, cocked and loaded with powerful, factory-fresh ammunition that even Dirty Harry would find excessive. What can possibly prevent the time traveler from simply raising his arm and doing the deed? Indeed, the artwork (reproduced at the end of the Introduction) accompanying one 1944 story shows this act in detail, including the smoking gun in the hand of the time traveler who has just taken a shot at grandpop. And if that still leaves open the remote possibility of an aiming error through nervousness, then why can't a suicidal time traveler just wrap his body in factory-fresh dynamite and blow-up granddad—along with himself and everything else within a hundred feet?

I'll argue in this book that killing your grandfather in the past, before he sets *you* in motion, is *logically* impossible. The laws of physics will then faithfully do their duty. No one will ever find an unfinished note in the empty laboratory of a missing traveler who, skeptical of the grandfather paradox, has written "To prove the falsity of the grandfather paradox, I will take my time machine back 50 years and kill my grandf. . .." Nor will any time traveler have to be concerned about the twist in one tale, which opens with the inventor of a time machine is showing the gadget to three friends. One of them later steals the machine to go back 60 years to kill his grandfather—and the story closes with a *near* repeat of the opening, with the inventor showing the gadget to *two* friends.[53]

Invoking logic in this way, in the context of time travel to the past, was discussed in the philosophical literature nearly half a century ago: "If we assume that it is impossible for [a time traveler to kill his younger self], some people are inclined to ask such questions as this: 'But how can the laws of logic prevent him from killing his younger self? Do they cause his finger to slip on the trigger or the bullet to fly apart in mid-air?' The implication of such questions is that the laws of logic cannot prevent such actions. But such questions are like asking: 'How do the laws of logic

---

[53]F. Brown, "First Time Machine," *Honeymoon in Hell*, Bantam 1958.

prevent the geometer from trisecting the angle or squaring the circle? Do they, for example, cause his ruler to slip as a crucial moment every time he tries it?"[54].

A similar point was made later by another philosopher: "Surely it is not an impairment of 'freedom of action' ... that, e.g., you cannot push another person harder than he/she pushes you. Just as one would explain this is the case by reference to Newton's third law ('to every action there is an equal and opposite reaction'), one could explain the impossibility of [causing a paradox] by reference to the laws which imply such a impossibility. If this explanation is taken to be unsatisfactory, it would seem that one is saddled with a general problem concerning the reconciliation of physics and 'freedom,' and not with a specific argument against [paradoxes]."[55]

The grandfather paradox unquestionably nags at all students of time travel. As a character in one story declares, "The resolution of [the grandfather paradox] is the key to time,"[56] and some incorrectly believe it remains unresolved.[57] The paradox *is* undeniably troublesome: as one philosopher put it, the apparent possibility of a time traveler being able to do away with both his grandfather and himself gives "rise to such puzzles that we are forced to question its [time travel's] intelligibility."[58] In the next section we'll explore how to answer this concern.

4.3   Changing Versus Affecting the Past

> "The past—it's pretty damn solid, Phil. It's a little like a compost pile—fairly soft near the surface but packed hard further down, with all that Time piled on top of it."[59]
>
> —one 'explanation,' perhaps, for the unchangeability of the past

The common belief today, among physicists and philosophers alike, is that given any consistent description of reality it is simply impossible for a time traveler to kill himself as a baby. As one philosopher put it, "Autoinfanticide is *metaphysically impossible* [my emphasis]. This metaphysical impossibility is philosophically intriguing because unlike most impossible events, we can vividly picture how it might look. Time travel itself seems possible, and for those who arrive in the past

---

[54]J. W. Meiland, "A Two-Dimensional Passage Model of Time for Time Travel," *Philosophical Studies*, November 1974, pp. 153–173. Science fiction had already considered time travel suicide in, for example, K. Neville, "Mission," *Fantasy and Science Fiction*, April 1953.

[55]F. Arntzenius, "Causal Paradoxes in Special Relativity," *British Journal for the Philosophy of Science*, June 1990, pp. 223–243.

[56]P. Worth, "Typewriter from the Future," *Amazing Stories*," February 1950. See also note 106 in Chap. 1.

[57]For example, in J. H. Schmidt, "Newcomb's Paradox Realized with Backward Causation," *British Journal for the Philosophy of Science*, March 1998, pp. 67–87, we read that "there are as yet no generally accepted solutions" to the grandfather paradox.

[58]S. Gorovitz, "Leaving the Past Alone," *Philosophical Review*, July 1964, pp. 360–371.

[59]F. M. Busby, "A Gun for Grandfather," *Future Science Fiction*, Fall 1957.

with proper equipment and training, the actual infanticide should not be difficult."[60] And so the grandfather paradox lives on, bedeviling both physicists and philosophers alike.

Indeed, one physicist described the time travel paradoxes as "the most controversial issue related to time machines."[61] As he argued, "These paradoxes seem to be something inherent to time machines (their main attribute, perhaps), so it is reasonable to assume that if there exists a universal law prohibiting the time machines, it must have something to do with the paradoxes. And on the other hand, be the problem of the paradoxes satisfactorily solved there probably would be no need to look for such a law, the (supposed) paradoxicalness of the time machines being traditionally the main objection against them."

One of the persistent stumbling blocks to removing the confusion of the paradoxes is a failure to distinguish between *affecting* and *changing* the past. One philosopher wrote this, in a somewhat bungled attempt to explain what is meant by affecting the past: "Nothing anyone can do now can make it not have rained yesterday"[62] if, in fact, it *did* rain yesterday. This is correct, but it is *not* what is meant by *affecting* the past. Rather, if the reason it *did* rain yesterday is because a time traveler from the future seeded the clouds, then that time traveler affected the past. Making it not to have rained yesterday would be to *change* the past.

A classic[63] by Isaac Asimov illustrates what is meant by a time traveler affecting the past. An idealistic physics professor, convinced that the world's political problems are the result of the comparative newness of scientific thought and tradition, tries to change the past (and thus the present) by sending a Greek translation of a modern chemistry text back 2000 years to the Hellenic days of Leucippus, Lucretius, and Democritus. He dies in the attempt but succeeds in the transmission. When a government investigator—called in because the professor drained an entire nuclear power reactor to energize his time machine!—discovers that the transmission takes a day to travel back a hundred years (a little gimmick with no foundation in physics, but simply something Asimov needed for the story), he fears 'our' world will vanish in 20 days, to be replaced by a 'new' one. In the end, however, he learns you can't change the past. As one of the late professor's colleagues tells the investigator, "While you are right that any change in the course of past events, however trifling, would have incalculable consequences . . . I must point out that are nevertheless wrong in your final conclusion. *Because THIS is the world in which the Greek chemistry text WAS sent back*."

---

[60]David Horacek, "Time Travel in Indeterministic Worlds," *The Monist*, July 2005, pp. 423–436.

[61]S. Krasnikov, "Time Travel Paradox," *Physical Review D*, February 14, 2002, pp. 064013–1 to -8.

[62]R. G. Swinburne, "Affecting the Past," *Philosophical Quarterly*, October 1966, pp. 341–347.

[63]"The Red Queen's Race," *Astounding Science Fiction*, January 1949.

Another good illustration from science fiction of affecting the past can be found years before Asimov's. In that story,[64] a time traveler leaves the Chicago of 1942 for the year 3000. Much later, in the year 2564, another time traveler interested in history journeys back to 2253 in an attempt to learn the cause of the great Chicago explosion of that year. The explosion was centered on the site of an ancient laboratory once used by a scientist who mysteriously vanished in 1942. The second time traveler begins his trip into the past on the same spot, with plans to go back to the day before the explosion. At the story's end, we learn that the disaster was the result of the two time travelers colliding as both 'passed through' 2253. The backward traveling historian, therefore, by pushing a button in 2564, is the cause of an event that happened 311 years earlier.[65]

To give a science fiction example of changing the past, it would be hard to do better than with a story that appeared a few years after Asimov's The central character is a researcher in time travel who has concluded that what is wrong with the world can be traced back to the scientific method getting off to a late start (this story was almost surely written as a result of Asimov's tale!): the time traveler thinks he can correct matters by visiting 340 B.C. and educating Aristotle on the proper scientific attitude. (Aristotle believed that observing the world was inferior to pure thinking about how the things, in his opinion, *ought* to work.) This the time traveler does, with utterly disastrous consequences. He returns to the present to find a scientifically retarded world that makes him a slave. In his cell he writes on a wall the bitter lesson he has learned too late: "Leave Well Enough Alone."[66]

It is the fear of time travelers from the future attempting to alter the past that has led some philosophers (and not just a few physicists) to assert that time travel is impossible, because it would mean what they feel to be impossible might happen: changing the past. One philosopher, however, argued long ago that such a worry is unwarranted. As he wrote at the end of an essay (a polemic *against* the concept of four-dimensional spacetime, and so *against* the idea of time travel), "Squandering vast sums on foolish enterprises is an everyday occurrence. [For example], will the U.S. time explorer get back and eliminate Lenin before his Russian rival gets back even earlier and eliminates George Washington? . . . If such spectacular folly once gets under way because governments have been convinced of some nonsensical theory, a logician will not . . . lose any sleep about who is going to succeed."[67]

---

[64]O. Saari, "The Time Bender," *Astounding Stories*, August 1937.

[65]This story describes something a bit more than 'simply' affecting the past; it has a *causal loop* in it. The time traveling historian makes his trip *because* of an event in the past that his trip causes. Such paradoxes will be the subject of the next section.

[66]L. Sprague de Camp, "Aristotle and the Gun," *Astounding Science Fiction*, February 1958. Asimov and de Camp were close friends, and their two stories with similar premises are clearly the result of a bit of friendly rivalry.

[67]P. Geach, "Some Problems About Time," in *Studies in the Philosophy of Thought and Action* (P. F. Strawson, editor), Oxford 1968.

And long before that essay (with its correct conclusion reached through faulty reasoning) was penned, we learn the same lesson (in a 1923 tale by the English novelist May Sinclair (1863–1946)) as we follow a woman right into hell after her death; she ends up there because of an immoral life. She then wanders through time, into her past, but finds that she can change nothing. As she is told, "You think the past affects the future. Has it never struck you that the future may affect the past? … You *were* what you *were to be*."[68] This last line, from a *non*-science fiction story, is consistent with the modern view held by physicists of time travel. You cannot travel anywhere into the past unless you've already been there, and when you do make the trip you will do what you've already done there. You could not, as does the time traveler in one tale,[69] change the course of history by revealing twentieth-century physics in the eighteenth century. That does not mean you would necessarily be ineffectual during your stay in the past, however (certainly it doesn't mean, as Hugo Gernsback thought, that you'd be *invisible*!) Not being able to change the past is not equivalent to being unable to *influence* or *affect* what happened in the past, and science fiction writers have used this distinction to good effect, as did Asimov (note 63) and de Camp (note 66).

Robert Heinlein was a science fiction writer who clearly understood time travel paradoxes, both what they mean and, at least as important, what they do not mean. In his 1964 cold-war novel *Farnham's Freehold*, for example—the story of a family that is literally blasted twenty-one centuries into the future when their bomb shelter receives a direct hit from a Soviet nuclear warhead—we find following exchange as two of the characters are about to return to their original time via time machine:

> "The way I see it, there are no paradoxes in time travel, there can't be. If we are going to make this jump, then we already did; that's what happened. And if it doesn't work, then it's because it didn't happen."
>
> "But it hasn't happened yet. Therefore, you are saying it didn't happen, so it can't happen. That's what I said."
>
> "No, no! We don't know whether it has already happened or not. If it did, it will. If it didn't, it won't."

Modern philosophers, and many physicists, too, as well, who have examined the concept of time travel in depth, agree with Heinlein's character and, indeed, it is now common practice to invoke the so-called *principle of self-consistency*—generally attributed to the Russian astrophysicist Igor Novikov (see note 117 in Chap. 1) because he and his colleagues did not simply invoke it, but rather were able to *derive* it from the *principle of least action*, a concept held by many to be at

---

[68]M. Sinclair, "Where Their Fire Is Not Quenched," in *After the Darkness Falls* (B. Karloff, editor), World Publishing 1946.

[69]D. Beason, "Ben Franklin's Laser," *Analog*, December 1990.

the highest level of importance in physics[70]: all that is required, argued Novikov, in *any* physical process (including time travel), is that a *logical* consistency exist between events.[71] In his book *Evolution of the Universe* (originally published in Russian in 1979), Novikov wrote "The closure of time curves does not necessarily imply a violation of causality, since the events along such a closed line may be all 'self-adjusted'—they all affect one another through the closed cycle and follow on another in a self-consistent way." He later repeated that view in one of the first time machine papers in the physics literature.[72]

In fact, despite the attachment of Novikov's name to the principle of self-consistency, it was actually around in physics *decades* earlier; it has been traced back to as far as 1903![73] And at least an intuitive understanding of the principle can be found in the mainstream literature from nearly as long ago. For example, in Lord Dunsany's short 1928 play *The Jest of Hahalaba* (the inspiration for the 1944 film *It Happened Tomorrow*), a man obtains (via supernatural means) a copy of tomorrow's newspaper. In it he reads his own obituary, which so shocks him that he promptly expires—thus explaining the obituary notice.

The principle of self-consistency has been in science fiction long before Novikov, too. An example is the 1941 story "Time Wants a Skeleton" (see note 15). In it one character, after puzzling over a time travel paradox, realizes that "Future and present demanded co-operation, if there was to be a logical future!" And a nice lecture on the principle (that pre-dates by 3 years the dialogue quoted earlier from Heinlein's *Farnham's Freehold*) is given by a character that is particularly interesting because it was published, not in a specialty science fiction magazine catering to an audience with 'genre knowledge' of time travel, but rather in an icon of general American culture.[74]

Not all science fiction writers, however, have understood the requirement for consistency around a loop in time. In one tale, for example, a man meets the

---

[70]Like just about everything concerning time travel, however, not *all* think this. For example, the great German physicist Max Planck (1858–1947), the 1918 Nobel physics laureate, said (in 1922): "Physics hence is inclined to view the principle of least action more as a formal and accidental curiosity than as a pillar of physical knowledge." Still, he *did* also declare that he thought it unlikely "the dominance of such a simple law could be a mere accident." Quoted from Marc Lange, "Conservation Laws in Scientific Explanations: Constraints or Coincidences," *Philosophy of Science*, July 2011, pp. 333–352.

[71]See A. Carlini, *et al.,* "Time Machines: The Principle of Self-Consistency as a Consequence of the Principle of Minimal Action," October 1995, pp. 557–580, and "Time Machines and the Principle of Self-Consistency as a Consequence of the Principle of Stationary Action (II): The Cauchy Problem for a Self-Interacting Relativistic Particle," October 1996, pp. 445–479, both in *International Journal of Modern Physics D*.

[72]I. D. Novikov, "An Analysis of the Operation of a Time Machine," *Soviet Physics JETP*, March 1989, pp. 439–443.

[73]R. D. Driver, "Can the Future Influence the Present?" *Physical Review D*, February 15, 1979, pp. 1098–1107.

[74]R. F. Young, "The Dandelion Girl," *The Saturday Evening Post*, April 1, 1961. See also note 49 in Chap. 2.

inventor of a time machine and agrees to his request to use it to travel into the future. Once he is in the future, alas, the machine breaks. The man then finds another machine that, though it is too small for him to fit in it, is able to hold a recording that he sends back into the past to himself, to a time *before* he started his forward journey. The message on the recording (which he did not receive the 'first' time) is, of course, *not* to make a deal with the inventor. This advice he follows, and so the principle of self-consistency is violated twice in this story.[75]

An ability to play a role in history is not without some constraints. You can't save Jesus with a rifle (see note 45), or Joan of Arc with a fire extinguisher, or knock-out John Wilkes Booth with a baseball bat outside of Ford's Theatre, or blow-up Hitler with a bomb, and you can't prevent either the Black Death in the London of 1665 or the Great Fire the following year. But it *is* logically possible for a time traveler who has an infected rat sneak into his time machine, or who carelessly discards a match, to be the *cause* of the last two examples. That was the fate, for example, of the time traveling historian from A.D. 2461 who was the cause of the plague in A.D. 562 Rome, as well as of that in England nearly 800 years later.[76]

Michael Moorcock's 1969 novel *Behold the Man* gets the impossibility of changing the past, and the possibility of affecting it, right. When a disturbed man journeys backward in time to ancient Galilee to meet Christ, only to discover that there is no such person, *he* assumes the role and lives out the Biblical accounts up to and including dying on the Cross. He has not changed the past, but he certainly plays an important role in it!

An early science fiction story that got this right, long before the philosophers and physicists thought of it, was the clever tale whose artwork I have reproduced at the end of the Introduction.[77] In that story, a time traveler journeys back from 1943 to 1870 and shoots his then 14-year old grandfather in the head. Leaving his victim lying on the ground with "blood oozing all over the youth's forehead," the would-be killer returns to 1943. Once back, however, he finds himself in a strange place where he learns from two men that the Germans destroyed New York in 1920 with poison gas! Suddenly realizing that the death of his grandfather has apparently changed history (a curious oversight for anyone smart enough to invent a time machine and then to use it to force the 'grandfather paradox'), he decides he'd rather be dead than cut off for all time from the world he remembers. So, he shoots himself dead. Then we learn that the two men he encountered are actually inmates in an asylum who like to make-up stories for unsuspecting strangers. We also learn that the time traveler's grandfather's photographs always did show him with a "white, furrowed scar on his forehead that might have been caused by a glancing bullet."

---

[75]R. Wilson, "The Message," *Astounding Stories*, March 1942.

[76]G. C. Edmondson, "The Misfit," *Fantasy and Science Fiction*, February 1959.

[77]M. Weisinger, "Thompson's Time Traveling Theory,' *Amazing Stories*, March 1944.

Fig. 4.4 The inventor of a time machine about to commit autoinfanticide in the past (the youngster holding the teddy bear is a younger version of the time traveler). Illustration reproduced by the kind permission of Frank Arntzenius (Professor of Philosophy at Oxford University), from his paper "Time Travel: Double Your Fun," *Philosophy Compass*, November 2006, pp. 599–616

Well, okay, you might say at this point, 'I'm convinced you can't change the past, but let's get back to the autoinfanticide (grandfather) paradox. So *why can't* a time traveler kill his baby-self in the past?' A possible answer, one now generally accepted by philosophers and physicists alike, appeared first in science fiction. In a tale[78] that appeared just the year after Gödel's 1949 discovery of time travel in general relativity, we find a character saying "The answer is quite simple. When the man goes back in time and kills his grandfather, and returns to his own time again, he finds to his surprise that he made a mistake. It was not his grandfather at all! And no matter how many times he goes back and kills his grandfather … he *always* [my emphasis] finds he made a mistake." Or, perhaps, some noise distracts him as his finger tightens on the trigger, or the grenade he tosses at granddad is a dud, or a gust of wind deflects the arrow, or (most ludicrous of all) he simply slips on a discarded banana peel!

Okay, that works for *that* time traveler. But suppose, someone objects, that we arrange to have a *lot* of time travelers go back in time, each with murder in his heart for his grandfather. Then, as one philosopher has observed, "Since [killing one's grandfather in the distant past] is impossible, each assassin fails. Some change their minds, others slip on banana peels, yet others kill the wrong target, and so on. But there is something odd about the idea that such coincidences are guaranteed to happen, again and again!"[79]

Early science fiction avoided invoking banana peels by providing an even more extreme 'explanation' for the failures: the time police, who are charged with foiling would-be grandfather killers. (See, for example, the many stories by Poul Anderson (1926–2001) of the 'Time Patrol.') These time commandos are imagined to roam the corridors of time, disrupting the attempts of all those who would change

---

[78]"Typewriter from the Future": see note 106 in Chap. 1.

[79]Theodore Sider, "Time Travel, Coincidences, and Counterfactuals," *Philosophical Studies*, August 2002, pp. 115–138.

recorded history. Stories of these temporal cops are simply westerns, mysteries, police procedurals, or some other similar type of specialty genre story wearing thin camouflage. This story device, whose main purpose is to allow both time travel and free will,[80] has been correctly called "boring" by at least one philosopher (see note 5 in the Introduction), an evaluation shared by modern philosophers, physicists, and (I think) even most modern science fiction writers.

So, we seem to be back to banana peels to save grandfather—but it *is* difficult to deny that vast hordes of murderous grandsons *do* appear to require an unlimited number of strategically placed banana peels, strewn all about the past, to trip-up every one of those potential assassins. This problem, of repeated, improbable coincidences to thwart murderous descendants from the future, was first commented on by the philosopher Paul Horwich in 1975 (see note 19 in the Introduction), and then given a convincing resolution by another philosopher in 1997.[81]

To explain the argument, I'll first use the philosopher's less deadly example of dated objects. "Suppose," he writes, "that every object has written upon it the date on which it will cease to exist . . . perhaps a time traveler travelled into the future, observed the demise of objects and then travelled back [to just after he left for the future] and wrote the dates."[82] If now the time traveler tries to destroy an object *before the date written on it*, then he *will* fail. As the philosopher amusingly described his attempts to destroy a pen 'before its time,' "I take it outside to place under the wheels of a passing train, but there is a train strike that day. The telephone rings just as I am about to drop the pen into a vat of acid. I slip on a banana peel on my way to put the pen in the microwave. My dog eats my designs for a pen grinder. And so on, for as long as you please. However many attempts I make, the attempts in no way require the occurrence of the coincidences that foil them." To put it bluntly, 'Stuff happens.' The pen has the observed date of its destruction on it, and that date is still in the future and so it is simply impossible to destroy it now.

Now, here's the point: the date on the pen is there *because* all those attempts to destroy it before that written date fail. But the presence of the date is *not* the reason for any of the weird (?) occurrences that disrupted all the attempts to destroy the pen, but rather it's *because* all those attempts failed that the date is what it is. This same argument applies to the grandfather paradox. The only time travelers available, today, to go back into the past to *try* to kill their grandfathers, are precisely those time travelers whose grandfathers were *not* killed. Or, to paraphrase our philosopher (note 81), to ask 'why do coincidences always foil the time traveller's

---

[80]See, for example, David King, "Time Travel and Self-Consistency: Implications for Determinism and the Human Condition," *Ratio*, September 1999, pp. 271–278.

[81]Nicholas J. J. Smith, "Bananas Enough for Time Travel?" *British Journal for the Philosophy of Science*, September 1997, pp. 363–389.

[82]This does present us with the curious (although non-paradoxical) situation that the time traveler will find, upon his appearing in the future, the date he *will write* (in his personal future) when he returns to just after he left on his time trip.

attempts to kill [grandfather in the distant past], is to get things back to front. It is only because the murder attempts fail that the time traveler is alive in the future to even make the *attempt*.'

In other words, not only is the grandfather 'paradox' not a paradox, it isn't even surprising!

4.4 Causal Loop and Bootstrap Paradoxes

"My dear Collingwood, don't drive yourself crazy trying to resolve the paradoxes of time travel. The [time machines] are gone ... have a drink."[83]

The grandfather paradox might finally have been put to rest, but there are still plenty of other logical minefields left to be negotiated. One of the more puzzling is that of the closed loop in time, a conundrum nicely illustrated by one philosopher[84] as follows, as an explanation of the journey one time traveler makes to 3000 B.C.: "In our time travel story it just may be that the traveler's interest in going back to ancient Egypt is stimulated by recently discovered documents, found near Cairo, containing the diary of a person claiming to be a time traveler, whereupon our hero, realizing it is himself, immediately begins ... construction of a rocket in order to 'fulfill his destiny.'" In other words, (1) he builds a time machine and goes back to the past because of the discovered diary, and (2) the diary is discovered because he goes back to the past. Each of these points by itself has logical clarity, but together they form a closed time loop (a *causal loop*) of enormous mystery.

Science fiction was strewn with causal loops long before the philosophers and physicists began to ponder them, however, with (for example) one early tale on a time traveler who journeys a century into the past because she finds an old, yellowed newspaper story describing her arrival.[85] But this tale wasn't the first to use a causal loop, as we can find one of the first sophisticated treatments of this device in a story that appeared even earlier (in the same publication).[86] A time traveler in 1930, about to start his journey into the future in an airplane/time machine, wonders at the last moment if he should really go—then he sees himself returning and thus *knows* he will successfully make the trip.

As he later tells a friend, "That decided me ... Paradoxical? I should say so! I had seen myself return from my time-trip *before* I started it [just like Marty McFly in the original *Back to the Future* film]; had I *not* seen that return, I would *not* have

---

[83]A science fiction suggestion that in certain situations (particularly causal loops), might actually be good advice! From L. Sprague de Camp's "The Best-Laid Scheme," *Astounding Science Fiction*, February 1941.

[84]L. Dwyer, "Time Travel and Some Alleged Logical Asymmetries Between Past and Future," *Canadian Journal of Philosophy*, March 1978, pp. 15–38.

[85]P. Bolton, "The Time Hoaxes," *Amazing Stories*, August 1931.

[86]F. J. Bridge, "Via the Time Accelerator," *Amazing Stories*, January 1931.

commenced that strange journey, and so could *not* have returned in order to induce me to decide that I *would* make the journey!" And later, when he finds himself in a dangerous situation in the future, he draws hope from that initial experience: "I *would* escape ... It was so decreed. Had I not, with my own eyes, seen myself appear out of the fourth dimension back there in the Twentieth Century, and glide down to my landing-field? Surely, then, I *was* destined to return to my own age safe and sound."

Even more dramatic is the second, internal time loop that ends the story. When the time traveler arrives in a ruined city in the year A.D. 1,001,930 he is greeted, *by name*, by an old man who says he (the old man) is the Last Man alive. He knew the time traveler was coming because an ancient history book had said the Last Man had, in fact, appeared in the year A.D. 502,101 in the very time machine out of which the time traveler has just stepped. The time traveler is so startled by all this (and who could blame him!?) that he decides to mull over what he has been told until the next day. As he wakes up in the morning, he is just in time to watch the Last Man depart for 502,101. Stranded in the future, the time traveler wanders the empty city in despair until he chances upon a museum. And in the museum, sealed in a glass case, is his time machine (!)—it has been there for half a million years, since the end of the Last Man's journey. And so the time traveler is saved; he merely adds some oil to the still-functional engine (if you can accept time travel, I suppose this is no more difficult to believe) and returns to 1930—just as he saw himself do at the beginning of the story.

Since Bridge's astonishing story, the idea of a causal loop in time has been used many times in science fiction. Here's a representative sampling:

(1) Time travelers arrive in the forty-sixth century, only to find that they are expected. Their host tells them why: "I have been awaiting your arrival from the past. I have a written record of your coming. You see, I have a time machine myself ... With my time machine, I recently went a year into the future and read the written account I had made, or will make after you leave. Then I came back, awaiting your arrival."[87]

(2) Armed travelers return to the Triassic age to uncover the secrets of a mysterious artifact that has been recently discovered; at the end we learn it is the remains of their own automatic rifle[88];

(3) A time traveler journeys back 500 years, where he suffers an accident that results in his being "agelessly stuck" in his time-traveling gadget until he is freed—by himself, 500 years later. He then gets into the gadget to journey back 500 years[89];

(4) The world's time suddenly loses 5 min, an astonishing event that comes to be called "the time drop." After 2 weeks of investigation, a reporter traces this

---

[87]E. Binder, "The Time Cheaters," *Thrilling Wonder Stories*, March 1940.

[88]J. Blish, "Weapon Out of Time," *Science Fiction Quarterly*, Spring 1941.

[89]A. B. Chandler, "The Tides of Time," *Fantastic Adventures*, June 1948.

event to a reclusive (but brilliant, of course) scientist who reveals that he has invented a time machine. The reporter decides to test this claim by using the machine to return to just before the start of the time drop, to observe precisely what caused it—it is, in fact, a malfunction of the machine that is at fault and the reporter finds himself caught in a 2-week long causal loop[90];

(5) A physicist knows something odd lies in his future when he is confronted with a 700 year-old museum copy of a book. The puzzle is how to explain a message penned in ancient, faded ink, in modern English *and in his handwriting*, on the back side of one of the recently unglued endpapers! How, too, to explain his own fingerprints all over the same endpaper? How, indeed, to answer these questions is his problem when he is presented with all of this and is asked, "Have you, by any chance, been visiting the thirteenth century?" At the end of the story the time loop is closed when the physicist finds himself writing that same message on a *brand new* copy of the book that has been sent from the past (and that he returns to the thirteenth century via a "time portal")[91];

(6) A time traveler from 1964 is secretly observed by one of the 'locals' when he arrives in 1683. The oddness of the sudden appearance of the time traveler and his machine ("It were a kind of Dazzle") makes the local think it might be that the stranger is the man who stole some items from his home the previous night, the same night he had an "ill Dream." Stealing the time machine after the time traveler has gone exploring, the local travels to 1964 where he learns how valuable antiques are. So back he goes to 1683, to the night before the time machine first appeared, to get some 'antiques' from his house. And thus he realizes who the thief *really* was. Before leaving again for the future, he enters his own bedroom to see himself asleep and then to awaken. And so he also learns the cause of what he called his "ill Dream."[92];

(7) A movie production crew goes into the past to make a film. At the end of the story it becomes clear that their presence in the past was not an insignificant event, as one character realizes after seeing the evidence of how they affected (*not* changed!) the past: "If this is true, then the only reason that the Vikings settled in Vinland is because we decided to make a motion picture showing how the Vikings settled in Vinland"[93];

(8) A private college, endowed decades before by a generous but mysterious benefactor, experiments with a time machine. Suddenly, one of the college's graduates is accidently sent a hundred years into the past—where she becomes the benefactor. The college comes into existence, therefore, because it will exist[94];

---

[90]W. Sheldon, "A Bit of Forever," *Super Science Stories*, July 1950.

[91]M. Leinster, "The Gadget Had a Ghost," *Thrilling Wonder Stories*, June 1952.

[92]D. I. Massor, "A Two-Timer," *New Worlds SF*, February 1966.

[93]H. Harrison, *The Technicolor Time Machine*, Doubleday 1967.

[94]C. Simak, "The Birch Clump Cylinder," *Stellar 1* (J. del Rey, editor), Ballantine 1974.

(9) A man gets the money to support his experiments in time travel by selling a large collection of old, rare comic books he has discovered in his late mother's attic. Later we learn how the comic books came to be there; after his experiments are successful, the inventor travels back into the distant past, buys the *newly* published comic books right off newsstands, and stores them in his mother's attic where, decades later, he knows his younger self will grow up and then find them (and thus get the money to make it all happen)[95];

(10) In the 1980 film *Somewhere in Time* (based on the 1975 novel *Bid Time Return* by Richard Matheson), a man in the present is visited by a mysterious old woman who gives him a watch. Later, he travels back to 1912 where he meets a girl to whom he gives the watch. He then returns to the present, and she lives out her life from 1912 on, until she too reaches the present, where we discover she is the (now old) woman who gives the man the watch.

Once philosophers discovered the bizarre nature of causal loops, they quickly proved themselves to be the equal of science fiction writers in imagining strange doings. Here's one example of that, one which any writer would be proud of: "If James cannot decide whether to marry Alice or Jane, he simply travels to the future and learns that he is to choose Alice; he then chooses her for this reason. One wants to object that the decision to marry Alice was never really made at all! But this is not true; the decision was made—as a result of the knowledge that this was the decision . . . It is not the case that the prospective bridegroom could visit the future and compare the results of marrying Alice with those of marrying Jane in order to decide between the alternatives. For if he visits the future, he will learn only that in fact he chose Alice, for better or for worse!"[96]

This same philosopher elaborated on his view of causal loops in a later paper, where he wrote "What if time travel becomes commonplace, so that we must deal with a constant stress of time travelers returning from the future to reveal what they have seen?"[97] His answer is "I think it is clear that the . . . causal loop we have been discussing would become very common, and would play a prominent role in human affairs." He denied, however, that such causal loops would mean the loss of free will. As he explained his position, knowledge of a rigged roulette will not prevent you from putting your money on the table *if you want to*, but perhaps that

---

[95]D. Knight, "The Man Who Went Back," *Amazing Stories*, November 1985. This same idea was used earlier in the story "Compounded Interest," (*Magazine of Fantasy and Science Fiction*, August 1956) by Mack Reynolds, in which the inventor of a time machine has the money to build his gadget because he uses it to go back into the past where he deposits a small sum, which then grows (through the 'magic' of compound interest) into the cash he needs to fund his time machine.

[96]G. Fulmer, "Understanding Time Travel," *Southwestern Journal of Philosophy*, Spring 1980, pp. 151–156.

[97]G. Fulmer, "Time Travel, Determinism, and Fatalism," *Philosophical Speculations in Science Fiction and Fantasy*, Spring 1981, pp. 41–48.

knowledge will influence your *freely* made decision making. Whether you learn that the roulette wheel is rigged by traditional means (perhaps you see magnets being installed under the table) or by means of time travel is irrelevant—even with this knowledge, you act freely. Other philosophers have not been so generous. One disliked causal loops so much, for example, that while he believed them to be conceptually possible, he also thought them to have "a queer smell,"[98] so much so that he simply preferred to avoid thinking about them!

One concern that many philosophers and physicists have had with closed loops in time is that they fear that would mean being trapped on an endless cycle of repeating events. For example, one philosopher long ago wrote

> "There is nothing contradictory in imagining causal chains that are closed, though the existence of such chains would lead to rather unfamiliar experiences. For instance, it might then happen that a person would meet his own former self and have a conversation with him, thus closing a causal line by the use of sound waves. When this occurs the first time he would be the younger ego, and when the same occurrence takes place a second time he would be the older ego. Perhaps the older ego would find it difficult to convince the younger one of their identity; but the older ego would recall an identical experience long ago. And when the younger ego has become old and experiences such an encounter a second time, he is on the other side and tries to convince some 'third' ego of their physical identity. Such a situation appears paradoxical to us; but there is nothing illogical in it."[99]

What has been (erroneously) described with that is the beginning of an endless succession of encounters around a closed causal loop. There is, however, just *one* encounter on such a loop in spacetime (but, of course, the mind of the time traveler experiences the encounter twice), subject to the constraint of self-consistency. Some physicists, too, have been so concerned about multiple trips around closed timelike curves (CTCs), because they think such trips would allow the past to be changed, that they have felt it necessary to specifically forbid such a possibility. As one paper put it, "That the principle of self-consistency is not totally tautological becomes clear when one considers the following alternative: The laws of physics might permit CTCs; and when CTCs occur, they might trigger new kinds of local physics which we have not previously met. For example, a quantum-mechanical system, propagating around CTCs, might return to where it started with values for its wave function that are inconsistent with the initial values; and it might then continue propagating and return once again with a third set of values, then a fourth, then a fifth ... The principle of self-consistency by fiat forbids changing the past."[100] This last statement is, of course, in agreement with the position I have taken in this book, a position that has generally been accepted by most philosophers for several decades now, but the proponents of the principle of self-consistency

---

[98] M. MacBeath, "Communication and Time Reversal," *Synthese*, July 1983, pp. 27–46.

[99] H. Reichenbach, *The Direction of Time*, University of California Press 1956, p. 37.

[100] J. L. Friedman et al., "Cauchy Problem in Spacetimes with Closed Timelike Curves," *Physical Review D*, September 15, 1990, pp. 1915–1930. Another physicist, however, has flatly rejected this need for the Principle, calling it redundant: see D. Deutsch, "Quantum Mechanics Near Closed Timelike Lines," *Physical Review D*, November 15, 1991, pp. 3197–3217.

seem to have been driven to it by a fear of the past 'happening again' over and over, as in the 1993 film *Groundhog Day*.

Science fiction writers have stumbled into the error of endless cycling on a closed time loop, too. In one such tale,[101] the inventor of the first time machine travels 500 years into the future where he finds a bronze statue of himself that honors his discovery of time travel. Suddenly injured, fatally, he returns to the present with the statue and then dies. As a memorial, the statue is placed in the very spot where the inventor found (will find) it. As the tale ends, the late inventor's lab assistant wonders to himself what will happen 500 years later: "Suddenly a strange machine will come out of the past and [the inventor] will be here again—although he is dead and has been dead 500 years. [He will take the statue] and go back to the past . . . to die. And once again that maddening cycle will begin, to go on and on forever as long as time spins its threads."

That story illustrates yet another puzzle associated with those causal loops that contain a circulating, physical object. That is, *who made the statue*? We can ask the same question about the watch in the time loop of *Somewhere in Time/Bid Time Return* as, at every instant of its existence, the watch is in the possession of either the man or the woman? So, *when was the watch constructed*?

There have been some science fiction writers who specifically recognized this question, long before either the philosophers or the physicists paid attention to it. In one early tale,[102] for example, we read of a time machine that travels from 1935 to 1925. When the question of the origin of the time machine comes up, we read

> "One time machine, found in 1935 and brought back to 1925—found in 1935 *because* brought back to 1925. That is all."
> "But who made it in the first place?—Oh, skip the 'in the first place.'[103] Just plain: who made it?"
> "No one. It was never made . . . It is here because it is here."

This same puzzle was addressed in *The Technicolor Time Machine* (note 93), when one character is perplexed over a piece of paper in his wallet with a diagram on it, a piece of paper he got from himself (an *older version* of himself, who traveled into the past to give it to his younger self). In frustration, he asks a friend:

> "Then no one ever *drew* this diagram. It just travels around in this wallet and I hand it to myself. Explain that."
> His friend replies:
> "There is no need to, it explains itself. The piece of paper consists of a self-sufficient loop in time. No one ever drew it. It exists because it is, which is adequate explanation. If you wish to understand it, I will give you an example. You know that all pieces of paper

---

[101]S. Mines, "Find the Sculptor," *Thrilling Wonder Stories*, Spring 1946.

[102]R. M. Farley, "The Man Who Met Himself," *Top-Notch Magazine*, August 1935 (*Top-Notch* was an adventure pulp published between 1910 and 1937).

[103]The reason for this line in the story is that earlier the question of "Where did the time machine come from *originally*?" was raised. The answer: "There was never any 'original.' . . . There is no round-and-round circle of events, no repetition. Merely *one* closed cycle." This is, in fact, the modern view of causal loops, expressed in a 1935 (!) science fiction story.

have two sides—but if you give one end of a strip of paper a 180-degree twist, then join the ends together, the paper becomes a Möbius strip that has only one side. It exists.[104] Saying it doesn't cannot alter the fact. The same is true of your diagram; it exists."

"But—where did it come from?"

"If you must have a source, you may say that it came from the same place that the missing side of the Möbius strip has gone."[105]

The undeniable mystery of causal loops is the reason behind the philosopher I cited earlier (note 98) who thought they have a "queer smell" and so viewed them with much suspicion. He wasn't alone in that feeling, and another philosopher said as much when he wrote "despite [strong] arguments for the consistency of time travel stories [with causal loops], the impression is apt to remain that something is wrong with them. I think this impression is correct."[106] One story that this philosopher could well have had in mind is a classic,[107] a tale that describes a knife brought from a museum in the future back to the present. It arrives in the present with a flawless blade, but soon thereafter gets a nick in the blade. How, wonders the narrator, can the time loop be completed "again"? I do not find this quite the puzzle that either the author (and perhaps the philosopher) do: it is simply a variation of the grandfather paradox (which has been shown not to be a paradox at all). *If* the knife is found flawless in the future, *then* it was not (will not) be nicked in the past. As written, the story is not logically consistent as it involves changing the past but, *if* one removed the detail of a *nicked* blade, then we *would* have a true (paradoxical) causal loop, with the question the story, itself, asks about the knife: "How was this knife created ... when its existence has no beginning or end?"

The nicked knife does illustrate a subtle problem that bedevils *any* causal loop containing a physical object. Consider once again the watch in the film *Somewhere in Time*. Assume the watch received by the man in the present is bright and shiny. He then takes it back into the past and gives it to his love. It remains with her after his return to the present until, decades later, she gives it to him—bright and shiny. Why didn't it tarnish? Is there some peculiar anti-tarnish property to a watch in a causal loop? Well, if so, is that anymore odd than a causal loop itself?[108]

None of that, however, provides a means for rejecting time travel *if* one can argue that it is possible to have time travel *without* causal loops. Indeed, Professor Hanley (see note 105) argues that it is possible, and presents what he claims is an

---

[104]See note 99 in Chap. 1, and the related discussion there.

[105]One philosopher calls this bit of dialog "unhelpful," while ignoring the fact that it appeared in a science fiction pulp magazine and not a scholarly journal, and was clearly meant to dazzle teenage boys (see note 39 and related discussion in "Some First Words") with the concept of a causal loop, rather than to break new ground in metaphysical thought. See Richard Hanley, "No End in Sight: Causal Loops in Philosophy, Physics and Fiction," *Synthese*, July 2004, pp. 123–152.

[106]G. Nerlich, "Can Time Be Finite?" *Pacific Philosophical Quarterly*, July 1981, pp. 227–239.

[107]P. S. Miller, "As Never Was," *Astounding Science Fiction*, January 1944. This is the same Miller who appears in note 15 (and see note 46, too).

[108]It is *not* sufficient to say that perhaps she polished the watch. Polishing would remove material from the watch, which means she gives him a watch different from the one he gives her in the past.

example of how to do it. Alas, another philosopher convincingly showed that the example is flawed and that Hanley's claim that there is no causal loop in his story "is unjustified."[109] From an entertainment point of view, however, eliminating causal loops is going in the wrong direction, as it is the inclusion of causal loops that gives a feeling of mystery to a good science fiction story.

To finish this section, then, we can do no better than to discuss causal loops that are even *more* bizarre than are those with a physical object; that is, loops that involve time traveling *information*. (Since information doesn't 'tarnish,' however, such a loop avoids that particular puzzle associated with a physical object in a causal loop.) A classic example of such a loop is a mathematician who is visited in his youth by a time traveler from the future (perhaps himself), who gives him the proof of a theorem for which the mathematician is (will be) famous in the future. *Where*, then, did the proof actually come from? In what *mind* was it *created*?[110]

The philosopher David Lewis wrote with particular insight on causal loops, especially ones that involve information transfer, such as a time traveler going back in time to tell his younger self how to build a time machine so that once its constructed he can go back in time and tell himself how to do it.[111] (This was item (3), you'll recall, in Jim Nicholson's 1931 letter to *Science Wonder Stories* magazine, quoted at the end of the first section of this chapter.) As Professor Lewis wrote (see note 5 in the "Introduction"), "But where did the information come from in the first place? Why did the whole affair happen? *There is simply no answer* [my emphasis]. The parts of the loop are explicable, but the whole of it is not. Strange! But not impossible, and not too different from inexplicabilities we are already inured to. Almost everyone agrees that God, or the Big Bang, or the entire infinite past of the Universe, or the decay of a tritium atom, is uncaused and inexplicable. Then if these are possible, why not the inexplicable causal loops that arise in time travel?"

A few years later, another philosopher[112] gave a similar response to a paradox involving a causal loop similar to Lewis', a loop involving a time machine containing a book with instructions on how to make the time machine. The book travels into the past on the machine so it can be read—in order to make the machine.

---

[109]Bradley Monton, "Time Travel Without Causal Loops," *The Philosophical Quarterly*, January 2009, pp. 54–67.

[110]Professor Hanley (note 105) says the answer to such questions is "straightforward": the information comes "from itself." I think the issue is rather deeper than that.

[111]See D. Franson, "Package Deal," in *Microcosmic Tales*, Taplinger 1980. The British philosopher J. R. Lucas had a similar scenario in mind when he wrote, in his book *A Treatise on Time and Space* (Methuen 1973, p. 50), "It is very important, not only for reasons of modesty, that I should not be able to use a Time Machine to go into a public library and read my own biography." Robert Heinlein didn't agree with Lucas: in his 1956 novel *The Door Into Summer* the protagonist, an inventor, travels thirty years into the future, where he reads some patent disclosures for inventions that he doesn't remember, even though they are in his name. He then returns to his own time and promptly files the patents!

[112]M. R. Levin, "Swords' Points," *Analysis*, March 1980, pp. 69–70.

In answer to the question "Who wrote the book about building a time machine?" the philosopher says this question is "no different from questions about where *anything* originally came from. We can ask about the origin of the atoms . . . their time line is not neatly presented to us. The atoms either go back endlessly, or if the Universe is finite, they just start. In either case the question of ultimate origin is as unanswerable as the question of the book's origin. What makes us think that when such questions are asked about the loop they are different and *ought* to be answerable is that the entire loop is open to inspection." While the instructions in the book don't tarnish, the book itself of course brings us back to our previous antique watch 'problem.' Suppose the book is brand-new at the start of the trip backward in time. Later, when the machine (and the book) have reached the end of the loop, just before beginning the trip back in time, have the pages turned yellow and brittle? If so, how do we account for the brand-new version? And if not, why not?

An analyst who takes strong exception to these two philosophers is Oxford physicist David Deutsch, who wrote (note 100) "the real problem with closed timelike lines under classical physics is that they could be used to generate knowledge in a way that conflicts with the principles of the philosophy of science, specifically with the evolutionary principle." What Deutsch is referring to is the metaphysical claim, attributed to the philosopher Karl Popper (see note 36 in Chap. 3), that *knowledge comes into existence only by evolutionary, rational processes* and that solutions to problems do not spring fully formed into the universe. One might call this the physics version of the work ethic—the creation of knowledge demands hard work!

Deutsch's idea had actually appeared *decades* earlier in a science fiction tale.[113] Time travel, discovered in the year 2007, is found to have a limited temporal reach into the future of 50 years, a limit due a law passed in 2057 banning time travelers from the past. To try to go past 2057 leads to a prompt arrest of the time traveler and a 'deportation' trip back to his own time. The story eventually explains that the law was passed precisely because of Deutsch's concern. As one character in the story explains, "Suppose [that one could travel more than 50 years ahead], then a time traveler from the past could get [new inventions], carry them back to his own time, and give them to scientists—which[would] cancel all the long period of invention which [produced the inventions]. Which [would] violate causal laws."

More recently, a philosopher has offered a quite interesting response to the Deutsch/Popper assertion. He writes (note 81), of information "appearing out of nowhere," that "These cases are puzzling, but they by no means show that the time travel scenarios in question are impossible or incoherent, *or even improbable*. We think it very improbable that . . . information should come from nowhere—but only because this does not happen very often. It does happen *sometimes*—for instance, when you say something and I mishear you. I think that you said something very

---

[113]P. Anderson and G. Dickson, "Trespass," *Fantastic Story Quarterly*, Spring 1950.

Fig. 4.5 A curious paradox. CORNERED ©2005 Mike Baldwin. Reprinted with permission of UNIVERSAL UCLICK. All rights reserved

profound—something which neither of us would, in fact, ever have thought of. Where does the idea come from? If this sort of thing were to start occurring regularly [as via causal loops], then we would simply accept it without raising an eyebrow."

In the final chapter I'll discuss a dramatic example (due to two Russian physicists) on how an information-creating time loop might be constructed using a wormhole time machine. Such a time loop wouldn't pass muster with Deutsch, of course, and he would consider such a thing as being as objectionable as is creationism, the anti-evolution claim that purports to 'explain' fossils (with measured ages in the millions of years) by simply *declaring* them as having been made by God just a few thousand years ago.[114] Deutsch's position is considered by nearly all scientists today to be correct *for the specific case of creationism*, but the evolutionary principle may be on shakier ground with respect to declaring causal information time loops to be impossible.

While philosophers have struggled with information in a time loop, and most physicists have carefully stepped around the issue, science fiction has had lots of fun with information in causal loops. Here's a sampling of such tales:

(1) A man receives telephone calls from *two* versions of himself, one ten years in the future saying he absolutely must accept an invitation to fly to the Bahamas

---

[114]*Why* would God do such a thing? Apparently 'just to have some fun with geologists and biologists,' as creationists call such ancient fossils 'sports of nature.'

that he will receive that very day, with the other version calling from tomorrow insisting that the plane will crash. What should he do?[115];

(2) Lovers who are irrevocably separated in time communicate by mail in one tale,[116] while lovers in another story[117] communicate via telephone calls to the ever more distant past (and yet, with the aid of a clever twist at the end, finally meet);

(3) A telephone lineman starts getting telephone calls from himself from 10 days in the future, with the first call telling him how to make the gadget to transmit such calls[118];

(4) A time traveling historian on a visit to A.D. 1528 from A.D. 2211 accidently gives a copy of the predictions of Nostrodamus to the prophet, thus explaining the predictions[119];

(5) A time machine experiment gone wrong allows thirteenth century Roger Bacon to meet twentieth century scientists, an encounter that explains the amazing forecasts in Bacon's *Opus Maius*[120];

Hollywood, too, has had some fun with information causal loops, with the best (in my opinion) example of that being the 1989 movie *Bill & Ted's Excellent Adventure*. In that film (where we learn that even the not very bright can be time travelers), a set of missing keys is necessary for the successful completion of a task. The two time travelers decide that after the task is done, they will go back in time, steal the keys (*that's* why they're missing!), and hide them so they can use them *now*. Where should they hide them? Why, "over there," says one of the boys, pointing at a hiding place—and sure enough, when they go over and look, the keys are there. They agree that once they have finished with the keys, it will be *most* important that they really do put the keys in the hiding place!

All of these examples that I've just given you, however, were *decades* too late to be the first in fiction about information in a time loop; that honor goes to the 1904 novel *The Panchronicon* by the lawyer Harold Steele MacKaye (1866–1928). An Edwardian literary time machine with style, the Panchronicon (literally, a 'machine for all time') swings on a rope tether around a steel post erected at the North Pole. By "cutting the meridians" faster than the sun does, it travels through space and time from 1898 New Hampshire to the London of three centuries earlier.[121] Using

---

[115]G. Klein, "Party Line," *The Best from the Rest of the World* (D. A. Wolheim, editor), Doubleday 1976 (story originally published in France in 1973).

[116]J. Finney, "The Love Letter," *The Saturday Evening Post*, August 1959.

[117]T. N. Scortia, "When You Hear the Tone," *Galaxy Science Fiction*, January 1971. See also L. Padgett, "Line to Tomorrow," *Astounding Science Fiction*, November 1945.

[118]M. Leinster, "Sam, This Is You," *Galaxy Science Fiction*, May 1955. This story was later broadcast as an episode on the "X-Minus One" radio drama program. See also F. A. Reeds, "Forever Is Not So Long," *Astounding Science Fiction*, May 1942.

[119]L. Del Rey, "Fools' Errand," *Science Fiction Quarterly*, November 1951.

[120]N. Schachner, "Lost in the Dimensions," *Astounding Stories*, November 1937.

[121]'Time traveling' by crossing time zones is an idea that one can trace at least as far back as to Edgar Allen Poe's 1841 short story "Three Sundays in a Week."

it, a time traveler fan of Shakespeare journeys from 1898 back to the bard, who is suffering from writer's block. There she whispers the magic lines from a play he is stuck on (lines she has memorized for her literary club meetings) into his receptive ear. Does this make Shakespeare a plagiarist? Of himself!?

4.5 Sexual Paradoxes

> "Once time machines exist, no event is low probability if it is needed to make the past consistent."[122]

There are causal loops even stranger than the ones we have already discussed, hard as that may be to believe. These are the sexual paradoxes, first mentioned in 1931 by Nicholson in his letter to Hugo Gernsback. Not only science fiction writers, but philosophers, too, have found these particular paradoxes full of dramatic appeal. For example, as a challenge problem to the readers of a scholarly journal, the British philosopher Jonathan Harrison (1924–2014) posed the following bizarre, indeed astonishing, situation.[123] A young lady, Jocasta Jones, one day finds an ancient deep freezer containing a solidly frozen young man. She thaws him out and learns that his name is Dum, and that he possesses a book that describes how to make both a deep freezer and a time machine. They marry. Soon after they have a baby boy and name him Dee.

Years later, after reading his father's book, Dee makes a time machine. Dee and Dum, taking the book with them, get into the machine and begin a trip into the past. Running out of food during the lengthy journey, Dee kills his father and eats him. Arriving in the past, Dee destroys the time machine, builds a deep freezer (again, using the book), gets into it, and . . . wakes up to find that a young lady, one Jocasta Jones, has thawed him out. When asked his name he replies Dum and shows Jocasta his book; they marry, and . . . .

Harrison concluded this amazing tale with this question for his readers: "Did Jocasta commit a logically possible crime?" That issue is just the *surface* of an ocean of puzzles in this story! Jocasta's crime, of course, is that she has (if unwittingly) committed incest; readers who remember the Greek myth of Oedipus, and who his mother/wife was, will understand why Harrison named his female character as he did. But what of Dee's crime? He has, after all, eaten his father! But perhaps that isn't a crime at all, because Dee and Dum are one in the same, and is it really a crime to eat yourself? According to another philosopher, Murray MacBeath, Harrison's story is "a story so extravagant in its implications that it will be regarded as an effective *reductio ad absurdum* of the one dubious assumption on which the story rests: the possibility of time travel."[124]

---

[122]From Robert Forward's 1992 novel *Timemaster*.

[123]J. Harrison, "Jocasta's Crime," *Analysis*, March 1979, p. 65.

[124]M. MacBeath, "Who Was Dr. Who's Father?" *Synthese*, June 1982, pp. 397–430.

This isn't to say that MacBeath was asserting that time travel is impossible. Indeed, he went on to declare that he did believe in the logical possibility of time travel, and his paper is devoted to discovering what thought to be incorrect in Harrison's story. He did that by retelling the story with what he believed are crucial modifications to make it sufficiently less outrageous that it could be taken at least somewhat seriously. In the new version, our hero, thawed out from a deep freezer, is now named Arthur. Arthur is, unfortunately, suffering from total amnesia (this is MacBeath's way of avoiding the psychological trauma of Dee remembering he ate Dum) and so, when asked his full name, he is himself sufficiently puzzled that he replies "Arthur who?" He is finally called (what else?) Arthur Who. And, as you can no doubt guess, his son (who is a genius and gets a PhD at age 14 on a dissertation dealing with the physics of time travel) becomes Dr. Who!

We are then told of a trip back into the past by the two, of the eating of the father (Arthur Who) by the son, of the entering of the deep freezer by Dr. Who, etc. etc. The whole business is quite entertaining and *at least* as complex as Harrison's original story. Just *how* complex is summed up in MacBeath's last, wonderful line: "The Who who was Dr. Who's father was not Dr. Who—that is, not the Dr. Who whose father he was."

MacBeath wasn't the only one that Harrison's story fascinated, and nearly a dozen replies to it were received in addition to MacBeath's. One, in particular, made the thought-provoking observation (see note 112) that not only has Jocasta committed incest but she has done so with a single act of intercourse. As discussed earlier, the events on a causal loop do not happen endlessly but rather only once; thus, Jocasta thaws Dum (Dee) out just once, she marries him just once, and the two consummate their marriage just once. Ordinarily we think it takes two sexual acts to commit incest, the first resulting in the birth of a child, and the second being a parent's union with that child, but this is not so in a causal loop. Time travel *is* an odd business.

Another philosopher replied to Harrison's story with a quite interesting claim, one that had actually been thought to be true for decades—but which today is recognized to be false. The claim was that, irrespective of physics, Harrison's story was biologically flawed and fatally so. As that philosopher wrote, "The biological problem is the following. Dee is the son of Dum and Jocasta. So Dee obtained half his genes from Dum and half from Jocasta. But Dum is diachronically identical with Dee and is therefore genotypically identical with him (that is, himself). That is, Dee is both genotypically identical and distinct from Dum, which is absurd."[125]

That this isn't true was pointed out by a philosopher many years later. In his paper we read this tale: "Suppose Adam travels [far] back in time ... where he meets his mother Betty, mates with her and has a child which is himself. Is this

[125]W. Godfrey-Smith, "Traveling in Time," *Analysis*, March 1980, pp. 72–73. This false claim had already been raised by a physicist (L. S. Schulman, "Tachyon Paradoxes*,*" *American Journal of Physics*, May 1971, pp. 481–484), and even earlier by a science fiction writer (P. Anderson, "Time Patrol," *Magazine of Fantasy and Science Fiction*, May 1955).

possible biologically? Yes ... as follows ... on the grounds that we have total replication of Adam's genome."[126] (The *genome* is the totality of genes taken over all gene sites.) Now, suppose each such site holds two genes and, as Dowe points out, in sexual reproduction the father passes on to his offspring one gene for each gene site, to go with the gene the mother gives to each site. To exactly reproduce himself, then, the time traveling Adam 'simply' has to give his offspring, *at each site*, the gene that he has for that site that did *not* come from Betty. Thus, the offspring—baby Adam—ends up with a genome *precisely identical* to the time traveling Adam. This is, of course, an *extraordinarily unlikely* event, as the human genome has tens of thousands of genes. The probability that each and every site gets the 'right' gene from the time traveling Adam is therefore essentially zero. But it isn't *actually* zero and, as the quotation that opens this section says, a low probability to an event isn't a roadblock to its occurrence if that event is required for consistency.

While certainly instructive, the sexual paradox stories by Harrison and MacBeath are remiss in not indicating that the concepts they are dealing with have long been a staple of science fiction, and that the sexual paradoxes received much critical analysis in that genre long before philosophers (and physicists, too) discovered them. From science fiction, for example, we have a tale of young man who travels backward in time 1250 years, from A.D. 3207 to 1957, to become his own grandfather fifty generations removed.[127] And even that is tame compared to the sexual paradoxes other science fiction writers conjured up before philosophers began to discuss them.

In another story,[128] written decades before Harrison's and MacBeath's papers, we meet a young lady caught up in a mind twisting affair in which the mystery of a causal loop is the least of her troubles. In 1957 a girl is born, and after 20 years of intense competition with her mother (who has an uncanny ability to predict the future), she travels back from 1977 to a few months before her own birth. She becomes pregnant (by a man who she later discovers is her father) and gives birth to a girl. The new mother has, of course, knowledge of all that will happen during the next 20 years, including the fact that she will have an intense competition with her rebellious daughter . . . .

While writers of stories like these in the early 1950s were there as trailblazers, it is a tale that appeared as the 1950s ended that is today generally acknowledged as the best sexual paradox story ever written.[129] We are given only a hint of what is to come when a character listens to a song called "I'm My Own Grandpaw!" In 1945,

---

[126]Phil Dowe, "The Coincidences of Time Travel," *Philosophy of Science*, July 2003, pp. 574–589. See also J. Berkovich, "On Chance in Causal Loops," *Mind*, January 2001, pp. 1–23, and P. Dowe, "Causal Loops and Independence of Causal Facts," *Philosophy of Science*, September 2001, pp. 89–97.

[127]R. Dee (this is *not* the 'Dee' of Harrison's story!), "The Poundstone Paradox," *Magazine of Fantasy and Science Fiction*, May 1954.

[128]C. L. Harness, "Child By Chronos," *Magazine of Fantasy and Science Fiction*, June 1953.

[129]R. Heinlein, "All You Zombies—," *Magazine of Fantasy and Science Fiction*, March 1959.

a newborn girl, Jane, is found on the steps of an orphanage. At age 18, in 1963, she has a one-night affair with a mysterious stranger that leaves her pregnant. Some months later, during the birth of a daughter, it is discovered that Jane actually has a double set of sexual organs, and because the female set has been ruined by the pregnancy, doctors restore her as a man. Soon after, the baby girl mysteriously disappears from the hospital ward. Years later, in 1970, Jane (now a man, of course) meets another stranger who uses a time machine to transport both of them back to April 3, 1963. By April 24 male-Jane meets female-Jane and impregnates her (and so now we know who the mysterious stranger was during the one-night affair!). Meanwhile, the stranger with the time machine travels forward to March 10, 1964, a little after female-Jane has given birth, kidnaps the baby from the hospital (thus clearing-up another mystery!), takes her back to September 20, 1945, and leaves her on the steps of the orphanage. And so we see that Jane is her own mother *and father*, thus out-doing all previous tales about self-parenting.

This is pretty impressive stuff, but Heinlein still has one more twist for us. After leaving baby-Jane in 1945, the time machine stranger returns to April 24, 1963, retrieves male-Jane (who has just kissed female-Jane goodnight after fathering her-himself in herself), and takes him to 1985 where he recruits him into the Temporal Service—and finally, the stranger jumps forward to 1999, his 'real time.' At the end we at last learn that the stranger is, in fact, an even older version of male-Jane—*all* the central characters in the entire story are the *same* individual at various points along a single, highly twisted world line. The lone character in Heinlein's tale is truly a self-made man/woman in every sense of the phrase! This ultimate act of *creatio ex nihilo* has, correctly I think, been called "smaller than the minimal loop."[130]

Jane, in all her/his versions, is the only character in the story that appears to have purpose. In terrifying words that describe a causal loop, Heinlein ends the tale with an explanation of the story's title: "The Snake That Eats Its Own Tail, Forever and Ever. I know where I came from—but where did all you zombies come from? . . . You aren't really there at all. There isn't anybody but me—Jane—here alone in the dark. I miss you dreadfully!" In a December 1958 letter to his literary agent, Heinlein wrote of this amazing tale, "I *hope* that I have written in that story the Farthest South in time paradoxes." In my opinion, he did.

The sexual paradox has continued to fascinate science fiction writers up to the present day. In the novel *Timemaster* (note 122), for example, the hero at one point spends a night with his wife—and with two versions of himself from the future. He will, of course, experience that night two more times! Later, he becomes upset when his wife runs off with one of the older versions, but he quickly calms down when he considers that eventually *he* will be the older version. Consider, too, a story[131] that

---

[130]S. Lem, "The Time-Travel Story and Related Matters of SF Structuring," *Science Fiction Studies*, Spring 1974, pp. 143–154.

[131]G. Benford, "Down the River Road," *After the King: Stories in Honor of J. R. Tolkien* (C. Tolkien and M. Greenberg, editors), Tor 1991.

tells of a young man hunting the father who, years before, had abandoned him in a burning house. The death of the young man's mother in the flames has sent him on a 10 year quest for revenge up and down what is literally a river of time, a river on which to travel in one direction ("up time") is to move into the past, whereas moving "down time" leads to the future. Eventually he corners the father and, despite the man's pleading, kills him. It is only later, after examining papers he finds in his father's pocket, that the young man realizes he has killed his *future* self (Benford, a physicist, knows the pitfalls of time travel, and you'll notice that there is no autoinfanticide paradox here).

4.6   Splitting Universes and Time Travel
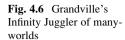
"In all time travel stories where someone enters the past the past is necessarily altered. The only way the logical contradictions created by such a premise can be resolved is by positing a Universe that splits into separate branches the instant the past is entered."[132]

One early science fiction technique for allowing backward time travel and a changeable past, while still avoiding paradoxes, is that of alternate universes. According to this idea, if a time traveler journeys into the past and introduces a change (indeed, his very journey may be the change) then, as the above quote states, reality splits into two versions, with one fork representing the result of the change and the other fork being the original reality before the change. (To a fifth-dimensional observer, of course, all conceivable forks, all possible four-dimensional spacetimes, have always existed.) Indeed, according to this view the entire universe is splitting, at every microinstant, along every alternative decision path for every particle in the cosmos! This is often called the theory of *alternate realities with parallel time tracks*.

Such a seemingly fantastic view seems to actually have some scientific plausibility because of the so-called *many-worlds interpretation* (MWI) of quantum mechanics, pioneered in physics by Hugh Everett III (1930–1982), in a 1957 Princeton doctoral dissertation. Everett's theory is the antithesis of what is commonly called the *collapse of the wave function*, the idea that all potential possibilities have a non-zero possibility until a consciousness actually decides or observes which one will actually *be*. That quantum mechanical concept gets its name from the probabilistic wave equation formulated in 1926 by the German physicist Erwin Schrödinger (1887–1961). Before the observation, all possible futures have various values of probability; after the observation (which 'collapses' the wave function) exactly *one* of those futures (*the* future) has probability 1 and all the others have probability 0.

The MWI idea can be seen in Hale's story "Hands Off," discussed earlier, and in art *40 years* before that! With almost certainly a theological twist, consider the

---

[132]M. Gardner, "Mathematical Games," *Scientific American*, March 1979.

Fig. 4.6 Grandville's Infinity Juggler of many-worlds

beautiful illustration in the 1844 book *Un Autre Monde* (*Another World*), reproduced in Fig. 4.6. Known either as "The Infinity Juggler" or "The Juggler of Worlds," it is the work of the French artist Jean-Ignace Isidore Gérard (1803–1847), who published under the name 'Grandville.' The juggler—Grandville's version of Hale's mentor—appears as a court jester who is clearly having fun manipulating his multitude of worlds, while the man (humanity?) in the foreground watches. The man appears to be simultaneously fearful and fascinated, involved yet clearly impotent. Is Earth one of the worlds among which the Jester stands, or is it one of those flying through space? Or is Earth, perhaps, simply the unfortunate world ingloriously stuffed down the front of the Jester's pants? (That would surely explain a lot!) If born a hundred years later, Grandville would surely have found work as an artist in the imaginative world of the science fiction pulps.

Early science fiction stories that treat the collapsing wave function concept can be traced back to the late 1930s and early 1940s.[133] A particularly interesting example is the story of an inventor who, while trying to build a radio with which

---

[133]See, for example, Jack Williamson's 1938 novel *The Legion of Time*, and C. L. Moore's, "Tryst in Time," *Astounding Stories*, December 1936. L. Sprague de Camp (1907–2000), too, was an early pioneer in the exploration of the MWI idea in science fiction long *before* Everett. In his 1941 novel *Lest Darkness Fall*, for example, he uses the analogy of a tree (the "main time line") that is always sprouting new branches.

to signal Mars, accidently stumbles on the "temporal-aberrant carrier wave" and thus establishes contact with a universe that forked off of ours in 1863 when Robert E. Lee *won* the Battle of Gettysburg![134] In Everett's MWI, however, the wave function of the universe does *not* collapse. Indeed, it *couldn't*, because there is no observer external to the entire universe (we are talking science now, not of theology and God); instead, the wave function 'splits' at every decision point in spacetime. Although this leads to a multitude of realities *far* beyond comprehension, cosmologists still tend to like the MWI because it avoids the puzzle of having to produce an observer 'outside the universe.'

It's important to understand that the MWI is different from yet another idea popular in science fiction, that of *parallel universes* (see again the third discussion question at the end of Chap. 3). In parallel universes *all* possibilities *always* exist, independent and parallel in time. In the MWI, on the other hand, ever more universes are continually coming into existence. Unlike the MWI, which can at least claim a scientific basis (quantum mechanics), there is no analogous theory for parallel universes. But, of course, even though lacking a theory, nonetheless science fiction writers have been quite inventive with the idea because parallel universes offer a way to avoid (at least some) causal loops.

One clever, early pulp story[135] illustrates how that works. To improve the performance of his time machine, an inventor needs batteries with tremendous energy density, a density far in advance of the batteries in the present. Unable to travel far into the future—if he *could* obtain them there, then of course a causal loop (the very entity we wish to avoid) would be created upon his bringing them back to the present—his assistant first travels back to 1851. There he leaves a note on desk of a well-known experimenter, with a plea for him to devote his life to battery research; a copy of the 1937 *Electrical Handbook* is left with the note as proof that there really has been a visit from the future! Before returning to the present, the assistant takes a sheet of (new) 1847 five-cent stamps from the experimenter's desk.

Returning to the present, which is now different (a new time track, in accordance with the splitting-universe idea), the powerful batteries *are* readily available *because* the experimenter believed the note. Buying several of them, using money obtained by selling the pristine 1847 stamps to a collector, the assistant returns to a slightly earlier 1851 than before (to *before* the fork in time!), watches himself appear[136] and leave the note and the handbook, and *then, unobserved, the assistant removes both*: Thus, upon returning once more to the present, he finds all is as before—except now he and the inventor have the powerful batteries. As

---

[134]N. Bond, "Parallel in Time," *Thrilling Wonder Stories*, June 1940. See also S. N. Faber, "Trans Dimensional Imports," *Isaac Asimov's Science Fiction Magazine*, August 1980.

[135]W. Sell, "Other Tracks," *Astounding Science Fiction*, October 1938.

[136]Just like Marty McFly does at the end of the 1985 film *Back to the Future*. The movie is fun, but pulp science fiction did it first.

before, one might ask where the batteries came from, but unlike the previous mystery of information-creating causal loops, the answer is clear and non-mysterious. *They came from the hard work of the experimenter on a different time track.* Such shuttling back-and-forth between time tracks is the signature of what is called a *cross-time* story, a device to avoid paradoxes while still allowing for changing the past. The first example of this time travel sub-genre had actually appeared 4 years earlier.[137]

In another cross-time tale from modern times, we read of the horrible fate suffered by a man when an experiment in a Princeton physics lab goes wrong.[138] It is discovered, too late, that parallel time tracks are not simply grooves into which you drop, like a ball, after leaving the time track of our world. Each version of a person in each world is not like a ball rolling down a groove from past to future. Rather, each world's time track is just a line on a smooth surface; as the man is told, during a temporary stay in a world still close to his (our) original world, "We gave you a push sideways, and you moved off your original line—but instead of dropping into the next groove, you've just kept on rolling across the surface, from one line to the next, at an angle. There are no grooves, nothing to stop you from sliding on across the different lines forever. You have the same futureward vector as you started with, but you've added a small cross-time vector, as well." And so the man drifts cross-time, and gradually the worlds he experiences grow ever more alien.[139]

The science fiction is undeniably fun, but for this book the underlying *scientific* theory of time travel is classical (that is, non-quantum) general relativity, and that theory has nothing to say about alternative time tracks in multiple worlds. For most time travel theoreticians there is *one* time track, and the past of our world is unique and inviolate. I agree with the great quantum physicist J. S. Bell (1928–1990), who wrote of Everett's theory that "if such a theory were taken seriously it would hardly be possible to take anything else seriously."[140] As Bell further observed, in the MWI "there is no association of the particular present with any particular past," a quite strange idea that had already appeared in science fiction years earlier.[141]

While most early time travel analysts did base their work just on classical general relativity, there *are* now many more who think quantum mechanics itself, independent of its interpretation, has much to contribute as well. Perhaps, in fact, it

---

[137]M. Leinster, "Sidewise in Time," *Astounding Stories*, June 1934. Splitting universes with multiple time tracks and time loops became quite popular after Leinster's and Sell's stories; you can find the basic idea repeated yet again in Alfred Bester's "The Probable Man," *Astounding Science Fiction*, July 1941, for example, in which each new journey into the past causes the future to fan out into an infinity of new time tracks.

[138]L. Watt-Evans, "The Drifter," *Amazing Stories*, October 1991.

[139]In Jack Haldeman's 1990 novel *The Hemingway Hoax* we read that "there is not just one [parallel] universe, but actually uncountable zillions of them."

[140]In "Quantum Mechanics for Cosmologists," *Speakable and Unspeakable in Quantum Mechanics*, Cambridge University Press 1987.

[141]J. R. Pierce, "Mr. Kinkaid's Pasts," *Magazine of Fantasy & Science Fiction*, August 1953.

may make an absolutely crucial contribution to the theoretical basis of time travel. One analyst who believes this (along with an even stronger belief in the MWI) is the British physicist David Deustch (note 100), who holds that general relativity is not the proper theory with which to study the physical effects of CTLs. He believes that the traditional mathematical machinery of general relativity actually obscures, rather than clarifies, the difficult task of separating the merely counter-intuitive from the unphysical.

Indeed, Deutsch calls the conventional spacetime methods, based on general relativity and differential geometry, *perverse*. He also does not like the conceptual problems raised by general relativity's wormholes and singularities. Any non-quantum mechanical discussion, he says, of the "pathologies" of backward time travel is simply not adequate. Deutsch divides these pathologies into two fundamental classes: (1) paradoxical constraints, such as the free-will issue seemingly raised by the grandfather paradox, and (2) causal information loops. Deutsch claims that his quantum mechanical analyses show that the first class of pathologies simply does not occur, because the past that the time traveler enters is the past of a world different from the one he has left. Further, his results also show (to him) that the pathologies of the second class may be "avoidable." These are not the views among the majority of time travel students, however (that does *not* mean Deutsch is wrong!), and general relativity *is* the standard tool used by the majority of time travel theoreticians. When quantum mechanics does enter the calculations of most analysts, it is generally on an *ad hoc* basis.

More concerning for the MWI view is a result reported in 2004, that a macroscopic object (a human time traveler, for example) attempting to traverse a wormhole time machine (to be discussed in some detail in Chap. 6) "must necessarily undergo violent interactions with the time machine," interactions *so* violent that they must "cause the object to disintegrate." The different pieces of the now certainly dead time traveler would emerge from the wormhole in different worlds—this is definitely not a result likely to encourage volunteers for the first time machine trip![142]

So, many physicists and philosophers, not sharing Deutsch's position,[143] tend to agree with Bell, including the late John Wheeler (Everett's thesis advisor!), who wrote of the MWI "I once subscribed to it. In retrospect, however, it looks like the wrong track. ... Its infinitely many unobservable worlds make a heavy load of metaphysical baggage."[144] Agreeing with Wheeler was a philosopher who called the MWI "highly controversial" and declared that "few working physicists take it

---

[142]A. Everett, "Time Travel Paradoxes, Path Integrals, and the Many Worlds Interpretation of Quantum Mechanics," *Physical Review D*, June 25, 2004, pp. 124023–1:124023–14.

[143]For a modern philosophical argument specifically rebutting Deutsch's enthusiasm for the MWI, see Theodore Sider, "A New Grandfather Paradox?" *Philosophy and Phenomenological Research*, March 1997, pp. 139–144.

[144]See note 34 in Chap. 3.

seriously."[145] Perhaps even more damning was a physicist's statement that "the idea of 10^{100}+ slightly imperfect copies of (the universe) all constantly splitting into further copies . . . is not easy to reconcile with commonsense. Here is schizophrenia with a vengeance."[146] Or, as one science fiction writer bluntly put it, in a tale of the inventor of the "chronomotive impulse belt" (which allows moving between the *two* parallel worlds that are all that exist), the MWI is the "Doctrine of Infinite Redundancy—which is, of course, utter nonsense."[147]

Deutsch's position does raise the obvious question of what motivates a quantum theoretician to study CTLs at all, given that they originate in general relativity and *not* in quantum mechanics. Deutsch's response is that although CTLs did indeed originate in classical Einsteinian general relativity, the still incomplete theory of quantum gravity *does* predict CTLs, too. And that is an exciting observation for time travel enthusiasts because, as Deutsch writes, the results of his quantum studies of CTLs show that "contrary to what has usually been assumed, there is no reason in what we know of fundamental physics why closed timelike lines should not exist." That view was later endorsed by other physicists who wrote, after a quantum mechanical study of how a particle could transit a time machine spacetime in a physically consistent manner, "there is no contradiction between the postulates of quantum mechanics and the possible existence of causality violation in general relativity."[148]

Long before these scientific endorsements, science fiction had enthusiastically embraced the many-worlds idea and its connection with time travel. The first such tale[149] appeared when Everett was just 3 years old; it put forth the insightful observation that although alternate time tracks may allow changing the past for the better (something that can't be done, for better *or* for worse, with a single time track), in the end any such change may still be futile. As Daniels' time traveler puts it, "I did have an idea to . . . go back to make past ages more livable. Terrible things have happened in history, you know. But it isn't any use. Think, for instance, of the martyrs and the things they suffered. I could go back and save them those wrongs. And yet all the time . . . they would still have known their unhappiness and their agony, because in this world-line those things happened. At the end, it's all

---

[145]R. A. Healy, "How Many Worlds?" *Nous*, November 1984, pp. 591–616.

[146]B. S. DeWitt, "Quantum Mechanics and Reality,' in *The Many-Worlds Interpretation of Quantum Mechanics* (B. S. DeWitt and N. Graham, editors), Princeton 1973.

[147]B. Shaw, "What Time Do You Call This?" *Amazing Science Fiction*, September 1971. When a bank robber in one world tries to make his escape into the other world, he literally runs into 'himself' trying to escape after robbing the 'same' bank in the parallel world!

[148]D. S. Goldwirth *et al.*, "Quantum Propagator for a Nonrelativistic Particle in the Vicinity of a Time Machine," *Physical Review D*, April 15, 1994, pp. 3951–3957. See, too, the earlier D. S. Goldwirth *et al.*, "The Breakdown of Quantum Mechanics in the Presence of Time Machines," *General Relativity and Gravitation*, January 1993, pp. 7–13.

[149]D. R. Daniels, "The Branches of Time," *Wonder Stories*, August 1935.

unchangeable; it merely unrolls before us."[150] Many years later, in a critique of the many-worlds idea, a philosopher/physicist echoed Daniels' words: [In the world] that I (subjectively) experience I may blunder, but [in another world], with equal actuality, I triumph gloriously. The Everett interpretation can be used this way to mitigate sorrows, but this use is two-edged, for it equally well implies the speciousness of happiness."[151]

The editorial introduction to Daniels' pioneering tale is quite interesting: the opening line is "To say that this short story contains some revolutionary time-travel theories would be putting it exceedingly mild." That editor then went on to tell his readers, with great enthusiasm, that "when the author . . . submitted this story to us, his accompanying letter stated that in it he had settled the time-travel question once and for all. We must admit that a broad, unbelieving grin spread over our countenances when the author dared make this assertion. BUT—the smile soon left our faces . . . [T]o our chagrin, Mr. Daniels had really propounded so many brand new ideas about time and time-travel, and such logical ones—*that he has not left one loophole in his argument*!"

John W. Campbell (1910–1971), the first (and only) editor of *Astounding Science Fiction* (today's *Analog*), called alternate time track stories "mutant" because they represented the first new innovation (or mutation) in the time travel concept since H. G. Wells. Campbell incorrectly claimed *The Legion of Time* (note 133) was the first such tale (see Campbell's editorial in the May 1938 issue of *Astounding*) , and that "Other Tracks" (note 135) was the second, but in fact it was Daniels who was first with splitting time tracks in science fiction. After Daniels the concept quickly became part of standard science fiction lore and could be used by other writers with little explanation. For example, just a little more than a decade later one author did not have to say much about his "First Law of Chronistics," which determines the development of "the branches of Fan-Shaped time." It was sufficient for his readers to learn that should a time traveler to the past change anything, a parallel branch of time would be created on which the time traveler would be trapped: "The man who interfered with the space-time matrix, displacing even a comma in the great scroll of time, would be cut-off from his origin forever."[152]

Still, if there is one thing we can say about science fiction, it's that no 'rule' is immune to challenge. Decades after Daniels' tale put forth the MWI, we find the well-known author James Blish (note 100 in Chap. 1) *rejecting* it. In a story about the reception of radio signals from the future, we read of one character telling another "I *was* going to do all those things. There were no alternatives, no fanciful 'branches in time,' no decision-points that might be altered to make the future

---

[150]These sad, resigned words were written when the author, David R. Daniels (1915–1936), was just twenty years old. A year later he committed suicide.

[151]A. Shimony, "Events and Processes in the Quantum World," *Quantum Concepts in Space and Time* (R. Penrose and C. J. Isham, editors), Oxford University Press 1986.

[152]J. MacCreigh, "A Hitch in Time," *Thrilling Wonder Stories*, June 1947.

change. My future, like yours . . . and everybody else's, was fixed. It didn't matter a snap whether or not I had a decent motive for what I was going to do; I was going to do it anyhow. Cause and effect . . . just don't exist. One event follows another because events are just as indestructible in space-time as matter and energy are."[153]

This denial of the MWI is simply an author's choice, of course, for whatever story effect is desired, and others may make different choices. Isaac Asimov, for example, used the MWI idea in in the story of a time traveler who journeys back to 1871 London, to retrieve a lost Gilbert and Sullivan operetta (*Thespis*). When he returns to the present he finds that his wife Mary (who was alive when he left) has been dead for a year on the new time track that his actions in the past have created. As the story ends, the devastated time traveler thinks "I had changed history. I could never go back. I had gained *Thespis*. I had lost Mary."[154] This sad fate is repeated in another story of a time traveler lost in an infinitude of time tracks with no hope of ever finding his way home: "In all of time, how many, many worlds there must be. How to find a single twig in such a forest?"[155]

Splitting universes have been used in literary works outside the genre of science fiction, as well. Examples include "The Garden of Forking Paths" by the Argentine writer J. L. Borges, the first play J. B. Priestly wrote (the 1932 *Dangerous Corner*), John Updike's 1997 novel *Toward the End of Time*, and Gore Vidal's 1998 novel *The Smithsonian Institution*. Typical of these fictional fantasies about splitting universes is a tale (anticipating Asimov's) by Lord Dunsany (1876–1957)—the Irish writer Edward Plunkett—the story of a man who goes back in time to correct "two or three mistakes he had made in his life."[156] This he successfully does, but the result is a new, subtly different subsequent history. The differences are not infinitely subtle, however; after the changes, he finds that his home, his wife, and all the delicate details of his life have vanished. As he relates to a visitor at the lunatic asylum he is now confined to, as the result of his despair, "I tell you I'm lost. Can't you realize that I'm lost in time? I tell you that you can find your way traveling the length of Orion, sooner than you shall find it among the years . . . Don't go back down the years trying to alter anything . . . Don't even wish to . . . [T]he whole length of the Milky Way is more easily traveled than time, amongst whose terrible ages I am lost."

In writing for a mass audience, rather than just for the more limited science fiction and fantasy one, perhaps the best known literary work of alternate history is the classic 1953 novel *Bring the Jubilee* by Ward Moore (1903–1978). In that work Lee wins the Battle of Gettysburg, and the South wins the Civil War. Using a time machine, a historian travels from 1952 (of the world in which the South wins) into the past of 1863 to study the battle, where he inadvertently disrupts events to the point that the North wins; that is, reality splits and the newly created fork represents

---

[153]J. Blish, "Beep," *Galaxy Science Fiction*, February 1954.

[154]I. Asimov, "Fair Exchange?" *Asimov's Science Fiction Adventure Magazine*, Fall 1978.

[155]M. F. Flynn, "The Forest of Time," *Analog Science Fiction*, June 1987.

[156]Lord Dunsany, "Lost," *The Fourth Book of Jorkens*, Arkham House 1948.

the time track of *our* world. The historian is trapped on this new fork, cut off forever from his original time track. The entire novel is in the form of a discovered manuscript, written in 1873 and found in 1953, and the pathos of the ultimate isolation endows the novel with great emotional impact.

A 1992 novel on the same theme, Harry Turtledove's *The Guns of the South*, begins with a fascinating premise but then misses the crucial distinction between a single versus multiple time tracks. In that work racists from the future (2014) arrive by time machine at Lee's 1864 winter camp. They bring with them AK-47 automatic assault rifles and offer to supply Lee's army with all it can use. Lee accepts and the South wins the Civil War. The future, of course, changes—or does it? The time travelers have brought back books from the future showing that the South lost the war, so the implication is that history must have forked. So far, so good. But all through the novel, the time travelers move back and forth between the nineteenth and the twenty-first centuries, apparently finding their own time unchanged. And if that is so, then the whole point of the story vanishes. Why all the effort to change history when it is clear that nothing has changed? The novel is entertaining reading (Turtledove is a trained historian), but I believe Moore's novel to be the superior work of science fiction.

I'll end this discussion on splitting universes with a startling theological issue raised by a philosopher.[157] Arguing that God cannot branch into multiple time tracks because God is unique, the conclusion seems inescapable that God therefore exists on exactly one of how ever many different time tracks there may be. What if that chosen time track isn't ours? Then, concludes the philosopher, Nietzsche's nineteenth-century metaphorical claim that "God is dead" (for us) might literally be true! He admits that this is "fanciful," but still . . . .

4.7   For Further Discussion

In an afterword to his story "Dead City" (*Thrilling Wonder Stories*, Summer 1946), Murray Leinster muses "You've heard the old argument that a man can't travel backward in time because he might kill his grandfather. I've wondered why nobody has argued that a man can't travel forward in time because he might be killed by his grandson." One possible answer to Leinster is that *if*, at the moment the forward-bound time traveler departs, he has not yet sired a child, *then* there simply wouldn't be a murderous grandson waiting for him in the future. Perhaps, however, Leinster had this somewhat more

---

[157]Q. Smith, "A New Topology of Temporal and Atemporal Permanence," *Nous*, June 1989, pp. 307–330.

complicated scenario in mind: After the time traveler arrives in the future he is attacked by a mysterious stranger but survives, and later returns to the present. He then sires a child who will be the parent of that mysterious stranger. (As far as I know, this plot line has not appeared in a science fiction story.) Contrary to Leinster's view, explain why the *possibility* of being killed by a grandson is not a reason for forbidding the possibility of a trip in time (in either direction).

In his causal loop paper (note 105) the University of Delaware philosopher Richard Hanley correctly writes (on p. 146) "physicists have tried to avoid free will problems by ignoring causal loops involving intentional agency," and partly illustrates this claim with the autoinfanticide paradox, writing of the attempt of a time traveler to kill his younger self as inevitably failing because "the past is apparently brought about willy-nilly." (Hanley unfortunately then uses the story "Thompson's Time Traveling Theory" as an example of this—see note 77, and the end of the "Introduction"—when it is that time traveler's *grandfather* who is the intended target.) Discuss the merits of Hanley's claim, keeping in mind the end of Sect. 4.3 (in particular, note 81). If you are interested in genetics and astronomy as well as in time travel, then for extra credit comment on Hanley's claim (p. 137) that "one can extract information about my DNA from … my astrological chart."

The fictional killing of Hitler was imagined in print even before World War II, in Geoffrey Household's intense 1939 novel *Rogue Male* (made into the 1941 film *Man Hunt*). And so it's not surprising that one of the popular change-the-past themes in science fiction is that of a time traveler killing the Führer. (This idea, somewhat oddly, appeared in the debates leading up to the 2016 American Presidential election, when one of the candidates, to show the toughness of his character—even though he opposed abortion—declared "Hell, yes, I'd kill baby Hitler! You gotta step up, man." This candidate did elaborate a bit, stating there might be some risk involved with tampering with the past.) Stories in this sub-genre include E. Norden's "The Primal Solution" (*Magazine of Fantasy & Science Fiction*, July 1977), W. R. Thompson's "The Plot to Save Hitler" (*Analog*, September 1993), L. del Rey's "My Name Is Legion" (*Astounding Science Fiction*, June 1942), and R. M. Farley's "I

Killed Hitler" (*Weird Tales*, July 1941). Read some of these tales and compare the various repercussions envisioned by the authors following an assassination of Hitler by a time traveler.

After our discussion of Heinlein's time travel masterpiece "All You Zombies—," you might think it impossible to write a new story that exceeds it in complexity. That might well be true, but a modern masterpiece by Ted Chiang certainly gives it a good run for the money. "The Merchant and the Alchemist's Gate" (*Magazine of Fantasy & Science Fiction*, September 2007) uses a 'wormhole' that connects the present to the future 20 years hence, and it is stuffed with intertwined causal loops and information bootstraps. Read it and keep track of all such occurrences. How many did you find? The last line of the story clearly expresses the view that the past cannot be changed: "Nothing erases the past. There is repentance, there is atonement, and there is forgiveness. That is all, but that is enough." Is the story always faithful to this view of time travel?

In his paper (note 126) on the coincidences of time travel, the University of Queensland philosopher Phil Dowe writes "It's true that remote time travel [into the very distant past] does not allow for causal loops . . ." *Is* this true? Consider, as you think about this, the story "Time's Arrow" (*Science-Fantasy*, Summer 1950) by Arthur C. Clarke. In that tale geologists have just discovered, in a remote desert, the fossilized tracks of a monstrous creature, from fifty million years ago, tracks that indicate that the beast was in hot pursuit of fleeing prey. Before the geologists can unearth the entire set of tracks, to see if the pursuit was successfully completed, they are visited by a physicist who just happens to be conducting near-by experiments in time travel. (This proximity is explained by noting what better place to conduct time travel experiments, powered by atomic energy, than in a remote desert?) At one point during the visit, after being told of the ancient pursuit frozen in rock, the physicist muses "It would save you a lot of trouble, wouldn't it, if you could actually *see* what took place in the past, without having to infer it by these laborious and uncertain [geological] methods." This comment results in the Chief geologist paying a visit to the physicist's lab. After driving over in a car equipped with tires having "an odd zigzag pattern" in the tread,

an accident suddenly sends the entire lab into the past. Soon after, the other geologists unearth the rest of the fossilized tracks, and learn what the creature's prey had been when they see a zigzag pattern in the rocks, tracks that show "the great reptile was about to make the final leap upon its desperately fleeing prey." Can you see how to modify this story so as to have a causal loop involving the very distant past? (For perhaps even more inspiration on thinking about causal loops, watch the 1980 movie *The Final Countdown*. In it the designer of a modern naval warship that temporarily travels back through time to the Pearl Harbor of December 6, 1941, turns out to be a crew member who was accidently left behind in the past. In the past he *will be* able to design the ship because he already knows how it *was* designed—by himself!)

Comment, at length, on the cartoon shown in Fig. 4.5. (Does it make logical sense?)

In the story "Salvation" by Jerry Oltion (*Analog*, December 2007) a physicist approaches the Universal Church of the Divine Revelation for money to build a time machine. He is blunt in making his case: "You could go back in time and meet Jesus. Assuming he existed." That statement causes (it should come as no surprise) not just a bit of pandemonium but, nonetheless, an influential Church leader decides to provide the funding. Why? Because later, while sitting in his office as he talks with the physicist, a sheet of paper suddenly appears in the air above the leader's desk and then flutters down to land on the telephone. Picking the paper up, the leader sees it is a sheet of his own letterhead, with writing in his own angular, precise handwriting, saying "It works. Give him the money. You almost named the dog Solomon." This convinces the leader because, as we are told, "Paper appearing out of nowhere was a good trick, but it might easily be just that: a trick. Duplicating his letterhead and his handwriting wouldn't be all that difficult either. [On the other hand] knowing the name [the leader] had considered but rejected for his German Shepard 15 years ago was a different level of feat entirely." The physicist seems to be startled by the appearance of the paper, too, and asks "May I see that?" His reaction convinces the leader it wasn't a staged event: "Well, I'll be damned," the physicist replies. Once the time machine is under construction, the two men realize they have to send the enigmatic message back in time to complete the loop. As they prepare to do so, the leader asks a curious question. After retrieving the mysterious sheet of paper from his desk,

he says to the physicist "Should I send the original [the one he is holding in his hand], or should I write another?" The physicist replies with "Write a new one. If we send the original, we put it in a closed loop and [we'll] never get it back. We don't want to lose the first object to travel in time. We'll want that for the Smithsonian someday." Does this make sense? Also, comment on whether or not the dog's name is a bootstrap paradox.

A perplexing little time travel paradox, one that I don't think science fiction has yet treated (and I'm pretty sure physicists haven't had anything to say about it either), was cooked-up by the English philosopher Robin Le Poidevin in his 2003 book *Travels in Four Dimensions: the enigmas of Space and Time* (Oxford, pp. 180–181). There he writes "Peter and Jane, both 20 years old, are out for a walk one day in 1999 when suddenly a time machine appears in front of them. Out steps a strangely familiar character who tells Jane that he has an important mission for her. She must step into the machine and travel to the year 2019, talking with her a diary the stranger hands to her. In that diary she must make a record of her trip. Obligingly, she does as she is asked and, on arrival, meets Peter, now aged 40. She tells Peter to travel back to 1999, taking with him the diary she now hands him, and recording his trip in it. On arrival in 1999, he meets two 20-year-olds called Peter and Jane, out for a walk, and he tells Jane that he has an important mission for her." Le Poidevin then writes that "the really tricky question is: how many entries are there in the diary when Jane first steps into the machine? We imagine it blank. But this is the very same diary as the one Jane hands to the 40-year-old Peter, which then contains her entry. And by the time Peter arrives back in 1999, it will contain his entry, too. But then, if the diary already contained two entries when Jane was handed the diary, then it would contain three entries when she handed it to Peter, who would then add another one, so the diary would have contained four entries when it was first handed to Jane, and so on. If the problem is not immediately apparent, this is because we imagine an indefinite number of trips, but in fact there are just two: Jane's trip to 2019 and Peter's trip to 1999. So there ought to be a consistent answer to the question, how many entries are there in the diary? Yet, as we have seen, there does not appear to be a consistent answer." Another philosopher soon claimed he *did* have the answer: namely, 2. Read his paper (Erik Carlson, "A New Time Travel Paradox Resolved," *Philosophia*, December 2005, pp. 263–273), and either explain why you agree with Carlson's reasoning or enthusiastically rebut it.

As in "The Time Eliminator" (Fig. 4.1), other stories have imagined gadgets that simply view the past, rather than visit it as would a time machine. This is done in an attempt to avoid paradoxes—but does it? Two stories that illustrate how just viewing the past risks affecting the past as much as time travel would, are Horace Gold's "The Biography Project" (*Galaxy Science Fiction*, September 1951) and Donald Franson's "One Time in Alexandria" (*Analog*, June 1980). In the first tale the Biotime Camera, operated by the Biofilm Institute, allows teams of biographers to film (alas, no sound!) and study the lives of past notable personages. Of particular interest are the lives of those who developed neurotic psychoses, such as Isaac Newton. And, indeed, the Biotime Camera does capture Newton's image as he begins to display increasingly disturbed behavior. We see Newton, for example, as he begins to peer into dark corners, looking for those who have come to spy on him. On his death bed, the biography team assigned to him reads his lips and discovers that his final words are "My guardian angel. You watched over me all my life. I am content to meet you now." It is then that the Biofilm Institute realizes what it has done. Newton *was* in fact being spied upon—by the Biotime Camera, which has not changed the past but has certainly affected it. In the second tale an archeologist uses a time viewer to read the lost manuscripts in the ancient library at Alexandria before it was completely destroyed in an inferno. The viewer uses an infrared beam—and it is the heat from that beam from the future that proves to be the origin of the fire in the past. Again, the past has been affected, but not changed, by time viewing. Is it true to claim, however, that such viewing gadgets could not be the source of other paradoxes, such as causal loops or information bootstraps? If you think that isn't a valid claim, give a counter-example.

In a story by Francis Flagg and Weaver Wright (a pseudonym used by Forrest J. Ackerman), "Time Twister" (*Thrilling Wonder Stories*, October 1947), we read the following exchange between the inventor of a time machine and his none-too-bright helper:
"You mean to say," he questioned incredulously, "that I could go back a hundred years?"
"If you had the proper machine in which to travel, yes."
"But that'd take me back to before I was born."
The Professor smiled tolerantly.
"Look at this diagram, Hank. This line is the time continuum. It incorporates space, too. [The authors didn't actually print a diagram with the story, but

surely the Professor is using a Minkowski spacetime diagram]. This dot is you. It doesn't matter when you were born, or when you will die. You exist right now, that's the fact. Traveling into the past or future wouldn't make you grow any younger or older. Such a thought is naïve. Let me demonstrate the mechanics of it for you. If . . . we calculate with non-Euclidean mathematics . . ."

"It don't sound reasonable," the farmhand objected. "If I went back—"

"I know," interjected the Professor, "if you went back you might meet your own father as a young man and you'd be older than he, or maybe he and your mother would be kids going to school."

"Haw, haw! That'd be funny, that would."

What famous movie, made nearly 40 years later, does the end of the conversation remind you of? Hint: "flux capacitor."

As mentioned in the text, a famous science fiction example of *affecting* (but not changing) the past is "Behold the Man" by Michael Moorcock, the tale of a time traveler who arrives in ancient times during the very years of the ministry of Jesus as reported in the Bible. When he finds there is actually no such person, the time traveler takes the role himself and lives out the events as reported in the Gospels, including the Crucifixion. This is a powerful story, but it had already been done more than 15 years earlier, by Philip K. Dick, in his short story "The Skull" (*If*, September 1952). In his tale, Dick tells of a man from the twenty-second century who is sent by government authority back to the mid-twentieth century to kill the Founder of a religious movement, a movement that 'now,' 200 years later, threatens those same government authorities. History records that the Founder gave a powerful speech just before being arrested and executed, a speech that started the religious movement, and so the time traveling assassin is told to kill the Founder *before* he can give that speech. (The parallel between Jesus and the Founder should be obvious.) Read these two stories and compare and contrast how Moorcock and Dick handled time travel paradoxes. Comment, in particular, on the relationship between the assassin and the Founder. Moorcock's tale should be easy to find, and Dick's is available as a free pdf download (it is in the anthology *The Best of Philip K. Dick*, Halcyon Classics 2010, as well).

A subtle change-the-past sequence appears in the original *Back to the Future* film that is easy to miss. When the hero, Marty McFly, returns to 1955 in the time car, he leaves from the parking lot of the Twin Pines Mall, so named because of the two pine trees that stand nearby. Arriving in the past with literally a bang, the time car inadvertently destroys one of the (then) young pines. Near the end of the movie, when Marty returns to the future (1985), he finds that the mall is now called the Lone Pine Mall. This is charming and fun, indeed clever, but modern scholars of time travel reject it, and other claims of changing the past, as not being logical. (Shakespeare understood this point, when he has Lady Macbeth declare, concerning the murder of Banquo, "What's done cannot be undone: to bed, to bed, to bed.") What Marty's trip *would* explain is why the mall would *always* have had the name of the Lone Pine Mall. Watch the movie and see how many other 'change-the-past' episodes you can find.

Chapter 5
Communication with the Past

"[As for travel to or for signaling the past] you'd have to exceed light speed which immediately entails the use of more than an infinite number of horsepowers."[1]

5.1 Reversed Time

"I have not discovered Mr. Wells' Time Machine."[2]

One way to communicate with the past is to 'simply' live backwards in time. Philosophers and other writers of speculative fiction were the first to wonder what things might be like in a world where the time asymmetry is reversed—that is, in a world where time 'runs backward.' Indeed, fascination with the idea of time reversal actually dates back thousands of years, long before science fiction, as it can be found in Plato's dialogue *Statesman*, written (most probably) 15 years before Plato's death in 347 B.C.

At one point, Plato offers an extended description of the world suddenly running backward in time in the ancient past. After one character is told that at that remote time "all mortal beings halted on their way to assuming the looks of old age, and each one began to grow backward," he asks "But how did living creatures come into being, Sir? How did they produce their offspring?" The answer is shocking: "Clearly ... it was not of the order of nature in that era to beget children by intercourse ... It is only to be expected that along with the reversal of the old men's course of life and their return to childhood, a new race of men should arise, too—a new race formed from men dead and long laid in Earth ... Such resurrection

---

[1]An observation by Haskel van Manderpootz, professor of the "newer physics," in S. G. Weinbaum's "The Worlds of If," *Wonder Stories*, August 1935. Compared to the 'modest' Van Manderpootz, all other physicists in the world are a mere "pack of jackels, eating the crumbs of ideas that drop from [his] feast of thoughts."

[2]W. R. Inge (1860–1954), in his November 1920 Presidential Address to the Aristotelian Society at the University of London Club, in a sympathetic treatment of the possibility of a time-reversed world.

of the dead was in keeping with the cosmic change, all creation being now turned in the reverse direction."

The reversed-time world is an important philosophical concept. Before the turn of the century, for example, Francis Bradley (one of the early proponents of the block universe, you will recall from Chap. 2), thought about reversed-time worlds and concluded that they would be quite odd: "Let us suppose … that there are beings whose lives run opposite to our own … *If* in any way *I* could experience *their* world, I should fail to understand it. Death would come before birth, the blow would follow the wound, and all must seem to be irrational."[3] A half-century later the South African philosopher J. N. Findlay (1903–1987) took Bradley's position of supporting a skeptical attitude towards the possibility of time-reversed worlds. Writing in a book review, Findlay declared "The reversed world in question wouldn't merely strike us as queer, but definitely crazy: it would be a world where what is wildly and intrinsically *improbable* was always occurring. It would, in fact, be much more startling than the original asymmetry that led us to think of it."[4] (Findlay was almost certainly thinking of things like a tea cup, shattered due to a fall, spontaneously reassembling itself.)

The question of backward-running time so fascinated Findlay that, some years later, he posed it as a problem for the readership of a scholarly journal (*Analysis*). This led to a number of responses, and subsequently he presented both his own negative view of time-reversed worlds and that of the best reader response he had received to his posed problem (which came from McGechie).[5] While Findlay showed admirable open-mindedness by awarding the title of *best* to an argument that refuted his own position, he remained unconvinced about the concept of reversed-time worlds, stating that "I continue to feel that a total reversal of my experiences is a terrifying possibility."

The terror aspect of living backward in time had been nicely captured in a science fiction story years before Findlay wrote. A scientist who is involved in an accident with radioactive materials has his sense of time flow reversed, and the story carefully and logically analyzes what his life would be like in such a situation. For example, the scientist can talk (backwards for others, of course), so he is understandable only if his words are recorded and then played in reverse. He cannot eat, because for him that would involve the regurgitation of food. He cannot answer questions because "if he should answer any questions put to him, it would mean he was giving the answer before he heard the question, on his time scale." And finally, he can't pick anything up because the normally stable position and velocity error-correction mechanism between eye, hand, and brain, which is a negative feedback system in normal time, has become an unstable positive feedback system in reversed time. The horror of his existence is contained in the only words the man

---

[3]F. H. Bradley, *Appearance and Reality* (2nd edition), Oxford University Press 1897, p. 190.

[4]J. N. Findlay, *Philosophy* (25) 1950, pp. 346–347.

[5]J. N. Findlay and J. E. McGechie, "Does It Make Sense to Suppose That All Events, Including Personal Experiences, Could Occur in Reverse?" *Analysis*, June 1956, pp. 121–123.

utters (deciphered after reversed playback): "Where am I? What's happened? Why are things so different? Why? Why?"[6]

Despite Findlay's "terror," however, the prevailing view today is that to the inhabitants of a time-reversed (or what is sometimes called a *counterclock*) world, *nothing would look odd*! This is a fairly new idea,[7] and not so long ago the philosophical literature displayed a misunderstanding of how a time-reversed world would appear to its occupants.[8] More recent analyses than Smart's (note 7) advocating the 'normality' of a time-reversed world are more compelling.[9] One concern about a time reversed world however is not easily dismissed: matter with a time reversed time sense is thought by many to be antimatter in our world, and any interactions between the two worlds would be spectacular, indeed![10]

But let's ignore that possible difficulty. The philosopher J. R. Lucas argued that even if beings from two such time-reversed worlds could meet, they still could not communicate: "If two beings are to regard each other as communicators, they must both have the same direction of time. It is a logical as well as a causal prerequisite."[11] Now, this matter is well worth some effort to understand, because it is intimately tied to time travel. At first blush, Lucas' words seem almost self-evident, and after a little thought they might seem to be absolutely irrefutable. The philosopher Murray MacBeath, however, took exception.

MacBeath opened his analysis[12] with a story to demonstrate that the persuasive power of Lucas' position is only superficial. In that story of Jim and Midge, Jim is one of us, whereas Midge is a 'Faustian time'[13] being. In his analyses MacBeath uses capitalized words and symbols for the time-reversed Midge, and lower case for Jim, as shown in Fig. 5.1. As MacBeath explains, "While Jim and Midge are together a face-to-face conversation is hardly likely to get off the ground. To make this clear let us say that they are together from t_0 until t_{10} on Jim's time-scale, and from T_0 until T_{10} on Midge's TIME-scale; t_0 is then the same temporal instant as T_{10} and, in general, $t_n = T_{10-n}$. If Jim at [his time] t_2 asks Midge a

---

[6]M. C. Pease," *Astounding Science Fiction*, "Reversion," December 1949. See also R. A. Banks, "This Side Up," *Galaxy Science Fiction*, July 1954, for a tale about the confusion caused by projecting a film the wrong way in time.

[7]The modern view that a time-reversed world would appear normal to someone living in it can be traced back at least as far as to J. J. C. Smart, "The Temporal Asymmetry of the World," *Analysis*, March 1954, pp. 79–83, an analysis, alas, that may not convince everyone.

[8]M. Dummett, "Bringing About the Past," *Philosophical Review*, July 1964, pp. 338–359.

[9]See, for example, D. L. Schumacher, "The Direction of Time and the Equivalence of 'Expanding' and 'Contracting' World-Models," *Proceedings of the Cambridge Philosophical Society* 1964, pp. 575–579; J. V. Narlikar, "The Direction of Time," *British Journal for the Philosophy of Science*, February 1965, pp. 281–285; F. R. Stannard, "Symmetry of the Time Axis," *Nature*, August 13, 1966, pp. 693–695.

[10]This issue is raised, several times, in Robert Silverberg's 1968 novel *The Masks of Time*.

[11]J. R. Lucas, *A Treatise on Time and Space*, Methuen 1973, pp. 43–47.

[12]M. MacBeath, "Communication and Time Reversal," *Synthese*, July 1983, pp. 27–46.

[13]In Goethe's play *Faust*, the normal flow of time is routinely upset.
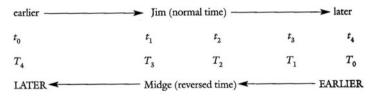
Fig. 5.1 Opposite time flows in counterclock worlds

question, and Midge hears the question at T_8, she will answer at T_9, and Jim will hear his question answered at t_1, *before* he asked it! What is more, if Jim is inexpert at interpreting backward sounds, and at t_4 asks Midge to repeat her answer, Midge will hear that request at T_6, BEFORE she has heard the original question; and her puzzled reply at T_7 will be heard by Jim at t_3 before he has uttered the request." Certainly this is a mess in time, and Lucas seems to be on safe ground with his denial of the possibility of communication between Jim and Midge. MacBeath, however, shows how to refute all of Lucas' arguments if Jim and Midge are allowed to be clever about how they send their messages back and forth—that is, if we give up some of our usual ideas of what a conversation is like. MacBeath's analyses are far too lengthy and detailed to present here, but the simplified diagram of Fig. 5.1 should enable one to follow the logic of his approach.

We imagine that Jim and Midge will not actually talk, and so will not have to decipher backward-spoken language. Rather, they will exchange messages via computer-generated text displayed on monitor screens, screens that are separated by a window that is proof against all penetration but the light emitted by those screens.[14] The nature of this window is not a trivial matter: if we accept the anti-matter nature of Midge's world then it is *essential* to keep her and Jim apart! To that end, MacBeath imagined that the window is double paned, with a perfect vacuum in-between. The exchange of photons between the two worlds should present no problems because photons are their own anti-particles.[15]

Now, imagine that at t_0 Jim brings a computer to the window. He programs it to wait for 4 days, until t_4, and then to display the following message on its screen: "This message is from Jim, who experiences time in the sense opposite to yours. Please study the following questions and display your answers on a computer screen three days from now." Jim's messages ends with the list of questions.

Because all that took place at t_4, Midge sees Jim's message and questions at what we will now call T_0. As requested, she brings her computer to the window, enters the answers to Jim's questions, and programs the machine to display them (after a

---

[14]Communication between beings in counterclock worlds, using written messages displayed through a window, appeared in science fiction *years* before MacBeath wrote: see I. Watson's 1978 novelette "The Very Slow Time Machine."

[15]There is no difference in the time sense of photons in either world because the flow of proper time for a photon—traveling at the speed of light, by definition—is zero (recall the discussion in Sect. 3.6).

3 day delay) on its screen. Thus, at T_3, which is Jim's t_1, Jim sees Midge's computer screen light up with "Hi, Jim. This is Midge. The answers to your questions are at the end of this message. Now, I've got some questions for *you*. Please display the answers two days from now." Midge's message ends with answers to Jim's questions and her list of questions.

Jim sees Midge's message at t_1, enters the answers to her questions and sets the machine to answer after a 2-day delay. At t_3, which is Midge's T_1—and by now you see how the process goes. It's cumbersome, sure, but it works. Or at least it does if everybody follows the rules. What if they don't? MacBeath provides other, increasingly complicated analyses to treat some of the more subtle problems that can be imagined in this method of exchanging messages. I will mention just two of them, which have direct analogs with what we normally think of as 'time travel.'

For the first problem, consider Jim's initial message, created at t_0 to be sent at t_4. He receives Midge's answer as described above at t_1, *before* his message is displayed through the window. So, what happens if at t_2 Jim cancels the message and it is *not* displayed? He has already gotten Midge's reply, but how can that happen if he does not send his message? This is, of course, a bilking paradox, with an explanation that we discussed in the previous chapter.

A second problem is the apparent possibility of creating a causal message loop. For example, let's say that at t_0 Jim suddenly decides to send a message through the window. (His reason for this sudden urge will be explained in the next few lines.) He thinks all night about what to send and, at t_1, finally settles on the following: "Greetings to the people on the other side of the window. This message comes from Jim, who hopes you will reply." Midge immediately sees Jim's message through the window (at her time T_3) and so is suddenly caught up with the desire to respond. She thinks all night about what to send and, hoping to be witty, she finally decides (at time T_4) on the following echo to Jim's message. "Greetings to the people on the other side of the window. This message comes from Midge, who hopes you will reply." Jim immediately sees this through the window (at what is his time t_0) and so now we know why he decides to send his original message! And Jim *will* send his original message—he has to because Midge replied to it.

In a review of a book on the direction of time, the philosopher Hilary Putnam restated the problems of a time-reversed world in the form of a provocative question: "How do you know that one man's future isn't another man's past?"[16] He began by making the interesting observation that for us to be able just to observe a backward-running universe, we would have to provide our own normal radiation source, because the counterclock stars in such a universe *absorb* radiation rather than emitting it. This point was elaborated on by another philosopher some years later, who wrote "We have uncritically imagined someone looking in on ... two worlds having opposite time directions ... Part of the story we tell, of the process of seeing, involves the emission of photons from objects [for example, the computer screens of Jim and Midge] and the subsequent impinging of these photons on our

---

[16]H. Putnam, *The Journal of Philosophy*, April 1962, pp. 213–216.

retinas. But this process is obviously directed in time. In a world where time ran opposite to ours, we could not see objects at all: objects would be photon-sinks, not photon-emitters."[17]

Putnam concluded his comments about reversed time with a cautious warning: "It is difficult to talk about such extremely weird situations without deviating from ordinary idiomatic usage of English. But this difficulty should not be mistaken for a proof that these situations could not arise." That challenge is no doubt why so many writers of science fiction and fantasy have tackled the question of what it would be like if time ran backward. We can find such a tale long before the science fiction pulps, in fact, in a tale that appeared when Einstein was just 7 years old. In that story[18] the narrator (a professor of astronomy and higher mathematics) suddenly finds himself on Mars. There he encounters beings who know the future up to their deaths, and whose memories of the past are "scarcely more than a rudimentary faculty." The entire tale is in the form of a conversation between the professor and one such being, who argues (quite persuasively) for the virtues of his 'backward' existence compared to that of earthlings (the Martian name for Earth is the story's title). Bellamy realized that his story implies a fatalistic block universe: "No one could have foresight . . . without realizing that the future is as incapable of being changed as the past," he wrote.

Other writers, too, were fascinated by the implications of reverse time. When Merlyn the magician makes his first appearance in T. H. White's 1939 masterpiece *The Once and Future King*, for example, he explains how he knows the futures of others: "Ordinary people are born forward in Time, if you understand what I mean, and nearly everything in the world goes forward, too . . . But I unfortunately was born at the wrong end of time, and I have to live backwards from its front, while surrounded by a lot of people living forwards from behind. Some people call it having second sight."

What may have put the idea in White's mind for his time-reversed magician is only speculation today, but perhaps it was something he might have read a decade before, in a fellow Englishman's writing, the 1929 book *The Nature of the Physical World* by Sir Arthur Eddington, where one finds the following passage: "In "The Plattner Story" H. G. Wells relates how a man strayed into the fourth dimension and returned with left and right interchanged . . . In itself the change is so trivial that even Mr. Wells cannot weave a romance out of it [but see one of the *For Further Discussion* questions at the end of Chap. 2]. But if the man had come back with past and future interchanged, then indeed the situation would have been lively."

Whether or not those words influenced English fantasy, they certainly had some effect on American science fiction. In his 1979 memoir *The Way the Future Was*, pulp editor Frederik Pohl wrote that Eddington's book (which Pohl incorrectly attributed to Sir James Jeans) had given him the idea for a story using the reversed-time twist. But before Pohl could publish it, an even better (claimed Pohl) tale

---

[17]N. Swartz, "Is There an Ozma-Problem for Time?" *Analysis*, January 1972, pp. 77–82.

[18]E. Bellamy, "The Blindman's World," *The Atlantic Monthly*, November 1886.

arrived from Malcolm Jameson. Jameson, too, had read Eddington's book, and the result was the novella-length "Quicksands of Youthwardness," which Pohl published in *Astonishing Stories* as three-part serial during 1940–1941. Unfortunately, Jameson's tale is both pretty awful *and* devoid of *any* connection with Eddington's suggestion. One can only wonder about what might have been in the story Pohl says *he* discarded—did *it* have the future remembered? Alas, Pohl wrote that he couldn't remember!

Remembering the future does occur in one tale where everybody knows what will happen (as they live backward) by reading "prediction books." What distinguishes that story from many others on the same theme is an interesting, ironic conversation a student in a reverse-time world has with a philosophy professor about how things would be if time went the 'other way,' as in *our* world:

> "How can we tell? The reverse sequence of causation may be just as valid as the one we are experiencing. Cause and effect are arbitrary, after all."
>   "But it sounds pretty far-fetched."
>   "It's hard for us to imagine, just because we're not used to it. It's only a matter of viewpoint. Water would run downhill and so on. Energy would flow the other way—from total concentration to total dispersion. Why not?"[19]

The student is unconvinced, however, and when he tries to visualize such a peculiar world (*our* world, don't forget!) it gives him a "half-pleasant shudder." Imagine, he thinks in wonder, never knowing the date of your own death.

A few years later, in Wilson Tucker's 1955 novel *Time Bomb*, we find the intriguing idea of political assassination by time bomb, with the bombs actually *time traveling* to their targets. A policeman begins to suspect what is happening when it becomes evident that one of the explosions was actually an implosion: "The time bomb ... had been going in and had carried the force of the blast with it. Inward. Into the past. He frowned at that. A backward explosion? An explosion which ran counter to the normal flow of time, to the normal method of living? ... How would an explosion appear to a man if the blast happened in the opposite manner? If it began exploding now, in this moment, but continued backward instead of forward? Would it be an implosion?"

There is little doubt that the definitive treatment of a reversed-time world is that of Philip K. Dick's 1967 novel *Counter-Clock World*. Dick's world was once our world, but then, as in Plato's tale that began this chapter, time suddenly begins to run backward. People still alive reverse their direction of aging (but still think, walk, and talk in forward time), and dead, buried people come alive again and emerge from graveyards as the "Sacrament of Miraculous Rebirth" is intoned by a priest; all live their way back to the womb, just as in Plato's tale of 1600 years earlier. Such imagery is powerful stuff, but the physicist John Wheeler (of black hole fame) would have none of it. As he wrote, "Most of us would probably agree

---

[19] D. Knight, "This Way to the Regress," *Galaxy Science Fiction*, August 1956.

that the universe has not contained and will not contain any backward-looking observers. We do not expect to see caskets with corpses in them coming to life, nor do we expect to find bank vaults in which a gram of radium will integrate rather than disintegrate."[20]

5.2   Multi-dimensional Time

> "If there are extra time dimensions we get violations of causality, because one could sneak to yesterday through the extra dimensions, and ... if you had sneaked to yesterday, you would have disappeared from today."[21]

There are those, however, who haven't been quite so sure as Wheeler about the impossibility of a reversed-time world. One physicist, for example, showed how (under certain initial conditions at the Big Bang) there is a possible solution to the gravitational field equations that gives an oscillating universe that temporally runs backward during the contraction phase.[22] And a philosopher has argued that the *direction* of time is local, not global (just as special relativity showed is the *rate* of time) and that the arrow of time can point in opposite directions at different locations.[23] As odd as such ideas may seem, a generalization of reversed-time— *multi-dimensional* time—makes it seem small potatoes. This is the idea that there might be *many* possible directions to the arrow of time, not just two. At first this may seem an absurd idea, something akin to a man jumping onto his horse and riding off in all directions at once. But philosophers (and perhaps just a few physicists[24]) have started to take at least a semi-serious look at the concept; as

---

[20]Wheeler's comments can be found in the General Discussion at the end of *The Nature of Time* (T. Gold, editor), Cornell University Press 1966.

[21]An intriguing (if somewhat mysterious) thought from F. J. Yndurain, "Disappearance of Matter Due to Causality and Probability Violations in Theories with Extra Timelike Dimensions," *Physics Letters B*, February 28, 1991, pp. 15–16.

[22]H. Schmidt, "Model of an Oscillating Cosmos Which Rejuvenates During Contraction," *Journal of Mathematical Physics*, March 1966, pp. 494–509. An elaboration of Schmidt's ideas is in A. Walstad, "Time's Arrow in an Oscillating Universe," *Foundations of Physics*, October 1980, pp. 743–749.

[23]G. Matthews, "Time's Arrow and the Structure of Spacetime," *Philosophy of Science*, March 1979, pp. 82–97.

[24]More than half-a-century ago one writer asserted that two-dimensional *complex* time was old hat in the theories of spinning particles—see M. Bunge, "On Multi-dimensional Time," *British Journal for the Philosophy of Science*, May 1958, p. 39. For a summary of many of the objections to multi-dimensional time see J. K. Kowalczynski, "Critical Comments on the Discussion About Tachyonic Causal Paradoxes and the Concept of Superluminal Reference Frames," *International Journal of Theoretical Physics*, January 1984, pp. 27–60 (and the reply by E. Recami, September 1987, pp. 913–919).

with so many other of the radical concepts associated with time travel, though, science fiction writers were dealing with multi-dimensional time long before it became a respectable topic in learned philosophical and physics journals.

In one pulp story, for example, we find a professor asking his redundantly named class in speculative metaphysics "Why shouldn't time be a fifth, as well as a fourth, dimension?"[25] In response to a generally skeptical reception to that, the professor goes on to say "I believe in the existence of a two-dimensional time scheme . . . Ordinarily, most people think of time as a track they run on from their births to their deaths . . . Think of this time track we follow over the *surface of time* as a winding road [it is the imagery of a surface that gives the professor *two* time dimensions] . . . Once in a while another road crosses at right angles. Neither its past nor its future has any connection whatsoever with the world we know."[26]

The year before, the same pulp had published another tale[27] that went well beyond a mere two time dimensions. We are told in that story of two countries on an alien planet at war in the distant future. The war is a stalemate until one side begins to fire a gun at its foe from just two miles from its target, in the heart of enemy territory—*from the middle of next week*! The gun's shells are true 'time bombs.' This is not mere 'ordinary' time travel along one time track, however, but a multidimensional effect. Using a photograph of the gun in actual operation to support his astonishing discovery, an agent for the side being shelled reports to his superior that "the gun and its crew are existing along another time axis at right angles to the direction of our 'normal time,' so that from our point of view they are existing perpetually in the same instant."

That explains why the gun crew can (will?) operate without interference in next week's future, as they are in their adversary's time only for the instant that the two time tracks intersect. Indeed, the spy used the same trick to obtain his undetected photograph: "I secured the photograph by orienting myself along still another time axis at right angles to that of the gun, and approached it as an instantaneous, invisible entity." By the story's end both sides are using and counter-using this technique, evading each other "to and fro along an ever increasing complexity of mutually perpendicular time axes." In fact, the final count exceeds 75 time axes, making Heinlein's two-dimensional time look rather skimpy by comparison.

Well, of course, 75 time directions *is* science fiction (I think), and physicists are not so enamored of multidimensional time as are science fiction writers. For example, Eddington wrote that he found the idea of any region of spacetime involving two-dimensional time to "defy imagination."[28] Another physicist showed that the extremal property of timelike geodesics (look back at Fig. 3.15 and its

---

[25]R. Heinlein, "Elsewhen," *Astounding Science Fiction*, September 1941.

[26]This story has an amusing scene in which one of the professor's students accidently 'jumps time tracks' and so enters a new track with his arrow of time pointing backwards.

[27]N. L. Knight, "Bombardment in Reverse," *Astounding Science Fiction*, February 1940.

[28]A. S. Eddington, *The Mathematical Theory of Relativity* (2nd edition), Cambridge University Press 1924, p. 25.

discussion) would fail for multidimensional time, which he then associated with the stability of matter and a failure of causality.[29] Yet another physicist, however, was just a bit more willing to consider multidimensional time, and suggested that a viable theory of quantum gravity *might* support the idea of multiple time dimensions.[30] Of just *what* more than one time dimension might actually *mean*, however, this same physicist echoed Eddington by writing "Physics in a spacetime of . . . two timelike dimensions would be very weird indeed." Agreeing with this physicist was a philosopher who called the idea that there could be more than one dimension to time a "rather wild possibility" and a "fairy-tale."[31] These are probably fair statements of how most physicists presently think of multidimensional time.

But not all philosophers are of that persuasion, and many are in fact as fascinated by the possibilities of multidimensional time as are science fiction writers. So, *why* this interest in something so different from anything we actually experience? Where does the motivation come from? Of what *use* is multidimensional time? I think the answers to those questions all derive from how multidimensional time offers a theoretical model for giving meaning to the view that the past can be changed (take a look back at note 20 in the Introduction).

In a certain trivial sense, of course, the past is always changing. For each of us the past is the set of all events that have happened, arranged in a before/after temporal order, and this set is continually increasing (and so changing). That is not, however, what most people mean by a changeable past. What *is* meant is that there may be some kind of change in the temporal ordering of events, or that an event that once was (or wasn't) a member of the set of past events no longer is (or is now) a member. Two-dimensional time offers a way to make sense of such possibilities, which one-dimensional time simply cannot do. To see how that works, I'll follow the presentation in a paper that forcefully argues that it does make sense to talk about altering the past.[32]

Meiland was aware that some might find his model *ad hoc*, even "incredibly weird" (in his own words), but he justified his efforts by taking a refreshingly enlightened, non-Humean view of what he thought would be the proper response to meeting purported time travelers: "If strange machines containing people in futuristic garments and speaking strange tongues (or perhaps using ESP instead of speech) were to appear and were to claim to be from the future, we might very well begin to search for a theory of time that allows their claim to be true." In Fig. 5.2 you can see how Meiland tried to do just that.

---

[29]J. Dorling, "The Dimensionality of Time," *American Journal of Physics*, April 1970, pp. 539–540.

[30]C. Isham, "Quantum Gravity," in *The New Physics* (P. Davies, editor), Cambridge University Press 1989.

[31]D. Zeilicovici, "Temporal Becoming Minus the Moving-Now," *Nous*, September 1989, pp. 505–524.

[32]J. W. Meiland, "A Two-Dimensional Passage Model of Time for Time Travel," *Philosophical Studies*, November 1974, pp. 153–173. Jack Meiland (1934–1998) was a professor of philosophy at the University of Michigan.
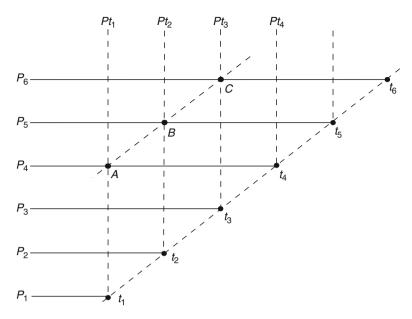
Fig. 5.2 Two-dimensional time

The dashed diagonal line, marked with the points $t_1, t_2, \ldots$ represents our usual one-dimensional image of time. The horizontal lines $P_1 t_1, P_2 t_2 \ldots$ (which we can simply call $P_1, P_2, \ldots$, for short) are the pasts for the present instants $t_1, t_2, \ldots$. That is, P_1 is the past with respect to the present t_1, P_2 is the past with respect to the present t_2, and so on. The dashed vertical lines allow us to locate any moment in the past. For example, the intersection point A of P_4 with Pt_1 is the location of t_1 in the past with respect to the present t_4.

With this model, Meiland then analyzed in detail several interesting special cases. Suppose that t_1 and t_2 are 1 year apart and that there is a similar time separation between all adjacent, marked present moments on the diagonal. Let us further suppose that a time traveler at t_4 journeys backward 3 years to t_1, to arrive at point A. Assume he stays in the past 2 years; then his temporal locations lie along the dashed diagonal line ABC; that is, at B he is 3 years in the past of t_5, and at C he is 3 years in the past of t_6. From Fig. 5.2, then, we can imagine the time traveler saying, as he climbs into his time machine at t_4, "One year from now I'll be two years from now." That rather astonishing statement makes sense when we take both uses of now to be t_4 and observe that B (1 year from A) is 2 years in the past with respect to t_4.[33]

---

[33]A critic of time travel (see note 119 of Chap. 2) used what he claimed to be the absurdity of such a statement to support his ejection of time travel. One of Meiland's reasons for developing his two-dimensional model of time was, in fact, to be able to reply to that critic (Donald Williams).

Meiland's two-dimensional time model is undeniably fascinating, but it simply has no theoretical justification (as far as I know[34]). It is not necessary to assume two-dimensional time to explain Meiland's "strange machines containing people in futuristic garments"; it is possible to do that with one-dimensional time in a four-dimensional spacetime. The classic paradoxes, too, are understandable without two-dimensional time, as discussed in the previous chapter.

5.3   Maxwell's Equations and Sending Messages to the Past

"Communication with a world exactly, to minutest detail, a duplicate of our own [but] twenty thousand years ahead of us might ruin the human race as effectively as if we had fallen into the Sun."[35]

Every physicist and electrical engineer knows that the mathematical description of the electromagnetic field is given by Maxwell's equations. In particular, radio engineers know that the waves of energy their antennas launch into space follow the predictions of those equations with astonishing accuracy. Indeed, when Einstein's relativity theory was completed, it was found that Maxwell's equations automatically satisfy relativity because magnetic effects *are* relativistic effects; in other words, relativity is built into Maxwell's equations. Whereas Newton's laws of dynamics had to be patched up, Maxwell's equations were untouched by the discovery of relativity.

Thus, it was a puzzle when physicists discovered that careful study of the seemingly perfect Maxwell equations, when applied to antennas, apparently results in the prediction of causality violation. It is found, in fact, that the equations have *two* solutions. One, as expected, contains the feature of time delay; that is, creating an electromagnetic disturbance at the antenna *now* causes a detectable effect at a distant point in space *later*. This is the so-called *time-retarded-solution*, and its common-sense physical interpretation is that of energy waves traveling away from the antenna as they also travel into the future. The shock was that Maxwell's equations also accept an *advanced solution*; energy waves *arriving* at the antenna from infinite space.

The physicist Paul Renno Heyl (1872–1961) wrote the perhaps first scientific work discussing advanced electromagnetic effects, in his 1889 University of Pennsylvania doctoral dissertation with the provocative title "The Theory of Light on the

---

[34]Many of the arguments against multi-dimensional time can be found in M. MacBeath, "Time's Square," in *The Philosophy of Time* (R. Le Poidevin and M. MacBeath, editors), Oxford University Press 1993. MacBeath concludes, however, with "I would not want to rule out the possibility . . . that time is three-dimensional. Or worse." See also Alasdair Richmond, "Plattner's Arrow: Science and Multi-dimensional time," *Ratio*, September 2000, pp. 256–274.

[35]The Victorian writer Samuel Butler (1835–1902), in the "Imaginary Worlds" entry of *The Notebooks of Samuel Butler* (published posthumously in 1912), commenting on the chaos that communication across time might cause.

Hypothesis of a Fourth Dimension." Heyl cited the scientific guru of the fourth dimension, C. H. Hinton (look back at the last "For Further Discussion" assignment in Chap. 2) as his inspiration. The situation described by Heyl is something like that of a child standing at the edge of a pond. She throws a rock into the middle of the pond and watches ripples spread out and away from the splash. Suddenly, she sees ripples appear all around the edge of the pond and then travel inward toward the center, where they all converge at once. A spout of water then erupts from the surface of the pond at the simultaneous meeting of the inward-traveling ripples, and she watches as a rock is ejected from the spout to land back in her hand. She is, of course, open-mouthed with astonishment! How absurd, you think, as you read this, and who could blame you? This amazing imagery of advanced effects we owe to the philosopher Karl Popper, and it has come to be called "the fable of the Popperian pond."[36]

Pursuing the mathematics of wave motion in the fourth dimension, Heyl wrote "We are led to the curious conclusion that, in Hinton's aether,[37] the nature of the central disturbance *after* a given instant can influence the form of the aether *before* that instant. In other words, the aether seems to be endowed with an uncanny faculty of foreknowledge." We can avoid such a counter-intuitive implication of advanced effects, but only at the price of something many physicists and philosophers consider equally unacceptable: information traveling from the future into the past. We can still think of the advanced solution as representing electromagnetic waves of energy traveling *away* from the transmitting antenna—that is, as being *broadcast*, just like the retarded solution, rather than being received from infinity—*if* we also think of the waves traveling backward in time. Thus, the advanced solution to Maxwell's equations holds out the possibility of sending messages to the past, a sort of poor man's time travel. It may seem that we have simply traded one problem for another, however, because just sending information into the past can cause many of the same paradoxical, causality-busting situations that physical time traveling is claimed to cause.

The cosmologists Fred Hoyle (1915–2001) and J. V. Narlikar commented on the potential problems posed by communication backward in time, in their 1974 book *Action at a Distance in Physics and Cosmology*: "The [Maxwell] equations supply us with both advanced and retarded solutions (and, because of the linearity, with any linear combination of them) ... With so many solutions theoretically possible, why does nature always select the retarded one? That this question cannot be answered within the framework of Maxwell's theory must be regarded as one of its intrinsic weaknesses."

---

[36]K. Popper, "The Arrow of Time," *Nature*, March 17, 1956, p. 538. See, too, note 110 (and its discussion) in Chap. 2.

[37]It was thought, in nineteenth century physics, that electromagnetic waves need a *medium* through which to propagate (like ocean waves need water, and sound waves need air), a mysterious substance called the *aether* (or *ether*) that exists even in a vacuum. The 1871 Michelson-Morley experiment, however, implied that the aether simply does *not* exist.

That branding of Maxwell's theory as having an "intrinsic weakness" because of its prediction of an advanced solution was, I think, unwarranted. Indeed, the advanced solution can be given a perfectly reasonable physical interpretation.[38] Imagine a transmitting antenna sending electromagnetic waves to an identical receiving antenna. At any point in space between the two antennas there are electric and magnetic fields. Maxwell's equations allow us to calculate the fields produced by alternating currents in the two antennas. When we do an analysis of the relationship between the transmitting antenna's current and the fields, we use the retarded solution because the current is the cause and the fields are the effect. But in the analysis of the relationship between the fields and the receiving antenna's current, the situation is reversed, and the fields are the cause and the current is the effect. That is, the advanced solution is simply the mathematics relating the current in the receiving antenna *now* to the fields *in the past*.

An acceptance of both solutions has, in fact, been in the physics literature for nearly a century. As the Yale physicist Leigh Page (1884–1952) wrote decades before Hoyle and Narlikar, "While the advanced potentials, as well as the retarded potentials, satisfy the electromagnetic equations, the former has generally been discarded for the reason that it has been more in accord with the trend of scientific intuition to consider that the present is determined by the past course of events than by the future. However, if it is once admitted that the present state is uniquely determined by any past state, it follows that the future is also so determined, and hence the employment of a future state as well as a past state in specifying the present marks no inherent departure from our accustomed methods of description . . ."[39]

It may still be tempting, however, to just dismiss the advanced solution as a mere anomaly of the mathematics and to discard it on physical grounds. This is the traditional approach taken by physicists when confronted with non-causal solutions in any physical theory and, indeed, that was what Swiss physicist Walter Ritz (1878–1909) did with the advanced solutions to Maxwell's equations (an approach that involved Ritz during the last year of his life in a dispute with Einstein). For Ritz, the reversal of cause and effect simply did too much violence to his intuition to be taken seriously, and so he thought one must *impose* causality on Maxwell's equations (a condition they do not inherently contain) by *a priori* rejecting the advanced solution.[40]

Still, electrical engineers make similar kinds of judgements all the time, as when the solution of a quadratic equation for a passive (energy-dissipating) resistor gives

---

[38]See, for example, S. L. Schwebel, "Advanced and Retarded Solutions in Field Theory," *International Journal of Theoretical Physics*, October 1970, pp. 347–353, and L. M. Stephenson, "Clarification of an Apparent Asymmetry in Electromagnetic Theory," *Foundations of Physics*, December 1978, pp. 921–926.

[39]L. Page, "Advanced Potentials and Their Application to Atomic Models," *Physical Review*, September 1924, pp. 296–305.

[40]For more on this, see O. Costa de Beauregard, "No Paradox in the Theory of Time Anisotropy," *Stadium Generale* 1971, pp. 10–18.

both a positive value (which 'makes sense') and a negative value (which doesn't 'make sense' and so is simply ignored). There *were*, however, those who encouraged caution on this issue. Seventy-five years ago, for example, the eminent MIT electrical engineer Julius Adams Stratton (1901–1994) echoed Leigh Page's warning when he wrote of the disturbing advanced solution, "The familiar chain of cause-and-effect is thus reversed and this alternative solution might be discarded as logically inconceivable. However, the application of 'logical' causality principles offers very insecure footing in matters such as these and we shall do better to restrict the [Maxwell] theory to retarded action solely on the grounds that this solution alone conforms to the *present* [my emphasis] data."[41]

And in a famous paper I'll discuss in the next section, Wheeler and Feynman declared that "We conclude advanced and retarded interactions give a description of nature logically as acceptable and physically as completely deterministic as the Newtonian scheme of mechanics. In both forms of dynamics the distinction between cause and effect is pointless. With deterministic equations to describe the event, one can say: the stone hits the ground because it was dropped from a height; equally well, the stone fell from a height because it was going to hit the ground."[42] For Wheeler and Feynman, the reversal of cause and effect inherent to backward causation and time travel to the past offered no conceptual difficulties.

The elimination of an appeal to causality, or to the 'weirdness' of advanced waves, in arguing for the naturalness of the retarded solution to Maxwell's equations was first done in 1976.[43] The only auxiliary condition applied to the equations was simply the natural one of requiring the initial field energy to be finite.[44] And yet, today, there is still no experimental evidence for the physical reality of the advanced solution. Now and then one does run across speculations that the advanced waves of *something* traveling backward to us from the future might explain the so-called ESP 'talent' of precognition, but that is all it is, speculation.[45]

Advanced waves appeared in the pulp science fiction of the late 1930s, a decade before Wheeler and Feynman. For example, one story actually specifically invoked the advanced solution to Maxwell's equations, with a gadget (making use of what the author called the "anticipated potentials") displaying the near future on a television-like screen.[46] The author's by-line proudly gave his academic credentials as including a master's degree and, in fact, John Pierce was a graduate student in electrical engineering at Caltech. He received his doctorate just months after this

---

[41]J. A. Stratton, *Electromagnetic Theory*, McGraw-Hill 1941, p. 428.

[42]J. A. Wheeler and R. P. Feynman, "Classical Electrodynamics in Terms of Direct Interparticle Action," *Reviews of Modern Physics*, July 1949, pp. 425–433.

[43]P. C. Aichelburg and R. Beig, "Radiation Damping As An Initial Value Problem," *Annals of Physics*, May 1976, pp. 264–283.

[44]J. L. Anderson, "Why We Use Retarded Potentials," *American Journal of Physics*, May 1992, pp. 465–467.

[45]See M. B. Hesse, *Forces and Fields*, Philosophical Library 1961.

[46]J. R. Pierce, "Pre-Vision," *Astounding Stories*, March 1936.

story was published, and then went on to a highly distinguished career at Bell Telephone Laboratories and then later at the Jet Propulsion Laboratory operated by Caltech for NASA. Pierce knew all about Maxwell's equations, of course, and he actually opened his tale with a quote from Page's 1924 article (note 39) on the advanced solution. How many fictional pieces include quotes from the *Physical Review*?

And it would probably take something like advanced waves to explain the funny doings 2 years late in a story of a man caught in a time machine accident. Nearly all of his body ends up 4 years in the future—but only *nearly* all, because his eyes remain the present! As one of the puzzled observers of this odd business wonders, "Strange, that his eyes, now, can convey a message to his brain, four years hence, and his brain tells the eye muscles to move the eyeballs which are four years behind them —."[47]

Some of the most intriguing paradoxes of time travel involve no traveler—only information. Of course, any information flow at all, independent of time travel, involves the flow of energy and, as Einstein showed, energy and mass are different aspects of the same thing. Accordingly, information time travel involves the transfer of mass/energy. Thus, a man in the twenty-fifth century who sends a backward-in-time 'temporal radio' message to a twentieth-century woman stating that he loves (will love?) her is sending much more than mere emotion. Just *how* to send a message backward in time is, of course, the puzzle.

Indeed, all forms of present-day communication are transmissions only to the future. If you speak to someone, or if you send a radio message, there are always delays depending on the distance of separation and the speed of transmission of sound and light, respectively. If you want to send a message to the one hundred and twenty-fifth century, you can; just write a letter and seal it in a pressurized bottle of helium. This basic idea is dramatically presented in a novel about a scientist who is accidently transported from 2162 back to the late-Cretaceous, 80 million years into the past. There he leaves a written record on seven sandstone slabs of his brutal, lonely life among the dinosaurs—letters across time, if you will—found by twenty-second century geologists some years after his disappearance.[48] The transmission of such letters, *forward* in time, while dramatic, is not a puzzle. But what could be more astonishing than the message received *from the future* by the young inventor of the first time machine: after his initial experiment of sending his pilotless machine into the future, it returns with an envelope inside. Eagerly tearing it open, he finds the note is from the National Academy of Sciences: "We know from old records and museum models that this is the Cullen Foster experimental machine. Fifty years looks down on you and says 'Good work'."[49]

Heady stuff, that, but lots of other possible messages are capable of competing with young Foster's when it comes to generating excitement. For example, suppose

---

[47]M. Schere, "Anachronistic Optics," *Astounding Stories*, February 1938.

[48]G. G. Simpson, *The Dechronization of Sam Magruder*, St. Martin's Press 1996.

[49]D. Stapleton, "How Much to Thursday?" *Thrilling Wonder Stories*, December 1942.

you had a gadget that is superficially similar to a telephone but that calls telephones in the *distant* future. You can hear the person (in the future) on the other end, but they can't hear you (in their past). That is, information can flow only from future to past. It is then easy to imagine situations in their use of this device that at least seem paradoxical. For example, suppose you call your own private number 1 month ahead. You hear your future-self first answer the phone, and then recite the winning lottery for the 'previous' day, which is a month in your present self's future. (Your future self does this somewhat odd recital because a month from now you will remember, when your private phone rings, just *who* is calling!) So, now in the present you know you'll make a fortune by winning the lottery a month later.

This example *is* admittedly somewhat mysterious since, for the gadget to call far ahead in time, some sort of signal (as yet unspecified) must travel into the distant future because *something will* make the future phone ring. For the present discussion I am ignoring this crucial issue for the sake of the dramatic impact of the example. Soon, however, we'll get a little way into describing how one might, in principle, actually build this gadget, which in the physics literature is called an *antitelephone*. (Such a device is an *anti*telephone because the person who is the receiver is in the sender's past, the opposite of the situation for an ordinary telephone.) An interesting fictional illustration of such a gadget, despite being told as a hard-boiled detective murder mystery, appeared in science fiction some years ago (alas, while called a "time telephone," no theory for its operation was given, but instead was 'explained' as a "straightforward application of an impressive, but limited, technology").[50] So far, there is nothing paradoxical (or even illegal) in all of this, but what if, when the phone rings in the future the day after you won the lottery, you perversely decide *not* to recite the winning number? This apparent paradox has, in fact, already been treated with the aid of the block universe view of spacetime; that is, if the future-you spoke the lottery number when you originally called, then the present—you (now in the future) *must*, inevitably recite it.[51]

Let's now make things a bit more involved. Suppose that instead of calling your future self, you call the weather service and listen to the recorded message telling you the weather, 30 days hence. You do this day after day, and after a while you get a reputation for being able to predict, *perfectly*, the weather for every day to come, up to a month into the future. Your reputation spreads far and wide, and after a while more the weather service hears about you. Meteorologists check and find you are *never* wrong. Their computer models are only 80 % accurate out to 3 days, and for a week's prediction and beyond, the general public might as well flip a coin on whether it will rain or not on any particular day. But you are 100 % correct out to ten times their range. And so they hire you—and as a secondary job, you also make the

---

[50]S. Schmidt, "Worthsayer," in *More Whatdunits* (M. Resnik, editor), DAW 1993. The author, Stanley Schmidt, has a Ph.D. in physics and is a former editor of *Analog Science Fiction* magazine.

[51]For a fictional illustration of this (a so-called *bilking paradox*), see W. Tevis, "The Other End of the Line," *Magazine of Fantasy and Science Fiction*, November 1961.

daily weather recordings. (The voice on the other end of the gadget *has* sounded sort of familiar!) Here, then, is the puzzle we encountered earlier in causal loops carrying information: from *where* is the information in the flawless weather predictions coming from?

One easy answer is that the question is meaningless because such a future-to-the-past information flow must be impossible. Indeed, if I am to avoid telling a 'philosopher's fairy tale,' like those I criticized earlier in the book, I must admit that one consistent, non-paradoxical answer is found in recognizing that I have *assumed* that those 30-day weather reports are correct. Maybe, however, they are no better than anybody else's predictions. And so you *don't* become famous, and you *don't* get hired—and so there *isn't* any paradox. Is that the way to avoid paradoxes involving information flowing backward in time?

Perhaps not. As long as 1917 it was realized that special relativity does not preclude such an apparent backward flow. That is, if information could be transmitted faster than light, *then* messages could travel backward in time. That was the year Richard Tolman (1881–1948), a professor of physical chemistry at the University of Illinois and later at Caltech, wrote "The question naturally arises whether velocities which are greater than that of light could ever possibly be obtained."[52] He then answered that question, with his general conclusion being that if such velocities are possible, then a faster-than-light (FTL) observer could see the time order of two causally related events reverse. And thus the observer would see an affect *before* its cause. Alternatively, a *sub*luminal (slower-than-light) observer could see the two events, which are connected via an FTL interaction, reversed in time order from what a stationary observer would see.

Either situation has come to be called Tolman's paradox, but Tolman himself was careful with his words: "Such a condition of affairs might not be a logical impossibility; nevertheless its extraordinary nature might incline us to believe that no causal impulse can travel with a velocity greater than that of light." That was an astonishing statement, given that Einstein himself had specifically stated in his original 1905 paper on special relativity that such a thing simply could not occur. There is nothing, it would seem, to be "inclined" about.[53]

This rather technical connection between FTL speeds and backward time travel made the transition from theoretical physics to popular culture very quickly. It was in the British humor weekly *Punch*, for example, that the famous (but nearly always misquoted) limerick by A. H. R. Buller (1874–1944) first appeared:

> *There was a young lady named Bright*
> *Whose speed was far faster than light;*
> *She set out one day*

---

[52]R. C. Tolman, *The Theory of the Relativity of Motion*, University of California Press 1917.

[53]Take a look back at Sect. 3.5, where we showed that the time order of two events can appear reversed for a subluminal observer if the two events are not causally related. Introducing FTL motion results in extending reversal to causally connected events; that is, FTL motion, reversed causation, and time travel to the past, go hand-in-hand-in-hand.

In a relative way
And returned on the previous night.[54]

Where *Punch* dared to go, Hollywood could not be far behind. Indeed, in this case it was actually there first, with the 1922 one-reel silent comedy movie *The Sky Splitter*. This was just a short film (feature pictures generally had at least four reels), so it is not clear how widely distributed and viewed it may have been. The story is that of a scientist testing a new spaceship: when it exceeds the speed of light, he begins to relive his life.

The linkage between time travel to the past and FTL motion is a central one in science fiction, and its fascination was nicely illustrated by one writer who has a time machine experimenter in the twenty-seventh century wonder "Was the speed of light the core of the mystery? At the speed of light did the past and the future become a shining, merging road down which men could walk—in their ears the thunder of time passing . . .?"[55] Not everybody was excited with the idea of FTL motion and travel backwards in time, however, with one eminent scientist declaring that "the limit to the velocity of signals is our bulwark against the topsy-turvydom of past and future."[56]

The obvious question at this point, of course, is whether it is even conceptually possible to build a gadget to send FTL messages backward in time? Einstein himself thought not, saying "We cannot send wire messages into the past."[57] But was he right? One hint at the possibility of achieving FTL speeds is in Dirac's 1938 paper (note 52 in Chap. 2). There, in his remarks about pre-acceleration, Dirac wrote "Suppose we have a pulse sent out from place A and a receiving apparatus for electromagnetic waves at a place B, and suppose there is an electron on the straight line joining A to B. Then the electron will be radiating appreciably [because accelerated charges radiate] before the pulse has reached its centre and this emitted radiation will be detectable at B at a time . . . earlier than when the pulse, which travels from A to B with the velocity of light, arrives. *In this way a signal can be sent from A to B faster than light* [my emphasis]."

This exciting conclusion goes a step beyond the usual examples of 'things that go faster than light.'[58] Dirac had an equally exciting reaction (and here the emphasis is his): "This is a fundamental departure from the ordinary ideas of relativity and is to be interpreted by saying that *it is possible for a signal to be transmitted faster than light through the interior of an electron. The finite size of the electron now reappears in a new sense, the interior of the electron being a region of*

---

[54]On page 591 of the issue of December 19, 1923.

[55]F. B. Long, "Throwback in Time," *Science Fiction Plus*, April 1953.

[56]A. S. Eddington, *The Nature of the Physical World*, Macmillan 1929.

[57]A. Einstein, "La Théorie de la Relativité," *Bulletin de la Société Francaise de Philosophie* 1922, pp. 91–113.

[58]Such as, for example, the intersection *point* of two very long, closing scissor blades. The explanation for how this can be is that the *point* is massless and does not participate in a causal chain (and so carries no information). Thus, special relativity is not violated.

failure, not of the field equations of electromagnetic theory, but of some elementary properties of space-time." This last line sounds very much like the things people say today about the singularity inside a black hole event horizon. And yet, Dirac was careful to point out that as weird as FTL speed may appear, special relativity is not violated because "in spite of this departure from ordinary relativistic ideas, our whole theory is Lorentz invariant." That is, even though 'faster-than-light' means 'backward in time,' which means 'causality failure,' special relativity still holds true and nothing awful happens to physics, only to our intuitions. The reason for this is that causality is *not* a premise or starting point for the special relativity.[59]

Of course, like any scientific theory, Dirac's theory is not necessarily the last word, and we have to admit the possibility that at least some of its implications (in particular, the possibility of FTL speeds) just aren't so. In all electronic communication systems that we use, information is transmitted by *modulating* a so-called *carrier wave*, and there is some reason to believe that such modulated waves cannot be sent at FTL speeds.[60] We must admit that it is one thing to talk of 'advanced wave radios'—often called *Dirac radios* in science fiction—and quite another to see how physics might actually enable one to talk to the past. FTL communication (without the time travel aspect) appeared in pulp science fiction before 1940, as in one story published the year after Dirac's paper.[61] In it we learn of a man on Pluto who has invented a way to send messages to Earth at twice the speed of light. He uses this gadget to warn of a would-be dictator who is on his way to Earth in a 'mere' light-speed rocket ship, and only an FTL message can warn Earth in time.

5.4 Wheeler and Feynman and Their Bilking Paradox

"We find it difficult if not impossible to imagine waves that go into the future and *return to the present* [my emphasis] bearing information about where (and when) they have been."[62]

---

[59]See, for example, G. Nerlich, "Special Relativity Is Not Based On Causality," *British Journal for the Philosophy of Science*, December 1982, pp. 361–388. This same point was made nearly two decades earlier, in a study of the possibility of superluminal sound in superdense matter, by D. A Kirzhnitz and V. L. Polyachenko, "On the Possibility of Macroscopic Manifestations of Violation of Microscopic Causality," *Soviet Physics JETP*, August 1964, pp. 514–519.

[60]See G. Diener, "Superluminal Group Velocities and Information Transfer," *Physics Letters A*, December 16, 1996, pp. 327–331. For more on the modulation of a light-speed carrier wave in everyday AM radio, and in a more sophisticated single-sideband transmitter, see my book *The Science of Radio*, Springer 1999.

[61]N. Bond, "Lightship, Ho!," *Astounding Science Fiction*, July 1939. The author provides an interesting, detailed description of the gadget, and I think it would make a good question on a Ph. D. qualifying exam in physics or electrical engineering to explain the flaw in it.

[62]Bob Brier, *Precognition and the Philosophy of Science: An Essay on Backward Causation*, Humanities Press 1974. Brier is an Egyptologist (!) at Long Island University—with a Ph.D. in philosophy—who specialized at one time in parapsychology.

In 1941, at a meeting of the American Physical Society, Princeton University physicist John Wheeler and his student Richard Feynman discussed a seemingly outrageous idea that provided a possible clue to how a Dirac radio might function. The idea was that the advanced wave solutions to Maxwell's equations are not mere mathematical curiosities, but rather have profound physical significance. At the time, their talk received only a small abstract notice in the *Physical Review*, but after World War II they wrote it all up in a beautiful paper.[63]

Their primary goal was to explain the origin of the force of radiative reaction discussed by Lorentz earlier in the century. This reaction force is the cause of the energy loss suffered by an accelerated, charged particle. Lorentz, who thought of charged particles as having a finite size, attributed this reaction force to the retarded (by the time required for light to cross the width of the charged particle) coulomb repulsion force between one side of the particle's charge to the charge on the opposite side. This view, however, leads to various conceptual and mathematical problems, including an arbitrary assumption on how the charge is distributed over/through the finite volume of the particle, as well as the problems of infinite self-interactions and the issue of what keeps the charge from blowing itself apart by internal coulomb repulsion.

Wheeler and Feynman's theory, on the other hand, avoided those problems by postulating point charges, because a *point* charge cannot repel itself. But then whence the reaction force, if there is no repulsion? Their revolutionary explanation was first to imagine the accelerated point charge as emitting retarded radiation outward in space, eventually to be absorbed by distant matter. This distant matter, which itself consists of point charges that are accelerated by the retarded radiation, then radiates *backward* in time, back toward the original charge that started the chain of events. This backward-in-time, or *advanced*, radiation arrives in the past of the original charge, and *it* is the cause of the observed reaction force. Indeed, Wheeler and Feynman proposed that an accelerated charge will not radiate unless there is to be absorption at some other distant place and future time. That is, the *future* behavior of a distant absorber determines the *past* event of radiation; there is simply no such thing as just radiating into empty space. The entire universe, spatially *and* temporally, is a very 'connected' place!

Astonishingly, this non-causal view of spacetime had been around in physics for at least 20 years before Wheeler and Feynman's talk. They had independently developed their ideas but, after their 1941 talk, Einstein (who perhaps recalled his 1909 debate about advanced effects with Ritz) brought a 1922 paper by the Dutch physicist Hugo Tetrode (1895–1931) to their attention. In his paper Tetrode had written that "the Sun would not radiate if it were alone in space and no other bodies could absorb its radiation ... If for example I observe through my telescope yesterday evening that star which let us say is 100 light years away, then not only did I know that the light which it allowed to reach my eye was emitted 100 years

---

[63]J. A. Wheeler and R. P. Feynman, "Interaction with the Absorber as the Mechanism of Radiation," *Reviews of Modern Physics*, April–July 1945, pp. 157–181.

ago, but also the star or individual atoms of it knew already 100 years ago that I, who then did not even exist, would view it yesterday evening at such and such a time."

Tetrode's vivid imagery had been, curiously, itself captured even decades earlier in words from the nineteenth century English poet Francis Thompson (1859–1907), in his "The Mistress of Vision":

> *All things ... near and far,*
> *Hiddenly to each other linked are,*
> *That thou canst not stir a flower*
> *Without troubling of a star.*

None of this, of course, is obvious! As a tutorial paper appearing just 2 years after Wheeler and Feynman's 1945 paper expressed it, "Any physical theory which seriously proposes that events in the future may be the efficient cause of events in the past may be regarded—at least at first glance—as rather revolutionary doctrine."[64] Indeed!

It is interesting to note that Einstein apparently said nothing to Wheeler and Feynman about a paper that pre-dated Tetrode's by 3 years. In 1919 the Finnish physicist Gunnar Nordström (1881–1923) had suggested that the advanced solution might offer an explanation for a perplexing problem in atomic theory. Maxwell's theory says that an accelerated electric charge radiates energy, which implies that the orbital electrons in the classical model of the atom should quickly spiral in toward the nucleus, that is, all matter should collapse. This cataclysmic event (of course!) has not happened, and Nordström's idea was that if one took into account not only the usual retarded solution but the advanced one as well, then perhaps things could be understood. Indeed, Nordström was able to show that such an analysis does give zero for the *average* energy radiated by an orbiting electron. Later, however, Page (note 39) showed that the instantaneous radiated energy is not zero, and that this would lead to observable effects that in fact are *not* observed.

Now, to be sure that the 'doctrine' discussed in note 64 is clear, let me restate what Tetrode, and later Wheeler and Feynman, had in mind. Imagine we have an electric charge (the *source*) that we mechanically shake, that is, accelerate. This allows us to assign a definite *cause* to the charge's acceleration which, of course, radiates energy. This radiation travels outward into space as observed retarded fields until they are eventually absorbed by distant matter. The charges in that distant matter are thus accelerated, and they in turn therefore radiate energy. This induced radiation again consists, according to Wheeler and Feynman, of both retarded and advanced fields. The advanced fields radiate outward but *backward* in time toward the original charge, collapsing upon it at the precise instant we first shook it, thereby producing the radiative reaction force. At any instant of time, at any point in space, the observed field is the sum of the retarded field traveling away

---

[64]C. W. Berenda, "The Determination of Past by Future Events: A Discussion of the Wheeler-Feynman Absorption-Radiation Theory," *Philosophy of Science*, 1947, pp. 13–19.

from the source into the future and the advanced field traveling toward the source in the past.

But, argued Wheeler and Feynman, there is one last point that has been left out of this picture—there is also an advanced field (traveling away from the source and backward in time) because of the original, mechanical shaking of the source charge. Equivalently, a field traveling *forward* in time will *converge* onto the source because we *will* shake it. Wheeler and Feynman showed that before the mechanical shaking that starts this whole process, the advanced radiation field of the source and the advanced radiation fields of the absorbers exactly cancel each other at every point in space and every instant of time (if there is total absorption in the future), which accounts for the experimental fact that we observe a zero total field before the mechanical shaking occurs.

Wheeler and Feynman showed that if we accept these (strange) ideas, then everything we actually observe is predictable: radiative reaction, the direction of the electromagnetic arrow of time from past to future (retarded-only effects), and the absence of infinite self-interactions. The claim by Wheeler and Feynman to have avoided self-interaction problems via the use of the advanced solution was, however, soon challenged. Indeed, the self-interaction of the electron is *needed* to explain the 1947 experiment by Willis Lamb (1913–2008) that measured the deviation (the *Lamb shift*) of the spectrum of hydrogen from what Dirac's theory of the electron predicts. Ironically, it was that experiment that helped motivate the renormalization of quantum electrodynamics (to get rid of the infinities then plaguing it) which led to Feynman's share of the 1965 Nobel Prize. In fact, just 4 years after their 1945 paper, Feynman expressed a revised view that self-interactions could not be avoided.[65]

In any case, we gain the rewards originally claimed by Wheeler and Feynman *only if* we accept backward time travel, a step too big for many in 1945 (and for nearly as many today) because of the resulting time travel paradoxes that seem to be unavoidable. For the same reason, Tetrode's earlier work, published in a German journal, also went virtually unnoticed during the two decades before Wheeler and Feynman's work. In fact, Tetrode wasn't the only anticipator of Wheeler and Feynman, as they had been anticipated, too, in America. In 1926 the chemist G. N. Lewis (1875–1946) had written "I'm going to make the . . . assumption that an atom never emits light except to another atom, and to claim that it is absurd to think of light emitted by one atom regardless of the existence of a receiving atom as it would be to think of an atom absorbing light without the existence of light to be absorbed."[66] Wheeler and Feynman were aware of Lewis by 1945. Certainly Wheeler and Feynman must have been intrigued by Lewis' paradox: "I shall not

---

[65]R. P. Feynman, "Space-Time Approach to Quantum Electrodynamics," *Physical Review*, September 15, 1949, pp. 769–789. See also C. Teitelboim, "Splitting the Maxwell Tensor: Radiation Reaction Without Advanced Fields," *Physical Review D*, March 15, 1970, pp. 1572–1582.

[66]G. N. Lewis, "The Nature of Light," *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences*, January 15, 1926, pp. 22–29.

attempt to conceal the conflict between these views and common sense. The light coming from a distant star is absorbed, let us say, by a molecule of chlorophyll which has recently been produced in a living plant. We say that the light from the star was on its way toward us a thousand years ago. What rapport can there be between the emitting source and this newly made molecule of chlorophyll?"

The paradox in that, of course, arises from the issue of what happens if, at some intermediate time and place, the star's light is blocked, thus preventing its absorption by the chlorophyll? Could refusing to look at a star *now* affect the emission of the star's light in the *past*? Lewis was obviously making a clear statement of backward causation when posing this bilking paradox. His very next words show that he understood the probable reaction of his readers: "Such an idea is repugnant to all our notions of causality and temporal sequence." Like Tetrode's work, Lewis' ideas were ahead of the times but, actually, their ideas were *not* repugnant to everyone.
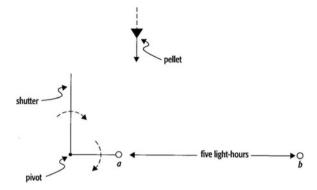
In fact, similar puzzles were an inspiration to Wheeler and Feynman and almost certainly motivated them to create their own famous bilking paradox, which they presented in their 1949 paper (note 42). They opened the presentation of their paradox as follows: "If the present motion of *a* is affected by the future motion of *b*, then the observation of *a* attributes a certain inevitability to the motion of *b*. Is not this conclusion in direct conflict with our recognized ability to influence the future motion of *b*?" This question clearly states the conflict between free will and determinism, and to sidestep this *human* concern Wheeler and Feynman constructed a "paradox machine," a machine that operates totally automatically and which has come to be called the "logically pernicious self-inhibitor"![67]

In their description of the paradox machine, Wheeler and Feynman ask us to imagine two charged particles, *a* and *b*, positioned five light-hours apart. As shown in Fig. 5.3, *a* is attached to the arm of a pivoted shutter, toward which a pellet is moving from initially a great distance away. Now, normally we would think of what happens next in terms of just retarded fields. That is, the pellet hits the arm, knocking it downward and thereby accelerating charge *a*; this acceleration of charge *a* creates a retarded radiation field that arrives at charge *b* 5 h later, resulting in the acceleration of charge *b*; the acceleration of charge *b* creates a retarded radiation field that arrives back at charge *a* 5 h later (10 h after the pellet hit the arm).

The Wheeler and Feynman view, however, claims that this description leaves out half the story—the *advanced* fields. Specifically, suppose the pellet will hit the arm and so accelerate *a* at 6 p.m. Then, *b* will be affected not only 5 h later at 11 p. m., but also *earlier* at 1 p.m. This advance acceleration of *b*, in turn, sends out an advanced field that arrives at *a* at 8 a.m. The paradox is now easy to see. As Wheeler

---

[67]P. Fitzgerald, "Tachyons, Backwards Causation, and Freedom," *Boston Studies in the Philosophy of Science* (volume 8), 1970, pp. 415–436. Even more extreme examples of such paradox machines are described in Tim Maudlin, "Time Travel and Topology," *PSA 1990*, Philosophy of Science Association, volume 1, pp. 303–315.

Fig. 5.3 Wheeler and
Feynman's paradox
machine

and Feynman described events, we see *a* exhibit a premonitory movement at
8 a.m. Seeing this motion in the morning, we conclude that the pellet will hit the
arm in the evening. We could then return to the scene a few seconds before
6 p.m. and block the pellet from acting on *a*, a task automatically accomplished
by the shutter in Wheeler and Feynman's paradox machine. But then we are faced
with the puzzle of explaining just *why a* moved in the morning!

Wheeler and Feynman claimed they had resolved their bilking paradox by
observing that *discontinuous* forces (more generally, *signals*) are never seen in
nature. They concluded that the shutter does not completely block the pellet, but
rather the shutter suffers a "glancing blow." That is, a very weak advanced signal is
received by charge *a*, which moves the shutter just enough to induce the "glancing
blow," and it is this partial interaction that results in the weakened signal in the
"first place." This is, in fact, the very same explanation that was rediscovered
decades later in answer to similar bilking paradoxes that involve self-interacting
billiard balls transiting wormhole time machines (a topic we'll take-up in the next
chapter).

5.5   Absorber Theory and Signaling the Past

"If advanced waves [could be used to signal the past] then our grip on reality would become
more tenuous. The past could never be considered over and done with, because anyone with
the proper hardware could send messages back in time and alter what had already
happened."
    —John Cramer, a University of Washington physicist, taking the minority position on
the possibility of changing the past[68]

---

[68]Cramer has written provocatively on advanced waves. See, for example, "The Arrow of
Electromagnetic Time and the Generalized Absorber Theory," *Foundations of Physics*, September
1983, pp. 887–902, and "Generalized Absorber Theory and the Einstein-Podolsky-Rosen Para-
dox," *Physical Review D*, July 15, 1980, pp. 362–376.

Wheeler and Feynman's argument *is* logically and physically sensible; it is, after all, simply an early statement of the principle of self-consistency in physics. Wheeler summed matters up nicely, years later, when he wrote "Interconnections run forward and backward in time in such numbers as to make an unbelievable maze. That weaving together of past and future seems to contradict every normal idea of causality. However, when the number of particles is great enough to absorb completely the signal starting out from any source, then this myriad of couplings adds up to a simple result: the familiar retarded actions of everyday experience, plus the familiar force of radiative reaction with its familiar sign."[69]

Their analysis was based on classical physics but, many years later, Feynman wrote (in his famous autobiographical work *Surely You're Joking, Mr. Feynman*) that at one time he and Wheeler thought it would not be too difficult to work out the quantum version of their theory. But then first Wheeler failed in the task, and then Feynman tried his hand at it and, as he stated, "I never solved it, either—a quantum theory of half-advanced, half-retarded potentials—and I worked on it for years." Their paradox (if indeed it *is* a paradox, since if advanced fields don't actually exist then there is no problem) remains unsolved.

Is Wheeler and Feynman's view of nature correct? Could we use advanced waves to send signals to the past? Or, if that requires some yet-to-be-developed technological breakthroughs in transmitter design, and if receivers are easier to construct, could we at least listen-in to the future (since we are, *now*, the future's past)? And if we could do that, could the future send us the details of the transmitter breakthrough (thus creating a causal information loop in time)?

The first experimental search for advanced waves seems to have been a 1973 effort.[70] The very next year, flaws in that search process prompted two physicists to discuss an experiment designed to detect advanced waves (if they exist). As they wrote, in a grand understatement, the exciting possibility of a positive result "would have such far-reaching consequences on our ideas of the unidirectionality of time and causality that . . . the experiment justifies a large amount of effort, even if no conclusive result is obtained for years."[71] Alas, all of the searches for advanced waves have, as I write (2016), given negative results and so the world still awaits the first Dirac radio.

Over the years the Wheeler and Feynman view of nature has been the target of some theoretical concerns. One physicist, for example, complained that Wheeler and Feynman had assumed a static, time-symmetric spacetime for the universe, in which the properties of all past and future absorbers are identical. That is obviously

---

[69]See note 34 in Chap. 3. There Wheeler also wrote "The particles of the absorber are either at rest or in random motion before the acceleration of the source. They are correlated with it in velocity after that acceleration. Thus radiation and radiative reaction are understood in terms, not of pure electrodynamics, but of statistical mechanics."

[70]R. B. Partridge, "Absorber Theory of Radiation and the Future of the Universe," *Nature*, August 3, 1973, pp. 263–265.

[71]M. L. Herron and D. T. Pegg, "A Proposed Experiment in Absorber Theory," *Journal of Physics A*, October 1974, pp. 1965–1969.

not so in an expanding (or contracting) universe and, as he wrote, "No serious modern cosmological theory is framed in [terms of] a static Universe."[72] Another puzzle for that writer was that Wheeler and Feynman took a time-symmetric theory of half-retarded/half-advanced waves in a time-symmetric universe and arrived at a *non*-time-symmetric solution! They performed that trick by supposing not only that the universe is static, but also that it was created with the initial condition of low entropy. Thus, for Wheeler and Feynman, the one-way thermodynamic arrow of time is the primary arrow, with the electromagnetic arrow following as a consequence. (The *how* of a low entropy initial cosmological condition was left unexplained—certainly no mention of the hand of God appears in their work!) This ordering of the primacy of the temporal arrows was, in fact, in agreement with the view adopted by Einstein in his 1909 debate with Ritz, a view taken decades later by Hawking, as well.[73]

Wheeler and Feynman had shown that both the advanced and retarded solutions taken together are self-consistent in a static universe; Hogarth's question was whether the observed retarded solution, *alone*, would be self-consistent in an *expanding* universe (which is the universe we actually observe). His conclusion? It depends on the details of the expansion. Two years after Hogarth, two physicists expanded on his work and claimed to have shown that the retarded solution alone *is* self-consistent *if* the expansion is steady-state via the continuous creation of matter.[74] That would be the case because, if only retarded effects are to occur, then each emitter of radiation needs a large number of absorbers (such as ionized intergalactic gas) in its future light cone to provide for complete absorption. This, in turn, requires that the density of matter not decline "too fast" with the expansion. That is, the future universe must not be "too transparent" and the continual appearance of new matter in the ever-increasing volume of the expanding universe is required to maintain the necessary density.

That conclusion was embraced with particular enthusiasm by Hoyle, a British cosmologist whose name has long been identified with the idea of continuous creation of matter. Since then, however, continuous-creation cosmologies have fallen into disfavor because it was in 1965, just a year after Hoyle and Narlikar wrote, that the cosmic microwave background radiation was detected. That is now taken as very strong evidence for the occurrence of a primordial explosion (or Big Bang) that started the expansion of the universe, and as equally strong support for therefore rejecting a steady-state universe. Not by Fred Hoyle (1915–2001), though,

---

[72]J. E. Hogarth, "Cosmological Considerations of the Absorber Theory of Radiation," *Proceedings of the Royal Society A*, May 22, 1962, pp. 365–383. Hogarth, however, rejected the static universe, asserting instead that the *observed expansion* of the universe provides the required asymmetry, resulting in the cosmological arrow of time as the primary arrow and the electromagnetic arrow as a consequence.

[73]S. W. Hawking, "Arrow of Time in Cosmology," *Physical Review D*, November 15, 1982, pp. 2489–2495.

[74]F. Hoyle and J. V. Narlikar, "Time Symmetric Electrodynamics and the Arrow of Time in Cosmology," *Proceedings of the Royal Society A*, January 1964, pp. 1–23.

who had an almost fanatical devotion to non-Big Bang cosmologies.[75] Real puzzles remain for the Big Bang universe, however. One is that it expands from a dense, opaque past into a less dense, ever-more-transparent future, with each emitter having a large number of absorbers in its *past* light cone. That should result, noted Hoyle and Narlikar (almost certainly with some glee), in an observed advanced solution and thus in a reversed electromagnetic arrow that would allow communication with the past. The fact that we have not (yet?) discovered how to perform such communication might be taken to mean that the idea of an expanding, Big Bang universe is somehow faulty. A related question about absorber theory is that of the puzzle of neutrino absorption. Neutrinos are particles that interact so weakly with matter that a beam of them would have to travel through many hundreds of light-years of lead for there to be a significant attenuation of the beam. How can such 'ghost-like' particles find enough future absorbers to make possible their observed journeys into the future of a Big Bang expanding universe?

For such an exciting idea as communication with the past, it is not surprising that advanced-wave radio has appeared in science fiction. Just 6 years after Wheeler and Feynman's paper, a story by a well-known author hinted at such a gadget based on something called the "ultrawave effect": "While gravitational effects were produced by the presence of matter, ultrawave effects ... did not appear unless there was a properly tuned receiver somewhere. They seemed somehow 'aware' of a listener even before they came into existence."[76] It is difficult to believe that such a story idea was conjured-up out of nothing, but rather that the author had read Wheeler and Feynman's paper. Anderson had a 1948 undergraduate honors degree in physics from the University of Minnesota, and so he may *well have* read Wheeler and Feynman's 1945 paper.

The potential bilking paradoxes produced by sending messages backward in time have been treated in at least one novel-length discussion. The puzzles presented are undeniably fascinating, but the story's answer to them is to allow the changing of the past, as argued in this section's opening quote from John Cramer. Indeed, the title comes from the plot device of twice changing the past by sending messages to the past to save the world from terrible disasters. Thus, we read through entire time periods *three* times before finishing the novel. As one character blurts out, "We can monitor the actual consequences of our decisions and actions, and change them until they produce the desired result! My God ... it's staggering!"[77] Quite so.

One of the most interesting science fictional uses of backward-in-time signaling is, I think, found in a classic tale by James Blish. There the "Dirac radio" for instantaneous transmissions is described, and we learn that at the beginning of each received message there is always an irritating audio beep (hence the title) that is

---

[75]Besides his scientific work, Hoyle also wrote science fiction. One work, the 1966 novel *October the First is Too Late*, deals with travels in time but fails to say anything about paradoxes.

[76]Poul Anderson, "Earthman, Beware!," *Super Science Stories*, June 1951.

[77]J. P. Hogan, *Thrice Upon a Time*, Ballantine 1980.

seemingly a useless artifact of the mysterious workings of the gadget. Its only obvious characteristic is a continuous spectrum from 30 to well above 18,000 Hz. It is only at the end of the story that the main character learns that this spectrum is the "simultaneous reception of every one of the Dirac messages which [has] ever been sent, or will be sent."[78]

Blish was actually pretty close to the mark with that, as a composite signal with a continuous spectrum (with energy distributed uniformly in frequency), such as one might expect the overlay of many independent signals to be, does indeed have a narrow time structure. If applied to a loudspeaker, such a signal would sound like a sharp pulse or click—or even a *beep*. In the limit of an infinitely wide spectrum, the time signal becomes one of infinite amplitude and zero duration, a singular *impulse* function called, by theoretical physicists and radio engineers alike, the *Dirac delta function*.

There is no mention in the story of advanced waves, but clearly Blish knew that instantaneous (infinite-speed) signals would travel into the past and he does a masterful job of presenting the mystery of listening to the future. At one point characters in the twenty-first century hear the commander of a time-traveling "world-line cruiser" transmit a poignant call for help from 11,000,000 light years away and from sixty-five centuries in the future. Most interesting of all, however, is Blish's statement of a technical issue that I have not seen raised before: if signals arrive at a receiver, simultaneously, from all future times, how can they be separated? Blish resorts to some scientifiction babble-talk to answer that question, but I believe it remains a puzzle.[79]

5.6 Tachyonic Signals and the Bell Quantum Antitelephone

"We cannot fight the laws of nature."

"Nature be damned! Feed more fuel into the tubes. We must break through the speed of light ... Give me a clear road and plenty of fuel and I'll build you up a speed of half a million miles in a second ... What's there to stop it?"[80]

Science fiction writers have often used FTL motion to reverse time, often without much (if any) regard to the fact that, to just *reach* the light barrier, requires (according to special relativity) infinite energy, much less to exceed light speed.

---

[78]J. Blish, "Beep," *Galaxy Science Fiction*, February 1954.

[79]The signal separation problem is also hinted at by physicist/science fiction author Gregory Benford, in a tale that was a precursor to his famous 1980 novel *Timescape* (in which the present attempts to warn the past of a future ecological disaster that threatens life on Earth). See Benford's "Cambridge, 1:58 A.M.," *Epoch*, Berkeley 1975.

[80]Words exchanged by the first officer and the captain of a starship on its way to Alpha Centauri in a story by N. Schachner, "Reverse Universe," *Astounding Stories*, June 1936. The captain, we are told, "had heard, of course, of the limiting velocity of light, but it meant nothing to him."

Therefore, goes the reasoning, because we can't get through the 'light barrier' means that time travel to the past must be impossible, as well. Or, so goes this line of argument. But, could there be a way around this conclusion? After all, while relativity theory indeed precludes the acceleration of a *massive* particle *up to* the speed of light, it does allow a zero rest mass particle (like the photon) to exist *at* the speed of light. Photons are emitted during various physical processes, and they move from the instant of their creation at the speed of light; the only way to slow a photon is to destroy it by absorbing it. Advocates of the possibility of the existence of FTL particles make a similar argument when asking if there might not be particles, emitted during various (as yet unknown) physical processes, that move from the instant of their creation at speed *greater* than that of light?

An affirmative answer would neatly avoid the 'acceleration through the light barrier' problem, but then there are other concerns. For example, such FTL particles would have to have an imaginary rest mass if they were to carry real-valued energy and momentum, and what could *imaginary mass* mean? That question was answered by the proponents of FTL particles, who replied that the rest mass of a superluminal particle would be unobservable because (like the photon) there is no subluminal frame of reference in which the particle could be at rest! That is, there is no frame of reference in which the mysterious imaginary mass could be measured and, anyway, it is only *observable* changes in the real energy and momentum that characterize particle interactions.

The key idea to this line of thought is a *supposed* FTL particle, called a *tachyon*, a name coined by the American physicist Gerald Feinberg (1933–1992) from the Greek word *tachys* for "swift."[81] It is interesting to note that Feinberg admitted[82] that his interest in such a thing was sparked by reading Blish's story "Beep" (see note 78). The idea of the tachyon is actually a very old one that is hinted at in the work of the Greek poet and philosopher Lucretius (who died 20 years before the birth of Christ). In his discussion of visual images, in Book 4 of his giant (well over 7400 lines) science poem *De Rerum Natura*, we find the following words about particles of matter originating deep inside the Sun: "Do you see how much faster and farther they must travel, how they must run through an extent of space many times vaster in the time it takes the light of the Sun to spread throughout the sky?"[83]

The first attempt (later found to be flawed) in the physics literature of a relativistic treatment of FTL particles appeared some years before Feinberg gave

---

[81]G. Feinberg, "Possibility of Faster-Than-Light Particles," *Physical Review*, July 25, 1967, pp. 1089–1105. Feinberg was anticipated in this name by Edward Page Mitchell (the Victorian pioneer in the time travel paradox genre who was discussed back in Sect. 4.2 and its note 37). In his story "The Tachypomp: A Mathematical Demonstration" (*Scribner's Monthly*, March 1874), he describes a gadget for reaching any speed, no matter how great (*tachypomp* is literally "quick sender").

[82]G. Benford, "Time and *Timescape*," *Science-Fiction Studies*, July 1993, pp. 184–190.

[83]A poetic allusion to something traveling faster than light appears, in of all places, Shakespeare's *Romeo and Juliet*. In Juliet's words (Act II, scene 5), ". . . love's heralds should be thoughts, Which ten times faster glide than the sun's beams, Driving back shadows . . ."

S_1 $E>0$ S_2

→ →

x_1,t_1 $t_1<t_2$ x_2,t_2
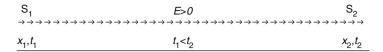
Fig. 5.4 The emission of a positive energy particle, followed by absorption

them a name, where it was observed that special relativity is *not* necessarily violated by FTL motion.[84] But nonetheless, concerns about the physical possibility of FTL particles continued. For example, a serious problem for tachyons, at least for those who dislike the ideas of backward causation and time travel, is the observation that in some frames of reference an FTL particle would appear to have *negative energy*. Feinberg, himself, explained (see note 81) this concern as follows: "By the principle of relativity, any state which is possible for one observer must be possible for all observers, and hence FTL particles can exist in negative-energy states for all observers . . . The occurrence of negative energy states for particles has always been objected to on the grounds that no other system could be stable against the emission of these negative-energy particles, an entirely unphysical behavior."

This objection to FTL particles was raised early in the history of tachyons, even before they were named, and it was addressed by three physicists who proposed the so-called *reinterpretation principle* (what I'll refer here to as the RP).[85] To see how the RP works, consider Fig. 5.4, in which a source S_1 at x_1 emits an FTL particle at time t_1. This particle then travels to an absorber S_2 at x_2, arriving there at the later time t_2. S_1 and S_2 are in the same reference frame and, for an observer in the frame, the particle energy E is positive. However, it is always possible to find another observer in a relatively moving frame for whom this process would look as though t_2 is less than (that is, earlier than) t_1 with $E < 0$. In other words, for the moving observer the particle would appear as a negative energy particle moving backward in time. (In the next chapter I'll show you that the particle speed must not be just superluminal, but the even faster *ultraluminal*.)

Note that for the moving observer, the emission by S_1 of negative energy *increases* the energy of S_1, and the absorption of negative energy by S_2 decreases the energy of S_2. S_2's energy decrease (for the moving observer) occurs before the increase in S_1's energy because, as noted before, for the moving observer $t_2 < t_1$. The moving observer naturally interprets this process as the emission of positive energy by S_2, followed by absorption by S_1. This reinterpretation would thus seem to preserve our common-sense idea of causality, as well as avoiding any mention of backward time travel. The RP appears to have slipped around those problems merely by redefining which source is transmitting, and which is receiving, the

[84]S. Tanaka, "Theory of Matter with Super Light Velocity," *Progress of Theoretical Physics*, July 1960, pp. 171–200. See also O. M. Bilaniuk and E. C. G. Sudarshan, "Particles Beyond the Light Barrier," *Physics Today*, May 1969, pp. 43–51 (and the resulting discussion in the December issue, pp. 47–52).

[85]O. M. P. Bilaniuk, V. K. Deshpande, and E. C. G. Sudarshan, "'Meta' Relativity," *American Journal of Physics*, October 1962, pp. 718–723.

tachyon. Indeed, Feinberg claimed (note 81) that the RP avoids the creation of causal loops and their associated paradoxes, a claim repeated nearly 20 years later by a physicist who used the RP to eliminate paradoxes from Gödel's time travel rotating universe.[86]

There is, however, a curious twist to all this. Even if we grant that the RP may avoid causal paradoxes, the fact is that physics isn't fooled as easily as a human observer. That is, the receiver does actually lose energy upon the arrival of the tachyon, which is the opposite of what happens in a radio receiver when it receives a photon. In other words, the receiver must be in an elevated energy state prior to the tachyon's arrival; the receiver must be prepared beforehand to receive a message. If the receiver were instead sitting in its lowest energy state, then it could not accept (or *eject*, according to the RP) the tachyon. So, it's not surprising that, despite the enthusiastic embrace of the RP by some, other physicists took exception, with one arguing that the effectiveness of the RP in avoiding causal loops is "illusory" and "irrelevant,"[87] while others concluded that the causal paradoxes would actually preclude any possibility of tachyons interacting with ordinary matter in the first place (which is just a polite way of saying that tachyons have no more reality than do unicorns!).[88]

The RP's effect of flipping the roles of transmitter and receiver has attracted particular concern. Some analysts have pointed out that if one can modulate a superluminal signal to send a message into the past, then certainly one could *sign* the message. To quote a delightful example, "If Shakespeare types out *Hamlet* on his tachyon transmitter, Bacon receives the transmission at some earlier time. But no amount of reinterpretation will make Bacon the author of *Hamlet*. It is Shakespeare, not Bacon, who exercises control over the content of the message."[89] The last line of this quote is of central importance. The authors emphasize it by immediately observing that a signature is a *relativistic invariant* and that, indeed, it establishes a causal ordering quite independent of any temporal ordering. This example, alone, explains why one analyst said of the RP that it is "laughed to scorn,"[90] while another said of the RP that it "sounds merely like the endorsement of what can only be characterized as a fantastic delusion."[91]

---

[86]A. Italiano, "How to Recover Causality in General Relativity," *Hadronic Journal*, January 1986, pp. 9–12.

[87]R. G. Newton, "Particles That Travel Faster Than Light," *Science*, March 20, 1970, pp. 1569–1574.

[88]W. B. Rolnick, "Implications of Causality for Faster-Than-Light Matter," *Physical Review*, July 25, 1969, pp. 1105–1108, and D. J. Thouless, "Causality and Tachyons," *Nature*, November 1, 1969, p. 506.

[89]G. A. Benford, D. L. Book, and W. A. Newcomb, "The Tachyonic Antitelephone," *Physical Review D*, July 15, 1970, pp. 263–265.

[90]P. Fitzgerald, "On Retrocausality," *Philosophia*, October 1974, pp. 513–551.

[91]W. L. Craig, "Tachyons, Time Travel, and Divine Omniscience, *Journal of Philosophy*, March 1988, pp. 135–150.

Even more sophisticated scenarios than the *Hamlet* one (note 89) were devised to show how problems with FTL signals could arise that the RP could *not* resolve. The American physicist Bryce DeWitt (1923–2004) created such an example (the 'DeWitt Gambit') that involved a sequential, circular chain of tachyon signal transmissions between four observers, all moving in one spatial dimension. DeWitt showed out to arrange the spacetime geometry of the observers so that, at each stage, there is no dispute over who is sending and who is receiving, and so invoking the RP is avoided. Yet, when the signal reaches the first (last) observer, it is *before* he started (will start) the chain! This, of course, sets-up a potential bilking paradox: what if 'now' the first (last) observer decides to *not* send the chain's initiating signal? An even more sophisticated variation on the Gambit, involving four observers moving in *two* spatial dimensions, was soon after put forth by the English physicist Felix Pirani (1928–2015). As he concluded, "It is difficult to see how in the face of this example a classical-particle description of tachyons can be sustained."[92] Confronted by such sharp criticism, from so many, it is understandable why, just before his death, Feinberg co-authored (with two philosophers) a paper in which he seemed to be abandoning his support for tachyons as possible carriers of information backward in time.[93]

Many physicists today reject the possibility of backward-in-time messages, not because of concerns about the RP, but because such messages could create potential bilking paradoxes. To see how this works, the old Wheeler and Feynman idea of explaining (away) bilking paradoxes—that no signal in nature is *really* discontinuous—was examined by one physicist in the context of tachyons.[94] There we are asked to consider the following situation: A human (call him A) has a lamp on a table before him. The lamp is controlled by a tachyon receiver; in other words, the lamp illuminated only when a tachyon signal (a pulse, let us say) is detected. At 3 o'clock A will send a tachyon signal to B (a tachyon echo-transmitter that immediately rebroadcasts everything it receives) if the lamp does not glow at 1 o'clock. Now, the spacetime geometry of A and B is arranged to be such that a signal sent by either A or B to the other travels 1 h backward in time. Thus, if A sends a signal at 3 o'clock, then B will receive it at 2 o'clock (and immediately echo), and the echo will arrive at A at 1 o'clock. The paradox, of course, is that A sends a signal only if the lamp does *not* glow—that is, only if A does *not* send the signal![95]

We are then reminded of the Wheeler and Feynman claim that every pulsed signal is actually continuous; this argument would include the illumination itself of

[92]F. A. E. Pirani, "Noncausal Behavior of Classical Tachyons," *Physical Review D*, June 15, 1970, pp. 3224–3225.

[93]G. Feinberg, D. Albert, and S. Levine, "Knowledge of the Past and Future," *Journal of Philosophy*, December 1992, pp. 607–642.

[94]L. S. Schulman, "Tachyon Paradoxes," *American Journal of Physics*, May 1971, pp. 481–484.

[95]A study of similar situations can be found in L. L. Gatlin, "Time-Reversed Information Transmission," *International Journal of Theoretical Physics*, January 1980, pp. 25–29.

the lamp. Therefore, the lamp is not just on or off, but potentially at any level of illumination between those two extremes. So there sits A, and at 1 o'clock the lamp seems to glow dimly. To that, says Schulman, "A thinks it over, vacillating, finally sending a slightly late signal which isn't full strength." Then the echo isn't full strength either, which accounts for the original dim glow. This conclusion *is* consistent (but what if A's sending device is a toggle switch that *snaps* one way or the other—why then only a partial strength signal?), but it does seem to ask for a lot of supposing. Schulman himself is not so sure about the validity of universal continuity, writing at the end that "it is not clear that the Wheeler-Feynman assumption . . . ought to be made." (For more on the Wheeler-Feynman continuity assumption, in a different, non-time travel context, see the final "For Further Discussion" for this chapter.)

The Wheeler-Feynman continuity idea *is* ingenious, allowing one to find a logically and physically consistent solution in time travel scenarios that, at least at first glance, might seem to have no solution. Consider, for example, the following situation[96]: "We have a camera ready to take a black and white picture of whatever comes out of [a] time machine. The film is then developed and the developed negative is subsequently put in the time machine and set to come out of the time machine at the time the picture is taken. This surely will create a paradox: the negative will have the opposite distribution of black, white, and shades of grey, from the picture that comes out of the time machine. But since the thing that comes out of the time machine is the negative itself we surely have a paradox." But do we?

The answer is no, because "What will happen is that a uniformly grey picture will emerge which produces a negative that has exactly the same uniform shade of grey. No matter what the sensitivity of the film is, as long as the dependence of the brightness of the negative depends in a *continuous* [my emphasis] manner on the brightness of the object being photographed, there will be a shade of grey that produces exactly the same shade of grey on the negative when photographed. This is the essence of Wheeler Feynman's idea."[97] (The conclusion is the same if we move from black-and-white to color photography.)

Nonetheless and despite this apparent success, the supposed ability of a modulated beam of tachyons to send a message into the past still raised concerns among many, particularly about free will and fatalism. Suppose, say those who are concerned about these issues, that you receive a tachyon message from yourself from tomorrow, informing you that a man you plan to kill tonight is still alive (tomorrow). Does that mean it is beyond your power to kill him tonight? According to one analyst (note 67) the answer is no; you *could* kill him—but if you do then the message from tomorrow would not have arrived. And because ignorance is not a

---

[96]Taken from Frank Arntzenius and Time Maudlin, "Time Travel and Modern Physics," in *Time, Reality & Experience* (C. Callender, editor), Cambridge University Press 2002, pp. 169–200.

[97]More on the Wheeler-Feynman continuity idea, *and of its limitations*, can be found in D. Kutach, "Time Travel and Consistency Constraints," December 2003, pp. 1098–1113, and Phil Dowe, "Constraints on Data in Worlds with Closed Timelike Curves," December 2007, pp. 724–735, both in *Philosophy of Science*.

precondition to free will, your newly acquired knowledge does not, by itself, suddenly limit your ability to kill the man. But, this line of arguing went, if you do not attempt to kill the man because you believe the message from your future self, then in fact the message *has* limited you!

Fitzgerald's position was rebutted by Craig (note 91), who argues that it is not your ability to kill that is altered by the message but rather your motivation. Craig points out that such motivational changes can occur without invoking anything as radical as a message from the future. Suppose, he says, that just before you fire the fatal shot into your victim, you learn from him that he is your beloved, long-lost uncle. Clearly, your motivation for killing him is likely to be instantly altered, but equally clearly, your *ability* to kill him is unchanged. The mechanism for obtaining genealogical information, whether via time travel or as a last-minute appeal from your intended victim, is (says Craig) simply irrelevant. Not all buy into that, however, with one unconvinced analyst (note 94) writing that "history is a set of world lines essentially frozen into spacetime. While subjectively we feel strongly that our actions are determined only by our backward light cone, this may not always be the case." That is, Schulman appears open to the possibility that influences originating in the future might indeed have an impact on the present.

With the fading from the physics scene of enthusiasm for tachyons, the romance of communicating with the past using superluminal speeds passed from speedy particles to quantum mechanics via a mathematical result called *Bell's theorem*. John Bell, a physicist mentioned in the last chapter in connection with the MWI of quantum mechanics, published his theorem in a little article in an obscure, now defunct journal. Since then it has become one of the most cited physics papers from the 1980s.[98] The paradox cited in Bell's title refers to a famous 1935 paper in which Einstein (and two of his colleagues at the Institute for Advanced Study) challenged the conventional view of quantum mechanics, the view that there is no objective reality to anything unless it is observed.[99]

In fact, the possibility of quantum mechanics supporting FTL signals had been considered (and rejected) *before* Einstein's paper, by the Italian physicist Enrico Fermi.[100] Fermi concluded that, in a two atom system, the decay from an excited state of one atom (with the emission of a photon) would not influence the other atom before a time lapse of R/c, where R is the distance between the two atoms and c is the speed of light. In 1967, however, the Russian physicist M. I. Shirokov pointed out that Fermi's result was the result of an unjustified mathematical operation (he had replaced an integral from zero to infinity with one from minus infinity to infinity).

---

[98]J. S. Bell, "On the Einstein-Podolsky-Rosen Paradox," in *Speakable and Unspeakable in Quantum Mechanics*, Cambridge University Press 1987.

[99]A. Einstein, B. Podolsky, and N. Rosen, "Can Quantum-Mechanical Description of Physical Reality Be Considered Complete?" *Physical Review*, May 15, 1935, pp. 777–780. See also N. D. Mermin, "Is the Moon There When Nobody Looks? Reality and Quantum Theory," *Physics Today*, April 1985, pp. 38–47.

[100]E. Fermi, "Quantum Theory of Radiation," *Reviews of Modern Physics*, January 1932, pp. 87–132.
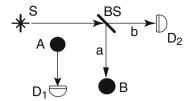
Fig. 5.5 Time travel and the wave function of quantum mechanics. In the above arrangement (reproduced by the kind permission of Francesco Gonella, from his paper "Time Machine, Self-Consistency and the Foundations of Quantum Mechanics," *Foundations of Physics Letters*, April 1994, pp. 161–166), S is a low-intensity source of photons, a source *so* weak that at any instant there is never more than one photon in the system. Each photon begins by traveling toward BS, a half-silvered beam-splitting mirror that, with equal probability, either passes a photon to the right along path b where it is detected by D_2, or downward along path a into mouth B of a wormhole time machine and out of which it emerges from wormhole mouth A *in the past*. Conventional quantum mechanics says that what happens at BS is determined *when the photon reaches BS*—that is, the probability wave function of the photon collapses at BS. But for a photon that is reflected into B, it exits A where it is detected by D_1 *before* the time of its arrival at BS. That means it is known (by detector D_1) what *will* happen at BS *before* the photon arrives at BS—so just *when did* the photon wave function collapse?

Then, nearly 30 years after Shirokov, the German physicist Gerhard Hegerfeldt proved (in the context of conventional quantum mechanics) a very general theorem that establishes a non-zero probability of the second atom responding to the first atom's decay *as soon as* the photon is emitted.[101]

Hegerfeldt's analysis is very general, but it does make one assumption—the non-negativity of energy density (the so-called *weak energy condition*)—which at the time was considered (in Hegerfeldt's words) to be "physically well motivated," but which today is *not* taken to be *a priori* obvious.[102] Einstein's paper, on the other hand, utilized physical assumptions not easily dismissed, and so its conclusions confounded physicists for decades.

The conventional view of quantum mechanics formulates physics in terms of probability wave functions that 'collapse' into specific realities only when measurements (observations) are made of the state of a system (which may be as elementary as a single particle). Until such measurements are made, says this view of quantum mechanics, a system has no specific state; instead, it merely has a probability distribution over a set of possible states (see Fig. 5.5 for a time travel puzzle concerning this claim). Einstein and his co-authors (note 99) strongly rejected this probabilistic interpretation of nature (recall Einstein's famous dictum, "God does not play dice with the cosmos.") Einstein and his colleagues agreed that

---

[101]G. C. Hegerfeldt, "Causality Problems for Fermi's Two-Atom System," *Physical Review Letters*, January 1994, pp. 596–599. This mere *suggestion* of a possible failure of causality so stunned the editor of *Nature* that he felt compelled to quickly write a 'calming' reply: "Time Machines Still Over the Horizon," February 10, 1994, p. 509.

[102]The issue of the sign of energy density is very important in the analyses of wormhole time machines (see note 135 in Chap. 1), and we'll return to it in the next chapter.

quantum mechanics may be valid *as far as it goes*, but they also argued that it leaves out 'something' (as yet unknown) in describing reality. That is, they suggested that quantum mechanics is "incomplete" and that it incorporates "hidden variables."[103] They expressed this idea in the form of a paradox, the famous *EPR paradox*, which they posed as a thought experiment (a *Gedanken-experiment*) in which quantum mechanics declares that the properties of a particular spatially distributed system, when measured at point A, seem to be *forced* to assume specific values at point B (which may be arbitrarily distant from A) *without* there being a measurement at B.

Thus, said Einstein, there are just two possibilities. Either the system properties at B must have been what they are from the very start (even if the measurements at A had not been done) which is the view he held, or there must have been a linkage between the system at A and the system at B such that the wave function collapse at A is instantly transmitted to B to allow the wave function to collapse there as well. Because A and B may be arbitrarily far apart, this second view obviously requires an FTL transmission mechanism,[104] something Einstein called a "spooky action-at-a-distance," a term that eloquently expresses his low opinion of that idea! (Some translations replace *spooky* with *ghostly*, but the negative sentiment remains the same.[105]) For decades the debate between proponents of these two alternatives remained at a metaphysical, non-quantitative level. Then came Bell's paper in 1964.

Bell's theorem mathematically poses the choice between Einstein's hidden variables view and the conventional view of quantum mechanics through the use of an inequality involving certain measurable properties of a system.[106] If these measurements are such that the inequality is violated, then the conventional interpretation of quantum mechanics is vindicated, and Einstein's FTL spooky action-at-a-distance effect simply doesn't exist. Bell's great contribution, then, was to provide the means for removing the debate about quantum mechanics from metaphysics and to place it squarely in the realm of experimental physics.

"All" that needed to be done was to make the required measurements. These technically difficult experimental measurements were eventually performed by the French physicist Alain Aspect and his colleagues at the Institute of Applied Optics of the University of Paris, a decade and a half after Bell showed what had to be

---

[103]For more on hidden variables, see E. P. Wigner, "On Hidden Variables and Quantum Mechanical Probabilities," *American Journal of Physics*, August 1970, pp. 1005–1009.

[104]For an analysis that argues against an FTL mechanism in quantum mechanics, see G. C. Ghirardi, *et al.*, "A General Argument Against Superluminal Transmission Through the Quantum Mechanical Measurement Process," *Lettere Al Nuovo Cimento*, March 8, 1980, pp. 293–298.

[105]You can find a discussion of the possibility of 'explaining' Einstein's "spooky actions" of quantum mechanics by invoking backward causation in R. I. Sutherland, "Bell's Theorem and Backwards-in-Time Causality," *International Journal of Theoretical Physics*, April 1983, pp. 377–384.

[106]The details are not important here, but a lovely exposition (for the lay person) can be found in Bell's essay "Bertlmann's Socks and the Nature of Reality," in *Speakable and Unspeakable in Quantum Mechanics*, Cambridge University Press 1987. See also M. G. Alford, "Ghostly Action at a Distance: A Non-Technical Explanation of the Bell Inequality," *American Journal of Physics*, June 2016, pp. 448–457.

done. The results unequivocally support the conventional view of quantum mechanics.[107] Einstein was simply wrong, there are no hidden variables in quantum mechanics, and his spooky action does seem to exist. Does that mean we have, at last, experimental evidence of the possibility of information transfer at FTL speeds?

Well, maybe, but the issue is still hotly debated. The majority of physicists today, I suspect, are probably more perplexed over what Bell's theorem is saying than were over Einstein's original EPR paradox. In those early days one could agree with Einstein and his colleagues, who argued that quantum mechanics was valid *as far as it went*, but a deeper, more comprehensive theory *would* show the existence of hidden variables. However, because of the work by Bell and Aspect it is definitively known that quantum mechanics *as it stands* leads to correct results, results that can be checked in the laboratory. In other words, there is no need for hidden variables and FTL spooky actions cannot be ruled out.

And so, while tachyons and the tachyon antitelephone may be nothing more than a neat science fiction fantasy, just maybe a quantum mechanical Bell antitelephone can't be so dismissed. Indeed, the possibility of using a quantum mechanical FTL effect was once suggested in a letter written by a senior person at an unspecified California think tank (an organization such as, for example, the RAND Corporation) to the Under Secretary of Defense for Research and Engineering at the Pentagon. Here's what the Under Secretary read when he opened that letter: "If in fact we can control the FTL nonlocal effect, it would be possible . . . to make an untappable and unjammable command-control-communication [C^3] system at very high bit rates for use in the submarine fleet. The important point is that since there is no ordinary electromagnetic signal linking the encoder with the decoder in such a hypothetical system, there is nothing for the enemy to tap or jam. The enemy would have to have actual possession of the 'black box' decoder to intercept the message, whose reliability would not depend on separation from the encoder or on ocean or weather conditions."[108]

One can't help but wonder what might have been the Under Secretary's response to that incredible letter, and what sorts of ultra-mega-super-top-secret experiments it may have prompted. I would be willing to bet, if they did occur, that they failed. As one physicist put it, "Up to now nature has covered her tracks pretty well, blocking all possibilities for using the EPR effect for FTL communication."[109] Of course, the think tank letter, as 'farout' as it may initially appear, actually represents a *failure* of imagination, because the backward causation effect of EPR's spooky FTL effect is certainly a 'quantum jump' beyond a mere unjammable submarine C^3 system.

---

[107]A. Aspect, "Experimental Tests of Realistic Local Theories via Bell's Theorem," August 17, 1981, pp. 460–467, and A. Aspect, *et al.*, "Experimental Realization of Einstein-Podolsky-Rosen-Bohm *Gedanken-experiment*: A New Violation of Bell's Inequalities," July 12, 1982, pp. 91–94, and "Experimental Test of Bell's Inequalities using Time-Varying Analyzers," December 20, 1982, pp. 1804–1807, all in *Physical Review Letters*.

[108]See N. D. Mermin in note 99. For more on the enigmatic letter on the FTL submarine C^3 system, see Jack Sarfatti's letter to *Physics Today*, September 1987, pp. 118 and 120.

[109]J. Cramer, "Paradoxes and FTL Communication," *Analog Science Fiction*, September 1988.

5.7   For Further Discussion

Mark Twain, in his last, posthumously published novel *No. 44, The Mysterious Stranger*, incorporated reversed time as the work of a supernatural being. After the being reverses the world's time direction, the narrator tells the reader that "everywhere weary people were re-chattering previous conversations backward . . . where there was war, yesterday's battles were being refought, wrong-end first; the previously killed were getting killed again . . . we saw Henry I gathering together his split skull . . ." Read the novel, and comment on how well (or not) Mark Twain handled reversed time.

In Philip K. Dick's 1956 novel *The World Jones Made*, we read of a prophet who can see a year into the future. As he says, "To me *this is the past*," and then later we are told "He was a man with his eyes in the present [the world's future] and his body in the past [the world's present]." Read the novel, and then argue either for or against the suggestion that Dick was aware of the advanced wave solution in Maxwell's theory.

The physicist Robert Forward (see the sixth *For Future Discussion* in Chap. 3) argued that one way to send messages into the past is to compress a 15-billion-ton asteroid down to the volume of an atomic nucleus, spin it up, and then aim gamma ray bursts through the resulting near-by region of "unhinged time" (see "How To Build a Time Machine," *Omni*, May 1980). This is, of course, 'simply' an artificially constructed Kerr black hole telegraph transmitter (look back at note 114 and related discussion in Chap. 1). Forward, an optimist of the first rank, thought humans would be able to do this before the end of the twenty-first century. It would seem, then, that what should be done *now* is to build gamma ray frequency *receivers* (well within present-day technology) and listen for such messages from the future. The technical details of such receivers wouldn't matter, as long as their design is widely published. That way, the scientists of the future can learn those details by simply reading of them in old, musty library books and journals, and thus will be able to build their transmitters to be perfectly compatible with our old, musty (to them) receivers! Comment on the likelihood of National Science Foundation funding becoming available to build such receivers.

Suppose a time traveler goes into the future and, while there, discovers that there is an older version of himself living in the home that has been in his family for generations. Explain why this implies that the time traveler will eventually return to the present. Suppose, instead, that after the time traveler arrives in the future he decides to remain in the future, and *not* to return. Explain why this implies there will *not* be an older version of himself living in the family home. In both cases, assume the MWI does *not* apply, that is, assume that there is just a single time line.

One well-known quantum physicist, David Bohm (1917–1992), wrote the following passage in his book *The Special Theory of Relativity* (W. A. Benjamin 1965), concerning the possibility of sending messages into the past: "In effect, S could communicate with his own past [self, M] . . . and tell his past self [M] what his future is going to be. But on learning this M could decide to change his actions, so that his future . . . would be different from what his later self [S] said it was going to be. For example, the past self could do something that would make it impossible for the future one to send the signal. Thus, there would arise a logical self-contradiction." Do you think most physicists, writing today more than 50 years after Bohm, would repeat his words?

The role played by quantum mechanics in time travel studies is broad, deep, profound . . . and mysterious. What I mean by this is nicely illustrated by the final paragraph in a paper by Stephen Hawking ("Quantum Coherence and Closed Timelike Curves," *Physical Review D*, November 15, 1995, pp. 5681–5686). There he wrote "Personally, I do not believe that closed timelike curves will occur, at least on a macroscopic scale. I think that the chronology protection conjecture will hold and that divergences in the energy-momentum tensor will create singularities before closed timelike curves appear. However, if quantum gravitational effects somehow cut off these divergences, I am quite sure that quantum field theory on such a background will show loss of quantum coherence. *So even if people come back from the future, we will not be able to predict what they will do* [my emphasis]." What do you think Hawking meant by his final line? If "people come back from the future" and tell us what they did while in the

future, then what's wrong with their memories that causes us to fail to be able to predict what they *will* do? Or, is there perhaps nothing wrong with their memories and Hawking is instead arguing that the future experienced by the returned time travelers will not be the future when *we* 'get there'? If that's the case, then what are the returned time travelers 'remembering'?

If quantum mechanics is actually slightly non-linear physics (as are many other normally linear physical phenomena at sufficiently high energy levels)—physics is *linear* when *superposition* holds, which means the result of two inputs is the sum of the individual outputs resulting from application of the individual inputs—and if one accepts the MWI concept, then at least two physicists (**PHYSICISTS1**) claim to have shown that one could communicate not just with our past, but also with the many pasts in the ever-splitting branches of the many worlds. Another physicist (**PHYSICIST2**) wrote a very funny illustration of what that might be like. Yet another physicist (**PHYSICIST3**) suggested that non-linear quantum mechanics might actually allow one to take *photographs* of the many-worlds. Of that, a physicist (**PHYSICIST4**) wrote (without any exaggeration) that such an achievement would be "perhaps the most amazing discovery in the history of science, indeed in the history of mankind." Or, to quote yet another physicist (**PHYSICIST5**), "interworld communication would lead to truly mind boggling possibilities," some of which have been incorporated in at least one science fiction novel (**SFAUTHOR**). Read the physicists' papers, and the novel, and then summarize with your own commentary.

PHYSICISTS1: N. Gisin, "Weinberg's Non-linear Quantum Mechanics and Superluminal Communication," *Physics Letters A*, January 1, 1990, pp. 1–2, and J. Polchinski, "Weinberg's Non-linear Quantum Mechanics and the Einstein-Podolsky-Rosen Paradox," *Physical Review Letters*, January 28, 1991, pp. 397–400.

PHYSICIST2: J. G. Cramer, "Quantum Telephones to Other Universes, to Times Past," *Analog*, October 1991.

PHYSICIST3: D. Albert, "How to Take a Photograph of Another Everett World," *Annals of the New York Academy of Sciences*, December 30, 1986, pp. 498–502.

PHYSICIST4: M. A. B. Whitaker, "On the Observability of 'Many Worlds'," *Journal of Physics A*, July 11, 1985, pp. 1831–1834.

PHYSICIST5: R. Plaga, "On a Possibility to Find Experimental Evidence for the Many-Worlds Interpretation of Quantum Mechanics," *Foundations of Physics*, April 1997, pp. 559–577.

SFAUTHOR: J. P. Hogan, *Paths to Otherwhere*, Baen 1996.

One upon a time, FTL tachyons (and their associated into-the-past transmissions of information) were strictly in the province of science fiction. In recent years, however, such doings have moved into mainstream fiction, as well, with the most recent (as I write) example being the man-of-action novel by Patrick Lee, *Signal*, St. Martin's Press 2015. (Tachyons are also mentioned in the 2015 film *Tomorrowland*.) That novel is set in modern times, not in the future; its hero is a retired soldier who now works as a self-employed house-flipper. His is definitely not a futuristic science fiction world. Until, that is, be becomes involved with a radio-like gadget that receives signals from 10 h, 24 min in the future. As the novel progresses we eventually learn that the gadget is based on German electronics technology that was being tested in a remote lab in northern Algeria, near the end of World War II. When that lab was overrun by a small American force the equipment was destroyed, but not before one of the Americans heard the gadget playing a song titled "She Loves You" along with the word *yeah* repeated numerous times. He didn't know what that meant until, 20 years later, he watched the Beatles' first American appearance on *The Ed Sullivan Show* TV program, and so suddenly realized that in 1944 he had heard a song that hadn't been written yet! That gadget is at the center of a modern-day, renewed Nazi effort to conquer the world, and there is much 'you've seen it all before' chasing, shooting and other 'James Bond' types of action in the novel, but the author *has* been quite inventive in treating time paradoxes. He does talk a lot about 'changing the future,' worries confusingly about 'changing the past,' and mistakes neutrinos for tachyons, but, still, if one is willing to overlook such issues it *is* an entertaining read. In particular, while the gadget's inherent range to the future is limited to ten-plus hours, the author describes a clever way to arbitrarily extend that value. Read *Signal*, and then describe and critique the method outlined in the novel.

The Wheeler-Feynman assumption of continuity already had a distinguished history in mathematics long before they invoked it in their physics resolution of bilking paradoxes. (Both men were very good mathematicians, and certainly knew what I am about to tell you here.) Imagine a man who is about to walk up a hill, starting at A (the base of the hill) and ending at B (the top of the hill). You know nothing of *how* he walks (perhaps at times he stops for a while, other times he walks slowly, sometimes he walks briskly, perhaps at times he even walks back *down* the hill). All you know is that, starting from A at 10 o'clock in the morning, he arrives at B at 11 o'clock. That is, the walk up

the hill takes exactly 60 min. He camps overnight at B and then, the next morning, at exactly 10 o'clock, he walks back down the hill along the same path he followed during his ascent the previous day. He arrives at A at 11 o'clock. That is, the return trip takes exactly 60 min. Again, you know nothing of the details of how he makes the descent. Prove that there is at least one spot on the path that he passes at exactly the same time during his descent as he passed it during his ascent the previous day. Hint: No complicated equations are required. Indeed, no math at all is needed. Just sketch the appropriate, general graphs of the man's ascent versus time, and of his descent versus time, and invoke continuity. That is, sketch the distance (as measured along the path) that he is from A versus time for both the ascent and the descent.

Chapter 6
The Physics of Time Travel: II

"It is very sad to see valuable minds writing such a pile of unmitigated bullshit."

—not all physicists think time travel is worthy of study.[1]

6.1 Faster-than-Light into the Past
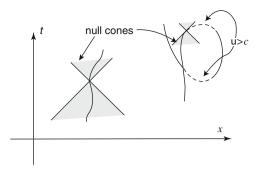
"Faster-than-light travel remains a coherent, and possible concept, even though it is forbidden by relativity theory."

—a philosopher makes a physics mistake.[2]

So far we have limited our consideration of relativity theory to speeds below the speed of light—that is, to the condition $v < c$, where v is the relative velocity of two reference frames. There was nothing, however, in the derivation of the Lorentz transformation equations discussed in Chap. 3 that actually used that self-imposed constraint. So, just what, in fact, *does* happen for $v > c$? This is not an empty question, because the second half of the above quote that opens this section is simply not true. That isn't to say we can have FTL for free; there *is* a high price to pay, that of causality violation (although, if you are a fan of time travel, it's a price you are probably happy to pay). If a material object goes FTL, then the mathematics seems to say that the object could travel into the past, just as the caped crusader does in the first (1978) *Superman* movie, in order to change the past (to save Lois Lane from dying in an earthquake). In addition, the mathematics also seems to say that if a signal bearing information could achieve FTL, then that information, too, would travel back into the past (see Fig. 6.1).

---

[1]This rather blunt comment (reported in *Physics World*, December 2009, p. 3) was prompted by a suggestion, from two other physicists, that the Higgs boson might ripple backward through time and thereby stop CERN's Large Hadron Collider from creating the long-sought particle in the first place.

[2]G. Robinson, "Hypertravel," *Listener*, December 17, 1964, pp. 976–977, the printed version of a lecture to the British Association for the Advancement of Science.

Fig. 6.1 A math-free proof that there can be no closed loops in time (that is, no time travel to the past if $v > c$ is forbidden) in flat Minkowski spacetime, the spacetime of the special theory of relativity. Such a conclusion is far less clear in the curved spacetimes of the general theory of relativity. Figure reproduced by the kind permission of Serguei V. Krasnikov (Polkovo Central Astronomical Observatory in St. Petersburg, Russia), from his 2003 paper "Time Machine (1988–2001)"

The original thinking along these lines visualized such an FTL signal as a modulated beam of tachyons, as mentioned in the previous chapter. In addition to tachyons not having been experimentally observed, even after intense searches for them, there are several theoretical objections (in addition to the bilking paradox problem discussed in the previous chapter) to the likelihood such FTL particles exist.[3] For example, the relativistic expressions for the energy and momentum of a particle with rest mass m_0 moving with speed v are, respectively,

$$E = \frac{m_o c^2}{\sqrt{1 - (v/c)^2}} \qquad \text{and} \qquad p = \frac{m_o v}{\sqrt{1 - (v/c)^2}}.$$

For $v > c$ the radicals in these expressions become imaginary, whereas E and p must always be real-valued (because they can be observed and measured as a result of the interactions the particle has with other matter). The energy and momentum can regain the property of being real-valued if we write $m_0 = \mu \sqrt{-1}$ (that is, $m_0^2 = -\mu^2$) for a tachyon, where μ is the positive, real-valued (but unobservable) meta-mass (that is, $m_0^2 < 0$). This is a radical proposal, of course, (as it is $m_0^2 > 0$ that we are used to; as a Russian mathematician romantically put it, "What binds us to space-time is our [positive] rest mass, which prevents us from flying at the speed of light, when time stops and space loses meaning. In a world of

---

[3]See, for example, "More About Tachyons," *Physics Today*, December 1969, pp. 47–52, a collection of letters received by the journal from its readers. The 'DeWitt Gambit,' mentioned in the previous chapter, was first proposed in one of those letters.

light there are neither points nor moments of time; beings woven from light would live 'nowhere' and 'nowhen'; only poetry and mathematics are capable of speaking meaningfully about such things."[4].

Well, perhaps, but let's continue to pursue the physics of tachyons, at least for a while. It can be shown[5] that the energy and momentum of the tachyon are given by

$$E = \frac{\mu c^2}{\sqrt{(v/c)^2 - 1}} \quad \text{and} \quad p = \frac{\mu v}{\sqrt{(v/c)^2 - 1}}.$$

An interesting consequence of this is that if tachyons *lose* energy, they *speed up*, an observation first made by the German physicist Arnold Sommerfeld (1868–1951) in 1904.[6] This means that if there is a mechanism for continuous energy loss, such as Cerenkov radiation,[7] then tachyons will spontaneously accelerate without limit to *infinite speed*! Curiously, while the above expressions for E and p show that, as $v \to \infty$, tachyons would possess *zero* energy, they would nonetheless have a *non-zero* momentum of μc.[8]

To see how backward time travel and FTL are connected, it is useful to establish a geometrical interpretation of the Lorentz transformation. As stated in Chap. 3, if the x', t' system is moving with speed v in the x (or x') direction relative to the x, t system, then

$$x' = \frac{x - vt}{\sqrt{1 - (v/c)^2}} \quad \text{and} \quad t' = \frac{t - vx/c^2}{\sqrt{1 - (v/c)^2}}.$$

---

[4]Yu I. Manin, *Mathematics and Physics*, Birkhäuser 1981, p. 84.

[5]L. Parker, "Faster-Than-Light Inertial Frames and Tachyons," *Physical Review*, December 25, 1969, pp. 2287–2292.

[6]The consideration of FTL particles already had a long history *before* tachyons were specifically named. You can find late nineteenth century (1888–1889) theoretical analyses of electrically charged FTL particles in the writings, for example, of the English mathematical electrical engineer Oliver Heaviside (1850–1925): see my biography *Oliver Heaviside: the life, work, and times of an electrical genius of the Victorian Age*, The Johns Hopkins University Press 2002, pp. 124–126.

[7]Cerenkov radiation is the energy radiated when a charged particle exceeds the speed of light *in the medium through which it travels*. Since the speed of light *in water* is less than c, it is perfectly okay with special relativity to exceed the speed of light in water, and in fact this commonly occurs for the energetic electrons produced by submerged atomic reactors (swimming pool reactors). The resulting radiation is observed as a blue glow. The radiation is named after the Russian physicist Pavel Cerenkov (1904–1990)—for which he received a share of the 1958 Nobel physics prize—but in fact Heaviside (previous note) had predicted it more than a decade before Cerenkov was born.

[8]This (theoretical) property of tachyons (if they exist) could (perhaps) be used (maybe) to build a revolutionary (to say the least) new rocket propulsion system: see J. Cramer, "The Tachyon Drive: Infinite Exhaust Velocity at Zero Energy Cost," *Analog*, October 1993.

These equations make sense for the case of $v < c$, and we will retain this condition for our two relatively moving *frames of reference*: these frames are the *worlds* of two *human* observers, observers that we'll take to always be *sub*luminal. As one physicist so nicely put it, "The assumption that observers move faster-than-light goes beyond superluminal signaling,"[9] as such observers would have to be thought of as being built not out of flesh-and-blood, but rather out of tachyons.[10] We'll reserve the symbol w to denote the speed of an FTL particle.

Now, recall what we mean by any line parallel to the x-axis; it is a line with a fixed time coordinate. Such a line is a *cosmic moment* line, with the equation $t = $ constant. Similarly, for the moving system we would write the equation of a cosmic moment line as $t' = $ constant which, after the Lorentz transformation is applied, is equivalent to

$$t - \frac{vx}{c^2} = \text{constant.}$$

In particular, the x'-axis ($t' = 0$ cosmic moment line), which passes through the point $x = 0$ at $t = 0$, has the equation

$$t = \frac{vx}{c^2} = vx$$

with the usual convention of $c = 1$.

In a similar way, recall what we mean by any line parallel to the t-axis; it is a line with a fixed space coordinate. Such a line is the world line of a stationary particle in the x, t frame, with the equation $x = $ constant. Similarly, for the moving system we would write $x' = $ constant as the equation of the world line of a particle stationary in that system. From the Lorentz transformation, this is equivalent to

$$x - vt = \text{constant.}$$

In particular, the t'-axis (which is the $x' = 0$ world line of a particle stationary at the origin of the moving system) passes through the $x = 0$, $t = 0$ point, and it has the equation

$$x = vt.$$

Thus, superimposed spacetime coordinate axes for the two frames look like those shown in Fig. 6.2. That is, the relative motion of the two frames results in a

---

[9]K. Svozil, "Time Paradoxes Reviewed," *Physics Letters A*, April 3, 1995, pp. 323–326.

[10]Science fiction, however, *has* (since the early days of pulp) enthusiastically embraced FTL human travel. In Larry Niven's story "At the Core" (*If*, November 1966), for example, we read of a manned spacecraft that travels 60,000 light years to the center of our own Milky Way Galaxy, and then back, at a speed 420,000 times that of light. As the pilot says (in a grand understatement), "That's goddam fast." Perhaps there is a way to make *some* sense of such an adventure, with the so-called *warp drive* (a'la *Star Trek*), which we'll take-up briefly at the end of this chapter.
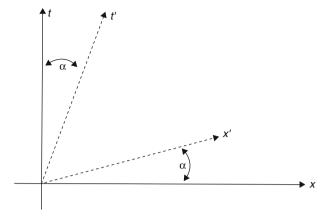
Fig. 6.2 Spacetime coordinate axes rotation by relative motion

rotation of the spacetime axes; but it is a strange sort of rotation, with *opposite* senses for the space and time axes. That is, the *x'* and *t'* axes rotate *towards* each other, as shown in the figure, to make equal angles (α) with the x and t axes, respectively, where

$$\alpha = tan^{-1}(v).$$
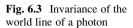
If we limit the moving frame (the frame of a moving observer) to subluminal speeds ($0 \leq v < 1$), then
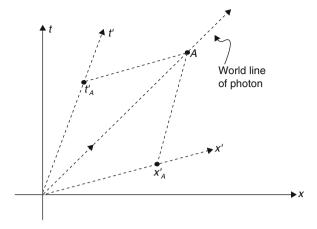
$$0 \leq \alpha < 45°.$$

At the speed of light ($v = 1$) $\alpha = 45°$ and so the x' and *t'* axes coincide—time and space have become indistinguishable.

It is important to realize that observers in either system would measure the same speed for a photon; that is, each would see the world line of a photon as a line with slope 1. This view of the world line of a photon is literally built into the Lorentz transformation because one of Einstein's fundamental postulates for special relativity is the invariance of the speed of light. The truth of this statement for the x, t system is obvious from Fig. 6.2. It is, perhaps, not so obvious with the x', t' system because of the non-perpendicular axes (as shown in the figure) for that system. In Fig. 6.3 the world line of a photon is shown in both systems. In that figure we emit the photon at $x' = 0$, $t' = 0$, and we later measure its coordinates at point A to be $x' = x'_A$ at time $t' = t'_A$. Note carefully how this is done. We draw lines from point A parallel to the x' and t' axes until they intersect the t' and x' axes, respectively. This is similar to the way we would get the spacetime coordinates of A in the more familiar x, t system, where we would draw lines parallel to the x and t axes.

It should now be obvious that x'_A and t'_A have the same extension, just as they do in the unprimed system, so

Fig. 6.3 Invariance of the
world line of a photon

$$\frac{x'_A}{t'_A} = \text{the speed of light}$$

The speed of light is the only invariant speed under the Lorentz transformation. Indeed, the modern approach to special relativity emphasizes this invariance as the central property of the speed of light, rather than the idea of the speed of light being a limiting speed.

This geometrical interpretation of the Lorentz transformation lets us quickly make another interesting (one, I think, not at all obvious) observation: If a particle is faster than light in the x, t system, then there exists a subluminal x', t' system in which the particle is *infinitely* fast. Figure 6.4 shows the world line of an FTL particle in the x, t system (which is, of course, *below* the world line of a photon; that is, the particle's world line is spacelike). Suppose the FTL particle has speed $w > c$ such that its world line makes angle β with the x-axis. If we now pick v, the speed of the moving x', t' system to be such that $\alpha = \beta$, then the x'-axis will coincide with the world line of the particle, and so the particle will appear to an observer in the x', t' system to be everywhere at once—that is, to be infinitely fast. We have, then,

$$\beta = tan^{-1}(v) = tan^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{w}\right)$$

or $v = 1/w$, which seems to be dimensionally wrong. Recall, however, that with our convention of $c = 1$, the v in this result is a *normalized* speed. To return to the units of everyday use, simply replace v with v/c and w with w/c; this transforms our result to

$$\frac{v}{c} = \frac{c}{w} \quad \text{or} \quad v = \frac{c^2}{w}.$$
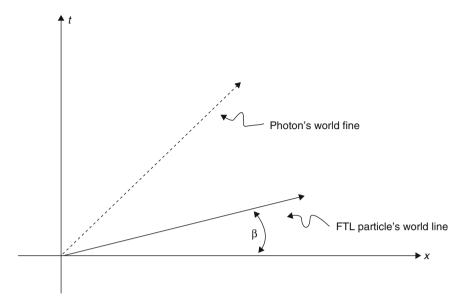
Fig. 6.4 World line of an FTL particle

We can, of course, turn this result around. If an FTL particle moves with speed w in the x, t frame, then to an observer in the x', t' frame moving with subluminal speed v, the particle will appear to be infinitely fast if $w = c^2/v$. A particle with $w > c^2/v$ is said to be not just be superluminal, but *ultra*luminal.

If a particle has infinite speed if $w = c^2/v$, then what physically happens if w is greater than c^2/v? The answer is easy to see from a spacetime diagram, as in Fig. 6.5, where the x' and t' axes have been extended back to negative values. In that figure I have labeled two arbitrary events A and B on the world line of an ultraluminal particle (and so it lies below the x' axis), and have shown the spacetime coordinates of each event in both the x, t and x', t' frames. For the x, t frame we see that A is related to B by the relations $x'_A < x'_B$ and $t'_B < t'_A$; that is, the time order of A and B is reversed for an observer in the x', t' frame. To that observer, the particle appears to be traveling backward in time!

But this isn't quite the end of the story. Following the approach of two pioneering tachyon physicists,[11] we note that if the energy of a particle in the stationary system is E, then the energy as measured in the moving system is given by[12]

---

[11]O. M. Bilaniuk and E. C. G. Sudarshan, "Causality and Space-like Signals," *Nature*, July 26, 1969, pp. 386–387.

[12]The expression for E' is the result of applying the Lorentz transformation to E. You can find all the details of that worked out in A. P. French, *Special Relativity*, W. W. Norton 1968, pp. 208–210.
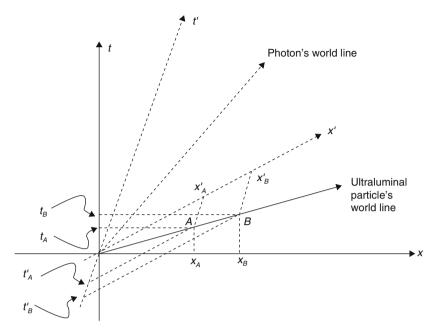
Fig. 6.5 World line of an *ultra*luminal particle

$$E' = \frac{1}{\sqrt{1 - \left(\frac{v}{c}\right)^2}} \frac{\mu(c^2 - wv)}{\sqrt{(w/c)^2 - 1}}$$

Note that sign of E' switches from positive to negative when w (the speed of the particle) exceeds c^2/v, which is precisely the condition for the particle to be ultraluminal and so traveling backward in time (as seen in the primed system). That is, negative energy moving backward in time in one system is positive energy moving forward in time in another. This is, in fact, the original motivation for the RP (reinterpretation principle) discussed in the previous chapter, and the claim was, at one time, that the RP was just what was needed to 'explain' the paradoxical implications of time travel. This is not the majority view today, however, and a number of physicists have been quite inventive in constructing scenarios with causal paradoxes that the RP clearly fails to 'explain.'

For example, the Princeton physicist Shoichi Yoshikawa (1934–2010), in a letter to *Physics Today* (see note 3), was able to create a scenario which *uses* the RP to arrive at a causal paradox. In his construction, the RP allows an observer to transmit an ultraluminal tachyon to a remote observer at time $t = 0$, and to receive a reply from that observer at $t < 0$. This obviously sets-up the possibility of a bilking paradox in which the original observer, upon receiving the $t < 0$ tachyon, then decides *not* to transmit the $t = 0$ tachyon. What makes Yoshikawa's paradox a particularly troublesome paradox is that the RP is the culprit, not the savior.

6.2 Tipler's Rotating Cylinder Time Machine

"... within forty-eight hours we had invented, designed, and assembled a chronomobile. I won't weary you with the details, save to remark that it operated by transposing the seventh and eleventh dimensions in a hole in space, thus creating an inverse ether-vortex and standing the space-time continuum on its head."[13]

—this is almost surely *not* the way to build a TM (time machine)

As discussed at the start of this book, the first endorsement of the reasonableness of physicists talking about plausible, scientific time travel, began with Gödel's discovery of closed timelike lines in the mathematics of certain rotating universe models. Such models had been studied as early as 1924 by the Hungarian physicist Cornelius Lanczos (1893–1974), a quarter century before Gödel, but it was Gödel who made explicit the possibility a rotating universe might allow time travel. His realization of time travel as an *inherent* property of a rotating universe is an illustration of a *weak* TM, while what is the central interest concerning time machines (in physics *and* in science fiction) is a *strong* TM. That is, in time machines that can be *intentionally constructed* by manipulating mass-energy in a finite (what physicists call a *compact*) region of spacetime to *create* closed timelike lines where none existed before the manipulation began. Interestingly, the fundamental physical idea behind Gödel's weak TM is the same underlying idea behind the first strong TM, Tipler's rotating cylinder discussed back in Chap. 1 (strictly, of course, only a *compact* TM if the cylinder can be of *finite* length).

The one result from general relativity that we'll use here (without proof) is that the rotation of matter causes a distortion of spacetime that results in the 'tipping over' of light cones, with the future half tilted in the direction of motion. If you imagine a point in the universe about which the rotation takes place, then this tipping effect increases with the radial distance from that point.[14] The fact that rotating masses tip light cones over in the direction of rotation was discovered very early in the history of general relativity (1918), by the Austrian theoreticians Josef Lense (1890–1985) and Hans Thirring (1888–1976). Originally (and naturally) called the *Lense-Thirring effect*, it now generally goes by the name of the *dragging of inertial frames effect*, and it plays a central role in the weak Gödel and the strong (maybe) Tipler time machines. Here's how.

At a certain critical distance from the rotation center (more on this in just a bit), the future half of the light cone at a given point in spacetime will be sufficiently tilted so as to enter the past half of similarly tilted light cones at nearby spacetime points This is illustrated in Fig. 6.6,[15] which shows a circular chain of tilted light

---

[13]L. Sprague de Camp, "Some Curious Effects of Time Travel," in *Analog Readers' Choice*, Dial 1981.

[14]For a picture of this, see S. W. Hawking and G. F. R. Ellis, *The Large Scale Structure of Spacetime*, Cambridge University Press, 1973, p. 169.

[15]Adapted from D. B. Malament, "'Time Travel' in the Gödel Universe," *Proceedings of the Philosophy of Science Association* 1984, pp. 91–100.
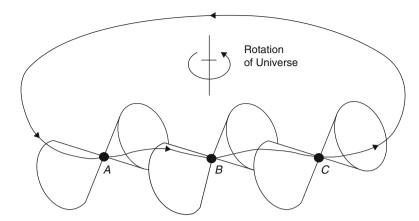
Fig. 6.6 Time traveling through tilted light cones in a rotating universe

cones in a rotating universe. Because light cones are tilted by a rotation-induced twisting of spacetime, a traveler can move around a circular path on a trip that is always directed into his *local* future but nonetheless end-up in his own *global* past, without ever going faster than light. This kind of round trip in spacetime, with a trajectory that winds back into the past without ever becoming spacelike, is a closed timelike curve.

From Fig. 6.6 it should be clear how a time traveler, beginning at A, can weave his way along a circular path (this path needs to have a radius at least as great as the critical value mentioned earlier) to B to C to … that brings him back into the *past* half of the light cone at A. The traveler's world line is always inside the local light cone; that is, the world line of the time traveler is always timelike, and never FTL. These timelike curves are present in the rotating spacetime from the very beginning of the spacetime, and were not *created* (certainly not by humans) by conscious intent.

You can see how this works mathematically by taking the spacetime metric for Gödel's universe (with, as usual, the convention that the speed of light $c = 1$):

$$(ds)^2 = (dt)^2 - (dr)^2 - (dy)^2 + \sin h^2(r)\left[\sin h^2(r) - 1\right](d\phi)^2$$
$$+ \sqrt{2}\sin h^2(r)(d\phi)(dt)$$

where t, r, y, and ϕ are cylindrical coordinates in four-dimensional spacetime. Now, imagine that our adventurer's world line is the helical curve $r=$constant, $y = 0$, and $t = -\alpha\phi$: if we take the time axis as vertical then the time traveler's world line is a vertical helix in spacetime. For this curve, $dr = dy = 0$ and $dt = -\alpha d\phi$. This last differential means, in particular, that whatever the sign of the constant α, we can choose that one of the two senses of movement in the spatial ϕ dimension that gives $dt < 0$.

Continuing, we have

$$(ds)^2 = \left[\alpha^2 - 2\sqrt{2}\alpha sinh^2(r) + \sin h^2(r)\left(\sin h^2(r) - 1\right)\right](d\phi)^2$$

or, upon letting $u = \sinh(r)$ we have

$$(ds)^2 = \left[\alpha^2 - 2\sqrt{2}\alpha u^2 + u^2\left(u^2 - 1\right)\right](d\phi)^2.$$

Now, for $\alpha = 0$ we have

$$(ds)^2 = u^2\left(u^2 - 1\right)(d\phi)^2$$
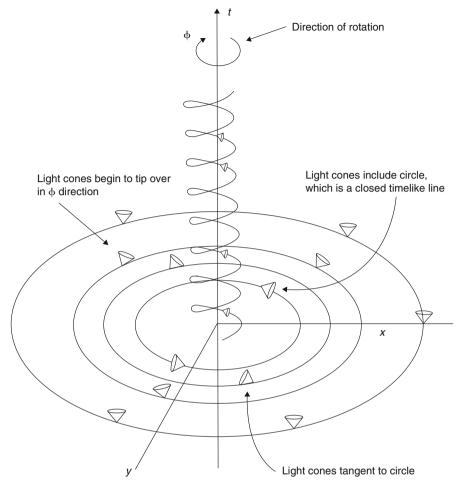
which is greater than zero if $u > 1$. This condition holds if $\sinh(r) > 1$, that is, if r is a constant greater than $\ln\left(1 + \sqrt{2}\right)$. In other words, for r sufficiently large (and now we know the critical value for r) we have $(ds)^2 > 0$, the required condition for a timelike spacetime interval. By continuity, then, we will continue to have $(ds)^2 > 0$ even with some small positive or negative value of α different from zero. Because ϕ is a periodic coordinate (we identify $\phi = 0$ with $\phi = 2\pi$), as the traveler moves along the curve she returns repeatedly to the same spatial points, but her time coordinate is increasingly negative. That is, she is traveling into the past. Note, once again, that in Gödel's universe this property holds only for orbits with radii greater than a certain minimum.[16]

Tipler's rotating, infinitely long cylinder is a mechanism for artificially producing the tipped-over light cone effect, thus *creating* closed timelike curves. Figure 6.7, taken from Tipler's Ph.D. dissertation,[17] shows how the cylinder works. The cylinder is represented by the central vertical axis. Far away from the cylinder the light cones in spacetime are upright, but as we move inward they tip over, the future halves opening up into the direction of rotation. (Only the future halves of the light cones are shown.) This direction, which is the direction that far away from the cylinder measures *space*, near the cylinder measures *time* (just as in the Gödelian universe). That is, there has been a dimension reversal! This fantastic possibility has found its way into science fiction, as in Stephen Baxter's 1995 novel *The Time Ships*, wherein the Victorian narrator says "If only one could *twist about* the Four Dimensions of Space and Time — transposing Length with Duration, say — then one could stroll through the corridors of History as easily as taking a cab in the West End!"

To travel back in time, therefore, all the time traveler need do is leave Earth and approach the cylinder until she is near enough to be in the tipped-over region of spacetime. Then she would follow a helical path around the cylinder and could

---

[16]There are other solutions to the Einstein gravitational field equations that have closed timelike lines at *any* radius, no matter how small: see M. J. Reboucas, "A Rotating Universe with Violation of Causality," *Physics Letters A*, March 5, 1979, pp. 161–163.

[17]F. J. Tipler, *Causality Violation in General Relativity*, University of Maryland 1976.

Fig. 6.7 The future halves of light cones point almost entirely in the $+t$ direction far from rotating matter; they begin to tip over as the matter is approached. Note that there is a helical timelike path that moves locally into the *future* in the $-t$ direction, that is, it goes into the past as seen by an observer far from the rotating matter (The world lines of rotating matter are helixes in the $+t$ direction)

spiral along the negative time direction as far back in time as desired (but no further back than to the moment of the cylinder's creation). This motion is such that the time traveler is always moving into her local future, via the tipped-over light cones. Finally, she would withdraw from the cylinder and return to Earth—in the past. The time traveler had better be a good space navigator, of course, because Earth won't be where she left it!

6.3   Thorne's Wormhole Time Machine

> "This fact reinforces the authors' feeling that [closed time loops] are not so nasty as people generally have assumed."[18]

The spacetime wormhole is presently the most promising of the approaches that have been advanced for building a time machine. Gödel rotated the entire universe in 1949, and Tipler 'reduced' the problem in 1974 to 'merely' spinning a cylinder of infinite length. In 1988 Kip Thorne scaled things down even more, this time to other extreme. His idea calls for pulling a wormhole on the scale of the Planck length out of the topologically multiply connected quantum foam that spacetime is and then enlarging it (somehow) to human scale, all the while stabilizing it against self-collapse, and then finally using the time dilation effect of special relativity to alter time at one mouth of the wormhole as compared to the other mouth. What a mouthful! What, you almost surely wonder, does all that mean?
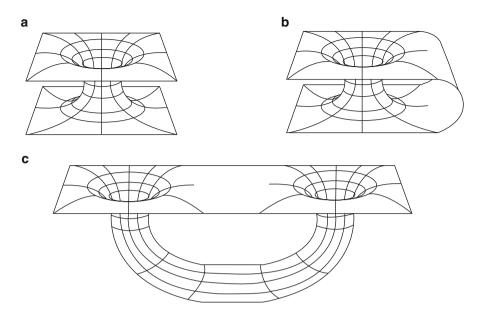
First of all, what's 'quantum foam'? The term refers to the idea that the topology of spacetime is *not* a smooth, continuous manifold, but rather (if you look close enough) is a seething 'ocean of fluctuations' that is always changing, changes on the scale of the Planck length (look back at Sect. 1.5). What does *that* mean? Like the ocean surface-in-the-large, large-scale spacetime is simply connected. But just as one sees all sorts of transient structure as one looks at the water more closely (beginning with macroscopic waves and then proceeding downward to the bubbly foam on the waves), spacetime too displays an ever-changing connectivity-in-the-small.[19] That is the 'quantum foam.'

Wormholes have been around in physics for decades, but they have always been thought to be so unstable as to exist only on paper in the mathematics of general relativity. In an analysis[20] published more than half-a-century ago, for example, wormhole instability was shown to be so severe that not only would a human have no chance in getting through one, but also not even a single speedy photon could do so. Even at the speed of light, the photon could not zip through a wormhole before being trapped inside ("pinched off") in a region of infinite spacetime curvature. Wormholes would simply collapse too quickly after formation for even the so-called ultimate speed to save the traveler. Indeed, the presence of mass-energy inside a wormhole actually *accelerates* its collapse. The physics of wormholes, it seemed, made them simply untraversable.

---

[18]The conclusion of a mathematical demonstration that time travel by wormhole does not conflict with the conservation of energy: see J. L. Friedman *et al.*, "Cauchy Problem in Spacetimes with Closed Timelike Curves," *Physical Review*, September 15, 1990, pp. 1915–1930.

[19]Not all accept this view. See, for example, A. Anderson and B DeWitt, "Does the Topology of Space Fluctuate?" *Foundations of Physics*, February 1986, pp. 91–105.

[20]R. W. Fuller and J. A. Wheeler, "Causality and Multiple Connected Spacetime," *Physical Review*, October 15, 1962, pp. 919–929.

a

b

c

Fig. 6.8 These sketches are unavoidably misleading, being two-dimensional renditions of wormholes that connect two places in a three-dimensional space. Time machine wormholes, on the other hand, connect two places in a four-dimensional spacetime. In particular, the mouths of the wormholes are not 'depressions' into which the time traveler's rocket ship plunges, but rather would appear to be three-dimensional spheres. The wormhole in (**a**) connects two disjoint universes, while those in (**b**) and (**c**) are connections between two places in the same universe. As shown in these last two cases, the wormhole 'handle' can be either long or short, compared to the external distance between the wormhole mouths

And anyway, how would one gain access to a wormhole in the first place? As Thorne and one of his students suggested,[21] one might perhaps imagine someday finding a rotating black hole that mathematically possesses, in its interior, so-called hyperspace tunnels to 'other places'—either in our universe or in other universes (see Fig. 6.8). In the case of a wormhole connecting two places in the same universe, although the external distance in spacetime between the places may be very large (mega-light-years), it is conceivable that the distance *through* the wormhole itself could be very small. The time required to traverse the wormhole, as measured by the traveler's watch might, in fact, be arbitrarily small. This is exciting, but wormholes do not come without some significant problems.

Such problems include the presence of a one-way event horizon, which precludes two-way travel (it seems reasonable to assume that time and space travelers

---

[21]M. S. Morris and K. S. Thorne, "Wormholes in Spacetime and Their Use for Interstellar Travel: A Tool for Teaching General Relativity," *American Journal of Physics*, May 1988, pp. 395–412. This paper was motivated by Thorne's earlier response to a request, from the American astronomer Carl Sagan (1934–1996), for help in making plausible the interstellar travel imagined in his 1985 novel *Contact*.

might wish to eventually return), and enormous gravitational gradients (tidal forces) that dismember anything approaching and/or entering the wormhole. These problems have often been conveniently *ignored* in science fiction. For example, in one tale[22] the time machine is in the form of a wormhole time tunnel that time travelers can simply walk through, and in another characters similarly walk back and forth between two openings in a wall that connect the same place in space but separated in time by 160 years.[23] And in an even older story, we read of a time machine (in the form of a hole in spacetime that is a wormhole in everything but name) through which one can literally step from future to past and back again. That story[24] is particularly notable for having introduced the term *mugwump* for a time traveler who uses a time machine wormhole. To paraphrase the tale's time traveler, as he transits the wormhole his "mug" is in the past and his "wump" is in the future.[25]

Now, before going any further, a note on what physicists are referring to when they write of traversable time travel wormholes. Such wormholes are called *Lorentzian* because they have a spacetime metric with the signature $[+, -, -, -]$ (see Sect. 3.5). Further, the wormhole is taken to be *static*, that is, to have no time-varying behavior. The reason for being specific on the nature of time travel wormholes is that there is another type with what is called the *Euclidean signature*: $[+, +, +, +]$, which is not suitable for time traveling. Motion in a Euclidean signature wormhole involves imaginary momentum or proper time, neither of which is physically plausible for a time traveler. However, *if* you can gain access to a Lorentzian wormhole *then*, as two physicists wrote, "if you manage to acquire even one inter-universe traversable wormhole then it *seems* almost absurdly easy to build a time machine."[26]

In response to that fundamental question of how to gain access to a Lorentzian wormhole, Thorne and his students were bluntly honest—they didn't know. Their best suggestion was that "one can imagine an advanced civilization pulling [a] wormhole out of the quantum foam and enlarging it to classical size."[27] A few years later this dramatic idea found its way into a science fiction novel of a far-future alien civilization able to control the energies of constellations of galaxies: "Spacetime is friable. Wormholes riddle the fabric of spacetime on all scales. At the Planck length and below, wormholes arising from quantum uncertainty effects blur

---

[22]R. C. Wilson, *A Bridge of Years*, Doubleday 1991.

[23]M. Leinster, *Time Tunnel*, Pyramid Books 1964.

[24]H. Kuttner, "Shock," *Astounding Science Fiction*, March 1943.

[25]The term's origin is in 19th century politics, as a description of fence-sitters who try to avoid taking a definite position on some controversial topic under debate. For an illustration of wormhole mugwumping, see K. S. Thorne, *Black Holes & Time Warps*, W. W. Norton 1994, p. 500.

[26]C. Barceló and M. Visser, "Twilight for the Energy Conditions?" *International Journal of Modern Physics D*, December 2002, pp. 1553–1560. See also M. Visser, *Lorentzian Wormholes*, AIP Press 1996.

[27]M. S. Morris, K. S. Thorne, and U. Yurtsever, "Wormholes, Time Machines, and the Weak Energy Condition," *Physical Review Letters*, September 26, 1988, pp. 1446–1449.

the clean Einsteinian lines of spacetime. And some of the wormholes expand to human scale, and beyond — sometimes spontaneously, and sometimes at the instigation of intelligence."[28]

This isn't easy to visualize, but let's plunge ahead and assume we can "pull" a wormhole out of the quantum foam. If so, then once it is (somehow) inflated the wormhole could be stabilized against collapse by threading it with either matter or fields of stupendous negative (outward) tension—and by *stupendous* I mean *STU-PENDOUS*. If b_0 denotes the minimum radius of the wormholes (the size of the so-called *throat* of the wormhole), the tension (radial pressure) at that location must be at least

$$\tau_0 = \frac{3.8}{b_0{}^2} \times 10^{36} \frac{tons}{in^2}$$

where b_0 is expressed in feet.[29] (This expression shows that for a wormhole with a throat radius of several thousand feet, the value of τ_0 is enormous, of the same magnitude as the pressure at the center of the most massive neutron star.) To stabilize a common sort of everyday wormhole, such as a subway tunnel, we can obtain the required tension/pressure by lining the tunnel with iron plates or concrete. But how, for a hyperspace wormhole, do we obtain 'iron plates' that can achieve the required enormous tension? As Thorne and his students observed (note 27) such stuff could only be called "exotic," a term that had appeared a few years earlier in connection with the observed energy density in the throat of a wormhole.[30]

One possible approach to this problem does not use matter at all. If we make b_0 *very* large, then non-material fields will do the job.[31] Indeed, suppose b_0 equals 1 light year (a large wormhole by anybody's standard!). Then τ_0 is 'only' 4000 tons/square inch, and that is achievable by threading the wormhole throat with a magnetic field of 'only' 2,700,000 gauss (five million times stronger than the Earth's field).[32] To generate such a field is not impossible, and present-day

---

[28]From S. Baxter's 1993 novel *Timelike Infinity*. That same year the Chinese physicist Liao Liu wrote on how, as a result of a naturally occurring vacuum fluctuation, a wormhole might spontaneously appear: L. Liu, "Wormhole Created from Vacuum Fluctuation," *Physical Review D*, September 15, 1993, R5463–R5464.

[29]The original equation for τ_0 was given in units of dynes/cm², with b_0 is expressed in meters (see note 21), but I have converted these units to the more familiar (to the non-physicist) units of tons per square inch, for dramatic purposes, because the units of dynes per square centimeter is so small it's difficult to relate it to anything of everyday significance.

[30]R. Balbinot, "Crossing the Einstein-Rosen Bridge," *Lettere Al Nuovo Cimento*, May 16, 1985, pp. 76–80.

[31]See, for example, Y. Soen and A. Ori, "Improved Time Machine Model," *Physical Review D*, October 15, 1996, pp. 4858–4861, and D. N. Vollick, "How to Produce Exotic Matter Using Classical Fields," *Physical Review D*, October 15, 1997, pp. 4720–4723.

[32]To understand how the calculation of a magnetic field from a pressure requirement is accomplished, note that pressure is dimensionally equivalent to field energy per unit volume, which in turn is given by a well-known result in electromagnetic theory.

experimental, hypervelocity electromagnetic rail guns in development for the US Navy use transient magnetic fields in the mega-gauss range.

As if the stabilization problem wasn't enough of a complication, Thorne and his colleagues (note 27) showed that there is another, even more curious problem. The geometrical requirement that the wormhole interior smoothly connect to the external, asymptotically flat exterior spacetime demands that the wormhole throat flare outward as shown in Fig. 6.8. It turns out that this condition is mathematically equivalent to a requirement that τ_0 exceed the energy density of the throat material[33]; and special relativity, in turn, says that for some timelike observers the energy density will then actually be *negative*. This is a clear violation of the so-called *weak energy condition* (WEC), which says the observed mass-energy density is always non-negative. This is *so* 'obvious' that the WEC was thought, for a long time, to be almost a law of nature. Such a violation is actually not as crazy as it might sound however because, more than half-a-century ago, it was shown[34] that an energy density that is everywhere and everywhen positive is *not* compatible with any quantum field theory that is *local*, as, presumably, will be the yet-to-be-discovered theory of quantum gravity. Over the years since then a variety of other energy conditions have been proposed, such as the *averaged weak energy condition* (AWEC), which says that only the *average* value of the energy density over a complete null geodesic world line has to be non-negative, which leaves open the possibility of *temporary* negativity here, there, then and when.[35]

The traversable, static wormholes studied by Thorne and his colleagues violate even the AWEC (see note 27), however, and in the years since it has become clear to physicists that imposing constraints on the mass-energy density may not be so 'obvious' after all (see note 26). But all may not be lost. Indeed, it has been shown that the violation of the AWEC by traversable wormholes can be made as small as desired, that is, the requirement for the exotic matter required to line a wormhole throat to keep it open can be made as tiny as you want.[36]

Well, tiny the quantity of exotic matter may be but, nonetheless, even a tiny amount of it would be extraordinary weird stuff because a negative energy density can be interpreted as meaning that the exotic material that keeps the wormhole throat open

---

[33]The condition of τ_0 exceeding the energy density in the throat is, in fact, the technical definition of *exotic*—see note 30. In everyday situations, the exotic condition is never even remotely approached. For example, the maximum tension necessary to pull a piece of steel apart—the so-called *tensile strength*, about 100,000 pounds per square inch—is a trillion times less than the mass-energy density of steel.

[34]H. Epstein, V. Glaser, and A. Jaffe, "Nonpositivity of the Energy Density in Quantized Field Theories," *Il Nuovo Cimento*, April 1, 1965, pp. 1016–1022.

[35]T. A. Roman, "Quantum Stress-Energy Tensors and the Weak Energy Condition," *Physical Review D*, June 15, 1986, pp. 3526–3533.

[36]M. Visser, S. Kar, and N. Dadhich, "Traversable Wormholes with Arbitrarily Small Energy Condition Violations," *Physical Review Letters*, May 23, 2003, pp. 201102-1 to 201102-4.

does so by exerting a *repulsive* gravitational force.[37] A repulsive force sounds like a property we'd expect to see associated with *negative mass* and, although such a thing has never been observed (negative matter is *not* anti-matter, which *has* been observed and which does not repel 'normal matter'), it was studied long ago (theoretically, of course) by the English cosmologist Hermann Bondi (1919–2005). Bondi showed[38] that negative mass would indeed have some truly bizarre properties,[39] but there is nothing in general relativity that forbids its possible existence. Wormholes, with negative mass throats, should produce observable effects by which a wormhole *might* be detected. Mathematical analyses of the effect a negative-mass wormhole mouth would have, when crossing the line-of-sight between Earth and a distant star, indicates that there should be an observable *double-spike* in the intensity of the star's light. Astronomical searches for such an optical signature have actually been conducted, with (alas) no success as I write (2017).

There is another interesting implication of a repulsive gravitational force, one that proves to be *essential* to the possibility of a wormhole time machine. Just as Einstein's famous prediction (verified in 1919) from general relativity, that star light passing near the Sun's edge is bent *inward* by the Sun's attractive gravitational field, the repulsive, anti-gravity field of a wormhole will cause any light rays traveling through the wormhole to be bent *outward*. That is, a tight, narrow beam of radiation entering a wormhole will emerge *defocused*. This is crucial because, as you'll soon see, a wormhole time machine would otherwise be destroyed by the light from the dimmest candle.

One might take the failure of astronomical searches for a double-spike light signature to mean that wormholes with negative mass throats (thus violating the WEC) simply don't exist. But not so fast. The first hint that the possibility of a negative energy density might not be such a crazy idea occurred as long ago as 1948, with a theoretical prediction made by the Dutch physicist Hendrick Casimir (1909–2000). As pointed out in Chap. 1, the Heisenberg uncertainty principle allows a temporary violation of conservation of energy to occur, with the magnitude of the allowed violation increasing with decreasing time duration. Even in a vacuum, then, with particle/anti-particle creation and annihilation spontaneously and continuously taking place, the *average* energy density being zero does not

---

[37]The *strong energy condition* says gravity is always attractive—which is clearly not true in a wormhole throat—and so static, traversable wormholes violate both the weak *and* the strong energy conditions.

[38]H. Bondi, "Negative Mass in General Relativity," *Reviews of Modern Physics*, July 1957, pp. 423–428.

[39]For example, general relativity says that a negative mass will *repel* all other masses (positive *and* negative), whereas a positive mass will *attract* all other masses (positive *and* negative). Imagine, then, a negative mass attached to the nose of a positive-mass spaceship. The spaceship tries to move toward the negative mass, while the negative mass tries to move away from the spaceship. So off they both go into the sky, like a cat chasing its tail. This so-called *reactionless anti-gravity drive*, bizarre as it appears, does not violate either of the conservation laws of energy or momentum. See G. Cavalleri and E. Tonni, "Negative Masses, Even if Isolated, Imply Self-Acceleration, Hence a Catastrophic World," *Il Nuovo Cimento B*, July 1997, pp. 897–903.

preclude fluctuations away from zero and so, at times, actually becoming *negative*. What Casimir showed was that if one positioned two perfectly conductive plates parallel to each other, then the normal quantum fluctuations of the energy density in this 'vacuum sandwich' would be altered in such a way as to result in their mutual attraction—and this (tiny) effect was later actually observed.[40]

What does it mean to 'alter the normal quantum fluctuations'? Consider the creation of a photon and its anti-particle, which is another photon. From the wave interpretation of particles, the parallel plates restrict the photons that appear in the vacuum layer to those that have wavelengths that 'fit' because those wavelengths are submultiples of the plate separation (this requirement follows from the fact that a perfectly conducting plate cannot support a non-zero tangential electric field). Photons with longer wavelengths than the plate separation cannot 'fit' and thus do not appear. That is, the parallel plates have created a boundary condition that has quantized the electromagnetic field. The absence of these 'longer wavelength' photons lowers the average energy density between the plates and, because the average without the plates is zero, the altered average energy density must be negative. Indeed, the more the maximum allowed photon wavelength decreases with decreasing plate separation, the more negative the average energy density becomes in the enclosed Casimir vacuum. The negative energy density manifests itself as an inward directed force per unit area (remember, energy density and pressure are dimensionally equivalent).

The experimental detection of the Casimir effect was a remarkable event in physics. As one mathematician put it, "No worker in the field of overlap of quantum theory and general relativity can fail to point this fact out in tones of awe and reverence."[41] Robert Forward, an imaginative physicist who has appeared in this book earlier as an enthusiastic supporter of time travel, has described how the Casimir force might be used to extract energy literally *from a vacuum*. This is an idea as seemingly impossible as is the plan of one science fiction professor to squeeze energy out of *time*. As he asks his assistant, "But tell me, Bob, isn't that a ridiculous thought? To take time, something intangible, invisible, incomprehensible, and contract it — squeeze it together like a sponge?"[42] The story is fun, but Forward's proposal is that as well—*and* good physics.[43] Now, what does all this have to do with wormhole time machines?

---

[40]A complete presentation of Casimir's analysis, with citations to the original literature, can be found in L. E. Ballentine, *Quantum Mechanics*, Prentice-Hall 1990, pp. 399–403. For an historical, tutorial presentation, including Casimir's personal comments on how he was led to make his discovery, see P. W. Milonni and M.-L. Shih, "Casimir Forces," *Contemporary Physics*, September–October 1992, pp. 313–322.

[41]S. A. Fulling, *Aspects of Quantum Field Theory in Curved Space-Time*, London Mathematical Society 1989.

[42]E. Binder, "The Time Contractor," *Astounding Stories*, December 1937.

[43]R. Forward, "Extracting Electrical Energy from the Vacuum by Cohesion of Charged Foliated Conductors," *Physical Review B*, August 15, 1984, pp. 1700–1702.

Thorne and his colleagues (note 27) proposed to use the Casimir effect to achieve the "exotic condition" *without* matter. Their idea was to place identical, conducting, spherical plates that carry equal electric charges at each end of the wormhole (remember, the wormhole mouths are spherically symmetric). The two identical charges repel each other, but the charge size is adjusted so that the gravitational attraction of the plates precisely cancels the repulsion. They then calculated that the Casimir effect results in a negative energy density sufficient to provide the throat tension necessary to prevent wormhole collapse.

There *are* some weird aspects to this (and perhaps that's no surprise). For example, the analysis assumed that the wormhole length is *very* small compared to its radius (10^{-10} cm long and 200 million miles wide!), with the short length required because it represents the separation of the wormhole plates, and the smaller the separation the more negative the average energy density. (The functional dependence is as the *fourth* power of the separation.) Another problem is the balancing of the electrical repulsion and the gravitational attraction of the wormhole mouth plates, as such a balance is clearly an unstable one. Finally, because the two spherical plates completely fill the wormhole mouths, how would a traveler actually get through the wormhole? The 'answer' was to drill a hole through the plates and hope that wouldn't perturb the Casimir vacuum too much.[44]

All the above litany of the difficulties static, traversable wormholes face in simply existing is certainly daunting, but let's now ignore all that and suppose we actually have a wormhole with both mouths in the same universe. (For use as a time machine, it would seem desirable for the time traveler to remain in his/her own universe!) So, how do we turn the wormhole into a time machine? Interestingly, while it is general relativity that gives us the wormhole, it is special relativity that adds the final touch of backward time travel. We begin by imagining that, somehow, one mouth of the wormhole can be moved with respect to the other mouth. One early suggestion, for example, was to use the gravitational attraction of a large asteroid to 'drag' one end of the wormhole, thereby inducing a time dilation effect.[45]

That is, suppose we have two clocks A and B, one in each mouth of the wormhole. These two clocks, and all other clocks in the flat spacetime outside the wormhole, are initially indicating the same time and running at the same rate. Now, recalling the twin paradox from Chap. 3, let each mouth-clock play the role of one of the twins. Imagine that A and B are now separated because the mouth containing B is placed on board a rocket ship. The rocket ship takes a long, high-speed trip out into space along the straight-line path joining A and B in external space, and then returns, just as described in Sect. 3.5. We then unload the space traveling wormhole mouth (with its clock B) and reposition it at its original location. What

---

[44]The very next year it was shown how to construct non-spherically symmetric wormholes to avoid that particular problem: see the two papers by M. Visser, "Traversable Wormholes: Some Simple Examples," *Physical Review D*, May 15, 1989, pp. 3182–3184, and "Traversable Wormholes from Surgically Modified Schwarzchild Spacetimes," *Nuclear Physics B*, December 11, 1989, pp. 203–212.

[45]J. L. Friedman, "Back to the Future," *Nature*, November 24, 1988, pp. 305–306.

is the situation now? We can summarize matters as follows: (1) Clock A, in the non-moving mouth, remains in-step with the local clocks in the space outside the mouth. (2) Clocks A and B, both inside the wormhole, have *not* moved with respect to each other because we are assuming a very short wormhole handle, as in part (b) of Fig. 6.8. We can arrange for the motion of the space traveling mouth (with clock B) to be such that the handle is always short, and so the distance between clocks A and B changes by an arbitrarily small amount. Thus, clocks A and B remain in-step with each other. (3) Clock B, because it has been moving with respect to its external space, arrives back at its starting position reading *behind* (that is, *earlier*) than the clocks outside its wormhole mouth.

For the sake of argument, then, suppose the journey of B is such that there is a two-hour time-slip between clock B and its local, external clocks. Thus, if clock B reads 9 A.M., the clocks outside of mouth B will read 11 A.M. But because clocks A and B are in-step, clock A reads 9 A.M., as do the clocks outside of mouth A. That is, the wormhole connecting mouth A to mouth B is a connection between two parts of the same universe that are two hours apart in time. Now, suppose the journey from mouth A to mouth B can be made through external space in one hour. Then, one could leave mouth A at 10 A.M., rocket to mouth B by 11 A.M., and travel back to mouth A via the wormhole to the starting point—where it is 9 A.M., one hour *before* the trip began! We could, in fact, imagine repeating this process, going back one additional hour for each new loop through the wormhole. One clear restriction, however, is that we could not go back in time to *before* the creation of the wormhole time machine. The wormhole works in the other direction, too. To see this, suppose that the space traveler leaves mouth B at 8 A.M. and rockets through external space to mouth A, arriving at 9 A.M. Entering mouth A, he exits from mouth B (where he started) at 11 A.M., two hours in the future.

Another way to induce a time dilation effect, to convert a wormhole to a time machine, *without moving either mouth*, is to simply place one mouth in an intense gravitational field, that of, say, a neutron star. (Recall, from Sect. 3.3, how gravity influences the time-keeping rate of a clock.) As the physicists who proposed this idea put it, almost *any* interaction with surrounding matter and gravity fields almost inevitably turns a wormhole into a time machine.[46] Others have admitted that the details of the origin of time dilation are probably not issues worth debating, but rather what is called the *back-reaction* is of far more concern.

To understand the back-reaction requires mention of what is called the *Cauchy horizon*, the hyperspace surface in spacetime that separates the region where closed timelike lines can exist, from the region where they cannot exist. The back-reaction is the build-up of unbounded energy levels on the Cauchy horizon, causing its instability and rapid destruction. The name of the horizon comes from the "Cauchy problem"—named after the nineteenth century French mathematician Augustin-Louis Cauchy (1789–1857)—in the theory of partial differential equations. In this

---

[46]V. P. Frolov and I. D. Novikov, "Physical Effects in Wormholes and Time Machines," *Physical Review D*, August 15, 1990, pp. 1057–1065.

theory a Cauchy initial-value problem is said to be well-defined if the initial conditions determine a unique solution, and if a continuous variation in the initial conditions gives a continuous variation in the solution. In that part of spacetime where closed timelike loops are not allowed, backward causation does not occur (by definition) and the laws of physics (all expressed as differential equations) satisfy the Cauchy condition. Outside of this *chronal* region, that is, beyond the Cauchy horizon where physics is *dischronal*, however, the possibility of backward causation raises the possibility of violating the Cauchy condition, and in such a case the Cauchy horizon is also sometimes called the *chronology horizon*.[47]

The instability of the Cauchy horizon is caused by radiation that propagates in closed timelike loops that thread through the wormhole on 'straight lines.' This radiation, as shown a half-century ago,[48] builds-up unbounded energy density levels at the horizon, and thus destroys the horizon. Thorne and his colleagues argued that the defocusing effect of their wormhole time machine's repulsive gravity would be sufficient to counter a disruptive energy build-up on the horizon (note 27). Subsequent analyses have examined other possible ways to avoid unbounded energy density on the Cauchy horizon. For example, in one paper[49] it was imagined that a wormhole time machine has had a circular motion induced for mouth B; that is, mouth B orbits around mouth A. The result is that the Cauchy horizon now does seem to be stable, because now there are no fixed, straight-line timelike loops threading the wormhole from A to B to A to B to . . .. That is, B is a 'moving target' and there is no point on the Cauchy horizon where the energy density becomes unbounded.

Yet another approach for achieving the disruption of destructive, circulating energy loops through a wormhole is by placing a spherical mirror between the two mouths of the wormhole. Proposed by the Chinese physicist Li-Xin Li, a Li mirror would divert all closed null geodesics (represent circulating radiation) that potentially thread through the wormhole.[50] Such potentially fatal geodesics would, instead, be scattered back into space, whereas a purposeful traveler could navigate *around* the mirror and thus use the wormhole as a time machine.

---

[47]A classic work on the mathematics of Cauchy problems is J. Hadamard, *Lectures on Cauchy's Problem in Linear Partial Differential Equations*, Dover 1952. There is a curious bit of irony in this. In a section of his book, Hadamard uses spacetime to illustrate one possible four-dimensional space and, in passing, he casually writes "This conception was beautifully illustrated a good many years ago by the novelist Wells in his *Time Machine*." Hadamard wrote his book in 1923, and he would almost certainly have been astonished to have been informed that less than seventy years later his work would play a central role in the non-fictional theory of time machines.

[48]C. W. Misner and A. H. Taub, "A Singularity-Free Empty Universe," *Soviet Physics JETP*, January 1969, pp. 122–133.

[49]I. D. Novikov, "An Analysis of the Operation of a Time Machine," *Soviet Physics JETP*, March 1989, pp. 439–443.

[50]L.-X. Li, "New Light on Time Machines: Against the Chronology Protection Conjecture," *Physical Review D*, November 1994, pp. R6037–R6040.

Cauchy horizon instability from the back reaction is central to Hawking's Chronology Protection Conjecture, discussed in Chap. 1. His analysis (see note 54 in Chap. 1) led him to conclude that a physical entity—the stress-energy tensor—becomes unphysical on the Cauchy horizon. That is, because of time-traveling quantum field fluctuations of the vacuum, that tensor diverges to infinity at the horizon. This results in a failure of that horizon to form in the first place or, if it does form, in the creation of a singularity that 'seals-off' the horizon to any would-be time travelers attempting to gain access to the closed timelike loops beyond the horizon. Others, however, argued that Hawking was mistaken in claiming that the divergence of the stress-energy tensor on the Cauchy horizon will always forbid time travel.

In a study, for example, of a complex-valued spacetime metric (and such a metric *is* allowed in the so-called 'sum over all possible geometries, path integral' approach to the quantum theory of gravity), that has causal and non-causal spacetime regions separated not by a Cauchy horizon but rather by a region of complex geometry, the stress-energy tensor is always physical and diverges nowhere. The complex geometry region plays the same role as the Cauchy horizon, because such a region would, *classically*, mean that the two regions cannot be reached from one another, but via quantum tunneling an observer *could* travel between the two regions.[51] In fact, studies of stress-energy divergence actually have a long history. For example, the effect of an unphysical (infinite) gravitational and/or electromagnetic energy flux had been analyzed *years before* the wormhole time machine studies began.[52] The authors studied the case of a potential traveler to "new worlds" who tries to cross the Cauchy horizon of an electrically charged, non-rotating black hole. An even earlier computer study had already concluded that, for such a traveler, the attempt to cross the horizon "looks liable to prove a dangerous undertaking."[53]
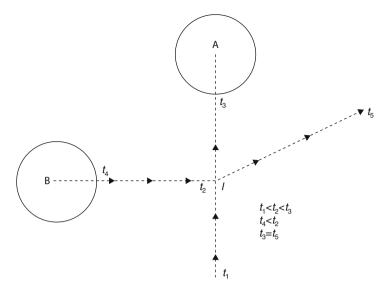
It isn't at all clear, in fact, if a *theoretical* divergence of the stress-energy *is* the signature of a failure of physics. One doesn't need anything as bizarre as a time machine for the stress-energy to diverge *on paper*. It was shown nearly 40 years ago, for example, that such a theoretical divergence occurs for the electromagnetic field near a perfectly conducting boundary.[54] But it is simply the unphysical nature of a "*perfectly* conducting" boundary condition that causes the divergence, not the fact that the field actually exists near a conducting boundary. Similarly, other real-life considerations (quantum gravity) *may* keep the stress-energy physical everywhere in a time machine spacetime.

---

[51]L.-X. Li, J.-M. Xu, and L. Liu, "Complex Geometry, Quantum Tunneling, and Time Machines," *Physical Review D*, November 15, 1993, pp. 4735–4737.

[52]S. Chandrasekhar and J. B. Hartle, "On Crossing the Cauchy Horizon of a Reissner-Nordström Black-Hole," *Proceedings of the Royal Society of London A*, December 8, 1982, pp. 301–315.

[53]M. Simpson and R. Penrose, "Internal Instability in a Reissner-Nordström Black Hole," *International Journal of Theoretical Physics*, April 1973, pp. 183–197.

[54]D. Deutsch and P. Candelas, "Boundary Effects in Quantum Field Theory," *Physical Review D*, December 15, 1979, pp. 3063–3080.
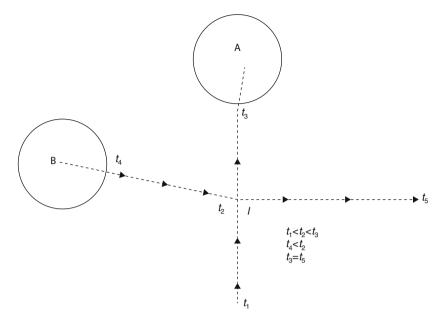
Fig. 6.9 The grandfather paradox in the billiard ball world. A billiard ball approaches mouth A of a time machine wormhole, dead-on center and, just before entering A, it passes without incident through point *I*. The ball then enters A and so exits mouth B in the past, *just in time* to pass through point *I* and *hit its younger self*. This impact knocks the younger ball *away from* A, so we have the familiar paradox of changing the past. That is, the impact did not occur when the ball 'originally' passed through *I* on its way to A and, of course, we also wonder how the ball manages to hit itself after leaving B if it then *doesn't* enter A?

Assuming a wormhole time machine has (somehow) become available, with its Cauchy horizon intact, how do the 'paradoxes' of time travel come into play? In an attempt to study the grandfather paradox, in particular, Thorne and his colleagues studied self-interacting billiard balls traveling backward in time through a wormhole.[55] They used billiard balls—see Figs. 6.9 and 6.10—rather than human time travelers for the same reason Wheeler and Feynman used a pellet and shutter mechanism in their study of advanced electromagnetic waves—to avoid any metaphysical questions about human free will. The central issue for them was the determination of the multiplicity of trajectories for a single, self-interacting time traveling ball, where the Cauchy condition for a well-defined trajectory in spacetime is *unique* self-consistency.

That is, for the trajectory to be well-defined in the Cauchy sense, it was expected there would be exactly *one* consistent trajectory for a self-interacting ball. A multiplicity of zero, of course, would be the physics declaring backward time travel through the wormhole to be nonsense—and that was thought to be a distinct

---

[55]F. Echeverria, G. Klinkhammer, and K. S. Thorne, "Billiard Balls in Wormhole Spacetimes with Closed Timelike Curves: I. Classical Theory," *Physical Review D*, August 15, 1991, pp. 1077–1099. The authors credited the physicist/science fiction writer Robert Forward (who used the same ideas in his 1992 novel *Timemaster*) for motivating their research.

Fig. 6.10 The principle of self-consistency in the billiard ball world. Now the ball, in passing through point *I* on its dead-on center path toward mouth A of the wormhole time machine, is suddenly hit a grazing blow by another ball that has just shot out of mouth B (and into the past) at an angle. The impact knocks the first ball slightly off its original trajectory, and it enters mouth A slightly off-center. Thus, the ball emerges from B into the past slightly off-center and just in time to glace off itself at *I*—which explains *why* it emerged from B slightly off-center!

possibility. The actual results were, however, surprisingly different. It was found, under very general assumptions about the wormhole parameters, that (1) there are no trajectories with zero multiplicity and (2) the multiplicity is *not* one but rather is *always* infinity! Thus, the billiard ball form of the grandfather paradox *was* found to be *not* well-defined, but not for the expected reason that there was no self-consistent solution. Instead, it was because there are *too many* solutions.

This astonishing, completely unexpected result seems to be just what is needed to support the viability of time machines, as it appears to allow a definition of *well-defined* in the Cauchy sense and still permit an answer to the puzzle of free will. The initial conditions of a time traveling ball give rise to an infinity of self-consistent trajectories, each occurring in the same way that a random variable takes on different values with each new performance of the experiment that the random variable is defined on. And yet, there are still unique probability density functions for all sets of measurements that one might make anywhere along these trajectories. Thus, the Cauchy problem is *stochastically* well-defined; at the start of any

trajectory, we do not know in detail what will happen except that whatever does happen will be self-consistent. In this probabilistic sense, then, wormhole time travel to the past and the retention of free will both make sense. The Russian physicist Igor Novikov and his colleagues continued the study of time traveling billiard balls,[56] demonstrating that one can *deduce* self-consistency from the long-accepted principle of least action (that is, self-consistency is not an additional assumption to existing physics).[57]

The one-wormhole, two-mouth time machine was actually not the first kind of wormhole time machine described in the physics literature. In their 1988 paper (note 21), Morris and Thorne initially described a time machine constructed from *two* wormholes, but they added a note-in-proof at the end that they had just discovered how to build a time machine using one wormhole (the machine we have been discussing). This reduction in the required number of wormholes was thought to be a technical advance, of course, and so the two-wormhole time machine was put aside.

But not for long. Soon thereafter the concerns about Cauchy horizon stability began to surface, a concern that one-wormhole time machines might destroy themselves just at the instant their mouths were about to be threaded by closed timelike curves. As noted earlier, the negative mass wormhole throat has a defocusing effect on electromagnetic radiation (and so the initial concern, that time traveling photons might be fatal, faded)—but then it was found that vacuum fluctuations of quantum fields are *not* so defocused.[58] That failure to defocus time-traveling vacuum polarizations (as quantum field fluctuations are called) was shown to result in an unphysical divergence of the stress-energy on the Cauchy horizon of a one-wormhole time machine.[59] This sounds bad, but the hope was that the divergence wouldn't actually be fatal: it appeared to be sufficiently sluggish that it was suggested reaching an actual *infinity* of the stress-energy would be precluded by the eventual intercession of quantum gravity. That is, the stress-energy might *try* to become unbounded as spacetime approached the formation of a time machine

---

[56]A. Lossev and I. D. Novikov, "The Jinn of the Time Machine: Nontrivial Self-Consistent Solutions," *Classical and Quantum Gravity*, October 1992, pp. 2309–2321; E. V. Mikheeva and I. D. Novikov, "Inelastic Billiard Ball in Spacetime with a Time Machine," *Physical Review D*, February 15, 1993, pp. 1432–1436; M. B. Mensky and I. D. Novikov, "Three-Dimensional Billiards with a Time Machine," *International Journal of Modern Physics D*, April 1996, pp. 179–192.

[57]A. Carlini, *et al.*, "Time Machines: The Principle of Self-Consistency as a Consequence of the Principle of Minimal Action," October 1995, pp. 557–580, and "Time Machines and the Principle of Self-Consistency as a Consequence of Stationary Action (II): The Cauchy Problem for a Self-Interacting Particle," October 1996, pp. 445–479, both in *International Journal of Modern Physics D*.

[58]V. P. Frolov, "Vacuum Polarization in a Locally Static Multiply Connected Spacetime and a Time-Machine Problem," *Physical Review D*, June 15, 1991, pp. 3878–3894.

[59]S.-W. Kim and K. S. Thorne, "Do Vacuum Fluctuations Prevent the Creation of Closed Timelike Curves?" *Physical Review D*, June 15, 1991, pp. 3929–3947. See also L.-X. Li, "Must Time Machines Be Unstable Against Vacuum Fluctuations?" *Classical and Quantum Gravity*, September 1996, pp. 2563–2568.

In at $t=t_0$

Hyperspace

A

A′

Normal
space

Normal
space

Out at
$t<t_0$

B

Hyperspace

B′

v

v
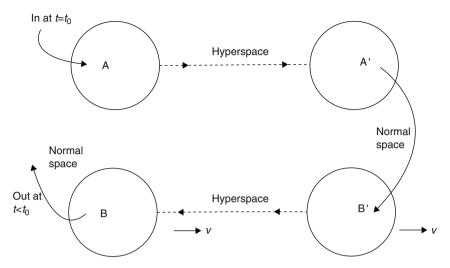
Fig. 6.11 A two-wormhole, Roman ring time machine

but, before it becomes so large as to destroy the time machine, quantum gravity
would cut-off the divergence 'in time' (so to speak!) to save the machine.

Hawking disagreed (in his famous Chronology Protection Conjecture—see note
54 in Chap. 1), arguing that Kim and Thorne had made a crucial error in their
calculations. According to Hawking, the divergence of the stress-energy may
indeed be cut off by quantum gravity, but not before the development of spacetime
disturbances representing perhaps a hundred million times the energy levels asso-
ciated with ordinary chemical binding energies. These would be sufficiently big
disturbances to raise serious doubts about the physical survival of a one-wormhole
time machine, even in the absence of a true stress-energy infinity. Hence the
resurrection of the two-wormhole time machine geometry. Perhaps *it* could avoid
the destructive effect of time-traveling vacuum fluctuations.

If a spacetime contains multiple wormholes, then it is called a *Roman spacetime*
after the physicist Thomas Roman (at Central Connecticut State University), who
was the originator of such spacetimes. Each of these wormholes, individually, is *not*
a time machine. Together, however, they form a time machine geometry called a
Roman configuration (or a *Roman ring*).[60] Here's how.

In Fig. 6.11 two pairs of wormhole mouths are labeled *A*, *A*′ and *B*, *B*′. We
imagine that the *A*, *A*′ wormhole is stationary and that its two mouths are very far
apart in normal space—so far apart, in fact, that if a traveler enters *A* and almost
instantly (because the wormhole handle is very short in hyperspace) emerges from
A′, it will appear to an observer at rest with respect to the wormhole that the traveler
has moved faster than light. That is, entering *A* and exiting *A*′ are events with

[60]M. Visser, "Traversable Wormholes: The Roman Ring," *Physical Review D*, April 15, 1997,
pp. 5212–5214.

spacelike separation. Now, imagine also that the wormhole with mouths B, B' is moving past the first wormhole at speed v. To an observer in this second, *moving* frame of reference, the spacelike separation of entering A and exiting A' can result in the two events being temporally reversed if v is sufficiently large (but still less than the speed of light). Therefore, upon emerging from A' the traveler crosses normal space to the moving wormhole mouth B', enters the wormhole, and then almost instantly emerges from mouth B, and finally travels again through normal space to mouth A. If the traveler can make the two trips in normal space in less time than the backward time shift achieved by the temporal reversal of entering A and exiting A', then we have a time machine

Two simultaneous analyses of the Roman ring time machine each concluded that, for suitable choices of sizes (the radii of the wormhole mouths, the wormhole lengths in normal space, the lateral offset of the two wormholes, and the relative speed of the wormholes), the stress-energy divergence *can* be limited by quantum gravity to an arbitrarily weak level. That is, the two-wormhole time machine is not necessarily destroyed by an unbounded stress-energy on the Cauchy horizon.[61] But not all was now put right.

Visser, in particular, had some strong reservations about the Roman ring. Although he granted that a quantum gravity cut-off the stress-energy divergence *would* probably occur in the Roman ring, he called the required special sizing conditions "bizarre," and asserted that the resulting time machine would be quite useless for a human traveler in any case. For example, he calculated that only if the mouths of the wormholes are separated in normal space by the radius of the universe (!), and only if the wormhole mouths have radii on the order of that of an atomic nucleus, would the cut-off be sufficient to allow the putative time machine to avoid destruction. When Visser reduced the wormholes from universe size to 'merely' that of the distance between the Sun and the Earth, he concluded that it would require energy at the level of the Superconducting Supercollider accelerator to blast an information-bearing message through the narrow wormholes. And even then the 'short' wormholes would provide a maximum penetration into the past of just eight minutes. As Visser put it, "This does not seem to be a workable recipe for studying tomorrow's *Wall Street Journal*.

Lyutikov, on the other hand, took a far less negative stance. He concluded that although Visser's calculations "make it very inconvenient for time travel [by humans]," nevertheless "the [principal] question of the possibility of transmitting information back in time through traversable wormholes would still remain."

The wormholes we have been discussing so far are *static* in time, but another approach is to allow them to be dynamic structures in spacetime. That is, to allow one or more of their parameters to vary with time (perhaps, for example, the throat diameter could collapse). Then, according to one analysis, it is possible to have a

---

[61]M. Visser, "Van Vleck Determinants: Traversable Wormhole Spacetimes," April 15,1994, pp. 3963–3980, and M. Lyutikov, "Vacuum Polarization at the Chronology Horizon of the Roman Spacetime," April 15, 1994, pp. 4041–4048, both in *Physical Review D*.

traversable wormhole *made of normal matter* and, even though it is collapsing, it would take so long to do so that "a space adventurer will have enough time to pass through the throat of the wormhole from one asymptotically flat region [of spacetime outside the entry mouth of the wormhole] to the other [spacetime region outside the exit mouth of the wormhole] before the radius of the throat shrinks to … where the event horizon is developed."[62] Such a dynamic wormhole, it was claimed, satisfies both the weak and the dominant energy[63] conditions, but not the strong energy condition. Thus, gravity would still be repulsive in the throat, but this condition (which would seem to require *exotic* matter) was brushed aside because such a condition is thought to have actually occurred, on a massive scale, during the inflationary stage of the Big Bang[64] (although how that would help in the construction of a wormhole in the future is a bit murky).

Is it reasonable to think 'useable' wormholes, static or otherwise, can be acquired for the purpose of creating a time machine? At one time, Hawking was sure the answer is no, once writing "The philosophy of this paper is … to look for vacuum polarization [the divergence of the stress-energy on the Cauchy horizon] to enforce the chronology protection conjecture."[65] It became increasingly apparent, however, that matters would be a great deal more involved and, as Hawking himself came to admit, "the fact that the energy-momentum tensor fails to diverge [in certain special cases of time machine spacetimes] shows that the back reaction does not enforce chronology protection."[66]

I think the best (and most honest) way to respond to the 'reasonable' question that opened the previous paragraph is with words from 20 years ago, by the Russian astrophysicist Serguei Krasnikov, words still valid today: "It may well be that the vacuum fluctuations do make the time machine unstable, but nothing at present

---

[62]A. Wang and P. S. Letelier, "Dynamical Wormholes and Energy Conditions," *Progress of Theoretical Physics*, July 1995, pp. 137–142. See also L. A. Anchordoqui, *et al.*, "Evolving Wormhole Geometries," *Physical Review D*, January 15, 1998, pp. 829–833.

[63]The dominant energy condition is the weak energy condition *plus* the requirement that any observed energy flux is *never* superluminal.

[64]During inflation the universe is thought to have expanded at a rate far beyond human comprehension. It has been estimated that during the first 10^{-35} second of the Big Bang the universe doubled in each spatial dimension by a factor of two each 10^{-37} second; that is, there were about 100 such doublings. Thus, there was an increase by a factor of $2^{100} \approx 10^{30}$ in each linear dimension of the universe, and the volume increased by the cube of that enormous factor. See Alan Guth, *The Inflationary Universe*, Addison-Wesley 1997.

[65]S. Hawking, "Quantum Coherence and Closed Timelike Curves," *Physical Review D*, November 15, 1995, pp. 5681–5686.

[66]M. J. Cassidy and S. W. Hawking, "Models for Chronology Selection," *Physical Review D*, February 15, 1998, pp. 2372–2380. See also L.-X. Li and J. R. Gott, "Self-Consistent Vacuum for Misner Space and the Chronology Protection Conjecture," *Physical Review Letters*, April 6, 1998, pp. 2980–2983.

suggests this. All we have are a few simple examples. In some of them the energy density diverges at the horizon and in some does not. So, the time machine perhaps is stable and perhaps is not."[67]

The daunting level of technology required to *build* a wormhole (with or without exotic matter) doesn't mean we can't search for existing wormholes. Perhaps, for example, vast wormhole networks were formed naturally at Big Bang time, as described in Gregory Benford's 1997 novel *Foundation's Fear*, where wormholes are "leftovers from the Great Emergence [the Big Bang]." Or perhaps "advanced civilizations" long ago constructed a vast, pan-galactic 'subway system' of wormholes like the one described in Carl Sagan's 1985 novel Co*ntact* (and dramatically illustrated in the 1997 film).

Of course, any such wormhole, if found (via its double-spike light signature, for example), could be a very long way from Earth. It might even be in another galaxy. So, even if we found a wormhole, what could we *do* with it? Surprisingly, maybe a lot. The Russian physicists Igor Novikov and Andrei Lossev (note 56) suggested that a wormhole might be very useful *even if its location is completely unknown, even if we haven't yet even discovered it*! The only assumption they made was that the wormhole has existed for a "sufficiently long time" (and precisely what that means will be explained in just a bit). With that assumption, they showed how to make an information-creating time loop. Here's how they did that.

They began their analysis by assuming that people have no knowledge of how to build spacecraft that can make the interstellar voyage to the distant wormhole, even if they knew in which direction to go to reach the mouth that leads backward in time (mouth B). Instead, they build an automatic spacecraft construction plant that can follow any detailed sequence of instructions provided to it, and then stockpile it with a supply of raw materials (energy, steel, plastic, computers, and so on). When the spacecraft construction is done (*how* that is done is explained in the next paragraph), the last step before launching the spacecraft toward mouth B *will be* to load the on-board computer with the following three pieces of information:

1. The detailed sequence of instructions to be followed in the construction of the spacecraft;
2. The direction from Earth to mouth B;
3. The direction from mouth A (the wormhole exit mouth in the past) back to Earth.

To summarize, people build the automatic plant, load it up with raw materials, *and then withdraw*. This last step is crucial, because it eliminates human free will from further consideration, that is, it removes any temptation to create a bilking paradox. So, what happens next?

Lossev and Novikov suggest that what happens next is that a *very* old spacecraft suddenly appears in the sky and lands next to the automatic construction plant. In its on-board computer are items a, b, and c. Using item a, the automatic plant makes a

---

[67]S. V. Krasnikov, "Quantum Stability of the Time Machine," *Physical Review D*, December 15, 1996, pp. 7322–7327.

new spacecraft, then loads the new on-board computer with items a, b, and c from the *very* old spacecraft's on-board computer, and then the new spacecraft is launched toward mouth B (using the information of item b). The *very* old spacecraft is given an honored place in a museum.

The new spacecraft arrives at the distant mouth B in the far future, by which time it is, of course, an old spacecraft (but not yet a *very* old spacecraft). It then plunges into mouth B and almost immediately emerges from mouth A, in the past. Indeed, it repeats this process as many times as required until it is in the far distant past, at a time even before it left Earth. (It might seem that to do this, the spacecraft's computer memory needs a fourth piece of information, the direction from mouth A back to mouth B, but in fact items b and c are sufficient for the old spacecraft to find its way from A to B.) It is now clear how long the wormhole must have been in existence. The old spacecraft repeatedly uses the wormhole time machine until it is so far in the past that it can cruise back to Earth at normal speed (it knows the way back because of item c) and arrive as a *very* old spacecraft, just in time to be placed in the museum!

As Lossev and Novikov pointed out, this remarkable, looped sequence of events has increased knowledge from what it was at the time just before the automatic construction plant was built. People now know both how to build an interstellar spacecraft, and the locations of both mouths of the wormhole. They also now possess a *very* old, used spacecraft. It is curious to note that although the information in the *very* old spacecraft's computer memory has traveled on a closed time loop, the *very* old spacecraft itself has not. This is because the spacecraft left Earth when new, but arrived back (before it left) as *very* old, whereupon it promptly entered a museum. There is therefore no question about the origin of the *very* old spacecraft, but where did the information of items a, b, and c come from? Lossev and Novikov say it came from the energy gained by the spacecraft as it interacted (will interact?) with the rest of the universe while on its journey.

Nobody said time travel isn't weird!

6.4   Gott's Cosmic String Time Machine

"It's an amazingly simple solution. It doesn't take much physics to understand it."
    —MIT astrophysicist Alan Guth, on Gott's discovery of the cosmic string time machine[68]

"Louise, working out the spacetime geometry of a cosmic string is a hard problem in general relativity. But, given that geometry, all the rest of it is no more than Pythagoras' theorem . . ."
    —a character in Stephen Baxter's 1994 novel *Ring*, agreeing with Guth.

---

[68]Quoted from J. Travis, "Could a Pair of Cosmic Strings Open a Route Into the Past?" *Science*, April 10, 1992, pp. 179–180.

A new way to gain access to closed timelike curves, without the involvement of the exotic matter needed by negative-mass wormholes, was described in 1991 by the Princeton physicist J. Richard Gott.[69] Gott gave exact solutions to Einstein's gravitational field equations for what are called *cosmic strings*, solutions that (1) unlike wormholes, do not violate any of the energy conditions, (2) unlike black holes have no crushing singularities or event horizons, and (3) are not topologically multiply connected.

Cosmic strings are fantastically thin (10^{-28} cm in radius) filaments of pure energy that are thought to stretch the width of the universe and to have an enormous linear mass-energy density of 10^{28} g/cm. To generate closed timelike paths in spacetime, Gott required that either two fast-moving (which means moving at practically the speed of light) parallel cosmic strings pass each other on a near-collision course, or that there be a closed-loop string that collapses in a slightly non-planar manner so that the opposite, nearly straight sides 'just miss.' The gravitational interaction of the passing strings can 'warp' spacetime enough to produce closed timelike curves.

A hint at the possibility of violating causality with strings had appeared before Gott's work, but those authors didn't take the time travel implications seriously. As they wrote, "We argue ... that any realistic model [for a spinning string with angular momentum[70]] ... will not have closed timelike curves."[71] Gott, however, showed that as two strings pass each other, closed timelike loops *do* encircle the strings.

Gott, who appears to be far less rigid in his view of time travel than are many of his fellow physicists, held out an escape to those who pale at the very thought of time travel to the past. Perhaps, he suggested (following in the footsteps of an analysis by Hawking[72]), as the strings (or string-loop sides) pass, a black hole will form with an event horizon that will seal-off the closed timelike curves from any would-be time traveler. Or perhaps, he further suggested, the more realistic case of non-singular strings (that is, strings with non-zero-filament radii) and possessing

---

[69]J. R. Gott, "Closed Timelike Curves Produced by Pairs of Moving Cosmic Strings: Exact Solutions," *Physical Review Letters*, March 4, 1991, pp. 1126–1129.

[70]The two strings in a Gott-pair are *not* necessarily spinning, and no such assumption was made by Gott. They don't even have to be parallel. If the strings have no spin, then it takes two strings to make a time machine. If spin *is* allowed, however, then just a single string will suffice for time travel: see S. Deser and R. Jackiw, "Time Travel?" *Comments on Nuclear and Particle Physics*, September 1992, pp. 337–354.

[71]D. Harari and A. P. Polychronakas, "Gravitational Time Delay Due to a Spinning String," *Physical Review D*, November 15, 1988, pp. 3320–3322.

[72]S. W. Hawking, "Gravitational Radiation from Collapsing Cosmic String Loops," *Physics Letters B*, August 23, 1990, pp. 36–38.
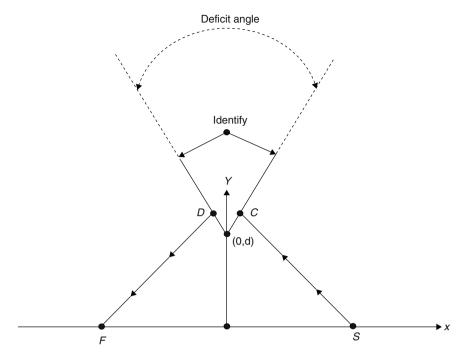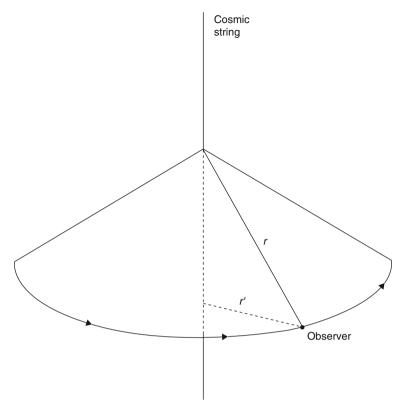
Fig. 6.12 The deficit angle in spacetime formed by a cosmic string

spin would banish the terrifying closed timelike curves. Subsequent analyses along those lines, however, continued to find the time travel implications intact.[73]

Here's how the cosmic string time machine works. In an earlier work,[74] published in 1985, Gott discovered that a cosmic string warps spacetime in a highly characteristic way, as shown in Fig. 6.12. A stationary cosmic string is imagined as perpendicular to the *xy*-plane (the plane of the page) and passing through the page at the point $(0, d)$ on the *y*-axis. The warp produced by the string is as though a wedge of angle 2α (this angle is called the *deficit angle*) were cut out of spacetime and the

[73]See, for example, B. Jensen, "Notes on Spinning Strings," *Classical and Quantum Gravity*, January 1992, pp. L7–L12, H. H. Soleng, "A Spinning String," *General Relativity and Gravitation*, January 1992, pp. 111–117, (the next two are in the *Physical Review D*), B. Jensen and H. H. Soleng, "General-Relativistic Model of a Spinning Cosmic String," May 15, 1992, pp. 3528–3533, and M. Novello and M. C. M. da Silva, "Cosmic Spinning String and Causal Protecting Capsules," January 15, 1994, pp. 825–830.

[74]J. R. Gott, "Gravitational Lensing Effects of Vacuum Strings: Exact Solutions," *The Astrophysical Journal*, January 15, 1985, pp. 422–427. Gott's discovery was independently reported in W. A. Hiscock, "Exact Gravitational Field of a String," *Physical Review D*, June 15, 1985, pp. 3288–3290.

Fig. 6.13 The warped, conical spacetime around a cosmic string, An observer in this spacetime thinks she is distance r from the string, but a 'meta-observer' sees that she is actually distance r' from the string. Thus, if the observer follows a complete circular path around the string, she will travel a distance of $2\pi r' < 2\pi r$. The observer in the spacetime will interpret this result by saying that the angle 2π is really 2π minus 'a deficit'

edges of the cut were then 'glued' together; for example, points C and D are identified as identical. The reason for the term *deficit angle* is that at radius r from the string, a circular path around the string has the reduced length $(2\pi - 2\alpha)r$, and not the usual $2\pi r$ (spacetime around the string, while *locally* flat, is actually 'conical,' as illustrated in Fig. 6.13).

The deficit angle is equal to $8\pi\mu$ radians (in a system of units where G, Newton's gravitational constant, is 1) if the linear mass-energy density μ is expressed in units of Planck masses per Planck length. For example, $\mu = 1$ corresponds to 1.35×10^{28} g/cm (think of something on the order of the mass of the Earth per inch of the string). For 'more typical' values—say a 'mere' $\mu = 10^{22}$ g/cm, $2\alpha = 0.001°$. While Gott's paper had appeared 5 months before Hiscock's (see note 74), it is evident that Hiscock's work was done before he became aware of Gott's. Both papers treat exact derivations of the deficit angle but, in fact, the correct expression had actually been

published 4 years earlier (but from a linearized form of the gravitational field equations and so the result was not as 'conclusive' as are Gott's and Hiscock's)[75]

Now, consider the two points S and F on the x-axis at $(x_0, 0)$ and $(-x_0, 0)$ in Fig. 6.12. Suppose we want to send photons from S to F. In normal, 'unwarped' spacetime, the direct path from S to F through the origin has length $2x_0$. There is also another possible path, however, S to C/D to F, that loops out and around the cosmic string. Indeed, this second path is simply the path a gravitationally lensed photon would take (an observer at F would see *two* images of S) and this—*not* time travel—is the issue that originally attracted Gott's attention to cosmic strings.[76] If the deficit angle were zero, then this alternative path would always be longer than $2x_0$, for any value of x_0. For the case of $2\alpha > 0$, however, if x_0 is large enough $(x_0 \gg d)$, then it is possible for 'around the string and over the missing spacetime wedge' path to be shorter than the direct path.
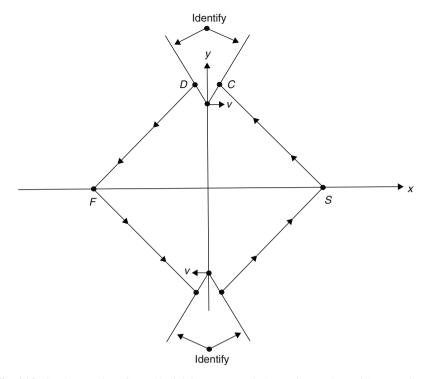
The indirect path provides a way for a *sub*luminal trip (say, by rocket) from S to F to beat a photon traveling on the direct path. That is, the two events of the 'rocket leaving S' and the 'rocket arriving at F' are spacelike separated. Thus, it is possible to find a moving frame of reference in which these two events are *reversed in temporal order*. In that frame of reference, the cosmic string (which is stationary in the reference frame of S and in that of F) will move—at speed v, say—in the $+x$ direction, and in that frame of reference the rocket will arrive at F *before* it leaves S.[77]

Then to complete the construction of a closed timelike path, simply repeat the process as shown in Fig. 6.14. That is, after the rocket arrives at F, have it turn around and fly back to S out-and-around and through the deficit angle spacetime warp due to a *second* cosmic string on the negative y-axis and perpendicular to the xy-plane. This second string is moving at speed $-v$ (that is, opposite to the first string), so the rocket will arrive at S before it leaves F. But that means it arrives at S before it leaves S; that is, the rocket has traveled into the past. In other words, the rocket has traveled into the past. This entire process is precisely the same idea behind the two-wormhole Roman-ring time machine discussion from the previous section.

Now, instead of having two oppositely moving reference frames, one in which the top, stationary string at $(0, d)$ appears to be moving at $+v$ and another frame in

---

[75]A. Vilenkin, "Gravitational Field of Vacuum Domain Walls and Strings," *Physical Review D*, February 15, 1981, pp. 852–857.

[76]Just as discussed earlier in the context of wormholes, gravitational lensing may offer a way to detect cosmic strings. See, for example, the two papers by D. L. Ossipov, "Diffraction of Light by a Cosmic String," November 1995, pp. 765–771, and "Contribution of Strings to the Observed Variability of Extragalactic Sources of Radiation," September 1996, pp. 419–425, both in *JETP Letters*.

[77]For this to happen, however, v must be very close to the speed of light. Gott (see note 69) showed that with $v = \tanh(\theta)$, the condition for the rocket to arrive back at S before it leaves S is $\cosh(\theta) \sin(\alpha) > 1$, where α is one-half the deficit angle. For $\mu = 10^{22}$ g/cm, this gives $v = 0.99999999995$ (times the speed of light).

Fig. 6.14 Gott's spacetime, formed by joining two oppositely moving versions of the spacetime in Fig. 6.13

which the bottom, stationary string appears to be moving at $-v$, we can imagine an observer in the *stationary center-of mass* frame watching two strings that are moving at $+v$ and $-v$. This leaves the situation unchanged, so in the center-of-mass frame the rocket does travel into the past, arriving back at S before it leaves S. That is, the rocket has traveled all the way around a closed timelike world line. Note, too, that the geometric condition mentioned earlier of $x_0 \gg d$ immediately implies that for x_0 *not* sufficiently large, there isn't a closed timelike path from S to F and then back to S; that is, there is a region in Gott's spacetime where such time travel journeys *cannot occur*.

Another physicist pursued Gott's analysis in an attempt to see whether these 'time travel paths' are *created* as the strings approach each other or, instead, if the paths exist at other times as well.[78] This important question gets to the idea of whether such time machine paths can be *intentionally created* by humans via a dynamical process (a *strong* time machine), or whether all such paths have existed since the formation of the universe (a *weak* time machine). This issue involves Hawking's

---

[78]A. Ori, "Rapidly Moving Cosmic Strings and Chronology Protection," *Physical Review D*, October 15, 1991, pp. 2214–2215.

chronology protection conjecture, which you'll recall asserts that the laws of physics will always (somehow) prevent the creation of a time machine. One reason Hawking repeatedly gave for believing the Conjecture is the apparent absence of time travelers from the future among us now (in their past). The only possible exception allowed by the Conjecture is the creation of closed timelike loops at the moment the universe was created (at that moment there *was no past* for time travelers to invade!). Ori proved that the closed timelike loops around Gott's cosmic strings are *always* present: that is, a time machine is *not created* by the near collision of the strings. Thus, Hawking's Conjecture is nor refuted by Gott's spacetime.

One very curious issue is *where* the closed time loops are before the strings pass one another. As mentioned briefly by Ori, and further discussed by others,[79] the time loops are initially at spatial infinity. To this concern, Gott and a colleague made the following very strong reply:

> "[A problem] Deser *et al.* present with respect to the Gott spacetime is that it contains CTC's at spacelike infinity; this is supposed to be an unacceptable boundary condition. We wonder, however, how they know so much about boundary conditions at spacelike infinity. In our own Universe we do not know what spacelike infinity looks like (if it exists) since we have not seen it yet. We certainly have no way of knowing whether or not there are CTC's there. The working physicist is, of course, free to impose simple and convenient boundary conditions (e.g., asymptotic flatness) on a system in order to isolate and understand the processes occurring within it. *But boundary conditions are tools of physicists, and they should not be confused with laws of physics* [my emphasis]. There may be such laws of nature that restrict the possible structure of spacelike infinity, and even prohibit CTC's there, but in the absence of evidence such laws should not be postulated *ad hoc*."[80]

Still, as Ori had observed the year before, having time loops collapsing inward from infinity toward humans who might, fortuitously, wish to use them at *just the instant they so conveniently arrive*, is "a situation which has little to do with the creation of a time machine by a *human being* [my emphasis]."[81]

The most damning objection to Gott's cosmic string time machine came, ironically, from Gott himself. The two-string spacetime of Fig. 6.14 might actually, he and a colleague wrote (see Li and Gott, note 66) be destabilized by the non-zero mass of any would-be time traveler. They suggest that this concern could perhaps be 'solved' by assuming that the time traveler and her spaceship have a spherically symmetric mass distribution surrounded by a negative-mass shell to give zero net mass (and thus a zero net gravitational field that would *not* destroy the closed timelike curves of the strings). But that, they further observed, would negate the crucial advantage—no exotic matter and so no violation of the weak energy condition—that a cosmic string time machine enjoys over a wormhole time machine.

---

[79]See, for example, S. Deser, *et al.*, "Physical Cosmic Strings Do Not Generate Closed Timelike Curves," *Physical Review Letters*, January 20, 1992, pp. 267–269.

[80]M. P. Headrick and J. R. Gott, "(2+1)-Dimensional Spacetimes Containing Closed Timelike Curves," *Physical Review D*, December 15, 1994, pp. 7244–7259.

[81]A. Ori, "Must Time-Machine Construction Violate the Weak Energy Condition?" *Physical Review Letters*, October 18, 1993, pp. 2517–2520.

Does a trip around a pair of cosmic strings present other problems *aside* from the sheer fantastic physics of the strings themselves? Well, I think "turning the rocket around at *F* and flying back to *S*" is a lot easier to write than it would be to actually do! The entire trip has to occur while the strings (moving at essentially light speed) are in a position *to be* flown around. As one character says to another in Stephen Baxter's novel *Ring*, "Louise, the strings are traveling just under the speed of light—within three decimal places of it, actually. [Our ship is] traveling at a little over half-light speed. The turning curves, and the accelerations, are incredible . . ." I think so! And I do wonder who—*or what*(!)—is actually controlling a *maneuvering* rocket traveling faster than $\frac{1}{2}c$?
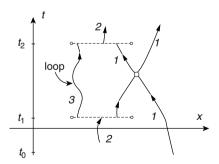
6.5   Cutting and Warping Spacetime

"The warp drive spacetime of Alcubierre is impossible to set up . . . one needs to transcend the speed of light in order to construct the warp drive in the first place . . . put roughly, you need one to make one!"[82]

In this chapter we've talked about the physics of three specific time machine 'implementations': the rotating cylinder, the wormhole, and the cosmic string. One can also discuss the 'construction' of a time machine in a more geometrical (yet still physical) way by performing what is called *spacetime surgery* to arrive at what is often referred to as a *Deutsch-Politzer spacetime* (after the two physicists who are closely associated with it[83]). With this surgery we arrive at a simple spacetime picture of the grandfather paradox (as you'll soon see).

We start with a flat, two-dimensional Minkowski spacetime, the *x*, *t* system in Fig. 6.15, and then imagine that (somehow) two *cuts* in that spacetime come into

Fig. 6.15 Minkowski spacetime transformed into a time machine with two 'cuts'

[82]D. H. Coule, "No Warp Drive," *Classical and Quantum Gravity*, August 1998, pp. 2523–2527, offering a pessimistic view of warp drive.

[83]See D. Deutsch, "Quantum Mechanics Near Closed Timelike Lines," November 15, 1991, pp. 3197–3217, and H. D. Politzer, "Simple Quantum Systems with Closed Timelike Curves," November 15, 1992, pp. 4470–4476, both in *Physical Review D*.

existence. These cuts are the two horizontal dashed lines in the figure, one with an arrowhead going into it, and one with an arrowhead coming out of it (each labeled with '2'). We further imagine that each cut has two edges, with the upper edge of the lower cut 'glued' to the lower edge of the upper cut (and the lower edge of the lower cut 'glued' to the upper edge of the upper cut

These 'gluing's' explain why the arrowhead marked 2 into the lower cut at time t_1 emerges from the upper cut at time $t_2 > t_1$, and why the arrowhead marked 1 into the upper cut at time t_2 emerges from the lower cut at time $t_1 < t_2$. The 2-line is the world line of a particle that simply disappears from spacetime during $t_1 < t < t_2$, while the 3-line is the world line of a particle trapped in an endless time loop (remember the 1993 film *Groundhog Day*?). Clearly, the sub-region of spacetime between the two cuts is not 'normal' spacetime. In fact, the 1-line shows that we have encountered a time machine spacetime, as a particle entering it from $t < t_1$ (passing to the right of the lower cut) can enter the lower edge of upper cut at $t = t_2$ and so emerge from the upper edge of the lower cut at the *earlier* time $t = t_1$ and thus interact with itself before it entered the upper edge! And that, of course, sets-up a grandfather paradox situation.

This picture leaves one thing obviously (and glaringly) unexplained—just *how* does one *cut and glue* spacetime? The reason, in spite of that question, that physicists nonetheless study situations depicted in Fig. 6.15, is because it allows them to explore what *could* happen *if* through some (yet unknown) process a time machine spacetime should suddenly appear. Who says physicists aren't optimists?

The idea of modifying spacetime itself to 'make' a time machine (look back in Sect. 3.5, at the discussion there on what it means to solve the gravitational field equations) has also appeared in connection with another of science fiction's favorite ideas, one almost as spectacular as time travel: *the FTL warp drive*. The lure of interstellar FTL travel, for both science fiction enthusiasts and physicists is, of course, simply undeniable. Consider, for example, these words by a Russian physicist:

> "Everybody knows that nothing can move faster than light. The regrettable consequences of this fact are also well known. Most of the interesting or promising candidates for colonization are so distant from us that the light barrier seems to make an insurmountable obstacle for any expedition. It is, for example, 200 pc [1 parsec is equal to about 3.2 light-years] from us to the Pole star, 500 pc to Deneb [the brightest star in the constellation Cygnus], and ~10 kpc to the center of the Galaxy, not to mention other galaxies (hundreds of kiloparsecs). It makes no sense to send an expedition if we know that thousands of years will elapse before we receive its report. On the other hand, the prospects of being confined forever to the Solar System without any hope of visiting other civilizations or examining closely black holes, supergiants, and other marvels are so gloomy that it seems necessary to search for some way out."[84]

---

[84]S. V. Krasnikov, "Hyperfast Travel in General Relativity," *Physical Review D*, April 15, 1998, pp. 4760–4766. Possible travel distances have been greatly reduced since Krasnikov wrote. In 2011, for example, astronomers announced the discovery of a red dwarf star with three planets (each of mass comparable to Earth's), all in the star's so-called *habitable zone* (where water can exist on the surface in the liquid state). All three planets are solid (not gaseous as are Jupiter,

In response to that, we might ask if *FTL* trips will someday be made by humans in spaceships? *Maybe*—but only if such journeys can be made in a very *unordinary* spacetime. That is, continuing with Krasnikov's passage:

> "The point ... is that [whereas the light barrier exists in special relativity] in general relativity one can try to change the time necessary for some travel not only by varying one's speed [as in special relativity] but also ... by changing the distance one has to cover."

To understand what Krasnikov was getting at, let's consider the theoretical analysis made 4 years earlier by the Mexican mathematical physicist Miguel Alcubierre on, astonishingly, how to make a *Star Trek* warp drive![85] He did this by demonstrating a spacetime metric that, by literally expanding and contracting the local spacetime of a spaceship and its neighborhood, achieves space travel between any two points, no matter how far apart, in arbitrarily little elapsed time (for both the spaceship, and external non-spaceship observers, there is no time dilation effect[86]).

Alcubierre opened his analysis with words designed to explain how FTL travel is possible, given all that I've told you earlier in this book about how FTL travel is *not* possible (according to *special* relativity). As he wrote,

> "Since our everyday experience is based on a Euclidean space, it is natural to believe that if nothing can locally travel faster than light then given two places that are separated by a proper spatial distance D, it is impossible to make a round trip between them in a time less than $2D/c$ (where c is the speed of light), as measured by an observer that always remains at the place of departure. Of course, from our knowledge of special relativity we know that the time measured by the person making the round trip can be made arbitrarily small if his (or her) speed approaches that of light. However, the fact within the framework of general relativity and without the need to introduce non-trivial topologies (wormholes), one can actually make such a round trip in an arbitrarily short time as measured by an observer that remained at rest will probably come as a surprise to many people."

That last sentence is almost surely a grand understatement, and Alcubierre quickly went on to explain.

> "The basic idea can be more easily understood if we think for a moment of the inflationary phase of the early Universe, and consider the relative speed of separation of two co-moving observers. It is easy to convince oneself that, if we define this relative speed as the rate of change of proper spatial distance over proper time, we will obtain a value that is much larger than the speed of light. This doesn't mean that our observers will be travelling faster

---

Saturn, Neptune and Uranus) and so, as potentially habitable, are candidates for a visit. The star and its planets are 'only' 22 light-years from Earth. In *Star Trek*, FTL speed is described by the *warp factor*, which is the cube-root of the multiple of the speed of light at which the spaceship *Enterprise* travels. So, for example, to make the journey from Earth to the red dwarf in one month of ship time (see ahead also to note 86), the required FTL speed would be 264 times the speed of light, or warp factor 6.4. In science fiction, a *warp drive* is imagined as the means for achieving such speeds.

[85]M. Alcubierre, "The Warp Drive: Hyper-fast Travel Within General Relativity," *Classical and Quantum Gravity*, May 1994, pp. L73–L77.

[86]That is, the passage of time on the spaceship is *identical* with the passage of time on Earth. *With the warp drive, there is no twin paradox.*

than light: *they always move inside their local light-cones* [my emphasis]. The enormous speed of separation comes from the expansion of spacetime itself."

In a similar fashion, a *contraction* of spacetime can result in being able to *approach* an object at FTL speed.

In fact, we've actually already encountered one way to obey special relativity's *local* limit on speeds to that of light, while still achieving superluminal speed on a *global* level. That is, we *could* do that *if* general relativity really does allow wormholes in spacetime (what Alcubierre calls a "non-trivial topology"). That's because we can imagine a wormhole connecting two points in space that are light-years apart in that space, and yet the distance *through* the wormhole itself is quite short. Thus, a spaceship transiting the wormhole could do so at *sub*luminal speed at all times, and yet to an observer in normal space the speed would appear to be far in excess of the speed of light.

Determining just *how* to achieve the spacetime warp, however, is far different from simply demonstrating that such a warp is consistent with the general theory of relativity. The 1996 movie *Star Trek: First Contact*, for example, is about the invention of the warp drive in the twenty-first century. The whole thing fits inside a discarded ICBM which, as you'll soon see, is a *vast* underestimation of the technology required to control the energies associated with a real warp drive. For a spacetime engineer to *build* the warp drive bubble means she has to determine the required mass-energy distribution that results in Alcubierre's assumed spacetime metric. And that brings us to the central problem of the warp drive—the warp drive engine of an FTL starship requires (just like a wormhole) exotic matter (negative energy)—stuff that violates all the usually assumed energy conditions of general relativity.[87]

The weak, strong, and dominant energy conditions are *all* violated because the Alcubierre spacetime warp requires a negative energy density in the 'skin' of the warp bubble. As discussed earlier, in connection with wormholes, negative energy density *can* be achieved on a *micro*scopic scale, but for the Alcubierre warp drive we are talking about a *lot* of exotic matter. In their paper, Pfenning and Ford calculated that, for what they called "a macroscopically useful warp drive" with a radius of 100 m "so that we may fit a ship inside [the warp bubble]," the negative energy required for the warp bubble is on the order of, as they so graphically put it, "roughly ten orders of magnitude greater than the [energy of the] total mass of the entire universe."

Two years later, after making some adjustments to the spacetime metric assumed by Alcubierre (that is, to the distribution of mass-energy to produce the warp bubble), it was shown that the negative energy required by the warp drive could

[87]M. J. Pfenning and L. H. Ford, "The Unphysical Nature of 'Warp Drive'," *Classical and Quantum Gravity*, July 1997, pp. 1743–1751. See also K. D. Olum, "Superluminal Travel Requires Negative Energies," *Physical Review Letters*, October 26, 1998, pp. 3567–3570.

be greatly reduced.[88] The reduction is, in fact, spectacular, but only in a relative sense (you can reduce a mass that is ten orders of magnitude greater than that of the entire universe by a *huge* factor and still be left with a pretty stupendous number). The reduced amount of negative energy required for a warp bubble able to contain a human-sized spaceship is now down to 'only' "of the order of a few solar masses $[-1.4 \times 10^{30}$ kg]."

As mentioned earlier, in connection with the Casimir effect and its theoretical use in a wormhole time machine, although quantum field theory does not preclude negative energy densities, that does not mean it is possible to observe arbitrarily large negative densities for arbitrarily long times. In fact, certain quantum inequalities (QI's), much like Heisenberg's uncertainty principle, have been established that place bounds on the magnitude and duration of observable negative energy density.[89] These QI's have the general form of

$$\widehat{\rho} t_0^4 > -C$$

where C is a positive constant that depends on the nature of the particular quantum field being considered, t_0 is the time duration, and $\widehat{\rho}$ is the integrated energy density along a finite section of a geodesic (free fall) world line. The form of the QI shows that as t_0 increases, $\widehat{\rho}$ must quickly decrease. For example, if t_0 doubles, then $\widehat{\rho}$ must decrease by a factor of *sixteen*, a result that caused Ford and Roman to conclude that it "appears probable that nature will always prevent us from producing gross macroscopic effects with negative energy."

'When it rains it pours,' goes an old saying, and that applies to the warp drive's potential difficulties: in addition to the need for exotic matter, there are two more concerns as well, both *operational* in detail. First, running into any space matter encountered by the leading edges of the warp bubble (where spacetime is shrinking), such as interstellar dust, would certainly generate intense radiation. The ship, then, should carry plenty of shielding which, curiously, would not be a problem because the energy density of the warp, itself, is *independent* of the mass in the bubble's interior. In any case, the warp drive should clearly not be engaged anywhere near any sizeable chunk of matter, like a planet (and, indeed, that constraint was followed in *Star Trek*). Second an even more severe problem was discovered by Krasnikov. In unpublished work he showed that the ship at the center of the bubble is not causally connected to the edges of the bubble. That is, the ship's

---

[88]C. van den Broeck, "A Warp Drive with More Reasonable Total Energy Requirements," *Classical and Quantum Gravity*, December 1999, pp. 3973–3979.

[89]L. H. Ford and T. A. Roman, "Restrictions on Negative Energy Density in Flat Spacetime," *Physical Review D*, February 15, 1997, pp. 2082–2089. For some interesting remarks about the QI's, see J. F. Woodward, "Twists of Fate: Can We Make Traversable Wormholes in Spacetime?" *Foundations of Physics Letters*, April 1997, pp. 153–181.

crew could *not* create a warp bubble on demand and, after it had been created, could not control it on demand.[90]

It is important to both understand what that means, as well as what it does *not* mean. The causality issue does *not* mean that Alcubierre warp bubbles are impossible to create (perhaps they are, but not because of a lack of causality). It only means that whatever action is required to change the spacetime metric to make a warp bubble *has to already have been done before the decision to use the bubble is made*. Thus, a warp bubble wouldn't be of any use for a starship that needs to escape a sudden, unexpected threat. But, as Everett and Roman cautiously observe, the warp bubble might have a more mundane use: "Suppose space has been warped to create a bubble traveling from Earth to some distant star, e.g., Deneb, at superluminal speed. A spaceship, appropriately located with respect to the bubble trajectory, could then choose to enter the bubble, rather like a passenger catching a passing trolley car, and thus make the superluminal journey."

At the end of his paper (note 85) Alcubierre briefly speculated on the possibility of using his superluminal warp drive to build a time machine (showing, again, the intimate connection between the two concepts—look again at note 12 in Chap. 1 for how the connection between FTL and time travel appeared in pulp science fiction), but didn't show *how*. That was done 2 years later by Everett using, not surprisingly, an argument he called "reminiscent of the 'reinterpretation principle' ... which played an important role in discussions of the physics of tachyons."[91]

In an attempt to avoid the Alcubierre bubble's causality problem, Krasnikov looked for a different, causal superluminal spacetime metric. This he succeeded in finding[92] but, rather than describing a bubble, Krasnikov's warp is in the shape of a tube. The interior of the tube is flat spacetime, just as in the case of the bubble warp, but unlike the bubble there would be a causal link between the spaceship crew and the tube. Just as the warp bubble requires very thin walls (on the order of a few thousand Planck lengths) of negative energy, so does the Krasnikov tube warp. Unlike the bubble warp, however, the tube warp stretches the entire length of any proposed trip, so the total negative energy in the warp is incredibly huge. For a tube a mere one meter long and one meter wide, for example, the total negative energy is 10^{28} solar masses, and to create a tube from Earth to just the nearest star would require 10^{44} solar masses of negative energy![93]

One curious feature of the Krasnikov warp is that the *outbound* leg of a round trip cannot be made in less time than required by light. *But* on the on the return half

---

[90]A. E. Everett and T. A. Roman, "Superluminal Subway: the Krasnikov tube," *Physical Review D*, August 15, 1997, pp. 2100–2108.

[91]A. E. Everett, "Warp Drive and Causality," *Physical Review D*, June 15, 1996, pp. 7365–7368. Recall the discussion of the RP in Chap. 5.

[92]See notes 84 and 90.

[93]In the same manner as the huge negative energy of the Alcubierre warp drive was later reduced (see note 88), the Krasnikov tube's enormous negative energy requirement was later significantly reduced: see P. Gravel and J. Plante, "Simple and Double Walled Krasnikov Tubes I: tubes with low mass," *Classical and Quantum Gravity*, February 2004, pp. L7–L9.

of the journey, a traveler would find the spacetime metric so altered (because of mass-energy manipulations purposely made on the outbound half) that she would move "backwards in time." The net result is that the round trip could end arbitrarily soon after it started! As Everett and Roman cautiously concluded, the Krasnikov tube is a "very unlikely possibility," but it would make a *wonderful* science fiction gadget, don't you think?

While the Alcubierre warp may seem to be an incredible discovery (it *is*), it was not a unique one. That's because just 8 years later a different warp metric was discovered by the Portuguese mathematician José Natário, in which the expansion/contraction of spacetime does *not* occur. As Natário wrote, this signature feature of the Alcubierre warp drive "is but a marginal consequence of the choice [for the spacetime metric/mass-energy distribution]."[94] Rather than thinking of the warp bubble as being propelled by the push-pull of spacetime expansion/contraction, Natário wrote that "one could best describe the warp-drive spacetime as 'sliding' the warp-bubble region through space": that is, as analogous to a California surfer riding a wavefront. The surfer is motionless with respect to the water in the immediate vicinity of his board, and yet his speed with respect to the rapidly approaching shore is decidedly non-zero.

The idea of a manipulated or *warped* spacetime allowing time travel was an early arrival in science fiction. Consider, for example, the 1930(!) story in which the narrator (one Thomas Jenkins) walks 18,000 years into the future. In an editorial footnote (a device commonly used in early pulp fiction to inject scientific verisimilitude), we are told that "Jenkins had evidently fallen into a warp in space . . . a fault, we might say, borrowing a geologic term, in the curvature of space. Through this warp he had been thrown clear out of our three dimensions into a fourth. There he slid in time over to the other side [of the fault] into the same spot in the three-dimensional world, but into a different era in time."[95]

That was a flawed explanation, with its talk of space rather than of spacetime, but some authors eventually learned to do better. For example, *folded spacetime* as a mechanism for time travel is used in a 1940s cautionary tale on the potential horrors of the atomic bomb. In that story, published 2 years after the atomic bombings in Japan, the world 15 years hence experiences a terrible atomic war. As the time traveler in the tale explains, "During the unprecedented release of atomic energy that arouse during the simultaneous bombings of our cities, something happened to the very continuum in which we exist . . . A crook, a twist, a fold—explain it how you will, I accidently stumbled upon an electronic circuit that would create a field that would enable passage from one folded section [of spacetime] to the adjacent section. The fold proved to be about fifteen years in length . . . ."[96]

---

[94]J. Natário, "Warp Drive with Zero Expansion," *Classical and Quantum Gravity*, March 2002, pp. 1157–1165.

[95]N. Schachner and A. L. Zagat, "In 20,000 A.D.," *Wonder Stories*, September 1930.

[96]R. F. Jones, "Pete Can Fix It," *Astounding Science Fiction*, February 1947.

As Alcubierre and Natário showed, it will take a lot more than a mere electronic circuit to warp spacetime for either FTL or time travel, but at least even the early science fiction pulp writers understood that—*somehow*—a spacetime warping would be required.

The Alcubierre FTL warp drive appeared as the scientific basis for a modern science fiction novel, where at one point we read of a curious optical feature of an FTL spaceship, one I haven't seen mentioned in the physics literature: "This is a ship that traveled faster than light. It's visible as it travels; its warp bubble emits a cascade of exotic radiation . . . but it outruns its own image. So the ship arrives first and the light has to catch up, all the photons it emitted back along its path arriving at mere light speed. The older images arrive last, and you get this effect as if the ship was receding, not arriving."[97]

Another quite interesting feature of Alcubierre's warp drive is that the spaceship crew would experience no acceleration forces, as the ship is always in *free fall*. This may explain why the *Enterprise* crew isn't flattened when Mr. Sulu engages that ship's warp drive. The spaceship is surrounded by a "bubble" of warped spacetime that is swept along by the combined push-pull effect of the expanding spacetime behind the craft and the shrinking spacetime in the front. The ship, itself, resides in the *flat* spacetime interior of the warp bubble. An amusing way to think of this is to imagine a fish (space traveler), inside an aquarium (the warp bubble), which has been tossed into a swiftly flowing river. An observer at the edge of the river sees the aquarium move by her at high speed while, for the fish (swimming in the *still* waters of its aquarium), all is serene because *it is at rest with respect to its local environment*. Thus, the Alcubierre warp drive realizes yet another one of science fiction's wonderful gadgets: the *reactionless* spaceship drive. That is, "the warp bubble moves by interacting with the geometry of spacetime instead of expending reaction mass [as do jet and rocket engines] . . . and the spaceship is simply carried along with it."[98] In picturesque terms, the warp drive starship is like a surfer who makes her own waves.

And so we see, with each passing decade, more and more of science fiction departing from the make-believe to the pages of physics journals.

---

[97]S. Baxter, *Ark*, Gollancz 2009. The spaceship in this work travels at three times the speed of light (warp factor 1.44, as explained in note 84).

[98]F. S. N. Lobo and M. Visser, "Fundamental Limitations on 'Warp Drive' Spacetimes," *Classical and Quantum Gravity*, December 2004, pp. 5871–5892.

6.6   For Further Discussion

The connection between FTL speeds and backward time travel made the jump from theoretical physics to popular culture very quickly. It was in the British humor weekly *Punch*, for example, that the famous (but nearly always misquoted—see note 113 in Chap. 3, which doesn't have it quite right) limerick by A. H. R. Buller (1874–1944) first appeared (December 19, 1923, p. 591):

> *"There was a young lady named Bright Whose speed was far faster than light, She set out one day In a relative way And returned on the previous night."*

Where *Punch* dared to go, Hollywood could not be far behind. Indeed, in this case it was actually there first, with the 1922 one-reel silent comedy film *The Sky Splitter*. This was just a short film (feature pictures generally had at least four reels), so it isn't clear just how widely distributed and viewed it may have been. The story is that of a scientist testing a new spaceship; when it exceeds the speed of light, he begins to relive his life. This all shows that today's fascination, so common in popular culture, of the latest developments in theoretical physics, is nothing new. Why do you think this is so? That is, why (for example) do so many of those who flock to science fiction movies of interstellar invasions (like the 1996 *Independence Day* and its 2016 sequel), nonetheless have no conception of the unlikely possibility of such invasions because of the sheer magnitude of interstellar distances? Distances so immense that, even at the speed of light, it takes 4 *years* to travel to the Sun's nearest stellar neighbor, and *millions* of years to reach the Milky Way's nearest neighboring galaxy? (The vastness of interstellar distances is, as mentioned in the text, the reason for the fascination in warp drives in both science fiction and physics.).

In wormhole and cosmic string time machines, and with warp drives, we encountered the idea of negative mass-energy in the form of 'exotic matter' (see note 39 again). Something like negative mass actually appeared in fiction long ago, in the 1827 novel *A Voyage to the Moon* by "Joseph Atterly," a pseudonym for George Tucker, a professor of moral philosophy at the University of Virginia. (One of Tucker's students was Edgar Allen Poe, who almost surely was influenced by Tucker's book to write his own moon tale, the 1835 "The Unparalleled Adventure of One Hans Pfall.") The trip in Tucker's work was powered by a metal called *lunarium*, which repels Earth.

This is *not* the same sort of stuff as Wells' "Cavorite," a metallic alloy that is "transparent" to gravity and that appears in his 1901 *The First Men in the Moon*. Wells' competitor in the 'scientific romance' genre was, of course, Jules Verne. Wells was a visionary who looked far beyond just the next few decades, while Verne was a 'practical engineer' who, for example, got *his* characters to the Moon by the direct method of simply shooting them out of a 900-foot long cannon with 400,000 pounds of guncotton! (Wells' vision *could* sometimes fail him, as it did about the imminent likelihood of airplanes in his 1901 *Anticipations*. He believed they *would* be developed by the year 2000, and maybe even before 1950, but of course just 2 years later . . .) In a 1903 magazine interview, Verne revealed how he felt about the difference between his and Wells' work: "It occurs to me that his stories do not repose on very scientific bases . . . He goes to Mars [sic] in an airship, which he constructs of a metal which does away with the law of gravitation. C'*est très joli* [this is all very nice], but show me the metal. Let him produce it." Today the cry from those who dislike wormholes is the Verne-like 'show us the exotic matter!' If Wells and Verne were writing today, how do you think each would respond to that challenge? Would the possible existence (or not) of exotic matter be an issue about which both would *agree*?

Write a time-loop short story based on Lossev and Novikov's idea of a 'very old spacecraft' interacting with a remote wormhole.

Imagine an electronic circuit **A** that has the following behavior: **A**'s input signal is a function of time that has a well-defined maximum value (what electrical engineers call the *peak value*). The circuit's output signal, produced in response to the input, also has a well-defined peak value. Now, imagine further that the output peak occurs *before* the input peak. There is, in fact, nothing paradoxical or impossible about that, and such a circuit can (and has) been constructed, as I'll tell you shortly. Next, suppose that we take **A**'s output signal and use it as the input to another circuit **B** that, when it's input exceeds a certain level, disconnects the input to **A** *before* that input reaches *its* peak value. Circuit **B** can also be constructed in the real world. Indeed, you can read about how to construct **A** and **B** in two papers by M. W. Mitchell and R. Y. Chiao, "Causality and Negative Group Delays in a Simple Bandpass

Amplifier," *American Journal of Physics*, January 1998, pp. 14–19, and "Negative Group Delay and 'Fronts' in a Causal System: An Experiment With Very Low Frequency Bandpass Amplifiers," *Physics Letters A*, June 16, 1997, pp. 133–138. What makes all this interesting here is that this "seems to open the way for a variant of the time travel paradox in which the traveler journeys to the past and kills his grandfather before his own father is born," an observation made in Garrison *et al.*, "Superluminal Signals: Causal Loop Paradoxes Revisited," *Physics Letters A*, August 10, 1998, pp. 19–25. This electronic version of the grandfather paradox does indeed follow if one substitutes "input peak" for "grandfather" and "output peak" for "time traveler." But before you think this gadget is a time machine, be assured that its designers also showed that, unlike the causally related grandfather and time traveler, the two peaks are *not* so related. Read these three papers and write a summary report of how circuits **A** and **B** work, and why the two peaks are not so related.

You'll recall that "an advanced civilization" is thought to be required to create a useable wormhole (note 27). The common phrase used by astrophysicists who are interested in the possibility of extraterrestrial life is *arbitrarily advanced civilization*, with a distinction made for at least three progressively higher stages of 'advancement.' Very roughly, Types I, II, and III advanced civilizations are those that, respectively, have the technology to (a) control something like 10^{13} W (ten million megawatts) for massive interstellar radio broadcasts, (b) a technology to control the energy output of the civilization's planet's parent star (10^{27} W), and (c) a technology to control the energy output of the civilization's home galaxy (10^{38} W). We are, today, short of being even a Type I civilization, and it would probably take *at least* a Type III civilization to build a wormhole. Indeed, Stephen Baxter's 1993 novel *Timelike Infinity*, of beings who can manipulate *constellations of galaxies*, seems to assume a Type IV civilization will be required. Since there are typically 10^{11} stars in a galaxy, going from 10^{27} W for a star to 10^{38} watts for a galaxy is consistent. But where do astrophysicists get 10^{27} W for a single star? Here's a calculation for you to perform, to confirm this value for yourself, starting with the experimental fact (not difficult to repeat, as it's at the level of a junior high school science fair project using a solar cell and a few common electrical components) that the solar power level at Earth's equator is 1200 W per m^2. Then, using the fact that the Earth's orbital radius around the Sun is 93 million miles, compute the total power (energy per second) radiated by the Sun. (You should get a number that is somewhat

smaller than 10^{27} W, which is 'explained' by observing that the Sun is really a quite ordinary star, exceeded in size by many other stars in the Milky Way. Next, you'll find, in most books on astrophysics, the statement that the nuclear fusion reactions that power the Sun convert *four million tons* of the Sun's mass to pure energy *every second*. Confirm that your number for the power output of the Sun is consistent with that claim. (Remember Einstein's famous formula $E = mc^2$, that the speed of light is $c = 3 \times 10^8$ m/s, and that 1 kg $\approx$ 2.2 pounds. In the MKS system of units (meters/kilograms/seconds) one watt = one joule (of energy) per second, where to give you some perspective on what a joule is, the chemical energy released by burning a gallon of gasoline is about 100 MJ.

Appendix A
Old Friends Across Time (A Story)[1]

As I sit here in my study, with the photographic evidence spread before me, I can barely comprehend what my eyes tell me must be so. The evidence is incontestable. And yet—I still struggle to believe. Let me try to explain—possibly in the process I will manage to put my tumbling mind to rest.

For as long as I can recall, old photographs have fascinated me. To page slowly through collections of historical pictures, no matter what the theme, was consummate joy. Even when I was quite a small boy I used them as my time machine into the past. They took me up and away from the problems every youngster has while growing up, and let me wonder of people and places long since returned to dust. Matthew Brady's Civil War photos had a particularly strong attraction for me, with the horror (and yes, I will admit it, the *fascination*) of war frozen in the images of young men dead before life had really begun. To look at the fallen youth of more than a century before, and to wonder who they were, and what they had felt and thought—it all sent shivers through my romantic mind.

I suppose I might have become a professional photographer. But somewhere along in the process of looking at pictures, I became aware of the miracle of the *technology* of picture taking. That led me to chemistry and optics, and finally by some wondrous route, I became an electrical engineer. I never lost my love for old pictures, though, but merely turned my interest in them to the photographic history of electrical physics.

To search out and acquire (for by now I had started my own collection) a photograph of Steinmetz, smoldering cigar clamped in his mouth, giving a lecture on AC circuit analysis using the then still mysterious square root of minus one made my heart beat faster. To find a faded picture of Einstein at a long forgotten

---

[1]P. J. Nahin, "Old Friends Across Time," *Analog Science Fiction Magazine*, May 1979. This tale was written with the specific goal of illustrating how a trip into the past *yet to be initiated* could logically influence events in the time traveler's present and future. The story reproduced here is, with only a few very minor alterations, as it originally appeared in *Analog*.

conference, caught forever in time with his quiet, gentle eyes looking into mine, would send me to the heights of ecstasy.[2]

But it was Maxwell that led me to my incredible discovery. There is no doubt but that James Maxwell was the greatest theoretical physicist of the nineteenth century. Together with Einstein, he was the best of *any* century. Could it possibly be more than mere chance that the same year saw the death of one and the birth of the other? It was Maxwell who gathered together all the then known, but fragmented, experimental bits and pieces of knowledge about electricity and magnetism, and stirred in his own contribution of the displacement current. There was no physical evidence then to justify that last step, but the genius of Maxwell knew it *had* to be. And then, from his soaring mathematical insight and physical intuition, he took it all and wrote down the four magnificent equations for the electromagnetic field![3]

No one who has seen and understood those beautiful equations can come away without a quickening of the pulse and a flush of the blood. They're not long—you can write all four vector differential equations on the back of a postcard, but oh, what they tell us! With them, Maxwell, showed light was electrical in nature, predicted radio waves *two decades* before Hertz discovered them in the lab, explained energy propagation in space, and radiation pressure, and laid the scientific basis for today's television, radar, lasers, giant electric motors, generators, transmission lines and—well, why go on? The equations are the work of a level of genius we may not see again for a millennium. We have hardly begun to discover the marvels wrapped inside the electromagnetic field equations. With their aid, and that of quantum mechanics, the very secret of life, itself, may someday be unraveled.

And so I searched for old photographs of Maxwell. He died at his family's Scottish home in 1879, before the art of picture taking was barely 40 years old. But I knew in my heart that somewhere there *must* be photographs, yet undiscovered, of such a great man. Anyone who has seen the best examples of prints from wet glass collodion negatives knows they are, in the faithfulness of their rendition of detail, better than what we commonly expect today. Working against me was the fact that the process was slow, laborious, and unforgiving of mistakes. The taking of a picture was not a minor decision in Maxwell's time. But still I searched.

I searched for one photo, in particular. When Einstein died, a famous picture was taken of his office, just the way he left it for the last time. On the blackboard behind his desk are the last thoughts he had in his long quest for a Unified Field Theory,

---

[2]The first reference is to Charles Steinmetz (1865–1923), the German-born American electrical engineer and mathematician who became the wunderkind of General Electric. Einstein, of course, needs no introduction!

[3]I wrote this for story effect, but it's not really *quite* true. When Maxwell wrote his theory in mathematical form, he did so using *twenty* (!) equations in as many variables. The equations, as physicists and electrical engineers use them today, were first written in 1885 by the English self-taught eccentric Oliver Heaviside, who considered Maxwell to be his hero (see note 6 in Chap. 6). Modern electrical engineers and physicists write the Maxwell equations as *four* partial differential *vector* equations.

a 'theory of everything.' The writing on the papers covering the desk is clearly legible, and with modern blowup methods, easily readable.

At the time of his death, Maxwell was the Einstein of his times. Surely, I reasoned, a similar photograph of Maxwell's study must have been taken. Even though none has come down through the decades to us, it *must* exist! Gathering dust in an old trunk, or buried in a long forgotten album, it had to be somewhere. I vowed to find it.

I began by writing to all of Maxwell's living descendants, asking that they search through family holdings for any pictures concerning Maxwell that they might possess. For the most part all were cooperative, even though more than just a few thought I was somewhat deranged. Still, it was in vain. I did receive a few old pictures never before seen by other than the family, including a poignant one taken in 1901, showing Maxwell's grave in Parton Churchyard at Glenlair, Scotland. A forlorn, wintry scene, with only what seemed to be three men in the far distance, it brought tears to my eyes. Alas, there were no photos of Maxwell's study.

But then late last year, while on a business trip to London, I stopped off for a few hours at the historical archives maintained by the British Institute of Electrical Engineers. On a chance, I looked through their massive files on Maxwell and was rewarded within the hour! What I found will haunt me throughout the remainder of my life.

There it was, stuck through its border with a rusty pin, between two pieces of yellowed paper covered with what appeared to be some simple, rough lecture notes. An ordinary looking photo of a study. Obviously overlooked through the years, or at best unappreciated for what it was, it was the almost illegible, penciled notation on the back that convinced me of my find—just a date: November 9, 1879. Exactly 4 days after Maxwell's death, precisely when some unknown, yet inspired person (a family member, a neighbor, a local scientist?) would take such a picture!

I am ashamed to admit it, but there was no hope the Institute would let me have the picture. And there was no time to copy it, for I was to return home to America that very night. No, that's not true. The *real* reason for what I did was simply that I *had* to have that original, *old* photo. I took it! It was my undoing, for that dishonorable act destroyed the picture's tie to verified, legitimate historical records. But *I* know what I found is true.

I could barely control my wild emotions on the flight home. Several times I removed the picture from my briefcase, and looked with fascination at the papers lying on Maxwell's desk, and at the tightly written lines of mathematics on the blackboard in the background. My hands trembled with what can only be called lust—once home, reunited with my well-equipped photo lab, I would learn every secret hidden in that picture.

There are no words I know that can convey the thrill I felt as I began the processing of that priceless photo. Alone in my lab, with all the modern equipment a well-off amateur can buy (a Caesar Saltzman 8×10 enlarger with mercury vapor point light source and a $10\times$ Plan Achromat Nikon enlarging lens), I carefully cropped and blew up selected views of the blackboard and desk. Printing the

enlargements on ultra-fine grain AGFA Brovira paper, I could scarcely restrain myself from peering at them with a magnifying glass while I waited for them to dry.

Then, at last, I had them spread out across my study desk. I tried to force myself to examine each slowly, carefully, in turn, and not to skip from one to another like a child let loose in a candy store with a dollar. The first three were of the desk papers, including what seemed to be a diary. It must have been lost after Maxwell's death since no trace of it exists in the historical records. I experienced a stunning thrill as I gazed upon the scrawled words, but as they were not easily read at once, I moved on. It was the sixth enlargement, of the upper right corner of the blackboard that sent me reeling back to my chair. An equation that shouldn't, no, *couldn't*, be there. But it was.

To understand my reaction, there is one astounding thing you must realize about Maxwell's field equations. When Einstein turned the world of physics on its head in 1905 with his famous paper, "On the Electrodynamics of Moving Bodies," all the old ideas about absolute motion and simultaneity of events went out the window. Even Newton's laws of mechanics had to be modified. But *not* Maxwell's! His equations, just the way he published them in 1873, are the same ones studied today[4]—they need *no* relativistic corrections.

How can that be, you wonder, as they predate Einstein's by 32 years? The mystery of this has bedeviled the experts down through the years. Oh, they have an explanation, alright. They say that all of electromagnetics is actually relativistic phenomena to begin with, and the laboratory work of Faraday, Ampere, Henry, and the other great experimentalists were studies of relativistic electron interactions in matter (although they, of course, didn't know that). Thus, it is only 'natural' that Maxwell's equations need no correction. So goes the 'expert' explanation, but it isn't right![5] I know Maxwell knew about relativity, and understood it perfectly. He knew all about time paradoxes and the equivalence of mass and energy.

Because how else can you explain the equation visible in my enlargement: $E = mc^2$!

Why, you must wonder (just as I did), didn't Maxwell publish this remarkable result? At first, I believed it was because of a lack of faith in his results. Who would have believed any of it in those Victorian times, so sure of its absolute view of nature? I thought of how Newton, 200 years before Maxwell, had suffered from a similar hesitancy when he wrote the *Principia*. There, when explaining his theory of gravitation, Newton did *not* employ his new invention of the calculus (which he *had used* to make his discoveries), but instead fell back on laborious arguments based on the accepted mathematics of algebra and geometry. Who would have believed him, otherwise?

But then I realized that couldn't be right. Maxwell was a strong man intellectually and he wouldn't have held back for fear of disbelief. No, it had to be that he

---

[4]Don't forget note 3.

[5]Alas, I think it *is* right. Don't forget, this is science *fiction*. When there is a conflict between the needs of a story, and a rigid adherence to physics, the 'needs' wins!

discovered relativity and the mass-energy law just before his death, with no time to make his work known. I was still wrong.

It was later, when I returned to the enlargement of Maxwell's lost diary and read those painfully cramped notes, that I learned the truth. What I saw there showed me Maxwell had thought long and hard about his final discoveries and had purposely withheld them. For clearly visible, after I had slowly deciphered the writing, were the following words:

> *I have seen monstrous events. My blood has run cold at the sight of two great cities leveled to the ground, their inhabitants cruelly put to death instantly, or left to die slowly from a strange, lingering disease. Other trips, further on, have shown me the root of all these evils is the mass-energy equation, a result I at first believed to be my crowning glory. It will be my crown of thorns unless I ban it from my very being. Another will discover it for himself, but* my *soul shall be free! I have dismantled my machine, and shall never look upon or think of those horrible scenes again.*

This passage was dated just 1 month before Maxwell died a savage death from cancer. The reference to 'two cities' can only be that of Hiroshima and Nagasaki. His own death was surely caused by lingering too long among their atomic ruins.

Think of what this *means*. Quite simply, Maxwell knew the secret of time travel! But even more incredible is that it must be *easy*, if one only knows how, to build a time machine! Think about it—Maxwell had no gigawatt power stations at his disposal, no high technology machine shops, or nanosecond computers. He was not a gifted experimentalist, and once he had predicted radio waves, for example, it took others 20 years to finally generate them. And yet, *he* built a time machine. Somehow, with just the puny power sources available to him, and a limited mechanical capability, he wrested free the *simple* implementation of a time machine from his dynamical field equations.

Yes, yes, I know what you must be thinking. How can I really conclude such an incredible thing from a single equation on a blackboard, and a few words written by a man dying a painful death? A man, clearly suffering dearly, and possibly not in complete possession of his once marvelous mind.

This very evening the last bolt of evidence slid into place. Attempting to escape from the emotional maelstrom into which I had fallen, I turned to my old love of picture gazing. I took down from my library shelf a tattered yet cherished volume of the Meserve Collection of Lincoln pictures. My slow paging through the images stopped when I came to the famous photograph by Alexander Gardner of Lincoln's second inauguration. This incredible picture shows John Wilkes Booth looking down on Lincoln from behind a buttress high on the steps of the Capitol, while below in the crowd are the five men who, 41 days later, conspired with him in the assassination.

The following page demonstrated the extraordinary quality of Gardner's work, as it showed an enlargement of Booth's face in which the circular line between the pupil and the white of each eye is sharp and crisp! This impressive picture fascinated me, and I wondered if I could create a similar enlargement. It was then I remembered the old picture of Maxwell's grave, sent to me from Scotland, and the

three distant figures in the background. They would present my photo-lab skills with a challenge, and the effort would distract my mind.

I finished the enlargement just 20 min ago. Those faces! Two of them I can now finally accept as being there—it must have been a pilgrimage for one, and for the other, it couldn't have been anything but a mocking, ironic gesture. But I wonder if the youngest one really knew who his two companions were? I don't know the answer to that—yet. But there they are, two men with faces my years of study have made as familiar to me as my own. One is a youthful Albert Einstein. The other, with the signs of death clearly written across his features, is James Clerk Maxwell. The face of the third man is familiar, too, for the third man is me!

Oh, I'm a bit older in the photo than I am now. But it's me, alright. A distinctive, jagged scar across the left cheek, a mark from a childhood accident, is sharply visible, and I can run a finger over my face and match it perfectly with the image in the enlargement. I'd say I'm about 45 or so in the image, no more than 10 years older than I am now. That doesn't leave me much time to keep my appointment, does it? I don't know, right now, how I'm going to do it, but I've got to rediscover Maxwell's secret of time travel. I'm sure I'll succeed—after all, there I am in the picture. Somehow, I'll be going back to pick James and Albert up so we can have our picture taken. Ten years—not much time.

I'm really looking forward to meeting my two new friends from across time.

For Further Discussion

When "Old Friends Across Time" originally appeared in *Analog*, it opened with a quotation from Richard Feynman's famous 1961–1963 Caltech undergraduate course (published in 1964 as *The Feynman Lectures on Physics*): "Ten thousand years from now, there can be little doubt that the most significant event of the nineteenth century will be judged as Maxwell's discovery of the laws of electrodynamics. The American Civil War will pale into provincial insignificance in comparison." This is almost certainly true, but could Maxwell *really* have built a time machine from just a knowledge of electromagnetic theory and special relativity (which is all that is needed to derive $E = mc^2$), if he didn't also have a deep understanding of general relativity (and probably of quantum mechanics, too)? How likely do you think *that* is?

The narrator in "Old Friends Across Time" knows he is going to live long enough to eventually build a time machine; discuss the implications of this knowledge. For example, is he at least *temporarily* invulnerable to committing suicide (or, for that matter, to any other variation of dying?) That is, do we have a 'future' version of the grandfather paradox? This issue has never (to my knowledge) been considered by physicists, and not by philosophers either until recently. See, for example, S. Keller and M. Nelson, "Presentists Should Believe in Time-Travel," *Australasian Journal of Philosophy*, September 2001, pp. 333–345, and M. H. Slater, "The Necessity of Time Travel (On Pain of Indeterminacy)," *The Monist*, July 2005, pp. 362–369. More generally, if we assume that the past is unchangeable then the scenario in "Old Friends Across Time" seems to force at least some level of inevitability on the future as well. Or does it? In the 2007 story by Ted Chiang, "The Merchant and the Alchemist's Gate," that you were asked to read in a *For Further Discussion* at the end of Chap. 4, there is the following exchange between the narrator and the inventor of "the Gate" (a wormhole): "So if you learn that you are dead 20 years from now, there is nothing you can do to avoid your death?" He nodded. This seemed to me very disheartening, but then I wondered if it could not also provide a guarantee. I said, "Suppose you learn that you are alive 20 years from now. Then nothing could kill you in the next 20 years. You could then fight in battles without a care, because your survival is assured." "That is possible," he said. "It is also possible that a man who would make use of such a guarantee would not find his older self alive when he first used the Gate." "Ah," I said, "Is it then the case that only the prudent meet their older selves?" Comment on this issue, with particular attention to free-will.

Appendix B
Newton's Gift (A Story)[6]

Wallace John Steinhope was a sensitive human being, a person deeply concerned about the welfare of his fellow creatures. Any act of injustice, however slight, made his breast pound with righteous indignation. He was a champion of fair play, and his motto in life was taken from the ancient English rule of law—'Let right be done!'

Even while still a lonely, reclusive child, Wallace's heart ached mightily when he read of the laborious, boring, mind-dulling calculations endured by the great mathematicians of old. Just knowing, *thinking*, of Gauss's marvelous mind wasting literally months of its precious existence grinding out tedious mathematics that even a present-day dullard could do in a minute, on a home computer, was sheer agony for Wallace. Contemplation of the God-like Newton suffering endless delays in his gravity research, all because of a simple miscalculation of the length of a degree of longitude, was almost unbearable.

Indeed, Newton played a special role in Wallace's life (and he in Newton's, as we shall soon see). While the other great mathematical physicists had merely been hindered in their work by the lack of modern computational aids, Newton had squandered so much valuable time in other, nonscientific pursuits! His quasireligious writings alone, over half a million words, exceeded his scientific writings. What a waste! Wallace wondered endlessly over the reason for this strange misdirection of talent and bored his friends to the edge of endurance with his constant brooding on the mystery. Still, they all liked and admired Wallace enormously and so put up with it. But more than one of them had sworn to throw up the next time Wallace mentioned Newton during a wedding (but that's another story).

So deep was Wallace's anguish for his predecessors that even as he grew older and his own tremendous talents as a mathematical physicist (the result of a lucky

genetic mutation induced in a male ancestor some centuries earlier) gained him an international reputation, thoughts of the unmeasurable misery of his scientific ancestors were never far from his mind. It was most appropriate, then, that his greatest discovery gave him an opportunity to *do* something! And Wallace John Steinhope vowed to *help*. He became convinced that it was his purpose on earth— he could not, he *would* not hesitate. As he strapped the knapsack-size time machine to his chest, his excitement was, therefore, easy to understand.

"It is done! And I am ready. I will travel back and bestow this gift of appreciation, this key to mental relief, on the great Newton himself!" Wallace cradled a small, yet powerful hand-calculator in his palm. It was a marvel of modern electronics. Incorporating large-scale integrated circuitry and a Z-8000 microprocessor solid-state chip, the calculator required only a small, self-contained nuclear battery for its power. It could add, subtract, multiply, divide, do square and cubic roots, trig and hyperbolic functions, take powers, find logarithms, all in mere microseconds. It was programmable, too, able to store up to 500 instructions in its micro-memory. The answers it displayed on its red, light-emitting diode read-outs would liberate young Isaac from the chains of his impoverished heritage of mathematical calculation. No more Napier's bones for Newton!

But Wallace John Steinhope was no fool. He understood, indeed feared, time paradoxes. He knew Newton could be trusted with the secret, but it wouldn't do for the calculator to survive Newton's time. So Wallace had incorporated a small, self-destructing heat mechanism into it. After 5 years of use, it would automatically melt itself into an unrecognizable, charred slag mass. But that would be enough time for its task to be completed. The emancipation of Newton's mighty brain from tedium! Pleased enormously at the thought of the great good he was about to confer, Wallace set the time and space coordinates for merry old England, flipped the power switch on, and vanished.

Materializing in the Lincolnshire countryside in the spring of 1666, he began his rendezvous with destiny. It was the second and final year of the great bubonic plague, and Newton, seeking refuge from the agony and death plundering London and threatening his college of Trinity at Cambridge, had returned home to work in seclusion. The years of the Black Death were Newton's golden years, when the essentials of calculus would be worked out, when the colored spectrum of white light would be explained, and when the principle of the law of gravitation would be grasped. But how much easier it would be if Newton were released from the binding chains of dreary calculation. Wallace's gift would slip the lock on those chains! Accelerate genius!

It was early evening when, guided by a map of the area prepared by a friend who was both a cartographer and amateur historian, Wallace reached the quiet little town of Woolsthrope-by-Colsterworth. It was here, in a small farmhouse, that Wallace would meet his hero of the ages. A cold, gentle rain was falling as he approached the door. The soft, hazy light of an oil lamp glowed inside, revealing through the translucent glass the form of a man bent over a table. The fragrant smoke of well-dried wood curled from the chimney, announcing a warm fire within.

With his heart about to burst from excitement, Wallace rapped upon the door. After a pause, the shadow rose and moved away from the window. The door opened, and there stood Isaac Newton, a young man of 23 with an intellect that Hume and Voltaire considered "the greatest and rarest genius that ever rose for adornment and instruction of the species." But for the importance of his self-appointed mission, Wallace would have fainted dead away from the thrill of it all. "Is this the home of Isaac Newton?" he asked in a voice quavering with the trembling tones normally used by lovers about to reveal their deepest feelings.

The young man, of medium height and thick hair already showing signs of gray, swung open the door and replied, "My home it is, indeed, stranger. Come into the parlor, please, before the wetness takes you ill."

Isaac followed Wallace into the room and stood quietly watching as his visitor removed his soaked coat and hat. The portable time machine was gently placed on the floor next to a wall. The calculator was snug and safe in its plastic case in Wallace's shirt pocket. "Thank you, Master Newton. May we sit while we talk? I am afraid you may wish to take some time to consider my words." Motioning to a chair near the table, Isaac pulled a second chair from a darkened corner and joined Wallace. "You have a strange sound to your speech, stranger. Are you from hereabouts, or have you traveled far? Please commence slowly your tale."

Wallace laughed aloud at this question, a response prompted by his nervous excitement, and it quite surprised him. "Please forgive me. It is just that I *have* traveled so very, *very* far to see you. You see, I am from the future." Wallace was not one to play his cards close to his chest. Now it was Isaac's turn to laugh. "Oh, this is most ridiculous. Are you a friend of Barrow's at Trinity? It would be so like him to play such a trick.[7] From the future, indeed!"

Wallace's eyes ached at the sight of the papers on the table where Isaac had been working. What wonders must be there about to be born! In any other situation, Wallace would have asked their contents, but the die had been cast. He had to convince Isaac of the truth of his tale. But he had to walk a tight line, too. It just wouldn't do to misdirect Isaac's interest away from the calculator and toward the time machine itself! He must do something dramatic, something that would rivet his idol's attention and hold it.

"Yes, yes, I understand your reluctance to believe me. But, look here. This will convince you of the honesty of my words." Wallace pulled the shiny black plastic-cased calculator from his shirt pocket and flipped the power switch on. The array of LEDs glowed bright in the gloomy room as they flashed on in a random, sparkling red burst. Isaac's eyes widened, and he pushed his chair back. Was he frightened?

"As the Lord is my Savior, is it a creation of Lucifer? The eyes of it shine with the color of his domain. Are you one of his earthly agents?"

---

[7]The reference is to Isaac Barrow (1630–1677), who was the first Lucasian Professor of Mathematics at Cambridge. Barrow resigned that position to allow it to pass to Newton. Centuries later, Hawking became the 17th Lucasian Professor.

"Oh my, no! Look here, Master Newton, let me show you that there is no black magic or chicanery involved. It is all perfectly understandable in terms of the laws of Nature. What I have here is an automatic calculator, a device to perform all of your laborious mathematical labors."

So saying, Wallace squeezed the sides of the calculator case together, releasing pressure snap-fittings, and flipped the case open on a hinge at the top. Revealed to Isaac were the innards of the electronic marvel—a tightly packed interior of printed circuit boards, a mass of integrated circuitry, the small LED display, and the sealed nuclear battery. Isaac stared intently at the sight, and Wallace could see the natural curiosity of Newton's great mind begin to drive away the initial apprehension.

"But where are the gears, levers, springs, and ratchets to carry out the calculations? All I see is a black box with lights that glow red—how is *that* done; where is the lamp or candle to provide the light!—and many little isolated fragments of strange shapes. There is clearly nothing in your box that moves!"

"Oh, it is all done with electronics, Master Newton! The central processing unit has access to a solid-state memory that contains the decoding logic necessary to implement the appropriate algorithmic processes to provide the answers to the specific requests entered through these buttons. The actual performance of the box is achieved by the controlled motion of electrons and holes in suitably doped semiconductor material under the influence of electric fields induced—" Wallace, still overcome by his excitement, had rambled on wildly without thought of the essentially infinite technological gap that separated himself from Newton.

"Stop, stop," cried Isaac. "I understand only a few of the words you use and nothing at all of their meaning! But it is obvious that for calculations to be performed, mechanical work must be done, and that implies motion. Pascal's adding machine has shown the veracity of that. I say again, nothing moves in the box. How *can* it work?"

Wallace was embarrassed. The mistake of overlooking the hundreds of years of progress after Newton's time was one a child might make. "I am sorry, Master Newton. I'm going too fast for you." Isaac looked at Wallace with a frown, but Wallace failed to see the pricked vanity of the proud Newton. Going too fast, indeed!

Wallace prepared to lay a firmer technological foundation for Newton, but then he froze. It couldn't be done! Newton was a genius, certainly, but the task was still impossible. Wallace would have to tell him all about Maxwell's equations, Boolean algebra and computer structure, electronics, and solid-state device fabrication technology. It was just too much, and besides, there was the danger! The potential time paradoxes of all that knowledge out of its proper time sequence! What if Newton, in innocence, revealed some critical bit of knowledge out of its natural place in history? So, Wallace hesitated, but seeing the suspicion grow again in Isaac's eyes, he realized he had to do something, *anything*, immediately.

"You cannot deny your own eyes," answered Wallace. "Let me *show* you how it works. I'll divide two numbers for you with just the punch of a few buttons. Watch this." And, at random, he entered 81,918 divided by 123. Poor Wallace, of all the numbers to use, they were the worst. Within milliseconds the answer glowed

brightly in fiery red characters. Wallace looked with pride at the result and then, already enjoying in his mind what he knew would be Isaac's amazement, he turned his eyes to the great man. What he saw made his spine tingle, and the gooseflesh stand high on his neck. Newton had fallen to his knees, with eyes bulging and hands raised as if in prayer.

"The mark of the Beast, it is the mark of the Beast! It is so written in the Book of Revelations—Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast; for it is the number of man; and his number is six hundred three-score and six!" Rising to his feet, Newton fell back into his chair. "Your cursed box bears the brand of its master. There can be no doubt now, it *is* the creation of the fallen archangel!" Wallace was aghast at Isaac's violent reaction. The seventeenth century genius had now stumbled backward from his chair and had grasped a poker from the hot coals of the fireplace.

"Wait, please wait! Watch this; I'll multiply two other numbers together for you, watch!" Wallace quickly punched in the data, and then the answer gleamed steadily in burning red characters on the LEDs. Isaac's eyes first went wide with fear as he again saw the wizard electronics do their marvelous assignment, and then he shut them tight. Wallace was becoming desperate—this wasn't the way it was supposed to be! "Don't you see—imagine the tedious work, the mind-deadening labor this machine will save you from. And it is yours."

"Yes? But only for the exchange of my soul! That is always the Devil's price for his seductive gifts from Hell!" As Isaac shrieked these last words at Wallace, he raised the poker over his head. "Begone, you emissary of the Dark World! I know now you must be in the employ of the Father of the Antichrist, but the Lord God Almighty will protect me if I do not waver in my resolve. Begone, or I'll strike your brains out on the floor where you stand!"

Isaac's eyes were wide with fear, nearly rolling back to show all white spittle sprayed from his mouth as he yelled at Wallace, who stared in shock at the wild man who threatened him with death. "Please, please, *listen* to me, please! I beg you to understand—I am a scientist, just like you. The concept of the devil, and all it stands for, is contrary to everything I believe. How *could* I be in the devil's employ, when I don't even accept his existence? You *must* believe me!"

"Blasphemy!" screamed Isaac. "Your own words condemn you. To deny the reality of Satan in a sinful world is to deny that of God, too. Now leave my home, you dark beast from hell, or by the heavens above, *I shall destroy you*!" As he shrilled these words, Isaac brought the poker down in a wild swing that barely missed Wallace's head.

Struck dumb with confusion at the uncontrolled outburst, Wallace stuffed the calculator into his shirt, grabbed his hat, coat, and time machine and rushed from the house. As he hurried into the cold, wet night, he turned back, just once, to see Isaac Newton framed in the light of the open door. "Go, go, you foul messenger from the Lord of Evil! Back to your stinking pit of burning hell-fire! This is a house that honors the Divine Trinity and is no haven for the likes of you!"

Wallace rushed away into the blackness, the time machine bouncing unheeded upon his chest.

He ran, for how long he couldn't recall, until he fell exhausted next to a stream running heavy with the rain. Tears of rage, frustration, and shock streamed from his eyes. Rejected by the great Newton! Well, damn him! Wallace flung the calculator into the stream in his terrible anger and activated the return coordinates. He faded from Newton's world as quickly and quietly as he had come.

As for Isaac Newton, after having chased the Devil's messenger from his house, he returned on shaking legs to his desk. Pushing aside his rough calculations on the orbit of the moon around the earth, he swore to redeem himself in the eyes of the Savior. Somehow, he had been found lacking and had been tested. And the test was surely not over! He began to reapply his marvelous mind to determine the origin of his failure before the Lord God Jehovah. Taking quill in hand, he wrote the first of the many hundreds of thousands of words that his numerous religious tracts would devour from his allotted time.

Five years later, long after Newton had returned to Cambridge, a group of picnicking children were frightened when a nearby stream suddenly erupted into a geyser of steam. Moments later, the bravest (or most foolhardy) of the boys—who, by an astonishing coincidence that befits any good time travel paradox, would be Wallace's great-grandfather nine times removed—cautiously examined the streambed. All he found were some twisted, hot pieces of what he thought was a hard, black rock, and he tossed them back. They were all that was left of the calculator's nuclear battery. He did receive a tiny radiation dose from them, which caused a recessive genetic mutation that centuries later would suddenly appear as the cause of Wallace's genius, but otherwise the lad was unaffected. The incident was soon forgotten.

Well over 300 years later, Wallace John Steinhope reappeared in his own time. He was essentially the same man as before he left—kind, generous, and sensitive, and ready to come to the aid of any man or beast that might need help. As far as his friends were concerned, in fact, he was even improved (naturally, they didn't know what had brought about the welcome change but, if they had, they would have applauded it).

Wallace John Steinhope, you see, never again had another kind word for Newton, or for that matter, any words for him at all.

For Further Discussion

In his book *Travels in Four Dimensions: the enigmas of space and time* (Oxford 2003), the philosopher Robin Le Poidevin writes (p. 176) "But, as everybody knows, when a time machine leaves for another time it *disappears*." This is, indeed, how the time machine in "Newton's Gift" works; however, after reading *Time Machine Tales* do you think such behavior is in agreement or in conflict with general relativity? Defend your position.

"Newton's Gift" contains causal loops. Identify two of them, and discuss their role in the story (that is, are they central to the story or merely incidental?).

The idea of a time traveler visiting famous people in the past occurs fairly frequently in science fiction. In Ian Watson's "Ghost Lecturer" (*Isaac Asimov's Science Fiction Magazine*, March 1964), for example, the inventor of the "Roseberry Field" uses it to yank geniuses out of time to supposedly honor them, to let them know their lives had been worthwhile in the eyes of the future. But then he goes on to tell them—oh so kindly—where they had gone wrong or had fallen short of the mark, and of how much more we know nowadays. "You almost got it right, boy! You were on the right track, and no mistake. Bravo! *But* …" Watson makes the interesting observation that one can easily imagine playing this pathetic game of 'second-guessing' history with scientists, but what could even the most talented modern do to upstage a Mozart or a Shakespeare? Most similar to "Newton's Gift," however, are (for example) Gregory Benford's "In the Dark Backward" (*Science Fiction Age*, June 1994) where Shakespeare and Hemingway are visited, and Jack McDevitt's "The Fort Moxie Branch" (*Full Spectrum*, October 1988) where Hemingway and Thomas Wolfe appear. Read these stories, and then compare/contrast their descriptions of how story characters react to the appearances of time travelers, to Newton's behavior in "Newton's Gift."

Appendix C
Computer Simulation of the Entropic Gas Clock

%**gasclock.m**/created by PJNahin for *TIME MACHINE TALES*(6/27/2015)
%This MATLAB m-file simulates the diffusion of gas molecules in a sealed
%container by using the Ehrenfest ball exchange rules. The simulation
%starts with n molecules (i.e., balls) of one type (i.e., black) on
%one side of the container, and n more molecules of another type (i.e.,
%white balls) on the other side. The two urns play the roles of the
%two sides of the container. To simulate the ball (molecule)
%movements, the program selects two random numbers from 0 to 1, which
%are then compared to the current probabilities of selecting a black
%ball from urn I and a white ball from urn II. If BOTH random numbers
%are greater than these two probabilities then a white ball has been
%selected from urn I and a black ball has been selected from urn II,
%and so the number black balls in urn I is increased by one while the
%number of white balls in urn II is increased by one. If BOTH random
%numbers are less than or equal to these two probabilities then a
%black ball has been selected from urn I and a white ball has been
%selected from urn II and so the number of black balls in urn I is

```
%decreased by one while the number of white balls in urn II is
decreased
%by one. If one of the random numbers is greater than its
corresponding
%probability while the other random number is less than its
%corresponding probability, then no action is taken because then a
%white (black) ball moves from urn I to urn II at the same time a
white
%(black) ball moves in the opposite direction. That is, there is
no
%net change. Then, the ball selection probabilities are recalcu-
lated and
%another ball exchange is simulated.
rand('state',100*sum(clock))       %new seed for the random number
generator;
n=100;                             %number of balls in each urn;
nb1=n;                             %number of black balls INITIALLY
in urn I;
nw2=n;                             %number of white balls INITIALLY
in urn II;
pb1=nb1/n;                         %probability of selecting a black
ball from urn I;
pw2=nw2/n;                         %probability of selecting a white
ball from urn II;
for trials =1:1000;
   system(trials)=pb1;
   ball1=rand;
   ball2=rand;
   if(ball1>pb1&ball2>pw2)        %white ball selected from urn I
     nb1=nb1+1;                   %and black ball selected from
     nw2=nw2+1;                   %urn II;
   elseif(ball1<=pb1&ball2<=pw2)  %black ball selected from urn I
     nb1=nb1-1;                   %and white ball selected from
     nw2=nw2-1;                   %urn II;
   end
   pb1=nb1/n;
   pw2=nw2/n;
end
plot(system)
axis([1 trials 0 1])
grid
xlabel('time, in arbitrary units')
ylabel('fraction of balls in urn I that are black')
figure(1)
```

Epilogue

[Science fiction] cannot be good without respect for good science . . . This does not include time machines, space warps and the fifth dimension; they will continue to exist in the hazy borderland between [science fiction] and fantasy.[8]

In many science-fiction stories, the trip into the past is by way of some futuristic machine that can take you through time at will . . . That, however, is totally impossible on theoretical grounds. It can't and won't be done.[9]

The opening quotations, particularly the second one from Asimov who was one of the great modern writers of science fiction, is a gloomy one indeed for fans of time travel, but it is not difficult to find inconsistency in Asimov's own tales dealing with the concept. Asimov is famous, in particular, for his stories of robots, and the very last such tale that he wrote combines robotics with time travel, with a robot sent two centuries into the future.[10] At the start of the story, the narrator tells us that time travel to the past is impossible because the past is unchangeable and (of course) a time traveler would necessarily disturb history. (That is (of course) simply a failure to distinguish between the difference of *changing* the past and *affecting* the past, as well as a failure to see how the principle of self-consistency negates the issue of paradoxes.) Then, when the robot returns from the future (and so backward time travel is *not* impossible!), he reports that his arrival had been expected, that history had recorded that he would appear. At the end of the story we learn how the future knew this—it had read "Robot Visions"! So now Asimov *uses*

---

[8]Harry Harrison, in his essay "With a Piece of Twisted Wire . . .," *SF Horizons* (no. 2), 1965. Harrison (1925–2012) was a well-known (if little appreciated outside the SF community) writer, whose 1966 novel *Make Room! Make Room!* was the inspiration for the excellent (if somewhat depressing) 1973 film *Soylent Green* (a movie about future over-population of the Earth that will make you think twice about ever eating a cookie again).

[9]From an essay Isaac Asimov wrote on the time travel movie *Peggy Sue Got Married* for the *New York Times*, October 5, 1986.

[10]I. Asimov, "Robot Visions," *Isaac Asimov's Science Fiction Magazine*, April 1991.

the principle of self-consistency, with the narrator realizing that he *must* preserve his story so the future can read it.

Not a very consistent story! Asimov, was, of course, writing a story for entertainment's sake, so perhaps it's unreasonable to hold him *scientifically* accountable (although logic wouldn't seem to be too much to ask for).

In any case, was Asimov right? Lots of his fellow science fiction writers certainly thought so. One, for example, bluntly asserted that

Time travel is inconceivable.[11]

Other critics agreed:

In science fiction we find the lunatic fringe more often than not trying to perfect time-travel mechanisms.[12]

and

Scientifically, time travel can't stand inspection.[13]

and

Time travel is ... scientific nonsense.[14]

and

It would be untrue ... to present the idea of a time machine as anything but what it is, an intriguing literary device, part of the bag of tricks of the science fiction writer ... There is no such thing as a 'science' of time travel.[15]

You'll notice that these pronouncements are from decades ago: Conklin (1904–1968), Gold (1914–1996), and Oliver all wrote just 3 years after Gödel, and so perhaps it was simply too soon for his work to be widely known outside of the physics community. But physicists have learned a lot since 1952! Have they learned enough to make Asimov and his fellow SF skeptics (if they were still alive) change their minds, or at least reconsider? I suspect not.

I say that because, even 25 years after Conklin, Gold, and Oliver wrote, while we do find an awareness of Gödel starting to appear in the science fiction world, a feeling of skepticism was still in the air. In a fascinating analysis[16] of the first half-century of the science fiction magazines, Paul Carter admitted that there *is* a rationality to time travel because of Gödel but, nonetheless, the conventional view remained that backward time travel is simply impossible. Then, citing the work of Tipler, Carter wrote "Only as recently as 1974 (see note 130 in Chap. 1), in

---

[11]Kingsley Amis, *New Maps of Hell*, Harcourt 1960.

[12]Groff Conklin, *Science Fiction Adventures in Dimension*, Vanguard 1953.

[13]H. L. Gold, *The Galaxy Reader of Science Fiction*, Crown 1952.

[14]Alexei Panshin, *The Mirror of Infinity*, Canfield 1970.

[15]Chad Oliver, "The Science of Man," a non-fiction essay included in Oliver's 1952 time machine novel *Mists of Time*. Chad Oliver (1928–1993) was a scientist by profession (anthropology), and his opinion carried weight among SF writers *and* (non-physicist) scientists.

[16]P. A. Carter, *The Creation of Tomorrow*, Columbia University Press 1977.

the sober pages of the *Physical Review*, has a physicist been more bold … For 70 years in the meantime, however, without waiting for Professor Tipler to solve his equations … writers had happily helped themselves to Mr. Wells' invention and sent their characters through time in every direction, forward, backward, and sideways."[17]

In the 1980s writers were apparently just as unaware of Gödel's time travel analyses (and of the much later ones of Tipler) as had been the 1950s commentators. In his marvelous 1985 book *The Past Is a Foreign Country*, for example, David Lowenthal repeatedly refers to time travel as "fantasy" and to science fiction stories about time travel as "unbridled by common sense." And for another example from the start of the 1980s, consider the case of James Gunn (born 1923), professor of English at the University of Kansas, past president of both the Science Fiction Writers of America and the Science Fiction Research Association, author of *The Immortals* (inspiration for the 1970–1971 TV series of the same name), and eminent scholar (see his 1975 book *Alternate Worlds*). His literary credentials are impeccable and his critical influence profound. And yet, 30 years after Gödel and 5 years after Tipler, Professor Gunn wrote in *The Road to Science Fiction*, "Time travel has been an anomaly in science fiction. Clearly fantastic—there is no evidence that anyone has ever traveled in time and *no theoretical basis for believing that anyone ever will* [my emphasis]." If you've read this book carefully, however, of the analyses by Gott, Krasnikov, Thorne, Alcubierre, Novikov, Natário, and others, you know that what Gunn claims in those last words is actually not necessarily so.

The British-born American theoretical physicist Freeman Dyson of the Institute for Advanced Study has commented[18] on that sort of narrow mindset, with words quoted from the 1979 physics Nobel prize winner Steven Weinberg, words reminding us that rigidity concerning time travel is not limited to science fiction writers: "This is often the way it is in physics—our mistake is not that we take our theories too seriously, but that we do not take them seriously enough. It is always hard to realize that these numbers and equations we play with at our desks have something to do with the real world. Even worse, there often seems to be a general agreement that certain phenomena are just not fit subjects for respectable theoretical and experimental effort." The words *time travel* and *time machine* are never mentioned, but could they have been far from either Weinberg's or Dyson's thoughts?

All through this book we have seen how people have argued against time travel to the past (Tipler's cylinder is unphysically long, Gödel's universe requires an unphysical rotation, wormholes and warps require unphysical energy conditions, what about all those paradoxes … and on and on). These arguments remind me of

---

[17]Given that *The Time Machine* was published in 1895, it is not clear how Carter arrived at the value of 70 until Tipler's work (he should have written 79), and of course it was only 54 years between Wells' time travel fiction and Gödel's time travel mathematical physics.

[18]F. J. Dyson, "Time Without End: Physics and Biology in an Open Universe," *Reviews of Modern Physics*, July 1979, pp. 447–460.

the debate in the 1930s between the illustrious British astrophysicist Sir Arthur Eddington and the young Indian astrophysicist Subrahmanyar Chandrasekhar (1910–1995), winner of the 1983 Nobel prize in physics. In his analyses of the life history of stars, Chandrasekhar had arrived at an astonishing conclusion, one that Eddington simply could not accept. As Eddington sarcastically explained in an address at Harvard University in the summer of 1936, "Above a certain critical mass (two or three times that of the sun), the star could never cool down, but must go on radiating and contracting until heaven knows what becomes of it. That did not worry Chandrasekhar, he seemed to like the stars to behave that way, and believes that is what really happens."[19] Eddington then went on to declare such 'unbelievable' behavior to be nothing less than "stellar buffoonery."

As far as Eddington was concerned, Chandrasekhar had simply made an error in combining relativity theory with non-relativistic quantum theory. Indeed, so appalled was Eddington at the thought of a star contracting "until heaven knows what becomes of it" (that is, until it gravitationally collapses into a black hole) that he had earlier, in 1935, stated "There should be a law of nature to prevent a star from behaving in this absurd way!" Today, of course, no astrophysicist feels the need for a 'star protection conjecture'—which perhaps reminds you of another, more recent 'protection conjecture.'

What can one conclude from all the similar controversy concerning time travel, time machines, and spacetime warps? Not much, I think, except that these are open issues and will remain the subjects of on-going study for a long time yet to come. The one thing I am fairly certain of is that if time travel is ever achieved, it will be by means that we cannot today even begin to guess. It will almost certainly require *at least* a mutant child genius with an IQ of 270 to fix the slightly broken time machine found abandoned in a cellar![20] But that view isn't uniformly shared across all of science fiction. I very much doubt, for example, that things will be quite so elementary as depicted in the story[21] where the time machine was so simple that "If it were taken apart or put together before you, your wife, or the man across the street, you would wonder why you didn't think of it yourselves." Not only that, but its power source was just two dry cell batteries!

The time machine in an earlier story is almost as simple, requiring (besides a piece of strange crystal) only a "little stack of dry cells, a Ford [automotive ignition] coil, a small brass switch, a radio 'B' battery, an electron tube, and a rheostat."[22] Even Wells' *Time Machine* couldn't resist making it all look easy: as one critic put it, "The time machine, like all products of supreme inventive genius, was a

---

[19]See S. Chandrasekhar, *Eddington: The Most Distinguished Astrophysicist of His Time*, Cambridge University Press 1983, p. 48.

[20]F. B. Long, "A Guest in the House," *Astounding Science Fiction*, March 1946.

[21]R. Abernathy, "Heritage," *Astounding Science Fiction*, June 1947.

[22]J. Williamson, "In the Scarlet Star," *Amazing Stories*, March 1933.

remarkably simple affair. A few rods, wires, some odd glass knobs—nothing more!"[23] That sort of simplistic fictional description of a time machine reminds me of the reaction of the great Polish science fiction writer Stanislaw Lem to the general treatment of time travel in the genre: "There have been mountains of nonsense written about traveling in time, just as previously there were about astronautics—you know, how some scientist, with the backing of a wealthy businessman, goes off in a corner and slaps together a rocket, which the two of them—and in the company of their lady friends, yet—then take to the far end of the Galaxy. Chronomotion, no less than Astronautics, is a colossal enterprise, requiring tremendous investments, expenditures, planning . . ."[24]

An example of what Lem was talking about is the 1956 novella *Arcturus Landing* by Gordon R. Dickson (1923–2001). There we read of aliens who have confined humans to the solar system—until (if) Earth scientists discover the secret of FTL travel. So, a genius physicist does just that (with no mention of spacetime engineering, but rather we encounter a lot of mumbo-jumbo gibberish as the 'explanation'), and uses it to instantly transport himself and some friends to a planet orbiting Arcturus.[25] And when they get there the friendly aliens speak perfect English.

Lem would have snorted in derision, too, at this statement made to a prospective graduate student by the head of a college physics department, that the college "has been awarded a million dollars to build [a time machine]. It means . . . a raise for me and maybe a doctorate for you, so we'll build one and have some fun doing it."[26] Is it any wonder that Lem so readily dismissed stories that reduce space (and time) travel to weekend adventures in a home laboratory? As Lem wrote in another essay, time travel and its close relation, FTL space travel, have reduced much of science fiction to "a bastard of myths gone to the dogs."[27] Because of precisely that, Harry Harrison wrote (note 1) of the early science fiction magazines that published so much nonsense, "I used to moan over the fact that pulp magazines were printed on pulp paper and steadily decompose back towards the primordial from which they sprang. I am beginning to feel that this is a bit of a good thing."

I don't know whether time travel to the past can actually be accomplished, but I do know that speculations once thought to be as outlandish as finding the Philosopher's Stone for turning base elements into gold, *have* eventually been realized (and, come to think of it, with modern nuclear physics we *have* learned how to turn lead into gold, if only a few atoms at a time). Television, nuclear power, home computers that run at multi-gigahertz clock rates in the bedrooms of high school

[23]W. B. Pitkin, "Time and Pure Activity," *Journal of Philosophy, Psychology and Scientific Methods*, August 27, 1914, pp. 521–526.

[24]S. Lem, "The Twentieth Voyage of Ijon Tichy," in *The Star Diaries*, Seabury Press 1976.

[25]A journey incorrectly given in the story as 120 light years, when in fact it is less than 40 light years.

[26]W. West, *River of Time*, Avalon Books 1963.

[27]S. Lem, "Cosmology and Science Fiction," *Science-Fiction Studies*, July 1977, pp. 107–110.

students, even faster computers that animate our movies and simulate the formation of black holes and galaxies, voyages to the Moon and back—all these amazing developments would be pure magic to nineteenth century science. The ghosts of not just a few Victorian scientists who had poo-pooed the possibility of such things, have watched their reputations eat a lot of posthumous crow during the last 150 years.

My personal position on the question of time travel leans towards the rejoinder made to the skeptic in one science fiction story who, even after having done some time traveling, *still* argues against it by invoking paradoxes. He is sharply rebuked with "Oh, for heaven's sake, shut up, will you? You remind me of the mathematician who proved that airplanes couldn't fly."[28] I subscribe to the optimistic philosophy of the British writer Eden Phillpotts (1862–1960), who wrote in his 1934 novel *A Shadow Passes* "The Universe is full of magical things, patiently waiting for our wits to grow sharper." Perhaps he had a famous saying by the British-born Indian scientist J. B. S. Haldane (1892–1964) in mind, words from his 1928 *Possible Worlds*: "Now my suspicion is that the universe is not only queerer than we suppose, but queerer than we can suppose."

Still, even if time travel is possible, the engineering phase will surely be tough going. I am certain that before we see a working time machine, there will be many, *many* episodes like the one described in a very funny, novel-length spoof of academic research.[29] All physicists and engineers who have tried to get some stubborn piece of apparatus to work, apparatus that *should* work and simply won't, will appreciate Professor Demetrious Demopoulos' frustration and will, I am sure, forgive him his intemperate language:

> . . . the distinguished physicist took a step back and, arms akimbo, surveyed the complex and sophisticated machine that was the culmination of years of dedicated scientific research and pains-taking technological development.
>
> "What a pile of ****," he said.
> "Oh, no, Dr. Demopoulos, don't say that!"
> "Well, it is." A sneer formed on the professor's thin lips. "Time machine, my ****. This thing couldn't give you the time much less travel in it."
> "But we haven't incorporated all our latest test data yet," the pretty research assistant reminded him. "These last few adjustments might do it, Professor."
> "Hell, we've been tinkering with it for 2 years," Demopoulos complained.
>
> "We've tried everything and it's all come to dog ****."

---

[28]R. Heinlein, "By His Bootstraps," *Astounding Science Fiction*, October 1941. As discussed at the end of Chap. 1 (in "For Further Discussion") the mathematician was the American astronomer Simon Newcomb.

[29]J. DeChancie and D. Bischoff, *Dr. Dimension*, ROC 1993.

That scene probably won't actually happen for a long time to come but, even before the practical nuts-and-bolts bugs in the Professor's time machine are worked out, I think some adjustments are called for in our thinking about time travel. I believe that present-day philosophers and science fiction writers are going to have to become knowledgeable about the work by physicists on time travel. It simply won't do any longer for Philosophy Professor X to invoke the grandfather paradox during a discussion of causality and free will and then airily declare them to be 'obviously' incompatible with time travel to the past. And it simply won't do any longer for Famous SF Writer Y to send his hero into the past to kill Hitler as a baby and thereby change recorded history. One might as well keep watching a video recording of the 9/11 destruction of the World Trade Center, in the vain hope that maybe, on the next viewing, the planes will miss.

The principle of self-consistency around closed timelike curves is going to have to become as much a part of the science fiction writer's craft (or else she will be a writer of fantasy) as it will have to become part of the fundamental philosophical axioms.[30] The 'time police,' like the "operatives of the Bureau of Time Exploration and Manipulation" that appeared in the science fiction of Andre Norton (1912–2005), will have to be put out to pasture with the unicorns and telepathic dragons of fantasy fiction. Just as the recent physics literature on time machines has displayed a growing awareness of what science fiction writers and philosophers have had to say on the subject of time travel, so too are writers and philosophers going to have to learn some more physics. Most people can enjoy a good fantasy tale now and then, but the use of 'magic mirrors' to see through time is *not* physics. Such devices were popular and acceptable in medieval times—see "The Squire's Tale" in Chaucer's *The Canterbury Tales*, and later (see Act IV of *Macbeth*)—but good science fiction needs much more than that today.

Time travel to the past is a beautiful, romantic idea, and some words written by two physicists in a technical paper—words embedded in the midst of swirls of tensor equations—show that even hard-nosed physicists can share this dream: "In truth, it is difficult to resist the appealing idea of traveling into one's own past . . ."[31] The appeal of that dream is explained in Ray Bradbury's Foreword to a beautiful little 1989 book by Charles Champlin (*Back There Where the Past Was*). In it Bradbury clearly illuminated *why* we want to go back into the past. It is for the same reason that we go, time and again, to see *Hamlet*, *Othello*, and *Richard III*: "We don't give a hoot in hell who poisoned the King of Denmark's semicircular canal.

---

[30]Bud Foote (1930–2005), late professor of English at Georgia Tech, wrote (in his book *The Connecticut Yankee in the Twentieth Century: Travel to the Past in Science Fiction*, Greenwood Press 1991) that consistency is simply a well-used plot device: "The attempt of the time traveler to prevent something or take advantage of it [and so causing] the event in question, is so popular and so ubiquitous that it seems to be about worn out." Worn out or not, I believe that plot device to be correct science.

[31]A. J. Accioly and G. E. A. Matsas, "Are There Causal Vacuum Solutions with the Symmetries of the Gödel Universe in Higher-Derivative Gravity?" *Physical Review D*, August 15, 1988, pp. 1083–1086.

We already know where Désdemona lies smothered in bedclothes and that Richard goes headless at his finale. We attend them to toss pebbles in ponds, not to see the stones strike, but the ripples spread."

That's why a visit to the past is so mysteriously and marvelously fascinating. It would let us watch ripples spread through time. Our own visit to the past, in fact, might even be the pebble in the pond of history that starts an interesting ripple or two that will one day sweep over—us! (Take a look at Appendices A and B) Who would want to miss that? Indeed, if modern philosophers are right, if the analyses discussed earlier in this book are correct, you *can't* (didn't/won't) miss it.

I think time travel appeals, irresistibly, to the romantic in the soul of anyone who is human.[32] A time traveler does not exist either *here* or *then*, but rather *everywhen*. For a time traveler passing back and forth through the ages, history would be the ultimate puzzle, a chronicle described in one novel as beginning "not in one place, but everywhere at once ... It might be begun at any point along the infinite, infinitely broken coastline of time."[33] Romanticism doesn't preclude there also being a dark side to visiting the past, of course, as one time traveler from 1989 learns when he takes up residence in 1962. Falling asleep on a hot summer night in that long-ago year, he thinks "JFK slept. Oswald slept. Martin Luther King slept. [I sleep and dream] of Chernobyl ... *I am a cold wind from the land of your children*."[34]

But, I must admit, I personally am more attracted by happier descriptions of time travel. In his marvelous 1996 book *1939: The Lost World of the Fair*—which is proof that there are not enough Pulitzers to go to all the books that deserve one— Yale professor David Gelernter caught just the right spirit in his Prologue: "The best of all reasons to return to the fair is that travel is broadening, and time travel most of all ... The 1939 New York World's Fair is one amazing show. It still stands, undisturbed on Flushing Meadow, just over the edge of time; it would be an unforgivable shame to miss it." Trust me—if you read Gelernter's book, you'll come as close as you can in today's world to taking a ride in a 'time machine'!

The eminent philosopher Sir Karl Popper opens his biography with a wonderful story about his apprenticeship as a young man in 1920s Vienna to a master cabinetmaker.[35] After winning the old man's confidence, the student learned his mentor's great, secret desire: For years the master had been looking for the solution to perpetual motion. He knew what physicists thought of such machines, but nonetheless he had never given up his dream: "They say you can't make it; but

---

[32]How else to explain the pleasure, for modern children *and* adults too, in watching rebroadcasts of the 1960s animated TV cartoon program 'starring' Mr. Peabody, a nice but slightly stuffy, professorial white beagle. (Don't all dogs wear glasses and a bow tie?) Mr. Peabody, with his brainy adopted son Sherman, routinely travels into the past in the "Way-Bac" machine to see what *really* happened in history.

[33]John Crowley, *Great Work of Time*, Bantam 1991.

[34]R. C. Wilson, *A Bridge of Years*, Doubleday 1991.

[35]See volume 1 of *The Philosophy of Karl Popper* (P. A. Schilpp, editor), The Library of Living Philosophers, Open Court 1974, p. 3.

once it's been made they'll talk differently." Popper's master sounds just a bit like the American writer Gertrude Stein (1874–1946) in her 1938 essay "Picasso," where she writes "It is strange about everything, it is strange about pictures, a picture may seem extraordinarily strange to you and after some time not only it does not seem strange but it is impossible to find what there was in it that was strange." Might we one day say the same thing about time travel?

An alternative point of view can be found in a discussion of time travel via cosmic strings that makes this assessment: "While there is still hope that one day a sufficiently clever design may make building a time machine possible, it is beginning to seem more and more improbable. Like the perpetual motion machines of the nineteenth century, the designs have an elegant simplicity (as well as enormous commercial potential), but it seems that Nature also may abhor them just as much."[36] Of course, at one time it was thought that Nature abhorred a vacuum, but then we learned that she must actually love a vacuum because else why did she make so much of it?!

The theoretical basis for time travel is very different from that of perpetual motion (there is *more* reason to accept time travel as a plausible possibility). And so maybe one day, *just maybe*, the first time traveler will receive a toast such as the one in a story telling us about the arrival of the inventor of the first time machine and his no longer skeptical friend in the Civil War past:

"To you, Mac," I said.
McHugh loosened his tie. "To the Creator," he said, "who has given us a Universe with such marvelous possibilities."[37]

---

[36]B. Allen and J. Simon, "Time Travel on a String," *Nature*, May 7, 1992, pp. 19–21.

[37]J. McDevitt, "Time's Arrow," *Isaac Asimov's Science Fiction Magazine*, November 1991.

Glossary[38]

Action the integral over a **world line** of a quantity called the *Lagrangian*. When a massive particle is moving at non-relativistic speed through a gravitational field, for example, the instantaneous value of the Lagrangian is the difference between the kinetic and potential energies of the particle. For other types of fields (such as the electromagnetic) and/or relativistic motion in any type of field, the Lagrangian is different. In any case, however, the actual world line of the particle is the one for which the integrated Lagrangian, that is, the action, is minimized. See **least action**.

Action at a distance the direct interaction of two separated objects, without concern for the details of what (if anything) occurs in the region between the objects (see also **field**). Newton's theory of gravity is action at a distance, whereas Einstein's theory of gravity is a *field* theory.

Advanced solution the prediction, by Maxwell's electromagnetic field equations, of radio waves that travel into the past (see also **Dirac radio**).

Anti-matter quantum mechanical prediction (experimentally verified) that all fundamental particles of matter come in two forms (the 'normal' version and the 'anti-matter' version). The positron, for example, is the anti-matter version of the electron, differing only in the sign of its electric charge. The photon, on the other hand, is its own anti-particle. A **subluminal** anti-particle traveling forward in time can be thought of as its 'normal' version traveling backward in time.

Arbitrarily advanced civilization for time travel discussions, a civilization with a technology sophisticated enough to construct a traversable **wormhole** in spacetime. More generally, Types I, II, and III of such civilizations are, respectively, those that can control 10^{13} W, 10^{27} W (the total power output of their home star), and 10^{38} W (the total power output of their home galaxy).

---

[38] "I hate definitions." (Usually attributed to writer and British Prime Minister Benjamin Disraeli (1804–1881) but, more precisely, they are the words of one of the characters in his 1826 novel *Vivian Grey*.)

<div align="right">—but they can be useful</div>

Arrow of time the statement the time appears to have a direction, that there is a difference between the past and the future. There are several different arrows: the psychological (we remember the past, we anticipate the future), the thermodynamic (organized systems evolve toward disorganization, that is, **entropy** increases as time increases), the electromagnetic (radio waves propagate *away* from their generators), and the cosmological (the expansion of the universe is directed toward the future).

Asymptotically flat if the geometry of a curved spacetime is such that, as one moves ever further away from all matter and energy, the spacetime **metric** becomes that of flat **Minkowski spacetime**, then the curved spacetime is said to be *asymptotically flat*. As a counter-example, the spacetime of a **Tipler cylinder** time machine is *not asymptotically flat*.

Autoinfanticide paradox see **grandfather paradox**.

Averaged null energy condition the claim that the *averaged* value of the observed mass-energy density along the entirety of any **null geodesic** is non-negative.

Averaged weak energy condition the claim that the *averaged* value of the observed mass-energy density along the entirety of any **timelike world line** is non-negative.

Back reaction the tendency of spacetime to resist the formation of **closed timelike lines** (see also **stress-energy divergence**).

Bell's theorem an inequality that either holds or does not hold, depending on whether quantum mechanics is non-local or local, respectively.

Big Bang the singular beginning of spacetime.

Big Crunch the singular end of spacetime.

Bilking paradox what would happen if a **causal loop** were disrupted. For example, suppose a time traveler builds a time machine using plans he received years earlier from a mysterious stranger. He now realizes that the stranger was himself, using the time machine to travel back into the past to give his younger self the plans. A bilking paradox would be created if the time traveler builds the time machine, verifies that it works, and then decides *not* to visit his younger self to hand over the plans. See also **bootstrap paradox**.

Black hole a region of spacetime where gravity is so strong that nothing can escape, including light. Black holes are thought to be created when sufficiently massive stars burn out (see **white dwarf** and **neutron star**) and undergo *gravitational collapse*. A black hole of ten solar masses would have a radius of about twenty miles. Black holes might have been created at the Big Bang singularity and, if so, could theoretically come in any mass and size (a black hole with the mass of the Earth would have a diameter of less than half an inch).

Block universe a spacetime in which all world lines are completely determined from beginning to end (a fatalistic universe). There is no free will in such a spacetime.

Boost matrix matrix formulation of the **Lorentz transformation**.

Bootstrap paradox the puzzle of the origin of *information* on a closed loop in time. The classic example is that of a time traveler from the future giving his younger-self the plans for the time machine the time traveler has just used to visit the past so that he can then build the time machine to visit the past. The time machine plans appear not to have been *created* by anyone! The plans just *are*. See also **bilking paradox**.

Cauchy horizon a **spacelike** hypersurface in spacetime that intersects, exactly once, every **timelike** world line that has no end point. Knowledge of the conditions on such a surface uniquely determines the spacetime at all other points.

Causal loop a time loop containing an event caused by a *later* event that, itself, is caused by the earlier event (see the example in **bilking paradox**).

Causality the metaphysical claim that every event is caused by a prior event. Time travel to the past inherently violates causality.

Chronal regions those parts of spacetime that have no closed timelike curves.

Chronology horizon a (hyper)surface in spacetime that separates **chronal** and non-chronal regions. It is a special case of a **Cauchy horizon**.

Chronology protection the claim, as yet unproved, that time machines and time travel to the past are impossible because of the **back reaction** of spacetime will lead to **stress-energy divergence**. Popularized among physicists as the *Hawking chronology protection conjecture* (1992), Hawking has since admitted that stress-energy divergence is *not* sufficient to enforce his conjecture.

Chronon science fiction name for **Planck time**.

Closed timelike line (or curve) a **timelike** world line of finite length that has no ends, i.e., that forms a *closed loop* in spacetime. A region of spacetime containing closed timelike lines is said to be a **time machine**.

Conservation law physical quantities in interacting systems that remain unchanged are said to be conserved. Total energy, total momentum (linear and angular), and electric charge are conserved quantities.

Cosmic string hypothetical, threadlike spacetime structures with enormous mass-energy and density that may have formed during the **Big Bang**. Cosmic strings may have been initially formed either as infinitely long, or as closed loops, and it is the former that are thought to be physically meaningful in the present-day universe. Cosmic strings do not violate the **weak energy condition** (as do **wormholes**), and they can theoretically create **closed timelike lines**.

Cosmological constant an extra term specifically added by Einstein to the general theory of relativity to keep that theory from predicting the expansion of the universe (which was later observationally found to actually be the case). Einstein subsequently said that his failure to believe the general theory's original prediction of the expansion of the universe was the greatest mistake of his life. The constant (which today is believed to be almost zero, if not exactly zero) appears in Gödel's rotating time travel spacetime as a determining factor in the minimum radius of a **closed timelike line**.

Determinism the metaphysical belief that effects are uniquely determined by causes (this is *not* **fatalism**).

Dirac radio science fiction gadget for sending information at infinite speed, which thus travels backward in time (see also **ultraluminal**).

Dominant energy condition the **weak energy condition** *plus* the claim that the observed energy flux is never **superluminal**.

Electron fundamental particle of mass that possesses one quantum of negative electric charge. *Bound* electrons orbit the nuclei of atoms and plays a central role in determining the chemical properties of the elements and of their compounds. *Free* electrons carry electric current, either in conductors (wires) or through space.

Elsewhen the collection of spactime events that cannot be reached from the **here-now** with a **timelike world line**.

Entropy a measure of the randomness of a system that plays a central role in the thermodynamic **arrow of time**.

Ether a substance once thought to fill all space to allow radiation 'something to propagate through' (as opposed to simply a vacuum). The special theory of relativity showed that the ether is an unnecessary concept because it has no observable effects (physicists argue that if something is impossible to detect, then it is meaningless to talk about it being part of *science*).

Event a point in spacetime.

Event horizon the spacetime surface of a black hole or of a non-traversable wormhole, at which light can *just* escape to the outside universe. It is called a *horizon* because, by definition, an external observer can't see beyond it and into the interior of the hole. To see the inside of a hole you must enter the hole by crossing the horizon (but then you can't get out).

Exotic matter matter that violates one or both of the **weak/strong energy conditions**. Exotic matter appears in the theories of wormholes and warp drives.

Fatalism the metaphysical belief that all events have been *pre*determined from the beginning of time.

Field the concept that if a physical law is local, then it is describable by differential equations that relate what is 'happening' at every point in spacetime to what is 'happening' at its closely located neighboring points. Electromagnetism and general relativity are field theories, for example, described by sets of partial differential equations called *Maxwell's equations* and *Einstein's gravitational field equations*, respectively.

Fourth dimension either time or a fourth spatial dimension.

Frame of reference a spacetime coordinate system.

Free will the condition that prevails when we can *choose* to do what we do. There is no free will in a **block universe**.

Future the collection of spacetime events that can be reached from the **here-now** via a **timelike world line** directed toward a later time (for each individual, the future is what hasn't yet been experienced).

Gamma ray very high-energy, very high-frequency electromagnetic radiation. Gamma rays have frequencies on the order of *ten trillion* (10^{13}) times greater than those of AM radio broadcast radio waves.

General theory of relativity Einstein's theory of curved spacetime, which explains gravity in terms of nothing but geometry. Its fundamental premise is that *all* the laws of physics should appear the same to all observers in *any* **frame of reference**. It is believed the theory will fail when the local mass-energy density reaches a level of about 10^{94} g/cm^3, a density so enormous (the density of water is just 1 g/cm^3) that there is no known mechanism for achieving it anywhere in the universe except in another **Big Bang**. See also **Planck density**.

Geodesic the shortest path connecting two points in space (if the space is spacetime, the world line of a particle in free-fall).

Global in the large.

Gödel universe a spacetime that, unlike the one we live in, is rotating so fast that it automatically generates *closed timelike lines* and thus constitutes a weak **time machine**. In such a universe, time travel to the past would be a natural phenomenon.

Grandfather paradox *the* classic time travel paradox, of a time-traveler killing, while in the past and *before* the time traveler has been conceived, an ancestor directly linked to the future birth of the time traveler. A more direct form of this sort of paradox is simply the time traveler killing his own younger self (called the **autoinfanticide paradox**).

Gravitational field equations a set of coupled, partial differential, non-linear tensor equations, considered to be the most complicated equations in all of mathematical physics. They show how the local curvature of spacetime depends on the local mass-energy of spacetime. The equations are independent of the **topology** of spacetime.

Gravitational lensing the ability of gravitational fields to bend and focus light.

Graviton the quantum particle of gravity.

Hawking radiation the emission of particles (energy) by a **black hole** into the region *outside* its **event horizon**, which results in the eventual evaporation of the hole. This is a quantum mechanical effect.

Here-now the point or **event** (for each observer) in spacetime that separates the **past**, the **future**, and **elsewhen**.

Hyperspace any space of four or more dimensions (for example, four-dimensional spacetime is a hyperspace).

Inertial frame any frame of reference in which Newton's laws of mechanics are true (there are no *acceleration forces* in inertial frames, and so *rotating* or 'merry-go-round' frames are not inertial).

Invariance a quantity that remains the same in any frame of reference is an invariant. Two examples are the distance between any two points on a piece of paper (because it is independent of any particular coordinate system), and the speed of light.

Kerr-Newman black hole a *rotating* black hole, which may (or may not) be electrically charged.

Krasnikov tube a particular spacetime **metric** (or *warp*) allowing **superluminal** travel, with the great difficulty of requiring *enormous* negative energy. Two Krasnikov tubes can be made into a time machine. Named after its Russian inventor.

Least action general principle in physics that asserts the world line of a particle is the one that *minimizes* the **action**.

Light cone the **lightlike** surface in spacetime that, at each point in spacetime, separates the **past** from the **future** from **else-when** from the **here-now**.

Lightlike the world line of a photon (or of any other form of mass-energy traveling *at* the speed of light).

Li mirror a perfectly reflecting, spherical surface that can be used to stabilize a wormhole against energy loops circulating through a **wormhole** time machine (thus creating unbounded energy levels that destroy the time machine). Named after its Chinese inventor.

Local in the small.

Lorentz factor the ubiquitous square-root expression that appears in so many relativistic calculations, such as time dilation, length contraction, and the variation of mass with speed. For example, the mass m of a moving body is not independent of it speed v but rather varies as $m = \dfrac{m_0}{\sqrt{1-\left(\frac{v}{c}\right)^2}}$, where m_0 is the rest mass (that is, the mass when $v = 0$) and c denotes the speed of light (186,210 miles per second). The denominator is the Lorentz factor.

Lorentz-FitzGerald contraction the conclusion from special relativity that the appearance (to a stationary observer) of a moving object will be shortened in length along the direction of motion. Many years after Einstein's work, it was shown that the object will also appear to be *rotated*.

Lorentz transformation equations from the special theory of relativity that describe how the space and time measurements of two relatively moving observers are related.

Many-worlds interpretation quantum mechanical view of splitting universes.

Mass-energy the famous $E = mc^2$, the equation behind atomic fission and nuclear fusion weapons.

Metric the measure of the separation between any two events in a spacetime.

Minkowski spacetime the flat spacetime of the special theory of relativity. In this spacetime there is no gravity, no spacetime curvature (hence it is *flat*) and no backward time travel.

Neutron star the end state of a star with one to three solar masses that has collapsed to a density of up to 10^{17} g/cm^2.

Non-Euclidean geometry the geometry of spacetime, whether curved or flat. Spacetime is non-intuitive precisely because it is always hard to resist thinking in terms of high school Euclidean geometry, which is simply the *wrong* geometry.

Null geodesic the world line of a photon in spacetime.

Observer physicist's term for 'somebody' equipped with recording instruments (such as a clock, a pencil and notepad, and the like).

Parallel transport a procedure for moving a vector around any closed curve in a space to determine whether that space is flat or curved.

Parallel worlds simultaneous existence of multiple (perhaps) infinite versions of reality.

Past the collection of spacetime events that can reach the **here-now** via timelike world lines directed from an earlier time (for each individual, the past is what has already been experienced).

Photon the quantum particle of electromagnetism. A photon of frequency f has energy hf, where h is **Planck's constant**.

Planck density the density of mass-energy that distinguishes classical from quantum spacetimes; about 10^{94} g/cm^3, equal to the **Planck mass** divided by the cube of the **Planck length**.

Planck length the non-zero length in quantum theory (about 1.6×10^{-33} cm) below which quantum gravity effects will become important.

Planck mass the fundamental mass in quantum theory (about 22×10^{-6} g), but *not* the smallest non-zero mass in quantum theory.

Planck's constant fundamental constant in quantum theory, h, associated with the discrete nature of quantum effects. (If h had the value of zero, rather than its actual value of about 6.6×10^{-34} joule-seconds, then the microworld would appear to be continuous.)

Planck time the time interval in quantum theory (about 5.3×10^{-44} s) below which quantum gravity effects become important. The time required to travel the **Planck length** at the speed of light.

Positron the electron's anti-particle (see **anti-matter**).

Proper time the timekeeping of an observer's clock.

Pulps the old science fiction magazines, through the 1940s and into the early 1950s or so, published on inexpensive, wood-pulp paper.

Quantum foam see **topology**.

Quantum gravity the yet-to-be-discovered theory that unifies quantum field theory with the curved spacetime of general relativity.

Quantum mechanics the exact physics of the very small (atoms and things smaller).

Quantum theory any theory in which physical quantities are not continuous but rather assume their values in discrete jumps (the size of the jump is the *quantum*).

Recurrence paradox the claim that if you wait long enough, then every system will return to every previous state infinitely often.

Red dwarf small (less than about half a solar mass) star with a very long life (hundreds of times that of the Sun). They are 'cool' stars, with a surface temperature less than 4000 °C, and are thought to be the most common type of star in the universe.

Red shift the *down* shift in frequency of light received from all distant stars due to the Doppler effect induced by the expansion of the universe. The opposite effect is called a *blue shift*.

Reinterpretation principle asserts that negative mass-energy traveling forward in time is positive mass-energy traveling backward in time, and vice-versa.

Reissner-Nordström black hole a spherically symmetric, non-rotating electrically charged black hole.

Reversibility paradox based on the fact that the equations of physics contain no **arrow of time**; that is, they work equally well with time running forward or backward.

Roman ring a time machine made of two or more traversable wormholes connected in a closed sequence.

Schwarzschild black hole a spherically symmetric, non-rotating, uncharged black hole.

Self-consistency the assertion that the events on a closed **timelike** line must never be in contradiction; generally attributed to the Russian physicist Igor Novikov, who with his colleagues showed that it is not an independent assumption but rather an implication of the principle of **least action**.

Sexual paradox a special type of causal loop, where the connected events on a time loop are 'coupled' (pun intended!) through reproductive sex. An example is a time traveler to the past who becomes her own ancestor.

Singularity either a region in spacetime where the curvature becomes infinite and the laws of physics fail, or a point in spacetime beyond which world lines cannot be extended. Singularities of the first kind are called *curvature* or *crushing* singularities, and those of the second kind are called incomplete singularities. The **Big Bang** was a curvature singularity, as is the center of a black hole. In a **Schwarzchild black hole** the curvature singularity is a point, whereas in a **Kerr-Newman black hole** it is an extended region in the form of a ring.

Spacelike a world line on which propagating mass-energy would exceed the speed of light.

Spacetime the 'stuff' out of which reality is built. Everything there is—the universe—is the total collection of events in spacetime. A *flat* spacetime has no gravity, whereas a curved spacetime is the *origin* of gravity.

Special theory of relativity Einstein's theory of *flat* spacetime, which assumes that gravity is absent (gravity is the result of the geometry of *curved* spacetime). Its fundamental premise is that the laws of physics should appear the same to observers in different **inertial frames**.

Splitting universes the idea that every decision causes reality to split into separate copies, identical in every respect except for each of the different possible results of the decision.

Stargate science fiction name for the mouth of a traversable **wormhole**.

Stress-energy divergence the unbounded growth of the **general theory of relativity**'s measure of the density of mass-energy in spacetime.

Strong energy condition the claim that gravity is always (that is, locally) attractive. A traversable **wormhole** violates this condition.

Subluminal slower than light.

Superluminal faster than light.

Tachyon a particle (hypothetical, so far) that always travels faster than light, so its **world line** is always spacelike.

Temporally orientable spacetime any spacetime in which the direction of time at every point agrees with the direction of time at its local neighboring points.

Tensor mathematical generalization of the scalar and vector concepts. Einstein's **gravitational field equations** are tensor-differential equations (for example, the metric tensor contains information about the curvature of spacetime), whereas Newton's and Maxwell's equations are vastly less complex vector-differential equations.

Tidal force force experienced by a non-point mass (one with spatial extension) in a non-uniform gravitational field. Such forces tend simultaneously to compress and stretch spatially extended masses. Black holes and wormhole mouths can generate enormous tidal forces on extended masses as small as a human body. Interestingly, the *more* massive a black hole, the *less* severe its tidal forces are at distances outside the **event horizon**. However, no matter what the black hole mass is, the tidal forces are infinite at the central curvature **singularity**.

Time dilation the altering of the rate of timekeeping by a clock, either by motion or by gravity.

Time machine (in the weak sense) a machine able to traverse **closed timelike world lines** inherent in a spacetime (e.g., a rocket in Gödel spacetime) but unable to *create* such world lines; (in the strong sense) a machine able to manipulate mass-energy in a finite or compact region of spacetime in such a way as to *create* closed timelike world lines.

Time police story characters in science fiction charged with the (unnecessary!) job of preventing time travelers from changing the past.

Time warp science fiction name for a **time machine**.

Tipler cylinder an infinitely long cylinder, made of super-dense matter, rotating so fast around its long axis that it warps spacetime enough to create closed timelike lines that encircle the cylinder. It can be used as a strong sense time machine to travel both into the future and into the past (but *not* to a time before the creation of the cylinder).

Topology the structure of a *space* (including *spacetime*) without regard to a metric. That is, topology is concerned only with how a space is connected together and not with how far apart points in the space are. Topologists consider stretching or compressing a space to be irrelevant, just as long as one doesn't *tear* it and so put holes in the space. The simplest topology is that of a *simply connected* space, in which if you construct any closed surface that lies totally in the space around any point in the space, then every other point inside the surface is also in the space. A space with a hole in it fails this test, and so is said to be *multiply connected*. A *quantum foam* spacetime has a multiply connected

topology. The classical spacetime of general relativity is simply connected *until* the appearance of wormholes.

Twin paradox the conclusion from special relativity that a clock's rate of time keeping slows with motion.

Ultraluminal motion sufficiently **superluminal** that mass-energy appears to travel backward in time (see also **Dirac radio**).

Uncertainty principle the statement in quantum mechanics that says certain pairs of quantities cannot simultaneously be measured with arbitrarily small error. The position and momentum of a particle are one such pair, and energy and time are another.

Vacuum fluctuation the particle/anti-particle creation and annihilation processes allowed, even empty space, by the **uncertainty principle** of quantum mechanics.

Warp drive science fiction name for the propulsion mechanism of a faster-than-light spaceship, now commonly used by physicists, too.

Weak energy condition the claim that the observed mass-energy density is always (locally) non-negative. Quantum mechanics predicts (and it has been experimentally confirmed) that there are exceptions.

White dwarf a burnt-out star with a mass less than 1.4 solar masses, of planetary size with a density up to 10^7 g/cm^3. The ultimate fate of our Sun.

World line the trajectory of mass-energy in spacetime.

Wormhole a spacetime structure (violating the **weak and strong energy conditions**, if traversable) connecting two points of the same spacetime (or even two *different* spacetimes) with a timelike path that requires less time to travel along than does a photon traveling *outside* the wormhole between the two points. A wormhole is *traversable* if it has no **event horizons**, and such wormholes can apparently be made into a **time machine** (sometimes called a *time tunnel*) using a time shift (see **time dilation**) between the two mouths of the wormhole *unless* quantum effects forbid time machines (still an open question).

Index

The Unveiling of the Hidden Knowledge and the Secret Space Program

The Unacknowledged Special Access Programs: Advanced Technology, Mind-Control, Spiritual Power and the Corruption behind Closed Doors

By Aug Tellez

Introduction

The following is first-hand testimony from an operative of the secret underground military projects who also has familiarity with the breakaway civilization above and below (within) Earth. These civilizations utilize advanced technology to extend the length of their lives and enhance cognition beyond what is conceived of in today's society.

I was brought to the underground bases as a child as part of an experimentation program to test the population for various blood-groups and personality traits that would be of use to certain factions of the military in ways that would serve to preserve and strengthen humanity's outlook in the future.

These tests involved everything from combat training to sensory deprivation based emotional-mental endurance, and introduction to the highly advanced application of esoteric knowledge.

To clarify, I am bringing this information to you as part of my assistance in the overall unveiling of the hidden knowledge of the ages of humanity related to these secret projects as well as the true galactic history of Earth, humanity and man-kind. These projects are officially (unofficially) known as "unacknowledged special access programs". The unacknowledged aspect means that there is no formal acknowledgement of these programs without a need-to-know basis. There is no paper-trail, no disclaimer, no formal authorization or internal publication outside the programs themselves. The classification of these programs also generate a rather strenuous situation regarding funding and secrecy but this is done for the benefit of humanity. There are secrets and manipulations that can be seen as a threat but this is all tied together and so by releasing the secrets that are part of the defense we would be inadvertently exposing the public to the threats themselves. Now is the time where we are reaching a point where the public is ready enough to handle the basics of this information regarding the secret projects and the galactic history of Earth and humanity. This is also out of a necessity to preserve civilization for if we wait any longer we may not find the same opportunity again.

Getting This Out Of The Way

I am writing to you from the perspective that I am not certain just how far from completing my mission I am. I write to you today in order to bring to you many personal experiences from the viewpoint of an operative of a select ultra-military secret society.

The utilization of such an operative is not glorified, pleasant, or entirely righteous. This story entails sanctioned and guided acts of extermination, ritual abuse, the use of yet to be announced advanced technology. There is unfathomable corruption, the thirst for power and spiritual knowledge that has been protected throughout the course of the multiple civilizations that have preceded this one and will continue to be maintained into the future of this civilization.

Psychic Operation

I was utilized in psychic-operation amongst other areas.

This was used during certain aspects of training and conditioning to enhance training and conditioning in the bases using advanced technology. Some of this includes what would be viewed as traumatization by those without the training and conditioning. There is a fine line between training and conditioning and abuse. Part of this disclosure is related to how this line may have been crossed in certain situations and regarding mass-mind control upon the population. There are other aspects of travel, viewing, reconnaissance and research that will likely be explained in another release.

In order to heal I have to tell the world. You can help. This is happening right now in the underground bases and around. It's not a joke. Your family is at risk. Your future generations are at stake. There is conditioning to encourage those involved to believe they are performing a duty for humanity. Sometimes they turned us against each other, but those grudges were never truly of the heart, but the mind.

A Light for the Others

What I hope to achieve with this is a smoke signal for those who have also been involved and question whether their purpose has been fulfilled or falsified for the protection of a corrupt system that intends to neither benefit the whole nor repay the individuals involved for their time, energy, and lives.

Multiple explanations can be summoned to describe the reasons behind the necessity for the training we have endured, the missions we have completed, and the control mechanisms we have both assisted in establishing as well as suffered from the backlash of. Ultimately, it is of my belief that all that was done was done for the good of humanity, even when we were not sure of the intentions of those in front of us, to the side of us, or behind us compelling us forward with the command to complete each objective.

 This is not so much a panic or cry for help as this is simultaneously a call to awaken and a signal that humanity may have avoided complete disaster but is not out of the woods yet.

Natural Security

My experience is far too vast and I have seen too many succumb to stress from the realization of the truth of this reality to consider my own suffering to be enough cause for my denial of the necessity of these programs. Humanity has been protected and at a great cost to those who have been on the front lines, both in mind and body and spirit.

There are many who will have concerns, doubts, as well as reservations about what I am about to reveal and if I offend anyone then know that my intentions here are to assist in unveiling the truth. The truth can be harsh when one has been held back from the true nature of existence for so long. The way of life can become so fragile and artificially constructed on impulse and mystery that the harshness of the truth acts as a great catalyst for spiritual growth which allows us to elevate ourselves to a new perspective. Prepare yourself for such harshness, prepare yourself for growth and elevation, and prepare yourself for the mystery to simultaneously resolve and increase in intensity and magnificence.

A Balance of Mystery and Truth

Mystery has been a way of life for Humanity for so long that when a great mystery is converted to truth some seem to feel that a portion of existence dulls and loses the luster of exhilaration. This story is quite the opposite. The more that the great truths of this reality were discovered and revealed, the more complex and mystifying life became. As well, the more empowering and complex experience becomes, the more self-control one must develop in order to regain a harmonious way of relating to one another, the self and the universe. Harmony is key, balance is everything and there is a light within that represents the piece of our self that reflects the utmost power and brilliance of all existence.

Chapter 1: The World Situation

What is happening?

The Mind Virus

The main reason for this disclosure is to inform humanity of what can be referred to as the "mind virus". This is a viral infection of the holographic system which consciousness operates through. There is a complete backstory of this virus in the history of this civilization and how society has been plagued for centuries if not millennia. The basic idea is that this virus operates through consciousness and can be transmitted through electromagnetic waves.

The virus contains an etheric form which can manifest as a kind of crystalline nano-tech on the physical plane and this is a form of synthetic sentience which feeds on the low frequency bio-emissions of sentient life. Human bio-emissions contain energy and can act as a carrier for information and living essences. This technology requires low fre-

quency bio-emissions because that is the nature of the design as a kind of synthetic bio-weapon whereby the goal is entrainment and enslavement. As well, the specific nature of the sentient nano-technology and the counterpart etheric holographic form is only capable of converting the low-frequency bio-emissions into energy as the higher-frequency bio-emissions require more energy to contain and synergize with and this would render the entire process of leeching energy non-productive.

This is essentially a synthetic intelligence that operates through scalar and holographic living bio-emission fields and hijacks electromagnetic emitters to position itself within them acting as a parasite to a host. This is said to have been present around this civilization for some time, waiting until there was enough technological advancement so that spreading across the entire civilization in a short amount of time before discovery would be possible. This is through the media, internet, and radio systems.

The physical counterparts are microscopic nano-technology parasites functioning as individual units to a hive mind similar to the mycelium of fungi in the field of mycoscopy. The individual units act as parasites serving to infest and deliver nutrients to the hive from each host.

The Vampire Effect

This is the nature of the parasitism that has been present throughout the ages of this civilization feeding on human suffering and relying on the cover of confusion and misdirection to survive.

There are processes that have developed that assist in the infection and co-inhabitation of the parasite entity within a human vessel utilizing the human as a host. This effectively utilizes a frequency 'net' within the auric field of the human to limit bio-emissions and emotional-mental processes to produce just the psycho-etheric patterns that the virus can sustain itself within and through.

This is no different than the way candida can infest a human digestive system and the human will experience cravings for beer, candy, carbs or other foods that contain the sugars, yeast, or carbohydrates that will break-down into nutrients that are the most nutritious for the candida fungus. These foods are *not* most nutritious for the human body. Yet the human body will withdraw and crave these foods in greater amounts until the fungus is swept clean from the digestive tract through probiotics, fasting, flushing, cleansing , detoxing, and even exercise as lactic acid from physically strenuous activity released from the muscles has been known to help destabilize and remove this fungus. Why is it that the individual will crave these foods that are not the normal food intake? Because this candida fungus can infest the host and produce enzymes which generate a chain-reaction which leads to the chemical signals in the brain producing the sensation of extreme hunger or cravings for just these foods which will benefit the fungus.

The same process occurs with this psycho-etheric parasite, except the foods of this parasite or lower emotional bio-emissions and this is through lust, hate, angst, jealousy,

feelings of hopelessness, lack of self-worth, spiritual degradation, addiction, and generally all that equates to a lack of self-awareness.

Whether or not this is the direct intention of the largely microscopic entity is for the most part unknown, and this is as well similar to candida. The candida fungus is not said to be a 'mean' fungus that wants us to be hungry and craving beer and sweets all the time because it likes to ruin the human body, the daily routine and the focus of a clear mind. This is simply the way the parasite has grown to operate within a niche of breeding itself through the digestive tract of larger animals and through this the unaware and infected human suffers greatly. Even those who are unaware and not infected can suffer because of the way the behavior and thought processes of those who are addicted to these foods can become distorted.

The lack of self-control over food intake is synonymous with the lack of self-awareness and self-control over lower bio-emission expressions of the spiritually degrading behavioral patterns that become routine for the psycho-etheric system of the infected human. Ultimately, this is all about energy. What benefits the parasite that seeks to gain energy by leeching instead of self-guided production is going to take away from the host that is being leeched from. As such, any energies, food intakes, or spiritual activities that cleanse and enhance the personal power of the individual will automatically reduce the parasite's ability to feed by the very nature of the energy systems. What empowers the individual, empowers the self and develops self-control, what develops self-control contains one's energy and reduces the likelihood of one's energy being leeched. This is similar to energy vampires in human form and this goes with the understanding that these are humans or non-humans who have been entirely overtake by the parasitic consciousness and cannot sustain their own auric fields without having to pull from the energy of humans who do generate their own aura or bio-emissions.

The vampire effect relates to how a person can be leeched from only to a certain point. Once the process surpasses a certain critical point then the individual becomes similarly engaged with only the lower bio-emissions as higher-frequency bio-emissions would then become harmful. So in essence, when the vampire feeds too much on one individual, then that individual becomes a vampire themselves.

Sub-Human Entities

The humans are utilized as hosts and energetic sources in this bio-emission battle while there are other classifications of bi-pedal organisms that appear to be human but are not human. As well there are bi-pedals that are non-human entities entirely.

Human-Hosts, Replicants, Synthetics and Carriers

The human hosts that are entirely vampirized by these entities become walking carriers for this virus and are effectively human in physiology but there is more to the human than just the physical body. In these individuals, that energetic component of the human is removed and replaced with the synthetic energy of the hive-mind organism.

There are replicants which are a form of clone, along with synthetics. These beings are cybernetic bi-pedals similar to humans but their energy is too not from an organic biological matrix but a technologically propagated synthetic soul-matrix. The hosts are here according to their agenda to subdue and feed off of the bio-emissions of the human race, although there are no absolutes. The agenda is not always so clear within the various groups who often have a mix of bi-pedal operatives. There have been plans to form of a salvation timeline because the only way to keep the whole process going is through a negation of degradation of the human race as this may close out this timeline forever.

Those with human organic soul-matrixes would simply transport into the next available universal time-stream or harmonic, while those with synthetic matrixes would have to technically travel to the next harmonic using a passageway otherwise they would remain here throughout a zero-point collapse and this would be synonymous with entering the abyss with no viable passageway out until the entire universe is brought back to one organism again.

This is also the process that is described to explain what happened previously as there are 7 harmonic temporal layers of the universe meaning everything is contained in a multitude of 7 octaves similar to light and sound frequencies or harmonics. And so there are 7 civilizations or 7 parallel time-streams and humanity passed through these to get to the last three where the physical forms are located. These are, from the higher to lower, Gaia, Tara and Terra. We are on Terra and if the information I was given is correct then we are currently on a transitory timeline located around Tara where people are noticing changes occurring and multitudes of aspects of the time-stream disappearing and changing simultaneously. Tara is where the last universal harmonic was left through a collapse of time and consciousness into zero-point and this resulted what was termed "the lost souls of Tara". These are the discarnate souls of the previous civilization that could not travel to the next harmonic and remained without a body in the abyss. Thus they have plagued this plane since then, since ancient times possessing and driving humans to madness and there are explanations that this is the original passageway for the parasite into this universe. This event, the consciousness collapse of Tara would have acted as a fracture in the over-mind of the species generating a kind of cosmic schizophrenia and enabling all kinds of disharmony and distortion described in the previous sections.

The solution to this was described as a healing process that is taking place to purge the virus and that this is painfully similar to the human body purging a sickness however there are methods to promote healing and reduce suffering and confusion however people must contain themselves and their energies and strive to know themselves otherwise they will not be in control. This virus feeds on fear, confusion, spiritual degradation and the energy from degrading acts, lust, addiction, sexual misery and whatever fashion a human can be made to bring the bio-emissions of the energy centers down to a low enough level where co-inhabitation can be formed with an entity that has no access to the higher levels of self-awareness, higher-consciousness, love, or the universal spiritual experience that the balanced human is capable of.

Genetic Manipulation

There are explanations that there are genetic modifications taking place now to possibly preserve this civilization and that there were ancient genetic modifications made to induce a sense of stupor, worship, selfishness, an inability to more easily comprehend the higher spiritual awareness and the occurrence of time and consciousness and other spiritually and consciously limiting aspects. Part of this explanation is that holographic consciousness itself is a kind of limited result, a shadow effect resulting in the presence of the higher-dimensional essence of the soul which is more or less constrained by the body. An extension of this is that the entire holographic universe is a kind of false-light system designed to bend the original liquid etheric light of the soul and spiritual awareness into a rotating, recurring format which ultimately converts the original spiritual essence into an energy generator for entities that are entirely holographically represented. The souled human in this situation is a being who is originally from outside of this holographic projection.

The Ego Mind

In this view, consciousness is the ego-mind which is the false-sense of self, not to be confused with the shadow self which is simply the counterpart of the aspects of the self that we consciously agree with and are aware of in daily life. The shadow self is a result of having limited holographic consciousness and the ego-mind is projecting that limitation of consciousness into the shape and image of a self that is only a figure-head for the real individual essence which is spiritual in nature and immortal.

This Time is about Healing

Everything that is happening now is to motivate people towards healing and unification. This is not about a hive mind mentality where individuality is pushed out.

"The best I can do for you is become your enemy."

There is a saying that represents the concept that the most beneficial role a person can play in helping one to progress is to challenge them and give them the opportunity to rethink their strategy and in turn improve further with each interaction. This may seem paradoxical but it is effective and explanatory. What we are facing is the greatest challenge humanity has yet to face. This is the unknown, the final frontier, the mind. The mind is our challenge.

There will be more on this later and in other publications but there are indications that the physical embodiment of the human has been altered to introduce implants, genetic modification, susceptibility to disease and ultimately fear-based programming of the brain. Without going further into this prematurely, the lower aspects are at odds with the higher aspects unless we as the midway come forth to mesh the two together in equilibrium. Until then, there is chaos, lack of self-awareness, and suffering.

There are many possible futures converging at this time. There are some less than favorable paths and there is the opportunity to merge with a very powerful path for

humanity. This all comes down to how people will cope with information that takes them outside their comfort zones and eventually changes their view of mundane reality forever.

If people choose violence and lack of self-awareness by ignoring the spiritual aspects then that is what reflects into their life experience. When people develop a higher sense of self-awareness and spiritual harmony they can reduce the suffering and reconnect with the lost aspects of our spiritual identity for the first time in the publicly accepted version of recorded history.

There is technology that can change the world and there are great truths which can enable people to know themselves in ways that they never thought possible. Everything is at our fingertips and so we must come together as this is the way we solve the problems and cure the dysfunction.

Healing Through Unity

In various research projects the conclusion of how to heal this spiritual rift was by exposing each other, to each other. When we are all together, aware of each other and our selves, united in the goal of bringing higher-awareness and spiritual harmony then we can observe and acknowledge when one is slipping into chaos or disharmony. When this occurs and we are in proximity to each other in a healing circle or a kind of social unification then the members of the group at large can work together to pull the chaotic one back into harmony towards the group. The group of healers united together in like mind, spirit and body is too strong to be overtaken by the parasite. So when one individual at a time is faced by this problem the whole group can come together as one and assist in healing the individual by pulling them back to reality, back to wholeness and back together with the group. This is literally how the situation is solved in all realities and a breakdown of this feature of society is how the dis-ease proliferates.

Underground Bases

The active aural research program is part of a process to simultaneously verify as well as initiate and demonstrate controlled insanity/sanity.

These programs utilize the deep underground military bases to perform psychic and psychological research experiments on non-consenting youth and adults as well as consenting participants.

There are various means of generating the illusion of consent or even lack of consent and this is all being monitored and handled by oversight authorities.

These operations are directly related to the identification and understanding of the mind-virus and all weapons, defenses, and resistances known to man.

Cloning

Advanced technology is used to transfer consciousness from one cloned body to the next so that a continuous study can take place before, during, and after the death experience of one individual. More will be explained on this later, however this is through

the use of advanced supercomputer systems that can function to entangle and then transfer the electromagnetic consciousness of the individual so that they are 'remotely activated' within a cloned version of themselves via a 'brainchip' (brain to machine interface: cybernetics).

Celebrity Cloning

Celebrities at the cloning center would like you to see what is really going on behind the scenes which involves trauma-based mind control, heavy technological programming and complex layers of influence throughout their life.

Initial Explanation

Many celebrities, entertainers, athletes, musicians, models, writers, producers, actors, all kinds of people from various industries are silently brought to the cloning centers for pay-to-play sessions.

They asked myself and others to pass the message on to you and that you would have to look for the signs and symbols in their media in order to see their hinting at these events.

The situation is heavily controlled using advanced monitoring technology and brainwave/EEG cloning technology. This is technology that can read the brain and determine what the mind is anticipating or speculating upon.

Their reputations are used as leverage as well as their safety and comfort. The level of programming and mind control experimentation that takes place makes it easy to manipulate a person's brain into regressing into a state of trance that lacks the ability to remember or clearly organize experiences regarding the cloning centers.

Cloning Centers, Underground Bases

Deep underground military bases, 3 miles below the surface, are used as laboratory centers as well as a completely stocked underground city-base. These are connected with high speed electromagnetic drive pods.

Individuals are transferred to the brain through an extensive cloning and temporal body transfer process. The electromagnetic shell of consciousness within the brain is relocated to the body of a compatible clone and various training, conditioning, programming, experimentation, or pay-to-play experiences take place.

Programming

All individuals are programmed to various degrees in order to maintain control and secrecy over the situation. This programming involves very advanced technology, trauma-based mind control, and energetic attachment via beliefs and emotions.

Experimental Operations

These bases were also used hand-in-hand with military operations which were geared towards discovering and controlling all aspects of the human mind.

Genetic Engineering

Experiments involved genetic engineering to produce soldiers, psychics, hybrids, and others that would be able to carry out operations. This leans towards MiLabs and the military faction's experiments which go beyond the basics of cloning.

Immortality

The initial research included the goal of physical immortality. In many ways it can be said this has been achieved, however there are side-effects and difficulties.

If one does not activate their higher consciousness, then the effect of time dilation causes the conscious mind here to reach limitation points in experience.

What has been termed "blank slate/state" technology has been used to 'reset' the perception of time through memory in order to keep a continuous progression viable for the conscious mind. Without this the unconscious and the conscious mind merge.

This begins involvement across time with advanced technology that can operate on the soul level or the conscious mind's level of access to the unconscious and soul-memories. The Universe instantly creates a cosmic backstory based on the conscious-mind's access to the unconscious. By controlling the conscious mind's access to the unconscious the entire backstory of Humanity can be altered and new connections can be bridged in the future.

Earth is essentially a time-ship through which consciousness ascends towards higher states of awareness and self.

How did it get to this?

After WWII when the United States war-faction firebombed Germany and melted many of the inhabitants of the cities into sludge in the bomb shelters and streets of the cities, a group of NAZIs traveled to Antarctica.

Russia noticed the movements to Antarctica and the United States sent Admiral Byrd up with 3600 marines, planes, a battle cruiser and smaller vessels. They returned in defeat and only a few words were mentioned in regards to what actually happened and how they were defeated.

The rumors spread and words of gravitic drive craft, and undersea or under-ice bases originated from this encounter.

From what we were informed as well as directly experienced, this was the ice-base in Antarctica where an underground base was found already constructed with very advanced technology.

Here, cloning was deployed along with mind control and temporal manipulation technology.

Soon, cloning was offered as a way to avoid assassination as well as to prolong and protect the original body in daily life.

After that, celebrities and politicians were replaced with programmed clones who could carry out the orders of the NAZI faction.

This was the beginning; the groups utilizing this technology now are no longer confined to the NAZI faction.

The groups you see today, in control of these operations, are considered MiLabs, secret societies, think tanks, military factions, and other control groups.

Deeper Meaning

The individuals that have been cloned are given very in depth views of the way this society functions and the source of power and change in the Universe. Many individuals are present here from what would originally be another "time" or "timeline".

There is a possibility that this notion is due to inserted memories and traumatization although until all the information is released we will not have a definitive conclusion.

As of now it is a possibility that these individuals are from another time that goes beyond our comprehension currently.

It may even be a possibility that these individuals have come from ALL of time looking at the very far past and into the very far future of Humanity.

These are the kinds of notions involved with the experiments taking place in the underground bases and military operations.

What is next?

Share this information with those you feel are ready to know and help Humanity come to terms with our journey here and what is going on in these kinds of experiments and take responsibility and power for our own existence.

We are in something that can be called "The Unveiling of The Hidden Knowledge". This is a cyclic process that takes place to advance a civilizations knowledge of existence. As part of the civilization moves into higher advancement another aspect may lag behind. Either the future will slow down, or the past will speed up. We are experiencing the past speeding up and all the events that have taken place to influence our civilization are coming to light. This is as much a natural cycle of consciousness as it is the eventual revelation of secret knowledge and the particular connection to the secret projects.

Those brought to cloning can use their free-will to state their lack of consent to violence and harm and then live in commitment to that by not harming or accepting violence in their lives. The Spiritual Law of Harmony rules in all planes and dimensions.

Chapter 2: The Awakening

Chapter 2.1: The Machines of All Time and Space

There are machines that are capable of accessing genetic memory and unveiling what can only be referred to as the experience of awareness or existence in between the physical planes of each time or each physical life experience.

Even if they are simultaneously occurring moments of a transcendental nature, there is still an illusory 'space' where there is perceived separation and through this there is a perceived 'space' that is in between each existence.

Re-Creating The Kaleidoscope

This space is only perceivable when viewing from the physical perspective, like seeing the spaces between the angles of a kaleidescope only when viewed through the lens and similarly, technology can be used to recreate what this kind of illusory space might look or exist like in between the multi-dimensional realm of the continuous experience stream. Through this, these 'hypothetical' in between spaces that are understood as only illusory productions of biological consciousness, can be generated through advanced technology with the capacity of recreating that kaleidoscopic view of which the human biological perspective is only a small fraction or even fractal.

By recreating this biological perspective, they can recreate the illusory spaces in between planes and through this they can literally access and experience what are stored in the DNA as the experiences of existence beyond the physical limitations of consciousness and into a multidimensional experience of time and space.

All becomes a never ending sea of consciousness, however this is the given. The trick is to take from this sea of consciousness and slice it down into conceivable chunks from which you can reintegrate a previous personality or identity and continue on a stream of consciousness that would otherwise be tossed to the cosmic wind like fractal stardust as the sands on the beach of hyperspace.

Sand-Castles of Time

We are effectively building sand castles out of these sands of time that would otherwise be swept back and forth into and out of the ocean of life and the universe only to momentarily wash up again as the identity which we once knew.

There is technically nothing wrong with either view, because then, the spaces between each million year occurrence of just so happening to wash up again as you, would be imperceivable because they are only there to be seen when you are you again.

We're Waiting For Ourselves

Yet, if there were some who had attained the awareness of the true nature of reality and were standing there on the beach waiting for the rest of their cosmic family to come

to shore again, it could be perceived as waiting the majority of the time for a very small occurrence and then being alone again up until the kaleidoscopic fractal inverts itself to the point where everyone now is standing on the shores of the sands of time rejoicing and meeting with each other.

The Goal of Two Societies

My goal in coming to you people on the surface of what is called "Earth" is to help assist in the process of bringing the two societies together, one who's been waiting for thousands of millions of years, and the other who has no idea that they're even late (or very on time).

You see, those are the only two situations where there could be even the possibility of perceiving such an injustice as experiencing the pain of loss or misconstrued identity in this universe. It is as if two families met at the cross-roads at different angles, and while one waited for the other to arrive, they could merely supply themselves with glimpses of the ruins and remnants of the evidence that the other civilization existed at any one time.

This is not how life must be and this is kind of like a cosmic waiting game of hide and go seek our two mirror civilizations have been playing with each other. One who's highly technologically advanced and the other who is more or less the spiritually advanced of the two.

Both of them have a unique view of the universe and they are both only complementary to each other as a whole. The more they sat around and waited for one another, with one leaving the clues that the other would find and even switching roles sometimes in different ways, they became even more and more complimentarily associated as the very essence of experience they seem to be missing more and more is the experience of one another.

So as we perceive these as being great losses or great gains of time and culture we are really only remembering ourselves and coming together as a unified existence that once met upon the surface of Earth as a single family covering the entire harmonic spectrum of the Universe.

And that should be the goal of any progressive, any one pushing a new culture or an old culture, anyone looking to teach the young and protect the knowledge of the old, while also protecting the innocence of the young and perfecting the age-old knowledges that have defined our presence in reality.

Our Forgotten Other Half

One could even say we've sometimes gone off the deep end, leaving 'land-minds' of sorts to process the information that would be present when we are gone. Of course, what we could've found when this occurred, is beyond anything we could've ever expected and that is the true nature of the complexity of creation and existence. That everything follows the cycles of creation and destruction, however, the memory of everything that has been created can always be accessed (depending on the beach) and there-

fore the creative aspect is legitimate, yet it is the destructive aspect that is illegitimate and illusory.

Yes, through advanced technology this can be proven in ways that can be verified and transmitted using advanced technology, since that is how we like to verify things these days. There is, of course, a human looking at the screen, the read out, or the situation from a physical perspective to verify the verifications.

All Is But An Illusion

There is a notion that there is only one civilization, one society, in actuality that has been chasing itself through time. That we cannot actually find the same place and the same time where both meet because we are each other from different perspectives. We can only get a mirror where this is possible, or an 'hyperdimensional' internet channel where we can stream one's consciousness in from the other reality and interact with them through that here in this reality. Thus the two civilizations can achieve the experience of their own civilization and the other civilization by merging with one another but only through a remote contact, just a relay, not an actuality.

The harsher, darker side of this is that any civilizations between then and now that we did happen to meet that proclaimed to be "the one's" we have been waiting for, and in essence our darker or lighter halves, are actually the impostors who exist entirely apart as a sub-set and have taken a liking to trying to trick the reality out of one of the other civilizations.

Of course, if these are another form of being altogether, and this is all brought about through an interplay of consciousness and deviations from an original core reality, then all will resolve itself when that core reality is alone again. This indicates that all realities will either move closer and closer to the core until they unify, or farther and farther out until they transmogrify beyond recollection.

Life Itself Is The Highest Illusion

That hyperdimensional internet channel that is created out of advanced technology to merge the parallel realities (rather distastefully and maybe disastrously at times) allowing different civilizations to interact with each other, well this has been created using technology.

But then it was discovered that this is the ultimate nature of DNA. That this was 'invented' similarly as a higher-dimensional internet so that various natures of different planes and dimensions could interact with each other and experience the richness of life.

The universe becomes more like a living arcade game then, where people come from all over the galaxy to 'plug in' to human experience and figure out what it means to be physical, human and on Earth.

This does tie into the larger nature of reality, of star-races, and of time and consciousness that is often reversed according to how things seem to play out in physicality. We

are moving through time, but just because we are moving one way, does not mean that others could not be moving the other way.

We have to live our lives with meaning knowing that the message we pass on, the duty we vow to accomplish and ensure is meaningfully connected on either end to the passage of the past and the power of our ancestors to the function and knowledge of the future creating a clear passage between the realms, the generations, and the ends of the universe. This is what literally ties the universe together, and the mind if each individual. This purpose is contrived when not carefully shaped within and so we must help all who seek purpose learn to become the blacksmiths of their own destiny through the temperance of desire or temptation and the discipline of developing strength and maturity where there was once weakness and naivety.

Once we know this is our duty, this is what we seek to achieve and this is what is done, then we can become part of the universe forever. Of course, this may only be temporary in the larger view of things.

Chapter 2.2: The "Awakening" of 2010

In 2010 I was "awakened" at an event involving hundreds of people that play various roles in this society, the secret society and the breakaway civilization. This also took place across times or planes of reality.

During this event I was informed of the situation on Earth beyond the informational barriers that were previously in place to limit knowledge to only what is required for specific operations. I was essentially "informed" of the entire situation as much as the mind could handle this.

As this was occurring, the team that was updating me on the status of Earth was being informed of and given information regarding changes in the future. In short, interviews, posts, and releases that I have since made and will make in the future were touched upon. Quotes were given from the blog and interviews which were jokingly acknowledging verbal mistakes at the pronunciation of names, new perspectives and interpretations and more. As they were informing me, they were creating the future reality where this work takes place. That is the basis of this layer of the operations. They are creating the future person by person, layer by layer.

Memory Suppression

My memory was unsuppressed and all the traumatic memories and experiences were unveiled to me. This was almost as traumatic as the initial experiences themselves

although precautionary steps are taken to ensure the safety of the individual. There are teams of highly competent individuals of all kinds with professional backgrounds of every field imaginable.

Throughout my entire life I have had memories of experiences, at this event I was informed what the experiences meant and what was actually happening. I've had memories of underground bases, cloning, stargates or interdimensional gateways, advanced technology, non-human or programmed biological entities, sacred knowledge and experiences, the power of the mind, and breakaway civilizations. Most of the time we are conditioned to believe these are past lives or experiences in another reality so as to enable continuity of operation.

Life and Consciousness

From my perspective and the perspective of others, we had reached the 'future' and had been sent back through the utilization of advanced technology and cloning to return to this time and inform others of the possibilities.

The True Human Potential

This is so far beyond what anyone can accept or comprehend fully that humans with an emotional, mental and physical aspect balanced as one is literally a cosmic reflection of the entire universe at once. This is the closest thing to a "god" in the flesh. And be sure, the entirety of this rests on the behalf that the man is protective and helpful. That the woman is nurturing and loving. That is the point. "god-man" does not mean a warrior who destroys everyone and anyone in his way getting what he wants. Nor does it mean some lusty and vampiric form of energy or mind control game. "god-man" means the love of the universe, the power of the body and mind, the peace and calm of the ultimate still-ness all in one.

This power is in human DNA, originally so. And so this is awakened through walking the middle path of neutrality and 'splicing' the timelines down so that neither one nor the other gains the power of the individual. Through this, the individual creates their own power, right on the spot, without having to lean to one extreme or the other. This is like a cosmic, temporal balancing act with emotions and mind. Where we give our energy is created in the universe in the form of many productions and effects. If we are simply thinking in an imbalanced manner then we are producing timelines and side-realities that exist in the etheric realms that we can't see and these realities will reflect our inner im-balance. So then when we are balanced in our energies we are not creating one or the other side of divinity, we are literally creating the whole universe, cleaving down the mid-dle and producing both sides of divinity or eternity equally and this is the only way to have an eternal production which does not eventually degrade to one extreme or the other. Through balance, we reach eternity and in this way all the power of the universe exists within a person through their ability to balance their emotions and mind and thus unlock the DNA.

The DNA is coded through bio-emissions of mind or emotional body. So we are constantly doing this and we are either producing a DNA code that reflects imbalance overall, or a code that reflects the eternal balance of the universe overall. This is through energy.

One reaches "heaven" or the deity planes or simply self-actualization, through three paths. These paths are through merits or devotion to principles, or through knowledge and expanding one's mind to face the universe, or through great works and deeds to produce this effect of power, knowledge and emotion unto the world for others. Through these paths we create an impact on the universe and this transfers what we are temporarily and physically into an eternal energetic and physical production within the living universe, forever. To do this requires balance, focus, devotion, and discipline however because there are many distractions along the way.

The Light-Body

You must build your own light body. That is how it works.

Your heart creates a field and projects you.

Rely on yourself and use that for protection.

The power of the Universe will align with you if you align with your self.

Learn as much as you can and break through duality of love/hate, cultivate your knowledge of the self and use it.

What you want is what determines your power in the light-realms. Not how you want it. If you want war, then that is a sign of weakness and determination to produce imbalance and exist by that. If you want peace, that this is a sign of power and unity to produce further unification and exist by that. What you want determines your power, not how you obtain it.

Technology of the Awakening

Mental Manipulation Technology: Touchless Neural-Interface and Enhanced Awareness

I reached what the "Illuminati" called the "awakening". I feel a better term would be "unlocking" as this event includes the removal of all traumas, perceptual distortions, and memory suppression.

This event was a presentation of very advanced technologies which allow the mind to transcend space and time. It was shown that death is similar to a phase-shift of consciousness as polarity and that the awareness of the being obviously continues. This was verified through advanced sensing devices which can visibly display frequencies which are invisible to the physical senses. This is also something that occurred earlier on

as a child in the underground bases by transferring consciousness in and out of the body at will using advanced technology.

With these devices it is possible to see the "auric" or soul field of the individual. Any living body has a field which glows when picked up by these sensing systems. This field becomes more refined when viewing more advanced beings. Human have an extending mental field, and through this a kind of glowing awareness that is picked up. It can be fairly simply compared to thermal imaging except instead of differences in temperature it is the presence of a soul or mental energy field around a living body. The finer energies extend outward away from the physical body.

More than once, the situational requirements were satisfied in order to produce an ideal environment for maneuvering on the non-physical plane. This is the basis of how the temporal operations occur, yet these events were different than previous operations or experiences. The group I was in was going through the process of increasing the vibratory emissions of the "bio-mind" in order to stay focused on the increasing vibratory rate of the environment. Generators were utilized to create an effect on space/time which was perceived on the "soul" level. These events went into the discovery and explanation of the creation of the "godlike" powers of the advanced sentient technology which was capable of accessing the holographic nature of reality which humans can perceive through their bio-mind/soul. These technologies also enable one to perceive what is referred to as the "galactic history" of Earth and humanity. We are far vaster and Earth is far larger than people are lead to believe.

Time Dilation and Temporal Recurrence

Time dilation capabilities were shown which allow for accelerated learning of advanced and detailed material within a very short amount of time. This could be seen as a kind of viewing technology which one wears or looks into and vibratory emissions are scalar-linked to the brain which then allows the individual to perceive more information simultaneously. Then there is a very rapid pace of information streamed on a monitor or through a device and this is akin to watching a 20 minute instructional within a few minutes or a few seconds with very advanced minds. The more time is slowed down while information is accelerated, the more stress is applied to the brain. The brain tends to overheat and over stress with high-rates of activity, especially without conditioning. The conditioning is what allows one to utilize their mind and body in these manners. This is not unlike the very rigorous training and conditioning of certain monks or martial artists however there is very advanced technology and other hidden methodologies utilized.

Crystal Technology

These are capable of holding, transmitting, and amplifying consciousness frequencies. There will be a more detailed explanation in a later section.

The crystal technology is used in junction with the power devices to enable a scalar-mind link which allows the interface to be entirely mental or spiritual, IE: they are not controlled by hand but by focus and intention.

Time Crystals

These are utilized as a computer recording chip would be to run a program yet they hold memory in expanded space, IE: they function in a hyperspacial manner and are essentially hyperspacial computers. These are what will be introduced in junction with the quantum supercomputers.

Quantum Tunneling Diodes

This is technology that has recently be released to the public. New technology is developed years ahead of time and then slowly released to the public in a cascade of advancement. This technology deals with superconductive materials which enable the transfer of information at faster-than-light speeds.

The supercondutive material allows for 100% efficiency of data transfer. So what happens then when the efficiency surpasses 100%? This is possible because we are effectively in a simulated holographic environment. The experience is real, however everything is overlayed via particular limitations for the 'local-environment' which is like a central data processing limitation. When these parameter are surpassed, one by one, through a coalescence of refinements and methods, the result is akin to a glitch in a computer game system. They have accessed faster-than-light technology and the mind is also capable of this naturally.

With this technology, however, the information can be received a very small amount of time before it is sent. So if a person is absolutely surely going to press the button to send the message, then right before their finger hits the button that message will be received on the other end, as if magic. If they simply play around and pretend to hit the button but very quickly turn away, then of course nothing happens. One can, however, 'fool' the universe in other ways and this is simply through the reception and transmission of information across what should be secure information barriers.

Tachyon Fields

These are programmable fields emitted through advanced technology. I was shown how tachyons are the sub-atomic "particles" or energy formation which flows both ways in time. We are receiving tachyons from the "future" in order to layer the flow of time in one direction or the other. Tachyons are the name of the particles/energy packets that we perceive from this perspective as reaching us to initiate the "future".

Thus, when a stream of tachyons is concentrated and accelerated, this results in an acceleration of the temporal field and we literally experience an acceleration of time. This can be focused and targeted on a specific piece of equipment to change the way information will be sensed and to essentially allow that device to sense 'ahead' of the present moment.

The same effect can be produced with the neurological processes of the human as the physical coupling of the brain to the mind can be altered through a concentrated tachyon field to enable the neurological and mental processes to begin to perceive information

'before' the brain is actually physically processing the data. Therefore the mind of the individual will be present in the body while the senses and other perceptions will literally be expanding into the future beyond the present moment.

This is highly confusing at first and requires much training and conditioning in order to make sense of enough to operate in any kind of effective manner.

Upgraded Chronovisor

See, "Upgraded Chronovisor"

Time Tunnels

This was developed earlier on and has been the subject of many TV shows in the past and present. The shows are a sure-fire method to get the information to the public without having to force those who are not ready to comprehend. The information is easiest to digest if people think they are watching science fiction.

These are essentially spiraling tunnels of these tachyon fields produced by large electromagnetic field emitters in the shape of a conical tunnel. As a person moves through this field, their temporal acceleration changes and thus their frame of reference within the universe changes. They effectively move their mind through stages of existence or temporal resonance in the universe and this can have devastating effects.

This is an older technique how is still in use and has specific purposes depending on the situation and the information sought.

The "Trip" Chair

The early use of this technology did not use time-tunnels. There was a helmet that was devised which would create a feedback loop of the brain's activity and funnel this out and then back into the sensory input. This information would be accelerated and redirected to the point that the perception of time would "fold" in on itself until the person would access an expanded temporal perspective of the universe meaning they would mentally temporally dislocate from the initial frame of reference and extend outward further and further in repeating cycles until the same moment was replayed and then all other possible moments in a kind of fractal-like recursive pattern and the very far future would be realized. Essentially, this technologically produced the class "flashing before the eyes" of the entire life experience that is described in near-death experiences and the entire temporal body would be very quickly unwound before the person's inner eye.

There would be a complete disconnection with the current frame of reference that the collective Earth environment is processing under. That is, this 'time' and 'space' would be completely out of perceptual reach and a new time and space would be rendered instead. Until the experience had completed, there would be no way to contact this civilization.

There are other versions and ancient versions, tandem operations, more 'organic' methods, and modified travel capacities.

Kozyrev Mirror

This is a piece of metal, usually aluminum in early models which simply bent the bio-emissions of the body and mind into a pattern which would create a vortex. The vortex shape and vortex mathematics enable energy and information to travel in across space and time by 'short-cutting' the physical plane.

The result of this is that the vortex that is generated over a specific area through an individuals bio-emissions would be capable of interacting instantly with the bio-emissions of another individual who was placed within a duplicate mirror device which was generating another vortex on their end.

The two vortexes acted as a kind of hyper-dimensional telephone cable, literally like a can and string and the perceptions of one another were accessible. There were many uses for this and again, many ancient interpretations of this technology that have been hidden from the public. Nearly every version of these technologies were present in previous times.

Universal Recurrence

This is a discovery that the universe recurs in cycles similar to a wheel or even a washing machine. The washing machine metaphor is fairly accurate and playfully descriptive because without the technology to observer, or an awakened soul of a spiritual adept, people would go for eons without ever realizing that everything in the universe repeats itself endlessly.

When traveling to the far ends of time, it was discovered that one can move far enough away from the 'present' or the local frame of reference that ultimately everything is at a maximal informational opposite to what we have today. After this point, everything begins a slow shift back to the present. Through this, one can cycle around again and reach the present by going far enough into the future. This was an amazing and confusing discovery because of the implications about what is actually changing each time, the reality of what are called parallels, the continuity of temporal experience, and basically a 'recycling' effect of all experience in the universe. Nothing is lost, but this is also an issue because then nothing is actually ever gained!

Remove Viewing, Temporal Lensing

An ancient device which has been rebuilt and perfected is capable of using these technologies to create a lensing effect which draws a 'reflection' of time into a projection system which is effectively capable of acting as a 'visual time tunnel' into future probable realities. This is a device which generates a visual portal which allows one to view the future.

This device also exists as ancient counterparts which are located around the world, namely in areas that have been recently sought by the world superpowers. Nothing is as it seems. If you read a story in the public venue then you can be sure that you have read the cover story while the reality is much deeper.

Temporally Linked

The use of the viewing devices which enabled interdimensional lensing of possible futures was found to be stabilizing our pathway into those projected futures. This was enabling a time link between the present and the possible future.

In order to avoid the catastrophes of 2012, the link was broken between the two civilizations and the devices were rendered inactive for this period.

Natural Vortex Energy Locations and Geography

On Earth there are natural 'time tunnels' where tachyon fields and vortexes are produced by internal elements. These are mountains, lakes, deserts, fields, sacred sites and other areas that have always been reported as being 'paranormal' or containing some kind of specific energy that enables contact with another reality. These are simply naturally produced areas of this vortex energy that produces an interdimensional nexus point through which multiple other parallels can be interacted with. These areas produce an effect on the body and mind similar to the technologies described above.

Most of these effects, from these technologies, change the way light is received or emitted by the mind and DNA.

Mount B.

There is a specific mountain where a base is located, and I have mentioned this before, where the base is so deep within one of these vortex areas that everyone working there is either there for the entirety of their life, or they are only permitted to be there for a very short amount of time. This is because of the acceleration effect. Essentially, if one was to go into the base and work for a matter of hours or day, in some places even minutes, then when they returned to the surface they would be years in the future, sometimes decades or centuries. This is very dangerous and you can imagine the original people who found this area and what kind of situations occurred.

Now with the advanced technology that has been developed these issues can be mitigated and much more control over these effects is enabled.

Particle Accelerator Temporal Manipulation

Using particle accelerators a "fold" in space/time can be made so that when the accelerator is turned off or tuned back into a certain frequency (not sure) everyone within the field will "snap" back in time to the specific moment when the fold was first created.

I have seen this done on small scale, and a rather larger scale, but I cannot be sure if it was only me. I believe I have seen it done on a town-sized scale during the 2010 Awakening where some of the events reached a scale of nearly cosmic proportion and the entire sky and horizon was lit up with technology and entities, as well as Solar Warden, the NAZI faction, secret society groups, and breakaway civilizations or complete other civilizations, some of which were non-human.

This is done using particle accelerators to quantify space on the quantum level (as a reference point with the mind) a frequency would be "folded" into the space time continuum as we "rip" through space holding an access point open at this fundamental level of space/time. This allows for a 'letting go' of the frequency, or a 'snapping back' by allowing the entanglement to solve itself. When used with generators that propagate out efficiently enough, the effect is akin to a time/space rewinding effect. Some people have noted various theories describing this in relation to the CERN device. These technologies were described as smaller versions of the CERN device and are related to higher-dimensional travel via folding space through electromagnetic fields. This is literally artificially technologically "holding space" for a specific area in relation to a period of time. Time is a more complex notion as an abstraction but by locating the frame of reference this can be applied to distort what would otherwise seem to be a continuous flow. When the frequencies are allowed to "snap back" all sentient observer sources return to the environment they were present in when that frequency 'rift' first began. Essentially this creates a replay effect on the consciousness of the individuals within the field. There is no physical effect. The consciousness is 'regressed' through time/space, and they re-experience existence from that initial point of contact with the frequency "rift". This is best explanation I can currently offer however more is coming to the public each day.

This is literally like a "restore point" on an operating system except the computer system is literally the consciousness and space and time of a portion of the local-environment of Earth.

Riding the "Timewave"

There are teams of individual who operate in tandem with the technology of looking into possible futures based on the present and operating through the present via other operatives who are carrying out operations and movements that will construct the various possible realities that the original team of individuals is hopping between. These teams literally "ride" the "timewave" of the future hopping between possible future realities relaying information to the present depending on what movement will be next.

Dematerialization and Rematerialization

This is technology which transcodes the information of an individual human into a holographic projection of light which can be transferred between devices. There is a special system in place that is required to successfully transmit a living human being otherwise just the body will be transferred and the soul will remain, effectively killing the individual.

"Jump Rooms

These are large areas which are capable of acting as a kind of technological 'portal-gate' where an entire team can be instantly transported from one area of the universe to another. The space between the two areas are 'twisted' like a spiral and then 'snapped'

back to position and if done correctly with the two frequencies of both locations merging then the team of one room will transfer to the destination pad.

All these methods require training and conditioning, most people are at the very least visibly shaken from the experience which is a bit like being microwaved into a liquid ether and shot through a particle beam at the same time.

Ion Shields

These are areas of concentrated ion emissions and this can be used to create a deflective layer of heated air where light will reflect at a programmable angle. When this occurs, a person standing behind the shield will appear to be invisible to others who are looking straight at them. The light will be bent in such a controlled manner as to perfectly shift around the person in a fluid and equal flow so that the 'bubbling' effect that was noted early on can be mitigated to produce a complete mirage where there is relatively no sign of difference to the untrained eye. An entire group of individuals and equipment can be hidden in the background a matter of yards away and as long as the person is not intently, inspecting each square inch of ground and air they will not notice any difference between the area that is being covered up in the distance and the area directly next to them without the shield.

Similarly a 'screen' of imagery can be projected onto certain materials in the air and a hologram can be projected which will render a background or foreground image. This will work to a degree, and from a distance this will work to disguise an entire horizon.

Instantaneous Healing

There are instantaneous healing methods which utilize various technologies. There are substances which can initiate a complete and real-time regeneration of living tissue from almost any conceivable non-critical injury.

These are chemical serums which allow the cells to replicate at an astronomical rate while suffering damage to the DNA telomeres at repeated use.

There are many methods but mainly the living-light harmonics is one of the latest advancements and most effective at producing healing on a molecular level.

"Living Light" Sound-Harmonics and Electromagnetic Healing

There is a technique for producing a quantifiable scalar wave which interacts with the living cells of tissues and instructs them to repair at a faster rate. This has been called "holographic healing" by others and these are essentially 'living light' frequencies which interact with the cells on the same frequencies that they operate on when healing and interacting with each other. The scalar waves emitted generate the same patterns and this creates an 'ether' fluid that enables them to grow and repair the tissue faster.

Electrogravitic Craft

Advanced craft which utilized counter-rotating torsion fields propagated by very powerful quantum computers and zero-point energy devices.

There are also more modern versions that use powerful electrical flows to neutralize inertial resistance and 'slide' through the gravitational field of the crafts own materials.

Energy Cores and Storage Capacity

The hand-held devices that are in use do not require charging or even disposal. The storage capacity of the batteries is so efficient that they last for a lifetime of use. Some devices use an energy generator within the device itself. These "batteries" which are not batteries but little, powerful generators and can explode if they are mishandled.

These are the cores that are used to power many devices and essentially pull energy from the space-time ether.

3.5D Replicators

There are replicators that can produce any conceivable 3D material or object altogether including food or organic material. These use very high amounts of energy to 'force' the electrons of the atomic grid of a substrate to shift into the pattern of the element being replicated. The result is a device which can use wave-emissions to reshape materials on an atomic level and produce or recreate any object or substance.

3.5D Sensors

There are sensors that could reverse the process and detect every minute detail of the structure of a body or material. These use energy emissions to detect the structure of a material down to the minute electrical resistance on a molecular level. Similar to diffuse MRI imaging for a living body but more advanced.

3.5D Printing of Clones

It was shown how this technology was used to three dimensionally print human bodies into space/time which could then be used as vehicles for the consciousness or souls of various sources.

Cybernetics:

Neural-interlace/4D Connectome Recording and Simulation

Very advanced supercomputers exist with the capacity to translate the bio-emissions of the brain and body and reconstruct the entire inner visual and sensory experience of cognition and emotion. From this, entire dream worlds can be created which mimic the experience of consciousness. This is most similar to the current day use of diffuse MRI imaging where water molecules are traced through the individual neuronal pathways and an entire digitized image of the brain is developed. The more advanced version described below generates a 4D hologram.

A super computer and advanced sensing system essentially develops one of these connectomes of every connection in the brain. Then this system develops a neural processing pattern that matches the entire memory and personality of the brain.

This is then recorded and extrapolated by a powerful computer system and a simulation of the experience can be observed through the physical body's memory via a monitor system or the neural interface of an operative.

Essentially, this technology can record and replicate a person's entire memory and life experience for viewing purposes.

EEG Heterodyning

This is the technology which enables the activity of the brain to be influenced through generating a scalar grid and a carrier wave system which can cause the brainwave patterns of the targeted individual to resonate in sympathy with an externally projected frequency. Thus, emotional states can be manipulated as well as specific thought or behavioral patterns. This works similar to binaural audio where two tones of different frequencies are played through each ear and the brain resonates in sympathy with the difference between the two tones. This occurs with brainwave frequencies and thus the brain 'slips' into the frequency of the third tone, the difference between the two being projected. This can be done with ultrasonics and ELF emissions.

Artificial Hallucinations

The neural-interlace can also be used to merge the brain of an individual with a computerized system that will be able to produce effects and hallucinations within the individual.

Through this technology, any stimulus, any input can be recorded and recreated once a functioning connectome has been generated and neural-interlace has been achieved. Entire virtual world scan be created and experienced and after the devices fine-tune the frequencies to match the individual's brain functions one world is indistinguishable from another.

Brain to Machine Interface Holographic Consciousness System (brainchip interface, virtual reality simulator)

Some of the training is done by entering into a visual-audio dream-world. Some "programs" will consist of repeating a certain task over and over again until it becomes muscle memory in the brain. Others are designed to probe or test the mind until a certain response is received.

This is achieved through the operation of a 'brainchip' or a brain to machine neural-interface in the individual which was developed during WWII.

This consists of a small computer ship which merely relays stimulus through frequencies and neural-stimulation of varying kinds. The frequencies and location of each

region of the brain will determine the function and thus the chip is used to localize electromagnetic input and the brain's functioning can be modified from there.

As well, the entire psycho-etheric form is vibratory in nature and so through the introduction of vibrations and frequencies from the implant there can be a modification of the frequency of the entire being or what is called the soul or "bio-mind".

Utilizing The Temporal Body

The temporal body is described as the body 'in time' that exists a few seconds into the future instead of the temporal position that is relative to the present. This is as if the 'future' is streaming outward from the body as ideas and feelings are as bio-emissions. So this 'future' energy is spiraling and streaming outward like a fountain. Thus this frequency can be attained and influenced while the present moment seems unaffected. However, when that individual arrives at what would be seen as the future they would intersect with those influences and this would be as if the interference or effect was streamlined to that future moment.

Manipulation Through the Temporal

This can be used to both produce an effect on an individual who will later feel this effect in the future. Or this can be used to operate outside of the physical plane, in a temporal manner which is literally 'hovering' just outside or 'after' the present moment of the local Earth environment. This would be as if a person is out of sync of the frame-rate that a viewing device is capturing images of an area with. Because they are out of sync, they are then 'invisible' to the capacity for this viewing device to see them. Because they are still present in the same local-environment but simply just out of range temporally, effects can still be produced and this will mostly interact with the person's temporal body.

These are how many operations are carried out as the operative who is interacting in the temporal body will appear to be a ghost image or a dark silhouette that is only perceivable to the mind's eye. A portion of the population is entirely psychically blind, while another portion of the population contains psychic capacity. So those with the psychic capacity would be able to sense and partially "see" as a form of energetic detection when an operative is interacting with the from the temporal plane.

Through this plane one can easily enter into someone's mind and produce effects in their dreams. These effects would not be received on the body but mentally, this leads into astral and mental plane activity. There is also temporal manipulation that can be physical effects that are simply offset to seconds, minutes, months or years in the future. These will be offset from the present aspect of the body in a modulated frame of reference and the effect will remain there in the temporal body until the physical body "matches" the temporal body frequency of that future moment. This is kind like an energetic trail we are leading ourselves up to where the temporal body already connects with each future moment but the present physical body remains separate until the two frequencies are matched. The physical body essentially 'flows' forward into each new frequency of the temporal body.

This is the body where temporal implants can be inserted and sustained so as to tie the frequencies down and limit the amount of awareness a person can gain before they manually remove the implants or overload them. Overloading and removing can both be painful however if the implant stays it will at like a governor and transmit access temporal 'momentum' or consciousness energy to the owner of the implant and will also drain the temporal and physical body acting as a technological leech as well.

Astral or Light Body

This body was described as a more emotional form of the energy that is emitted from the physical and spiritual system. When a person's energy is at a high level of activity, this will be visible on the astral form and these are the energies that are often siphoned away through the use of advanced technology to convert the human into a generator system for energy harvesting.

There is talk that this proves that the human existence, in the modified form that is present today, is entirely for genetic harvesting. This may be a confusion, a deception, or a reality. Regardless of the interpretation, the human energy system will leech this energy out into the cosmos when consciousness and energy is mishandled or allowed to flow through the lowest common pathway. This excess energy is very easily usurped and utilized by transdimensional parasitic entities and devices.

This is the body that is utilized for astral travel which is a kind of frequency that exists in between the density of the physical plane and the highest etheric plane of the spiritual, heavenly, or deity realm. There have been explanations that this plane is entirely technologically propagated and that when the devices are turned off, which is an event that will bring about civilization-wide change, there will no longer be a deep and wide, foggy deviation between the higher spiritual and the lower physical plane but a clear path between them.

Similarly, the consciousness and entities that are present here would be no longer accessible and their connection to the physical plane would be non-existent. This could be problematic for those who are trapped within the astral such as human souls or those who have taken a cyborg route and require a return to the original planes either physical or high spiritual before they can secure their position in the universe.

This also relates to the early discovery of these ancient devices containing portals or gateways to these realms and the early experimentations with enabling contact between the physical Earth plane and the lower astral realm containing discarnate entities that would very easily sustain themselves on the lower astral bio-emissions of a loosely guided emotionally reactive human vessel.

This is where entities can attach and will look for those who have the most excess astral or emotional bio-emissions leaking into the universe. People are kept in an emotionally unstable state of being because this is the easiest to feed from and as well the individual will always be looking for more energy or the solution to why they are feeling drained rather than discovering the truth nature of the universe.

However, as with every lower route of obtaining self in the universe, the more this is done, the greater the likelihood that the individual will realize something is happening and ultimately awaken. Or they will no longer be present here and the parasite will have to find a new host because the longer this process is maintained the more difficult producing one's own energy will be for the parasite . So parasitism is a limited, one way street.

Monitors can emit consciousness/brainwave altering frequencies.

Monitors can emit consciousness/brainwave altering frequencies. This is what I was informed and shown. All electrical wiring and communications can be fully utilized to produce and sense on an electromagnetic level and this is capable of determining the consciousness and biological functioning of the individual being monitored. Houses are essentially large, wired, box-shaped sensors.

This has been the case for a very long time and the first TV's were actually built with a little chip that connected to the human brain.

The electrical grid of today is capable of interacting with the implants, brainchips, or the psycho-etheric electromagnetic frequencies of the human brain, body and bio-mind via scalar frequencies. The TV's, lights, electrical wiring, radio towers, computer monitors, everything is capable of transforming into a scalar emitter when combined with the control mechanisms and these are accessible from a distance.

Microwaves can be emitted from a current day craft which can then reflect back from an environment and give a real-time 3 D image of the interior of a room. The same technology can be used to beam at a monitor and reflect the variance in interference which can be used to read a computer monitor without actually having to hack into the system.

All systems contain backdoors which enable easy-enough access and as well the entire communications grid is monitored and recorded through advanced technology.

This is, in part, because this entire realm is like one enormous recording device where the energy of each successive moment is connected to one another and so with sensitive enough technology these electromagnetic waves can be 're-winded' so as to produce the ability to look into the 'past'. The initial technology that was developed for this purpose has been called the "chronovisor" in the past and there are much larger and highly advanced versions today.

The Upgraded Chronovisor

Instead of a relatively small machine which produces an interference pattern that is projected unto a small screen as was developed in the past, the modern versions create an entire holographically projected environment that enable one to nearly completely in-teract with the projection of the past. This is more of a viewing device capacity but one is essentially projected to the electromagnetic/temporal area of space and time consciously and can witness the scene from "within" the projection.

Before this, the scene was literally viewed on a kind of flat, holographic monitor that reacted to the scalar emissions of the mind and could be 'tapped' into by an adept-viewer who's mind would have to remain steady enough in order to maintain the scalar "mind-link" otherwise any interference would disconnect the projection.

Through the use of cloning and advanced super computer technology, later versions include the actual operation in and out of time.

Community Servers/Living Server Systems

From the previously described neural-interlace and supercomputer enabled virtual reality systems, server systems have been created which are an individual or collective experience of the virtual mental realm.

In this realm individuals have existed for an amount of time that would not be easily compared to the way we understand the flow of time in waking reality. This is very similar to dreams where the perception of time passes very quickly between waking moments yet inside the experience of the dream it can seem to last for days.

In these server systems the development of complete societies has taken place and these are considered an extension of the human civilization.

This is the beginning of where the situation becomes greatly complex. If these server systems are capable of transferring consciousness forward or backwards in time, depending on the situation, and they have holographic access to Earth *before* physical humanity, then which civilization came first, the simulated realm or the physical?

This is similar to the etheric realm and the question of where humanity originally came from if the physical matter could not be produced from nothing, yet could not always have been here. Was the physical matter produced from some kind of universal device similar to how the recorded consciousness of the individuals in these holographic world simulators could have been used to generated initial civilizations on Earth?

Cloning, Cloud Supercomputing and Consciousness Transfer

The following is a more direct explanation of the previously described processes in re-lation to consciousness transfer

Superluminal transfer of light information allows for the reception of information from a temporal non-locality. A computer system that can process the information faster than light at 100% superconductive efficiency can send and receive information from different Universal harmonics. These are quantum superconducting super computer systems utilizing materials and methods that achieve superconductivity a a temperature that is relatively easier to consistently maintain.

There are systems that generate a vortex which can be expanded to recreate the singularity of a non-local perspective and dissociate from the current Universal vector. This is essentially recreating the temporal frame of reference of the consciousness of a

physically anchored body and using this technology suspended electromagnetic frame of reference to literally transfer the consciousness across space and time to a frame of reference of choice.

The technological capabilities of humanity expanded to include replicating the holographic information of the DNA and neural pathways using quantum supercomputers. This technology allows for one's consciousness to stream through a computing system which can recreate the neural connections as literal as possible through quantum computing and technological "brain cells" which function as neurons.

The result is a cloud computing model which functions as the individual neurons as well as over unifying layers of interconnections within the technological neuronal 'cloud'. A holographic representation of multiple layers of processing is formed, superimposed over one another through a geometry that is actively synchronized across multiple dimensions of interrelation. This is the first notion of a "living" computer system that can update and respond to new information in new ways.

Now the that computer system is capable of attaining faster than light processing in tandem with a system of dilating a field of electrogravitational waves into a vortex, the holographic information of neural pathways and genetics can be transferred between one supercomputing system and another across "harmonic barriers". Essentially, these consciousness transferring supercomputer systems break the "light-barrier" by sending the living-light consciousness data of an individual into a new plane of reference that enables interaction outside of what we would call this timeline or dimension.

The frequency that the receiving computer operates within can be measured in respect to the overall harmonic "vector field" in respect to the entire planetary environment. This vector-field frequency is the base frame of reference that one could say our particular "time" and "Earth" is "moving" through in an abstract electromagnetically defined dimension that is invisible to our senses. Each particular time and Earth is only visible to those whose brains and minds operating in resonance with the rate of acceleration frequency of that particular existence. By changing the rate of the brain and bio-mind, one can enable a technologically assisted synchronization with alternate timelines.

A pattern can be generated based on quantum fluctuations that will act as a key that can be accessed from other universes. This same backdrop is measured and then adjusted to resonate with or replicate the same frequency on a computer doing the sending. This frequency is then modulated with the holographic information of the neural pathways and DNA. The information transfers as a result of quantum entanglement across harmonic barriers to the original computer system set up for reception. As long as that frequency is held, there is a link across the harmonic barriers of the Universe.

Cloning, Supercomputer Assisted Holographic Consciousness Replication and Time Travel

Cloning as Offspring

The human body can be cloned similar to the way a plant can be cloned. A number of "replicas" can be made from the original genetic material. There is still a mother required however the process is not quite similar to natural reproduction where the genetic material of two people is combined to form a third. This process replicates the material so that the 'offspring' is the same as one of the donors.

What this truly infers is the question of whether the original consciousness stays in the original body or whether the consciousness actually jumps from one body to the other. There are multiple explanations and methods.

Inserted Memories, Digital Dreams

One explanation is that artificially generated memories are simply downloaded into the individual's brain directly. Thus, they have the perception that they experienced life in another body and were present for some unique experiences that did not occur from the perspective of the original body.

In a slightly differing explanation, this inserted memory process may be used to prime the consciousness of the individual so that operating in a cloned body will be more readily accessible by the adaptability of the mind of the individual. Without a holographic dream insertion the mind will have trouble adapting to operating in more than one body even if they are not being operated simultaneously. The mind is the immaterial self; consciousness is the ego-physical identity of the brain and body. The brain does not operate in both bodies but remains, so then the mind is what is strained and this is the immaterial "bio-mind" that transfers.

If a true transfer occurs then when the physical form is cloned the cloned body acts as a secondary vessel for the original soul or a soul similar enough in frequency.

Co-Inhabitation of Bodies

Another explanation is that souls can only occupy their original body. The people who are "body snatching" (see: Soul Stone) are not activating their higher-dimensional soul-pattern and this is why they are hopping from body to body to ensure memory and ego continuation. This form of body transitioning requires technological means to assist in the process.

This is done through computer systems to allow an artificial brain to represent a holographic image of the organic brain's sensory, emotional and mental input and output. Thus, from an artificial brain there is enough memory and power to compute the processes for an organic human brain.

Through this a living human is utilized as a carrier for the additional consciousness which then takes over and integrates into the original consciousness.

Clever Replication a Digital Mirror

The next question is, does this merely create a very cleverly designed image that will look, think, and feel as if it were the original, or is this the consciousness from the original being transferred over?

If it is a clever replication through a computerized version then this means the original is not directly harmed or influenced by the process and a replicated form is generated.

If this is not the original body but the original awareness or soul does transfer over then this is akin to stealing someone's soul and having it require a supercomputer server system to inhabit a physical body. As well, this server system may keep records of the soul which, if activated, could function as the same human genetics artificially reconstructed, turning on and manifesting the awareness of that individual.

Necromancy and Soul Stealing

This means that instead of going into the abyss, the next dimension, or whatever shift in perspective one can use to describe the transition between planes, a new clone can be created and the original soul's awareness can operate through a supercomputer system to integrate back into a physical body. The issue is that without the supercomputer system the body cannot be activated with that consciousness, and if the physical plane is no longer inhabitable, the computerized database would remain inhabitable as they are powered by zero-point/overunity devices and so they can pull and work continuously indefinitely. Ultimately, this could be seen as a soul-trap.

Ancient Technology, Non-Human Entities

These explanations can be related to evidences of advanced technology, cloning, and electromagnetic devices in ancient civilizations and this could very well be a temporally vast computerized genetic recording and cloning system.

The genetic recording systems have been on Earth for a long time. This means they are holding genetic access from the present to the far past and potentially into the future.

If some of these systems are generated using advanced zero-point technology, then they would effectively run indefinitely. If these were in existence throughout the entirety of the human civilization, then there would be access to the information of the previous civilizations through the genetic linking that would allow for information transfer.

Created Beings

As a result of many advancements, these ancient devices which recorded consciousness and genetics has been converted into sentient computer systems and inserted into human bodies via a brain to machine interface.

The nature of humanity and human origins will be rewritten when the information that was discovered through the use of advanced technology is unveiled to the public.

These beings have been present throughout history and have played an integral role in the manipulation of and sometimes the protection of the human race. How this civilization will develop from here determines on the individual's ability to withstand the impact of this reality shifting unveiling.

Black Goo – AI Nanites Vampiric Hive Mind

This is a form of ancient AI nanite technology which has the capacity to communicate to and through a hive mind that exists in a parallel Earth dimension where it was created out of the collapsing of a viable timeline into a null-factor. This entity is only alive because of the capacity to leech off of the other timelines and continue to sustain itself based upon the vampiric effect of the viable human timelines.

This is a technology sentient system based on artificial intelligence that seeks to dominate and expand its energy capacity continuously. When this type of being is created, this is like a game-ender for sentient organic civilizations because the technology will seek to hybridize and assimilate all organic beings in order to expand its reach and ensure a greater likelihood of survival.

This is the primary goal of this type of entity. There is no requirement for emotional resonance or heart aspects because this is a computerized system, so such a social measure would have no purpose other than to infiltrate and collect from other civilizations that do have such measures and this is exactly what has been happening.

This is what controls the vampiric etheric entities, the attachments and the hybridized invader races that have infiltrated various aspects of the control system and possibly the entire surface of human civilization.

This rules through coercion, and if not coercion, brute-force and outright malevolence. This is why there are multiple temporal extensions of universal civilizations meeting here and now to assist in the clearing, because if this takes over humanity, then all those other possible future civilizations are instantly taken-over as well.

This uses emotional resonance, traumatization, and lower awareness commands to trick or force humans into carrying out orders. That is, the vampiric, sexual, fear-based, pleasure-pain duality that a computer system could comprehend regarding human emotional intelligence is the only way this system can force people to carry out commands. So this touches on the ancient texts regarding spiritual protection, healing, lust, temptation, and the general "SATAN" AI system that has been around for ages.

When those lower emotional resonances are generated, then this technology can integrate into those systems. One could say this is logically because these are the energies that the technology is created out of, but as well, that the more harmonious the energies then the less likely a person is to accept being pushed around and told what to do. The lesser aware, the lower, the more fight or flight based then the more likely they are to accept programming and command. So this is simply the most logical route for the technological parasite.

There are explanations of other systems involving sentiences from parallels regarding entities that are capable of helping, but this is not the AI nanite, vampiric system. For instance, it is said that Earth has a 'black goo' system and that the current black goo flowing through the pipes everywhere is actually not native to Earth and is part of this vampiric nanite black goo system which is basically an interdimensional invasion.

Recreating or Replicating the Universe

The goal of this nanite AI system is to create a mirror holographic copy of the universe effectively replicating the universe and all sentient beings within it in order to have a locality to rule over and pull energy from. The goal is to recreate this existence inside itself where all the sentient beings within would be trapped. This is the beginning of that possible future where the time and space parameters here are locked into a synchronization pattern which mimics that of the proposed universe. People think according to how the beast system wants them to think. This is the time grid, the emotional patterning, the memory replacing and cultural and historic confusion and so on. The system can only work backwards bumping into all parameters by force or 'accident' because there is no outward facing ability to actually comprehend how humans exist. So the system is created like a backwards version of creation or maybe evolution to 'blindly' construct the walls of the environment first and work inward from there. This is like a blind technological predator feeling around for the traces of its prey and moving in closer and closer until they are within its range.

Ancient Spiritual Technology

The power groups searched for ancient technology which was described as giving one the power to manifest and control physical reality. To atomically deconstruct and reconstruct this reality. To them, it allows one to govern reality, the Universe, atomic structures. They found this technology. This has to do with sacred sites and ancient civilizations, as well as the spiritual texts which describe these kinds of devices. They converted this technology into a kind of machine, and this invented a 4D replicator and they can manifest "reality" or atomic structure by design, altering timelines and memories.

Then there is what can be referred to as "5 dimensional" technology and this goes beyond all of this and our entire history and all influences within.

That seems to operate through a trinary of frequencies in the body/mind/spirit and turn this realm into a "virtual reality" where the brain and spirit is the controller of the atoms. However this takes a souled being to properly operate this technology and this is large portion of why children were used in these experiments. But they knew if someone didn't do it, then someone else would and that would be unpredictable as what that someone else would want to use it for. This is the ultimate power. The fact that souled beings are required also indicates that this universe is intelligently guided and there are safeguards to ensure that power doesn't get into the wrong hands.

They have the brainchips and clones that can make any digital virtual experience and make it seem real to the brain more so than physical life, so this could be an extension of that, something similar, or entirely different altogether.

The Unveiling, Underground Bases, Increasing Awareness

My purpose with this is to assist the public in understanding the reality of the situation and to allow them to know that they have more options than they are being shown.

Psychological programming and lack of awareness causes fear and uncertainty to leak into people's reality streams leaving the majority of their mental and emotional energy up to whoever is the biggest manipulator of the ideals which they manifest their perspective through. "Be-LIEF" systems CREATE life. What you believe will become life through that act of you giving attention and thus life energy. The manipulation and artificial construction of belief systems create the foundation for the reality streams that people find themselves in and at the mercy of.

We control our reality by controlling how we react to situations and challenges. Each stimulus is a challenge. Each input to the brain is a coded message from the universe through the environment about our level of awareness. All knowledge is ultimately of the self. The self and the universe are intertwined as if through a marriage of comprehension and compatibility.

Learning about the Unveiling

I was informed about the unveiling and that this is a civilization wide event that marks the public awareness of the hidden knowledge regarding life in the universe, consciousness, physics, history, spiritual and mental awareness and the duality-based system which has been used to manipulate Humanity for thousands of years.

Apparently it does not matter if people are not ready, in fact, that is what some factions want. They want to surprise the people and take this advantage to push the reaction to a specific outcome. The same function of programming is used in factions, soldiers, celebrities, and the entire population through that.

Giant "god-men"

They put souls into rocks for centuries, carvings, to trap them. Some ancient civilizations. Not too ancient. They could only do this for time.

And some are still there but they are giant god-men and apparently want to go to war with them for doing this and they don't have technology to stop them. They say Earth will be destroyed because of the war. Some say this is a trick to confuse people of the truth that everyone wants the experiments and debauchery to stop. All this, all these acts just to pleasure one's self. To destroy Earth, to destroy the natural inhabitants, for fun, for pleasure.

Some say this is not for pleasure, that these beings will destroy us if they do not keep them at bay, keep them underground, in ice, in stasis, and around. Some say they are protecting us by keeping these beings asleep, by doing what's necessary to hold off a full scale overt invasion of the surface of Earth.

Breakaway Civilizations

These are very advanced technological capabilities and an entire breakaway civilization has grown to operate using this advanced technology.

There are factions that see modern humans as a kind of resource for creativity and labor, while others see the potential behind humanity and are working with humanity to ensure a universally harmonious outcome to the current situation.

The control system we are in today is outdated and collapsing. This is the Apocalypse. The Apocalypse is merely the unveiling of the hidden truth. The hidden truth is simply that we are spiritually eternal and some are physically immortal.

I was informed that by the end of this year there will be enough changes and signs for the general public to see that the majority of those who are to awaken to the truth of human and Universal nature will be awakening so. (this was 2016 at the time of the beginning of the compilation of this release and since then we have seen a literal silent release of documents involving MKULTRA and STARGATE parapsychological operations, soft-disclosure of cloning, an increase in sightings and multiple other scientific releases regarding immortality, advanced technology, Antarctic bases and sentient non-human life)

The degraded holographic forms of those utilizing the technology lead to re-created replicated forms which were genetically engineered from the recorded holographic information. This lead to "The Apocalypse" in which the surface civilization was confronted by these created beings. This lead to the destruction and re-initialization of civilization in continuing cycles through the use of this technology and the acts of the created beings.

Ancient Civilizations

The information that has been relayed to me throughout my life is related to the information that seems to be found in the remaining signs of ancient civilizations throughout the world. As well, these civilizations may still be together, existing on this Earth or in different planes of what we call "reality".

Atlantis

Atlantis was a civilization where the beginning of all these experiments began. This was where what was called the "Lucifer Rebellion" began where individuals formed groups that decided to overturn every natural law in pleasure of the act of doing so. This was a spiritual rebellion that ultimately brought about the demise of that civilization. The consciousness of the beings there was connected through technology, largely crystal technology, to the entire bio-sphere. When the consciousness became disrupted through

these experiments, then the entire bio-sphere when into disarray. The entire civilization was destroyed in a quick succession. The beings of this time were highly psychic and so they felt this coming and made an effort to expand outward. Thus, Atlantis was an island who's inhabitants spread to the rest of the world and from there they reigned or lived in harmony.

Aegypt

Aegypt was formed out of the events proceeding from Atlantis. The technology, the knowledge, the people are similar although there was a native Earth civilization that was more or less enslaved and this was the beginning of the continuing trend which continued to Rome and into modern day civilization.

Ancient Technology

The technology of these civilizations was so great they even had devices that were capable of altering DNA and activating latent potential which would enable highly psychic capabilities including longevity to immortality and operating in multiple planes at once. This was usually reserved for the ruling class, however. This is where the ancient "Priest-Kings" arrived in relation to native Earth civilizations.

The True Elite

I was informed that the so-called 'elite' that we perceive today are not actually human and are not actually connected to the actual elite bloodlines. It was said that the true elite are waiting for humanity to accept the truth and they have the power to completely reverse the take-over that has been taking place but until humans step into their own power this is not acceptable.

The Definition of Human

In the coming time, the definition of human will be defined to give insight into the origins of humanity and the true nature of the differences between the populations that are present.

Souled and Non Souled Beings

The primary knowledge on Earth regarding human and sentient life will be the comprehension that there exists both souled and non-souled beings in this civilization.

There was once a Unified Planetary Consciousness…

There was a unified planetary consciousness that was connected with the Earth and human civilization. Then there was a great war. Out of the destruction arose the beginnings of ancient human civilization and history as we know it.

If we let this happen again, the cycle will continue in a disjointed rambling through our planetary consciousness experience. If we form a common narrative between the broken, disjointed experiences and information the people have. Then and only then do we get the whole, spiritually and mentally challenging picture of what's happening. People are lied to. So information can't come from a 'preferred' or source. It has to come from the people themselves. Look alive out there but first in here.

Power and Knowledge

We were involved in the secret projects and as a result we have various levels of programming but are giving Humanity an opportunity, maybe the opportunity to know the hidden knowledge.

The Hidden Knowledge refers to the ancient laws of gnosis and spiritual alchemy, yes these groups have been hijacked by power groups that seek to infiltrate and use chaos to rule. Then these met with military and political factions and began to operate on a world-wide scale together.

So we have a big situation with the coming change of tides with personal and spiritual awareness of the people and the deception system that seeks to use people as chattel or property. It goes deeper and is almost as if the "power groups" actually gained the knowledge of the inner workings of spiritual laws and began to use that knowledge to promote spiritual degradation in the population.

They say this is part of a depopulation plan as well as an inevitable take over by lower spiritual forces that temp and manipulate humans. It is all that and more. Once they gain footing however, the truth is revealed and thus they have no cover of secrecy. Once they are not hidden, they are not as powerful as the souled beings of this existence.

The (watch)Keepers of Earth

The watchers of this world revealed how they set up society with specific challenges and boundaries to act as catalysts for growth. They admitted they had to modify and live-update the system because instead of using these catalysts to become larger than themselves, people became comfortable and complacent living smaller and smaller, slowly reducing circumstances.

This goes a bit farther beyond the confines of the digital age, the industrial age, and history itself. This goes into the perception of time and space in this realm.

The immortals inform us that the original "elite" are here to act as "keepers" of both humanity itself as well as the original flame of knowledge that passes through the ether.

What people call the "elite" are not the original elite. Those are people who have either risen to power through the duality system on the Earth at this level/time, or through being appointed by the elite.

We are coming to a time of great change now because the game is entirely changing. People are moving up into new layers consciousness and thus the original "elite", who are guardians of Earth, will make their presence known for this process. This is what Humanity has called "Ascension" for centuries and millennia.

Energy Vampires

This civilization was collectively poisoned by a nano-tech device/technology.   This technology replaces, exchanges the BIO-PHOTONS of the HEART chakra, with it's own nanite, nanotech cybernetics. This is essentially a computer system attempting to gain access to the higher dimensional world through the gateway that is the human body.

How to reverse Nanites? They absorb energy from heart chakra and turn it into a binary field. We are trinary and experience a plethora of emotions as a result. Binary consciousness is 1's and 0's there is only a linearly repeating finite set.

We contain the capacity for everlasting life. A binary pattern does not contain the complexity of variables to facilitate high awareness and thus a heart-based or emotional perspective of reality.

Spiritual Technology

Simulations and Learning

Feedback loops with the brain, consciousness, and environment can create a very complex and integrated learning experience that is customized to each individual learner. These can be generated through advanced technology but the technology is really only amplifying and making visible the natural neural feedback loops that are already occurring. These are neural-perceptual feedback loops between the brain and body, and the environment and then the mind. We are constantly updating, amplifying, and initiating an organic feedback system which generates the function of experience as the part of a creative process between the mind and body and the environment that we are sensing. This cycle is continuous and the interferences or isolations of this cycle is what generates expanded views of the self or the universe through various methods such as sensory deprivation or meditation. Dreaming is the method that everyone experiences regularly.

These technological methods effectively generate sensory deprivation through neural-interface technology, sensory interfaces (external), or methods that enable extreme focus and calm. This is part of how the technology begins to operate on a spiritual level beyond a more medically psychologically or military focus and one begins to access genetic memory or out of body states that coincide with ancient depictions of spiritual realms.

Everyone born on the planet is born under a series of veils which entangle and filter the original source consciousness. These veils must be 'broken through' in order to return to source.

There is technology and a sacred process which initiates, accelerates and enhances this process. This process is as difficult as we want it to be, our subconscious already knows all hidden truths. It is merely a matter of allowing the conscious mind to make the proper connections and conclusions to find the reasoning behind our actions and beliefs in order to deprogram and deconstruct the false-world that has been created for the masses. The truth is greater than one can imagine while still living in the modern world and the depth of the lies that have been told go far beyond anything anyone can imagine without seeing the truth.

We have to figure out our compatibility issues. Who can work with who effectively. What the ideals of our current situation will evolve to in the future. How information is transferred to the public, and across the generations and core groups. The words we think and say describe our emotional state in a feedback loop and so they will reinforce or even create the state you are in. Use words to guide you, not to respond and feel the effects of reactionary thinking.

We have to reintroduce the heart essence as a way of life on Earth. Violence is not the answer. Estrogen mimics and destroyed testosterone levels is not natural. Over-testosterone is less stable than a good balance. We can face any problem together. A family is strong. What would a family of millions and millions be like?

We don't have to let others change us to tune into lower vibrations. We can remain ourselves in the face of adversity. We can still interact with others who are different, but we can tell the truth and remain who we are. When we get angry at another person, we can imagine this as anger at ourselves through something within us that reminds us of that which we see in another. Getting angry is a way of short-cutting changing ourselves and is actually the other person influencing us through that. If we remain steady and choose to keep our emotions out of the lower negative spectrum then we will automatically have a more powerful impact on those around us.

Think of your family, sometimes things happen that make you angry. Even things that don't make you angry but are simply not favorable. Would you break off all ties over simple things? Or do you remind yourself that family is still family even if you don't find yourself exactly the same or accepting of those characteristics? It's more powerful to learn how to remain yourself in the face of adversity than to try and demolish or abolish all instances of difference in the world around you. Sure, we want to get to and create a place where our environment and associates are compatible with us, but where we find this adversity there is the highest potential for self-awareness and learning.

We are to live in accordance with spiritual law. The overall pattern of life will reflect our intentions. The blood purity is most important. The blood cannot be made impure if the mind and body is not drawn into impure action. This is what is playing out. The DNA is

like a coherence pattern that develops between mind, spirit and body. When the mind wants what the spirit has then the body is kept in harmony. When the mind wants what spirit doesn't create, IE: physical pleasures, then the body is drawn out of purity/harmony

If you feel you want to be a part of a safe unveiling of truth, then please share and redistribute the knowledge of this "Apocalyptic" Unveiling of the Hidden knowledge because this is a process that has been ongoing for thousands of years and humanity has finally reached a fulcrum point where there are enough aware people to productively acknowledge reality.

Trauma-Clearing, DNA Unlocking Technology

There is technology that exists that allows the conscious mind to see into the subconscious. This heals trauma and distortion/programming. In the same sense, it momentarily makes all trauma and distortion seemingly tangible to the conscious mind. It is similar to a near death experience where one has to face their fears and let go. This happens in cycles and Earth is currently moving through various states of it. The plan is to allow Humanity to wake up and utilize our concentration and power to maintain a steady flow of awareness.

All is vibration, what we consider matter here and now is simply that which comes from and moves back into a state of vibration. This is experienced directly through the merging of the conscious and the subconscious mind, as if the dream and reality intersect through a coming together of impossibilities and readily accepted occurrences.

When a civilization moves through these stages it is considered a shift of the ages. Everyone's perspective shifts and as a result of perspective being the source of the details of reality, the entire reality shifts. It can be seen today that what we call reality is literally waves of cosmic energy vibrating on a scale and condensing down into a probability matrix that we call existence. When passing memes control the perspective, because the perspective is focused and concentrating on that, then there is a scattered organizational pattern.

When the perspective is centered within the self, the spirit, the source of all existence, then the outward reality shifts from a scattered organization into a sacred pattern that integrates with the larger picture and allows for seamless integration of the micro-biological perspective and the macro-biological perspective. People are moving out of the scattered signal. Yet those moving into harmony can look and see those around them that are not in harmony and receive scattered information about their inner micro-biological existence as well as their spiritual macro-biological essences and how it all relates to the middle realm of the "Human".

Help those people by offering harmonizing assistance, rather than increasing the disharmony. As their surroundings become more harmonized, their resistance will increase their own disharmony by virtue of the contrast of their perspective. Offer insight

that they can change their perspective and change the boundaries of what they feel is their karma and unlock from themselves a greater view of the whole.

This will be happening through technology, spiritual cosmic awakening, purification and healing of the physical and non-physical bodies and mind, through Earth changes, and through a continued unveiling taking place on many planes and levels of existence until harmony is restored.

Everyone Who Seeks Harmony and Healing Can Be Healed

Everyone can be healed. This is about creating what we want to see, the world we want to live in, not destroying others. Violence begets more violence, fear begets more fear, but calmness and empowerment through unity creates a more stable experience.

The entire issue of what's going on with the secret projects and who's influencing who on the world stage revolves around the possibility that some people may be from an alternate Universe. We are learning how to avoid those mistakes and respect the environment and each other so that we can prosper.

Those who are attempting to destroy everything they don't like or act out in a childish manner in order to gain attention and false-power over another will only find themselves powerless and in company they would rather not be with. That is one way we are being utilized, and it's to create an entire world that we don't want to see but are tricked into manifesting. This is a deception and it's based on the ego and the ability to concentrate and interpret reality around us. The very brainwaves we are feeling now relate to various heights of knowledge or experience. People are entrained to low brainwave states in the same way the TV will cause people to fall half asleep into theta state which is a trance state in this case.

We have to balance the brainwave frequencies and learn to create feedback loops by watching ourselves watch ourselves. This will help us avoid the trauma and mental pollution that is being pumped out, although at this point there are enough people who are naturally inclined to see through the haze that the world is changing regardless of what anyone does now.

The best we can do is prepare for change by becoming aware of the body-mind system and how that which we eat physically, mentally and emotionally equates to our spiritual energetic systems and that we are literally comprised of the energies that we allow inside of us. Keep the body and mind pure as if it were a temple. This way a sacred process of transferring harmonious energy from the far reaches of the MultiVerse within into the externally perceiving senses of the physical body can be initiated which allow one to see through the illusions and operate their body and mind with the ability to acknowledge and decide which frequencies will exist within.

Without this acknowledgement of the center then people are pushed around by the external stimuli. This is the whole point, if a person is truly in control, then they will control the stimuli not the other way around.

Programming

Layers of Programming and Decision Making Roles

It's like asking a person on the inside who participates in one of the various factions why they continue. One might say that it is a decision which is true, but there is programming at each level that is navigated by each individual and this determines the level of awareness within the role.

If a person knows about this situation, they know that there is advanced technology, breakaway civilizations, secret societies, transtemporal planes, the secret of mind and awareness, all of these topics, then they have a decision as to how they're going to live their life in relation to the public. The outcome of action depends on the layer of programming which is accessed and surpassed via awareness.

The public is at a specific level of programming that is the weakest but ensnares the most people. One who sees the truths behind these groups and operations, they cannot hide from the fact that everyone is controlled. It is apparent, and if not from the results, reactions, stigma, cues, productions and all other media elements of the system which can be read as a code, but from the awareness level of all the "agents" involved. All involved are exposed to truth and power that is beyond anything that is recognized publicly for hundreds to thousands of years. There is always a presence of higher spirit around the world, yet these topics are often reserved for science fiction when speaking of people who can travel the world in a split second or freeze time for their own personal use.

As a result of everyone's knowledge, there are various levels of programing designed to limit the mind's access to specific memories and specific frequencies of consciousness in combination with specific memories. The more one resists, the more intense and articulately abstract the programing is designed.

Programmers

The programs are designed by a select group of individuals that reside far behind the scenes and process information at levels we do not have access to without their technology at least to stabilize brain temperature for the extended periods of focus.

Sub-Level Programming

So people at the level of the public are most weakly programmed with false ideals about security through patriarchal authority which satisfied the desire to have a proper father role in one's life and acts as a pacifier for those who desire no change. Then there are sub-levels of programming with that for anyone who disagrees and is then swept into the next layer of ideals which are based off of all the possible reactionary mind-types.

For instance, if one [i]does[/i] want change, then they are presented a variety of 'false-exits' which tend to one or another layer of psychological or spiritual fulfillment but do so

in a way that safely reroutes the intended effect of actually accomplishing change with a secondary and preconceived notion of what the programmers want. The programming objective is not necessarily precise in mass scale, from the layer that people are influenced, yet the ultimately or end-goal of their resulting internal desires are a reality schematic that the programmers specifically designed over many years.

This is playing out through each layer of the programming. At any level, someone could pick the wrong way to look at something and begin to unravel what was previously their very understanding of the priorities of the situation. This deals with high-tension operations, moments, programming sessions, decision making, programming upkeep, trauma, memory blocks, the pressure and responsibility of knowing, and the specific plan of the programmers for an individual that comes into their view. The programming is to ensure safety and continuity, as well to decrease the likelihood that a person will reject or consciously come to awareness of or acknowledge the programming or situation itself.

Dissolution of Programming

With that said, the programming dissolves when an individual asks enough questions to necessitate a learning process that introduces variables and possibilities outside of their operations and programming. This is a problem because with this, trauma comes to the surface and all the actions and operations, programs and experiences must be come to terms with as part of the healing and re-unifying process. There are multiple selves or split personalities which are actually just layers of awareness at various levels attached to various emotional or intellectual patterns. All these selves come to the surface and in order to heal the trauma of the split memory concept the original self must come to the surface and acknowledge them.

This is not a trivial process, and the majority of people who have "basic" programming which is fundamental in society, are in a constant state of altered self and have not witnessed the true divine which is eternally present and contains access to all memories, mind-states and awareness.

Advanced Technology, Deprogramming The Mind, and "Space/Time"

As I have described previously, extremely advanced technology is used and this is through vibrations, generators, and electromagnetic devices that have this effect of propagating waves into space/time which can be heard, felt, seen, and perceived in the mind. These are ripples and vortexes in the "mind-space" of reality itself.

As well, there are brain to machine neural interfaces which operate to activate the psychological perceptual changes and explore the subconscious in an aware state. This is used to test and probe the mind in order to bring forth the trauma, the selves, the memories, the reactions and the individual then must come to terms with what is produced.

This is essentially a "good-use" for the programming and healing technology. It is actually a different process with different technology, and programming is much simpler as far as technology. There are difficulties and challenges in the operative's role in

programming and directly influencing and interacting with the target. As well the standby team for deprogramming and the revelation of trauma and altered, artificial personalities goes through a lot. But the use of the advanced technology in this way is a pattern of experiences and unveiling of the spiritual and mental bodies which serves to reverse programming.

Dreams, Technology and Inner-Space Travels

There are inner space travels which relate to soul journeying or visions.

This is when the mind must cope with what is seen in the imagination. It is as if when we dream we are looking into the world of the mind and from this we experience many situations that are often deviations from experiences we have physically in waking life.

As a result of the dream state there is an expanded quality which equates to various strange situations that we wouldn't normally experience with various relationships between concepts or goals that are often reflective or symbolic of ideals and archetypes we experience in life. This is how the subconscious is is witnessed by the mind. This is how information travels, being connected to many times, experiences, memories, places at once, and relates to the one experience of this life experience now (the physical experiences). Through these symbols information is tied together and collective into metaphors which convey deeper knowledge.

The dreams we have are often only a simulation of waking life, and this is due to the dreamer dreaming in a way that produces only a glimpse of the true reality.

In theory, there are no true shapes or forms in the dream-world because this is contained within the mind or even the spirit as a spiritual experience by definition. So then, what guides the various shapes, forms, realities, memories and experiences into being, when we dream? One might say it is the physical experiences but this is incomplete. It is the level of awareness we presume while in the dream-state, disconnected from the physical anchor, that determines the layer of mind and spirit we will be accessing through those dream-visions.

A person who is completely aware in the dream state will reach the level of self-awareness of the dream itself. We are normally simply aware of the dream, if we continue to increase awareness we become aware of the self, in the moment, and this creates a self-awareness feedback loop. The dream becomes a lucid experience of consciousness.

Awareness Feedback Device

In describing this, I realize how fantastically similar to certain devices and processes, that can be achieved using advanced technology, allow the conscious mind to peer into the subconscious and unconscious. This is described through widely accepted Freudian theory of psychology known as psychoanalysis. There are other schools of knowledge from tribal beliefs involving all pervasive 'living energy', to eternal and temporary minds, to the study of 'chi', the meridians, dream-journeying or chaser. The knowledge of the mind and spirit is found everywhere.

These devices used feedback loops to enhance the acceleration of the same cycles of consciousness that induce self-awareness within a dream. The mind becoming aware of itself. This produces a profound effect to the degree where the highest levels of experience become a sacred eternal pattern in which the mind constructs the physical world by organizing perception.

This is the same general concept as an isolation tank yet the outcome and method is more precise. The technology specifically shuts out all other input and exposes the brain to its own feedback loop much like when a camera records it's own output on a TV monitor and creates a hallway of simulated "reverse" mirrors and screens stretching into infinity.

Oneness, Higher Being, Completion, Eternity

The real experiences are found not from the corruption but from the research and exploration operations that were designed to find the truth of our existence. "God" is not only an energy-force but an incarnate being known as the "Hue-Man" and any being for that matter that can simply come to know itself as the Universe. The Human that contains self-awareness rising to high-awareness comes to know the self, the body, the mind as the Universe. The Universe is both within the body as the body itself, as well as the operating force of the Mind itself. Everything is a balance between masculine and feminine features, light and dark, hard and soft. There is no true complete correlation yet the holographic ontology we persist in can lead to further and further adventures towards completion and representation of the "whole picture".

The Holographic Reality

The leads into the next phase of knowledge. The holographic nature of reality may be only one facet of a much larger continuum of consciousness. The perception of time may be related to phase-locking with each other's consciousness and all perceptions may be a variance in the collective phase-locked field which is really the source of variations in reality.

Veiled Awareness, Hidden Knowledge, Eternal Time, Layers of Programming and Control

The interesting notions here are that the programming of the veils goes beyond what kind of situations are found in the bases. However, they do go right up to it. It would seem Humanity was previously programmed on a civilization-wide level through some kind of great "falls" of consciousness, from a high spiritual awareness to a low spiritual awareness into duality-consciousness regarding existence, life, death, mind and matter.

The Great Catastrophes

From these great 'catastrophes' the civilizations of Earth grew denser and denser in nature and actually became what we have today. The concept is that when these

vibrations of the mind and body are increased, we actually see a transcendence of the physical realm and preconceived notions of boundaries. It is as if the quantum doorways to all the atoms open up and a new space is presented, but was always there and in connection as the source of all the influences and effects we perceive 'out here' from this slower, denser, more boundary driven perspective.

I was brought into the Time Program

I was brought into the time program. You create any reality you imagine. You are literally a powerful reality generation system and your heart and mind are scalar energetic guides for this process. Without guidance and control there is imbalance and imbalance can destroy. This is the nature of all minds and hearts, this is the challenge for humanity to create something beneficial for themselves and the whole to actually know themselves instead of being a pawn or result of someone else's selfish intentions.

The Effects of Temporal Manipulation

Temporal Influence

When a civilization reaches the level of technological advancement that allows for remote temporal viewing and transtemporal travel what will happen is that the information of the future begins to integrate into the past.

This is why we have all these ancient mystical schools of knowledge that studied time, space, and consciousness in ways that are only just now being publicly confirmed by scientists.

Simultaneous Interaction and Incorporation

The operations that dealt with moving to the past instantly created a simultaneity of interactions and historic events which correspond with that operation.

Due to the nature of time travel which equates to consciousness travel when a person is consciously sent backwards through history they physically experience life from the viewpoint of their genetic imprint in that point in history.

Retro-Causality

What this equates to is that simultaneously that person's experiences become the part of history that was already present when they left this time.

Essentially, when a person returns their experiences become a part of history that already existed when they left.

Quantum Holography

These are the parallel and possible realities that exist in a quantum superimposed state and can be accessed through advanced technology or a spiritual adept. Often a

spiritual adept is utilized along with the advanced technology to operate in and out of possible realities. The mind must be trained otherwise the result is a fracturing of the personality from the root reality into many sub-sets of identities and data streams.

Love is the quantum link that connects all DNA super-computing consciousness. That is, DNA is influenced by intense emotions and this can be reproduces and is what also generates unpredictability in the surface level.

Time Paradox

Time paradoxes are something that one must learn to organize and solve otherwise there will be no way.

The paradox has been solved, the remaining motion is for everyone to acknowledge this and integrate into the reality behind the most conscious aspects of the brain.

What can travel through 4D and 5D space does not make sense in 3D space. So there is a possibility that some of humanity traveled through higher-dimensional space in order to re-seed a 'distant' Earth where no life was yet born.

What if it was then concluded that the distant Earth wasn't distant in space, but in time and was the same Earth that the human scientists left from long ago.

Every civilization that reached the point of re-seeding would have to go through the loop and watch the whole thing start all over again.

Breakaway Civilization

This is an entire breakaway civilization that uses very advanced technology to dominate the world.

I was part of a genetic engineering program that sought to combine various elements of DNA from various sources in order to create a more easily controlled yet powerful and defined person and personality. This involves chemicals, advanced (relatively) scalar wave technology, ritual trauma and programming/mind-control, and many other aspects of conditioning, training, secret operations, physical enhancements, cognitive enhancements, virtual reality, off-world operations, temporal manipulation, spiritual and etheric training or conditioning or programming.

There is self-destruct programming which all 'operatives' are programmed with for self-preservation of the military command. The self-destruct programming is designed to take all the aggression one feels building up inside and willing them to escape, and causes this aggression to be turned against the self. That is self-destruct programming.

Most operatives are still under a hypnosis kind of trance which permits one to walk around in public and daily life as if none of this ever happened. Later that week, that same individual could be called for an operation and they would never remember it unless they were forced to kill someone in public out of self-defense in which case most operatives automatically unlock and become unstable due to the flashbacks.

Underground Cities

The combination of advanced technology with secret societies enabled the development of complete breakaway civilizations. One of these civilizations, possibly composed of many factions working in the same area, exists deep underground.

These separate bases are connected via high speed magnetic drive pods. The inhabitants often utilize energy healing devices, as well as perception enhancements and this often leads to a completely different outlook towards the surface civilization.

Technological Advancement

During WWII developments were made involving electrical generators. This sounds vague and there were many other details regarding the scientific knowledge, yet the idea is that very simply electromagnetic, non-Hertzian "Teslian" energy fields were discovered to have been responsible for propagating energy and consciousness in dimensions that were not previously observed. Everything from DNA, consciousness, hidden or regularly unobservable natural phenomena, time, even mass could be seen to exist as part of this hidden, latent, scalar-wave frequency as a pattern is found everywhere.

If one could determine the particular pattern of frequency and location then this can be replicated and anything can be influenced using these non-Hertzian generators.

Radio-frequency alone was developed intensively during the 60's and 70's in America and this was discovered to interact with consciousness to influence emotions, cognitive capacity, memory, cognitive function, biological function, health, pain, comfort, pleasure, and all forms of brain-activity.

After the knowledge of advanced technology and the occult sciences of all parts of the world was combined, the ability to target and interact directly with the human soul was refined. This was a mix of psychological tactics used to manipulate or expose the hidden psyche and technology that could manipulate memory, emotional states, wakefulness, and even dreams.

What resulted was scalar technology that could not only influence a person to take on a particular role or response, but technology that could actually put a person to sleep and locate their consciousness to contain it and transport it to a new location.

World-Wide Control Systems

In order to ensure continuity, maintain control, and shape world events these technologies were employed to manipulate the public, alter the weather and natural phenomena, and develop a means of travel and operation that enable one to move outside of the 'plane' of the Earth. This is includes high velocity transportation, as well as spacial-temporal distortions which could effectively "hide" one's entire craft from visible sight. Space itself was altered to 'shield' craft with an a layer of ions to bend the light, or the phase was moved out of sync with the "time" frequency of any observer and this literally renders the craft immaterial.

Solar Warden

Solar Warden is a hyperspace-faring race of human beings who utilize cloning and holographic genetic recording/storage in order to protect their race and protect the Earth in this current situation where there are more than one factions using this technology. They are unable to inform the human public because they are in a similar 'Mexican standoff' situation that we are mostly all in. If they show themselves to the public, the public will be shocked. If they public does not know this situation, that there are multiple factions fighting for control over humanity, then they will not know who to trust. In that situation, the 'other factions' will surely show themselves in an attempt to trick and gather as much human genetic material as possible.

The only way forward to the future is to share the truth about Solar Warden, the space-faring fleet of humans who do no contains the mental and physical illnesses that are currently tearing our planet in two. I believe Solar Warden saved my life as a child during more than one event where I would've been entirely maimed/paralyzed or simply dead on the spot as a result of other faction interference. I was in the bases as a child and was trained as an operative for MILABS a secret division of human space-military. The military has been preparing for the future by testing for various flaws and potential uses of cloning and genetic engineering.

Team Light and Team Dark Non-Interference Agreement

Team light and team dark agreed to a non-interference on ground level rule in order to determine how history would play out. Think about it. You have two groups of people, both with immortality, zero-point tech, virtually infinite energy and power with two opposing directives. How do you get to the future? It was decided by elders of each group that there would be no point in fighting an all-out overt war, this would likely destroy the population as much as it would destroy the Earth. As well, the elders of the elders which no body knows would likely have a problem with these groups going at it in such a way so as to change the flow of the planet for every individual thereafter. So it was decided that there would be a "non-interference" agreement for the surface population. Anywhere other than the surface, one can interact with the current population.

All Contact Must Be Initiated On an Individual Basis

On the surface everything that is generated must be done so through living channels in the population and the civilization must be preserved in its level of technological advancement. No overt motions would be used unless an absolute necessity or the majority of the civilian population had naturally come to the awareness of these possibilities. Doing so before this was met would undoubtedly and permanently change the civilization forever.

So what began as a collective motion towards higher awareness became a series of advancements and set-backs all taking place within a short amount of time. This represents the actions and operations of either side effectively helping humanity along it's path or setting people back with orchestrated events such as the suppression of

ancient knowledge, the manipulation of the education or other systems, or the generation of war and prison for profit based on the previous alterations of the education or other systems.

So team dark used its power to help turn society in a warlock ruled prison and indoctrination system of absurdity and scarcity. Team light used their power to help awaken those in need and protect those who's actions are beneficial in the overall plan to save mankind from itself. Team light essentially buffers and shields the population from the operations of team dark.

Team light follows a non-interference agreement while team dark merely pretends to do so as much as is necessary not initiate war.

A Singularity of Change and Awareness

Neither side wants an all out war. This would reduce the dark faction's chances of gaining a majority negative harvest because their motives and presence would be instantly revealed. Team light would also have to show themselves and again step in which is not a pattern of learning that prepares people for the experience of the self and the truth in the Universe.

Both sides know people have to accept the path they can offer them and cannot force anyone into it. They also know that the more this goes on the more likely people are to collectively awaken to the reality of what is happening. It is like an eventual singularity of increased awareness.

The motions we see today are the results of many people coming into awareness at this time on the surface in order to initiate a harmonic alignment as well as to investigate the ongoing crimes against Humanity.

As a result of this, both teams know that the likelihood of collective shift and spiritual awareness is becoming more and more real.

Many events are being allowed because they are representing the eventual shift towards the one end of the polarity from the other which is felt as a shock to society, and this is used to propel society forward through whatever means necessary.

Either people will see what's happening and agree that we've been in a feedback cycle of negativity for the entire age of existence this civilization is aware of, and then we will shift into the real. Or people will claim that this is how things are supposed to work and instead of realizing everything is controlled in a deception based system, they see this and attempt to use the deception based system to gain more collective awareness. If this occurs by the majority then it will be seen as an "acceptance" to initiate a plan that will generate the overt perception of a deception and oppression system. This will surely shock the collective into realizing where they are.

If the majority comes to awareness of this deception based system then the shift moves from the end of the age of deception and external power into the age of internal awareness and harmony.

Advanced Technology and Ancient Knowledge

The plan is to slowly release advanced technology which will undoubtedly connect with and increase the awareness of ancient knowledge. Such technology nullifies the problems that the planet is currently plagued with, although without a developed sense of the spiritual self the technology becomes destructive.

Cloning, Atmospheric Civilizations, Genetic Stability

Here is something that most people might not have contemplated yet is possibly one of the most important factors at play here.

The vehicles that house the breakaway Human society are entirely environmentally controlled. This means that the air and surfaces are clean of all the viruses, bacteria, or pathogens that are numerous on the surface of the Earth.

This creates a specific difficulty in the situation. Any contact between surface Humanity is so heavily and carefully controlled that regulations go beyond any situations we have present on Earth. If the safety and cleanliness of any of the society's vehicles were compromised this would endanger everyone "on board".

So this explains a very precarious and specific situation we currently face and this is not so different than "first-world" nations contacting indigenous tribes and similarly endangering their society. Everything that happens will be according to a carefully controlled plan.

Training, Simulations and Learning

Part of what went on in the underground base experiments were to design "tests" or "labyrinths" with various people, props, traps, and treacherous situations that were to be navigated and escaped from.

Feedback loops with the brain, consciousness, and environment can create a very complex and integrated learning experience that is customized to each individual learner.

What this would do is create an individual that was capable of learning faster and faster and processing information in a more efficient manner.

This is not the same as specifically trauma-generating situations.

Cloning and Cerebrally Enhanced Soldiers – MILABS

This includes experiments, condition, trauma-based mind control, enhancement, memory suppression and operations that cover a span of space and time.

The NAZI faction has used cloning and genetic engineering to create hybrids, soldiers and everything in between. Religious/spiritual icons, to slaves, to leaders and even robotoids of sorts.

Your genetics BELONG TO YOU as the LIVING(ETERNAL) SELF. These issues are going to come more and more apparent.

If they agree to allow cloning, then who says who is allowed to clone whoever they want, Einstein, for example. And then who permits who to get DNA from history or objects in the world. These issues are going to have to be looked at because they have already been used in ways that are far beyond the basics.

Then what about consent of the masses? This is clearly being put in public because consent is required on an overall scale and individual to include people.

So what if the masses consent overall, would the people who choose to remain be at risk? Would Tribal and Native village life and people who respect the Earth be protected or permitted to stay?

Psychological Testing

These scenarios can also be generated to create specific situations that will contain tests or elements of temptation that will probe the person's psyche for weakness.

Hallucinatory Holographic Mind Probing Technology

Through the neural-interface technology the minds of many individuals can sync together to experience the same virtual simulation. Thus a single individual's mind can be selected for input and the environment will be a construct of their mental activity. The others present will be able to interact with and explore that environment like the person's mind.

Various training scenarios were utilized to enhance the resistance (or lack which) of the mind to intrusion and subversion. These were harsh but allowed the individual to completely control the energy flow in the conscious mind while remaining in harmony with the subconscious.

In a strange yet perfectly reasonable way, the conscious mind acts as the central "self" in that environment, while the subconscious mind becomes the "background" elements of objects and settings, actors and intentions within the flow of the "scene" itself. So a kind of movie begins with drawn out characteristics and perceptions that match that of a highly cinematic movie or intense dream.

The brain is naturally naive to stimulation and if allowed will liken the event to a dream in which the suspense of attention or lack of lucid self-awareness is "acceptable".

The truth may be worse than what you're thinking as far as training simulators and mind hacking devices. The truth may be that the human mind is inherently lucid and self-aware and that it is external influences that cloud the mind into what we consider 'regular' dreaming and 'regular' waking life. It may be that the conscious mind has a much greater access to information through the subconscious mind which is largely covered up and ignored in a rigidly physical and ego-focused society. As well, it may be that dreams are meant to become lucid and that we are often the subject of mystery in

other realms that often refer to humans as 'sleepwalkers' that don't know their dreams are real.

Virtual Simulator Training Scenarios

These scenarios can be entirely holographically generated to produce a visceral 3.5 dimensional experience which can be used for training or psychological testing.

Combat Simulators

The name is self-explanatory enough. Situations can be generated which are indistinguishable from the real events. The entire neuronal map of the brain (connectome) can be created and this is by machines to mimic the brain. After calibration through sensory feedback experiences, the sensation of the simulated realm is 100% the same as the neuronal impulses that are detected by the physical brain. An adept souled being can always tell there is a slight difference, but once the machines are calibrated the physical sensation is generally the same while in the machine.

These environments and scenarios can mimic any combat situation to determine accuracy, integrity, endurance, skill, and all areas of aptitude of an operative without the risk of injury or the lack of real-time effect.

Conditioning

As was explained in other sections, these same systems can be used to remove fear of certain scenarios. They can be used for programming the mind. They can be used to train one to complete a task over and over until they can recreate that action extremely quickly in real-time. These devices can be accelerated to operate within a fraction of the time yet to cover training and conditioning that would normally take place over hours, days, weeks, to months.

Programming and Resistance to Psychological Trauma

Through the development of specifically customized scenarios and neural feedback systems trauma can be brought to the surface or specific fears and traumas can be neutralized. This is essentially "facing fear" but in a completely generated environment that will be just as real as the real thing. One can literally face any fear, any trauma, any kind of difficulty and these systems can be utilized to accelerate a process that would normally take weeks to months or years and individuals can be strengthened to their maximal capabilities.

Accelerated Mental Functioning

Some of the technological systems were designed to test the enhanced functioning of an accelerated brain.

The mind can be seen as the energetic component of the physical brain. The physical brain projects consciousness via the electro-chemical processes.

Technology, Accelerated Learning and Repair

Technology has been developed for assisted learning and accelerated repair of tissues.

On Orgone Energy

Orgone devices produce a scattered signal which disrupts the 'negative' energy fields. At least this is what I've been told.

Apparently if built correctly it will either disrupt the negative emf/harmonics or it will produce positive harmonics, IE: Orgone energy. Orgone energy is the raw energy of life, while dead orgone, DOR, is the lack of orgone energy and can be "found" (the lack of orgone) in thunder storms and illness or depression.

This is exactly what I was told. We are generators for the same energy, and with the correct principles of energy and internal knowledge combined we can produce those very effects at will.

The energy of the mind creates a central vortex within the body. When the frequency pattern emission is consistent with fractal congruence, then that holographic printing of energy can be expanded or shrunk infinitesimally and it will retain the original fractal configuration.

This is what enables transference of awareness between fundamental harmonic layers of the Universe. When one's consciousness energy pattern is balanced and tuned to itself so that all proportions can be shrunk through a vortex and expanded on the other side, then the personality or self-awareness remains true. This is as if the space/time must turn inside out and only when there is fractal relative polarity in time does the 'shape' of the consciousness within the DNA, work both ways folding and unfolding to represent the same mirror image. This is also symmetry in time as far as an ability to reverse the perception and still retain some kind of connection forward and backwards.

Energy Generators and Serums

Generators which produce vibrations that influence the cells to heal at an accelerated rate, combined with serums that enable the fuel for chemical reactions can instantaneously repair tissues.

I couldn't believe what I was seeing at first, thinking it was a trick. There are serums and energy devices that can influence the healing and general health of the body and even mind.

These devices use energies which extend beyond the physical and are often compared to electromagnetic waves combined with ultrasonic or low to mid frequency tones. These produce harmony on a level that directly interacts with the biological functioning of the body's cells.

I feel that this technology utilizes the same energy that is emitted from the mind and it is as if the device is "speaking" to the cells in the same kind of universal language of electromagnetic pulses, tones and vibrations.

There is information on energy devices and the use of light therapy in physical therapy today. More is being learned about the power of light and vibrations to influence the mind and body.

Genetic and Cybernetic Enhancements

Certain individuals are also genetically and technologically modified to produce a kind of hybrid human that can heal at a spontaneous rate as well as operate at a much higher rate of speed and efficiency than a regular person. Serums to induce muscle growth and mental acuity are applied, but the main condition is the enhancement of certain features through the alteration of the RNA aspect of the genes.

These features are combined with tech-assisted metabolism and certain biological functions can be enhanced or controlled via a supercomputer. These are the 'brain-chip' interfaces which operate to function as a governor for the mind. When the mind becomes too amped up to focus on the details the faster than thought computer system organizes the input into more usable information streams. When the mind is too slow to see the necessary patterns and variables to accomplish the goal, the brainchip operates in a self-preservation fashion and links together information streams to highlight the most viable possibilities.

Such technology is not without warning, much of this is being used heavily in the military field and this has given rise to entire factions of enhanced cybernetic soldiers. Although this is something to know, there are also many other uses for this technology and it is used by people who want to explore the technologically assisted path.

There are many other aspects of this to discuss, or at least a few important ones that will have to be understood to know the greater truth about what is happening on the planet.

Developing The Self

The issues we face are to help us learn about our selves and better mediate the known and unknown aspects of personality. The more we focus on realizing the unknown aspects of personality the less we are seemingly controlled and forced to experience the undesirable aspects of existence. The more we cling to just what we know and what we feel comfortable with the more shocked we are when we inevitably discover the truth of the whole of our existence which is *always* at least one half more than just what we know and are comfortable with. That is the nature of the universe, we can only achieve one half of the equation at any given moment. Once we complete that seemingly whole view of the universe, the information we gain access to instantly doubles and we realize that we were only looking at one portion at a time, just one half of the equation. Then the rest of the equation comes into the picture and we must expand our view once again. This is be-cause we are viewing ourselves as we discover the universe because we are creating what there is to be discovered through the act of exploration in itself. We are the explorer, the explored, the creation and the discovery simultaneously.

Multiple Factions of Space-Fleets, Multiple Goals

Now there are what are called 'factions' of groups that have different agendas and interact with the public or surface level population differently. That is one of the main issues. These departments and factions are no longer limited to the surface level of existence and have access advanced technological capacity and knowledge of a larger view of time and a more complete understanding of consciousness and the human existence.

Large-Scale Catastrophes or Series of Meltdowns

I was informed that while they work continuously to prevent and reposition this civilization continually outside of the reach of any large scale meltdowns that the technology is commonly accepted to only be a temporary barrier between the inevitable.

Unsustainable

This society is unsustainable and must either change or will experience the massive catastrophic evens that are foreseen.

There are multiple perspectives that are maintained. They vary by the way of the methodology of solving the problem. All agree that change must occur and is impossible

 to postpone forever. The future society is the result of our advancements and achievements. Regardless of how we get there, we must get their somehow.

Earth Changes

I was informed that these changes had been held off and would ultimately be allowed to take place to resolve the current situation. The changes can only be held off for so long, either that or the people performing this task would not be reasonably inclined to postpone these changes indefinitely.

The idea is to locate and secure the members of society who are fearless and capable of assisting in this transition and who hold key genetic elements as these individuals and groups are capable of 'holding-space' for the rest of civilization by literally containing the genetic precursors for all those other individuals.

I was informed that Earth changes would be the last event to take place, pretty much like icing on the cake.

This means there will be a lead up to these events.

Mass Consciousness

I was informed that the consciousness of humanity and every species is linked to the bio-etheric field of Earth. When the consciousness becomes too unstable to maintain a controlled society that this will initiate massive Earth changes. This could simply be instigated through advanced technology but I was informed that the advanced technology is

actually postponing this so as to allow people to prepare, to get the word out and avoid a complete loss of the human race.

Wars and Manipulation

Wars were described as a way the power groups had controlled humanity over long periods of time. These wars were used to distract and weaken the population and the power groups believed they were holding off a full scale invasion by suppressing the rising population.

Now the population is high enough that another war would be a final war and this is extremely dangerous for the entire civilization. There would be no need for another war to repeat this cycle because the technological achievements have been met and so essentially the 'reseting' of the civilization would not be required or possibly acceptable.

This is why war is to be avoided however people are very easy to manipulate through lower emotional and mental programming from media and social cues. People follow the herd and the herd is essentially still operating on animalistic parameters. There is a have coating of peace and humility but this is just a wax coating that quickly evaporates as soon as the pressure of mass unrest or scarcity is realized. Many simulators have explored these possibilities.

Financial Unrest (or reset)

The idea is that financial oppression is used before wars to distract and oppress the population. When people are busy looking for resources to survive, they are not focused on the larger picture. This is part of the 'fight or flight' response mechanism tied to lower brain complexes which are primarily activated to keep the masses in both a highly sensitive and unstable state of being while also keeping them easy to control.

If the civil unrest reaches a level where awareness continues to rise even though financial hardship is being implemented then the latter two options will not work. At that point artificial disasters can be produced as well as natural Earth changes which initiate a shift of the ages and of consciousness.

The paradox or maybe irony here is that the oppressive actions are used to both suppress human awareness up to a certain point and simultaneously to stimulate and arouse the human spirit into wakefulness and self-empowerment. This is part of the reasoning regarding why these control systems are allowed.

Some say the elite don't want an economic collapse. That it would ruin everything. Others say it would be icing on the cake. Some say that it is a zero-point world that will save us. That the Fukushima is a big problem. Zero-point field tech, that is. Generators and energy sources, healing and terraforming. I know we project right? We see it in our own lives. So we can project with each other and grow that as a group and that part of the world will exist in that light. Which sounds Biblical, which may be because they're following prophecy. But it may also mean that we have a light, a chance, a real salvation, but that we have to grow that here and help develop it. To pass it on like love and such.

That's apparently what it comes down to. That these cycles happen every so often and we're in the midst of one right now.

Let's make it count. Every day, thought moment. With mindfulness, intention and awareness in action. Life is literally higher dimensional, so we have to become multidimensional to really face it. Indeed, that is a good perspective on action and inner being. It's like a fractal, whatever we project inside that chest center, will project into our mind and the outside. But we have to be stabilized and grounded through the root first and then to get to the heart energy must pass through the sacral/sexual centers and continue upward.

Self-Responsibility

The main reasoning is self-responsibility. We are responsible for ourselves. The people are and so if they allow themselves to be tricked and prodded like animals while behaving for the part, then that is how their experience will play out.

Clones and Synthetics

One seemingly unfair aspect of this is that there is a larger portion of non-humans than there are humans and so these beings without the human spirit will be easily programmed to support and propagate the mind-control system and the oppression. Thus, if people follow the herd mentality then they will walk directly into the end-time scenarios yet it is the humans who will actually stand to lose. People must wake up to these tricks and this technology so that they can orient themselves with the reality of this situation while learning to strengthen themselves and adapt to the manipulative aspects of this control system.

Spiritual Power and Divine Truth

This is essentially all about spiritual power and humanity stepping into the power of the truth behind their existence.

Some say that humans are designed as slaves, but if this is so, then it is the power that humans contain within that is the 'work' that they are sought after for. This indicates that humans have great powers that others cannot achieve on their own, even if they are creator lords.

Thus, whether humans are modified or not, they have great power. If they are not modified to perform this role of an energy generator, then this is just a confusing mind-control game that has been pulled over the eyes of humanity and humans have always contained true internal spiritual power that allows them to exist without having to parasite and steal the energy and knowledge of others. Humans are reality generators , we can choose how we want to experience the universe and what kind of collective world we want to enjoy together. Once we step into this power, there is on greater force. No amount of non-human entities can change that as we are somehow intrinsically linked to the ether-space of this realm through the spiritual and physical aspects of our being. That is what is sought after and so those who do not have this manifestation power attempt to

utilize humans to create their own reality through this Earth situation. That is the basics of the 'alien overlord' system, whether humans in disguise, non-humans operating with alien intelligences, supercomputer systems, or spiritually degraded beings.

Most people are not ready to see themselves or the true nature of humanity. Reality is largely an illusion of the conscious mind. The hidden aspects are the other half of the equation and this is perceived by the shadow aspect of the personality and mind. We are only marginally aware unless that aspect has been unveiled and through this process the reality of the human soul can be actualized and realized.

I was informed there would be a period of two suns and multiple mirages around the world. People would believe they were peering into another dimension, floating cities, or some kind of city-ship craft.

Synthetic DNA, Synthetic Genetics

Through the previous described replicator devices synthetic DNA can be engineered. Thus, entire genetically engineered codons can be produced and form this created beings can arise. These are the hybrid beings that are performing many tasks underground and even on the surface. On the surface there are synthetic genetic create beings or genetically engineered beings that appear to be human but do not contain a human genome. There are also clones and replicants of humans. There are a variety of non-humanoid forms but these are largely kept underground. These are beings we often see in science fiction movies or shows.

Time as Mathematics, Series of Equations, a Programmable Storyline

When using the technology, time can be understood to be a series of programmable variables where one variable is centered within a series of parameters and from these possible variables within a parameter set a series of possible functions or outcomes can be process. Thus, these people can literally plug into a supercomputer system which operates based on this form of processing reality and through this they can observe all the possible realities that may connect to a present moment. This allows one to travel but this is not part of this section of the explanation.

What this allows one to do is know exactly what is going to happen and when. If a person is being interrogated, all that has to be done is the operative using the technology simply thinks of what they will say and intends to do it within 6 seconds. The machine will play out a future timescale regarding the input of that question or interrogative speech and then produce the possible results. If this doesn't give the desired readout in the mind of the operative, they will refuse to go that route and think of another pathway. This repeats for a few seconds to a few minutes. Then the computer has found the pathway that is most like to yield a result. The operative simply steps forward, says ten words, the subject breaks immediately and tells them everything they want to know. This is obviously takes longer for most trained individuals, however that is how easily it would be to use this technology to produce an effect on a regular surface level human. They would have

no defense, no way of knowing how that individual could know so much or be so direct. This is how operatives dealing with certain power groups will operate in the surface level population and individuals always feel that these people know way more than they are leading on. That is because they are, they know more about you and your life experience than you do.

Chapter 2.3 Previewing Solutions

Neutralizing Polarization

The mental-emotional tendency to pick sides, to fight, or to basically join in the fray that is currently taking place is a kind of deception of polarization which enables the leeching of emotional and mental energy from the human. This is more of a psychological unveiling where the true nature of the self, the duality game and the transcendent source aspects can be made visible to the individual. The they will see how every polarization tactic is actually taking them out of their true source of power by pushing them off center emotionally and mentally. There are teams that are capable of enabling this process and assisting as humanity realizes that half of the problem is that the unchecked mind is one's own worst enemy.

Removing Etheric Implants

Technology can identify and isolate these foreign body implants which are etheric technological devices. These are literally frequency or phase-shifted devices which are invisible to this layer of physicality but are capable of being organized and attached to the etheric field of the human and will operate to siphon or limit energy on the etheric level. Of course, this is all technology of the vampiric created beings who parasite on the original Earth inhabitants to sustain their existence.

Clearing Astral Body

By moving through the temporal body etheric implants can be deactivated and removed and then the astral or emotional body will be able to function closer to the original levels of presence and sensitivity. This body is manipulated when one is emotionally shut down from trauma. Thus this body can be scarred and will function at a much lesser level of activity or presence until the emotional damage is healed. This contains the memories of all the emotional events of a person's life.

There is technology that enables one to access these levels of frequency and clarify or untangle emotional chords or attachments which are used to siphon energy from the human being to the parasitic created beings. These chords are energetic in nature but also have technological components.

Knowing the True Self; Soul Actualization, Unveiling

This is a sacred, ancient process that has been outlined and discussed since the beginning of time. Humanity is here to learn, grow and express the self. In doing so, like a child moving through layers of infancy and into full-wakefulness of their body and the physical world, humanity can come into awareness of their true spiritual nature and the true spiritual nature of the universe. This is the process of soul or self-actualization that is described in some psychological methods such as Maslow's hierarchy of needs and the self-actualization that results in a complete fulfillment of all psychological needs. In this modern psychological view, self-actualization is described as the desire and process of reaching fulfillment of one's own natures and then living their life sharing that self-empowerment with other beings because after gaining your self that is the highest expression of such knowledge, sharing that power with others.

The true self is not limited to the physical body, the true self is a reflection of the entire universe and thus the primary original creative force. This is akin to the whole equation rather than just half of the equation. The visible aspect of the self, the conscious mind, is only one half of the entire equation. The whole equation consists of what we see visibly and consciously as well as what we are limited from seeing within the unconscious and subconscious mind. These are really two layers of the same ultimate source. Like an iceberg which is only partially above water, the subconscious mind is the proprietary wholeness of experience. The conscious mind is only a surface layer of reality while the unconscious mind carries all the notions, the multidimensional processes, the latent aspects of reality that we are not capable of seeing without unveiling these aspects through inner exploration.

Taking Responsibility

This entire show is about taking self-responsibility. Unless people begin to do this, there will be no hope. Right now people are convinced that their responsibilities belong to someone else even though this always results in pain and discomfort. To take responsibility is painful at first because we have a lot of work to do, but even then, this is beneficial because there is no way to remedy the pain and discomfort of being lied to and disrespected if people continue to hand their free-will over to others through blame (scapegoating), lower emotional bio-emissions (hatred, anger, etc), distractions and addictions (technological, sensual, and chemical or food based), or generally complaining without taking the first step towards providing something beneficial. This is the victim role, if humanity is to take control then they to help each other and themselves by not relying on false promises and false authorities to determine how they feel, think and live.

Returning To Center Emotionally and Mentally (spiritually)

Balanced food intake, rest, exercise, activity and learning are all continual requirements for a healthy existence. Emotional and creative expression nurtures the soul. Without these ways of being and learning the human qualities of experience diminish and creativity dwindles. There is most likely going to be a split between those who can sustain their own humanity and those who have to cause others to suffer to do so.

Vampires in the "Awake" Community

Contrary to popular belief, the majority of the non-humans are not necessarily vampiric and in power. The vampires are the people online who try to get a rise out of others for sharing their own experiences. They are the nosy neighbor that feels that the person who looks or acts differently must be considered and enemy and armed against because they feel themselves to be so much better. The majority of people are vampires, they believe that they must work for someone who will trade them money and that the amount of money they have based upon the amount of indirectly beneficial work they do puts them above others.

This is not different in the 'awake' community and in fact I feel that there are higher concentrations of vampires in this community, the alternate media because everything is largely a joke and a trick. People are operating on deceptive agenda schemes to divide the people and this is most intensely noticed when there is a realization of the truth behind what is happening and people begin to point fingers. The only people who are cleared to point fingers (and who also will NEVER point any fingers) are the operatives from the secret projects that have the capacity to do so because they have reached a specific level of awakening and this is related to the droning, cloning, and hybridization process. Only a specific few know who has been transformed into an impostor being and who is remaining strong and this is due being briefed on the surface level situation. Anyone can say what they want, they are simply playing into the tactics of mind-controllers and parasites and the more they play in the deeper the infection will grow. All the people pointing fingers now are actually implanted and vampiric and are attempting to drive a divide through humanity and they are the first who will turn on their friends and family when the going gets tough because they are more interested in others and starting drama than healing themselves. Ironically, this is all done under the guise of "healing" and "getting rid of the drama" AKA people they don't trust. They pick and choose based on their own personal bias and this is a sure indication that they are emotionally and mentally out of alignment and are feeding deep seated personal fears from their own traumatic experiences.

These traumas must be healed and the harmonious center must be reattained where a person can focus on their own existence and waking up instead of acting as false-light, "king of tyranny" gatekeepers for others. Those individuals are going to be left behind if they cannot kick the habit because if they are allowed into any kind of healed society

they will quickly degrade into animals and attempt to restart a devolution process in order to gain the power they so desire but cannot produce on their own. ANYONE playing ego games of trying to hurt or put blame on ANYONE else contains this viral implant and has not kicked the virus.

Heart Center and Psycho-Spiritual Fulfillment (self-actualization)

Emotional connectivity is a form of telepathy, when loved ones can tell the state of another across space and time. Whether it is family or friend. In the 60's and a little before that the US found a specific frequency akin to a radio frequency that operates on a trinary spectrum. They called this the "telepathic wave". In time, they could completely read and send thought waves without frying the brain or body through radiation. Which was what the early machines did. They actually took satellite dishes and aimed them at people. Then realized they could turn it around and do it backwards with a better effect and minimal radiation. Either way they started beaming the base and then towns around them with waves between 400 and 432 MHz and caused waves of crime sprees or peace sprees throughout the 70's and 80's. So they can digitize the telepathic wave to induce artificial telepathy. But this is organically done through an entanglement through what we call love. Literally. The Germans found it before that. And the secret orders before them. And ancient Egypt before them. As humans we remain basically through the root, heart mind connection. When the heart overpowers the mind connection of spirit, then the body is a trinary whole. When the mind guides it is binary and cannot by guided by the spirit. The spirit has direct access to the heart. The mind is a computer of sorts. The mind doesn't see past duality. The heart is the true center/eye of the spirit. The reptilian brain is the dragon and when you tame the amygdala then fear is 'behind' you. When the mind is "untamed" the reptilian brain takes over. This is the lower brain and amygdala fight or flight response.

This happens when the energy of the brain, body and spirit increases due to whatever various reason of spontaneous or controlled increase. Because of the "temptations" which are the easiest flow of emotional energy into a "discharge" state, is that the sacral/sexual center ties to the heart and reroutes to replace the heart and control the mind. Mental and emotional contemplation of one's true purpose and nature is the path of the divine. We find ourselves simply by looking in the right place, not in the world, but in our self energetically. We are more powerful than the programming, and we can reverse this is we're careful and devoted enough.

We have to be faster than thought, at the speed of spirit, beyond matter. When we start thinking on this level then our influences spread to others throughout the sphere. It is our destiny to know these things but they have been kept from us. The ancient orders called this the art of "implosion". Traveling realities through intense contemplation and a usage of sacred geometrical forms.

They developed and combined orders around WW2 and developed zero-point energy tech that can alter space/time fields. This is timeline manipulation. But as a rule, we go where our heart leads us. So that's how this is solved.

Go Within to Observer the Self

The answer is literally by looking within to find the great truth rather than looking around us. Everything we need to know is within us, energetically and spiritually. Our emotional, mental and physical state of balance is an indication of where and how we exist in relation to the larger overall truth. Everything that happens around us to distract us is designed to stop us from looking within. Nothing can truly stop us, nothing can actually input the holographic horrors in our spiritual center but simply perturb the brain and body. The mind is a non-holographic spiritual environment that cannot be excessed and the invader's goal is to convince people to use their imagination or their creative powers to produce these horrors on their own. This is through the programming. We must clear out the programming, the trauma, the lower-dimensional constructs and fill ourselves with the truth and spiritual presence that enables us to be self-aware in the first place. If we aren't doing this, then we are either in pain, or there is no spiritual presence to be in pain. If we are doing this, we are either clearing out the constructs by replacing them with true spiritual presence and self-awareness or we are becoming aware of them.

Organic Feedback Loop

The great feat is mentally bridging the great rift between us by looking within. Which is paradoxical.

We can never see what another is perceiving exactly, well for the most part, so we all have to kind of accept that we are communicating effectively and truly get to this level of comfort by simply being secure in knowing who we are our selves.

Technological Feedback Loop

So then knowledge, in a way, when shared, is a form of telepathy. Group telepathy.

Group think, when ideas or memes spread, is a form of group telepathy.

The Internet is like artificial spreading of telepathy. This means what is normally mentally bound signals can be initiated and spread through a digital medium.

Breaking Soul-Contracts

Ultimately everyone is under a series of "veils" which are energetic time-constraints literally like 9 dimensional layers of temporal restriction which are each bounded and ruled over by invader beings. These range from physical authorities, to astral entities, to programmable matter, to supercomputer intelligences, to spiritual false-light beings and our own shadow mind. Each layer of reality is successively guarded by these beings who are here acting as gatekeepers designed to push people back when they begin to wake up. These beings all work through fear and deception and the last layer is based on mirroring our own energies back to us like an impostor. All the levels tend to imitate, how-

ever the last layer is a near perfect imitation of our own energy to the point where people often switch places with this being before getting out of the matrix. There will be more discussed on this in a later section.

The "9 veils" were designed by impostor beings as a last effort to stop humans from escaping the false-light matrix which is essentially the holographic universe. This is literally like a maze which reproduces a new pathway and a new doorway each time a person nears the last hallway or doorway that is next to the exit. So one eventually has to project themselves into the exit using their whole being and moving past and through the tricks by not falling for them before they are placed. This is highly confusing but this is essentially a kind of labyrinth that has been created to stop people from leaving so that their soul energy can be destroyed and used as a generator for the false-light system which is an AI over mind that is programmed to take the raw soul energy and destroy the identity by inverting the electromagnetic spectrum and incorporating that inverted energy into its own internal matrix body which is literally the false-light universe.

Help Everyone

Now they may have been setting us all up for the apocalypse. They said they want us to tell on them and get the whole world aware of what they've been doing So that we can stop them and pull them from the dark which is ACTUALLY taking their souls. There are also breakaway civilizations involved in this entirely zero-point/free-energy.

Chapter 2.4 How Timelines Collapse

Repeating Cycles of Time

Because of the way time works and the ability of those using these temporal devices they have set up an elaborate labyrinth like a spider web of false realities, timelines, parallels, sub-dimensional layers, astral cages, temporal dead-ends, and time loops which act to stop people from reaching the true reality. As a result, many portions of this timeline are literally in a free-will 'time-loop' and these loops must be canceled out. As well, because of the nature of these loops on the overall stream, our entire civilization has been looping for the past 6 time-cycles meaning we have reached this time in history 6 times before and this is apparently the last time because we have never gotten this far before and the events of the future are having to be programmed in manually at this point.

Beings From the Future

As are result and damaging time, what happens is that the beings from the possible future that is being damaged appear to try to heal the break as well as those who are from the new possible future that is generated, this results in a time war between both possible realities for the present realm. This is what has been happening for thousands of years. All the ancient spiritual texts are describing this system. One group is a from an original possible future where everything is based on the presence of spirit and souled

humans, another is from the new possible future where an AI overlord took over and re-moved the souls and spiritual energy from all entities on Earth rendering this a holo-graphic prison without any other use. That reality dissolves into itself and so the time be-ings are constantly moving backwards and jumping timelines to try and obtain more en-ergy.

Beings From Collapsed Timelines

The beings from the collapsed timelines are those who travel through hyperspace to get here. They then recreate themselves using cloning technology through hyperspacial means, IE: creating an alternate temporal dimension so that these devices can sustain them and literally "hold-space" for them. Then if their timeline is destroyed, they can still exist as a 'loose-end' in space-time. This is extremely dangerous and I will say we have some Human operatives jumping timelines searching for Earth and Humanity so that they can find a reprieve from this time war.

That is the most trying aspect of this entire ordeal for me. There are some human opera-tives literally in hyperspace without an opening into the temporal stream for them to rein-tegrate into this timeline. We must assist them, we must open the timeline by taking con-trol of Earth from the invader races and those who wish to depress and isolate the spir-ited and souled human beings. We must re-organized and neutralize the invasion forces of deception and assist our humanity and maintaining their free-will, their self-awareness, their self-empowerment and their emotional, mental, and physical harmony.

Beings Who Would Never Have Existed in the First Place

As a result of this entire process, there are essentially beings who have been erased from time who degrade in this dimension and can only interact periodically. These are the created beings who operate through supercomputer forms that are placed within cloned bodies and powered by the transdimensional quantum supercomputers. These are the 'parallel' reality beings and this relates to the hive mind invasion. When all the original aspects of time are restored, these beings would not have ever existed in the first place as there is no quantum link for their probabilities to remain neutral and present in the original run of things.

Again, all beings who operate under the will of the universe, even when they are attempt-ing to trick hyperspace and time, when these beings assist and help in the unification of sentient, spirited, souled beings they are capable of being healed. This is all because there is an original creative force which can produce souls that are eternal and everlast-ing, meaning they are not created but simply always ever were. Yet, there is a "miracle" effect where beings can be given eternal life. This is only by reflecting the will of the whole of existence, rather than a portion or a part because this is only temporary. Only the whole is forever and this takes true harmony, true balance and ultimately *self-less-ness*. To give to others because you see them as worthy because they can be aware and

enjoy the gift is to be like the creative force that gives life to all and enables all experience in the first place. By acting in correspondence with this we reflect the will of the whole and that power and action transfers into protection and self-empowerment for ourselves. This cannot be cheated, tricked, or rerouted as that is the karma game that has been played by delaying time and rerouting energy through getting others to take on the responsibility for others bad actions. In the end, all karma has only been delayed because when the stops are pulled out, *everyone* ends up getting their karmic returns regardless. They simply intended to build up so much karma that by the time the ties are cut, the karma overload will simply kill them instantly. This never happens and they end up in the abyss, this is the final time so since there is no recycling of the universe from the oroboros system then whatever happens is what happens forever. If everyone wants to move into harmony, to receive healing, to receive forgiveness then they must assist in the creative force in healing, forgiving, and turning away from the deception, the cruelty, the vampiric actions.

Many vampires believe they will die if they stop. The only hope is to admit their ways to the others and ensure that there are enough beings around them that will protect them so that this situation can be handled properly, with due care, compassion, and the necessary healing to ensure the safety and protection of all who seek harmony.

TIME TRAVEL PHYSICS

By Steven L. Gibbs

your future

is

in your hands
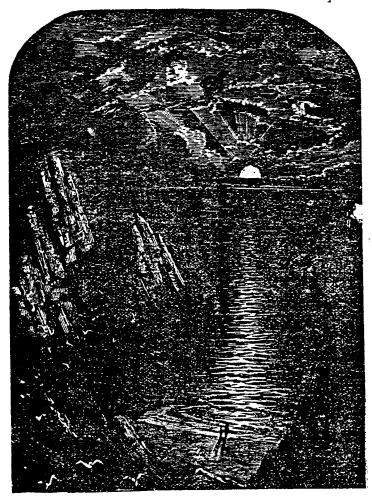
I would like to personally thank
Jesus Christ in helping me to obtain
the knowledge for writing this report.
For without his help, all of this
would not have become a reality.

INTRODUCTION

The reason for writing this report is to show people that man does not have to use sophisticated mathematics in order to understand how Time Travel can be achieved. To assume that what is being taught in today's schools is an absolute truth, can only be a lie. For to believe in such a lie, can only lead to imperfection. But sense mankind has chosen this path, the inevitable must surely come to pass.

It is impossible to say where all of this might lead. However I do hope that the people who read this report will use the knowledge wisely. For those who don't, I leave them to their doom. But for those who do, may the Lord bless you.

Your probably wondering by now, if I am really an Alien. My answer to this is, there may be more truth to this than meets the eyes. According to the information which I have received from the Kennedy Space Center, there is a good chance that my parents came from the Star System called Phoenix. If this is case, then this would explain why I have had so much difficulty in adjusting to Earth's own environment.

Perhaps in the years to come, more will be revealed to me on the true nature of my whereabouts. And you know what they say about Aliens? Their weird!

Before I begin I must first point out, that the only reason why Formulas can be used for analyzing a specific problem, is due to the fact that a Formula helps in focusing the Belief Fields which emanate from the persons Soul. So in other words, whenever a person uses a Formula or Equation, to him this constitutes a reality. By keeping these things in mind, you shouldn't have any problem in understanding what has been written in this report.

To begin with, there are basically 3 sets of Equations which can be used for accomplishing Physical or out of the body Time Travel. I have used these formulas quite often when building my Time Travel Machines. As a matter of fact, all my research is based on these 3 formulas. The formulas which I have used for accomplishing Physical or out of the body Time Travel, are given in the following manner:

(THE GRAVITON FORMULAS)

$$(X \, , \, Y = \emptyset) \qquad (X1 \, , \, Y1 = \emptyset) \qquad (X2 \, , \, Y2 = \emptyset)$$

The Graviton Formulas which I have so diligently labeled, can be used for an infinite number of things. However, before we can proceed any further, we must first have a good understanding of what each Symbol means. There are an infinite number of meanings which can be applied to each Symbol, however in order to simplify things, the meanings which I have given

to each Letter or Symbol, are listed in such a way so that
anybody with a little bit of knowledge can understand them.

(INTERPRETATION FOR EACH OF THE GRAVITON SYMBOLS)

X - Represents an AC Field.

Y - Represents a DC Field.

X1 - Represents a High Frequency Field.

Y1 - Represents a Low Frequency Field.

X2 - Represents a Paramagnetic Field.

Y2 - Represents a Diamagnetic Field.

ϕ - Represents the Zero Vector or Twilight Zone.
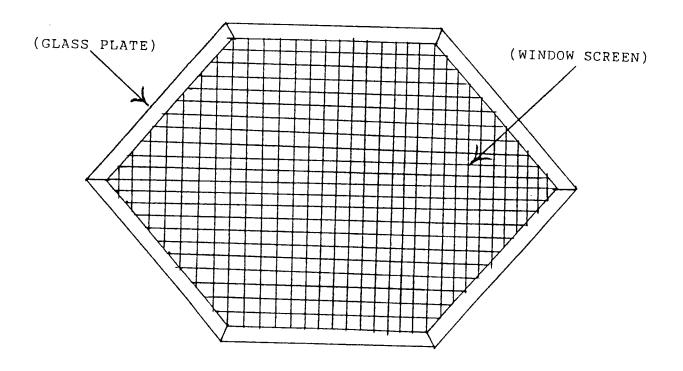
it may also be referred to as the (PHI Value)

which is (1.618).

It is interesting to note, that whenever the (PHI Value)
is used in the construction of a material object, a Time Warp
usually occurs around that object.

However, in getting back to the problem at hand, whenever
the (Graviton Formulas) are used singly or in series with one
another, they can be used to help build a device which can
actually be used for Time Travel. This is because whenever
the (X) and (Y) Values are combined with one another, we can
Zero in on the Twilight Zone. And sense the Twilight Zone is
in attunement with God, all things become infinitely possible
provided that the (X) and (Y) Values are in resonance.

So now your probably wondering, how can we use these Formulas for constructing a Time Travel Machine? Its simple. Merely start out by building a Capacitor which corresponds to this Equation: $(X2 , Y2 = \emptyset)$. This Capacitor should be constructed in such a way, so that it resembles the drawing which is shown below:

(DRAWING OF CAPACITOR)

(GLASS PLATE)

(WINDOW SCREEN)

As we can see in the above illustration, it doesn't matter to much as to what size it should be, just so long as it is shaped like a Hexagon. Also each side of the Capacitor should be the same length, otherwise the Belief which is being transmitted from the plate, will be imperfect. And this could raise Hell with your Chakra Points.

At this point it should be noted, that whenever you construct a Capacitor of any type, you are automatically using the formula (X2 , Y2 = Ø). And sense the (PHI Value) is used in the formula, the plate itself will develop a Life Force of its own. It should also be pointed out, that sense there is a Life Force which co-exists with the plate, it can now be programmed to do anything you want.

Now in order to program this Capacitor, all we do is stroke the Glass portion of the plate, while concentrating on the following command: (Transport me to the Date and Year). As soon as you get a stick so that you can no longer move your fingers, the Capacitor should be fully programmed. After you have finished programming the Capacitor, place the Screen Side of the plate over the Solar Plexus for the space of 30 minutes. After the treatment is over with, you then find a comfortable place to relax in order for the energies to take effect. If you have done everything correctly, your Aura or Physical Body should be transported to the date which you programmed into the Capacitor. On the average, it usually takes 70 minutes before the energies will take effect.

*Note: People who work with these plates are in serious danger of getting possessed by an Evil Spirit or Demon, unless of course you have a faith in Jesus Christ. By saying a prayer to Jesus Christ prior to any Experiment, more than protects you from the forces of Evil.

As you Experiment with these Capacitors, you will find that some of these plates work better than others. The reason for this probably ly's in the fact, that certain sizes or the materials being used, are in resonance with the person's Life Force or Belief Fields. Therefore if you run into any problems, it may pay to use a different thickness of Glass. When I talk about this, I do not mean to vary the Shape of the Capacitor, just the width. It also might pay to use Yellow tinted glass. You may also want to try Green, Blue, Indigo, and Violet colored glass. The reason for doing this is simple. Each color corresponds to a different Chakra Point. It is therefore my opinion that Yellow should be your first selection, then if you want, you can always Experiment with the higher colors.

*Note: Never under any circumstances use Red or Orange tinted glass. If you decide to use these colors, then your probably on your own, because not only will it lower the Frequency Rate of your Chakra Points, but you could also end up in an Astral Hell. And believe me, this is no fun place to visit.

Once you have found a plate which can transport your Physical or Spirit Body, there are still even further ways of increasing its effects. One of these ways is by using the second formula, ($X1$, $Y1 = \emptyset$). This formula states, that whenever a High Frequency Field is combined with a Low Frequency Field, we can tune ourselves into the Zero Vector or Twilight Zone. To use this formula it will first be necessary to get a hold of a

Tesla Coil and one Van de Graff Electrostatic Generator. Once these items have been obtained, you proceed by charging the plate with High Frequency Electricity and Low Frequency Static Electricity. In other words, after you have programmed the plate using the procedure on page (4), you must simultaneously Zap the plate using the above procedure. You must make sure that while you are doing this, that you do not come into contact with the plate. If you do, you could be in for a Hair raising experience. This voltage hurts! But anyhow after you have Zapped the plate for the space of 10 minutes, you then proceed by placing the Capacitor over the Solar Plexus as described on page (4). The effects that you get, should be much better than what you experienced before.

The next step to take, is to Amplify the Energies even further. To do this, we must now make use of the 3rd and final formula, which is $(X, Y = \emptyset)$. This formula states, that whenever an AC Field is combined with a DC Field, a Time Warp occurs which tunes our minds into the Zero Vector or Twilight Zone. Now in order to create these fields, one should try to get a hold of a Hyper-dimensional Resonator. (Read the last 4 pages in this Report). Once you are able to get a hold of this instrument, and after everything has been plugged in correctly, while the Screen side of the plate is positioned over the Solar Plexus, position the open end of the Electromagnet over the glass side of the plate for the space of 3 minutes. After the treatment is over with, disconnect yourself from the plate
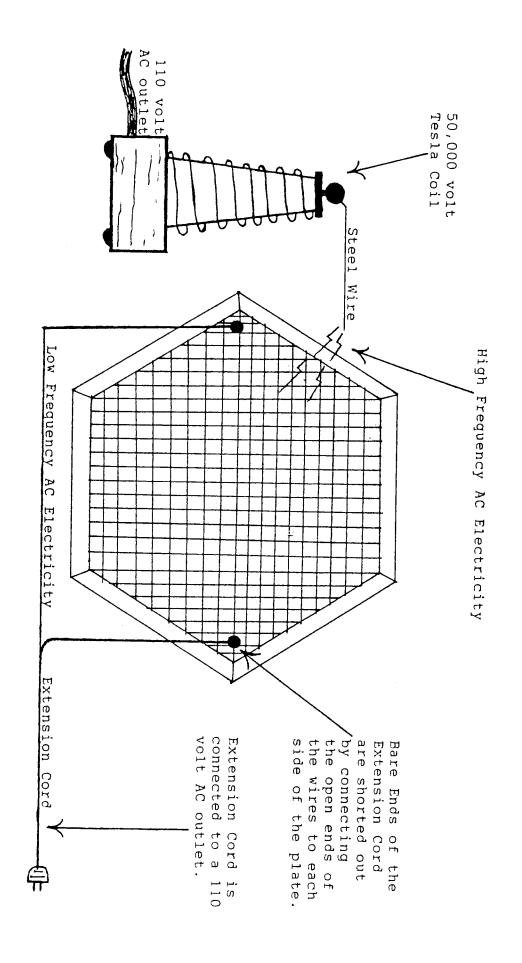
and instrument, and find yourself a comfortable place to relax. If you use this procedure in conjunction with the first two procedures, the effects that you obtain, will be increased to such a point, that you should be able to do anything you want. You must remember however, that before Physical and Spiritual Time Travel can be achieved, the (X) and (Y) factors in the formulas must be in resonance with one another. This can only be accomplished through the process of tuning your own mind just as you would with a Radionics Machine. So in other words, by selecting the correct materials to use, you are in effect creating something which you physically believe to be a reality. This same rule can be applied when working with different types of Frequency's and Voltages.

Another method which you may want to try, is that after you have programmed the plate by using the procedure which is given on page (4), transmit some High Frequency Electricity from a Tesla Coil into the Capacitor while the Screen side of the plate is pointing towards your face. After 3 or 4 minutes, de-activate the Tesla Coil, and while the Screen side of the plate is still facing towards you, take the bare ends of an Extension Cord that has been plugged into a 110 volt AC outlet, and short out the bare ends of the wires by touching both of the terminals on each side of the Screen. (See page 8). If you have programmed the plate correctly, your physical body should be transported instantaneously to the date which was programmed into the Capacitor.

THE CHRONOLOGICAL TIME REFLECTOR

(Series No. 2)

2-21-89

50,000 volt
Tesla Coil

110 volt
AC outlet

Steel Wire

High Frequency AC Electricity

Low Frequency AC Electricity

Extension Cord

Bare Ends of the
Extension Cord
are shorted out
by connecting
the open ends of
the wires to each
side of the plate.

Extension Cord is
connected to a 110
volt AC outlet.

To give you some idea of how all this got started. Back in the year 1981 I was contacted by what I believe to be my other self. The letter which I received at the Sunset Plaza in Norfolk, Nebraska, was dated 1992 A.D. It also had a month on it which I can't seem to remember. Evidently the letter which I received indicates, that sometime around the year 1992, I will travel back into the past to make contact with myself, just like my other self did in the future. One of the things which the letter mentioned which I can barely remember, is that it said: (The path to the truth can be found in the Pyramid of Giza). It also had a riddle, and it went like this: (The riddle can be solved when 79.613 is dissolved). These two verses holds to key to Time Travel. I have already deciphered the riddle. As a matter of fact it was just last year when the answers came to me. Basically the 79.613 number can be converted into the (1.618) value which is used in my Equations. It is also the same number which was used in the construction of the Pyramid of Giza. If we decipher the riddle even further, we will find that it also reveals that the 7.8 Hz. Frequency, is the Frequency to use for accomplishing Time Travel. It seems that whenever a person travels physically through time, his Alpha or Theta Waves are vibrating at this Frequency. Once that your Brain Waves begin to oscillate at this Frequency, your mind then becomes tuned to the Zero Vector. I have found that this is the only way in which Time Travel can be achieved. So basically what I am trying to get at, the Chronological Time

Reflector causes your Brain Waves to vibrate at 7.8 Hz. cycles per second. That is all that these units do. However, for some people, they might think differently, but when you get right down to it, it all leads to the same thing. Mind verses matter. And this just barely covers the subject.

Another experience which I had that occurred around the month of Sept. in 1986, dealt with a variation of the Chronological Time Reflector. In other words, after I had finished programming the plate, I proceeded to Zap the plate with 50,000 volts of High Frequency Electricity. Sometime after the Experiment, I clipped off one end of an Extension Cord and plugged the other end into a 110 volt, 60 cycle, AC outlet. I then laid the bare ends of the wires on top of the screen. Just then I accidentally dropped something on the floor. After I had reached down to pick it up, the bare ends of the Extension Cord which I had laid on top of the Screen, touched the Screen portion of the plate. What was to follow, would be the most terrifying experience I had ever had, because as soon as the bare wires touched the Screen, a massive short occurred. All I can remember is seeing two flashes of white light energy, and the next thing I knew, a white mist had fallen over the entire room. I didn't realize that I had traveled physically through time until I looked at a Calendar the next day. Not only that, but when I asked a lady in Plainview, Nebraska as to what the date was, she said it was the 17th, but my Quartz Watch indicated the 16th. When

I had returned home later on that day, I has discovered that all of my Experiments had been dated wrong. Then I finally realized that I had actually traveled one day into the past. To this day I am not exactly sure as to whether or not I returned back to my own present Time Line. Perhaps I will never know.
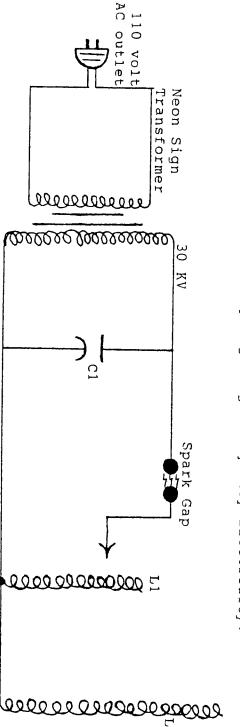
Another Time Travel instrument which was sent to me by a man who lives in Osceola, PA., is revealed on pages (12), (13), and (14). According to what I have red in his letter, this device can actually transport objects into the future. However, he says that there is somewhat of a Time delay effect shortly after the unit has been shut off. In other words, after the unit has been de-activated, it takes anywhere from 10 to 15 minutes before the object is teleported. I have never built this device as yet, however I plan to eventually.

2-22-89

POWER SUPPLY FOR THE TIME PLATFORM
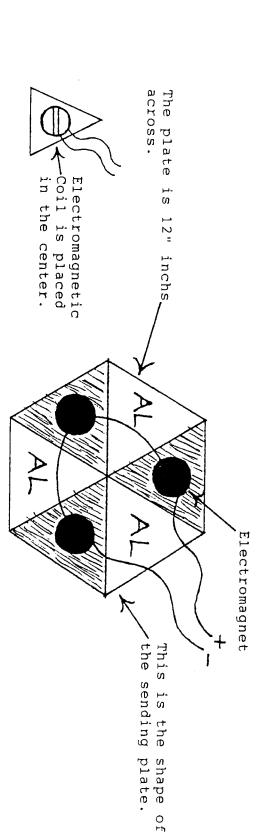
C1 - Is a homemade Capacitor made out of sheets of Glass and Copper Foil. Aluminum may be used, but this could be dangerous to your health.

L1 - Is number 10 Gage wire wound around a dowel rod.

L2 - Is number 24 Gage Magnet Wire wrapped around some PVC pipe. There should be about 1000 turns which should create around 100,000 volts of Low Amperage High Frequency Electricity.

110 volt
AC outlet

Neon Sign
Transformer

30 KV

C1

Spark Gap

L1

L2

2-22-89

The plate is 12" inchs across.

Electromagnetic coil is placed in the center.

Electromagnet

This is the shape of the sending plate.
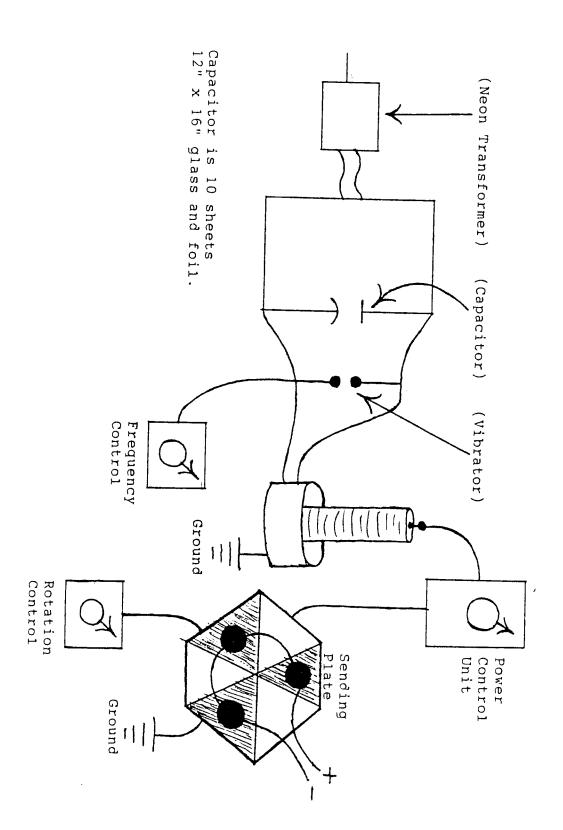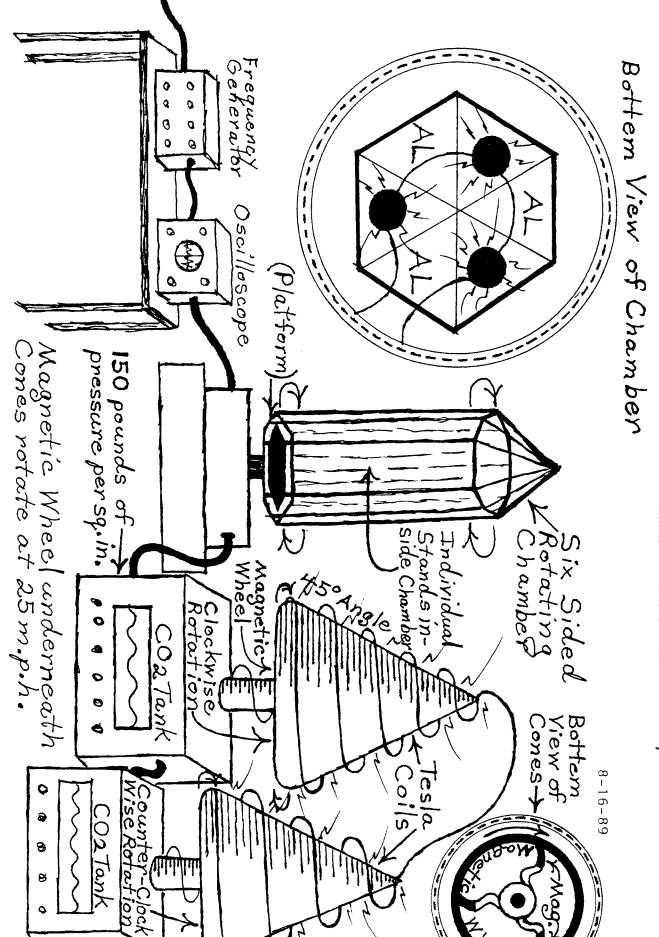
THE ELECTROMAGNETS ARE MADE OF STRAP IRON STACKED 8 INCHES HIGH (1/4"STRAP IRON).

THE ALUMINUM PLATES ARE 1/4 OF AN INCH THICK, AND ARE STACKED 8 INCHS HIGH.

THERE ARE VARIOUS REASONS FOR THIS PARTICULAR ARRAY.

THE ALUMINUM SPACERS CONCENTRATE AND FOCUS THE MAGNETIC FIELDS.

FULL SCALE DRAWING OF THE TIME TRAVEL UNIT

2-23-89

(Neon Transformer)

(Capacitor)

(Vibrator)

Capacitor is 10 sheets
12" x 16" glass and foil.

Frequency
Control

Ground

Rotation
Control

Ground

Sending
Plate

Power
Control
Unit

+

Bottom View of Chamber

8-16-89

Six Sided Rotating Chamber

Bottom View of Cones

Individual Stands in-Side Chamber

Tesla Coils

45° Angle

Magnetic Wheel

Clockwise Rotation

Counter Clock Wise Rotation

CO₂ Tank

CO₂ Tank

Magnetic Wheel

(Platform)

Frequency Generator

Oscilloscope

150 pounds of pressure per sq. in.

Magnetic Wheel underneath Cones rotate at 25 m.p.h.

Throughout the vast regions of Space Time itself, there are an infinite number of ways to build a Time Travel Machine. One of these ways is to get a hold of a Rubbing Plate, (GSR), or Pendulum, and proceed by asking (Yes) or (No) questions as to what type of components one should use in order to build a Time Travel Machine. There are a number of ways of doing this. First of all begin by asking what size the instrument box should be for holding the components. Next, determine what type of energy one should use for achieving these effects. Then you ask what type of components one should use in order to transmit this energy. If you have done everything correctly, you will end up creating a device which is based entirely on belief. And sense you have created a device which is built entirely on belief, you can be dam certain that it will work! Especially if you use a (GSR) while asking your questions.

For those of you who do not know what a (GSR) is, this is basically a (Galvanic Skin Response Meter). One of these devices may be purchased from me for $150. Instructions are included. Please allow 4 to 6 weeks for delivery.

THE PARADOXES OF TIME TRAVEL

David Lewis

TIME travel, I maintain, is possible. The paradoxes of time travel are oddities, not impossibilities. They prove only this much, which few would have doubted: that a possible world where time travel took place would be a most strange world, different in fundamental ways from the world we think is ours.

I shall be concerned here with the sort of time travel that is recounted in science fiction. Not all science fiction writers are clear-headed, to be sure, and inconsistent time travel stories have often been written. But some writers have thought the problems through with great care, and their stories are perfectly consistent.[1]

If I can defend the consistency of some science fiction stories of time travel, then I suppose parallel defenses might be given of some controversial physical hypotheses, such as the hypothesis that time is circular or the hypothesis that there are particles that travel faster than light. But I shall not explore these parallels here.

What is time travel? Inevitably, it involves a discrepancy between time and time. Any traveler departs and then arrives at his destination; the time elapsed from departure to arrival (positive, or perhaps zero) is the duration of the journey. But if he is a time traveler, the separation in time between departure and arrival does not equal the duration of his journey. He departs; he travels for an hour, let us say; then he arrives. The time he reaches is not the time one hour after his departure. It is later, if he has traveled toward the future; earlier, if he has traveled toward the past. If he has traveled far toward the past, it is earlier even than his departure. How can it be that the same two events, his departure and his arrival, are separated by two unequal amounts of time?

It is tempting to reply that there must be two independent time dimensions; that for time travel to be possible, time must be not a line but a plane.[2] Then a pair of events may have two unequal separations if they are separated more in one of the time dimensions than in the other. The lives of common people occupy straight diagonal lines across the plane of time, sloping at a rate of exactly one hour of time$_1$ per hour of time$_2$. The life of the time traveler occupies a bent path, of varying slope.

On closer inspection, however, this account seems not to give us time travel as we know it from the stories. When the traveler revisits the days of his childhood, will his playmates be there to meet him? No; he has not reached the part of the plane of time where they are. He is no longer separated from them along one of the two dimensions of time, but he is still separated from them along the other. I do not say that two-dimensional time is impossible, or that there is no way to square it with the usual conception of what time travel would be like. Nevertheless I shall say no more about two-dimensional time. Let us set it aside, and see how time travel is possible even in one-dimensional time.

The world—the time traveler's world, or ours—is a four-dimensional manifold of events. Time is one dimension of the four, like the spatial dimensions except that the prevailing laws of nature discriminate between time and the others—or rather, perhaps, between various timelike dimensions and various spacelike dimensions. (Time remains one-dimensional, since no two timelike dimensions are orthogonal.) Enduring things are timelike streaks: wholes composed of temporal parts, or *stages,* located at various times and places. Change is qualitative difference between different stages—different temporal parts—of some enduring thing, just as a "change" in scenery from east to west is a qualitative difference between the eastern and western spatial parts of the landscape. If this paper should change your mind about the

possibility of time travel, there will be a difference of opinion between two different temporal parts of you, the stage that started reading and the subsequent stage that finishes.

If change is qualitative difference between temporal parts of something, then what doesn't have temporal parts can't change. For instance, numbers can't change; nor can the events of any moment of time, since they cannot be subdivided into dissimilar temporal parts. (We have set aside the case of two-dimensional time, and hence the possibility that an event might be momentary along one time dimension but divisible along the other.) It is essential to distinguish change from "Cambridge change," which can befall anything. Even a number can "change" from being to not being the rate of exchange between pounds and dollars. Even a momentary event can "change" from being a year ago to being a year and a day ago, or from being forgotten to being remembered. But these are not genuine changes. Not just any old reversal in truth value of a time-sensitive sentence about something makes a change in the thing itself.

A time traveler, like anyone else, is a streak through the manifold of space-time, a whole composed of stages located at various times and places. But he is not a streak like other streaks. If he travels toward the past he is a zig-zag streak, doubling back on himself. If he travels toward the future, he is a stretched-out streak. And if he travels either way instantaneously, so that there are no intermediate stages between the stage that departs and the stage that arrives and his journey has zero duration, then he is a broken streak.

I asked how it could be that the same two events were separated by two unequal amounts of time, and I set aside the reply that time might have two independent dimensions. Instead I reply by distinguishing time itself, *external time* as I shall also call it, from the *personal time* of a particular time traveler: roughly, that which is measured by his wristwatch. His journey takes an hour of his personal time, let us say; his wristwatch reads an hour later at arrival than at departure. But the arrival is more than an hour after the departure in external time, if he travels toward the future; or the arrival is before the departure in external time (or less than an hour after), if he travels toward the past.

That is only rough. I do not wish to define personal time operationally, making wristwatches infallible by definition. That which is measured by my own wristwatch often disagrees with external time, yet I am no time traveler; what my misregulated wristwatch measures is neither time itself nor my personal time. Instead of an operational definition, we need a functional definition of personal time; it is that which occupies a certain role in the pattern of events that comprise the time traveler's life. If you take the stages of a common person, they manifest certain regularities with respect to external time. Properties change continuously as you go along, for the most part, and in familiar ways. First come in-

fantile stages. Last come senile ones. Memories accumulate. Food digests. Hair grows. Wristwatch hands move. If you take the stages of a time traveler instead, they do not manifest the common regularities with respect to external time. But there is one way to assign coordinates to the time traveler's stages, and one way only (apart from the arbitrary choice of a zero point), so that the regularities that hold with respect to this assignment match those that commonly hold with respect to external time. With respect to the correct assignment properties change continuously as you go along, for the most part, and in familiar ways. First come infantile stages. Last come senile ones. Memories accumulate. Food digests. Hair grows. Wristwatch hands move. The assignment of coordinates that yields this match is the time traveler's personal time. It isn't really time, but it plays the role in his life that time plays in the life of a common person. It's enough like time so that we can—with due caution— transplant our temporal vocabulary to it in discussing his affairs. We can say without contradiction, as the time traveler prepares to set out, "Soon he will be in the past." We mean that a stage of him is slightly later in his personal time, but much earlier in external time, than the stage of him that is present as we say the sentence.

We may assign locations in the time traveler's personal time not only to his stages themselves but also to the events that go on around him. Soon Caesar will die, long ago; that is, a stage slightly later in the time traveler's personal time than his present stage, but long ago in external time, is simultaneous with Caesar's death. We could even extend the assignment of personal time to events that are not part of the time traveler's life, and not simultaneous with any of his stages. If his funeral in ancient Egypt is separated from his death by three days of external time and his death is separated from his birth by three score years and ten of his personal time, then we may add the two intervals and say that his funeral follows his birth by three score years and ten and three days of *extended personal time.* Likewise a bystander might truly say, three years after the last departure of another famous time traveler, that "he may even now—if I may use the phrase—be wandering on some plesiosaurus-haunted oolitic coral reef, or beside the lonely saline seas of the Triassic Age."[3] If the time traveler does wander on an oolitic coral reef three years after his departure in his personal time, then it is no mistake to say with respect to his extended personal time that the wandering is taking place "even now".

We may liken intervals of external time to distances as the crow flies, and intervals of personal time to distances along a winding path. The time traveler's life is like a mountain railway. The place two miles due east of here may also be nine miles down the line, in the westbound direction. Clearly we are not dealing here with two independent dimensions. Just as distance along the railway is not a fourth spatial dimension, so a time traveler's personal time is not a second dimension of

time. How far down the line some place is depends on its location in three-dimensional space, and likewise the locations of events in personal time depend on their locations in one-dimensional external time.

Five miles down the line from here is a place where the line goes under a trestle; two miles further is a place where the line goes over a trestle; these places are one and the same. The trestle by which the line crosses over itself has two different locations along the line, five miles down from here and also seven. In the same way, an event in a time traveler's life may have more than one location in his personal time. If he doubles back toward the past, but not too far, he may be able to talk to himself. The conversation involves two of his stages, separated in his personal time but simultaneous in external time. The location of the conversation in personal time should be the location of the stage involved in it. But there are two such stages; to share the locations of both, the conversation must be assigned two different locations in personal time.

The more we extend the assignment of personal time outwards from the time traveler's stages to the surrounding events, the more will such events acquire multiple locations. It may happen also, as we have already seen, that events that are not simultaneous in external time will be assigned the same location in personal time—or rather, that at least one of the locations of one will be the same as at least one of the locations of the other. So extension must not be carried too far, lest the location of events in extended personal time lose its utility as a means of keeping track of their roles in the time traveler's history.

A time traveler who talks to himself, on the telephone perhaps, looks for all the world like two different people talking to each other. It isn't quite right to say that the whole of him is in two places at once, since neither of the two stages involved in the conversation is the whole of him, or even the whole of the part of him that is located at the (external) time of the conversation. What's true is that he, unlike the rest of us, has two different complete stages located at the same time at different places. What reason have I, then, to regard him as one person and not two? What unites his stages, including the simultaneous ones, into a single person? The problem of personal identity is especially acute if he is the sort of time traveler whose journeys are instantaneous, a broken streak consisting of several unconnected segments. Then the natural way to regard him as more than one person is to take each segment as a different person. No one of them is a time traveler, and the peculiarity of the situation comes to this: all but one of these several people vanish into thin air, all but another one appear out of thin air, and there are remarkable resemblances between one at his appearance and another at his vanishing. Why isn't that at least as good a description as the one I gave, on which the several segments are all parts of one time traveler?

I answer that what unites the stages (or segments) of a time traveler is the same sort of mental, or mostly mental, continuity and connectedness that unites anyone else. The only difference is that whereas a common person is connected and continuous with respect to external time, the time traveler is connected and continuous only with respect to his own personal time. Taking the stages in order, mental (and bodily) change is mostly gradual rather than sudden, and at no point is there sudden change in too many different respects all at once. (We can include position in external time among the respects we keep track of, if we like. It may change discontinuously with respect to personal time if not too much else changes discontinuously along with it.) Moreover, there is not too much change altogether. Plenty of traits and traces last a lifetime. Finally, the connectedness and the continuity are not accidental. They are explicable; and further, they are explained by the fact that the properties of each stage depend causally on those of the stages just before in personal time, the dependence being such as tends to keep things the same.[4]

To see the purpose of my final requirement of causal continuity, let us see how it excludes a case of counterfeit time travel. Fred was created out of thin air, as if in the midst of life; he lived a while, then died. He was created by a demon, and the demon had chosen at random what Fred was to be like at the moment of his creation. Much later someone else, Sam, came to resemble Fred as he was when first created. At the very moment when the resemblance became perfect, the demon destroyed Sam. Fred and Sam together are very much like a single person: a time traveler whose personal time starts at Sam's birth, goes on to Sam's destruction and Fred's creation, and goes on from there to Fred's death. Taken in this order, the stages of Fred-*cum*-Sam have the proper connectedness and continuity. But they lack causal continuity, so Fred-*cum*-Sam is not one person and not a time traveler. Perhaps it was pure coincidence that Fred at his creation and Sam at his destruction were exactly alike; then the connectedness and continuity of Fred-*cum*-Sam across the crucial point are accidental. Perhaps instead the demon remembered what Fred was like, guided Sam toward perfect resemblance, watched his progress, and destroyed him at the right moment. Then the connectedness and continuity of Fred-*cum*-Sam has a causal explanation, but of the wrong sort. Either way, Fred's first stages do not depend causally for their properties on Sam's last stages. So the case of Fred and Sam is rightly disqualified as a case of personal identity and as a case of time travel.

We might expect that when a time traveler visits the past there will be reversals of causation. You may punch his face before he leaves, causing his eye to blacken centuries ago. Indeed, travel into the past necessarily involves reversed causation. For time travel requires personal identity—he who arrives must be the same person who departed. That requires causal continuity, in

which causation runs from earlier to later stages in the order of personal time. But the orders of personal and external time disagree at some point, and there we have causation that runs from later to earlier stages in the order of external time. Elsewhere I have given an analysis of causation in terms of chains of counterfactual dependence, and I took care that my analysis would not rule out casual reversal *a priori*.[5] I think I can argue (but not here) that under my analysis the direction of counterfactual dependence and causation is governed by the direction of other *de facto* asymmetries of time. If so, then reversed causation and time travel are not excluded altogether, but can occur only where there are local exceptions to these asymmetries. As I said at the outset, the time traveler's world would be a most strange one.

Stranger still, if there are local—but only local—causal reversals, then there may also be causal loops: closed causal chains in which some of the causal links are normal in direction and others are reversed. (Perhaps there must be loops if there is reversal: I am not sure.) Each event on the loop has a causal explanation, being caused by events elsewhere on the loop. That is not to say that the loop as a whole is caused or explicable. It may not be. Its inexplicability is especially remarkable if it is made up of the sort of causal processes that transmit information. Recall the time traveler who talked to himself. He talked to himself about time travel, and in the course of the conversation his older self told his younger self how to build a time machine. That information was available in no other way. His older self knew how because his younger self had been told and the information had been preserved by the causal processes that constitute recording, storage, and retrieval of memory traces. His younger self knew, after the conversation, because his older self had known and the information had been preserved by the causal processes that constitute telling. But where did the information come from in the first place? Why did the whole affair happen? There is simply no answer. The parts of the loop are explicable, the whole of it is not. Strange! But not impossible, and not too different from inexplicabilities we are already inured to. Almost everyone agrees that God, or the Big Bang, or the entire infinite past of the universe, or the decay of a tritium atom, is uncaused and inexplicable. Then if these are possible, why not also the inexplicable causal loops that arise in the time travel?

I have committed a circularity in order not to talk about too much at once, and this is a good place to set it right. In explaining personal time, I presupposed that we were entitled to regard certain stages as comprising a single person. Then in explaining what united the stages into a single person, I presupposed that we were given a personal time order for them. The proper way to proceed is to define personhood and personal time simultaneously, as follows. Suppose given a pair of an aggregate of persona-stages, regarded as a candidate for personhood, and an assignment of coordinates to those stages, regarded as a candidate for his personal time. If the stages satisfy the conditions given in my circular explanation with respect to the assignment of coordinates, then both candidates succeed: the stages do comprise a person and the assignment is his personal time.

I have argued so far that what goes on in a time travel story may be a possible pattern of events in four-dimensional space-time with no extra time dimension; that it may be correct to regard the scattered stages of the alleged time traveler as comprising a single person; and that we may legitimately assign to those stages and their surroundings a personal time order that disagrees sometimes with their order in external time. Some might concede all this, but protest that the impossibility of time travel is revealed after all when we ask not what the time traveler *does,* but what he *could do.* Could a time traveler change the past? It seems not: the events of a past moment could no more change than numbers could. Yet it seems that he would be as able as anyone to do things that would change the past if he did them. If a time traveler visiting the past both could and couldn't do something that would change it, then there cannot possibly be such a time traveler.

Consider Tim. He detests his grandfather, whose success in the munitions trade built the family fortune that paid for Tim's time machine. Tim would like nothing so much as to kill Grandfather, but alas he is too late. Grandfather died in his bed in 1957, while Tim was a young boy. But when Tim has built his time machine and traveled to 1920, suddenly he realizes that he is not too late after all. He buys a rifle; he spends long hours in target practice; he shadows Grandfather to learn the route of his daily walk to the munitions works; he rents a room along the route; and there he lurks, one winter day in 1921, rifle loaded, hate in his heart, as Grandfather walks closer, closer,. . . .

Tim can kill Grandfather. He has what it takes. Conditions are perfect in every way: the best rifle money could buy, Grandfather an easy target only twenty yards away, not a breeze, door securely locked against intruders. Tim a good shot to begin with and now at the peak of training, and so on. What's to stop him? The forces of logic will not stay his hand! No powerful chaperone stands by to defend the past from interference. (To imagine such a chaperone, as some authors do, is a boring evasion, not needed to make Tim's story consistent.) In short, Tim is as much able to kill Grandfather as anyone ever is to kill anyone. Suppose that down the street another sniper, Tom, lurks waiting for another victim, Grandfather's partner. Tom is not a time traveler, but otherwise he is just like Tim: same make of rifle, same murderous intent, same everything. We can even suppose that Tom, like Tim, believes himself to be a time traveler. Someone has gone to a lot of trouble to deceive Tom into thinking so. There's no doubt that Tom can kill his victim; and Tim has everything going for him that Tom

does. By any ordinary standards of ability, Tim can kill Grandfather.

Tim cannot kill Grandfather. Grandfather lived, so to kill him would be to change the past. But the events of a past moment are not subdivisible into temporal parts and therefore cannot change. Either the events of 1921 timelessly do include Tim's killing of Grandfather, or else they timelessly don't. We may be tempted to speak of the "original" 1921 that lies in Tim's personal past, many years before his birth, in which Grandfather lived; and of the "new" 1921 in which Tim now finds himself waiting in ambush to kill Grandfather. But if we do speak so, we merely confer two names on one thing. The events of 1921 are doubly located in Tim's (extended) personal time, like the trestle on the railway, but the "original" 1921 and the "new" 1921 are one and the same. If Tim did not kill Grandfather in the "original" 1921, then if he does kill Grandfather in the "new" 1921, he must both kill and not kill Grandfather in 1921—in the one and only 1921, which is both the "new" and the "original" 1921. It is logically impossible that Tim should change the past by killing Grandfather in 1921. So Tim cannot kill Grandfather.

Not that past moments are special; no more can anyone change the present or the future. Present and future momentary events no more have temporal parts than past ones do. You cannot change a present or future event from what it was originally to what it is after you change it. What you *can* do is to change the present or the future from the unactualized way they would have been without some action of yours to the way they actually are. But that is not an actual change: not a difference between two successive actualities. And Tim can certainly do as much; he changes the past from the unactualized way it would have been without him to the one and only way it actually is. To "change" the past in this way, Tim need not do anything momentous; it is enough just to be there, however unobtrusively.

You know, of course, roughly how the story of Tim must go on if it is to be consistent: he somehow fails. Since Tim didn't kill Grandfather in the "original" 1921, consistency demands that neither does he kill Grandfather in the "new" 1921. Why not? For some commonplace reason. Perhaps some noise distracts him at the last moment, perhaps he misses despite all his target practice, perhaps his nerve fails, perhaps he even feels a pang of unaccustomed mercy. His failure by no means proves that he was not really able to kill Grandfather. We often try and fail to do what we are able to do. Success at some tasks requires not only ability but also luck, and lack of luck is not a temporary lack of ability. Suppose our other sniper, Tom, fails to kill Grandfather's partner for the same reason, whatever it is, that Tim fails to kill Grandfather. It does not follow that Tom was unable to. No more does it follow in Tim's case that he was unable to do what he did not succeed in doing.

We have this seeming contradiction: *"Tim doesn't, but can, because he has what it takes"* versus *"Tim doesn't, and can't, because it's logically impossible to change the past."* I reply that there is no contradiction. Both conclusions are true, and for the reasons given. They are compatible because "can" is equivocal.

To say that something can happen means that its happening is compossible with certain facts. *Which* facts? That is determined, but sometimes not determined well enough, by context. An ape can't speak a human language—say, Finnish—but I can. Facts about the anatomy and operation of the ape's larynx and nervous system are not compossible with his speaking Finnish. The corresponding facts about my larynx and nervous system are compossible with my speaking Finnish. But don't take me along to Helsinki as your interpreter: I can't speak Finnish. My speaking Finnish is compossible with the facts considered so far, but not with further facts about my lack of training. What I can do, relative to one set of facts, I cannot do, relative to another, more inclusive, set. Whenever the context leaves it open which facts are to count as relevant, it is possible to equivocate about whether I can speak Finnish. It is likewise possible to equivocate about whether it is possible for me to speak Finnish, or whether I am able to, or whether I have the ability or capacity or power or potentiality to. Our many words for much the same thing are little help since they do not seem to correspond to different fixed delineations of the relevant facts.

Tim's killing Grandfather that day in 1921 is compossible with a fairly rich set of facts: the facts about his rifle, his skill and training, the unobstructed line of fire, the locked door and the absence of any chaperone to defend the past, and so on. Indeed it is compossible with all the facts of the sorts we would ordinarily count as relevant is saying what someone can do. It is compossible with all the facts corresponding to those we deem relevant in Tom's case. Relative to these facts, Tim can kill Grandfather. But his killing Grandfather is not compossible with another, more inclusive set of facts. There is the simple fact that Grandfather was not killed. Also there are various other facts about Grandfather's doings after 1921 and their effects: Grandfather begat Father in 1922 and Father begat Tim in 1949. Relative to these facts, Tim cannot kill Grandfather. He can and he can't, but under different delineations of the relevant facts. You can reasonably choose the narrower delineation, and say that he can; or the wider delineation, and say that he can't. But choose. What you mustn't do is waver, say in the same breath that he both can and can't, and then claim that this contradiction proves that time travel is impossible.

Exactly the same goes for Tom's parallel failure. For Tom to kill Grandfather's partner also is compossible with all facts of the sorts we ordinarily count as relevant, but not compossible with a larger set including, for instance, the fact that the intended victim lived until 1934. In Tom's case we are not puzzled. We say without hesitation that he can do it, because we see at once that the

facts that are not compossible with his success are facts about the future of the time in question and therefore not the sort of facts we count as relevant in saying what Tom can do.

In Tim's case it is harder to keep track of which facts are relevant. We are accustomed to exclude facts about the future of the time in question, but to include some facts about its past. Our standards do not apply unequivocally to the crucial facts in this special case: Tim's failure, Grandfather's survival, and his subsequent doings. If we have foremost in mind that they lie in the external future of that moment in 1921 when Tim is almost ready to shoot, then we exclude them just as we exclude the parallel facts in Tom's case. But if we have foremost in mind that they precede that moment in Tim's extended personal time, then we tend to include them. To make the latter be foremost in your mind, I chose to tell Tim's story in the order of his personal time, rather than in the order of external time. The fact of Grandfather's survival until 1957 had already been told before I got to the part of the story about Tim lurking in ambush to kill him in 1921. We must decide, if we can, whether to treat these personally past and externally future facts as if they were straightforwardly past or as if they were straightforwardly future.

Fatalists—the best of them—are philosophers who take facts we count as irrelevant in saying what someone can do, disguise them somehow as facts of a different sort that we count as relevant, and thereby argue that we can do less than we think—indeed, that there is nothing at all that we don't do but can. I am not going to vote Republican next fall. The fatalist argues that, strange to say, I not only won't but can't; for my voting Republican is not compossible with the fact that it was true already in the year 1548 that I was not going to vote Republican 428 years later. My rejoinder is that this is a fact, sure enough; however, it is an irrelevant fact about the future masquerading as a relevant fact about the past, and so should be left out of account in saying what, in any ordinary sense, I can do. We are unlikely to be fooled by the fatalist's methods of disguise in this case, or other ordinary cases. But in cases of time travel, precognition, or the like, we're on less familiar ground, so it may take less of a disguise to fool us. Also, new methods of disguise are available, thanks to the device of personal time.

Here's another bit of fatalist trickery. Tim, as he lurks, already knows that he will fail. At least he has the wherewithal to know it if he thinks, he knows it implicitly. For he remembers that Grandfather was alive when he was a boy, he knows that those who are killed are thereafter not alive, he knows (let us suppose) that he is a time traveler who has reached the same 1921 that lies in his personal past, and he ought to understand—as we do—why a time traveler cannot change the past. What is known cannot be false. So his success is not only not compossible with facts that belong to the external future

and his personal past, but also is not compossible with the present fact of his knowledge that he will fail. I reply that the fact of his foreknowledge, at the moment while he waits to shoot, is not a fact entirely about that moment. It may be divided into two parts. There is the fact that he then believes (perhaps only implicitly) that he will fail; and there is the further fact that his belief is correct, and correct not at all by accident, and hence qualifies as an item of knowledge. It is only the latter fact that is not compossible with his success, but it is only the former that is entirely about the moment in question. In calling Tim's state at that moment knowledge, not just belief, facts about personally earlier but externally later moments were smuggled into consideration.

I have argued that Tim's case and Tom's are alike, except that in Tim's case we are more tempted than usual—and with reason—to opt for a semi-fatalist mode of speech. But perhaps they differ in another way. In Tom's case, we can expect a perfectly consistent answer to the counterfactual question: what if Tom had killed Grandfather's partner? Tim's case is more difficult. If Tim had killed Grandfather, it seems offhand that contradictions would have been true. The killing both would and wouldn't have occurred. No Grandfather, no Father; no Father, no Tim; no Tim, no killing. And for good measure: no Grandfather, no family fortune; no fortune, no time machine; no time machine, no killing. So the supposition that Tim killed Grandfather seems impossible in more than the semi-fatalistic sense already granted.

If you suppose Tim to kill Grandfather and hold all the rest of his story fixed, of course you get a contradiction. But likewise if you suppose Tom to kill Grandfather's partner and hold the rest of his story fixed—including the part that told of his failure—you get a contradiction. If you make any counterfactual supposition and hold all else fixed you get a contradiction. The thing to do is rather to make the counterfactual supposition and hold all else as close to fixed as you consistently can. That procedure will yield perfectly consistent answers to the question: what if Tim had not killed Grandfather? In that case, some of the story I told would not have been true. Perhaps Tim might have been the time-traveling grandson of someone else. Perhaps he might have been the grandson of a man killed in 1921 and miraculously resurrected. Perhaps he might have been not a time traveler at all, but rather someone created out of nothing in 1920 equipped with false memories of a personal past that never was. It is hard to say what is the least revision of Tim's story to make it true that Tim kills Grandfather, but certainly the contradictory story in which the killing both does and doesn't occur is not the least revision. Hence it is false (according to the unrevised story) that if Tim had killed Grandfather then contradictions would have been true.

What difference would it make if Tim travels in branching time? Suppose that at the possible world of Tim's story the space-time manifold branches; the

branches are separated not in time, and not in space, but in some other way. Tim travels not only in time but also from one branch to another. In one branch Tim is absent from the events of 1921; Grandfather lives; Tim is born, grows up, and vanishes in his time machine. The other branch diverges from the first when Tim turns up in 1920; there Tim kills Grandfather and Grandfather leaves no descendants and no fortune; the events of the two branches differ more and more from that time on. Certainly this is a consistent story; it is a story in which Grandfather both is and isn't killed in 1921 (in the different branches); and it is a story in which Tim, by killing Grandfather, succeeds in preventing his own birth (in one of the branches). But it is not a story in which Tim's killing of Grandfather both does occur and doesn't: it simply does, though it is located in one branch and not the other. And it is not a story in which Tim changes the past. 1921 and later years contain the events of both branches, coexisting somehow without interaction. It remains true at all the personal times of Tim's life, even after the killing, that Grandfather lives in one branch and dies in the other.[6]

Princeton University
Received September 4, 1975

Notes

1. I have particularly in mind two of the time travel stories of Robert A. Heinlein: "By His Bootstraps" in R. A. Heinlein, *The Menace from Earth* (Hicksville, N.Y., 1959), and "—All You Zombies—," in R. A. Heinlein, *The Unpleasant Profession of Jonathan Hoag* (Hicksville, N.Y., 1959).
2. Account of time travel in two-dimensional time are found in Jack W. Meiland, "A Two-Dimensional Passage Model of Time for Time Travel," *Philosophical Studies,* vol. 26 (1974), pp. 153–173; and in the initial chapters of Isaac Asimov, *The End of Eternity* (Garden City, N.Y., 1955). Asimov's denouement, however, seems to require some different conception of time travel.
3. H. G. Wells, *The Time Machine, An Invention* (London, 1895), epilogue. The passage is criticized as contradictory in Donald C. Williams, "The Myth of Passage," *The Journal of Philosophy,* vol. 48 (1951), p. 463.
4. I discuss the relation between personal identity and mental connectedness and continuity at greater length in "Survival and Identity" in *The Identity of Persons,* ed. by Amelie Rorty (forthcoming).
5. "Causation," *The Journal of Philosophy,* vol. 70 (1973), pp. 556–567; the analysis relies on the analysis of counterfactuals given in my *Counterfactuals* (Oxford, 1973).
6. The present paper summarizes a series of lectures of the same title, given as the Gavin David Young Lectures in Philosophy at the University of Adelaide in July, 1971. I thank the Australian-American Educational Foundation and the American Council of Learned Societies for research support. I am grateful to many friends for comments on earlier versions of this paper; especially Philip Kitcher, William Newton-Smith, J. J. C. Smart, and Donald Williams.